

O

305 (IX.11) Obstructions

A. History

The theory of **obstructions** aims at measuring the extensibility of mappings by means of algebraic tools. Such classical results as the †Brouwer mapping theorem and Hopf's extension and †classification theorems in homotopy theory might be regarded as the origins of this theory. A systematic study of the theory was initiated by S. Eilenberg [1] in connection with the notions of †homotopy and †cohomology groups, which were introduced at the same time. A. Komatu and P. Olum [2] extended the theory to mappings into spaces not necessarily † n -simple. For mappings of polyhedra into certain special spaces, the †homotopy classification problem, closely related to the theory of obstructions, was solved in the following cases (K^m denotes an m -dimensional polyhedron): $K^{n+1} \rightarrow S^n$ (N. Steenrod [5]), $K^{n+2} \rightarrow S^n$ (J. Adem), $K^{n+k} \rightarrow Y$, where $\pi_i(Y) = 0$ for $i < n$ and $n < i < n+k$ (M. Nakaoka). There are similar results by L. S. Pontryagin, M. Postnikov, and S. Eilenberg and S. MacLane. Except for the special cases already noted, it is extremely difficult to discuss higher obstructions in general since they involve many complexities. Nevertheless, it is significant that the idea of obstructions has given rise to various important notions in modern algebraic topology, including cohomology operations (\rightarrow 64 Cohomology Operations) and characteristic classes (\rightarrow 56 Characteristic Classes).

The notion of obstruction is also very useful in the treatment of cross sections of fiber bundles (\rightarrow 147 Fiber Bundles), †diffeomorphisms of differentiable manifolds, etc.

B. General Theory for an n -Simple Space Y

The question of whether two (continuous) mappings of a topological space X into another space Y are †homotopic to each other can be reduced to the extensibility of the given mapping: $(X \times \{0\}) \cup (X \times \{1\}) \rightarrow Y$ to a mapping of the product $X \times I$ of X and the unit interval $I = [0, 1]$ into Y . Therefore the problem of classifying mappings can be treated in the same way as that of the extension of mappings.

Let K be a †polyhedron, L a subpolyhedron of K , and $\hat{K}^n = L \cup K^n$ the union of L and the † n -skeleton K^n of K . Let Y be an †arcwise connected n -simple space, and f' be a mapping of L into Y . Denote by $\Phi^n(f')$ the set of mappings of \hat{K}^n into Y that are extensions of f' ,

and by $\Phi^n(f')$ the set of †homotopy classes of mappings in $\Phi^n(f')$ relative to L . The set $\bar{\Phi}^0(f')$ consists of a single element because of the arcwise connectedness of Y , $\bar{\Phi}^1(f')$ is non-empty, and $\bar{\Phi}^n(f')$ ($n \geq 2$) may be empty. Let f^n be an element of $\Phi^n(f')$. If we consider the restriction of f^n to the boundary ∂^{n+1} of an oriented $(n+1)$ -cell σ^{n+1} of K , then $f^n: \partial^{n+1} \rightarrow Y$ determines an element $c(f^n, \sigma^{n+1})$ of the †homotopy group $\pi_n(Y)$ (\rightarrow 202 Homotopy Theory). This element gives a measure of obstruction for extending f^n to the interior of σ^{n+1} . We obtain an $(n+1)$ -cocycle $c^{n+1}(f^n)$ of the †simplicial pair (K, L) with coefficients in $\pi_n(Y)$, called the **obstruction cocycle** of f^n , by assigning $c(f^n, \sigma^{n+1})$ to each $(n+1)$ -cell σ^{n+1} . This obstruction cocycle $c^{n+1}(f^n)$ is the measure of obstruction for extending f^n to \hat{K}^{n+1} . A necessary and sufficient condition for the extensibility is given by $c^{n+1}(f^n) = 0$. Clearly, $c^{n+1}(f^n)$ is uniquely determined for each element f of $\bar{\Phi}^n(f')$. The set of all $c^{n+1}(f^n)$ with $f^n \in \Phi^n(f')$ forms a subset $\mathfrak{o}^{n+1}(f')$ of the group of cocycles $Z^{n+1}(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$. $\Phi^{n+1}(f')$ is non-empty if and only if $\mathfrak{o}^{n+1}(f')$ contains the zero element 0.

Let $K^\square = K \times I$, $L^\square = (K \times 0) \cup (L \times I) \cup (K \times 1)$. Given two mappings $f_0, f_1: K \rightarrow Y$ satisfying $f_0|L = f_1|L$, we can define a natural mapping $F': L^\square \rightarrow Y$ such that an element F^n of $\Phi^n(F')$ corresponds to a †homotopy h^{n-1} relative to L connecting $f_0|K^{n-1}$ with $f_1|K^{n-1}$. Given an element $F^n \in \Phi^n(F')$, we have the element $c^{n+1}(F^n)$ of $Z^{n+1}(K^\square, L^\square; \pi_n(Y))$, which we identify with $Z^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ through the natural isomorphism of chain groups of the pair (K^\square, L^\square) to those of the pair (K, L) . Thus we can regard $c^{n+1}(F^n)$ as an element of $Z^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$, which is denoted by $d^n(f_0, h^{n-1}, f_1)$, and call it the **separation** (or **difference**) **cocycle**. If $f_0| \hat{K}^{n-1} = f_1| \hat{K}^{n-1}$, we have the canonical mapping $F^n: L^\square \cup (K^\square)^n \rightarrow Y$, and the separation cocycle is denoted simply by $d^n(f_0, f_1)$. The set of separation cocycles corresponding to elements of $\Phi^n(F')$ is considered to be a subset of $Z^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ and is denoted by $\mathfrak{o}^n(f_0, f_1)$. A necessary and sufficient condition for h^{n-1} to be extensible to a homotopy on \hat{K}^n is $d^n(f_0, h^{n-1}, f_1) = 0$. Therefore a necessary and sufficient condition for $f_0| \hat{K}^n \simeq f_1| \hat{K}^n$ (rel L) (i.e., relative to L) is $0 \in \mathfrak{o}^n(f_0, f_1)$. Given $f_0^n, f_1^n: \hat{K}^n \rightarrow Y$ with $f_0^n|L = f_1^n|L$, then $d^n(f_0^n, h^{n-1}, f_1^n) \in \mathfrak{o}^n(f_0^n, f_1^n)$ is an element of $Z^n(\hat{K}^n, L; \pi_n(Y))$, which is also considered to be a cochain of the pair (K, L) . In this sense, we call $d^n(f_0^n, h^{n-1}, f_1^n)$ the **separation** (or **deformation**) **cochain** over (K, L) . The coboundary of the separation cochain $d^n(f_0^n, h^{n-1}, f_1^n)$ coincides (except possibly for sign) with $c^{n+1}(f_0^n) - c^{n+1}(f_1^n)$.

For a fixed $f_0^n \in \Phi^n(f')$, any n -cochain d^n

of the pair (K, L) with coefficients in $\pi_n(Y)$ is expressible as a separation cochain $d^n = d^n(f_0^n, f_1^n)$ where $f_1^n \in \Phi^n(f')$ is a suitable mapping such that $f_0^n|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}} = f_1^n|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}}$ (existence theorem).

Therefore if we take an element f^{n-1} of $\bar{\Phi}^{n-1}(f')$ whose obstruction cocycle $c^n(f^{n-1})$ is zero, the set of all obstruction cocycles $c^{n+1}(f^n)$ of all such $f^n \in \Phi^n(f')$ that are extensions of f^{n-1} forms a subset of $\mathfrak{o}^{n+1}(f')$ and coincides with a coset of $Z^{n+1}(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ factored by $B^{n+1}(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$. Thus a cohomology class $\bar{c}^{n+1}(f^{n-1}) \in H^{n+1}(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ corresponds to an $f^{n-1} \in \Phi^{n-1}(f')$ such that $c^n(f^{n-1}) = 0$, and $\bar{c}^{n+1}(f^{n-1}) = 0$ is a necessary and sufficient condition for f^{n-1} to be extendible to \hat{K}^{n+1} (**first extension theorem**).

For the separation cocycle, $\bar{d}^n(f_0, h^{n-2}, f_1) \in H^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ corresponds to each homotopy h^{n-2} on \hat{K}^{n-2} such that $d^{n-1}(f_0, h^{n-2}, f_1) = 0$, and $\bar{d}^n(f_0, h^{n-2}, f_1) = 0$ is a necessary and sufficient condition for h^{n-2} to be extendible to a homotopy on \hat{K}^n (**first homotopy theorem**).

The subset of $H^{n+1}(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ corresponding to $\mathfrak{o}^{n+1}(f')$ is denoted by $\mathbf{O}^{n+1}(f')$ and is called the **obstruction to an $(n+1)$ -dimensional extension** of f' . Similarly, the subset $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0, f_1)$ of $H^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ corresponding to $\mathfrak{o}^n(f_0, f_1)$ is called the **obstruction to an n -dimensional homotopy** connecting f_0 with f_1 . Clearly, a condition for f' to be extendible to \hat{K}^{n+1} is given by $0 \in \mathbf{O}^{n+1}(f')$, and a necessary and sufficient condition for $f_0|_{K^n} \simeq f_1|_{K^n} \pmod{L}$ is given by $0 \in \mathbf{O}^n(f_0, f_1)$.

A continuous mapping $\varphi: (K', L') \rightarrow (K, L)$ induces homomorphisms of cohomology groups $\varphi^*: H^{n+1}(K, L; \pi_n(Y)) \rightarrow H^{n+1}(K', L'; \pi_n(Y))$, $H^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y)) \rightarrow H^n(K', L'; \pi_n(Y))$. Then for $f': L' \leftarrow Y$, $\mathbf{O}^{n+1}(f' \circ \varphi) \supset \varphi^* \mathbf{O}^{n+1}(f')$, and for $f_0, f_1: K \rightarrow Y$ such that $f_0|_L = f_1|_L$, $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0 \circ \varphi, f_1 \circ \varphi) \supset \varphi^* \mathbf{O}^n(f_0, f_1)$. Therefore we also find that the obstruction to an extension and the obstruction to a homotopy are independent of the choice of subdivisions of K, L , and consequently are topological invariants.

Let f_0, f_1 , and f_2 be mappings $K \rightarrow Y$ such that $f_0|_L = f_1|_L = f_2|_L$. Given homotopies $h_{01}^{n-1}: f_0|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}} \simeq f_1|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}} \pmod{L}$, $h_{12}^{n-1}: f_1|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}} \simeq f_2|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}} \pmod{L}$, then for the composite $h_{02}^{n-1} = h_{12}^{n-1} \circ h_{01}^{n-1}$, we have

$$\begin{aligned} d^n(f_0, h_{01}^{n-1}, f_1) + d^n(f_1, h_{12}^{n-1}, f_2) \\ = d^n(f_0, h_{02}^{n-1}, f_2), \end{aligned}$$

and for the inverse homotopy $h_{10}^{n-1}: f_1|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}} \simeq f_0|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}} \pmod{L}$, clearly

$$d^n(f_1, h_{10}^{n-1}, f_0) = -d^n(f_0, h_{01}^{n-1}, f_1).$$

Therefore $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0, f_0)$ forms a subgroup of $H^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ that is determined by the homotopy class of $f_0|_{\hat{K}^{n-1}}$ relative to L . In

general, if $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0, f_1)$ is nonempty, it is a coset of $H^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ factored by the subgroup $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0, f_0)$. Combined with the existence theorem on separation cochains, this can be utilized to show the following theorem.

Assume that $\Phi^n(f')$ is nonempty. The set of all elements $\bar{\Phi}^n(f')$ that are extensions of an element of $\bar{\Phi}^{n-1}(f')$ is put in one-to-one correspondence with the quotient group of $H^n(\hat{K}^n, L; \pi_n(Y))$ modulo $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0^n, f_0^n)$ by pairing the obstruction $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0^n, f^n)$ with each f^n for a fixed f_0^n . Among such elements of $\bar{\Phi}^n(f')$, the set of f^n that are extendible to \hat{K}^{n+1} is in one-to-one correspondence with the quotient group of $H^n(\hat{K}^{n+1}, L; \pi_n(Y)) = H^n(K, L; \pi_n(Y))$ modulo the subgroup $\mathbf{O}^n(f_0^{n+1}, f_0^{n+1})$, assuming that f_0^n is extended to f_0^{n+1} (**first classification theorem**).

C. Primary Obstructions

Assume that $H^{i+1}(K, L; \pi_i(Y)) = H^i(K, L; \pi_i(Y)) = 0$, where $0 < i < p$ (e.g., $\pi_i(Y) = 0$, $0 < i < p$). In this case, by consecutive use of the first extension theorem and the first homotopy theorem, we can show that each $\bar{\Phi}^i(f')$ ($i < p$) consists of a single element and $\mathbf{O}^{p+1}(f')$ also consists of a single element $\bar{c}^{p+1}(f') \in H^{p+1}(K, L; \pi_p(Y))$. The element $\bar{c}^{p+1}(f')$, called the **primary obstruction** of f' , vanishes if and only if f' can be extended to \hat{K}^{p+1} (**second extension theorem**). When $H^{i+1}(K, L; \pi_i(Y)) = 0$ for $i > p$ (for example, when $\pi_i(Y) = 0$ for $p < i < \dim(K - L)$), f' is extendible to K if and only if the first obstruction of f' vanishes (**third extension theorem**).

Correspondingly, if $H^i(K, L; \pi_i(Y)) = H^{i-1}(K, L; \pi_i(Y)) = 0$ ($0 < i < p$), then for any two mappings $f_0, f_1: K \rightarrow Y$, $f_0|_L = f_1|_L$, $\mathbf{O}^p(f_0, f_1)$ consists of a single element $\bar{d}^p(f_0, f_1) \in H^p(K, L; \pi_p(Y))$, which we call the **primary difference** of f_0 and f_1 . This element vanishes if and only if $f_0|_{\hat{K}^p} \simeq f_1|_{\hat{K}^p} \pmod{L}$ (**second homotopy theorem**). Moreover, when $H^i(K, L; \pi_i(Y)) = 0$ ($i > p$), the primary difference is zero if and only if $f_0 \simeq f_1 \pmod{L}$ (**third homotopy theorem**).

Assume that the hypotheses of the second extension theorem and second homotopy theorem are satisfied. If we assign to each element f^p of $\bar{\Phi}^p(f')$ the primary difference of f^p and the fixed element f_0^p , then $\bar{\Phi}^p(f')$ is in one-to-one correspondence with $H^p(\hat{K}^p, L; \pi_p(Y))$ by the first classification theorem (**second classification theorem**). Similarly, assume that the hypotheses of the third extension theorem and third homotopy theorem are satisfied. If $f_0: K \rightarrow Y$, $f' = f_0|_L$, then homotopy classes relative to L of extensions f of f' are put in one-to-one correspondence with the

elements of $H^p(K, L; \pi_p(Y))$ by pairing $d^p(f, f_0)$ with f (**third classification theorem**).

D. Secondary Obstructions

For simplicity, assume that $\pi_i(Y) = 0$ ($i < p$ and $p < i < q$). If the primary obstruction $\bar{c}^{p+1}(f') \in H^{p+1}(K, L; \pi_p(Y))$ of $f': L \rightarrow Y$ vanishes, we can define $O^{q+1}(f') \in H^{q+1}(K, L; \pi_q(Y))$, which we call the **secondary obstruction** of f' . When $Y = S^p$, $q = p + 1$, $p > 2$, the secondary obstruction $O^{p+2}(f')$ coincides with a coset of $H^{p+2}(K, L; Z_2)$ modulo the subgroup $Sq^2(H^p(K, L; Z_2))$, where Sq^2 denotes the \dagger Steenrod square operation [5]. In this case, if $L = K^p$, then $O^{p+2}(f')$ reduces to a cohomology class, $Sq^2(i^*)^{-1}f'^*(\sigma)$ with $i: L \rightarrow K$, where σ is a generator of $H^p(S^p, Z)$ (in this case $(i^*)^{-1}f'^*(\sigma) \neq \emptyset$ is equivalent to $\bar{c}^{p+1}(f') = 0$) [5]. Moreover, if $Sq^2f'^*(\sigma) = 0$, then there exists a suitable extension $f^{p+2}: \tilde{K}^{p+2} \rightarrow Y = S^p$ of f' . The set of obstruction cocycles of all such f^{p+2} defines the **tertiary obstruction** $O^{p+3}(f')$, which coincides with a coset of $H^{p+3}(K, L; Z_2)$ modulo the subgroup $Sq^2(H^{p+1}(K, L; Z_2))$. By using the \dagger secondary cohomology operation Φ of J. Adem, it can be expressed as $\Phi((i^*)^{-1}f'^*(\sigma))$ (\rightarrow 64 Cohomology Operations).

All the propositions in this article remain true if we take \dagger CW complexes instead of polyhedra K .

References

- [1] S. Eilenberg, Cohomology and continuous mappings, Ann. Math., (2) 41 (1940), 231–251.
- [2] P. Olum, Obstructions to extensions and homotopies, Ann. Math., (2) 52 (1950), 1–50.
- [3] P. Olum, On mappings into spaces in which certain homotopy groups vanish, Ann. Math., (2) 57 (1953), 561–574.
- [4] N. E. Steenrod, The topology of fibre bundles, Princeton Univ. Press, 1951.
- [5] N. E. Steenrod, Products of cocycles and extensions of mappings, Ann. Math., (2) 48 (1947), 290–320.
- [6] E. H. Spanier, Algebraic topology, McGraw-Hill, 1966.

306 (XII.20) Operational Calculus

A. General Remarks

The term “operational calculus” in the usual sense means a method for solving \dagger linear dif-

ferential equations by reducing the operations of differentiation and integration into algebraic ones in a symbolic manner. The idea was initiated by P. S. Laplace in his *Théorie analytique des probabilités* (1812), but the method has acquired popularity since O. Heaviside used it systematically in the late 19th century to solve electric-circuit problems. The method is therefore also called **Heaviside calculus**, but Heaviside gave only a formal method of calculus without bothering with rigorous arguments. The mathematical foundations were given in later years, first in terms of \dagger Laplace transforms, then by applying the theory of \dagger distributions. One of the motivations behind L. Schwartz’s creation of this latter theory in the 1940s was to give a sound foundation for the formal method, but the theory obtained has had a much larger range of applications. Schwartz’s theory was based on the newly developed theory of \dagger topological linear spaces. On the other hand, J. Mikusiński gave another foundation, based only on elementary algebraic notions and on Titchmarsh’s theorem, whose proof has recently been much simplified.

In this article, we first explain the simple theory established by Mikusiński [2] and later discuss its relation to the classical Laplace transform method.

B. The Operational Calculus of Mikusiński

The set \mathcal{C} of all continuous complex-valued functions $a = \{a(t)\}$ defined on $t \geq 0$ is a \dagger linear space with the usual addition and scalar multiplication. \mathcal{C} is a \dagger commutative algebra with multiplication $a \cdot b$ defined by the \dagger convolution $\{\int_0^t a(t-s)b(s)ds\}$. The ring \mathcal{C} has no \dagger zero divisors (**Titchmarsh’s theorem**). (There have been several interesting proofs of Titchmarsh’s theorem since the first demonstration given by Titchmarsh himself [3]. For example, a simple proof has been published by C. Ryll-Nardzewski (1952).) Hence we can construct the \dagger quotient field \mathcal{Q} of the ring \mathcal{C} . An element of \mathcal{Q} is called a **Mikusiński operator**, or simply an **operator**. If we define $a(t) = 0$ for $t < 0$ for the elements $\{a(t)\}$ in \mathcal{C} , then \mathcal{C} is a subalgebra of \mathcal{U} , which is the set of all locally integrable (locally L_1) functions in $(-\infty, \infty)$ whose \dagger support is bounded below. Here we identify two functions that coincide almost everywhere. The algebra \mathcal{U} has no zero divisor, and its quotient field is also \mathcal{Q} .

The unity element for multiplication in \mathcal{Q} , denoted by $\delta = b/b$ ($b \neq 0$), plays the role of the \dagger Dirac δ -function. It is sometimes called the **impulse function**. The operator $l = \{1\} \in \mathcal{C}$ is the

function that takes the values 0 and 1 according as $t < 0$ or $t > 0$. This operator is **Heaviside's function** and is sometimes called the **unit function**. Usually it is denoted by $\mathbf{1}(t)$ or simply $\mathbf{1}$. The value $\mathbf{1}(0)$ may be arbitrary, but usually it is defined as $1/2$, the mean of the limit values from both sides. The operator l is an **integral operator**, because, as an operator carrying a into $l \cdot a$, it yields

$$l \cdot a = \left\{ \int_0^t a(s) ds \right\} = \text{the integral of } a \text{ over } [0, t].$$

More generally, the operator $\{t^{\lambda-1}/\Gamma(\lambda)\}$ ($\text{Re } \lambda > 0$) gives the λ th-order integral. The operator $s = \delta/l$, which is the inverse operator of l , is a **differential operator**. If $a \in \mathcal{C}$ is of class C^1 , then we have

$$s \cdot a = a' + a(+0)\delta = a' + \{a(+0)\}/\{1\}. \quad (1)$$

Similarly, if $a \in \mathcal{C}$ is of class C^n , we have

$$s^n \cdot a = a^{(n)} + a^{(n-1)}(0)\delta + a^{(n-2)}(0)s \\ + \dots + a(0)s^{n-1}. \quad (2)$$

The operator $a \rightarrow s \cdot a$ can be applied to functions a that are not differentiable in the ordinary sense, and considering the application of s to be the operation of differentiation, we can treat the differential operator algebraically in the field \mathcal{Q} . In particular, we have $s \cdot \mathbf{1} = \delta$, and this relation is frequently represented by the formula

$$d\mathbf{1}(t)/dt = \delta(t). \quad (3)$$

A rational function of s whose numerator is of lower degree than its denominator is an elementary function of t . For example, we have the relations

$$1/(s - \alpha)^n = \{t^{n-1} e^{\alpha t}/(n-1)!\}, \\ 1/(s^2 + \beta^2) = \{\beta^{-1} \sin \beta t\}, \\ s/(s^2 + \beta^2) = \{\cos \beta t\}. \quad (4)$$

The solution of an ordinary linear differential equation with constant coefficients $\sum_{r=0}^n \alpha_r \varphi^{(r)}(t) = f(t)$ under the initial condition $\varphi^{(i)}(0) = \gamma_i$ ($0 \leq i \leq n-1$) is thus reduced to an equation in s by using formulas (1) and (2), and is computed by decomposing the following operator into partial fractions:

$$\{\varphi(t)\} = \frac{\beta_{n-1}s^{n-1} + \dots + \beta_0 + f}{\alpha_n s^n + \dots + \alpha_1 s + \alpha_0}, \quad (5)$$

where $\beta_r = \alpha_{r+1}\gamma_0 + \alpha_{r+2}\gamma_1 + \dots + \alpha_n\gamma_{n-r-1}$, $0 \leq r \leq n-1$. The general solution is represented by (5) if we consider the constants $\gamma_0, \dots, \gamma_{n-1}$ or $\beta_0, \dots, \beta_{n-1}$ as arbitrary parameters. If the rational function in the right-hand side of (5) is $M(s)/D(s)$ and the degree of the numerator is less than that of the denominator, then the right-hand side of (5) is explicitly repre-

sented by

$$\sum_{r=0}^{l-1} \frac{t^{l-r-1}}{(l-r-1)!r!} \left[\frac{d^r}{d\lambda^r} \left(\frac{M(\lambda)}{D(\lambda)/(\lambda - \lambda_0)^l} \right) \right]_{\lambda=\lambda_0} e^{\lambda_0 t} \\ + \sum_{i=1}^m \frac{M(\lambda_i)}{D(\lambda_i)} e^{\lambda_i t},$$

where we assume that $\lambda_0, \lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_m$ exhaust the roots of the equation $D(\lambda) = 0$, λ_0 is a multiple root of degree l , and all other roots are simple ($m = n - l$). The above formula is called the **expansion theorem**.

C. Limits of Operators

A sequence a_n of operators is said to **converge** to the **limit** $a = b/q$ if there exists an operator $q (\neq 0)$ such that $q \cdot a_n \in \mathcal{C}$ and the sequence of functions $q \cdot a_n$ converges uniformly to b on compact sets. The limit a is determined uniquely without depending on the operator q . Based on this notion of limits of operators, we can construct the theory of series of operators and differential and integral calculus of functions of an independent variable λ whose values are operators. They are completely parallel to the usual theories of elementary calculus (\rightarrow 106 Differential Calculus; 216 Integral Calculus; 379 Series). A linear partial differential equation in the function $\varphi(x, t)$ of two variables, in particular its initial value problem, reduces to a linear ordinary differential equation of an operational-valued function of an independent variable x .

For a given operator w , the solution (if it exists) of the differential equation $\varphi'(\lambda) = w \cdot \varphi(\lambda)$ with the initial condition $\varphi(0) = \delta$ is unique, is called the **exponential function of an operator** w , and is denoted by $\varphi(\lambda) = e^{\lambda w}$. If the power series

$$\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \lambda^n w^n / n! \quad (6)$$

converges, the limit is identical to the exponential function $e^{\lambda w}$. However, there are several cases in which $e^{\lambda w}$ exists even when the series (6) of operators does not converge.

For example, for $w = -\sqrt{s}$, we have

$$e^{-\lambda\sqrt{s}} = \{(\lambda/2\sqrt{\pi t^3}) \exp(-\lambda^2/4t)\}, \quad (7)$$

and for $w = -s$, we have

$$e^{-\lambda s} = h^\lambda = s \cdot H_\lambda(t), \quad (8)$$

where the function $H_\lambda(t)$ takes the values 0 and 1 according as $t < \lambda$ or $t > \lambda$. $H_\lambda(t)$ belongs to the ring \mathcal{U} and is called the **jump function** at λ . For $f(t) \in \mathcal{U}$, we have

$$h^\lambda \cdot \{f(t)\} = \{f(t - \lambda)\},$$

and hence we call (8) the **translation operator**

(or **shift operator**). For $w = -s$, the series (6) does not converge, but if we apply the formal relation $e^{-\lambda s} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-\lambda s)^n/n!$ to $f(t)$, we have a formal Taylor expansion

$$f(t-\lambda) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} f^{(n)}(t)(-\lambda)^n/n!.$$

The solution of linear \dagger difference equations are represented by rational functions of h^λ . The power series $\sum \alpha_n h^n$ of operators always converges. This fact gives an explicit example of a representation by formal power series. Note that the operators $e^{-\lambda s}$ and $e^{-\lambda\sqrt{s}}$ play an essential role in the solution of the \dagger wave equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial x^2} = \frac{\alpha^2 \partial^2 \varphi}{\partial t^2}$$

and the \dagger heat equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial x^2} = \frac{\alpha^2 \partial \varphi}{\partial t}.$$

The operator (7) converges to δ for $\lambda \rightarrow 0$, and this gives a \dagger regularization of the Dirac δ -function.

D. Laplace Transform

For every function $\{f(t)\} \in \mathcal{C}$, the limit

$$\lim_{\beta \rightarrow +\infty} \int_0^\beta e^{-\lambda s} f(\lambda) d\lambda = \int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda s} f(\lambda) d\lambda \quad (9)$$

always exists (in the sense of the limit of operators), and as an operator coincides with the original function $\{f(t)\}$. Therefore, if the usual Laplace transform (\rightarrow 240 Laplace Transform) of the function $f(\lambda)$ exists and (9) is a function $g(s)$, then as a function of the differential operator s , $g(s)$ is the operator that is given by the inverse Laplace transform $f(t)$ of $g(s)$. Formulas (4) and (7) are indeed typical examples of this relation, where the left-hand side is the usual Laplace transform of the right-hand side. In the practical computation of (5), we can compute the Laplace inverse transform of the right-hand side. However, if we took the Laplace transform as the foundation of the theory, it would not only be complicated but also be subject to the artificial restriction caused by the convergence condition on Laplace transforms.

In the theory of operational calculus, the transform

$$g(p) = p \int_0^\infty e^{-pt} f(t) dt \quad (10)$$

is sometimes used instead of the Laplace transform itself. But the difference is not essential; we obtain the latter transform merely by

changing the variable from s to p and multiplying the former transform by p .

E. Relation to Distributions

For $f \in \mathcal{C}$, an operator of the form $h^\lambda \cdot s^k \cdot f$ is identified with a distribution of L. Schwartz with support bounded from below. We can identify with a Schwartz distribution the limit of a sequence f_n (or a suitable equivalence class of sequences) of operators of the form $h^\lambda \cdot s^k \cdot f$ such that f_n, f_{n+1}, \dots are identical in the interval $(-n, n)$. The notions of Schwartz distributions and of Mikusiński operators do not include each other, but both are generalizations of the notions of functions and their derivatives. For formulas and examples \rightarrow Appendix A, Table 12.

References

- [1] O. Heaviside, On operators in physical mathematics I, II, Proc. Roy. Soc. London, ser. A, 52 (1893), 504–529; 54 (1893), 105–442.
- [2] J. Mikusiński, Operational calculus, Pergamon, 1959. (Original in Polish, 1953.)
- [3] E. C. Titchmarsh, The zeros of certain integral functions, Proc. London Math. Soc., 25 (1926), 283–302.
- [4] K. Yosida, Operational calculus: A theory of hyperfunctions, Springer, 1984.

307 (XIX.13) Operations Research

A. General Remarks

Operations research in the most general sense can be characterized as the application of scientific methods, techniques, and tools to the operations of systems so as to provide those in control with optimum solutions to problems. This definition is due to Churchman, Ackoff, and Arnoff [1]. Operational research began in a military context in the United Kingdom during World War II, and it was quickly taken up under the name operations research (OR) in the United States. After the war it evolved in connection with industrial organization, and its many techniques have found expanding areas of application in the United States, the United Kingdom, and in other industrial countries. Nowadays OR is used widely in industry for solving practical problems, such as planning, scheduling, inventory, transportation, and marketing. It also has various important applications in the fields of agricul-

ture, commerce, economics, education, public service, etc., and some techniques developed in OR have influenced other fields of science and technology.

B. Applications

Applications of OR to practical problems are often carried out by project teams because knowledge of disparate aspects of the problems are required, and interdisciplinary cooperation is indispensable. The following are the major phases of an OR project: (i) formulating the problem, (ii) constructing a mathematical model to represent the system under study, (iii) deriving a solution from the model, (iv) testing the model and the solution derived from it, (v) establishing controls over the solution and putting it to work (implementation).

When the mathematical model that has been constructed in phase (ii) is complicated and/or the amount of data to be handled is large, a digital computer is often utilized in phases (iii) and (iv).

C. Mathematical Models [2]

Typical mathematical models and tools that appear frequently in OR are:

(1) **Optimization model** (→ 264 Mathematical Programming). This model is characterized by one or more real-valued functions, which are called **objective functions**, to be minimized (or maximized) under some constraints. According to the number of objective functions, the types of objective functions, and the types of constraints, this model is classified roughly as follows: (i) **Single-objective model**, which includes linear, quadratic, convex, nonlinear and integer programming models (→ 215 Integer Programming, 255 Linear Programming, 292 Nonlinear Programming, 349 Quadratic Programming); (ii) **multi-objective model**; (iii) **stochastic programming model** (→ 408 Stochastic Programming); (iv) **dynamic programming model** (→ 127 Dynamic Programming); (v) **network flow model** (→ 281 Network Flow Problems).

(2) **Game-theoretic model** (→ 173 Game Theory). Game theory is a powerful tool for deriving a solution to practical problems in which more than one person is involved, with each player having different objectives.

(3) **Inventory model** (→ 227 Inventory Control). It is necessary for most firms to control stocks of resources, products, etc., in order to carry out their activities smoothly; various inventory models have been developed for such problems. Mathematically, optimization techniques (→ 264 Mathematical Program-

ming), Markovian decision processes (→ 127 Dynamic Programming, 261 Markov Processes), and basic probability theory are used to construct models for these problems.

(4) **Queuing model** (→ 260 Markov Chains H). In a telephone system, calls made when all the lines of the system are busy are lost. The problem of computing the **probability of loss** involved was first solved in the pioneering article on queuing theory by A. K. Erlang in 1917. For systems in which calls can be put on hold when all lines are busy, one deals with the waiting time distribution instead of the probability of loss. In the 1930s, F. Pollaczek and A. Ya. Khinchin gave explicit formulas for the characteristic function of the waiting time distribution. In many situations, such as in telephone systems, air and surface traffic, production lines, and computer systems, various congestion phenomena are often observed, and many kinds of queuing models are utilized to analyze the congestion. Mathematically, almost all such models are formulated by using Markov processes. For practical uses, approximation and computational methods are important as well as theoretical results.

(5) **Scheduling model** (→ 376 Scheduling and Production Planning). **Network scheduling** is used to schedule complicated projects (for example, construction of buildings) that consist of a large number of jobs related to each other in some natural order. **PERT** (program evaluation and review technique) and **CPM** (critical path method) are popular computational methods for this model (→ 281 Network Flow Problems). **Job shop scheduling** is used when we have m jobs and n machines and each job requires some of the machines in a given order. The model allows us to find an optimal order (in some certain sense) of jobs to be implemented on each machine.

(6) **Replacement model**. There are two typical cases. One is the **preventive maintenance model**, which is suitable when replacements are done under a routine policy because a replacement or a repair before a failure is more effective than after a failure. Probabilistic treatments are mainly used, and this model resembles those for queues and Markov processes. The other is a model for deciding whether to replace a piece of equipment in use. In this case, we need to compare costs of both used and new equipment, and evaluations of various types of present cost are important.

(7) **Simulation**. This is a numerical experiment in a simulated model of a phenomenon which we want to analyze. Simulation is one of the most popular techniques in OR.

(8) **Other models**. Besides the models listed above, many problems are formulated by way of various other models in OR. In modeling,

[†]probability theory, and mathematical [†]statistics, especially, [†]Markov chain, [†]multivariate analysis, [†]design of experiments, [†]regression analysis, [†]time series analysis, etc. often play important roles.

References

- [1] C. W. Churchman, R. L. Ackoff, and E. L. Arnoff, Introduction to operations research, Wiley, 1957.
- [2] H. M. Wagner, Principles of operations research, Prentice-Hall, 1975.

308 (XII.19) Operator Algebras

A. Preliminaries

Let \mathfrak{H} be a [†]Hilbert space. The set of [†]bounded linear operators on \mathfrak{H} is denoted by $\mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H}) = \mathcal{B}$. It contains the identity operator I . The notions of operator sum $A + B$, operator product AB , and [†]adjoint A^* are defined on it. A subalgebra of $\mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H})$ is called an **operator algebra**. In this article we consider mainly von Neumann algebras. For C^* -algebras \rightarrow 36 Banach Algebras G–K.

Any [†]Hermitian operator A (i.e., an operator such that $A = A^*$) has the property that (Ax, x) is always real for any $x \in \mathfrak{H}$. If $(Ax, x) \geq 0$ for any x , A is called **positive**, and we write $A \geq 0$. When Hermitian operators A and B satisfy $A - B \geq 0$, we write $A \geq B$. Thus we introduce an ordering $A \geq B$ between Hermitian operators. A set $\{A_\alpha\}$ of positive Hermitian operators is said to be an **increasing directed set** if any two of them A_α, A_β always have a common majorant A_γ , that is, $A_\alpha \leq A_\gamma$ and $A_\beta \leq A_\gamma$. If a Hermitian operator A satisfies $(Ax, x) = \sup(A_\alpha x, x)$ for such a set, it is called the **supremum** and is denoted by $\sup A_\alpha$. The supremum $\sup A_\alpha$ exists if and only if the $\sup(A_\alpha x, x)$ is finite for any x , and then A_α converges to A with respect to the weak and strong operator topologies.

B. Topologies in \mathcal{B}

Various topologies are introduced in $\mathcal{B} = \mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H})$: the [†]uniform operator topology, the [†]strong operator topology, and the [†]weak operator topology (\rightarrow 251 Linear Operators). These topologies are listed above in order of decreasing fineness. The operation in \mathcal{B} of taking the adjoint, $A \rightarrow A^*$, is continuous with respect to the uniform operator topology and

weak operator topology, but not with respect to the strong operator topology. The operation from $\mathcal{B} \times \mathcal{B}$ to \mathcal{B} of taking the product, $(A, B) \rightarrow AB$, is continuous with respect to the uniform operator topology, is continuous with respect to the strong operator topology when the first factor is restricted to a set bounded in the operator norm, but is not continuous on $\mathcal{B} \times \mathcal{B}$. It is continuous with respect to the weak operator topology when one of the factors is fixed (i.e., it is separately continuous). The set \mathcal{B} is a [†]Banach space with respect to the operator norm, or, more precisely, a [†] C^* -algebra. It is a [†]locally convex topological linear space with respect to the strong or weak operator topology.

The Banach space \mathcal{B} is the [†]dual of the Banach space \mathcal{B}_* of all [†]nuclear operators in \mathfrak{H} (\rightarrow 68 Compact and Nuclear Operators I). The weak* topology in \mathcal{B} as the dual of \mathcal{B}_* is called the **σ -weak topology**.

C. Von Neumann Algebras

A subset \mathcal{M} of \mathcal{B} is called a **$*$ -subalgebra** if it is a subalgebra (i.e., $A, B \in \mathcal{M}$ implies $\lambda A + \mu B, AB \in \mathcal{M}$) and contains the adjoint A^* of any $A \in \mathcal{M}$. The **commutant** \mathcal{A}' of a subset \mathcal{A} of \mathcal{B} is the set of operators that commute with both A and A^* for $A \in \mathcal{A}$. The commutant is a $*$ -subalgebra, and $\mathcal{A}' = \mathcal{A}'''$.

A **von Neumann algebra** \mathcal{M} is a $*$ -subalgebra of \mathcal{B} that is defined by one of the following four equivalent conditions: (i) \mathcal{M} is a $*$ -subalgebra of \mathcal{B} containing I , closed under the weak operator topology; (ii) \mathcal{M} is a $*$ -subalgebra of \mathcal{B} containing I , closed under the strong operator topology; (iii) \mathcal{M} is the commutant of a subset of \mathcal{B} (or, equivalently, $\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}'''$); (iv) \mathcal{M} is a $*$ -subalgebra of \mathcal{B} containing I , closed under the uniform operator topology, and, as a Banach space, coinciding with the conjugate space of some Banach space. Note that a $*$ -subalgebra of \mathcal{B} , closed under the uniform operator topology, is a C^* -algebra. Von Neumann algebras are also called **rings of operators** or **W^* -algebras**. The latter term is usually used for a C^* -algebra $*$ -isomorphic to a von Neumann algebra in contrast to a concrete von Neumann algebra.

The study of these algebras was started by J. von Neumann in 1929. He showed the equivalence of conditions (i)–(iii) (**von Neumann's density theorem**), and established a foundation for the theory named after him [1]. The notion of von Neumann algebras can be regarded as a natural extension of the notion of matrix algebras in a finite-dimensional space, and therein lies the importance of the theory. The

fourth condition of the definition was given by S. Sakai (*Pacific J. Math.*, 1956).

The following theorem is of use in the theory of von Neumann algebras: Given a *-subalgebra \mathcal{A} of \mathcal{B} containing I , its closure \mathcal{M} with respect to the weak or strong operator topology is von Neumann algebra; and when we denote the set of elements of operator norm ≤ 1 in \mathcal{A} (resp. \mathcal{M}) by \mathcal{A}_1 (resp. \mathcal{M}_1), \mathcal{M}_1 is likewise the closure of \mathcal{A}_1 with respect to the weak or strong operator topology (**Kaplan-sky's density theorem** (*Ann. Math.*, 1951)).

If E is a projection operator in a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} , then $E\mathcal{M}E = \{EAE \mid A \in \mathcal{M}\}$ is a *-subalgebra of \mathcal{B} closed with respect to the weak operator topology. It is not a von Neumann algebra because it does not contain I , but since its elements operate exclusively in the closed subspace $E\mathfrak{H}$, we can regard it as an algebra of operators on $E\mathfrak{H}$. In this sense, $E\mathcal{M}E$ can be regarded as a von Neumann algebra on $E\mathfrak{H}$, which we call the **reduced von Neumann algebra** of \mathcal{M} on $E\mathfrak{H}$ and write \mathcal{M}_E . If E is a projection operator in \mathcal{M}' , $E\mathcal{M}E = E\mathcal{M}$ restricted to the subspace $E\mathfrak{H}$ is called the **induced von Neumann algebra** of \mathcal{M} on $E\mathfrak{H}$ and is denoted also by \mathcal{M}_E . In the latter case, the mapping $A \in \mathcal{M} \rightarrow EAE \in \mathcal{M}_E$ is a *-homomorphism and is called the **induction** of \mathcal{M} onto \mathcal{M}_E .

The **tensor product** $\mathfrak{H}_1 \otimes \mathfrak{H}_2$ of two Hilbert spaces \mathfrak{H}_i ($i = 1, 2$) is the \dagger completion of their \dagger tensor product as a complex linear space equipped with the unique \dagger inner product satisfying $(f_1 \otimes f_2, g_1 \otimes g_2) = (f_1, g_1)_1 (f_2, g_2)_2$ for all $f_i, g_i \in \mathfrak{H}_i$. For any $A_i \in \mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H}_i)$, there exists a unique operator in $\mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H}_1 \otimes \mathfrak{H}_2)$ denoted by $A_1 \otimes A_2$ satisfying $(A_1 \otimes A_2)(f_1 \otimes f_2) = A_1 f_1 \otimes A_2 f_2$ for all $f_i \in \mathfrak{H}_i$. For von Neumann algebras $\mathcal{M}_i \subset \mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H}_i)$, the von Neumann algebra generated by $A_1 \otimes A_2$ with $A_i \in \mathcal{M}_i$ is denoted by $\mathcal{M}_1 \otimes \mathcal{M}_2$ and is called the **tensor product** of \mathcal{M}_1 and \mathcal{M}_2 . The *-isomorphism $A \in \mathcal{M} \rightarrow A \otimes I \in \mathcal{M} \otimes \mathbf{I}$, where \mathbf{I} is the trivial von Neumann algebra consisting solely of complex multiples of the identity operator, is called an **amplification**.

For two von Neumann algebras $\mathcal{M}_i \subset \mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H}_i)$ ($i = 1, 2$), a *-isomorphism π from \mathcal{M}_1 into \mathcal{M}_2 is called **spatial** if there exists a unitary (i.e., a bijective isometric linear) mapping U from \mathfrak{H}_1 to \mathfrak{H}_2 such that $UAU^* = \pi A$ for all $A \in \mathcal{M}_1$, and a *-homomorphism π is called **normal** if $\sup_\alpha \pi A_\alpha = \pi(\sup_\alpha A_\alpha)$ whenever A_α is a bounded increasing net in \mathcal{M} . Any normal *-homomorphism is continuous in the strong and weak operator topologies and is a product of an amplification, a spatial *-isomorphism, and an induction. Its kernel is of the form $E\mathcal{M}$, where E is a projection operator belonging to the **center** $\mathcal{Z} = \mathcal{M} \cap \mathcal{M}'$ of \mathcal{M} . This gives a com-

plete description of all possible **normal representations** (i.e., a normal *-homomorphism into some \mathcal{B}) of a von Neumann algebra.

D. States, Weights, and Traces

A **state** φ of a C^* -algebra \mathcal{A} is a complex-valued function on \mathcal{A} that is (1) complex linear: $\varphi(A+B) = \varphi(A) + \varphi(B)$, $\varphi(cA) = c\varphi(A)$ for $A, B \in \mathcal{A}$, $c \in \mathbb{C}$, (2) **positive**: $\varphi(A^*A) \geq 0$ for $A \in \mathcal{A}$, and (3) **normalized**: $\|\varphi\| = 1$ (equivalent to $\varphi(I) = 1$ if $I \in \mathcal{A}$). For any positive linear functional φ on \mathcal{A} , there exists a triplet $(\mathfrak{H}_\varphi, \pi_\varphi, \xi_\varphi)$ (unique up to the unitary equivalence) of a Hilbert space \mathfrak{H}_φ , a representation π_φ (i.e., a *-homomorphism into $\mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H}_\varphi)$) of \mathcal{A} , and a vector ξ_φ in \mathfrak{H}_φ such that $\varphi(A) = (\pi_\varphi(A)\xi_\varphi, \xi_\varphi)$ and \mathfrak{H}_φ is the closure of $\pi_\varphi(\mathcal{A})\xi_\varphi$. The space \mathfrak{H}_φ is constructed by defining the inner product $(\eta(A), \eta(B)) = \varphi(B^*A)$ in the quotient of \mathcal{A} by its left ideal $\{A \mid \varphi(A^*A) = 0\}$, where η is the quotient mapping, and by completion. Then π_φ is defined by $\pi_\varphi(A)\eta(B) = \eta(AB)$. This is called the **GNS construction** after its originators I. M. Gel'fand, M. A. Naïmark, and I. E. Siegel.

A **weight** φ on a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} is a function defined on the positive elements of \mathcal{M} , with positive real or infinite values, which is additive and homogeneous ($\varphi(A+B) = \varphi(A) + \varphi(B)$ and $\varphi(\lambda A) = \lambda\varphi(A)$ for all $A, B \in \mathcal{M}$ and $\lambda \geq 0$ with the convention $0 \cdot \infty = 0$ and $\infty + a = \infty$). It is said to be **faithful** if it does not vanish except for $\varphi(0) = 0$, **normal** if $\varphi(A) = \sup \varphi(A_\alpha)$ whenever A_α is an increasing net of positive elements of \mathcal{M} and $A = \sup A_\alpha$, and **semifinite** if the left ideal \mathfrak{N}_φ , consisting of all elements $A \in \mathcal{M}$ for which $\varphi(A^*A)$ is finite, has the property that the linear span \mathfrak{M}_φ of $\mathfrak{N}_\varphi^* \mathfrak{N}_\varphi$ is dense in \mathcal{M} . The restriction of φ to positive elements of \mathfrak{M}_φ has a unique extension to a linear functional on \mathfrak{M}_φ , which we denote by the same letter φ . Canonically associated with a normal semifinite weight φ , there exists a Hilbert space \mathfrak{H}_φ , a normal *-representation π_φ of \mathcal{M} , and a complex linear mapping η from \mathfrak{N}_φ into a dense subset of \mathfrak{H}_φ such that $(\eta(B'), \eta(B)) = \varphi(B^*B)$, and $\pi_\varphi(A)\eta(B) = \eta(AB)$, where $B, B' \in \mathfrak{N}_\varphi$ and $A \in \mathcal{M}$. If φ is **finite** (i.e., $\mathfrak{N}_\varphi = \mathcal{M}$), then its extension to \mathcal{M} is a positive linear functional for which the triplet $(\mathfrak{H}_\varphi, \pi_\varphi, \eta(1))$ is given by the GNS construction.

The linear span of all normal states of a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} is a norm-closed subspace of its dual \mathcal{M}^* , called its **predual** and denoted by \mathcal{M}_* , because \mathcal{M} turns out to be the dual of \mathcal{M}_* .

A **trace** t on a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} is a weight satisfying $t(UAU^*) = t(A)$ for U unitary

in \mathcal{M} and for all positive A in \mathcal{M} (equivalently, $t(A^*A) = t(AA^*)$ for all $A \in \mathcal{M}$).

E. The von Neumann Classification

A von Neumann algebra for which a semi-finite normal trace does not exist is called a **purely infinite** von Neumann algebra or von Neumann algebra of **type III**. In contrast to this, a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} is called **semifinite** (resp. **finite**) if for each positive Hermitian operator $A (\neq 0)$ in \mathcal{M} there is a semi-finite (resp. finite) normal trace t such that $t(A) \neq 0$. Every Abelian von Neumann algebra is finite. If there are no central projection operators $E \neq 0$ such that \mathcal{M}_E is finite, \mathcal{M} is called **properly infinite**. Purely infinite \mathcal{M} and $\mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H})$ for infinite \mathfrak{H} , for example, are properly infinite. A nonzero projection operator E in \mathcal{M} is called **Abelian** when \mathcal{M}_E is Abelian. We call \mathcal{M} a von Neumann algebra of **type I** (or **discrete**) when it contains an Abelian projection E for which I is the only central projection P covering E (i.e., $E \leq P$). A von Neumann algebra is of **type II** if it is semifinite and contains no Abelian projection. A von Neumann algebra of type II is called of **type II₁** if it is finite and of **type II_∞** if it is properly infinite. A finite von Neumann algebra is also characterized as a von Neumann algebra in which the operation of taking the adjoint is continuous with respect to the strong operator topology on bounded spheres (Sakai, *Proc. Japan Acad.*, 1957). A properly infinite von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} is characterized by the property that \mathcal{M} and $\mathcal{M} \otimes \mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H})$ for any separable \mathfrak{H} is *-isomorphic.

Given a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} , there exist mutually orthogonal projections E_I, E_{II}, E_{III} in the center \mathcal{Z} of \mathcal{M} such that $E_I + E_{II} + E_{III} = I$, and $\mathcal{M}_{E_I}, \mathcal{M}_{E_{II}}, \mathcal{M}_{E_{III}}$ are von Neumann algebras of type I, type II, type III, respectively. This decomposition is unique. There also exist unique central projections E_f and E_i such that \mathcal{M}_{E_f} is finite, \mathcal{M}_{E_i} is properly infinite, and $E_f + E_i = I$. The two decompositions can be combined. (If some of the projections E are 0, the condition on the corresponding \mathcal{M}_E is to be waived.)

F. Factors

A von Neumann algebra whose center consists exclusively of scalar multiples of the identity operator is called a **factor**. Von Neumann's reduction theory (\rightarrow Section G) reduces the study of arbitrary von Neumann algebras on a separable Hilbert space more or less to the study of factors. Factors are classified into **types I_n** ($n = \infty, 1, 2, \dots$), **II₁** (i.e., of type II and

finite), **II_∞** (i.e., of type II and not finite), and **III**. A factor of type **I_n** is isomorphic to the algebra $\mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H})$ of all bounded operators on an n -dimensional Hilbert space \mathfrak{H} . Since the discovery of two nonisomorphic examples of factors of type **II₁** by F. J. Murray and von Neumann (1943), classification of factors has been a central problem in the theory of von Neumann algebras. After 1967, great progress was made in the investigation of isomorphism classes of factors, and we have uncountably many nonisomorphic examples of factors of types **II₁**, **II_∞**, and **III**. After the discovery of the third to ninth nonisomorphic examples of factors of type **II₁** by J. Schwartz (1963) (the third example, 1963), W. Ching (the fourth), Sakai (the fifth), J. Dixmier and E. C. Lance (the sixth and seventh), and G. Zeller-Meier (the eighth and ninth), D. McDuff showed that there exist countably many nonisomorphic examples of factors of type **II₁**, and finally McDuff (*Ann. Math.*, 1969) and Sakai (*J. Functional Anal.*, 1970) showed the existence of uncountably many nonisomorphic examples of factors of type **II₁**. For type **III** factors \rightarrow Section I.

G. The Integral Direct Sum and Decomposition into Factors

The Hilbert spaces considered in this section are all \dagger separable. Let $(\mathfrak{M}, \mathcal{E}, \mu)$ be a \dagger measure space; with each $\zeta \in \mathfrak{M}$ we associate a Hilbert space $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$. We consider functions $x(\zeta)$ on \mathfrak{M} whose values are in $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$ for each ζ . Let \mathbf{K} be a set of these functions having the following properties: (i) $\|x(\zeta)\|$ is measurable for $x(\zeta) \in \mathbf{K}$; (ii) if for a function $y(\zeta)$, the numerical function $(x(\zeta), y(\zeta))$ is measurable any $x(\zeta) \in \mathbf{K}$, then $y(\zeta) \in \mathbf{K}$; (iii) there is a countable family $\{x_1(\zeta), x_2(\zeta), \dots\}$ of functions in \mathbf{K} such that for each fixed $\zeta \in \mathfrak{M}$, the set $\{x_1(\zeta), x_2(\zeta), \dots\}$ is dense in $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$. Then \mathbf{K} is a linear space. We call each function in \mathbf{K} a **measurable vector function**. We introduce in the set of measurable vector functions $x(\zeta)$ with

$$\int \|x(\zeta)\|^2 d\mu(\zeta) < \infty$$

an equivalence relation by defining $x(\zeta)$ and $y(\zeta)$ as equivalent when

$$\int \|x(\zeta) - y(\zeta)\|^2 d\mu(\zeta) = 0.$$

Thus we obtain a space of equivalence classes which we denote by \mathfrak{S} . \mathfrak{S} is a Hilbert space with the inner product

$$(x, y) = \int (x(\zeta), y(\zeta)) d\mu(\zeta),$$

which is called the **integral direct sum** (or **direct integral**) of $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$. An operator function $A(\zeta)$ that associates with each $\zeta \in \mathfrak{M}$ a bounded linear operator $A(\zeta)$ on $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$ is called **measurable** if for any measurable $x(\zeta)$, $A(\zeta)x(\zeta)$ is also measurable. If, moreover, $\|A(\zeta)\|$ is bounded, $A(\zeta)$ transforms a function in \mathfrak{H} to a function in \mathfrak{H} and thus defines a bounded linear operator on \mathfrak{H} . This operator is called the **integral direct sum** (or **direct integral**) of $A(\zeta)$, and an operator on \mathfrak{H} that can be reduced to this form is called **decomposable**.

Generally, let \mathfrak{H} be a Hilbert space, and consider an Abelian von Neumann algebra \mathcal{A} on \mathfrak{H} . Then we construct a measure space $(\mathfrak{M}, \mathcal{E}, \mu)$ and represent \mathcal{A} as the set of bounded measurable functions on \mathfrak{M} . (This is possible in different ways. The Gelfand representation is an example.) Then a Hilbert space $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$ can be constructed so that \mathfrak{H} is represented as the integral direct sum of $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$. Operators in \mathcal{A} are all decomposable and are called **diagonalizable**. A von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} on \mathfrak{H} whose elements are all decomposable is characterized by $\mathcal{M} \subset \mathcal{A}$. The $A(\zeta)$ yielded by the decomposition of operators A in \mathcal{M} generate a von Neumann algebra $\mathcal{M}(\zeta)$ on $\mathfrak{H}(\zeta)$. If we take as \mathcal{A} the center \mathcal{Z} of \mathcal{M} , then almost all the $\mathcal{M}(\zeta)$ are factors (**von Neumann's reduction theory**), and if we take as \mathcal{A} a maximal Abelian von Neumann algebra contained in \mathcal{M} , then almost all the $\mathcal{M}(\zeta)$ are type I factors (F. I. Mautner, *Ann. Math.*, 1950).

H. Tomita-Takesaki Theory

Motivated by the problem of proving the commutant theorem for tensor products (i.e., $(\mathcal{M}_1 \otimes \mathcal{M}_2)' = \mathcal{M}_1' \otimes \mathcal{M}_2'$), which remained unsolved for algebras of type III up until that time, Tomita succeeded in 1967, after years of effort, in generalizing the theory of Hilbert algebras, previously developed only for semifinite von Neumann algebras. The most important ingredient of this theory lies in certain one-parameter groups of $*$ -automorphisms of a von Neumann algebra, called modular automorphisms (see below), each one-parameter group of modular automorphisms being intrinsically associated with a faithful semifinite normal weight of the algebra. Tomita's theory was perfected by Takesaki [13], who also showed that modular automorphisms satisfy (and are characterized by) a condition originally introduced in statistical mechanics by the physicists R. Kubo, P. C. Martin, and J. Schwinger and accordingly known as the KMS condition. In the mathematical foundations of statistical mechanics, this condition characterizes equilibrium states of a physical

system for a given one-parameter group of automorphisms (of a C^* -algebra) describing the time-development of the system. It was a fortunate coincidence that this condition was formulated in a so-called C^* -algebra approach to statistical mechanics by R. Haag, N. M. Hugenholtz, and M. Winnink [14] at about the same time that Tomita's work appeared in 1967. The original proofs of the Tomita-Takesaki theory have been simplified considerably by the work of M. Rieffel [16] and A. Van Daele [15]. Deeper insight into the significance of modular automorphisms is also provided by the work of A. Connes [19], showing that the group of modular automorphisms (up to inner automorphisms) is intrinsic to the von Neumann algebra (i.e., independent of the weight) and belongs to the center of $\text{Out } \mathcal{M}$ (the group $\text{Aut } \mathcal{M}$ of all $*$ -automorphisms of the von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} modulo the subgroup $\text{Int } \mathcal{M}$ of all inner $*$ -automorphisms).

Some of the basic definitions and results of the **Tomita-Takesaki theory** are as follows. If φ is a normal semifinite faithful weight on \mathcal{M} , the antilinear operator S_φ , defined on a dense subset $\eta(\mathfrak{N}_\varphi \cap \mathfrak{N}_\varphi^*)$ of \mathfrak{H}_φ (\rightarrow Section D) by the relation $S_\varphi \eta(A) = \eta(A^*)$, is \dagger -closable and the polar decomposition $\overline{S}_\varphi = J_\varphi \Delta_\varphi^{1/2}$ of its closure defines a positive self-adjoint operator Δ_φ , called a **modular operator**, and an antiunitary involution J_φ . The principal results of the Tomita-Takesaki theory are (1) if $x \in \mathcal{M}$, then $\sigma_t^\varphi(A) \equiv \Delta_\varphi^{it} A \Delta_\varphi^{-it} \in \mathcal{M}$ for all real t , and this defines a continuous one-parameter group of $*$ -automorphisms σ_t^φ of \mathcal{M} , called **modular automorphisms**, and (2) if $A \in \mathcal{M}$, then $j_\varphi(A) \equiv J_\varphi A J_\varphi \in \mathcal{M}'$, and j_φ is a conjugate-linear isomorphism of \mathcal{M} onto \mathcal{M}' . A weight φ on \mathcal{M} is said to satisfy the **KMS condition** at β (a real number) relative to a one-parameter group of $*$ -automorphisms σ_t of \mathcal{M} if, for every pair $A, B \in \mathfrak{N}_\varphi \cap \mathfrak{N}_\varphi^*$, there exists a bounded continuous function $F(z)$ (depending on A, B), on $0 \leq \text{Im } z \leq \beta$ holomorphic in $0 < \text{Im } z < \beta$ and such that $F(t) = \varphi(A \sigma_t(B))$ and $F(t + i\beta) = \varphi(\sigma_t(B)A)$. A given one-parameter group σ_t coincides with a group of modular automorphisms σ_t^φ if and only if φ satisfies the KMS condition at $\beta = -1$ relative to σ_t . (In statistical mechanics, $\beta = (kT)^{-1}$, where k is the Boltzmann constant and T the absolute temperature of the system.)

I. Structure and Classification of Factors of Type III

At the Baton Rouge Conference in 1967, R. T. Powers reported his results [17] on non-isomorphism of the one-parameter family

of factors of type III (now called **Powers's factors**), which had been constructed by von Neumann in 1938 in terms of an infinite tensor product of factors of type I (abbreviated as **ITPFI**). Prior to Powers's work only three different kinds of factors of type III, along with the same number of factors of type II_1 , had been distinguished. A systematic classification of ITPFIs was subsequently given by H. Araki and E. J. Woods [18] in terms of two invariants, i.e., the **asymptotic ratio set** $r_\infty(\mathcal{M})$ and the **ρ -set** $\rho(\mathcal{M})$ of the von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} . Using the Tomita-Takesaki theory, Connes [19] introduced two invariants, namely the **S -set** $S(\mathcal{M})$ (the intersection of the spectra of all modular operators) and the **T -set** $T(\mathcal{M})$ (the set of all real t for which the modular automorphism σ_t^φ is inner), and, when \mathcal{M} is an ITPFI, proved the equality $S(\mathcal{M}) = r_\infty(\mathcal{M})$ and the relation $T(\mathcal{M}) = 2\pi |\log \rho(\mathcal{M})|^{-1}$. The S -set $S(\mathcal{M})$ of a factor of type III on a separable Hilbert space is either the set of all non-negative reals (**type III₁**), the set of all integral powers of λ (where $0 < \lambda < 1$) and 0 (**type III_λ**), or the set $\{0, 1\}$ (**type III₀**). The work of Araki and Woods shows that there exists only one ITPFI of type III_λ for each $\lambda \in (0, 1)$ (the examples of Powers) as well as for $\lambda = 1$, while there exist continuously many ITPFIs of type III_0 . Woods [20] has shown that the classification of ITPFIs of type III_0 is not smooth.

A structural analysis of factors of type III, given independently by Connes [19], Takesaki (*Acta Math.*, 1973), and Araki (*Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 1973) expressed independently a certain class of factors of type III as a kind of crossed product of semifinite von Neumann algebras with their injective endomorphisms (automorphism in the case of Connes). These analyses led Takesaki [21] to the discovery of a duality theorem for crossed products of von Neumann algebras with locally compact groups of their $*$ -automorphisms (\rightarrow Section J) and its application to the following **structure theorem for von Neumann algebras of type III**. The crossed product of a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} with the group of modular automorphisms σ_t^φ is a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{N} of type II_∞ , with a canonical action θ_t of the dual group as a one-parameter group of $*$ -automorphisms which is trace-scaling, i.e., $\tau \circ \theta_t = e^{-t} \tau$ for some faithful normal trace τ . If \mathcal{M} is properly infinite, the crossed product of \mathcal{N} with θ_t is isomorphic to the original von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} . In particular, any von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} of type III can be written as the crossed product of a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{N} of type II_∞ with a one-parameter group of trace-scaling $*$ -automorphisms θ_t . The isomorphism class of \mathcal{M} is determined by the isomorphism class of \mathcal{N} together with the

conjugacy class of θ_t modulo inner automorphisms. The restriction $\tilde{\theta}_t$ of θ_t to the center \mathcal{Z} of \mathcal{N} is of special importance. \mathcal{M} is a factor if and only if $\tilde{\theta}_t$ is ergodic. In that case, \mathcal{M} is of type III_1 if \mathcal{N} is a factor, \mathcal{M} is of type III_λ , $0 < \lambda < 1$, if $\tilde{\theta}_t$ is periodic with period $-\log \lambda$, and \mathcal{M} is of type III_0 if $\tilde{\theta}_t$ is aperiodic and not isomorphic to the one-parameter group of $*$ -automorphisms of $L_\infty(\mathbf{R})$ induced by the translations of the real line \mathbf{R} . (The excluded case does not occur for \mathcal{M} of type III.)

A von Neumann algebra on a separable Hilbert space is called **approximately finite-dimensional** (or **approximately finite** or **hyperfinite**) if it is generated by an increasing sequence of finite-dimensional $*$ -subalgebras. This class of von Neumann algebras includes many important examples, such as ITPFI and the von Neumann algebra generated by any representation of canonical commutation (or anticommutation) relations on a separable Hilbert space. The classification of approximately finite-dimensional factors is almost complete. In fact the uniqueness of an approximately finite-dimensional factor of type II_1 has been known since the work of von Neumann. It is called the **hyperfinite factor**. The uniqueness of approximately finite-dimensional factors of type II_∞ (which is then the tensor product of the hyperfinite factor with $\mathcal{B}(\mathfrak{H})$) and of type III_λ , $0 < \lambda < 1$, (which are then Powers's factors) has been demonstrated by Connes [22]. Approximately finite-dimensional factors of type III_0 are classified exactly by the isomorphism classes of the ergodic groups $\tilde{\theta}_t$ of $*$ -automorphisms of commutative von Neumann algebras \mathcal{Z} . Any such factor is a **Krieger's factor**, i.e., a crossed product of a commutative von Neumann algebra with a single $*$ -automorphism. Examples of such factors have been extensively studied by Krieger, who has also shown [23] that isomorphism of a Krieger's factor is equivalent to weak equivalence of the associated nonsingular transformation of the standard measure space.

A von Neumann algebra on a separable Hilbert space is approximately finite-dimensional if and only if it is injective (\rightarrow 36 Banach Algebras H).

J. Crossed Products

The **crossed product** $\mathcal{M} \otimes_\alpha G$ of a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} (acting on a Hilbert space \mathfrak{H}) and a locally compact Abelian group G relative to a continuous action α of G on \mathcal{M} (by $*$ -automorphisms α_g , $g \in G$) is the von Neumann algebra \mathcal{N} generated by the operators $\pi(A)$, $A \in \mathcal{M}$ and $\lambda(h)$, $h \in G$, defined on the Hilbert space $L_2(G, \mathfrak{H})$ of all \mathfrak{H} -valued L_2 -

functions on G (relative to the Haar measure) by

$$[\pi(A)\xi](g) = \alpha_g^{-1}(A)\xi(g),$$

$$[\lambda(h)\xi](g) = \xi(h^{-1}g),$$

where $\xi \in L_2(G, \mathfrak{H})$. The canonical action $\hat{\alpha}$ of the dual \hat{G} on \mathcal{N} is defined by $\hat{\alpha}_p(B) = \mu(p)B\mu(p)^*$ for $B \in \mathcal{N}$ and $p \in \hat{G}$, where $\mu(p)$ is defined by $[\mu(p)\xi](g) = \langle g, p \rangle \xi(g)$. The **duality theorem of Takesaki** [21] asserts that $[\mathcal{M} \otimes_\alpha G] \otimes_\alpha \hat{G}$ is isomorphic to $\mathcal{M} \otimes \mathcal{B}(L_2(G))$, where the second factor $\mathcal{B}(L_2(G))$ is the algebra of all bounded linear operators on $L_2(G)$.

K. Natural Positive Cone

The closure V^α of the set of vectors $\Delta_\phi^\alpha \eta(A)$ for all positive A in $\mathfrak{N}_\phi \cap \mathfrak{N}_\phi^*$ reflects certain properties of the von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} for $0 \leq \alpha \leq 1/2$ [24, 25]. In particular, $V^{1/4}$ is called the **natural positive cone**. It is a self-dual closed convex cone, and is intrinsic to the von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} (i.e., independent of the weight ϕ). Every normal positive linear functional ψ on \mathcal{M} has a unique representative $\xi(\psi)$ in this cone (i.e., $\psi(A) = (\pi_\phi(A)\xi(\psi), \xi(\psi))$), and the mapping ξ is a concave, monotone, bijective homeomorphism, homogeneous of degree $1/2$. The group of all $*$ -automorphisms of \mathcal{M} has a natural unitary representation $U(g)$, $g \in \text{Aut } \mathcal{M}$, satisfying the relations $U(g)AU(g)^* = g(A)$, $U(g)\xi(\phi) = \xi(\phi \circ g^{-1})$.

L. C^* -Algebras and von Neumann Algebras

Let a C^* -algebra \mathcal{A} be given. A $*$ -representation $x \rightarrow T_x$ gives rise to a von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} , generated by T_x , $x \in \mathcal{A}$. The type of this representation is defined according to the type of \mathcal{M} . A C^* -algebra is called a **C^* -algebra of type I** if its $*$ -representations are always of type I. It is known that this class is exactly the class of GCR algebras (\rightarrow 36 Banach Algebras H). It is also known that a separable non-type I C^* -algebra has a representation of type II and a general non-type I C^* -algebra has a representation of type III (J. Glimm, *Ann. Math.*, 1961; Sakai [8]).

For a C^* -algebra \mathcal{A} , all its representations generate \dagger injective von Neumann algebras if and only if \mathcal{A} is \dagger nuclear [26, 27].

M. Topological Groups and von Neumann Algebras

Consider a unitary representation $g \rightarrow U_g$ of a locally compact Hausdorff group G (\rightarrow 423

Topological Groups). If this representation is a \dagger factor representation, the type of this representation is defined according to the type of the von Neumann algebra \mathcal{M} generated by U_g , $g \in G$. A \dagger group of type I is a group whose factor-representations are all of type I. For example, connected semisimple Lie groups and connected nilpotent Lie groups are of type I (Harish-Chandra, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 1953; J. M. G. Fell, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 1962). Examples of groups that are not of type I are known (\rightarrow 437 Unitary Representation E).

References

- [1] J. von Neumann, Collected works II, III, Pergamon, 1961.
- [2] W. Arveson, An invitation to C^* -algebras, Springer, 1976.
- [3] O. Bratteli and D. W. Robinson, Operator algebras and quantum statistical mechanics, Springer, 1979.
- [4] J. Dixmier, Von Neumann algebras, North-Holland, 1981.
- [5] J. Dixmier, Les C^* -algèbres et leurs représentations, Gauthier-Villars, 1964.
- [6] I. Kaplansky, Rings of operators, Benjamin, 1968.
- [7] G. K. Pedersen, C^* -algebras and their automorphism groups, Academic Press, 1979.
- [8] S. Sakai, C^* -algebras and W^* -algebras, Springer, 1971.
- [9] J. T. Schwartz, W^* -algebras, Gordon & Breach, 1967.
- [10] S. Stratila and L. Zsido, Lectures on von Neumann algebras, Editura Academiei/Abacus Press, 1975.
- [11] M. Takesaki, Theory of operator algebras I, Springer, 1979.
- [12] Y. Nakagami and M. Takesaki, Duality for crossed products of von Neumann algebras, Lecture notes in math. 731, Springer, 1979.
- [13] M. Takesaki, Tomita's theory of modular Hilbert algebras and its applications, Lecture notes in math. 128, Springer, 1970.
- [14] R. Haag, N. M. Hugenholtz, and M. Winnink, On the equilibrium states in quantum statistical mechanics, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 5 (1967), 215–236.
- [15] A. Van Daele, A new approach to the Tomita-Takesaki theory of generalized Hilbert algebras, *J. Functional Anal.*, 15 (1974), 378–393.
- [16] M. Rieffel and A. van Daele, A bounded approach to Tomita-Takesaki theory, *Pacific J. Math.*, 69 (1977), 187–221.
- [17] R. T. Powers, Representations of uniformly hyperfinite algebras and their asso-

- ciated von Neumann rings, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 86 (1967), 138–171.
- [18] H. Araki and E. J. Woods, A classification of factors, *Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, (A) 4 (1968), 51–130.
- [19] A. Connes, Une classification des facteurs de type III, *Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup.*, (4) 6 (1973), 133–252.
- [20] E. J. Woods, The classification of factors is not smooth, *Canad. J. Math.*, 25 (1973), 96–102.
- [21] M. Takesaki, Duality for crossed products and the structure of von Neumann algebras of type III, *Acta Math.*, 131 (1973), 249–310.
- [22] A. Connes, Classification of injective factors, *Ann. Math.*, 104 (1976), 73–115.
- [23] W. Krieger, On ergodic flows and the isomorphism of factors, *Math. Ann.*, 223 (1976), 19–70.
- [24] H. Araki, Some properties of modular conjugation operators of von Neumann algebras and a non-commutative Radon-Nikodym theorem with a chain rule. *Pacific J. Math.*, 50 (1974), 309–354.
- [25] A. Connes, Caractérisation des espaces vectoriels ordonnés sous-jacents aux algèbres de von Neumann, *Ann. Inst. Fourier*, 24, Fasc. 4 (1974), 127–156.
- [26] M. Choi and E. Effros, Separable nuclear C^* -algebras and injectivity, *Duke Math. J.*, 43 (1976), 309–322.
- [27] M. Choi and E. Effros, Nuclear C^* -algebras and injectivity: The general case, *Indiana Univ. Math. J.*, 26 (1977), 443–446.
- [28] R. V. Kadison and J. R. Ringrose, *Fundamentals of the theory of operators I*, Academic Press, 1983.
- [29] S. Stratila, *Modular theory in operator algebras*, Editura Academiei/Abacus Press, 1981.

309 (XX.7) Orbit Determination

A. General Remarks

The purposes of the theory of **orbit determination** are (1) to study properties of orbits of celestial bodies, (2) to determine orbital elements from observed positions of the celestial bodies, and (3) to compute their predicted positions utilizing the orbital elements. Celestial bodies to which the theory is applied are mainly planets, asteroids, comets, satellites, and artificial satellites in the solar system, although orbits of meteors and visual, photo-

metric, and eclipsing binaries can be determined by similar methods.

B. Kepler's Orbital Elements

Consider, for example, an asteroid moving on an ellipse with one focus at the sun. The elliptic orbit is fixed by the initial conditions of the motion or the integration constants of the †Hamilton-Jacobi equation (→ 55 *Celestial Mechanics*) and is described by **Kepler's orbital elements** a , e , ω , i , Ω , and t_0 (Fig. 1).

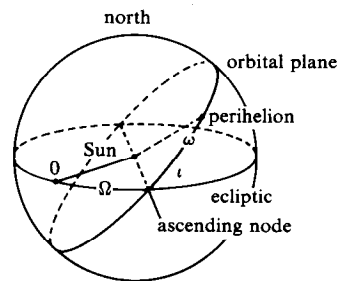


Fig. 1
Orbital elements

The size and shape of the ellipse are determined by the semimajor axis (half the †major axis) a and the †eccentricity e , while the argument ω of perihelion, measured from the ascending node to the perihelion, shows the direction of the major axis. (Sometimes, we adopt as one of the main parameters the **perihelion distance** $q = a(1 - e)$ instead of the semimajor axis a .) The position of the orbital plane is determined by the inclination angle i to the ecliptic and the longitude Ω of the ascending node, and then the position of the asteroid on the orbit is determined by the time t_0 of the perihelion passage. The period T of one revolution, or **mean motion** $n = 2\pi/T$, which is the mean angular velocity, is computed by Kepler's third law $n^2 a^3 = \mu$, with μ a constant depending on the mass of the asteroid. The mean motion is a fundamental frequency in the solution of the Hamilton-Jacobi equation and is obtained by differentiating the energy constant $-\mu/2a$ with respect to an action variable $\sqrt{\mu a}$.

To express the position of the asteroid on the ellipse as a function of time, we use the **true anomaly** v , which is the angular distance of the asteroid from the perihelion, the **eccentric anomaly** E , and the **mean anomaly** $M = n(t - t_0)$. Of these three anomalies the mean anomaly can be derived directly from Kepler's elements, although it must be transformed to the true anomaly or to the eccentric anomaly when we compute the coordinates of the aster-

oid. Kepler's equation

$$E - e \sin E = M \quad (1)$$

holds between E and M . Solving this equation, we obtain an expression for E as a function of M :

$$E = M + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{2}{n} J_n(ne) \sin nM, \quad (2)$$

where J_n is the †Bessel function of order n . However, in practical computations, we often solve equation (1) directly by numerical methods or by using tables.

C. Orbit Determination

An astrometric observation of a celestial body usually consists of measurements of two coordinates (right ascension and declination) on the celestial sphere. Therefore, to derive six orbital elements, three sets of observations should be made at three moments separated by appropriate time intervals. If the topocentric distance of the celestial body is known, the orbital elements can be computed directly from observations. However, since the distance is not usually known, special methods have had to be developed. A method for orbit determination was worked out by C. F. †Gauss at the beginning of the 19th century to find the orbit of Ceres, the first asteroid to be discovered. Although the topocentric distances are not known, we know that orbits of asteroids are planar, and Kepler's second law, the law of conservation of areal velocity, holds approximately. Therefore we can assume that the area of the triangle made by the sun and the two positions of the asteroid observed at different moments is proportional to the corresponding time interval. Using this property of the orbit we can derive the topocentric distance and then the orbital elements. This method is called the indirect method, and similar methods can be developed for parabolic and hyperbolic orbits.

D. Osculating Elements and Orbit Improvement

For the †two-body problem the orbit is a fixed and invariable ellipse, and therefore Kepler's orbital elements are constants. On the other hand, when gravitational interactions from other bodies cannot be disregarded, the orbital elements are found to be variable by computing the †perturbations by the †method of variation of constants. The perturbations are expressed as sums of periodic, †secular, and long-periodic terms.

Because of the perturbations, the orbit deviates from the fixed ellipse, although at every moment the instantaneous velocity and position of the asteroid determines an ellipse. The orbital elements of the ellipse thus defined at each moment, called **osculating elements**, are variable with time. To compute perturbations that cause this change of osculating elements, it is necessary to observe the initial conditions of motion, i.e., the osculating elements at the initial moment. During a time interval shorter than the period of one revolution, the variations of the osculating elements are usually very small. Therefore, by three sets of observations made at three moments at short intervals, it is possible to determine the orbital elements that can be identified with the osculating elements observed at the mean moment. However, if the intervals are very short, errors in the determined values often are very large, and it becomes necessary to carry out observations at distant moments also. When such additional observations are made, those data are compared with the respective values that follow from the initial observations, and the perturbations computed from them; then the method of least squares is used to improve the estimation of the orbital elements.

E. Artificial Satellites

Since the periods of revolution of asteroids are of the order of a few years, the osculating elements change very little in a few weeks. On the other hand, for artificial satellites moving around the earth, the periodic as well as secular perturbations become very large after a few hours because the period of revolution may be as short as two hours. Therefore, to determine orbital elements for artificial satellites, observed positions should be corrected by subtracting the effects of periodic perturbations computed from approximate orbital elements already known. By using the observations thus corrected, mean orbital elements are derived by the method of orbit improvement. The approximate orbital elements can be computed if the launching conditions of the satellites are known. In this manner, mean orbital elements can be derived every day, and variations of the mean orbital elements, or amounts of secular perturbations, for a certain period (say, for 100 days) are found. From them, information on atmospheric density and the gravitational potential of the earth are derived. It should be remarked that for artificial satellites distance measurements have been made by radar, and velocity determinations have been made by measuring the Doppler effect.

For satellites of other planets, measurements of two coordinates with respect to the centers of the planets are made. Masses of planets can be computed by Kepler's third law when the orbital elements of satellites are known, and gravitational potentials of the planets can be determined from their secular perturbations.

F. Binaries

In the study of visual binaries, methods similar to those for satellites can be applied, although the exact estimation of the distances to binaries is often impossible. For photometric binaries radial components of velocities are derived by measuring the Doppler effect; and for eclipsing binaries important information, such as their masses, densities, and sizes, as well as data regarding their internal constitutions, can be derived from the observed orbital elements.

References

- [1] G. Stracke, *Bahnbestimmung der Planeten und Kometen*, Springer, 1929.
- [2] A. D. Dubyago, *The determination of orbits*, Macmillan, 1961.
- [3] C. F. Gauss, *Theoria motus*, Dover, 1963.
- [4] P. R. Escobal, *Methods of orbit determination*, Wiley, 1965.

310 (XII.4) Ordered Linear Spaces

A. History

Many spaces used in functional analysis, such as ^{*}Hilbert spaces, ^{*}Banach spaces, and ^{*}topological linear spaces, are generalizations of Euclidean spaces, where the leading idea has been to generalize the distance in Euclidean spaces in various ways. On the other hand, generalizing the order concept for real numbers has led to spaces of another kind: ordered linear spaces and vector lattices. The theory of vector lattices was presented in a lecture by F. Riesz at the International Congress of Mathematicians in 1928 [1] and has been developed by many authors. Among them we cite H. Freudenthal, L. V. Kantorovitch (*Mat. Sb.*, 2 (44) (1937)), Riesz (*Ann. Math.*, (2) 41 (1940)), S. Kakutani, F. Bohnenblust, G. Birkhoff [2], H. Nakano [3], B. C. Vulikh [5], and H. H. Schaefer [8]. Vector lattices have been used in lattice-theoretic treatments of integration (→

Section I), ^{*}spectral resolution, and ^{*}ergodic theory. The central notion is Banach lattices (→ Section F), but the theory has been extended to the case where E is a ^{*}locally convex topological linear space with the structure of a vector lattice [6–8].

B. Definitions

A real ^{*}linear space E is said to be an **ordered linear space** if E is supplied with an ^{*}order relation \geq with the following two properties: (i) $x \geq y \Rightarrow x + z \geq y + z$; (ii) $x \geq y$ and $\lambda \geq 0$ (λ is a real number) $\Rightarrow \lambda x \geq \lambda y$.

If, in addition, E forms a ^{*}lattice under this order \geq , we call E a **vector lattice (Riesz space or lattice ordered linear space)**.

For Sections B through E, we assume E to be a vector lattice. For any $x, y \in E$, the ^{*}join and ^{*}meet of x, y are denoted by $x \vee y$ and $x \wedge y$ respectively. The following relations are obvious:

$$(x + z) \vee (y + z) = (x \vee y) + z,$$

$$(x + z) \wedge (y + z) = (x \wedge y) + z,$$

$$\lambda x \vee \lambda y = \lambda(x \vee y), \quad \lambda x \wedge \lambda y = \lambda(x \wedge y) \quad (\lambda \geq 0),$$

$$\lambda x \vee \lambda y = \lambda(x \wedge y), \quad \lambda x \wedge \lambda y = \lambda(x \vee y) \quad (\lambda \leq 0)$$

and

$$(x \vee y) \wedge z = (x \wedge z) \vee (y \wedge z),$$

$$(x \wedge y) \vee z = (x \vee z) \wedge (y \vee z).$$

The last relation means that E is a ^{*}distributive lattice.

For $x \in E$, the elements $x \vee 0$, $(-x) \vee 0$, and $x \vee (-x)$ are called respectively the **positive part**, **negative part**, and **absolute value** of the element x , and are denoted respectively by x^+ , x^- , and $|x|$. The following identities hold: $x = x^+ - x^-$ (**Jordan decomposition**), $|x| = x^+ + x^-$, $x^+ \wedge x^- = 0$, $x \vee y + x \wedge y = x + y$, $|\lambda x| = |\lambda| |x|$, and $|x - y| = x \vee y - x \wedge y$.

For $a, b \in E$ with $a \leq b$, the set $\{x | a \leq x \leq b\}$ is called an **interval** and is denoted by $[a, b]$. A subset of E is called (**order**) **bounded** if it is included in an interval. An element e of E is said to be a **unit** or an **Archimedean unit** if for any $x \in E$ there exists a natural number n such that $x \leq ne$. A linear subspace I of E is called an **ideal (or order ideal)** of E if $x \in I$ and $|y| \leq |x|$ imply $y \in I$.

C. Order Limits

Given a subset $\{x_\alpha\}$ of E , if an element x of E is an upper bound of $\{x_\alpha\}$ and any upper bound y of $\{x_\alpha\}$ satisfies the relation $y \geq x$, then it is called the **least upper bound** (or **su-**

premiu) of $\{x_\alpha\}$ and is denoted by $\sup_\alpha x_\alpha$ or $\bigvee_\alpha x_\alpha$. The **greatest lower bound** (or **infimum**) of $\{x_\alpha\}$, denoted by $\inf_\alpha x_\alpha$ or $\bigwedge_\alpha x_\alpha$, is defined dually.

A sequence $\{x_n\}$ ($x_n \in E$) is said to be **order convergent** to x if there exists a nonincreasing sequence $\{u_n\}$ ($u_n \in E$) such that $\bigwedge_n u_n = 0$ and $|x_n - x| \leq u_n$. In this case x is called the **order limit** of $\{x_n\}$ and is denoted by $x = o\text{-}\lim x_n$. For order convergent sequences $\{x_n\}$ and $\{y_n\}$, we can show the following relations: $o\text{-}\lim(\lambda x_n + \mu y_n) = \lambda(o\text{-}\lim x_n) + \mu(o\text{-}\lim y_n)$ and $o\text{-}\lim(x_n \times y_n) = (o\text{-}\lim x_n) \times (o\text{-}\lim y_n)$. We say that E is **Archimedean** if the relations $0 \leq nx \leq y$ ($n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$) imply $x = 0$. If E is Archimedean, then the relations $x = o\text{-}\lim x_n$ and $\lambda = \lim \lambda_n$ imply $\lambda x = o\text{-}\lim \lambda_n x_n$. We say that E is **complete** (**σ -complete**) if any (countable) subset of E that is bounded above has a least upper bound. A σ -complete vector lattice is always Archimedean. If E is σ -complete, for any sequence $\{x_n\}$ bounded above, $o\text{-}\lim \sup x_n$ is defined to be $\bigwedge_n \bigvee_{m \geq n} x_m$; we define $o\text{-}\lim \inf x_n$ similarly. With these definitions, $x = o\text{-}\lim x_n$ is equivalent to $x = o\text{-}\lim \sup x_n = o\text{-}\lim \inf x_n$. Any Archimedean vector lattice can be extended to a complete vector lattice in the same way as the real numbers are constructed from the rational numbers by Dedekind cuts (\rightarrow 294 Numbers).

D. Examples of Vector Lattices

*Sequence spaces, such as c , m , and l_p , and *function spaces, such as C , M , and L_p , form vector lattices under pointwise ordering (\rightarrow 168 Function Spaces). Among these spaces c and C are not σ -complete, but the others are complete. We give two examples. First, let Σ be a σ -algebra of subsets of a space Ω , and let $A(\Omega, \Sigma)$ be the set of all finite σ -additive *set functions defined on Σ . Then $A(\Omega, \Sigma)$ is a complete vector lattice if we define $\mu_1 \geq \mu_2$ to mean $\mu_1(S) \geq \mu_2(S)$ for any $S \in \Sigma$. The second example is an ordered space consisting of all *bounded symmetric operators T on a Hilbert space H , where we define $T_1 \geq T_2$ to mean $(T_1 x, x) \geq (T_2 x, x)$ for any $x \in H$. In general, this space is not a vector lattice. However, if A is a commutative $\dagger W^*$ -algebra of operators on H and S is the set of *symmetric operators belonging to A , then S is a complete vector lattice under the ordering just defined. We can replace the conditions of finiteness in $A(\Omega, \Sigma)$ and boundedness in S with weaker ones and still obtain the same situation. The *Radon-Nikodym theorem in $A(\Omega, \Sigma)$ and the *spectral resolution theorem of symmetric operators in S can be extended to theorems of *spectral representations in general vector lattices.

Let E_1 be a linear space of functions defined on a set Ω ordered pointwise. If there exists a bijective mapping defined on a vector lattice E onto E_1 that is linear and order isomorphic, we call E_1 a **representation** of E . If E has an Archimedean unit and is simple (which means that E and $\{0\}$ are the only ideals of E), then E can be represented as the set of real numbers such that the Archimedean unit of E is represented by the number 1 (H. Freudenthal, *Proc. Akad. Amsterdam*, 39 (1936)).

E. Dual Spaces

Let $\mathfrak{Q}(E, F)$ be the set of **order bounded** linear mappings of a vector lattice E into a vector lattice F , where order boundedness means that any bounded (in the sense of the order) subset of E is mapped into a bounded set of F . For any $\varphi_1, \varphi_2 \in \mathfrak{Q}(E, F)$, define $\varphi_1 \geq \varphi_2$ to mean $\varphi_1(x) \geq \varphi_2(x)$ ($x \geq 0, x \in E$). If F is complete, then $\mathfrak{Q}(E, F)$ is a complete vector lattice. An element $\varphi \in \mathfrak{Q}(E, F)$ is called a **positive operator** if $\varphi \geq 0$. If F is the set of real numbers \mathbf{R} , then $\mathfrak{Q}(E, F)$ is the set of all (order) bounded *linear functionals on E . This space, called the **dual lattice** of the vector lattice E and denoted by E^b , is a complete vector lattice. For $f \in E^b$ and $x \geq 0, x \in E$, we have

$$f^+(x) = \sup_{0 \leq y \leq x} f(y), \quad f^-(x) = - \inf_{0 \leq y \leq x} f(y),$$

$$|f|(x) = \sup_{|y| \leq x} f(y).$$

F. Banach Lattices

A linear space E is called a **normed vector lattice** if E is a vector lattice having the structure of a *normed space satisfying $|x| \leq |y| \Rightarrow \|x\| \leq \|y\|$. Furthermore if a normed vector lattice E is complete relative to the norm, we call E a **Banach lattice**. The examples in Section D are Banach lattices (for $\mu \in A(\Omega, \Sigma)$ we define $\|\mu\| = |\mu|(\Omega)$).

In Banach lattices, $\|x_n - x\| \rightarrow 0$ and $\|y_n - y\| \rightarrow 0$ imply $\|x_n \times y_n - x \times y\| \rightarrow 0$. Among relations between order convergence and norm convergence in Banach lattices, the following is one of the most fundamental: In a Banach lattice E , norm convergence of a sequence $\{x_n\}$ to x is equivalent to **relative uniform star convergence** of $\{x_n\}$ to x , i.e., for any subsequence $\{x_{n(m)}\}$ of $\{x_n\}$, there exists a subsequence $\{x_{n(m(l))}\}$ of $\{x_{n(m)}\}$ and an element y of E satisfying the relations $|x_{n(m(l))} - x| \leq y/l$ ($l = 1, 2, \dots$).

Any set bounded relative to the order is bounded relative to the norm, but the converse does not hold in general. For a linear functional, however, these two concepts of boundedness coincide, and the order dual of

E is the same as the norm dual of E . Moreover, the dual (in any sense) of a Banach lattice is also a Banach lattice.

G. Abstract M Spaces and Abstract L Spaces

For a Banach lattice E , we consider the following three conditions: (M) $x, y \geq 0 \Rightarrow \|x \vee y\| = \max(\|x\|, \|y\|)$. (L) $x, y \geq 0 \Rightarrow \|x + y\| = \|x\| + \|y\|$. (L_p) $x \wedge y = 0 \Rightarrow \|x + y\|^p = \|x\|^p + \|y\|^p$ ($1 < p < \infty$). If E satisfies one of the conditions (M), (L), or (L_p), we say that E is an **abstract M space**, and **abstract L space**, or an **abstract L_p space**, written AM, AL, and AL_p , respectively. If the unit ball of an AM space has a \dagger greatest element, it is called the **Kakutani unit** of E . The duals of AM spaces, AL spaces, and AL_p spaces are AL spaces, AM spaces with the Kakutani units, and AL_q spaces ($1/p + 1/q = 1$), respectively. An AM space with a Kakutani unit is represented by $C(\Omega)$, i.e., the set of all real-valued continuous functions defined on a compact Hausdorff space Ω . The AL spaces and AL_p spaces are represented by L_1 and L_p , respectively, on a \dagger measure space. Here the representation of a Banach lattice means a representation of a vector lattice preserving the norm (Kakutani, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 42 (1941); Bohnenblust, *Duke Math. J.*, 6 (1940)).

H. Spectral Properties of Positive Operators

The n -dimensional real vector space E_n is a vector lattice under pointwise order (\rightarrow Section D). An element x in E_n is called **strictly positive** if $x_i > 0$ for all i . A square matrix $A = (a_{i,j})$ of order n is called **positive** if $a_{i,i} \geq 0$ for all i and j . It corresponds to a positive operator in E_n (\rightarrow Section E). A is called **irreducible** if there exists no permutation matrix P such that $P^{-1}AP = \begin{pmatrix} A_1 & A_2 \\ 0 & A_3 \end{pmatrix}$, where A_1 and A_3 are square matrices of order n_i ($1 \leq n_i < n$). We denote by $\sigma(A)$ the \dagger spectrum of A and by $r(A)$ the \dagger spectral radius of A , i.e., $\sup\{|\alpha| \mid \alpha \in \sigma(A)\}$. The spectral circle of A is the circle of radius $r(A)$ having the origin as its center. O. Perron (*Math. Ann.*, 64 (1907)) and G. Frobenius (*S. B. Preuss. Akad. Wiss.*, 1908 and 1912) established the following remarkable result on the spectral properties of positive matrices.

Theorem (Perron-Frobenius). Let A be a positive square matrix. Then its spectral radius $r(A)$ belongs to $\sigma(A)$, and for this spectrum $r(A)$ there exists an eigenvector $x \geq 0$. Assume further that A is irreducible and the order of A is greater than 1. Then $r(A) > 0$ and the eigenspace of A for $r(A)$ is a 1-dimensional subspace

spanned by a strictly positive element. In this case the eigenvalues of A on the spectral circle are the k th roots of unity for some k multiplied by $r(A)$, each of which is a simple root of the eigenequation of A .

Since a positive matrix of order n corresponds to a positive operator in E_n , extensions of this theorem to positive operators in ordered linear spaces have been studied by many mathematicians. For these extensions, see the following articles: M. G. Kreĭn and M. A. Rutman (*Amer. Math. Soc. Transl.*, 26 (1950); original in Russian, 1948), F. F. Bonsall (*J. London Math. Soc.*, 30 (1955)), S. Karlin (*J. Math. Mech.*, 8 (1959)), T. Ando (*J. Fac. Sci. Hokkaido Univ.*, ser. 1, 13 (1957)), H. H. Schaefer [8], H. P. Lotz (*Math. Z.*, 108 (1968)), F. Niĭro and I. Sawashima (*Sci. Pap. Coll. Gen. Educ., Univ. Tokyo*, 1966), I. Sawashima and F. Niĭro (*Nat. Rep. Ochanomizu Univ.*, 30 (1979)), and S. Miyajima (*J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo*, 27 (1980)).

I. Integrals Based on Ordering

As applications of ordered linear space theory, we state the integrals of Daniel-Stone and of Banach. Let us begin with a set \mathfrak{E} of real-valued functions defined on an abstract space S and assume that \mathfrak{E} is a vector lattice with respect to the usual order relation, addition, and scalar multiplication. Assume further that a functional $E(f)$ defined on \mathfrak{E} satisfies the following conditions: (i) additivity, i.e., $E(f + g) = E(f) + E(g)$; (ii) positivity, i.e., $f \geq 0$ implies $E(f) \geq 0$; (iii) $f, f_n \in \mathfrak{E}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) and $|f| \leq \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |f_n|$ imply $E(|f|) \leq \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} E(|f_n|)$, where $|f|$ means $f \vee (-f)$. A functional on \mathfrak{E} satisfying both conditions (i) and (ii) is called a positive linear functional. A positive linear functional on \mathfrak{E} satisfies M. H. Stone's condition (iii) if and only if it satisfies P. J. Daniell's condition (iii)': $f_1 \geq f_2 \geq \dots$ and $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f_n = 0$ imply $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} E(f_n) = 0$. Next, we define, for every function φ on S admitting $\pm\infty$ as values, a functional $N(\varphi)$ as follows:

$$N(\varphi) = \inf \left\{ \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} E(|f_n|) \mid f_n \in \mathfrak{E}, \quad |\varphi| \leq \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |f_n| \right\}.$$

Here we put $N(\varphi) = +\infty$ when for a function φ there are no functions $\{f_n\}$ such that $|\varphi| \leq \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |f_n|$. A function φ is, by definition, a **null function** if $N(\varphi) = 0$ holds, and a set A is a **null set** if its \dagger characteristic function is a null function. Since each function of $\mathfrak{F}_0 = \{\varphi \mid N(\varphi) < +\infty\}$ takes finite values except on a null set, we can define addition and the scalar multiplication for such functions except on a null set. Let \mathfrak{F} be the set of equivalence classes of \mathfrak{F}_0

with respect to the relation $\varphi \sim \psi$ defined as $N(\varphi - \psi) = 0$. Then \mathfrak{F} is a Banach lattice with the norm N , and \mathfrak{E} is included in \mathfrak{F} (by identifying f and g of \mathfrak{E} when $E(|f - g|) = 0$). Let us denote now by \mathfrak{L} the closure of \mathfrak{E} in \mathfrak{F} . Then any function φ belonging to \mathfrak{L} is said to be **Daniell-Stone integrable**, and $L(\varphi) = N(\varphi^+) - N(\varphi^-)$ ($\varphi^+ = \frac{1}{2}(|\varphi| + \varphi)$, $\varphi^- = \frac{1}{2}(|\varphi| - \varphi)$) is called the **Daniell-Stone integral** of φ . The integral L thus defined is, as a functional on \mathfrak{L} , an extension of the functional E on \mathfrak{E} . For this integral, Lebesgue's convergence theorem is easily proved, and a result corresponding to Fubini's theorem has been obtained [9]. Furthermore, the concepts of measurable functions, measurable sets, and measure can be defined by using L and \mathfrak{L} . Also, the relation between L and the Lebesgue integral with respect to this measure is known [9]. Since \mathfrak{L} is an abstract L -space, the Daniell-Stone integral $L(\varphi)$ is represented by the Lebesgue integral of φ on a certain measure space. The Daniell-Stone integral introduced above is due to M. H. Stone [9]. Daniell (*Ann. Math.*, (2) 19 (1917-1918)) originally defined the upper integral $\bar{I}(\varphi)$ by using $E(f)$ on \mathfrak{E} satisfying conditions (i), (ii), and (iii'). Also, he defined the set \mathfrak{L} of Daniell-Stone integrable functions by $L = \{\varphi | \bar{I}(\varphi) = -\bar{I}(-\varphi)\}$. S. Banach defined an integral by using methods similar to Daniell's, replacing condition (iii') for a positive linear functional $E(f)$ on \mathfrak{E} by condition (iii''): $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} f_n = 0$, $|f_n| \leq g$, and $f_n, g \in \mathfrak{E}$ imply $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} E(f_n) = 0$ [10]. Furthermore, N. Bourbaki [11] and E. J. McShane (*Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US*, 1946) have defined a more general integral than the Daniell-Stone with a condition analogous to (iii'), replacing the sequence in it by a directed family of functions $\{f_\alpha\}$.

Specifically if, in the Daniell-Stone integral, S is a locally compact Hausdorff space and \mathfrak{E} is the set of continuous functions with compact supports, then a functional $E(f)$ on \mathfrak{E} satisfying conditions (i) and (ii) is proved to satisfy the condition (iii'), and the Daniell-Stone integral $L(\varphi)$ can be constructed from $E(f)$ [11].

Banach also defined another integral for all real-valued bounded functions on $[0, 1)$ by using the Hahn-Banach extension theorem [12]. His definition is as follows: Let \mathfrak{F} be the set of all real-valued bounded functions on $[0, 1)$ and \mathfrak{A} be the family of all finite sets of real numbers $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n)$. Furthermore, we define, for $x(s) \in \mathfrak{F}$ and $\alpha \in \mathfrak{A}$,

$$M(x, \alpha) = \sup_{-\infty < s < +\infty} \frac{1}{n} \sum_{k=1}^n x(s + \alpha_k),$$

where $x(s)$ is considered as the periodic extension to $(-\infty, +\infty)$ of the function defined

originally on $[0, 1)$ and

$$p(x) = \inf_{\alpha \in \mathfrak{A}} M(x, \alpha).$$

Then, by the Hahn-Banach extension theorem, there exists a linear functional F on \mathfrak{F} satisfying $F(x) \leq p(x)$. If we write $\int x(s) ds$ for $F(x)$, then we can prove immediately that $\int x(s) ds$ has the following properties: (1) $\int \{ax(s) + by(s)\} ds = a \int x(s) ds + b \int y(s) ds$, where a and b are real constants. (2) $x(s) \geq 0$ implies $\int x(s) ds \geq 0$. (3) $\int x(s + s_0) ds = \int x(s) ds$, where s_0 is an arbitrary real number. (4) $\int 1 ds = 1$. If necessary, we can add the property (5) $\int x(1 - s) ds = \int x(s) ds$ by defining

$$\int x(s) ds = \frac{1}{2} \{F(x(s)) + F(x(1 - s))\}.$$

Then

$$F(x) = \int x(s) ds$$

or

$$\frac{1}{2} \{F(x(s)) + F(x(1 - s))\} = \int x(s) ds$$

is called the **Banach integral** of $x(s)$.

The construction of the Daniell-Stone integral and the Banach integral opened avenues to several other abstract integrals based on the order relation, such as an integral for more general functions with values in a vector lattice, or an integral considered as a mapping from a vector lattice into another vector lattice (or from an ordered set into another ordered set). Indeed, if the function takes values in a complete vector lattice, then almost all results in this section (e.g., the Hahn-Banach extension theorem) hold trivially. For discussions of these and other abstract integrals \rightarrow [13-15].

References

- [1] F. Riesz, Sur la décomposition des opérations fonctionnelles linéaires, *Atti del Congresso Internazionale dei Matematici*, 1928, Bologna, 3, 143-148.
- [2] G. Birkhoff, *Lattice theory*, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., revised edition, 1948.
- [3] H. Nakano, *Modulated semi-ordered linear spaces*, Maruzen, 1950.
- [4] M. M. Day, *Normed linear spaces*, Erg. Math., Springer, 1958.
- [5] B. C. Vulikh, *Introduction to the theory of partially ordered vector spaces*, Gronigen, 1967.
- [6] I. Namioka, *Partially ordered linear topological spaces*, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc., 1957.
- [7] A. L. Peressini, *Ordered topological vector spaces*, Harper & Row, 1967.

- [8] H. H. Schaefer, *Banach lattices and positive operators*, Springer, 1974.
- [9] M. H. Stone, Notes on integration, *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US* I–III, 34 (1948), 336–342, 447–455, 483–490; IV, 35 (1949), 50–58.
- [10] S. Banach, The Lebesgue integral in abstract spaces, *Theory of the Integral*, S. Saks (ed.), Stechert, 1937, 320–330 (Dover, 1964).
- [11] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, Integration, ch. 1–9, *Actualités Sci. Ind.*, Hermann: ch. 1–4, 117a, second edition, 1965; ch. 5, 1244b, second edition, 1967; ch. 6, 1281a, 1959; ch. 7, 8, 1306, 1963; ch. 9, 1343, 1969.
- [12] S. Banach, *Théorie des opérations linéaires*, Warsaw, 1932, 30–32. (Chelsea, 1963).
- [13] S. Izumi, N. Matuyama, M. Nakamura, M. Orihara, and G. Sunouchi, An abstract integral, *Proc. Imp. Acad. Tokyo*, I–III, 16 (1940), 21–25, 87–89, 518–523; IV, 17 (1941), 1–4; V–X, 18 (1942), 45–49, 50–52, 53–56, 535–538, 539–542, 543–547.
- [14] E. J. McShane, Order-preserving maps and integration processes, *Ann. Math. Studies*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1953.
- [15] T. H. Hildebrandt, Integration in abstract spaces, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 59 (1953), 111–139.
- [16] N. Dunford and J. T. Schwartz, *Linear operators*, Wiley, I (1958), III (1971).
- [17] K. Yosida, *Functional analysis*, Springer, 1965.

311 (II.12) Ordering

A. Ordering

The concept of ordering is abstracted from various relations, such as the inequality relation between real numbers and the inclusion relation between sets. Suppose that we are given a set $X = \{x, y, z, \dots\}$; the relation between the elements of X , denoted by \leq or other symbols, is called an **ordering** (**partial ordering**, **semiordering**, **order relation**, or simply **order**) if the following three laws hold: (i) the **reflexive law**, $x \leq x$; (ii) the **antisymmetric law**, $x \leq y$ and $y \leq x$ imply $x = y$; and (iii) the **transitive law**, $x \leq y$ and $y \leq z$ imply $x \leq z$.

A set X with an ordering between its elements is called an **ordered set** (**partially ordered set** or **semiordered set**). A subset of an ordered set X is also an ordered set with respect to the same ordering as in X . If for an arbitrary pair of elements x, y of an ordered set A either $x \leq y$ or $y \leq x$ must hold, then the ordering \leq

is called a **total** (or **linear**) **ordering**, and A is called a **totally ordered** (or **linearly ordered**) **set**.

We sometimes write $x \leq y$ as $y \geq x$. The binary relation \geq is called the **dual ordering** of \leq ; it is also an ordering. More generally, the duals of concepts, conditions, and propositions concerning an ordering are defined by replacing the ordering with its dual. For example, $x < y$ means that $x \leq y$ and $x \neq y$, while $x > y$ means that $x \geq y$ and $x \neq y$; and $>$ is the dual of $<$. If a universal proposition concerning the ordering is true, then its dual is also true; this principle is called the **duality principle for ordering**. Incidentally, $x \leq y$ is equivalent to the statement $x < y$ or $x = y$, according to the definition of $<$.

B. Definitions

A subset of an ordered set X of the form $\{x | a < x < b\}$ is denoted by (a, b) , and a set of the form (a, b) , $\{x | x < a\}$, or $\{x | x > a\}$ is called an **interval**. In particular, $S(c) = \{x | x < c\}$ is called the **segment** of X determined by c . A pair of elements a, b satisfying $a \leq b$ is called a **quotient** of X and is denoted by b/a .

When $a < c < b$ or $b < c < a$, c is said to lie **between** a and b . A totally ordered set A is said to be **dense** if for any pair of distinct elements a and b in A there exists a third element c lying between a and b . When $a < b$ and there is no element lying between a and b , then a is called a **predecessor** of b , and b a **successor** of a . In this manner, most of the terminology associated with the inequality of numbers is carried over to general ordering.

In an ordered set A , an element a is called an **upper bound** of a subset X if $x \leq a$ for every element x of X . When an upper bound exists, X is said to be **bounded from above** (or **bounded above**). The dual concept of an upper bound is a **lower bound** of the subset; and if the subset has a lower bound, it is said to be **bounded from below** (or **bounded below**). A set bounded both from above and from below is simply said to be **bounded**. When a is an upper bound of X and $a \in X$, then a is called the **greatest element** (or **maximum element**) of X . Such an element a (if it exists) is unique and is denoted by $\max X$; its dual is the **least element** (or **minimum element**) and is denoted by $\min X$. If there is a least element in the set of upper bounds of X , it is called the **least upper bound** (or **supremum**) of X and is denoted by **l.u.b.** X or **sup** X . Its dual is the **greatest lower bound** (or **infimum**) and is denoted by **g.l.b.** X or **inf** X .

If the ordered set X is the image $\varphi(\Lambda)$ of a set Λ under a \dagger mapping φ , where Λ is of the form $\{\lambda | C(\lambda)\}$, then **sup** X is also written

$\sup_{C(\lambda)} \varphi(\lambda)$ and is called the supremum of $\varphi(\lambda)$ for all λ that satisfy $C(\lambda)$. When there is no danger of misunderstanding, it may be written as $\sup_{\lambda} \varphi(\lambda)$ or $\sup \varphi(\lambda)$ and called simply the supremum of $\varphi(\lambda)$; similar conventions hold for inf, max, min, etc.

An element a of a set X is called a **maximal element** if $a < x$ never holds for any element x of X ; its dual is a **minimal element**. If the greatest (least) element exists, it is the only maximal (minimal) element. But in general, a maximal (minimal) element is not necessarily unique.

C. Chain Conditions

An ordered set X is said to satisfy the **minimal condition** if every nonempty subset of X has a minimal element. The dual condition is called the **maximal condition**. An infinite sequence $\{a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n, \dots\}$ of elements of an ordered set X such that $a_1 < a_2 < \dots < a_n < \dots$ is called an **ascending chain**, and the condition that X has no ascending chain is called the **ascending chain condition**. The notions dual to those of ascending chain and ascending chain condition are **descending chain** and **descending chain condition**, respectively. By the **chain condition**, we mean either the ascending or the descending chain condition. Under the \dagger axiom of choice, the maximal condition is equivalent to the ascending chain condition, and the minimal condition to the descending chain condition.

If a totally ordered set X satisfies the minimal condition or, equivalently, if every nonempty subset of X has a least element, then the set X is called a **well-ordered set**, and its ordering is called a **well-ordering**.

The following theorem is called the principle of **transfinite induction**: Let $P(x)$ be a proposition concerning an element x of a well-ordered set X such that (i) $P(x_0)$ is true for the least element x_0 of X , and (ii) $P(x)$ is true if $P(y)$ is true for all y satisfying $y < x$. Then $P(x)$ is true for all x in X . \dagger Mathematical induction is a special case of this principle, where X is the set of all natural numbers. To define a mapping F from a well-ordered set X into a set Y , we may use the following principle: Suppose that $F(x_0)$ is defined for the least element x_0 of X , and for each element x of X there is given a method to associate an element $G(f)$ of Y uniquely with each mapping $f: S(x) \rightarrow Y$ with domain $S(x)$, where $S(x)$ is the segment of X determined by x . Then there exists a unique mapping $F: X \rightarrow Y$ satisfying $F(x) = G(F|S(x))$ for all x . The definition of the mapping F by this principle is called a **definition by transfinite induction**. The prin-

311 G Ordering

ciples of induction are often used for proving propositions or giving definitions concerning ordinal numbers (\rightarrow 312 Ordinal Numbers).

D. Directed Sets

An ordered set (or in general a preordered set (\rightarrow Section H)) in which every finite subset is bounded from above is called a **directed set**. Let B be a subset of a directed set A . If $\{b | b \geq a\} \cap B \neq \emptyset$ for every element a of A , then B is said to be **cofinal** in A ; such a subset B is itself a directed set. If $\{b | b \geq a\} \subset B$ for some element a of A , then B is said to be **residual** in A ; such a subset B is also cofinal in A . The condition that B is cofinal in A is equivalent to the condition that $A - B$ is not residual in A .

E. Order-Preserving Mappings

A mapping $\varphi: A \rightarrow A'$ of an ordered set A into an ordered set A' is called an **order-preserving mapping** (**monotone mapping** or **order homomorphism**) if $a \leq b$ always implies $\varphi(a) \leq \varphi(b)$. Moreover, if φ is bijective and φ^{-1} is also an order-preserving mapping from A' onto A , then φ is called an **order isomorphism**. A' is said to be **order homomorphic** (**order isomorphic**) to A when there exists an order homomorphism (order isomorphism) φ such that $A' = \varphi(A)$. If a mapping $\varphi: A \rightarrow A'$ gives an order isomorphism of A to the dual of A' , φ is called a **dual isomorphism** (or **anti-isomorphism**).

F. Direct Sum and Direct Product

Let S be a set that is the \dagger disjoint union of a family $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of its subsets, and suppose that each A_λ is an ordered set. For $a, b \in S$, define $a \leq b$ to mean that $a, b \in A_\lambda$ for some $\lambda \in \Lambda$ and $a \leq b$ with respect to the ordering in A_λ . The ordered set S obtained in this way is called the **direct sum** (or **cardinal sum**) of the family $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of ordered sets. When $(a_\lambda)_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ and $(b_\lambda)_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ are elements of the \dagger Cartesian product $P = \prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ of a family $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of ordered sets, we define $(a_\lambda)_{\lambda \in \Lambda} \leq (b_\lambda)_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ to mean that $a_\lambda \leq b_\lambda$ holds for all $\lambda \in \Lambda$. The ordered set P obtained in this way is called the **direct product** (or **cardinal product**) of the family $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of ordered sets.

G. Ordinal Sum and Ordinal Product

Suppose that $\mathfrak{A} = \{A, B, \dots\}$ is a family of mutually disjoint ordered sets and is itself an

ordered set. Then an ordering \leq can be defined in the disjoint union $S = \bigcup X$ ($X \in \mathfrak{A}$) as follows: $x \leq y$ in S means that either (i) there exists an A satisfying $x, y \in A \in \mathfrak{A}$ and $x \leq y$ holds with respect to the ordering in A ; or (ii) for A and B satisfying $x \in A \in \mathfrak{A}$, $y \in B \in \mathfrak{A}$, we have $A < B$. The ordered set S obtained in this way is called the **ordinal sum** obtained from \mathfrak{A} and is denoted by $\sum_{\mathfrak{A}} X$. In particular, if $\mathfrak{A} = \{A, B\}$ and $A < B$, the ordinal sum is denoted by $A + B$.

Suppose that X is a subset of the Cartesian product $\prod_{\lambda} X_{\lambda}$ of a family of ordered sets indexed by an ordered set Λ , and the subset $\{\lambda \mid x_{\lambda} \neq y_{\lambda}\}$ of Λ has a least element whenever $x = (x_{\lambda})_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ and $y = (y_{\lambda})_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ are two distinct elements of X . The ordering in X defined by setting $x < y$ when $x_{\mu} < y_{\mu}$ for the least element μ of $\{\lambda \mid x_{\lambda} \neq y_{\lambda}\}$ is called the **lexicographic ordering** in X . It can be applied to $X = \prod_{\lambda} X_{\lambda}$ if Λ is well-ordered; X is then called the **ordinal product**. When A, B, \dots are ordered sets, $AB \dots$ is often used to denote the ordinal product obtained from $X_1 = A, X_2 = B, \dots$ with the ordering $1 < 2 < \dots$ of indices; the ordering in this ordinal product is called the **lexicographic ordering** in the Cartesian product $A \times B \times \dots$.

H. Preordering

A relation R between elements of a set X is called a **preordering** (or **pseudoordering**) if it satisfies the reflexive law and the transitive law, but not necessarily the antisymmetric law. By defining $(x_1, y_1)R(x_2, y_2) \Leftrightarrow x_1 \leq x_2$, for example, a preordering of pairs (x, y) of real numbers is obtained. From a preordering R an equivalence relation \sim can be defined in X by $x \sim y \Leftrightarrow (xRy \text{ and } yRx)$. Let $[X] = X/\sim$ be the \dagger quotient set of set X by this equivalence relation, and let $[x], [y]$ be the equivalence classes determined by $x, y \in X$; then an ordering \leq can be defined in $[X]$ by $[x] \leq [y] \Leftrightarrow xRy$. (For further topics \rightarrow 52 Categories and Functors; 409 Structures.)

References

- [1] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, I. Théorie des ensembles, ch. 3, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1243b, Hermann, second edition, 1967; English translation, *Theory of sets*, Addison-Wesley, 1968.
- [2] G. Birkhoff, *Lattice theory*, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1940, revised edition, 1948. Also \rightarrow references to 381 Sets.

312 (II.13) Ordinal Numbers

A. General Remarks

Let $A \cong B$ mean that two \dagger ordered sets A, B are \dagger order isomorphic; then the relation \cong is an \dagger equivalence relation. An equivalence class under this relation is called an **order type**, and the class to which an ordered set A belongs is called the **order type of A** . Historically, an ordinal number was first defined as the order type of a \dagger well-ordered set (Cantor [2]). However, it was found that a contradiction occurs if order type defined in this way are considered to form a set. Hence, another definition was given by J. von Neumann [3], which is stated in Section B. A similar situation was found concerning the definition of \dagger cardinal numbers, which led to a new definition of cardinal numbers using ordinal numbers, which is given in Section D.

B. Definitions

A set α is called an **ordinal number** if it satisfies the following two conditions: (i) α is a well-ordered set with the \dagger binary relation \in as its ordering; and (ii) $\beta \in \alpha$ implies $\beta < \alpha$. According to this definition, the empty set is an ordinal number, which is denoted by 0. Also, $1 = \{0\}$, $2 = \{0, 1\}$, $3 = \{0, 1, 2\}$, ... are ordinal numbers. These ordinal numbers, which are finite sets, are called **finite ordinal numbers**. The finite ordinal numbers are identified with the natural numbers (including 0). The set $\omega = \{0, 1, 2, \dots\}$ of all natural numbers is also an ordinal number. An ordinal number that is an infinite set, like ω , is called a **transfinite ordinal number**.

For every well-ordered set A , there exists one and only one ordinal number order isomorphic to A . This ordinal number is called the **ordinal number of A** . (Throughout this article, lower-case Greek letters denote ordinal numbers.) We also write $\alpha \in \beta$ as $\alpha < \beta$, which defines an \dagger ordering of the ordinal numbers. The least ordinal number is 0, and the ordering of the finite ordinal numbers coincides with the usual ordering of the natural numbers. The least transfinite ordinal number is ω . The ordering \leq , introduced by defining $\alpha \leq \beta$ to mean either $\alpha < \beta$ or $\alpha = \beta$, is a \dagger linear ordering and, in fact, a \dagger well-ordering of the ordinal numbers. Therefore \dagger transfinite induction can be applied to ordinal numbers.

For any ordinal number α , the set $\alpha' = \{\xi \mid \xi \leq \alpha\}$ is also an ordinal number, and is the \dagger successor of α . There exists at most one

ordinal number that is the †predecessor of α . A transfinite ordinal number without a predecessor is called a **limit ordinal number**, and all the other ordinal numbers are called **isolated ordinal numbers**. The first limit ordinal number is ω . For any set A of ordinal numbers, $\{\xi \mid \exists \eta (\xi < \eta \in A)\}$ is an ordinal number and is $\sup A$, the †supremum of A .

C. Sum, Product, and Power

The **sum** $\alpha + \beta$, the **product** $\alpha \cdot \beta$ (or $\alpha\beta$), and the **power** α^β of ordinal numbers α, β are defined by transfinite induction on β and have the following properties:

$$\alpha + 0 = \alpha, \quad \alpha + \beta' = (\alpha + \beta)',$$

$$\alpha + \gamma = \sup\{\alpha + \xi \mid \xi < \gamma\};$$

$$\alpha \cdot 0 = 0, \quad \alpha \cdot \beta' = \alpha \cdot \beta + \alpha,$$

$$\alpha \cdot \gamma = \sup\{\alpha \cdot \xi \mid \xi < \gamma\};$$

$$\alpha^0 = 1, \quad \alpha^{\beta'} = \alpha^\beta \cdot \alpha, \quad \alpha^\gamma = \sup\{\alpha^\xi \mid \xi < \gamma\}.$$

Here γ is a limit ordinal number, and for the power we assume that $\alpha > 0$. The sum and product thus defined satisfy the associative laws $(\alpha + \beta) + \gamma = \alpha + (\beta + \gamma)$, $(\alpha \cdot \beta) \cdot \gamma = \alpha \cdot (\beta \cdot \gamma)$ and the left distributive law $\alpha \cdot (\beta + \gamma) = \alpha \cdot \beta + \alpha \cdot \gamma$; the power satisfies the laws $\alpha^{\beta+\gamma} = \alpha^\beta \cdot \alpha^\gamma$, $\alpha^{\beta\gamma} = (\alpha^\beta)^\gamma$. If α and β are the ordinal numbers of the well-ordered sets A and B , respectively, then $\alpha + \beta$ is the ordinal number of the †ordinal sum $A + B$, and $\alpha \cdot \beta$ is the ordinal number of the †ordinal product BA .

When $\pi > 1$, any ordinal number α can be written uniquely in the form

$$\alpha = \pi^{\beta_1} \cdot \gamma_1 + \pi^{\beta_2} \cdot \gamma_2 + \dots + \pi^{\beta_n} \cdot \gamma_n;$$

$$\beta_1 > \beta_2 > \dots > \beta_n > 0, \quad 0 < \gamma_i < \pi, \quad 1 \leq i \leq n,$$

which is called the π -**adic normal form** for α ; when $\pi = \omega$, it is called **Cantor's normal form**.

Let f be an ordinal number-valued function of ordinal numbers. We say that f is **strictly monotone** when $\alpha < \beta$ implies $f(\alpha) < f(\beta)$. If f is strictly monotone, then $\alpha \leq f(\alpha)$. We say that f is **continuous** when $f(\gamma) = \sup\{f(\xi) \mid \xi < \gamma\}$ for each limit ordinal number γ . A strictly monotone continuous function is called a **normal function**. If f is a normal function, then for any α there exists a β that satisfies $f(\beta) = \beta > \alpha$. In fact, it suffices to define $\beta_n (n < \omega)$ by $\beta_0 = f(\alpha + 1)$, $\beta_{n+1} = f(\beta_n)$ and put $\beta = \sup\{\beta_n \mid n < \omega\}$. Since $f(\alpha) = \omega^\alpha$ is a normal function, there exists an ε that satisfies $\omega^\varepsilon = \varepsilon$. Such an ordinal number ε is called an ε -**number**. We say that β is **cofinal** to α when there exists a monotone function f that satisfies $\alpha = \sup\{f(\xi) \mid \xi < \beta\}$. The first ordinal number that is cofinal to α is

called the **cofinality** of α and is denoted by $\text{cf}(\alpha)$.

D. Cardinal Numbers

Let $M \sim N$ mean that a one-to-one correspondence exists between the two sets M and N . An ordinal number α with the property that $\alpha \sim \xi$ implies $\alpha \leq \xi$ is called an **initial number** or a **cardinal number**.

With the †axiom of choice, it can be shown that for each set M there exists one and only one cardinal number α satisfying $M \sim \alpha$. This unique α is called the **cardinality** (or **cardinal number**) of the set M and is denoted by \overline{M} .

All finite ordinal numbers are cardinal numbers, and ω is the least transfinite cardinal number. There exists one and only one monotone function that maps the class of ordinal numbers onto the class of transfinite cardinal numbers, and it is a normal function. The value of this function corresponding to α is denoted by \aleph_α (**aleph alpha**) or ω_α . In particular, $\aleph_0 = \omega$, and \aleph_1 is both the smallest uncountable cardinal number and the smallest uncountable ordinal number. A finite ordinal number is called an **ordinal number of the first number class**, and an ordinal number α satisfying $\aleph_0 \leq \alpha < \aleph_1$ is called an **ordinal number of the second number class**. The concept of **ordinal number of the third (or higher) number class** is defined similarly.

E. Inaccessible Ordinal Numbers

The cofinality $\text{cf}(\alpha)$ of α always satisfies $\text{cf}(\alpha) \leq \alpha$. An ordinal number is said to be **regular** when $\text{cf}(\alpha) = \alpha$ and singular when $\text{cf}(\alpha) < \alpha$. For any ordinal number α , $\text{cf}(\alpha)$ is a regular cardinal number; therefore any regular ordinal number is a cardinal number. When $\alpha = \omega_\beta$ is regular and β is a limit ordinal number, α is said to be **weakly inaccessible**. Let R be the set-valued function of ordinal numbers, defined by $R(0) = \emptyset$ and $R(\alpha) = \bigcup \{\mathfrak{P}(R(\xi)) \mid \xi < \alpha\}$ (by †transfinite induction), where $\mathfrak{P}(M)$ denotes the †power set of M . A regular ordinal number α is said to be **strongly inaccessible** when $\alpha > \omega$ and the following condition is satisfied: If x, y are a pair of sets such that $x \in R(\alpha)$, $y \subset R(\alpha)$, and there exists a mapping of x onto y , then $y \in R(\alpha)$. If a regular ordinal number α is strongly inaccessible, it is weakly inaccessible. A strongly inaccessible ordinal number is usually defined as a regular number $\alpha > \omega$ such that $\beta < \alpha$ implies $\overline{\mathfrak{P}(\beta)} < \alpha$. Under the axiom of choice, this definition is equivalent to the one given here. Moreover, under the †generalized continuum hypothesis, strong

inaccessibility and weak inaccessibility are equivalent.

References

- [1] N. Bourbaki, *Éléments de mathématique*, I. Théorie des ensembles, ch. 3, ActuaIités Sci. Ind., 1243b, second edition, Hermann, 1967; English translation, *Theory of sets*, Addison-Wesley, 1968.
- [2] G. Cantor, *Beiträge zur Begründung der transfiniten Mengenlehre II*, Math. Ann., 49 (1897), 207–246. (Gesammelte Abhandlungen, Springer, 1932; English translation, *Contributions to the founding of the theory of transfinite numbers*, Open Court, 1915.)
- [3] J. von Neumann, *Zur Einführung der transfiniten Zahlen*, *Acta Sci. Math. Szeged.*, 1 (1923), 199–208. (Collected works I, Pergamon, 1961.)
- Also — references to 381 Sets.

313 (XIII.2) Ordinary Differential Equations

A. General Remarks

Let x be a real (complex) variable and y a real (complex) function of x . Assume that $y = F(x)$ is a differentiable function of class C^n if x, y are real, and a holomorphic function if x, y are complex. We write $y', y'', \dots, y^{(n)}$ for the first n derivatives of y . A relation among $x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}$,

$$f(x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}) = 0 \quad (1)$$

(which holds identically with respect to x), is called an **ordinary differential equation** for the function $y = F(x)$. Here we assume that the function f in the left-hand side of (1) is a real (complex) function of the $n+2$ variables $x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}$ and is defined in a given domain of \mathbf{R}^{n+2} (\mathbf{C}^{n+2}). Usually we assume further that f has a certain regularity, such as being of class C^r ($r = 0, 1, \dots, \infty$), \dagger real analytic, or \dagger complex analytic. A function $y = F(x)$ that satisfies (1) is called a **solution** of (1). To find a solution of (1) is to **solve** or **integrate** it. Ordinary differential equations may be contrasted to **partial differential equations**, which are equations similar to (1) but in which y is a function of two or more variables x_1, x_2, \dots and which contain the partial derivatives $\partial y / \partial x_1, \partial y / \partial x_2, \dots$ (— 320 Partial Differential Equations). Ordinarily, the term **differential equation** refers to an ordinary or partial differential equation. In this article,

since we are concerned only with ordinary differential equations, we omit the word “ordinary.” If the left-hand side f of (1) contains $y^{(n)}$ explicitly or $\partial f / \partial y^{(n)} \neq 0$, then we say that the **order** of (1) is n , and if further f is a polynomial in $y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}$ that is of degree m with respect to $y^{(n)}$, we say that the **degree** of (1) is m . In particular, if f is a linear form in $y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}$, then (1) is said to be **linear**. A differential equation that is not linear is said to be **nonlinear** (— 252 Linear Ordinary Differential Equations; 291 Nonlinear Problems).

Let $\varphi(x, y, c_1, \dots, c_n)$ be a function of the $n+2$ variables x, y, c_1, \dots, c_n of class C^r in a domain D , and let $(x_0, y_0, c_1^0, \dots, c_n^0) \in D$, $\varphi(x_0, y_0, c_1^0, \dots, c_n^0) = 0$, and $\varphi_y(x_0, y_0, c_1^0, \dots, c_n^0) \neq 0$. Then the equation $\varphi(x, y, c_1^0, \dots, c_n^0) = 0$ defines an \dagger implicit function $y(x)$ of class C^r satisfying the condition $y(x_0) = y_0$. Consider c_1, \dots, c_n to be constants in $\varphi(x, y, c_1, \dots, c_n) = 0$ and differentiate φ n times with respect to x . Then we obtain a system of n equations in the variables $x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}, c_1, \dots, c_n$. If we can eliminate c_1, \dots, c_n from these n equations and $\varphi = 0$, then we obtain an n th-order differential equation of the form (1). Conversely, a solution of an n th-order differential equation can usually be written in the form

$$\varphi(x, y, c_1, \dots, c_n) = 0, \quad (2)$$

which contains n **arbitrary constants** c_1, \dots, c_n (sometimes called **integration constants**). A solution containing n arbitrary constants of the form (2) of an n th-order differential equation is called a **general solution**, and a solution $\varphi(x, y, c_1^0, \dots, c_n^0) = 0$ obtained from a general solution $\varphi = 0$ by giving particular values c_1^0, \dots, c_n^0 to the arbitrary constants is called a **particular solution**. Some equations admit solutions that are not particular solutions. They are called **singular solutions** (for example, \dagger Clairaut differential equations; — Appendix A, Table 14.I).

B. Systems of Differential Equations

A set of n differential equations containing n unknown functions y_1, \dots, y_n of a variable x is called a **system of ordinary differential equations**. Here each equation of the system has a form similar to (1), but each left-hand side contains y_1, \dots, y_n and their derivatives. A set of n functions y_1, \dots, y_n of x is called a **solution** if the functions satisfy the given system of differential equations. The highest order of derivatives in the left-hand sides is called the **order** of the system of differential equations.

We consider most frequently a first-order system of the form

$$y'_i = f_i(x, y_1, \dots, y_n), \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n. \quad (3)$$

If we put $y = y_1$, $y' = y_2$, ..., $y^{(n-1)} = y_n$ and solve (1) with respect to $y^{(n)}$ to get $y^{(n)} = f_n(x, y_1, \dots, y_n)$, then (1) is equivalent to a system of equations of the form (3), where $f_1 = y_2$, $f_2 = y_3$, ..., $f_n = f$. In an analogous way, a general system of equations can be transformed to a system of the form (3). Therefore (3) is called the **normal form** of differential equations.

C. The Geometric Interpretation

When x, y_1, \dots, y_n are real, (3) can be interpreted as follows: Let $I = (a, b)$ be an open interval and D a domain of \mathbf{R}^n . Let

$$y_i = \varphi_i(x, c_1, \dots, c_n), \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n, \quad (4)$$

be functions of class C^1 defined for $(x, c_1, \dots, c_n) \in I \times D$, and let $\mathfrak{D}(x_0)$ be the image in the y_1, \dots, y_n -space of D under the mapping $y_i = \varphi_i(x_0, c_1, \dots, c_n)$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$) for a fixed $x_0 \in I$. We assume that for each fixed $x_0 \in I$ we have $\partial(\varphi_1, \dots, \varphi_n)/\partial(c_1, \dots, c_n) \neq 0$ in D . Then for every $x = x_0 \in I$, c_1, \dots, c_n are considered to be functions of (y_1, \dots, y_n) defined in a neighborhood of every point (y_1^0, \dots, y_n^0) of $\mathfrak{D}(x_0)$, and we have $y'_i = \varphi'_i(x, c_1, \dots, c_n) = f_i(x, y_1, \dots, y_n)$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$), i.e., y_1, \dots, y_n satisfy a system of differential equations of the form (3). On the other hand, (4) represents a family of curves of class C^1 in the x, y_1, \dots, y_n -space \mathbf{R}^{n+1} containing n parameters c_1, \dots, c_n , for which (y'_1, \dots, y'_n) is the tangent vector (in the terminology of physics, (y'_1, \dots, y'_n) gives the speed and the direction of a stationary flow in \mathbf{R}^{n+1} at each point). By solving (3) we find the family of curves of class C^1 in \mathbf{R}^{n+1} (in the terminology of physics, we find a stationary flow of which the speed and the direction are given at each point). A solution containing n parameters analogous to (4) is called a **general solution** of (3), and a solution obtained from a general solution by giving particular values to the n parameters is called a **particular solution**.

As may be imagined by the interpretation in this section, there exists in general one and only one particular solution passing through the point $(x_0, y_1^0, \dots, y_n^0)$ for $x_0 \in I$, $(y_1^0, \dots, y_n^0) \in \mathfrak{D}(x_0)$. The problem of finding this solution, i.e., the solution of (3) for which $y_i(x_0) = y_i^0$ for $x = x_0$, is called the **initial value problem** (\rightarrow 316 Ordinary Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems)).

D. Methods of Integration

We have different methods of solving differential equations. To solve differential equations by a finite number of integrations is called the **method of quadrature**. This method is useful

for some special types of differential equations (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 14.I). S. Lie gave theoretical foundations for this method by using Lie transformation groups (\rightarrow 431 Transformation Groups; Appendix A, Table 14.III). There are many other methods, for example, power series methods (assuming that the solution can be expanded in a power series $\sum a_v(x-a)^v$, substituting the series for y in (1), and finding its coefficients); methods of successive approximation; methods using † Laplace transforms or † Fourier transforms; † perturbation methods; numerical methods; etc. (\rightarrow 303 Numerical Solution of Ordinary Differential Equations).

Historically, finding explicit solutions of various kinds of differential equations has been the main object of the theory. Recently, however, the importance of qualitative studies, in particular theorems on the existence and uniqueness of solutions, has been recognized. For example, if a solution with a property A is given, and if the uniqueness of the solution having the property A and the existence of solutions having the properties A and B can be shown, then the given solution necessarily has the property B . In this way, topological and analytic studies of differential equations are applied to find their solutions (\rightarrow 314 Ordinary Differential Equations (Asymptotic Behavior of Solutions); 315 (Boundary Value Problems); 316 (Initial Value Problems); 126 Dynamical Systems).

References

- [1] W. Kaplan, Ordinary differential equations, Addison-Wesley, 1958.
 - [2] P. Hartman, Ordinary differential equations, Wiley, 1964.
 - [3] E. Hille, Lectures on ordinary differential equations, Addison-Wesley, 1968.
- Also \rightarrow references to 316 Ordinary Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems).

314 (XIII.5) Ordinary Differential Equations (Asymptotic Behavior of Solutions)

A. Linear Differential Equations

A system of linear ordinary differential equations can be written as

$$\mathbf{x}' = A(t)\mathbf{x}, \quad (1)$$

where t is a real independent variable, $\mathbf{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is an n -dimensional complex vector function of t , and $A(t)$ is an $n \times n$ matrix whose elements are complex-valued functions of t . If $A(t)$ is a continuous function of t defined on an open interval I , any solution of (1) is continuously differentiable for $t \in I$. The question naturally arises as to how the solutions behave as t approaches either one of the endpoints of I ; that is, the question of the **asymptotic properties** of the solutions. The interval I can always be taken to be $0 \leq t < \infty$, by applying a suitable transformation of the independent variable if necessary.

The study of the \dagger asymptotic expansions of solutions when the coefficient $A(t)$ is an analytic function of t was initiated by H. Poincaré in 1880. This work was continued by J. Horn, J. C. C. A. Kneser, and others in the direction of removing assumptions on the structure of $A(t)$ and extending the domain where the expansions are valid. The theory has been almost completed by W. J. Trjitzinsky, J. Malmquist, and M. Hukuhara (\rightarrow 254 Linear Ordinary Differential Equations (Local Theory)). On the other hand, O. Perron initiated a new direction of research by weakening the regularity conditions on the coefficients. His work was continued by F. Lettenmeyer, R. A. Späth, Hukuhara, and others. The methods used in these two lines of investigation were originally distinct, but Hukuhara established a unified method of treating the problems arising in these two different types of investigations. Furthermore, he succeeded in sharpening those results previously obtained.

Here we assume that $A(t)$ need not be analytic. The following asymptotic properties of a solution $\mathbf{x}(t)$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$ are considered: (i) boundedness of $\limsup t^{-1} \log |\mathbf{x}(t)|$; (ii) boundedness of solution: $\limsup |\mathbf{x}(t)| < \infty$; (iii) convergence of solution: $\lim \mathbf{x}(t)$; (iv) integrability: $\int_0^\infty |\mathbf{x}(s)|^p ds < \infty$, etc. We call $\chi(\mathbf{x}) = \limsup t^{-1} \log |\mathbf{x}(t)|$ the **type number** (or **Lyapunov characteristic number**) of the solution $\mathbf{x}(t)$. The fact that all solutions of (1) are bounded is equivalent to the \dagger stability of the solution $\mathbf{x} = 0$, and the fact that all solutions of (1) tend to zero as $t \rightarrow \infty$ is equivalent to the \dagger asymptotic stability of the solution $\mathbf{x} = 0$.

B. Constant Coefficients and Periodic Coefficients

We begin with the particular case of (1), where $A(t)$ is a constant matrix:

$$\mathbf{x}' = A\mathbf{x}. \quad (2)$$

To study the asymptotic properties of the

solutions of (2), it suffices to transform the matrix A into a \dagger Jordan canonical form, since the structure of the solution space of (2) is completely determined by the Jordan canonical form of A . Thus all solutions of (2) are bounded if and only if every eigenvalue of A has a real part not greater than zero, and those with zero real parts are of simple type, that is, the corresponding blocks in the Jordan canonical form are all 1×1 matrices; all solutions of (2) tend to zero as $t \rightarrow \infty$ if and only if every eigenvalue of A has negative real part.

Consider the linear system

$$\mathbf{x}' = A_0(t)\mathbf{x}, \quad (3)$$

where $A_0(t)$ is a periodic matrix function of period ω . According to \dagger Floquet's theorem, (3) is transformed into a system with constant coefficients by means of a suitable transformation $\mathbf{x} = P(t)\mathbf{y}$, where $P(t)$ is a nonsingular periodic matrix of period ω . Thus, at least theoretically, the information on the asymptotic behavior of the solutions of the periodic system (3) can be derived from the corresponding theory for the system with constant coefficients (2).

C. Asymptotic Integration

Suppose that $A(t)$ is bounded. Then the type number $\chi(\mathbf{x})$ is finite for any nontrivial solution $\mathbf{x}(t)$ of (1), and the number of distinct type numbers does not exceed n .

Consider the linear system

$$\mathbf{x}' = [A + B(t)]\mathbf{x}, \quad (4)$$

where A is a constant matrix and $B(t)$ is a matrix function such that $\int_t^{t+1} \|B(s)\| ds \rightarrow 0$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$. For any nontrivial solution $\mathbf{x}(t)$ of (4), the limit $\mu = \lim t^{-1} \log |\mathbf{x}(t)|$ exists and is equal to the real part of one of the eigenvalues of A . Conversely, if at least one eigenvalue of A has real part μ , then there exists a nontrivial solution $\mathbf{x}(t)$ of (4) satisfying $\lim t^{-1} \log |\mathbf{x}(t)| = \mu$. Suppose in addition that $B(t) \rightarrow 0$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$. Let $\mu_1 \leq \mu_2 \leq \dots \leq \mu_n$ be the real parts of the eigenvalues of A . Then there exists a \dagger fundamental system of solutions of (4), $\{\mathbf{x}_1(t), \dots, \mathbf{x}_n(t)\}$, such that for any $c_i, c_k \neq 0$,

$$\log |c_1 \mathbf{x}_1(t) + \dots + c_k \mathbf{x}_k(t)| = \mu_k t + o(t).$$

A sharp estimate of the term $o(t)$ was given by Hukuhara.

Next consider the linear system

$$\mathbf{x}' = [A(t) + B(t)]\mathbf{x}, \quad (5)$$

where the matrices $A(t)$ and $B(t)$ satisfy $\int_0^\infty \|A'(s)\| ds < \infty$ and $\int_0^\infty \|B(s)\| ds < \infty$.

Let $\lambda_1(t), \dots, \lambda_n(t)$ and $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_n, \lambda_k = \lim \lambda_k(t)$,

be the eigenvalues of $A(t)$ and $A = \lim A(t)$, respectively. N. Levinson proved the following theorem: Assume that $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_n$ are mutually distinct and $M_{jk}(t) = \operatorname{Re} \int_0^t [\lambda_j(s) - \lambda_k(s)] ds$ satisfy either $M_{jk}(t) \rightarrow \infty$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$ and for each pair (j, k) , $M_{jk}(t_2) - M_{jk}(t_1) \geq -K$ for $t_1 < t_2$, or $M_{jk}(t) \rightarrow -\infty$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$ and $M_{jk}(t_2) - M_{jk}(t_1) \leq K$ for $t_1 < t_2$, or $|M_{jk}(t_2) - M_{jk}(t_1)| \leq K$ for all t_1, t_2 , where K is a positive constant. Then (5) has a fundamental system of solutions $\{x_1(t), \dots, x_n(t)\}$ such that

$$x_j(t) = \exp\left(\int_0^t \lambda_j(s) ds\right) [\xi_j + o(1)], \quad j = 1, \dots, n,$$

where ξ_j is an eigenvector of A corresponding to λ_j .

D. Boundedness and Convergence of Solutions

Consider again the linear system (5) satisfying $\int_0^\infty \|A(s)\| ds < \infty$ and $\int_0^\infty \|B(s)\| ds < \infty$. Suppose that all eigenvalues of $A(t)$ have nonpositive real parts and that the eigenvalues of $A = \lim A(t)$ whose real parts vanish are simple. Then all solutions of (5) are bounded. This result is a generalization, due to L. Cesari, of the so-called **Dini-Hukuhara theorem**.

In the case of general $A(t)$, it is known that not all solutions of (5) are bounded even if all solutions of (1) tend to zero as $t \rightarrow \infty$ and if the matrix $B(t)$ is such that $\int_0^\infty \|B(s)\| ds < \infty$ and $B(t) \rightarrow 0$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$. However, if $A(t)$ is periodic or satisfies $\liminf \operatorname{Re} \int^t \operatorname{tr} A(s) ds > -\infty$, then under the assumption that $\int_0^\infty \|B(s)\| ds < \infty$, the boundedness of all solutions of (1) implies the boundedness of all solutions of (5).

The following inequalities often provide useful information about the asymptotic behavior of solutions of (1):

$$|x(0)| \exp\left(-\int_0^t \mu[-A(s)] ds\right) \leq |x(t)| \\ \leq |x(0)| \exp\left(\int_0^t \mu[A(s)] ds\right), \quad t \geq 0,$$

where $\mu[A(t)] = \lim_{h \rightarrow +0} [\|I + hA(t)\| - 1]/h$. ($\mu[A(t)]$ was introduced by Lozinskii.) If $\limsup \int^t \mu[A(s)] ds < \infty$, then all solutions of (1) are bounded; if $\lim \int^t \mu[A(s)] ds$ exists, then for every solution $x(t)$ of (1), $|x(t)|$ tends to a finite limit as $t \rightarrow \infty$; and if $\lim \int^t \mu[A(s)] ds = -\infty$, then all solutions of (1) tend to zero as $t \rightarrow \infty$. It can be shown that every solution of (1) tends to a finite limit as $t \rightarrow \infty$, provided that $\int_0^\infty \|A(s)\| ds < \infty$.

If all solutions of (1) are bounded, then $\limsup \operatorname{Re} \int^t \operatorname{tr} A(s) ds < \infty$. If $\liminf \operatorname{Re} \int^t \operatorname{tr} A(s) ds > -\infty$, then (1) has a solution $x(t)$ with the property that $\limsup |x(t)| > 0$. When $\lim |x(t)|$

exists for every solution $x(t)$ of (1), if there exists a nontrivial solution $x(t)$ of (1) such that $\lim x(t) = 0$, then $\lim \operatorname{Re} \int^t \operatorname{tr} A(s) ds = -\infty$, but if there is no such solution, then $\operatorname{Re} \int^t \operatorname{tr} A(s) ds$ is bounded.

E. Nonlinear Differential Equations

Consider a system of nonlinear differential equations of the form

$$x' = Ax + f(t, x), \quad (6)$$

where A is an $n \times n$ constant matrix and $f(t, x)$ is an n -vector function that is continuous for $t \geq 0$, $|x| < \Delta$, and that satisfies $f(t, 0) = 0$. Suppose that $f(t, x)/|x| \rightarrow 0$ as $|x| \rightarrow 0$ and $t \rightarrow \infty$. Then for every eventually nontrivial solution $x(t)$ of (6) that tends to zero as $t \rightarrow \infty$, $\mu = \lim t^{-1} \log |x(t)|$ exists and equals the real part of one of the eigenvalues of A . Conversely, if at least one eigenvalue of A has real part $\mu < 0$, then there exists a solution $x(t)$ of (6) such that $\lim t^{-1} \log |x(t)| = \mu$. Suppose that $f(t, x)/|x| \rightarrow 0$ as $|x| \rightarrow 0$ uniformly with respect to t . Then if all eigenvalues of A have negative real parts, the zero solution $x(t) = 0$ of (6) is asymptotically stable, and if A has an eigenvalue whose real part is positive, then the zero solution of (6) is unstable. Suppose that $f_x(t, x) = (\partial f_j(t, x)/\partial x_k) \rightarrow 0$ as $|x| \rightarrow 0$ uniformly with respect to t . In this case, if A is a matrix such that its k eigenvalues have negative real parts and the other $n - k$ eigenvalues have positive real parts, then there exists a k -dimensional manifold S containing the origin with the following property: For t_0 sufficiently large, any solution $x(t)$ of (6) tends to zero as $t \rightarrow \infty$, provided that $x(t_0) \in S$, and if $x(t_0) \notin S$, $x(t)$ cannot remain in the vicinity of the origin no matter how close $x(t_0)$ is to the origin.

In the nonlinear system

$$x' = F(t, x), \quad (7)$$

suppose that $F(t, x)$ is of period ω with respect to t and has continuous partial derivatives with respect to x . Suppose, moreover, that (7) has a solution $p(t)$ of period ω . If all the characteristic exponents of the variational system of (7) with respect to $p(t)$, $y' = F_x(t, p(t))y$ with $F_x(t, x) = (\partial F_j(t, x)/\partial x_k)$, have negative real parts, then the periodic solution $p(t)$ is asymptotically stable. If an autonomous system $x' = F(x)$ has a periodic solution $p(t)$ and the corresponding variational system $y' = F_x(p(t))y$ has $n - 1$ characteristic exponents with negative eigenvalues, then there exists an $\varepsilon > 0$ such that for any solution $x(t)$ satisfying $|x(t_1) - p(t_0)| < \varepsilon$ for some t_0 and t_1 , we have $|x(t) - p(t + c)| \rightarrow 0$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$ for a suitable choice of c (asymptotic phase).

F. Scalar Differential Equations

The aforementioned results can be specialized to the case of higher-order scalar (or single) ordinary differential equations. Much sharper results can often be derived through direct analysis of scalar equations themselves. In particular, detailed and deep results have been obtained for second-order linear differential equations of the form

$$x'' + q(t)x = 0, \quad (8)$$

e.g., [†]Mathieu's equation.

If $\int^\infty s|q(s)|ds < \infty$, then (8) has a fundamental system of solutions $\{x_1(t), x_2(t)\}$ satisfying, for $t \rightarrow \infty$,

$$x_1(t) = 1 + o(1), \quad x_2(t) = t[1 + o(1)],$$

$$x'_1(t) = t^{-1}o(1), \quad x'_2(t) = 1 + o(1);$$

if $\int^\infty |q(s) + 1|ds < \infty$, then (8) has a fundamental system of solutions satisfying

$$x_1(t) = e^t[1 + o(1)], \quad x_2(t) = e^{-t}[1 + o(1)],$$

$$x'_1(t) = e^t[1 + o(1)], \quad x'_2(t) = -e^{-t}[1 + o(1)];$$

and if $\int^\infty |q(s) - 1|ds < \infty$, then (8) has a fundamental system of solutions

$$x_1(t) = e^{it}[1 + o(1)], \quad x_2(t) = e^{-it}[1 + o(1)],$$

$$x'_1(t) = ie^{it}[1 + o(1)], \quad x'_2(t) = -ie^{-it}[1 + o(1)].$$

Suppose that $q(t) \rightarrow c > 0$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$ and $\int^\infty |q'(s)|ds < \infty$. Then $x(t)$ and $x'(t)$ are bounded for every solution $x(t)$ of (8). The same is true if $q(t)$ is a positive periodic function of period ω such that $\omega \int_0^\omega q(s)ds \leq 4$. If $q(t)$ is negative, then (8) always has both bounded and unbounded monotone solutions.

The number of linearly independent solutions $x(t)$ of (8) satisfying $\int^\infty |x(s)|^2 ds < \infty$ plays an important role in [†]eigenvalue problems. It is known that the ordinary differential operator $l[x] = x'' + q(t)x$ is of [†]limit point type at infinity if there exist a positive function $M(t)$ and positive constants k_1, k_2 such that $q(t) \leq k_1 M(t)$, $|M'(t)M^{-3/2}(t)| \leq k_2$, and $\int^\infty M^{-1/2}(s)ds = \infty$, and that $l[x]$ is of [†]limit circle type at infinity if $q(t) > 0$, $\int^\infty q^{-1/2}(s)ds = \infty$, and $\int^\infty [q^{-3/2}(s)q'(s)]' + (1/4)q^{-5/2}(s)q'^2(s)ds < \infty$.

Finally consider the nonlinear equation

$$x'' + q(t)|x|^\gamma \operatorname{sgn} x = 0, \quad (9)$$

where γ is a positive constant and $q(t)$ is a positive function. If $q'(t) \geq 0$, then all solutions of (9) are bounded; if either $q'(t) \geq 0$ and $\lim q(t) < \infty$ or $q'(t) \leq 0$ and $\lim q(t) > 0$, then all solutions $x(t)$ of (9) are bounded together with their derivatives $x'(t)$; and if $q'(t) \geq 0$, $\lim q(t) = \infty$ and either $q''(t) \geq 0$ or $q''(t) \leq 0$, then all solutions of (9) converge to zero as $t \rightarrow \infty$.

Equation (9) is said to be **oscillatory** if every solution of (9) that is continuable to $t = \infty$ has arbitrarily large zeros. If (9) is oscillatory and if $q_1(t) \geq q(t)$, then the equation $x'' + q_1(t)|x|^\gamma \operatorname{sgn} x = 0$ is also oscillatory. When $\gamma = 1$, (9) is oscillatory if $q(t) \geq (1 + \varepsilon)/4t^2$ for some $\varepsilon > 0$, and is not oscillatory if $q(t) \leq 1/4t^2$. A necessary and sufficient condition for equation (9) with $\gamma \neq 1$ to be oscillatory is as follows: $\int^\infty sq(s)ds = \infty$ if $\gamma > 1$; $\int^\infty s^\gamma q(s)ds = \infty$ if $0 < \gamma < 1$.

References

- [1] M. Hukuhara, Sur les points singuliers des équations différentielles linéaires; domaine réel, J. Fac. Sci. Hokkaido Univ., (I) 2 (1934), 13–88.
- [2] R. Bellman, Stability theory of differential equations, McGraw-Hill, 1953.
- [3] L. Cesari, Asymptotic behavior and stability problems in ordinary differential equations, Springer, third edition, 1970.
- [4] W. A. Coppel, Stability and asymptotic behavior of differential equations, Heath, 1965.
- [5] P. Hartman, Ordinary differential equations, Wiley, 1964.
- [6] E. A. Coddington and N. Levinson, Theory of ordinary differential equations, McGraw-Hill, 1955.
- [7] J. S. W. Wong, On the generalized Emden-Fowler equation, SIAM Rev., 17 (1975), 339–360.

315 (XIII.4)
Ordinary Differential
Equations (Boundary
Value Problems)

A. General Remarks

Consider the differential equation in the real variable x

$$f(x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}) = 0. \quad (1)$$

Let a_1, \dots, a_k be points in an interval $I \subset \mathbb{R}$ and consider several relations between nk values $y(a_i), y'(a_i), \dots, y^{(n-1)}(a_i)$, $i = 1, \dots, k$. The problem of finding solutions of (1) satisfying these relations is called a **boundary value problem** of (1), and the relations considered are called **boundary conditions**. When $k = 2$ and a_1, a_2 are the endpoints of I , the problem, called a **two-point boundary value problem**, has been a main subject of study. We can consider boundary value problems in the same way for systems of differential equations.

B. Linear Differential Equations

Consider a linear ordinary differential operator L defined by

$$L[y] = p_0(x)y^{(n)} + p_1(x)y^{(n-1)} + \dots + p_n(x)y,$$

where $p_k(x)$ is a complex-valued function of class C^{n-k} defined on a compact interval $a \leq x \leq b$ and $p_0(x) \neq 0$ for any $x \in [a, b]$. We define a system of **linear boundary operators** U_1, \dots, U_m by

$$U_i[y] = \sum_{j=1}^n M_{ij}y^{(j-1)}(a) + \sum_{j=1}^n N_{ij}y^{(j-1)}(b).$$

Given a function $f(x)$ and complex constants $\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_m$, the linear boundary value problem defined by

$$L[y] = f(x), \quad U_i[y] = \gamma_i, \quad i = 1, \dots, m, \quad (2)$$

is a two-point boundary value problem. When $f(x) \equiv 0$, $\gamma_i = 0$, $i = 1, \dots, m$, the problem is called **homogeneous**; otherwise it is called **inhomogeneous**. Let $L^*[y]$ be a formally **adjoint** differential operator of $L[y]$. A set of m^* linear boundary conditions $U_i^*[y] = 0$, $i = 1, \dots, m^*$, is said to be an **adjoint boundary condition** of $U_i[y] = 0$, $i = 1, \dots, m$, if for any function y of class C^n satisfying $U_i[y] = 0$, $i = 1, \dots, m$, and any function y^* of class C^n satisfying $U_i^*[y^*] = 0$, $i = 1, \dots, m^*$, we have $\int_a^b L[y] \bar{y}^* dx = \int_a^b y \bar{L}^*[y^*] dx$. The boundary value problem

$$L^*[y] = 0, \quad U_i^*[y] = 0, \quad i = 1, \dots, m^*, \quad (3)$$

is said to be an **adjoint boundary value problem** of

$$L[y] = 0, \quad U_i[y] = 0, \quad i = 1, \dots, m. \quad (4)$$

We say that the problem (4) is **self-adjoint** if $L[y] = L^*[y]$ and the conditions $U_i[y] = 0$, $i = 1, \dots, m$, are equivalent to the conditions $U_i^*[y] = 0$, $i = 1, \dots, m^*$.

The boundary value problem containing a parameter λ

$$L[y] = \lambda y, \quad U_i[y] = 0, \quad i = 1, \dots, m, \quad (5)$$

admits nontrivial solutions only for special values of λ . Such values of λ are called the **eigenvalues** (or **proper values**) of (5), and the corresponding solutions $\neq 0$ are called the **eigenfunctions** (or **proper functions**) of (5). For any value of λ that is not an eigenvalue, there exists a unique function $G(x, \xi, \lambda)$ such that the conditions $L[y] = \lambda y + f$, $U_i[y] = 0$ are equivalent to $y = \int_a^b G(x, \xi, \lambda) f(\xi) d\xi$. The function $G(x, \xi, \lambda)$ is called the **Green's function** of (5). If $\lambda = 0$ is not an eigenvalue, then (5) is equivalent to

$$y(x) = \lambda \int_a^b G(x, \xi) y(\xi) d\xi,$$

where $G(x, \xi) = G(x, \xi, 0)$. For a function $G(x, \xi, \lambda)$ of (5) and the function $G^*(x, \xi, \lambda)$ of $L^*[y] = \lambda y$, have the relation $G(x, \xi, \lambda) = \bar{G}^*(x, \xi, \lambda)$. The assumption that (5) is self-adjoint has only real eigenvalues which are countably infinite discrete values corresponding to two functions orthogonal to each other. An orthonormal set of eigenfunctions that no eigenfunction is linearly independent of $\{\varphi_n\}$, then the system $\{\varphi_n\}$ is an orthonormal set in the Hilbert space consisting of functions that are square integrable on (a, b) , and hence for expansion $f = a_1 \varphi_1 + a_2 \varphi_2 + \dots$. $L_2(a, b)$ the Parseval equality holds if f is a function of class C^n satisfying (5), then the Fourier expansion converges uniformly to f on $[a, b]$.

The boundary value problem for a second-order equation

$$(p(x)y')' + (q(x) + \lambda r(x))y = 0,$$

$$\alpha y(a) + \beta y'(a) = 0, \quad \gamma y(b) + \delta y'(b) = 0,$$

is called a **Sturm-Liouville problem**. If p, q, r are real-valued functions defined on $[a, b]$ and $\alpha, \beta, \gamma, \delta$ are real constants, then the boundary value problem has real eigenvalues and eigenfunctions. If p, q, r are continuous and $p(x) > 0$ on $[a, b]$. Then (i) the eigenvalues form a sequence tending to $+\infty$; (ii) the eigenfunctions $\varphi_n(x)$ associated with λ_n have no zeros in $a < x < b$, and there are no adjacent zeros of $\varphi_n(x)$ and $\varphi_{n+1}(x)$; (iii) the set of eigenfunctions is complete in $L_2(a, b)$ with weight function $r(x)$.

$$\int_a^b r(x) \varphi_m(x) \varphi_n(x) dx = 0, \quad m \neq n.$$

When the coefficients p_0, \dots, p_{n-1} are defined in an open interval (a, b) with $a < b \leq \infty$ and p_k is of class C^{n-k} , L is a linear differential operator in the Hilbert space consisting of functions that are square integrable in $a < x < b$, and the general theory of operator theory in Hilbert space (see 390 Spectral Analysis of Operators).

C. Nonlinear Differential Equations

Boundary value problems for nonlinear differential equations are very difficult. Results are obtained only for equations of the form

Consider, for example, the boundary value problem

$$y'' = f(x, y, y')$$

and boundary conditions $y(a) = A$, $y(b) = B$. The following theorem has been proved: Suppose that $f(x, y, y')$ is continuous for $a \leq x \leq b$, $\varpi(x) \leq y \leq \bar{\varpi}(x)$, $-\infty < y' < +\infty$, and $|f(x, y, y')| \leq M(1 + y'^2)$; $\varpi''(x) > f(x, \varpi(x), \varpi'(x))$ and $\bar{\varpi}'' < f(x, \bar{\varpi}(x), \bar{\varpi}'(x))$ for $a \leq x \leq b$; and $\varpi(a) \leq A \leq \bar{\varpi}(a)$ and $\varpi(b) \leq B \leq \bar{\varpi}(b)$. Then (6) admits a solution $y(x)$ such that $y(a) = A$, $y(b) = B$, and $\varpi(x) \leq y(x) \leq \bar{\varpi}(x)$ for $a \leq x \leq b$. If in addition f is an increasing function with respect to y , the solution is unique. Moreover, under suitable conditions, the solution is obtainable by the method of successive approximations.

The boundary value problem

$$y''' + 2yy'' + 2\lambda(k^2 - y'^2) = 0,$$

$$y(0) = y'(0) = 0, \quad y'(x) \rightarrow k \quad (x \rightarrow \infty),$$

where λ and k are constants, appears in the theory of fluid dynamics. It is known that if $\lambda \geq 0$, the problem has a solution, and that if $0 \leq \lambda \leq 1$, the solution is unique.

Consider the system of differential equations

$$y_j' = f_j(x, y_1, \dots, y_n), \quad j = 1, \dots, n.$$

The problem of finding a solution such that $y_j(a_j) = b_j$, $j = 1, \dots, n$, called **Hukuhara's problem**, reduces to the initial value problem when the a_j coincide. The problem of solving

$$y^{(n)} = f(x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n-1)}),$$

$$y(a_j) = b_j, \quad j = 1, \dots, n,$$

is reduced to Hukuhara's problem by a suitable change of variables. The following result is a generalization of Perron's theorem: Let $\varpi_j(x)$, $\bar{\varpi}_j(x)$, $j = 1, \dots, n$, be continuous and right and left differentiable functions and $\varpi_j(x) \leq \bar{\varpi}_j(x)$ for $a \leq x \leq b$. Suppose that the $f_j(x, y_1, \dots, y_n)$ are continuous for $\alpha \leq x \leq \beta$ and $\varpi_k(x) \leq y_k \leq \bar{\varpi}_k(x)$, $k = 1, \dots, n$; satisfy $(x - a_j)(D^\pm \bar{\varpi}_j(x) - f_j(x, y_1, \dots, y_n)) \geq 0$ for $y_j = \bar{\varpi}_j(x)$ and $\varpi_k(x) \leq y_k \leq \bar{\varpi}_k(x)$, $k \neq j$; satisfy $(x - a_j)(D^\pm \varpi_j(x) - f_j(x, y_1, \dots, y_n)) \leq 0$ for $y_j = \varpi_j(x)$ and $\varpi_k(x) \leq y_k \leq \bar{\varpi}_k(x)$, $k \neq j$; and satisfy $\varpi_j(a_j) \leq b_j \leq \bar{\varpi}_j(a_j)$. Then there exists a solution $y(x)$ such that $y_j(a_j) = b_j$ and $\varpi_j(x) \leq y(x) \leq \bar{\varpi}_j(x)$. This theory was applied by M. Hukuhara to the study of singular points of ordinary differential equations.

References

- [1] E. A. Coddington and N. Levinson, *Theory of ordinary differential equations*, McGraw-Hill, 1955.
- [2] P. Hartman, *Ordinary differential equations*, Wiley, 1964.
- [3] E. Hille, *Lectures on ordinary differential equations*, Addison-Wesley, 1969.

[4] M. A. Naimark (Neumark), *Linear differential operators I, II*, Ungar, 1967, 1968. (Original in Russian, 1954.)

[5] N. Dunford and J. T. Schwartz, *Linear operators II*, Interscience, 1963.

[6] B. M. Levitan and I. S. Sargsyan (Sargsjan), *Introduction to spectral theory: Self-adjoint ordinary differential operators*, Amer. Math. Soc. Transl. of Math. Monographs, 1975. (Original in Russian, 1970.)

316 (XIII.3) Ordinary Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems)

A. General Remarks

Consider a system of ordinary differential equations

$$dy_i/dx = f_i(x, y_1, \dots, y_n), \quad i = 1, \dots, n. \quad (1)$$

A. L. Cauchy first gave a rigorous proof for the existence and uniqueness of solutions:

If f_i , $i = 1, \dots, n$, and their derivatives $\partial f_i / \partial y_k$ are continuous in a neighborhood of a point (a, b_1, \dots, b_n) , then there exists a unique solution of (1) satisfying the conditions $y_i(a) = b_i$, $i = 1, \dots, n$. These conditions are called **initial conditions**, and the values a, b_1, \dots, b_n **initial values**. The problem of finding solutions that satisfy initial conditions is called an **initial value problem** (or **Cauchy problem**). If we consider (x, y_1, \dots, y_n) as the coordinates of a point in the $(n+1)$ -dimensional space \mathbf{R}^{n+1} , then a solution of (1) represents a curve in this space called a **solution curve** (or **integral curve**). The statement that a solution satisfies initial conditions $y_i(a) = b_i$, $i = 1, \dots, n$, means that the integral curve represented by it passes through the point (a, b_1, \dots, b_n) .

Since, in general, we can transform a differential equation of higher order into a system of differential equations of the form (1) by introducing new dependent variables, all definitions and theorems concerning the system (1) can be interpreted as applying to a higher-order equation. For example, for the equation $y^{(n)} = f(x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n-1)})$ the conditions $y(a) = b$, $y'(a) = b'$, \dots , $y^{(n-1)}(a) = b^{(n-1)}$ constitute initial conditions, and the values $a, b, b', \dots, b^{(n-1)}$ are initial values. If f and its derivatives $\partial f / \partial y^{(i)}$ are continuous, then there exists a unique solution satisfying given initial conditions.

Suppose that the f_i are continuous. Then a system of functions $(y_1(x), \dots, y_n(x))$ is a solu-

tion of (1) if and only if

$$y_i(x) = b_i + \int_a^x f_i(x, y_1(x), \dots, y_n(x)) dx, \\ i = 1, \dots, n.$$

When the f_i are not continuous, we define $(y_1(x), \dots, y_n(x))$ to be a solution of (1) for the initial value problem $y_i(a) = b_i$ if $(y_1(x), \dots, y_n(x))$ satisfied the integral equation just given.

We use the vectorial notation: $\mathbf{y} = (y_1, \dots, y_n)$, $\mathbf{f} = (f_1, \dots, f_n)$ together with $\|\mathbf{y}\|^2 = y_1^2 + \dots + y_n^2$. The equations (1) are then written as the single equation

$$\mathbf{y}' = \mathbf{f}(x, \mathbf{y}).$$

B. Equations in the Real and Complex Domains

We state main theorems for differential equations in the real domain in Sections C–F and in the complex domain in Section G.

C. Existence Theorems

Suppose that $\mathbf{f}(x, \mathbf{y})$ is continuous for $|x - a| \leq r$ and $\|\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{b}\| \leq \rho$, and that $\|\mathbf{f}(x, \mathbf{y})\| \leq M$ there. Then equation (1) admits a solution satisfying $\mathbf{y}(a) = \mathbf{b}$ and defined in an interval $|x - a| \leq \min(r, \rho/M)$ (**existence theorem**). There are two methods of proving this theorem, one using **Cauchy polygons** and one using **fixed-point theorems** for function spaces. From this theorem we deduce that if $\mathbf{f}(x, \mathbf{y})$ is continuous in a domain D of \mathbf{R}^{n+1} , then there exists a solution curve passing through any point of D . Let $\mathbf{y} = \boldsymbol{\varphi}_1(x)$ and $\mathbf{y} = \boldsymbol{\varphi}_2(x)$ be solutions of (1) defined in the intervals I_1 and I_2 , respectively. If $I_1 \subset I_2$ and $\boldsymbol{\varphi}_1(x) = \boldsymbol{\varphi}_2(x)$ for $x \in I_1$, we say that $\boldsymbol{\varphi}_2$ is a **prolongation** or **extension** of $\boldsymbol{\varphi}_1$. Given a solution of (1), there exists a nonextendable solution that is an extension of the solution. The solution curve of a nonextendable solution tends to the boundary of D as x tends to any one of the ends of its interval of definition.

D. Uniqueness Theorems

Continuity does not imply uniqueness of the solution. If (1) admits at most one solution satisfying a given condition, we call this condition a **uniqueness condition**. Various kinds of **uniqueness theorems**, which state uniqueness conditions, are known.

The **Lipschitz condition**:

$$\|\mathbf{f}(x, \mathbf{y}) - \mathbf{f}(x, \mathbf{z})\| \leq L \|\mathbf{y} - \mathbf{z}\|, \quad L > 0 \text{ a constant,}$$

is one of the simplest. When \mathbf{f} is continuous and satisfies the Lipschitz condition, the **method of successive approximation**, initiated by C. E. Picard, is often used to prove the existence of solutions. This method is as follows: We choose a suitable function, for example $\mathbf{y}_0(x) \equiv \mathbf{b}$, and then define $\mathbf{y}_k(x)$, $k = 1, 2, \dots$, recursively by $\mathbf{y}_k(x) = \mathbf{b} + \int_a^x \mathbf{f}(t, \mathbf{y}_{k-1}(t)) dt$. Then $\{\mathbf{y}_k(x)\}$ is uniformly convergent, and its limit is a solution of (1) satisfying $\mathbf{y}(a) = \mathbf{b}$.

Assuming the continuity of \mathbf{f} , H. Okamura gave a necessary and sufficient condition for uniqueness: Suppose that \mathbf{f} is continuous in D . Then a necessary and sufficient condition for there to exist a unique solution curve of (1) going from any point of D to the right is that there exist a C^1 -function $\varphi(x, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})$ defined for $(x, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z})$ such that (x, \mathbf{y}) and $(x, \mathbf{z}) \in D$ and satisfying the conditions $\varphi(x, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) = 0$ for $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{z}$, $\varphi(x, \mathbf{y}, \mathbf{z}) > 0$ for $\mathbf{y} \neq \mathbf{z}$, and

$$\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x} + \sum_i \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial y_i} f_i(x, \mathbf{y}) + \sum_i \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial z_i} f_i(x, \mathbf{z}) \leq 0.$$

E. Perron's Theorem

Consider the scalar equation $y' = f(x, y)$. We have **Perron's theorem**: Let $\omega(x)$ and $\bar{\omega}(x)$ be continuous functions that are right differentiable in $\alpha \leq x < \beta$ and satisfy $\omega(x) \leq \bar{\omega}(x)$, and let f be a continuous function defined on $D: \alpha \leq x < \beta$, $\omega(x) \leq y \leq \bar{\omega}(x)$. Suppose that $D^+ \omega(x) \leq f(x, \omega(x))$ and $D^+ \bar{\omega}(x) \geq f(x, \bar{\omega}(x))$. ($D^+ \omega$ denotes the right derivative of ω .) Then for any $(a, b) \in D$ there exists a solution defined on $a \leq x < \beta$ and satisfying $y(a) = b$. The fact that the interval of definition is $a \leq x < \beta$ can be expressed by saying that if we denote the set $\infty < x < \beta$, $|y| < \infty$ by Ω , then D is closed in Ω and there exists, among solution curves going from a point in D to the right, a curve that reaches the boundary of Ω .

Perron's theorem was generalized by M. Hukuhara and M. Nagumo. Let Ω be an open set in \mathbf{R}^{n+1} , D a closed set in Ω , and \mathbf{f} a continuous function in D . A necessary and sufficient condition for (1) to admit a solution curve going from any point (a, \mathbf{b}) in D to the right is that there exist a sequence of points in D , $\{(a_k, \mathbf{b}_k)\}$, such that $a_k \downarrow a$ and $(\mathbf{b}_k - \mathbf{b}) / (a_k - a) \rightarrow \mathbf{f}(a, \mathbf{b})$. Moreover, every solution curve is prolonged to the right to the boundary of Ω . Let $S(\mathbf{y})$ be a continuous **subadditive** and positively homogeneous function and $\omega(x)$ a function continuous and right differentiable on $\alpha \leq x < \beta$. A sufficient condition for $D: \alpha \leq x < \beta$, $S(\mathbf{y}) \leq \omega(x)$ to possess the property in the statement of Perron's theorem is given by $D^+ \omega(x) \geq S(\mathbf{f}(x, \mathbf{y}))$ for $\|\mathbf{y}\| = \omega(x)$.

A continuous function $\omega(x)$ is said to be a

right majorizing function of (1) with respect to $S(y)$ if for any solution $\varphi(x)$, $S(\varphi(a)) \leq \omega(a)$ implies $S(\varphi(x)) \leq \omega(x)$ for $x \geq a$ if both $S(\varphi(x))$ and $\omega(x)$ are defined. In order for $\omega(x)$ to be a right majorizing function, it suffices that $D^+ \omega(x) > S(f(x, y))$ for $\|y\| = \omega(x)$. A function satisfying this inequality is called a **right superior function** of (1) with respect to $S(y)$. If $F(x, S(y)) > S(f(x, y))$, then any solution of $y' = F(x, y)$ is a right superior function of (1). Theorems stating such facts are called **comparison theorems**.

If (1) has a unique solution, the condition $D^+ \omega(x) \geq S(f(x, y))$ for $S(y) = \omega(x)$ implies that $\omega(x)$ is a right majorizing function of (1). Conversely, we can derive from comparison theorems general uniqueness theorems, one of which we state. Suppose that $G(x, y)$ is continuous for $\alpha < x < \beta$ and $0 \leq y < r(x)$; $G(x, 0) \equiv 0$; a solution of $y' = G(x, y)$ such that $y = o(r(x))$ as $x \rightarrow \alpha + 0$ vanishes identically; and finally that $S(f(x, y_1) - f(x, y_2)) \leq G(x, S(y_1 - y_2))$. Then for two solutions φ_1, φ_2 of (1) such that $S(\varphi_1 - \varphi_2) = o(r(x))$ as $x \rightarrow \alpha + 0$, we have $\varphi_1 \equiv \varphi_2$. Assuming that f is continuous at (a, b) and taking $y/(x - a)$ as G , we obtain Nagumo's condition $(x - a)S(f(x, y_1) - f(x, y_2)) \leq S(y_1 - y_2)$.

G. Peano proved the following theorem: With the same notation and assumption as in Perron's theorem, there exist a **maximum solution** $\bar{\varphi}$ and a **minimum solution** $\underline{\varphi}$ of $y' = f(x, y)$ such that $y(a) = b$ for $\underline{\omega}(a) \leq b \leq \bar{\omega}(a)$, and such that there exists a solution curve passing through any point in $\alpha \leq x < \beta$, $\varphi(x) \leq y \leq \bar{\varphi}(x)$. This theorem was extended by Hukuhara as follows. Suppose that $f(x, y)$ is continuous and bounded in $D: \alpha \leq x \leq \beta, \|y\| < \infty$. Let C be a \dagger continuum in D , and let $\mathfrak{F}(C)$ denote the set of solutions intersecting C . Then $\mathfrak{F}(C)$ is a continuum of the \dagger function space $C([\alpha, \beta])$. From this theorem we can deduce the **Kneser-Nagumo theorem**, which says that the intersection of the set of points belonging to the members of $\mathfrak{F}(C)$ and a hyperplane $x = \xi$ is a continuum. It was proved by Hukuhara that if C is in the hyperplane $x = \alpha$, then (1) admits a solution connecting the two hyperplanes $x = \alpha$ and $x = \beta$ and passing through the boundary of the set of points belonging to the members of $\mathfrak{F}(C)$.

F. Equations Containing Parameters

We assume uniqueness of the solution of

$$y' = f(x, y, \lambda), \quad \lambda = (\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_m), \quad (2)$$

where f is a continuous function of (x, y, λ) . Let $\varphi(x, a, b, \lambda)$ denote the solution of (2) satisfying $y(a) = b$. Then $\varphi(x, a, b, \lambda)$ is continuous with respect to (x, a, b, λ) in its region of definition.

If the derivatives $\partial f / \partial y_k$ are also continuous, then $\varphi(x, a, b, \lambda)$ is a continuously differentiable function of (x, b) ; $z_{jk} = \partial \varphi_j / \partial b_k$, $j = 1, \dots, n$, satisfy the system of linear ordinary differential equations and the initial condition

$$\frac{d}{dx} z_{jk} = \sum_{l=1}^n \left(\frac{\partial f_j}{\partial y_l} \right) z_{lk}, \quad z_{jk}(a) = \delta_{jk};$$

and $z_j = \partial \varphi_j / \partial a$, $j = 1, \dots, n$, satisfy the same system with the initial condition $z_j(a) = -f_j(a, b, \lambda)$, where $(\partial f_j / \partial y_l)$ means $(\partial^2 f_j / \partial y_l \partial y_j)$ $(x, \varphi(x, a, b, \lambda), \lambda)$. If f further admits continuous derivatives $\partial f / \partial \lambda_i$, then $\varphi(x, a, b, \lambda)$ is continuously differentiable with respect to λ_i , and moreover, $w_{ji} = \partial \varphi_j / \partial \lambda_i$, $j = 1, \dots, n$, satisfy the system

$$\frac{d}{dx} w_{ji} = \sum_{k=1}^n \left(\frac{\partial f_j}{\partial y_k} \right) w_{ki} + \left(\frac{\partial f_j}{\partial \lambda_i} \right), \quad w_{ji}(a) = 0.$$

These differential systems are called the **variational equations** of (1).

C. Carathéodory proved the existence of solutions of (1) under the less restrictive assumption that f is continuous with respect to y for any fixed x and measurable with respect to x for any fixed y .

Suppose that f is continuous and satisfies a Lipschitz condition. Let $z(x)$ be a function such that $z(a) = b$ and $\|z'_i(x) - f_i(x, z(x))\| \leq \varepsilon(x)$, and let $y(x)$ be a solution of (1) such that $y(a) = b$. Then we obtain

$$\|z_i(x) - y_i(x)\| \leq e^{L|x-a|} \left| \int_a^x \varepsilon(x) e^{-L|x-a|} dx \right|,$$

which gives approximate solutions of (1).

G. Equations in the Complex Domain

We assume that the variables x, y_1, \dots, y_n all have complex values. We have the following theorem: If f is holomorphic at (a, b) , then (1) has a unique solution that is holomorphic at $x = a$ and takes the value b at $x = a$. This theorem can be proved by utilizing the method of successive approximations and fixed-point theorems. Cauchy proved the theorem by using **majorant series**. This method, called the **method of majorants**, proceeds for the scalar equations as follows: Let $f(x, y) = \sum a_{jk}(x - a)^j(y - b)^k$ and $y = \sum c_n(x - a)^n$. Substituting the latter series into both members, we can successively determine the coefficients c_n by the method of undetermined coefficients. Assuming that $|f| < M$ for $|x - a| < r$ and $|y - b| < \rho$, consider the solution $Y = \sum C_n(x - a)^n$ of

$$\frac{dY}{dx} = \frac{M}{(1 - (x - a)/r)(1 - (Y - b)/\rho)}$$

satisfying $Y(a) = b$. We have $C_n \geq |c_n|$ for any n ,

which shows that $\sum C_n(x-a)^n$ is a majorant series of $\sum c_n(x-a)^n$.

We have the following **uniqueness theorem**: Suppose that $f(x, y)$ is holomorphic at (a, b) . Let C be a curve having the point a as one of its ends and $\varphi(x)$ be a solution with the following properties: φ is holomorphic on C except possibly at $x=a$, and there exists a sequence of points on C , $\{a_k\}$, such that $a_k \rightarrow a$ and $\varphi(a_k) \rightarrow b$. Then $\varphi(x)$ is holomorphic at a . By a †theorem of identity, the analytic continuation of a solution continues to be a solution if it does not encounter any singularity of f . If a solution $\varphi(x)$ is holomorphic on a smooth curve $x=\chi(t)$, with $0 \leq t \leq t_0$ and $\chi(0)=a$, and $\varphi(a)=b$, then $y=\varphi(\chi(t))$ is a solution for $0 \leq t \leq t_0$ of

$$y' = \chi'(x)f(\chi(t), y) \quad (3)$$

satisfying $y(0)=b$. Conversely, if (3) has a solution $y=\psi(t)$ defined in $0 \leq t \leq t_0$ and satisfying $y(0)=b$, and if $f(x, y)$ is holomorphic at $(\chi(t), \psi(t))$ for $0 \leq t \leq t_0$, then (1) has a solution $\varphi(x)$ holomorphic on C and $\psi(t)=\varphi(\chi(t))$ for $0 \leq t \leq t_0$.

Suppose that $f=f_1/f_2$, where f_1 and f_2 are holomorphic at (a, b) . If $f_1(a, b) \neq 0$, $f_2(a, y) \neq 0$, and $f_2(a, b)=0$, then the equation $y'=f(x, y)$ admits a unique solution such that $y \rightarrow b$ as $x \rightarrow a$, and this solution can be expanded into a †Puiseux series:

$$y = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} c_n(x-a)^{n/r}.$$

If f is holomorphic at (a, b) , then the solution $y=\varphi(x, x_0, y_0)$ of (1) satisfying $y(x_0)=y_0$ is holomorphic with respect to (x, x_0, y_0) at (a, a, b) . If $f(x, y, \lambda)$ is holomorphic at (a, b, λ_0) , then the solution of (2), $y=\varphi(x, x_0, y_0, \lambda)$, satisfying $y(x_0)=y_0$ is holomorphic at (a, a, b, λ_0) . Suppose that x is a real variable and y is a complex vector. If f is continuous with respect to (x, y) and holomorphic with respect to y , then the solution $\varphi(x, x_0, y_0)$ is holomorphic with respect to y_0 . If $f(x, y, \lambda)$ is continuous with respect to (x, y, λ) and holomorphic with respect to (y, λ) , then $\varphi(x, x_0, y_0, \lambda)$ is holomorphic with respect to (y_0, λ) .

References

- [1] E. Kamke, *Differentialgleichungen reeller Funktionen*, Akademische Verlag, 1930.
- [2] E. A. Coddington and N. Levinson, *Theory of ordinary differential equations*, McGraw-Hill, 1955.
- [3] P. Hartman, *Ordinary differential equations*, Wiley, 1964.
- [4] H. Okamura, *Condition nécessaire et suffisante remplie par les équations différen-*

tielles ordinaires sans points de Peano, *Mem. Coll. Sci. Univ. Kyoto*, (A) 24 (1941).

[5] O. Perron, Ein neuer Existenz Beweis für die Integrale der Differentialgleichung $y' = f(x, y)$, *Math. Ann.*, 15 (1945).

[6] M. Hukuhara, Sur la théorie des équations différentielles ordinaires, *J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo*, sec. I, vol. VII, pt. 5, 1958.

[7] M. Nagumo, Über die Lage der Integralkurven gewöhnlicher Differentialgleichungen, *Proc. Phys.-Math. Soc. Japan*, 24 (1943).

[8] E. Hille, *Ordinary differential equations in the complex domain*, Wiley, 1976.

[9] R. Abraham and J. E. Marsden, *Foundations of mechanics*, Benjamin-Cummings, second edition, 1978.

317 (X.21) Orthogonal Functions

A. Orthogonal Systems

Let (X, μ) be a †measure space. For complex-valued functions f, g on X belonging to the †function space $L_2(X)$, we define the inner product $(f, g) = \int_X f(x)\overline{g(x)} d\mu(x)$ and the norm $\|f\| = (f, f)^{1/2}$. If $(f, g) = 0$, then we say that f and g are **orthogonal** on X with respect to the measure μ . If X is a subset of a Euclidean space and μ is the †Lebesgue measure m , then we simply say that they are orthogonal. If the measure has a †density function $\varphi(x)$ with respect to the Lebesgue measure and $(f, g) = \int_X f(x)\overline{g(x)}\varphi(x) dm(x) = 0$, we say that they are orthogonal with respect to the **weight function** $\varphi(x)$. If $\|f\|^2 = 1$, then f is said to be **normalized**. A set of functions $\{f_n(x)\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) is said to be an **orthogonal system** (or **orthogonal set**), and we write $\{f_n\} \in O(X)$, if any pair of functions in the set are orthogonal. The orthogonal set $\{f_n(x)\}$ is said to be **orthonormal**, and we write $\{f_n\} \in ON(X)$ if each f_n is normalized.

Let $\{f_n\}$ be a set of linearly independent functions in $L_2(X)$, and let R be a subset of $L_2(X)$. If we can approximate any function $f \in R$ arbitrarily closely by a finite linear combination of the $f_n(x)$ with respect to the norm in $L_2(X)$, we say that $\{f_n\}$ is **total** in R . Let $\{f_n\} \in O(X)$. If $(\varphi, f_n) = 0$ for all n implies $\varphi(x) = 0$ almost everywhere (a.e.), then $\{f_n\}$ is said to be **complete** in $L_2(X)$. An orthogonal system $\{f_n\}$ is complete in $L_2(X)$ if and only if the system is total in $L_2(X)$.

If $\{f_n\} \in O(X)$, then the series $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n f_n(x)$ is called an **orthogonal series**. If the series converges to $\varphi(x)$ †in the mean of order 2, then $c_n = (\varphi, f_n) / \|f_n\|^2$. We call the c_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) the

expansion coefficients or **Fourier coefficients** of $\varphi(x)$ with respect to $\{f_n\}$.

If $\{g_n\} \subset L_2(X)$ are linearly independent, we can construct an orthonormal system $\{f_n\}$ by forming suitable linear combinations of the g_n ; $\{f_n\}$ spans the same subspace as $\{g_n\}$. For this purpose we set $f_1(x) = g_1(x)/\|g_1\|$, $f_n(x) = \varphi_n(x)/\|\varphi_n\|$, where $\varphi_n(x) = g_n(x) - \sum_{v=1}^{n-1} (g_n, f_v) f_v(x)$, $n \geq 2$. This procedure is called **Schmidt orthogonalization** or **Gram-Schmidt orthogonalization**.

If the c_n are Fourier coefficients of $\varphi(x) \in L_2(X)$ with respect to $\{f_n(x)\} \in ON(X)$, then we have the \dagger Bessel inequality $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |c_n|^2 \leq \|\varphi\|^2$. Equality in the Bessel inequality for all $\varphi \in L_2(X)$ (the \dagger Parseval identity) is equivalent to completeness of $\{f_n\}$ in $L_2(X)$. In this case $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n f_n(x)$ is called the **orthogonal expansion** of φ with respect to $\{f_n\}$, and conversely, for any sequence $\{c_n\}$ such that $\sum |c_n|^2 < \infty$, there is a function $\varphi \in L_2(X)$ that has the c_n as its Fourier coefficients, and

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |c_n|^2 = \|\varphi\|^2,$$

$$\varphi(x) = \text{l.i.m.}_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(\sum_{m=1}^n c_m f_m(x) \right).$$

This is called the \dagger **Riesz-Fischer theorem**.

B. Orthogonal Systems on the Real Line

We assume that X is a finite interval (a, b) and that functions on X are real-valued. We write $O(a, b)$ or $ON(a, b)$ instead of $O(X)$, $ON(X)$.

(1) If $\{f_n\} \in ON(a, b)$, $|f_n(x)| \leq M$ (const.), and $\sum c_n f_n(x)$ converges \dagger a.e., then $c_n \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

(2) We can construct a complete orthonormal system $\{f_n(x)\}$ and a function $\varphi(x) \in L_1(a, b)$ such that its orthogonal expansion $\sum c_n f_n(x)$ diverges everywhere. (3) If $\{f_n(x)\} \in ON(a, b)$ and $\sum c_n^2 \log^2 n < \infty$, then $\sum c_n f_n(x)$ converges a.e. The factor $\log^2 n$ cannot be replaced by any other monotone increasing factor $\omega(n)$ satisfying $0 \leq \omega(n) = o(\log^2 n)$ (**Rademacher-Men'shov theorem**). K. Tandori proved that if $c_n \downarrow 0$ and $\sum c_n \varphi_n$ converges a.e. for any orthonormal system $\{\varphi_n\}$, then $\sum |c_n|^2 \log^2 n < \infty$.

(4) If the orthogonal expansion of a function $\varphi \in L_2(a, b)$ is \dagger summable by Abel's method on a set E , then it is $\dagger(C, 1)$ -summable a.e. on E . $(C, 1)$ -summability a.e. of the orthogonal expansion of a function of $\varphi \in L_2(a, b)$ is equivalent to convergence a.e. of the partial sums $s_{2n}(x)$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) of its expansion. (5) Suppose that $\{f_n(x)\} \in ON(a, b)$, $|f_n(x)| \leq M$. Then: (i) If the a_n are the Fourier coefficients of $\varphi(x)$ with respect to $\{f_n(x)\}$, then

$$\left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_n|^{p'} \right)^{1/p'} \leq M^{(2-p)/p} \left(\int_a^b |\varphi(x)|^p dx \right)^{1/p},$$

where $1 < p \leq 2$, $1/p + 1/p' = 1$. Conversely, if $(\sum |a_n|^p)^{1/p} < \infty$ ($1 < p \leq 2$), there exists a function $\varphi(x)$ which has the a_n as its Fourier coefficients and such that

$$\left(\int_a^b |\varphi(x)|^{p'} dx \right)^{1/p'} \leq M^{(2-p)/p} \left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} |a_n|^p \right)^{1/p}$$

(**F. Riesz's theorem**). When the orthonormal system is the trigonometric system, this is called the **Hausdorff-Young theorem**. (ii) Let $\{a_n^*\}$ be the decreasing rearrangement of $\{|a_n|\}$; then

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n^{*p} n^{p-2} \leq A_p \int_a^b |\varphi(x)|^p dx \quad (1 < p \leq 2).$$

If $q \geq 2$ and $\sum a_n^{*q} n^{q-2} < \infty$, then there exists a function $\varphi(x)$ which has the a_n as its Fourier coefficients and such that

$$\int_a^b |\varphi(x)|^q dx \leq A_q \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n^{*q} n^{q-2}$$

(**Paley's theorem**). When the system is trigonometric, this is called the **Hardy-Littlewood theorem**. (6) If for some positive ε we have $\sum |c_n|^{2-\varepsilon} < \infty$, then $\sum c_n f_n(x)$ converges a.e.

(7) If we set $s^*(x) = \sup_n |\sum_{v=1}^n c_v f_v(x)|$, then $\|s^*\|_q \leq A_q (\sum c_v^{*q} v^{q-2})^{1/q}$ ($q > 2$), where $\{c_n^*\}$ is the decreasing rearrangement of $\{|c_n|\}$.

C. Examples of Orthogonal Systems

(1) $\{\cos nx\} \in O(0, \pi)$, $\{\sin nx\} \in O(0, \pi)$. (2) $\{1, \cos nx, \sin nx\} \in O(0, 2\pi)$ (\rightarrow 159 Fourier Series). (3) Suppose that $A(x)$ is positive and continuous, and let $y_n(x)$ be solutions of $y''(x) + \lambda_n A(x)y(x) = 0$ satisfying the condition $y_n(a) = y_n(b) = 0$, where λ_n is any \dagger eigenvalue. Then $\{\sqrt{A(x)}y_n(x)\} \in O(a, b)$ (for orthogonality of eigenfunctions \rightarrow 315 Ordinary Differential Equations (Boundary Value Problems) B). (4) Set $r_n(x) = -1$ or 1 according as the n th digit of the binary expansion of x ($0 < x \leq 1$) is 1 or 0 , and $r_n(x) = 0$ if x is expandable in two ways. Then $\{r_n(x)\} \in O(0, 1)$. This is called **Rademacher's system of orthogonal functions**. The system is not complete, but it is interpreted as a \dagger sample space of coin tossing. Rademacher's system is useful for constructing various counter-examples. (5) Let the binary expansion of n be $n = 2^{v_1} + 2^{v_2} + \dots + 2^{v_p}$ ($v_1 < v_2 < \dots < v_p$), and set $w_n(x) = r_{v_1+1}(x)r_{v_2+1}(x)\dots r_{v_p+1}(x)$. Then $\{w_n(x)\}$ is a complete orthonormal system called **Walsh's system of orthogonal functions**. This system is interpreted as a system of characters of the group of binary numbers, and there are many theorems for this system analogous to those for the trigono-

metric system. (6) In the interval $[0, 1]$, set

$$\begin{aligned}\chi_m^k(x) &= \sqrt{2^m}, & x \in ((k-1)/2^m, (k-1/2)/2^m) \\ &= -\sqrt{2^m}, & x \in ((k-1/2)/2^m, k/2^m) \\ &= 0, & x \in ((l-1)/2^m, l/2^m), \\ && l \neq k, \quad 1 \leq l \leq 2^m.\end{aligned}$$

The orthonormal system $\chi_m^k(x)$ ($1 \leq k \leq 2^m$, $1 \leq m$) is called **Haar's system of orthogonal functions**. The Haar expansion of the continuous function $f(x)$ converges to $f(x)$ uniformly.

D. Orthogonal Polynomials (→ Appendix A, Table 20)

Suppose that we are given a weight function $\varphi(x) \geq 0$ ($\varphi(x) > 0$ a.e.) defined on (a, b) and that the inner product of functions f, g on (a, b) is defined by $(f, g) = \int_a^b f(x)g(x)\varphi(x)dx$. We orthogonalize $\{x^n\}$ by Schmidt orthogonalization and obtain polynomials $p_n(x)$ of degree n . Here the sign of $p_n(x)$ can be determined so that the sign of the coefficient of the highest power of x is positive. We call $\{p_n(x)\}$ the **system of orthogonal polynomials** belonging to the weight function $\varphi(x)$. This system is complete in $L_2^{(\varphi)}(a, b)$, which is defined to be the space of functions f such that $\int_a^b |f(x)|^2 \varphi(x)dx < \infty$. In other words, the system $\{\sqrt{\varphi(x)}p_n(x)\}$ is a complete orthonormal system in the ordinary $L_2(a, b)$ space. Concerning the convergence problem of the orthogonal expansion by $\{p_n(x)\}$, the **Christoffel-Darboux formula**

$$\sum_{k=0}^n p_k(t)p_k(x) = \frac{\alpha_n}{\alpha_{n+1}} \cdot \frac{p_n(x)p_{n+1}(t) - p_n(t)p_{n+1}(x)}{t-x}$$

plays an important role.

Several important special functions in classical mathematical physics are given by orthogonal polynomials:

(1) Setting $\varphi(x) = (1-x)^\alpha(1+x)^\beta$ ($\alpha > -1, \beta > -1$) in $[-1, 1]$, we get the **Jacobi polynomials**, although they are sometimes defined in $[0, 1]$ with respect to $\varphi(x) = x^\alpha(1-x)^\beta$ (→ Appendix A, Table 20.V). If we set $\alpha = \beta$ in the Jacobi polynomials, we get the **ultraspherical polynomials** (or **Gegenbauer polynomials**) (→ Appendix A, Table 20.I). Furthermore, if $\alpha = \beta = 0$, then we get the **Legendre polynomials**, and if $\alpha = \beta = -1/2$, we get the **Chebyshev polynomials** $T_n(x) = \cos(n \arccos x)$. The $T_n(x)$ also appear in the best approximation problem (→ Appendix A, Table 20.II; 336 Polynomial Approximation).

(2) If we set $\varphi(x) = x^\alpha e^{-x}$ in $(0, \infty)$, we get the **Sonine polynomials** (or **associated Laguerre polynomials**) with appropriate constant factors.

If α is a positive integer m , we get

$$S_n^{(m)}(x) = x^{-m} e^x \left(\frac{d^n}{dx^n} (x^{n+m} e^{-x}) \right).$$

The particular case $m=0$ gives the **Laguerre polynomials**. In this case, however, it is customary to normalize them as $L_n(x) = (e^x/n!)(d^n/dx^n)(x^n e^{-x})$ (→ Appendix A, Table 20.VI). Laguerre polynomials are used in numerical integrations of a Gaussian type in $(0, \infty)$. Furthermore, associated Laguerre polynomials appear in the solutions of the Schrödinger equation for the behavior of hydrogen atoms. This system of orthogonal polynomials is useful in the expansions of approximate eigenfunctions of atoms analogous to hydrogen, velocity distribution functions of molecules in gas theory, and so on.

(3) Setting $\varphi(x) = e^{-x^2}$ (or $e^{-x^2/2}$) in $(-\infty, \infty)$, we get **Hermite polynomials** $H_n(x) = (-1)^n e^{x^2} (d^n e^{-x^2}/dx^n)$, modulo constant factors (→ Appendix A, Table 20.VI). Hermite polynomials are special cases of parabolic cylinder functions (→ 167 Functions of Confluent Type). These polynomials appear as eigenfunctions of the Schrödinger equation for harmonic oscillators. They are also connected with probability integrals and are used in mathematical statistics.

(4) Replacing the integral by a finite sum $\sum_{m=0}^n f(m)g(m)$ in the definition of inner product, we get so-called **orthogonality for a finite sum**. (Regarding orthogonal polynomials with respect to a finite sum (→ Appendix A, Table 20.VII) and their application to the mean square approximation → 19 Analog Computation F.) Since orthogonal polynomials with respect to a finite sum are often called simply orthogonal polynomials by engineers, one must be careful not to confuse these with the ordinary ones.

References

- [1] S. Kaczmarz and H. Steinhaus, *Theorie der Orthogonalreihen*, Warsaw, 1935 (Chelsea, 1951).
- [2] G. Szegő, *Orthogonal polynomials*, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1939.
- [3] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics I*, Interscience, 1953.
- [4] F. G. Tricomi, *Vorlesungen über Orthogonalreihen*, Springer, 1955.
- [5] G. Alexits, *Convergence problems of orthogonal series*, Pergamon, 1961, revised translation of the German edition of 1960.
- [6] G. Sansone, *Orthogonal functions*, Interscience, revised English edition, 1959.

318 (XX.14)
Oscillations

A. General Remarks

A **vibration** or **oscillation** is a phenomenon that repeats periodically, either exactly or approximately. Exactly periodic oscillations are studied in the theory of [†]periodic solutions of differential equations. The [†]period of a solution $f(t)$ is called the **period** of the oscillation, and its reciprocal the **frequency**. The difference between the greatest and least values of $f(t)$ (globally or in an interval) is the **amplitude**. The theory of vibrations has its origin in the study of mechanical vibrations, but its nomenclature has been used also for electric circuits. As examples of practical applications of the theory of oscillations, we mention, in engineering, the prevention of vibrations and the generation of stable sustained oscillations, and in geophysics, investigations concerning the free oscillation of the earth, the existence of which has recently been confirmed.

B. Linear Oscillation

Periodic solutions of [†]linear differential equations have been studied in detail for a long time. Perhaps the simplest case of such an oscillation is represented by the differential equation

$$d^2x/dt^2 + n^2x = 0, \tag{1}$$

where the **restitutive force** is proportional to the displacement from the equilibrium position. Typical examples are the free vibration of a simple pendulum with small amplitude and an electric circuit composed of a self-inductance and capacity (without resistance). The solution is given by $x = A \cos(nt + \alpha)$. This is called **harmonic oscillation** or **simple harmonic motion**. Here the amplitude is A , the period is $2\pi/n$, n is the **circular frequency**, and α is the **initial phase**.

A system of m [†]degrees of freedom (x_1, \dots, x_m) is said to be in free harmonic oscillation if the coordinates can be expressed as

$$x_i = \sum_{k=1}^m A_{ik} \cos(n_k t + \alpha_k), \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, m.$$

Each of these simple harmonic oscillations is called a **normal vibration**. As a limiting case, where the number of degrees of freedom is infinite, we have the vibration of a string:

$$\frac{\partial^2 u(x, t)}{\partial t^2} = n^2 \frac{\partial^2 u(x, t)}{\partial x^2},$$

$$u(0, t) = u(l, t) = 0.$$

The solution is given by a series

$$\sum_k A_k \sin(k\pi x/l) \cos(k\pi n t/l),$$

which is just the superposition of the fundamental vibration (corresponding to $k=1$) and simply harmonic motions of frequencies equal to multiples of the fundamental frequency.

If a resisting force proportional to the velocity is acting, the equation becomes

$$d^2x/dt^2 + 2\varepsilon dx/dt + n^2x = 0, \quad n > \varepsilon, \tag{2}$$

whose solution

$$x = A e^{-\varepsilon t} \cos(\sigma t + \alpha), \quad \sigma = \sqrt{n^2 - \varepsilon^2} \tag{3}$$

is not periodic. However, x becomes zero at a fixed interval π/σ , and the extremal values in the intervals decrease to zero in a geometrical progression with the common ratio $v = \exp(-\pi\varepsilon/\sigma)$. This phenomenon is called **damped oscillation** with **damping ratio** v and **logarithmic decrement** $\log v = -\pi\varepsilon/\sigma$. In this case, too, $2\pi/\sigma$ is called the period.

When a driving force term $\varphi(t)$ is present in the right-hand side of (2), the solution takes on the additional term

$$\frac{e^{-\varepsilon t}}{\sigma} \left(\sin \sigma t \int \varphi(t) e^{\varepsilon t} \cos \sigma t dt - \cos \sigma t \int \varphi(t) e^{\varepsilon t} \sin \sigma t dt \right),$$

which represents the **forced oscillation** due to $\varphi(t)$.

If $\varepsilon < 0$ in (2) (**negative resistance**), the solution (3) increases in amplitude, so that a small disturbance is amplified, resulting in an automatic generation of oscillation. This phenomenon is called **self-excited vibration**. Besides being caused by some special kinds of circuit elements (e.g., tunnel diodes), such a situation often occurs when the vibrating system has time delay characteristics (\rightarrow 163 Functional-Differential Equations).

Among sustained vibrations, other than forced oscillations and self-excited vibrations, are the **parametrically sustained vibrations** caused by periodic variation of a parameter of the vibrating system. Electric wires and pantographs for use in high-speed electric railways must be designed to prevent unwanted parametrically sustained vibrations. On the other hand, a parametron is an electric element utilizing parametrically sustained vibration.

C. Nonlinear Oscillation

Actual vibrating systems contain more or less nonlinear elements, which give rise to various kinds of oscillations different from those described by the linear theory (\rightarrow 290 Non-

linear Oscillation). For example, $d^2x/dt^2 - \varepsilon(1-x^2)dx/dt + x = 0$ ($\varepsilon > 0$) represents a stable sustained oscillation such that for large values of ε , two nearly stationary states occur alternately, the transition from one to the other taking place abruptly. This is called **relaxation oscillation**.

References

[1] Lord Rayleigh, The theory of sound, Macmillan, second revised edition, I, 1894; II, 1896 (Dover, 1945).

[2] A. A. Andronov and C. E. Chaikin, Theory of oscillations, Princeton Univ. Press, 1949. (Original in Russian, 1937.)

[3] L. S. Pontryagin, Ordinary differential equations, Addison-Wesley, 1962. (Original in Russian, 1961.)

Also → references to 287 Nonlinear Lattice Dynamics, 290 Nonlinear Oscillation, 291 Nonlinear Problems.

P

319 (I.3) Paradoxes

A. General Remarks

A statement that is apparently absurd but not easily disproved is called a **paradox**. A contradiction between a proposition and its negation is called an **antinomy** if both statements can be supported by logically equivalent reasoning. In practical use, however, "paradox" and "antinomy" often mean the same thing.

B. Paradoxes in Set Theory

(1) **The Russell Paradox (1903)**. We classify sets into two kinds as follows: Any set that does not contain itself as an element is called a **set of the first kind**, and any set that contains itself as an element is called a **set of the second kind**. Every set is either a set of the first kind or of the second kind. Denote the set of all sets of the first kind by M . If M is a set of the first kind, M cannot be an element of M . But if M is of the first kind, then M must be an element of M , by definition. This is contradictory. On the other hand, if M is a set of the second kind, M must be an element of M ; but since M is an element of M , M is a set of the first kind, so M cannot be an element of M , by definition. This is contradictory.

Since the kind of reasoning employed in this paradox is very simple and is often utilized in mathematics, it became popular in set theory. To remove this paradox from set theory, Russell suggested λ -ramified type theory. If we adopt this theory, however, it becomes very hard to develop even an ordinary theory of real numbers (\rightarrow 156 Foundations of Mathematics). On the other hand, this paradox, together with the Burali-Forti paradox, indicates that the definition of a set should be restrictive. This realization led to the development of λ -axiomatic set theory.

(2) **The Burali-Forti Paradox (1897)**. Let $W = \{0, 1, 2, \dots, \omega, \dots\}$ be the λ -well-ordered set (\rightarrow 312 Ordinal Numbers A) of all λ -ordinal numbers. Let Ω be the ordinal number of W . Then every ordinal number, being an element of W , is less than Ω . But Ω is an ordinal number. Hence, $\Omega < \Omega$. This is contradictory.

(3) **The Richard Paradox (1905)**. The expressions in the English language can be enumerated by the device that is applied to the usual enumeration of the algebraic equations

with integral coefficients. From the specified enumeration of all expressions in the English language, by striking out those which do not define a real number in the interval $(0, 1]$, we obtain an enumeration of those which do. Consider the following expression: "The greatest real number represented by a proper nonterminating decimal fraction whose n th digit, for any natural number n , is not equal to the n th digit of the nonterminating decimal fraction representing the real number defined by the n th expression in the last-described enumeration." Then we have before us a definition of a real number in the interval $(0, 1]$ by means of an expression in the English language. This real number, by its definition, must differ from every real number definable by an expression in the English language. This is contradictory.

The following paradox was given by Berry (1906): "The least natural number not nameable in fewer than twenty-two syllables" is actually named by this expression, which has twenty-one syllables. The Epimenides paradox is a traditional ancient Greek paradox of this kind: Epimenides (a Cretan) said, "Cretans are always liars. ..."

C. Paradoxes of the Continuum

The problem of the continuum is important in both mathematics and philosophy. There are several **paradoxes of Zeno** concerning the continuum, among which the following two are best known:

(1) Assume that Achilles and a tortoise start simultaneously from the points A and B , respectively, Achilles running after the tortoise. When Achilles reaches the point B , the tortoise advances to a point B_1 . When Achilles reaches the point B_1 , the tortoise advances further to a point B_2 . Thus Achilles can never overtake the tortoise.

(2) A flying arrow occupies a certain point at each moment. In other words, at each moment the arrow stands still. Therefore the arrow can never move.

References

- [1] A. N. Whitehead and B. Russell, *Principia mathematica*, second edition, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1925.
- [2] S. C. Kleene, *Introduction to metamathematics*, Van Nostrand, 1952.
- [3] E. Mendelson, *Introduction to mathematical logic*, Van Nostrand, 1966.

320 (XIII.19) Partial Differential Equations

A. General Remarks

A partial differential equation is a functional equation

$$F\left(x_1, \dots, x_n, z, \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial x_1^2}, \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial x_1 \partial x_2}, \dots\right) = 0$$

that involves a function z of independent variables x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n , its partial derivatives, and the independent variables x_1, \dots, x_n . The definition of a system of partial differential equations is similar to that of a system of ordinary differential equations. (The partial differential equation becomes an ordinary differential equation if the number of independent variables is one.)

The order of the highest derivative appearing in a partial differential equation is called the **order** of the partial differential equation.

Usually we write p_i for $\partial z / \partial x_i$, x for x_1 , and y for x_2 when $n = 2$, and $p = \partial z / \partial x$, $q = \partial z / \partial y$, $r = \partial^2 z / \partial x^2$, $s = \partial^2 z / \partial x \partial y$, $t = \partial^2 z / \partial y^2$ when z is a function of x and y .

A partial differential equation is called **linear** if it is a linear relation with respect to z and its partial derivatives. For example, the equation

$$A(x, y)r + B(x, y)s + C(x, y)t + D(x, y)p + E(x, y)q + F(x, y)z = G(x, y)$$

is a linear partial differential equation. A partial differential equation is **quasilinear** if it is a linear relation with respect to the highest-order partial derivatives. A partial differential equation is called **nonlinear** if it is not linear (\rightarrow 291 Nonlinear Problems). A function $z = \varphi(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n)$ that satisfies the given partial differential equation is called a **solution** of the partial differential equation. Obtaining such a solution for a given partial differential equation is called **solving** this equation, and by analogy to the case $n = 2$, the **integral hypersurface** of the equation is

$$z - \varphi(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n) = 0.$$

For a system of partial differential equations, we define solutions in the same manner.

Example 1. X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n are functions of n independent variables x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n . Then solving the partial differential equation

$$X_1 \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_1} + X_2 \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_2} + \dots + X_n \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_n} = 0 \quad (1)$$

is equivalent to solving the system of ordinary differential equations

$$\frac{dx_1}{X_1} = \frac{dx_2}{X_2} = \dots = \frac{dx_n}{X_n}. \quad (2)$$

In other words, if f_1, f_2, \dots, f_{n-1} are $n - 1$ independent integrals of (2), then for an arbitrary function Φ , $z = \Phi(f_1, \dots, f_{n-1})$ is a general solution of (1) (\rightarrow Section C).

Example 2. If P_1, P_2, \dots, P_n, R are functions of independent variables x_1, \dots, x_n and the dependent variable z , and if the quasilinear partial differential equation (**Lagrange's differential equation**)

$$P_1 \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_1} + P_2 \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_2} + \dots + P_n \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_n} = R \quad (3)$$

has an integral hypersurface $V(z, x_1, \dots, x_n) = 0$, then we have

$$P_1 \frac{\partial V}{\partial x_1} + P_2 \frac{\partial V}{\partial x_2} + \dots + P_n \frac{\partial V}{\partial x_n} + R \frac{\partial V}{\partial z} = 0, \quad (4)$$

which is an equation of type (1). From this we can obtain a general solution by the method of example 1. The same procedure is applicable to solving other systems of partial differential equations.

B. Characteristic Manifolds

We consider a partial differential equation of the n th order of two independent variables x, y :

$$F(x, y, z, p_{10}, p_{01}, \dots, p_{n0}, \dots, p_{0n}) = 0,$$

$$\text{where } p_{jk} = \frac{\partial^{j+k} z}{\partial x^j \partial y^k}. \quad (5)$$

With this equation, we associate a manifold defined by a real parameter λ ,

$$x = x(\lambda), \quad y = y(\lambda), \quad p_{jk} = p_{jk}(\lambda), \quad j, k = 0, 1, \dots, n-1; \quad j+k \leq n-1, \quad (6)$$

and consider the following problem: Find a solution $\varphi(x, y)$ of (5) that satisfies

$$\frac{\partial^{j+k} \varphi(x, y)}{\partial x^j \partial y^k} = p_{jk}(\lambda), \quad j, k = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n-1; \quad j+k \leq n-1$$

on the curve $x = x(\lambda), y = y(\lambda)$. We call this problem the **Cauchy problem** for equation (5).

If F vanishes for a system of values x^0, y^0, p_{jk}^0 ($j, k = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n; p_{00}^0 = z^0; j+k \leq n$) and is holomorphic in a neighborhood of this system of values, if x, y, p_{jk} are holomorphic functions of λ in a neighborhood of $\lambda = 0$ and take the respective values x^0, y^0, p_{jk}^0 at $\lambda = 0$, and if

$$P_{n0} dy^n - P_{n-1,1} dx dy^{n-1} + \dots + (-1)^n P_{0n} dx^n \neq 0 \quad (7)$$

for (x^0, y^0, p_{jk}^0) , then we have a unique holomorphic solution of this Cauchy problem in a neighborhood of (x^0, y^0, p_{jk}^0) . (Here we use the notation $p_{jk} = \partial F / \partial p_{jk}$.) This is **Cauchy's existence theorem**. We cannot apply this theorem when the left-hand side of (7) vanishes at (x^0, y^0, p_{jk}^0) . At such a point, uniqueness of the solution fails, and there may be several solutions through the point (x^0, y^0, p_{jk}^0) . There are n curves on which the left-hand side of (7) vanishes on the integral surface $z = \varphi(x, y)$. These curves are called **characteristic curves** of (5). We associate the values

$$p_{jk}(\lambda) = \frac{\partial^{j+k} \varphi(x, y)}{\partial x^j \partial y^k} \Big|_{x=x(\lambda), y=y(\lambda)},$$

$$j, k = 0, 1, \dots, n; \quad j + k \leq n,$$

with each point (x, y) on these curves. The manifold $\{x(\lambda), y(\lambda), p(\lambda)\}$ ($p(\lambda) = \{p_{jk}(\lambda)\}$) of the parameter λ is called a **characteristic manifold** of equation (5). Cauchy's existence theorem cannot be applied on the characteristic manifold.

The foregoing considerations can be extended, to some extent, to the space of higher dimensions \mathbf{R}^n or \mathbf{C}^n . Let P be a linear partial differential operator of order m :

$$P(x, D) = \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} a_\alpha(x) D^\alpha,$$

$$D^\alpha = \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x_1} \right)^{\alpha_1} \dots \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x_n} \right)^{\alpha_n}, \quad |\alpha| = \alpha_1 + \dots + \alpha_n.$$

The coefficients are assumed smooth and real in \mathbf{R}^n or holomorphic in \mathbf{C}^n . Its homogeneous part of order m , denoted by $P_m(x, D)$, is called the **principal part** of P . Let S be a hypersurface defined by $\varphi(x) = 0$ with $\text{grad } \varphi(x) \neq 0$. S is called a **characteristic surface** if $P_m(x, \text{grad } \varphi(x)) = 0$ holds for x in a neighborhood of S or merely for $x \in S$, and $\varphi(x)$ is called a phase function. A real vector $\xi^0 (\neq 0)$, or a complex vector $\xi^0 \neq 0$ is called a characteristic direction at the point x_0 if $P_m(x_0, \xi^0) = 0$. The zeros (x, ξ) ($\xi \neq 0$) of $P_m(x, \xi)$ are called the **characteristic set**. Furthermore (x_0, ξ^0) is called simple if $\text{grad}_\xi P_m(x_0, \xi^0) \neq 0$. Suppose that (x_0, ξ^0) is simple. The integral curve $(x(t), \xi(t))$ that satisfies

$$\dot{x} = \text{grad}_\xi P_m(x, \xi),$$

$$\dot{\xi} = -\text{grad}_x P_m(x, \xi)$$

is called the **bicharacteristic strip** of P_m . Evidently $P_m(x, \xi)$ is constant along the bicharacteristic strip. In particular, if this constant is zero, it is said to be **null-bicharacteristic**. The phase function $\varphi(x)$ can be obtained at least locally by using the bicharacteristic strip.

C. Classification of Solutions

First, we consider a partial differential equation of the first order of two independent variables:

$$F(x, y, z, p, q) = 0. \quad (8)$$

A solution of (8) that contains two arbitrary constants is called a **complete solution**. If we get one complete solution of (8), then we can obtain all the solutions by differentiations and eliminations. Let (9) be a complete solution:

$$V(x, y, z, a, b) = 0. \quad (9)$$

Differentiating this, we get

$$\frac{\partial V}{\partial x} + p \frac{\partial V}{\partial z} = 0, \quad \frac{\partial V}{\partial y} + q \frac{\partial V}{\partial z} = 0. \quad (10)$$

Eliminating a and b from (9) and (10), we get the original equation (8). Furthermore, solving equation (8) is equivalent to getting three functions a, b, z of x, y from (8), (9), and (10). If we regard a, b as functions of x, y , in (9), we get

$$\frac{\partial V}{\partial a} \frac{\partial a}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial V}{\partial b} \frac{\partial b}{\partial x} = 0, \quad \frac{\partial V}{\partial a} \frac{\partial a}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial V}{\partial b} \frac{\partial b}{\partial y} = 0. \quad (11)$$

Therefore we can replace (9) and (10) by (9) and (11). Hence we have the following three cases: (i) When a, b are constants, we get a complete solution. (ii) When $V = 0$, $\partial V / \partial a = 0$, and $\partial V / \partial b = 0$, we get a solution that does not contain arbitrary constants, because z, a, b are all functions of x and y . We call this solution a **singular solution** of (8). (iii) When $\partial V / \partial a, \partial V / \partial b$ do not vanish simultaneously, the Jacobian $D(a, b) / D(x, y)$ vanishes because of (11). This means that there exists a functional relation between a and b . If there are two such relations, a and b are constants and the solution z becomes a complete solution. Therefore we assume that there is only one such relation between a and b , whose form is assumed to be $b = \varphi(a)$. Then we get

$$V(x, y, z, a, \varphi(a)) = 0, \quad \frac{\partial V}{\partial a} + \frac{\partial V}{\partial b} \varphi'(a) = 0. \quad (12)$$

If we solve (12) for the unknowns a and z , we get a solution z of (8) that contains an arbitrary function φ instead of arbitrary constants. Such a solution is called a **general solution** of the partial differential equation (8) of the first order. By specializing this function φ , we obtain a **particular solution** of (8). Thus (i)–(iii) exhaust all the cases, and by obtaining a complete solution of (8) we can get all the solutions of (8). The number of complete solutions may be more than 1, or it may be infinite. These complete solutions can be transformed into each other by contact transformations.

Moreover, they are contained in the general solutions.

Now we consider the case where the number of independent variables is n . Take an equation that contains $n-r+1$ arbitrary constants $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-r+1}$:

$$V(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n; a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-r+1}) = 0. \quad (13)$$

Differentiate this equation assuming that a_1, \dots, a_{n-r+1} take fixed values. Then we get

$$\frac{\partial V}{\partial x_i} + p_i \frac{\partial V}{\partial z} = 0, \quad p_i = \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_i}, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n. \quad (14)$$

If we eliminate $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-r+1}$ from (13) and (14), we obtain r partial differential equations of the first order:

$$F_j(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n, z, p_1, p_2, \dots, p_n) = 0, \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, r. \quad (15)$$

We call (13) a **complete solution** of (15). In this case, as in the case when $n=2$, we get all the solutions of (15) from a complete solution (13) of (15). We have the same classification as in the case $n=2$: (i) When we regard a_1, \dots, a_{n-r+1} as constants, then we have a complete solution of (15). (ii) When we can eliminate the constants a_1, \dots, a_{n-r+1} from equations

$$V = 0, \quad \frac{\partial V}{\partial a_1} = 0, \dots, \frac{\partial V}{\partial a_{n-r+1}} = 0,$$

we get a solution that does not contain an arbitrary constant. Such a solution is called a **singular solution** of (15). (iii) If not all of the $\partial V / \partial a_i$ vanish, there exists at least one functional relation among $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-r+1}$. We assume that there exist exactly k ($\leq n-r$) relations among $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-r+1}$:

$$f_j(a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-r+1}) = 0, \quad j = 1, \dots, k. \quad (16)$$

Then there exist numbers $\lambda_1, \lambda_2, \dots, \lambda_k$ such that

$$\frac{\partial V}{\partial a_i} = \lambda_1 \frac{\partial f_1}{\partial a_i} + \dots + \lambda_k \frac{\partial f_k}{\partial a_i}, \quad i = 1, \dots, n-r+1. \quad (17)$$

Hence, by eliminating $a_1, a_2, \dots, a_{n-r+1}, \lambda_1, \lambda_2, \dots, \lambda_k$ from (13), (16), and (17), we generally obtain exactly one relation between x_1, \dots, x_n and z . This is a solution of (15) that contains exactly k arbitrary functions f_1, f_2, \dots, f_k . Such a solution is called a **general solution** of (15). In particular, if $k = n-r+1$, then it is a complete solution. We might think that there are $n-r$ general solutions corresponding to $k=1, \dots, n-r$. But these general solutions are not essentially different. For the partial equation of the second order $F(x, y, z, p, q, r, s, t) = 0$, this defi-

nition of a general solution is not applicable since we cannot successfully define a general solution by using the number of arbitrary functions contained in a solution.

Instead, we now use the following definition, due to J. G. Darboux: A solution of a general partial differential equation is called a **general solution** if by specializing its arbitrary functions and constants appropriately we obtain a solution whose existence is established by Cauchy's existence theorem. A solution $z = \varphi(x, y)$ of a general partial differential equation is called a **singular solution** if Cauchy's existence theorem cannot be applied on any curves on the manifold formed by $z = \varphi(x, y)$, $p = \partial \varphi / \partial x$, $q = \partial \varphi / \partial y$.

D. Cauchy's Method

We can regard equation (8) as a relation between the point (x, y, z) on the integral surface S and the direction cosines of a tangent plane at that point. Therefore the tangent planes at all points of the surface form a one-parameter family. They envelop a cone (T) whose vertex is (x, y, z) on S . The tangent plane at a point M on the integral surface S is tangent to this cone (T) along one generating line G of (T) .

A curve on S whose tangents are all generating lines of (T) is a characteristic curve. If we write

$$X = \frac{\partial F}{\partial x}, \quad Y = \frac{\partial F}{\partial y}, \quad Z = \frac{\partial F}{\partial z}, \quad P = \frac{\partial F}{\partial p}, \quad Q = \frac{\partial F}{\partial q},$$

then the characteristic curve is given by the system of ordinary differential equations:

$$\frac{dx}{P} = \frac{dy}{Q} = \frac{dz}{Pp + Qq} = \frac{-dp}{X + pZ} = \frac{-dq}{Y + qZ}. \quad (18)$$

We call this system the **characteristic differential equation** or **Charpit subsidiary (auxiliary) equation** of the partial differential equation (8) of the first order. System (18) determines not only x, y, z but also p and q . The set of these surface elements (x, y, z, p, q) is the characteristic manifold. This characteristic manifold is considered as a part of the integral surface with infinitesimal width, and in this case we call it the **characteristic strip**. The characteristic strip is represented by the equations $x = x(\lambda)$, $y = y(\lambda)$, $z = z(\lambda)$, $p = p(\lambda)$, $q = q(\lambda)$ containing a parameter. On the integral surface $z = z(x, y)$, we have

$$\frac{dz}{d\lambda} = \frac{\partial z}{\partial x} \frac{dx}{d\lambda} + \frac{\partial z}{\partial y} \frac{dy}{d\lambda}$$

and

$$dz = p dx + q dy. \quad (19)$$

Equation (19) is called the **strip condition**. The equations (18) evidently satisfy this condition.

The solution $u(t, x) = u(t, x_1, \dots, x_n)$ of

$$u_t + f(t, x_1, \dots, x_n, u_{x_1}, \dots, u_{x_n}) = 0,$$

$$u(0, x) = \varphi(x)$$

is obtained (at least locally) as follows. Let the solution of the differential equations

$$\frac{dx_i}{dt} = f_{x_i}(t, x_1, \dots, x_n, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_n),$$

$$\frac{d\xi_i}{dt} = -f_{x_i}(t, x_1, \dots, x_n, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_n), \quad 1 \leq i \leq n,$$

issuing from (x_0, ξ^0) at $t=0$ be $(x(t; x_0, \xi^0), \xi(t; x_0, \xi^0))$. Then specializing $\xi_j^0 = \varphi_{x_j}(x_0)$ ($1 \leq j \leq n$), the solution $u(t, x)$ is obtained by quadrature along these curves (characteristic strips) from the relation

$$\frac{du}{dt} = -f(t, x, \xi) + \sum_{j=1}^n \xi_j f_{\xi_j}(t, x, \xi).$$

In particular, when $f(t, x, \xi)$ is homogeneous of degree 1 in ξ , by Euler's identity the right-hand side is identically zero. This means that u is constant along the characteristic strip.

E. Homogeneous Partial Differential Equations

Assume that $f(\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_m)$ is a homogeneous polynomial of m independent variables $\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_m$. We denote the differential operator $\partial/\partial x_s$ by D_s . Then consider a homogeneous partial differential equation

$$f(D_1, D_2, \dots, D_m)u = 0. \quad (20)$$

We can obtain a homogeneous equation from an inhomogeneous partial differential equation by transformation of the dependent variable. For example, $D_1^2 w = D_2 w$ becomes the homogeneous partial differential equation $(D_1^2 - D_2 D_3)u = 0$ by the transformation of the dependent variable $u = e^{x_3} w$. The equation $(D_1^2 - D_2 D_3)u = 0$ corresponds to the homogeneous polynomial $f(\xi_1, \xi_2, \xi_3) = \xi_1^2 - \xi_2 \xi_3$. Generally, for equation (20), we consider the solution

$$u = F(\theta_1, \theta_2, \dots, \theta_s), \quad (21)$$

where $\theta_1, \theta_2, \dots, \theta_s$ are functions of x_1, \dots, x_m and F is an arbitrary function of θ_i . Such a solution is called a **primary solution** of (20). For example, for the equation $(D_1^2 - D_2^2)u = 0$, there are two primary solutions, $u = F(x_1 + x_2)$ and $u = F(x_1 - x_2)$. For † Laplace's equation

$$\Delta u = \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial z^2} = 0,$$

we have a primary solution $u = F(z + ix \cos \alpha + iy \sin \alpha)$, where α is a parameter.

Second, for the † wave equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial z^2} - \frac{1}{c^2} \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t^2} = 0, \quad (22)$$

we have a solution

$$u = \gamma f(\alpha, \beta), \quad \gamma = \frac{1}{r}, \quad \alpha = t - \frac{r}{c}, \quad \beta = \frac{z-r}{x+iy}, \quad (23)$$

where $r^2 = x^2 + y^2 + z^2$, f is an arbitrary function, and γ is a particular solution of (22).

Furthermore, $v = f(\alpha, \beta)$ satisfies the equation of a characteristic curve of (22):

$$\left(\frac{\partial v}{\partial x}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{\partial v}{\partial y}\right)^2 + \left(\frac{\partial v}{\partial z}\right)^2 = \frac{1}{c^2} \left(\frac{\partial v}{\partial t}\right)^2.$$

Such a solution, which is the product of particular solutions and some function that contains an arbitrary function, is called a **primitive solution** of the original equation. Equation (22) has another primitive solution of the type

$$u = \frac{1}{r} g\left(t + \frac{r}{c}, \frac{z-r}{x+iy}\right),$$

where g is an arbitrary function.

Laplace's equation has a primitive solution

$$u = \frac{1}{r} f\left(\frac{z-r}{x+iy}\right).$$

A **basic equation** is an equation, such as Laplace's equation, that has a primary solution and a primitive solution. A solution of an equation that has the same characteristic curves as a basic equation can be obtained from a particular solution of the basic equation by integrations and additions. For example, if we choose a particular solution $u = r^{-1}$ of Laplace's equation, which is a specialization of the primitive solution $u = r^{-1} f((z-r)/(x+iy))$, then

$$u = \iiint [(x-\xi)^2 + (y-\eta)^2 + (z-\zeta)^2]^{-1/2} \times F(\xi, \eta, \zeta) d\xi d\eta d\zeta$$

is a solution of

$$\Delta u + 4\pi F(x, y, z) = 0$$

in the interior of the domain of integration.

F. Determined Systems

The general form of a system of partial differential equations in two independent variables is

$$F_i(x, y, u^{(1)}, u^{(2)}, \dots, u^{(m)}, u_x^{(1)}, u_y^{(1)}, \dots, u_x^{(m)}, u_y^{(m)}, u_{xx}^{(1)}, \dots) = 0, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, h, \quad (24)$$

i.e., a system of h equations for m functions

$u^{(1)}, u^{(2)}, \dots, u^{(m)}$ of the independent variables x and y . The system is called a **determined system** if $h=m$, an **overdetermined system** if $h>m$, and an **underdetermined system** if $h<m$.

An example of a determined system is the \dagger Cauchy-Riemann equation

$$u_x - v_y = 0, \quad u_y + v_x = 0,$$

for $u(x, y), v(x, y)$, which can be further reduced to two determined equations $\Delta u = 0$ and $\Delta v = 0$.

A simple example of an overdetermined system is

$$u_x = f(x, y), \quad u_y = f(x, y).$$

A necessary and sufficient condition for the existence of a solution of this system is $f_y = f_x$. The **Cauchy-Riemann differential equations** for a holomorphic function $f(z_1, z_2) = u + iv$ of two complex variables $z_1 = x_1 + iy_1, z_2 = x_2 + iy_2$ are

$$u_{x_1} = v_{y_1}, \quad u_{x_2} = v_{y_2}, \quad u_{y_1} = -v_{x_1},$$

$$u_{y_2} = -v_{x_2},$$

which can be reduced to

$$u_{x_1 x_1} + u_{y_1 y_1} = 0, \quad u_{x_1 x_2} + u_{y_1 y_2} = 0,$$

$$u_{x_2 x_2} + u_{y_2 y_2} = 0, \quad u_{x_1 y_2} - u_{x_2 y_1} = 0,$$

which is also an overdetermined system.

An example of an underdetermined system is

$$\frac{\partial(u, v)}{\partial(x, y)} = u_x v_y - u_y v_x = 0.$$

If this equation holds, there exists a functional relation $w(u, v) = 0$ that can be regarded as a solution of this underdetermined system.

G. General Theory of Differential Operators

In recent developments of the theory of partial differential equations, there is a trend to construct a general theory for \dagger differential operators regardless of the classical types of differential equations (\rightarrow 112 Differential Operators). For example, we take a property that is satisfied by some equation of classical type (e.g., an \dagger elliptic differential equation) and proceed to characterize all equations that have this property. (For example, \dagger hypoellipticity is a property of classical \dagger parabolic and elliptic equations.) There are several basic problems in this general theory: the existence of a fundamental solution, the existence of a local solution, unique continuation of solutions, the differentiability and analyticity of solutions, and the propagation of smoothness. We explain here only two of them: the fundamental solution and the local existence of solutions.

H. Fundamental Solutions

L is assumed to be a linear partial differential operator with constant coefficients. If a \dagger distribution E satisfies the equation

$$LE(x) = \delta(x),$$

where $\delta(x)$ is the \dagger Dirac δ -function, then we call $E(x)$ a **fundamental solution** (or **elementary solution**) of L . Also, if L is a linear differential operator and E satisfies the equation

$$L_x E(x, y) = \delta(x - y),$$

then we call this distribution $E(x, y)$ a **fundamental kernel** (or **elementary kernel**) of L .

Let L be a differential operator with constant coefficients and $E(x)$ be a fundamental solution of L . Then $E(x, y)$ is a fundamental kernel of L . Sometimes $E(x, y)$ itself is called a fundamental solution. L. Ehrenpreis and B. Malgrange proved that any linear differential operator with constant coefficients has a fundamental solution [4].

If we take a fundamental solution (fundamental kernel) E and add to it an arbitrary solution of the equation $Lu = 0$, then we get another fundamental solution (fundamental kernel) of L . This freedom of the fundamental solution (fundamental kernel) can be used to construct \dagger Green's functions of the boundary value problem of elliptic equations and of the mixed initial-boundary value problem for parabolic equations. A Green's function is a fundamental solution (fundamental kernel) that satisfies given boundary conditions (\rightarrow 188 Green's Functions; 189 Green's Operator). The fundamental solutions (fundamental kernels) relative to the Cauchy problem are also defined as in this section. For example, consider a fundamental solution of the Cauchy problem concerning the future behavior of a differential operator $L = \partial/\partial t - P(\partial/\partial x)$, namely, a distribution $E(t, x)$ that satisfies $LE = 0$ ($t > 0$) and $E(t, x)|_{t=0} = \delta(x)$. If we put $\tilde{E}(t, x) = E(t, x)$ ($t \geq 0$) and $\tilde{E}(t, x) = 0$ ($t < 0$), then $\tilde{E}(t, x)$ is a fundamental solution (or kernel) of the differential operator L , that is, $L\tilde{E} = \delta(t, x)$. Sometimes a fundamental solution of the Cauchy problem for a parabolic equation is called a Green's function. On the other hand, a fundamental solution (or kernel) of the Cauchy problem for a hyperbolic equation is called a \dagger Riemann function. A Riemann function actually is not always a function; in general it is a distribution.

Example 1. A fundamental solution of the 3-dimensional Laplacian

$$\Delta = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_2^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_3^2}$$

is $E(x) = -1/4\pi r$, where $r = \sqrt{x_1^2 + x_2^2 + x_3^2}$.

Example 2. A fundamental solution of the Cauchy problem for the future of the 3-dimensional wave operator

$$L = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial t^2} - \sum_{i=1}^3 \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i^2},$$

i.e., a distribution $E(t, x)$ ($t \geq 0$) that satisfies $LE = 0$ ($t > 0$), $E(0, x) = 0$, and $(\partial/\partial t)E(0, x) = \delta(x)$, is given by $E(t, x) = (1/4\pi t)\delta(r - t)$ ($t > 0$), $r = \sqrt{x_1^2 + x_2^2 + x_3^2}$. A fundamental solution for L is given by $\tilde{E}(t, x) = E(t, x)$ ($t \geq 0$); $= 0$ ($t < 0$) (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 15.V).

I. Existence of Local Solutions

Given a linear differential operator L and the equation $Lu = f$, we have the problem of determining whether this equation always has a solution in some neighborhood of a given point. If the coefficients of L and f are holomorphic in a neighborhood of this point and if the homogeneous part of highest order does not vanish, then there exists a solution that is holomorphic in a neighborhood of the given point (\dagger Cauchy-Kovalevskaya existence theorem).

If L is a linear differential operator with constant coefficients, E is a fundamental solution of L , and f is a function (or distribution) that is zero outside of a compact set, then we have a solution u that is the \dagger convolution of E and f : $u = E * f$. On the other hand, H. Lewy proposed the following example [3]:

$$Lu \equiv \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1} + i \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_2} + 2i(x_1 + ix_2) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_3} = f(x_3),$$

where f is a real function of x_3 . He showed that if this equation has a solution that is of class C^1 , then f must be real analytic. Therefore, if f is of class C^∞ but not real analytic, then this equation has no C^1 -solution. Actually, no solution exists even in the distribution sense. (Note that, since the coefficients of L are now complex-valued, the results mentioned at the beginning of this section are no longer applicable.)

For linear differential operators L , a study by L. Hörmander gives some necessary conditions and also some sufficient conditions for the local existence of a solution of the equation $Lu = f$ for sufficiently general f [4]. This result has been developed and completed by L. Nirenberg and F. Trèves [18] and by R. Beals and C. Fefferman [19]. The operator considered by S. Mizohata (*J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 1 (1962)),

$$L \equiv \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} + ix_1^k \frac{\partial}{\partial x_2},$$

serves as a standard model in this problem. In

the neighborhood of the origin, if k is even, L is locally solvable, and if k is odd, it is not locally solvable. However, for linear partial differential operators with multiple characteristics, the problem of local solvability becomes extremely difficult.

References

- [1] E. Goursat, *Cours d'analyse mathématique*, Gauthier-Villars, II, second edition, 1911; III, fourth edition, 1927.
- [2] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics II*, Interscience, 1962.
- [3] H. Lewy, An example of a smooth linear partial differential equation without solution, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 66 (1957), 155–158.
- [4] L. Hörmander, *Linear partial differential operators*, Springer, 1963.
- [5] S. Mizohata, *Theory of partial differential equations*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1973. (Original in Japanese, 1965.)
- [6] C. Carathéodory, *Calculus of variations and partial differential equations of the first order*, Holden-Day, 1967.
- [7] I. G. Petrovskiĭ, Über das Cauchysche Problem für ein System linearer partieller Differentialgleichungen im Gebiete der nicht-analytischen Funktionen, *Bull. Univ. Moscou*, ser. internat., sec. A, vol. 1, fasc. 7 (1938), 1–74.
- [8] J. Hadamard, *Le problème de Cauchy et les équations aux dérivées partielles linéaires hyperboliques*, Hermann, 1932.
- [9] I. G. Petrovskiĭ, *Lectures on partial differential equations*, Interscience, 1954. (Original in Russian, 1953.)
- [10] S. L. Sobolev, *Partial differential equations of mathematical physics*, Pergamon, 1964. (Original in Russian, 1954.)
- [11] J. L. Lions, *Equations différentielles opérationnelles et problèmes aux limites*, Springer, 1961.
- [12] J. L. Lions and E. Magenes, *Problèmes aux limites non homogènes et applications*, Dunod, I, 1968; II, 1968; III, 1969.
- [13] A. Friedman, *Partial differential equations*, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1969.
- [14] F. Trèves, *Locally convex spaces and linear partial differential equations*, Springer, 1967.
- [15] F. Trèves, *Linear partial differential equations with constant coefficients*, Gordon & Breach, 1966.
- [16] F. John, *Partial differential equations*, Springer, 1971.
- [17] L. Bers, F. John, and M. Schechter, *Partial differential equations*, Interscience, 1964.
- [18] L. Nirenberg and F. Trèves, On local solvability of linear partial differential equations I, II, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 23 (1970), 1–38, 459–510.

[19] R. Beals and C. Fefferman, On local solvability of linear partial differential equations, *Ann. Math.*, 97 (1973), 482–498.

[20] F. Cardoso and F. Treves, A necessary condition of local solvability for pseudodifferential equations with double characteristics, *Ann. Inst. Fourier*, 24 (1974), 225–292.

321 (XIII.21) Partial Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems)

A. General Remarks

First, we give two examples of initial value problems for partial differential equations.

(I) Consider the partial differential equation $u_x - u_y = 0$ of two independent variables x and y . If the function $\varphi(y)$ is of class C^1 , then $u = \varphi(x + y)$ is a solution of this equation that satisfies $u(0, y) = \varphi(y)$.

(II) We denote a point of \mathbf{R}^{n+1} (or \mathbf{C}^{n+1}) by (t, x) , $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$. Let L be a linear partial differential operator of order m :

$$L = \frac{\partial^m}{\partial t^m} + \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} a_{v_0 v_1 \dots v_n}(t, x) \frac{\partial^{|\alpha|}}{\partial t^{v_0} \partial x_1^{v_1} \dots \partial x_n^{v_n}},$$

$$|\alpha| = v_0 + v_1 + \dots + v_n, \quad v_0 < m,$$

where the coefficients $a_{v_0 v_1 \dots v_n}(t, x)$ are functions of class C^ω (i.e., real analytic functions or holomorphic functions) in a neighborhood of $(t, x) = (0, 0)$. If the functions $v(t, x)$ and $w_k(x)$ ($0 \leq k \leq m-1$) are of class C^ω in a neighborhood of $(t, x) = (0, 0)$, then there exists a unique solution $u(t, x)$ of class C^ω in a neighborhood of $(t, x) = (0, 0)$ that satisfies

$$L[u] = v(t, x),$$

$$\frac{\partial^k u}{\partial t^k}(0, x) = w_k(x), \quad 0 \leq k \leq m-1. \quad (1)$$

This is called the **Cauchy-Kovalevskaya existence theorem** (for linear partial differential equations).

As in (II) we choose one of the independent variables as the principal variable and regard the others as parameters. When we assign a value a to the principal variable t , the values of the dependent variables (unknown functions) and their derivatives are called **initial values**, **initial data**, or **Cauchy data**. Conditions to determine initial values are called **initial conditions**. The problem of finding a solution of (1) under given initial conditions is called an **initial value problem** or **Cauchy problem**. We may consider initial value problems not only for initial conditions on a hyperplane $t = a$, but

also for initial conditions on a hypersurface, called an **initial surface** (\rightarrow Section C).

Let $a(x, D)$ be a linear partial differential operator of order m :

$$a(x, D) = \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} a_\alpha(x) D^\alpha, \quad D^\alpha = \frac{\partial^{|\alpha|}}{\partial x_1^{\alpha_1} \dots \partial x_n^{\alpha_n}},$$

$$|\alpha| = \alpha_1 + \dots + \alpha_n,$$

where the coefficients $a_\alpha(x)$ are of class C^ω in a neighborhood of $x = 0$. Its **characteristic polynomial** is

$$h(x, \xi) = \sum_{|\alpha| = m} a_\alpha(x) \xi^\alpha, \quad \xi^\alpha = \xi_1^{\alpha_1} \dots \xi_n^{\alpha_n}.$$

Let $S: s(x) = 0$ be a regular surface (i.e., $s_x = (\partial s / \partial x_1, \dots, \partial s / \partial x_n) \neq (0)$) of codimension 1.

We suppose that S is a **noncharacteristic surface**, that is, $h(x, s_x) \neq 0$ on S . Let $v(x)$ and $w_k(x)$ ($0 \leq k \leq m-1$) be the functions of class C^ω in a neighborhood of $x = 0$ and on S , respectively. We consider the Cauchy problem

$$a(x, D)u(x) = v(x), \quad \frac{\partial^k u}{\partial n^k(x)} = w_k(x) \quad \text{on } S,$$

$$0 \leq k \leq m-1, \quad (1)$$

where n is the outward normal direction of S . S is thus the initial surface. Then there exists a unique solution $u(x)$ of class C^ω in a neighborhood of $x = 0$. In fact, by the change of variables $X_1 = s(x)$, $X_i = x_i$ ($2 \leq i \leq n$) if $\partial s / \partial x_1 \neq 0$ on S , this problem can be reduced to the Cauchy problem (1) by taking account of the fact that $h(x, s_x) \neq 0$ on S .

The Cauchy-Kovalevskaya theorem asserts the local existence of solution when the initial values are of class C^ω . Indeed, J. Hadamard noted that if the initial values are not of class C^ω , the initial value problem does not always have a solution. For example, consider the initial value problem

$$\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial z^2} = 0$$

with the initial values

$$u(0, y, z) = w(y, z), \quad \frac{\partial u}{\partial x(0, y, z)} = 0.$$

If the function $w(y, z)$ is not of class C^ω in any neighborhood of $y = z = 0$, the solution of this problem can never exist in (or even on one side $x \geq 0$ of) any neighborhood of $x = y = z = 0$.

B. The Cauchy-Kovalevskaya Existence Theorem for a System of Partial Differential Equations in the Normal Form

The Cauchy-Kovalevskaya existence theorem (1) is extended for more general systems of

partial differential equations in the normal form studied by Kovalevskaya. Consider

$$\frac{\partial^{p_i} u_i}{\partial t^{p_i}} = F_i \left(t, x, u_1, \dots, u_m, \dots, \frac{\partial^{|v|} u_j}{\partial t^{v_0} \partial x_1^{v_1} \dots \partial x_n^{v_n}}, \dots \right),$$

where $1 \leq i, j \leq m$, $|v| = v_0 + v_1 + \dots + v_n \leq p_j$, $v_0 < p_j$, and $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$. We assume that F_i ($1 \leq i \leq m$) are functions of class C^ω with respect to arguments $t, x, u_1, \dots, u_m, \dots, \partial^{|v|} u_j / \partial t^{v_0} \partial x_1^{v_1} \dots \partial x_n^{v_n}, \dots$, in a neighborhood of $(0, 0, \dots, 0)$. If the functions $w_{ik}(x)$ ($1 \leq i \leq m, 0 \leq k \leq p_i - 1$) are of class C^ω in a neighborhood of $x = 0$, then there exists a unique solution $u_1(t, x), \dots, u_m(t, x)$ of class C^ω in a neighborhood of $(t, x) = (0, 0)$ that satisfies the equations and the initial values

$$\frac{\partial^k u_i}{\partial t^k}(0, x) = w_{ik}(x), \quad 1 \leq i \leq m, \quad 0 \leq k \leq p_i - 1$$

[2, 4].

C. Single Equations of the First Order

For a single partial differential equation given in the normal form

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} = F \left(x, y_1, \dots, y_k, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial y_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial y_k} \right), \quad (2)$$

we assume that $F(x, y_1, \dots, y_k, u, q_1, \dots, q_k)$ is a real-valued function of class C^2 in a neighborhood of $x = a$, $y_i = b_i$, $u = c$, $q_i = d_i$, and that $\varphi(y_1, \dots, y_k)$ is also a function of class C^2 such that $\varphi = c$, $\partial \varphi / \partial y_i = d_i$ at $y_i = b_i$. Then there is a solution u of (2) in a neighborhood of $x = a$ and $y_i = b_i$ that satisfies $u(a, y_1, \dots, y_k) = \varphi(y_1, \dots, y_k)$ and is of class C^2 .

For the uniqueness of solutions of this Cauchy problem, A. Haar (*Atti del Congresso Internazionale dei Matematici*, 1928, Bologna, vol. 3) showed that if F satisfies the † Lipschitz condition

$$|F(x, y, u', q') - F(x, y, u, q)|$$

$$\leq A \sum_{i=1}^k |q'_i - q_i| + B|u' - u|,$$

then the solution of the initial value problem for (2) is unique. To obtain this result he studied the partial differential inequality

$$\left| \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \right| \leq A \sum_{i=1}^k \left| \frac{\partial u}{\partial y_i} \right| + B|u| + C. \quad (3)$$

Next, we consider more general equations of the first order

$$F \left(x_1, \dots, x_k, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_k} \right) = 0. \quad (4)$$

Suppose that $F(x_1, \dots, x_k, u, p_1, \dots, p_k)$ is a real-valued function of class C^2 in a neighborhood of $x_i = a_i$, $u = b$, $p_i = c_i$; $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_k)$, $S(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ are functions of class C^2 in a neighborhood of $x_i = a_i$ that satisfy $b = \varphi(a_1, \dots, a_k)$, $c_i = (\partial \varphi / \partial x_i)_{x=a}$, $S(a_1, \dots, a_k) = 0$; and

$$\left[\sum_{v=1}^k \frac{\partial F}{\partial p_v} \frac{\partial S}{\partial x_v} \right]_{x=a, u=b, p=c} \neq 0. \quad (5)$$

Then there exists a solution u of (4) of class C^2 in a neighborhood of $x = a$ that satisfies $u = \varphi(x)$ on the hypersurface $S(x) = 0$.

Furthermore, if F, φ, S are of class C^1 and satisfy (5), then there is at most one solution u of (4) of class C^1 in a neighborhood of a that satisfies $u = \varphi(x)$ on the hypersurface $S(x) = 0$. These facts can be proved in the following way. By choosing $S_1(x), \dots, S_{k-1}(x)$ and then $S(x)$ so that the † Jacobian $\partial(S, S_1, \dots, S_{k-1}) / \partial(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ does not vanish and by changing variables from x to S, S_1, \dots, S_{k-1} , we obtain a normal form solved for $\partial u / \partial S$ by condition (5) (this condition means that the hypersurface $S(x) = 0$ is not tangent to the † characteristic curves).

D. Quasilinear Equations of the Second Order

Consider the equation

$$\sum_{i,j=1}^k a_{ij}(x, u, p) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} + b(x, u, p) = 0,$$

where $x = (x_1, \dots, x_k)$, $p = (p_1, \dots, p_k)$, and $p_i = \partial u / \partial x_i$. We assume that the initial conditions are $u = \varphi(x)$ on $S(x) = 0$ and

$$\sum_{i=1}^k \frac{\partial S}{\partial x_i} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} = \psi(x)$$

on the same hypersurface. Taking the other functions $S_1(x), \dots, S_{k-1}(x)$ and then $S(x)$ so that the Jacobian $\partial(S, S_1, \dots, S_{k-1}) / \partial(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ does not vanish, we change the variables x to s_0, s_1, \dots, s_{k-1} ($s_0 = S, s_i = S_i$). Then we get

$$\sum_{\mu, \nu=0}^{k-1} Q(S_\mu, S_\nu) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial s_\mu \partial s_\nu} + b^* = 0, \quad (6)$$

where

$$Q(S_\mu, S_\nu) = \sum_{i,j=1}^k a_{ij} \frac{\partial S_\mu}{\partial x_i} \frac{\partial S_\nu}{\partial x_j},$$

$$p_i = \sum_{\mu=0}^{k-1} \frac{\partial S_\mu}{\partial x_i} \frac{\partial u}{\partial s_\mu},$$

$$b^* = b + \sum_{\lambda=0}^{k-1} \sum_{j=1}^k a_{ij} \frac{\partial^2 S_\lambda}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} \frac{\partial u}{\partial s_\lambda}.$$

When $s_0 = 0$, the initial conditions are trans-

formed to

$$u = \varphi^*(s_1, \dots, s_{k-1}) = \varphi(x(0, s_1, \dots, s_{k-1})),$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial s_0} = \psi^*(s_1, \dots, s_{k-1})$$

$$= \left[\sum_{i=1}^{k-1} \left(\frac{\partial S}{\partial x_i} \right)^2 \right]^{-1} \left[\psi(x(0, s_1, \dots, s_{k-1})) - \sum_{\lambda=1}^{k-1} \frac{\partial \psi^*}{\partial s_\lambda} \sum_{i=1}^k \frac{\partial S_\lambda}{\partial x_i} \frac{\partial S}{\partial x_i} \right].$$

Suppose that $Q(S, S) \neq 0$, and set $\partial u / \partial s_i = q_i$. Then equation (6) added to the initial conditions $u = \varphi^*(s_1, \dots, s_{k-1})$, $q_0 = \psi^*(s_1, \dots, s_{k-1})$ at $s_0 = 0$ is equivalent to the system in the normal form of partial differential equations of the first order

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial u}{\partial s_0} &= q_0, \quad \frac{\partial q_\mu}{\partial s_0} = \frac{\partial q_0}{\partial s_\mu}, \quad \mu = 1, \dots, k-1, \\ \frac{\partial q_0}{\partial s_0} &= -\frac{1}{Q(S, S)} \left[\sum_{\mu=1}^{k-1} \left(\sum_{v=1}^{k-1} Q(S_\mu, S_v) \frac{\partial q_\mu}{\partial s_v} - 2Q(S_\mu, S) \frac{\partial q_0}{\partial s_\mu} \right) - b^* \right] \end{aligned}$$

with initial conditions

$$u = \varphi^*(s_1, \dots, s_{k-1}), \quad q_0 = \psi^*(s_1, \dots, s_{k-1}),$$

$$q_\mu = \partial \varphi^* / \partial s_\mu$$

when $s_0 = 0$. Thus, if the coefficients are of class C^ω , the preceding theory applies to this equation.

E. Continuous Dependence of Solutions on the Initial Values

First, we consider the following simple example of a linear equation. The wave equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial t^2} = c^2 \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x^2}$$

for $v(x, t)$ is the simplest \dagger hyperbolic equation. Its solution satisfying the initial conditions $v(x, 0) = f(x)$, $(\partial v / \partial t)(x, 0) = g(x)$ is given by

$$v(x, t) = \frac{1}{2} (f(x+ct) + f(x-ct)) + \frac{1}{2} \int_{x-ct}^{x+ct} g(\lambda) d\lambda.$$

It is obvious from this expression that if we regard $f(x)$ and $g(x)$ as elements of the \dagger function space $C(\mathbf{R})$ of continuous functions of $x \in \mathbf{R}$ with the topology of \dagger uniform convergence on compact sets, then $v(x, t)$ is determined as the value of a linear operator from $C(\mathbf{R}^2)$ to $C(\mathbf{R}^2)$ on xt -space. If such continuous dependence on the initial values is established, or more precisely, if there is a unique solution for sufficiently smooth initial values that depends on the initial values continuously in a

suitable sense, we say that the initial value problem is **well posed** (properly posed or correctly posed).

Systematic research on the well-posedness of Cauchy problems was initiated by I. G. Petrovskii, who considered the following system of partial differential equations, which is more general than differential equations of the normal form. (The coefficients are all assumed to be functions of t only.)

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial^n u_j}{\partial t^{n_j}} &= \sum_{k=1}^N \sum_{|v| \leq m} a_{j k v_0 v_1 \dots v_n}(t) \frac{\partial^{v_0+v_1+\dots+v_n} u_k(x, t)}{\partial t^{v_0} \partial x_1^{v_1} \dots \partial x_n^{v_n}} \\ &+ B_j(x_1, \dots, x_n, t), \quad j = 1, \dots, N, \end{aligned}$$

$$|v| = v_0 + v_1 + \dots + v_n, \quad v_0 < n_k. \quad (7)$$

This has a normal form if $n_k = m$ ($k = 1, \dots, N$). Now, taking the derivatives

$$\begin{aligned} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{n_j-1} u_j(x, t), \quad \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{n_j-2} u_j(x, t), \dots, \\ \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right) u_j(x, t) \end{aligned}$$

as new unknowns, we get another system:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial u_j}{\partial t} &= \sum_{k=1}^{N'} \sum_{|v| \leq m} a_{j k v_1 \dots v_n}(t) \frac{\partial^{v_1+\dots+v_n} u_k(x, t)}{\partial x_1^{v_1} \dots \partial x_n^{v_n}} \\ &+ C_j(x, t), \quad j = 1, \dots, N'. \end{aligned} \quad (8)$$

We take as the space of initial values the \dagger topological linear space composed of all functions whose derivatives up to a sufficiently large order are bounded on the whole space \mathbf{R}^n and equipped with the topology determined by the \dagger seminorms that are the maximums of derivatives up to a given order on the whole space, and we take as the range space a similar space on the xt -space, where $x \in \mathbf{R}^n$ and $0 \leq t \leq T$. Then we can formulate a necessary and sufficient condition for the well-posedness of the initial value problem for the future (the problem is regarded as specifying a mapping that assigns to the initial values on $t=0$ the values $u(x, t)$ for $t > 0$). To give such a condition we consider the following system of ordinary differential equations, which are given by a \dagger Fourier transformation on the x -space of system (8):

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d \hat{u}_j}{dt} &= \sum_{k=1}^{N'} \sum_{|v| \leq m} a_{j k v_1 \dots v_n}(t) \\ &\times (2\pi i \xi_1)^{v_1} \dots (2\pi i \xi_n)^{v_n} \hat{u}_k(\xi, t) + C_j(\xi, t), \\ j &= 1, \dots, N'. \end{aligned} \quad (9)$$

If the \dagger fundamental system of solutions of (9) is $v_i^{(j)}(\xi, t)$ ($i = 1, \dots, N'$, $j = 1, \dots, N'$), then the condition is that these functions satisfy the inequalities

$$|v_i^{(j)}(\xi, t)| \leq C(1 + |\xi|)^L, \quad 0 \leq t \leq T, \quad (10)$$

where C and L are constants independent of ξ . This is the condition obtained by Petrovskii.

If system (7) is of normal form and is well posed for the future, it is also well posed for the past. In this case, equation (7) is said to be of **hyperbolic type** (\rightarrow 325 Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type). An example that is not of a normal form and is well posed is a parabolic equation (\rightarrow 327 Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type). In Petrovskii's theory it is sufficient to assume that the coefficients in (7) are continuous and bounded, and we can take T arbitrarily large provided that (10) is satisfied. Hence Petrovskii's theory guarantees global existence of solutions.

F. Uniqueness of Solutions

If a linear partial differential equation of the first order of normal form has coefficients of class C^ω , then the solution of class C^1 satisfying the prescribed initial conditions is unique (**Holmgren's uniqueness theorem**, 1901). Every system of partial differential equations of higher order of normal form can be reduced to a system of the first order of normal form. Therefore, if the coefficients are of class C^ω , there is only one solution for the original initial value problem with continuous partial derivatives up to the order of the equation. Moreover, if an analytic manifold S of dimension $n-1$ (n is the number of independent variables) is not \dagger characteristic for the given equation of order m , there is at most one solution whose derivatives of order up to $m-1$ coincide with given functions on the manifold S . The proof of this fact relies on the Cauchy-Kovalevskaya existence theorem.

The uniqueness problem for the initial value problem is in general very difficult even for linear equations when the coefficients are not of class C^ω .

In particular, if the number of independent variables is 2 and the coefficients are all real, then we have a result of T. Carleman (1939) about the system:

$$\frac{\partial u_\mu}{\partial x} = \sum_{\nu=1}^m a_{\mu\nu}(x, y) \frac{\partial u_\nu}{\partial y} + \sum_{\nu=1}^m b_{\mu\nu}(x, y) u_\nu, \quad (11)$$

where the $a_{\mu\nu}$ are of class C^2 and the $b_{\mu\nu}$ are continuous. He proved that if the eigenvalues of the matrix $(a_{\mu\nu})$ are all distinct, then even when some of the eigenvalues are complex, there is at most one solution of class C^1 for the initial value problem. If we omit the assumption about the eigenvalues, however, the theorem does not hold in general, because we have a counterexample due to A. Plis (1954) where all coefficients are of class C^∞ , $m=2$, $b_{\mu\nu} \equiv 0$.

A. P. Calderón showed that Carleman's result can be extended to the case $n > 2$ (*Amer. J. Math.*, 80 (1958)). Consider the following linear partial differential equation of the k th order:

$$\frac{\partial^k u}{\partial x^k} + \sum_{j=1}^k P_j \left(x, y, \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \right) \left[\frac{\partial^{k-j} u}{\partial x^{k-j}} \right] + B[u] = 0, \quad (12)$$

where $P_j(x, y, \xi)$ is a homogeneous polynomial of degree j of $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n)$ with real coefficients and B is a differential operation in (x, y) of order at most $k-1$. We assume that the coefficients of $P_j(x, y, \xi)$ are functions of (x, y) of class C^1 , their derivatives are Hölder continuous, and the coefficients of B are bounded and continuous. If the characteristic equation of (12),

$$\lambda^k + \sum_{j=1}^k P_j(x, y, \xi) \lambda^{k-j} = 0,$$

has only distinct roots for $\xi \neq 0$, then the C^k -solution of the Cauchy problem is unique in a neighborhood of $x=a$. Calderón proved this except for the cases $k \geq 4$, $n=2$, where a certain topological difficulty arises. S. Mizohata (*J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 11 (1959)) succeeded in obtaining the proof for the exceptional cases.

This result can be extended to systems of equations under similar assumptions. See L. Hörmander [4] for an extension to the complex coefficient case. S. Mizohata, T. Shirota, and H. Kumanogo discuss the uniqueness theorem for equations of double characteristics or of parabolic type.

For nonlinear equations there are, in general, very few results about the global existence of solutions. For example, if the function F in equation (2) in the normal form satisfies the Lipschitz condition with constants A and B that are independent of x , then we get a global existence theorem. The method of proof of this theorem is as follows: First, we prove the existence for $|x| \leq \varepsilon_1$ and sufficiently small ε_1 by Picard's \dagger successive iteration method. Then we regard $x = \varepsilon_1$ as the hyperplane on which the initial values are assigned and proved the existence of a solution on $\varepsilon_1 \leq |x_1| \leq \varepsilon_2$, and so on. The same method can be applied to nonlinear systems of the first order if they are special types of quasilinear systems.

G. Construction of Solutions by Asymptotic Expansion

Let $a(x, D) = \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} a_\alpha(x) D^\alpha$ be a linear partial differential operator of order m , with coefficients of class C^∞ . We write $a(x, \xi) = \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} a_\alpha(x) \xi^\alpha = h(x, \xi) + h'(x, \xi) + \dots$ with h and h' homogeneous in ξ of degree m and $m-1$, respectively. Let $K: \varphi(x) = 0$ be a regular

surface of codimension 1. We assume that K is a simple characteristic, i.e., $h(x, \varphi_x) = 0$ and $(\partial h / \partial \xi_i(x, \varphi_x)) \neq (0)$ on K . Let $f_j(t)$ ($j = 0, 1, \dots$) be a sequence of functions satisfying $df_j/dt(t) = f_{j-1}(t)$, $j = 1, 2, \dots$. Then the equation $a(x, D)u(x) = 0$ has a formal solution in the form

$$u(x) = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} f_j(\varphi(x)) u_j(x).$$

The coefficients $u_j(x)$ are obtained by solving successively the equations

$$L_1[u_j] = \sum_{k=2}^m L_k[u_{j-k+1}], \quad (13)$$

where

$$L_1 = \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial h}{\partial \xi_i}(x, \varphi_x) D_i + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j=1}^n \frac{\partial^2 h}{\partial \xi_i \partial \xi_j}(x, \varphi_x) \varphi_{x_i x_j} + h'(x, \varphi_x)$$

and L_k ($2 \leq k \leq m$) are differential operators of order k depending only on a and φ . By this method of asymptotic expansion of solution, fundamental solutions and singularities of solutions for hyperbolic equations have been studied (Hadamard [5, 6]; R. Courant and P. Lax, *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US*, 42 (1956); Lax, *Duke Math. J.*, 24 (1957); D. Ludwig, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 22 (1960); S. Mizohata, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 1 (1962); — 325 Partial Differential Equation of Hyperbolic Type).

If $a(x, D)$ is an operator with analytic coefficients, this formal solution is convergent. By using this fact, Mizohata constructed null solutions. In fact, put $f_j(t) = t^{p+m+j}/\Gamma(p+m+j)$ ($p \geq 0$), $j = 0, 1, \dots$. Define $u(x)$ by $u(x) = 0$ for $\varphi(x) \leq 0$ and $u(x) = \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} f_j(\varphi(x)) u_j(x)$ for $\varphi(x) \geq 0$ obtained by the preceding process. Then $u(x)$ is a null solution of $a(x, D)u(x) = 0$ (Mizohata, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 1 (1962)).

The Cauchy problem in the case when the initial surface has characteristic points had been studied by J. Leray and by L. Gårding, T. Kotake, and Leray. Let $a(x, D)$ be a differential operator with holomorphic coefficients in a complex domain. Let $S: s(x) = 0$ be a regular surface and T be a subvariety of codimension 1 of S . Suppose that S is noncharacteristic on $S - T$, but characteristic on T . Consider the Cauchy problem (1) of Section A. Then the solution $u(x)$ is ramified around a characteristic surface K that is tangent to S on T , and it can be uniformized (Leray, *Bull. Soc. Math. France*, 85 (1957); Gårding, Kotake, and Leray, *Bull. Soc. Math. France*, 92 (1964)).

Next we consider the Cauchy problem (1) when the initial surface S ($x_1 = 0$) is noncharacteristic, but the initial values $w_k(x)$ ($0 \leq k \leq m-1$) have singularities on a regular subvariety T ($x_1 = x_2 = 0$) of S . We assume that

$h(0, \xi_1, 1, 0, \dots, 0) = 0$ has m distinct roots. Then there exist m characteristic surfaces $K_i: \varphi_i(x) = 0$ ($1 \leq i \leq m$) originating from T . $\varphi_i(x)$ is obtained by solving the Hamilton-Jacobi equation $h(x, \varphi_x) = 0$, $\varphi(0, x_2, \dots, x_n) = x_2$. Now, if $w_k(x)$ ($0 \leq k \leq m-1$) has a pole along T , the Cauchy problem (1) has a unique solution in the form

$$u(x) = \sum_{i=1}^m \left\{ \frac{F_i(x)}{[\varphi_i(x)]^{p_i}} + G_i(x) \log \varphi_i(x) \right\} + H(x),$$

where $F_i(x)$, $G_i(x)$ ($1 \leq i \leq m$) and $H(x)$ are holomorphic functions in a neighborhood of $x = 0$ and p_i ($1 \leq i \leq m$) are integers > 0 . In order to obtain this solution, we set $u(x)$ in the form $u(x) = \sum_{i=1}^m \sum_{j=0}^{\infty} f_j(\varphi_i(x)) u_{i,j}(x)$, where $f_0(t)$ is a function with a pole or a logarithmic singularity at $t = 0$ chosen so that $u(x)$ satisfies the initial conditions. Thus we can determine the coefficients $u_{i,j}(x)$ by solving successively the equations (13) on each K_i ($1 \leq i \leq m$) (Y. Hamada, *Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 5 (1969); C. Wagschal, *J. Math. Pures Appl.*, 51 (1972)). When the multiplicity of characteristic roots is more than 1, the situation is not the same. For example, consider the Cauchy problem

$$D_1^2 u - D_2 u = 0, \quad u(0, x_2) = \frac{1}{x_2^2},$$

$$D_1 u(0, x_2) = 0.$$

The solution is

$$u(x) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (-1)^k n! x_1^{2n} / (2n)! x_2^{n+1}$$

with essential singularities along $x_2 = 0$. This situation occurs quite generally. We factor $h(x, \xi) = h_1(x, \xi)^{r_1} \dots h_s(x, \xi)^{r_s}$, where h_i ($1 \leq i \leq s$) are irreducible polynomials of degree m_i in ξ with holomorphic coefficients. We assume that the equation $\prod_{i=1}^s h_i(0, \xi_1, 1, 0, \dots, 0) = 0$ has p distinct roots ($p = m_1 + \dots + m_s$). Then there exist p characteristic surfaces K_i ($1 \leq i \leq p$) originating from T . We suppose more generally that the initial values $w_k(x)$ are multi-valued functions ramified around T . Then the Cauchy problem (1) has a unique holomorphic solution on the universal covering space of $V - \bigcup_{i=1}^p K_i$, where V is a neighborhood of $x = 0$. In fact, this is solved by transforming this problem into integrodifferential equations. Such a method of solution is closely related to the method discussed in this section. See Hamada, Leray, and Wagschal (*J. Math. Pures Appl.*, 55 (1976)). In this case, even if the initial values have only poles, the solution in general may have essential singularities along $\bigcup_{i=1}^p K_i$, but if $a(x, D)$ satisfies Levi's condition ($a(x, D)$ is well decomposable), the solution does not yield essential singularities along $\bigcup_{i=1}^p K_i$. See J. De Paris (*J. Math. Pures Appl.*, 51 (1972)).

References

- [1] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics II*, Interscience, 1962.
- [2] I. G. Petrovskii, *Lectures on partial differential equations*, Interscience, 1954. (Original in Russian, second edition, 1953.)
- [3] L. Hörmander, *Linear partial differential operators*, Springer, 1963.
- [4] E. Goursat, *Cours d'analyse mathématique*, Gauthier-Villars, II, second edition, 1911; III, fourth edition, 1927.
- [5] J. Hadamard, *Leçons sur la propagation des ondes et les équations de l'hydrodynamique*, Hermann, 1903 (Chelsea, 1949).
- [6] J. Hadamard, *Le problème de Cauchy et les équations aux dérivées partielles linéaires hyperboliques*, Hermann, 1932.
- [7] C. Carathéodory, *Calculus of variations and partial differential equations of first order*, Holden-Day, 1965. (Original in German, 1935.)
- [8] S. Mizohata, *Theory of partial differential equations*, Cambridge University Press, 1973. (Original in Japanese, 1965.)
- [9] F. Trèves, *Linear partial differential equations with constant coefficients*, Gordon & Breach, 1966.
- [10] F. John, *Partial differential equations*, Springer, 1971.
- [11] J. Dieudonné, *Éléments d'analyse*, 4, 7, 8, Gauthier-Villars, 1971–1978.

322 (XIII.20) Partial Differential Equations (Methods of Integration)

A. General Remarks

The methods of integrating partial differential equations are not as simple as those for ordinary differential equations. For ordinary differential equations, we often obtain the desired solution by first finding the general solution containing several arbitrary constants and then specializing those constants to satisfy prescribed additional conditions. The situation is more complicated, however, for partial differential equations. In the formal general solution of a partial differential equation we have arbitrary functions instead of arbitrary constants, and there are cases where it is impossible, or very difficult, to find a suitable specialization of these functions so that the given additional conditions are fulfilled. For this reason, methods of solution are rather specific and are classified according to the types of additional conditions. In many cases, we as-

sume that a problem is mathematically well posed, guess the possible solutions, and verify it directly.

A problem is said to be mathematically **well posed (properly posed or correctly posed)** if, under assigned additional conditions, the solution (i) exists, (ii) is uniquely determined, and (iii) depends continuously on the assigned data. By carefully examining problems in physics and engineering, we usually obtain many well-posed and important problems. In these problems, usually the data are sufficiently smooth functions. In these cases, part (iii) of the above definition (the continuous dependence of the solutions on the data) follows often from assumptions (i) and (ii). For example, telliptic equations like $\nabla^2 u = 0$ for $u(x, y)$ describe laws of static or stationary phenomena such as the field of universal gravitation, the electrostatic field, the magnetostatic field, the steady flow of incompressible fluids without vortices, and the steady flow of electricity or heat. For this equation, $\nabla^2 u = 0$, boundary value problems are well posed, but $\nabla^2 u = 0$ initial value problems are not (\rightarrow 323 Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type). By contrast, for $\nabla^2 u = 0$ hyperbolic equations like $u_{tt} - u_{xx} = 0$ for $u(x, t)$ and $\nabla^2 u = 0$ parabolic equations like $u_t - u_{xx} = 0$ for $u(x, t)$ which control the change (in reference to time) of the various stationary phenomena, initial value problems or mixed problems with both boundary conditions and initial conditions are well posed (\rightarrow 325 Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type).

For the rest of this article we explain fundamental and typical methods of integration (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 15).

B. The Lagrange-Charpit Method

For the partial differential equation of the first order

$$F(x, y, u, p, q) = 0, \quad p = \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}, \quad q = \frac{\partial u}{\partial y}, \quad (1)$$

we consider a system of ordinary differential equations called ∇^2 characteristic differential equations:

$$\frac{dx}{F_p} = \frac{dy}{F_q} = \frac{du}{pF_p + qF_q} = \frac{-dp}{F_x + pF_u} = \frac{-dq}{F_y + qF_u}. \quad (2)$$

If we obtain at least one ∇^2 integral of this system containing p , q , and an arbitrary constant a in the form

$$G(x, y, u, p, q) = a, \quad (3)$$

and if we find p and q from (1) and (3), then $du = p dx + q dy$ is an ∇^2 exact differential form, and by integrating it we get a solution $\Phi(x, y, u, a, b)$

$=0$ of (1). A solution of (1) containing two arbitrary constants is called a †complete solution. Here, setting $b=g(a)$ and eliminating a from the two equations $\Phi(x, y, u, a, g(a))=0$ and $\Phi_a + \Phi_b g'(a)=0$, we obtain a solution involving an arbitrary function. Such a solution is called a †general solution of (1). For example, consider $pq=1$. Since the characteristic differential equations are

$$\frac{dx}{q} = \frac{dy}{p} = \frac{du}{2pq} = \frac{-dp}{0} = \frac{-dq}{0},$$

we have $p=a$ (constant), and hence from the original equation we get $q=a^{-1}$. Then $du = a dx + a^{-1} dy$ is an exact differential form, and by integrating it a complete solution $u = ax + a^{-1}y + b$ is obtained. A general solution is found by eliminating a from $u = ax + a^{-1}y + g(a)$ and $0 = x - a^{-2}y + g'(a)$.

Likewise, when we have n independent variables x_1, \dots, x_n in the equation

$$F(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, p_1, \dots, p_n) = 0, \quad p_i = \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i}, \quad (1')$$

we can use the †characteristic differential equations to find a complete solution and a general solution (the **Lagrange-Charpit method**; → 82 Contact Transformations).

C. Separation of Variables and the Principle of Superposition

The simplest and most useful method is the **separation of variables**. Concerning the equation $u_x^2 + u_y^2 = 1$ in $u(x, y)$, for example, by setting $u = \phi(x) + \psi(y)$ we obtain $\phi'(x)^2 + \psi'(y)^2 = 1$ or $\phi'(x)^2 = 1 - \psi'(y)^2$. Since the right-hand side is independent of x and the left-hand side is independent of y , both sides must be equal to the same constant α^2 . From this we get a (complete) solution involving two arbitrary constants α, β :

$$u = \alpha x + \sqrt{1 - \alpha^2} y + \beta.$$

For †linear equations, it is often effective to write the solution as a product $u = \phi(x)\psi(y)$. From the †heat equation $u_y = u_{xx}$, we obtain by this process a relation $\psi'(y)/\psi(y) = \phi''(x)/\phi(x)$, from which we get a particular solution $u = ae^{-v^2y} \sin v(x - \alpha)$ containing a parameter v .

Next, when the equation is linear and homogeneous, by forming a linear combination of particular solutions that correspond to various values of a parameter v , we obtain a new solution (the **principle of superposition**). For example, by integrating the solution $e^{-v^2y} \cos vx$ with respect to the parameter v between the limits $-\infty$ and ∞ (namely, by a superposition consisting of a linear combination and a limiting process), we obtain a new

solution

$$u = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-v^2y} \cos vx dv = \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{y}} \exp\left(-\frac{x^2}{4y}\right) \quad (y > 0), \quad (4)$$

which is the †fundamental solution of the heat equation. This name refers to the fact that the function (4) can be used to obtain solutions of the heat equation under some initial conditions. More exactly, a solution of $u_y - u_{xx} = 0$ that is a function of class C^2 in $y > 0$, is continuous in $y \geq 0$, and coincides with a bounded continuous function $\phi(x)$ on $y=0$ can be obtained by a superposition of the solution (4) such as

$$u(x, y) = \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\pi y}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \phi(\xi) \exp\left(-\frac{(x-\xi)^2}{4y}\right) d\xi.$$

The method of separation of variables applied after a suitable transformation of variables is often successful. In particular, by using orthogonal coordinates, †polar coordinates, or †cylindrical coordinates according to the form of boundary, we often obtain satisfactory results. For example, concerning the boundary value problem for Laplace's equation $\Delta u = u_{xx} + u_{yy} = 0$, which is smooth in the circle $r^2 = x^2 + y^2 < 1$ and takes the value of a given continuous function $g(\theta)$ on the circumference $r=1$, we can use polar coordinates to rewrite the equation in the form

$$\Delta u = u_{rr} + \frac{u_r}{r} + \frac{1}{r^2} u_{\theta\theta} = 0$$

and apply the method of separation of variables to obtain particular solutions $r^n \cos n\theta$, $r^n \sin n\theta$. Hence it is reasonable to suspect that by a superposition of these particular solutions we can obtain the desired solution:

$$u(x, y) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n \cos n\theta + b_n \sin n\theta) r^n.$$

In fact, this series is a desired solution if the coefficients a_n, b_n can be chosen so that the series converges uniformly for $0 \leq r \leq 1$ and can be differentiated twice term by term for $0 \leq r < 1$, and if we have

$$g(\theta) = \frac{a_0}{2} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n \cos n\theta + b_n \sin n\theta).$$

By virtue of the uniqueness of the solution of an elliptic equation, this is the unique desired solution. The boundary value problem in the preceding paragraph is well posed.

D. Mixed Problems

For linear homogeneous equations of hyperbolic or parabolic type, **mixed problems** fre-

quently appear, i.e., problems in which both initial and boundary conditions are assigned. These problems are, furthermore, classified into two types.

For the first type, homogeneous boundary conditions are assigned. For example, in vibration problems of a nonhomogeneous string between $0 \leq x \leq l$, we must find the solution of the equation

$$(T(x)u_x)_x = \rho u_{tt}$$

satisfying an initial condition $u = f(x)$, $u_t = g(x)$ for $t = 0$, under homogeneous boundary conditions: (i) $u = 0$ for $x = 0$ and $x = l$ in the case of two fixed ends; (ii) $u_x = 0$ for $x = 0$ and $x = l$ in the case of two free ends; (iii) $-u_x + \sigma_0 u = 0$ for $x = 0$, and $u_x + \sigma_1 u = 0$ for $x = l$ ($\sigma_0 > 0$, $\sigma_1 > 0$), where the two ends are tied elastically to the fixed points; (iv) $T(0)u(0) = T(l)u(l)$, $T(0)u'(0) = T(l)u'(l)$ (periodicity condition); (v) u, u' are finite at $x = 0$ and $x = l$ (regularity condition).

The method of separation of variables is applicable to problems of this type also. For example, suppose that we have two fixed ends. Disregarding the initial condition for a while, we find a particular solution fulfilling only the boundary condition by setting $u(x, t) = y(x)\exp i\omega t$. Here, $y(x)$ must satisfy

$$(T(x)y')' + v^2 \rho(x)y = 0, \quad y(0) = y(l) = 0. \quad (5)$$

Except when the solution is trivial (i.e., $u(x, t) = 0$), $y(x) \neq 0$ must hold. But in the special case $T(x) \equiv 1$, $\rho(x) \equiv 1$, $l = \pi$, the values of v for which functions of this kind exist are only $1, 2, 3, \dots$ (the corresponding $y(x)$ is $\sin vx$).

Also, in more general cases, nontrivial solutions $y(x)$ exist only for some discrete values of v . These v are called *eigenvalues* of (5), and the corresponding solutions $y(x)$ are called *eigenfunctions* for the eigenvalues v . That is, the desired particular solution can be obtained by solving the *eigenvalue problem* (5). Again, when $T(x) \equiv \rho(x) \equiv 1$, $l = \pi$, particular solutions are $\sin nx \exp int$, $\sin nx \exp(-int)$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$). We consider

$$u(x, t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (a_n \cos nt + b_n \sin nt) \sin nx, \quad (6)$$

which is obtained by a superposition of these particular solutions. If we can determine the coefficients a_n, b_n so that this series converges uniformly and is twice differentiable term by term, and

$$f(x) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n \sin nx, \quad g(x) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} nb_n \sin nx,$$

then the series (6) is a solution of the mixed problem in question. If the uniqueness of the solution of the mixed problem is proved, it is not necessary to look for any solution other

than the one obtained by combining the method of separation of variables and the principle of superposition.

Furthermore, the method described in this section is applicable to solving the following nonhomogeneous equation, which characterizes the motion of a string under the influence of an external force $f(x, t)$:

$$u_{tt} - u_{xx} = f(x, t) \quad (7)$$

under the boundary condition for the first type of mixed problem and the initial condition $u = u_t = 0$ for $t = 0$. In this case, we expand the unknown u and the function $f(x, t)$ in terms of the system of eigenfunctions $\{\sin nx\}$, and by substituting

$$u = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n(t) \sin nx, \quad f(x, t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} A_n(t) \sin nx$$

into (7), we reduce the problem to determining $a_n(t)$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$). When the external force varies with a harmonic oscillation over time as in $f(x, t) = -\varphi(x)\exp(-i\omega t)$, a similar method can be applied by setting $u = v(x)\exp(-i\omega t)$.

For mixed problems of the second type, the homogeneous initial condition $u = 0$, $u_t = 0$ for $t = 0$ is assigned, but the boundary condition is nonhomogeneous. For example, when an oscillating string is at rest until $t = 0$, and for $t > 0$ its right end is fixed and its left end moves subject to an assigned rule, the behavior of the string is described by the solution of $u_{tt} - u_{xx} = 0$ under the boundary condition $u(0, t) = f(t)$, $u(l, t) = 0$ ($t > 0$). This is called a **transient problem**. If we now choose an arbitrary function $B(x, t)$ that fulfills all the boundary and initial conditions, and if we set $u - B(x, t) = v(x, t)$ and $B_{xx} - B_{tt} = f(x, t)$, then v satisfies

$$v_{tt} - v_{xx} = f(x, t) \quad \text{for } t > 0$$

with $v = v_t = 0$ for $t = 0$; $v = 0$ for $x = 0$ and $x = l$. Then $v(x, t)$ describes the oscillation of a string that is at rest until $t = 0$ and moves under the effect of an external force represented by $f(x, t)$ for $t > 0$. Problems of this kind often appear in electrical engineering.

Such problems can be reduced to problems of the first type in the manner described in the previous paragraph, but there are some direct methods that are more effective, the first being **Duhamel's method**. Consider the case where $f(t)$ is the unit impulse function:

$$f(t) = \begin{cases} 1, & t > 0, \\ 0, & t < 0, \end{cases}$$

and let $U(x, t)$ be a solution corresponding to this case and vanishing for $t \leq 0$, $x > 0$. Then a solution corresponding to the general case is given by

$$u = \int_0^t \frac{\partial}{\partial t} U(x, t - \tau) f(\tau) d\tau.$$

The second method is based on application of the †Laplace transformation. Denoting the Laplace transform of a solution $u(x, t)$ by

$$\int_0^\infty ue^{-pt} dt = \frac{v(x, p)}{p},$$

we multiply both sides of $u_{tt} - u_{xx} = 0$ by e^{-pt} and integrate the result with respect to t from 0 to ∞ . Then, taking account of the initial condition, we have

$$v_{xx} - p^2 v = 0$$

with the boundary condition

$$v(0, p) = p \int_0^\infty f(t)e^{-pt} dt, \quad v(l, p) = 0.$$

If for $p = \alpha + i\beta$ ($\alpha > \alpha_0$) we can find a solution $v(x, p)$ of this boundary value problem for the ordinary differential equation, then the desired solution is given by

$$u(x, t) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_L \frac{v(x, p)}{p} e^{pt} dp,$$

where L is a path in $\alpha > \alpha_0$ parallel to the imaginary axis. This is called the **Bromwich integral**.

E. Green's Formula and Application of Fundamental Solutions

Given a linear partial differential operator

$$L[u] \equiv \sum_p a_p(x) D^p u, \quad p = (p_1, \dots, p_n),$$

$$D^p = \partial^{p_1} / \partial x_1^{p_1} \dots \partial x_n^{p_n},$$

we call the operator

$$L^*[v] \equiv \sum_p (-1)^{p_1 + \dots + p_n} D^p (\bar{a}_p(x) v)$$

the **adjoint operator** of L , and the operator

$${}^tL[v] \equiv \sum_p (-1)^{p_1 + \dots + p_n} D^p (a_p(x) v)$$

the **transposed operator** of L . Sometimes tL is also called the adjoint operator of L . In the complex Hilbert space, the adjoint operators are more appropriate than the transposed operators. In this case, the operator L^* defined above is usually called the **formal adjoint operator** to distinguish it from the one defined by

$$(L[u], v) = (u, L^*[v]) \quad \text{for all } u \in D(L),$$

$D(L)$ being the domain of the definition of L (\rightarrow 251 Linear Operators). These transposed or adjoint operators are often used to represent (at least locally) the solutions u of $L[u] = f$.

We explain in more detail the specific case where the number of independent variables is

2. For the linear partial differential operator

$$L(u) = A(x, y) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + 2B(x, y) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x \partial y} + C(x, y) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} + D(x, y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + E(x, y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial y} + F(x, y)u$$

and its adjoint partial differential operator

$$M(v) = \frac{\partial^2 (Av)}{\partial x^2} + 2 \frac{\partial^2 (Bv)}{\partial x \partial y} + \frac{\partial^2 (Cv)}{\partial y^2} - \frac{\partial (Dv)}{\partial x} - \frac{\partial (Ev)}{\partial y} + Fv,$$

we have †Green's formula:

$$\begin{aligned} & \iint_D (vL(u) - uM(v)) dx dy \\ &= - \int_{\partial D} \left(P \frac{\partial x}{\partial n} + Q \frac{\partial y}{\partial n} \right) ds, \end{aligned} \quad (8)$$

where

$$P = v \{ Au_x + Bu_y \} - u \{ (Av)_x + (Bv)_y \} + Duv,$$

$$Q = v \{ Bu_x + Cu_y \} - u \{ (Bv)_x + (Cv)_y \} + Euv, \quad (9)$$

and ∂D denotes the boundary curve of the domain D , n the internal normal of ∂D at a point of ∂D , and s the arc length.

We can apply this formula for solving a nonhomogeneous equation $L(u) = f$ as follows. Assume that there exists a solution of $L(u) = f$ satisfying the assigned additional condition, and choose a †fundamental solution of $M(v) = 0$ having an adequate singularity at a point (x_0, y_0) of D and fulfilling a suitable boundary condition. Then, if we substitute these solutions u and v into (8), we obtain an explicit representation of $u(x_0, y_0)$. If we can verify that the function $u(x, y)$ thus obtained is a solution of $L(u) = f$ fulfilling the assigned additional conditions, then we see, under the assumption of uniqueness of solutions, that this and only this function $u(x, y)$ is the desired solution. For example, consider a boundary problem for

$$L(u) = \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2}, \quad \text{for which } M(v) = \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial y^2}.$$

The problem is, for a circle of radius r with center at the origin, to find a function $u(x, y)$ that is continuous in the interior and on the circumference C_r of the circle, and that satisfies $L(u) = f$ in the interior of the circle (f is bounded and continuous in the interior of the circle) and is equal to a given continuous function g on the circumference C_r . In this case, we consider the circumference K_ε of sufficiently small radius ε with center (x_0, y_0) contained in the interior of the first circle, and set

$$v(x, y) = (1/2\pi) \log 1/\rho + h(x, y),$$

$$\rho = ((x - x_0)^2 + (y - y_0)^2)^{1/2}. \quad (10)$$

We apply formula (8) to the domain D_ε enclosed by the circumferences K_ε and C_r . If, in (10), h satisfies $M(v)=0$ in the interior of the circle enclosed by C_r and vanishes on C_r , then we get

$$\iint_{D_\varepsilon} v f dx dy = - \int_{K_\varepsilon} (v u_n - u v_n) ds + \int_{C_r} g v ds.$$

By letting ε tend to zero, the first term on the right-hand side yields

$$-u(x_0, y_0) \int_0^{2\pi} \frac{1}{2\pi} \frac{\partial \log \rho}{\partial \rho} \rho d\theta = -u(x_0, y_0),$$

by the logarithmic singularity of v at the point (x_0, y_0) . Therefore we have an explicit representation of u ,

$$u(x_0, y_0) = \int_{C_r} g v_n ds - \iint_{x^2+y^2 \leq r^2} v f ds dy, \quad (11)$$

and it is easily verified that this is the desired solution.

As stated in the previous paragraph, to apply Green's formula it is necessary to find a solution v of $M(v)=0$ possessing a fundamental singularity as the logarithmic singularity, i.e., a so-called fundamental solution. As fundamental singularities for

$$M(v) = \frac{\partial v}{\partial y} - \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x^2} \quad \text{and} \quad M(v) = \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial y^2} - \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x^2}$$

of parabolic type and of hyperbolic type, we must take those given respectively by

$$u(x, y) = \begin{cases} \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\pi(y-y_0)}} \exp\left(-\frac{(x-x_0)^2}{4(y-y_0)}\right), & y > y_0, \\ 0, & y \leq y_0, \end{cases}$$

and

$$v(x, y) = \begin{cases} 1/2, & |x-x_0| < y-y_0, \\ 0, & |x-x_0| \geq y-y_0 \end{cases}$$

(→ 323 Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type; 325 Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type; 327 Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type).

References

- [1] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics*, Interscience, I, 1953; II, 1962.
- [2] E. Goursat, *Cours d'analyse mathématique*, Gauthier-Villars, III, 1927.
- [3] A. G. Webster and G. Szegő, *Partielle Differentialgleichungen der mathematischen Physik*, Teubner, 1930.
- [4] L. Schwartz, *Mathematics for the physical sciences*, Hermann, revised edition, 1966.

[5] J. L. Lions, *Equations différentielles opérationnelles et problèmes aux limites*, Springer, 1961.

[6] A. Friedman, *Partial differential equations*, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1969.

323 (XIII.24) Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type

A. General Remarks

Suppose that we are given a †linear second-order partial differential equation

$$L[u] \equiv \sum_{i,j=1}^n a_{ij}(x) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} + \sum_{i=1}^n b_i(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} + c(x)u = f(x), \quad (1)$$

where $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$, $a_{ji} = a_{ij}$. If the quadratic form $\sum a_{ij} \xi_i \xi_j$ in ξ is †positive definite at every point x of a domain G , this equation (or the operator L) is said to be **elliptic** (or of **elliptic type**) in G . For $n=2$, $a_{11}(x)a_{22}(x) - (a_{12}(x))^2 > 0$ is the condition of ellipticity. In this case, by a change of independent variables, the equation is transformed locally into the canonical form

$$\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} + b_1(x, y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + b_2(x, y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial y} + c(x, y)u = f(x, y).$$

The operator $\sum_{i=1}^n \partial^2 / \partial x_i^2$, denoted by Δ , is called **Laplace's operator** (or the **Laplacian**). The simplest examples of elliptic equations are $\Delta u = 0$ (**Laplace's differential equation**) and $\Delta u = f(x)$ (**Poisson's differential equation**) (→ Appendix A, Table 15).

B. Fundamental Solutions

Let K be the n -dimensional ball with radius R , center x_0 , boundary Ω (an $(n-1)$ -dimensional sphere), and area S_n , and let r be the distance from x_0 to x . Then for any function $u(x)$ of class C^2 we have

$$u(x_0) = \frac{1}{S_n} \int_{\Omega} u dS - \frac{R^{n-1}}{(n-2)S_n} \times \int_K (r^{2-n} - R^{2-n}) \Delta u dx \quad \text{for } n > 2,$$

$$u(x_0) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{\Omega} u dS - \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_K \log \frac{R}{r} \Delta u dx \quad \text{for } n = 2.$$

Thus, if u is a solution of Poisson's equation $\Delta u = f(x)$, we have a representation of $u(x_0)$ by replacing Δu by f in the integrals just given. Next, concerning the solutions of the equation $\Delta u + cu = 0$ ($c > 0$, constant), the following relation holds:

$$\frac{1}{S_n} \int_{\Omega} u dS = \frac{\Gamma(n/2) J_{n'}(R\sqrt{c})}{(R\sqrt{c}/2)^{n'}} u(x_0),$$

where Γ is the \dagger gamma function, $n' = (n-2)/2$, and J_v is the \dagger Bessel function of order v .

Now, if we put

$$V(x, \xi) = \begin{cases} \left(\sum_{i=1}^n (x_i - \xi_i)^2 \right)^{1-n/2} = r^{2-n}, & n \geq 3, \\ \log \left(\sum_{i=1}^2 (x_i - \xi_i)^2 \right)^{-1/2} = \log \frac{1}{r}, & n = 2, \end{cases}$$

then the function $u(x)$ defined by

$$u(x) = -\frac{1}{\omega_n} \int_G V(x, \xi) f(\xi) d\xi,$$

$$\omega_n = 2\pi^{n/2} \frac{n-2}{\Gamma(n/2)}$$

represents a \dagger particular solution of $\Delta u = f(x)$, where $V(x, \xi)$ as a function of the variables x satisfies $\Delta V(x, \xi) = 0$ except at $x = \xi$.

Consider now the more general case (1). A function $E(x, \xi)$ is called a **fundamental solution** (or **elementary solution**) of (1) or of L if

$$u(x) = \int_G E(x, \xi) f(\xi) d\xi$$

provides a solution of (1) for any $f(x) \in C^\infty$ with compact support. A fundamental solution $E(x, \xi)$ is a solution of the equation $L[E] = 0$ having a singularity at $x = \xi$ of the form $-\omega_n^{-1} \sqrt{a(\xi)} r^{2-n}$ ($n \geq 3$) or $\omega_2^{-1} \sqrt{a(\xi)} \log r$ ($n = 2$), where $a(\xi) = \det(a^{ij}(\xi))$ and $r = (\sum a^{ij}(\xi)(x_i - \xi_i)(x_j - \xi_j))^{1/2}$ and (a^{ij}) is the inverse matrix of (a_{ij}) .

Roughly, there are three different methods of constructing fundamental solutions. The first and most general is to use pseudodifferential operators (\rightarrow 345 Pseudodifferential Operators). The second is that of J. Hadamard [1], which uses the geodesic distance between two points x and ξ with respect to the Riemannian metric $\sum a^{ij}(x) dx_i dx_j$. This is important in applications of elliptic equations to geometry. The third method is due to E. E. Levi [2] and is as follows: Let

$$V(x, \xi) = \begin{cases} r^{2-n}, & n \geq 3, \\ -\log r, & n = 2. \end{cases}$$

To obtain a solution of $L[u] = f(x)$ we set

$$u = \int_G V(x, \xi) \varphi(\xi) \sqrt{a(\xi)} d\xi.$$

Writing $L[V(x, \xi)] = \chi(x, \xi)$, we obtain the following \dagger integral equation of Fredholm type in $\varphi(x)$:

$$\varphi(x) - \frac{1}{\omega_n} \int_G \chi(x, \xi) \varphi(\xi) \sqrt{a(\xi)} d\xi = \frac{1}{\omega_n} f(x).$$

If we denote the \dagger resolvent of this equation by $\bar{\chi}(x, \xi)$ and put

$$\gamma(x, \xi) = V(x, \xi) - \omega_n \int_G V(x, \xi') \bar{\chi}(\xi', \xi) \sqrt{a(\xi')} d\xi',$$

then $E(x, \xi) = -\gamma(x, \xi) \sqrt{a(\xi)}/\omega_n$ is seen to be a fundamental solution of L . Thus Levi's method enables us to construct a fundamental solution locally by successive approximation, because the integral equation in φ as above has a unique solution expressible by Neumann series if the domain G is small enough (\rightarrow 189 Green's Operator).

C. The Dirichlet Problem

Let G be a bounded domain with boundary Γ . We call the problem of finding a solution u of the given elliptic equation in G that is continuous on $G \cup \Gamma$ and takes the assigned continuous boundary values on T the **first boundary value problem** (or **Dirichlet problem**). In particular, the Dirichlet problem for $\Delta u = 0$ has been studied in detail (\rightarrow 120 Dirichlet Problem).

If $c(x) < 0$ and $f(x) \leq 0$ or if $c(x) \leq 0$ and $f(x) < 0$ in (1), a solution u does not attain its local negative minimum in G . This is called the **strong maximum principle** (\rightarrow [3, 4] for **Hopf's maximum principle** and **Giraud's theorem**). The maximum principle is one of the most powerful tools available for the treatment of elliptic equations of the second order with real coefficients. From this it follows that the solution of the Dirichlet problem for (1) is unique if $c(x) < 0$. Furthermore, concerning the uniqueness of the solution, we have the following criterion: If there exists a function $\omega(x) > 0$ of class C^2 in G and continuous on $G \cup \Gamma$ such that $L[\omega(x)] < 0$, then the solution of the Dirichlet problem is unique.

Let G be a \dagger regular domain in the plane. If we denote \dagger Green's function of Δ relative to the Dirichlet problem in G by $K(x, y; \xi, \eta)$, then the solution u of $\Delta u = f(x, y)$ vanishing on Γ is given by

$$u(x, y) = -\frac{1}{2\pi} \iint_G K(x, y; \xi, \eta) f(\xi, \eta) d\xi d\eta,$$

where $f(x, y)$ satisfies a \dagger Hölder condition.

The Dirichlet problem for

$$\begin{aligned} L[u] &\equiv \Delta u + a(x, y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + b(x, y) \frac{\partial u}{\partial y} + c(x, y) u \\ &= f(x, y) \end{aligned}$$

with prescribed boundary values reduces to the problem in the previous paragraph. In fact, let $h(x, y)$ be a function that coincides with the prescribed boundary value on Γ . Then if we put $u = h(x, y) + v$, the problem is reduced to finding a solution v satisfying an equation similar to the one for $L[u]$ (replacing f by $f - L[h]$) and vanishing on Γ . Now suppose that Γ consists of a finite number of Jordan curves whose curvatures vary continuously, a and b are continuously differentiable, and c and f satisfy Hölder conditions. Let $K(x, y; \xi, \eta)$ be Green's function for the Dirichlet problem relative to Δ . To find a solution of $L[u] = f$ vanishing on Γ we set

$$u = -\frac{1}{2\pi} \iint_G K(x, y; \xi, \eta) \rho(\xi, \eta) d\xi d\eta.$$

Then ρ is a solution of the integral equation

$$\rho(x, y) + \iint_G H(x, y, \xi, \eta) \rho(\xi, \eta) d\xi d\eta = f(x, y),$$

where $H(x, y, \xi, \eta) = (-1/2\pi) \{a(x, y)K_x(x, y; \xi, \eta) + b(x, y)K_y(x, y; \xi, \eta) + c(x, y)K(x, y; \xi, \eta)\}$. Therefore we have the following alternatives: Either $L[u] = f$ has a unique solution for any f and any given boundary values on Γ , or $L[u] = 0$ has nontrivial solutions vanishing on Γ (in this case the number of linearly independent solutions is finite).

More general equations of type (1) have been studied by J. Schauder and others. Schauder proved, first, that when the $b_i(x)$ and $c(x)$ are zero, $a_{ij}(x)$ and $f(x)$ satisfy Hölder conditions, and the boundary Γ of G is of class C^2 , then there exists a unique solution $u(x)$ vanishing on Γ . Next, when the $b_i(x)$ and $c(x)$ are continuous and a_{ij} and f satisfy Hölder conditions, he showed the following alternatives: Either $L[u] = f$ admits a unique solution vanishing on Γ for every f , or $L[u] = 0$ has nontrivial solutions vanishing on Γ (in this case, the number of linearly independent solutions is finite).

In (1), suppose that a_{ij} , b_i , and c are Hölder continuous of exponent α ($0 < \alpha < 1$) uniformly on \bar{G} and that Γ is of class $C^{2+\alpha}$. Then we have the following inequality (**Schauder's estimate**) for any $u \in C^{2+\alpha}(\bar{G})$:

$$\|u\|_{2+\alpha, \bar{G}} \leq K_1 (\|L[u]\|_{\alpha, \bar{G}} + \|u\|_{2+\alpha, \Gamma}) + K_2 \|u\|_{0, \bar{G}}, \quad (2)$$

where $\|\cdot\|_{k, S}$ stands for the norm in the function space $C^k(S)$ (\rightarrow 168 Function Spaces). K_1 and K_2 are positive constants depending on L , G , and α but independent of u . More precisely, K_1 depends only on the ellipticity constant λ of L defined as the smallest number ≥ 1 such that

$$\lambda^{-1} |\xi|^2 \leq \sum a_{ij}(x) \xi_i \xi_j \leq \lambda |\xi|^2 \quad (3)$$

for any $(x, \xi) \in \bar{G} \times \mathbf{R}^n$. The inequality (2) is one of the most important **a priori estimates** in the theory of elliptic equations [5, 6] (\rightarrow inequality (9) in Section H).

D. Quasilinear Partial Differential Equations

Consider the second-order partial differential equation in $u(x_1, \dots, x_n)$:

$$F(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, p_1, \dots, p_n, p_{11}, \dots, p_{ij}, \dots, p_{nn}) = 0,$$

where $p_i = \partial u / \partial x_i$, $p_{ij} = \partial^2 u / \partial x_i \partial x_j$. If, for a solution $u(x)$, $\sum_{i,j=1}^n (\partial F / \partial p_{ij}) \xi_i \xi_j$ is a positive definite form, we say that the equation is **elliptic** at $u(x)$. Moreover, if for any values of u, p_i, p_{ij} this quadratic form is positive definite, we say simply that the equation is of **elliptic type**. The equation is called **quasilinear** if F is linear in p_{ij} . For example, the equation of minimal surfaces (\rightarrow 334 Plateau's Problem)

$$(1 + p_1^2)p_{11} - 2p_1 p_2 p_{12} + (1 + p_2^2)p_{22} = 0$$

is a quasilinear elliptic equation. Furthermore,

$$\Delta u = f(x, y, u, u_x, u_y)$$

is also elliptic. E. Picard solved this equation by the **method of successive approximation** [7]. Specifically, let $h(x, y)$ be the harmonic function taking the assigned boundary values on Γ . Starting from $u_0(x, y) = h(x, y)$, we define the functions $u_n(x, y)$ successively as the solutions of

$$\Delta u_n = f(x, y, u_{n-1}, \partial u_{n-1} / \partial x, \partial u_{n-1} / \partial y),$$

coinciding with h on Γ . Let $K(x, y; \xi, \eta)$ be Green's function in G and in the region defined by $|u - h(x, y)| \leq A$, $|p - h_x| \leq B$, $|q - h_y| \leq B$, $(x, y) \in G$, and let the supremum of $|f(x, y, u, p, q)|$ be C . Assume now that

$$\frac{C}{2\pi} \iint_G K d\xi d\eta \leq A, \quad \frac{C}{2\pi} \iint_G |K_x| d\xi d\eta \leq B,$$

$$\frac{C}{2\pi} \iint_G |K_y| d\xi d\eta \leq B,$$

and that f satisfies a Hölder condition in (x, y) . Moreover, let

$$\begin{aligned} &|f(x, y, u', p', q') - f(x, y, u, p, q)| \\ &\leq L|u - u'| + L'(|p' - p| + |q' - q|). \end{aligned}$$

Assume finally that

$$\iint_G (LK + L'(|K_x| + |K_y|)) d\xi d\eta \leq \gamma < 1.$$

Under these assumptions, $\{u_n(x, y)\}$ is uniformly convergent, and the limit $u(x, y)$ coinciding with $h(x, y)$ on Γ satisfies

$$\Delta u = f(x, y, u, \partial u / \partial x, \partial u / \partial y).$$

Furthermore, it is known that the solution is unique within the region mentioned above. This method can be applied when G is small and the values of h_x and h_y are limited.

When f does not contain p and q , the following method is known. Let $\varphi(x, y)$ and $\bar{\varphi}(x, y)$ both be continuous on $G \cup \Gamma$ and of class C^2 in G . Suppose that $f(x, y, u)$ satisfies a Hölder condition in $\varphi(x, y) \leq u \leq \bar{\varphi}(x, y)$, and that

$$\Delta \varphi \geq f(x, y, \varphi(x, y)), \quad \Delta \bar{\varphi} \leq f(x, y, \bar{\varphi}(x, y)).$$

Then, given a continuous function φ on Γ such that $\varphi \leq \bar{\varphi}$, there exists a unique solution u of $\Delta u = f(x, y, u)$ such that

$$\varphi(x, y) \leq u(x, y) \leq \bar{\varphi}(x, y) \text{ in } G,$$

$$u(x, y) = \varphi \text{ on } \Gamma.$$

Finally, consider the equation

$$A \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + 2B \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x \partial y} + C \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} = 0,$$

where A , B , and C are functions of x , y , u , p , q and $AC - B^2 > 0$. Under the following conditions, there exists a solution of the Dirichlet problem: A , B , C are of class C^2 , and their derivatives of order 2 always satisfy Hölder conditions; G is convex; and the boundary value φ along Γ considered as a curve in xyu -space represented by the parameter of arc length is of class $C^{3+\alpha}$ ($\alpha > 0$). Moreover, any plane having 3 common points with this curve has slope less than a fixed number Λ . The proof of this theorem is carried out in the following way: For any function u satisfying

$$|u(x, y)| \leq \max |\varphi|, \quad |u_x| \leq \Lambda, \quad |u_y| \leq \Lambda,$$

replacing u , p , q by $u(x, y)$, $u_x(x, y)$, $u_y(x, y)$, respectively, in A , B , and C , we have the linear equation in v :

$$A[u] \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x^2} + 2B[u] \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x \partial y} + C[u] \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial y^2} = 0.$$

We can obtain the solution v taking the boundary value φ on Γ . Thus we have a mapping $u \rightarrow v$. Applying the fixed-point theorem in function space to this mapping, we have the desired solution $v(x, y) = u(x, y)$.

Concerning the Dirichlet problem for the second-order semilinear elliptic partial differential equation

$$\sum_{i,j=1}^n a_{ij}(x) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} = f\left(x, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_n}\right),$$

a work by M. Nagumo (*Osaka Math. J.*, 6 (1954)) establishes a general existence theorem.

For the general nonlinear equation

$$F(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, p_1, \dots, p_n, p_{11}, \dots, p_{ij}, \dots, p_{nn}) = 0,$$

if $\sum (\partial F / \partial p_{ij}) \xi_i \xi_j > 0$, $F_u \leq 0$, the solution of the

Dirichlet problem for this equation is unique. Even when $F_u \leq 0$ does not hold, the conclusion remains the same if we can reduce the equation to this case by a suitable change of variables.

Quasilinear equations in divergence form

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} a_i \left(x, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_n} \right) = f \left(x, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_n} \right), \quad (4)$$

or more generally, any quasilinear elliptic equation

$$\sum_{i,j=1}^n a_{ij} \left(x, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_n} \right) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} = f \left(x, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_n} \right), \quad (5)$$

and even quasilinear elliptic systems have been treated in detail in several recent works [8, 9]. J. Serrin [10] treated the Dirichlet problem and established the existence and the uniqueness of solutions for some classes of equations of type (5) containing the minimal surface equation. His method is to estimate the maximum norms of u and of its first derivatives, to apply a result of O. A. Ladyzhenskaya and N. N. Ural'tseva [9] and the Schauder estimate (2), and finally to use the Leray-Schauder fixed-point theorem [11].

E. Relation to the Calculus of Variations

Consider the bilinear form

$$J = \int_G \left(\sum a_{ij}(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_j} + 2 \sum b_i(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} u + c(x) u^2 + 2f(x) u \right) dx,$$

where we assume $\sum a_{ij}(x) \xi_i \xi_j > 0$. Under the boundary conditions imposed on u , if there exists a function u that makes J minimum, then assuming some differentiability condition on $a_{ij}(x)$, $b_i(x)$, $c(x)$, we have the Euler-Lagrange equation

$$\sum_j \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j} \left(\sum_i a_{ij}(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} \right) - \left(c(x) - \sum_i \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i} b_i(x) \right) u - f(x) = 0,$$

which is a linear second-order self-adjoint elliptic equation.

B. Riemann treated the simplest case, where $a_{ij}(x) = \delta_i^j$, $b_i(x) = c(x) = 0$, i.e., the case $\Delta u = 0$. He proved, assuming the existence of the minimum of J , the existence of the solution of $\Delta u = 0$ with assigned boundary values. This result,

called **Dirichlet's principle**, was used by D. Hilbert, R. Courant, H. Weyl, O. Nikodym, and others to show the existence of solutions for linear self-adjoint elliptic equations.

If $F(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, p_1, \dots, p_n)$ satisfies $\sum(\partial^2 F / \partial p_i \partial p_j) \xi_i \xi_j > 0$ (and F has some regularity), then the function that minimizes the integral

$$J = \int_G F \left(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_n} \right) dx_1, \dots, dx_n$$

with the given boundary condition satisfies the Euler-Lagrange equation (of type (4))

$$\sum_{i,j=1}^n F_{p_i p_j} \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} + \sum_{i=1}^n F_{u p_i} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} + \sum_{i=1}^n F_{x_i p_i} - F_u = 0$$

($p_i = \partial u / \partial x_i$) and the boundary condition as well. This is also an elliptic partial differential equation in u . The case where F is a function of p alone (in particular, the case of †minimal surfaces) has been studied by A. Haar, T. Radó, J. Serrin, and others, particularly for $F = (1 + p_1^2 + \dots + p_n^2)^{1/2}$ in the case of the minimal surface equation.

F. The Second and Third Boundary Value Problems

Let G be a domain in \mathbf{R}^n with a smooth boundary consisting of a finite number of hypersurfaces. Also, let $B[u]$ be the boundary operator defined by

$$B[u] = a \frac{\partial u}{\partial v} + \beta u, \quad (6)$$

where $a = (\sum_{i=1}^n (\sum_{j=1}^n a_{ij} \cos(v_0 x_j))^2)^{1/2}$, v_0 is the outer normal of unit length at the point $x \in S$, and v is the **conormal** defined by

$$\cos(vx_i) = \sum_{j=1}^n a_{ij} \cos(v_0 x_j) / a, \quad i = 1, \dots, n.$$

The problem of finding the solution $u(x)$ of the equation $L[u] = f$ continuous on the closed domain \bar{G} and satisfying $B[u] = \varphi$ on the boundary S of G is called the **second boundary value problem** (or **Neumann problem**) when $\beta \equiv 0$, and the **third boundary value problem** (or **Robin problem**) when $\beta \neq 0$. In general, in boundary value problems, the condition that the solutions must satisfy at the boundary is called the **boundary condition**. We assume that the boundary S of G is expressed locally by a function with †Hölder continuous first derivatives (G is then called a **domain of class $C^{1,\lambda}$**). Assume that G is such a domain, $c \leq 0$, $\beta \geq 0$, and at least one of c and β is not identically 0. Then the second and third boundary value problems admit one and only one solution. When $c \equiv 0$ and $\beta \equiv 0$, the solutions of the

second boundary value problem are determined uniquely up to additive constants. Furthermore, let M be the †adjoint operator of L , and let

$$B'[v] = a \frac{\partial v}{\partial v} + (\beta - b)v,$$

where

$$b = \sum_{i=1}^n \cos(v_0 x_i) \left[b_i - \sum_{j=1}^n \frac{\partial a_{ij}}{\partial x_j} \right].$$

Then if the boundary S of G is of class C^1 and f, φ are continuous, in order that there exist at least one solution u of the second or third boundary value problem relative to $L[u] = f$, it is necessary and sufficient that

$$\int_G f v dx - \int_S \varphi v dS = 0,$$

where v is any solution of $M[v] = 0$ with the boundary condition $B'[v] = 0$. Here the necessity is easily derived from Green's formula. G. Giraud used the notion of fundamental solution to reduce the second and third boundary value problems relative to $L[u] = f$ to a problem of integral equations, under the assumptions that G is a domain of class C^1 , the coefficients of L and f satisfy Hölder conditions, and φ and β are continuous [3; also 12].

G. Method of Orthogonal Projection

The theory of †Hilbert spaces is applicable to the boundary value problems in Section F. In general, let $H^m(G)$ be the space of functions in $L_2(G)$ whose partial derivatives in the sense of †distributions up to order m belong to $L_2(G)$. For elements f and g in $H^m(G)$, we define the following inner product:

$$(f, g)_m = \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} \int_G D^\alpha f(x) \overline{D^\alpha g(x)} dx,$$

where

$$D^\alpha = \frac{\partial^{|\alpha|}}{\partial x_1^{\alpha_1} \dots \partial x_n^{\alpha_n}}, \quad |\alpha| = \alpha_1 + \dots + \alpha_n$$

(→ 168 Function Spaces). With respect to this inner product, $H^m(G)$ is a Hilbert space. When u satisfies $L[u] = f$ ($f \in L_2(G)$) and $\varphi(x)$ is an arbitrary element of $H^1(G)$, Green's formula yields

$$- \sum_{i,j=1}^n \left(a_{ij} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i}, \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x_j} \right) + \sum_{i=1}^n \left(b'_i(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i}, \varphi \right) + (c(x)u, \varphi) + \int_S a \frac{\partial u}{\partial v} \cdot \bar{\varphi} dS = (f, \varphi),$$

where $b'_i(x) = b_i(x) = -\sum_j (\partial a_{ij} / \partial x_j)$. Taking account of the boundary condition on u :

$a \partial u / \partial v + \beta u = 0$, we get

$$\sum_{i,j} \left(a_{ij} \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i}, \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x_j} \right) - \sum_i \left(b_i \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i}, \varphi \right) - (cu, \varphi) + \int_S \beta u \bar{\varphi} dS = -(f, \varphi).$$

Thus the problem is reduced to finding $u(x) \in H^1(G)$ satisfying this equation for all $\varphi \in H^1(G)$. This equation can be regarded as an equation in $H^1(G)$. If necessary, by replacing $c(x)$ by $c(x) - t$ for a large t , we can show that for any $f(x) \in L_2(G)$, there exists a unique solution $u(x) \in H^1(G)$ [12, 13]. Now, for a solution of this functional equation, if we take $\varphi(x) \in \mathcal{D}(G)$, we have $(u, L^*[\varphi]) = (f, \varphi)$, where L^* is the \dagger adjoint operator of L . This means that $u(x)$ is a solution of $L[u] = f$ in the sense of distributions, and we call such a $u(x)$ a **weak solution**. Such a treatment may be called the **method of orthogonal projection**, following Weyl. In this case, it can be shown that if we assume smoothness of the coefficients, the boundary S , and β , then the solution $u(x) \in H^1(G)$ belongs to $H^{s+2}(G)$ when $f(x) \in H^s(G)$ ($s=0, 1, \dots$). Thus, if we apply Green's formula, we can see that u satisfies the boundary condition $a \partial u / \partial v + \beta u = 0$. In particular, when $s > n/2$, we see that $u(x) \in C^2(\bar{G})$ by \dagger Sobolev's theorem [12]. In other words, $u(x)$ is a **genuine solution**.

Next, we introduce the complex parameter λ and consider the boundary value problem $(L + \lambda I)[u] = f$, $f \in L_2(G)$, $a \partial u / \partial v + \beta u = 0$. If t is large, $(L - tI)$ is a one-to-one mapping from the domain $\mathcal{D}(L) = \{u \in H^2(G) | a \partial u / \partial v + \beta u = 0\}$ onto $L_2(G)$. Thus, denoting its inverse, which acts on the equation from the left, by G_t , we have

$$(I + (\lambda + t)G_t)[u] = G_t f.$$

Conversely, since the solution $u(x)$ contained in $L_2(G)$ (hence also contained in $\mathcal{D}(L)$) satisfies the equation and the boundary condition, the problem is reduced to the displayed equation in $L_2(G)$ considered above. Now, since G is bounded and G_t is a continuous mapping from $L_2(G)$ into $H^2(G)$, **Rellich's theorem** yields that G_t is a \dagger compact operator when it is regarded as an operator in $L_2(G)$. So we can apply the \dagger Riesz-Schauder theorem (\rightarrow 189 Green's Operator).

H. Elliptic Equations of Higher Order

The differential operator of order m :

$$L = \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} a_\alpha(x) D^\alpha, \quad D^\alpha = \frac{\partial^{|\alpha|}}{\partial x_1^{\alpha_1} \dots \partial x_n^{\alpha_n}}, \\ |\alpha| = \alpha_1 + \dots + \alpha_n,$$

is called an **elliptic operator** if $\sum_{|\alpha|=m} a_\alpha(x) \xi^\alpha \neq 0$ ($\xi \neq 0$). In particular, if

$$\operatorname{Re} \sum_{|\alpha|=m} a_\alpha(x) \xi^\alpha \geq c |\xi|^m, \quad c > 0,$$

L is called a **strongly elliptic operator**. In this case, m is even. L. Gårding studied the Dirichlet problem for strongly elliptic operators [14]. If we put $m=2b$, the boundary value condition is stated as $\partial^j u / \partial v^j = f_j(x)$ ($j=0, 1, \dots, b-1$), where v is the normal of unit length at the boundary. Using the notion of function space, this boundary condition means that the solutions belong to the closure $\hat{H}^b(G)$ of $\mathcal{D}(G)$ in $H^b(G)$ (\rightarrow 168 Function Spaces). In this treatment, **Gårding's inequality**

$$(-1)^b \operatorname{Re}(L[u], u) \geq \delta \|u\|_b^2 - c \|u\|^2, \\ u \in \hat{H}^b(G), \quad (7)$$

where δ and c are positive constants, plays an important role.

In general, for an elliptic operator L defined in an open set G , if $u(x)$ satisfies $L[u] = f(x)$ and $f(x)$ belongs to H^s on any compact set in G , then $u(x)$ belongs to H^{m+s} on every compact set in G (**Friedrich's theorem** [15]).

General boundary value problems for elliptic equations of higher order have been considered by S. Agmon, A. Douglis, and L. Nirenberg [16], M. Schechter [17], and others. These problems are formulated as follows:

$$L[u] = f(x), \quad B_j(x, D)u(x) = \varphi_j(x), \\ x \in S, \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, b (= m/2), \quad (8)$$

where the $B_j(x, D)$ are differential operators at the boundary and f and $\{\varphi_j\}$ are given functions. Under certain algebraic conditions (**Shapiro-Lopatinskii conditions**) on $(L, \{B_j\})$, the problems are treated also in $H^m(G)$; hence the L^2 **a priori estimates** play a fundamental role: If $u \in H^m(G)$,

$$\|u\|_m \leq K(\|Lu\| + \sum_{j=1}^b \|B_j u\|_{m-m_j-(1/2), S} + \|u\|), \quad (9)$$

where K is a constant determined by (L, B_j, G) , $\|\cdot\|_{k,S}$ is the norm in $H^k(S)$, and m_j are the orders of B_j (compare (9) with (2)). Under these estimates the boundary value problem is said to be **coercive**. In applications, the theory of interpolation of function spaces are also used [18] (\rightarrow 168 Function Spaces). Variational general boundary value problems have been treated by D. Fujiwara and N. Shimakura (*J. Math. Pures Appl.*, 49 (1970)) and others. For systems of such equations, there are works by F. E. Browder (*Ann. math. studies* 33, Princeton Univ. Press, 1954, 15–51) and others.

I. Analyticity of Solutions

In a linear elliptic equation $Lu = f$, suppose that all the coefficients and f are of class C^∞ (resp. real analytic) in an open set G and that u is a distribution solution in G . Then u is also of class C^∞ (resp. real analytic) in G [19]. Hence the linear elliptic operators are **hypoe elliptic** (resp. **analytically hypoe elliptic**) (\rightarrow 112 Differential Operators). In particular, the harmonic functions (i.e., solutions of $\Delta u = 0$) are (real) analytic in the domain of existence, whatever the boundary values may be.

Hilbert conjectured that when $F(x, y, u, p, q, r, s, t)$ ($p = p_1, q = p_2, r = p_{11}, s = p_{12}, t = p_{22}$) is analytic in the arguments, then any solution u of the elliptic equation $F = 0$ is analytic on the domain of existence (1900, Hilbert's 19th problem; \rightarrow 196 Hilbert). This conjecture was proved by S. Bernshtein, Radó, and others, and then H. Lewy proposed a method of extending this equation to a complex domain so that it can be regarded as a hyperbolic equation (*Math. Ann.*, 101 (1929)). This result was further extended by I. G. Petrovskii to a general system of nonlinear differential equations of elliptic type (*Mat. Sb.*, 5 (47), (1939)).

J. The Unique Continuation Theorem

Since all the solutions of Laplace's equation $\Delta u = 0$ are analytic, it follows that if $u(x)$ vanishes on an open set in a domain, then $u(x)$ vanishes identically in this domain. This **unique continuation theorem** can be extended to linear elliptic partial differential equations with analytic coefficients in view of the analyticity of solutions. This fact is also proved by applying Holmgren's uniqueness theorem (\rightarrow 321 Partial Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems)). The unique continuation theorem, first established by T. Carleman for second-order elliptic partial differential equations $L[u] = 0$ with C^1 -coefficients in the case of two independent variables, was extended to second-order linear elliptic equations with C^2 -coefficients in the case of any number of independent variables by C. Müller, E. Heinz, and finally by N. Aronszajn [20]. This research was extended by A. P. Calderón [21] and others in the direction of establishing the uniqueness of the Cauchy problem. However, it is to be remarked that even if we assume that the coefficients are of class C^∞ , we cannot affirm the unique continuation property for general elliptic equations. A counterexample was given by A. Plis (*Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 14 (1961)). See also the work of K. Watanabe (*Tohoku Math J.*, 23 (1971)).

K. Elliptic Pseudodifferential Operators and the Index

A pseudodifferential operator $P(x, D)$ with symbol $p(x, \xi) \in S_{0,1}^m$ (\rightarrow 345 Pseudodifferential Operators) is said to be **elliptic**, provided there exists a positive constant c such that $|p(x, \xi)| \geq c(1 + |\xi|)^m$ for all $x \in \mathbb{R}^n$ and $|\xi| \geq c^{-1}$. The notion of ellipticity can be extended to operators on a manifold. The theory of elliptic pseudodifferential operators has been widely applied to the study of elliptic differential equations, and is particularly useful in the calculation of the index of elliptic operators. B. R. Vainberg and V. V. Grushin [22] calculated the index i of the coercive boundary value problem for an elliptic operator by showing that i is equal to the index of some elliptic pseudodifferential operator on the boundary.

Example [23]: Given a real vector field (v_1, v_2) on the unit circle $x_1^2 + x_2^2 = 1$, suppose the vector $(v_1(x), v_2(x))$ rotates l times around the origin as the point $x = (x_1, x_2)$ moves once around the unit circle in the positive direction. Then the index of the boundary value problem

$$\left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_2^2} \right) u(x) = f(x), \quad x_1^2 + x_2^2 < 1,$$

$$v_1(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_1} + v_2(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_2} = g(x), \quad x_1^2 + x_2^2 = 1,$$

is equal to $2 - 2l$.

M. F. Atiyah and I. M. Singer determined the index of a general elliptic operator on a manifold in terms of certain topological invariants of the manifold (\rightarrow 237 K-Theory H). The index of noncoercive boundary value problems has also been studied by Vainberg and Grushin, R. Seeley (*Topics in pseudodifferential operators*, C.I.M.E. 1968, 335–375), and others.

L. The Giorgi-Nash-Moser Result

Let us state the following result (J. Moser [24]): Let L be of the form

$$Lu = \sum_{i,j=1}^n \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j} \left\{ a_{ij}(x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} \right\},$$

where $a_{ij} = a_{ji}$ are real-valued, of class $L^\infty(G)$, and such that the ellipticity condition (3) holds at almost everywhere in G with some $\lambda \geq 1$. Also, let G' be any subdomain of G whose distance from ∂G is not smaller than $\delta > 0$. Then, for any weak solution $u \in H^1(G)$ of the equation $Lu = 0$ and for any two points x and y in G' , we have the inequality

$$|u(x) - u(y)| \leq A |x - y|^\alpha \|u\|_{L^2(G)},$$

where A and α ($A > 0, 0 < \alpha \leq 1$) depend only on (n, λ, δ) and are independent of the particular choice of (L, G, G', u) . Moser proved that the above inequality is a corollary to a Harnack-type inequality (\rightarrow 327 Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type G).

M. Asymptotic Distribution of Eigenvalues

Let L be an elliptic operator on \bar{G} of order m with smooth coefficients realized as a self-adjoint operator in $L^2(G)$ under a nice boundary condition, where G is a bounded domain in \mathbf{R}^n with smooth boundary. Let $N(T)$ ($T > 0$) be the number of eigenvalues of L smaller than T . Then, it holds that

$N(T) = CT^{n/m} + \text{an error term, as } T \rightarrow +\infty,$

$$C = (2\pi)^{-n} \int_G dx \int_{S^{n-1}} a(x, \xi)^{-n/m} dS_\xi, \quad (10)$$

where $a(x, \xi)$ is the principal symbol of L and S^{n-1} is the unit sphere on \mathbf{R}^n . C is independent of the boundary condition and, if L is of constant coefficients, of the shape of G .

Formula (10) was at first established by H. Weyl [25] for the case of $L = \text{Laplacian}$, and hence it is often called **Weyl's formula**. Weyl's method is based on the minimax principle [26]. T. Carleman (*Ber. Math.-Phys. Klasse der Sächs. Akad. Wiss. Leipzig*, 88 (1936)) studied the behavior of the trace of the Green's function of $zI - L$ as $|z| \rightarrow \infty$ in the complex plane (\rightarrow [27]). S. Minakshisundaram (*Canad. J. Math.*, 1 (1947)) discussed this formula in connection with the heat equation; see also S. Mizohata and R. Arima (*J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 4 (1964)). L. Hörmander (*Acta Math.*, 121 (1968)) treated the case of compact manifolds without boundary and obtained the best possible error estimate. H. P. McKean and I. M. Singer (*J. Differential Geometry*, 1 (1967)) treated the case of manifolds and discussed the geometric meaning of this formula. In general, $N(T)$ is no more than $O(T^{n/m})$ if L is of degenerate elliptic type (C. Nordin, *Ark. Mat.*, 10 (1972)).

N. Equations of Degenerate Elliptic Type

An operator L of the form (1) is said to be degenerate at $x^0 \in \bar{G}$ in the direction $\xi \in \mathbf{R}^n$ if ξ is a null vector of the matrix $(a_{ij}(x^0))$. L is said to be of degenerate elliptic type if $(a_{ij}(x))$ is nonnegative definite at any $x \in \bar{G}$ and if L is degenerate at some point of \bar{G} in some direction.

Suppose that the coefficients of L and the boundary Γ of G are smooth enough. At $x \in \Gamma$, denote by $v(x) = (v_1(x), \dots, v_n(x))$ the unit outer

normal vector to G . Let Σ_3 be the set of $x \in \Gamma$ at which L is not degenerate in the normal direction. Also, let Σ_1 , Σ_2 , and Σ_0 be the sets of $x \in \Gamma \setminus \Sigma_3$ at which $b(x) > 0$, < 0 , and $= 0$, respectively, where $b(x)$ is defined by

$$b(x) = - \sum_{i=1}^n v_i(x) \left\{ b_i(x) - \sum_{j=1}^n \frac{\partial a_{ij}(x)}{\partial x_j} \right\}. \quad (11)$$

Then the Dirichlet problem for equation (1) is to find a function $u(x)$ defined on $G \cup \Sigma_2 \cup \Sigma_3$ satisfying

$$L[u] = f \text{ in } G, \quad (1)$$

$$u = g \text{ on } \Sigma_2 \cup \Sigma_3, \quad (12)$$

where f and g are given functions.

Let $1 < p < \infty$. We set $q = p/(p-1)$. We also put

$$c^*(x) = c(x) - \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial b_i(x)}{\partial x_i} + \sum_{i,j=1}^n \frac{\partial^2 a_{ij}(x)}{\partial x_i \partial x_j}. \quad (13)$$

We have the following existence theorem [28]:

If (i) either $c < 0$ on \bar{G} or $c^* < 0$ on \bar{G} and if (ii) $pc + qc^* < 0$ on \bar{G} , the Dirichlet problem (1) and (12) (with $g = 0$) has a weak solution $u \in L^p(G)$ for any $f \in L^p(G)$. The regularity of solutions is also discussed in [28]. The value of $b(x)$ is closely related to the regularity near the point $x \in \Gamma$ if L is degenerate at x in the normal direction (\rightarrow also M. S. Baouendi and C. Goulaouic, *Arch. Rational Mech. Anal.*, 34 (1969)).

Degenerate elliptic equations of type (1) have also been investigated from the probabilistic viewpoint (\rightarrow 115 Diffusion Processes). The general boundary value problems for degenerate elliptic equations of higher order have been treated by M. I. Vishik and V. V. Grushin [29], N. Shimakura (*J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 9 (1969)), P. Bolley and J. Camus (*Ann. Scuola Norm. Sup. Pisa*, IV-1 (1974)), and others.

References

- [1] J. Hadamard, Lectures on Cauchy's problem in linear partial differential equations, Yale Univ. Press and Oxford Univ. Press, 1923.
- [2] E. E. Levi, Sulle equazioni lineari totalmente ellittiche alle derivate parziali, *Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo*, 24 (1907), 275–317.
- [3] C. Miranda, Partial differential equations of elliptic type, Springer, 1970.
- [4] M. H. Protter and H. F. Weinberger, Maximum principles in differential equations, Prentice-Hall, 1967.
- [5] J. Schauder, Über lineare elliptische Differentialgleichungen zweiter Ordnung, *Math. Z.*, 38 (1934), 257–282.
- [6] J. Schauder, Numerische Abschätzungen in

elliptischen linearen Differentialgleichungen, *Studia Math.*, 5 (1934), 34–42.

[7] E. Picard, *Leçon sur quelques problèmes aux limites de la théorie des équations différentielles*, Gauthier-Villars, 1930.

[8] C. B. Morrey, *Multiple integrals in the calculus of variations*, Springer, 1966.

[9] O. A. Ladyzhenskaya and N. N. Ural'tseva, *Linear and quasilinear elliptic equations*, Academic Press, 1968. (Original in Russian, 1964.)

[10] J. Serrin, The problem of Dirichlet for quasilinear elliptic equations, *Philos. Trans. Roy. Soc. London*, (A) 264 (1969), 413–493.

[11] J. Leray and J. Schauder, *Topologie et équations fonctionnelles*, *Ann. Ecole Norm. Sup.*, 51 (1934), 45–78.

[12] S. Mizohata, *The theory of partial differential equations*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1973. (Original in Japanese, 1965.)

[13] L. Nirenberg, Remarks on strongly elliptic partial differential equations, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 8 (1955), 649–675.

[14] L. Gårding, Dirichlet's problem for linear elliptic partial differential equations, *Math. Scand.*, 1 (1953), 55–72.

[15] K. O. Friedrichs, On the differentiability of solutions of linear elliptic equations, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 6 (1953), 299–325.

[16] S. Agmon, A. Douglis, and L. Nirenberg, Estimates near the boundary for solutions of elliptic partial differential equations satisfying general boundary conditions I, II, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 12 (1959), 623–727; 17 (1964), 35–92.

[17] M. Schechter, General boundary value problems for elliptic equations, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 12 (1959), 457–486.

[18] J. L. Lions and E. Magenes, *Problèmes aux limites non homogènes et applications I–III*, Dunod, 1968.

[19] F. John, Plane waves and spherical means applied to partial differential equations, *Interscience*, 1955.

[20] N. Aronszajn, A unique continuation theorem for solutions of elliptic equations or inequalities of second order, *J. Math. Pure Appl.*, 36 (1957), 235–249.

[21] A. P. Calderón, Uniqueness in the Cauchy problem for partial differential equations, *Amer. J. Math.*, 80 (1958), 16–36.

[22] B. R. Vainberg and V. V. Grushin, Uniformly nonelliptic problems I, II, *Math. USSR-Sb.*, 1 (1967), 543–568; 2 (1967), 111–133. (Original in Russian, 1967.)

[23] I. N. Vekua, *System von Differentialgleichungen erster Ordnung vom elliptischen Typus und Randwertaufgaben*, Berlin, 1956.

[24] J. Moser, On Harnack's theorem for elliptic differential equations, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 14 (1961), 577–591.

[25] H. Weyl, Das asymptotische Verteilungsgesetze der Eigenwerte linearer partieller Differentialgleichungen, *Math. Ann.*, 71 (1912), 441–479.

[26] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics I, II*, Interscience, 1962.

[27] S. Agmon, *Lectures on elliptic boundary value problems*, Van Nostrand, 1965.

[28] O. A. Oleinik and E. V. Radkevich, *Second-order equations with non-negative characteristic form*, Plenum, 1973. (Original in Russian, 1971.)

[29] M. I. Vishik and V. V. Grushin, Boundary value problems for elliptic equations degenerate on the boundary of a domain, *Math. USSR-Sb.*, 9 (1969), 423–454. (Original in Russian, 1969.)

324 (XIII.22) Partial Differential Equations of First Order

A. Quasilinear Partial Differential Equations and Their Characteristic Curves

Suppose that we are given a quasilinear partial differential equation

$$\sum_{i=1}^n P_i(x, u) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} = Q(x, u), \quad x = (x_1, \dots, x_n). \quad (1)$$

A curve defined by a solution $x_i = x_i(t)$, $u = u(t)$ of the system of ordinary differential equations

$$\frac{dx_i}{dt} = P_i(x, u), \quad i = 1, \dots, n; \quad \frac{du}{dt} = Q(x, u)$$

is called a **characteristic curve** of (1) (\rightarrow 320 Partial Differential Equations; 322 Partial Differential Equations (Methods of Integration)). A necessary and sufficient condition for $u = u(x)$ to be a solution of (1) is that the characteristic curve passing through any point on the hypersurface $u = u(x)$ (in the $(n+1)$ -dimensional xu -space) always be contained in this hypersurface. For example, the characteristic curve of $\sum_{i=1}^n x_i \partial u / \partial x_i = ku$ is $x_i = x_i^0 e^t$, $u = u^0 e^{kt}$ (a solution of $x'_i = x_i$, $u' = ku$). Therefore the solution $u = u(x)$ is a function such that $u(\lambda x_1, \dots, \lambda x_n) = \lambda^k u(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ ($\lambda = e^t > 0$), i.e., a homogeneous function of degree k .

B. Nonlinear Partial Differential Equations and Their Characteristic Strips

We denote the value of $\partial u / \partial x_i$ by p_i and define the **surface element** (or **hypersurface element**)

by the $(2n+1)$ -dimensional vector $(x, u, p) = (x_1, \dots, x_n, u, p_1, \dots, p_n)$. Consider the partial differential equation

$$F(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, p_1, \dots, p_n) = 0, \quad p_i = \partial u / \partial x_i. \quad (2)$$

A set $(x(t), u(t), p(t))$ of surface elements depending on a parameter t and satisfying the system of ordinary differential equations

$$\frac{dx_i}{dt} = F_{p_i}, \quad \frac{du}{dt} = \sum_{i=1}^n p_i F_{p_i}, \quad \frac{dp_i}{dt} = -(F_{x_i} + p_i F_u)$$

is called a **characteristic strip** of equation (2), and the curve $x = x(t)$, $u = u(t)$ is called a **characteristic curve** of (2). For quasilinear equations, this definition of characteristic curve coincides with the one mentioned in Section A. Furthermore, an r -dimensional differentiable manifold consisting of surface elements satisfying the relation

$$du - \sum_{i=1}^n p_i dx_i = 0$$

is called an r -dimensional **union of surface elements**. A solution of the partial differential equation (2) is, in general, formed by the set of all characteristic strips possessing, as initial values, surface elements belonging to an $(n-1)$ -dimensional union of surface elements satisfying $F(x, u, p) = 0$.

An example of a nonlinear partial differential equation of first order is $pq - z = 0$ (where $x_1 = x$, $x_2 = y$, $u = z$, $p_1 = p$, $p_2 = q$). The equations of the characteristic strip are $x' = q$, $y' = p$, $z' = 2pq$, $p' = p$, $q' = q$, and therefore the characteristic strip is given by $y = y_0 + (p_0/q_0)x$, $z = z_0 + 2p_0x + (p_0^2/q_0)x^2$, $p = p_0 + (p_0/q_0)x$, $q = q_0 + x$ (if we take x as an independent variable and impose an initial condition $y = y_0$, $z = z_0$, $p = p_0$, $q = q_0$ at $x = 0$). Putting $z_0 = W(y_0)$ (an arbitrary function) for $x = 0$, we have, furthermore, $y = y_0 + W(y_0)/(W'(y_0))^2$, $z = W(y_0) + 2W(y_0)/W'(y_0) + W(y_0)x^2/(W'(y_0))^2$. The elimination of y_0 from these expressions yields a general solution $z = z(x, y)$. In this case, a complete solution is $4az = (x + ay + b)^2$ (where a, b are constants), and a singular solution is $z = 0$.

C. Complete Systems of Linear Partial Differential Equations

For functions $P_i(x)$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$, $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$) of class C^∞ , define a differential operator X by

$$X = \sum_{v=1}^n P_v(x) \frac{\partial}{\partial x_v}.$$

We call k differential operators $X_i = \sum_{v=1}^n P_v^i(x) \partial / \partial x_v$ ($i = 1, \dots, k$) mutually inde-

pendent when the rank of the matrix (P_v^i) is equal to k . If a system of k independent linear partial differential equations involving one unknown function $f(x)$,

$$X_1 f = 0, \dots, X_k f = 0, \quad (3)$$

has the maximum number $n - k$ of independent integrals, then the system (3) is called a **complete system**. A necessary and sufficient condition for the system (3) to be a complete system is that there exist k^3 functions $\lambda_{ij}^v(x)$ of class C^∞ such that

$$[X_j, X_i] \equiv X_j X_i - X_i X_j = \sum_{v=1}^n \lambda_{ij}^v(x) X_v,$$

that is,

$$\sum_{h=1}^n \left(P_h^j \frac{\partial P_h^i}{\partial x_h} - P_h^i \frac{\partial P_h^j}{\partial x_h} \right) = \sum_{v=1}^n \lambda_{ij}^v P_v^v.$$

Here, $[X_j, X_i]$ is a differential operator of first order, called the **commutator** of the differential operators X_i, X_j or the **Poisson bracket**.

D. Involutionary Systems

For two functions $F(x, u, p)$, $G(x, u, p)$ of x, u, p of class C^∞ , we define the **Lagrange bracket** $[F, G]$ by

$$[F, G] = \sum_{v=1}^n \left(\frac{\partial F}{\partial p_v} \left(\frac{\partial G}{\partial x_v} + p_v \frac{\partial G}{\partial u} \right) - \frac{\partial G}{\partial p_v} \left(\frac{\partial F}{\partial x_v} + p_v \frac{\partial F}{\partial u} \right) \right).$$

If F, G do not contain u and are homogeneous linear forms with respect to p , then F and G are differential operators $F = X_1 u$ and $G = X_2 u$ with respect to u (for $p_v = \partial u / \partial x_v$), and we see that $[F, G] = [X_1, X_2]_u$. This bracket has the following properties:

$$[F, G] = -[G, F],$$

$$[F, \varphi(G_1, \dots, G_k)] = \sum_{i=1}^k \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial G_i} [F, G_i],$$

$$[[F, G], H] + [[G, H], F] + [[H, F], G]$$

$$= \frac{\partial F}{\partial u} [G, H] + \frac{\partial G}{\partial u} [H, F] + \frac{\partial H}{\partial u} [F, G].$$

When F, G are functions of x and p only, we usually use the notation (F, G) and call it also the **Poisson bracket**. In this case, the right-hand side of the third relation vanishes.

Consider k partial differential equations involving one unknown function $u(x_1, \dots, x_n)$,

$$F_i(x, u, p) = 0, \quad i = 1, \dots, k; \quad p_v = \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_v}. \quad (4)$$

If a common solution $u(x)$ of these equations exists, it is also a solution of $[F_i, F_j] = 0$ ($i, j =$

$1, \dots, k$). Therefore, from the equations thus obtained, we take independent equations and add them to the original system. If we then have more than $n+1$ equations, the original system has no solution. Otherwise, we obtain a system $F_j=0$ ($j=1, \dots, r$) for which the F_j are independent (i.e., the rank of $(\partial F_i/\partial p_v)$ is equal to r), and all $[F_i, F_j]=0$ can be derived from $F_j=0$. A system (4) such that $[F_i, F_j]\equiv 0$ for all i, j is called an **involution** (or **involutory**) **system**. We always treat a system by extending it to an involutory system. When $k=1$, we regard the equation itself as an involutory system.

When the equations (4) are mutually independent, a necessary and sufficient condition for them to have in common a solution with $n-k$ degrees of freedom (a solution that coincides with an arbitrary function on an adequate manifold of dimension $n-k$) is that the system (4) be a system of equations involving unknowns p and equivalent to an involutory system.

An involutory system (4) can be extended to an involutory system consisting of n independent equations by adding $n-k$ suitable equations

$$F_{k+1}(x, u, p) = a_{k+1}, \dots, F_n(x, u, p) = a_n. \quad (4')$$

That is, we can find successively $f=F_l$ ($l=k+1, \dots, n$) such that F_l satisfies the system of equations

$$[F_l, f]=0, \quad i=1, \dots, l-1,$$

which is a complete system of linear partial differential equations for f , and the F_i ($i=1, \dots, n$) are mutually independent. Then, if we find that p_v as functions of (x, u, a) ($a=(a_{k+1}, \dots, a_n)$) from (4) and (4'), the system of n total differential equations

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x_v} = \rho_v(x, u, a), \quad v=1, \dots, n,$$

is \dagger completely integrable, and we can find u as a solution containing essentially $n-k+1$ parameters c, a_{k+1}, \dots, a_n , that is, a complete solution of (4). Moreover, if we have an involutory system of $n+1$ independent equations $F_1=0, \dots, F_k=0, F_{k+1}=a_{k+1}, \dots, F_{n+1}=a_{n+1}$, then we find a complete solution by eliminating p_1, \dots, p_n between the equations. This method of integrating an involutory system is called **Jacobi's second method of integration**.

E. Relation to the Calculus of Variations

Consider a partial differential equation of first order $F(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, p_1, \dots, p_n)=0$. If a solution $u(x)$ of this equation is given as an implicit

function by $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n, u)=0$, we have

$$F\left(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, -\frac{\partial \varphi/\partial x_1}{\partial \varphi/\partial u}, \dots, -\frac{\partial \varphi/\partial x_n}{\partial \varphi/\partial u}\right)=0.$$

This gives formally a partial differential equation with independent variables u, x_1, \dots, x_n and a dependent variable φ . It does not contain φ explicitly. That is, this equation has the form

$$F(x_1, \dots, x_{n+1}, \partial \varphi/\partial x_1, \dots, \partial \varphi/\partial x_{n+1})=0.$$

Then, by finding a partial derivative, say $\partial \varphi/\partial x_{n+1}$, as a function of the remaining ones from the displayed equation, we get a partial differential equation of the form

$$\partial \varphi/\partial t + H(t, x, \partial \varphi/\partial x)=0,$$

which is called the **normal form** of the partial differential equation of first order. Setting $p_i = \partial \varphi/\partial x_i$, the equations of the characteristic curve of this equation are

$$\frac{dx_i}{dt} = H_{p_i}(t, x, p), \quad \frac{dp_i}{dt} = -H_{x_i}(t, x, p), \quad i=1, \dots, n,$$

which are called **Hamilton's differential equations**.

Now, consider the \dagger Euler-Lagrange differential equations

$$dF_{x'_i}/dt - F_{x_i}=0, \quad i=1, \dots, n,$$

for the integral

$$J = \int_{t_0}^{t_1} F(t, x, x') dt, \quad x' = \frac{dx}{dt}.$$

Under the assumption that $\det(F_{x'_i x'_j}) \neq 0$, we put $F_{x'_i} = p_i$, and solve these relations with respect to x'_i in the form, say, $x'_i = \varphi_i(t, x, p)$. Furthermore, if we put

$$\left(\sum_{v=1}^n x'_v F_{x'_v} - F \right)_{x'=\varphi(t, x, p)} = H(t, x, p),$$

then the Euler-Lagrange equations are equivalent to Hamilton's differential equations

$$dx_i/dt = H_{p_i}, \quad dp_i/dt = -H_{x_i}, \quad i=1, \dots, n,$$

since $F(t, x, x') = \sum_{i=1}^n p_i H_{p_i} - H$.

A curve represented by a solution of the Euler-Lagrange equations is called a **stationary curve**. Now consider a family of stationary curves in a domain G of the $(n+1)$ -dimensional tx -space such that passing through every point of G there is one and only one curve in this family, and suppose that the family is \dagger transversal to an r -dimensional manifold \mathfrak{A} ($r \leq n$) (that is, $F \delta t - \sum F_{x'_i} \delta x_i = 0$ for the differentials $\delta t, \delta x_i$ along \mathfrak{A} ; in particular, if \mathfrak{A} consists of only one point ($r=0$), a stationary curve passing through this point is transversal to \mathfrak{A}). In

this case, if we denote by $V(t, x)$ the value of the integral J along the stationary curve from \mathfrak{A} to any point (t, x) of G , then the equation

$$\partial V/\partial t + H(t, x, \partial V/\partial x) = 0$$

holds. This equation is called the **Hamilton-Jacobi differential equation** or the **canonical** or **eikonal equation**. Conversely, a solution of this equation is equal to the value of the integral J for a family of stationary curves transversal to an adequate \mathfrak{A} .

F. The Monge Differential Equation

Consider the partial differential equation (2). By eliminating p and t between

$$\frac{dx_i}{dt} = F_{p_i}, \quad \frac{du}{dt} = \sum_{i=1}^n p_i F_{p_i}, \quad \text{and} \quad F(x, u, p) = 0$$

(for example, by eliminating p between $dx_i/dx_1 = F_{p_i}/F_{p_1}$ and $F = 0$ when $F_{p_1} \neq 0$), we obtain

$$M(x_1, \dots, x_n, u, \partial x_2/\partial x_1, \dots, \partial x_n/\partial x_1) = 0.$$

This equation is called the **Monge differential equation**, and the curve represented by its solution is called an **integral curve** of the equation. In the $(n+1)$ -dimensional tx -space, a curve that is an envelope of a 1-parameter family of characteristic curves of the partial differential equation (2) is a solution of the Monge equation. A characteristic curve is also an integral curve. When $n=2$, an integral curve that is not a characteristic curve is a line of regression of the surface generated by the family of characteristic curves tangent to the integral curve under consideration (which is an integral surface of $F(x, u, p) = 0$). If F is linear in p_i , i.e., quasilinear, all integral curves coincide with characteristic curves.

References

- [1] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics II*, Interscience, 1962.
- [2] I. G. Petrovskii, *Lectures on partial differential equations*, Interscience, 1954. (Original in Russian, 1953.)
- [3] E. Goursat, *Cours d'analyse mathématique*, Gauthier-Villars, II, second edition, 1911; III, fourth edition, 1927.
- [4] F. John, *Partial differential equations*, Springer, 1971.
- [5] C. Carathéodory, *Variationsrechnung und Partielle Differentialgleichungen Erste Ordnung*, Teubner, 1935; English translation, *Calculus of variations and partial differential equations of the first order*, Holden-Day, 1967.

325 (XIII.25) Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type

A. Second-Order Linear Hyperbolic Equations

A linear partial differential equation in $n+1$ variables $t, x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$ of the second order,

$$L[u] = \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t^2} - \sum_{i=1}^n a_{0i} \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t \partial x_i} - \sum_{i,j=1}^n a_{ij} \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} - a_0 \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} - \sum_{i=1}^n a_i \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} - au = 0, \quad (1)$$

with coefficients a_{0i}, \dots, a that are functions in (t, x) is said to be **hyperbolic** (or of **hyperbolic type**) (with respect to the t -direction) in tx -space if the **characteristic equation** of equation (1) considered at each point of tx -space,

$$H(t, x; \lambda, \xi) = \lambda^2 - \sum_{i=1}^n a_{0i} \xi_i \lambda - \sum_{i,j=1}^n a_{ij} \xi_i \xi_j = 0, \quad (2)$$

has two distinct real roots $\lambda = \lambda_1(t, x, \xi), \lambda_2(t, x, \xi)$ for any n -tuple of real numbers $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n) \neq (0, \dots, 0)$. In particular, (1) is called **regularly hyperbolic** if these two roots are separated uniformly, that is,

$$\lim_{(t,x), |\xi|=1} |\lambda_1(t, x, \xi) - \lambda_2(t, x, \xi)| = c > 0.$$

A typical example of hyperbolic equations is the **wave equation**

$$\square u = \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t^2} - \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_1^2} - \dots - \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_n^2} = 0. \quad (3)$$

Equation (3) is also called the **equation of a vibrating string**, the **equation of a vibrating membrane**, or the **equation of sound propagation** according as $n = 1, 2$, or 3 . Another example is

$$\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t^2} - c^2 \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} - 2 \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = 0,$$

which describes the propagation of electric current in a conducting wire with leakage and is called the **telegraph equation** (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 15).

A hyperplane $\lambda(t - t^0) + \dots + \xi_n(x_n - x_n^0) = 0$ passing through a point $p^0 = (t^0, x^0)$ in tx -space and having normal direction (λ, ξ) is called a **characteristic hyperplane** of (1) at p^0 if the direction (λ, ξ) satisfies the characteristic equation at p^0 : $H(t^0, x^0; \lambda, \xi) = 0$. A hypersurface S : $s(t, x) = 0$ in tx -space is a **characteristic hypersurface** of (1) if at each point of S the tangent hyperplane of S is a characteristic hyperplane of (1), that is, $H(t, x; s_t, s_x) = 0$ everywhere on S . According to the theory of first-order par-

tial differential equations, a characteristic hypersurface of S is generated by so-called **bicharacteristic curves**, i.e., solution curves $t = t(\tau)$, $x(\tau)$ of a system of ordinary differential equations

$$\frac{dt}{d\tau} = H_\lambda, \quad \dots, \quad \frac{dx_n}{d\tau} = H_{\xi_n},$$

$$\frac{d\lambda}{d\tau} = -H_t, \quad \dots, \quad \frac{d\xi_n}{d\tau} = -H_{x_n},$$

$$H(t, x; \lambda, \xi) = 0.$$

Now if (1) is hyperbolic, the set of all characteristic hyperplanes at $p^0: \{\lambda(t - t^0) + \dots + \xi_n(x_n - x_n^0) = 0 \mid H(t^0, x^0; \lambda, \xi) = 0\}$ has as its envelope a cone $C(p^0)$ with the vertex p^0 . Moreover, since the intersection of any hyperplane $t = \text{constant}$ and the cone $C(p^0)$ is an $(n-1)$ -dimensional ellipsoid or two points for $n = 1$, a conical body $D_+(p^0)$ ($D_-(p^0)$) is determined, whose boundary consists of the part of $C(p^0)$ with $t \geq t_0$ ($t \leq t_0$) and the interior of the ellipsoid on the hyperplane $t = \text{constant}$. A smooth curve γ in tx -space is called **timelike** if the tangent vector of γ at each point p on γ belongs to $D_+(p)$ or $D_-(p)$. Consider the set of points that can be connected with the point p^0 by a timelike curve. We call its closure an **emission**, and a subset $\mathcal{D}_+(p^0)$ ($\mathcal{D}_-(p^0)$) of the closure for which $t \geq t_0$ ($t \leq t_0$) a **forward (backward) emission**. An emission is a conical body surrounded by characteristic hyperplanes in some neighborhood of the vertex p^0 . If the coefficients of (1) are bounded functions, the emissions $\mathcal{D}_\pm(p^0)$ are contained in a conical body

$$K = \left\{ (t, x) \mid \lambda_{\max}^2 (t - t^0)^2 \geq \sum_{i=1}^n (x_i - x_i^0)^2 \right\}$$

independently of the situation of p^0 , where $\lambda_{\max} = \max_{(t, x), |\xi|=1} (|\lambda_1(t, x, \xi)|, |\lambda_2(t, x, \xi)|)$.

B. The Cauchy Problem

Important for the hyperbolic equation (1) is the \dagger Cauchy problem, i.e., the problem of finding a function $u = u(t, x)$ that satisfies (1) in $t > 0$ and the initial conditions

$$u(0, x) = u_0(x), \quad \partial u / \partial t(0, x) = u_1(x), \quad (4)$$

where the functions $u_0(x)$ and $u_1(x)$ are given on the initial hyperplane $t = 0$.

Suppose that (1) is regularly hyperbolic and the coefficients are bounded and sufficiently smooth (i.e., of class C^v with v sufficiently large). Then for the Cauchy problem the following theorem holds. Theorem (C): There exists a positive integer $l = [n/2] + 3$, depending on the dimension $n + 1$ of the tx -space, such that if the functions $u_0(x)$ and $u_1(x)$ in (4)

are of class C^l , then there exists a unique solution $u = u(t, x)$ of class C^2 in the domain $0 \leq t < \infty$, $-\infty < x_i < \infty$ ($1 \leq i \leq n$). Moreover, this correspondence $\{u_0(x), u_1(x)\} \rightarrow u(t, x)$ is continuous in the following sense: If a sequence of initial functions $\{u_{0k}(x), u_{1k}(x)\}$ ($k = 1, 2, \dots$) and their derivatives up to the l th order tend to 0 uniformly on every compact set in the hyperplane $t = 0$, then the sequence of corresponding solutions $u_k(t, x)$ also tends to 0 uniformly on every compact set in each hyperplane $t = \text{constant}$. In other words, the Cauchy problem for regularly hyperbolic equations is \dagger well posed in the sense of Hadamard [2].

For dependence of the solution on initial data, the following proposition is valid: The values of the solution u at a point $p^0 = (t^0, x^0)$ depend only on the initial data on a domain G_0 (**domain of dependence**) of the initial hyperplane, which is determined as the intersection of the backward emission $\mathcal{D}_-(p^0)$ and the initial hyperplane. We have the following dual proposition: A change in the initial conditions in a neighborhood of a point Q_0 of the initial hyperplane induces a change of values of the solution only in some neighborhood of the forward emission $\mathcal{D}_+(Q_0)$ (**domain of influence**). If the coefficients of the equation are bounded, the intersection of emissions $\mathcal{D}_\pm(p^0)$ and the hyperplane $t = \text{constant}$ is always compact. It follows that the domain of dependence and the domain of influence are bounded. In some special cases, there exists a proper subdomain of G_0 such that the solution depends only on the initial data on the subdomain. For example, for the wave equation (3) with $n = 3$, the solution for the Cauchy problem at a point $p^0 = (t^0, x^0)$ (\rightarrow Section D) is determined, as can be seen from the solution formula (12), by the initial data in a neighborhood of the cone with vertex $p^0: (t - t^0)^2 = \sum_{i=1}^n (x_i - x_i^0)^2$, namely, in a neighborhood of the intersection of bicharacteristic curves (lines, in this case) passing through p^0 and the initial hyperplane. If the solution of the Cauchy problem has such a property, it is said that **Huygens's principle** is valid, or that diffusion of waves does not occur. For the wave equation (3), Huygens's principle is valid only for odd $n > 1$.

C. The Energy Inequality

The energy conservation law for the wave equation (3),

$$E(t) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \left(\left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} \right)^2 + \sum_{i=1}^n \left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} \right)^2 \right) dx_1 \dots dx_n = \text{constant},$$

is generalized to the so-called energy inequality for hyperbolic equations, which plays an essential role in deducing the well-posedness of the Cauchy problem and the properties of the domain of dependence of the solution. Let the coefficients of a hyperbolic equation (1) be bounded functions, and let $G(\tau)$ be the intersection of the conical body $K = \{(t, x) | \lambda_{\max}^2(t - t^1)^2 \geq \sum_{i=1}^n (x_i - x_i^1)^2\}$ with the hyperplane $t = \tau$ ($\tau < t^1$). The $k(\geq 1)$ th-order energy integral of the solution $u(t, x)$ of (1) on $G(\tau)$ is defined by

$$E_\tau^{(k)}(u, G(\tau)) = \int_{G(\tau)} \sum_{\alpha_0 + \dots + \alpha_n \leq k} \left| \frac{\partial^{|\alpha|} u}{\partial t^{\alpha_0} \dots \partial x_n^{\alpha_n}}(\tau, x) \right|^2 dx.$$

Then the following inequality holds:

$$E_\tau^{(k)}(u, G(\tau)) \leq C E_{t^0}^{(k)}(u, G(t^0)), \quad t^0 \leq \tau < t^1, \quad (5)$$

where the constant C is independent of u . We call (5) the **energy inequality** (J. Schauder [5]). For the wave equation (3), the hypothesis $l = [n/2] + 3$ in theorem (C) can be replaced by a weaker condition $l = [n/2] + 2$, but if we take $l = [n/2] + 1$, there is an example for which no global solution of class C^1 exists. In general, even though the initial functions are of class C^1 , the solution in the Cauchy problem for hyperbolic equations may not be of class C^1 , while if the energy of the initial functions is bounded, the energy of the solution is also bounded.

D. Representation Formulas for Solutions of the Cauchy Problem

We consider solution formulas that represent solutions of the Cauchy problem explicitly as functionals of the initial functions. The problem of solving (1) under the condition (4), or more generally, the problem of solving an equation $L[u] = f(t, x)$ under (4), can be reduced, by transforming the unknown function u and applying † Duhamel's method, to the Cauchy problem with initial conditions on the hyperplane $t = \tau$:

$$u(\tau, x) = 0, \quad \partial u / \partial t(\tau, x) = \varphi(x) \quad (4')$$

for arbitrary τ . We define a function $\chi_q(s)$ of a real variable s by

$$\begin{aligned} \chi_q(s) &= |s|^q / 4(2\pi i)^{n-1} q! & (n \text{ odd}), \\ &= -s^q \log |s| / (2\pi i)^n q! & (n \text{ even}), \end{aligned} \quad (6)$$

where n is the dimension of the x -space and q is a positive integer such that $q + n$ is even. Then for a function $\varphi(x)$ of class C^ν (with ν sufficiently large) with compact support, the

following equality holds [7]:

$$\varphi(x) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \Delta_y^{(n+q)/2} \varphi(y) dy \int_{|\omega|=1} \chi_q((x-y)\omega) d\omega, \quad (7)$$

where Δ_y is the † Laplacian with respect to the variables $y = (y_1, \dots, y_n)$ and $d\omega$ is the surface element of the unit sphere $|\omega| = 1$ in x -space. Now, since the † principle of superposition is valid because (1) is linear, we can infer from formula (7) that the Cauchy problem (1) with initial condition (4') can be reduced to the one for initial conditions with parameters y, ω :

$$u(\tau, x) = 0, \quad \partial u / \partial t(\tau, x) = \chi_q((x-y)\omega). \quad (4'')$$

In fact, since $\chi_q(s)$ is $(q-1)$ -times differentiable by definition, the Cauchy problem (1) with initial condition (4'') has a unique solution $R_q(t, x; \tau, y, \omega)$ for q chosen large enough so that theorem (C) can be applied to (1) with initial condition (4''). Moreover, $R_q(t, x; \tau, y, \omega)$ is a function of (t, x, τ, y, ω) of class C^ν , and ν increases with q . Now, let $\varphi(x)$ be a function of class C^ν with sufficiently large ν and with compact support. Then, by (7) and the definition of R_q , the integral

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \Delta_y^{(n+q)/2} \varphi(y) dy \int_{|\omega|=1} R_q(t, x; \tau, y, \omega) d\omega \quad (8)$$

is a solution of the Cauchy problem (1) with initial condition (4'). Therefore, when R_q is found explicitly, (8) yields a solution formula of the Cauchy problem (1) with initial condition (4') as a functional of the initial functions. Since in (8), the integral $\int_{|\omega|=1} R_q d\omega$ is not necessarily of class C^{n+q} as a function of $(t, x; \tau, y)$, $\Delta_y^{(n+q)/2} \int_{|\omega|=1} R_q d\omega$ is in general not a function in the ordinary sense. But we denote it by $R(t, x; \tau, y)$ formally, and understand that a linear operator

$$u(t, x) = \int R(t, x; \tau, y) \varphi(y) dy \quad (9)$$

is defined by (8). The kernel $R(t, x; \tau, y)$ in this sense is called a **fundamental solution** or **Riemann function** of the Cauchy problem. If we extend the function $\int_{|\omega|=1} R_q(t, x; \tau, y, \omega) d\omega$ defined for $t \geq \tau$ to $t < \tau$, assigning it the value 0 there, then $R(t, x; \tau, y) = \Delta_y^{(n+q)/2} \int_{|\omega|=1} R_q(t, x; \tau, y, \omega) d\omega$ can be considered a † distribution on $(t, x; \tau, y)$ -space, and the equality $L(t, x, \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x)R(t, x; \tau, y) = L^*(\tau, y, \partial/\partial \tau, \partial/\partial y)R(t, x; \tau, y) = \delta(t - \tau)\delta(x - y)$ is valid, where L^* is the † adjoint operator of L and δ is † Dirac's δ -function. In other words, $R(t, x; \tau, y)$ is a fundamental solution of L in the sense of distribution theory.

The fundamental solution $R(t, x; \tau, y)$ can be analyzed using the asymptotic expansion with

respect to the sequence of functions $\{\chi_q(s)\}$, and we have the following important result: If the coefficients of (1) are of class C^∞ (resp. real analytic), then the fundamental solution $R(t, x; \tau, y)$ is of class C^∞ (real analytic) in (t, x) except for points that are on bicharacteristic curves of (1) passing through the point (τ, y) . In the language of the Cauchy problem, the smoothness of the solution u at a point $p = (t, x)$ depends only on the smoothness of the initial conditions on a neighborhood of the intersection of the initial hyperplane and all bicharacteristic curves passing through p . This fact is called **Huygens's principle in the wider sense**. Behavior of the fundamental solution $R(t, x; \tau, y)$ near discontinuous points has also been investigated [2].

For the wave equation (3), the fundamental solution can be constructed, and therefore we can write the solution formula explicitly. The solution formula for (3) with initial condition (4') for $n \geq 3$ is

$$u(t, x) = \frac{1}{(n-2)!} \frac{\partial^{n-2}}{\partial t^{n-2}} \int_0^t (t^2 - \tau^2)^{(n-3)/2} \tau Q(x, \tau) d\tau, \\ Q(x, \tau) = \frac{1}{\omega_n} \int_{|\omega|=1} \varphi(x + \tau\omega) d\omega,$$

where $\omega_n = 2\sqrt{\pi^n}/\Gamma(n/2)$ is the surface area of the unit sphere of n -dimensional space. Solutions of the Cauchy problem (3) with initial condition (4) for $n = 1, 2$, and 3 are, respectively,

$$u(t, x) = \frac{u_0(x+t) + u_0(x-t)}{2} + \frac{1}{2} \int_{x-t}^{x+t} u_1(\xi) d\xi \quad (10)$$

(d'Alembert's solution),

$$u(t, x_1, x_2) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{C_t} \frac{u_0(\xi_1, \xi_2) d\xi_1 d\xi_2}{\sqrt{t^2 - (x_1 - \xi_1)^2 - (x_2 - \xi_2)^2}} \\ + \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{C_t} \frac{u_1(\xi_1, \xi_2) d\xi_1 d\xi_2}{\sqrt{t^2 - (x_1 - \xi_1)^2 - (x_2 - \xi_2)^2}} \quad (11)$$

(Poisson's solution), and

$$u(t, x_1, x_2, x_3) = \frac{1}{4\pi} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} \int_{D_t} \frac{u_0(\xi_1, \xi_2, \xi_3)}{t} d\omega_t \\ + \frac{1}{4\pi} \int_{D_t} \frac{u_1(\xi_1, \xi_2, \xi_3)}{t} d\omega_t \quad (12)$$

(Kirchhoff's solution), where C_t is a disk in the $\xi_1 \xi_2$ -plane with center (x_1, x_2) and radius t , D_t is a sphere in the $\xi_1 \xi_2 \xi_3$ -space with center (x_1, x_2, x_3) and radius t , and $d\omega_t$ is the surface element of D_t .

E. Second-Order Nonlinear Hyperbolic Equations

A second-order nonlinear differential equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t^2} = A\left(t, x, u, \frac{\partial u}{\partial t}, \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i}, \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t \partial x_i}, \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j}\right), \\ 1 \leq i, \quad j \leq n, \quad (13)$$

is called **hyperbolic** in a neighborhood of a function $U(t, x)$ if the linear equation of the form (1) obtained from (13) is hyperbolic, where $a_{0i}(t, x)$ and $a_{ij}(t, x)$ are determined by substituting u by $U(t, x)$ in the partial derivatives of A with respect to $\partial^2 u / \partial t \partial x_i$ and $\partial^2 u / \partial x_i \partial x_j$, respectively. If the functions A in (13) and $U = x_0(x) + tu_1(x)$ determined by (4) are sufficiently smooth with respect to $t, x, u, \dots, \partial^2 u / \partial x_i \partial x_j$, the Cauchy problem for (13) with initial condition (4) has a unique solution in some neighborhood of the initial hyperplane under the condition that equation (13) is hyperbolic in a neighborhood of U . In general, initial value problems for nonlinear equations have only local solutions.

F. Higher-Order Hyperbolic Equations

An N th-order linear differential equation in $n+1$ variables $t, x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$ with constant coefficients

$$L\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t}, \frac{\partial}{\partial x}\right)u = \sum_{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| \leq N} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t}\right)^{\alpha_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\right)^\alpha u = 0, \quad (14)$$

where $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)$, $|\alpha| = \alpha_1 + \dots + \alpha_n$, and

$$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\right)^\alpha = \frac{\partial^{|\alpha|}}{\partial x_1^{\alpha_1} \dots \partial x_n^{\alpha_n}},$$

is **hyperbolic in the sense of Gårding** if the following two conditions are satisfied: (i) the partial derivative $\partial^N / \partial t^N$ appears in L ; (ii) the real parts of the roots $\lambda = \lambda_1(\xi), \dots, \lambda_N(\xi)$ of the **characteristic equation** $L(\lambda, i\xi) = 0$ are bounded functions of real variables $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n)$. When L is a homogeneous equation of the N th order, condition (ii) is equivalent to the following condition: (ii') $\lambda_1(\xi), \dots, \lambda_N(\xi)$ are purely imaginary for all real $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n) \neq (0, \dots, 0)$. The principal part (consisting of the highest-order terms) of a hyperbolic equation is also hyperbolic. If (14) is hyperbolic, a theorem analogous to theorem (C) holds for the Cauchy problem for (14) with initial conditions

$$\partial^k u / \partial t^k(0, x) = u_k(x), \quad 0 \leq k \leq n-1; \quad (15)$$

that is, the Cauchy problem for (14) with initial condition (15) is well posed in the sense of Hadamard. Conversely, if the Cauchy problem

for (14) with initial condition (15) is well posed, then (14) must satisfy the hyperbolicity conditions (i) and (ii) in the sense of Gårding. In other words, well-posedness of the Cauchy problem is equivalent to hyperbolicity in the sense of L. Gårding [14]. Gårding's conditions for hyperbolicity cannot be generalized to the case of variable coefficients, since the influence of the lower-order terms in the equation is taken into account in the definition of hyperbolicity. However, in the case of constant coefficients, an N th-order homogeneous equation remains hyperbolic for any addition of lower-order terms if and only if the characteristic equation has N distinct purely imaginary roots for any real $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n) \neq (0, \dots, 0)$. In this case the equation is called **hyperbolic in the strict sense**. Thus a linear equation with variable coefficients

$$L[u] = \frac{\partial^N u}{\partial t^N} + \sum_{\substack{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| \leq N \\ \alpha_0 < N}} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha}(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{\alpha_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right)^\alpha u = 0 \quad (16)$$

is called **hyperbolic in the sense of Petrovskii** if the characteristic equation

$$\lambda^N + \sum_{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| = N} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha}(t, x) \lambda^{\alpha_0} (i\xi)^\alpha = 0$$

has N distinct purely imaginary roots (called **characteristic roots**) $\lambda_1(t, x, \xi), \dots, \lambda_N(t, x, \xi)$ for each point $p = (t, x)$ and each $\xi \neq 0$. Moreover, if the characteristic roots $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_N$ are separated uniformly, i.e., the inequality

$$\lim_{(t, x), |\xi|=1, j \neq k} |\lambda_j(t, x, \xi) - \lambda_k(t, x, \xi)| = c > 0$$

holds, (16) is said to be **regularly hyperbolic**. In the second-order case, this definition is equivalent to the previous one. Theorem (C) holds for the Cauchy problem for a regularly hyperbolic equation (16) with initial conditions (15). For the domain of dependence of the solution, a result analogous to the case of the second-order equation can be obtained using an energy inequality [9, 10]. If the coefficients are of class C^∞ , Huygens's principle in the wider sense is valid, that is, discontinuity of the solution is carried over only along bicharacteristic curves.

G. Systems of Hyperbolic Equations

For systems of equations

$$\sum_{j=1}^l L_{ij}[u_j] = 0, \quad 1 \leq i \leq l,$$

where the L_{ij} are higher-order linear differential operators of the form (16), several types of hyperbolicity are formulated in connection with the well-posedness of the Cauchy prob-

lem. We take up two important types, hyperbolicity in the sense of Petrovskii and symmetric hyperbolicity due to Friedrichs.

We call a system of linear differential equations

$$\sum_{j=1}^l \sum_{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| \leq n_j} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha}^{ij}(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{\alpha_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right)^\alpha u_j = 0, \quad 1 \leq i \leq l, \quad (17)$$

a **system of hyperbolic differential equations** (in the sense of Petrovskii) if the determinant

$$\det \left(\sum_{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| \leq n_j} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha}^{ij}(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{\alpha_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right)^\alpha \right), \quad (18)$$

calculated formally using the matrix of differential operators in the system, is hyperbolic in the sense of Petrovskii as a single equation of $N (= \sum_{j=1}^l n_j)$ th order. Petrovskii showed that the Cauchy problem for a system that is hyperbolic in this sense is well posed [10]. There were some imperfections in his argument, which have been corrected by others (\rightarrow S. Mizohata [12]). In the case of constant coefficients, the Cauchy problem for (17) is well posed if and only if (18) is hyperbolic in the sense of Gårding.

K. O. Friedrichs, observing that the energy inequality played an essential role in Petrovskii's research, studied symmetric hyperbolic systems of equations, since for them the energy inequalities are valid most naturally. A system of first-order linear differential equations

$$A_0(t, x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = \sum_{i=1}^n A_i(t, x) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} + Bu \quad (19)$$

is called **symmetric hyperbolic** (in the sense of Friedrichs) if the matrices $A_i(t, x)$ ($0 \leq i \leq n$) are symmetric and $A_0(t, x)$ is positive definite. A typical example is provided by Maxwell's equations. For this system it has been shown that the Cauchy problem is well posed and the domain of dependence of the solution is bounded [13].

H. Weakly Hyperbolic Operators

We adopt the following definition of hyperbolicity: a linear differential operator of N th order

$$L = \frac{\partial^N}{\partial t^N} + \sum_{\substack{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| \leq N \\ \alpha_0 \leq N-1}} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha}(t, x) \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{\alpha_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right)^\alpha$$

is called **hyperbolic** if the Cauchy problem for $L[u] = 0$ with initial condition (15) is well posed in Hadamard's sense. A hyperbolic operator L is called **strongly hyperbolic** if L remains hyperbolic for any addition of lower-order terms, and **weakly hyperbolic** otherwise.

A necessary condition for hyperbolicity is that all characteristic roots of $L_N(t, x, \lambda, \xi) = 0$ be real for any (t, x, ξ) (P. D. Lax [15], Mizohata [16]). In the case of constant coefficients, strongly hyperbolic operators have been characterized by K. Kasahara and M. Yamaguti (*Mem. Coll. Sci. Kyoto Univ.* (1960)).

As for operators with variable coefficients, it is known that not only regularly hyperbolic operators but also some special classes of not regularly hyperbolic operators are strongly hyperbolic (V. Ya. Ivrii, *Moscow Math. Soc.*, 1976). Let us consider the hyperbolicity of an operator L which is not regularly hyperbolic under the assumption that the multiplicities of the characteristic roots are constant and at most 2; namely, the characteristic polynomial

$$L_N(t, x, \lambda, \xi) = \lambda^N + \sum_{\substack{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| = N \\ \alpha_0 \leq N-1}} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha}(t, x) \lambda^{\alpha_0} \xi^\alpha$$

is decomposed in the following way:

$$L_N(t, x, \lambda, \xi) = \prod_{j=1}^s (\lambda - \lambda_j(t, x, \xi))^2 \prod_{j=s+1}^{N-s} (\lambda - \lambda_j(t, x, \xi)),$$

$$\lim_{\substack{(t, x) \\ |\xi|=1, j \neq k}} |\lambda_j(t, x, \xi) - \lambda_k(t, x, \xi)| = c > 0.$$

Assume that the $\lambda_j(t, x, \xi)$, $j = 1, 2, \dots, N-s$, are real. Then L is hyperbolic if and only if it satisfies **E. E. Levi's condition**, i.e.,

$$l_j(t, x, \xi) = \left[L_{N-1} + \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{\partial^2 L_N}{\partial \lambda^2} \frac{\partial \lambda_j}{\partial t} + \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \frac{\partial^2 L_N}{\partial \lambda \partial \xi_\alpha} \frac{\partial \lambda_j}{\partial x_\alpha} \right) \right]_{\lambda=\lambda_j} = 0$$

for all (t, x, ξ) , $j = 1, 2, \dots, s$,

where L_{N-1} denotes the homogeneous part of $(N-1)$ th order among lower-order terms of L (Mizohata and Y. Ohya [17]). Thus, for a **weakly hyperbolic** operator with variable coefficients, even the principal part is not necessarily hyperbolic. J. Chazarain [18] has studied weakly hyperbolic operators with characteristic roots of arbitrary constant multiplicity. O. A. Oleinik [19] studied the Cauchy problem with nonconstant multiplicities for second-order equations. For higher-order equations, if the multiplicity of characteristic roots at (t, x) is at most p , or more precisely, if there exist positive rational numbers q and r ($q \geq r$) such that

$$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \lambda} \right)^p L_N(t, x, 0, \xi) \neq 0$$

and

$$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \lambda} \right)^{\alpha_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi} \right)^\alpha \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{\beta_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right)^\beta L_N(t, x, 0, \xi) = 0$$

($\forall \xi \in \mathbf{R}^n \setminus 0$)

for $\alpha_0 + |\alpha| + q\beta_0 + r|\beta| < p$, then it is necessary for the well posedness of the Cauchy problem that

$$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \lambda} \right)^{\alpha_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \xi} \right)^\alpha \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^{\beta_0} \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right)^\beta L_{N-s}(t, x, 0, \xi) = 0$$

($\forall \xi \in \mathbf{R}^n \setminus 0$)

for $\alpha_0 + |\alpha| + q\beta_0 + r|\beta| + s(1+q) < p$ are satisfied, where L_{N-s} ($1 \leq s \leq N$) are the homogeneous lower-order terms of order $N-s$ of L (Ivrii and V. M. Petkov [20]).

On the other hand, the sufficient condition in the case of multiplicity 2 is given by some conditions related to the subprincipal symbol

$$L_{N-1} - \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{\partial^2 L_N}{\partial \lambda \partial t} + \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \frac{\partial^2 L_N}{\partial \xi_\alpha \partial x_\alpha} \right),$$

which corresponds to Levi's condition in the case of constant multiplicity, and to the \dagger Poisson brackets (A. Menikoff, *Amer. J. Math.*, 1976; Ohya, *Ann. Scuola Norm. Sup. Pisa*, 1977; L. Hörmander, *J. Anal. Math.*, 1977).

The Cauchy problem for a weakly hyperbolic system of equations is more complicated, because of the essential difficulty that the matrix structure

$$\left(\sum_{\alpha_0 + |\alpha| = n_j} a_{\alpha_0 \alpha}^{ij}(t, x) \lambda^{\alpha_0} \xi^\alpha \right)$$

associated with (17) is not clear in general (\rightarrow references in [20]).

I. Gevrey Classes

Classically, the functions of \dagger class s ($s \geq 1$) of Gevrey (\rightarrow 58 C^∞ -Functions and Quasi-Analytic Functions G; 168 Function Spaces B (14) were introduced into the studies of the fundamental solution for the heat equation:

$$\gamma_{\text{loc}}^{(s)}(\mathbf{R}^n) = \{ \varphi(x) \in C^\infty(\mathbf{R}^n) \mid \text{for any compact subset } K \text{ of } \mathbf{R}^n \text{ and any multi-indices } \alpha, \text{ there exist constants } C_K \text{ and } A \text{ such that } \sup_K |(\partial/\partial x)^\alpha \varphi(x)| \leq C_K A^{|\alpha|} |\alpha|!^s \}.$$

This class of functions was used efficiently in the studies of the Cauchy problem for \dagger weakly hyperbolic partial differential equations:

$$L \left(t, x, \frac{\partial}{\partial t}, \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right) u(t, x) = f(t, x)$$

in $[0, T] \times \mathbf{R}^n = \Omega,$

$$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial t} \right)^j u(0, x) = u_j(x), \quad j = 0, 1, \dots, N-1.$$

We assume that the multiplicities of the characteristic roots are constant, i.e.,

$$L_N(t, x, \lambda, \xi) = \prod_{i=1}^k (\lambda - \lambda_i(t, x, \xi))^{v_i},$$

where v_i is constant for any $(t, x, \xi) \in \Omega \times \mathbf{R}^n$, $\lambda_i(t, x, \xi)$ is real and distinct, and $\sum_{i=1}^k v_i = N$. Let $\max_{1 \leq i \leq k} v_i = p$. If we suppose that $L(t, x, \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x) - \tilde{L}(t, x, \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x)$ is a (\dagger pseudo) differential operator of order at most q , where

$$\tilde{L} = \prod_{i=1}^p a_i \left(t, x, \frac{\partial}{\partial t}, \frac{\partial}{\partial x} \right)$$

is a (pseudo)differential operator with $a_i(t, x, \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x)$ being strictly hyperbolic (pseudo) differential operators associated with L_N , then for any s such that $1 \leq s < p/q$, the Cauchy problem is well posed in $\gamma_{\text{loc}}^{(s)}(\Omega)$, provided that all $a_{\alpha\theta}(t, x)$ of L and $f(t, x)$ belong to $\gamma_{\text{loc}}^{(s)}(\Omega)$, and that $\{u_j(x)\}_{0 \leq j \leq N-1}$ are given in $\gamma_{\text{loc}}^{(s)}(\mathbf{R}^n)$ (Ohya [21], J. Leray and Ohya [22]). This result was proved even for the case of arbitrary nonconstant multiplicity of characteristic roots by M. D. Bronshtein [23].

J. Lacunas for Hyperbolic Operators

The theory of lacunas of fundamental solutions of hyperbolic operators, initiated by Petrovskii [24], has been developed further in a paper [25] by M. F. Atiyah, R. Bott, and L. Gårding.

Let $L(\xi) = L_N(\xi) + M(\xi)$ be a hyperbolic polynomial with respect to the vector $\theta \in \mathbf{R}^n - 0$, where $L_N(\xi)$ is the principal part of L ; this means that $L_N(\theta) \neq 0$ and $L(\xi + t\theta) \neq 0$ when $|\text{Im } t|$ is sufficiently large. Then L has a fundamental solution $E = E(L, \theta, x)$ in the form

$$E(L, \theta, x) = (2\pi)^{-n} \int L(\xi - ic\theta)^{-1} e^{ix(\xi - ic\theta)} d\xi,$$

where c is sufficiently large and the integral is taken in the sense of \dagger distribution. The convex hull of the support of E , denoted by $K = K(L, \theta) = K(A, \theta)$, is a cone depending only on the real part $\text{Re } A$ of the complex hypersurface $A: L(\xi) = 0$, and contained in the union of the origin and the half-space $x \cdot \theta > 0$. Let A_ξ be the \dagger tangent conoid of A at ξ , transported to the origin, and define the wavefront surface $W(A, \theta)$ by the union of all $K(A_\xi, \theta)$ for $\xi \neq 0$. Then it can be shown that the singular supports of $E(L, \theta)$ and all the $E(L_N^k, \theta)$ are contained in $W(A, \theta)$ and, moreover, that they are locally holomorphic outside W . In [25], the Herglotz-Petrovskii-Leray formulas are generalized to any nonstrict $L(\xi)$. Thus we have

$$D^\beta E(L_N^k, \theta, x) = \text{const} \int_{x^*} (x \cdot \xi)^q \xi^\beta L_N^k(\xi)^{-k} \omega(\xi), \quad q > 0, \quad (20)$$

$$D^\beta E(L_N^k, \theta, x) = \text{const} \int_{t_x \cdot \partial x^*} (x \cdot \xi)^q \xi^\beta L_N^k(\xi)^{-k} \omega(\xi), \quad q \leq 0 \quad (20')$$

when $x \in K(A, \theta) \setminus W(A, \theta)$. Here, $q = mk - |\beta| - n$ is the degree of homogeneity of the left-hand side, and $\omega = \sum_{j=1}^n (-1)^{j-1} \xi_j d\xi_1 \wedge \dots \wedge d\xi_j \wedge \dots \wedge d\xi_n$. The integrands are closed \dagger rational $(n-1)$ -forms on $(n-1)$ -dimensional complex \dagger projective space and are integrated over certain \dagger homology classes $\alpha^* = \alpha(A, \theta, x)^*$ and $t_x \cdot \partial \alpha^*$. These formulas provide means of obtaining topological criteria for lacunas. Let $\mathcal{L} \subset K^2$ be a maximal connected open set, where $E(L, \theta, x)$ is holomorphic. \mathcal{L} is said to be a **weak (strong) lacuna** of L if $E(L, \theta, x)$ is the restriction of an entire function to $\mathcal{L}(E(L, \theta, x)) = 0$ in \mathcal{L} . In [25] it is shown that x belongs to a weak lacuna for all $E(L_N^k, \theta, \cdot)$ if and only if $\partial \alpha^* = 0$. The sufficiency directly follows from (20') and the necessity follows from a theorem of A. Grothendieck (*Publ. Math. Inst. HES*, 1966) which implies that the rational forms which appear in (20') span all the \dagger cohomology classes in question.

K. Mixed Initial-Boundary Value Problems

Let Ω be a domain in \mathbf{R}^n with a sufficiently smooth boundary Γ , let $L(t, x, \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x)$ be a linear hyperbolic operator of N th order defined in $[0, \infty) \times \bar{\Omega} = \{(t, x) | t \in [0, \infty), x \in \bar{\Omega}\}$, and let $B_j(t, x, \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x)$, $j = 1, 2, \dots, b$, be linear differential operators of N_j th order defined in a neighborhood of $[0, \infty) \times \Gamma$.

The problem of finding a function $u(t, x)$ satisfying the conditions

$$\begin{aligned} L[u] &= 0 \quad \text{in } (0, \infty) \times \Omega, \\ B_j[u] &= 0 \quad \text{on } (0, \infty) \times \Gamma, \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, b, \\ \partial^k u / \partial t^k(0, x) &= u_k(x), \quad 0 \leq k \leq N-1, \end{aligned} \quad (21)$$

is called a **mixed initial-boundary value problem**. A typical example of such a mixed problem is provided by the case $L = \square$ ($n=2$) and $B[u] = u(t, x)$, which describes the vibration of membranes with a fixed boundary.

The mixed problem (21) is said to be well posed if for any initial data $u_k(x) \in C^\infty(\bar{\Omega})$, $0 \leq k \leq N-1$, which are compatible with the boundary conditions, there exists a unique solution $u(t, x) \in C^\infty([0, \infty) \times \bar{\Omega})$.

Mixed problems for second-order hyperbolic equations are considered in [6]. In regard to mixed problems for hyperbolic equations of higher order, we make the following four assumptions: (i) $\Omega = \mathbf{R}_+^n = \{(x', x_n) | x' \in \mathbf{R}^{n-1}, x_n > 0\}$; (ii) $\Gamma = \{x | x_n = 0\}$ is not characteristic for L or B_j ; (iii) L is regularly hyperbolic; (iv) $N_j \leq N-1$ and $N_j \neq N_k$ if $j \neq k$.

We denote the \dagger principal parts of L and B_j by $L_N(t, x', x_n, \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x', \partial/\partial x_n)$ and $B_{j0}(t, x', \partial/\partial t, \partial/\partial x', \partial/\partial x_n)$, respectively. By the hyper-

bolicity of L , an equation in κ

$$L_N(t, x', 0, \lambda, \xi', \kappa) = 0 \quad \text{for } \operatorname{Im} \lambda < 0, \quad \xi' \in \mathbf{R}^{n-1}$$

has μ roots κ_j^+ with $\operatorname{Im} \kappa_j^+ > 0$, and $N - \mu$ roots κ_j^- with $\operatorname{Im} \kappa_j^- < 0$, and the number μ is independent of (t, x') and (λ, ξ') . A necessary condition for the well-posedness of the mixed problem (21) is that the number of boundary conditions coincide with this integer μ . The function R defined by

$$R(t, x', \lambda, \xi') \\ = \det \left[\oint_C \frac{B_{j0}(t, x', \lambda, \xi', \kappa) \kappa^{l-1}}{L^+(t, x', \lambda, \xi', \kappa)} d\kappa \right]_{j,l=1,2,\dots,\mu},$$

where $L^+ = \prod_{j=1}^{\mu} (\kappa - \kappa_j^+(t, x', \lambda, \xi'))$ and C is a contour enclosing all κ_j^+ , is called a **Lopatinski determinant**.

We say that L and B_j satisfy the uniform Lopatinski condition if

$$\inf_{\substack{(t, x'), \operatorname{Im} \lambda < 0 \\ |\xi'| + |\lambda| = 1}} |R(t, x', \lambda, \xi')| = c > 0.$$

When the uniform Lopatinski condition is satisfied, the mixed problem (21) is well posed, and (21) represents a phenomenon with a finite propagation speed, which is the same as that of the Cauchy problem for $L[u] = 0$ (T. Balaban [26], H. O. Kreiss [27], and R. Sakamoto [28]). An analogous result holds in the case of a domain Ω with a compact boundary Γ , provided that L and B_j satisfy the uniform Lopatinski condition at every point of Γ .

In the treatment of mixed problems for L and B_j not satisfying the uniform Lopatinski condition, the well-posed problems have been characterized for operators with constant coefficients when $\Omega = \mathbf{R}_+$ (Sakamoto [29]). For general domains, however, the well-posedness of mixed problems depends not only on the properties of the Lopatinski determinant but also on the shape of the domain (M. Ikawa [30]).

L. Asymptotic Solutions

In order to explain some properties of phenomenon governed by hyperbolic equations, asymptotic solutions play an important role. Consider, for example, the **acoustic problem**

$$\begin{aligned} \square u &= 0 \quad \text{in } (0, \infty) \times \Omega, \\ u &= 0 \quad \text{on } (0, \infty) \times \Gamma. \end{aligned}$$

Let $w(t, x; k)$ be a function defined in $(0, \infty) \times \Omega$ with parameter $k \geq 1$ of the form

$$w(t, x; k) = e^{ik(\varphi(x)-t)} \sum_{j=0}^N v_j(t, x) k^{-j}, \quad (22)$$

where φ is a smooth function satisfying the **eikonal equation** $|\nabla \varphi|^2 = 1$. If $v_j, j = 0, 1, \dots, N$, satisfy the **transport equations**

$$2 \frac{\partial v_j}{\partial t} + 2 \nabla \varphi \cdot \nabla v_j + \Delta \varphi v_j = -i \square v_{j-1}, \quad v_{-1} = 0,$$

we have

$$\square w = O(k^{-N}).$$

Then w of (22) is an approximate solution of $\square u = 0$ for large k , and it represents a wave propagating in the direction $\nabla \varphi$.

When $\operatorname{supp} w \cap (0, \infty) \times \Gamma \neq \emptyset$, if w hits the boundary Γ transversally, we can construct

$$w^+(t, x; k) = e^{ik(\varphi^+(x)-t)} \sum_{j=0}^N v_j^+(t, x) k^{-j}$$

such that

$$|\nabla \varphi^+|^2 = 1 \quad \text{in } \Omega, \quad \varphi^+ = \varphi, \quad \text{and}$$

$$\frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial \nu} > 0 \quad \text{on } \Gamma,$$

and v_j^+ satisfy the transport equations and $v_j^+ = -v_j$ on $(0, \infty) \times \Gamma$, where ν is the unit inner normal of Γ . Then $w + w^+$ is an approximate solution, and w^+ represents a **reflected wave** propagating in the direction

$$\nabla \varphi^+ = \nabla \varphi - 2(\nabla \varphi \cdot \nu) \nu.$$

These asymptotic solutions show that the high-frequency waves propagate approximately according to the laws of geometric optics.

If asymptotic solution (22) has a **caustic**, i.e., $\{x + |\nabla \varphi(x)| l \in R \mid x \in \operatorname{supp} w\}$ has an envelope, w of the form (22) cannot be an asymptotic solution near the caustic. The asymptotic behavior of high-frequency solutions near the caustic was first considered by G. B. Airy (*Trans. Cambridge Philos. Soc.*, 1838). Under the condition that the principal curvatures of the caustic are positive, w in the form (22) can be prolonged to a domain containing the caustic satisfying the asymptotic solution

$$\begin{aligned} w(t, x; k) &= e^{ik(\theta(x)-t)} \{ \operatorname{Ai}(-k^{2/3} \rho(x)) g_0(t, x; k) \\ &\quad + ik^{-1/3} \operatorname{Ai}'(-k^{2/3} \rho(x)) g_1(t, x; k) \}, \end{aligned} \quad (23)$$

where Ai is the Airy function

$$\operatorname{Ai}(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{i(zt + t^3/3)} dt$$

and

$$g_l(t, x; k) = \sum_j g_{lj}(t, x) k^{1/6-j}$$

(D. Ludwig [31]).

Concerning the reflection of **grazing rays** by

strictly convex obstacles, the reflected wave can be constructed by the superposition of asymptotic solutions of the type (23).

The methods of construction of asymptotic solutions of the forms (22) and (23) are also applicable to Maxwell equations or more general hyperbolic systems (R. K. Luneberg [32]; Ludwig and Granoff, *J. Math. Anal. Appl.*, 1968; Guillemin and Sternberg, *Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys*, 14 (1977)).

M. Propagation of Singularities

Let L be a hyperbolic operator with C^∞ coefficients and consider the Cauchy problem $L[u] = 0$ with initial condition (15). When the initial data have singularities, the solution also has singularities for $t > 0$, which is a property of hyperbolic equations quite different from the properties of parabolic ones. It should be noted that the 'propagation of singularities cannot be derived from the Huygens principle in the wider sense, i.e., even for regularly hyperbolic operators of second order we cannot determine the location and the type of singularities of the solutions for initial data with singularities directly from the singularities of the fundamental solution $R(t, x; \tau, y)$.

Suppose that the multiplicities of characteristic roots of L are constant. Assume that $u_k, k = 0, 1, \dots, N-1$, have, on either side of a sufficiently smooth $(n-1)$ -dimensional manifold Γ , continuous derivatives of sufficiently high order to suffer jump discontinuities across Γ . Then the solution u has continuous partial derivatives of sufficiently high order everywhere except on the characteristic surfaces of L issuing from Γ , and across these the partial derivatives of u have jump discontinuities (Courant and Hilbert [1]).

For more general singularities of initial data, it is known that the 'wavefront propagates along the 'bicharacteristic strips satisfying $\varphi_l - \lambda_l(t, x, \nabla\varphi) = 0, l = 1, 2, \dots, N-s$, that is, $WFu(\cdot, t)$ is contained in $\{(x(t), \xi(t)) \in T^*(\mathbf{R}^n) | (dx_j/dt)(s) = (\partial\lambda_l/\partial\xi_j)(s, x, \xi), (d\xi_j/dt)(s) = -(\partial\lambda_l/\partial x_j)(s, x, \xi), (x(0), \xi(0)) \in \bigcup_k WF(u_k)\}$ (J. Chazarain [18]).

The propagation of singularities is more complicated in mixed problems because of the reflections of singularities at the boundary. For the 'acoustic problem, R. B. Melrose [33] showed the following: Suppose $\mathcal{O} = C\Omega \subset \{x | |x| < R\}$ for some $R > 0$, and all the broken rays according to the geometric optics starting from $\Omega_R = \Omega \cap \{|x| < R\}$ go out of Ω_R in a fixed time. Then for initial data with singularities in

325 Ref. PDEs of Hyperbolic Type

Ω_R , the solution becomes smooth in Ω_R for sufficiently large t .

References

- [1] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics II*, Interscience, 1962.
- [2] J. Hadamard, *Le problème de Cauchy et les équations aux dérivées partielles linéaires hyperboliques*, Hermann, 1932.
- [3] J. Hadamard, *Leçons sur la propagation des ondes et les équations de l'hydrodynamique*, Hermann, 1903.
- [4] R. Courant and K. O. Friedrichs, *Supersonic flow and shock waves*, Interscience, 1948.
- [5] J. Schauder, *Das Anfangswertproblem einer quasilinearen hyperbolischen Differentialgleichung zweiter Ordnung*, *Fund. Math.*, 24 (1935), 213–246.
- [6] M. Krzyżański and J. Schauder, *Quasilineare Differentialgleichungen zweiter Ordnung vom hyperbolischen Typus, gemischte Randwertaufgaben*, *Studia Math.*, 6 (1936), 162–189.
- [7] F. John, *Plane waves and spherical means applied to partial differential equations*, Interscience, 1955.
- [8] S. L. Sobolev, *Applications of functional analysis in mathematical physics*, *Amer. Math. Soc.*, 1963. (Original in Russian, 1950.)
- [9] J. Leray, *Hyperbolic differential equations*, Lecture notes, Institute for Advanced Study, Princeton, 1952.
- [10] I. G. Petrovskii, *Über das Cauchysche Problem für Systeme von partiellen Differentialgleichungen*, *Mat. Sb. (N.S.)*, 2 (44) (1937), 815–870.
- [11] I. G. Petrovskii, *Lectures on partial differential equations*, Interscience, 1954. (Original in Russian, 1953.)
- [12] S. Mizohata, *The theory of partial differential equations*, Cambridge, 1973. (Original in Japanese, 1965.)
- [13] K. O. Friedrichs, *Symmetric hyperbolic linear differential equations*, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 7 (1954), 345–392.
- [14] L. Gårding, *Linear hyperbolic equations with constant coefficients*, *Acta Math.*, 85 (1951), 1–62.
- [15] P. D. Lax, *Asymptotic solutions of oscillatory initial value problems*, *Duke Math. J.*, 24 (1957), 627–646.
- [16] S. Mizohata, *Some remarks on the Cauchy problem*, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 1 (1961), 109–127.
- [17] S. Mizohata and Y. Ohya, *Sur la condition de E. E. Levi concernant des équations hyperboliques*, *Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 4 (1968), 511–526; *Sur la condition d'hyper-*

bolicité pour les équations à caractéristiques multiples II, Japan. J. Math., 40 (1971), 63–104.

[18] J. Chazarain, Opérateurs hyperboliques à caractéristiques de multiplicité constante, Ann. Inst. Fourier, 24 (1974), 173–202; Propagation des singularités pour une classe d'opérateurs à caractéristiques multiples et résolubilité locale, Ann. Inst. Fourier, 24 (1974), 203–223.

[19] O. A. Oleinik, On the Cauchy problem for weakly hyperbolic equations, Comm. Pure Appl. Math., 23 (1970), 569–586.

[20] V. Ya. Ivrii and V. M. Petkov, Necessary conditions for the correctness of the Cauchy problem for nonstrictly hyperbolic equations, Russian Math. Surveys, 29 (1974), 1–70. (Original in Russian, 1974.)

[21] Y. Ohya, Le problème de Cauchy pour les équations hyperboliques à caractéristique multiple, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 16 (1964), 268–286.

[22] J. Leray and Y. Ohya, Systèmes linéaires, hyperboliques non stricts, 2^{ième} Colloque sur l'Analyse Fonctionnelle, CBRM (1964), 105–144.

[23] M. D. Bronshtein, The parametrix of the Cauchy problem for hyperbolic operators with characteristics of variable multiplicity, Functional Anal. Appl., 10 (1976) 4, 83–84. (Original in Russian, 1976.)

[24] I. G. Petrovskii, On the diffusion of waves and the lacunas for hyperbolic equations, Mat. Sb. (N.S.), 17 (59) (1945), 289–370.

[25] M. F. Atiyah, R. Bott, and L. Gårding, Lacunas for hyperbolic differential operators with constant coefficients I, II, Acta Math., 124 (1970), 109–189; 134 (1973), 145–206.

[26] T. Balaban, On the mixed problem for a hyperbolic equation, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc., 112 (1971).

[27] H. O. Kreiss, Initial boundary value problems for hyperbolic systems, Comm. Pure Appl. Math., 23 (1970), 277–298.

[28] R. Sakamoto, Mixed problems for hyperbolic equations I, II, J. Math. Kyoto Univ., 10 (1970), 349–373, 403–417.

[29] R. Sakamoto, \mathcal{E} -well posedness for hyperbolic mixed problems with constant coefficients, J. Math. Kyoto Univ., 14 (1974), 93–118.

[30] M. Ikawa, On the mixed problems for the wave equation in an interior domain II, Osaka J. Math., 17 (1980), 253–279.

[31] D. Ludwig, Uniform asymptotic expansions at a caustic, Comm. Pure Appl. Math., 19 (1966), 215–250.

[32] R. K. Luneberg, Mathematical theory of optics, Brown Univ. Press, 1944.

[33] R. B. Melrose, Singularities and energy decay in acoustical scattering, Duke Math. J., 45 (1979), 43–59.

326 (XIII.27) Partial Differential Equations of Mixed Type

A. General Remarks

Let $A[u(x)] = 0$ be a quasilinear second-order partial differential equation. The type (elliptic, hyperbolic, or parabolic) of the equation depends on the location of the point x . If the type varies as the point x moves, the equation is said to be of **mixed type**. An example is the equation

$$\left(1 - \frac{u^2}{c^2}\right) \frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial x^2} - \frac{2uv}{c^2} \frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial x \partial y} + \left(1 - \frac{v^2}{c^2}\right) \frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial y^2} = 0 \quad (1)$$

of 2-dimensional stationary flow without rotation of a compressible fluid without viscosity, where φ is the velocity potential, $u = \partial \varphi / \partial x$ and $v = \partial \varphi / \partial y$ are the velocity components, and c is the local speed of sound, which is a known function of the speed $q = (u^2 + v^2)^{1/2}$ of the flow. Equation (1) is of elliptic type if $q < c$, i.e., the flow is **subsonic**, and of hyperbolic type if $q > c$, i.e., the flow is **supersonic**. If there exist points where the flow is subsonic as well as points where it is supersonic, (1) is of mixed type. The study of equations of mixed type has become important with the development of high-speed jet planes.

B. Chaplygin's Differential Equation

It is difficult to solve equation (1) directly since it is nonlinear. However, we can linearize it by taking q and $\theta = \arctan(v/u)$ as independent variables (the hodograph transformation). The linearized equation takes the form

$$\frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial x^2} - K(x) \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial y^2} = 0, \quad xK(x) \geq 0, \quad (2)$$

which is called **Chaplygin's differential equation**. Equation (2) is hyperbolic for $x > 0$ and elliptic for $x < 0$. The study of general equations of mixed type, even when they are linear, is much more difficult and less developed than the study of equations of nonmixed type. Almost all research so far has been on equation (2) or slight modifications of it.

C. Tricomi's Differential Equation

The simplest equation of the form (2) is

$$\frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial x^2} - x \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial y^2} = 0, \quad (3)$$

which is called **Tricomi's differential equation**. F. G. Tricomi considered the following boundary value problem for (3): In Fig. 1, AC and BC are two characteristic curves of (3) and σ is a Jordan curve connecting A and B . We seek a solution of (3) in the domain D bounded by AC , BC , and σ that takes given values on σ and on one of the two characteristic curves, say on AC . This boundary value problem is called the **Tricomi problem**. Tricomi proved the existence and uniqueness of the solution of his problem under some conditions on the shape of σ and the smoothness of the boundary values. After Tricomi, much research has been done on his and similar problems for equations of form (2) [2]. We can also consider problems such as finding a solution of (3) (or of (2)) satisfying the initial conditions

$$z(0, y) = z_1(y), \quad (\partial z / \partial x)(0, y) = z_2(y)$$

on the common boundary $x=0$ of the elliptic domain and the hyperbolic domain of the equation. This is called the **singular initial value problem**. S. Bergman [3] obtained an integral formula for the solution under the condition that $z_1(y)$ and $z_2(y)$ are real analytic.

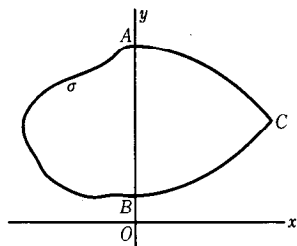


Fig. 1

D. Friedrichs's Theory

For the study of equations of mixed type it would of course be most convenient if there existed a general theory of boundary value problems independent of the type of the equation. However, constructing such a general theory is considered very difficult, because the well-posedness of boundary conditions as well as the analytic properties of solutions are quite different according to the type. The first contributor to the solution of this difficult problem was K. O. Friedrichs [4], who noticed that although the methods of solving the Cauchy problem and the Dirichlet problem are quite different, both methods utilize energy integrals in the proof of the uniqueness of solutions. Using this observation, he succeeded in constructing a unified theory that enables us to treat various types (including the mixed type) of linear equations in a single scheme—an admissible boundary value problem for a **symmetric positive system** of first-order linear

partial differential equations. There is, however, a difficulty in Friedrichs's theory since it does not give a unified procedure for reducing a given boundary value problem for a given equation to an admissible boundary value problem for a symmetric positive system of partial differential equations. The study of equations of mixed type that are of more general form than (2) by means of Friedrichs's theory is an open problem.

E. Further Studies

Work on equations of more general type than (2) or (3) has appeared (not all depending on Friedrichs's theory). For example, the following equations are treated in [5, 6, 7], respectively:

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial x_i^2} + \frac{t}{|t|} \frac{\partial z}{\partial t} = 0,$$

$$\left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x^2} + \frac{y}{|y|} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial y^2} \right)^n z = 0,$$

$$G(y) \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial y^2} - K(y)z = h,$$

where $z = (z_1, \dots, z_n)$ and $G(y)$ and $K(y)$ are symmetric matrices.

References

- [1] F. Tricomi, *Sulle equazioni lineari alle derivate parziali di 2° ordine di tipo misto*, Atti Acad. Naz. Lincei, (5) 14 (1923), 133–247.
- [2] L. Bers, *Mathematical aspects of subsonic and transonic gas dynamics*, Wiley, 1958.
- [3] S. Bergman, *An initial value problem for a class of equations of mixed type*, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 55 (1949), 165–174.
- [4] K. O. Friedrichs, *Symmetric positive linear differential equations*, Comm. Pure Appl. Math., 11 (1958), 333–418.
- [5] A. V. Bitsadze, *On the problem of Equations of mixed type in multi-dimensional domains* (in Russian), Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR, 110 (1956), 901–902.
- [6] V. I. Zhegalov, *Boundary value problem for higher-order equations of mixed type* (in Russian), Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR, 136 (1961), 274–276.
- [7] V. P. Didenko, *Some systems of differential equations of mixed type* (in Russian), Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR, 144 (1962), 709–712.
- [8] A. V. Bitsadze, *Equations of the mixed type*, Pergamon, 1964. (Original in Russian, 1959.)
- [9] M. M. Smirnov, *Equations of mixed type*, Amer. Math. Soc. Transl., 1978. (Original in Russian, 1970.)

327 (XIII.26) Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type

A. General Remarks

Consider a second-order linear partial differential equation

$$\sum_{i,j=1}^n \left[a_{ij}(x,t) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} + \sum_{i=1}^n b_i(x,t) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} \right] + c(x,t)u - \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = f \quad (1)$$

for an unknown function u of $(n+1)$ independent variables $(x,t) = (x_1, \dots, x_n, t)$, where $a_{ij} = a_{ji}$. This equation is said to be **parabolic** (or of **parabolic type**) if and only if the quadratic form $\sum a_{ij} \xi_i \xi_j$ in ξ is positive definite at each point (x,t) of the region under consideration. x and t are sometimes called the variables of space and of time, respectively.

The most widely studied of the parabolic equations is the **equation of heat conduction** (or the **heat equation**):

$$L[u] \equiv \Delta u - \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = 0, \quad (2)$$

where $\Delta = \sum_{i=1}^n \partial^2 / \partial x_i^2$ is the Laplacian taken over the space variables.

B. The Equation of Heat Conduction

The 1-dimensional case of the heat equation is

$$L[u] \equiv \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} - \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = 0 \quad (3)$$

for the temperature $u(x,t)$ in a rod, considered as a function of the distance x measured along the rod and the time t . Equation (3) was one of the first treated in the theory of partial differential equations. Consider a finite rod with constant temperature 0 at its ends $x=a$ and $x=b$. Thermodynamics suggests that the initial temperature $\varphi(x)$ ($\varphi(a) = \varphi(b) = 0$) prescribed at $t=0$ is sufficient to determine the distribution of heat $u(x,t)$ in the rod at all later times $t>0$. On such physical grounds, we can expect that a solution to the following problem exists: Find a continuous function $u(x,t)$ that satisfies equation (3) for $a \leq x \leq b$, $t>0$, and the boundary conditions

$$u(a,t) = u(b,t) = 0, \quad \lim_{t \downarrow 0} u(x,t) = \varphi(x), \quad a \leq x \leq b. \quad (4)$$

According to J. Fourier the answer to this problem is expressed in a series $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n u_n$ constructed by superposition of the particular

solutions $u_n = \sin \sqrt{\lambda_n} (x-a) \exp(-\lambda_n t)$. Here the λ_n are the roots of $\sin \sqrt{\lambda_n} (b-a) = 0$, and the c_n are chosen so that $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n u_n(x,0) = \varphi(x)$. In fact, if $\varphi(x)$ is continuously differentiable, then $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n u_n(x,t)$ is the required solution. Thus we are led to the problem of expanding a given function $\varphi(x)$ in a [†]Fourier series.

The temperature distribution in an infinite rod is given by a continuous function $u(x,t)$ that satisfies equation (3) for $t>0$ and that, for $t=0$, takes values given by $\varphi(x)$, where

$$\lim_{t \downarrow 0} u(x,t) = \varphi(x). \quad (5)$$

If $\varphi(x)$ is bounded, then it can also be represented by superposition of particular solutions $e^{-(\alpha-x)^2/4t}$ of (3) as

$$u(x,t) = \begin{cases} \frac{1}{2\sqrt{\pi t}} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \varphi(\alpha) e^{-(\alpha-x)^2/4t} d\alpha, & t>0, \\ \varphi(x), & t=0. \end{cases} \quad (6)$$

Partial differential equations of parabolic type are important because of their connection with various phenomena in the physical world; they include not only equations that govern the flow of heat but also those that describe diffusion processes (\rightarrow 115 Diffusion Processes).

C. Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type in Two Variables

We are concerned mainly with the partial differential equation of parabolic type in two variables:

$$a(x,t) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + 2b(x,t) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x \partial t} + c(x,t) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial t^2} + d(x,t) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + e(x,t) \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} + f(x,t)u = g, \quad (7)$$

with $ac = b^2$. In the region where $|a| + |c| > 0$, equation (7) can be reduced to the form

$$\frac{\partial^2 \omega}{\partial \xi^2} + d'(\xi, \tau) \frac{\partial \omega}{\partial \xi} + e'(\xi, \tau) \frac{\partial \omega}{\partial \tau} + f'(\xi, \tau) \omega = g' \quad (7')$$

by an appropriate change of variables $\xi = U(x,t)$, $\tau = V(x,t)$. If $e' < 0$ in this region, we can assume without loss of generality that our equation takes the canonical form

$$a(x,t) \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + b(x,t) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + c(x,t)u - \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = g, \quad (8)$$

with $a>0$, from the outset. It has the single family of [†]characteristics

$$t = \text{constant}. \quad (9)$$

There are four typical problems to be posed with regard to equation (8).

The first consists of determining, in some neighborhood of a given curve C nowhere tangent to a characteristic, a solution u that possesses prescribed values of u and $\partial u/\partial n$, or of a linear combination of u and $\partial u/\partial n$, along C . For instance, the problem of finding a solution $u(x, t)$ such that $u(x_0, t) = g(t)$ and $u_x(x_0, t) = h(t)$ for given functions $g(t)$ and $h(t)$ is a problem of this type. Consider the equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} - \frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = 0 \quad (10)$$

in the region $a < t < b$, $x_0 \leq x$. According to E. Holmgren, a solution $u(x, t)$ satisfying the conditions

$$\lim_{x \downarrow x_0} u(x, t) = g(t), \quad \lim_{x \downarrow x_0} u_x(x, t) = h(t), \quad (11)$$

where $g'(t)$ is bounded and continuous, exists if and only if

$$h(t) + \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi}} \int_a^t \frac{g'(\tau)}{\sqrt{t-\tau}} d\tau = k(t) \quad (12)$$

is of class C^∞ and satisfies

$$|k^{(n)}(t)| \leq M(n!)^2/r^n \quad (13)$$

for positive constants M and r .

In the second type of problem we are required to find in a region of the form

$$\varphi_1(t) \leq x \leq \varphi_2(t), \quad t_1 < t < t_2, \quad (14)$$

a solution of (8) that takes prescribed values on part of the boundary of that region. Here we impose the hypothesis on the curves $x = \varphi_1(t)$ and $x = \varphi_2(t)$ that they are nowhere tangent to a characteristic (9). M. Gevrey [3] showed that if such a solution does exist, the functions $\varphi_1(t)$ and $\varphi_2(t)$ must satisfy the Hölder condition with exponent $\alpha > 1/2$:

$$|\varphi_i(t+h) - \varphi_i(t)| \leq c|h|^\alpha, \quad c = \text{constant}, \quad (15)$$

for sufficiently small h . The problem of heat conduction mentioned in Section B corresponds to the particular case $\varphi_1(t) = \text{constant}$, $\varphi_2(t) = \text{constant}$, for which condition (15) is automatically fulfilled.

The third type of problem is to find in a region of the form

$$a \leq x \leq b, \quad t > 0, \quad (14')$$

a solution of (8) that satisfies the conditions

$$\lim_{t \downarrow 0} u(x, t) = \varphi(x);$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} - hu = 0 \quad \text{for } x = a, \quad h = \text{constant} > 0;$$

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + Hu = 0 \quad \text{for } x = b, \quad H = \text{constant} > 0.$$

(16)

This problem, posed for equation (10), is also a mathematical formulation of the problem of heat conduction in a rod [4]. If $\varphi(x)$ is of class C^1 , then the solution to this problem can be expanded as

$$u(x, t) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n e^{-\lambda_n t} \varphi_n(x),$$

$$c_n = \int_a^b \varphi(x) \varphi_n(x) dx, \quad (17)$$

where $\varphi_n(x)$ is a normalized function ($\int_a^b \varphi_n^2(x) dx = 1$) that satisfies the boundary conditions

$$\varphi_n'(a) - h\varphi_n(a) = 0, \quad \varphi_n'(b) + H\varphi_n(b) = 0 \quad (18)$$

and the equation

$$\frac{d^2 \varphi_n(x)}{dx^2} = -\lambda_n \varphi_n(x). \quad (19)$$

The fourth type of problem is to find a function $u(x, t)$ that satisfies (8) for $t > 0$ and the initial condition $\lim_{t \downarrow 0} u(x, t) = \varphi(x)$. It corresponds to the problem of heat conduction in an infinite rod.

D. Green's Formula

The adjoint of the differential operator $L[u]$ in (3) is given by

$$M[v] \equiv \frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial v}{\partial t}. \quad (20)$$

Integration by parts yields the identity

$$\iint_G (\psi L[\varphi] - \varphi M[\psi]) dx dt$$

$$= \int_C \varphi \psi dx + \int_C \left(\psi \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x} - \varphi \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial x} \right) dt, \quad (21)$$

where G is the region bounded by the closed curve C , and the line integral on the right is evaluated in the counterclockwise direction over C . We call (21) **Green's formula** for the partial differential equation of parabolic type (3). As in the case of partial differential equations of elliptic type (\rightarrow 323 Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type), this formula is used to establish the uniqueness of the solution of (3) and to derive an integral representation for it.

For example, the uniqueness of the solution is established in the following way: Let the curve \widehat{AD} and \widehat{BE} in Fig. 1 be such that no characteristic meets either of them in more than one point. If $u(x, t)$ is continuous in the closed region $(ABED)$, vanishes on \widehat{AD} , \widehat{BE} , and the segment \widehat{AB} , and satisfies equation (3) in $(ABED)$ except on \widehat{AB} , then it vanishes identically. Green's formula (21), applied to the region $G = (ABQP)$ and the functions $\psi \equiv 1$,

$\varphi \equiv u^2$, yields

$$2 \iint_G \left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} \right)^2 dx dt + \int_{\overline{PQ}} u^2 dx = 0.$$

In a similar way, by extending Green's formula suitably, we are able to prove uniqueness theorems for the four problems stated in Section C for more general linear parabolic equations.

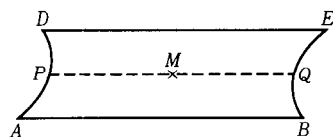


Fig. 1

To obtain a representation for solutions we proceed as follows: Let $u(x, t)$ be a solution of (3) and Let

$$U(x, \beta, x, t) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{4\pi(\beta - t)}} e^{-(\alpha - x)^2/4(\beta - t)} \quad (22)$$

be a particular solution. Applying Green's formula to the region ($PABQMP$) and the functions $\varphi = u(x, t)$, $\psi = U(x_0, t_0 + h, x, t)$, where h is a positive number and M is a point with coordinates (x_0, t_0) , we obtain

$$\begin{aligned} & \int_{\overline{PQ}} u(x, t_0) e^{-(x_0 - x)^2/4h} \frac{dx}{\sqrt{4\pi h}} \\ &= \int_{\overline{PABQ}} u(x, t) U(x_0, t_0 + h, x, t) dx \\ &+ \left(U \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} - u \frac{\partial U}{\partial x} \right) dt. \end{aligned}$$

Since the integral in the left-hand side of this equality approaches $u(x_0, t_0)$ as $h \downarrow 0$, we can establish the basic representation formula

$$\begin{aligned} u(x_0, t_0) &= \int_{\overline{PABQ}} u(x, t) U(x_0, t_0, x, t) dx \\ &+ \left(U \frac{\partial u}{\partial x} - u \frac{\partial U}{\partial x} \right) dt \end{aligned} \quad (23)$$

for solutions u of (3). Formula (23) shows that $u(x_0, t_0)$ is determined in terms of the particular solution (22) if we know the values of u and $\partial u / \partial x$ on the part \overline{PABQ} of the boundary of the region ($ABED$). The function (22) is called the **fundamental solution** of (3) because it plays the same role as the fundamental solution $\log r$ ($r = ((\alpha - x)^2 + (\beta - y)^2)^{1/2}$) of Laplace's equation $\partial^2 u / \partial x^2 + \partial^2 u / \partial y^2 = 0$.

Similarly, the following function E (called the **Gauss kernel**) is a fundamental solution of equation (2):

$$E(\alpha, \beta, x, t) = (4\pi(\beta - t))^{-n/2} \exp \left\{ -\frac{|\alpha - x|^2}{4(\beta - t)} \right\}, \quad (24)$$

where $(x, \alpha) \in \mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{R}^n$ and $t < \beta$. For equation (3), the following **maximum principle** holds: In the region ($ABED$) of Fig. 1, suppose that $L[u] \geq 0$ and that u takes its maximum value K at an interior point M . Then u is identically equal to K on the segment \overline{QP} and in the region ($ABQP$). More generally, various versions of the maximum principle are known for equation (1) [5].

E. The Laplace Transform Method

Let $u(x, t)$ be a solution of (3) for $t > 0$ and

$$v(x, \lambda) = \int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda t} u(x, t) dt, \quad \lambda > 0, \quad (25)$$

be its \dagger Laplace transform with respect to t . Utilizing integration by parts, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda t} u_t(x, t) dt &= [e^{-\lambda t} u(x, t)]_{t=0}^{t=\infty} \\ &+ \lambda \int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda t} u(x, t) dt \\ &= -\varphi(x) + \lambda v(x, \lambda), \end{aligned} \quad (26)$$

provided that $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} e^{-\lambda t} u(x, t) = 0$ and $\lim_{t \downarrow 0} u(x, t) = \varphi(x)$. We find in view of (3):

$$\frac{\partial^2 v}{\partial x^2} = \lambda v(x, \lambda) - \varphi(x). \quad (26')$$

Once the solution of (26') has been found, the desired solution of (3) can be derived by inverting the Laplace transform (25). This idea can also be applied to the solution of parabolic equations with constant coefficients in $(n + 1)$ variables, such as (1).

F. General Second-Order Equations of Parabolic Type

Consider the equation (1) with $f = 0$, which can be written as

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = A(t)u, \quad (27)$$

where $A(t)$ is a second-order \dagger elliptic operator with parameter t . Let D be a region (bounded or unbounded) of points x whose boundary is a smooth hypersurface S . We pose the following initial boundary value problem for (27): Find a function $u(x, t)$ that satisfies in $D \times (0, \infty)$ equation (27) together with the conditions

$$\lim_{t \downarrow 0} u(x, t) = \varphi(x), \quad x \in D,$$

$$\partial u(x, t) / \partial n + h(x, t) u(x, t) = f(x, t), \quad x \in S, \quad (16')$$

where $\partial / \partial n$ is the directional derivative in the

outward conormal direction at (x, t) ($x \in S$), and $h(x, t) \geq 0$.

The Laplace transform is not suitable for solving problems (27) and (16'). Instead, the theory of 1-parameter semigroups of linear operators (\rightarrow 378 Semigroups of Operators and Evolution Equations) can be applied to establish similar fundamental results. Let m be a large positive integer. For $t > 0$, put $t_k = k\delta$ for $k = 0, 1, \dots, m-1$ with $\delta = t/m$. By the Laplace transform method as described above, we can associate with ψ a unique solution v of $A(t_k)v = \lambda v - \psi$ with $\lambda = 1/\delta$. We put $R_k\psi = \lambda v$. By iterating this procedure m times, we have a function $u_m(x, t) = R_{m-1}R_{m-2} \dots R_0\varphi$ starting from the initial value φ at $t = 0$. Then we obtain a solution $u(x, t)$ of (27) and (16') as the limit of $u_m(x, t)$ as $m \rightarrow \infty$. The following results are known [6, 7]: (i) There exists a $u = U(\xi, \tau, x, t)$ ($x, \xi \in D, t > \tau \geq 0$) that, as a function of x and t , satisfies equation (27) and the homogeneous boundary conditions (16') with $\varphi = 0, f = 0$. (ii) The function $u(x, t)$ defined by

$$u(x, t) = \int_D \varphi(\xi) U(\xi, 0, x, t) d\xi + \int_0^t d\tau \int_S f(\xi, \tau) \left(U(\xi, \tau, x, t) - \frac{\partial U(\xi, \tau, x, t)}{\partial n_\xi} \right) dS_\xi \quad (23')$$

is a solution of (27) and satisfies (16'). Thus $U(\xi, \tau, x, t)$ is a generalization of the function (24), called the **fundamental solution** of the linear parabolic equation (27) with boundary conditions (16'). Besides the properties (i) and (ii), the fundamental solution satisfies $U(\xi, \tau, x, t) \geq 0, \int_D U(\xi, \tau, z, w) U(z, w, x, t) dz = U(\xi, \tau, x, t)$ ($\tau < w < t$), and further $\int_D U(\xi, \tau, x, t) dx = 1$ under some additional assumptions. Therefore this theory is of considerable significance from the point of view of the theory of probability (\rightarrow 115 Diffusion Processes).

It can be shown that a weak solution of the parabolic equation (27) is a genuine solution. That is, if $u(x, t)$ is locally summable and

$$\int_0^\infty \int_D u(x, t) \left(\frac{\partial \varphi(x, t)}{\partial t} + A(t)^* \varphi(x, t) \right) dx dt = 0$$

for any function $\varphi(x, t)$ of class C^2 in $D \times (0, \infty)$ and vanishing outside a compact subset of D ($A(t)^*$ is the adjoint of the partial differential operator $A(t)$ and $dx = dx_1 \dots dx_{n-1}$), then $u(x, t)$ satisfies (27) in $D \times (0, \infty)$ in the usual sense. In particular, when the coefficients of $A(t)$ are infinitely differentiable, any solution $u(x, t)$ of (27) in the distribution sense is a genuine solution (\rightarrow 125 Distributions and Hyperfunctions).

If the function h in the boundary conditions (16') and the coefficients of A are independent of t , then the fundamental solution $U(\xi, \tau, x, t)$ depends only on ξ, x , and $t - \tau$ and is written as $U(\xi, x; t - \tau)$ ($t > \tau$). Furthermore, if A is self-adjoint, then there exist a sequence of eigenfunctions $\{\psi_p(x; \lambda) | p = 1, 2, \dots\}$ ($A\psi_p + \lambda\psi_p = 0$) and a sequence $\{\rho_p(\lambda)\}$ of measures on the real line for which the following hold: (1) The fundamental solution $U(\xi, x; t)$ is expressed in the form

$$U(\xi, x; t) = \sum_{p=1}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda t} \psi_p(\xi; \lambda) \psi_p(x; \lambda) d\rho_p(\lambda).$$

(2) The solution $u(x, t)$ of (27) satisfying (16') with $f(x, t) \equiv 0$ is expanded as

$$u(x, t) = \sum_{p=1}^{\infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda t} \psi_p(x; \lambda) \varphi_p(\lambda) d\rho_p(\lambda),$$

where

$$\varphi_p(\lambda) = \int_D \psi_p(x; \lambda) \varphi(x) dx$$

($\varphi(x)$ is the function given in (16')).

G. Nash's Results

Let us consider a parabolic equation

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = \sum_{i,j=1}^n \frac{\partial}{\partial x_j} \left\{ a_{ij}(x, t) \frac{\partial u}{\partial x_i} \right\}, \quad (28)$$

where $a_{ij} = a_{ji}$ are real-valued functions of class C^∞ and equal to constants outside a fixed compact set of \mathbf{R}^n for all $t \geq t_0$ (this regularity assumption can be relaxed). Suppose that there exists a constant $\lambda \geq 1$ such that $\lambda^{-1} |\xi|^2 \leq \sum a_{ij}(x, t) \xi_i \xi_j \leq \lambda |\xi|^2$ for all $(t, x, \xi) \in (t_0, \infty) \times \mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{R}^n$. Then, for any bounded solution $u(x, t)$ of (28) in $(t_0, \infty) \times \mathbf{R}^n$ and for any (x, y, t, s) such that $x \in \mathbf{R}^n, y \in \mathbf{R}^n$, and $t_0 < t \leq s$, the inequality

$$|u(x, t) - u(y, s)| \leq AB \left\{ \left(\frac{x-y}{\sqrt{t-t_0}} \right)^\alpha + \left(\frac{s-t}{t-t_0} \right)^\beta \right\}, \quad (29)$$

holds, where $B = \sup \{|u(x, t)| | t \geq t_0, x \in \mathbf{R}^n\}$ and $\beta = \alpha/(2\alpha + 2)$. In this inequality, the constants α and A are positive, depending on (n, λ) but independent of the particular choice of (a_{ij}) , t_0 and of u [9].

As a corollary to this theorem, J. Nash proved that, if the a_{ij} do not contain t and if $v(x)$ is a bounded solution in \mathbf{R}^n of the elliptic equation obtained by replacing $\partial u / \partial t$ by 0 in (28), the inequality

$$|v(x) - v(y)| \leq A'B' |x - y|^\sigma \quad (30)$$

holds for any $(x, y) \in \mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{R}^n$, where $\sigma = \alpha/(\alpha + 1)$ with α in (29) and $B' = \sup |v(x)|$. The constant

A' depends only on (n, λ) (\rightarrow 323 Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type L).

H. Partial Differential Equations of p -Parabolic Type

Let p and m be given positive integers. Let us consider an equation for an unknown function u of $(n+1)$ independent variables (x, t) of the type

$$\frac{\partial^m u}{\partial t^m} + \sum_{\alpha, j} a_{\alpha, j}(x, t) \frac{\partial^\alpha}{\partial x^\alpha} \frac{\partial^j u}{\partial t^j} = f, \quad (31)$$

where $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)$ and $\partial^\alpha / \partial x^\alpha = (\partial / \partial x_1)^{\alpha_1} \dots (\partial / \partial x_n)^{\alpha_n}$. We write also $|\alpha| = \alpha_1 + \dots + \alpha_n$. In (31), $\sum_{\alpha, j}$ is the summation taken over the (α, j) such that $pj + |\alpha| \leq pm$ and $0 \leq j < m$. Let us denote by $\{\lambda_k(x, t, \xi)\}_{k=1}^m$ the roots λ of the equation

$$\lambda^m + \sum_{\alpha, j} a_{\alpha, j}(x, t) (i\xi)^\alpha \lambda^j = 0, \quad (32)$$

where $\sum_{\alpha, j}$ is the summation over the (α, j) 's such that $pj + |\alpha| = pm$ and that $0 \leq j < m$. We say that the equation (31) is **p -parabolic** (or of **p -parabolic type**) in the sense of I. G. Petrovskii if and only if there exists a positive number δ such that

$$\operatorname{Re} \lambda_k(x, t, \xi) \leq -\delta |\xi|^p, \quad 1 \leq k \leq m, \quad (33)$$

for any (x, t) in the region under consideration and for any $\xi \in \mathbf{R}^n$. The integer p is then seen to be even. Equation (27) is p -parabolic if $-A(t)$ is strongly elliptic of order p . The heat equation (2) is 2-parabolic in this sense. Similarly, we can define the p -parabolic systems of equations [10].

p -parabolic equations are known to be \dagger hypoelliptic if the coefficients are of class C^∞ [11]. S. D. Eidel'man obtained precise estimates of the fundamental solutions and of their derivatives for p -parabolic equations [10]. The mixed initial boundary value problems are investigated in detail also by Eidel'man [10] and by R. Arima (*J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 4 (1964)).

References

- [1] L. Bers, S. Bochner, and F. John, Contributions to the theory of partial differential equations, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1954.
- [2] A. Friedman, Partial differential equations of parabolic type, Prentice-Hall, 1964.
- [3] M. Gevrey, Les équations aux dérivées partielles du type paraboliques, J. Math. Pures Appl., 9 (1913), 305–471; 10 (1914), 105–147.
- [4] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, Methods of mathematical physics, Interscience, I, 1953, II, 1962.
- [5] M. H. Protter and H. F. Weinberger, Maximum principles in differential equations, Prentice-Hall, 1967.
- [6] S. Ito, Fundamental solutions of parabolic differential equations and boundary value problems, Japan, J. Math., 27 (1957), 55–102.
- [7] A. M. Il'in, A. S. Kalashnikov, and O. A. Oleinik, Linear equations of the second order of parabolic type, Russian Math. Surveys, 17-3 (1962), 1–143. (Original in Russian, 1962.)
- [8] J. L. Lions, Equations différentielles opérationnelles et problèmes aux limites, Springer, 1961.
- [9] J. Nash, Continuity of solutions of parabolic and elliptic equations, Amer. J. Math., 80 (1958), 931–954.
- [10] S. D. Eidel'man, Parabolic systems, North-Holland, 1969. (Original in Russian, 1963.)
- [11] S. Mizohata, Hypocoellipticité des équations paraboliques, Bull. Soc. Math. France, 85 (1957), 15–50.

328 (V.6) Partitions of Numbers

A **partition** of a positive integer n is an expression of n as the sum of positive integers. The number of partitions of n , where the order of the summands is ignored and repetition is permitted, is denoted by $p(n)$ and is called the **number of partitions** of n . For example $p(5) = 7$ since $5 = 4 + 1 = 3 + 2 = 3 + 1 + 1 = 2 + 2 + 1 = 2 + 1 + 1 + 1 = 1 + 1 + 1 + 1 + 1$. Therefore, $p(n)$ equals the number of \dagger conjugate classes of the \dagger symmetric group of order n and is closely related to the \dagger representation theory of this group.

The \dagger generating function of $p(n)$ is

$$f(x) = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} p(n)x^n = \left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - x^n) \right)^{-1}.$$

The unit circle $|x| = 1$ is the \dagger natural boundary of $f(x)$, which is holomorphic in $|x| < 1$. The **Dedekind eta function**, which is closely related to $f(x)$, is defined by the following formula for the complex variable τ taking values in the upper half-plane:

$$\eta(\tau) = \exp(\pi i \tau / 12) \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - \exp(2\pi i n \tau)).$$

Hence $\eta(\tau + 1) = \exp(\pi i / 12) \eta(\tau)$. L. Euler (1748) obtained the following formula (called the **pentagonal number theorem** because $n(3n-1)/2$

is a †pentagonal number):

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1-x^n) = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^n (x^{n(3n-1)/2} + x^{n(3n+1)/2}).$$

This follows easily from the **Jacobi-Biehler equality**

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \{(1-q^{2n})(1+q^{2n-1}z)(1+q^{2n-1}z^{-1})\} = 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} q^{n^2} (z^n + z^{-n}) \quad (|q| < 1, \quad z \neq 0).$$

By using the †transformation formula for \mathfrak{g} -functions, we can infer from the pentagonal number theorem that $\eta(-1/\tau) = \sqrt{\tau/i} \eta(\tau)$. Hence, if a, b, c, d are integers satisfying $ad - bc = 1$ and $c > 0$, then

$$\eta\left(\frac{a\tau + b}{c\tau + d}\right) = \varepsilon \sqrt{\frac{c\tau + d}{i}} \eta(\tau),$$

where ε is a 24th root of unity. It is known that $\eta(\tau)$ is a †cusp form of weight $-1/2$ with respect to the full †modular group $\Gamma(1)$ [9, 11]. C. L. Siegel (1955) gave a simple proof of the formula $\eta(-1/\tau) = \sqrt{2/i} \eta(\tau)$. Later S. Iseki (1957) gave another proof by using a new method, known as the $\alpha - \beta$ formula [12].

The size of $p(n)$ increases rapidly with n ; for instance $p(10) = 42$ and $p(100) = 190,569,292$. By making use of a remarkable identity, G. H. Hardy and S. Ramanujan (1918) proved the following inequalities, where A and B are suitable constants:

$$(A/n)e^{2\sqrt{n}} < p(n) < (B/n)e^{2\sqrt{2}\sqrt{n}}.$$

Subsequently they obtained

$$p(n) \sim (1/4\sqrt{3}n) \exp(\pi\sqrt{2n/3}).$$

After, P. Erdős (1942) and D. J. Newman (1951), A. G. Postnikov [8] succeeded in proving

$$p(n) = \frac{\exp(\pi\sqrt{2n/3})}{4\sqrt{3}n} \left(1 + O\left(\frac{\log n}{n^{1/4}}\right)\right)$$

by means of an elementary function-theoretic method. Multiplying both sides of Euler's formula by the generating function of $p(n)$ and comparing the coefficients, we obtain

$$\sum_{0 \leq \omega_k \leq n} (-1)^{k-1} p(n - \omega_k) = 0,$$

where $\omega_k = k(3k-1)/2$ ($k=0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$) is a pentagonal number. From this formula we can calculate $p(n)$ successively; in fact P. A. MacMahon obtained in this way the values of $p(n)$ for n up to 200.

Hardy and Ramanujan proved the following **transformation formula** for the generating

function $f(x)$ of $p(n)$:

$$\begin{aligned} f\left(\exp\left(\frac{2\pi i h}{k} - \frac{2\pi z}{k}\right)\right) \\ = W_{h,k} \sqrt{z} \exp\left(\frac{\pi}{12kz} - \frac{\pi z}{12k}\right) \\ \times f\left(\exp\left(\frac{2\pi i h'}{k} - \frac{2\pi}{kz}\right)\right), \end{aligned}$$

$$(h, k) = 1, \quad hh' \equiv -1 \pmod{k},$$

where $W_{h,k}$ is defined by

$$W_{h,k} = \exp(\pi i s(h, k))$$

and the value of $s(h, k)$ was given by Rademacher in the form

$$s(h, k) = \sum_{m=1}^{k-1} \frac{m}{k} \left(\left(\frac{hm}{k} \right) \right).$$

Here the symbol $((t))$ in the sum denotes the function that is 0 for integral t and $t - [t] - 1/2$ otherwise ($[]$ is the †Gauss symbol). With regard to the **Dedekind sum** $s(h, k)$, we have the **reciprocity law for Dedekind sums**:

$$s(h, k) + s(k, h) = -\frac{1}{4} + \frac{1}{12} \left(\frac{h}{k} + \frac{k}{h} + \frac{1}{hk} \right).$$

If we make substitutions $a = h'$, $b = (hh' + 1)/k$, $c = k$, and $d = -h$ in the Hardy-Ramanujan transformation formula, then the ε appearing in the transformation formula of $\eta(\tau)$ is seen to be equal to $\exp(-\pi i s(c, d) + \pi i (a + d)/12c)$. A direct proof of the transformation formula and the reciprocity law was given by K. Iseki (1952).

According to Cauchy's integral formula, $p(n)$ can be represented as an integral:

$$\frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{\Gamma} \frac{f(x)}{x^{n+1}} dx,$$

where the contour Γ is taken inside the unit circle around the origin. The generating function $f(x)$ varies greatly: namely, letting $r \rightarrow 1 - 0$ in $x = r \exp(2\pi i p/q)$, where p and q are fixed integers, it follows from the transformation formula that $f(x) \sim \exp(\pi^2/6q^2(1-r))$. Nevertheless, we can deal with the integral by the †circle method, introduced by Hardy and Ramanujan, which threw light on recent additive number theory. Hardy and Ramanujan thus obtained

$$p(n) = \frac{1}{2\pi\sqrt{2}} \frac{d}{dn} \left(\frac{\exp(C\lambda_n)}{\lambda_n} \right) + O(\exp(D\sqrt{n})),$$

where

$$\lambda_n = \sqrt{n - 1/24}, \quad C = \pi\sqrt{2/3}, \quad D > C/2.$$

The theory was improved by Rademacher (1937, 1943), who expanded $p(n)$ into the

series

$$p(n) = \frac{1}{\pi\sqrt{2}} \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} A_k(n) k^{1/2} \frac{d}{dn} \left(\frac{\sinh(C\lambda_n/k)}{\lambda_n} \right),$$

where

$$A_k(n) = \sum_{h(\bmod k), (h, k)=1} W_{h,k} \exp(-2\pi i h n / k).$$

Rademacher (1954) proved further that

$$p(n) = 2\pi \left(\frac{\pi}{12} \right)^{3/2} \times \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} A_k(n) k^{-5/2} L_{3/2} \left(\left(\frac{\pi}{12k} \right)^2 (24n-1) \right),$$

where

$$L_v(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{z^n}{n! \Gamma(v+n+1)}.$$

Rademacher (1943) had developed an ingenious proof by taking "Ford's circle" as the contour Γ .

Ramanujan observed that $p(5m+4) \equiv 0 \pmod{5}$, $p(7m+5) \equiv 0 \pmod{7}$, and $p(11m+6) \equiv 0 \pmod{11}$. Rademacher (1942) and Newman studied these cases by using $\eta(\tau)$. More generally, A. O. L. Atkin proved that if $24n \equiv 1 \pmod{5^a 7^b 11^c}$ then $p(n) \equiv 0 \pmod{5^a 7^b 11^c}$ (*Glasgow Math. J.*, 8 (1967)). At present, this is the best result.

Let $n = n_1 + n_2 + \dots + n_s$ be a partition of n . Many problems arise when we put additional conditions on the n_i . For instance, we may require that the n_i satisfy certain congruence relations (L. K. Hua (1942), S. Iseki (1959)) or are powers of integers (E. M. J. Wright (1934), L. Schoenfeld (1944), S. Iseki (1959)) or are powers of primes (T. Mitsui (1957)). The partition problem can also be extended to the case of an algebraic number field of finite degree (Rademacher, G. Meinardus (1953), Mitsui (1978)).

References

- [1] R. G. Ayoub, An introduction to the analytic theory of numbers, Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys, 1963.
- [2] G. H. Hardy and S. Ramanujan, Asymptotic formulae in combinatory analysis, Proc. London Math. Soc., (2) 17 (1918), 75–115.
- [3] G. H. Hardy and E. M. Wright, An introduction to the theory of numbers, Clarendon Press, fourth edition, 1965.
- [4] K. Iseki, A proof of a transformation formula in the theory of partitions, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 4 (1952), 14–26.
- [5] H. A. Rademacher, Lectures on analytic number theory, Tata Inst. Fund. Res., 1954–1955.

- [6] S. Ramanujan, Collected papers of Srinivasa Ramanujan, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1927 (Chelsea, 1962).
- [7] H. Petersson, Über Modulfunktionen und Partitionenprobleme, Abh. Deutsch. Akad. Wiss., Berlin Kl. Math. Allg. Nat., 1954, no. 2.
- [8] A. G. Postnikov, Introduction to the analytical theory of numbers (in Russian), Moscow, 1971.
- [9] M. I. Knopp, Modular functions in analytic number theory, Markham, 1970.
- [10] T. Mitsui, On the partition problem in an algebraic number field, Tokyo J. Math., 1 (1978).
- [11] H. A. Rademacher, Topics in analytic number theory, Springer, 1973.
- [12] S. Iseki, The transformation formula for the Dedekind modular function and related functional equations, Duke Math. J., 24 (1957), 653–662.

329 (XXI.38) Pascal, Blaise

Blaise Pascal (June 19, 1623–August 19, 1662) was born in Clermont-Ferrand in southern France. He lost his mother when still an infant and was brought up by his father, Etienne Pascal (discoverer of the curve called Pascal's \dagger limaçon). As a youth, he demonstrated a remarkable ability for mathematics. In 1640, under the influence of Desargues, he discovered \dagger Pascal's theorem on conic sections, and in 1642 invented an adding machine. After hearing of Toricelli's experiments in 1646, he became interested in the theory of fluids and on his own began to conduct experiments; this research put to rest the prevailing opinion that nature abhors a vacuum and that, therefore, a vacuum cannot exist. Pascal formulated the principle stating that pressure, when applied at any point within a contained liquid, is transmitted throughout the fluid. By means of this principle, he explained various phenomena concerning fluids such as the atmosphere and laid the foundations for hydrostatics.

Between 1652 and 1654, Pascal was preoccupied with social affairs, but subsequently he began to devote himself to religion. He entered the Abbey Port-Royal of the Jansenist sect, where he remained until his death. Immediately before his entry, however, he and Fermat exchanged correspondence about games of chance, and these letters proved to be the beginning of the theory of \dagger probability. Concerning games of chance, Pascal had conducted research on \dagger Pascal's triangle, and in this study he formulated and used \dagger mathemat-

ical induction. He also indicated a way to obtain the sum of the m th powers of the consecutive terms of an arithmetic progression, and with an intuitive idea of limits obtained the formula $\int_0^a x^m dx = a^{m+1}/(m+1)$. While in Port-Royal, he published *Lettres provinciales* (1657), in which he carried on a dispute with the Jesuits. His book *Pensées* shows his deep involvement with religion; however, he did not abandon mathematics. In 1658, he determined the area enclosed by a cycloid and its base, the barycenter and area of the figure enclosed by a cycloid and straight lines parallel to its base, and the volume of the figure obtained by rotating it around these lines. The study of the methods used by Pascal to obtain these results, which were forerunners of differential and integral calculus, led Leibniz to discover the fundamental theorem of calculus. Pascal also formulated clear ideas about axioms.

References

- [1] L. Brunschvicg (ed.), B. Pascal, Oeuvres I–XIV, Hachette, 1904–1914.
- [2] J. Chevalier (ed.), B. Pascal, Oeuvres complètes, Bibliothèque de Pléiades, Gallimard, 1954.
- [3] Kôkiti Hara, L'Oeuvre mathématique de Pascal, Mém. de la Faculté des Lettres de l'Univ. d'Osaka, no. 21, 1981.

330 (II.8) Permutations and Combinations

Let there be given a set Ω of n elements. If we choose k distinct elements of Ω and arrange them in a row, we have a k -array or k -permutation of elements of Ω . The number of such arrays is $(n)_k = n(n-1) \dots (n-k+1)$. The polynomial $(x)_k = x(x-1) \dots (x-k+1)$ in x of degree k is called the **Jordan factorial** of degree k . In particular, $(n)_n = n!$, n **factorial**, is the number of permutations of Ω . A subset of Ω is called a k -subset if it contains exactly k elements. The number of k -subsets (or k -combinations) of Ω is $\binom{n}{k} = (n)_k/k!$. The **binomial coefficients** $\binom{x}{n}$ are defined by the generating function $(1+z)^x = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \binom{x}{n} z^n$. For any complex number x , the series is conver-

330 Ref.

Permutations and Combinations

gent for $|z| < 1$, and it is verified that $\binom{x}{n} = (x)_n/n!$ in terms of the Jordan factorial $(x)_n$. The same results hold in a \dagger complete field with \dagger valuation, in particular in a \dagger p -adic number field. In any case, we have the recursive relation

$$\binom{x}{n} = \binom{x-1}{n} + \binom{x-1}{n-1} \quad (n \geq 1),$$

$$\binom{x}{0} = 1,$$

and in general

$$\sum_{k=0}^n \binom{x}{k} \binom{y}{n-k} = \binom{x+y}{n},$$

which leads to many identities involving binomial coefficients. The recursive relation

allows us to compute the values of $\binom{n}{k}$ easily

for small integers n, k , as was noticed by Pascal. The arrangement of these values in a triangular form:

$$\begin{array}{ccccccc} & & & & 1 & & \\ & & & 1 & & 1 & \\ & & 1 & & 2 & & 1 \\ & 1 & & 3 & & 3 & & 1 \\ 1 & & 4 & & 6 & & 4 & & 1 \end{array}$$

is called **Pascal's triangle**. For integral values x , $(1+z)^x$ are polynomials, and we have $(a+b)^n = \sum_{k=0}^n \binom{n}{k} a^{n-k} b^k$ (**binomial theorem**). As a generalization, we have

$$(a_1 + \dots + a_m)^n = \sum \frac{n!}{p_1! \dots p_m!} a_1^{p_1} \dots a_m^{p_m}$$

(**multinomial theorem**), where the sum is extended over all nonnegative p_i with $\sum p_i = n$.

The number of ways of choosing k elements, allowing repetition, from a set of n elements is

$$(-1)^k \binom{-n}{k} = \binom{n+k-1}{k}.$$

This is also the number of nonnegative integral solutions of $\sum_{i=1}^n x_i = k$. As an example of binomial coefficients with noninteger arguments, we have

$$\binom{-1/2}{n} = (-1)^n 2^{-2n} \binom{2n}{n}.$$

References

- [1] E. Netto, Lehrbuch der Combinatorik, Teubner, second edition, 1927 (Chelsea, 1958).
- [2] P. A. MacMahon, Combinatory analysis I, II, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1915–1916 (Chelsea, 1960).
- [3] J. Riordan, Combinatorial identities, Wiley, 1968.

331 (XII.13) Perturbation of Linear Operators

A. General Remarks

Historically, the perturbation method was developed as an approximation device in classical and quantum mechanics. In the perturbation theory of eigenvalues and eigenfunctions, created by L. Rayleigh and E. Schrödinger, the main concern was to find solutions as power series in a parameter κ that could be regarded as small. In the perturbation theory for linear operators, however, we are concerned more generally with the behavior of spectral properties of linear operators when the operators undergo small change. The foundation of the mathematical theory, including a complete convergence proof of perturbation series, was laid down by F. Rellich [1] and T. Kato [2, 3]. Another major topic in the perturbation theory for linear operators is the perturbation of continuous spectra, which was initiated by K. O. Friedrichs (*Math. Ann.*, 115 (1938); [4]). It is closely related to scattering theory and is discussed more fully in 375 Scattering Theory. A standard reference in this field is [5] (also \rightarrow [6, 7]). Most of the material presented in this article is taken from [5].

For problems in Hilbert spaces there are two general frameworks in which to formulate perturbation situations: the operator formulation and the form formulation. In the former we deal with a family of operators $T(\kappa)$ directly, while in the latter, we deal with associated semibounded Hermitian (or, more generally, sectorial) forms $t(\kappa)$. The latter is applicable only when there is semiboundedness (or a sectorial property) inherent in the problem, but is usually more general than the former in such problems, since the latter (resp. the former) requires roughly the constancy of the domain of the "square root" of $T(\kappa)$ (resp. the domain of $T(\kappa)$). In this article we discuss problems in the operator formulation. For the form formulation \rightarrow [5] and [7].

In this article X, Y, \dots , are complex Banach spaces and T, A, \dots are linear operators unless other specifications are made. The following notations defined in 251 Linear Operators are used without further explanation: $D(T)$, $R(T)$, $\mathbf{B}(X, Y)$, $\mathbf{B}(X)$, $\Gamma(T)$ (the graph of T), $\sigma(T)$ (the spectrum of T), $\rho(T)$ (the resolvent set of T), and $R(\zeta; T)$ (the resolvent of T). We also use $C(X, Y)$ (resp. $A(X, Y)$) to denote the set of all * closed linear operators (resp. all * linear operators) from X to Y and $C(X) = C(X, X)$.

B. Stability of Basic Properties

(1) Let $T \in C(X, Y)$. Important notions for characterizing the smallness of $A \in A(X, Z)$ relative to T are the following. (i) A is said to be **relatively bounded** with respect to T (or simply **T -bounded**) if $D(A) \supset D(T)$ and there exist $a, b \geq 0$ such that

$$(*) \quad \|Au\|_Z \leq a\|u\|_X + b\|Tu\|_Y \text{ for all } u \in D(T).$$

The infimum, denoted by $\|A\|_T$, of b for which $(*)$ holds with some a is called the T -bound of A . (ii) A is said to be **relatively compact** with respect to T (or **T -compact**) if $D(A) \supset D(T)$ and A is compact from $D(T)$ with the graph norm of T to Z (\rightarrow 68 Compact and Nuclear operators F). T -compactness of A implies T -boundedness (and in Hilbert spaces $\|A\|_T = 0$).

(2) Let $T \in C(X, Y)$, and let $A \in A(X, Y)$ be T -bounded. (i) If $\|A\|_T < 1$ (or if A is T -compact), then $T + A \in C(X, Y)$. (ii) If, in addition, $X = Y$ is a Hilbert space, T is * self-adjoint, and A is * symmetric, then $T + A$ is self-adjoint (**Rellich-Kato theorem**) [1, 8]. (iii) Suppose that T is a * Fredholm operator. If either A is T -compact or the inequality $(*)$ holds with constants a, b satisfying $b\rho + a < \rho$ for a certain positive number ρ determined by T , then $T + A$ is a Fredholm operator and $\text{ind}(T + A) = \text{ind } T$ (for $\text{ind } T$, $\text{nul } T$, and $\text{def } T \rightarrow$ 251 Linear Operators). In the latter case where $b\rho + a < \rho$, we also have $\text{nul}(T + A) \leq \text{nul } T$ and $\text{def}(T + A) \leq \text{def } T$.

C. Continuity and Analyticity of Families of Closed Operators

In order to handle unbounded operators, which are important in applications, it is necessary to introduce generalized notions of convergence and analyticity of families of closed operators.

(1) $C(X, Y)$ becomes a * metric space by a distance function $\hat{d}(S, T)$ having the property that $\hat{\delta}(\Gamma(S), \Gamma(T)) \leq \hat{d}(S, T) \leq 2\hat{\delta}(\Gamma(S), \Gamma(T))$, where for closed subspaces M and N we put

$$\hat{\delta}(M, N) = \max[\delta(M, N), \delta(N, M)],$$

$$\delta(M, N) = \sup_{u \in M, \|u\|=1} \text{dist}(u, N); \delta(0, N) = 0.$$

$\hat{\delta}(M, N)$ is called the **gap** between M and N [5]. When $T_n \rightarrow T$ in this metric, T_n is said to converge to T in the generalized sense. This **generalized convergence** coincides with the norm convergence if $T_n, T \in \mathbf{B}(X, Y)$. If $X = Y$ and $\rho(T) \neq \emptyset$, then $T_n \rightarrow T$ in the generalized sense if and only if for some (or equivalently all) $\zeta \in \rho(T)$ we have $\zeta \in \rho(T_n)$ for sufficiently large n and $\|R(\zeta; T_n) - R(\zeta; T)\| \rightarrow 0, n \rightarrow \infty$. This is called **norm resolvent convergence**.

(2) When $X = Y$, there is also the notion of strong convergence in the generalized sense [5], which is roughly the strong convergence of resolvents. In particular, when T_n and T are self-adjoint operators in a Hilbert space, $T_n \rightarrow T$ strongly in the generalized sense if $R(\zeta; T_n) \rightarrow R(\zeta; T)$ strongly for some (or equivalently all) ζ with $\text{Im } \zeta \neq 0$. This is called **strong resolvent convergence**.

(3) Let $D \subset \mathbb{C}$ be a domain. The notion of analyticity (holomorphic property) of a family $T(\kappa) \in \mathbf{B}(X, Y)$, $\kappa \in D$, of bounded operators is well known (\rightarrow 37 Banach Spaces K). This notion is generalized to a family $T(\kappa) \in C(X, Y)$, $\kappa \in D$, of closed operators [1, 5]. Namely, $T(\kappa)$ is said to be **holomorphic** in D if at each $\kappa_0 \in D$ there exist a Banach space Z and $U(\kappa) \in \mathbf{B}(Z, X)$, $V(\kappa) \in \mathbf{B}(Z, Y)$, defined near κ_0 , such that (i) $U(\kappa)$ and $V(\kappa)$ are holomorphic at κ_0 as families of bounded operators; (ii) $U(\kappa)$ is one to one and onto $D(T(\kappa))$; (iii) $T(\kappa)U(\kappa) = V(\kappa)$. Let us mention several special cases. (I) if $X = Y$ and if $\zeta \in \rho(T(\kappa))$ for all $\kappa \in D$, then $T(\kappa)$ is holomorphic in D if and only if $R(\zeta; T(\kappa))$ is holomorphic in D . (II) If $D(T(\kappa))$ is independent of κ and if $T(\kappa)u$ is holomorphic in D for every $u \in D(T(\kappa))$ then $T(\kappa)$ is holomorphic in D (holomorphic family of type (A) [5]). (III) Let $T \in C(X, Y)$, and let $T^{(n)} \in A(X, Y)$ such that $D(T^{(n)}) \supset D(T)$ and $\|T^{(n)}u\| \leq c^{n-1}(a\|u\| + b\|Tu\|)$, $u \in D(T)$, where $a, b, c \geq 0$. Then $T(\kappa)u = Tu + \kappa T^{(1)}u + \dots + \kappa^n T^{(n)}u + \dots$, $u \in D(T)$ defines a holomorphic family of type (A) in $D = \{\kappa \mid |\kappa| < (b+c)^{-1}\}$. (IV) If $X = Y$ is a Hilbert space and if $T(\kappa)$ is self-adjoint for real κ , $T(\kappa)$ is said to be a self-adjoint family. In particular, the family discussed in (III) is a self-adjoint holomorphic family if T is self-adjoint and $T^{(n)}$ is symmetric.

D. Perturbation of Isolated Eigenvalues

(1) Separation of the spectrum. Let $T \in C(X)$. Suppose that a bounded subset Δ of $\sigma(T)$ is separated from the rest of $\sigma(T)$ by a simple closed contour Γ (i.e., $\Gamma \subset \rho(T)$ and $\Delta(\sigma(T) \setminus \Delta)$ lies inside (outside) of Γ). Then the operator

$$P = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{\Gamma} R(\zeta; T) d\zeta,$$

which is independent of Γ , is a projection (i.e., $P \in \mathbf{B}(X)$ and $P^2 = P$). The closed subspaces $X_1 \equiv PX$ and $X_2 \equiv (I - P)X$ reduce T and give rise to the decomposition $T = T|_{X_1} \oplus T|_{X_2} \equiv T_1 \oplus T_2$. In particular, $\sigma(T_1) = \sigma(T) \cap \{\text{inside of } \Gamma\}$ and $\sigma(T_2) = \sigma(T) \cap \{\text{outside of } \Gamma\}$.

(2) Let $T(\kappa)$ be holomorphic in D . We assume that $0 \in D$ and regard $T^{(0)} = T(0)$ as the unperturbed operator. Suppose that Δ and Γ are as in (1) with T replaced by $T^{(0)}$. Then

there exists $\delta > 0$ such that $|\kappa| < \delta$ implies $\Gamma \subset \rho(T(\kappa))$. This follows from the upper continuity of compact components of the spectrum with respect to the metric \hat{d} of $C(X)$ [5]. Thus the separation of the spectrum discussed in (1) is applicable to $T(\kappa)$. In particular, corresponding to the projection

$$P(\kappa) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{\Gamma} R(\zeta; T(\kappa)) d\zeta, \quad |\kappa| < \delta,$$

$T(\kappa)$ is decomposed as $T(\kappa) = T_1(\kappa) \oplus T_2(\kappa)$; and the problem of determining the spectrum of $T(\kappa)$ inside Γ is reduced to the problem of determining the spectrum of $T_1(\kappa)$ ($|\kappa| < \delta$). Suppose now that $\Delta = \{\lambda_0\}$ is an isolated eigenvalue of $T^{(0)}$ and that $m \equiv \dim P(0)X < \infty$. Then $\dim P(\kappa)X = m$, $|\kappa| < \delta$. Moreover, a base $\{\varphi_1(\kappa), \dots, \varphi_m(\kappa)\}$ of $P(\kappa)X$ can be constructed in such a way that the $\varphi_j(\kappa)$ are holomorphic in $\{|\kappa| < \delta' \leq \delta\}$ [3, 5]. Thus the problem for $T_1(\kappa)$ in this case is just the finite-dimensional eigenvalue problem $\det\{\lambda\delta_{jk} - (T(\kappa)\varphi_j(\kappa), \varphi_k(\kappa))\} = 0$. The totality $\{\lambda_j(\kappa)\}$ of solutions of this equation, i.e., the totality of eigenvalues of $T(\kappa)$ near λ_0 , is expressed by one or several power series of $\kappa^{1/p}$ with a suitable integer $p > 0$. If $T(\kappa)$ is a self-adjoint family, we can take $p = 1$ so that the eigenvalues are holomorphic near λ_0 . If $H(\kappa) = H^{(0)} + \kappa H^{(1)} + \dots$ is a self-adjoint holomorphic family described in example (IV) in (3) of Section C and if $m = 1$, the power series $\lambda(\kappa) = \sum \lambda_j \kappa^j$ can be explicitly computed as $\lambda_1 = (H^{(1)}u_0, u_0)$, $\lambda_2 = (H^{(2)}u_0, u_0) + (SH^{(1)}u_0, H^{(1)}u_0)$, \dots , where $H^{(0)}u_0 = \lambda_0 u_0$ with $\|u_0\| = 1$ and where $S = \lim_{\zeta \rightarrow \lambda_0} R(\zeta; H^{(0)})(I - P(0))$ is the reduced resolvent. This series is known as the **Rayleigh-Schrödinger series**. The power series for the associated eigenvectors $u(\kappa) = \sum \kappa^j u_j$ can also be computed. For details, including the case of a degenerate λ_0 ($m > 1$), in which the situation becomes more complicated due to the splitting of eigenvalues, \rightarrow [5]. The perturbation theory discussed in this subsection is called **analytic** (or **regular**) **perturbation theory**.

(3) Even when a problem cannot be handled by means of analytic perturbation, it may happen that the coefficients λ_j and u_j of formal power series can be computed up to a certain j . In many such cases it can be shown under general assumptions that an asymptotic expansion such as $\lambda(\kappa) = \lambda_0 + \lambda_1 \kappa + o(\kappa)$ is valid as long as the coefficients involved can be computed legitimately [2, 5]. Estimates for $o(\kappa)$ can also be given. This provides a rigorous foundation for the perturbation method in many important practical problems. The case of degenerate λ_0 can be treated similarly. The strong convergence in the generalized sense mentioned in (2) of Section C is used here. This theory is called **asymptotic perturbation theory**.

E. Perturbation of Continuous Spectra

For continuous spectra, studying the mode of change under perturbation is not usually a tractable problem. Rather, certain parts of continuous spectra tend to be stable under perturbation; and the study of this stability has been a major topic in perturbation theory (also \rightarrow 375 Scattering Theory). In this section we discuss only self-adjoint operators and let $H = \int \lambda dE(\lambda)$, H_0, \dots , be self-adjoint operators in a Hilbert space X . For \mathbf{B}_p and $\|\cdot\|_p$ to be used below \rightarrow 68 Compact and Nuclear Operators.

(1) The essential spectrum (\rightarrow 390 Spectral Analysis of Operators E) is stable under compact perturbation. Namely, if $H = H_0 + K$ with compact K , then $\sigma_e(H) = \sigma_e(H_0)$ (H. Weyl, *Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo*, 27 (1909)). More generally, it suffices to assume that $R(\zeta; H) - R(\zeta; H_0)$ is compact for some (or equivalently all) $\zeta \in \rho(H) \cap \rho(H_0)$. Conversely, if X is separable and if $\sigma_e(H) = \sigma_e(H_0)$, then there exist a unitary operator U and a compact operator K such that $H = UH_0U^{-1} + K$ (J. von Neumann, *Actualités Sci. Ind.*, 229 (1935)). Moreover, any self-adjoint operator H in a separable Hilbert space can be changed into $H + K$ with a pure point spectrum by adding a $K \in \mathbf{B}_p$ with $\|K\|_p < \varepsilon$ for any $p > 1$ and $\varepsilon > 0$ (S. T. Kuroda, *Proc. Japan Acad.*, 34 (1958)). I. D. Berg (1971), W. Sikonja (1971), J. Voigt (1977), and D. Voiculescu (1979) have extended these results to normal operators and m -tuples of commutative self-adjoint operators. Also \rightarrow 390 Spectral Analysis of Operators I, J.

(2) The absolutely continuous spectrum (\rightarrow 390 Spectral Analysis of Operators E) is stable under perturbation by the \dagger trace class. Namely, if $H = H_0 + K$, with $K \in \mathbf{B}_1$, then the absolutely continuous parts of H_0 and H are \dagger unitarily equivalent, and in particular $\sigma_{ac}(H) = \sigma_{ac}(H_0)$ (M. Rosenblum, *Pacific J. Math.*, 7 (1957); T. Kato, *Proc. Japan Acad.*, 33 (1957)). Among generalizations we mention the following two. (i) If $R(\zeta; H) - R(\zeta; H_0) \in \mathbf{B}_1$ for some $\zeta \in \rho(H) \cap \rho(H_0)$, then the absolutely continuous parts of $\varphi(H_0)$ and $\varphi(H)$ are unitarily equivalent for any smooth strictly increasing real function φ (M. Sh. Birman, *Izv. Akad. Nauk SSSR, ser. mat.*, 27, (1963); T. Kato, *Pacific J. Math.*, 15 (1965)). (ii) If H_0 and H act in different Hilbert spaces X_0 and X , respectively, and if there exists $J \in \mathbf{B}(X_0, X)$ such that $J D(H_0) \subset D(H)$ and such that the closure of $HJ - JH_0$ belongs to $\mathbf{B}_1(X_0, X)$, then the same conclusion as in (i) holds (D. Pearson, *J. Functional Anal.*, 28 (1978)). (i) can be derived from (ii). Perturbation theory for absolutely continuous spectra is closely related to the study of generalized wave operators in scattering theory. In fact,

the existence and the completeness of the latter implies the unitary equivalence of absolutely continuous parts. All the results mentioned above are proved by scattering-theoretic methods, either by the wave operator approach or by the abstract stationary approach (\rightarrow 375 Scattering Theory, esp. B, C).

F. Some Other Topics

(1) For the perturbation theory for semigroups of operators and evolution equations, not discussed in this article, \rightarrow [5, 7, 9].

(2) The detailed structure of continuous spectra is hard to analyze. An eigenvalue λ_0 of H_0 which is embedded in the continuous spectrum may diffuse into the continuous spectrum in the presence of a perturbation. In such a case, $H(\kappa)$, $\kappa \neq 0$, has no eigenvalues near λ_0 but may have a continuous spectrum highly concentrated around λ_0 . This phenomenon of **spectral concentration** is studied, especially for some concrete problems, in relation to **resonance poles** (or poles of the holomorphic continuation of the resolvent or the scattering matrix). In some problems, it is proved that the first few terms of the perturbation series for $\lambda(\kappa)$ that are still computable are related to the real part of the resonance. Some problems of resonance can be treated by the technique of dilation analyticity, a technique which is also effective in other problems of spectral analysis (J. Aguilar and J. M. Combes, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 22 (1971)).

(3) A vast quantity of results in the spectral theory of the Schrödinger operators appearing in the \dagger Schrödinger equation in quantum mechanics can be obtained by perturbation methods.

For the topics mentioned in (2) and (3) \rightarrow [7].

References

- [1] F. Rellich, Störungstheorie der Spektralzerlegung I–V, *Math. Ann.*, 113 (1937), 600–619; 113 (1937), 677–685; 116 (1939), 555–570; 117 (1940), 356–382; 118 (1942), 462–484.
- [2] T. Kato, On the convergence of the perturbation method, *J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo*, sec. I, 6 (1951), 145–226.
- [3] T. Kato, On the perturbation theory of closed linear operators, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 4 (1952), 323–337.
- [4] K. O. Friedrichs, On the perturbation of continuous spectra, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 1 (1948), 361–406.
- [5] T. Kato, *Perturbation theory for linear operators*, Springer, 1966.

- [6] N. Dunford and J. T. Schwartz, *Linear operators I–III*, Wiley-Interscience, 1958, 1963, 1971.
- [7] M. Reed and B. Simon, *Methods of modern mathematical physics I–IV*, Academic Press, 1972, 1975, 1979, 1978.
- [8] T. Kato, Fundamental properties of Hamiltonian operators of Schrödinger type, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 70 (1951), 195–211.
- [9] H. Tanabe, *Equation of evolution*, Pitman, 1979. (Original in Japanese, 1975.)

332 (VI.7)

Pi (π)

The **ratio of the circumference of a circle to its diameter** in a Euclidean plane is denoted by π , the initial letter of *περιμετρος* (perimeter). Thus π can be defined as

$$2 \int_0^1 dx / \sqrt{1-x^2}.$$

The symbol π has been used since W. Jones (1675–1749) and L. Euler. The fact that this ratio is a constant is stated in Euclid's *Elements*; however, Euclid gave no statement about the numerical value of π . As an approximate value of π , 3 has been used from antiquity. According to the Rhind Papyrus, $(4/3)^4$ was used in ancient Egypt. Let $L_n(l_n)$ be the perimeter of a regular n -gon circumscribed about (inscribed in) a circle of radius 1. Then the relations

$$L_n > \pi > l_n, \quad \frac{2}{L_{2n}} = \frac{1}{L_n} + \frac{1}{l_n},$$

$$l_{2n} = \sqrt{l_n L_{2n}}$$

hold. Archimedes obtained $3\frac{1}{7} < \pi < 3\frac{1}{2}$ by calculating L_{96} and l_{96} . In 3rd-century China Liu Hui used $\pi \approx 3.14$. In 5th-century China, Tsu Chung-Chih mentioned $22/7$ as an inaccurate approximate value and $355/113$ as an accurate approximate value of π . These values were obtained by methods similar to those of Archimedes. In 5th-century India, Aryabhatta obtained $\pi \approx 3.1416$, and in 16th-century Europe, Adriaen van Roomen obtained $\pi \approx 355/113$.

F. Viète represented $2/\pi$ in the following infinite product:

$$\prod_{n=2}^{\infty} \cos \frac{\pi}{2^n} = \sqrt{\frac{1}{2}} \sqrt{\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2}} \sqrt{\frac{1}{2}} \\ \times \sqrt{\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2}} \sqrt{\frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{2}} \sqrt{\frac{1}{2}} \dots$$

332 Pi (π)

Using this formula, L. van Ceulen (1540–1610) calculated π to 35 decimals. In the 17th and 18th centuries, the Japanese mathematicians T. Seki, K. Takebe, and Y. Matunaga computed π to 50 decimals. Since the 17th century, many formulas that represent π as a sum of infinite series or as a limit have been used to obtain more accurate approximate values. The following are representations of π known in those days:

$$\frac{\pi}{2} = \frac{2 \cdot 2 \cdot 4 \cdot 4 \cdot 6 \cdot 6 \dots}{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \cdot 5 \cdot 7 \dots} \quad (\text{J. Wallis})$$

$$\frac{\pi}{4} = \frac{1}{1} - \frac{1^2}{2} + \frac{3^2}{2} - \frac{5^2}{2} + \dots \quad (\text{W. Brouncker; for the notation } \rightarrow 83 \text{ Continued Fractions})$$

$$= 1 - 1/3 + 1/5 - 1/7 + \dots$$

(J. Gregory, G. W. F. Leibniz)

$$= 4 \operatorname{Arctan} 1/5 - \operatorname{Arctan} 1/239 \quad (\text{J. Machin}).$$

A formula combining Machin's representation of π and the power series $\operatorname{Arctan} x = x - (1/3)x^3 + (1/5)x^5 - \dots$ is called **Machin's formula** and was often used for calculating an approximate value of π . By utilizing this formula, in 1873 W. Shanks obtained an approximate value of π up to 707 decimals. No improvement of his approximation was obtained until 1946 when D. F. Ferguson calculated 710 digits of π and found that Shanks's value was correct only up to the 527th digit. The computation of an accurate approximate value of π has been made easier by the recent development of computing machines, and an approximate value up to 1,000,000 decimals has been obtained. P. Beckmann [2] gives a detailed and humorous historical account of the calculation of π from ancient times up to the present computer age. Various numerical results obtained by electronic computers are not formally published, some being deposited in the UMT repository of the editorial office of the journal *Mathematics of computation*. Choong et al. [3], using information in [1], obtained the first 21,230 partial denominators of the regular continued fraction representation of π and described how their numerical evidence tallies with theoretical results, obtained by the metrical theory of continued fractions, which is valid for almost all irrational numbers (e.g. \rightarrow [4]).

In 1761, J. H. Lambert used Brouncker's expression of π in a continued fraction to prove that π is irrational. In 1882, C. L. F. Lindemann proved that π is a transcendental number using Euler's formula $e^{\pi i} = -1$. The approximate value of π up to 50 decimals is 3.14159265358979323846264338327950288419716939937510... (\rightarrow Appendix B, Table 6).

References

- [1] D. Shanks and J. W. Wrench, Calculation of π to 100,000 decimals, *Math. Comp.*, 16 (1962), 76–99.
- [2] P. Beckmann, *A history of pi*, second edition, Golem Press, 1971.
- [3] K. Y. Choong, D. E. Daykin, and C. R. Rathbone, Rational approximations to π , *Math. Comp.*, 25 (1971), 387–392.
- [4] A. Khinchin, *Continued fractions*, Noordhoff, 1963.

333 (II.18) Plane Domains

A. Domains in the Complex Plane

A \ast domain (i.e., a \ast connected open set) in the \ast complex plane or on the \ast complex sphere is called a **plane domain**. The \ast closure of such a domain is called a **closed plane domain**. In this article, we consider only subsets of the complex plane (or sphere), and a plain domain is called simply a domain. The \ast interior of a \ast Jordan curve J in the complex plane is a domain called a **Jordan domain**. In a domain D , a Jordan arc whose two endpoints lie on the boundary of D is called a **cross cut** of D .

For a domain D , each of the following three conditions is equivalent to the condition that D is \ast simply connected: (1) For every cross cut Q of D , $D - Q$ has exactly two \ast connected components. (2) Every Jordan curve in D is \ast homotopic to one point, that is, it can always be continuously deformed to a point. (3) The \ast monodromy theorem holds in D .

If D is a domain on a complex sphere, each of the following three conditions is equivalent to the condition that D is simply connected: (4) The boundary of D consists of a single \ast continuum or a single point. (5) For every Jordan curve C in D , either the interior or the exterior of C is contained in D . (6) The complement of D with respect to the complex sphere is a connected (not necessarily arcwise connected) closed set. Jordan domains are simply connected.

Let $n \geq 2$ be an integer and D a plane domain. The \ast homology group $H_1(D, \mathbf{Z})$ is identical to \mathbf{Z}^{n-1} if and only if the complement of D in the complex sphere has n connected components. Then D is said to be **n -ply connected** or **multiply connected** without specifying n . If D is an n -ply connected domain, there exist $n - 1$ suitable mutually disjoint cross cuts Q_1, \dots, Q_{n-1} such that $D - (Q_1 \cup \dots \cup Q_{n-1})$ is simply connected.

Some typical examples of domains are as

follows: (1) **Circular domain**: $|z - c| < r$. (2) **Half-plane**: $\operatorname{Re} z > 0$, or $\operatorname{Im} z > 0$. (3) **Angular domain**: $\alpha < \arg(z - c) < \beta$. (4) **Annular domain**: $r < |z - c| < R$. (5) **Slit domain**: a domain obtained by excluding a Jordan arc Γ from a domain D , where all points on Γ (except an endpoint lying on the boundary of D) are contained in D . In this case, the Jordan arc Γ is called the **slit** of the domain.

B. Boundary Elements

A boundary point P of a domain D is called **accessible** if there exists a sequence of points P_i tending to P such that the line segments $P_1 P_2, \dots$ lie completely in D . For example, for the domain obtained by removing $x = 1/(n + 1)$, $0 < y \leq 1/2$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) from the square $0 < x < 1$, $0 < y < 1$, the boundary points with $x = 0$, $0 \leq y < 1/2$ are all inaccessible (Fig. 1).

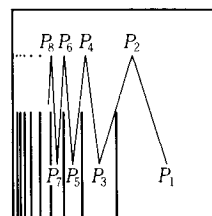


Fig. 1

Let the domain D be bounded by a smooth Jordan curve, and let P be a boundary point of D . Take an angular domain D' with vertex at the point P and the initial parts of the two sides of D' lying in D . A curve in D converging to the point P from the interior of the angular domain D' is called a **Stolz's path** or a **nontangential path** ending at the point P .

Let D be a simply connected domain. A sequence $\{q_v\}$ of cross cuts mutually disjoint except for their endpoints is called a **fundamental sequence of cross cuts** if it satisfies the following two conditions (Fig. 2): (1) Every q_v separates q_{v-1} and q_{v+1} on D . (2) For $v \rightarrow \infty$, the sequence q_v tends to a point on the boundary. Let $\{q_v\}$ be a fundamental sequence of cross cuts, and denote by D_v the subdomain of D separated by q_v that contains q_{v+1} . The intersection $\bigcap D_v$ consists only of the boundary points of D . Two fundamental sequences $\{q_v\}$, $\{q'_v\}$ of cross cuts are equivalent if every D_μ contains all q'_v except for a finite number of v , and every D'_μ contains all q_v except for a finite number of v . Here D_μ , D'_μ are the subdomains constructed from q_μ and q'_μ as above. This condition determines an equivalence relation, under which the equivalence class of fundamental sequences of cross cuts is called a **boundary element**. This notion is due to C. Carathéodory [2]. The boundary element of a

multiply connected domain is defined similarly for each isolated component of the boundary. For example, each point of a slit domain, except for the endpoint of Γ lying on the boundary of the domain, determines two distinct boundary elements on each side. A closed domain is usually considered to be the union of a domain and the set of all its boundary elements. Various notions of †ideal boundary come from considering suitable boundary elements for various purposes (\rightarrow 207 Ideal Boundaries).

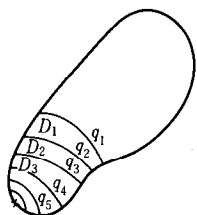


Fig. 2

C. Domain Kernels

Let $\{G_v\}$ be a sequence of domains containing the origin 0. If a suitable neighborhood of the origin is contained in G_v for all v , there exists a domain G such that every closed domain containing the origin and contained in G is contained in G_v except for a finite number of v . The union K of such domains G is called the **domain kernel** of the sequence $\{G_v\}$ (Carathéodory). If there is no neighborhood of the origin contained in G_v for all v , we put $K = \{0\}$.

If every infinite subsequence of $\{G_v\}$ has the same domain kernel K , then we say that the sequence $\{G_v\}$ converges to K . The notion of domain kernel is important in considering the limits of a sequence of conformal mappings (\rightarrow 77 Conformal Mappings).

References

- [1] M. H. A. Newman, Elements of the topology of plane sets of points, Cambridge Univ. Press, second edition, 1951.
- [2] C. Carathéodory, Über die Begrenzung einfach zusammenhängender Gebiete, Math. Ann., 73 (1913), 323–370.

334 (X.33) Plateau's Problem

A. Origin

Because of surface tension, a soap membrane bounded by a given closed space curve takes

Plateau's Problem

the shape of a minimal surface, i.e., a surface of the least area. This experiment was performed by the Belgian scientist J. A. Plateau (1873) to realize minimal surfaces; hence **Plateau's problem** is that of determining the minimal surfaces bounded by given closed space curves. It is a problem of the †calculus of variations.

B. Formulation

Let Γ be a †simple closed curve in xyz -space such that its projection C on the xy -plane is also a simple closed curve. Let D be the finite domain bounded by C . We consider surfaces $z = z(x, y)$ having common boundary Γ . Then under suitable assumptions on the smoothness of $z(x, y)$, the problem is to minimize the †functional

$$J[z] = \iint_D \sqrt{1 + p^2 + q^2} dx dy;$$

$$p = \frac{\partial z}{\partial x}, \quad q = \frac{\partial z}{\partial y},$$

with the condition that $z = z(x, y)$ has Γ as its boundary. The †Euler-Lagrange differential equation for the functional $J[z]$ is

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial x} \frac{p}{\sqrt{1 + p^2 + q^2}} + \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \frac{q}{\sqrt{1 + p^2 + q^2}} = 0,$$

or $(1 + q^2)r - 2pq s + (1 + p^2)t = 0$, $r = \partial^2 z / \partial x^2$, $s = \partial^2 z / \partial x \partial y$, $t = \partial^2 z / \partial y^2$, which is a second-order †quasilinear partial differential equation of elliptic type and whose geometric interpretation had already been given by M. C. Meusnier (1776).

To formulate the problem more generally, let a surface be expressed in vector form $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}(u, v)$ by means of parameters u, v . Let its †first fundamental form be $d\mathbf{x}^2 = E du^2 + 2F du dv + G dv^2$ and its †second fundamental form be $-d\mathbf{x} d\mathbf{n} = L du^2 + 2M du dv + N dv^2$, with $\mathbf{n} = \mathbf{n}(u, v)$ the unit normal vector. By equating to zero the †first variation of the **areal functional**

$$\iint \sqrt{EG - F^2} du dv$$

based on infinitesimal displacement in the normal direction, we obtain the Euler-Lagrange equation in the form

$$2H \equiv (NE - 2MF + LG)/(EG - F^2) = 0,$$

where $H = (R_1^{-1} + R_2^{-1})/2$ is the †mean curvature of the surface and R_1 and R_2 are the †radii of principal curvature. Since †Beltrami's second differential form satisfies $\Delta_2 \mathbf{x} = H \mathbf{n}$, the condition for a minimal surface becomes $\Delta \mathbf{x} = 0$ (with Δ the †Laplace operator) provided that **isothermal parameters** u, v satisfying $E =$

$G, F = 0$ are chosen, i.e., the vector $\mathbf{x}(u, v)$ representing a minimal surface is harmonic (the components of this vector are harmonic functions of u, v). Let $\eta(u, v)$ be a harmonic vector conjugate to $\mathbf{x}(u, v)$. Then isothermality is expressed by the condition that the analytic vector $\mathfrak{F}(w) = \mathbf{x}(u, v) + i\eta(u, v)$ ($w = u + iv, i = \sqrt{-1}$) satisfies $\mathfrak{F}'(w)^2 = 0$ (Weierstrass). In general, a **minimal surface** is defined as a surface with everywhere vanishing mean curvature, and Plateau's problem is to determine the minimal surface with a preassigned boundary. In this formulation, the problem can be easily generalized to an n -dimensional Euclidean space \mathbf{R}^n (\rightarrow 275 Minimal Submanifolds).

C. Existence of a Solution

The existence of a solution of Plateau's problem was discussed by S. N. Bernshtein (1910) from the viewpoint of a boundary value problem of the first kind for the elliptic partial differential equation in the previous section. A. Haar (1927) dealt with the minimal problem for the functional $J[z]$ by a direct method in the calculus of variations. Previously, Riemann, Weierstrass, Schwarz, and others discussed the case where the given space curve Γ is a polygon, in connection with the monodromy group concerning a second-order linear ordinary differential equation. Subsequently, R. Garnier (1928) investigated the existence of a solution by the limit process when Γ is a simple closed curve with bounded curvature. However, when Γ is assumed merely to be rectifiable, the existence of a solution was first shown by the limit process by T. Radó (1930). He further discussed the general case where Γ can bound a surface with finite area. On the other hand, by introducing a new functional depending on boundary values instead of the areal functional, J. Douglas (1931) succeeded in giving a satisfactory result for the existence problem. R. Courant (1937) gave another existence proof by reducing Plateau's problem to the Dirichlet principle [3].

At present, the methods of discussing the existence of solutions of Plateau's problem can be classified into the following three sorts (represented, respectively, by Radó, Courant, and Douglas):

(1) The first method is to minimize directly the areal functional $\iint \sqrt{EG - F^2} du dv$. The variational equation of the areal functional becomes $H = 0$.

(2) **Dirichlet's functional** for a scalar function $f(u, v)$ is defined by $D[f] = \iint (f_u^2 + f_v^2) du dv$, and for an n -dimensional vector function $\mathbf{f}(u, v)$ with components $f_j(u, v)$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$) by $D[\mathbf{f}] = \sum_{j=1}^n D[f_j]$. The existence of a solution of Plateau's problem can be discussed by starting

from the variational problem of minimizing $D[\mathbf{f}]$. The variational equation of $D[\mathbf{f}]$ is $\Delta \mathbf{f} = 0$.

(3) An analytic vector $\mathfrak{F}(w)$ is representable in terms of the boundary values of its real part. For instance, if the domain of w is the unit disk $|w| < 1$, then Poisson's integral formula

$$\mathfrak{F}(w) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \mathfrak{h}(\theta) \frac{e^{i\theta} + w}{e^{i\theta} - w} d\theta + i \operatorname{Im} \mathfrak{F}(w)$$

with the boundary function $\mathfrak{h}(\theta) = \operatorname{Re} \mathfrak{F}(e^{i\theta})$ can be used. On the other hand, the vector function that minimizes the Dirichlet integral among functions with fixed boundary values is harmonic. Based on these facts, Douglas transformed Dirichlet's functional with harmonic argument functions into a functional whose arguments are boundary functions. Specifically, by starting from the problem of minimizing **Douglas's functional**

$$A[\mathfrak{h}] = \frac{1}{4\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \frac{(\mathfrak{h}(\theta) - \mathfrak{h}(\varphi))^2}{4 \sin^2(\theta - \varphi)/2} d\theta d\varphi,$$

we can prove the existence of solution of Plateau's problem satisfactorily.

D. The Generalized Case

Up to now we have been concerned with Plateau's problem in the case of a single simple closed curve. Douglas, Courant, and others treated the generalized case of a finite number of boundary curves, where genus and orientability are assigned as the topological structure of the surface to be found. The existence of a solution has been shown in this case also. The problem is further generalized from the case of fixed boundary to the case where the boundary is merely restricted to lie on a given manifold [3]. On the other hand, C. B. Morrey (1948) generalized the problem by replacing the ambient space \mathbf{R}^n by an n -dimensional Riemannian manifold and gave the existence proof in considerable generality [6].

E. Relation to Conformal Mappings

There is a notable relation between Plateau's problem and conformal mapping when the dimension of the space is 2. Namely, the existence proof of the solution of the former for a Jordan domain implies Riemann's mapping theorem together with W. F. Osgood and C. Carathéodory's result on boundary correspondence (\rightarrow 77 Conformal Mappings).

F. New Developments

Among recent contributions to the study of Plateau's problem, the following remarkable

results have emerged. One of them is connected with the final result of Douglas (1939) on the existence of solution surfaces. The mapping of a 2-dimensional manifold with boundary into \mathbf{R}^n defining Douglas's solution of the Plateau problem for a finite number of simple closed curves is a †minimal immersion with the possible exception of isolated points where it fails to be an immersion. These points are called branch points. It was then proved by R. Osserman (1970) and R. D. Gulliver (1973) that for $n = 3$ the mapping of Douglas's theorem, which is a surface of least area, is free of branch points, i.e., is an immersion. Osserman also gave examples of generalized minimal surfaces in \mathbf{R}^n ($n > 3$) with true branch points. In this connection, Gulliver also dealt with an analogous problem for surfaces of prescribed mean curvature.

Next, we mention the question of boundary regularity. H. Lewy (1951) proved that if the boundary of a minimal surface is analytic, then the surface is analytic up to the boundary. Subsequently, S. Hildebrandt (1969) and others proved that if the boundary is of class $C^{m,\alpha}$, $m \geq 1$, the surface is also of class $C^{m,\alpha}$ up to the boundary. There are also some recent results on the number of solutions of Plateau's problem. For instance, J. C. C. Nitsche (1973) proved the uniqueness of solutions for analytic boundaries of †total curvature at most 4π .

Further developments in connection with Plateau's problem have emerged in the work of E. R. Reifenberg (1960) and others, who sought to minimize the †Hausdorff measure among general classes of geometric objects, not as parametrized manifolds, but as subsets of \mathbf{R}^n . The existence and regularity of solutions of Plateau's problem from this point of view have been discussed by H. Federer (1969), W. H. Fleming, F. J. Almgren, and others [10].

References

- [1] T. Radó, On the problem of Plateau, *Erg. Math.*, Springer, 1933.
- [2] J. Douglas, Solution of the problem of Plateau, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 33 (1931), 263–321.
- [3] R. Courant, Dirichlet's principle, conformal mapping and minimal surfaces, *Inter-science*, 1950.
- [4] J. C. C. Nitsche, *Vorlesungen über Minimalflächen*, Springer, 1975.
- [5] R. Osserman, A survey of minimal surfaces, Van Nostrand, 1969.
- [6] C. B. Morrey, Multiple integrals in the calculus of variations, Springer, 1966.
- [7] R. Osserman, A proof of the regularity everywhere of the classical solution to Pla-

335 Ref.

Poincaré, Henri

teau's problem, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 91 (1970), 550–569.

[8] S. Hildebrandt, Boundary behavior of minimal surfaces, *Arch. Rational Mech. Anal.*, 35 (1969), 47–82.

[9] J. C. C. Nitsche, A new uniqueness theorem for minimal surfaces, *Arch. Rational Mech. Anal.*, 52 (1973), 319–329.

[10] H. Federer, *Geometric measure theory*, Springer, 1969.

[11] F. J. Almgren, Plateau's problem. An invitation to varifold geometry, Benjamin, 1966.

335 (XXI.39) Poincaré, Henri

Henri Poincaré (April 29, 1854–July 17, 1912) was born in Nancy, France. After graduating from the Ecole Polytechnique, he taught at the University of Caen in 1879, then at the University of Paris in 1881. He was made a member of the Académie des Sciences in 1887 and of the Académie Française in 1908. He died in Paris.

His achievements center on analysis and applications to theoretical physics and astronomy. However, his work covered many fields of mathematics, including arithmetic, algebraic geometry, spectral theory, and topology. His †uniformization of analytic functions by means of the theory of †automorphic functions in 1880 is especially notable. His paper on the †three-body problem won the prize offered by the king of Sweden in 1889.

The methods he developed in his three-volume *Mécanique céleste* (1892–1899) began a new epoch in celestial mechanics. In addition, Poincaré opened the road to †algebraic topology and made suggestive contributions to the †theory of relativity and †quantum theory. He asserted that science is for science's own sake [4], and his popular philosophical works concerning the foundations of natural science and mathematics exhibit a lucid style.

References

- [1] H. Poincaré, *Oeuvres I–XI*, Gauthier-Villars, 1916–1956.
- [2] H. Poincaré, *Les méthodes nouvelles de la mécanique céleste I–III*, Gauthier-Villars, 1892–1899.
- [3] H. Poincaré, *Science et hypothèse*, Flammarion, 1903.
- [4] H. Poincaré, *La valeur de la science*, Flammarion, 1914.

[5] H. Poincaré, *Science et méthode*, Flammarion, 1908.

336 (X.20) Polynomial Approximation

A. General Remarks

On the existence of polynomial approximations, we have **Weierstrass's approximation theorem**, which is formulated in the following two forms: (i) If $f(x)$ is a function that is continuous in the finite interval $[a, b]$, then for every $\varepsilon > 0$ there exists a polynomial $P_n(x)$ of degree $n = n(\varepsilon)$ such that the inequality $|f(x) - P_n(x)| \leq \varepsilon$ holds throughout the interval $[a, b]$. (ii) If $f(\theta)$ is a continuous function of period 2π , then corresponding to every positive number ε there exists a trigonometric polynomial of degree $n = n(\varepsilon)$,

$$P_n(\theta) = a_0 + \sum_{k=1}^n (a_k \cos k\theta + b_k \sin k\theta), \quad (1)$$

such that the inequality $|f(\theta) - P_n(\theta)| \leq \varepsilon$ holds for all values of θ . The second form of Weierstrass's theorem follows from the first, and conversely. M. H. Stone obtained a theorem that generalizes Weierstrass's theorem to the case of functions of several variables. Of the many direct proofs now available for Weierstrass's theorem, we mention two simple ones. To prove version (i) of the theorem, we can assume that the given function $f(x)$ is defined in the segment $[0, 1]$. Consider the **Bernshtein polynomial**

$$B_n(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n f\left(\frac{k}{n}\right) \binom{n}{k} x^k (1-x)^{n-k}.$$

Then $B_n(x)$ converges to $f(x)$ uniformly. To prove (ii), we can apply Fejér's theorem on Fourier series. We have the following generalization of (i): Let p_1, p_2, \dots be a sequence of positive numbers such that $\lim p_n = \infty$. Then linear combinations of $x^0 = 1, x^{p_1}, x^{p_2}, \dots$ can uniformly approximate each continuous function on $[0, 1]$ with arbitrary precision if and only if $\sum p_n^{-1} = -\infty$ (**Müntz's theorem**).

B. Best Approximations

Let $\varphi_0(x), \varphi_1(x), \dots$ be a sequence of linearly independent continuous functions on a bounded closed domain A in \mathbf{R}^n . For any given continuous function $f(x)$, a function $P_n(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n c_k \varphi_k(x)$ attains

$$\inf_{c_0, \dots, c_n} \max_{x \in A} |f(x) - P_n(x)|$$

is called the **best approximation** of $f(x)$ by a linear combination of $\{\varphi_k(x)\}$. For any given n there is a best approximation of $f(x)$ by a linear combination of $\varphi_0(x), \dots, \varphi_n(x)$, but such an approximation is not always unique. For such an approximation to be unique it is necessary and sufficient that the determinant of the matrix $(\varphi_k(x_i))$ ($k, i = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n$) is not zero, where x_0, x_1, \dots, x_n are $n+1$ arbitrary distinct points of A (**Haar's condition**) (*Math. Ann.*, 78 (1918)). If $\{\varphi_k(x)\}$ satisfies this condition, the system of functions $\{\varphi_k\}_{k=0, \dots, n}$ is called a **Chebyshev system** (or **unisolvant system**). The sets $\{1, x, x^2, \dots, x^n\}$ on $[a, b]$, $\{1, \cos x, \dots, \cos nx\}$ on $[0, \pi]$ and $\{\sin x, \dots, \sin nx\}$ on $[0, \pi]$ are Chebyshev systems. For a Chebyshev system $\{\varphi_k(x)\}$ on $[a, b]$, let $P_n(x)$ be a linear combination of $\varphi_0(x), \dots, \varphi_n(x)$ that is not identical to the function $f \in C[a, b]$. Then $P_n(x)$ is the best approximation for $f(x)$ if and only if there are at least $n+2$ distinct points $x_1 < \dots < x_{n+2}$ of $[a, b]$, where $|f(x) - P_n(x)|$ attains its maximum (these points are called **deviation points**) and $(f(x_i) - P_n(x_i))(f(x_{i+1}) - P_n(x_{i+1})) < 0$ ($i = 1, \dots, n+1$) (**Chebyshev's theorem**).

For example, consider the polynomial $P_n(x) = a_{n-1}x^{n-1} + \dots + a_1x + a_0$ with real coefficients such that

$$\max_{-1 \leq x \leq 1} |x^n - a_{n-1}x^{n-1} - \dots - a_0|$$

takes its smallest value. Then $x^n - P_n(x) = 2^{-(n-1)} T_n(x)$, where $T_n(x) = \cos(n \arccos x)$ is the Chebyshev polynomial of degree n .

Since the best approximation is desired for numerical computation, several methods have been developed to find it (\rightarrow 300 Numerical Methods). However, when the set $A \subset \mathbf{R}^n$ ($n \geq 2$) contains three nonintersecting arcs emanating from a common point, A admits no Chebyshev system. Thus we do not always have a unique best-approximation polynomial [16].

C. Degrees of Approximation and Moduli of Continuity

For a continuous function $f(x)$ defined on $[a, b]$, the **modulus of continuity of k th order** is defined by

$$\omega_k(f; t) = \sup_{\substack{|h| \leq t \\ a \leq x \leq b \\ a \leq x+kh \leq b}} \left| \sum_{v=0}^k (-1)^{k-v} \binom{k}{v} f(x+vh) \right|$$

for $t \leq (b-a)/k$. In particular, ω_1 is the ordinary modulus of continuity. Put $E_n^*(f) = \inf_{a_0, \dots, a_n, b_1, \dots, b_n} \max_{a \leq x \leq b} |f(x) - P_n(x)|$, where f is a continuous periodic function of period 2π and $P_n(x)$ is a trigonometric polynomial of the form (1). Then $E_n^*(f) \leq c_k \omega_k(f; 1/(n+1))$ (**Jackson's theorem** [1]), where c_k is indepen-

dent of f . The best possible coefficient c_k has been determined by J. Favard [2]. Further investigations on the relation between $E_n^*(f)$ and $\omega_k(f; t)$ have been carried out by S. N. Bernshtein [3] and A. Zygmund [4]. S. B. Stechkin obtained the following results:

$$\omega_k\left(f; \frac{1}{n}\right) \leq \frac{c_k}{n^k} \sum_{v=0}^n (v+1)^{k-1} E_v^*(f)$$

[5, 6]. For the approximation of $f \in C^r([-1, 1])$ by polynomials, there exists a polynomial $P_n(x)$ of degree at most n such that for any $x \in [-1, 1]$,

$$|f(x) - P_n(x)| \leq M_r(t(x))^r \omega_1(f^{(r)}; t(x)),$$

where M_r is a constant not depending on f , x , and n , $f^{(r)}(x)$ is the r th derivative of $f(x)$, and $t(x) = (1/n)(\sqrt{1-x^2} + (|x|/n))$. We also have theorems evaluating $\omega_k(f^{(r)}; t)$ in terms of $|f(x) - P_n(x)|$. For the proof of these theorems, estimation of the magnitude of the derivative of the polynomial of degree n plays an essential role. For example, we have the **Bernshtein inequality** $\max_x |T_n'(x)| \leq n \max_x |T_n(x)|$ for any trigonometric polynomial $T_n(x)$ of degree n and the **Markov inequality**

$$|P_n'(x)| \leq n \min[1/\sqrt{1-x^2}, n] \max_{-1 \leq x \leq 1} |P_n(x)|$$

for $x \in [-1, 1]$ and any polynomial $P_n(x)$ of degree n .

D. Approximation by Fourier Expansions

If $\{\varphi_n(x)\}$ is an orthonormal system of functions in $L_2(a, b)$ and f is any function in $L_2(a, b)$, then among all linear combinations of $\varphi_0(x), \dots, \varphi_n(x)$ the one that gives the best mean square approximation to f (i.e., the one for which the integral

$$\int_a^b \left(f(x) - \sum_{k=0}^n c_k \varphi_k(x)\right)^2 dx$$

attains its minimum) is the Fourier polynomial $\sum_{k=0}^n a_k \varphi_k(x)$, where $a_k = \int_a^b f(x) \varphi_k(x) dx$. Consequently, the **least square approximation** (or best approximation with respect to the L_2 -norm) by trigonometric polynomials is given by the partial sum $s_n(x)$ of the Fourier series of $f(x)$. For L_p ($1 < p < \infty$), $s_n(x)$ also gives the best approximation up to a constant factor, but in the case of uniform approximation we have $|f(x) - s_n(x)| \leq A(\log n) \omega_k(f; n^{-1})$, and this result cannot be improved in general. There is no linear operation that gives the best trigonometric approximation. In approximation with a linear combination of $\varphi_0(x), \dots, \varphi_n(x)$, the saturation phenomenon of approximation often appears. For example, observe the arithmetic means of $s_n(x)$ (i.e., \dagger Fejér means $\sigma_n(x)$). If

$f \in \text{Lip } \alpha$ ($0 < \alpha < 1$) (\rightarrow 84 Continuous Functions A), then $|f(x) - \sigma_n(x)| = O(n^{-\alpha})$. However, $|f(x) - \sigma_n(x)| = O(n^{-1})$ if and only if the \dagger conjugate function $\tilde{f}(x) \in \text{Lip } 1$; $|f(x) - \sigma_n(x)| = o(n^{-1})$ if and only if $f(x)$ is constant (M. Zamansky [7], G. Sunouchi and C. Watari [8]).

E. Trigonometric Interpolation Polynomials

Since the trigonometric system is a Chebyshev system, given $2n+1$ distinct points x_0, x_1, \dots, x_{2n} and arbitrary numbers c_0, c_1, \dots, c_{2n} , there is always a unique trigonometric polynomial of degree n with prescribed values c_k at the points x_k . Given any continuous function $f(x)$ with period 2π , the trigonometric polynomial that coincides with $f(x)$ at the points x_k is called the **trigonometric interpolation polynomial** with nodes at x_k . If $x_k = 2\pi k/(2n+1)$ ($k=0, 1, \dots, 2n$), then the interpolating trigonometric polynomial is given by

$$\begin{aligned} U_n(f, x) &= \frac{1}{2n+1} \sum_{j=0}^{2n} f(x_j) \frac{\sin((n+1/2)(x-x_j))}{\sin((x-x_j)/2)} \\ &= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} f(t) \frac{\sin((n+1/2)(x-t))}{\sin((x-t)/2)} d\varphi_n(t), \end{aligned}$$

where $\varphi_n(t)$ is a step function that has the value $2\pi j/(2n+1)$ in $[2\pi j/(2n+1), 2\pi(j+1)/(2n+1)]$. $U_n(f, x)$ resembles the partial sum $s_n(x)$ of the Fourier series of $f(x)$. If $f(x)$ is continuous and of bounded variation, then $U_n(f, x)$ converges uniformly to $f(x)$ (D. Jackson [1]). Although the partial sum $s_n(x)$ of the Fourier series of a continuous function $f(x)$ converges almost everywhere to $f(x)$, there is a continuous function for which $U_n(f, x)$ diverges everywhere (J. Marcinkiewicz [9]). Moreover, there exists a continuous function for which $(1/n)(\sum_{k=1}^n U_k(f, x))$ diverges everywhere (P. Erdős [10], G. Grünwald [11]). Restating these facts for the algebraic polynomial case, we can conclude that there is a continuous function defined in $[-1, 1]$ for which the \dagger Lagrange interpolation polynomial and its arithmetic mean are both divergent everywhere if we take as nodes the roots of the Chebyshev polynomial of degree n .

F. The Case of a Complex Domain

If a given function $f(z)$ is holomorphic in a bounded simply connected domain E in the complex plane and continuous in \bar{E} , then $f(z)$ is approximated uniformly by polynomials on any compact set in E (**Runge's theorem**). This theorem was first studied by C. Runge, and his results were developed by J. L. Walsh and M. V. Keldysh (e.g., [12]). When E contains no interior point, the polynomial approxima-

tion of a continuous function defined in E was given by M. A. Lavrent'ev. Unifying these two results, S. N. Mergelyan obtained the following theorem [13]: A necessary and sufficient condition for an arbitrary function continuous on a compact set E and holomorphic inside E to be approximated on E uniformly by polynomials is that the set E does not divide the complex plane.

On the degree of approximation of polynomials to $f(z)$ on a simply connected domain, there are the following results: Let D be a closed bounded set whose complement K is connected and regular in the sense that K possesses a †Green's function $G(x, y)$ with a pole at infinity. Let D_R be the locus $G(x, y) = \log R > 0$. When $f(z)$ is holomorphic on D , there exists the largest number ρ with the following property: $f(z)$ is single-valued and holomorphic at every interior point of D_ρ . If $R < \rho$, there exist polynomials $P_n(z)$ of degree n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) such that $|f(z) - P_n(z)| \leq M/R^n$ for $z \in D$, where M is a constant independent of n and z . On the other hand, there exist no such polynomials $P_n(z)$ on D for $R > \rho$ (Bernshtein and Walsh [12]).

G. Lagrange's Interpolation Formula

For each n ($n = 0, 1, \dots$), let $z_1^{(n)}, z_2^{(n)}, \dots, z_{n+1}^{(n)}$ be a given set of real or complex numbers, and let $f(z)$ be an arbitrary function. Then there is a unique polynomial of degree n that coincides with $f(z)$ at each point $z_k^{(n)}$ ($k = 1, \dots, n+1$). This is called **Lagrange's interpolation polynomial** and is given by

$$P_n(z) = \sum_{k=1}^{n+1} f(z_k^{(n)}) \frac{\omega(z)}{(z - z_k^{(n)})\omega'(z_k^{(n)})},$$

$$\omega(z) = (z - z_1^{(n)}) \dots (z - z_{n+1}^{(n)}).$$

The sequence $P_n(z)$ does not always converge to $f(z)$. For example, if we take $f(z) = 1/z$ and the $(n+1)$ st roots of 1 as $z_k^{(n)}$, then $P_n(z) = z^n$ and $P_n(z)$ converges to $f(z)$ only at the point 1. For real variables also, there are examples of divergent $P_n(z)$. However, if $f(z)$ is holomorphic in $|z| < \rho$ ($\rho > 1$), then $P_n(z)$ with the $(n+1)$ st roots of 1 as nodes converges to $f(z)$ uniformly in $|z| \leq 1$.

When $z_k^{(n)}$ is independent of the choice of n , $P_n(z)$ coincides with the sum of the first n terms of †Newton's interpolation formula. In this case, $P_n(z)$ is called **Newton's interpolation polynomial** and is given by

$$P_n(z) = a_0 + a_1(z - z_1) + a_2(z - z_1)(z - z_2) + \dots + a_n(z - z_1) \dots (z - z_n),$$

where $a_0 = f(z_1)$; $a_1 = (f(z_2) - f(z_1))/(z_2 - z_1)$ ($z_2 \neq z_1$), $a_1 = f'(z_1)$ ($z_2 = z_1$); and so on. Suc-

cessive coefficients of the polynomial $P_n(z)$ can be calculated by †finite differences. Convergence of Newton's interpolation polynomial is closely connected to convergence of †Dirichlet series.

H. Chebyshev Approximation

Let D be a bounded closed subset of the complex plane, and $f(z)$ a continuous function on D . Then there exists a polynomial $\pi_n(z)$ of degree n such that $\max_{z \in D} |f(z) - \pi_n(z)|$ attains the infimum $E_n(f)$. The polynomial $\pi_n(z)$ is unique and is called the **best approximation polynomial (in the sense of Chebyshev)**. If D is simply connected and $f(z)$ is single-valued and holomorphic on D , then $\pi_n(z)$ converges to $f(z)$ uniformly on D . Moreover, in this case there exist a number M that does not depend on n and a number $R > 1$ such that $|f(z) - \pi_n(z)| \leq M/R^n$. Assuming that $f(z)$ satisfies certain additional conditions, W. E. Sewell [14] proved the existence of a constant r such that $|f(z) - \pi_n(z)| \leq M/n^r R^n$. Furthermore, by approximating $f(z) = z^n$ by polynomials of degree $n-1$, we can show that there exists a polynomial $T_n(z)$ of degree n such that

$$\min \left\{ \max_{z \in D} |z^n + a_1 z^{n-1} + \dots + a_n| \right\} = |T_n(z)|.$$

$T_n(z)$ is called a **Chebyshev polynomial** of degree n with respect to the domain D . Similar statements are valid for functions of a real variable. In particular, when $D = [-1, 1]$, we have

$$T_n(x) = \cos(n \arccos x) / 2^{n-1},$$

which is the ordinary (real) Chebyshev polynomial. Generally, the limit

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(\max_D |T_n(z)| \right)^{1/n} = \rho(D)$$

exists, and $\rho(D)$ coincides with the †capacity and †transfinite diameter of D [15]. For new results and applications of Chebyshev polynomials \rightarrow [17].

If the method of evaluating the degree of approximation using the absolute value $|f(z) - \pi_n(z)|$ is replaced by methods using a †curvilinear integral or †surface integral, as explained below, we still obtain similar results. Let D be a closed domain in the complex plane with a boundary C that is a rectifiable Jordan curve. If $f(z)$ is single-valued and holomorphic on D , then there exists a polynomial $\pi_n(z)$ of degree n that minimizes the integral $\int_C u(z) |f(z) - \pi_n(z)|^p |dz|$ ($p > 0$), where $u(z)$ is a given positive continuous function on C . Moreover, $|f(z) - \pi_n(z)| \leq M/R^n$ for some $R > 1$ (actually $\{\pi_n(z)\}$ is †overconvergent). If D is a closed

Jordan domain and if $f(z)$ is single-valued and holomorphic in D , then there exists a polynomial $\pi_n(z)$ of degree n that minimizes the integral $\int \int_D u(z) |f(z) - \pi_n(z)|^p dS$, where $u(z)$ is a given positive continuous function on D . Moreover, $|f(z) - \pi_n(z)| \leq M/R^n$ for some $R > 1$ on D .

I. Approximation by Orthogonal Polynomials on a Curve

Let C be a rectifiable Jordan curve in the complex plane, and let $p_k(z) \in {}^*L_2(C)$. If $\int_C p_k(z) \bar{p}_n(z) |dz| = \delta_{kn}$, then $\{p_k(z)\}$ is called an orthonormal system on C . Given a holomorphic function $f(z)$ on D , we set $a_k = \int_C f(z) \bar{p}_k(z) |dz|$ and consider the formal series $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_k p_k(z)$. If we denote the n th partial sum of this series by $s_n(z)$, then $s_n(z)$ is the least square approximation by a linear combination of $p_0(z), \dots, p_n(z)$. This and other results, such as $^*Bessel's$ inequality, the *Riesz -Fischer theorem, etc., are all valid here as in the theory of general *orthogonal systems. In particular, if we take $|z| = R$ as C , then $\{1, z, z^2, \dots\}$ is an orthogonal system. Since in this case

$$a_k = \frac{1}{2\pi R^{2k+1}} \int_C f(z) \bar{z}^k |dz| = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_C \frac{f(z)}{z^{k+1}} |dz|$$

and $s_n(z) = a_0 + a_1 z + \dots + a_n z^n$, the *Taylor expansion of $f(z)$ coincides with the orthogonal expansion of $f(z)$.

Given a compact domain D and a holomorphic function on D , if there exist orthogonal polynomials $p_n(z)$ such that the orthogonal expansion of $f(z)$ with respect to $p_n(z)$ converges to $f(z)$ uniformly on D , we say that $\{p_n(z)\}$ belongs to the domain D . The problem of existence and determination of such polynomials for any given domain was proposed and first solved by G. Faber. Generalizations were given by G. Szegő, T. Carleman, and Walsh. Roughly speaking, $p_n(z)$ is given by the orthogonalization of the system $\{1, z, z^2, \dots\}$ with respect to the curvilinear integral on $C = \partial D$ or the surface integral on D .

J. Numerical Approximation of Functions

The accuracy of the approximation of a given function $f(z)$ by the partial sums of its *Taylor expansion $\sum a_n(x - x_0)^n$ decreases rapidly as the distance $|x - x_0|$ increases. The accuracy of the approximation of $f(x)$ defined on a compact interval $[A, B]$ by a (polynomial) function $\varphi(x)$ can be evaluated by means of the least square approximation, the best approximation with respect to the uniform norm, and so on. The second method is best suited to numer-

ical calculation of functions. To get the best approximating polynomial $\varphi(x) = P_n(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n c_k \varphi_k(x)$ of $f(x)$ (\rightarrow Section B), we must determine coefficients c_k that satisfy the conditions of Chebyshev's theorem. The first step in this process is the orthogonal development of $f(x)$ by Chebyshev polynomials $\{T_n(x)\}$: $\varphi_n(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n a_k T_k(u)$, $u = (x - (A+B)/2)/((B-A)/2)$. The error $|f(x) - \varphi_n(x)|$ is estimated by a constant multiple of $T_{n+1}(u)$: $|f(x) - \varphi_n(x)| \leq K |T_{n+1}(u)|$. This **Chebyshev interpolation** is actually given by $a_0 = N^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^N f(x_i)$, $a_k = 2N^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^N f(x_i) T_k(u_i)$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$), where $N = n+1$ and the $u_i = (x_i - (A+B)/2)/((B-A)/2)$ ($i = 1, \dots, N$) are the roots of $T_N(u)$. Let M be the extremum of the error $|f(x) - \varphi_n(x)|$ of such an approximation, and set $f(x_i) - \varphi_n(x_i) = \pm M_i$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, N$). Consider a function $\bar{\varphi}_n(x) = \sum \bar{a}_k T_k(u)$ satisfying $f(x_i) - \bar{\varphi}_n(x_i) = \pm M$. Then solve the linear equation $\bar{\varphi}_n(x_i) - \varphi_n(x_i) = \pm (M - M_i)$ with respect to $\Delta a_k = \bar{a}_k - a_k$ and M . Repeat this process until Δa_k becomes sufficiently small.

A computer can perform the division very quickly, and the rational approximation of a function, for example by its *continued fraction expansion, is often useful.

References

- [1] D. Jackson, The theory of approximation, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1930.
- [2] J. Favard, Sur les meilleurs procédés d'approximation des certaines classes des fonctions par des polynomes trigonometrique, Bull. Sci. Math., 61 (1937), 209–224, 243–265.
- [3] S. N. Bernshtein (Bernstein), Sur l'ordre de meilleure approximation des fonctions continues par des polynomes de degré donné, Mém. Acad. Roy. Belgique, ser. 2, 4 (1912), 1–104.
- [4] A. Zygmund, Smooth functions, Duke Math. J., 12 (1945), 47–75.
- [5] N. I. Achieser, Theory of approximation, Unger, 1956. (Original in Russian, 1947.)
- [6] A. Zygmund, Trigonometric series, Cambridge, 1959.
- [7] M. Zamansky, Class de saturation de certains procédés d'approximation des séries de Fourier des fonctions continues et applications à quelques problèmes d'approximation, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., sér. 3, 66 (1949), 19–93.
- [8] G. Sunouchi and C. Watari, On the determination of the class of saturation in the theory of approximation of functions II, Tôhoku Math. J., 11 (1959), 480–488.
- [9] J. Marcinkiewicz, Sur la divergence des polynomes d'interpolation, Acta Sci. Math. Szeged., 8 (1937), 131–135.

- [10] P. Erdős, Some theorems and remarks on interpolations, *Acta Sci. Math. Szeged.*, 12 (1950), 11–17.
- [11] G. Grünwald, Über Divergenzerscheinungen der Lagrangeschen Interpolationspolynome der stetigen Functionen, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 37 (1936), 908–918.
- [12] J. L. Walsh, Interpolation and approximation by rational functions in the complex domain, *Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ.* 1935; fifth edition, 1981.
- [13] S. N. Mergelyan (Mergeljan), On the representation of functions by series of polynomials on closed sets, *Amer. Math. Soc. Transl.*, ser. I, 3 (1962), 287–293. (Original in Russian, 1951.)
- [14] W. E. Sewell, Degree of approximation by polynomials in the complex domain, *Ann. math. studies* 9, Princeton Univ. Press, 1942.
- [15] E. Hille, *Analytic function theory II*, Ginn, 1962.
- [16] J. R. Rice, *The approximation of functions*, Addison-Wesley, I, 1964; II, 1969.
- [17] S. J. Karlin and W. J. Sneddon, *Tchebyshev systems with applications in analysis and statistics*, Interscience, 1966.

337 (III.4) Polynomials

A. Polynomials in One Variable

Let R be a commutative ring and a_0, a_1, \dots, a_n elements of R . An expression $f(X)$ of the form

$$f(X) = a_0 + a_1X + \dots + a_nX^n \quad (1)$$

is called a **polynomial** in a variable X over R ; if $a_n \neq 0$, the number n is called the **degree** of the polynomial $f(X)$ and is denoted by $\deg f$. If $a_n = 1$, the polynomial (1) is called a **monic polynomial**. The totality of polynomials in X over R forms a commutative ring with respect to ordinary addition and multiplication (whose definition will be given later). It is called the **ring of polynomials** (or the **polynomial ring**) of X over R and is denoted by $R[X]$. We say that we **adjoin** X to R to obtain $R[X]$.

B. Polynomials in Several Variables

Let $R[X, Y]$ denote the ring $R[X][Y]$, namely, the ring obtained by adjoining Y to $R[X]$. An element of $R[X, Y]$ can then be expressed as $\sum a_{\mu\nu} X^\mu Y^\nu$. This expression is called a polynomial in X and Y over R . Generally, $R[X_1, \dots, X_m] = R[X_1, \dots, X_{m-1}][X_m]$ is called the **polynomial ring in m variables** (on m inde-

terminates) X_1, \dots, X_m over R , and its element

$$F(X_1, X_2, \dots, X_m) = \sum a_{v_1 v_2 \dots v_m} X_1^{v_1} X_2^{v_2} \dots X_m^{v_m} \quad (2)$$

(\sum denotes a finite sum for nonnegative integral v_i beginning with $v_1 = v_2 = \dots = v_m = 0$) is called a **polynomial in m variables** X_1, \dots, X_m over R . We call each summand a **term** of the polynomial, $a_{v_1 v_2 \dots v_m}$ the **coefficient** and $v_1 + v_2 + \dots + v_m$ the **degree** of this term. The greatest degree of terms is called the **degree** of the polynomial F . The term $a_{0 \dots 0}$ of degree 0 is called the **constant term** of F . If a polynomial F in X_1, \dots, X_m is composed of terms of the same degree n , then F is called a **homogeneous polynomial** (or **form**) of degree n ; a polynomial consisting of a single term, such as $aX_1^{v_1} X_2^{v_2} \dots X_m^{v_m}$, is called a **monomial**. Now let $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ be elements of R (or a commutative ring S containing R), and let $F(\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m)$ denote the element of R (or S) obtained by substitution of $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$ for X_1, X_2, \dots, X_m in $F(X_1, X_2, \dots, X_m)$. It is also called a polynomial in $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m$. If $F(\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m) = 0$, then $(\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_m)$ is called a **zero point** (in S) of the polynomial $F(X_1, X_2, \dots, X_m)$ (or a solution of the algebraic equation $F(X_1, \dots, X_m) = 0$). In the case of one variable, it is called a **root** of $F(X_1)$ (or of $F(X_1) = 0$).

C. Polynomial Rings

Addition and multiplication in $R[X]$ are defined by

$$(\sum a_i X^i) + (\sum b_j X^j) = \sum (a_i + b_i) X^i,$$

$$(\sum a_i X^i)(\sum b_j X^j) = \sum_k (\sum_{i+j=k} a_i b_j) X^k.$$

A polynomial $f(X) \in R[X]$ can be regarded as a function of a commutative ring R' containing R into itself such that $c \mapsto f(c)$. In this sense, $f(X) + g(X)$ and $f(X)g(X)$ are the functions such that $c \mapsto f(c) + g(c)$ and $c \mapsto f(c)g(c)$, respectively.

It holds that $\deg(f(X) + g(X)) \leq \max\{\deg f(X), \deg g(X)\}$, $\deg f(X)g(X) \leq \deg f(X) + \deg g(X)$. If R is an integral domain, then the latter inequality is an equality, and therefore $R[X]$ is an integral domain. For these inequalities and for convenience elsewhere, we define the degree of 0 to be indefinite.

Assume that R is a field. For given $f, g \in R[X]$ ($\deg g \geq 1$), we can find unique $q, r \in R[X]$ such that $f = gq + r$ and $\deg r < \deg g$ or $r = 0$ (**division algorithm**). This q is called the **integral quotient** of f by g , and r is called the **remainder** of f divided by g . The same fact remains true in the general $R[X]$ if $g(X)$ is monic. (\rightarrow 369 Rings of Polynomials).

D. Factorization into Primes

Let k be an integral domain. Since $k[X]$ and hence $k[X_1, \dots, X_m]$ are integral domains, we can define the concepts concerning divisibility (such as a divisor, a multiple, etc.) (\rightarrow 67 Commutative Rings). If k is a \dagger unique factorization domain, then so are $k[X]$ and $k[X_1, \dots, X_m]$. A polynomial over k is said to be **primitive** if the greatest common divisor of all the coefficients is equal to 1. Every polynomial over k can be uniquely expressed as a product of some primitive polynomials and an element of k ; a product of primitive polynomials is primitive (**Gauss's theorem**).

If k is a field, then $k[X]$ and $k[X_1, \dots, X_m]$ are unique factorization domains. Furthermore, to find the greatest common divisor (f, g) of $f, g \in k[X]$, we can use the **Euclidean algorithm**, that is, apply the division algorithm repeatedly to obtain

$$f = gq_1 + r_1, \quad g = r_1q_2 + r_2, \quad r_1 = r_2q_3 + r_3, \dots, \\ \deg g > \deg r_1 > \deg r_2 > \dots,$$

so that after a finite number of steps we attain $r_{v-1} = r_vq_{v+1} (r_{v+1} = 0)$. Then $r_v = (f, g)$. Accordingly, $k[X]$ is a \dagger principal ideal domain. This algorithm is applied to Euclid rings (\rightarrow 67 Commutative Rings L).

E. The Remainder Theorem

Let k be an integral domain, $f(X) \in k[X]$, and let $g(X) = X - \alpha (\alpha \in k)$. Then using the division algorithm, we get

$$f(X) = (X - \alpha)q(X) + r,$$

$$q(X) \in k[X], \quad r \in k.$$

Therefore, $f(\alpha) = r$; that is, the remainder of $f(X)$ divided by $X - \alpha$ is equal to $f(\alpha)$. This is called the **remainder theorem**. If $f(\alpha) = 0$, then $f(X)$ is divisible by $X - \alpha$ in $k[X]$.

F. Irreducible Polynomials

Let k be a field. A polynomial $f(X) \in k[X]$ of degree n is said to be **reducible** over k if f is divisible by a polynomial of degree $v < n$ in $k[X]$ ($v \neq 0$); otherwise, it is said to be **irreducible** over k . Any polynomial of degree 1 is irreducible. A polynomial f is a \dagger prime element of $k[X]$ if and only if f is irreducible over k . Let I be a unique factorization domain. If $f(X)$ is a polynomial (1) in $I[X]$ such that for a prime element p in I , $a_n \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p}$, $a_{n-1} \equiv a_{n-2} \equiv \dots \equiv a_0 \equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ but $a_0 \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p^2}$, then $f(X)$ is irreducible over the field of quotients of I (**Eisenstein's theorem**). If a polynomial (2) in m variables over an

\dagger algebraic number field k is irreducible, we can obtain an irreducible polynomial in X_1, \dots, X_μ ($0 < \mu < m$) from the polynomial $F(X_1, \dots, X_m)$ by assigning appropriate values in k to $X_{\mu+1}, \dots, X_m$ (**Hilbert's irreducibility theorem**, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 110 (1892)). These two theorems have been generalized in many ways and given precise formulations. In Hilbert's irreducibility theorem, the algebraic number field may be replaced, for example, by any infinite field that is \dagger finitely generated over its \dagger prime field (K. Dörge, W. Franz, E. Inaba).

G. Derivatives

Given a polynomial

$$f(X_1, \dots, X_m) = \sum a_{v_1 v_2 \dots v_m} X_1^{v_1} X_2^{v_2} \dots X_m^{v_m}$$

over a field k , we define the (formal) **derivative** of f with respect to X_i as $f_i(X_1, \dots, X_m) = \sum v_i a_{v_1 v_2 \dots v_m} X_1^{v_1} \dots X_i^{v_i-1} \dots X_m^{v_m}$ and denote it by $\partial f / \partial X_i$. The map $f \mapsto \partial f / \partial X_i$ is called the (formal) **derivative** with respect to X_i . In particular, if $m = 1$, then $\partial f / \partial X$ is denoted by df/dX . The usual rules of \dagger derivatives also hold for the formal derivative. If $df/dX = 0$ for an irreducible polynomial $f(X)$ in $k[X]$, then $f(X)$ is said to be **inseparable**; otherwise, $f(X)$ is **separable**. If the \dagger characteristic of the field k is 0, then every irreducible polynomial $f(X)$ ($\neq 0$) is separable. When k is of characteristic $p \neq 0$, an irreducible polynomial $f(X)$ is inseparable if and only if we can write $f(X) = g(X^p)$.

H. Rational Expressions

The \dagger field of quotients of the polynomial ring $k[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ over a field k is denoted by $k(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ and is called the **field of rational expressions** (or **field of rational functions**) in variables X_1, \dots, X_n over k . Its element is called a **rational expression** in X_1, \dots, X_n . It can be written as a quotient of one polynomial $f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ by another polynomial $g(X_1, \dots, X_n) \neq 0$. Also, an expression $f(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)/g(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)$ obtained by replacing X_1, \dots, X_n with elements $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ of k in the above expression is called a rational expression in $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ (provided that $g(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n) \neq 0$).

I. Symmetric Polynomials and Alternating Polynomials

Let $f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ be a polynomial in variables X_1, \dots, X_n over an integral domain I . If

$f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ is invariant under every permutation of X_1, \dots, X_n , it is called a **symmetric polynomial** (or **symmetric function**) of X_1, \dots, X_n . If $f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ is transformed into $-f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ by every odd permutation of X_1, \dots, X_n , it is called an **alternating polynomial** (or **alternating function**). Also, an expression $f(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)$ obtained from $f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ by replacing X_1, \dots, X_n with elements $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ of I is called a symmetric (alternating) function of $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ if $f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ is symmetric (alternating).

Let the coefficient of X^{n-k} in the expansion of $(X - X_1) \dots (X - X_n)$ be denoted by $(-1)^k \sigma_k$. Then we have $\sigma_1 = \sum X_i = X_1 + \dots + X_n$, $\sigma_2 = \sum X_i X_j = X_1 X_2 + X_1 X_3 + \dots + X_{n-1} X_n$, \dots , $\sigma_n = X_1 X_2 \dots X_n$. Obviously, these are symmetric polynomials of X_1, \dots, X_n . Moreover, for every element φ of the polynomial ring $I[Y_1, Y_2, \dots, Y_n]$, $\varphi(\sigma_1, \sigma_2, \dots, \sigma_n)$ is a symmetric polynomial of X_1, \dots, X_n . Conversely, every symmetric polynomial of X_1, \dots, X_n can be uniquely expressed as a polynomial $\varphi(\sigma_1, \sigma_2, \dots, \sigma_n)$. Thus the totality of symmetric polynomials of X_1, \dots, X_n is identical with the ring $I[\sigma_1, \sigma_2, \dots, \sigma_n]$. This is called the **fundamental theorem on symmetric polynomials**, and $\sigma_1, \sigma_2, \dots, \sigma_n$ are called **elementary symmetric polynomials** (or **elementary symmetric functions**). For example, for $s_v = \sum X_i^v$ ($v = 1, 2, \dots$), we have $s_1 = \sigma_1$, $s_2 = \sigma_1^2 - 2\sigma_2$, $s_3 = \sigma_1^3 - 3\sigma_1\sigma_2 + 3\sigma_3$, $s_4 = \sigma_1^4 - 4\sigma_1^2\sigma_2 + 2\sigma_2^2 + 4\sigma_1\sigma_3 - 4\sigma_4$. Concerning the elementary symmetric polynomials and the s_v , we have the relations $s_v - \sigma_1 s_{v-1} + \sigma_2 s_{v-2} - \dots + (-1)^{v-1} \sigma_{v-1} s_1 + (-1)^v v \sigma_v = 0$ ($v = 1, 2, \dots$), and $s_\mu - \sigma_1 s_{\mu-1} + \dots + (-1)^n \sigma_n s_{\mu-n} = 0$ ($\mu = n+1, n+2, \dots$) (**Newton's formulas**).

Let $p(X_1, \dots, X_n) = (X_2 - X_1)(X_3 - X_1) \dots (X_n - X_1)(X_3 - X_2) \dots (X_n - X_{n-1})$ be the product of $n(n-1)/2$ differences between X_1, \dots, X_n . Then the polynomial p is invariant under even permutations of X_1, \dots, X_n , and p becomes $-p$ under odd permutations. Hence p is an alternating polynomial of X_1, \dots, X_n . It is called the **simplest alternating polynomial** of these variables. Because of its particular expression, p is also called the **difference product** of X_1, \dots, X_n . If the characteristic of I is different from 2, an alternating polynomial f is divisible by the simplest alternating polynomial p ; it can be written as $f = ps$, where s stands for a symmetric polynomial.

J. Discriminants

The square $D(X_1, \dots, X_n) = p^2(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ of the simplest alternating polynomial p is a symmetric polynomial, and it is therefore a polynomial in $\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_n$. $D(\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n) = 0$

gives a criterion for the condition that some of $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ are equal. If $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ are the roots of an algebraic equation $a_0 X^n + a_1 X^{n-1} + \dots + a_n = 0$ of degree n , then $D(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)$ is called the **discriminant of the equation**. It can be expressed in terms of coefficients a_0, a_1, \dots, a_n of the equation. For instance, if $n = 2$, we have $a_0^2 D = a_1^2 - 4a_0 a_2$; if $n = 3$, we have $a_0^4 D = a_1^2 a_2^2 + 18a_0 a_1 a_2 a_3 - 4a_0 a_3^2 - 4a_1^3 a_3 - 27a_0^2 a_3^2$.

References

- [1] B. L. van der Waerden, *Algebra I*, Springer, seventh edition, 1966.
 - [2] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, *Algèbre*, ch. 4, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1102b, Hermann, second edition, 1959.
 - [3] A. G. Kurosh, *Lectures on general algebra*, Chelsea, 1970. (Original in Russian, 1955.)
 - [4] R. Godement, *Cours d'algèbre*, Hermann, 1963.
- For Hilbert's irreducibility theorem,
 [5] S. Lang, *Diophantine geometry*, Interscience, 1962, ch. 8.

338 (X.28) Potential Theory

A. Newtonian Potential

In dynamics, a **potential** means a function u of n variables x_1, \dots, x_n such that $-\text{grad } u = -(\partial u / \partial x_1, \dots, \partial u / \partial x_n)$ gives a field of force in the n -dimensional ($n \geq 2$) Euclidean space \mathbf{R}^n . Given a point P in \mathbf{R}^n and a measure μ , the functions $u(P)$ given by the integrals

$$u(P) = - \int \log \overline{PQ} \, d\mu(Q), \quad n = 2,$$

$$u(P) = \int \overline{PQ}^{2-n} \, d\mu(Q), \quad n \geq 3,$$

are typical examples of potential functions. They are called the **logarithmic potential** and **Newtonian potential**, respectively. However, some authors mean by Newtonian potential the function $u(P) = \int \overline{PQ}^{-1} \, d\mu(Q)$ in \mathbf{R}^3 . Usually, the measure μ is taken to be a nonnegative Radon measure with compact support. These potentials are superharmonic in \mathbf{R}^n and harmonic outside the support of μ . Conversely, any harmonic function defined on a domain in \mathbf{R}^n can be expressed as the sum of a potential of a single layer and a potential of a double layer (defined in the next paragraph). Because of this close relation between potentials and harmonic functions, sometimes potential

theory means the study of harmonic functions (\rightarrow 193 Harmonic Functions and Subharmonic Functions). (For the representation by potentials of superharmonic functions \rightarrow 193 Harmonic Functions and Subharmonic Functions S.)

Suppose that the measure μ of \mathbf{R}^3 satisfies $d\mu = \rho d\tau$ with sufficiently smooth density ρ and volume element $d\tau$. Then the Newtonian potential u of μ satisfies **Poisson's equation** $\Delta u = -4\pi\rho$. If the support of μ is contained in a surface S and $d\mu = \rho d\sigma$ with density ρ and surface element $d\sigma$, then the potential u of μ is called the potential of a **single layer** (or **simple distribution**). If ρ is continuous on S , then u is continuous in the whole space, and the \dagger directional derivative of u at a point P in the direction of the normal line to S at P_0 tends to

$$-2\pi\rho(P_0) + \int_S \rho \frac{\partial}{\partial n_P} \frac{1}{PQ} \Big|_{P=P_0} d\sigma(Q)$$

as P approaches P_0 along the normal line. Therefore, as P moves on the line, the directional derivative jumps by $-4\pi\rho(P_0)$ at P_0 . If ρ satisfies the \dagger Hölder condition at $P_0 \in S$, then the derivative at P in the direction of any fixed tangent line at P_0 has a finite limit as P tends to P_0 along the normal line. The integral

$$u(P) = \int_S \rho \frac{\partial}{\partial n_Q} \frac{1}{PQ} d\sigma(Q)$$

is called the potential of a **double layer** (or **double distribution**). If ρ is continuous on S , then the limits at P_0 of u from the two directions along the normal line at P_0 exist and are $2\pi\rho(P_0) + u(P_0)$ and $-2\pi\rho(P_0) + u(P_0)$. If, further, ρ is of class C^2 on S , then each partial derivative of u has a finite limit as P tends to a point of S .

B. Generalized Potential

The classical notion of potentials is generalized as follows: Let Ω be a space supplied with a measure μ (≥ 0) and $\Phi(P, Q)$ a real-valued function on the product space $\Omega \times \Omega$. When the integral $\int \Phi(P, Q) d\mu(Q)$ is well defined at each point $P \in \Omega$, it is called the **potential** of μ with **kernel** Φ and is denoted by $\Phi(P, \mu)$ or $\Phi\mu(P)$. The function $\check{\Phi}(P, Q) = \Phi(Q, P)$ is called the **adjoint kernel** of Φ . When

$$(\mu, \nu) = \iint \Phi(P, Q) d\mu(Q) d\nu(P) \\ = \int \Phi(P, \mu) d\nu(P)$$

exists for measures $\mu, \nu \geq 0$, the value is called the **mutual energy** of μ and ν . In particular, (μ, μ) is called the **energy** of μ . The definition of

potential given above may be too general, and some restrictions are called for. We assume that Ω is a \dagger locally compact Hausdorff space; Φ is a \dagger lower semicontinuous function on $\Omega \times \Omega$ satisfying $-\infty < \Phi \leq \infty$; and μ, ν , and λ are nonnegative Radon measures with compact support in Ω . In particular, when $\Omega = \mathbf{R}^n$, the potential with the kernel $\Phi(P, Q) = \overline{PQ}^{-\alpha}$ ($0 < \alpha < n$) is called a **potential of order α** (sometimes of order $n - \alpha$) or a **Riesz potential**.

C. The Maximum Principle and the Continuity Principle

Let $\Omega = \mathbf{R}^n$, and let $\Phi(P, \mu)$ be the kernel of the Newtonian potential. Then $\Phi(P, \mu)$ satisfies the following principles: (1) **Frostman's maximum principle (first maximum principle)**: $\sup_{P \in \Omega} \Phi(P, \mu) \leq \sup_{P \in S_\mu} \Phi(P, \mu)$ for any μ , where S_μ is the support of μ . (2) **Ugaheri's maximum principle (dilated maximum principle)**: There is a constant $c \geq 0$ such that $\sup_{P \in \Omega} \Phi(P, \mu) \leq c \sup_{P \in S_\mu} \Phi(P, \mu)$ for any μ . (3) A variation of Ugaheri's maximum principle: Given any compact set $K \subset \Omega$, there exists a constant c which may depend on K such that $\sup_{P \in K} \Phi(P, \mu) \leq c \sup_{P \in S_\mu} \Phi(P, \mu)$ for any μ with $S_\mu \subset K$. (4) **Upper boundedness principle**: If $\Phi(P, \mu)$ is bounded from above on S_μ , then it is bounded on Ω also. (5) For any compact set $K \subset \Omega$ and any μ with $S_\mu \subset K$, if $\Phi(P, \mu)$ is bounded above on S_μ , then it is bounded on K also. (6) **Continuity principle**: If $\Phi(P, \mu)$ is continuous as a function on S_μ , then it is also continuous in Ω . Generally, the relations shown in Fig. 1 hold among principles (1)–(6), where (a) \rightarrow (b) means that (a) implies (b), and (c) \nrightarrow (d) means the negation of (c) \rightarrow (d).

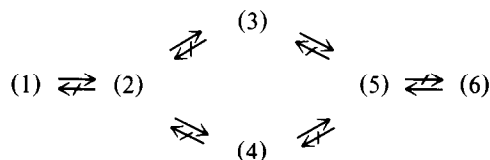


Fig. 1

If the continuity principle holds for a general kernel $\Phi(p, \mu)$ of a potential and if for any μ there is a sequence $\{P_k\}$ of points in $\Omega - S_\mu$ that has an accumulation point on S_μ and along which $\Phi(P_k, \mu) \rightarrow \sup_{\Omega - S_\mu} \Phi(P, \mu)$, then (1) holds also. The second condition is valid, for instance, when $\Omega = \mathbf{R}^n$, $\Phi(P, \mu)$ is \dagger subharmonic in $\mathbf{R}^n - S_\mu$, and $\limsup \Phi(P, \mu) < \sup_{Q \in \mathbf{R}^n} \Phi(Q, \mu)$ as P tends to the point at infinity. T. Ugaheri, G. Choquet, and N. Ninomiya studied (2) and (6). Ugaheri showed that for any nonnegative decreasing function $\varphi(r)$ defined in $[0, \infty)$ and satisfying $\varphi(0) = \infty$, the kernel $\Phi(P, Q) = \varphi(\overline{PQ})$ satisfies (2) in \mathbf{R}^n . M. Ohtsuka established

that (6) \rightarrow (5) and (5) \rightarrow (6) in general and proved (5) \rightarrow (6) in the special case where Φ is continuous on $\Omega \times \Omega$ in the wider sense (i.e., Φ may have ∞ as its value) and Φ is finite outside the diagonal set of $\Omega \times \Omega$. The examples in Sections F, I, and J show that the potentials with kernels satisfying a weak condition such as (6) possess a number of important properties. We note that (6) does not necessarily hold in general. (For literature on (1)–(6) and other related principles \rightarrow [18].)

D. The Energy Principle

Denote by E the class of all measures of finite energy. A symmetric kernel is called **positive definite** (or of **positive type**) if $(\mu - \nu, \mu - \nu) = (\mu, \mu) + (\nu, \nu) - 2(\mu, \nu) \geq 0$ for any $\mu, \nu \in E$. If the equality $(\mu - \nu, \mu - \nu) = 0$ always implies $\mu = \nu$, then the kernel is said to satisfy the **energy principle**. Some characterizations for a kernel to be of positive type or to satisfy the energy principle were given by Ninomiya. Using them, he showed that a symmetric kernel that satisfies Frostman's maximum principle or the domination principle (\rightarrow Section L) and a certain additional condition is of positive type. Choquet and Ohtsuka generalized these definitions and results [18].

E. Topologies on Classes of Measures

Let C_0 be the space of continuous functions with compact support in Ω and M_0^+ be the class of measures in Ω . The \dagger seminorms $\mu \rightarrow \int f d\mu - \int f d\nu$ ($f \in C_0$) define the **vague topology** on M_0^+ . The class of unit distributions can be topologized by the vague topology, which induces a topology on Ω itself. This topology coincides with the original topology in Ω . A subclass M of M_0^+ is relatively compact with respect to the vague topology if on every compact set in Ω , the values of the measures of M are bounded. Denote by L the class of measures λ such that (λ, μ) is finite for all $\mu \in M_0^+$, and define the **fine topology** on M_0^+ by the seminorms $\mu \rightarrow |(\lambda, \mu) - (\lambda, \nu)|$ ($\lambda \in L$). This topology was introduced by H. Cartan [4] for the Newtonian kernel. It is the weakest topology that makes each $\check{\Phi}(P, \lambda)$, $\lambda \in L$, continuous. Further, when the kernel is of positive type, the **weak topology** is defined on E by the seminorms $\mu \rightarrow |(\lambda, \mu) - (\lambda, \nu)|$ ($\lambda \in E$). The **strong topology** is defined on E by the seminorm $\sqrt{(\mu - \nu, \mu - \nu)}$.

For the Newtonian kernel, Cartan [5] showed that vague $<$ fine $<$ weak $<$ strong on E , where vague $<$ fine, for instance, means that the fine topology is stronger than the vague

topology. He proved that the fine, weak, and strong convergences are equivalent for any sequence $\{\mu_n\}$ of measures with bounded energies. B. Fuglede [16] called a kernel of positive type **consistent** when any \dagger Cauchy net with respect to the strong topology that converges vaguely to a measure converges strongly to the same measure. This notion is used to give conditions for E to be \dagger complete with respect to the strong topology [11, 18]. Moreover, Fuglede called a consistent kernel satisfying the energy principle **perfect**, and studied the cases where \dagger convolution kernels on a locally compact topological group are consistent or perfect [11]. For instance, $P\bar{Q}^{-\alpha}$ ($0 < \alpha < n$) in \mathbf{R}^n and the Bessel kernel, which was studied by N. Aronszajn and K. T. Smith, are perfect.

F. Convergence of Sequences of Potentials

We are concerned with determining when a family of potentials corresponding to a class of measures $\{\mu_\omega\}$ with indices ω in a directed set converges. If all S_{μ_ω} are contained in a fixed compact set and μ_ω converges vaguely to μ_0 , then $\liminf \Phi(P, \mu_\omega) \geq \Phi(P, \mu_0)$ in Ω . If, moreover, Φ is continuous in the wider sense and both Φ and $\check{\Phi}$ satisfy the continuity principle, then equality holds quasi-everywhere (q.e.) in Ω in this inequality [18]; we now define the notion q.e. First, for a nonempty compact set K in Ω , define $W(K)$ to be $\inf(\mu, \mu)$, where $S_\mu \subset K$ and $\mu(K) = 1$, and $W(\emptyset)$ to be ∞ for the empty set \emptyset . Next, set $W_i(X) = \inf_{K \subset X} W(K)$ for an arbitrary set X in Ω and $W_e(X) = \sup_{X \subset G} W_i(G)$, where G is an open set in Ω . When a property holds except on a set X such that $W_e(X) = \infty$ (resp. $W_i(X) = \infty$), we say that the property holds **quasi-everywhere** (q.e.) (resp. **nearly everywhere** (n.e.)). The terms q.e. and n.e. are also used in the theory of \dagger capacity, although their meaning is not the same as here. (For results on the convergence of sequences of potentials \rightarrow [18].)

G. Thin Sets

A set $X \subset \Omega$ is called **thin** at P_0 when either P_0 is an isolated point of the set $X \cup \{P_0\}$ with respect to the original topology of Ω or there exists a measure μ such that $\liminf \Phi(P, \mu) > \Phi(P_0, \mu)$ as $P \in X - \{P_0\}$ tends to P_0 . If P_0 is an isolated point of $X \cup \{P_0\}$ with respect to the topology weakest among those stronger than both the original topology and the fine topology, then X is thin with respect to the adjoint kernel $\check{\Phi}$. The converse is true in a special case [5]. The notion of thinness was

introduced in 1940 by M. Brelot and investigated in detail in [3]. Let $\varphi(r)$ be a positive decreasing function. Suppose there exist positive numbers r_0, δ, a such that $\varphi(r) \leq a\varphi((1 + \delta)r)$ in $0 < r < r_0$. Assume that Ω is a metric space with distance ρ , and take $\varphi(\rho(P, Q))$ as the kernel $\Phi(P, Q)$. Then a necessary and sufficient condition for X to be thin at P_0 is $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} s^j / W_e(X_j) < \infty$ ($s > 1$) [19], where $X_j = \{P \in X \mid s^j \leq \varphi(\rho(P, P_0)) \leq s^{j+1}\}$. This criterion was obtained by N. Wiener in 1924 and utilized to give a condition for a boundary point P_0 of a domain D in \mathbb{R}^3 to be regular with respect to the Dirichlet problem for D . In this situation, P_0 is regular if and only if the complement of D is thin at P_0 . When every compact subset of X is thin at P_0 , X is called **internally thin** at P_0 . A necessary and sufficient condition for X to be internally thin at P_0 is $\sum s^j / W_i(X_j) < \infty$.

H. Polar Sets

Brelot (1941) called a set A **polar** when there is a measure μ for which $\Phi(P, \mu) = \infty$ on A . Consider $\tilde{U}(\Omega, K) (= V(K, \Omega))$ as defined in 48 Capacity C , and define $\tilde{U}_e(\Omega, X)$ by $\sup_{G \supset X} \inf_{K \subset G} \tilde{U}(\Omega, K)$ for an arbitrary set X , where G is an open set. Then for any μ , $X = \{P \mid \Phi(P, \mu) = \infty\}$ is a G_δ set for which the value of $\tilde{U}_e(\Omega, X)$ is infinite. Conversely, given a G_δ set A of n -Newtonian outer capacity zero in \mathbb{R}^n ($n \geq 3$), there is a measure μ such that the set of points where the Newtonian potential of μ is equal to ∞ coincides with A and $\mu(\mathbb{R}^n - A) = 0$ (Choquet [7]). This result is called **Evans's theorem** (or the **Evans-Selberg theorem**) (— 48 Capacity) in the special case where A is compact.

I. Quasicontinuity

A function f in Ω is called **quasicontinuous** if there is an open subset G in Ω of arbitrarily small capacity such that the restriction of f to $\Omega - G$ is continuous. Naturally, quasicontinuity depends on the definition of capacity. Suppose that whenever the potential of a measure μ with kernel Φ is continuous as a function on S_μ , it is quasicontinuous in Ω ; Φ is then said to satisfy the **quasicontinuity principle**. Assuming in addition that Φ is positive symmetric and taking $1/U(\Omega, G)$ as the capacity of G , we find that every potential is quasicontinuous in Ω (M. Kishi). A similar result is valid for a non-symmetric kernel if the continuity principle is assumed (Choquet [6]).

J. The Gauss Variational Problem

Given a compact set K and a function f on K , the problem of minimizing the **Gauss integral** $(\mu, \mu) - 2 \int f d\mu$ for a measure μ such that $S_\mu \subset K$ is called the **Gauss variational problem**. When an additional condition is imposed on μ , the problem is called conditional. Among many results obtained for this problem [18], the following is typical: If Φ is symmetric, K supports a nonzero measure of finite energy, and f is finite upper semicontinuous on K , then there exists a μ such that $f(P) \leq \Phi(P, \mu)$ n.e. on K and $f(P) \geq \Phi(P, \mu)$ on S_μ . When Φ is not symmetric, the same relations hold for some μ if Φ is positive and Φ satisfies the continuity principle (Kishi [15]), although the method using Gauss variation is not applicable. When Φ is symmetric and of positive type, the Gauss integral with $f(P) = \Phi(P, v)$ ($v \in E$) is equal to $\|\mu - v\|^2 - \|v\|^2$, and the minimizing problem is equivalent to finding the projection of v to $\{\mu \in E \mid S_\mu \subset K\}$. In some cases, this projection is equal to the measure obtained by the balayage of v to K (— Section L).

K. Equilibrium Mass Distributions

A unit measure μ supported by a compact set K is called an **equilibrium mass distribution** on K if $\Phi(P, \mu)$ is equal to a constant a n.e. on K and $\Phi(P, \mu) \leq a$ in Ω . The kernel is said to satisfy the **equilibrium principle** if there exists an equilibrium mass distribution on every compact set. If $a > 0$, $1/a$ can be regarded as a kind of capacity, and μ/a is called a **capacitary mass distribution**. Corresponding to inner and outer capacities, inner and outer capacity mass distributions and their coincidence can be discussed [11]. When Φ is symmetric, Frostman's maximum principle is equivalent to the equilibrium principle.

L. The Sweeping-Out Principle

A kernel is said to satisfy the **sweeping-out principle** (or **balayage principle**) if for any compact set K and measure μ there exists a measure ν supported by K such that $\Phi(P, \nu) = \Phi(P, \mu)$ n.e. on K and $\Phi(P, \nu) \leq \Phi(P, \mu)$ in Ω . When we find such a ν , we say that we **sweep out** μ to K , and finding ν is called a **sweeping-out process** (or **balayage**). This terminology originated in the classical process for the Newtonian potential in which the exterior of K is covered by a countable number of balls and the masses inside the balls are repeatedly swept out onto the spherical surfaces. For any general kernel, the balayage principle implies

the **domination principle** (also called **Cartan's maximum principle**), which asserts that if the inequality $\Phi(P, \mu) \leq \Phi(P, \nu)$ is valid on S_μ for $\mu \in E$ and any ν , then the same inequality holds in Ω . The converse is true if Φ is positive, symmetric, continuous in the wider sense, and finite outside the diagonal set. In contrast to the domination principle, Φ is said to satisfy the **inverse domination principle** if the inequality $\Phi(P, \mu) \leq \Phi(P, \nu)$ on S_ν for $\mu \in E$ and any ν implies the same inequality in Ω . In a special case, the domination principle implies Frostman's maximum principle [17]. For the equilibrium and domination principles for non-symmetric kernels \rightarrow [14].

Corresponding to inner and outer capacity mass distributions, we can examine inner and outer balayage mass distributions and inner and outer Gauss variational problems and their coincidences [5, 18]. With respect to the Newtonian potential, a point P is called an **internally (externally) irregular point** of X if the inner (outer) balayage mass distribution to X of the unit measure ε_P at P is different from ε_P . X is thin (internally thin) at P if and only if P is an externally (internally) irregular point of X (Cartan [5]).

M. Other Principles

A kernel Φ is said to satisfy the **uniqueness principle** if $\mu \equiv \nu$ follows from the equality $\Phi(P, \mu) = \Phi(P, \nu)$, which is valid n.e. in Ω . Nino-miya and Kishi studied this principle. A kernel Φ is said to satisfy the **lower envelope principle** if given μ and ν , there is a λ such that $\Phi(P, \lambda) = \min(\Phi(P, \mu), \Phi(P, \nu))$. If Φ satisfies the domination principle and Φ satisfies the continuity principle, then Φ satisfies the lower envelope principle on every compact set considered as a space. Conversely, if Φ satisfies the lower envelope principle on every compact set considered as a space, then Φ satisfies the domination principle or the inverse domination principle under some additional conditions (Kishi). A kernel is said to satisfy the **complete maximum principle** if the inequality $\Phi(P, \mu) \leq \Phi(P, \nu) + a$ on S_μ implies the same inequality in Ω for $\mu \in E$, any ν , and $a \geq 0$ (Cartan and J. Deny, 1950). This principle implies both Frostman's maximum principle and the domination principle. Potentials of order α ($n - 2 \leq \alpha < n$) in \mathbf{R}^n and the **Yukawa potential** with kernel $a\overline{PQ}^{-1} \exp(-\lambda\overline{PQ})$ in \mathbf{R}^3 satisfy the complete maximum principle. Relations between this principle and some other principles were studied by Kishi [14].

While all principles discussed so far are global, Choquet and Ohtsuka made a local study.

N. Diffusion Kernels

By means of the bilinear form $\int f d\mu$ ($f \in C$, $\mu \in M_0$), we now introduce weak topologies in the space C of continuous functions in Ω and in the class M_0 of Radon measures of general sign with compact support. Similarly, we introduce weak topologies in C_0 and in the class M of measures of general sign with not necessarily compact support. A positive linear mapping G of M_0 into M that is continuous with respect to these two weak topologies is called a **diffusion kernel**. The linear mapping G^* of C_0 into C that is determined by $\int f dG\mu = \int G^*f d\mu$ is called a **transposed mapping**. We can define the balayage principle for G and the domination principle for G^* as in the case where kernels are functions. Then G satisfies the balayage principle if and only if G^* satisfies the domination principle (Choquet and Deny). The complete maximum principle has been defined and studied for G^* (Deny). G. A. Hunt obtained a relation between this principle and the representation of G^*f in the form $\int_0^\infty P_t f dt$ with a \dagger semigroup P_t . His result is important in the theory of \dagger stochastic processes (\rightarrow 261 Markov Processes).

O. Convolution Kernels

A diffusion kernel G on a locally compact Abelian group induces a convolution kernel κ if G is translation-invariant. It is called a **Hunt kernel** when there exists a vaguely continuous semigroup $\{\alpha_t\}_{t \geq 0}$ such that $\kappa = \int_0^\infty \alpha_t dt$ and $\alpha_0 = \varepsilon_0$, the Dirac measure at the origin. A Hunt kernel satisfies the domination principle and the balayage principle to all open sets, and it satisfies the complete maximum principle if and only if $\{\alpha_t\}_{t \geq 0}$ is sub-Markovian, $\int d\alpha_t \leq 1$. The Fourier transform of such a semigroup has a closed connection with a negative-definite function [1].

For a convolution kernel κ satisfying the domination principle, or, equivalently, the balayage principle, the inequality

$$\kappa(\omega_1)\kappa(\omega_2) \leq \kappa(\omega_1 - \omega_1)\kappa(\omega_1 + \omega_2)$$

is valid for all relatively compact open sets ω_1 and ω_2 [8]. It has a unique decomposition $\kappa = \varphi \cdot (\kappa_0 + \kappa_1)$, where φ is a continuous exponential function, κ_0 is equal to 0 or a Hunt kernel satisfying the complete maximum principle, and κ_1 is a singular kernel satisfying the domination principle such that $\kappa_1 * \varepsilon_x = \kappa_1$ for every $x \in S_{\kappa_0}$ [12].

P. Potentials with Distribution Kernels

A function f in \mathbf{R}^n is called **slowly increasing in the sense of Deny** if there exists a positive

integer q such that $\int f(P)(1 + \overline{OP}^2)^{-q} d\tau(P) < \infty$. A \dagger distribution K is called a **distribution kernel** if the \dagger Fourier transform FK of K is a function $k \geq 0$ and both k and $1/k$ are slowly increasing in the sense of Deny. Given such a distribution K , the family W of distributions T for which FT are functions and $\|T\|^2 = \int k(FT)^2 d\tau < \infty$ (this is called the energy of T) is a \dagger Hilbert space with inner product $(T_1, T_2) = \int kFT_1 FT_2 d\tau$. However, the family of Newtonian potentials of measures with finite energy is not a Hilbert space (Cartan). The family of functions of class C^∞ with compact support is \dagger dense in W . For every $T \in W$ the function $FK \times FT$ is slowly increasing in the sense of Deny. There exists a distribution $U = U^T$ that satisfies $FU = FK \times FT$, called the K -potential of T . Since W is complete, the method of projection is applicable, and problems of equilibrium, balayage, and capacity can be examined. For instance, if \dagger Dirac's distribution δ is taken as a distribution kernel, then the corresponding capacity is the Lebesgue measure. In the case of the Newtonian kernel, $\partial U^T / \partial x_j = f_j$ is defined a.e. in \mathbf{R}^n for any $T \in W$. These f_j are square integrable, $T = -c_n \sum_{j=1}^n \partial f_j / \partial x_j$, and $\|T\|^2 = c_n \sum_{j=1}^n \int |f_j|^2 d\tau$, where $1/c_n = 2(n-2)\pi^{n/2}/\Gamma(n/2)$. Furthermore,

$$U^T = (n-2) \int \sum_{j=1}^n (x_j - y_j) f_j(Q) \overline{PQ}^{-n} d\tau(Q),$$

where x_j, y_j are components of P, Q , respectively. Every ordinary potential of a double layer is a special case of U^T . Conversely, let f be a function in \mathbf{R}^n that is absolutely continuous along almost every line parallel to each coordinate axis and whose partial derivatives are square integrable. Then f is equal to the potential of some $T \in W$ with Newtonian kernel up to an additive constant. These results are due to Deny [9].

Q. Dirichlet Spaces

In this section, functions are assumed to be complex-valued. Let Ω be a locally compact Hausdorff space, $\xi \geq 0$ a Radon measure in Ω , and C_0 the space of continuous functions with compact support. A Hilbert space D consisting of locally ξ -integrable functions is called a **Dirichlet space** if $C_0 \cap D$ is dense in both C_0 and D , the relations $|v(P) - v(Q)| \leq |u(P) - u(Q)|$ and $|v(P)| \leq |u(P)|$ for $u \in D$ and a function v always imply $v \in D$ and $\|v\| \leq \|u\|$, and for any compact set $K \subset \Omega$, there exists a constant $A(K)$ such that $\int_K |u| d\xi \leq A(K) \|u\|$ for every $u \in D$. The notion of Dirichlet space was introduced by A. Beurling. A function $u \in D$ is called a potential if there exists a Radon measure μ such that $(u, \varphi) = \int \bar{\varphi} d\mu$ holds for every

338 Ref. Potential Theory

$\varphi \in C_0 \cap D$. If in addition $\mu \geq 0$, then u is called a pure potential. For any pure potential, the lower envelope principle, the equilibrium principle, the balayage principle, and the complete maximum principle hold [2]. Suppose that Ω is a locally compact Abelian group and D is a Dirichlet space such that $U_y u(x) = u(x - y) \in D$ and $\|U_y u\| = \|u\|$ for every $u \in D$ and $y \in \Omega$. Then we call D special and characterize it in terms of a real-valued continuous function on Ω [2]. (For axiomatic potential theory \rightarrow 193 Harmonic Functions and Subharmonic Functions.)

References

- [1] C. Berg and G. Forst, Potential theory on locally compact Abelian groups, Springer, 1975.
- [2] A. Beurling and J. Deny, Dirichlet spaces, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US, 45 (1959), 208–215.
- [3] M. Brelot, Sur les ensembles effilés, Bull. Sci. Math., (2) 68 (1944), 12–36.
- [4] M. Brelot, Eléments de la théorie classique du potentiel, Centre de Documentation Universitaire, third edition, 1965.
- [5] H. Cartan, Théorie générale du balayage en potentiel newtonien, Ann. Univ. Grenoble (N.S.), 22 (1946), 221–280.
- [6] G. Choquet, Sur les fondements de la théorie fine du potentiel, C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris, 244 (1957), 1606–1609.
- [7] G. Choquet, Potentiels sur un ensemble de capacité nulle, Suites de potentiels, C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris, 244 (1957), 1707–1710.
- [8] G. Choquet and J. Deny, Noyaux de convolution et balayage sur tout ouvert, Lecture notes in math. 404, Springer, 1974, 60–112.
- [9] J. Deny, Les potentiels d'énergie finie, Acta Math., 82 (1950), 107–183.
- [10] O. Frostman, Potentiel d'équilibre et capacité des ensembles avec quelques applications à la théorie des fonctions, Medd. Lunds Univ. Mat. Sem., 3 (1935).
- [11] B. Fuglede, On the theory of potentials in locally compact spaces, Acta Math., 103 (1960), 139–215.
- [12] M. Itô, Caractérisation du principe de domination pour les noyaux de convolution non-bornés, Nagoya Math. J., 57 (1975), 167–197.
- [13] O. D. Kellogg, Foundations of potential theory, Springer, 1929.
- [14] M. Kishi, Maximum principles in the potential theory, Nagoya Math. J., 23 (1963), 165–187.
- [15] M. Kishi, An existence theorem in potential theory, Nagoya Math. J., 27 (1966), 133–137.

- [16] N. S. Landkof, Foundations of modern potential theory, Springer, 1972.
 [17] N. Ninomiya, Etude sur la théorie du potentiel pris par rapport au noyau symétrique, J. Inst. Polytech. Osaka City Univ., (A) 8 (1957), 147–179.
 [18] M. Ohtsuka, On potentials in locally compact spaces, J. Sci. Hiroshima Univ., 25 (1961), 135–352.
 [19] M. Ohtsuka, On thin sets in potential theory, Sem. Anal. Funtions, Inst. for Adv. Study, Princeton, 1957, vol. 1, p. 302–313.

339 (XI.2) Power Series

A. General Remarks

Let a and c_0, c_1, c_2, \dots be elements of a \dagger field K and z be a variable. A series of the form $P = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} c_n(z-a)^n$ is called a **power series** (in one variable). We assume that K is the field of complex numbers. For a given power series P , we can determine a unique real number R ($0 \leq R \leq \infty$) such that P converges if $|z-a| < R$ and diverges if $R < |z-a|$. We call R the **radius of convergence** and the circle $|z-a| = R$ (sometimes $|z-a| < R$) the **circle of convergence** of P . The value of R is given by $R = 1/\limsup \sqrt[n]{|c_n|}$ (**Cauchy-Hadamard formula**) with the conventions $0 = 1/\infty$, $\infty = 1/0$. Also $R = \lim |c_n/c_{n+1}|$, provided that the limit on the right-hand side exists.

A power series \dagger converges absolutely and uniformly on every compact subset inside its circle of convergence and defines there a single-valued complex function. Since the series is \dagger termwise differentiable, the function is actually a holomorphic function of a complex variable. Conversely, any function $f(z)$ holomorphic in a domain can be represented by a power series in a neighborhood of each point a of the domain. Such a representation is called the **Taylor expansion** of $f(z)$ at a (or in the neighborhood of a). A power series that represents a holomorphic function is called a holomorphic **function element**. K. Weierstrass defined an analytic function as the set of all elements that can be obtained by \dagger analytic continuations starting from a given function element (\rightarrow 198 Holomorphic Functions).

Besides the series $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} c_n(z-a)^n$, a series of the form $Q = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} c_n z^{-n}$ is called a **power series with center at the point at infinity**, and its value at ∞ is defined to be c_0 . By putting $z-a = t$ when its center a is a finite point and $z^{-1} = t$ when its center is ∞ , every power series can be

written in the form $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} c_n t^n$, and such a t is called a **local canonical parameter**.

When t is a local canonical parameter, a series of the form $\sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} c_n t^n$ is called a **Laurent series** and a series $\sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} c_n t^{n/k}$ (k a fixed natural number) is called a **Puiseux series**, after the French mathematicians A. Laurent and V. A. Puiseux. Power series are sometimes called **Taylor series**.

If we perform \dagger analytic continuations of a power series from its center along radii of its circle of convergence, we encounter a \dagger singularity on the circumference for at least one radius. For a power series with the circle of convergence $|z| = R$, the argument α of the singularity on $|z| = R$ nearest $z = R$ is given in the following way. Suppose, for simplicity, that the radius of convergence R of $\sum c_n z^n$ equals 1, and put

$$\rho_n(h) = \sum_{v=0}^n \binom{n}{v} c_{n-v} h^v,$$

$$P(h) = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sqrt[n]{|\rho_n(h)|}.$$

Then α is obtained from

$$\cos \alpha = P'_+(0) = \lim_{h \rightarrow +0} (P(h) - 1)/h$$

(S. Mandelbrojt, 1937). In particular, if all the c_n are real and nonnegative, $z = R$ is a singularity (Vivanti's theorem).

B. Abel's Continuity Theorem

As a property of the power series on the circle of convergence, we have **Abel's continuity theorem**: If the radius of convergence of $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ is equal to 1 and $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$ converges (or is $\dagger(C, k)$ -summable ($k > -1$)) to A , then $f(z) \rightarrow A$ when z approaches 1 in any sector $\{z \mid |z| < 1, |\arg(1-z)| < (\pi/2) - \delta\}$, $\delta > 0$ (\dagger Stolz's path).

The converse of this theorem is not always true. The existence of $\lim_{z \rightarrow 1} f(z)$ does not necessarily lead to the convergence of $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$. Even Cesàro summability of $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n$ does not always follow from the existence of $\lim_{z \rightarrow 1} f(z)$. If $a_n = o(1/n)$ and $f(z) \rightarrow A$ when z approaches 1 along a curve ending at $z = 1$, then $\sum a_n$ converges to A (**Tauber's theorem**, 1897). The theorems concerning additional sufficient conditions for the validity of the converse of Abel's theorem are called **theorems of Tauberian type** (or **Tauberian theorems**). In Tauber's theorem, the hypothesis on the a_n may be replaced by $a_n = O(1/n)$ or $n \operatorname{Re} a_n, n \operatorname{Im} a_n$ may be bounded from above but not necessarily from below (G. H. Hardy and J. E. Littlewood). Here, the condition $a_n = O(1/n)$ cannot be weakened (Littlewood). Sufficient condi-

tions for $\sum a_n$ to be †summable for various summation methods are also known.

C. Lambert Series

A series of the form

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n \frac{z^n}{1-z^n}, \quad |z| \neq 1, \quad (1)$$

is called a **Lambert series**. If $\sum a_n$ is convergent, (1) converges for any z with $|z| \neq 1$, and moreover, it converges uniformly on any compact set contained in $|z| < 1$ or $|z| > 1$. If $\sum a_n$ is divergent, (1) and the power series $\sum a_n z^n$ converge or diverge simultaneously for $|z| \neq 1$.

There is a detailed study of Lambert series by K. Knopp (1913). If R is the radius of convergence of $\sum a_n z^n$ and $\sum_{d|n} a_d = A_n$ is the sum extending over all divisors of n , then we have the reciprocity relation

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n \frac{z^n}{1-z^n} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} A_n z^n,$$

which holds for $|z| < \min(R, 1)$. As special cases of this relation, we have

$$z = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \mu(n) \frac{z^n}{1-z^n},$$

$$\frac{z}{(1-z)^2} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \varphi(n) \frac{z^n}{1-z^n},$$

where μ and φ are the †Möbius function and †Euler function, respectively.

If the na_n are real and bounded from below,

$$\lim_{z \rightarrow 1-0} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (1-z) na_n \frac{z^n}{1-z^n} = s$$

implies $\sum a_n = s$. Hardy and Littlewood (1921) showed that this theorem of Tauberian type is equivalent to the †prime number theorem.

D. Singularities of Power Series

Given a power series $P = \sum a_n z^n$, if the †branch in $|z| < R^*$ of the analytic function $f(z)$ determined by P is single-valued meromorphic but the branch in $|z| < R'$ with $R' > R^*$ has singularities other than poles, then R^* is called the **radius of meromorphy** of P and $|z| = R^*$ (sometimes $|z| < R^*$) is called the **circle of meromorphy** of P . R^* can be computed in the following way. Put

$$l_p = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sqrt[n]{D_n^{(p)}},$$

$$D_n^{(p)} = \begin{vmatrix} a_n & a_{n+1} & \cdots & a_{n+p} \\ a_{n+1} & a_{n+2} & \cdots & a_{n+p+1} \\ \cdots & \cdots & \cdots & \cdots \\ a_{n+p} & a_{n+p+1} & \cdots & a_{n+2p} \end{vmatrix}.$$

Then the sequence of numbers l_{p-1}/l_p is increasing, and $\lim l_{p-1}/l_p = R^*$. If R_1, R_2, \dots are different valued of l_{p-1}/l_p , then $f(z)$ is holomorphic at points not lying on $|z| = R_n$ (**Hadamard's theorem**, 1892).

When a point a and a set A of points in the complex plane are given, the set of points that can be joined with a by a segment disjoint from A is called the **star region** determined by a and A . Take any half-line starting at a ; the point of A lying on it and nearest to a is called a **vertex**. For a power series $\sum c_n z^n$, the set of centers of the function elements obtained by analytic continuations along half-lines starting at the origin is called the **star region** of $\sum c_n z^n$ with respect to the origin. Let $\{\alpha\}$ and $\{\beta\}$ be the set of vertices of the star regions with respect to the origin of $\sum a_n z^n$ and $\sum b_n z^n$, respectively. Then the star region determined by the origin and the set $\{\alpha\beta\}$ is contained in the star region of $\sum a_n b_n z^n$ (**Hadamard's multiplication theorem**, 1892).

The following are some results concerning conditions for the coincidence of the circle of convergence of a power series and its †natural boundary. Let the a_n be positive numbers and b a natural number greater than 1. If the radius of convergence of $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^{bn}$ is equal to 1, then $|z| = 1$ is its natural boundary (Weierstrass, E. I. Fredholm). If the radius of convergence of $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^{\lambda_n}$ (with $\{\lambda_n\}$ an increasing sequence of natural numbers) is 1 and $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (\lambda_{n+1} - \lambda_n)/\lambda_n > 0$, then $|z| = 1$ is the natural boundary (**Hadamard's gap theorem**). The latter condition was weakened to $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} (\lambda_{n+1} - \lambda_n)/\sqrt{\lambda_n} > 0$ by E. Borel (1896). E. Fabry (1896) showed that with the radius of convergence of $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ being 1, if there exist a suitable sequence of natural numbers $m_1 < m_2 < \dots$ and a number θ ($0 < \theta < 1$) such that $\lim s_i/m_i = 0$, where the s_i are the number of nonzero a_n contained in the interval $(m_i(1-\theta), m_i(1+\theta))$, then $|z| = 1$ is the natural boundary of $\sum a_n z^n$. By applying this theorem to $\sum a_n z^{\lambda_n}$ with radius of convergence 1, it can be shown that if $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \lambda_n/n = \infty$, then $|z| = 1$ is its natural boundary. These theorems are called **gap theorems** because they concern power series with gaps in their exponents. A generalization of Fabry's theorem was obtained by G. Pólya. It is known that Fabry's last condition above is in a sense the best possible (Pólya, 1942).

Regarding the natural boundary of a power series, we also have the following result: When the radius of convergence of $\sum a_n z^n$ is 1, by a suitable choice of the sequence $\{\varepsilon_n\}$ ($\varepsilon_n = \pm 1$), the series $\sum \varepsilon_n a_n z^n$ has $|z| = 1$ as its natural boundary (A. Hurwitz, P. Fatou, Pólya).

E. Overconvergence

If the radius of convergence of $f(z) = \sum a_n z^n$ is 1, the sequence of partial sums $S(1, z)$, $S(2, z)$, \dots , where $S(n, z) = \sum_{v=0}^n a_v z^v$, is naturally divergent for $|z| > 1$, but a suitable subsequence $S(n_k, z)$ ($k = 1, 2, \dots$) may still be convergent.

A. Ostrowski [7, 8] called this phenomenon **overconvergence** and proved the following result: By definition, $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ has a **lacunary structure** if the sequence $\{\lambda_n\}$ has a subsequence $\{\lambda_{n_k}\}$ such that $\lambda_{n_{k+1}} > \lambda_{n_k}(1 + \theta)$ ($\theta > 0$). If this situation occurs, then in a sufficiently small neighborhood of a point on $|z| = 1$ where $f(z)$ is holomorphic, $S(\lambda_{n_k}, z)$ ($k = 1, 2, \dots$) converges uniformly. This result includes Hadamard's gap theorem as a special case. Conversely, any power series for which overconvergence takes place can be represented as the sum of a power series having a lacunary structure and a power series whose radius of convergence is greater than 1. G. Bourion [9] gave a unified theory of these results using \dagger superharmonic functions.

R. Jentsch [10] showed that all singularities of a power series on its circle of convergence are accumulation points of the zeros of the partial sums. On the other hand, if the zeros of a subsequence $S(n_k, z)$ ($k = 1, 2, \dots$) has no accumulation point on $|z| = 1$, then the power series has a lacunary structure and overconvergence takes place for $S(n_k, z)$ ($k = 1, 2, \dots$). If $\log n_{k+1} = O(n_k)$ and $S(n_k, z)$ ($k = 1, 2, \dots$) is overconvergent, then all boundary points of the domain of overconvergence are accumulation points of the zeros of $S(n_k, z)$ (Ostrowski [8]).

A power series is completely determined by its coefficients, but little is known about the relations between the arithmetical properties of its coefficients and the function-theoretic properties of the function represented by the series. A known result is that if the power series $\sum c_n z^n$ with rational coefficients represents a branch of an \dagger algebraic function, then we can find an integer γ such that the $c_n \gamma^n$ ($n \geq 1$) are all integers (Eisenstein's theorem, 1852).

For power series of several variables \rightarrow 21 Analytic Functions of Several Complex Variables; for formal power series \rightarrow 370 Rings of Power Series. For power series expansions \rightarrow Appendix A, Table 10.IV.

References

For the general theory of power series,
[1] E. G. H. Landau, *Darstellung und Begründung einiger neuerer Ergebnisse der Funktionentheorie*, Springer, second edition, 1929.

[2] P. Dienes, *The Taylor series*, Clarendon Press, 1931.

[3] L. Bieberbach, *Analytische Fortsetzung*, Springer, 1955.

Also \rightarrow references to 198 Holomorphic Functions.

For singularities,

[4] S. Mandelbrojt, *Les singularités des fonctions analytiques représentées par une série de Taylor*, Gauthier-Villars, 1932.

For theorems of Tauberian type,

[5] N. Wiener, Tauberian theorems, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 33 (1932), 1–100.

[6] H. R. Pitt, Tauberian theorems, Oxford Univ. Press, 1958.

For overconvergence,

[7] A. Ostrowski, Über eine Eigenschaft gewisser Potenzreihen mit unendlichvielen verschwinden der Koeffizienten, *S.-B. Preuss. Akad. Wiss.*, (1921), 557–565.

[8] A. Ostrowski, Über vollständige Gebiete gleichmässiger Konvergenz von Folgen analytischer Funktionen, *Abh. Math. Sem. Univ. Hamburg*, 1 (1922), 327–350.

[9] G. Bourion, L'ultraconvergence dans les séries de Taylor, *Actualités Sci. Ind.*, Hermann, 1937.

[10] R. Jentsch, Fortgesetzte Untersuchungen über die Abschnitte von Potenzreihen, *Acta Math.*, 41 (1918), 253–270.

340 (XVII.17)
Probabilistic Methods in
Statistical Mechanics

A. Introduction

Probabilistic methods are often very useful in the rigorous treatment of the mathematical foundations of statistical mechanics and also in some other problems related to statistical mechanics. As examples of such methods, we explain here (1) Ising models, (2) Markov statistical mechanics, (3) percolation processes, (4) random Schrödinger equations, and (5) the \dagger Boltzmann equation.

B. Ising Models

The **Ising model** was proposed by E. Ising [1] to explain the **phenomena of phase transitions** of a ferromagnet, in which either a $+$ or $-$ spin is put on each site of a crystal lattice, and interaction between nearest neighboring sites is taken into consideration.

Let V be a cube in the d -dimensional integer lattice space \mathbf{Z}^d and $X_V = \{+1, -1\}^V$ be the totality of spin configurations in V . Each ele-

ment of X_V is denoted by $\sigma = \{\sigma_i\}_{i \in V}$ ($\sigma_i = +1$ or -1). We suppose that a spin configuration σ has a potential of the type

$$U_V(\sigma) = - \sum_{\langle i,j \rangle \subset V} \sigma_i \sigma_j + h \sum_{i \in V} \sigma_i,$$

where $\langle i,j \rangle$ means that (i,j) is a nearest neighboring pair of sites and h stands for the parameter of an external field. A \dagger probability measure on X_V is called a **state** on V . For each state μ , the **free energy** is defined by

$$F_V(\mu) = \sum_{\sigma \in X_V} \mu(\sigma) U_V(\sigma) + \frac{1}{\beta} \sum_{\sigma \in X_V} \mu(\sigma) \log \mu(\sigma),$$

where $\beta = 1/kT$ (k is the \dagger Boltzmann constant, T is the \dagger absolute temperature). Then there exists a unique state

$$g_V^{\beta,h}(\sigma) = \frac{\exp(-\beta U_V(\sigma))}{\sum_{\gamma \in X_V} \exp(-\beta U_V(\gamma))}, \quad \sigma \in X_V,$$

on V which minimizes the free energy F_V (**variational principle**). $g_V^{\beta,h}$ is called a **Gibbs state** on V of the Ising model with parameter (β, h) . Physically, a Gibbs state is an **equilibrium state**, in which various physical quantities are calculated.

Since for each \mathbf{Z}^d -homogeneous (i.e., translationally invariant with respect to \mathbf{Z}^d) state μ the **mean free energy**

$$f(\mu) = \lim_{V \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}^d} \frac{1}{|V|} F_V(\mu)$$

is well defined, a (limiting) Gibbs state can also be defined for the infinite domain $V = \mathbf{Z}^d$ by the above mentioned variational principle. However, at present the probabilistic definition of Gibbs states given by Dobrushin [2] and Lanford and Ruelle [3] is prevalent.

It is known that if an external field is present (i.e., $h \neq 0$) there is only one Gibbs state for any β . On the other hand when an external field is absent ($h = 0$) and $d \geq 2$, there are at least two Gibbs states, i.e., a phase transition occurs, for a sufficiently low temperature.

Finally, we mention some known facts in this field. In the following we assume $h = 0$. (1) In the 1-dimensional case, the phase transition never occurs. (2) For $d \geq 2$, there exists a **critical value** $\beta_c(d)$ such that the phase transition does not occur for any $\beta < \beta_c(d)$ but it occurs for every $\beta > \beta_c(d)$. The calculation of $\beta_c(2)$ has been carried out by Onsager [4]. (3) In the 2-dimensional case, every Gibbs state is \mathbf{Z}^2 -homogeneous [5, 6]. (4) For $d \geq 3$, there is a \mathbf{Z}^d -inhomogeneous Gibbs state for sufficiently large β [7].

C. Markov Statistical Mechanics

Stochastic Ising models, infinite interacting particle systems, and many models occurring

in physics, biology, and sociology are formulated as a class of infinite-dimensional \dagger Markov processes. The field of investigation of stationary states and statistical or ergodic properties of these processes is called **Markov statistical mechanics**, which has made rapid progress during the last decade. We explain this field by looking at a typical class of processes.

Let \mathbf{Z}^d be the d -dimensional integer lattice space. Putting $+$ or $-$ spin on each site on \mathbf{Z}^d , let us consider a random motion of spins which evolves while interacting with neighboring spins. Let $X = \{+, -\}^{\mathbf{Z}^d}$ be the totality of spin configurations and an element of X be denoted by $\eta = \{\eta(i)\}_{i \in \mathbf{Z}^d}$ ($\eta(i) = +1$ or -1). The process is described in terms of a collection of nonnegative functions $c_i(\eta)$ defined for $i \in \mathbf{Z}^d$ and $\eta \in X$. For the configuration η_t at time t , $\eta_t(i)$ changes to $-\eta_t(i)$ in the time interval $[t, t + \Delta t]$ with probability $c_i(\eta_t) \Delta t + o(\Delta t)$. This process on X is called a spin-flip model. For an initial distribution μ we denote by μ_t the distribution at time t . If $\mu_t = \mu$ for all $t \geq 0$, μ is called a **stationary state**.

Example 1. Stochastic Ising models. A **stochastic Ising model** was proposed by Glauber [8] to describe the random motion in a ferromagnet upon contact with a heat bath. Then the flip rate $\{c_i(\eta)\}$ is defined by the potential of the Ising model. It is known that any Gibbs state of the Ising model is a reversible stationary state of the stochastic Ising model, and the converse is also valid. Free energy plays an important role in the study of the ergodic properties of these models. In particular, the mean free energy is a nondecreasing functional along the distributions μ_t , $0 \leq t < \infty$.

Example 2. Contact processes. A **contact process** was introduced by Harris [11] to investigate the spread of infection. The flip rate of the contact process is given by

$$c_i(\eta) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } \eta(i) = +1, \\ k\lambda & \text{if } \eta(i) = -1 \quad \text{and} \\ & \# \{j \mid |j-i|=1, \eta(j) = +1\} = k. \end{cases}$$

Here $+1$ denotes an infected individual and -1 denotes a healthy one. Denote by δ_{-1} the configuration at which all sites are healthy and by δ_{-1} the unit point mass at -1 ; then δ_{-1} is a stationary state. The most important result is the following: There exists a **critical value** λ_d ($0 < \lambda_d < \infty$) such that if $\lambda < \lambda_d$ δ_{-1} is a unique stationary state, and if $\lambda > \lambda_d$ there is another stationary state μ satisfying

$$\mu[\eta \in X; \eta(i) = +1 \text{ for infinitely many } i] = 1.$$

D. Percolation Processes

A **percolation process** is a mathematical model which describes the random spread of a fluid

through a medium. It can be used to describe phenomena such as the penetration through a porous solid by a liquid or the spread of an infectious disease [14]. Usually, the process is identified as a **site percolation process** or a **bond percolation process**. Here we describe the latter only.

Let $L = \{S, B\}$ be a countable connected \dagger graph with a set of sites (\dagger vertices) S and a set of bonds (\dagger edges) B . Each bond b is open with probability p and closed with probability $1 - p$ independently of all other bonds. Suppose that a fixed point o is the source of a fluid which flows from o along open bonds only.

Let $\theta(p)$ be the probability that the fluid spreads infinitely far, and define the **critical percolation probability** $p_H = \inf\{p | \theta(p) > 0\}$. Then it is known that (1) $p_H = 1/2$ for the square lattice [16], (2) $p_H = 2 \sin(\pi/18)$ for the triangular lattice, and (3) $p_H = 1 - 2 \sin(\pi/18)$ for the honeycomb lattice.

E. Random Schrödinger Equations

Random Schrödinger equations are \dagger Schrödinger equations in \mathbf{R}^n with random potentials $U(x, \omega)$; therefore the corresponding operators are of the form

$$A(\omega) = -\Delta + U(\cdot, \omega),$$

where ω denotes a random parameter in a probability space $(\Omega, \mathfrak{F}, P)$ and Δ denotes the \dagger Laplacian in \mathbf{R}^n . It is assumed that this system of potentials forms a spatially homogeneous random field with the \dagger ergodic property. This system of equations is considered to be a model describing the motion of quantum-mechanical particles in a random medium. Mathematically, the problem is to investigate various spectral properties of the self-adjoint operators $A(\omega)$. Since $A(\omega)$ and its shifted operator $A(\omega(\cdot + x))$ are \dagger unitarily equivalent, the above assumption on the potentials $U(\cdot, \omega)$ implies that the spectral structures are independent of each sample ω a.s. if their structures of $A(\omega)$ are measurable with respect to (Ω, \mathfrak{F}) .

Several rigorous results have been obtained. In the 1-dimensional case, if the potentials $U(\cdot, \omega)$ are functionals of a strongly ergodic \dagger Markov process, then it is proved that $A(\omega)$ has only a pure point spectrum [17], and each eigenfunction decays exponentially fast [18]. In multidimensional cases, asymptotic behavior at the left edge of the mean of the resolutions of the identity for a certain $A(\omega)$ have been investigated [19]. It is assumed that the random potential for this $A(\omega)$ takes the form

$$U(x, \omega) = \int_{\mathbf{R}^n} \varphi(x - y) \pi(dy, \omega),$$

where $\{\pi(dy, \omega)\}$ is a \dagger Poisson random measure with mean measure dy and $\varphi(x)$ is a non-negative measurable function satisfying $\varphi(x) = o(|x|^{-n-2})$ as $|x| \rightarrow \infty$. Let $E_\lambda(x, y, \omega)$ be the continuous kernel for the resolution of the identity for $A(\omega)$, and denote by $N(\lambda)$ the mean of $E_\lambda(0, 0, \omega)$. Then $N(\lambda)$ is a nondecreasing function vanishing on $(-\infty, 0)$ and has the following asymptotic form at $\lambda = 0$:

$$\lambda^{n/2} \log N(\lambda) \rightarrow -\gamma_1^{n/2} \quad \text{as } \lambda \rightarrow 0,$$

where γ_1 is the first eigenvalue of $-\Delta$ with a Dirichlet boundary condition on the ball in \mathbf{R}^n with unit volume. The quantity $N(\lambda)$ can be identified with a limiting state density of $A(\omega)$, namely, the limit function of

$$N_V(\lambda, \omega) = \# \{j | \lambda_j^V(\omega) \leq \lambda\} / |V|$$

as V tends to \mathbf{R}^n regularly, where $\{\lambda_j^V(\omega)\}$ is the set of eigenvalues of $A(\omega)$ in a smooth bounded domain V in \mathbf{R}^n with a Dirichlet boundary condition and $|V|$ is the volume of V . To obtain the above asymptotic behavior of $N(\lambda)$, the theory of \dagger large deviation for Markov processes plays a crucial role [20].

F. Boltzmann Equation

In the kinetic theory of gases the \dagger Boltzmann equation is derived from the \dagger Liouville equation by considering the BBGKY hierarchy of particle distribution functions for N particles and then by taking the limit $N \rightarrow \infty$ under certain conditions (\rightarrow 402 Statistical Mechanics). Mathematically rigorous discussions were given by O. E. Lanford [21] for a gas of hard spheres; he showed that solutions of the BBGKY hierarchy converge to those of the Boltzmann hierarchy for small time under the Boltzmann-Grad limit ($N \rightarrow \infty$, $Nd^2 \rightarrow 1$, $d =$ the diameter of the hard spheres).

An approach to the Boltzmann equation in the spatially homogeneous case can also be based on a \dagger master equation. M. Kac [22] considered a Poisson-like process describing the random time evolution of the n -tuple of the velocities of n particles. For a gas of hard spheres this is determined by the master equation

$$\begin{aligned} & \frac{\partial}{\partial t} u(t, x_1, \dots, x_n) \\ &= \frac{1}{n} \sum_{1 \leq i < j \leq n} \int_{S^2} \{u(t, x_1, \dots, x'_i, \dots, x'_j, \dots, x_n) \\ & \quad - u(t, x_1, \dots, x_n)\} |(x_i - x_j, l)| dl, \\ & \quad t > 0, \quad x_1, \dots, x_n \in \mathbf{R}^3, \quad (1) \end{aligned}$$

where S^2 is the 2-dimensional unit sphere, dl is

the uniform distribution on S^2 and

$$x'_1 = x_i + (x_j - x_i, l)l, \quad x'_j = x_j - (x_j - x_i, l)l.$$

Let σ be a positive constant and $S(\sqrt{n\sigma})$ denote the $(3n-1)$ -dimensional sphere with center 0 and radius $\sqrt{n\sigma}$. Given a symmetric probability density u_n on $S(\sqrt{n\sigma})$ for each $n \geq 1$, a sequence $\{u_n\}$ is said to have **Boltzmann's property** or to be **chaotic** (or u -chaotic to stress u), if there exists a probability density u on \mathbb{R}^3 such that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{S(\sqrt{n\sigma})} \varphi_1(x_1) \dots \varphi_m(x_m) u_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) dx_1 \dots dx_n = \prod_{k=1}^m \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} \varphi_k(x) u(x) dx$$

for each $m \geq 1$ and $\varphi_k \in C_0(\mathbb{R}^3)$, $1 \leq k \leq m$. Kac's assertion is that the Boltzmann equation is to be derived from the master equation via the **propagation of chaos**; more precisely, if $\{u_n\}$ is a u -chaotic sequence, then $\{u_n(t)\}$ is also $u(t)$ -chaotic, where $u_n(t)$ is the solution of the master equation (1) with $u_n(0) = u_n$ and $u(t)$ is the solution of the following Boltzmann equation with $u(0) = u$:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\partial}{\partial t} u(t, x) = \int_{S^2 \times \mathbb{R}^3} \{u(t, x') u(t, y') - u(t, x) u(t, y)\} \\ \times |(x - y, l)| dl dy, \\ x' = x + (y - x, l)l, \quad y' = y - (y - x, l)l. \end{aligned}$$

The propagation of chaos was verified by Kac [22], H. P. McKean [24], and others for a considerably wide class of nonlinear equations of Boltzmann type (with cutoff). The propagation of chaos is the stage corresponding to the law of large numbers. The next stage is the central limit theorem or fluctuation theory, which was also discussed by Kac [23] and McKean [25]. Moreover, based on Kac's work [22], McKean [26] introduced a class of Markov processes associated with certain nonlinear evolution equations including the Boltzmann equation; a process of this type describes the time evolution of the velocity of a particle interacting with other similar particles. In the case of the spatially homogeneous Boltzmann equation of Maxwellian molecules without cutoff, such a Markov process was constructed by solving a certain stochastic differential equation [27]. This implies the existence of probability measure-valued solutions of the equation.

References

[1] E. Ising, Beitrag zur Theorie des Ferromagnetismus, *Z. Phys.*, 31 (1925), 253–264.

- [2] R. L. Dobrushin, The description of a random field by means of conditional probabilities and conditions of its regularity, *Theory Prob. Appl.*, 13 (1968), 197–224. (Original in Russian, 1968.)
- [3] O. E. Lanford III and D. Ruelle, Observables at infinity and states with short range correlations in statistical mechanics, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 13 (1969), 194–215.
- [4] L. Onsager, Crystal statistics I: A two-dimensional model with an order-disorder transition, *Phys. Rev.*, 65 (1944), 117–149.
- [5] M. Aizenman, Translation invariance and instability of phase coexistence in the two dimensional Ising system, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 73 (1980), 83–94.
- [6] Y. Higuchi, On the absence of non-translationally invariant Gibbs states for the two-dimensional Ising model, *Proc. Conf. on Random Fields, Esztergom, North-Holland*, 1981.
- [7] R. L. Dobrushin, Gibbs state describing coexistence of phases for a three-dimensional Ising model, *Theory Prob. Appl.*, 17 (1972), 582–600. (Original in Russian, 1972.)
- [8] R. J. Glauber, Time-dependent statistics of the Ising model, *J. Math. Phys.*, 4 (1963), 294–307.
- [9] R. L. Dobrushin, Markov processes with a large number of locally interacting components: Existence of a limit process and its ergodicity, *Problems of Information Transmission*, 7 (1971), 149–164; Markov processes with many locally interacting components: The reversible case and some generalizations, *ibid.*, 235–241. (Originals in Russian, 1971.)
- [10] F. Spitzer, Interaction of Markov processes, *Advances in Math.*, 5 (1970), 246–290.
- [11] T. E. Harris, Contact interactions on a lattice, *Ann. Probability*, 2 (1974), 969–988.
- [12] R. Holley and T. M. Liggett, The survival of contact processes, *Ann. Probability*, 6 (1978), 198–206.
- [13] T. M. Liggett, The stochastic evolution of infinite systems of interacting particles, *Lecture notes in math.* 598, Springer, 1977, 187–248.
- [14] S. R. Broadbent and J. M. Hammersley, Percolation processes I: Crystals and mazes, *Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc.*, 53 (1957), 629–641.
- [15] R. T. Smythe and J. C. Wierman, First-passage percolation on the square lattice, *Lecture notes in math.* 671, Springer, 1978.
- [16] H. Kesten, The critical probability of bond percolation on the square lattice equals $1/2$, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 74 (1980), 41–59.
- [17] I. J. Goldseid, S. A. Molchanov, and L. A. Pastur, One-dimensional random Schrödinger operator with purely point spectrum, *Functional Anal. Appl.*, 11 (1977), 1–10. (Original in Russian, 1977.)

- [18] S. A. Molchanov, The structure of eigenfunctions of one-dimensional unordered structures, *Math. USSR-Izv.*, 12 (1978), 69–101. (Original in Russian, 1978.)
- [19] S. Nakao, On the spectral distribution of the Schrödinger operator with random potential, *Japan. J. Math.*, 3 (1977), 111–139.
- [20] M. D. Donsker and S. R. S. Varadhan, Asymptotics for the Wiener sausage, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 28 (1975), 525–565.
- [21] O. E. Lanford III, Time evolution of large classical systems, *Lecture notes in physics* 38, Springer, 1975.
- [22] M. Kac, *Probability and related topics in physical sciences*, Interscience, 1959.
- [23] M. Kac, Some probabilistic aspects of the Boltzmann-equation, *Acta Phys. Austriaca Supp.* 10, Springer, 1973, 379–400.
- [24] H. P. McKean, Speed of approach to equilibrium for Kac's caricature of a Maxwellian gas, *Arch. Rational Mech. Anal.*, 21 (1966), 347–367.
- [25] H. P. McKean, Fluctuations in the kinetic theory of gases, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 28 (1975), 435–455.
- [26] H. P. McKean, A class of Markov processes associated with nonlinear parabolic equations, *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US*, 56 (1966), 1907–1911.
- [27] H. Tanaka, Probabilistic treatment of the Boltzmann equation of Maxwellian molecules, *Z. Wahrscheinlichkeitstheorie und Verw. Gebiete*, 46 (1978), 67–105.

341 (XVII.2) Probability Measures

A. General Remarks

A **probability measure** Φ on a † measurable space (S, \mathfrak{S}) is defined to be a † measure on (S, \mathfrak{S}) with $\Phi(S) = 1$ (\rightarrow 270 Measure Theory). In probability theory, probability measure appears usually as the † probability distribution of a † random variable (\rightarrow 342 Probability Theory). Unless stated otherwise, we regard a † topological space T as a measurable space endowed with the topological σ -algebra $\mathfrak{B}(T)$ on T , i.e., the $^{\dagger}\sigma$ -algebra generated by the † open subsets of T . Hence the distribution of an \mathbf{R}^n -valued random variable is a probability measure on $(\mathbf{R}^n, \mathfrak{B}^n = \mathfrak{B}(\mathbf{R}^n))$. From this probabilistic background we often call a probability measure on $(\mathbf{R}^n, \mathfrak{B}^n)$ an n -dimensional (probability) distribution. For probability measures on topological spaces \rightarrow 270 Measure Theory.

B. Quantities Characterizing Probability Distributions

Several different quantities characterize the properties of probability distributions in one dimension: the **mean** (or **mathematical expectation**) $m = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x d\Phi(x)$, the **variance** $\sigma^2 = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} |x - m|^2 d\Phi(x)$, the **standard deviation** σ , the k th **moment** $\alpha_k = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x^k d\Phi(x)$, the k th **absolute moment** $\beta_k = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} |x|^k d\Phi(x)$, the k th **moment about the mean** $\mu_k = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} (x - m)^k d\Phi(x)$, etc.

A one-to-one correspondence exists between a 1-dimensional distribution Φ and its (**cumulative**) **distribution function** F defined by $F(x) = \Phi((-\infty, x])$. A distribution function is characterized by the following properties: (1) It is monotone nondecreasing; (2) it is right continuous; (3) $\lim_{x \rightarrow -\infty} F(x) = 0$ and $\lim_{x \rightarrow +\infty} F(x) = 1$. Similar statements hold for the multi-dimensional case.

Let $X(\omega)$ be a real random variable on a † probability space $(\Omega, \mathfrak{F}, P)$. Then the distribution of X is given by $\Phi(E) = P(\{\omega | X(\omega) \in E\})$, $E \in \mathfrak{B}^1$, and the characteristic quantities of Φ defined above are given in terms of $X(\omega)$ as follows: $m = E(X)$, $\sigma^2 = E(X - m)^2$, $F(x) = P(\{\omega | X(\omega) \leq x\})$, etc. The moments and the moments about the mean are connected by

the relation $\mu_r = \sum_{k=0}^r \binom{r}{k} \alpha_{r-k} (-m)^k$ ($r = 1, 2, \dots$).

When Φ is an n -dimensional distribution, the following quantities are frequently used: the **mean vector**, which is an n -dimensional vector whose i th component is given by $m_i = \int x_i d\Phi(x)$; the **covariance matrix**, which is an $n \times n$ matrix whose (i, j) -element is $\sigma_{ij} = \int (x_i - m_i)(x_j - m_j) d\Phi(x)$; the **moment matrix**, which is an $n \times n$ matrix whose (i, j) -element is $m_{ij} = \int x_i x_j d\Phi(x)$. (The covariance matrix is also called the **variance matrix** or the **variance-covariance matrix**.) The covariance matrix and the moment matrix are † positive definite and symmetric. The quantities listed above are defined only under some integrability conditions.

C. Characteristic Functions

Consider a probability measure Φ defined on a measurable space $(\mathbf{R}^n, \mathfrak{B}^n)$, where \mathfrak{B}^n is the σ -algebra of all † Borel sets in \mathbf{R}^n . The **characteristic function** of Φ is the † Fourier transform φ defined by

$$\varphi(z) = \int_{\mathbf{R}^n} e^{i(z, x)} d\Phi(x), \quad z \in \mathbf{R}^n, \quad (1)$$

where (z, x) denotes the † scalar product of z and x ($z, x \in \mathbf{R}^n$). Let X be an n -dimensional random variable with probability distribution Φ defined on a † probability space $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$.

Then the Fourier transform of Φ is also called the **characteristic function** of X , which can also be written as $E(e^{i(z, X)})$ (\rightarrow 342 Probability Theory).

The following properties play a fundamental role in the study of the relationship between probability distributions and characteristic functions: (i) the correspondence defined by (1) between the n -dimensional probability distribution Φ and its characteristic function φ is one-to-one. (ii) For any $a_p, b_p \in \mathbf{R}$, $a_p < b_p$ ($p = 1, 2, \dots, n$), we have

$$\int_{\mathbf{R}^n} \prod_{p=1}^n f(x_p; a_p, b_p) d\Phi(x) \\ = \lim_{c \rightarrow \infty} \left(\frac{1}{2\pi} \right)^n \int_{-c}^c \dots \int_{-c}^c \prod_{p=1}^n \frac{e^{-ib_p z_p} - e^{-ia_p z_p}}{-iz_p} \\ \times \varphi(z_1, \dots, z_n) dz_1, \dots, dz_n, \quad (2)$$

where $f(t; a, b)$ denotes the **modified indicator function** of $[a, b]$ defined by

$$f(t; a, b) = \begin{cases} 1, & t \in (a, b), \\ 1/2, & t = a \text{ or } b, \\ 0, & t \notin [a, b], \end{cases}$$

and $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n) \in \mathbf{R}^n$. If an n -dimensional interval $I = [a_1, \dots, a_n; b_1, \dots, b_n]$ defined by $a_i \leq x_i \leq b_i$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$) is an **interval of continuity** for the probability distribution Φ , i.e., $\Phi(\partial I) = 0$, where ∂I denotes the boundary of I , then the left-hand side of (2) is equal to $\Phi(I)$. Equation (2) is called the **inversion formula** for the characteristic function φ .

The characteristic function φ of an n -dimensional probability distribution has the following properties: (i) For any points $z^{(1)}, \dots, z^{(p)}$ of the n -dimensional space \mathbf{R}^n and any complex numbers a_1, \dots, a_p , we have

$$\sum_{j,k=1}^p \varphi(z^{(j)} - z^{(k)}) a_j \bar{a}_k \geq 0.$$

(ii) $\varphi(z^{(k)})$ converges to $\varphi(0)$ as $z^{(k)} \rightarrow 0$. (iii) $\varphi(0) = 1$. A complex-valued function φ of $z \in \mathbf{R}^n$ is called **positive definite** if it satisfies the inequality in (i). Any continuous positive definite function φ on \mathbf{R}^n such that $\varphi(0) = 1$ is the characteristic function of an n -dimensional probability distribution (\dagger Bochner's theorem) (\rightarrow 192 Harmonic Analysis). A counterpart to Bochner's theorem holds for any positive definite sequence as well (\dagger Herglotz's theorem).

The characteristic function is often useful for giving probability distributions explicitly. (For characteristic functions of typical probability distributions \rightarrow Appendix A, Table 22. For general information about criteria that can be used to decide whether a given function is a characteristic function \rightarrow [8].)

The **moment generating function** defined by $f(z) = \int \exp(-(z, x)) d\Phi(x)$ ($z \in \mathbf{R}^n$) does not

necessarily exist for all n -dimensional distributions but does exist for a number of useful probability distributions Φ , and then $f(z)$ uniquely determines Φ .

Given a 1-dimensional distribution Φ with $\beta_k < +\infty$, we denote by γ_k the coefficient of $(iz)^k/k!$ in the \dagger Maclaurin expansion of $\log \varphi(z)$. We call γ_k the (k th order) **semi-invariant** of Φ . The moments and semi-invariants are connected by the relations $\gamma_1 = \alpha_1$, $\gamma_2 = \alpha_2 - \alpha_1^2 = \sigma^2$, $\gamma_3 = \alpha_3 - 3\alpha_1\alpha_2 + 2\alpha_1^3$, $\gamma_4 = \alpha_4 - 3\alpha_2^2 - 4\alpha_1\alpha_3 + 12\alpha_1^2\alpha_2 - 6\alpha_1^4, \dots$

D. Specific Distributions

Given an n -dimensional distribution Φ , a point a with $\Phi(\{a\}) > 0$ is called a **discontinuity point** of Φ . The set D of all discontinuity points of Φ is at most countable. When $\Phi(D) = 1$, Φ is called a **purely discontinuous distribution**. In particular, if D is a lattice, Φ is called a **lattice distribution**. If the distribution function of Φ is a continuous function, Φ is called a **continuous distribution**. By virtue of the \dagger Lebesgue decomposition theorem, every probability distribution can be expressed in the form

$$\Phi = a_1 \Phi_1 + a_2 \Phi_2 + a_3 \Phi_3,$$

$$a_1, a_2, a_3 \geq 0, \quad a_1 + a_2 + a_3 = 1,$$

where Φ_1 is purely discontinuous, Φ_2 is \dagger absolutely continuous with respect to \dagger Lebesgue measure, and Φ_3 is continuous and \dagger singular. Let Φ be an absolutely continuous distribution. Then there exists a unique (up to Lebesgue measure zero) measurable nonnegative function $f(x)$ ($x \in \mathbf{R}^n$) such that $\Phi(E) = \int_E f(x) dx$. This function $f(x)$ is called the **probability density** of Φ .

We now list some frequently used 1-dimensional lattice distributions (for explicit data \rightarrow Appendix A, Table 22): the **unit distribution** with $\Phi(\{0\}) = 1$; the **binomial distribution** $\text{Bin}(n, p)$ with parameters n and p ; the **Poisson distribution** $P(\lambda)$ with parameter λ ; the **geometric distribution** $G(p)$ with parameter p ; the **hypergeometric distribution** $H(N, n, p)$ with parameters N, n , and p ; and the **negative binomial distribution** $NB(m, q)$ with parameters m and q . The following k -dimensional lattice distributions are used frequently: the **multinomial distribution** $M(n, p)$ with parameters n and p ; the **multiple hypergeometric distribution**; the **negative multinomial distribution**; etc.

The following 1-dimensional distributions are absolutely continuous: the **normal distribution** (or **Gaussian distribution**) $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$ with mean μ and variance σ^2 (sometimes $N(0, 1)$ is called the **standard normal distribution**); the

Cauchy distribution $C(\mu, \sigma)$ with parameters μ (*median) and σ ; the **uniform distribution** $U(\alpha, \beta)$ on an interval $[\alpha, \beta]$; the **exponential distribution** $e(\sigma)$ with parameter σ ; the **gamma distribution** $\Gamma(p, \sigma)$; the χ^2 distribution $\chi^2(n)$; the **beta distribution** $B(p, q)$; the **F-distribution** $F(m, n)$; the **Z-distribution** $Z(m, n)$; the **t-distribution** $t(n)$; etc. Furthermore, there are several k -dimensional absolutely continuous distributions, such as the **k -dimensional normal distribution** $N(\mu, \Sigma)$ with mean vector $\mu = (\mu_1, \mu_2, \dots, \mu_k)$ and covariance matrix $\Sigma = (\sigma_{ij})$, the **Dirichlet distribution**, etc.

E. Convolution

Given any two n -dimensional distributions Φ_1, Φ_2 , the n -dimensional distribution $\Phi(E) = \int_{\mathbb{R}^{2n}} \chi_E(x+y) d\Phi_1(x) d\Phi_2(y)$ is called the **composition** (or **convolution**) of Φ_1 and Φ_2 and is denoted by $\Phi_1 * \Phi_2$, where χ_E is the indicator function of the set E . Let X_1 and X_2 be independent random variables with distributions Φ_1 and Φ_2 . Then the distribution of $X_1 + X_2$ is $\Phi_1 * \Phi_2$. When F_i is the distribution function of Φ_i ($i = 1, 2$), the distribution function $F_1 * F_2$ of $\Phi_1 * \Phi_2$ is expressed in the form $F_1 * F_2(x) = \int_{\mathbb{R}^n} F_1(x-y) dF_2(y)$. If Φ_1 has a density $f_1(x)$, then $\Phi_1 * \Phi_2$ has a density $f(x) = \int_{\mathbb{R}^n} f_1(x-y) dF_2(y)$. If $\varphi(z)$ is the characteristic function of the convolution of two probability distributions Φ_1 and Φ_2 with characteristic functions φ_1 and φ_2 , then φ is the product of φ_1 and φ_2 : $\varphi(z) = \varphi_1(z) \cdot \varphi_2(z)$. Therefore, for every k , the k th order semi-invariant of the convolution of two distributions is equal to the sum of their k th order semi-invariants. Suppose that we are given a family of distributions $\Phi = \{\Phi(\alpha, \beta, \dots)\}$ indexed with parameters α, β, \dots . If for $(\alpha_1, \beta_1, \dots)$ and $(\alpha_2, \beta_2, \dots)$ there exists $(\alpha_3, \beta_3, \dots)$ such that $\Phi(\alpha_1, \beta_1, \dots) * \Phi(\alpha_2, \beta_2, \dots) = \Phi(\alpha_3, \beta_3, \dots)$, then we say that Φ has a **reproducing property**. Some of the distributions listed above have the reproducing property: $P(\lambda_1) * P(\lambda_2) = P(\lambda_1 + \lambda_2)$, $\text{Bin}(n_1, p) * \text{Bin}(n_2, p) = \text{Bin}(n_1 + n_2, p)$, $\text{NB}(m_1, q) * \text{NB}(m_2, q) = \text{NB}(m_1 + m_2, q)$, $N(\mu_1, \sigma_1^2) * N(\mu_2, \sigma_2^2) = N(\mu_1 + \mu_2, \sigma_1^2 + \sigma_2^2)$, $\Gamma(p_1, \sigma) * \Gamma(p_2, \sigma) = \Gamma(p_1 + p_2, \sigma)$, $C(\mu_1, \sigma_1) * C(\mu_2, \sigma_2) = C(\mu_1 + \mu_2, \sigma_1 + \sigma_2)$, etc.

Given a 1-dimensional distribution function $F(x)$,

$$Q_F(l) = \max_{-\infty < x < \infty} (F(x+l) - F(x-l)), \quad l > 0,$$

is called the **maximal concentration function** of F (P. Lévy [6]). Since it satisfies the relation $Q_{F_1 * F_2}(l) \leq Q_{F_1}(l)$ ($i = 1, 2$), we can use it to study the properties of sums of independent

random variables. The **mean concentration function** defined by

$$C_F(l) = \frac{1}{2l} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} (F(x+l) - F(x-l))^2 dx$$

is also useful for similar purposes.

Let $N(m, v)$ be the 1-dimensional normal distribution with mean m and variance v , and let $P(\lambda, a)$ be the distribution obtained through translation by a of the Poisson distribution with parameter λ . If 1-dimensional distributions Φ_k, Ψ_k ($k = 1, 2$) exist such that $N(m, v) = \Phi_1 * \Phi_2$, $P(\lambda, a) = \Psi_1 * \Psi_2$, we have $\Phi_k = N(m_k, v_k)$, $\Psi_k = P(\lambda_k, a_k)$ ($k = 1, 2$) for some m_k, v_k, λ_k, a_k ($k = 1, 2$). These are known, respectively, as Cramér's theorem and Raikov's theorem. Yu. V. Linnik proved a similar fact (the decomposition theorem) for a more general family with reproducing property by using the theory of analytic functions [9].

F. Convergence of Probability Distributions

The concept of convergence of distributions plays an important role in limit theorems and other fields of probability theory. When Ω is a topological space, we consider **convergence** of probability measures on Ω with respect to the weak topology introduced in the space of measures on Ω (\rightarrow 37 Banach Spaces). Such convergence is called **weak convergence** in probability theory. For a sequence of n -dimensional distributions Φ_k ($k = 1, 2, \dots$) to converge to Φ weakly, each of the following conditions is necessary and sufficient. (1) For every continuous function with compact support, $\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} \int_{\mathbb{R}^n} f(x) d\Phi_k(x) = \int_{\mathbb{R}^n} f(x) d\Phi(x)$. (2) At every continuity point of the distribution function $F(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ of Φ , $\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} F_k(x_1, \dots, x_n) = F(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ (F_k is the distribution function of Φ_k). (3) For every continuity set E of Φ (namely, a set such that $\Phi(\bar{E} - E^0) = 0$), $\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} \Phi_k(E) = \Phi(E)$. (4) For all open $G \subset \mathbb{R}^n$, $\liminf_{k \rightarrow \infty} \Phi_k(G) \geq \Phi(G)$. (5) For all closed $F \subset \mathbb{R}^n$, $\limsup_{k \rightarrow \infty} \Phi_k(F) \leq \Phi(F)$. (6) $\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} \rho(\Phi_k, \Phi) = 0$, where ρ is a metric defined in the following way: Given any n -dimensional distributions Φ_1, Φ_2 , we put $\varepsilon_{ij} = \inf\{\varepsilon | \Phi_i(F) < \Phi_j(F^c) + \varepsilon \text{ for every closed } F\}$ (F^c is the ε -neighborhood of F) and define $\rho(\Phi_1, \Phi_2) = \max(\varepsilon_{12}, \varepsilon_{21})$. The metric ρ , called the **Lévy distance**, was introduced by Lévy [6] in one dimension and by Yu. V. Prokhorov in metric spaces [10]. Each of these conditions except (2) is still necessary and sufficient for Φ_n to converge weakly to Φ when Φ_n and Φ are probability measures on a complete separable metric space. It should also be noted that the probability measures on a complete separable metric space consti-

tute a complete separable metric space with respect to the Lévy distance.

A family $\Phi_\alpha (\alpha \in \Lambda)$ of probability measures on a complete separable metric space is said to be **tight** if for every $\varepsilon > 0$ there exists a compact set $K = K(\varepsilon)$ such that $\Phi_\alpha(K^c) < \varepsilon$ for all $\alpha \in \Lambda$. A family $\Phi_\alpha (\alpha \in \Lambda)$ is tight if and only if it is **totally bounded** with respect to the topology induced by the Lévy distance. Hence a tight family $\Phi_\alpha (\alpha \in \Lambda)$ has a weakly convergent subsequence.

We can give a criterion for the convergence of probability measures in terms of their characteristic functions. Suppose that Φ_k and Φ are n -dimensional probability measures with characteristic functions φ_k and φ . Then Φ_k converges weakly to Φ if and only if for every z , $\lim_k \varphi_k(z) = \varphi(z)$. Let φ_k be the characteristic function of an n -dimensional probability distribution Φ_k . If the sequence $\{\varphi_k\}$ converges pointwise to a limit function φ and the convergence of φ_k is uniform in some neighborhood of the origin, then φ is also the characteristic function of an n -dimensional probability distribution Φ and the sequence $\{\Phi_k\}$ converges weakly to Φ [7] (**Lévy's continuity theorem**).

For any probability distribution concentrated on $[0, \infty)$, the use of Laplace transforms as a substitute for Fourier transforms provides a powerful tool. The method of **probability generating functions** is available for the study of arbitrary probability distribution concentrated on the nonnegative integers [14]. The method of moment-generating functions is also useful. There are many results on the relation between these functions, probability distributions, and their convergence [14–16].

Let Φ_1, Φ_2, \dots and Φ be 1-dimensional distributions. If all absolute moments exist, $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \beta_j^{-1/j} = \infty$ for $\beta_j = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} |x|^j d\Phi(x) < \infty$, and $\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x^j d\Phi_k(x) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} x^j d\Phi(x)$ ($j = 0, 1, 2, \dots$), then Φ_k weakly converges to Φ . This condition is sufficient but not necessary.

G. Infinitely Divisible Distributions

An n -dimensional probability distribution Φ is called **infinitely divisible** if for every positive integer k , there exists a probability distribution Φ_k such that $\Phi = \Phi_k * \Phi_k * \dots * \Phi_k$ ($= \Phi_k^{*k}$). Both normal distributions and Poisson distributions are infinitely divisible. If an n -dimensional distribution Φ satisfies the condition $\int_{|x| > \varepsilon} \Phi(dx) < \varepsilon$, we say that $\Phi \in v(\varepsilon)$. Then Φ is an infinitely divisible distribution if and only if for every $\varepsilon > 0$ we can find $\Phi_1, \Phi_2, \dots, \Phi_k \in v(\varepsilon)$ such that $\Phi = \Phi_1 * \Phi_2 * \dots * \Phi_k$.

Let $X_{ki}, i = 1, 2, \dots, n(k)$, be independent random variables for every k , and assume that the distribution of X_{ki} belongs to $v(\varepsilon_k), i = 1, 2, \dots, n(k)$, where $\varepsilon_k \rightarrow 0$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$. If the probability distributions of the sums $X_k = \sum_{i=1}^{n(k)} X_{ki}$ converge to a probability distribution as $k \rightarrow \infty$, then the limit distribution is infinitely divisible.

The characteristic function of a 1-dimensional infinitely divisible distribution can be written in the form

$$\varphi(z) = \exp \left(i\gamma z - \frac{v}{2} z^2 + \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} A(u, z) \frac{1+u^2}{u^2} dG(u) \right), \quad (3)$$

where γ is a constant, v is a nonnegative constant, $G(u)$ is a nondecreasing bounded function with $G(-\infty) = 0, A(u, z) = \exp(iuz) - 1 - izu/(1+u^2)$, and the value of $A(u, z)(1+u^2)/u^2$ at $u=0$ is defined to be $-z^2/2$. Formula (3) is called **Khinchin's canonical form**. For the characteristic function of an infinitely divisible n -dimensional distribution, the canonical form is as follows:

$$\varphi(z) = \exp \left(i(m, z) - \sum_{p,q=1}^n c_{pq} z_p z_q + \int_{\mathbf{R}^n} \left(e^{i(z,x)} - 1 - \frac{i(z,x)}{1+|x|^2} \right) n(dx) \right),$$

$$z = (z_1, \dots, z_n) \in \mathbf{R}^n, \quad (4)$$

where $m \in \mathbf{R}^n, (c_{pq})$ is a positive semidefinite matrix, and $n(dx)$ is a measure on \mathbf{R}^n such that $n(\{0\}) = 0$ and

$$\int_{\mathbf{R}^n} \frac{|x|^2}{1+|x|^2} n(dx) < \infty.$$

Formula (4) is called **Lévy's canonical form**. If a 1-dimensional infinitely divisible distribution Φ satisfies $\int_{\mathbf{R}} x^2 d\Phi(x) < \infty$, then its characteristic function is given by

$$\varphi(z) = \exp \left(imz - \frac{v}{2} z^2 + \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} (e^{izu} - 1 - izu) \frac{1}{u^2} dK(u) \right), \quad (5)$$

where m is a real constant, v is a nonnegative constant, and $K(u)$ is a nondecreasing bounded function such that $K(-\infty) = 0$. It is called **Kolmogorov's canonical form**. (For infinitely divisible distributions on a homogeneous space \rightarrow 5 Additive Processes.)

Let Φ and Ψ be n -dimensional distributions. If for some $\lambda > 0, \Psi(E) = \Phi(\lambda E)$ ($\lambda E = \{\lambda \xi | \xi \in E\}$) for every set E , we say that Φ and Ψ are equivalent. Let Φ and Ψ be probability distributions with distribution functions F and G

and characteristic functions φ and ψ . Then the following three statements are equivalent: (1) Φ and Ψ are equivalent; (2) $G(x) = F(\lambda x)$ for every x ; and (3) $\psi(\lambda z) = \varphi(z)$ for every z . We call Φ a **stable distribution** if for every pair of distributions Φ_1, Φ_2 equivalent to Φ , the convolution $\Phi_1 * \Phi_2$ is equivalent to Φ . If Φ is stable, every distribution equivalent to Φ is also stable. We can characterize stable distributions in terms of their characteristic functions $\varphi(z)$ as follows: For every pair $\lambda_1, \lambda_2 > 0$, there exists a $\lambda = \lambda(\lambda_1, \lambda_2) > 0$ such that $\varphi(\lambda z) = \varphi(\lambda_1 z) \varphi(\lambda_2 z)$. We can restate this characterization as follows: Φ is stable if and only if for every pair of independent random variables X_1 and X_2 with identical distribution Φ and for any positive numbers λ_1 and λ_2 , there exists a positive number λ such that $(\lambda_1 X_1 + \lambda_2 X_2)/\lambda$ has the distribution Φ . By the definition we see that all stable distributions are infinitely divisible.

In the 1-dimensional case, putting $\varphi(z) = \exp \psi(z)$, we have $\psi(\lambda z) = \psi(\lambda_1 z) + \psi(\lambda_2 z)$, which implies $\psi(z) = (-c_0 + i(z/|z|)c_1)|z|^\alpha$, where $c_0 \geq 0$, $-\infty < c_1 < \infty$, $0 < \alpha \leq 2$. The parameter α is called the **exponent** (or **index**) of the stable distribution. The stable distributions with exponent $\alpha = 2$ are the normal distributions, and the stable distributions with exponent $\alpha = 1$ are the Cauchy distributions. We have $\psi(z) = -c_0|z|^\alpha$ for a symmetric stable distribution. (For the stable distribution with exponent $1/2 \rightarrow$ Appendix A, Table 22).

Generalizing stable distributions, we can define **quasistable distributions**, which B. V. Gnedenko and A. N. Kolmogorov [17] called stable distributions also. Let F be the distribution function of a 1-dimensional distribution Φ . Φ is said to be quasistable if to every $b_1 > 0, b_2 > 0$ and real λ_1, λ_2 there correspond a positive number b and a real number λ such that we have the relation $F((x - \lambda_1)/b_1) * F((x - \lambda_2)/b_2) = F((x - \lambda)/b)$.

Let $\{X_i\}$ be a sequence of independent random variables with identical distribution. If for suitably chosen constants A_n and B_n the distributions of the sums $B_n^{-1}(\sum_{i=1}^n X_i) - A_n$ converge to a distribution, the limit distribution is a quasistable distribution (Lévy). A necessary and sufficient condition for a distribution to be quasistable is that its characteristic function $\varphi(z)$ satisfy the relation $\varphi(b_1 z) \varphi(b_2 z) = \varphi(bz) e^{i\gamma z}$ ($\gamma = \lambda - \lambda_1 - \lambda_2$). The characteristic function of a quasistable distribution has the canonical representation

$$\varphi(z) = \exp \psi(z),$$

$$\psi(z) = imz - c|z|^\alpha (1 + i\beta(z/|z|)\omega(z, \alpha)),$$

where m is a real number, $c \geq 0$, $0 < \alpha \leq 2$, $|\beta| \leq 1$, and $\omega(z, \alpha) = \tan(\pi\alpha/2)$ ($\alpha \neq 1$), $\omega(z, \alpha) =$

$(2/\pi)\log|z|$ ($\alpha = 1$). The parameter α is called the exponent of the quasistable distribution. A quasistable distribution with $\alpha \neq 1$ is obtained from a stable distribution by translation, but quasistable distributions with $\alpha = 1$ are not.

Semistable distributions are another generalization of stable distributions. A distribution is called semistable if its characteristic function $\varphi(z)$ satisfies the relation $\psi(qz) = q^\alpha \psi(z)$ for a positive number $q (\neq 1)$, where $\varphi(z) = \exp(\psi(z))$. Also in this case, the general form was obtained by Lévy [6].

A 1-dimensional probability distribution Φ is called an **L-distribution** if the distribution function F of Φ is the convolution of $F(x/a)$ and some other distribution function $F_a(x)$ for every $0 < a < 1$. Φ is an L-distribution if and only if there exists a sequence of independent random variables $\{X_k\}$ such that for suitably chosen constants $B_n > 0$ and A_n the distributions of the sums $B_n^{-1}(\sum_{k=1}^n X_k) - A_n$ converge to Φ and $\sup_{1 \leq k \leq n} P(|X_k/B_n| > \varepsilon) \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$ for every $\varepsilon > 0$. Quasistable distributions are L-distributions.

H. The Shape of Distributions

Let $F(x)$ be a 1-dimensional distribution function. The quantity ζ_p such that $F(\zeta_p - 0) \leq p \leq F(\zeta_p)$ ($0 < p < 1$) is called the **quantile of order p** of F . In particular, the quantity $\zeta_{1/2}$ is called a **median**. If F satisfies the relation $1 - F(m+x) = F(m-x)$, it is called **symmetric**. In any 1-dimensional symmetric distribution, every moment of odd order about the mean (if it exists) is equal to zero.

The ratio $\gamma_1 = \mu_3/\sigma^3$ is used as a measure of departure from symmetry of a distribution and is called the **coefficient of skewness**. Furthermore, the ratio $\gamma_2 = \mu_3/\sigma^4 - 3$ is called the **coefficient of excess**. For the normal distribution, we have $\gamma_1 = \gamma_2 = 0$. If $\gamma_2 \neq 0$, γ_2 expresses the degree of deviation from the normal distribution.

A distribution function $F(x)$ is called **unimodal** if there exists one value $x = a$ such that $F(x)$ is convex for $x < a$ and concave for $x > a$. All L-distributions (and hence quasistable distributions) are unimodal [18].

I. Kolmogorov's Extension Theorem

Let $\Omega = \mathbf{R}^T$, where T is an arbitrary index set. We associate with \mathbf{R}^T the σ -algebra \mathfrak{B}^T generated by the cylinder sets, i.e., $\{\omega \in \Omega | \pi_{t_1}(\omega) \in E_1, \dots, \pi_{t_n}(\omega) \in E_n\}$, where $\pi_t(\omega)$ denotes the t th coordinate of ω , $E_k \in \mathfrak{B}(\mathbf{R}^1)$, $1 \leq k \leq n$, $t_1 < t_2 < \dots < t_n$, and $n = 1, 2, \dots$. Given a probability

measure Φ on $(\mathbf{R}^T, \mathfrak{B}^T)$, we can define a finite-dimensional \dagger marginal distribution Φ_S for any finite subset S of T by $\Phi_S(E) = \Phi(\pi_S^{-1}(E))$, $E \in \mathfrak{B}^S$, where π_S is the natural \dagger projection $\pi_S: \mathbf{R}^T \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^S$. The measures $\{\Phi_S\}$ satisfy the following **consistency condition**: If $S_1 \subset S_2 (\subset T)$ are finite and if $E \in \mathfrak{B}^{S_1}$, then

$$\Phi_{S_1}(E) = \Phi_{S_2}(\pi_{S_1, S_2}^{-1}(E)), \quad (6)$$

where $\pi_{S_1, S_2}: \mathbf{R}^{S_2} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^{S_1}$ is the natural projection.

Conversely, if we are given a family of finite-dimensional probability measures $\{\Phi_S\}$ which satisfies the consistency condition (6), then **Kolmogorov's extension theorem** [1] asserts that there exists a unique probability measure Φ on $(\mathbf{R}^T, \mathfrak{B}^T)$ such that $\Phi_S(E) = \Phi(\pi_S^{-1}(E))$, $E \in \mathfrak{B}^S$, for any finite $S \subset T$.

This theorem is useful in constructing \dagger stochastic processes. For example, let $\Phi_{n_1, n_2, \dots, n_k}$ be the \dagger product measure of k copies of a given probability measure Φ on \mathbf{R}^1 . Then the family $\{\Phi_{n_1, n_2, \dots, n_k}; n_1, n_2, \dots, n_k \in \mathbf{Z}, k \in \mathbf{N}\}$ satisfies the consistency condition and hence, by Kolmogorov's extension theorem, determines a probability measure on $\mathbf{R}^{\mathbf{Z}}$, which is denoted by $\Phi^{\mathbf{Z}}$. Thus $X_n(\omega) = \pi_n(\omega)$, $n \in \mathbf{Z}$, $(\omega \in (\mathbf{R}^{\mathbf{Z}}, \mathfrak{B}^{\mathbf{Z}}, \Phi^{\mathbf{Z}}))$, are independent identically Φ -distributed random variables.

Kolmogorov's extension theorem is generalized to the case where the component spaces are \dagger standard measurable spaces (\rightarrow 270 Measure Theory) instead of \mathbf{R}^1 , and also to the case where product spaces are replaced by \dagger projective systems [19].

J. Characteristic Functionals on Infinite-Dimensional Spaces

Contrary to the finite-dimensional case, Bochner's theorem does not necessarily hold in infinite-dimensional spaces. For example, let $(T, \|\cdot\|)$ be an infinite-dimensional \dagger Hilbert space and $\varphi(t) = \exp(-\|t\|^2)$. φ is continuous and positive definite, and $\varphi(0) = 1$. But it is known that there is no probability measure on $T = T^*$ (topological dual of T) which corresponds to φ . Bochner's theorem is generalized to infinite-dimensional spaces as follows.

Let T be a real \dagger vector space endowed with the topology τ defined by a system of \dagger Hilbertian seminorms $\{\|\cdot\|_\alpha, \alpha \in A\}$. Define a new topology $I(\tau)$ of T by all Hilbertian seminorms $\|\cdot\|$ each of which is HS-dominated by some $\|\cdot\|_\alpha$, $\alpha \in A$, i.e., $\sup\{(\sum_i \|e_i\|^2)^{1/2}; \{e_i\}: \alpha\text{-orthonormal}\} < \infty$. If $I(\tau) = \tau$, then (T, τ) is called a \dagger nuclear space.

Let T^* be the topological dual of (T, τ) (i.e., the set of all τ -continuous real valued linear functionals on T). Define a Borel structure

$\mathfrak{B}(T^*)$ of T^* as the σ -algebra generated by the system of half-spaces $\{x \in T^*; x(t) < a\}$, $t \in T$, $a \in \mathbf{R}^1$. For a probability measure Φ on $(T^*, \mathfrak{B}(T^*))$, define

$$\varphi(t) = \int_{T^*} \exp(i\langle x, t \rangle) d\Phi(x), \quad t \in T,$$

which is called the characteristic functional of Φ . A functional φ on T is the characteristic functional of a probability measure Φ on $(T^*, \mathfrak{B}(T^*))$ such that $\Phi^*(\bigcup_n T_{\alpha_n}^*) = 1$ for some sequence $\{\alpha_n\} \subset A$, where Φ^* is the \dagger outer measure (\rightarrow 270 Measure Theory) and T_{α}^* is the topological dual of $(T, \|\cdot\|_\alpha)$, if and only if φ is positive definite, $\varphi(0) = 1$, and continuous with respect to the topology $I(\tau)$ [23].

As special cases of the foregoing theorem, we have the following. If (T, τ) is a nuclear space, then every positive definite τ -continuous functional φ with $\varphi(0) = 1$ is the characteristic functional of a probability measure on T^* (Minlos [24]). Schwartz's spaces $\mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R}^n)$ and $\mathcal{D}(\mathbf{R}^n)$ are nuclear. Let $(T, \tau = \|\cdot\|)$ be a Hilbert space. A \dagger Hilbert-Schmidt operator U is, by definition, a \dagger bounded linear operator on T such that $\sum_i \|Ue_i\|^2 < \infty$, by any \dagger complete orthonormal system $\{e_i\}$ (this quantity does not depend on the choice of $\{e_i\}$). Define a seminorm $\|\cdot\|_U$ by $\|t\|_U = \|Ut\|$, $t \in T$, for a Hilbert-Schmidt operator U . Then the topology $I(\tau)$ coincides with the topology induced by the system of seminorms $\|\cdot\|_U$, where U are Hilbert-Schmidt operators, which is called the **Sazonov topology**. Thus every functional φ on T , which is positive definite, $\varphi(0) = 1$, and continuous with respect to the Sazonov topology, is the characteristic functional of a probability measure on T^* (Sazonov [25]).

The probability measure on \mathcal{S}' with the characteristic functional $\exp(-\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} |f(s)|^2 ds)$, $f \in \mathcal{S}$, is the probability measure of a Gaussian \dagger white noise on \mathcal{S}' .

References

- [1] A. N. Kolmogorov, *Grundbegriffe der Wahrscheinlichkeitsrechnung*, Springer, 1933; English translation, *Foundations of the theory of probability*, Chelsea, 1950.
- [2] H. Cramér, *Mathematical methods of statistics*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1946.
- [3] J. L. Doob, *Stochastic processes*, Wiley, 1953.
- [4] M. M. Loève, *Probability theory*, Van Nostrand, third edition, 1963.
- [5] W. Feller, *An introduction to probability theory and its applications II*, Wiley, 1966.
- [6] P. Lévy, *Théorie de l'addition des variables aléatoires*, Gauthier-Villars, 1937.

- [7] P. Lévy, Calcul des probabilités, Gauthier-Villars, 1925.
- [8] E. Lukacs, Characteristic functions, Hafner, 1960.
- [9] Yu. V. Linnik, Decomposition of probability distributions, Oliver & Boyd, 1964. (Original in Russian, 1960.)
- [10] Yu. V. Prokhorov, Convergence of random processes and limit theorems in probability theory, Theory of Prob. Appl., 1 (1956), 155–214. (Original in Russian, 1956.)
- [11] L. LeCam, Convergence in distribution of stochastic processes, Univ. California Publ. Statist., 2 (1957), 207–236.
- [12] K. R. Parthasarathy, Probability measures on metric spaces, Academic Press, 1967.
- [13] P. Billingsley, Convergence of probability measures, Wiley, 1968.
- [14] W. Feller, An introduction to probability theory and its applications I, Wiley, second edition, 1957.
- [15] J. A. Shohat and J. D. Tamarkin, The problem of moments, Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys, 1943.
- [16] D. V. Widder, Laplace transform, Princeton Univ. Press, 1941.
- [17] B. V. Gnedenko and A. N. Kolmogorov, Limit distributions for sums of independent random variables, Addison-Wesley, 1954. (Original in Russian, 1949.)
- [18] M. Yamazato, Unimodality of infinitely divisible distribution functions of class L , Ann. Prob., 6 (1978), 523–531.
- [19] S. Bochner, Harmonic analysis and the theory of probability, Univ. of California Press, 1955.
- [20] E. Nelson, Regular probability measures on function space, Ann. Math., (2) 69 (1959), 630–643.
- [21] I. M. Gel'fand and N. Ya. Vilenkin, Generalized functions IV, Applications of harmonic analysis, Academic Press, 1964. (Original in Russian, 1961.)
- [22] Yu. V. Prokhorov, The method of characteristic functionals, Proc. 4th Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. II, Univ. of California Press, 1961, 403–419.
- [23] A. N. Kolmogorov, A note on the papers of R. A. Minlos and V. Sazonov, Theory of Prob. Appl., 4 (1959), 221–223. (Original in Russian, 1959.)
- [24] R. A. Minlos, Generalized random processes and their extension to a measure, Selected Transl. Math. Stat. and Prob., Amer. Math. Soc., 3 (1962), 291–313. (Original in Russian, 1959.)
- [25] V. Sazonov, A remark on characteristic functionals, Theory of Prob. Appl., 3 (1958), 188–192. (Original in Russian, 1958.)
- [26] M. Kac, Probability and related topics in physical sciences, Interscience, 1959.

342 (XVII.1) Probability Theory

A. History

The origin of the **theory of probability** goes back to the mathematical problems connected with dice throwing that were discussed in letters exchanged by B. Pascal and P. de Fermat in the 17th century. These problems were concerned primarily with concepts such as *permutations, *combinations, and *binomial coefficients, whose theory was established at about the same time [1]. This elementary theory of probability was later enriched by the work of scholars such as Jakob Bernoulli [2], A. de Moivre [3], T. Bayes, L. de Buffon, Daniel Bernoulli, A. M. Legendre, and J. L. Lagrange. Finally, P. S. Laplace completed the classical theory of probability in his book *Théorie analytique des probabilités* (1812). In this work, Laplace not only systematized but also greatly extended previous important results by introducing new methods, such as the use of *difference equations and *generating functions. Since the 19th century, the theory of probability has been extensively applied to the natural sciences and even to the social sciences.

The definition of a priori probability due to Laplace provoked a great deal of argument when it was applied. For example, R. von Mises advocated an empirical theory of probability based on the notion of **Kollektiv (collective)**, which is a mathematical model of mass phenomena [5]. However, these arguments are concerned with philosophical rather than mathematical aspects. Nowadays, the main concern of mathematicians lies not in the intuitive or practical meaning of probability but in the logical setup governing probability. From this viewpoint the mathematical model of a random phenomenon is given by a probability measure space $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$, where Ω is the set of all possible outcomes of the phenomenon, $P(E)$ represents the probability that an outcome belonging to E be realized, and \mathfrak{B} is a σ -algebra consisting of all sets E for which $P(E)$ is defined. All probabilistic concepts, such as random variables, independence, etc., are defined on $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ in terms of measure theory. Such a measure-theoretic basis of probability theory is due to A. Kolmogorov [6], though similar considerations had been made before him for special problems, for example, in the work of E. Borel concerning the strong law of large numbers [7] and in the rigorous definition of Brownian motion by N. Wiener [8].

Ever since probability theory was given

solid foundations by Kolmogorov, it has made tremendous progress. The most important concept in today's probability theory is that of **stochastic processes**, which correspond to functions in analysis. In applications a stochastic process is used as the mathematical model of a random phenomenon varying with time. The following types of stochastic processes have been investigated extensively: **additive processes**, **Markov processes** and **Markov chains**, **martingales**, **stationary processes**, and **Gaussian processes**. **Brownian motion** and **branching processes** are important special stochastic processes. In the same way as functions are often defined by differential equations, there are stochastic processes which can be defined by **stochastic differential equations**. The theory of stochastic processes and stochastic differential equations can be applied to **stochastic control**, **stochastic filtering**, and **statistical mechanics**. The **ergodic theory** that originated in statistical mechanics is now regarded as an important branch of probability theory closely related to the theory of stationary processes.

B. Probability Spaces

Let Ω be an abstract space and \mathfrak{B} be a σ -algebra of subsets of Ω . A **probability measure** (or **probability distribution**) over $\Omega(\mathfrak{B})$ is a set function $P(E)$ defined for $E \in \mathfrak{B}$ and satisfying the following conditions: (P1) $P(E) \geq 0$; (P2) for every sequence $\{E_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) of pairwise disjoint sets in \mathfrak{B} ,

$$P\left(\bigcup_n E_n\right) = \sum_n P(E_n);$$

(P3) $P(\Omega) = 1$. The triple $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ is called a **probability space**. The space Ω (resp. each element ω of Ω) is called the **basic space**, **space of elementary events**, or **sample space** (resp. **sample point** or **elementary event**). We say that a condition $\varepsilon(\omega)$ involving a generic sample point ω is an **event**; in particular, it is called a **measurable event** or **random event** if the set E of all sample points satisfying $\varepsilon(\omega)$ belongs to \mathfrak{B} . We assume that an event is always a measurable one, since we encounter only measurable events in the theory of probability. Because of the obvious one-to-one correspondence between measurable events and \mathfrak{B} -measurable sets (i.e., the correspondence of each event ε with the set E of all sample points ω satisfying ε), a \mathfrak{B} -measurable set itself is frequently called an event. If ε is an event and E is the \mathfrak{B} -measurable set corresponding to ε , we call $P(E)$ or $\Pr(\varepsilon)$ the **probability that the event ε occurs**, i.e., the **probability of the event E** . The **complementary event** (resp. **impossible**

event, sure event) is the complementary set E^c (empty set \emptyset , whole space Ω). For a finite or infinite family $\{E_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$), the **sum event** (resp. **intersection** or **product event**) of E_λ is the set $\bigcup_\lambda E_\lambda$ ($\bigcap_\lambda E_\lambda$). If $E \cap F = \emptyset$, then we say that E and F are mutually exclusive or that they are **exclusive events**.

By the definition of P , we have $0 \leq P(E) \leq 1$ for any event E , $P(\emptyset) = 0$, and $P(\Omega) = 1$. Moreover, if $\{E_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) is a sequence of pairwise exclusive events and E is the sum event of E_n , we have

$$P(E) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} P(E_n).$$

This property is called the **additivity of probability**. If $P(E) = 1$, the event E is said to occur **almost certainly** (almost surely (abbrev. a.s.), for almost all ω , or with probability 1).

Given a finite sequence $\{E_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) of events, we say that the events E_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) are mutually **independent** or that the sequence $\{E_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) is **independent** if every subsequence satisfies

$$P(E_{i_1} \cap E_{i_2} \cap \dots \cap E_{i_k}) = \prod_{j=1}^k P(E_{i_j}).$$

Given an infinite family $\{E_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) of events, we say that the events E_λ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) are mutually **independent** or that the family $\{E_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) is **independent** if every finite subfamily is independent. The concept of independence of events can be generalized to a family $\{\mathfrak{B}_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) of σ -subalgebras of \mathfrak{B} as follows. A family $\{\mathfrak{B}_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) of σ -subalgebras of events is said to be independent if for every choice of $E_\lambda \in \mathfrak{B}_\lambda$, the family $\{E_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) of events is independent.

For a sequence $\{E_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) of events, the sets $\limsup_n E_n$ and $\liminf_n E_n$ are called the **superior limit event** and **inferior limit event**, respectively. The superior limit event (inferior limit event) is the set of all ω for which infinitely many events among E_n (all events except finitely many E_n) occur. Therefore $P(\liminf_n E_n)$ is the probability that infinitely many events among E_n occur, and $P(\limsup_n E_n)$ is the probability that the events E_n occur for all n after some number n_0 , where n_0 depends on ω in general. The **Borel-Cantelli lemma**, which is concerned with the evaluation of $P(\limsup_n E_n)$, reads as follows: Given a sequence $\{E_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) of events, we have (i) whether the events E_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) are mutually independent or not, $\sum_n P(E_n) < \infty$ implies that $P(\limsup_n E_n) = 0$; and (ii) if the events E_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) are mutually independent, $\sum_n P(E_n) = \infty$ implies that $P(\limsup_n E_n) = 1$. Frequently, applications of part (ii) are greatly hampered by the requirement of independence; a number of sufficient conditions for depen-

dent events to have the same conclusion as (ii) have been discovered. The **Chung-Erdős theorem** [9] is quite useful in this connection.

C. Random Variables

Let $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ be a probability space. A **random variable** is a real-valued function X defined on Ω that is \mathfrak{B} -measurable (i.e., for every real number a , the set $\{\omega | X(\omega) < a\}$ is in \mathfrak{B}). If X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n are random variables, the mapping $X = (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n)$ from Ω into \mathbf{R}^n is said to be an **n -dimensional (or \mathbf{R}^n -valued) random variable**. More generally, a mapping X from (Ω, \mathfrak{B}) into another measurable space (S, \mathfrak{C}) is called an **(S, \mathfrak{C}) -valued random variable** if it is measurable, that is, for every set A of \mathfrak{C} , the set $\{\omega | X(\omega) \in A\}$ belongs to \mathfrak{B} .

Let \mathfrak{B}^1 be the σ -algebra of all \dagger Borel subsets of the real line \mathbf{R} . Then each random variable X induces a probability measure Φ on $(\mathbf{R}, \mathfrak{B}^1)$ such that

$$\Phi(A) = P(\{\omega | X(\omega) \in A\}), \quad A \in \mathfrak{B}^1.$$

The measure Φ is called the **(1-dimensional) probability distribution of the random variable** X or simply the **distribution of X** . The point function F defined by

$$F(a) = P(\{\omega | X(\omega) \leq a\}), \quad a \in \mathbf{R},$$

is a monotone nondecreasing and right continuous function such that $\lim_{a \rightarrow \infty} F(a) = 1$, $\lim_{a \rightarrow -\infty} F(a) = 0$. The function F is called the **cumulative distribution function** (or simply the **distribution function**) of the random variable X . Similarly, an n -dimensional random variable $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ induces its **n -dimensional probability distribution** (or simply **n -dimensional distribution**) and its **n -dimensional distribution function** $F(a_1, \dots, a_n) = P(\{\omega | X_1(\omega) \leq a_1, \dots, X_n(\omega) \leq a_n\})$. If the X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) are k_n -dimensional random variables ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$), we say that the $l (= \sum_{n=1}^N k_n)$ -dimensional random variable $X = (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_N)$ is the **joint random variable** of X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) and that the $(l$ -dimensional) distribution Φ of X is the **joint distribution** (or **simultaneous distribution**) of X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$). On the other hand, the k_n -dimensional distribution Φ_n of X_n is called the **marginal distribution** of the l -dimensional distribution Φ .

Given a finite sequence $\{X_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) of random variables, if the relation

$$\begin{aligned} P(\{\omega | X_n(\omega) \in A_n \ (n = 1, 2, \dots, N)\}) \\ = \prod_{n=1}^N P(\{\omega | X_n(\omega) \in A_n\}) \end{aligned} \quad (1)$$

holds for every choice of 1-dimensional \dagger Borel sets A_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$), we say that the random variables X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) are mutually inde-

pendent or that the sequence $\{X_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) is **independent**. Given an infinite family $\{X_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) of random variables, we say that the random variables are mutually **independent** or that the family is independent if every finite subfamily is independent. The latter definition of independence of random variables is compatible with the previous definition of independence of σ -subalgebras of \mathfrak{B} ; i.e., if $\mathfrak{B}[X_\lambda]$ denotes the σ -subalgebras of \mathfrak{B} generated by the sets $\{\omega | X_\lambda(\omega) \in A_\lambda\}$, with A_λ an arbitrary 1-dimensional Borel set, the independence of the family $\{X_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) in the latter sense is equivalent to the independence of the family $\{\mathfrak{B}[X_\lambda]\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) in the previous sense. If the X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) (X_λ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$)) are k_n - (k_λ -) dimensional random variables, then the independence of the family $\{X_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots, N$) ($\{X_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$)) is defined similarly; it is enough to take k_n - (k_λ -) dimensional Borel sets A_n (A_λ) for 1-dimensional Borel sets in equation (1).

Given a family $\{X_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) of random variables, the smallest σ -algebra with respect to which every X_λ is measurable is called the σ -algebra generated by $\{X_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) and is denoted by $\mathfrak{B}[X_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda]$. Each element of this class is said to be **measurable with respect to the family $\{X_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) of random variables**.

Since a random variable X is a \mathfrak{B} -measurable function, we can speak of the \dagger integral of X relative to the measure P on \mathfrak{B} . If X is integrable relative to P , the integral of X over A is denoted by $E(X; A)$. $E(X; \Omega)$, usually denoted by $E(X)$, is called the **mean, expectation**, or **expected value** of X , denoted also by $M(X)$ or m_X . If $(X - E(X))^2$ is integrable,

$$V(X) = E((X - E(X))^2)$$

is called the **variance** of X , denoted by $\sigma^2(X)$. The **standard deviation** of X is the nonnegative square root $\sigma(X)$ of the variance. If X and Y are two random variables for which $E((X - E(X))(Y - E(Y)))$ exists, the value $E((X - E(X))(Y - E(Y)))$ is called the **covariance** of X and Y . When X and Y have finite variances, the **correlation coefficient** of X and Y is defined by

$$\rho(X, Y) = \frac{E((X - E(X))(Y - E(Y)))}{\{E((X - E(X))^2)E((Y - E(Y))^2)\}^{1/2}}.$$

It follows that $E(aX + bY) = aE(X) + bE(Y)$, $V(aX + b) = a^2 V(X)$ for any real numbers a , b , and that, in particular, $E(XY) = E(X)E(Y)$, $V(X + Y) = V(X) + V(Y)$ for mutually independent random variables X and Y . It also follows from the definition that $-1 \leq \rho(X, Y) \leq 1$ in all cases. The independence of X and Y implies that $\rho(X, Y) = 0$, but the converse is false in general. The variance is important because of the well-known **Chebyshev inequality**

ity: If X is a random variable with finite variance σ^2 ,

$$P(|X - E(X)| \geq c) \leq \sigma^2/c^2$$

for every positive number c .

D. Convergence of Random Variables

If $P(\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} X_n = X_\infty) = 1$, the sequence $\{X_n\}$ is said to **converge almost everywhere** (almost certainly, almost surely (a.s.), or with probability 1) to X_∞ . If $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P(|X_n - X_\infty| > \varepsilon) = 0$ for every positive number ε , the sequence $\{X_n\}$ is said to **converge in probability** to X_∞ . For a given positive number p the sequence $\{X_n\}$ is said to **converge in the mean of order p** to X_∞ if $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} E(|X_n - X_\infty|^p) = 0$. Finally, if the random variables X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, \infty$) have distributions Φ_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, \infty$), respectively, and if

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(x) d\Phi_n(x) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(x) d\Phi_\infty(x)$$

for every continuous function f with compact support, the sequence $\{X_n\}$ is said to **converge in distribution** to X_∞ . Note that the sequence of random variables converging in distribution may not converge in any ordinary sense. For example, random variables converging in distribution may even be defined on different probability spaces. On one hand, almost sure convergence does not in general imply convergence in the mean. On the other hand, either almost sure convergence or convergence in the mean implies convergence in probability, and convergence in probability implies convergence in distribution. However, P. Lévy [10] proved that if the X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) are mutually independent, the sequence

$$Y_k = \sum_{n=1}^k X_n, \quad k = 1, 2, \dots,$$

is convergent almost everywhere if and only if it is convergent in distribution (or in probability). The famous **three-series theorem** of Khinchin and Kolmogorov [11] claims that the series $\sum_n X_n$ with X_1, X_2, \dots independent is convergent almost surely if and only if there exists a sequence of independent random variables X'_1, X'_2, \dots such that each of the three series

$$\sum_n P(X_n \neq X'_n), \quad \sum_n E(X'_n), \quad \sum_n V(X'_n)$$

is convergent.

E. Conditional Probability and Conditional Expectation

Let $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ be a probability space and \mathfrak{F} a σ -subalgebra of \mathfrak{B} . If X is a random variable

with finite mean, the function

$$\mu(E) = \int_E X(\omega) dP, \quad E \in \mathfrak{F},$$

defines on (Ω, \mathfrak{F}) a completely additive set function which is **absolutely continuous** with respect to P . Therefore, by the **Radon-Nikodym theorem**, there is an \mathfrak{F} -measurable function f such that

$$\mu(E) = \int_E f(\omega) dP \quad \text{for every } E \in \mathfrak{F}.$$

This function is unique up to a set of P -measure zero and is called the **conditional expectation** (or **conditional mean**) of X relative to \mathfrak{F} , denoted by $E(X|\mathfrak{F})$. When \mathfrak{F} is generated by a random variable Y , we also write $E(X|Y)$ for $E(X|\mathfrak{F})$ and call it the conditional expectation of X relative to Y . In this case, there is a **Borel measurable function** f such that $E(X|Y) = f(Y(\omega))$, and we write $E(X|Y = y)$ for $f(y)$. The same fact holds when Y is a multidimensional random variable. It follows from the definition that the conditional expectation has the following properties, up to a set of P -measure zero: (i) if $X \geq 0$, then $E(X|\mathfrak{F}) \geq 0$; (ii) $E(aX + bY|\mathfrak{F}) = aE(X|\mathfrak{F}) + bE(Y|\mathfrak{F})$; (iii) $E(E(X|\mathfrak{F})) = E(X)$; (iv) if X and \mathfrak{F} are mutually independent, i.e., $\mathfrak{B}[X]$ and \mathfrak{F} are mutually independent, then $E(X|\mathfrak{F}) = E(X)$; (v) if X is \mathfrak{F} -measurable, then $E(X|\mathfrak{F}) = X$ and $E(XY|\mathfrak{F}) = XE(Y|\mathfrak{F})$; (vi) if $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} X_n = X_\infty$ with $|X_n| \leq Y$ and Y is an integrable random variable, then $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} E(X_n|\mathfrak{F}) = E(X_\infty|\mathfrak{F})$; (vii) if \mathfrak{G} is a σ -subalgebra of \mathfrak{F} , then $E(E(X|\mathfrak{F})|\mathfrak{G}) = E(X|\mathfrak{G})$; (viii) if X^2 is integrable and Y is any \mathfrak{F} -measurable random variable, then $E((X - E(X|\mathfrak{F}))^2) \leq E((X - Y)^2)$.

When X is the **indicator function** (i.e., the **characteristic function**) χ_E of a set E in \mathfrak{B} , $E(\chi_E|\mathfrak{F})$ is called the **conditional probability** of E relative to \mathfrak{F} and is denoted by $P(E|\mathfrak{F})$. In particular, if $\mathfrak{F} = \{F, F^c, \emptyset, \Omega\}$ with $1 > P(F) > 0$, $P(E|\mathfrak{F})$ is the simple function which takes the values $P(E \cap F)/P(F)$ on F and $P(E \cap F^c)/P(F^c)$ on F^c . These values are denoted respectively by $P(E|F)$ and $P(E|F^c)$. The definition of $P(E|Y)$ or $P(E|Y = y)$ is also the same as in the case of the conditional expectation.

Let \mathfrak{F} be a σ -subalgebra of \mathfrak{B} and Y a real random variable. According to the foregoing definition, $P(Y \in E|\mathfrak{F})$ or $P(Y^{-1}(E)|\mathfrak{F})$ is the conditional probability of the occurrence of the event $Y \in E$ under \mathfrak{F} . Since $P(Y \in E|\mathfrak{F})$ is determined except on a P -null set depending on E , an arbitrary version of $P(Y \in E|\mathfrak{F})$, viewed as a function of E , does not always satisfy the conditions of a probability measure. However, we can prove that there exists a nice version of $P(Y \in E|\mathfrak{F})$ which is a proba-

bility measure in $E \in \mathfrak{B}^1$ for every $\omega \in \Omega$ and that such a version is unique almost surely. This version is called a **regular conditional probability** of $Y \in E$ under \mathfrak{F} or the **conditional probability distribution** of Y under \mathfrak{F} ; this is written as $P_Y(E|\mathfrak{F})$. $P(Y \in E|X)$, $P(Y \in E|X=x)$, $P_Y(E|X)$, and $P_Y(E|X=x)$ are interpreted similarly. The conditional probability distribution can be defined not only for real random variables but also for every random variable which takes values in an analytic measurable space.

F. Bayes's Formula

Let E_1, E_2, \dots, E_n be pairwise exclusive events, and assume that one of them must occur. If E is another random event, we have

$$P(E_i|E) = \frac{P(E_i)P(E|E_i)}{P(E_1)P(E|E_1) + \dots + P(E_n)P(E|E_n)},$$

where $P(E_i)$ is the probability of the event E_i and $P(E|E_i)$ is the conditional probability of E under the assumption that the event E_i has occurred. This is called **Bayes's formula**. In practical applications E_1, \dots, E_n usually represent n unknown hypotheses. Suppose that the probabilities on the right-hand side of the formula are given. We then apply Bayes's formula to reevaluate the probability of each hypothesis E_i knowing that some event E has occurred as the result of a trial. This is why $P(E_i|P(E_i|E))$ is called the **a priori (a posteriori) probability**. However, the determination of the values of a priori probabilities is sometimes difficult, and we often set $P(E_i) = 1/n$ in practical applications, although this has caused a great deal of criticism.

When X is a random variable subject to the distribution with continuous probability density $f(x)$, Bayes's formula is extended to the following form:

$$f(x_0|E) = \frac{f(x_0)P(E|X=x_0)}{\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} P(E|X=x)f(x)dx},$$

where $f(x|E)$ is the conditional probability density of the random variable X under the assumption that the event E has occurred, and $P(E|X=x_0)$ is the conditional probability of E relative to X .

G. Zero-One Laws

In probability theory there are many theorems claiming that an event with certain properties has probability 0 or 1. Such theorems are called **zero-one laws**. Here, we mention two famous examples, Kolmogorov's zero-one law

[6] and the Hewitt-Savage zero-one law. Let $\alpha = \alpha(X_1, X_2, \dots)$ be an event concerning a sequence of random variables $\{X_n\}$. α is called a **tail event** concerning $\{X_n\}$ if for every n , occurrence or nonoccurrence of α depends only on $\{X_n, X_{n+1}, \dots\}$. For example, $\{\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} X_n = 0\}$ is a tail event. α is called a **symmetric event** concerning $\{X_n\}$ if occurrence or nonoccurrence of α is invariant under every finite permutation of X_1, X_2, \dots . For example, the event that $\sum_{k=1}^n X_k > 0$ for infinitely many n 's is a symmetric event. **Kolmogorov's zero-one law**: Every tail event concerning a sequence of independent random variables has probability 0 or 1. **Hewitt-Savage zero-one law**: Every symmetric event concerning a sequence of independent and identically distributed random variables has probability 0 or 1.

Kolmogorov's zero-one law can be extended as follows: Let \mathfrak{F}_n , $n=1, 2, \dots$, be a sequence of independent σ -subalgebras of \mathfrak{B} . Then the σ -algebra $\mathfrak{I} = \bigcap_k \bigcup_{n>k} \mathfrak{F}_n$, called the **tail σ -algebra** of $\{\mathfrak{F}_n\}$, is trivial, i.e., $P(A) = 0$ or 1 for every $A \in \mathfrak{I}$. Kolmogorov's zero-one law is a special case where \mathfrak{F}_n is the σ -algebra generated by X_n for every n .

References

- [1] I. Todhunter, A history of the mathematical theory of probability from the time of Pascal to that of Laplace, Macmillan, 1865 (Chelsea, 1949).
- [2] J. Bernoulli, Ars conjectandi, 1713.
- [3] A. de Moivre, The doctrine of chances, 1718.
- [4] P. S. Laplace, Théorie analytique des probabilités, Paris, 1812.
- [5] R. von Mises, Vorlesungen aus dem Gebiete der angewandten Mathematik I, Wahrscheinlichkeitsrechnung und ihre Anwendung in der Statistik und theoretischen Physik, Franz Deuticke, 1931.
- [6] A. Kolmogorov (Kolmogoroff), Grundbegriffe der Wahrscheinlichkeitsrechnung, Erg. Math., Springer, 1933; English translation, Foundations of the theory of probability, Chelsea, 1950.
- [7] E. Borel, Les probabilités dénombrables et leur application arithmétiques, Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo, 27 (1909), 247–271.
- [8] N. Wiener, Differential space, J. Math. Phys., 2 (1923), 131–174.
- [9] K. L. Chung and P. Erdős, On the application of the Borel-Cantelli lemma, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 72 (1952), 179–186.
- [10] P. Lévy, Théorie de l'addition des variables aléatoires, Gauthier-Villars, 1937.
- [11] J. L. Doob, Stochastic processes, Wiley, 1953.

- [12] M. M. Loève, Probability theory, Van Nostrand, third edition, 1963.
 [13] W. Feller, An introduction to probability theory and its applications, Wiley, I, second edition, 1957; II, 1966.
 [14] L. Breiman, Probability, Addison-Wesley, 1968.
 [15] J. Lamperti, Probability, Benjamin, 1966.

343 (VI.14) Projective Geometry

A. Introduction

Projective geometry is the most fundamental of classical geometries and one of the first examples of axiomatized mathematics.

B. Construction of Projective Geometry

We construct projective geometry axiomatically [4]. Given two sets P, Q and a relation $\Gamma \subset P \times Q$, consider the triple $\mathfrak{P} = \{P, Q, \Gamma\}$. We call each element of P a **point** and each element of Q a **line**. If $(p, l) \in \Gamma$ holds for a point p and a line l , then we say that the line l contains the point p . When two lines l_1 and l_2 contain a point p , we say that they intersect at p . When several points are contained in the same line, these points are said to be **collinear**, and when several lines contain the same point, these lines are said to be **concurrent**. For \mathfrak{P} we impose the following axioms:

(I) There exists one and only one line that contains two given distinct points.

(II) Suppose that we are given noncollinear points p_0, p_1 , and p_2 , and distinct points q_1, q_2 . Now suppose that $\{p_0, p_1, q_1\}$ and $\{p_0, p_2, q_2\}$ are collinear triples. Then the line containing p_1, p_2 and the line containing q_1, q_2 necessarily intersect (Fig. 1).

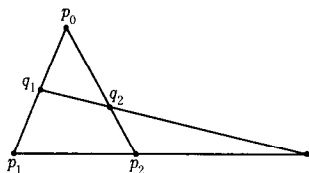


Fig. 1

(III) Every line contains at least three distinct points.

The \mathfrak{P} that satisfy axioms (I) and (II) and axioms (I), (II), and (III) are called **general projective geometry** and **projective geometry**,

respectively. The set of all points that are contained in a line is called the **point range** with the line as its **base**. In projective geometry, there exists a one-to-one correspondence between the set of lines and the set of point ranges, so we can identify every line with a point range. In this case a line $l \in Q$ is represented as a subset of P , and the relation $(p, l) \in \Gamma$ means that the point p belongs to the set l .

Let S be a subset of P and p_1, p_2 be any two distinct points of S . If the line that contains p_1 and p_2 is always contained in S , then S is called a **subspace**. Points and lines are subspaces. Now we impose the following axiom:

(IV) There exist a finite number of points such that any subspace that contains all of them contains P .

We call a projective geometry satisfying axiom (IV) a **finite-dimensional projective geometry**, which from this point on will be the sole object of our consideration. We call P a **projective space**. Consider sequences of subspaces of the type $P \supsetneq P_{n-1} \supsetneq \dots \supsetneq P_1 \supsetneq P_0 \neq \emptyset$, where \emptyset is the empty set. The number n of the longest sequence is called the **dimension** of P . If P is of dimension n , we write P^n instead of P . We call P^1 a **projective line** and P^2 a **projective plane**. Each subspace S of P , together with the set of lines of P contained in S , gives a finite-dimensional projective geometry, and so S is a projective space. Lines and points are projective spaces of dimensions 1 and 0, respectively. By convention, the empty set is a (-1) -dimensional projective space. We call each 2-dimensional subspace a **plane** and each $(n-1)$ -dimensional subspace in P^n a **hyperplane**.

Let M, N be subspaces of P , and for a pair of points $p \in M, q \in N$ consider the set $p \cup q$ of all points on the line that contains p and q . The set $\{p \cup q \mid p \in M, q \in N\}$ is denoted by $M \cup N$, and we call it the set spanned by M and N . By convention, we put $\emptyset \cup M = M$ and $p \cup p = p$. Then $P^r \cup P^s$ is the projective space of the lowest dimension which contains P^r and P^s . On the other hand, if we denote the intersection of P^r and P^s by $P^r \cap P^s$, then it is the projective space of highest dimension that is contained in both of them. We call $P^r \cup P^s$ and $P^r \cap P^s$ the **join** and the **intersection** of P^r and P^s , respectively. When the dimension of the space spanned by $r+1$ points is r , we say that these points are **independent**; otherwise they are **dependent**. If any $r+1$ points of a given subset M of P^n are independent for each $r \leq n$, we say that points of M lie in a **general position**. The space P^r necessarily contains $r+1$ independent points, and there necessarily exists a P^r that contains $r+1$ arbitrary given points in a projective space; it is unique if the points are indepen-

dent. If $P^r \cup P^s = P^t$ and $P^r \cap P^s = P^u$, then $r + s = t + u$. We call the latter the **dimension theorem** (or **intersection theorem**) of projective geometry.

The set Σ_1 of all hyperplanes that contain a P_0^{n-2} in P^n is called a **pencil of hyperplanes**, and the P_0^{n-2} common to them is called the **center** of Σ_1 . If a pencil of hyperplanes contains two distinct hyperplanes of P^n , then the pencil is determined uniquely by these two. When $n = 2$ and 3 , it is called a **pencil of lines** and a **pencil of planes**, respectively. Each pencil of hyperplanes of P^n , or more generally, each pencil of hyperplanes of a subspace of an arbitrary dimension in P^n , is called a **linear fundamental figure** of P^n or simply a **fundamental figure**. In P^n , the set Σ_r of all $P^{n-r}, P^{n-r+1}, \dots, P^{n-1}$ that contain the same P_0^{n-r-1} is called the **star** with center P_0^{n-r-1} . Each set that consists of the totality of subspaces of an arbitrary dimension in the same P^r or a subset of it is called a **P^r -figure**.

Under the assumption that P^r and P^s do not have points in common, the operation of constructing $P^r \cup P^s$ from P^r and P^s is called **projecting** P^s from P^r . Assuming that P^r and P^s have points in common the operation of constructing $P^r \cap P^s$ from P^r and P^s is called **cutting** P^s by P^r . Suppose that we are given spaces P_0, P_1 , and P_2 , and a fundamental figure Σ in the space P_1 . By projecting Σ from P_0 and then cutting it by P_2 , we can construct a fundamental figure Σ' on P_2 . This operation is called **projection** of Σ from P_0 onto P_2 , and we call P_0 the **center of projection** (Fig. 2). In this case, we say that Σ and Σ' are **in perspective** and denote the relation by $\Sigma \bar{\wedge} \Sigma'$. If for two fundamental figures Σ and Σ' there exist a finite number of fundamental figures F_i ($1 \leq i \leq l$) such that $\Sigma \bar{\wedge} F_1 \bar{\wedge} \dots \bar{\wedge} F_l \bar{\wedge} \Sigma'$, then we say that Σ and Σ' are **projectively related** to each other and denote this by $\Sigma \bar{\wedge} \Sigma'$ (Fig. 3). Now for arbitrary subspaces P_r^1, P_r^2 ($0 \leq r \leq n$), we take P_0^{n-r-1} that

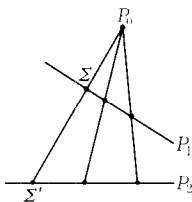


Fig. 2

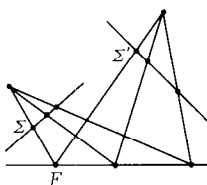


Fig. 3

have no points in common with them and project each point of P_1^r onto P_2^r from P_0^{n-r-1} . The one-to-one correspondence $P_1^r \rightarrow P_2^r$ thus obtained is called a **perspective mapping**. If a one-to-one correspondence $P_1^r \rightarrow P_2^r$ is represented as the composite of a finite number of perspective mappings, then we call it a **projective mapping**. These mappings are extended to those of fundamental figures, too.

Suppose that in a proposition or a figure in P^n , we interchange P^r and P^{n-r-1} ($0 \leq r \leq n$) and also interchange *contains* and *is contained* (and related terms). The proposition or the figure thus obtained is said to be **dual** to the original one. In projective geometry, if a proposition is true, then its dual proposition is also true (**duality principle**). This is assured because propositions dual to axioms (I)–(IV) hold; and P^r and Σ_r are dual to each other. The projective space P_*^n obtained by the principle of duality, by regarding the hyperplanes of P^n as points of P_*^n , is called the **dual space** of P^n .

C. Projective Coordinates

Here we introduce **projective coordinates** in P^n . Consider **Desargues's theorem**: Suppose that p_1, p_2, p_3 and q_1, q_2, q_3 , are two sets of points in P^n , each of which is independent and satisfies $p_i \neq q_i$ ($i = 1, 2, 3$). If the three lines $p_i \cup q_i$ ($i = 1, 2, 3$) are concurrent, then the three points $(p_2 \cup p_3) \cap (q_2 \cup q_3)$, $(p_3 \cup p_1) \cap (q_3 \cup q_1)$, $(p_1 \cup p_2) \cap (q_1 \cup q_2)$ are collinear. The converse is also true. This theorem holds for $n \geq 3$ generally. However, when $n = 2$, there exist projective geometries for which it does not hold; we call these **non-Desarguesian geometries**. In such cases it is impossible to introduce coordinates, so we assume Desargues's theorem for $n = 2$.

When four points p_i ($1 \leq i \leq 4$) in P^n lie on the same plane and in general position, we call the figure that consists of these four points and the six straight lines $g_{ij} = p_i \cup p_j$ ($1 \leq i < j \leq 4$) a **complete quadrangle** $p_1 p_2 p_3 p_4$; each p_i is called a **vertex**, and each g_{ij} is called a **side**. If six points q_i ($1 \leq i \leq 6$) on a line l are points of intersection of six sides $g_{12}, g_{13}, g_{14}, g_{34}, g_{24}, g_{23}$ of a complete quadrangle with l , we call

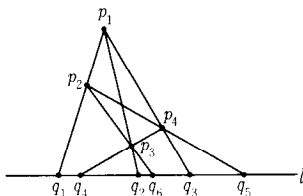


Fig. 4

them a **quadrangular set of six points** (Fig. 4). By Desargues's theorem, we can show that if there are given three fixed distinct points on a line l , then any pair of distinct points on l determines uniquely a point on l such that the six points thus obtained constitute a quadrangular set. The quadrangular property is invariant under projective mappings. On a line l we fix three mutually distinct points p_0, p_1, p_∞ . For any two points p_x, p_y different from p_∞ on l , we take the point s such that $p_\infty, p_x, p_0, p_\infty, p_y, s$ constitute a quadrangular set of six points and call s the **sum** of p_x and p_y with respect to $[p_0, p_\infty, p_1]$ (Fig. 5). On the other hand, the point t such that $p_0, p_x, p_1, p_\infty, p_y, t$ constitute a quadrangular set of six points is called the **product** of p_x and p_y with respect to $[p_0, p_\infty, p_1]$ (Fig. 6). When we are given a fixed triple $[p_0, p_\infty, p_1]$ on a line l , as before, the set of points on l not equal to p_∞ is called a **point range of the number system**, provided that we exclude p_∞ from the point range. We call the set of three points $[p_0, p_\infty, p_1]$ a **frame** (or **projective frame**) of l , and we call p_0 the **origin**, p_1 the **unit point**, and p_∞ the **supporting point**.

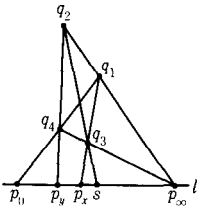


Fig. 5

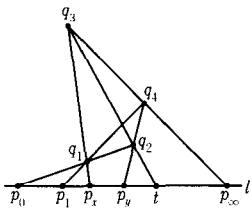


Fig. 6

A point range of the number system constitutes a **field** (which may be noncommutative) with respect to the previously defined sum and product. We call the field a **Staudt algebra**, and an abstract algebra isomorphic to it is called a **coefficient field of P^n** . We denote by $K(p_0, p_\infty, p_1)$ the Staudt algebra that is determined by a frame $[p_0, p_\infty, p_1]$. A projective mapping of l onto itself that leaves invariant each of three distinct points p_0, p_∞, p_1 on l is necessarily an **inner automorphism** of the field $K(p_0, p_\infty, p_1)$. Denoting by $[p_0, p_\infty, p_1]$ a frame on a line l of P^n with coefficient field K , we call each isomorphism $\theta: K(p_0, p_\infty, p_1) \rightarrow K$ a **coordinate system** of l . For each point p on l we call the element $\xi = \theta(p)$ of K the **inhomogeneous**

coordinate of p with respect to this frame. Also, we call the pair (x^0, x^1) such that $x^0, x^1 \in K$ and $x^1(x^0)^{-1} = \xi$ **homogeneous coordinates** of p . Since the supporting point p_∞ is excluded from $K(p_0, p_\infty, p_1)$, we fix $(0, x^1)$ such that $x^1 \neq 0$ as the homogeneous coordinates of p_∞ . In order for (x^0, x^1) and (y^0, y^1) to be homogeneous coordinates of the same point, it is necessary and sufficient that there exist an element $\lambda \neq 0$ of K such that $y^\alpha = x^\alpha \lambda$ ($\alpha = 0, 1$).

In conformity with these results, we now introduce coordinates in P^n . A set $\mathfrak{F} = [a_0, a_1, \dots, a_n, u]$ of ordered $n+2$ points in a general position is called a **frame** (or **projective frame**) of P^n ; each of a_α ($0 \leq \alpha \leq n$) is called a **fundamental point**, and u is called a **unit point**. For $A = a_{\alpha_0} \cup \dots \cup a_{\alpha_r}$ ($0 \leq \alpha_0 < \dots < \alpha_r \leq n$), we denote by A^* the space spanned by the remaining fundamental points. For any point p that is not contained in A^* , we put $p_A = A \cap (p \cup A^*)$ and call it the **component** of p on A . Then $\mathfrak{F}_A = [a_{\alpha_0}, \dots, a_{\alpha_r}, u_A]$ is a frame of A . Hereafter, we shall omit u_A for brevity. Suppose that isomorphisms $\theta_{\alpha\beta}: K(a_\alpha, a_\beta) \rightarrow K$ are assigned for each pair α, β ($0 \leq \alpha < \beta \leq n$). Under a certain condition, the system $\{\theta_{\alpha\beta}\}$ is determined by one of the $\theta_{\alpha\beta}$. In this case we denote $\{\theta_{\alpha\beta}\}$ by θ and call $\{\mathfrak{F}, \theta\}$ a **projective coordinate system** of P^n . For any point p of P^n not contained in $A_0 = a_1 \cup \dots \cup a_n$, we denote by p_i the component of p on $a_0 \cup a_i$ ($1 \leq i \leq n$), and we put $\xi^i = \theta(p_i)$. The elements of the ordered set $(\xi^1, \xi^2, \dots, \xi^n)$ are called the **inhomogeneous coordinates** of p with respect to \mathfrak{F} , and those of the set (x^0, x^1, \dots, x^n) such that $x^1(x^0)^{-1} = \xi^i$ are called the **homogeneous coordinates** of p . When p is contained in A_0 , we define $(0, x^1, \dots, x^n)$ as homogeneous coordinates of p with respect to \mathfrak{F} , provided that (x^1, \dots, x^n) are homogeneous coordinates of p with respect to \mathfrak{F}_{A_0} .

Now we represent the point whose coordinates are (x^0, x^1, \dots, x^n) simply by x . In P^n , when coordinates are introduced, a necessary and sufficient condition for points z to be on the line that passes through two distinct points x and y is that $z^\alpha = x^\alpha \lambda + y^\alpha \mu$ ($0 \leq \alpha \leq n$), when $\lambda, \mu \in K$ are parameters. More generally, a point z is contained in the space spanned by $r+1$ independent points x_β ($0 \leq \beta \leq r$) in P^n if and only if $z^\alpha = \sum_{\beta=0}^r x_\beta^\alpha \lambda^\beta$ ($0 \leq \alpha \leq n, \lambda^\beta \in K$). In particular, the equation of a hyperplane is represented in the form $\sum_{\alpha=0}^n X_\alpha z^\alpha = 0$ ($X_\alpha \in K$) with respect to variable coordinates z^α . Therefore each hyperplane is uniquely determined by the ratio of X_0, X_1, \dots, X_n . We call X_0, X_1, \dots, X_n **hyperplane coordinates** of the hyperplane. If $n=2$, they are called **coordinates** of a line, and if $n=3$, **plane coordinates** of a plane. (For coordinates of P^n in $P^n \rightarrow 90$ Coordinates B.)

D. Projective Transformations

A one-to-one correspondence φ between the point sets of two projective spaces P^n and \bar{P}^n is called a **collineation in the wider sense** if for any three points p_1, p_2, p_3 that are collinear, $\varphi(p_i)$ ($i = 1, 2, 3$) are also collinear and vice versa. If $\bar{P}^n = P^n_*$, we call φ a **correlation**; if $\bar{P}^n = P^n$, we call φ a **collineation**. If we denote a correlation by τ_0 , any other correlation is obtained as a composite of τ_0 and a collineation. If τ is a correlation, it naturally induces a mapping $P^n_* \rightarrow P^n$, which we also denote by τ . Then $\tau \circ \tau$ is a collineation. If $\tau \circ \tau$ is an identity, we call τ an **involution correlation**. Suppose that $\varphi: P^n \rightarrow \bar{P}^n$ is a collineation in the wider sense and $0 \leq r \leq n-1$. Then φ induces a one-to-one correspondence between the set of r -dimensional subspaces of P^n and the set of r -dimensional subspaces of \bar{P}^n ; and if $P^r \supset P^s$ in P^n , then $\varphi P^r \supset \varphi P^s$.

Next, suppose that we are given two projective spaces P^n and \bar{P}^n that are subspaces of a space P^N ($n < N$). (When Desargues's theorem holds, any two projective spaces of the same dimension can be identified with subspaces of a projective space of higher dimension.) In this case, when a collineation in the wider sense $\varphi: P^n \rightarrow \bar{P}^n$ is a projective mapping, we call it a **projective collineation in the wider sense**. A **projective collineation** is also called a **projective transformation**. The totality of collineations of P^n constitutes a \dagger transformation group and is called the **group of collineations of P^n** ; we denote it by $\mathfrak{C}(P^n)$. The totality of projective transformations of P^n constitutes a \dagger normal subgroup of $\mathfrak{C}(P^n)$; we denote it by $\mathfrak{G}(P^n)$ and call it the **group of projective transformations**. The totality of projective transformations that leave invariant a frame \mathfrak{F} of P^n constitutes a subgroup $\mathfrak{G}_0^{n+1}(\mathfrak{F})$. It is isomorphic to the group of \dagger inner automorphisms $\mathfrak{Z}(K)$ of the coefficient field K of P^n . A collineation is not necessarily a projective transformation. The former is obtained as a composite of a projective transformation and an automorphism of the coefficient field. Specifically, if we denote the group of \dagger automorphisms of K by $\mathfrak{A}(K)$, then $\mathfrak{C}(P^n)/\mathfrak{G}(P^n) \cong \mathfrak{A}(K)/\mathfrak{Z}(K)$. Hence in order for all collineations to be projective transformations, it is necessary and sufficient that all automorphisms of the coefficient field be inner automorphisms. If the coefficient field is the real number field, then collineations are always projective transformations. For the complex number field, however, this is not necessarily true.

Now, we consider the following three propositions: (1) The coefficient field of P^n is commutative. (2) Given frames \mathfrak{F} and \mathfrak{F}' of P^n , there exists a unique projective transformation

sending \mathfrak{F} onto \mathfrak{F}' . (3) Given two distinct lines l_1 and l_2 contained in a plane in P^n and two sets of three distinct points p_i ($i = 1, 2, 3$) and q_i ($i = 1, 2, 3$) that lie on l_1 and l_2 respectively, then the three points $(p_2 \cup q_3) \cap (p_3 \cup q_2)$, $(p_3 \cup q_1) \cap (p_1 \cup q_3)$, and $(p_1 \cup q_2) \cap (p_2 \cup q_1)$ are collinear. These three propositions are mutually equivalent. We call proposition (2) the **fundamental theorem of projective geometry** and proposition (3) the **theorem of Pappus**. If the coefficient field is the real (complex) number field, we call the projective space a **real (complex) projective space**. In classical geometry, only these cases were studied.

Suppose that the coefficient field is commutative. Then, if we assign an isomorphism $\theta_0: K(p_0, p_\infty, p_1) \rightarrow K$ for the Staudt algebra $K(p_0, p_\infty, p_1)$ on a line in a space, then the isomorphism θ of the Staudt algebra $K(q_0, q_\infty, q_1)$ on an arbitrary line onto K can be uniquely determined so that $\theta^{-1} \circ \theta_0$ is a projective mapping. Utilizing such isomorphisms, we can determine homogeneous coordinates in an arbitrary subspace of P^n by a frame on it.

Suppose that the coefficient field is a commutative field whose characteristic is not 2. For four collinear points p_i ($1 \leq i \leq 4$) in P^n , where p_1, p_2, p_3 are distinct and $p_4 \neq p_1$, we consider a frame such that p_1, p_2 , and p_3 are, respectively, the supporting point, the origin, and the unit point. The inhomogeneous coordinate λ of p_4 with respect to this frame is called the **anharmonic ratio (cross ratio or double ratio)** of these four points and is denoted by $[p_1, p_2; p_3, p_4]$. If we denote the inhomogeneous coordinates of p_i with respect to a general frame by (x_i^0, x_i^1) ($i = 1, 2, 3, 4$), then λ can be expressed as

$$\lambda = [p_1, p_2; p_3, p_4] = \frac{(x_1^0 x_3^1 - x_3^0 x_1^1)(x_2^0 x_4^1 - x_4^0 x_2^1)}{(x_1^0 x_4^1 - x_4^0 x_1^1)(x_2^0 x_3^1 - x_3^0 x_2^1)}.$$

Moreover, if we interchange the order of the four points, then we have

$$\lambda = [p_2, p_1; p_4, p_3]$$

$$= [p_3, p_4; p_1, p_2]$$

$$= [p_4, p_3; p_2, p_1],$$

$$[p_1, p_2; p_4, p_3] = \frac{1}{\lambda},$$

$$[p_1, p_3; p_2, p_4] = 1 - \lambda,$$

$$[p_1, p_3; p_4, p_2] = \frac{1}{1 - \lambda},$$

$$[p_1, p_4; p_2, p_3] = \frac{\lambda - 1}{\lambda},$$

$$[p_1, p_4; p_3, p_2] = \frac{\lambda}{\lambda - 1}.$$

In general, these six values are different; however, there are the following two exceptions: when $\lambda = -1, 1/2$, and 2 ; and when λ is a root of $\lambda^2 - \lambda + 1 = 0$. When $\lambda = -1$, these four points are called a **harmonic range of points**, and the points p_3, p_4 are called **harmonic conjugates** with respect to p_1, p_2 ; or p_1, p_2 and p_3, p_4 are said to be **harmonically separated** from each other. When $\lambda^2 - \lambda + 1 = 0$, these four points are said to be an **equianharmonic range of points**. For the dual of these, we can consider the anharmonic ratio of four hyperplanes of a pencil of hyperplanes. The concept of the anharmonic ratio can be extended further to the case of four elements of fundamental figures in general. The anharmonic ratio is a quantity that is invariant under projective transformations.

Each projective transformation $x \rightarrow \bar{x}$ is expressed with respect to homogeneous coordinates x^α ($0 \leq \alpha \leq n$) of P^n as

$$\rho \bar{x}^\alpha = \sum_{\beta=0}^n t_{\beta}^{\alpha} x^{\beta}, \quad \rho, t_{\beta}^{\alpha} \in K, \quad \rho \neq 0, \quad \det(t_{\beta}^{\alpha}) \neq 0. \quad (1)$$

Conversely, if $T = (t_{\beta}^{\alpha})$ is a \dagger regular matrix ($t_{\beta}^{\alpha} \in K$), then (1) determines a projective transformation. So there is a one-to-one correspondence between projective transformations and \dagger equivalence classes of the regular matrices $T = (t_{\beta}^{\alpha})$ with the \dagger equivalence relation $T \sim \lambda T$ ($\lambda \in K \setminus \{0\}$). Therefore, when K is commutative, the group of projective transformations $\mathfrak{G}(P^n)$ of P^n is isomorphic to the factor group $PGL(n+1, K)$ of the \dagger general linear group $GL(n+1, K)$ with the coefficient field K by its center $\{\rho I | \rho \in K \setminus \{0\}\}$; that is, $\mathfrak{G}(P^n) \cong PGL(n+1, K)$.

Extending the definition of projective transformations, we call the transformation represented by (1), with an arbitrary square matrix that is not necessarily regular, a projective transformation. When T is regular, it is called a **regular projective transformation**, and when T is not regular, it is called a **singular projective transformation**. In particular, if the rank of T is $n+1-h$, then we say that the projective transformation is **singular of the h th species**. If (1) is singular of the h th species, $n+1$ hyperplanes $\sum_{\beta=0}^n t_{\beta}^{\alpha} x^{\beta} = 0$ ($0 \leq \alpha \leq n$) have a space P^{h-1} in common. We call P^{h-1} the **singular subspace** of this transformation. A projective transformation is not defined on its singular subspace. A singular projective transformation of the h th species is the composite of the projection of P^n onto some P^{n-h} with the singular subspace as its center and a regular projective transformation of P^{n-h} .

If the coordinates of a point are denoted by (x^α) and hyperplane coordinates with

respect to some frame by (X_α) , then the linear transformation

$$\tau_*: \rho X_\alpha = \sum_{\beta=0}^n t_{\alpha\beta}^* x^\beta, \quad \rho, t_{\alpha\beta}^* \in K, \quad (2)$$

is a correlation. (Here also, we extend the definition of correlation and include the case where $T_* = (t_{\alpha\beta}^*)$ is not regular.) The condition that τ_* is an involutive correlation is given by $T_* = \pm {}^t T_*$. When $T_* = -{}^t T_*$, the involutive correlation τ_* is called a **null system**. The correlation τ_* is a null system if and only if any point x of P^n is contained in the hyperplane $\tau_*(x)$. When $T_* = {}^t T_*$, we call the involutive correlation τ_* a **polar system**. For a polar system τ_* , the set of points x that are contained in hyperplanes $\tau_*(x)$ constitutes a **quadric hypersurface** (or **hyperquadric**).

E. Quadric Hypersurfaces

Let τ_* be a polar system, and let Q_2^{n-1} be the totality of points x contained in $\tau_*(x)$. Then the equation of the quadric hypersurface Q_2^{n-1} is given by

$$\sum_{\alpha, \beta=0}^n t_{\alpha\beta}^* x^\alpha x^\beta = 0. \quad (3)$$

For such a correlation τ_* we call a relation between the set of points x of P^n and the set of hyperplanes $\tau_*(x)$ a **polarity** with respect to Q_2^{n-1} . We call $\tau_*(x)$ the **polar** of x with respect to Q_2^{n-1} , and x the **pole** of $\tau_*(x)$ with respect to Q_2^{n-1} . If the points of intersection of a line passing through a point x with Q_2^{n-1} and $\tau_*(x)$ are denoted by $z_1, z_2; y$, then $x, y; z_1, z_2$ is a harmonic range of points. When a point x lies on the polar of a point y , we say that x and y are mutually **conjugate**. Each point on Q_2^{n-1} is conjugate with itself, and the converse is also true. We call the polar of a point on Q_2^{n-1} the **tangent hyperplane** of Q_2^{n-1} at that point.

If τ_* is regular or singular of the h th species, we call the corresponding quadric hypersurface **regular** or **singular of the h th species**. If τ_* is singular of the h th species, its singular subspace is contained in Q_2^{n-1} . We call points on this singular subspace **singular points** of Q_2^{n-1} . Q_2^{n-1} , which is singular of the first species (i.e., Q_2^{n-1} with just one singular point), is called a **cone**.

We call a subspace contained in Q_2^{n-1} a **generating space**. If it is a line we call it a **generating line**. We put $q = (n-2)/2$ or $(n-1)/2$ according as n is even or odd. Then, if the coefficient field is an \dagger algebraically closed field, for each regular Q_2^{n-1} there necessarily exist q -dimensional generating spaces. Also, Q_2^2 is a \dagger ruled surface covered by two families

of generating lines, and Q_2^{2k} is covered by two families of k -dimensional generating spaces.

If p_i ($1 \leq i \leq 5$) are five points in a general position in a plane, then there exists one and only one Q_2^1 passing through these points; we call Q_2^1 a **conic**. In order that six points p_i ($1 \leq i \leq 6$) in a plane lie on Q_2^1 , it is necessary and sufficient that the three points $(p_1 \cup p_2) \cap (p_4 \cup p_5)$, $(p_2 \cup p_3) \cap (p_5 \cup p_6)$, and $(p_3 \cup p_4) \cap (p_6 \cup p_1)$ be collinear (**Pascal's theorem**). The dual of the last theorem is called **Brianchon's theorem**.

Given two hypersurfaces Q_2^{n-1} , \bar{Q}_2^{n-1} in P^n , we consider another \bar{Q}_2^{n-1} such that the polar of an arbitrary point x with respect to \bar{Q}_2^{n-1} belongs to the pencil of hyperplanes determined by polars of x with respect to Q_2^{n-1} and \bar{Q}_2^{n-1} . The set of all such \bar{Q}_2^{n-1} is called a **pencil of quadric hypersurfaces**. It is the set of all \bar{Q}_2^{n-1} that pass through the intersection of Q_2^{n-1} and \bar{Q}_2^{n-1} . In the cases $n=2$ and 3 , we call it a **pencil of conics** and a **pencil of quadrics**, respectively.

Denoting by l^i and \bar{l}^j ($0 \leq i, j \leq 3$) the \dagger Plücker coordinates of two straight lines l and \bar{l} in P^3 , we put

$$(l, \bar{l}) = l^{01}\bar{l}^{23} - l^{02}\bar{l}^{13} + l^{03}\bar{l}^{12} + \bar{l}^{01}l^{23} - \bar{l}^{02}l^{13} + \bar{l}^{03}l^{12}. \quad (4)$$

Then $(l, l) = 0$ holds. If we regard these l^i as homogeneous coordinates of P^5 , then there exists a one-to-one correspondence between the points on the regular quadric hypersurface Q_2^4 defined by $(l, l) = 0$ and the lines in P^3 . We say that each point of Q_2^4 is the **image** of the line corresponding to it in P^3 . Two lines l and \bar{l} intersect if and only if $(l, \bar{l}) = 0$. Geometrically, this means that the images of l and \bar{l} are conjugate with respect to Q_2^4 . Therefore the line passing through the images of l and \bar{l} is a generating line of Q_2^4 . The image of a pencil of lines in P^3 is a generating line of Q_2^4 . Quadric hypersurfaces and sets of lines in P^3 are important objects of study in both projective and algebraic geometry. In particular, **linear line congruences (linear line complexes)** that are families of lines dependent upon two (three) parameters are of great interest. In these theories, quadric hypersurfaces play a fundamental role. When the coefficient field is noncommutative, the above theory has to be greatly modified.

F. Projective Geometry and the Erlangen Program

From the standpoint of the \dagger Erlangen program of F. Klein, the aim of projective geometry is to study properties that are invariant under the group of projective transformations.

Utilizing various subgroups of this group, we can reconstruct various classical geometries. For example, consider the projective space P^n whose coefficient field is the real number field, and fix a hyperplane Π_∞ . Let $\mathfrak{S}(P^n)$ be the subgroup of projective transformations formed by all projective transformations that leave Π_∞ invariant. Then the geometry that belongs to this group is \dagger affine geometry. Similarly, fix an imaginary regular quadric hypersurface Q_2^{n-2} in Π_∞ and consider the geometry that belongs to the subgroup of $\mathfrak{S}(P^n)$ leaving this Q_2^{n-2} invariant. We thus obtain Euclidean geometry. Moreover, if we assign some regular quadric hypersurface Q_2^{n-1} , then the geometry belonging to the subgroup of $\mathfrak{S}(P^n)$ that leaves the Q_2^{n-1} invariant is a \dagger non-Euclidean or \dagger conformal geometry according as the transformation space is the set of inner points of Q_2^{n-1} or the whole Q_2^{n-1} .

G. Projective Geometry and Modular Lattices

\dagger Lattices (lattice-ordered sets) and projective geometry are intimately related. The totality of subspaces of each dimension in general projective geometry \mathfrak{P} constitutes a \dagger complete \dagger modular lattice $L(\mathfrak{P})$ with respect to the inclusion relation. If \mathfrak{P} is a finite-dimensional projective geometry, then it is an \dagger irreducible complemented modular lattice of finite height. Conversely, suppose that L is a modular lattice with \dagger minimum element Φ , and denote by P the totality of elements p \dagger prime over Φ (i.e., \dagger atomic elements) and by Q the totality of elements l prime over atomic elements. Then, if $p < l$ and $(p, l) \in \Gamma$, $\mathfrak{P}(L) = \{P, Q, \Gamma\}$ is a general projective geometry. If L is an irreducible complemented modular lattice of finite height, then $\mathfrak{P}(L)$ is a finite-dimensional projective geometry; in this case we have $\mathfrak{P} \approx \mathfrak{P}(L(\mathfrak{P}))$ and $L \approx L(\mathfrak{P}(L))$. So we may consider projective geometry and irreducible complemented modular lattices as having the same mathematical structure. If a lattice L is an n -dimensional projective geometry, its \dagger dual lattice is also an n -dimensional projective geometry, and this is the principle of duality.

H. Analytic Representations of Projective Geometry

Let K be an arbitrary field, commutative or noncommutative. For an arbitrary natural number n , we consider an $(n+1)$ -dimensional (for the noncommutative case, right or left) linear space $V^{n+1}(K)$ over K . The totality of linear subspaces in it constitutes an irreducible complemented modular lattice $P^n(K)$ with

respect to the inclusion relation, and $P^n(K)$ gives rise to an n -dimensional projective geometry. We call it a **right** or **left projective space**. Points of $P^n(K)$ correspond to (right or left) 1-dimensional linear subspaces. Conversely, it can be shown that an n -dimensional projective geometry over K is isomorphic to $P^n(K)$. Therefore projective geometries can be completely classified by means of the natural number n and the field K except when $n=2$ and the geometry is non-Desarguesian. We may restate this fact as follows: We consider a space $\tilde{P} = V^{n+1}(K) - \{0\}$. If we fix a basis of $V^{n+1}(K)$, then we can represent $\tilde{P} = \{x = (x^0, x^1, \dots, x^n) \mid x^\alpha \in K, 0 \leq \alpha \leq n\}$, $x \neq (0, 0, \dots, 0)$. If there exists a nonzero element λ of K such that $y = x\lambda$, then the elements x and y are called equivalent; we write $x \sim y$. We denote by $P^n(K)$ the factor set of \tilde{P} under the foregoing equivalence relation, and by $[x]$ the equivalence class that contains x . We put $l([x], [y]) = \{[z] \mid z^\alpha = x^\alpha \lambda + y^\alpha \mu, \forall \lambda, \mu \in K\}$ and $Q = \{l([x], [y]) \mid [x], [y] \in P^n(K)\}$. We call each element of $P^n(K)$ a point and each element of Q a line. Then these points and lines and the natural inclusion relation satisfy axioms (I)–(IV) and give an n -dimensional projective geometry. When K is a \dagger topological field (e.g., the real number field, the complex number field, or the \dagger quaternion field), we may define the topology of $P^n(K)$ as the factor space $P^n(K) = \tilde{P}/\sim$. In particular, if K is the real number field \mathbf{R} , then $P^n(\mathbf{R})$ is homeomorphic to the factor space obtained from the n -dimensional hypersphere $S^n: (x^0)^2 + \dots + (x^n)^2 = 1$ in the $(n+1)$ -dimensional Euclidean space E^{n+1} by identifying the end points of each diameter. Hence $P^n(\mathbf{R})$ is compact. Similar facts hold for the cases of the complex and quaternion number fields. Since the group of projective transformations $\mathfrak{G}(P^n(K))$ acts \dagger transitively on $P^n(K)$, if K is a topological field we can regard $P^n(K)$ as a \dagger homogeneous space of the topological group $\mathfrak{G}(P^n(K))$. Moreover, the totality of r -dimensional subspaces in $P^n(K)$ constitutes a \dagger Grassmann manifold. In algebraic geometry the \dagger direct product of two projective spaces is important; we call it a **biprojective space**.

I. Tits's Theory of Buildings (Generalization of Projective Geometry)

In a situation when a triple (G, B, N) consisting of a group G and its subgroups B, N satisfies the axioms of a **BN -pair** or **Tits system** (\rightarrow 13 Algebraic Groups R), a new geometric object, called a "building," was introduced by J. Tits [9]. His theory contains projective geometry as a particular case. The theory of buildings has deep connection with algebraic groups.

The Tits system corresponds to a projective geometry in the following case. Let k be any commutative field, and let G be the general linear group of degree n over k , i.e., G consists of all nonsingular square matrices of degree n with entries in k . Let B be the subgroup of G consisting of all upper triangular matrices (i.e., matrices whose entries below the principal diagonal are all zero). Let N be the subgroup of G consisting of all monomial matrices (i.e., matrices such that each column and each row contain just one nonzero entry). Then (G, B, N) forms a Tits system called type (A_{n-1}) . The corresponding **theory of buildings** of the type above is nothing but the projective geometry. Thus by means of Tits's theory of buildings the relationships among projective geometry and other geometries have been clarified [9].

References

- [1] G. Birkhoff, *Lattice theory*, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., revised edition, 1967.
- [2] W. V. D. Hodge and D. Pedoe, *Methods of algebraic geometry I*, Cambridge, 1947.
- [3] O. Schreier and E. Sperner, *Einführung in die analytische Geometrie und Algebra*, Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, II, 1951; English translation, *Projective geometry of n -dimensions*, Chelsea, 1961.
- [4] O. Veblen and J. W. Young, *Projective geometry I, II*, Ginn, 1910–1938.
- [5] E. Artin, *Geometric algebra*, Interscience, 1957.
- [6] S. Iyanaga and K. Matsuzaka, *Affine geometry and projective geometry*, J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo, 14 (1967), 171–196.
- [7] A. Seidenberg, *Lectures in projective geometry*, Van Nostrand, 1962.
- [8] R. Hartshorne, *Foundations of projective geometry*, Benjamin, 1967.
- [9] J. Tits, *Buildings of spherical type and finite BN -pairs*, Lecture notes in math. 386, Springer, 1974.

344 (VII.22) Pseudoconformal Geometry

A. Definitions

Let A and A' be subsets (with relative topology) of \dagger complex manifolds X and X' of dimension n , respectively. A homeomorphism f of A onto A' is called a **pseudoconformal transformation** if there exists a \dagger biholomorphic mapping \tilde{f} of an open neighborhood of A in X onto an open neighborhood of A' in X' such

that $\tilde{f}(x) = f(x)$ for $x \in A$. If there exists such a mapping f , A is said to be **pseudoconformally equivalent** to A' . **Pseudoconformal geometry** is a geometry that studies geometric properties invariant under the pseudoconformal equivalence. However, most studies in pseudoconformal geometry so far have concentrated mainly on the investigation of smooth hypersurfaces in a complex manifold—more specifically, the smooth (or real analytic) boundaries of bounded domains in \mathbb{C}^n . In fact, to pseudoconformal geometry on hypersurfaces we can apply the methods of differential geometry as well as those of the theory of functions of several complex variables.

H. Poincaré [1] studied perturbations of the boundary of the unit ball in \mathbb{C}^2 that are pseudoconformally equivalent. F. Cartan [2] studied the equivalence problem of hypersurfaces in \mathbb{C}^2 and gave the complete list of all simply connected hypersurfaces on which the group of pseudoconformal automorphisms acts transitively. Such a hypersurface is called **homogeneous**.

Let M be a smooth hypersurface in a complex manifold X with the \dagger almost complex structure tensor J , i.e., $J_x: T_x X \rightarrow T_x X$ is an involutive linear automorphism of the tangent space $T_x X$ of X at x induced by the complex structure of X . Put $H_x M = T_x M \cap J_x T_x M$ for $x \in M$. The union of all $H_x M$ is called the bundle of holomorphic tangent vectors of M and is denoted by $H(M)$. $H(M)$ is also called the **CR** (Cauchy-Riemann) **structure** of M . Let M' be a smooth hypersurface in a complex manifold X' . A diffeomorphism $f: M \rightarrow M'$ is called a **CR-equivalence** if the \dagger differential mapping $Tf: TM \rightarrow TM'$ of f preserves the CR-structures, where TM denotes the \dagger tangent bundle of M . If $f: M \rightarrow M'$ is a pseudoconformal transformation, then f is clearly a CR-equivalence. Let E_x be the annihilator of $H_x M$ in $T_x^*(M)$. Then the union of E_x ($x \in M$) defines a \dagger line bundle E over M . The **Levi form** L_x at $x \in M$, defined only up to a multiplier, is the quadratic form on $H_x M$ defined by $L_x(u, v) = d\theta(u, v)$ for $u, v \in H_x M$, where θ is a nonvanishing section of E in a neighborhood of x . If the Levi form is nondegenerate at every point of M , M is called a **nondegenerate hypersurface**. In particular, if the Levi form is definite, then M is called **strictly pseudoconvex**.

B. Equivalence Problem

Cartan studied the equivalence problem for the case $n=2$, and obtained a criterion for two hypersurfaces in \mathbb{C}^2 to be pseudoconformally equivalent. N. Tanaka (1965) generalized the method of Cartan for the case $n \geq 3$ and ob-

tained a criterion in terms of \dagger Cartan connections in some fiber bundle over the hypersurfaces. However, he did not publish the proof of his result until S. S. Chern and J. Moser [4], independently of Tanaka [3], obtained a similar result and gave the first proof of this result. Let M be a real analytic hypersurface in \mathbb{C}^{n+1} ($n \geq 1$) whose Levi form has p positive and q negative eigenvalues ($p+q=n$). Let H be the subgroup of $SU(p+1, q+1)$ leaving the point $(1, 0, \dots, 0) \in \mathbb{C}^{n+2}$ fixed. According to the Cartan-Tanaka-Chern-Moser result, we can construct functorially a principal fiber bundle Y over M with structure group H and a Cartan connection ω on Y with values in the Lie algebra of $SU(p+1, q+1)$ such that if M and M' are pseudoconformally equivalent, then there is a bundle isomorphism φ of Y to Y' preserving the Cartan connections: $\varphi^* \omega' = \omega$, where Y' is the corresponding principal fiber bundle over M' and ω' is the Cartan connection on Y' . Conversely, if there is a bundle isomorphism φ of Y to Y' such that $\varphi^* \omega' = \omega$, then M and M' are pseudoconformally equivalent. By using this solution of the equivalence problem, we can prove that the group $A(M)$ of all pseudoconformal automorphisms of a nondegenerate real analytic hypersurface M in a complex manifold X of dimension n is a Lie transformation group of dimension not exceeding $n^2 + 2n$. H. Jacobowitz [5] constructed a similar bundle B over M and a Cartan connection on B in a different way from that of Chern and Moser. We do not know whether B and Y actually coincide.

C. Classification

Cartan (1932) classified all simply connected homogeneous hypersurfaces in \mathbb{C}^2 . In particular, he proved that if M is a compact homogeneous strictly pseudoconvex hypersurface with $\dim M = 3$, then M is pseudoconformally equivalent to either (1) S^3 or its quotient by the action of a root of unity or (2) the hypersurface given in the 2-dimensional projective space by the equation in homogeneous coordinates: $(z_1 \bar{z}_1 + z_2 \bar{z}_2 + z_3 \bar{z}_3)^2 = m^2 |z_1^2 + z_2^2 + z_3^2|^2$ ($m > 1$) or the double covering of such a surface. A. Morimoto and T. Nagano [6] and later H. Rossi [7] tried to generalize this result and obtained a partial classification of simply connected compact homogeneous hypersurfaces with dimension ≥ 5 . D. Burns and S. Shnider [8] classified all simply connected compact homogeneous strictly pseudoconvex hypersurfaces M with $\dim M = 2n+1 \geq 5$. They proved that M is pseudoconformally equivalent to S^{2n+1} or the tangent sphere bundle of a rank one \dagger symmetric space

or the unit circle bundle of a homogeneous negative line bundle over a homogeneous algebraic manifold.

On the other hand, a real hypersurface M in a complex manifold X of complex dimension $n+1$ is called **spherical** if at every point $p \in M$, there is a neighborhood of p in X such that $U \cap M$ is pseudoconformally equivalent to an open submanifold of S^{2n+1} . The hyperquadric $Q^{n+1} = \partial U_{n+1}$ is spherical, where $U_{n+1} = \{(z_1, \dots, z_{n+1}) \in \mathbb{C}^{n+1} \mid |z_1|^2 + \dots + |z_n|^2\}$. If M is spherical, then the universal covering space \tilde{M} of M is also spherical. If M is a homogeneous spherical hypersurface, then there is a covering into mapping $f: \tilde{M} \rightarrow S^{2n+1}$, and $f(\tilde{M})$ is a homogeneous domain in S^{2n+1} . We know that the only compact simply connected spherical M is S^{2n+1} . Burns and Shnider classified all homogeneous domains M in S^{2n+1} : M is pseudoconformally equivalent to (I) or (II) of the following: (Ia) $S^{2n+1} - V \cap S^{2n+1}$, where V is a complex vector subspace of \mathbb{C}^{n+1} with $0 \leq \dim_{\mathbb{C}} V \leq n$. (Ib) $Q^{n+1} - L_m$, $0, 0 \leq m \leq n$, where L_m is a certain subgroup of $SU(n+1, 1)/(\text{center})$. (II) $S^{2n+1} - S^{2n+1} \cap \mathbb{R}^{n+1}$. At present, it seems difficult to extend Cartan's classification of all simply connected homogeneous hypersurfaces to higher dimensions. K. Yamaguchi (1976) treated a hypersurface M in a complex manifold of dimension n with a large automorphism group $A(M)$. He showed that if $\dim A(M) = n^2 + 2n$, then M is a real hyperquadric in the n -dimensional complex projective space $P_n \mathbb{C}$ (\rightarrow Section B). He then showed that the second largest dimension for $A(M)$ is equal to $n^2 + 1$ except when $n=3$ and the index $r=1$, for which $\dim A(M)=11 (=n^2+1)$. Under the additional assumption that M is homogeneous, he showed that if $\dim A(M)=n^2+1$, then M is the affine part of a real hyperquadric in $P_n \mathbb{C}$ (except when $n=5$ and $r=2$). He also obtained a similar result in the nonhomogeneous case.

D. Relations to Other Equivalences

Let D_1 and D_2 be bounded domains in \mathbb{C}^n with smooth boundary $\partial D_i = M_i$ ($i=1, 2$) for which we denote by $H(M_i)$ the CR structures. We consider the following propositions (A)–(D) for these domains: (A) D_1 is biholomorphically equivalent to D_2 . (B) M_1 is CR equivalent to M_2 . (C) M_1 is pseudoconformally equivalent to M_2 . (D) There is a diffeomorphism $f: D_1 \rightarrow D_2$ such that $f|_{D_1}: D_1 \rightarrow D_2$ is biholomorphic.

It is clear that (C) implies (D) and that (D) implies (A). On the other hand, we can prove that (B) is equivalent to (D). When does (A) imply (B) and when does (B) imply (C)?

C. Fefferman [10] proved that (A) implies (D) when D_1 and D_2 are strictly pseudoconvex. S. Bell generalized the result of Fefferman in the case when one of D_1 and D_2 is strictly pseudoconvex. Bell and E. Ligocka [11] proved that if M_1 and M_2 are real analytic and if D_1 and D_2 are pseudoconvex, then (A) implies (D). When D_1 and D_2 are not strictly pseudoconvex and M_i is not real analytic, we do not know whether (A) implies (D) or not. As remarked by Burns, Shnider, and Wells (1978), by using the theorem of Fefferman, we can prove that (A) implies (C) when M_1 and M_2 are real analytic and if D_1 and D_2 are strictly pseudoconvex. I. Naruki [12] obtained the same result. We do not know whether (A) implies (C) when M_1 and M_2 are real analytic and D_1 and D_2 are pseudoconvex, though we know that (A) implies (B). We do not know whether (B) implies (C) in general.

S. I. Pinchuk [13] proved the following: Let D, D' be strictly pseudoconvex domains in \mathbb{C}^n with simply connected real analytic boundaries $\partial D, \partial D'$. Let $f: U \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^n$ be a nonconstant holomorphic mapping from a connected neighborhood U of a point $p \in \partial D$ in \mathbb{C}^n such that $f(U \cap \partial D) \subset \partial D'$. Then we can find a holomorphic mapping $\tilde{f}: D \rightarrow D'$ such that $\tilde{f}(x) = f(x)$ for $x \in D \cap U$. Combining this theorem with Fefferman's result we see that for two domains as above, D is biholomorphically equivalent to D' if and only if ∂D is locally pseudoconformally equivalent to $\partial D'$, i.e., there are neighborhoods U and V of a point $p \in \partial D$ and $q \in \partial D'$, respectively, such that $U \cap \partial D$ and $V \cap \partial D'$ are pseudoconformally equivalent.

Concerning the proper holomorphic mappings rather than diffeomorphisms, Burns and Shnider (1979) proved the following theorem: Let $M_i = \partial D_i$ ($i=1, 2$) be strictly pseudoconvex, and let $f: D_1 \rightarrow D_2$ be a proper holomorphic mapping. (a) If $D_1 = D_2$, then f extends smoothly up to the boundary D_1 . (b) If ∂D_i is real analytic for $i=1, 2$, then f extends holomorphically past the boundary.

E. Deformations of Domains

Let M be a compact connected strictly pseudoconvex real hypersurface in a complex manifold X of dimension $n+1$. Let φ be a smooth strictly plurisubharmonic function defined on a neighborhood V of M such that $M = \{x \in V \mid \varphi(x) = 0\}$ and $d\varphi \neq 0$ on M . Let $U = \{x \in V \mid -\varepsilon < \varphi(x) < \varepsilon\}$ for small $\varepsilon > 0$ such that \bar{U} is compact and ∂U is smooth. Let $\mathcal{P}(\bar{U})$ be the open set in $\mathbb{C}^\infty(\bar{U})$ of strictly plurisubharmonic functions ψ with $d\psi \wedge \bar{d}\psi \wedge (d\bar{d}\psi)^n \neq 0$ on \bar{U} . Let $B \subset \mathbb{R}^k$ be a small open ball around 0. We denote by $\mathcal{P}(\bar{U} \times B)$ the set of $\psi \in \mathbb{C}^\infty(\bar{U})$

$\times \bar{B}$) such that $\psi(x, t) = \psi_t(x) \in \mathcal{P}(\bar{U})$ for all $t \in \bar{B}$. For $\psi \in \mathcal{P}(\bar{U} \times \bar{B})$ we set $M_{t, \delta} = \{x \in U \mid \psi_t(x) = \delta\}$. After introducing these notations, Burns, Shnider, and Wells (1978) proved the following theorem. There exists an open dense set $\mathcal{V} \subset \mathcal{P}(\bar{U} \times \bar{B})$ with $\varphi \in \mathcal{V}$ and a set of "second category" $\mathcal{R} \subset \mathcal{V}$ such that for every $\psi \in \mathcal{R}$, $t_i \in \bar{B}$ and $\delta_i \in \mathbf{R}$ small enough, (i) M_{t_1, δ_1} is CR-equivalent to M_{t_2, δ_2} if and only if $t_1 = t_2$, $\delta_1 = \delta_2$. (ii) The group of CR-automorphisms of M_{t_1, δ_1} reduces to the identity only. For $\psi \in \mathcal{P}(\bar{U} \times \bar{B})$, taking $t \in B$, $\delta \in \mathbf{R}$ small enough, $M_{t, \delta}$ is a compact connected strictly pseudoconvex hypersurface in X . If M bounds the relatively compact region D in X then $M_{t, \delta}$ also bounds a relatively compact region $D_{t, \delta}$. In particular, there exist smooth families of deformations of the unit ball in \mathbf{C}^{n+1} of arbitrary high dimension. There are arbitrary small perturbations of the unit sphere in \mathbf{C}^{n+1} that admit no pseudoconformal transformations other than the identity.

F. Topics Related to Pseudoconformal Geometry

(1) Pinchuk (1975) proved the following: Let D_1, D_2 be strictly pseudoconvex domains in \mathbf{C}^n with C^ω boundary $\partial D_1, \partial D_2$. Let U be a neighborhood of a point $p \in \partial D_1$ in \mathbf{C}^n . If there is a C^1 -mapping $f: U \cap \bar{D}_1 \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^n$ such that f is holomorphic on $U \cap D_1$ and $f(U \cap \partial D_1) \subset \partial D_2$, then there is a holomorphic mapping $\tilde{f}: U' \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^n$ of a neighborhood U' of $U \cap \partial D_1$ into \mathbf{C}^n such that $\tilde{f}(x) = f(x)$ for $x \in U \cap \bar{D}_1 \cap U'$. This result is related to the implication (B) \Rightarrow (C) in Section D.

(2) H. Alexander [14] proved the following: Let U be a connected neighborhood of a point $p \in S^{2n-1}$ in \mathbf{C}^n and $f: U \rightarrow \mathbf{C}^n$ a holomorphic mapping such that $f(U \cap S^{2n-1}) \subset S^{2n-1}$. Then either f is a constant mapping or there is a biholomorphic automorphism $\tilde{f}: B_n \rightarrow B_n$ of the unit open ball B_n such that $\tilde{f}(x) = f(x)$ for $x \in U \cap B_n$. He also proved that every proper holomorphic mapping $f: B_n \rightarrow B_n$ is necessarily an automorphism of B_n if $n > 1$. G. M. Henkin (1973) proved that every proper holomorphic mapping $f: D_1 \rightarrow D_2$ of a strictly pseudoconvex domain D_1 into a strictly pseudoconvex D_2 can be extended continuously to a function $\tilde{f}: \bar{D}_1 \rightarrow \bar{D}_2$. More precisely, there is a constant $c > 0$ such that $|f(z_1) - f(z_2)| \leq c|z_1 - z_2|^{1/2}$ for every $z_1, z_2 \in D_1$.

(3) Let M be a real hypersurface in \mathbf{C}^{n+1} with $H(M)$ the bundle of holomorphic tangent vectors to M . We take a real nonvanishing 1-form θ that annihilates $H(M)$. S. M. Webster (1978) called the pair (M, θ) a **pseudo-Hermitian manifold**. He considered the equiv-

alence problem of pseudo-Hermitian manifolds by applying Cartan's method of equivalence. He proves, among other things, that the group of all pseudo-Hermitian transformations of the nondegenerate pseudo-Hermitian manifold (M, θ) of dimension $2n + 1$ is a Lie transformation group of dimension not exceeding $(n + 1)^2$. Webster considered the relation between pseudo-Hermitian manifolds and pseudoconformal geometry and proved that for $n \geq 2$ the ellipsoid E given by the equation $A_1 x_1^2 + B_1 y_1^2 + \dots + A_{n+1} x_{n+1}^2 + B_{n+1} y_{n+1}^2 = 1$, where $z_k = x_k + iy_k$ ($k = 1, \dots, n + 1$) is pseudoconformally equivalent to the hypersphere S^{2n+1} if and only if $A_k = B_k$ ($k = 1, \dots, n + 1$). This result gives, by virtue of Fefferman's theorem, a necessary and sufficient condition for an ellipsoidal domain to be biholomorphically equivalent to the unit ball.

References

- [1] H. Poincaré, Les fonctions analytiques de deux variables et la représentation conforme, *Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo*, 23 (1907), 185–220.
- [2] E. Cartan, Sur la géométrie pseudoconforme des hypersurfaces de l'espace de deux variables complexes I, II, *Ann. Mat. Pura Appl.*, 11 (1932), 17–90; *Ann. Scuola Norm. Sup. Pisa*, 1 (1932), 333–354.
- [3] N. Tanaka, On nondegenerate real hypersurfaces, graded Lie algebras and Cartan connections, *Japan. J. Math.*, 2 (1976), 131–190.
- [4] S. S. Chern and J. Moser, Real hypersurfaces in complex manifolds, *Acta Math.*, 133 (1974), 219–271.
- [5] H. Jacobowitz, Induced connections on hypersurfaces in \mathbf{C}^n , *Inventiones Math.*, 43 (1977), 109–123.
- [6] A. Morimoto and T. Nagano, On pseudoconformal transformations of hypersurfaces, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 14 (1963), 289–300.
- [7] H. Rossi, Homogeneous strongly pseudoconvex hypersurfaces, *Rice Univ. Studies*, 59 (1973), 131–145.
- [8] D. Burns and S. Shnider, Spherical hypersurfaces in complex manifolds, *Inventiones Math.*, 33 (1976), 223–246.
- [9] K. Yamaguchi, Non-degenerate hypersurfaces in complex manifolds admitting large groups of pseudoconformal transformations I, *Nagoya Math. J.*, 62 (1976), 55–96.
- [10] C. Fefferman, The Bergman kernel and biholomorphic mappings of pseudoconvex domains, *Inventiones Math.*, 26 (1974), 1–65.
- [11] S. Bell and E. Ligočka, A simplification and extension of Fefferman's theorem on biholomorphic mappings, *Inventiones Math.*, 57 (1980), 283–289.

[12] I. Naruki, On extendability of isomorphisms of Cartan connections and biholomorphic mappings of bounded domains, Tôhoku Math. J., 28 (1976), 117–122.

[13] S. I. Pinchuk, On holomorphic mappings of real analytic hypersurfaces, Math. USSR-Sb., 34 (1978), 503–519.

[14] H. Alexander, Proper holomorphic mappings in \mathbb{C}^n , Indiana Math. J., 26 (1977), 137–146.

[15] S. M. Webster, Pseudo-Hermitian structure on a real hypersurface, J. Differential Geometry, 13 (1978), 25–41.

345 (XIII.33) Pseudodifferential Operators

A. Pseudodifferential Operators

Pseudodifferential operators are a natural extension of linear partial differential operators. The theory of pseudodifferential operators grew out of the study of singular integral operators, and developed rapidly after 1965 with the systematic studies by J. J. Kohn and L. Nirenberg [1], L. Hörmander [2], and others. The term “pseudodifferential operator” first appeared in Kohn and Nirenberg [1].

Let P be a \dagger linear partial differential operator of the form

$$P = p(x, D_x) = \sum_{|\alpha| \leq m} a_\alpha(x) D_x^\alpha, \quad (1)$$

and let $u(x)$ be a function of class $C_0^\infty(\Omega)$ ($\subset C_0^\infty(\mathbb{R}^n)$). Then by means of the \dagger Fourier inversion formula, $Pu(x)$ can be written in the form

$$Pu(x) = (2\pi)^{-n/2} \int_{\mathbb{R}^n} \exp(ix \cdot \xi) p(x, \xi) \hat{u}(\xi) d\xi, \quad (2)$$

where $\hat{u}(\xi)$ denotes the \dagger Fourier transform of $u(x)$ (\rightarrow 160 Fourier Transform H). But this representation of $Pu(x)$ has a meaning even if $p(x, \xi)$ is not a polynomial in ξ . Thus, for a general function $p(x, \xi)$, the **pseudodifferential operator** $P = p(x, D_x)$ with the **symbol** $p(x, \xi)$ is defined by (2). A symbol class is determined in accordance with various purposes, but it is always required that the corresponding operators have essential properties in common with partial differential operators. Hörmander [3] defined a symbol class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m(\Omega)$ for real numbers m, ρ , and δ with $\rho \geq 0$ and $\delta \geq 0$ in the following way: Let $p(x, \xi)$ be a C^∞ -function defined in $\Omega \times \mathbb{R}^n$. If for any pair of multi-indices α, β and any compact set $K \subset \mathbb{R}^n$, there

exists a constant $C_{\alpha, \beta, K}$ such that

$$|D_x^\alpha D_\xi^\beta p(x, \xi)| \leq C_{\alpha, \beta, K} (1 + |\xi|)^{m + \delta|\alpha| - \rho|\beta|},$$

$$x \in K, \quad \xi \in \mathbb{R}^n,$$

then $p(x, \xi)$ is said to be of class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m(\Omega)$. The operator P defined by (2) is called a pseudo-differential operator (of order m) of class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m(\Omega)$ and is often denoted by $P = p(x, D_x) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m(\Omega)$. When $\Omega = \mathbb{R}^n$ and constants $C_{\alpha, \beta, K} = C_{\alpha, \beta}$ are independent of K , we denote $S_{\rho, \delta}^m(\mathbb{R}^n)$ simply by $S_{\rho, \delta}^m$, and set

$$S^{-\infty} = \bigcap_{-\infty < m < \infty} S_{1,0}^m \left(= \bigcap_{-\infty < m < \infty} S_{\rho, \delta}^m \right),$$

$$S_{\rho, \delta}^m = \bigcup_{-\infty < m < \infty} S_{\rho, \delta}^m.$$

Differential operators (1) with coefficients of class \mathcal{B} (\rightarrow 168 Function Spaces B(13)) belong to $S_{1,0}^m$. The complex power $(1 - \Delta)^{s/2}$ of $1 - \Delta = 1 - \sum_{j=1}^n \partial^2 / \partial x_j^2$ is defined as a pseudo-differential operator of class $S_{1,0}^{\text{Re } s}$ by the symbol $(1 + |\xi|^2)^{s/2}$. Operators of class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ are continuous mappings of \mathcal{S} into \mathcal{S} . Therefore, for any real s , the operator $(1 - \Delta)^{s/2}$ can be uniquely extended to be a mapping of \mathcal{S}' into \mathcal{S}' by the relation

$$\langle (1 - \Delta)^{s/2} u, v \rangle = \langle u, (1 - \Delta)^{s/2} v \rangle,$$

$$u \in \mathcal{S}', \quad v \in \mathcal{S}.$$

For any $1 \leq r \leq \infty$ and real s , the \dagger Sobolev space $H^{s, r}$ is defined by

$$H^{s, r} = \{u \in \mathcal{S}' \mid (1 - \Delta)^{s/2} u \in L_r(\mathbb{R}^n)\},$$

which is a Banach space provided with the norm $\|u\|_{s, r} = \|(1 - \Delta)^{s/2} u\|_{L_r}$. In particular, $H^s = H^{s, 2}$ is a Hilbert space with the norm $\|u\|_s = \|u\|_{s, 2}$. Set

$$H^{-\infty, r} = \bigcup_{-\infty < s < \infty} H^{s, r}, \quad H^{-\infty} = H^{-\infty, 2},$$

$$H^{\infty, r} = \bigcap_{-\infty < s < \infty} H^{s, r}, \quad H^\infty = H^{\infty, 2}.$$

Then

$$\mathcal{S}' \supset H^{-\infty} \supset \mathcal{E}', \quad H^{-\infty} \supset L_2(\mathbb{R}^n) \supset H^\infty (\subset \mathcal{B}).$$

Choosing the Hörmander class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ in the case $0 \leq \delta \leq \rho \leq 1$ and $\delta < 1$ as a model class, we here list the main results of the theory of pseudodifferential operators:

(i) Pseudolocal property. The operator P of class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ in general does not have the **local property** $u \in \mathcal{S}' \Rightarrow \text{supp } Pu \subset \text{supp } u$, but if $\rho > 0$, then P has the **pseudolocal property** $u \in \mathcal{S}' \Rightarrow \text{sing supp } Pu \subset \text{sing supp } u$ [3].

(ii) Algebra of pseudodifferential operators. Let $P = p(x, D_x) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ and $P_j = p_j(x, D_x) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^{m_j}$, $j = 1, 2$. Then there exist $P^* = p^*(x, D_x) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ and $Q = q(x, D_x) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^{m_1 + m_2}$ such that $(Pu, v) = (u, P^*v)$ for $u, v \in \mathcal{S}$, i.e., P^* is the formal ad-

joint of P , and $Q = P_1 P_2$. Furthermore, if we set $p_x^*(x, \xi) = D_x^2(iD_\xi)^2 p(x, \xi)$ and $q_x(x, \xi) = (iD_\xi)^2 p_1(x, \xi) D_x^2 p_2(x, \xi)$, then for any integer N we have

$$p^*(x, \xi) - \sum_{|\alpha| \leq N} \frac{1}{\alpha!} p_\alpha^*(x, \xi) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^{m - (\rho - \delta)N} \quad (3)$$

and

$$q(x, \xi) - \sum_{|\alpha| \leq N} \frac{1}{\alpha!} q_\alpha(x, \xi) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^{m_1 + m_2 - (\rho - \delta)N}. \quad (4)$$

Hence the operator class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ is an algebra in the sense

$$P \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m, \quad P_j \in S_{\rho, \delta}^{m_j}, \quad j = 1, 2, \\ \Rightarrow P^* \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m, \quad P_1 + P_2 \in S_{\rho, \delta}^{m_0}, \quad P_1 P_2 \in S_{\rho, \delta}^{m_1 + m_2},$$

where $m_0 = \max(m_1, m_2)$. In particular, if $0 \leq \delta < \rho \leq 1$, we have $m - (\rho - \delta)N \rightarrow -\infty$ and $m_1 + m_2 - (\rho - \delta)N \rightarrow -\infty$ as $N \rightarrow \infty$. Then, we say that $p^*(x, \xi)$ and $q(x, \xi)$ have **asymptotic expansions** in the sense of (3) and (4), respectively:

$$p^*(x, \xi) \sim \sum_{\alpha} \frac{1}{\alpha!} p_\alpha^*(x, \xi)$$

and

$$q(x, \xi) \sim \sum_{\alpha} \frac{1}{\alpha!} q_\alpha(x, \xi)$$

[3, 4].

(iii) H^s -boundedness. For $P \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ and any real s there exists a constant C_s such that

$$\|Pu\|_s \leq C_s \|u\|_{s+m}, \quad u \in H^{s+m} \quad (5)$$

[4].

(iv) A sharp form of Gårding's inequality. Let $p(x, \xi) = (p_{jk}(x, \xi); j, k = 1, \dots, l)$ be a Hermitian symmetric and nonnegative matrix of $p_{j,k}(x, \xi) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$. Then for $P = p(x, D_x)$ there exists a constant C such that

$$\operatorname{Re}(Pu, u) \geq -C \|u\|_{(m - (\rho - \delta)/2)}^2, \quad (6)$$

where $u = (u_1, \dots, u_l)$ with $u_j \in H^{m/2}$, $j = 1, \dots, l$, and $\|u\|_{m/2}^2 = \sum_{j=1}^l \|u_j\|_{m/2}^2$.

(v) Invariance under coordinate transformations. Assume that $0 \leq 1 - \rho \leq \delta \leq \rho \leq 1$. Let $x(y) = (x_1(y), \dots, x_n(y))$ be a C^∞ -coordinate transformation from \mathbf{R}_y^n onto \mathbf{R}_x^n such that $\partial x_k(y)/\partial y_j \in \mathcal{B}$, $j, k = 1, \dots, n$, and $C^{-1} \leq |\det(\partial_y x(y))| \leq C$ for a constant $C > 0$, where $\det(\partial_y x(y))$ denotes the determinant of the Jacobian matrix $(\partial_y x(y)) = (\partial x_k(y)/\partial y_j)$. Then for any $P = p(x, D_x) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ in \mathbf{R}_x^n , there exists an operator $Q = q(x, D_x) \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ in \mathbf{R}_y^n such that $(Qw)(y) = (Pu)(x(y))$ for $w(y) = u(x(y)) \in \mathcal{S}$. This fact enables us to define pseudodifferential operators on C^∞ -manifolds [3, 4].

(vi) Parametrix. For a given $P \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$, an operator $E \in S_{\rho, \delta}^\infty$ is called a **left** (resp. **right**) **parametrix** of P if $EP - I$ (resp. $PE - I$) is of class $S^{-\infty}$. If E is a left and right parametrix of

P , we call it a **parametrix** of P . For a differential operator P , the existence of a left (resp. right) parametrix is a sufficient condition for P to be hypoelliptic if $\rho > 0$, (resp. the equation $Pu = f \in \mathcal{D}'$ is locally solvable).

The estimate (5), in particular, when $m = s = 0$, has been obtained by Hörmander [3], V. V. Grushin (*Functional Anal. Appl.*, 4 (1970)), H. Kumano-go (*J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo*, 17 (1970)) when $0 \leq \delta < \rho \leq 1$, and A. P. Calderón and R. Vaillancourt [5], H. O. Cordes (*J. Functional Anal.* 18 (1975)), T. Kato (*Osaka J. Math.*, 13 (1976)), Kumano-go [4], and others when $0 \leq \delta \leq \rho \leq 1$ and $\delta < 1$. A sharp form of Gårding's inequality has been proved by Hörmander [6], P. D. Lax and L. Nirenberg [7], and sharpened by A. Melin (*Ark. Mat.*, 9 (1971)), C. Fefferman and D. H. Phong (*Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US*, 76 (1979)), and Hörmander [8]. A general sufficient condition for the existence of a parametrix for an operator of class $S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ was obtained by Hörmander [3]. Let $P = p(x, D_x)$ belong to $S_{\rho, \delta}^m$ with $0 \leq \delta < \rho \leq 1$. Assume that the symbol $p(x, \xi)$ satisfies the following conditions: (i) for some $C_0 > 0$, real $m' (\leq m)$, and $R > 0$, we have $|p(x, \xi)| \geq C_0 |\xi|^{m'} (|\xi| \geq R)$; (ii) for any α, β there exists a constant $C_{0, \alpha, \beta}$ such that

$$|D_x^\beta D_\xi^\alpha p(x, \xi)/p(x, \xi)| \leq C_{0, \alpha, \beta} |\xi|^{|\delta|\beta| - \rho|\alpha|}, \quad |\xi| \geq R.$$

Then there exists a parametrix $Q = q(x, D_x)$ of P in the class $S_{1, 0}^{m'}$.

By means of operators of class $S_{1, 0}^m(\Omega)$ we can define the wave front set of $u \in \mathcal{D}'(\Omega)$, which enables us to resolve $\operatorname{singsupp} u$ on $T^*(\Omega) \setminus 0$, the cotangent bundle of Ω minus its zero section. An operator $P = p(x, D_x) \in S_{1, 0}^m(\Omega)$ is said to be **microlocally elliptic** at $(x^0, \xi^0) \in T^*(\Omega) \setminus 0$ if $\lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} |p(x^0, t\xi^0)|/|t\xi^0|^m > 0$. For a distribution $u \in \mathcal{D}'(\Omega)$, we say that a point (x^0, ξ^0) of $T^*(\Omega) \setminus 0$ does not belong to the **wave front set** (or the **singular spectrum**) of u , denoted by $\operatorname{WF}(u)$, if there exist $a(x), b(x) \in C_0^\infty(\Omega)$, $a(x^0) \neq 0$, $b(x^0) \neq 0$, and $P \in S_{1, 0}^m(\Omega)$, which is microlocally elliptic at (x^0, ξ^0) , such that $aPbu \in C_0^\infty(\Omega)$. Then we easily see that $\operatorname{WF}(u)$ is a closed conic subset of $T^*(\Omega) \setminus 0$. An important fact is that the relation $\operatorname{singsupp} u = \operatorname{Proj}_x \operatorname{WF}(u)$ (the projection of $\operatorname{WF}(u)$ on Ω) holds, from which we can perform a so-called **microlocal analysis**, the analysis on $T^*(\Omega) \setminus 0$, of $\operatorname{singsupp} u$. As the sharp form of the pseudolocal property of an operator $P \in S_{\rho, \delta}^m$, if $0 \leq \delta < \rho \leq 1$, P has the **micro-pseudolocal property**: $u \in \mathcal{S}' \Rightarrow \operatorname{WF}(Pu) \subset \operatorname{WF}(u)$.

Pseudodifferential operators of multiple symbol have been defined by K. O. Friedrichs (*Courant Inst.*, 1968) and Kumano-go [4]. More refined and useful classes of pseudo-

differential operators have been defined by R. Beals (*Duke Math. J.*, 42 (1975)) Hörmander [8], and others.

The theory of pseudodifferential operators has found many fields of application, such as M. F. Atiyah and R. Bott (*Ann. Math.*, 86 (1967)) on the Lefschetz fixed-point formula; Friedrichs and P. D. Lax (*Comm. Pure Appl.*, 18 (1965)) on symmetrizable systems; Hörmander [6], Yu. V. Egorov (*Russian Math. Surveys*, 30 (1975)) on subelliptic operators; Kumano-go (*Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 22 (1969)), F. Trèves (*Amer. J. Math.*, 94 (1972)), S. J. Alinhac and M. S. Bouendi (*Amer. J. Math.*, 102 (1980)) on uniqueness of the Cauchy problem; S. Mizohata and Y. Ohya (*Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 4 (1968)), Hörmander (*J. Analyse Math.*, 32 (1977)) on weakly hyperbolic equations; C. Morawetz, J. V. Ralston, and W. A. Strauss (*Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 30 (1977)), M. Ikawa (*Pub. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 14 (1978)) on the exponential decay of solutions; and Nirenberg and Trèves [16], Beals and Fefferman [17] on local solvability theory.

For recent developments in the theory of pseudodifferential operators and its applications → Kumano-go [4], M. Taylor (Princeton Univ. Press, 1981), Trèves (Plenum, 1981), and others.

B. Fourier Integral Operators

A **Fourier integral operator** $A: C_0^\infty(\mathbf{R}^n) \rightarrow \mathcal{D}'(\mathbf{R}^n)$ is a locally finite sum of linear operators of the type

$$Af(x) = (2\pi)^{-(n+N)/2} \int_{\mathbf{R}^{n+N}} \exp(i\varphi(x, \theta, y)) \times a(x, \theta, y) f(y) dy d\theta. \quad (7)$$

Here $a(x, \theta, y)$ is a C^∞ -function satisfying the inequality

$$|D_x^\alpha D_\theta^\beta D_y^\gamma a(x, \theta, y)| \leq C(1 + |\theta|)^{m-\rho|\beta|+(1-\rho)(|\alpha|+|\gamma|)}$$

for some fixed m and ρ , $1/2 \leq \rho \leq 1$, and any triple of multi-indices α, β, γ , and for $\varphi(x, \theta, y)$ a real-valued function of class C^∞ for $\theta \neq 0$ and homogeneous of degree 1 in θ there. The function φ is called the **phase function** and a the **amplitude function**.

Let $C_\varphi = \{(x, \theta, y) | d_\theta \varphi(x, \theta, y) = 0, \theta \neq 0\}$ and $W = \{(x, y) \in \mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{R}^n | \exists \theta \neq 0 \text{ such that } (x, \theta, y) \in C_\varphi\}$. If $d_{x, \theta, y} \varphi(x, \theta, y) \neq 0$ for $\theta \neq 0$, then the kernel distribution $k(x, y)$ of A is of class C^∞ outside W . There have been detailed studies of the case where the $d_{x, \theta, y}(\partial \varphi(x, \theta, y)/\partial \theta_j)$, $j = 1, 2, \dots, N$, are linearly independent at every point of C_φ . In this case, C_φ is a smooth manifold in $\mathbf{R}^n \times (\mathbf{R}^N \setminus 0) \times \mathbf{R}^n$, and the mapping $\Phi: C_\varphi \ni (x, \theta, y) \rightarrow (x, y, \xi, \eta)$, $\xi = d_x \varphi(x, \theta, y)$, $\eta =$

$d_y \varphi(x, \theta, y)$, is an immersion of C_φ to $T^*(\mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{R}^n) \setminus 0$, the cotangent bundle of $\mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{R}^n$ minus its zero section. The image $\Phi C_\varphi = \Lambda_\varphi$ is a **conic Lagrange manifold**, i.e., the canonical 2-form $\sigma = \sum_j d\xi_j \wedge dx_j - \sum_j d\eta_j \wedge dy_j$ vanishes on Λ_φ and the multiplicative group of positive numbers acts on Λ_φ . Let $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_{2n}$ be a system of local coordinates in Λ_φ . These, together with $\partial \varphi / \partial \theta_1, \dots, \partial \varphi / \partial \theta_N$, constitute a system of local coordinate functions of $\mathbf{R}^n \times (\mathbf{R}^N \setminus 0) \times \mathbf{R}^n$ in a conic neighborhood of C_φ . Let J denote the Jacobian determinant

$$\frac{D\left(\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_{2n}, \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial \theta_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial \theta_N}\right)}{D(x, \theta, y)}.$$

The function $a_{\Lambda_\varphi} = \sqrt{J} a|_{C_\varphi} \Phi^{-1}$ is called the **local symbol** of A . Here $a|_{C_\varphi}$ is the restriction of a to C_φ . The conic Lagrange manifold $\Lambda_\varphi = \Lambda_\varphi(A)$ and the symbol $a_{\Lambda_\varphi} = a_{\Lambda_\varphi}(A)$ essentially determine the singularity of the kernel distribution $k(x, y)$ of the Fourier integral operator A . Conversely, given a conic Lagrange manifold Λ in $T^*(\mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{R}^n) \setminus 0$ and a function a_Λ on it, one can construct a Fourier integral operator A such that $\Lambda_\varphi(A) = \Lambda$ and $a_{\Lambda_\varphi}(A) = a_\Lambda$. Those Fourier integral operators whose associated conic Lagrange manifolds are the graphs of homogeneous canonical transformations of $T^*(\mathbf{R}^n) \setminus 0$ are most frequently used in the theory of linear partial differential equations. Let A be a Fourier integral operator such that $\Lambda_\varphi(A)$ is the graph of a homogeneous canonical transformation χ . Then the adjoint of A is a Fourier integral operator such that the associated conic Lagrange manifold is the graph of the inverse transformation χ^{-1} . Let A_1 be another such operator; if the associated conic Lagrange manifold is the graph of χ_1 , then the composed operator $A_1 A$ is also a Fourier integral operator and the associated conic Lagrange manifold is the graph of the composed homogeneous canonical transformation $\chi_1 \chi$.

A pseudodifferential operator of class $S_{\rho, 1-\rho}^m(\mathbf{R}^n)$ is a particular type of Fourier integral operator. In fact, a Fourier integral operator A is a pseudodifferential operator of class $S_{\rho, 1-\rho}^m(\mathbf{R}^n)$ if and only if $\Lambda_\varphi(A)$ is the graph of the identity mapping of $T^*(\mathbf{R}^n) \setminus 0$. Hence for any Fourier integral operator A , $A^* A$ and AA^* are pseudodifferential operators.

The following theorem is due to Egorov [11]: Let P and Q be pseudodifferential operators of class $S_{\rho, 1-\rho}^m(\mathbf{R}^n)$ with the symbols $p(x, \xi)$ and $q(x, \xi)$, respectively, and let A be a Fourier integral operator such that the associated conic Lagrange manifold $\Lambda_\varphi(A)$ is the graph of a homogeneous canonical transformation χ of $T^*(\mathbf{R}^n) \setminus 0$. If the equality $PA = AQ$

holds, then $q(x, \xi) - p(\chi(x, \xi))$ belongs to the class $S_{\rho, 1-\rho}^{m+1-2\rho}(\mathbf{R}^n)$.

Assume that $m = 1$, $\rho = 1$, and that $p_1(x, \xi)$ is a real-valued C^∞ -function, homogeneous of degree 1 in ξ for $|\xi| > 1$, such that $p(x, \xi) - p_1(x, \xi) \in S_{1,0}^0(\mathbf{R}^n)$ and $d_\xi p_1(x^0, \xi^0) \neq 0$ at (x^0, ξ^0) , $|\xi^0| > 1$, where $p_1(x^0, \xi^0) = 0$. Then one can find a Fourier integral operator A such that the function $q(x, \xi)$ of Egorov's theorem satisfies the relation $q(x, \xi) - \xi_1 \in S_{1,0}^0(\mathbf{R}^n)$.

The theory of Fourier integral operators has its origin in the asymptotic representation of solutions of the wave equation (\rightarrow 325 Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type L; also, e.g., [12, 13, 14]). G. I. Eskin (*Math. USSR-Sb.*, 3 (1976)) used a type of Fourier integral operator in deriving the energy estimates and constructing the fundamental solutions for strict hyperbolic operators. Hörmander (*Acta Math.*, 121 (1968)) introduced the term "Fourier integral operators," and applied these operators to the derivation of highly accurate asymptotic formulas for spectral functions of elliptic operators. Egorov (*Math. USSR-Sb.*, 11 (1970)) applied his theorem and the corollary stated above to the study of hypoellipticity and local solvability for pseudodifferential operators of principal type. Using Egorov's theorem and the same corollary, Nirenberg and Treves [16] obtained decisive results concerning local solvability for linear partial differential operators of principal type; these results were completed by Beals and Fefferman [17]. Hörmander and J. J. Duistermaat [9, 15] constructed a general global theory of Fourier integral operators making use of Maslov's theory [14], which was originally published in 1965. By virtue of this research, the Fourier integral operator has come to be recognized as a powerful tool in the theory of linear partial differential operators. An interesting application of the global theory of Fourier integral operators appeared in J. Chazarain (*Inventiones Math.*, 24 (1974)). The boundedness of Fourier integral operators in the spaces $L^2(\mathbf{R}^n)$ (or the space H^s) has been studied in several cases. Some sufficient conditions for boundedness have been obtained by Eskin (*Math. USSR-Sb.*, 3 (1967)), Hörmander [9], D. Fujiwara [18], Kumano-go (*Comm. Partial Diff. Eq.*, 1 (1976)), K. Asada and Fujiwara (*Japan. J. Math.*, 4 (1978)), and others. A calculus of Fourier integral operators in \mathbf{R}^n was given in Kumano-go [4].

The propagation of wave front sets by means of a Fourier integral operator is described as follows. Let us consider a phase function of the form $\varphi(x, \xi, y) = S(x, \xi) - y \cdot \xi$ in $\mathbf{R}_x^n \times \mathbf{R}_\xi^n \times \mathbf{R}_y^n$, and let $a(x, \xi)$ be an amplitude

function independent of y of class $S_{1,0}^m$. Then by (7) the Fourier integral operator $A = A_S$ is defined by

$$A_S u(x) = (2\pi)^{-n/2} \int_{\mathbf{R}^n} \exp(iS(x, \xi)) a(x, \xi) \hat{u}(\xi) d\xi. \quad (8)$$

Let T be the canonical transformation with the \dagger generating function $S(x, \xi)$, i.e., T is defined by $y = \nabla_\xi S(x, \eta)$, $\xi = \nabla_x S(x, \eta)$. Then for the Fourier integral operator A_S we have

$$\text{WF}(A_S u) \subset \{(x, \xi) = T(y, \eta) \mid (y, \eta) \in \text{WF}(u)\}, \quad u \in \mathcal{S}'. \quad (9)$$

Next consider a hyperbolic operator $L = D_t + p(t, x, D_x)$ for a real-valued symbol $p(t, x, \xi) \in \mathcal{B}^0([0, T_0]; S_{1,0}^1)$ with some $T_0 > 0$. For a small $0 < T \leq T_0$ the solution $S(t, x, \xi)$ of the eikonal equation $\partial_t S + p(t, x, \nabla_x S) = 0$ on $[0, T]$ with the initial condition $S|_{t=0} = x \cdot \xi$ exists in $\mathcal{B}^1([0, T]; S_{1,0}^1)$. Consider the Cauchy problem $Lu = 0$ on $[0, T]$, $u|_{t=0} = u_0$. Then there exists an amplitude function $e(t, x, \xi) \in \mathcal{B}^1([0, T]; S_{1,0}^1)$ such that the solution $u(t)$ is found in the form $u(t) = E_S(t)u_0$. On the other hand, let $(x, \xi) = (X(t, y, \eta), \Xi(t, y, \eta))$ be the bicharacteristic strip defined by \dagger Hamilton's canonical equation $dx/dt = \nabla_\xi p(t, x, \xi)$, $d\xi/dt = -\nabla_x p(t, x, \xi)$ with $(x, \xi)|_{t=0} = (y, \eta)$. Then $(X(t, y, \eta), \Xi(t, y, \eta))$ can be solved by means of the relations $y = \nabla_\xi S(t, X, \eta)$, $\Xi = \nabla_x S(t, X, \eta)$, as a family of canonical transformations with a parameter $t \in [0, T]$. Thus by means of (9) we have

$$\text{WF}(u(t)) \subset \{(x, \xi) = (X(t, y, \eta), \Xi(t, y, \eta)) \mid (y, \eta) \in \text{WF}(u_0)\}, \quad (10)$$

which is the fundamental result in the study of the propagation of wave front sets as solutions of general hyperbolic equations (\rightarrow 325 Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type M).

The works of Egorov, Nirenberg and Treves, and Hörmander motivated the theory of hyperfunctions developed by M. Sato and gave rise to the concept of \dagger quantized contact transformations, which correspond to Fourier integral operators in the theory of distributions. The above-stated transformation theorem of Egorov has been studied in detail with reference to systems of pseudodifferential equations with analytic coefficients [19] (\rightarrow 274 Microlocal Analysis).

References

- [1] J. J. Kohn and L. Nirenberg, An algebra of pseudo-differential operators, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 18 (1965), 269–305.

- [2] L. Hörmander, Pseudo-differential operators, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 18 (1965), 501–517.
- [3] L. Hörmander, Pseudo-differential operators and hypoelliptic equations, *Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math.*, 10 (1967), 138–183.
- [4] H. Kumano-go, Pseudo-differential operators, MIT Press, 1981. (Original in Japanese, 1974.)
- [5] A. P. Calderón and R. Vaillancourt, A class of bounded pseudo-differential operators, *Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US*, 69 (1972), 1185–1187.
- [6] L. Hörmander, Pseudo-differential operators and non-elliptic boundary problems, *Ann. Math.*, 83 (1966), 129–209.
- [7] P. D. Lax and L. Nirenberg, On stability for difference schemes, a sharp form of Gårding's inequality, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 19 (1966), 473–492.
- [8] L. Hörmander, The Weyl calculus of pseudo-differential operators, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 32 (1979), 359–443.
- [9] L. Hörmander, Fourier integral operators I, *Acta Math.*, 128 (1971), 79–183.
- [10] J. J. Duistermaat, Fourier integral operators, Lecture notes, Courant Institute, 1973.
- [11] Yu. V. Egorov, On canonical transformations of pseudo-differential operators (in Russian), *Uspekhi Mat. Nauk*, 25 (1969), 235–236.
- [12] P. D. Lax, Asymptotic solutions of oscillatory initial value problems, *Duke Math. J.*, 24 (1957), 627–646.
- [13] D. Ludwig, Exact and asymptotic solutions of the Cauchy problem, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 13 (1960), 473–508.
- [14] V. P. Maslov, *Théorie des perturbations et méthodes asymptotiques*, Gauthier-Villars, 1972.
- [15] J. J. Duistermaat and L. Hörmander, Fourier integral operators II, *Acta Math.*, 128 (1972), 183–269.
- [16] L. Nirenberg and F. Trèves, On local solvability of linear partial differential equations I, II, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 23 (1970), 1–38, 459–510.
- [17] R. Beals and C. Fefferman, On local solvability of linear partial differential equations, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 97 (1973), 482–498.
- [18] D. Fujiwara, On the boundedness of integral transformations with highly oscillatory kernels, *Proc. Japan Acad.*, 51 (1975), 96–99.
- [19] H. Komatsu (ed.), *Hyperfunctions and pseudo-differential equations*, Lecture notes in math. 287, Springer, 1973.

346 (XVIII.17) Psychometrics

A. General Remarks

Psychometrics is a collection of methods for drawing statistical conclusions from various psychological phenomena which are expressed numerically or quantitatively. It consists chiefly of statistical methods to deal with psychological measurements and of theories dealing with mathematical models concerning learning processes, social attitudes, and mental abilities.

B. Sensory Tests

A measurement wherein human senses are taken as the gauge is called a **sensory test**. The panel of judges must be composed appropriately, and the examining circumstances must be controlled. Various methods of psychological measurements are applied. In the following sections we describe the basic statistical procedures used in sensory testing.

C. Paired Comparison

When there are t objects (treatments or stimuli in some cases) O_1, O_2, \dots, O_t , the method of comparing them two at a time in every possible way is called **paired comparison**. The following are typical mathematical models of this method.

(1) **Thurstone-Mosteller Model.** Suppose that the probability that O_i is preferred to O_j for a pair (O_i, O_j) is p_{ij} . Of the n judges who compare this pair, the number who prefer O_i is n_{ij} , and the number who prefer O_j is $n_{ji} = n - n_{ij}$. In this comparison it is assumed that the strengths of the stimuli O_i, O_j to the senses are random variables X_i, X_j , and O_i is preferred when $X_i > X_j$. Furthermore, it is assumed that the joint probability distribution of X_i and X_j is the 2-dimensional normal distribution with μ_i and σ^2 as mean and variance of X_i , and ρ as correlation coefficient of X_i and X_j . There is no loss of generality in assuming that $2\sigma^2(1 - \rho) = 1$ and $\sum_{i=1}^t \mu_i = 0$. Let $\Phi(x)$ be the standardized normal distribution function and $p_{ij} = \Phi(\mu_i - \mu_j)$. Using $p'_{ij} = n_{ij}/n$ as estimates of the true p_{ij} , we can obtain the estimates $\hat{\mu}_i$. Using $p''_{ij} = \Phi(\hat{\mu}_i - \hat{\mu}_j)$ and p'_{ij} we can test the hypothesis that $\mu_1 = \mu_2 = \dots = \mu_t$.

(2) **The Bradley-Terry Model.** The experimental method in the Bradley-Terry model

is the same as in the Thurstone-Mosteller model. It is postulated that, associated with O_1, O_2, \dots, O_i , there exist parameters π_i for O_i ($\pi_i \geq 0, \sum_{i=1}^t \pi_i = 1$) such that $p_{ij} = \pi_i / (\pi_i + \pi_j)$. Obtaining the *maximum likelihood estimator of π_i , we can test the appropriateness of the models.

(3) Scheffé's Model. Each pair O_i, O_j is presented to $2n$ judges; n of them examine O_i first and O_j next, and the remaining n examine the pair in the opposite order. A judgment is recorded on a 7-point (or 9-, 5-, or 3-point) scale. In the 7-point scaling system a judge presented with the ordered pair (O_i, O_j) marks one of the seven points 3, 2, 1, 0, -1, -2, -3, meaning, respectively, that O_i is strongly preferable to O_j , O_i is moderately preferable to O_j , O_i is slightly preferable to O_j , no preference, O_j is slightly preferable to O_i , etc. The mark given by the k th judge on his preference of O_i to O_j is denoted by X_{ijk} , which can be regarded as the sum of a main effect, deviation of subtractivity, order effect, and error. Significance tests for these effects and estimates of various parameters are given by using statistical *linear models. *BIBD, *PBIBD, etc., can also be applied to paired comparisons.

D. The Pair Test, Triangle Test, and Duo-Trio Test

The pair test, triangle test, and duo-trio test are sensory difference tests. The methods are as follows. **Pair test:** A judge is requested to designate a preference between the paired samples A and B . **Triangle test:** A judge is requested to select two samples of the same kind out of A, A, B . **Duo-trio test:** A judge is first acquainted with a sample A and then is requested to choose from A and B the one he has seen in the previous step. In all the above cases, the hypothesis that A and B are different and that the judge has no ability to determine the difference between them is tested by using the *binomial distribution.

E. Scaling

(1) One-Dimensional Case. Psychometric scaling methods are procedures for constructing scales for psychological phenomena. Some of them require judgments concerning a particular attitude that is considered unidimensional. Under the assumption that a psychological phenomenon is a random variable with some distribution law and the parameters of the distribution law determine psychological scales, a psychological scaling is given by estimating the parameters. The Thurstone-

Mosteller model is a method for scaling a set of stimuli by means of observable proportions.

(2) Multidimensional Scaling (MDS). Multidimensional scaling is a collection of methods to deal with data consisting of many measurements on many objects and to characterize the mutual distance (dissimilarity), or closeness (affinity), by representing those objects by a small number of indices or by points in a small-dimensional Euclidean space. It has seen useful applications in the analysis of people's attitude and perception and their characterizations by means of a few numbers or points in a space of low dimension.

Historically, MDS was first developed by Torgerson (1958) and refined further by Shepard (1962) and Kruskal (1964). The method developed by Torgerson and also the INDSCAL method by Carroll and Chang (1970) are called **metric multidimensional scaling**, while the method by Shepard and Kruskal is called the **nonmetric MDS**. The former is applied when the data are represented in continuous scales and the latter when the data are in discrete nominal or ordinal scales. Techniques of multidimensional scaling are closely related and sometimes actually equivalent to various methods of multivariate analysis, especially principal component analysis, canonical correlation analysis, and discriminant analysis (\rightarrow 280 Multivariate Analysis).

F. Factor Analysis

Though factor analysis can be considered to be a method to deal with multivariate data in general (\rightarrow 280 Multivariate Analysis), it has had close connections with psychometric studies, in both theoretical developments and applications. Historically, it was initiated by Spearman (1927) and developed further by Thurston (1945) in order to measure human abilities from test scores. Mathematically, the model of factor analysis is formulated as follows: Let z_{jk} be the standardized score of the j th test achieved by the k th subject, $j = 1, \dots, p$; $k = 1, \dots, N$; then it is assumed that it can be represented as a linear combination of r common factors and one specific factor as

$$z_{jk} = a_{j1}f_{1k} + a_{j2}f_{2k} + \dots + a_{jr}f_{rk} + u_{jv_{jk}}, \quad (1)$$

where f_{ik} , $i = 1, \dots, r$, $k = 1, \dots, N$, represents the magnitude of the i th common factor (ability) in the k th subject and a_{ji} is the size of contribution of the i th factor to the score of the j th test.

Usually it is assumed that (i) $V(z_j) = 1$, (ii) $V(f_i) = 1$ and $\text{Cov}(f_i, f_{i'}) = 0$ for $i \neq i'$, (iii) $V(v_j) = 1$ and $\text{Cov}(v_j, v_{j'}) = 0$, $j \neq j'$, (iv) $\text{Cov}(f_i, v_j) = 0$.

Then it follows that

$$r_{j'j''} = \text{Cor}(z_j, z_{j'}) = a_{j1}a_{j'1} + a_{j2}a_{j'2} + \dots + a_{jr}a_{j'r},$$

and

$$1 = a_{j1}^2 + a_{j2}^2 + \dots + a_{jr}^2 + u_j^2 = h_j^2 + u_j^2,$$

where h_j^2 is called the **communality** of the j th variable z_j and u_j^2 is called the **specificity**. It follows easily from (1) that any orthogonal transformation of the scores does not affect the model.

Problems of factor analysis are classified into three types:

(1) Estimation of communality: There are several methods of determining communality or initial estimates of it when some iterative procedure is used.

(2) Determination of **factor loadings**, which is the estimation of the a_{ji} : A number of methods have been proposed, among which those often used are the MINRES by Harman (1967), the varimax by Kaiser (1958), and the †maximum likelihood based on the normal model by Lawley and Maxwell.

(3) Estimation of **factor scores** f_{ik} : Usually factor scores are estimated after factor loadings have been determined. Thurstone proposed $\hat{F} = ZR^{-1}A$ and Harman $\hat{F} = ZA(A'A)^{-1}$, where F , Z , A are the matrices of factor scores, test scores, factor loadings, respectively, and R is the correlation matrix of the z 's.

G. Learning Theory

(1) **General Description.** Assume that a sequence of trials is done in order to study some given behavior and that on each trial particular events occur (stimuli, responses, reinforcements, etc.) that influence the ensuing behavior. Then the behavior itself is modified by such a sequence of trials. **Learning models** refer to such processes of behavior modification, and they are frequently represented by recursive formulas for response probabilities.

Assume that two mutually exclusive response alternatives A_1 and A_2 occur on the n th trial ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) with respective probabilities P_n and $1 - P_n$, and that an event E_i occurs on the n th trial with $\text{Pr}(\mathcal{E}_n = E_i) = \pi_i$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, t$; $\sum_{i=1}^t \pi_i = 1$). Then the recursive formula for P_n is of the form $P_{n+1} = f(P_n; \mathcal{E}_n, \mathcal{E}_{n-1}, \dots, \mathcal{E}_1)$. If the formula can be written as $f = f(P_n; \mathcal{E}_n, \mathcal{E}_{n-1}, \dots, \mathcal{E}_{n-d})$, then the response probability is called **d -trial path dependent**. In the special case $d = 0$, it is called **path independent**. For simplicity we write $f(P_n; \mathcal{E}_n = E_i, \mathcal{E}_{n-1} = E_j, \dots, \mathcal{E}_1 = E_k) = f_{ij\dots k}(P_n)$ ($i, j, \dots, k = 1, 2, \dots, t$). If the response probability is path independent, then $f_{ij\dots k}(P_n) = f_i f_j \dots f_k(P_1)$, where $f_v(P_n) =$

$f(P_n; \mathcal{E}_n = E_v)$ ($v = i, j, \dots, k$). When the recursive formula can be expressed as $f = f(P_n; \mathcal{E}_n, n)$, the response probability is said to be **quasi-independent of path** [11]. In the recursive formula f , two events E_i and E_j ($i \neq j$) are said to be commutative if $f_{\dots i \dots j \dots}(P_n) = f_{\dots j \dots i \dots}(P_n)$. If any two events are commutative, the condition of **event commutativity** is satisfied. By making f explicit with respect to n , we write $P_n = F(n; \mathcal{E}_{n-1}, \dots, \mathcal{E}_1; P_1)$. Under the condition of event commutativity, the explicit formula can be written $P_n = F(N_1, N_2, \dots, N_t; P_1)$, where N_i is the frequency of occurrence of E_i in the first $(n - 1)$ trials ($\sum_{i=1}^t N_i = n - 1$). If both event commutativity and path independence of response probability are satisfied, the explicit formula $P_n = f_1^{N_1} f_2^{N_2} \dots f_t^{N_t}(P_1)$ can be obtained.

(2) **Linear Models.** In a linear model, the recursive formula is written as a linear function of P_n .

Example (1). Bush-Mosteller model [6]. The Bush-Mosteller model assumes the response probability to be path independent. The recursive formula is expressed as $f_i(P_n) = \alpha_i P_n + (1 - \alpha_i)\lambda_i$, $\mathcal{E}_n = E_i$. Here α_i ($0 \leq \alpha_i \leq 1$) represents the degree of ineffectiveness of E_i for learning and λ_i ($0 \leq \lambda_i \leq 1$) is the †fixed point of f_i . A necessary and sufficient condition for E_i and E_j ($i \neq j$) to be commutative is that either f_i or f_j be an †identity operator or $\lambda_i = \lambda_j$.

Example (2). Estes's stimulus-sampling model [7]. We can consider the stimulus as a set composed of m elements, each of which corresponds to either response A_1 or A_2 ; the manner of their correspondences depends on each trial. If J_n elements correspond to A_1 on the n th trial, then we have $P_n = J_n/m$. Suppose that on the n th trial s ($\leq m$) elements are sampled, among which X_n elements correspond to A_2 , and the remaining $X'_n = (s - X_n)$ elements correspond to A_1 . As a result of the n th trial, if A_1 is reinforced, we set $Y_n = 1$; otherwise, we set $Y_n = 0$. Furthermore, assume that $J_{n+1} = J_n + X_n Y_n - X'_n(1 - Y_n)$. Hence, we obtain the recursive formula $P_{n+1} = P_n + \{X_n Y_n - X'_n(1 - Y_n)\}/m$. In this model, the response probability is path independent and $\mathcal{E}_n = (X_n, Y_n)$. Other linear models have been proposed in which the response probability is either quasi-independent of path [8] or path dependent [10].

(3) **Nonlinear Models.** In nonlinear models the recursive formula cannot be written as a linear function of P_n .

Example (3). Luce's β -model [9]. Let the response strengths of A_1 and A_2 on the n th trial be v_n and v'_n , respectively (both positive), and assume that P_n , the response probability of A_1 , is expressed as $v_n/(v_n + v'_n)$. The response

strengths v_n and v'_n depend on each trial. Under the assumption that the response strength is path independent and that v_{n+1} changes independently from v'_n , the recursive formula of v_n is written as $v_{n+1} = \varphi_i(v_n)$, $\mathcal{E}_n = E_i$. Here, if we assume $\varphi_i(v) > 0$ for $v > 0$ and $\varphi_i(cv) = c\varphi_i(v)$ for $v > 0$ and $c > 0$, then $\varphi_i(v_n) = \beta_i v_n$ with $\beta_i > 0$. In a similar way, the recursive formula for v'_n can be expressed as $\varphi'_i(v'_n) = \beta'_i v'_n$ ($\beta'_i > 0$). Therefore we have $P_{n+1} = P_n / \{P_n + b_i(1 - P_n)\}$ ($b_i = \beta'_i / \beta_i$), $\mathcal{E}_n = E_i$. This model is nonlinear, and the response probability is path independent. By making the recursive formula explicit, we obtain $P_n = P_1 / \{P_1 + (1 - P_1) \exp(\sum_{i=1}^n N_i \log b_i)\}$. Hence it is clear that the events are commutative. Other nonlinear models in which the response probability is either quasi-independent of path [5] or path dependent [9] have also been proposed.

Here we have taken up only the case in which the number of response alternatives is 2, but we can generalize to the case of more than two alternatives. For fitting a model and experimental data, expected response probabilities and various other statistics deduced from the model (total error, trial number of first success or last error, and sequential statistics such as length of response run or autocorrelation between responses) are used. Estimation methods have also been devised for the parameters involved.

References

For sensory tests,

- [1] H. A. David, The method of paired comparisons, Hafner, 1963.
 - [2] J. P. Guilford, Psychometric methods, McGraw-Hill, second edition, 1954.
 - [3] M. G. Kendall, Rank correlation methods, Griffin, third edition, 1962.
 - [4] W. S. Torgerson, Theory and method of scaling, Wiley, 1958.
- For learning theory,
- [5] R. J. Audley and A. R. Jonckheere, The statistical analysis of the learning process, Brit. J. Statist. Psychol., 9 (1956), 87–94.
 - [6] R. R. Bush and F. Mosteller, Stochastic models for learning, Wiley, 1955.
 - [7] W. K. Estes, Component and pattern models with Markovian interpretations, Studies in Mathematical Learning Theory, R. R. Bush and W. K. Estes (eds.), Stanford Univ. Press, 1959, 9–52.
 - [8] M. I. Hanania, A generalization of the Bush-Mosteller model with some significance tests, Psychometrika, 24 (1959), 53–68.
 - [9] R. D. Luce, Individual choice behavior: A theoretical analysis, Wiley, 1959.

[10] S. H. Sternberg, A path-dependent linear model, Studies in Mathematical Learning Theory, R. R. Bush and W. K. Estes (eds.), Stanford Univ. Press, 1959, 308–339.

[11] S. H. Sternberg, Stochastic learning theory, Handbook of Mathematical Psychology II, R. D. Luce, R. R. Bush, and E. Galanter (eds.), Wiley, 1963, 1–120.

For MDS,

[12] J. B. Kruskal, Nonmetric multidimensional scaling: A numerical method, Psychometrika, 29 (1964), 115–129.

[13] R. N. Shepard, The analysis of proximities: Multidimensional scaling with an unknown distance function, Psychometrika, 27 (1962), 125–219.

[14] L. Guttman, Multiple rectilinear prediction and the resolution into components, Psychometrika, 5 (1940), 75–99.

[15] J. B. Carroll and J. J. Chang, Analysis of individual difference in multidimensional scaling via an N -way generalization of Eckart-Young decomposition, Psychometrika, 35 (1970), 283–319.

For factor analysis,

[16] C. Spearman, The abilities of man, Macmillan, 1927.

[17] H. H. Harman, Modern factor analysis, Univ. of Chicago Press, 1967.

[18] H. F. Kaiser, The varimax criterion for analytic rotation in factor analysis, Psychometrika, 23 (1958), 187–240.

[19] D. N. Lawley and A. E. Maxwell, Factor analysis as a statistical criterion, Butterworth, 1963.

[20] K. Takeuchi, H. Yanai, and B. N. Mukherjee, Foundations of multivariate analysis, Wiley, 1982.

Q

347 (V.12) Quadratic Fields

A. General Remarks

Any \dagger extension field of the rational number field \mathbf{Q} of degree 2 is called a **quadratic field**. Any quadratic field k is obtained from \mathbf{Q} by adjoining a square root of a **square-free integer** (i.e., an integer $\neq 0, 1$ with no square factor) $m: k = \mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{m})$. If m is positive (negative), k is called a **real (imaginary or complex) quadratic field** (\rightarrow 14 Algebraic Number Fields). Let

$$\omega = \begin{cases} (1 + \sqrt{m})/2 & \text{for } m \equiv 1 \pmod{4}, \\ \sqrt{m} & \text{for } m \equiv 2, 3 \pmod{4}. \end{cases}$$

Then $(1, \omega)$ is a \dagger minimal basis of k . That is, any \dagger algebraic integer α of k has the unique expression $\alpha = a + b\omega$ with $a, b \in \mathbf{Z}$. The \dagger discriminant d of k is given by $d = m$ in case $m \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$ and $d = 4m$ in case $m \equiv 2, 3 \pmod{4}$. The conjugate element of an element $\alpha = a + b\sqrt{m}$ ($a, b \in \mathbf{Q}$) of k over \mathbf{Q} is given by $\alpha' = a - b\sqrt{m}$. The mapping $\sigma: \alpha \rightarrow \alpha'$ is an \dagger automorphism of the field k .

B. Units

Let k be an imaginary quadratic field. The \dagger units of k are $\pm 1, \pm i$ in case $m = -1; \pm 1, \pm \omega_0, \pm \omega_0^2$ ($\omega_0 = (1 + \sqrt{-3})/2$) in case $m = -3$; and ± 1 in all other cases.

Let k be a real quadratic field. There exists a unit ε_0 that is the smallest one among the units (> 1) of k . Any unit ε of k can be uniquely expressed in the form $\varepsilon = \pm \varepsilon_0^n$ ($n \in \mathbf{Z}$). That is, $\pm \varepsilon_0^{\pm 1}$ is a \dagger fundamental unit of k . The fundamental unit $\varepsilon_0 = (x + y\sqrt{d})/2$ (> 1) can be calculated by finding a minimal positive integral solution (x, y) of \dagger Pell's equation $x^2 - dy^2 = \pm 4$ by using continued fractions (\rightarrow 83 Continued Fractions; for a table of the fundamental unit of k for $m < 100 \rightarrow$ [1]).

C. Prime Ideals

The decomposition of a prime number p in the \dagger principal order \mathfrak{o} of k is given as follows: (i) Let $p \nmid d$, where d is the discriminant of k . Then p is decomposed in \mathfrak{o} in the form $(p) = \mathfrak{p}^2$. (ii) Let $p \nmid 2$ and $(p, m) = 1$. If $(m/p) = 1$, then $(p) = \mathfrak{p}\mathfrak{p}'$ in \mathfrak{o} ($\mathfrak{p} \neq \mathfrak{p}'$) and $N(\mathfrak{p}) = N(\mathfrak{p}') = p$. If $(m/p) = -1$, then $(p) = \mathfrak{p}$ in \mathfrak{o} and $N(\mathfrak{p}) = p^2$. Here $\mathfrak{p}, \mathfrak{p}'$ are prime ideals of \mathfrak{o} , N means the \dagger norm, and (m/p) is the \dagger Legendre symbol. (iii) Let $2 \nmid d$, that is, $m \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$. If $m \equiv 1 \pmod{8}$, then $(2) = \mathfrak{p}\mathfrak{p}'$ ($\mathfrak{p} \neq \mathfrak{p}'$) and $N(\mathfrak{p}) = N(\mathfrak{p}') = 2$. If $m \equiv 5 \pmod{8}$, then $(2) = \mathfrak{p}$ and $N(\mathfrak{p}) = 4$.

D. The Kronecker Symbol

Let $k = \mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{m})$, and let d be the discriminant of k . We define the symbol χ for k as follows: (i) $\chi(p) = 1$ if $(p) = \mathfrak{p}\mathfrak{p}'$ ($\mathfrak{p} \neq \mathfrak{p}'$) in \mathfrak{o} ; (ii) $\chi(p) = -1$ if $(p) = \mathfrak{p}$ in \mathfrak{o} ; (iii) $\chi(p) = 0$ if $(p) = \mathfrak{p}^2$ in \mathfrak{o} ; and (iv) $\chi(n) = \prod_i \chi(p_i)^{e_i}$ for $n = \prod_i p_i^{e_i} > 0$. In particular, we define $\chi(1) = 1$. If $(n, d) = 1$, the symbol χ can also be defined using the \dagger Jacobi symbol as follows: If $m \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$, then $\chi(n) = (n/m)$; and if $m \equiv 2, 3 \pmod{4}$, then $\chi(n) = \chi_2^*(n)(n/m')$ for $d = 2^e m'$, where (i) $\chi_2^*(n) = (-1)^{(n-1)/2}$ for $e = 2, m' \equiv 3 \pmod{4}$; (ii) $\chi_2^*(n) = (-1)^{(n^2-1)/8}$ for $e = 3, m' \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$; and (iii) $\chi_2^*(n) = (-1)^{(n^2-1)/8 + (n-1)/2}$ for $e = 3, m' \equiv 3 \pmod{4}$. If $(n, d) \neq 1$, then $\chi(n) = 0$. For a negative integer $-n$, we define $\chi(-n) = (\text{sgn } d)\chi(n)$. The symbol $\chi(n)$ for $n \in \mathbf{Z}$ is called the **Kronecker symbol** for k .

The Kronecker symbol for k has the following four properties: (1) $\chi(n) = 0$ if $(n, d) \neq 1$, and $\chi(n) = \pm 1$ if $(n, d) = 1$; (2) $\chi(m) = \chi(n)$ if $m \equiv n \pmod{d}$; (3) $\chi(mn) = \chi(m)\chi(n)$; (4) $\chi(n) = 1$ if and only if $n \equiv N(\mathfrak{a}) \pmod{d}$ for some integral ideal \mathfrak{a} of k such that $(\mathfrak{a}, d) = 1$. (Property (4) shows that a quadratic field provides a class field; \rightarrow 59 Class Field Theory.)

E. Ideal Classes

The \dagger class number h of k was calculated by P. G. L. \dagger Dirichlet (1840) by analytical methods as follows:

$$h \log \varepsilon_0 = -\frac{1}{2} \sum_{r=1}^{d-1} \chi(r) \log \sin \frac{r\pi}{d} \quad \text{for } m > 0,$$

$$h = \frac{-w}{2|d|} \sum_{r=1}^{|d|-1} \chi(r)r \quad \text{for } m < 0,$$

where d is the discriminant of k , ε_0 is the positive fundamental unit (> 1) of k , w is the number of roots of unity in k , and χ is the Kronecker symbol.

Denote by $h(d)$ the class number of the imaginary quadratic field with discriminant d . It was conjectured from the time of C. F. \dagger Gauss that $h(d) \rightarrow \infty$ as $|d| \rightarrow \infty$. This conjecture was proved by H. Heilbronn (1934). More precisely, C. L. Siegel (*Acta Arith.*, 1 (1935)) proved

$$\lim_{|d| \rightarrow \infty} (\log h(d)) / (\log \sqrt{|d|}) = 1.$$

$h(d) = 1$ holds for $|d| = 3, 4, 7, 8, 11, 19, 43, 67, 163$. In 1934, Heilbronn and E. H. Linfoot proved that there can be at most one more such d , and finally A. Baker and H. M. Stark independently proved that these nine numbers are the only ones for which $h(d) = 1$ (Baker, *Mathematica*, 13 (1966); Stark, *Michigan Math*

J., 14 (1967)). Also, Baker and Stark proved independently (*Ann. Math.*, (2) 94 (1971); *Math. Comp.*, 29 (1975)) that $h(d)=2$ holds only for $|d|=15, 20, 24, 35, 40, 51, 52, 88, 91, 115, 123, 148, 187, 232, 235, 267, 403, \text{ and } 427$.

For real quadratic fields, we have

$$\lim_{d \rightarrow \infty} (\log(h(d) \log \varepsilon_d)) / (\log \sqrt{d}) = 1,$$

where ε_d is the fundamental unit of $k = \mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{d})$ ($\varepsilon_d > 1$). However, it is not yet determined whether there exist infinitely many d with $h(d) = 1$ (\rightarrow Appendix B, Table 4).

F. Genera

Let G be the group of all (\dagger fractional) ideals of k , and let H be the group of all (\dagger principal) ideals (α) of k such that $N(\alpha) > 0$. Each coset of G modulo H is called an **ideal class in the narrow sense**. (This notion is a special case of the notion of ideal classes in the narrow sense of algebraic number fields; \rightarrow 14 Algebraic Number Fields G.) In the cases (i) $m < 0$ and (ii) $m > 0$, $N(\varepsilon_0) = -1$, the usual classification of ideals and classification of ideals in the narrow sense are identical. When $m > 0$, $N(\varepsilon_0) = 1$, each ideal class is divided into two ideal classes in the narrow sense. We call an ideal class in the narrow sense simply an ideal class.

Let p_1, \dots, p_t be the set of all prime numbers dividing d . For $n \in \mathbf{Z}$ with $(n, d) = 1$, we define $\chi_1(n), \dots, \chi_t(n)$ as follows: For $p_i \neq 2$, we define $\chi_i(n) = (n/p_i)$; for $p_i = 2$, we identify χ_i with χ_2^* in the definition of the Kronecker symbol. In order that $\chi_1(n) = \dots = \chi_t(n) = 1$ for $n \in \mathbf{Z}$ with $(n, d) = 1$, it is necessary and sufficient that $n \equiv N(\alpha) \pmod{d}$ for an integer α of k (where $N(\alpha) = \alpha\alpha'$). Since $\chi_1\chi_2 \dots \chi_t$ is equal to the Kronecker symbol, it follows that $n \equiv N(\alpha) \pmod{d}$ for an integral ideal α of k is a necessary and sufficient condition for $\chi_1(n) \dots \chi_t(n) = 1$ to hold for $n \in \mathbf{Z}$ with $(n, d) = 1$. Put $\varepsilon_i = \chi_i(N(\alpha))$ ($i = 1, \dots, t$), where α is an integral ideal with $(\alpha, d) = 1$. Then $(\varepsilon_1, \dots, \varepsilon_t)$ is uniquely determined for the ideal class C containing α and does not depend on the choice of α . The set \mathfrak{H} of all ideal classes of k such that $(\varepsilon_1, \dots, \varepsilon_t) = (1, \dots, 1)$ is called the **principal genus** of k , and \mathfrak{H} is a subgroup of the ideal class group \mathfrak{C} of k . Each coset of \mathfrak{C} modulo \mathfrak{H} is called a **genus** of k . For each genus, the values $\varepsilon_i = \chi_i(N(\alpha))$ ($i = 1, \dots, t$) are uniquely determined. We call $(\varepsilon_1, \dots, \varepsilon_t)$ the **character system** of this genus, and each genus is uniquely determined by its character system. A necessary and sufficient condition for $(\varepsilon_1, \dots, \varepsilon_t)$ to be a character system for some genus is that $\varepsilon_i = \pm 1$ and $\varepsilon_1\varepsilon_2 \dots \varepsilon_t = 1$. Hence there are 2^{t-1}

genera of k , and $\mathfrak{C}/\mathfrak{H}$ is an Abelian group of type $(2, 2, \dots, 2)$.

In order that an ideal class C belong to the principal genus, it is necessary and sufficient that $C = C_1^{-\sigma} = C_1^2$ hold for some ideal class C_1 . From this it follows that there are $t-1$ \dagger invariants of the ideal class group \mathfrak{C} of k that are powers of 2. Each ideal class C such that $C^\sigma = C$ is called an **ambig class** of k . There are 2^{t-1} ambig classes, and they form an Abelian group of type $(2, 2, \dots, 2)$. Each ideal α of k with $\alpha^\sigma = \alpha$ is called an **ambig ideal** of k . Let $(p_i) = \mathfrak{p}_i^2$ ($i = 1, \dots, t$). Then each ambig ideal is uniquely expressed in the form $\alpha = \mathfrak{p}_1^{v_1} \dots \mathfrak{p}_t^{v_t}(a)$ by some $a \in \mathbf{Q}$ and $v_i = 0, 1$. Each ambig class contains exactly two ambig ideals of the form $\mathfrak{p}_1^{v_1} \dots \mathfrak{p}_t^{v_t}$. For example, for $k = \mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{-65})$ we have $d = -2^2 \cdot 5 \cdot 13$, $t = 3$, $h = 8$, $\mathfrak{C} = \{E, A, A^2, A^3, B, AB, A^2B, A^3B\}$, where $A^4 = E$, $B^2 = E$, $A^\sigma = A^3$, and $B^\sigma = B$; the principal genus is $\mathfrak{H} = \{E, A^2\}$, and the ambig classes are $\{E, A^2, B, A^2B\}$.

G. Norm Residues

A quadratic field k is the \dagger class field over \mathbf{Q} for an ideal group H . The \dagger conductor of H is said to be the **conductor** of k/\mathbf{Q} or simply the conductor of k . The conductor $f = \prod_p f_p$ of $k = \mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{m})$ is given by $f = d$ for $m > 0$ and $f = dp_\infty$ for $m < 0$. That is, the p -conductor $f_p = p$ for $p|d$, $p \neq 2$; and $f_2 = 2^e$ for $2|d$, $d = 2^e m'$ ($(2, m') = 1$). By means of the \dagger Hilbert norm-residue symbol, the Kronecker symbol χ is expressed by

$$\chi(a) = \begin{cases} \prod_{p|d} \left(\frac{a, d}{p} \right) & \text{for } (a, d) = 1, \\ 0 & \text{for } (a, d) \neq 1. \end{cases}$$

H. History

The arithmetic of quadratic fields was originally developed in terms of the theory of binary quadratic forms with rational integral coefficients by Gauss and Dirichlet [2]. The theory was then translated into the terms of ideal theory by J. W. R. Dedekind [2] (\rightarrow 348 Quadratic Forms M). For example, the theory of genera for quadratic fields explained in Section F was first developed by Gauss in terms of binary quadratic forms, and the class number formula was obtained by Dirichlet as a formula for binary quadratic forms. Hilbert [4, ch. 2] developed the arithmetic of quadratic fields systematically by introducing the Hilbert norm-residue symbol (\rightarrow [1, 5, 6]). Later the arithmetic of quadratic fields assumed the aspect of a simple example of class field theory (\rightarrow 59 Class Field Theory).

References

- [1] Z. I. Borevich and I. R. Shafarevich, Number theory, Academic Press, 1966. (Original in Russian, 1964.)
- [2] P. G. L. Dirichlet, Vorlesungen über Zahlentheorie, herausgegeben und mit Zusätzen versehen von R. Dedekind, Viewig, fourth edition, 1894 (Chelsea, 1969).
- [3] H. Hasse, Vorlesungen über Zahlentheorie, Springer, 1950.
- [4] D. Hilbert, Die Theorie der algebraischen Zahlkörper, Jber. Deutsch. Math. Verein. 4, I–XVIII (1897), 175–546. (Gesammelte Abhandlungen I, Springer, 1932, 63–363; Chelsea, 1967.)
- [5] B. W. Jones, The arithmetic theory of quadratic forms, Math. Assoc. of America and Wiley, 1950.
- [6] E. G. H. Landau, Vorlesungen über Zahlentheorie I, II, III, Hirzel, 1927 (Chelsea, 1969).

348 (III.15) Quadratic Forms

A. General Remarks

A **quadratic form** Q is a quadratic homogeneous polynomial with coefficients in a \dagger field K , written

$$Q(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \sum_{1 \leq i \leq k \leq n} c_{ik} x_i x_k.$$

If the coefficients c_{ik} belong to the field of real (complex) numbers, we call Q a **real (complex) quadratic form**. Let V be an n -dimensional vector space over K . For a vector x in V whose coordinates are x_1, \dots, x_n , we put $Q(x) = Q(x_1, \dots, x_n)$. This gives rise to a mapping $x \rightarrow Q(x)$ of V into K . Such a mapping satisfies the following two conditions: (i) $Q(ax) = a^2 Q(x)$ ($a \in K$); and (ii) $Q(x+y) - Q(x) - Q(y) = B(x, y)$ is a \dagger symmetric bilinear form on V . Conversely, if a mapping $Q: V \rightarrow K$ satisfies these two conditions, then Q must come from a quadratic form (\rightarrow 256 Linear Spaces). $B(x, y)$ is called the **symmetric bilinear form associated with Q** .

We assume that the \dagger characteristic of K is not 2. Putting $a_{ik} = a_{ki} = c_{ik}/2$ ($i < k$), $a_{ii} = c_{ii}$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$), we have $Q(x) = \sum_{i,k=1}^n a_{ik} x_i x_k$. The matrix $A = (a_{ik})$ is the **matrix of the quadratic form Q** , and the determinant $|A|$ is the **discriminant** of Q , denoted by $\Delta(Q)$. (Sometimes, instead of $|A|$, we call $(-1)^{n(n-1)/2} 2^n |A|$, the discriminant of Q .) The rank of the matrix A is called the **rank** of Q . Using the notation for the \dagger inner product of vectors, we can write $Q(x)$

$$= (x, Ax) = {}^t x Ax; \quad 2^{-1} B(x, y) = (x, Ay) = {}^t x Ay.$$

We say that Q is **nondegenerate** if $B(x, y)$ is nondegenerate (i.e., if $|A| \neq 0$).

Consider a linear substitution $x_i = \sum_{j=1}^m P_{ij} x'_j$ (i.e., $x = Px'$, with an $n \times m$ matrix P). Then we get a new quadratic form $Q'(x')$ with the matrix ${}^t P A P$. If each p_{ij} belongs to the field K (to a subring R of K that contains the unit element of K), we say that Q represents Q' over K (resp. R). A basic problem in the theory of quadratic forms is to determine the exact conditions under which a given quadratic form Q represents another quadratic form Q' . The problem of representing numbers by a quadratic form (representation problem) is the particular case corresponding to $m = 1$. Any quadratic form Q represents 0 by taking the zero matrix as P . Hence, by the expression " Q represents 0 over K ," we usually mean the nontrivial representation of 0 over K by Q , i.e., $Q(x) = 0$ for some nonzero vector x . If Q is nondegenerate and represents 0, then it represents any element of K^* . Given an element μ in K^* , we consider the quadratic form Q' defined by $Q'(x_1, \dots, x_{n+1}) = Q(x) - \mu x_{n+1}^2$. Then Q represents μ if and only if Q' represents 0.

Another important special case is that of $n = m$. Then the discriminant of Q' is given by $|P|^2 |A|$. In particular, if $|P| \neq 0$ ($|P|$ is an invertible element of R), we say that Q is **equivalent** to Q' over K (resp. R). This gives rise to an equivalence relation. Equivalent forms have the same rank. On the other hand, if the rank of Q is r , then Q is equivalent to a form $\sum_{i=1}^r a_i x_i^2$ over K ($a_i \neq 0$, $i = 1, \dots, r$). Generally, for elements a and b in $K^* = K - \{0\}$, we write $a \sim b$ if $a \cdot b^{-1} \in (K^*)^2$. Then if Q is equivalent to Q' , we have $\Delta(Q) \sim \Delta(Q')$.

When we specify a field K , we assume that the coefficients of the quadratic forms and the coordinates of linear transformations are all contained in the field K . In particular, the equivalence of the forms is equivalence over K .

B. Complex Quadratic Forms

If K is the field of complex numbers \mathbb{C} , then a form of rank r is equivalent to the form $\sum_{i=1}^r x_i^2$; hence over \mathbb{C} two forms of the same dimension are equivalent if and only if they are of the same rank.

C. Real Quadratic Forms

Now let K be the field of real numbers \mathbb{R} . If Q is of rank r , then it is equivalent to the form $\sum_{i=1}^p x_i^2 - \sum_{j=1}^q x_{p+j}^2$ ($p+q=r$). Here, p and q are uniquely determined by Q (**Sylvester's law of inertia**). We call (p, q) the **signature** of Q . Two quadratic forms of the same dimension

are equivalent if and only if they have the same signature. A quadratic form with the signature $(n, 0)$ (resp. $(0, n)$) is called a **positive (negative) definite quadratic form**. Q is called a **definite quadratic form** if it is either positive or negative definite; otherwise it is an **indefinite quadratic form**. Each of the following conditions is necessary and sufficient for a form Q to be positive definite: (i) for any nonzero real vector x we have $Q(x) > 0$; (ii) all the \dagger principal minors of the matrix of Q are positive. Q is negative definite if and only if $-Q$ is positive definite. A form with n variables is called a **positive (negative) semidefinite quadratic form** if its signature is $(r, 0)$ (resp. $(0, r)$), where $1 \leq r < n$.

A linear transformation $x' \rightarrow x = Px'$ that leaves invariant the unit form $\sum_{i=1}^n x_i^2$ is an **orthogonal transformation**. Then P is an orthogonal matrix. Any quadratic form can be transformed into a diagonal form $\sum_{i=1}^n a_i x_i^2$ via an orthogonal transformation. Here a_1, \dots, a_n are the \dagger eigenvalues of the matrix of the form. Two forms Q and Q' are equivalent with respect to an orthogonal transformation if and only if the corresponding matrices have the same eigenvalues.

D. Quadratic Forms over Finite Fields and p -adic Number Fields

Let Q and Q' be nondegenerate quadratic forms over the \dagger finite field F_q . They are equivalent if and only if they have the same rank and $\Delta(Q) \sim \Delta(Q')$. Moreover, if the rank of Q is not less than 3, then Q represents 0.

Next, suppose that Q and Q' are nondegenerate quadratic forms over the $\dagger p$ -adic number field K . They are equivalent if and only if they have the same rank, $\Delta(Q) \sim \Delta(Q')$, and they have the same **Minkowski-Hasse character** χ , where χ is defined as follows: Let $C(Q)$ be the \dagger Clifford algebra of Q , and let $C^*(Q)$ denote $C(Q)$ if n is even and $C^+(Q)$ if n is odd. Then $\chi(Q) = 1$ or -1 according as $C^*(Q) \cong M_t(K)$ or $M_t(K) \otimes D(K)$. (Here M_t is the total matrix algebra of degree t over K and $D(K)$ is the unique \dagger quaternion algebra over K .) Also, if Q has rank not less than 5, then Q represents 0 in K .

E. Quadratic Forms over a General Field K

The following facts are valid on any field K whose characteristic is not 2. Given a quadratic form Q_1 with variables x_1, \dots, x_n and another form Q_2 with variables x_{n+1}, \dots, x_{n+m} , we get a new quadratic form $Q_1 \oplus Q_2$ or $Q_1 + Q_2$ defined by $Q_1 \oplus Q_2(x_1, \dots, x_{n+m}) =$

$Q_1(x_1, \dots, x_n) + Q_2(x_{n+1}, \dots, x_{n+m})$. $Q_1 \oplus Q_2$ is called the **direct sum** of Q_1 and Q_2 . The matrix of $Q_1 \oplus Q_2$ is the direct sum of the matrices of Q_1 and Q_2 . If Q_1 and Q'_1 are equivalent and Q_2 and Q'_2 are also equivalent, then $Q_1 \oplus Q_2$ and $Q'_1 \oplus Q'_2$ are also equivalent, then Q_2 and Q'_2 are equivalent (**Witt's theorem**).

The quadratic form $x_1 x_2 + x_3 x_4 + \dots + x_{2r-1} x_{2r}$ is called the **kernel form** and is denoted by N_r . Any nondegenerate quadratic form $Q(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is equivalent to the direct sum of a kernel form $N_r(x_1, \dots, x_{2r})$ and a form $Q_0(x_{2r+1}, \dots, x_n)$, where if $Q_0 \neq 0$, i.e., $n > 2r$, we have $Q_0(x_{2r+1}, \dots, x_n) = 0$ only if $x_{2r+1} = \dots = x_n = 0$. N_r and Q_0 are uniquely determined by Q up to equivalence. The decomposition $N_r \oplus Q_0$ is called the **Witt decomposition** of Q (E. Witt [5]). The number r is called the **index** of Q . An element x in V is said to be **singular** with respect to Q if $Q(x) = 0$. A subspace W of V is said to be **totally singular** if all the elements in W are singular. Let B be the symmetric bilinear form associated with Q . Then x is singular with respect to Q if and only if $B(x, x) = 0$ (characteristic of $K \neq 2$). We say that x is **isotropic** if $B(x, x) = 0$. Thus a subspace W is totally singular if and only if it is **totally isotropic** (i.e., $B(x, y) = 0$ for all $x, y \in W$). The index r of Q is the dimension of a maximal totally singular subspace of V . In particular, if $K = \mathbf{R}$ and (p, q) is the signature of Q , then the index $r = \min(p, q)$. Here we must be careful, since some authors call the number $p - q$ or p or q the index of Q . To make the distinction clear, we also call our r the **index of total isotropy**, and the number $p - q$ the **index of inertia**.

Necessary and sufficient conditions for a nondegenerate Q to be a kernel form are: $n =$ the rank of $Q \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$ when $K = \mathbf{C}$; $n \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$ and $p - q = 0$ when $K = \mathbf{R}$; $n \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$ and $\Delta(Q) \sim 1$ when $K = F_q$; $n \equiv 0 \pmod{2}$, $\Delta(Q) \sim 1$, and $\chi(Q) = 1$ when K is a p -adic number field.

Let $N_r \oplus Q_0, N_s \oplus Q'_0$ be Witt decompositions of Q and Q' , respectively. We say that Q and Q' belong to the same **type** if Q_0 and Q'_0 are equivalent and denote the set of types of nondegenerate quadratic forms over K by \mathbf{W} . We define the sum of the types of Q and Q' as the type of $Q \oplus Q'$, and this gives \mathbf{W} the structure of a commutative group. The type of a kernel form is the identity element of this group \mathbf{W} , called the **Witt group**. The structure of the Witt group depends on K . If $K = \mathbf{C}$, then $\mathbf{W} \cong \mathbf{Z}/2\mathbf{Z}$; if $K = \mathbf{R}$, then $\mathbf{W} \cong \mathbf{Z}$; if K is a \dagger local field with a \dagger non-Archimedean valuation, then \mathbf{W} is a finite group; if $K = F_q$, then $\mathbf{W} \cong (\mathbf{Z}/2\mathbf{Z}) + (\mathbf{Z}/2\mathbf{Z})$ if $q \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$, $\mathbf{W} \cong \mathbf{Z}/4\mathbf{Z}$ if $q \equiv 3 \pmod{4}$, and $\mathbf{W} \cong \mathbf{Z}/2\mathbf{Z}$ if q is a power of 2.

F. Hermitian Forms

An expression $H(x) = \sum_{i,k=1}^n a_{ik} \bar{x}_i x_k$ is called a **Hermitian form** if $a_{ik} \in \mathbb{C}$, $a_{ik} = \bar{a}_{ki}$. (Here \bar{a}_{ik} , \bar{x}_i are the complex conjugates of a_{ik} , x_i , respectively.) The value $H(x)$ is a real number. As for quadratic forms, we define the notions of the matrix of H and the discriminant, rank, and \dagger sesquilinear form associated with H . The matrix A of H is a \dagger Hermitian matrix whose principal minors are real numbers. If we apply a linear transformation $P(x') = x$, we obtain a Hermitian form with respect to x' whose matrix is given by ${}^t\bar{P}AP$. Any Hermitian form is equivalent to a form $\sum_{i=1}^p \bar{x}_i x_i - \sum_{j=1}^q \bar{x}_{p+j} x_{p+j}$; (p, q) is called the **signature** of H . We define the notions of **positive definite**, **negative definite**, and **indefinite Hermitian forms** as we did for quadratic forms over the field of real numbers. Each of the following conditions is necessary and sufficient for H to be positive definite: (i) $H(x) > 0$ for any nonzero complex vector x ; (ii) all the principal minors of the matrix of H are positive. The definition of a **semidefinite Hermitian form** is given in the same manner as for a quadratic form.

A linear transformation that leaves the Hermitian form $\sum_{i=1}^n \bar{x}_i x_i$ invariant is called a **unitary transformation**, and its matrix is a \dagger unitary matrix. Any Hermitian form can be transformed via a unitary transformation into a diagonal form $\sum_{i=1}^n a_i \bar{x}_i x_i$, where a_1, \dots, a_n are the eigenvalues of the matrix of the Hermitian form.

The notion of Hermitian forms can be generalized as follows: Suppose that K is a \dagger division ring with an **involution** $a \rightarrow \bar{a}$ ($a \in K$) (i.e., $a \rightarrow \bar{a}$ is a linear mapping of K onto itself such that $\overline{\bar{a}} = a$, $\overline{ab} = \bar{b}\bar{a}$). Then a Hermitian form H over K is defined by

$$H(x) = \sum_{i,k=1}^n \bar{x}_i a_{ik} x_k,$$

where $x_i \in K$, $a_{ik} \in K$, $a_{ik} = \bar{a}_{ki}$. In particular, if we have, for any given vector x whose coordinates belong to K , an element a in K such that $H(x) = a + \bar{a}$, then we have a Witt decomposition for H . Two examples of such K having involutions that differ from the identity mapping are a separable quadratic extension K of a field L and a \dagger quaternion algebra K over a field L .

G. Quadratic Forms over Algebraic Number Fields

Let K be an algebraic number field of finite degree, \mathfrak{p} be an \dagger Archimedean or non-Archimedean \dagger prime divisor of K , $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ be the

\mathfrak{p} -completion of K , and Q and Q' be nondegenerate quadratic forms over K . Then Q represents Q' over K if and only if Q represents Q' over $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for all \mathfrak{p} , and Q represents 0 in K (i.e., there exists a nonzero vector x whose coordinates belong to K such that $Q(x) = 0$) if and only if it represents 0 in $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for all \mathfrak{p} [3, 4]. In particular, Q and Q' are equivalent over K if and only if they are equivalent over $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for all \mathfrak{p} . Hence the invariants with respect to equivalence over K of a nondegenerate quadratic form Q over K are n = the rank of Q , Δ = the discriminant of Q , the Minkowski-Hasse character $\chi_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for \dagger prime divisors \mathfrak{p} of K , and the index of inertia j_{λ} of Q over $K_{\mathfrak{p}_{\infty, \lambda}}$ for each \dagger real infinite prime divisor $\mathfrak{p}_{\infty, \lambda}$ ($\lambda = 1, \dots, r_1$) of K . Here the following properties hold: (i) $\chi_{\mathfrak{p}} = 1$ for all but finitely many \mathfrak{p} ; (ii) $\prod_{\mathfrak{p}} \chi_{\mathfrak{p}} = 1$ (this is equivalent to the \dagger product formula of norm-residue symbols); (iii) $\Delta \sim (-1)^{(n^2 + j_{\lambda})/2}$ in $K_{\mathfrak{p}_{\infty, \lambda}}$; and (iv) $\chi_{\mathfrak{p}_{\infty, \lambda}} = 1$ if $j_{\lambda} \equiv 0, 1, 2, 7 \pmod{8}$, $= -1$ if $j_{\lambda} \equiv 3, 4, 5, 6 \pmod{8}$ [3, 4]. Conversely, if the system $\{n, \chi_{\mathfrak{p}}, \chi_{\mathfrak{p}_{\infty, \lambda}}, j_{\lambda}, \Delta\}$ satisfies conditions (i)–(iv), then it is the set of invariants of a quadratic form over K (**Minkowski-Hasse theorem**). In general, if a property concerning K holds if and only if it holds for all $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$, we say that the **Hasse principle** holds for the property.

H. Class and Genus of a Quadratic Form

Let K be an algebraic number field of finite degree. Quadratic forms Q and Q' over K are said to be of the same **class** if they are equivalent over the \dagger principal order \mathfrak{o} in K . On the other hand, Q and Q' are said to be of the same **genus** if (i) they are equivalent over the principal order $\mathfrak{o}_{\mathfrak{p}}$ in $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for all non-Archimedean prime divisors \mathfrak{p} of K and (ii) they are equivalent over $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for all the Archimedean prime divisors \mathfrak{p} of K . A genus is decomposed into a finite number of classes. For example, if K is the field of rational numbers, the number of classes in the genus of $\sum_{i=1}^m x_i^2$ is 1 for $m \leq 8$, while it is ≥ 2 for $m > 8$.

I. Reduction of Real Quadratic Forms

Let A be an $m \times m$ matrix and X an $m \times n$ matrix. We put $A[X] = {}^tXAX$. Then we can write $Q(x) = S[x] = {}^t x S x$, where S is the matrix of the quadratic form Q . In this section we put $K = \mathbb{R}$ and define two forms to belong to the same **class** if they are equivalent over the ring of rational integers. We identify the form Q with its matrix $S = (s_{ij})$. Let S be a positive definite form in m variables. Then S is said to be a **reduced quadratic form** if $S[g_k] \geq s_{kk}$ and $s_{ll+1} \geq 0$ ($1 \leq k \leq m$, $1 \leq l \leq m-1$), where g_k is an

arbitrary vector whose coordinates g_1, \dots, g_m are integers such that $(g_k, \dots, g_m) = 1$. Any class of positive definite quadratic forms contains at least one (and generally only one) reduced form. For a reduced form $R = (r_{kl})$, the following inequalities hold: $0 < r_{11} \leq r_{22} \leq \dots \leq r_{mm}$; $\pm 2r_{kl} \leq r_{ll}$, $k < l$; $r_{11}r_{22}\dots r_{mm} < c(m)|R|$, where $c(m)$ depends only on m . The set of all symmetric matrices of degree m forms a linear space of dimension $m(m+1)/2$ in which the subset \mathfrak{P} formed by the positive definite symmetric matrices is a convex open subset. Moreover, the subset \mathfrak{R} formed by all reduced positive definite symmetric matrices is a convex cone whose boundary consists of finitely many hypersurfaces and whose vertex is the origin. Let S be an indefinite quadratic form whose signature is $(n, m-n)$. The set of positive definite quadratic forms H such that $S^{-1}[H] = S$ forms a variety of dimension $n(m-n)$, which is denoted by $H(S)$. We say that S is reduced if $H(S) \cap \mathfrak{R} \neq \emptyset$. Given a natural number D , there are only a finite number of definite or indefinite reduced quadratic forms with rational integral coefficients whose discriminant is $\pm D$. Hence the number of classes of quadratic forms with rational integral coefficients and discriminant $\pm D$ is also finite.

J. Units

Let S be a symmetric matrix of degree m with rational coordinates. Let $O(S)$ be the set of all real $m \times m$ matrices W for which $S[W] = S$, and $\Gamma(S)$ be the subset of $O(S)$ consisting of the integral matrices. An element of $\Gamma(S)$ is called a **unit** of S . $\Gamma(S)$ is a finite group if S is definite, but otherwise it is infinite (except for the case $m=2$, $-|S|=r^2$, with rational r). $O(S)$ is a t Lie group, and $\Gamma(S)$ is a discrete subgroup with a finite number of generators. The t homogeneous space $O(S)/\Gamma(S)$ is of finite measure with respect to a t Haar measure defined on the space.

K. Minkowski-Siegel-Tamagawa Theory

Let S and T be rational integral positive definite symmetric matrices of degree m and n , respectively ($m \geq n$). Let $A(S, T)$ be the number of rational integral solutions for the equation $S[X] = T$, and $E(S)$ be the order of the group of units $\Gamma(S)$. We put

$$M(S, T) = \frac{A(S_1, T)}{E(S_1)} + \frac{A(S_2, T)}{E(S_2)} + \dots,$$

$$M(S) = \frac{1}{E(S_1)} + \frac{1}{E(S_2)} + \dots,$$

$$A_0(S, T) = \frac{M(S, T)}{M(S)},$$

where S_1, S_2, \dots is a complete system of representatives of the classes in the genus of S . $M(S)$ is called the **measure of genus** of S . On the other hand, for a natural number q , we denote by $A_q(S, T)$ the number of the solutions of the congruence equation $S[X] \equiv T \pmod{q}$. If q is a prime power p^a , then the ratio $\varepsilon_{m,n} q^{-mn+n(n+1)/2} A_q(S, T)$ takes a constant value $\alpha_p(S, T)$ for sufficiently large a (where $\varepsilon_{m,n} = 1/2$ if $m=n \geq 2$; $=1$ otherwise). Furthermore, let us consider a domain B in the Euclidean space of dimension $n(n+1)/2$ formed by the set of $n \times n$ symmetric matrices containing T , and let B_1 be the domain formed by the matrices X such that $S[X] \in B$. Then B_1 is a domain in the space of dimension mn formed by all $m \times n$ matrices. Let $\alpha_\infty(S, T)$ be the limit of the ratio $v(B_1)/v(B)$ of the volumes of B and B_1 as the domain B shrinks toward the point T . Then **Siegel's theorem** states: $\alpha_\infty(S, T) \prod_p \alpha_p(S, T) = \varepsilon A_0(S, T)$, where $\varepsilon = 2$ if $m=n+1$ or $m=n \geq 2$ and $\varepsilon = 1$ otherwise. The infinite product of the left-hand side of this equation does not converge absolutely if either $m=n=2$ or $m=n+2$, and in those cases the order of the product \prod_p is considered to be the natural order of the primes p .

A special case of Siegel's theorem was proved by H. Minkowski, but it was C. L. Siegel [6] who proved it in its general form. Except for a finite number of p , the numbers $\alpha_p(S, T)$ have been calculated. The explicit form of $\alpha_\infty(S, T)$ is also known. In particular, if we take the identity matrix $E^{(m)}$ of degree m as S , then the formula in Siegel's theorem is related to the problem of expressing natural numbers as sums of m squares. For $m=2, 3, \dots, 8$, the genus of $E^{(m)}$ contains only one class. Hence, putting $n=1$, $T=t$ ($=$ a natural number), we obtain from Siegel's theorem the number of ways in which we can express t as the sum of m squares [6, pt. I]. Siegel's result was generalized by Siegel himself to the case where the form S is indefinite [6, pt. II] and where the coefficients of the forms are elements of an algebraic number field of finite degree [6, pt. III]. Also, regarding the number of possible ways to express a natural number t as a sum of m squares, the following formula was obtained by C. G. J. Jacobi for the case where $m=4$, $n=1$:

$$A(E^{(4)}, t) = 8 \left(\sum_{d|t} d - \sum_{4d|t} d \right).$$

For the case $m=3$, $n=1$, it is known that if t is odd and $A(E^{(3)}, t) > 0$, then $t \not\equiv 7 \pmod{8}$ (for details \rightarrow P. T. Batemann, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 71 (1951)).

T. Tamagawa used the theory of t adelized algebraic groups and proved that the t Tamagawa number $\tau(SO(n, S))$ of the special ortho-

gonal group is 2. He also showed that from this fact, Siegel's theory in this section can be deduced (\rightarrow 13 Algebraic Groups P) [10].

L. Theta Series

Let $Q(x_1, \dots, x_m)$ be a positive definite form with integral coefficients. For a complex number z , we put

$$F(z, Q) = \sum_{x_1, \dots, x_m} \exp(2\pi i Q(x_1, \dots, x_m)z),$$

where x_1, \dots, x_m run over all the integers. If $\text{Im } z > 0$, the series converges and represents an entire function of z . These series are called **theta series**. If we denote by $A(n)$ the number of integral solutions of the equation $Q(x_1, \dots, x_m) = n$, we have

$$F(z, Q) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} A(n) e^{2\pi i n z}.$$

Moreover, if $m = 2k$, we have the following **transformation formula**:

$$F\left(\frac{az+b}{cz+d}, Q\right) = \varepsilon(d)(cz+d)^k F(z, Q),$$

where a, b, c, d are integers such that $ad - bc = 1$, $c \equiv 0 \pmod{N}$, N is a natural number determined by Q , and ε is a character mod N . In other words, $F(z, Q)$ is a modular form with respect to the congruence subgroup of level N . Using the theory of modular forms, E. Hecke showed that $A(n) = A_0(n) + O(n^{k/2})$, where $A_0(n)$ is a number-theoretic function of n determined by the genus of Q .

M. Binary Quadratic Forms with Integral Coefficients

Now put $m = 2$. Given a form $Q(x, y) = ax^2 + bxy + cy^2$, we put $D(Q) = b^2 - 4ac$ and call it the **discriminant** of Q (i.e., $D(Q) = -4\Delta(Q)$). Q is said to be **primitive** if $(a, b, c) = 1$. When $D(Q)$ is not a square, the theory concerning Q is closely related to the arithmetic theory of the quadratic field $\mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{D}) = k$. Let d be the discriminant of k and put $D = df^2$. When $f = 1$, there is a one-to-one correspondence between the ideal classes of k and the classes of quadratic forms with discriminant d (when $D < 0$, we consider the classes of positive definite forms). The correspondence is given in the following manner: If \mathfrak{a} is an ideal in k with a basis α_1, α_2 , then the corresponding form is given by $Q(x, y) = N(\mathfrak{a})^{-1} N(\alpha_1 x + \alpha_2 y)$, where N is the absolute norm. If $f > 1$, we must replace the ring of integers \mathfrak{o} by the order of the conductor f . That is, if we consider the ring formed by the elements $x + f y \omega$ (x, y are rational integers; the meaning of ω is ex-

plained shortly), we again have a one-to-one correspondence between the classes of ideals of this order and the classes of quadratic forms [3]. We let $\omega = \sqrt{d}/2$ if $d \equiv 0 \pmod{4}$; $\omega = (1 + \sqrt{d})/2$ if $d \equiv 1 \pmod{4}$. When $D > 0$, we can introduce the notion of proper equivalence as follows: Q and Q' are **properly equivalent** if the matrix of Q is transformed to the matrix of Q' by a linear transformation P whose determinant is 1. Then, in the correspondence for the case $f = 1$, if we take $\alpha_1 = r > 0$, $\alpha_2 = s + t\omega$, $t > 0$ ($r, s, t \in \mathbf{Q}$), then we get a relation between the classification of the forms and the classification in the finer sense of the ideals in k .

Suppose that $D > 0$ is not a square. Let (t, u) be an integral solution of Pell's equation $t^2 - Du^2 = \pm 4$. Then the units of the form $Q(x, y) = ax^2 + bxy + cy^2$ with discriminant D are given by

$$\pm \begin{pmatrix} (t-bu)/2 & -cu \\ au & (t+bu)/2 \end{pmatrix}.$$

Let (t_0, u_0) be the smallest positive integral solution of $t^2 - Du^2 = 4$, put $\varepsilon_D = (t_0 + u_0 \sqrt{D})/2$, and let h_D be the class number in the finer sense of the forms of discriminant D . Then the following formula holds (Dirichlet):

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{D}} h_D \log \varepsilon_D = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n} \left(\frac{D}{n} \right),$$

where (D/n) is the Kronecker symbol (here $D = f^2 d$; we put $(D/n) = 0$ if $(f, n) \neq 1$, and $(D/n) = (d/n)$ if $(f, n) = 1$). For $D < 0$, the order w_D of the units is known: it is 6 if $D = -3$; 4 if $D = -4$; and 2 otherwise. We also have

$$\frac{2\pi}{\sqrt{|D|}} \frac{h_D}{w_D} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n} \left(\frac{D}{n} \right).$$

With respect to the numbers h_D and ε_D , little else is known.

References

- [1] B. W. Jones, The arithmetic theory of quadratic forms, Wiley, 1950.
- [2] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, Algèbre, ch. 9, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1272a, Hermann, 1959.
- [3] M. Eichler, *Quadratische Formen und orthogonale Gruppen*, Springer, 1952.
- [4] O. T. O'Meara, *Introduction to quadratic forms*, Springer, 1963.
- [5] E. Witt, Theorie der quadratischen Formen in beliebigen Körpern, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 176 (1937), 31–44.
- [6] C. L. Siegel, Über die analytische Theorie der quadratischen Formen I, II, III, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 36 (1935), 527–606; 37 (1936), 230–263; 38 (1937), 212–291 (Gesammelte Abhand-

lungen, Springer, 1966, vol. 1, 326–405, 410–443, 469–548).

[7] C. L. Siegel, On the theory of indefinite quadratic forms, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 45 (1944), 577–622. (Gesammelte Abhandlungen, Springer, 1966, vol. 2, 421–466.)

[8] E. Hecke, *Analytische Arithmetik der positiven quadratischen Formen*, Kgl. Danske Videnskab. Selskab, Mat.-Fys. Medd., XIII, 12 (1940). (Mathematische Werke, Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1959, 789–918.)

[9] G. L. Watson, *Integral quadratic forms*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1960.

[10] T. Tamagawa, Adèles, *Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math.*, 9 (1966), 113–121. For binary quadratic forms,

[11] P. G. L. Dirichlet, *Vorlesungen über Zahlentheorie*, Vieweg, fourth edition, 1894 (Chelsea, 1969).

349 (XIX.3) Quadratic Programming

A. Problems

A **quadratic programming problem** is a special type of mathematical programming (\rightarrow 264 Mathematical Programming) where the objective function is quadratic while the constraints are linear. A typical formulation of the problem is as follows.

(Q) Maximize $z = \mathbf{c}'\mathbf{x} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{x}'\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}$ under the condition $\mathbf{A}\mathbf{x} \leq \mathbf{b}$ and $\mathbf{x} \geq 0$, $\mathbf{x} \in \mathbf{R}^n$.

Let the Lagrangian form for this problem be

$$\phi(\mathbf{x}, \lambda) = \mathbf{c}'\mathbf{x} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{x}'\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} + \lambda'(\mathbf{b} - \mathbf{A}\mathbf{x}).$$

Then, from the general properties of Lagrangian forms, the following theorem can be proved.

Theorem: If $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}^*$ is an optimal solution of the problem (Q), there exists a vector λ^* satisfying the conditions

$$-\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}^* + \mathbf{c} \leq \lambda^*, \quad \lambda^* \geq 0;$$

$$\mathbf{b}'\lambda^* = (\mathbf{c} - \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}^*)'\mathbf{x}^*.$$

Moreover, if the matrix \mathbf{D} is nonnegative definite, the above conditions are also sufficient for $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}^*$ to be optimal. The second condition can be shown to be equivalent to

$$\lambda^*(\mathbf{b} - \mathbf{A}\mathbf{x}^*) = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \mathbf{x}^{*'}(\mathbf{A}'\lambda^* + \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}^* - \mathbf{c}) = 0.$$

By introducing the slack vectors $\mathbf{u} \geq 0$ and $\mathbf{v} \geq 0$, the conditions can be expressed as

$$\mathbf{x} \geq 0, \quad \mathbf{y} \geq 0, \quad \mathbf{u} \geq 0, \quad \mathbf{v} \geq 0;$$

$$(C) \quad \mathbf{A}\mathbf{x} + \mathbf{u} = \mathbf{b}, \quad \mathbf{A}'\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{v} = \mathbf{c};$$

$$\mathbf{y}'\mathbf{u} = 0, \quad \mathbf{x}'\mathbf{v} = 0.$$

When \mathbf{D} is nonnegative definite, any feasible solution of the above system of equalities gives an optimal solution of the primary problem (Q), and when \mathbf{D} is positive definite, the solution is unique. When \mathbf{D} is not nonnegative definite, the optimal solution of (Q), if it exists, is one of the feasible solutions of (C). The last line of (C) implies that the solution must be a basic solution of the linear system of equalities, and it also restricts the possible combinations of the basic variables. Since there exist only a finite number of possible combinations of the basic variables, the quadratic programming problem can be solved in a finite number of steps, if it has an optimal solution.

B. Duality

The **dual problem** of (Q) is the following.

(QD) Minimize $w = \mathbf{b}'\mathbf{y} + \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{x}'\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}$ under the condition $\mathbf{A}'\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} \geq \mathbf{c}$ and $\mathbf{x} \geq 0$, $\mathbf{y} \geq 0$.

If \mathbf{D} is nonnegative definite, the following theorem holds.

Theorem: If the primary problem (Q) has a solution $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}^*$, then the dual problem has a solution $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}^*$ and $\mathbf{y} = \mathbf{y}^*$, and $\max z = \min w$.

A more general form of the quadratic programming problem can be given as follows.

(Q) Maximize $z = \mathbf{c}'\mathbf{x} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{x}'\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}$ under the condition $\mathbf{x} \in V$ and $\mathbf{b} - \mathbf{A}\mathbf{x} \in W$, where V and W are closed convex cones in \mathbf{R}^n and \mathbf{R}^m , respectively.

Then the dual problem is expressed as follows.

(QD) Minimize $w = \mathbf{b}'\mathbf{y} - \frac{1}{2}\mathbf{x}'\mathbf{D}\mathbf{x}$ under the condition $\mathbf{x} \in V$, $\mathbf{y} \in W^*$ and $\mathbf{A}'\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{c} \in V^*$, where V^* and W^* are the dual cones of V and W .

The above theorem holds for both (Q) and (QD).

C. Algorithms

Various algorithms have been proposed for quadratic programming [1, 2, 4], most of which are based on condition (C). Wolfe [4] proposed a method based on the simplex method for linear programming. If we introduce the artificial vectors ξ and η , we can find a feasible solution of (C) by solving the following linear programming problem.

(LQ) Maximize $z = -1'\xi - 1'\eta$ under the condition that

$$\mathbf{A}\mathbf{x} + \mathbf{u} - \xi = \mathbf{b}, \quad \mathbf{A}'\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{D}\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{v} + \eta = \mathbf{c};$$

$$\mathbf{x} \geq 0, \quad \mathbf{y} \geq 0, \quad \mathbf{u} \geq 0, \quad \mathbf{v} \geq 0, \quad \xi \geq 0, \quad \eta \geq 0;$$

$$\mathbf{y}'\mathbf{u} = 0, \quad \mathbf{x}'\mathbf{v} = 0.$$

(LQ) can be solved by applying the simplex algorithm with the only modification being

that the last line of the condition restricts the possible changes in the basic variables. When D is positive definite, we can always obtain a solution if there is a feasible solution of the original problem, and Wolfe proposed a modification of the foregoing algorithm for the case when D is nonnegative definite that tells whether or not it has an optimal solution, and gives it if it has one. Some other algorithms are also effective when D is positive or nonnegative definite, but when D is not nonnegative definite, no simple effective method has been found to reach the optimal solution even when its existence has been established.

References

- [1] E. M. L. Beale, On quadratic programming, *Naval Res. Logistic Quart.*, 6 (1959), 227–243.
- [2] C. Hildreth, A quadratic programming procedure, *Naval Res. Logistic Quart.*, 4 (1957), 79–85.
- [3] W. S. Dorn, Duality in quadratic programming, *Quart. Appl. Mat.*, 18 (1960), 155–162.
- [4] P. Wolfe, The simplex method for quadratic programming, *Econometrica*, 27 (1959), 382–398.

350 (VI.10) Quadric Surfaces

A. Introduction

A subset F of a 3-dimensional Euclidean space E^3 is called a **quadric surface** (**surface of the second order** or simply **quadric**) if F is the set of zeros of a quadratic equation $G(x, y, z) = 0$, where the coefficients of G are real numbers. The equation $G(x, y, z) = 0$ is written as

$$ax^2 + by^2 + cz^2 + d + 2fyz + 2gzx + 2hxy + 2f'x + 2g'y + 2h'z = 0. \quad (1)$$

In general, a straight line intersects a quadric surface at two points. If it intersects the surface at more than two points, then the whole straight line lies on the surface. Suppose that we are given a quadric surface and a point O . Suppose further that we are given a straight line passing through the point O and intersecting the quadric surface at two points A and A' . If $AO = OA'$ for all such straight lines, then the point O is called the **center** of the quadric surface.

B. Classification

The subset defined by equation (1) may be empty; for example, $x^2 + y^2 + z^2 + 1 = 0$. In this article, we consider only quadric surfaces that are not the empty set. When a quadric surface F without singular points has a center or centers, we say that F is **central**.

If we choose a suitable rectangular coordinate system, the equation of a central quadric surface is written in one of the following forms:

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{b^2} + \frac{z^2}{c^2} = 1, \quad (2)$$

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{b^2} - \frac{z^2}{c^2} = 1, \quad (3)$$

$$-\frac{x^2}{a^2} - \frac{y^2}{b^2} + \frac{z^2}{c^2} = 1, \quad (4)$$

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{b^2} = 1, \quad (5)$$

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2} - \frac{y^2}{b^2} = 1, \quad (6)$$

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2} = 1. \quad (7)$$

When the equation takes the form (2), (3), (4), (5), or (6), we call the quadric surface an **ellipsoid**, **hyperboloid of one sheet**, **hyperboloid of two sheets**, **elliptic cylinder** (or **elliptic cylindrical surface**), or **hyperbolic cylinder** (**hyperbolic cylindrical surface**), respectively. When the equation takes the form (7), the surface coincides with a pair of parallel planes. If $a = b$ in (2), (3), (4), or (5), the surface is a surface of revolution with the z -axis as the axis of revolution. In this case, we call the surface an **ellipsoid of revolution**, **hyperboloid of revolution of one sheet**, **hyperboloid of revolution of two sheets**, or **circular cylinder** (or **circular cylindrical surface**), respectively. If $a = b = c$ for an ellipsoid of revolution, then the surface is a sphere with radius a .

If we choose a suitable rectangular coordinate system, the equation of a noncentral surface of the second order is written in one of the following forms:

$$2z = \frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{b^2}, \quad (8)$$

$$2z = \frac{x^2}{a^2} - \frac{y^2}{b^2}, \quad (9)$$

$$2z = \frac{x^2}{a^2}. \quad (10)$$

When the equation takes the form (8), (9), or (10), we call the surface an **elliptic paraboloid**, **hyperbolic paraboloid**, or **parabolic cylinder** (or **parabolic cylindrical surface**), respectively. If a

$=b$ in (8), the surface is called an **elliptic paraboloid of revolution**.

Among these, (2), (3), (4), (8), and (9) are sometimes called **proper quadric surfaces**, and the others **degenerate quadric surfaces**.

Equations (2)–(10) are called the **canonical forms of the equations** of these surfaces (a, b, c in canonical forms should not be confused with a, b, c in (1)). The planes $x=0$, $y=0$, and $z=0$ in surfaces (2), (3), and (4) and the planes $x=0$ and $y=0$ in surfaces (8) and (9) are called **principal planes** of the respective surfaces; and lines of intersection of principal planes are called **principal axes**. For a surface of revolution, positions of principal planes and principal axes are indeterminate. We call a, b, c in equations of canonical form the lengths of the principal axes, or simply the principal axes. If F is a hyperboloid of one sheet or a hyperbolic paraboloid, there are two systems of straight lines lying on F ; two straight lines belonging to the same system never meet (and are not parallel), and two straight lines belonging to different systems always meet (or are parallel). If F satisfies (3), these systems of straight lines are given by

$$\begin{cases} \frac{x}{a} - \frac{z}{c} = \lambda \left(1 - \frac{y}{b}\right) \\ \frac{x}{a} + \frac{z}{c} = \frac{1}{\lambda} \left(1 + \frac{y}{b}\right) \end{cases} \quad \begin{cases} \frac{x}{a} - \frac{z}{c} = \mu \left(1 + \frac{y}{b}\right) \\ \frac{x}{a} + \frac{z}{c} = \frac{1}{\mu} \left(1 - \frac{y}{b}\right) \end{cases}.$$

If F satisfies (9), then two such systems are given by

$$\begin{cases} \frac{x}{a} - \frac{y}{b} = \lambda \\ \frac{x}{a} + \frac{y}{b} = \frac{2z}{\lambda} \end{cases} \quad \begin{cases} \frac{x}{a} + \frac{y}{b} = \mu \\ \frac{x}{a} - \frac{y}{b} = \frac{2z}{\mu} \end{cases}$$

(λ and μ are parameters). We call these straight lines **generating lines** of the respective surfaces. A hyperboloid of one sheet and a hyperbolic paraboloid are **ruled surfaces** described by these generating lines.

When a quadric surface has singular points, they are double points. The set of double points of a quadric surface F is either a single point O , a straight line l , or a plane π . In the second case, F consists of two planes passing through l or l itself, and in the third case, F coincides with π . In the first case, we say that F is a **quadric conical surface** (or **quadric cone**) with vertex O . Its equation is written in the form $Ax^2 + By^2 + Cz^2 = 0$ ($ABC \neq 0$). When A, B, C are of the same sign, F consists of only one point O . Otherwise, we can assume that $A, B > 0, C = -1$. In this case, if $A = B$, F is called a **right circular cone**, and if $A \neq B$, F is called an **oblique circular cone**.

Given hyperboloids (3) and (4), we call the

quadric cones

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2} + \frac{y^2}{b^2} - \frac{z^2}{c^2} = 0 \quad (3')$$

and

$$-\frac{x^2}{a^2} - \frac{y^2}{b^2} + \frac{z^2}{c^2} = 0 \quad (4')$$

asymptotic cones of (3) and (4), respectively.

C. Poles and Polar Planes

Suppose that we are given a straight line S passing through a fixed point P not contained in a quadric surface F , and S intersects the surface at two points X, Y . The locus of the point Q that is the harmonic conjugate of P with respect to X and Y is a plane. We call this plane π the **polar plane** of P with respect to the quadric surface F , and P the **pole** of the plane π . If the polar plane of a point P contains a point Q , then the polar plane of Q contains P . In this case, we say that the two points P and Q are **conjugate** to each other with respect to the quadric surface. When the point P is on the quadric surface, the tangent plane at P is regarded as the polar plane of P . If the polar plane (with respect to a quadric surface) of each vertex of a tetrahedron is the face corresponding to that vertex, we call this tetrahedron a **self-polar tetrahedron**. If the polar planes (with respect to a quadric surface) of four vertices of a tetrahedron A are four faces of a tetrahedron B , the same property holds when we interchange A and B . We say that such tetrahedrons are **polar tetrahedrons** with respect to the quadric surface. Suppose that we are given a quadric surface and two planes. If the pole (with respect to the quadric surface) of one plane is on the other plane, these two planes are said to be **conjugate** with respect to the surface.

When we are given two pencils of planes in projective correspondence, the locus of lines of intersection of two corresponding planes is generally a hyperboloid of one sheet or a hyperbolic paraboloid. In particular, if the axes of these pencils of planes intersect, the locus is a quadric conical surface, and if the axes are parallel, the locus is a quadric cylindrical surface (i.e., an elliptic or hyperbolic cylinder). When there exists a projective correspondence between two straight lines not on a plane, the locus of lines joining corresponding points is a quadric surface (M. Chasles).

D. Surfaces of the Second Class

A surface F in E^3 is called a **surface of the second class** if it admits two tangent planes

passing through an arbitrary straight line L provided that $F \cap L = \emptyset$. This surface can be represented as the set of zeros of a homogeneous equation of the second order in \dagger plane coordinates u_1, u_2, u_3, u_4 . It is possible that a surface of the second class degenerates into a conic or two points. In general, quadrics are surfaces of the second class, and vice versa.

As in the case of quadrics, we can define poles, polar planes, and polar tetrahedrons with reference to surfaces of the second class. Four straight lines joining corresponding vertices of two tetrahedrons polar with respect to a surface of the second class are on the same quadric. We say that two such tetrahedrons are in **hyperboloid position**.

E. Confocal Quadrics

A family of central quadrics represented by the following equations is called a **family of confocal quadrics**:

$$\frac{x^2}{a+k} + \frac{y^2}{b+k} + \frac{z^2}{c+k} = 1, \quad a > b > c > 0, \quad (11)$$

where k is a parameter. For a quadric belonging to this family, any point on the ellipse $x^2/(a-c) + y^2/(b-c) = 1, z=0$ or the hyperbola $x^2/(a-b) - z^2/(b-c) = 1, y=0$ is called a **focus**. This ellipse and hyperbola are called **focal conics** of the quadric.

Given an ellipsoid F and a point $X(x, y, z)$ not contained in the principal plane, we can draw three quadrics F', F'', F''' passing through X and confocal with F . These surfaces F', F'', F''' intersect each other and are mutually perpendicular. One of them is an ellipsoid, another one a hyperboloid of one sheet, and the third a hyperboloid of two sheets. Let k_1, k_2, k_3 be the values of the parameter k in (11) corresponding to these three surfaces. Then the coordinates x, y, z of the point X are given by

$$x = \sqrt{\frac{(a+k_1)(a+k_2)(a+k_3)}{(b-a)(c-a)}},$$

$$y = \sqrt{\frac{(b+k_1)(b+k_2)(b+k_3)}{(a-b)(c-b)}},$$

$$z = \sqrt{\frac{(c+k_1)(c+k_2)(c+k_3)}{(a-c)(b-c)}}.$$

We call k_1, k_2, k_3 the **elliptic coordinates** of the point X .

Two points $(x, y, z), (x', y', z')$ are called **corresponding points** if they belong to confocal quadrics of the same kind,

$$\frac{x^2}{a} + \frac{y^2}{b} + \frac{z^2}{c} = 1,$$

$$\frac{(x')^2}{a+k} + \frac{(y')^2}{b+k} + \frac{(z')^2}{c+k} = 1,$$

and satisfy

$$\frac{x}{\sqrt{a}} = \frac{x'}{\sqrt{a+k}}, \quad \frac{y}{\sqrt{b}} = \frac{y'}{\sqrt{b+k}},$$

$$\frac{z}{\sqrt{c}} = \frac{z'}{\sqrt{c+k}}.$$

If $P_1, P_2; Q_1, Q_2$ are corresponding points, then $P_1 Q_2 = P_2 Q_1$ (J. Ivory).

F. Circular Sections

When the intersection of a plane and a quadric is a circle, the intersection is called a **circular section**. In general, circular sections are cut off by two systems of parallel planes through a quadric. The point of contact on the tangent plane parallel to these is an \dagger umbilical point of the quadric.

G. Quadric Hypersurfaces

A subset F of an n -dimensional Euclidean space E^n is called a **quadric hypersurface** (or simply **hyperquadric**) if it is the set of points (x_1, \dots, x_n) satisfying the following equation of the second degree:

$$\sum_{i,k=1}^n a_{ik} x_i x_k + 2 \sum_{i=1}^n b_i x_i + c = 0, \quad (12)$$

where a_{ik}, b_i, c are all real numbers. We can assume without loss of generality that the matrix $A = (a_{ik})$ is symmetric. Assume that A is not a zero matrix. In the case $n=2$, F is a conic, and in the case $n=3$, it is a quadric surface. The theory of classification of quadric surfaces can be generalized to the n -dimensional case as follows: Let $r(A^*) = r^*$ be the rank of the $(n+1) \times (n+1)$ matrix

$$A^* = \begin{bmatrix} a_{11} & \dots & a_{1n} & b_1 \\ & \dots & & \\ a_{n1} & \dots & a_{nn} & b_n \\ b_1 & \dots & b_n & c \end{bmatrix}$$

$$= \begin{bmatrix} & & & b_1 \\ & A & & \vdots \\ & & & b_n \\ b_1 & \dots & b_n & c \end{bmatrix},$$

and put $r(A) = r$. Then we have the following three cases: (I) $r = r^*$; (II) $r+1 = r^*$; and (III) $r+2 = r^*$. Corresponding to each case, equation (12) can be simplified (by a coordinate transformation in E^n) to the following canonical forms, respectively:

$$(I) \quad \sum_{i=1}^r \lambda_i x_i^2 = 0,$$

$$(II) \quad \sum_{i=1}^r \lambda_i x_i^2 + 1 = 0,$$

$$(III) \quad \sum_{i=1}^r \lambda_i x_i^2 + 2x_{r+1} = 0,$$

where $(\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_r, 0, \dots, 0)$ (with $n-r$ zeros) is proportional to the eigenvalues of the matrix A . In general, we have $1 \leq r \leq n$. In the cases where $r=n$ in forms (I) and (II) and $r+1=n$ in (III), the hypersurface is called a **properly $(n-1)$ -dimensional quadric hypersurface**, and in other cases, a **quadric cylindrical hypersurface**. In cases (I) and (II), the quadric cylindrical hypersurface is the locus of $(n-r)$ -dimensional subspaces passing through each point of a properly $(r-1)$ -dimensional quadric hypersurface and parallel to a fixed $(n-r)$ -dimensional subspace. In case (III), the quadric cylindrical hypersurface is the locus of $(n-r-1)$ -dimensional subspaces passing through each point of a properly r -dimensional quadric hypersurface and being parallel to a fixed $(n-r-1)$ -dimensional subspace. For form (I) with $\lambda_i > 0$ ($i=1, \dots, n$), a properly $(n-1)$ -dimensional quadric hypersurface reduces to a point in E^n ; for form (II) with $\lambda_i > 0$ ($i=1, \dots, n$) it becomes the empty set. Suppose that we are given a quadric hypersurface F that is neither a point nor empty. Then the system $\{\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_r\}$ associated with F in its canonical equation is unique up to order (and signature in form (III)). Suppose that we are given a quadric surface F and a point P on F . Suppose further that if a point X other than P is on F , then the whole straight line PX lies on F . In this case, the hypersurface is called a **quadric conical hypersurface** (or simply **quadric cone**). For example, for case (I), we can take $P=O$ (the origin), and the hypersurface is a quadric cone. In cases (I) and (II), the hypersurface is symmetric with respect to the origin. In these cases, a hypersurface is called a **central quadric hypersurface**, and in case (III), it is called a **noncentral quadric hypersurface** or **parabolic quadric hypersurface**. When we cut a parabolic quadric hypersurface by a (2-dimensional) plane containing the x_{n+1} -axis, the section is a parabola. If $\lambda_i < 0$ ($i=1, \dots, r$) in form (II), then the surface is called an **elliptic quadric hypersurface**, and if there are both positive and negative numbers among the λ_i , the surface is called a **hyperbolic quadric hypersurface**. The section of an elliptic quadric hypersurface by a plane is always an ellipse. The section of a hyperbolic quadric hypersurface by a plane is an ellipse, a hyperbola, or two straight lines. In general, the section of a quadric hypersurface by a subspace is a quadric hypersurface on that subspace.

H. Quadric Hypersurfaces in an Affine Space

In Section G we considered a quadric hypersurface defined by (12) in an n -dimensional Euclidean space E^n and transformed the equation to canonical form by an orthogonal

transformation of coordinates in E^n . If we regard E^n as an n -dimensional affine space over the real number field and reduce (12) to the simplest form by a coordinate transformation in the affine space, we have the following canonical forms corresponding to cases (I), (II), and (III) discussed in Section G:

$$(I) \quad (s, t): \sum_{i=1}^s x_i^2 - \sum_{j=s+1}^r x_j^2 = 0,$$

$$(II) \quad (s, t): \sum_{i=1}^s x_i^2 - \sum_{j=s+1}^r x_j^2 + 1 = 0,$$

$$(III) \quad (s, t): \sum_{i=1}^s x_i^2 - \sum_{j=s+1}^r x_j^2 + 2x_{r+1} = 0,$$

where $0 \leq s \leq r$ and $r-s=t$. The terms *properly $(n-1)$ -dimensional*, *cylindrical*, *conical*, *parabolic*, *elliptic*, and *hyperbolic* can be defined in terms of this affine classification. For example, a cone is of type (I), a parabolic hypersurface is of type (III), an elliptic hypersurface is of type (II) $(0, r)$, a hyperbolic hypersurface is of type (II) (s, t) $(s, t > 0)$, and type (II) $(s, 0)$ represents the empty set. A necessary and sufficient condition for a (nonempty) hypersurface to be represented by two canonical forms $N(s, t)$, $N'(s', t')$ is that (i) $N=N'$ and (ii) if $N=(I)$ or $N=(III)$, then $s=s'$, $t=t'$ or $s=t'$, $t=s'$, and if $N=(II)$, then $s=s'$, $t=t'$.

I. Quadric Hypersurfaces in a Projective Space

Suppose that we are given a field K of characteristic not equal to 2 and an n -dimensional projective space P^n over K . A subset F of P^n is called a **quadric hypersurface** (or simply **hyperquadric**) if F is represented by a homogeneous equation of the second degree $\sum_{i,k=0}^n a_{ik} x_i x_k = 0$, where (x_0, x_1, \dots, x_n) are homogeneous coordinates in P^n and $a_{ik} \in K$; $A=(a_{ik})$ is a nonzero symmetric matrix. The problem of classifying such surfaces is reduced to that of quadratic forms or, equivalently, to that of symmetric matrices in K . Two symmetric matrices A and B are equivalent if there exists a regular matrix T such that $B=TAT$ (\rightarrow 348 Quadratic Forms). In particular, when K is an algebraically closed field or a real closed field, a simple result is obtained. If K is an algebraically closed field, then the equation of the quadric hypersurface is reduced to the canonical form $\sum_{i=0}^r x_i^2 = 0$, where $r=r(A)$ is the rank of A . When K is a real closed field, then the canonical form is $\sum_{i=0}^s x_i^2 - \sum_{j=s+1}^r x_j^2 = 0$.

References

- [1] G. Salmon, A treatise on the analytic geometry of three dimensions, Hodges, Figgis & Co., seventh edition, 1928 (Chelsea, 1958).

- [2] G. Salmon and W. Fiedler, *Analytische Geometrie des Raumes I*, Teubner, fourth edition, 1898.
- [3] H. F. Baker, *Principles of geometry III, Solid geometry*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1922.
- [4] O. Schreier and E. Sperner, *Einführung in die analytische Geometrie und Algebra II*, Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1951; English translation, *Projective geometry of n -dimensions*, Chelsea, 1961.
- [5] M. Protter and C. Morrey, *Analytic geometry*, Addison-Wesley, 1975.

351 (XX.23) Quantum Mechanics

A. Historical Remarks

*Newtonian mechanics (classical mechanics) successfully explained the motion of mechanical objects, both celestial and terrestrial, on a macroscopic scale. It failed, however, to explain blackbody radiation, which was discovered in the last decade of the 19th century. M. Planck introduced a hypothesis of discrete energy quanta, each of which contains an amount of energy E equal to the frequency of the radiation ν multiplied by a universal constant h (called **Planck's constant**). He applied this hypothesis to derive a new formula for radiation that gives predictions in good agreement with observations. A. Einstein proposed the hypothesis of the photon as a particlelike discrete unit of light rays. Assuming that many physical quantities, including energy, have only discrete values, N. H. Bohr explained the stability of electronic states in atoms. As illustrated in these examples, **quantum mechanics** is applied to study the motion of microscopic objects, including molecules, atoms, nuclei, and elementary particles.

B. Quantum-Mechanical Measurement

Fundamental differences between the new mechanics and classical mechanics are due to the facts that many physical quantities, for example, energy, can take only discrete values in the microscopic world, and that states of microscopic objects are disturbed by observation.

A (pure) **state** at a certain time is expressed by a unit vector ψ in a †Hilbert space \mathcal{H} , and **observables**, or physical quantities, are expressed by †self-adjoint operators in such a space.

Let a_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) be †eigenvalues of an observable A , and let P_n be a †projection opera-

tor onto the eigenspace spanned by †eigenvectors belonging to the eigenvalue a_n . Suppose that $A = \sum_n a_n P_n$. Then the hypothesis on measurement in quantum mechanics is given as follows.

When an observable A is observed in a state ψ , one of the eigenvalues a_n is found with probability proportional to $(\psi, P_n \psi)^2$. When an eigenvalue a_n is once observed, a state jumps from ψ to an eigenstate $P_n \psi$ which belongs to the eigenvalue a_n . Quantum mechanics predicts only a probability p_n with which a certain value a_n is found when an observable A is observed. This probability, given by $(\psi, P_n \psi)$, is not changed even if ψ is replaced by $e^{i\theta} \psi$, $0 \leq \theta \leq 2\pi$. Therefore $e^{i\theta} \psi$ represents the same state as ψ . The set of $e^{i\theta} \psi$, $0 \leq \theta \leq 2\pi$, for a fixed ψ ($\|\psi\| = 1$) is called a **unit ray**.

If P_n is 1-dimensional and $P_n \varphi = \varphi$, $\|\varphi\| = 1$, then $(\psi, P_n \psi) = |(\psi, \varphi)|^2$ is called the **transition probability** between the two states.

The **expectation value** (or **expectation**) of an operator A in a state ψ , usually normalized to $(\psi, \psi) = 1$, is defined to be $\langle A \rangle = (\psi, A\psi) = \sum_n a_n p_n$.

A general self-adjoint operator A can be written as $A = \int \lambda dP(\lambda)$. When A is observed in a state ψ , the probability for a value to be found between λ_1 and λ_2 ($\lambda_2 > \lambda_1$; λ_2 included and λ_1 excluded if $P(\lambda)$ is right continuous) is $(\psi(P(\lambda_2) - P(\lambda_1)), \psi) \rightarrow 390$ Spectral Analysis of Operators).

The quantity $(\varphi, A\psi)$ is called the **matrix element** of A between the two states φ and ψ . A state ψ can be viewed as a functional $\psi(A) = \langle A \rangle$ on the set of all observables A (its value being the expectation), which is linear in A , positive in the sense $\psi(A^* A) \geq 0$ for any operator A , and normalized: $\psi(1) = 1$. If $0 \leq \lambda \leq 1$ and $\psi(A) = \lambda \psi_1(A) + (1 - \lambda) \psi_2(A)$ for all observables A , then the state ψ is called a **mixture** of states ψ_1 and ψ_2 with weights λ and $(1 - \lambda)$. If a state is not a nontrivial (i.e., $\lambda \neq 0, 1$, $\psi_1 \neq \psi_2$) mixture, it is called **pure**. The state $\langle A \rangle = (\psi, A\psi)$ on the set of all self-adjoint operators A given by a vector ψ is pure in this sense. If $\sup_x \psi(A_x) = \psi(A)$ whenever A_x is an increasing net of positive operators with A as its limit, then ψ is called **normal**. Any normal positive linear functional on the set of all self-adjoint operators can be described by a trace-class positive operator ρ , called the **density matrix**, as $\langle A \rangle = \text{tr}(A\rho)$. If $\{\psi_n\}$ is a complete orthonormal set, where each ψ_n is an eigenvector of ρ belonging to the eigenvalue λ_n , then $\langle A \rangle = \sum_n \lambda_n (\psi_n, A\psi_n)$.

C. Canonical Commutation Relations

In quantum mechanics, canonical variables are represented by the self-adjoint operators

Q_k (coordinates) and P_k (momenta), $k = 1, \dots, N$, which satisfy the **canonical commutation relations**

$$[Q_k, P_l] = i\hbar\delta_{kl}\mathbf{1},$$

where $\mathbf{1}$ is the identity operator, $[A, B]$ denotes the commutator $AB - BA$, $\hbar = h/(2\pi)$, and the relation is supposed to hold on a certain dense domain of vectors. Self-adjoint operators Q_k and P_k satisfying the above relations are unique up to quasi-equivalence under a suitable domain assumption, e.g., if $\sum_k Q_k^2 + \sum_k P_k^2$ is essentially self-adjoint on a dense domain invariant under multiplication of the Q 's and P 's and on which the above relations are satisfied. Under such an assumption, Q_k and P_k are unitarily equivalent to a direct sum of the **Schrödinger representation** on $L_2(\mathbb{R}^N, dx_1 \dots dx_N)$, where Q_k is multiplication by the k th coordinate x_k and P_k is the differentiation $-i\hbar(\partial/\partial x_k)$ (**Rellich-Dixmier theorem**).

The above Schrödinger representation is called the **position representation** (or q -representation). The formulation using the function space L_2 of real variables p_k , $k = 1, 2, \dots, N$, on which the operators P_k act as multiplications by p_k , is called the **momentum representation** (or p -representation).

If Hermitian operators A and B satisfy the canonical commutation relations in the form $(A\psi, B\psi) - (B\psi, A\psi) = i\hbar(\psi, \psi)$, then the following **Heisenberg uncertainty relation** holds for the expectation:

$$\langle (A - \langle A \rangle)^2 \rangle \langle (B - \langle B \rangle)^2 \rangle \geq \frac{\hbar^2}{4}.$$

This gives the **uncertainty** in observations, which means that two observables A and B cannot simultaneously be observed with accuracy. This is another important property of microscopic motion that cannot be found in macroscopic motion.

In a direct sum of the Schrödinger representation of the canonical commutation relations, the unitary operators

$$U(a) = \exp i \sum_k a_k Q_k, \quad V(b) = \exp i \sum_k b_k P_k$$

with real parameters a_k and b_k , $k = 1, \dots, N$, satisfy the following **Weyl form** of the canonical commutation relations:

$$U(a)U(a') = U(a+a'), \quad V(b)V(b') = V(b+b'),$$

$$U(a)V(b) = V(b)U(a)\exp\left(-i\sum_k a_k b_k\right).$$

Conversely, any pair of families of unitary operators $U(a)$ and $V(b)$ satisfying these relations and depending continuously on parameters a and b are unitarily equivalent to those obtained as above (**von Neumann uniqueness theorem**).

D. Time Evolution and the Schrödinger Equation

The time t of an observation is fixed in the foregoing discussion. A state changes, however, as the time t changes, in such a way that the transition probability between states is preserved. By Wigner's theorem (\rightarrow Section H), this time evolution of states can be implemented by unitary operators U_t defined by the transformation of vectors $\psi \rightarrow U_t \psi = \psi_t$. Furthermore, under some continuity assumption, such as that of $(\varphi, U_t \psi)$, U_t can be made a continuous one-parameter group. By Stone's theorem, $U_t = e^{-iHt/\hbar}$ for a self-adjoint operator H . This operator is called the **Hamiltonian operator** (or simply **Hamiltonian**) determined by the structure of a system. An infinitesimal change in ψ corresponding to an infinitesimal change in t can be generated by this operator H as follows:

$$i\hbar \frac{\partial \psi_t}{\partial t} = H\psi_t.$$

This equation is called the **time-dependent Schrödinger equation**.

A state ψ changes but observables do not change with time in the **Schrödinger picture** above. The other picture, known as the **Heisenberg picture**, is equally possible. In this picture, the state is expressed by a time-independent vector, while operators A vary with time as follows: $A \rightarrow U_t^* A U_t = A(t)$. Rates of change of operators $A(t)$ can be calculated by means of the equation

$$\frac{dA(t)}{dt} = \frac{i}{\hbar} [H, A(t)],$$

which is called the **Heisenberg equation of motion**. When time t changes, the expectation value of an operator A in a state ψ changes in both pictures according to

$$d\langle A \rangle / dt = i\langle [H, A] \rangle / \hbar.$$

According to classical analytical dynamics, a change of a dynamical quantity that is a function of canonical variables q_i (positions) and p_i (momenta) is given by

$$dA/dt = -(H, A),$$

where H is a \dagger Hamiltonian function and the parentheses $(\ , \)$ denote the \dagger Poisson bracket. A replacement of the Poisson bracket (A, B) by $[A, B]/i\hbar$ transforms this classical equation into the quantum-mechanical equation above. It should be noticed that the mathematical structure of the Poisson bracket is similar to that of commutator. In this transition from classical to quantum mechanics the **correspondence principle** can be used. This requires that the laws of quantum mechanics must lead

to the equations of classical mechanics in the classical situation, where many quanta are involved and \hbar can be regarded as infinitesimally small in the commutation relation. The correspondence principle suggests that Hamiltonian operators in quantum mechanics can be obtained from Hamiltonian functions $H(p_k, q_k)$ of canonical variables p_k and q_k in classical mechanics after replacing p_k and q_k by the operators P_k and Q_k in the Schrödinger representation (up to uncertainty of about the order of operators). This process of moving from canonical variables and the Hamiltonian function in classical mechanics to canonical operators and the Hamiltonian in quantum mechanics is called **quantization**. Taking a system of s particles and letting x_k, y_k , and z_k be the Cartesian coordinates of the k th particle, we usually write the equation of motion as

$$i\hbar \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t} = \left(- \sum_{k=1}^s \frac{\hbar^2}{2m_k} \Delta_k + V(x_1, y_1, z_1, \dots, x_s, y_s, z_s) \right) \psi,$$

which is a second-order partial differential equation. Here m_k is the mass of the k th particle; Δ_k is the Laplacian of x_k, y_k , and z_k ; and V is a real function called the potential energy. This equation is the time-dependent **Schrödinger equation**. The partial differential operator on the right-hand side is called the (s -body) **Schrödinger operator** and $\psi(x_1, y_1, z_1, \dots, x_s, y_s, z_s, t)$ is called a **wave function**. The probability of finding a particle in the volume $dx_k dy_k dz_k$ bounded by $x_k, x_k + dx_k, y_k, y_k + dy_k$, and $z_k, z_k + dz_k$ is proportional to $|\psi(x_1, y_1, z_1, \dots, x_s, y_s, z_s, t)|^2$. Usually $|\psi|^2$ is normalized so that its integral over the whole space is 1. We sometimes call ψ the **probability amplitude**. When ψ is given by $e^{-iEt/\hbar} \phi(x_1, \dots, z_s)$, the expectation value of an operator A in a state ψ , $\langle A \rangle = \int \psi^* A \psi dx_1 \dots dz_s$, does not depend on time. When this is the case, ψ is called a **stationary state**.

A real value E and a function $\phi(x_1, \dots, z_s)$ are found by solving an eigenvalue problem $H\phi = E\phi$. This equation is the **time-independent Schrödinger equation**, which is a second-order partial differential equation. Since the Hamiltonian H stands for the energy of this system, the eigenvalues E are the energy values that this system can take.

When a potential function V is given, it is a nontrivial matter to prove that the (s -body) Schrödinger operator with the given V is essentially self-adjoint on the set of, for example, all C^∞ -functions with compact supports so that its closure H defines mathematically the continuous one-parameter group of unitaries $U_t = e^{-iHt/\hbar}$ for the time evolution of the quan-

tum system of s particles with the given interaction potential V . If V satisfies an estimate $\|V\psi\| \leq \lambda \|H_0\psi\| + \mu \|\psi\|$ (called the **Kato perturbation** on H_0) for some nonnegative $\lambda < 1$ and $\mu \geq 0$ and for all ψ in a dense domain on which H_0 is essentially self-adjoint, where H_0 denotes the Schrödinger operator with $V=0$ (called the **free Hamiltonian** or the **kinetic energy** term), then $H_0 + V$ is essentially self-adjoint on the same domain. For the case where V consists of Coulomb interactions between electrons and Coulomb potentials on electrons by fixed nuclei, for example, such an estimate and hence the essential self-adjointness of Hamiltonians for atoms and molecules were established first by T. Kato (*Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 70 (1951)).

For a 1-body Schrödinger operator (or 2-body Schrödinger operator after the center of mass motion has been separated out), the point spectrum is that of the particle trapped by the potential, and the state represented by its eigenvector is called a **bound state**. The eigenvalue is nonpositive for a reasonable class of potentials V (for example, if $V(x)$ ($x \in \mathbb{R}^3$) is continuous and $O(|x|^{-1-\epsilon})$ as $|x| \rightarrow \infty$ for some $\epsilon > 0$), and its absolute value is called the **binding energy**. The eigensolutions of the Schrödinger equation are what have been called stationary states above.

There are also stationary solutions that do not correspond to the point spectrum and hence are not square integrable. They are used in the stationary methods of scattering theory (\rightarrow 375 Scattering Theory).

E. Some Exact Solutions for the 1-Body Schrödinger Equation

(1) **Harmonic oscillator**. First consider the case in which the space is of 1 dimension, so that the Laplacian Δ is $(d/dx)^2$. Let m be the mass of the particle and $V(x) = m\omega^2 x^2/2$ for a positive constant ω (called the **angular frequency**). The Hamiltonian

$$H = -(\hbar^2/2m)(d/dx)^2 + m\omega^2 x^2/2$$

has simple eigenvalues

$$E_n = \hbar\omega(n + (1/2)), \quad n = 0, 1, 2, \dots,$$

with a complete orthonormal set of eigenfunctions

$$\psi_n(x) = c_n H_n(q) e^{-q^2/2}, \quad q = (m\omega/\hbar)^{1/2} x,$$

where $H_n(q)$ is a Hermite polynomial and c_n is the normalization constant:

$$H_n(q) = \sum_{k=0}^{(n/2)} (-1)^k n! (2q)^{n-2k} / \{(n-2k)! k!\},$$

$$c_n = \{2^{2n} (n!)^2 \pi \hbar / (m\omega)\}^{-1/4}.$$

When the space is of r dimensions, n in E_n is replaced by $n_1 + \dots + n_r$, with nonnegative integers n_1, \dots, n_r , and the corresponding eigenfunction is $\prod_{j=1}^r \psi_{n_j}(x_j)$.

(2) **One-dimensional square-well potential.** Let $V(x) = V$ for $|x| \leq a/2$ and $V(x) = 0$ for $|x| > a/2$ ($x \in \mathbf{R}$). If $V \geq 0$, there are no point spectra. If $V < 0$ and

$$N - 1 < a(-2mV)^{1/2}/(\pi\hbar) \leq N,$$

then there are N eigenvalues ($N = 1, 2, \dots$) obtained as the roots $E < 0$ of one of the following equations:

$$\begin{aligned} \{(V/E) - 1\}^{1/2} &= \tan\{a(-2mE)^{1/2}/(2\hbar)\}, \\ \{(V/E) - 1\}^{1/2} &= -\cot\{a(-2mE)^{1/2}/(2\hbar)\}. \end{aligned}$$

(3) **Separation of angular dependence for central potential.** If $V(x)$ ($x \in \mathbf{R}^3$) depends only on $r = |x| = (\sum_{j=1}^3 (x_j)^2)^{1/2}$ (called a **central potential**), then all eigenvalues E and a basis for eigenfunctions $\psi(x)$ can be obtained in terms of the polar coordinate r, θ, φ ($x_1 = r \sin \theta \cos \varphi, x_2 = r \sin \theta \sin \varphi, x_3 = r \cos \theta$) as

$$\begin{aligned} \psi(x) &= Y_{lm}(\theta, \varphi) r^{-1} u(r), \\ -(\hbar^2/(2m))u''(r) + \{\hbar^2 l(l+1)/(2mr) \\ &\quad + V(r) - E\}u(r) = 0, \end{aligned}$$

$$\|\psi\| = \int_0^\infty |u(r)|^2 dr < \infty,$$

where the angular function Y_{lm} is an eigenfunction of the square \mathbf{L}^2 of the **orbital angular momentum** $\mathbf{L} = -i\mathbf{x} \times \nabla$:

$$\begin{aligned} Y_{lm} &= c_{lm} P_l^m(\cos \theta) e^{im\varphi}, \\ c_{lm} &= (-1)^m \{(2l+1)(l-m)!/(4\pi(l+m)!)\}^{1/2}, \\ m &= l, l-1, \dots, -l+1, -l, \quad l = 0, 1, 2, \dots \end{aligned}$$

Here $P_l^m(x)$ is an associated Legendre polynomial:

$$P_l^m(x) = (1-x^2)^{m/2} (d^{l+m}(x^2-1)^l/dx^{l+m})/(2^l l!).$$

The above equation for $u(r)$ is called the **radial equation**. The nonnegative integer l is the **azimuthal quantum number**, and the integer m is the **orbital magnetic quantum number**. The wave function $\psi(x)$ with the angular dependence $Y_{lm}(\theta, \varphi)$ is called the **S-wave, P-wave, D-wave, ...** according as $l = 0, 1, 2, \dots$.

(4) **Hydrogen-type atom.** Let $V(r) = -Ze^2/r$ ($Z > 0$). For each l and m , there are eigenvalues $-e^2 Z^2/(2an^2)$ with eigenfunctions $\psi_{nlm} = r^{-1} u_{nl}(r) Y_{lm}(\theta, \varphi)$, where $n = l+1, l+2, \dots$ is the **principal quantum number**,

$$\begin{aligned} u_{nl}(r) &= c_{nl} L_{n-l}^{(2l+1)}(s) s^{l+1} e^{-s/2}, \quad s = 2Zr/(na), \\ c_{nl} &= -\{(n-l-1)! [2Z/(na(n+l)!)]^3/(2n)\}^{1/2}, \end{aligned}$$

and $L_N^\mu(x)$ is the μ th derivative of the † Laguerre

polynomial

$$L_N(x) = \sum_{v=0}^N (N!)^2 (-x)^v / \{(N-v)!(v!)^2\}.$$

The eigenvalue is determined by n , and its multiplicity is n^2 , corresponding to the different possible values of l and m .

F. Path Integrals

R. P. Feynman (*Rev. Mod. Phys.*, 20 (1948)) has given the solution of the Schrödinger equation as an integral of $e^{iL/\hbar}$ over all possible paths $q(t)$, where $L = L(q, \dot{q})$ ($\dot{q} = (d/dt)q(t)$) is the classical Lagrangian for the Hamiltonian system. This integral is called the Feynman path integral. Mathematical reformulation of the formula in terms of the Wiener measure has been given by M. Kac (*Proc. 2nd Berkeley Symp. Math. Statist. Probability*, 1950; *Probability and related topics in the physical sciences*, Wiley, 1959).

Consider the 1-body Schrödinger operator $H = H_0 + V$ (form sum), where V is the sum of a locally integrable function bounded below and a Kato perturbation on H_0 . Let $b(t)$ ($t \geq 0$) be the Wiener process and $q(t) = \hbar b(t)/(2m)^{1/2}$. For any L_2 functions f ,

$$\begin{aligned} (e^{-tH/\hbar} f)(x) \\ = E \left(f(x + q(t)) \exp \left\{ - \int_0^t V(x + q(s)) ds / \hbar \right\} \right) \end{aligned}$$

for almost all x , where E denotes the expectation for the Wiener process. If V is a sum of L_2 and L_∞ functions (for spatial dimension ≤ 3), then the right-hand side is continuous in x for $t > 0$. This is called the **Feynman-Kac formula**.

Let L_0 be the Hamiltonian for a 1-dimensional harmonic oscillator with $m = \omega = \hbar = 1$ and ψ_0 be the eigenfunction $\psi_0(x) = \pi^{-1/4} \exp(-x^2/2)$. Consider $H = L_0 + V$ (form sum), where V is a sum of a locally integrable function bounded below and a Kato perturbation on L_0 . Let $q(t)$ ($t \in \mathbf{R}$) be Gaussian random variables with mean 0 and covariance $E(q(t)q(s)) = 2^{-1} \exp(-|t-s|)$ (called the **oscillator process**). For any $f_j(x)$ in $L_2(\mathbf{R}, \psi_0^2 dx)$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$) and $t_0 \leq t_1 \leq \dots \leq t_n \leq t_{n+1}$,

$$\begin{aligned} (\psi_0, e^{-(t_1-t_0)H} f_1 e^{-(t_2-t_1)H} f_2 \dots f_n e^{-(t_{n+1}-t_n)H} \psi_0) \\ = E \left(\left\{ \prod_{j=1}^n f_j(q(t_j)) \right\} \exp \left\{ - \int_{t_0}^{t_{n+1}} V(q(s)) ds \right\} \right). \end{aligned}$$

The above path integral formulas are closely related to the **Trotter product formula**

$$e^{-t(A+B)} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (e^{-tA/n} e^{-tB/n})^n \quad (t \geq 0),$$

where A and B are self-adjoint operators

bounded below and $A + B$ is essentially self-adjoint. (The same formula holds without the boundedness assumption when $t \in i\mathbf{R}$.)

G. The Dirac Equation

The Schrödinger equation is not relativistically invariant. The **Klein-Gordon equation**

$$(\square - \kappa^2)\psi = 0, \quad \square \equiv \Delta - \frac{1}{c^2} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial t^2}, \quad \kappa = \frac{mc}{\hbar}$$

is obtained by replacing p_k by $(\hbar/i)\partial/\partial x_k$ ($k = 1, 2, 3$) and E by $i\hbar\partial/\partial t$ in the relativistic identity

$$E^2 = m^2 c^4 + \mathbf{p}^2 c^2,$$

where c is the speed of light. Wave functions of free particles are believed to satisfy this equation. P. A. M. Dirac assumed that the ψ of a free electron is expressed in terms of a \dagger spinor with four components satisfying a linear differential equation that automatically implies the Klein-Gordon equation. Relativity requires the equal handling of space and time.

The **Dirac equation**

$$\sum_{\mu=0}^3 \gamma^\mu \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial x^\mu} + i\kappa \psi = 0 \quad (8)$$

($x^0 = ct$) satisfies these requirements. The coefficients γ^μ can be so determined that every component of ψ also satisfies the Klein-Gordon equation. Thus the γ^μ are found to be 4×4 matrices satisfying the commutation relations $\gamma^\mu \gamma^\nu + \gamma^\nu \gamma^\mu = 2g^{\mu\nu}$ ($\mu, \nu = 0, 1, 2, 3$), where $g^{\mu\nu} = 0$ for $\mu \neq \nu$ and $g^{00} = -g^{kk} = 1$ ($k = 1, 2, 3$). Sixteen linearly independent matrices are obtained by repeated multiplication of five matrices, which include the four matrices $\gamma^0, \gamma^1, \gamma^2, \gamma^3$ and the identity matrix. Any 4×4 matrix can be expressed as a linear combination of these sixteen matrices.

The Dirac equation has \dagger plane wave solutions

$$\psi(\mathbf{x}, t) = u \exp((i/\hbar)\mathbf{p} \cdot \mathbf{x} - (i/\hbar)Et),$$

where the energy eigenvalues E are

$$\pm \sqrt{m^2 c^4 + p^2 c^2}.$$

There are four independent eigensolutions $u^{(1)}, u^{(2)}, u^{(3)},$ and $u^{(4)}$, because u has four components. Two of them are of positive energy and the other two are of negative energy. Although the negative energy case is physically undesirable, it has to be taken into account in order to obtain a mathematically complete set. To solve this difficulty, Dirac proposed the hypothesis (**Dirac's hole theory**) that all the negative energy states are filled up by an infinite num-

ber of electrons in the normal state of the vacuum. The absence from the vacuum of a negatively charged electron in a negative energy state could then be expected to manifest itself as a positively charged particle (positron) with positive mass and kinetic energy. If gamma rays are absorbed to excite an electron from a negative energy state into a positive energy state, an electron-positron pair must be created. Y. Nishina and O. Klein calculated the cross section of Compton scattering (the **Klein-Nishina formula**) by use of the Dirac equation and found good agreement with observations, thus providing evidence that the Dirac equation is correct. The existence of negative energy states, however, forces us to give up considering the Dirac equation as an equation of one electron. The positron theory is introduced, and the Dirac equation is considered as the classical field of electron waves and is second-quantized (\rightarrow 377 Second Quantization).

The Klein-Gordon equation can also be considered to be the classical wave equation of matter and can be second-quantized. Motions of particles with zero spin, pi mesons (π) for example, obey this equation.

We can rewrite the Dirac equation as $i\hbar\partial\psi/\partial t = H\psi$, $H = c\boldsymbol{\alpha} \cdot \mathbf{p} + mc^2\beta$, where $\gamma^k = \beta\alpha_k$ ($k = 1, 2, 3$), and $\gamma^0 = \beta$. Since H cannot commute with the orbital angular momentum of an electron $\mathbf{L} = \mathbf{r} \times \mathbf{p} = -i\hbar\mathbf{r} \times \nabla$, \mathbf{L} is not conserved. However, the total angular momentum $\mathbf{J} = \mathbf{L} + (\hbar/2)\boldsymbol{\sigma}$ can be conserved when $\boldsymbol{\sigma}$ is a vector whose components can be given as $\begin{pmatrix} \sigma_k & 0 \\ 0 & \sigma_k \end{pmatrix}$, where $\beta = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$, $\alpha_k = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & \sigma_k \\ \sigma_k & 0 \end{pmatrix}$, and the σ_k , called **Pauli spin matrices**, are given by $\sigma_x = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}$, $\sigma_y = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i \\ i & 0 \end{pmatrix}$, $\sigma_z = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$. (The γ^μ are called **Dirac's γ matrices**.) The

quantity $\mathbf{S} = \frac{\hbar}{2}\boldsymbol{\sigma}$ is the **intrinsic angular momentum** of the electron, also called the **spin**. Many particles besides the electron, the neutron for example have spin. The matrix $\mathbf{S}^2 = S_x^2 + S_y^2 + S_z^2$ is diagonal and is equal to $s(s+1)\hbar^2 I$ (I is the identity matrix). For the electron $s = 1/2$, and $\hbar/2$ is called the absolute value of the spin. Therefore we say that electrons are particles of spin $\hbar/2$. This was predicted in the theory of light spectra.

When the speed of an electron is very small, so that $(v/c)^2$ can be neglected, states of the electron can be expressed in terms of two-component wave functions. This approximation is called the **Pauli approximation**. If the spin-orbit term that appears in the Pauli approximation is also neglected, these two components become independent of each

other and individually satisfy the Schrödinger equation.

H. Application of Representation Theory of Lie Groups

A **symmetry** (with active interpretation) is a bijective mapping of pure states (represented by unit rays in a Hilbert space) preserving transition probabilities between them.

Wigner's theorem says that any symmetry can be implemented by either a unitary or an antiunitary mapping of the underlying Hilbert space as a mapping of unit rays onto themselves. Furthermore a connected Lie group of symmetries is implemented by unitaries, which form a projective representation. Eigenstates ψ of the Schrödinger equation are functions of the coordinates of each particle. Let these coordinates be denoted together as x .

Suppose that an operator T operates on the x , as, for example, a rotation of the coordinate system or a permutation of the labels of the particles. If T commutes with H or H is invariant under the transformation $x \rightarrow x' = Tx$, then $T\psi(x) = \psi'(x) = \psi(T^{-1}x)$ satisfies the same Schrödinger equation as ψ , where the transformation of the function is defined by $\psi'(x) = \psi(x)$. The set of transformations $x \rightarrow x' = Tx$ forms a \dagger group $\{T\}$, and the corresponding transformations $\psi \rightarrow T\psi$ give a (generally infinite-dimensional) representation of this group, which should be \dagger unitary on L_2 -space relative to the Lebesgue measure dx if T leaves the measure invariant. There are **degeneracies** of the energy eigenvalues, each of which is equal to the dimension of the corresponding representation of the group $\{T\}$. If the representation for each eigenvalue is decomposed into irreducible ones, then the decomposed stationary state can be labeled by an \dagger irreducible representation.

When H is spherically symmetric, i.e., H is invariant under the 3-dimensional rotation group, states are classified by the irreducible representations D_L of the \dagger rotation group (\rightarrow 258 Lorentz Group). The square of the sum \mathbf{L} of all orbital angular momenta has eigenvalues $L(L+1)\hbar^2$, where L must be 0 or a positive integer. There are $2L+1$ degenerate states, each of which belongs to a different M , the z -component of \mathbf{L} , where M ranges from L to $-L$ by unit steps. Even when there is an interaction between the orbital angular momentum and the spin angular momentum, states are labeled by the irreducible representations D_J of the rotation group, where \mathbf{J} is the sum of the orbital angular momentum \mathbf{L} and the spin angular momentum \mathbf{S} ($\mathbf{J} = \mathbf{L} + \mathbf{S}$) and eigen-

values of \mathbf{J}^2 are given by $J(J+1)\hbar^2$. Each J must be zero, a positive integer, or a half-integer. Adding inversions to the pure rotations, we obtain the 3-dimensional orthogonal group (\rightarrow 60 Classical Groups I). Irreducible representations of this group are written as D_J^\pm , where \pm corresponds to the characters of the inversion relative to the origin. States with $+$ are called **even states** and those with $-$, **odd states**. For example, energy levels of atoms and nuclei can be classified by D_J^\pm .

To obtain matrix elements of observables between two stationary states, group representation theory is useful. The transformation of every observable obeys a certain rule under the transformation of coordinates. The scalar is transformed according to D_0^+ , the vector according to D_1^- , the pseudovector according to D_1^+ , and the traceless tensor according to D_2^+ . If the transformation of an observable is given by D_J , then a matrix element of this observable between the states belonging to $D_{J'}$ and $D_{J''}$ vanishes unless the tensor product representation $D_J \otimes D_{J'}$ contains as a factor a representation equivalent to $D_{J''}$. In electromagnetic transitions in atoms or nuclei, $D_1 \otimes D_{J'} = D_{J'+1} + D_{J'} + D_{J'-1}$ ($J' \geq 1$) if the electric dipole transition dominates ($J=1$). This implies the **selection rule** $J' \rightarrow J'+1, J', J'-1$. When $J'=0$, only the transition $0 \rightarrow 1$ is possible. More general selection rules can be obtained in the same way for general multipole transitions. Representation theory is useful in determining general formulas of transition strengths.

There is a class of particles, many of which can occupy the same state, called **bosons**. There is another class of particles, of which only one can occupy a given state, called **fermions**. For example, the electron, neutron, and proton are fermions, while the photon and pi meson are bosons. Two identical particles, both of which are either fermions of the same kind or bosons of the same kind, cannot be distinguished. Therefore the Hamiltonian should be invariant under permutations between identical fermions, or between identical bosons. A system consisting of N identical particles can be classified by the irreducible representations of the \dagger symmetric group S_N of N elements. When the particles are fermions, two of them cannot occupy the same state (this law is called the **Pauli principle**), so that only totally antisymmetric states are permissible for fermions. When a system consists only of fermions of the same kind with spin $\hbar/2$ and a Hamiltonian of this system does not include terms depending on spins, then the wave functions are just products of spin and orbital parts. In order to make wave functions totally

antisymmetric, orbital wave functions with a total spin $v/2$ should be limited to those corresponding to the \dagger Young diagram $[2^{N-v}, 1^v] = T(2, 2, \dots, 1, 1)$.

I. Polyatomic Molecules

The group generated by the 2-dimensional rotations about the axis connecting two atoms and the reflections with respect to the planes containing this axis is used to classify states of diatomic molecules. Stationary states can be classified by the absolute value Λ of the angular momentum of the diatomic system around this axis, which can be zero or a positive integer. When $\Lambda \geq 1$, the corresponding state has twofold degeneracy, whereas when $\Lambda = 0$, two states (labeled by \pm) arise, depending on the character of the reflections. If these two atoms are identical, the molecular states can be classified further as even and odd according to the character of reflections with respect to the plane containing the center of mass and perpendicular to the axis. The classification of the spectral terms of a polyatomic molecule is related to its symmetry, described by the set of all transformations that interchange identical atoms. For example, stationary states of methane molecules CH_4 are classified by the irreducible representations of the group T_d (which is generated by adjoining reflection symmetry to the \dagger tetrahedral group T). Level structures of a crystal are classified by the irreducible representations of its symmetry groups.

In the approximation of many-body problems by means of independent particles, the wave function of the total system is constructed by multiplying the wave functions of the individual particles. To construct such a wave function, it is useful to consider the reduction to irreducible parts of the \dagger tensor products of representations of the groups attached to the individual particles. For example, an atom with two electrons carrying the angular momenta J_1 and J_2 has $2J' + 1$ different angular momentum states, where $J' = \min(J_1, J_2)$ corresponding to the decomposition $D_{J_1} \otimes D_{J_2} = D_{J_1+J_2} + D_{J_1+J_2-1} + \dots + D_{|J_1-J_2|}$. The right-hand side of this equation gives all possible states of the atom.

J. Charge Symmetry

The proton and the neutron can be considered to be different states of the same particle, called the nucleon, because these two particles have very similar natures except for their charges, masses, etc. As an approximation, the Hamiltonian of a system consisting of protons

and neutrons may be taken to be invariant under the interchange of protons and neutrons. This invariance is called **charge symmetry**. Analogous to ordinary spin, **isospin** can be introduced to describe the two states of nucleons. The up state of the isospin corresponds to the proton and the down state corresponds to the neutron. Consider transformations belonging to the \dagger special unitary group $SU(2)$ in the 2-dimensional space spanned by the proton state and the neutron state. If a Hamiltonian of N nucleons is invariant under any transformation belonging to $SU(2)$, then the eigenstate of these N nucleons is classified by its irreducible representations D_T , where T stands for the total isospin of each state. This invariance, called **isospin invariance**, holds in the nucleus and elementary particles if electromagnetic and weak interactions, and possibly the interaction responsible for the proton-neutron mass difference, are neglected. When a state of N nucleons has an isospin $T = v/2$, the orbital-spin wave function of this state must correspond to the Young diagram $[2^{N-v}, 1^v]$, since the isospin wave function multiplied by the orbital-spin wave function is a totally antisymmetric wave function. If this Hamiltonian is also independent of spin, it is invariant under unitary transformations in the 4-dimensional space spanned by the four internal states of the nucleon: up and down spins, up and down isospins. Therefore the states of N nucleons can be classified by the irreducible representations of the group $U(4)$ (Wigner's **supermultiplet theory**).

K. The C^* -Algebra Approach

The uniqueness of operators satisfying the canonical commutation relations (representations of CCR's) up to quasi-equivalence (\rightarrow Section C) no longer holds if the number of canonical variables become infinite (a so-called system of infinitely many degrees of freedom), a point first emphasized by K. O. Friedrichs (*Mathematical aspects of the quantum theory of fields*, Interscience, 1953), and physical examples illustrating this point were given by L. van Hove (*Physica*, 18 (1952)) and R. Haag (*Mat. Fys. Medd. Danske Vid. Selsk.*, 29 (1955)). The use of C^* -algebras in physics was first advocated by I. E. Segal (*Ann. Math.*, 48 (1947)), and the physical relationship among all inequivalent representations of a C^* -algebra was first discussed by R. Haag and D. Kastler (*J. Math. Phys.*, 5 (1964)).

In C^* -algebra approach, a physical observable is an element of a C^* -algebra \mathfrak{A} and a state is a functional ϕ on \mathfrak{A} (its value $\phi(A)$ is

the expectation value of the observable $A \in \mathfrak{A}$ when measured in that state) that is linear, positive in the sense $\varphi(A^*A) \geq 0$ for any $A \in \mathfrak{A}$, and normalized, i.e., $\|\varphi\| = 1$ or equivalently $\varphi(1) = 1$ if $1 \in \mathfrak{A}$. The $^*\text{GNS}$ construction associates with every state φ a Hilbert space H_φ , a representation $\pi_\varphi(A)$, $A \in \mathfrak{A}$, of \mathfrak{A} by bounded linear operators on H_φ , and a unit cyclic vector Ω_φ in H_φ such that $\varphi(A) = (\Omega_\varphi, \pi_\varphi(A)\Omega_\varphi)$. Two states φ and ψ (or rather π_φ and π_ψ) are called disjoint if there is no nonzero mapping T from H_φ to H_ψ such that $T\pi_\varphi(A) = \pi_\psi(A)T$ for all $A \in \mathfrak{A}$. Abundant disjoint states occur for a system of infinitely many degrees of freedom, e.g., equilibrium states of a infinitely extended system with different temperatures (\rightarrow 402 Statistical Mechanics), superselection sectors explained below (\rightarrow 150 Field Theory) and equilibrium or ground states with broken symmetry.

Because actual measurement can be performed only on a finite number of observables (though chosen at will from an infinite number of possibilities) and only with nonzero experimental errors, information on any state φ can be obtained by measurements only up to a neighborhood in the weak topology: $|\varphi(A_i) - a_i| < \varepsilon_i$, $i = 1, \dots, n$. A set K_1 of states can describe measured information on states at least equally well as another set K_2 (K_1 **physically contains** K_2) if the closure of K_1 in the weak topology contains K_2 . From another viewpoint, all states of K_2 are weak limits of states in K_1 and are physically relevant if states in K_1 are physically relevant. The set of all mixtures of vector states $(\psi, \pi(A)\psi)$ for any fixed faithful representation π of \mathfrak{A} is weakly dense in the set of all states of \mathfrak{A} , a point emphasized by Haag and Kastler as a foundation of the algebraic viewpoint in the formulation of quantum theory.

Under 360° rotation a vector representing a state of a particle with spin $\hbar/2$ acquires a factor -1 (\rightarrow 258 Lorentz Group), while the vacuum vector would be unchanged. A nontrivial linear combination (superposition) of these two would then be changed to a vector in a different ray. If the 360° rotation is not to produce a physically observable effect, then we should either forbid nontrivial superpositions of states of the two classes or, equivalently, restrict observables to those leaving the subspace spanned by vectors in each class invariant so that the relevant linear combinations of vectors, when considered as states on the algebra of observables in the form of expectation functionals $(\psi, A\psi)$, are actually mixtures (rather than superpositions) of states in two classes and are invariant under the 360° rotation. This is called the **univalence superselection rule** and has been pointed out by A. S.

Wightman, G. C. Wick, and E. P. Wigner (*Phys. Rev.*, 88 (1952)).

In quantum field theory, the vacuum state can be taken to be pure (by central decomposition if necessary) and in the associated GNS representation (called the vacuum sector) all vectors can be assumed to be physically relevant pure states. In principle, all physically relevant information is in the vacuum representation; for example, a particle with spin $\hbar/2$ can also be discussed in the vacuum sector if we consider a state of this particle in the presence of its antiparticle at a far distance, such as behind the moon (the **behind-the-moon argument**). However, it is mathematically more convenient to consider the states of the particle without any compensating object (in the same way that an infinitely extended gas is more convenient for some purposes than a finitely extended gas surrounded by walls), which can be obtained as weak limits of states in the vacuum sector by removing the compensating particle to spatial infinity and which produce inequivalent representations called **superselection sectors**.

L. Foundation of Quantum Mechanics

Hilbert spaces and the underlying field of complex numbers, which constitute a mathematical background for quantum mechanics, are not immediately discernible from physical observations, and hence there are various attempts to find axioms for quantum mechanics that imply the usual mathematical structure and at the same time allow direct physical interpretation.

One approach of this kind focuses attention on the set of all observables that have only two possible measured values 1 (yes) and 0 (no), called **questions**, together with their order structure (logical implications) and associated lattice structure (join, meet, and orthocomplementation as logical sum, product, and negation). This is called **quantum logic** in contradistinction to the situation in classical physics, where it would form a Boolean lattice. The lattice of all orthogonal projections (corresponding to all closed subspaces of a Hilbert space) in quantum mechanics is a * complete, * orthocomplemented, **weakly modular** (also called **orthomodular**) * atomic lattice satisfying the **covering law**, where weak modularity means $c \wedge (c' \vee b) = b$ and $b \vee (b' \wedge c) = c$ whenever $b \leq c$, and the covering law means that every $b \neq 0$ possesses an atom p under it ($p \leq b$) and that if an atom q satisfies $q \wedge b = 0$, then any c between $q \vee b$ and b ($q \vee b \leq c \leq b$) is b or $q \vee b$. Conversely any such lattice is a di-

rect sum of irreducible ones, each of which, if of dimension (length of longest chain) > 3 , can be obtained as the lattice of subspaces V satisfying $(V^\perp)^\perp = V$ in a vector space over a (generally noncommutative) field with an anti-automorphic involution $*$, equipped with a nondegenerate Hermitian form. In this approach, an additional requirement is needed to restrict the underlying field and its $*$ to be more familiar ones, such as real, complex, or quaternion fields and their usual conjugations $*$. If that is done, then the set of all probability measures on the lattice (i.e., assignment of expectation values $0 \leq \mu(a) \leq 1$ for all elements a in the lattice such that $\mu(\bigvee_i a_i) = \sum_i \mu(a_i)$ if $a_i \perp a_j$ for all pairs $i \neq j$, $\mu(a) \geq 0$, $\mu(1) = 1$) is exactly the restriction to questions of states $\rho(A) = \text{tr}(\rho A)$ given by the density matrices ρ (**Gleason's theorem**).

It is also possible to characterize the set of all states equipped with the convex structure (mixtures) geometrically. The set of all states (without the normalization condition) of a finite-dimensional, formally real, irreducible \dagger Jordan algebra over the field of reals (the positivity of a state φ is defined by $\varphi(a^2) \geq 0$) has been characterized as a transitively homogeneous self-dual cone in a finite-dimensional real vector space (a cone V is transitively homogeneous if the group of all nonsingular linear transformations leaving V invariant is transitive on the topological interior of V) by E. B. Vinberg (*Trans. Moscow Math. Soc.*, 12 (1963); 13 (1965)), where the relevant Jordan algebras were completely classified earlier by P. Jordan, J. von Neumann, and E. P. Wigner (*Ann. Math.*, 36 (1934)) as direct sums of the following irreducible ones: the Jordan algebra (with the product $A \circ B = (AB + BA)/2$) of all Hermitian $n \times n$ matrices over the real, complex, or quaternion field, all 3×3 Hermitian matrices over octanions, or the so-called **spin balls** (the set of all normalized states being a ball) linearly generated by the identity and γ_j ($j = 1, \dots, n$) satisfying $\gamma_j \circ \gamma_k = 0$ if $j \neq k$ and $\gamma_j^2 = 1$.

In infinite-dimensional cases, this type of characterization extends to the "natural" positive cones of vectors (A. Connes, *Ann. Inst. Fourier*, 24 (1974); J. Bellissard and B. Iochum, *Ann. Inst. Fourier*, 28 (1978)); while the convex cone of all states (without normalization) of Jordan algebras and C^* -algebras have been characterized in terms of a certain class of projections associated with faces of the cone, called P -projections, by E. M. Alfsen, F. W. Shultz, and others (*Acta Math.*, 140 (1978); 144 (1980)). In finite-dimensional cases, Araki (*Commun. Math. Phys.*, 75 (1980)) has given a characterization allowing direct physical interpretation by replacing P -projection with a

notion of filtering corresponding to quantum-mechanical measurement.

Due to some features of quantum-mechanical measurement not in conformity with common sense, there have arisen **hidden variable theories** that are deterministic and reproduce the quantum-mechanical prediction. For a situation where a pair of (correlated) particles in states a and b are created and their spins (1 or -1 , i.e., up or down spin) measured at positions distant from each other, the expectation value $E(a, b)$ for the product would be given in a hidden variables theory

by $E(a, b) = \int A_a(\lambda) B_b(\lambda) d\rho(\lambda)$ for a probability measure ρ and the functions A_a and B_b of hidden variables λ , representing spins and hence satisfying $|A_a| \leq 1$ and $|B_b| \leq 1$. Then the following **Bell's inequality** holds:

$$|E(a, b) - E(a, b') + E(a', b) + E(a', b')| \leq 2.$$

This contradicts both quantum-mechanical predictions and experimental results, so that hidden variable theories of this type have been rejected.

References

- [1] P. A. M. Dirac, *Principles of quantum mechanics*, Clarendon Press, fourth edition, 1958.
- [2] A. Messiah, *Quantum mechanics I, II*, North-Holland, 1961, 1962. (Original in French, 1959.)
- [3] W. Pauli, *General principles of quantum mechanics*, Springer, 1980. (Original in German, 1958.)
- [4] S. Tomonaga, *Quantum mechanics I, II*, North-Holland, 1962–1966.
- [5] J. von Neumann, *Mathematical foundations of quantum mechanics*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1955. (Original in German, 1932.)
- [6] B. L. van der Waerden, *Sources of quantum mechanics*, Dover, 1967.
- [7] B. L. van der Waerden, *Group theory and quantum mechanics*, Springer, 1974.
- [8] H. Weyl, *The theory of groups and quantum mechanics*, Dover, 1949. (Original in German, 1928.)
- [9] E. P. Wigner, *Group theory and its application to the quantum mechanics of atomic spectra*, Academic Press, 1959.
- [10] B. Simon, *Functional integration and quantum mechanics*, Academic Press, 1979.
- [11] G. G. Emch, *Algebraic methods in statistical mechanics and quantum field theory*, Wiley, 1972.
- [12] T. Bastin (ed.), *Quantum theory and beyond*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1971.

[13] B. d'Espagnat, *Conceptual foundations of quantum mechanics*, Benjamin, second edition, 1976.

Also → references to 150 Field Theory, 375 Scattering Theory, 377 Second Quantization, and 386 S-Matrices.

352 (XI.15) Quasiconformal Mappings

A. History

H. Grötzsch (1928) introduced quasiconformal mappings as a generalization of conformal mappings. Let $f(z)$ be a continuously differentiable homeomorphism with positive Jacobian between plane domains. The image of an infinitesimal circle $|dz| = \text{constant}$ is an infinitesimal ellipse with major axis of length $(|f_z| + |f_{\bar{z}}|)|dz|$ and minor axis of length $(|f_z| - |f_{\bar{z}}|)|dz|$. When the ratio $K(z) = (|f_z| + |f_{\bar{z}}|)/(|f_z| - |f_{\bar{z}}|)$ is bounded, f is called **quasiconformal**. If $K \equiv 1$, then f is conformal. Grötzsch noticed that Picard's theorem still holds under the weaker condition; he determined the quasiconformal mappings between two given domains, which are not conformally equivalent to each other, providing the smallest sup K , that is, those closest to conformality [1].

We cannot speak of the history of quasiconformal mappings without mentioning the discovery of extremal length by A. Beurling and L. V. Ahlfors (→ 143 Extremal Length), which has led to the precise definition for quasiconformality itself.

Quasiconformal mappings have less rigidity than conformal mappings, and for this reason they have been utilized for the type problem or the classification of open Riemann surfaces (Ahlfors, S. Kakutani, O. Teichmüller, K. I. Virtanen, Y. Tôki; → 367 Riemann Surfaces). Quasiconformal mappings have important applications in other fields of mathematics, e.g., in the theory of partial differential equations of elliptic type (M. A. Lavrent'ev [2]) and especially in the problem of moduli of Riemann surfaces, including the theory of Teichmüller spaces (→ 416 Teichmüller Spaces). These applications are explained in Sections C and D.

B. Definitions

The current definitions of quasiconformality, which dispense with continuous differentiability, are due to Ahlfors [3], A. Mori [4], and

L. Bers [5] (→ C. B. Morrey [6]). Consider an orientation-preserving topological mapping f of a domain D on the $z (= x + iy)$ -plane. The quasiconformality of f is defined as follows. (1) (the geometric definition) Let Q be a curvilinear quadrilateral, i.e., a closed Jordan domain with four specified points on the boundary, and let the interior of Q be mapped conformally onto a rectangular domain I . The ratio (≥ 1) of the sides of I , called the modulus of Q and denoted by $\text{mod } Q$, is uniquely determined. If $\text{mod } f(Q) \leq K \text{ mod } Q$ for any curvilinear quadrilateral Q in D , then f is called a **K -quasiconformal mapping** of D . This is equivalent to: (2) (the analytic definition) f is absolutely continuous on almost every line segment parallel to the coordinate axes contained in D (this condition is often referred to as ACL in D) and satisfies the inequality $|f_{\bar{z}}| \leq \frac{K-1}{K+1} |f_z|$

almost everywhere in D with some constant $K \geq 1$. When the value of K is irrelevant to the problem considered, K -quasiconformal mappings are simply said to be quasiconformal.

The K -quasiconformal mapping f satisfies the so-called **Beltrami differential equation**

$$f_{\bar{z}} = \mu f_z$$

almost everywhere in D with the measurable coefficient μ . The **maximal dilatation** $(1 + \|\mu\|_{\infty})/(1 - \|\mu\|_{\infty})$ does not exceed K . Sometimes f is called, for short a μ -conformal mapping. These notions are also defined for mappings between * Riemann surfaces, where the $(-1, 1)$ -form $\mu d\bar{z} dz^{-1}$ is independent of the choice of the local parameter z .

If in the above statements f is not necessarily topological but merely a continuous function satisfying the same requirements, we call it a **μ -conformal function**. (If in addition $\|\mu\|_{\infty} < (K-1)/(K+1)$, we call it a **K -quasiregular function** or **K -pseudanalytic function**.) A μ -conformal function is represented as the composite $g \circ h$ of an analytic function g with a μ -conformal mapping h .

C. Principal Properties and Results

The inverse mapping of a K -quasiconformal mapping is also K -quasiconformal. The composite mapping $f_2 \circ f_1$ of a K_1 -quasiconformal mapping f_1 with a K_2 -quasiconformal mapping f_2 , if it can be defined, is $K_1 K_2$ -quasiconformal. A 1-quasiconformal mapping is conformal. Every quasiconformal mapping is * totally differentiable a.e. (almost everywhere), its Jacobian is positive a.e., and $(|f_z| + |f_{\bar{z}}|)/(|f_z| - |f_{\bar{z}}|) \leq K$ a.e.

Let f be a K -quasiconformal mapping of $|z| < 1$ onto $|w| < 1$. Then f extends to a homeo-

morphism of $|z| \leq 1$ onto $|w| \leq 1$. If, furthermore, $f(0) = 0$, then the Hölder condition

$$\left(\frac{|z_1 - z_2|}{16} \right)^K \leq |f(z_1) - f(z_2)| \leq 16|z_1 - z_2|^{1/K}$$

holds for $|z_1| \leq 1$, $|z_2| \leq 1$, and 16 is the best coefficient obtainable independently of K (Mori). This shows that any family of K -quasiconformal mappings of $|z| < 1$ onto $|w| < 1$ is * normal. For further properties and bibliography \rightarrow O. Lehto and Virtanen [7] and Ahlfors [8].

(a) Boundary Correspondences and Extensions.

Ahlfors and Bcurling characterized the correspondence between $|z| = 1$ and $|w| = 1$ induced by f [9]. What amounts to the same thing, the following theorem holds: Let $\mu(x)$ be a real-valued monotone increasing continuous function on R such that $\lim_{x \rightarrow \pm\infty} \mu(x) = \pm\infty$. Then there exists a quasiconformal mapping of the upper half-plane $y > 0$ onto itself with boundary correspondence $x \mapsto \mu(x)$ if and only if

$$\frac{1}{\rho} \leq \frac{\mu(x+t) - \mu(x)}{\mu(x) - \mu(x-t)} \leq \rho$$

for some constant $\rho \geq 1$ and for all $x, t \in \mathbf{R}$.

Theorem of quasiconformal reflection (Ahlfors [10]). Let L denote a curve which passes through ∞ and divides $\mathbf{C} \cup \{\infty\}$ into two domains Ω, Ω^* such that $\Omega \cup L \cup \Omega^* = \mathbf{C} \cup \{\infty\}$. Then there exists an orientation-reversing quasiconformal mapping of Ω onto Ω^* which keeps every point of L fixed if and only if some constant C exists satisfying $|\zeta_3 - \zeta_1|/|\zeta_2 - \zeta_1| \leq C$ for any three points $\zeta_1, \zeta_2, \zeta_3$ on L such that $\zeta_3 \in \widehat{\delta_1 \zeta_2}$.

(b) Mapping Problem. Given a measurable function μ in a simply connected domain D with $\|\mu\|_\infty < 1$, there exists a μ -conformal mapping of D onto a plane domain Δ which is unique up to conformal mappings of Δ [8]. When μ is real analytic and the derivatives of functions are defined in the usual manner, a classical result concerning the * conformal mapping of surfaces asserts the existence of a solution of Beltrami's differential equation $f_{\bar{z}} = \mu f_z$.

Concerning the dependence of μ -conformal mapping on μ , Ahlfors and Bers [11] obtained the following important result: Denote by f^μ a μ -conformal mapping of the whole finite plane onto itself that preserves 0 and 1. The space of functions μ has the structure of a Banach space with L_∞ -norm, and the space of mappings f^μ also has the structure of a Banach space with respect to a suitable norm. If $\{\mu(t) = \mu(z; t)\}$ is a family of μ depending on the parameter t with $\|\mu(t)\|_\infty \leq k < 1$ and $\mu(t)$ is

continuous (resp. continuously differentiable, real analytic, complex analytic) in t , then $f^{\mu(t)}$ is also continuous (continuously differentiable, real analytic, complex analytic). For the proofs of these important results, which have opened up a new way to study * Teichmüller space, the extension and reflection of quasiconformal mappings are made essential use of.

(c) Extremal Quasiconformal Mappings. Let $K(f)$ denote the maximal dilatation of a quasiconformal mapping f . Suppose that a family $\mathcal{F} = \{f\}$ of quasiconformal mappings is given. If some $f_0 \in \mathcal{F}$ exists such that $K(f_0)$ attains the infimum of $K(f)$ for all $f \in \mathcal{F}$, then f_0 is called an **extremal quasiconformal mapping** in \mathcal{F} .

Let $R = \{(x, y) | 0 < x < a, 0 < y < b\}$, $R' = \{(x', y') | 0 < x' < a', 0 < y' < b'\}$ be a pair of rectangular domains. Let \mathcal{F} be the family of all quasiconformal mappings of R onto R' which map each vertex to a vertex with $(0, 0) \mapsto (0, 0)$. Then the unique extremal quasiconformal mapping for \mathcal{F} is the affine mapping $x' = (a'/a)x$, $y' = (b'/b)y$ (Grötzsch [1]).

Next suppose that we are given two homeomorphic closed Riemann surfaces R, S and a * homotopy class \mathcal{F} of orientation-preserving homeomorphisms of R onto S . Then \mathcal{F} contains a unique extremal quasiconformal mapping. More precisely, either R and S are conformally equivalent to each other or else R admits an essentially unique analytic $(2, 0)$ -form Φ such that the respective local coordinates z, w of R, S satisfy the differential equation

$$(\partial w / \partial \bar{z}) / (\partial w / \partial z) = [(K - 1)/(K + 1)] \bar{\Phi} / \Phi \quad (1)$$

with some constant $K > 1$ everywhere on R , at which $\Phi \neq 0$ (Teichmüller [12], Ahlfors [3]). This turns out to be a generalization of Grötzsch's extremal affine mapping. The extremal mapping f satisfying equation (1) is sometimes referred to as the **Teichmüller mapping**.

Consider again a μ -conformal mapping g of the unit disk $D: |z| < 1$ onto itself which induces a topological automorphism of the boundary $|z| = 1$. If we define \mathcal{F} as the family of all quasiconformal automorphisms f of D satisfying $f(e^{i\theta}) = g(e^{i\theta})$, then the extremal quasiconformal mapping in \mathcal{F} exists but is not always determined uniquely (K. Strebel [13]). As to the Teichmüller mapping, the uniqueness theorem is as follows: If the norm $\|\Phi\| = \iint_D |\Phi(z)| dx dy$ of Φ in (1) is finite, the Teichmüller mapping is the unique extremal quasiconformal mapping in \mathcal{F} . Otherwise, the uniqueness does not hold in general (Strebel [13]). On the other hand, a necessary and sufficient condition is proved for the Beltrami

coefficient μ of a quasiconformal mapping of \mathcal{F} to be extremal (R. S. Hamilton [14], E. Reich and Strebel in [15]). Moreover, this last result can be extended to the extremal quasiconformal mapping between arbitrary Riemann surfaces.

D. Applications

In the earlier stage of development of this theory, quasiconformal mappings were applied only to the type problem of simply connected Riemann surfaces and to the classification of Riemann surfaces of infinite genus (\rightarrow 367 Riemann Surfaces). This application is based on the fact that it is often possible to find a quasiconformal mapping with the prescribed boundary correspondence even when no equivalent conformal mapping exists and the fact that the classes O_G and O_{HD} (\rightarrow 367 Riemann Surfaces) of Riemann surfaces are invariant under quasiconformal mappings, as they are under conformal mappings.

It is worth remarking that the investigation of quasiconformal mappings is intimately connected with the recent development of the theory of Kleinian groups via Teichmüller spaces.

The theory of quasiconformal mappings was also applied by Lavrent'ev [16] and Bers [2] to partial differential equations, particularly to those concerning the behavior of fluids. They utilized the fact that if the density and its reciprocal are bounded in a steady flow of a 2-dimensional compressible fluid, then the mapping of the physical plane to the potential plane (the plane on which the values of the velocity potential and the stream function are taken as coordinates) is quasiconformal, and that if in addition the supremum of the Mach number is smaller than 1, then the mapping from the physical plane to the hodograph plane is pseudoanalytic.

E. Similar Notions

The term *quasiconformal* was used differently by Lavrent'ev, as follows: A topological mapping $f = u + iv$ is called **quasiconformal** with respect to a certain system of linear partial differential equations when u and v satisfy the system. This is a generalized definition because the system may not be equivalent to a Beltrami equation. However, it is reduced to a quasiconformal mapping if the system is uniformly elliptic. Bers used the term **pseudo-analytic** to describe a certain function related to linear partial differential equations of elliptic type. This function is pseudoanalytic in the sense of Section B on every relatively

Quasiconformal Mappings

compact subset and has properties similar to those of analytic functions.

Analytic transformations in the theory of functions of several variables are called pseudoconformal by some mathematicians, and there is a similar term *quasi-analytic*. The latter is an entirely different notion from the one discussed in this article.

F. Generalization to Higher Dimensions

Let f be a continuous ACL-mapping of a subdomain G of \mathbf{R}^n into \mathbf{R}^n whose Jacobian matrix is denoted by $f'(x)$. Furthermore, the operator norm and the determinant of f' are denoted by $\|f'\|$ and $\det f'$, respectively. Then f is said to be quasiregular if all the partial derivatives of f are locally of class L^n on G and if there exists a constant $K \geq 1$ such that $(\|f'\|(x))^n \leq K \cdot \det f'(x)$ almost everywhere in G . The smallest $K \geq 1$ for which this inequality is true is called the outer dilatation of f and is denoted by $K_o(f)$. If f is quasiregular, then the smallest $K \geq 1$ for which the inequality $\det f'(x) \leq K \cdot [\min_{|y|=1} |f'(x+y)|]^n$ holds almost everywhere in G is called the inner dilatation of f and is denoted by $K_i(f)$. If $\max(K_i(f), K_o(f)) \leq K'$, then f is said to be K' -quasiregular. An orientation-preserving mapping is called K -quasiconformal (J. Väisälä [17]) if it is a K -quasiregular homeomorphism. When $n=2$, these definitions agree with those given in Section B.

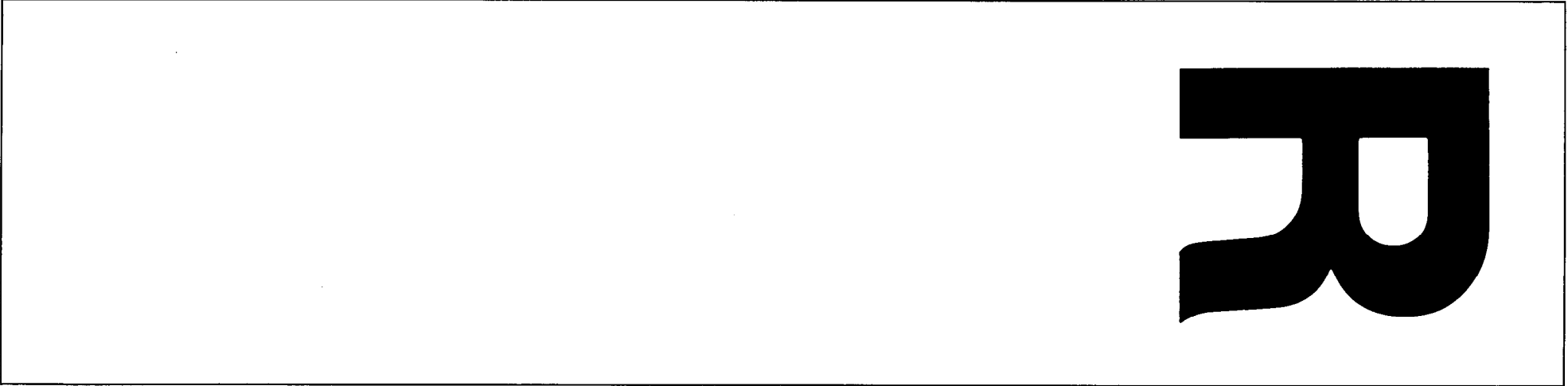
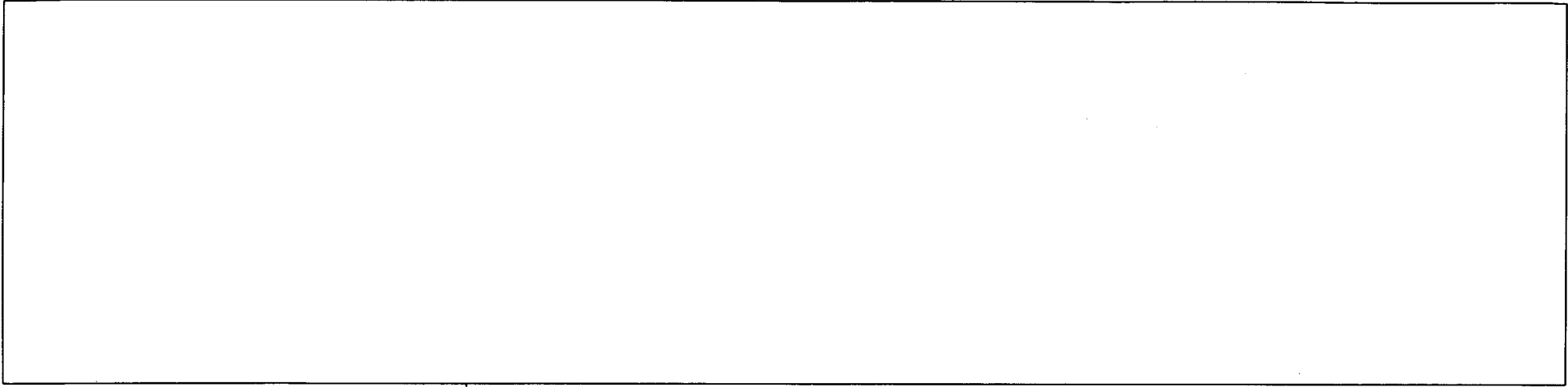
For $n \geq 3$ the following properties also still hold: A quasiregular mapping is discrete, open, totally differentiable a.e. and is absolutely continuous (O. Martio, S. Rickman, and Väisälä [18]). Quasiconformal extension of higher-dimensional half-spaces have been studied by Ahlfors and L. Carleson [15].

References

- [1] H. Grötzsch, Über möglichst konforme Abbildungen von schlichten Bereichen, Ber. Verh. Sächs. Akad. Wiss. Leipzig, 84 (1932), 114–120.
- [2] M. A. Lavrent'ev, Variational methods for boundary value problems for systems of elliptic equations, Noordhoff, 1963. (Original in Russian, 1962.)
- [3] L. V. Ahlfors, On quasiconformal mappings, J. Analyse Math., 3 (1954), 1–58, 207–208.
- [4] A. Mori, On quasi-conformality and pseudo-analyticity, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 84 (1957), 56–77.
- [5] L. Bers, On a theorem of Mori and the definition of quasi-conformality, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 84 (1957), 78–84.

Quasiconformal Mappings

- [6] C. B. Morrey, On the solutions of quasi-linear elliptic partial differential equations, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 43 (1938), 126–166.
- [7] O. Lehto and K. I. Virtanen, *Quasikonforme Abbildungen*, Springer, 1965; English translation, *Quasiconformal mappings in the plane*, Springer, second edition, 1973.
- [8] L. V. Ahlfors, *Lectures on quasiconformal mappings*, Van Nostrand, 1966.
- [9] A. Beurling and L. V. Ahlfors, The boundary correspondence under quasiconformal mappings, *Acta Math.*, 96 (1956), 125–142.
- [10] L. V. Ahlfors, Quasiconformal reflections, *Acta Math.*, 109 (1963), 291–301.
- [11] L. V. Ahlfors and L. Bers, Riemann's mapping theorem for variable metrics, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 72 (1960), 385–404.
- [12] O. Teichmüller, Extremale quasikonforme Abbildungen und quadratische Differentiale, *Abh. Preuss. Akad. Wiss. Math.-Nat. Kl.*, 22 (1939), 1–197.
- [13] K. Strebel, Zur Frage der Eindeutigkeit extremaler quasikonformer Abbildungen des Einheitskreises, *Comment. Math. Helv.*, 36 (1962), 306–323; 39 (1964), 77–89.
- [14] R. S. Hamilton, Extremal quasiconformal mappings with prescribed boundary values, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 138 (1969), 399–406.
- [15] L. V. Ahlfors et al., *Contributions to analysis*, Academic Press, 1974.
- [16] L. Bers, *Mathematical aspects of subsonic and transonic gas dynamics*, Wiley, 1958.
- [17] J. Väisälä, *Lectures on n -dimensional quasiconformal mappings*, Lecture notes in math. 229, Springer, 1971.
- [18] O. Martio, S. Rickman, and J. Väisälä, Definitions for quasiregular mappings, *Ann. Acad. Sci. Fenn.*, 448 (1969), 1–40.
- [19] L. Bers, A new proof of a fundamental inequality for quasiconformal mappings, *J. Analyse Math.*, 36 (1979), 15–30.



353 (XX.25) Racah Algebra

A. General Remarks

Racah algebra is a systematic method of calculating the \dagger matrix element $(\psi, A\psi)$ in \dagger quantum mechanics, where A is a dynamical quantity and ψ and ψ' are irreducible components of the state obtained by combining n \dagger angular momenta. The angular momentum \mathbf{j} has x -, y -, z -components j_x, j_y, j_z , respectively. Each component is i times the infinitesimal rotation around the respective axis and is the generator of the infinitesimal rotation for every irreducible component ψ . The addition of two angular momenta leads to a \dagger tensor representation $D(j_1) \otimes D(j_2)$ of two \dagger irreducible representations of the 3-dimensional rotation group. The problem is to decompose this tensor representation into the direct sum of irreducible representations.

B. Irreducible Representations of the Three-Dimensional Rotation Group

Irreducible representations of the group $SO(3)$ of 3-dimensional rotations can be obtained from irreducible representations $D(j)$ ($j = 0, 1, 2, \dots$) of its \dagger universal covering group $SU(2)$ of 2×2 matrices with determinant 1, through the 2-fold covering isomorphism $SO(3) \cong SU(2)/\{\pm I\}$ (\rightarrow 60 Classical Groups I). The representation $D(j)$ ($j = 0, 1/2, 1, 3/2, \dots$) of $SU(2)$ is the $2j$ -fold tensor product $A \otimes \dots \otimes A$ of $A \in SU(2)$ restricted to the totally symmetric part of the $2j$ -fold tensor product space. Let $u = \begin{pmatrix} 1 \\ 0 \end{pmatrix}$ and $v = \begin{pmatrix} 0 \\ 1 \end{pmatrix}$ be a basis for the complex 2-dimensional space on which $SU(2)$ operates. The symmetrized tensor product of $(j+m)$ -fold u and $(j-m)$ -fold v multiplied by a positive normalization constant ($m = j, j-1, \dots, -j$) defines an orthonormal basis of the representation space of $D(j)$, which we shall denote by $\psi(jm)$.

Decomposition of the tensor product of two irreducible representations $D(j_1)$ and $D(j_2)$ into irreducible components leads to

$$D(j_1) \otimes D(j_2) = \sum D(j),$$

$$j = j_1 + j_2, \quad j_1 + j_2 - 1, \dots, |j_1 - j_2|.$$

For the basis we can write

$$\psi(jm) = \sum_{m_1, m_2} \psi(j_1 m_1) \psi(j_2 m_2) (j_1 m_1 j_2 m_2 | j_1 j_2 jm),$$

and the coefficients are called the **Clebsch-Gordan coefficients** or **Wigner coefficients**. The vectors $\psi(jm)$ in each irreducible representation

space are determined only up to an overall phase factor (a complex number of modulus 1). By a suitable choice of the resulting arbitrary phase (which may depend on j_1, j_2, j), the coefficients are given by

$$j_1 + j_2 \geq j \geq |j_1 - j_2|,$$

$$(j_1 m_1 j_2 m_2 | j_1 j_2 jm) = \delta(m_1 + m_2, m)$$

$$\times \sqrt{\frac{(2j+1)(j_1+j_2-j)!(j+j_1-j_2)!(j+j_2-j_1)!}{(j_1+j_2+j+1)!}}$$

$$\times \sum_v \left((-1)^v \frac{\sqrt{(j_1+m_1)!(j_1-m_1)!(j_2+m_2)!}}{v!(j_1+j_2-j-v)!(j_1-m_1-v)!} \right.$$

$$\times \left. \frac{\sqrt{(j_2-m_2)!(j+m)!(j-m)!}}{(j_2+m_2-v)!(j-j_2+m_1+v)!(j-j_1-m_2+v)!} \right).$$

They satisfy \dagger orthogonality relations. Another concrete expression for the same coefficients, but of a different appearance, was obtained earlier by Wigner. Wigner introduced the $3j$ -symbol, given by

$$\begin{pmatrix} j_1 j_2 j_3 \\ m_1 m_2 m_3 \end{pmatrix} = (-1)^{j_1-j_2-m_3} (2j_3+1)^{-1/2}$$

$$\times (j_1 m_1 j_2 m_2 | j_1 j_2 j_3 -m_3)$$

for $m_1 + m_2 + m_3 = 0$ and zero otherwise. This is invariant under cyclic permutations of 1, 2, 3 and is multiplied by $(-1)^{j_1+j_2+j_3}$ under transpositions of indices as well as under the simultaneous sign change of all the m 's. The $3j$ -symbol multiplied by $(-1)^{j_2+j_3-j_1}$ is the V -coefficient of Racah.

There are two ways, $(D(j_1) \otimes D(j_2)) \otimes D(j_3)$ and $D(j_1) \otimes (D(j_2) \otimes D(j_3))$, to reduce the tensor product of three irreducible representations, and two corresponding sets of basis vectors. The transformation coefficient for the two ways of reduction is written in the form

$$\langle j_1 j_2 (j_{12}) j_3; j | j_1 j_2 j_3 (j_{23}); j \rangle$$

$$= \sqrt{(2j_{12}+1)(2j_{23}+1)} W(j_1 j_2 j_3; j_{12} j_{23}).$$

Here $W(abcd; ef)$, called the **Racah coefficient**, can be written as the sum of products of four Wigner coefficients. W has the following symmetry properties:

$$W(abcd; ef) = W(badc; ef)$$

$$= W(cdab; ef)$$

$$= W(acbd; fe)$$

$$= (-1)^{e+f-a-d} W(efbc; ad)$$

$$= (-1)^{e+f-b-c} W(aefd; bc)$$

and satisfies an orthogonality relation. The $6j$ -symbol $\begin{Bmatrix} a & b & c \\ d & e & f \end{Bmatrix}$ is related to the Racah coefficient by

$$W(abdc; ef) = (-1)^{a+b+c+d} \begin{Bmatrix} a & b & e \\ c & d & f \end{Bmatrix}.$$

C. Irreducible Tensors

A dynamical quantity T_q^k ($q = k, k-1, \dots, -k$) that transforms in the same way as the basis of $D(k)$ under rotation of coordinates is called an **irreducible tensor of rank k** . That is, it satisfies

$$[j_x \pm ij_y, T_q^k] = \sqrt{(k \mp q)(k \pm q + 1)} T_{q \pm 1}^k,$$

$$[j_z, T_q^k] = q T_q^k.$$

Here $[a, b] = ab - ba$. The matrix element of this quantity between two irreducible components can be written in the form

$$\begin{aligned} & (\alpha j m | T_q^k | \alpha' j' m') \\ &= (1/\sqrt{2j+1}) (\alpha j || T^{(k)} || \alpha' j') (j' m' k q | j k j m), \end{aligned}$$

where α is a parameter to distinguish multiple components with the same j , and components of different α are assumed to be orthogonal. In this formula the Clebsch-Gordan coefficients are determined from group theory, while $(\alpha j || T^{(k)} || \alpha' j')$ depends on the dynamics of the system.

When $T^{(k)}$ and $U^{(k)}$ operate only on the state vectors in the subspaces H_1 and H_2 , respectively, of the total space (\dagger Hilbert space) $H = H_1 \times H_2$, their scalar product $(T^{(k)}, U^{(k)}) = \sum_q (-1)^q T_q^k U_q^k$ has the matrix element

$$\begin{aligned} & (\alpha_1 \alpha_2 j_1 j_2 j m | (T^{(k)}, U^{(k)}) | \alpha'_1 \alpha'_2 j'_1 j'_2 j m) \\ &= (-1)^{j_1 + j_2 - j} W(j_1 j_2 j'_1 j'_2; j k) \\ & \quad \times (\alpha_1 j_1 || T^{(k)} || \alpha'_1 j'_1) (\alpha_2 j_2 || U^{(k)} || \alpha'_2 j'_2). \end{aligned}$$

For an irreducible component of the tensor product of two irreducible tensors,

$$\begin{aligned} & [T^{(k_1)} \otimes U^{(k_2)}]_q^k \\ &= \sum_{q_1 + q_2 = q} T_{q_1}^{k_1} U_{q_2}^{k_2} (k_1 q_1 k_2 q_2 | k_1 k_2 k q), \end{aligned}$$

the matrix can be written as

$$\begin{aligned} & (\alpha j_1 j_2 j || [T^{(k_1)} \otimes U^{(k_2)}]^{(k)} || \alpha' j'_1 j'_2 j') \\ &= \sqrt{(2k+1)(2j+1)(2j'+1)} \\ & \quad \times \sum_{q''} (\alpha j_1 || T^{(k_1)} || \alpha'' j'_1) (\alpha'' j_2 || U^{(k_2)} || \alpha' j'_2) \\ & \quad \times \left\{ \begin{matrix} j_1 & j_2 & j \\ j'_1 & j'_2 & j' \\ k_1 & k_2 & k \end{matrix} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

The last factor, the **9j-symbol**, is defined as the matrix element between basis vectors of $[D(j_1) \times D(j_2)] \times [D(j_3) \times D(j_4)]$ and $[D(j_1) \times D(j_3)] \times [D(j_2) \times D(j_4)]$:

$$\begin{aligned} & \langle j_1 j_2 (j_{12}) j_3 j_4 (j_{34}) j m | j_1 j_3 (j_{13}) j_2 j_4 (j_{24}) j m \rangle \\ &= \sqrt{(2j_{12}+1)(2j_{34}+1)(2j_{13}+1)(2j_{24}+1)} \\ & \quad \times \left\{ \begin{matrix} j_1 & j_2 & j_{12} \\ j_3 & j_4 & j_{34} \\ j_{13} & j_{24} & j \end{matrix} \right\}. \end{aligned}$$

The $9j$ -symbol can be written as a weighted sum of the products of the three W 's.

See [6] and [7] for explicit formulas of Clebsch-Gordan coefficients and [8] for Racah coefficients.

References

- [1] E. P. Wigner, Group theory and its application to the quantum mechanics of atomic spectra, Academic Press, 1959.
- [2] M. E. Rose, Elementary theory of angular momentum, Wiley, 1957.
- [3] U. Fano and G. Racah, Irreducible tensorial sets, Academic Press, 1959.
- [4] A. R. Edmonds, Angular momentum in quantum mechanics, Princeton Univ. Press, 1959.
- [5] F. Bloch, S. G. Cohen, A. De-Shalit, S. Sambutsky, and I. Talmi, Spectroscopic and group-theoretical methods in physics (Racah memorial volume), North-Holland, 1968.
- [6] E. U. Condon and G. H. Shortley, Theory of atomic spectra, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1935 (reprinted with corrections, 1951).
- [7] M. Morita, R. Morita, T. Tsukada, and M. Yamada, Clebsch-Gordan coefficients for $j_2 = 5/2, 3$, and $7/2$, Prog. Theoret. Phys., Suppl., 26 (1963), 64-74.
- [8] L. C. Biedenharn, J. M. Blatt, and M. E. Rose, Some properties of the Racah and associated coefficients, Rev. Mod. Phys., 24 (1952), 249-257.

354 (XVI.5) Random Numbers

A. General Remarks

A sequence of numbers that can be regarded as realizations of independent and identically distributed random variables is called a sequence or table of **random numbers**. It is a basic tool for the \dagger Monte Carlo method, \dagger simulation of stochastic phenomena in nature or in society, and \dagger sampling or \dagger randomization techniques in statistics. Random numbers used in practice are pseudorandom numbers (\rightarrow Section B); theoretically, the definition of random numbers leads to an algorithmic approach to the foundations of probability [1, 2].

B. Pseudorandom Numbers

Tables of numbers generated by random mechanisms have been statistically tested and

published. To generate random numbers on a large scale, electronic devices based on stochastic physical phenomena, such as thermoelectron noise or radioactivity, can be used. For digital computers, however, numbers generated by certain simple algorithms can be viewed practically as a sequence of random numbers; this is called a sequence of **pseudorandom numbers**.

Distribution of random numbers that are easily generated and suitable for general use is the continuous uniform distribution on the interval $(0, 1)$, which is approximated by the discrete distribution on $\{0, 1, \dots, N-1\}$ ($N \gg 1$). Random numbers with distribution function $F(\cdot)$ are obtained by transforming uniform distributions by $F^{-1}(\cdot)$. For typical distributions, computation tricks avoiding the direct computation of $F^{-1}(\cdot)$ have been devised. Among them the use of t -order statistics and acceptance-rejection techniques have wide applicability.

For the generation of uniform pseudorandom numbers on $\{0, 1, \dots, N-1\}$, $N = n^s$ ($n = a$ computer word length), the following algorithms are used. Each of them is written in terms of simple computer instructions. (1) The **middle-square method** was proposed by von Neumann. We square an integer of s digits of radix (or base) n and take out the middle s digits as the next term. We repeat this process and obtain a sequence of pseudorandom numbers. The sequence thus generated might be cyclic with a short period, possibly after many repetitions. The lengths from initial values to the terminal cycles are empirically checked. (2) The t -Fibonacci sequence $\{u_n\}$ defined by $u_{k+1} \equiv u_{k-1} + u_k \pmod{n^s}$ is apparently regular, but it is uniformly distributed. (3) The **congruence method** [3]: Define a sequence by $u_{k+1} \equiv au_k + c \pmod{n^s}$ or $\pmod{n^s \pm 1}$. If $c = 0$, the procedure is called the multiplicative congruence method, otherwise the mixed congruence method. The cycle, that is, the minimum k such that $u_k = u_0$, and the constants a , c , and u_0 that make the cycle maximum for given n and s are determined by number theory. The points $(u_{kl}, u_{kl+1}, \dots, u_{kl+l-1})$, $k = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, lie on a small number of parallel hyperplanes in the l -dimensional cube. Good choice of the constant a makes the sequence quite satisfactory. (4) H. Weyl considered sequences $f(k) = k\alpha \pmod{1}$, where α is an irrational number and $k = 1, 2, \dots$, whose values are uniformly distributed on the interval $(0, 1)$. They are not independent, though they can be used for some special purposes. A modified sequence $x_k = k^2 \alpha \pmod{1}$ is known to be random for any irrational α in the sense that the t -serial correlation $N^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^N x_k x_{k+l} - 1/4$ converges to 0 uniformly in l as $N \rightarrow \infty$.

C. Statistical Tests

To check uniform random numbers on $(0, 1)$ the following tests are used: (1) Divide $(0, 1)$ into subintervals; then the frequency of random numbers falling into these is a multinomial sample. t -Goodness of fit can be tested by the t -chi-square test; independence can be tested by observing the frequency of transitions of subintervals in which a pair of consecutive numbers falls, as well as by observing the overall properties, such as uniformity of the frequency of patterns of subintervals in which a set of random numbers falls. (2) For a set of random numbers, the distance of the empirical distribution function from that of the theoretical one is tested by the t -Kolmogorov-Smirnov test. (3) Observe the rank orders of a set of random numbers, and test the randomness of their permutations (test the number of runs up and down).

D. Kolmogorov-Chaitin Complexity and Finite Random Sequences

As Shannon's entropy is a quantity for measuring the randomness of random variables, the Kolmogorov-Chaitin complexity [4, 5] is that of individual objects based on logic instead of probability. For constructive objects $x \in X$, $y \in Y$ and a partial recursive function $A: Y \times \{1, 2, \dots\} \rightarrow X$, define

$$K_A(x|y) = \begin{cases} \min(\log_2 n | A(y, n) = x), \\ \infty \quad (\text{if } A(y, n) = x \text{ for no } n). \end{cases}$$

The function A is said to be **asymptotically optimal** if for any B there exists a constant C such that $K_A(x|y) \leq K_B(x|y) + C$ for any $x \in X$ and $y \in Y$. For an asymptotically optimal A , which is known to exist, $K_A(x|y)$ is simply denoted by $K(x|y)$ and is called the **Kolmogorov-Chaitin complexity** of x given y .

P. Martin-Löf [6] discussed a relation between complexity and randomness. Consider any statistical test for the randomness on the set of (say) finite decimal sequences which is effective in the sense that it has a finite algorithm. Then there exists a constant C independent of L and M such that

$$K(\xi_1, \dots, \xi_L | L) \geq L \log_2 10 - M$$

implies the acceptance of the decimal sequence ξ_1, \dots, ξ_L by the test at the level $1 - 2^{-M-C}$. This condition on the complexity is satisfied by at least $(1 - 2^{-M})10^L$ sequences among the decimal sequences of length L .

E. Collective and Infinite Random Sequences

For finite sequences, the notion of randomness is obscure by nature. For infinite sequences,

however, clearer definition is possible. Based on the notion of collectives by R. von Mises, a definition of infinite random sequences has been given by A. Church [7]. A **selection function** is a $\{0, 1\}$ -valued function on the set of (say) finite decimal sequences such that $\{n, \varphi(\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_{n-1}) = 1\}$ is an infinite set for any infinite sequence ξ_1, ξ_2, \dots . For a selection function φ and an infinite sequence ξ_1, ξ_2, \dots , the φ -**subsequence** is defined as $\xi_{n_1}, \xi_{n_2}, \dots$, where $\{n_1 < n_2 < \dots\} = \{n, \varphi(\xi_1, \dots, \xi_{n-1}) = 1\}$. For a class ψ of selection functions, an infinite decimal sequence is called a ψ -**collective** if each of the numbers 0, 1, ..., 9 appears in it with a limiting relative frequency of $1/10$, and the same thing holds for any φ -subsequence with $\varphi \in \psi$. By definition, a **random sequence** is a ψ -collective for the class ψ of recursive selection functions. Almost all real numbers are random in their decimal expansions.

F. Normal Numbers

Let $x - [x] = \sum x_n r^{-n}$ be the r -adic expansion of the fractional part of a real number x . For any ordered set $B_k = (b_1, \dots, b_k)$ of numbers 0, 1, ..., $r-1$, let $N_n(x, B_k)$ be the number of occurrences of the block B_k in the sequence x_1, \dots, x_n . If $N_n(x, B_k)/n \rightarrow r^{-k}$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$ for every k and every B_k , then x is said to be **normal** to base r . Almost all real numbers are normal to any r . D. G. Champernowne [8] constructed a normal number given by the decimal expansion 0.1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, 12, 13, No one has so far been able to prove or disprove the normality of such irrational numbers as π , e , $\sqrt{2}$, $\sqrt{3}$, W. Schmidt [9] proved that the normality to base r implies the normality to base p if and only if $\log r / \log p$ is rational. A real number whose decimal expansion is random in the above sense is normal to base 10. For the converse, a necessary and sufficient condition for a selection function φ (for which $\varphi(\xi_1, \dots, \xi_L)$ depends only on L) to have the property that the normality implies the $\{\varphi\}$ -collectiveness has been obtained in [10].

References

- [1] D. E. Knuth, The art of computer programming II, second edition, Addison-Wesley, 1981, ch. 3.
- [2] E. R. Sovey, A second classified bibliography on random number generation and testing, *Int. Statist. Rev.*, 46 (1978), 89–102.
- [3] D. H. Lehmer, Mathematical methods in large-scale computing units, *Proc. 2nd Symp. on Large-Scale Digital Calculating Machinery*, Harvard Univ. Press, 1951, 141–146.

355 A Real Numbers

- [4] A. N. Kolmogorov, Logical basis for information theory and probability theory, *IEEE Trans. Information Theory*, IT-14 (1968), 662–664.
- [5] G. J. Chaitin, Algorithmic information theory, *IBM J. Res. Develop.*, 21 (1977), 350–359.
- [6] P. Martin-Löf, The definition of random sequences, *Information and Control*, 9 (1966), 602–619.
- [7] A. Church, On the concept of a random sequence, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 47 (1940), 130–135.
- [8] L. Kuipers and H. Niederreiter, *Uniform distribution of sequences*, Wiley-Interscience, 1974.
- [9] W. Schmidt, On normal numbers, *Pacific J. Math.*, 10 (1960), 661–672.
- [10] T. Kamae, Subsequences of normal sequences, *Israel J. Math.*, 16 (1973), 121–149.

355 (II.10) Real Numbers

A. Axioms for the Real Numbers

The set \mathbf{R} of all **real numbers** has the following properties:

(1) **Arithmetical properties:** (i) For each pair of numbers $x, y \in \mathbf{R}$, there exists one and only one number $w \in \mathbf{R}$, called their **sum** and denoted by $x + y$, for which $x + y = y + x$ (commutative law) and $(x + y) + z = x + (y + z)$ (associative law) hold. Furthermore, there exists a unique number 0 (**zero**) such that $x + 0 = x$ for every $x \in \mathbf{R}$ (existence of \dagger zero element). Also, for each x , there exists one and only one number $-x \in \mathbf{R}$ for which $x + (-x) = 0$. (ii) For each pair of numbers $x, y \in \mathbf{R}$, there exists one and only one number $w \in \mathbf{R}$, called their **product** and denoted by xy , for which $xy = yx$ (commutative law), $(xy)z = x(yz)$ (associative law), and $(x + y)z = xz + yz$ (distributive law) hold. Furthermore, there exists a unique number 1 (**unity**) $\in \mathbf{R}$ such that $1x = x$ for every $x \in \mathbf{R}$ (existence of \dagger unity element). Also, for each $x \neq 0$ ($x \in \mathbf{R}$) there exists one and only one number $x^{-1} \in \mathbf{R}$ for which $xx^{-1} = 1$. Owing to properties (i) and (ii), all \dagger four arithmetic operations obey the usual laws (with the single exception of division by zero); in other words, \mathbf{R} is a \dagger field.

(2) **Order properties:** (i) For each $x, y \in \mathbf{R}$, one and only one of the following three relations holds: $x < y$, $x = y$, or $x > y$. With $x \leq y$ meaning $x < y$ or $x = y$, the relation \leq obeys the transitive law: $x \leq y$ and $y \leq z$ imply $x \leq z$, which makes \mathbf{R} \dagger totally ordered. (ii) **Order and**

arithmetical properties are related by: $x \leq y$ implies $x + z \leq y + z$ for any $z \in \mathbf{R}$, and $x \leq y$ and $0 \leq z$ imply $xz \leq yz$; in other words, \mathbf{R} is an \dagger ordered field.

In particular, $x \in \mathbf{R}$ with $x > 0$ is called a **positive number**, and $x \in \mathbf{R}$ with $x < 0$ a **negative number**. We write $|x| = x$ if $x \geq 0$ and $|x| = -x$ if $x < 0$, and call $|x|$ the **absolute value** of x .

(3) Continuity property: If nonempty subsets A and B of \mathbf{R} , with $a < b$ for each pair $a \in A$ and $b \in B$, satisfy $\mathbf{R} = A \cup B$ and $A \cap B = \emptyset$ (empty set), then the pair (A, B) of sets is called a **cut** of \mathbf{R} . For each cut (A, B) of \mathbf{R} , there exists a number $x \in \mathbf{R}$ (necessarily unique) such that for every $a \in A$, $a \leq x$, and for every $b \in B$, $b \geq x$ (i.e., $x = \sup A = \inf B$). This property of \mathbf{R} is called **Dedekind's axiom of continuity** (\rightarrow 294 Numbers).

The set \mathbf{R} of all real numbers is determined uniquely up to an isomorphism, with respect to arithmetic operations and ordering, by properties (1)–(3). \mathbf{R} forms an additive Abelian group; its subgroup $\{0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots, \pm n, \dots\}$ generated by 1 can be identified with the group \mathbf{Z} of integers. The subset of all positive integers $\{1, 2, \dots, n, \dots\}$ may be identified with the set \mathbf{N} of all natural numbers. The subset $\{m/n \mid m, n \in \mathbf{Z}, n \neq 0\}$ of \mathbf{R} forms the subfield of \mathbf{R} generated by 1. It can be identified with the field \mathbf{Q} of all rational numbers. A real number that is not rational is called an **irrational number**.

B. Properties of Real Numbers

(1) For each pair of positive numbers a and $b > a$, there exists a natural number n with $a < nb$ (**Archimedes' axiom**).

(2) For each pair of positive real numbers a and b with $a < b$, there exists a rational number x such that $a < x < b$ (**denseness of rational numbers**).

(3) For any subset A in \mathbf{R} \dagger bounded from above (below), the \dagger least upper bound of A : $a = \sup A$ (\dagger greatest lower bound of A : $b = \inf A$) exists.

Let $\{a_n\}$ be a \dagger sequence of real numbers. Assume that for each arbitrary positive number ε there exists a number n_0 such that $|a_n - b| < \varepsilon$ for all $n > n_0$. Then we write $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_n = b$ (or $a_n \rightarrow b$) and call b the **limit** of $\{a_n\}$. We also say that $\{a_n\}$ is a **convergent sequence** or that a_n **converges** to b .

(4) If for two sequences $\{a_n\}, \{b_n\}$, we have $a_1 \leq a_2 \leq \dots \leq a_n \leq \dots \leq b_n \leq \dots \leq b_1$ and $\lim(b_n - a_n) = 0$, then there exists one and only one number $c \in \mathbf{R}$ with $\lim a_n = \lim b_n = c$ (**principle of nested intervals**).

(5) Let $\{a_n\}$ be a sequence of real numbers.

If for any arbitrary positive ε there exists a natural number n_0 satisfying $|a_m - a_n| < \varepsilon$ for all $m, n > n_0$, then $\{a_n\}$ is called a **fundamental sequence** or **Cauchy sequence**. Any fundamental sequence of real numbers is convergent (**completeness of real numbers**).

For a set with properties 1 and 2 of Section A, it can be proved that property 3 of Section A is equivalent to property 3, or properties 1 and 4, or properties 1 and 5 of this section.

C. Intervals

For two numbers $a, b \in \mathbf{R}$ with $a < b$, we write

$$(a, b) = \{x \mid a < x < b\},$$

$$(a, b] = \{x \mid a < x \leq b\},$$

$$[a, b) = \{x \mid a \leq x < b\},$$

$$[a, b] = \{x \mid a \leq x \leq b\},$$

and call them (**finite**) **intervals**, of which a and b are their **left** and **right endpoints**, respectively. Specifically, (a, b) is called an **open interval** and $[a, b]$ a **closed interval**. The symbols ∞ and $-\infty$ are introduced as satisfying $\infty > x$, $x > -\infty$, $\infty > -\infty$ for all $x \in \mathbf{R}$. Writing $+\infty$ for ∞ , we call $+\infty$ and $-\infty$ **positive infinity** and **negative infinity**, respectively. To extend the concept of intervals, we define $(-\infty, b) = \{x \mid x < b, x \in \mathbf{R}\}$, $(-\infty, b] = \{x \mid x \leq b, x \in \mathbf{R}\}$, $(a, \infty) = \{x \mid a < x, x \in \mathbf{R}\}$, $[a, \infty) = \{x \mid a \leq x, x \in \mathbf{R}\}$, and $(-\infty, \infty) = \mathbf{R}$, and call them **infinite intervals**.

Let $\{a_n\}$ be a sequence of real numbers. If for each infinite interval (a, ∞) ($(-\infty, a)$) there exists a number n_0 such that $a_n \in (a, \infty)$ ($a_n \in (-\infty, a)$) for all $n > n_0$, then we write $a_n \rightarrow +\infty$ ($a_n \rightarrow -\infty$) and call ∞ ($-\infty$) the limit of a_n , denoted as before by $\lim a_n$.

D. Topology of \mathbf{R}

With the collection of all its open intervals (a, b) as an \dagger open base, \mathbf{R} is a \dagger topological space (\dagger order topology) that satisfies the \dagger separation axioms $\mathbf{T}_2, \mathbf{T}_3, \mathbf{T}_4$. In \mathbf{R} every (finite or infinite) interval (including \mathbf{R} itself) is \dagger connected, and the set \mathbf{Q} of rational numbers is dense. A necessary and sufficient condition for a subset F of \mathbf{R} to be \dagger compact is that F be bounded and closed (**Weierstrass's theorem**). In particular, any finite closed interval is compact. \mathbf{R} is a locally compact space satisfying the second \dagger countability axiom. Further, any (finite or infinite) open interval is homeomorphic to \mathbf{R} . The topology of \mathbf{R} may also be

defined by the notion of convergence (\rightarrow 87 Convergence).

Arithmetic operations in \mathbf{R} are all continuous: If $a_n \rightarrow a$ and $b_n \rightarrow b$, then $a_n + b_n \rightarrow a + b$, $a_n - b_n \rightarrow a - b$, $a_n b_n \rightarrow ab$, and $a_n/b_n \rightarrow a/b$ (where $b \neq 0, b_n \neq 0$). Hence \mathbf{R} is a \dagger topological field (regarding the characterization of \mathbf{R} as a topological group or a topological field \rightarrow 422 Topological Abelian Groups).

\mathbf{R} as a topological Abelian group (with respect to addition) is isomorphic to the topological Abelian group \mathbf{R}^+ of all positive real numbers with respect to multiplication. To be precise, there exist topological mappings $f: \mathbf{R} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^+$ with $f(x+y) = f(x)f(y)$ and $g: \mathbf{R}^+ \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$ with $g(xy) = g(x) + g(y)$. If $f(1) = a, g(b) = 1$, then f, g are uniquely determined and are written $f(x) = a^x, g(x) = \log_b x$.

Regarding \mathbf{R} as a topological Abelian group (with respect to addition), any proper closed subgroup Γ of \mathbf{R} is discrete and isomorphic to the additive group \mathbf{Z} of integers. That is, for some $\varepsilon > 0$ we have $\Gamma = \{n\varepsilon \mid n \in \mathbf{Z}\}$. In particular, the quotient group \mathbf{R}/\mathbf{Z} as a topological group is isomorphic to the rotation group of a circle (1-dimensional \dagger torus group). Elements of \mathbf{R}/\mathbf{Z} are called **real numbers mod 1**.

E. The Real Line

Let l be a Euclidean straight line considered to lie horizontally, say from left to right. Let p_0, p_1 be two distinct points on l , with p_0 situated to the left of p_1 . Then there exists one and only one bijection φ from the set L of all points of l to \mathbf{R} satisfying (i) $\varphi(p_0) = 0, \varphi(p_1) = 1$; (ii) if p lies to the left of q , then $\varphi(p) < \varphi(q)$; and (iii) for two line segments pq and $p'q'$ (where p and p' are to the left of q and q' , respectively), $pq \equiv p'q'$ (pq and $p'q'$ are \dagger congruent) $\Leftrightarrow \varphi(q) - \varphi(p) = \varphi(q') - \varphi(p')$. Then $\varphi(p)$ is called the **coordinate** of the point p , and (p_0, p_1) the **frame** of the line l . A Euclidean straight line with a fixed frame is called a **real line** (identified with \mathbf{R} by the mapping φ) and is usually denoted by the same notation \mathbf{R} or \mathbf{R}^1 .

References

- [1] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique* III. Topologie générale, ch. 4. Nombres réels, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1143c, Hermann, third edition, 1960; English translation, General topology pt. 1, Addison-Wesley, 1966.
- [2] G. Cantor, *Gesammelte Abhandlungen*, Springer, 1932.

[3] R. Dedekind, *Gesammelte mathematische Werke I–III*, Braunschweig, 1930–1932.

[4] J. Dieudonné, *Foundations of modern analysis*, Academic Press, 1960, enlarged and corrected printing, 1969.

[5] K. Weierstrass, *Gesammelte Abhandlungen* 1–7, Mayer & Miler, Akademische Verlag., 1894–1927.

Also \rightarrow references to 381 Sets.

356 (I.9) Recursive Functions

A. General Remarks

A function whose \dagger domain and \dagger range are both the set of natural numbers $\{0, 1, 2, \dots\}$ is called a **number-theoretic function**. In this article, the term *natural number* is used to mean a non-negative integer. Hilbert (1926) and K. Gödel [1] considered certain number-theoretic functions, called recursive functions by them and now called **primitive recursive functions** after S. C. Kleene [2] (the definition is given in Section B). Gödel introduced an efficient method of arithmetizing metamathematics based on representing certain finitary procedures in metamathematics by primitive recursive functions. Then the following problem naturally arises: How shall we define a finitary method? In other words, how shall we characterize a number-theoretic function that is effectively computable, or provided with an algorithm of computation? Gödel defined the notion of general recursive function by introducing a formal system for the elementary calculation of functions, following the suggestion given by J. Herbrand. Kleene later improved Gödel's definition and developed the theory of general recursive functions [2]. Furthermore, A. Church and Kleene defined λ -calculable functions using the λ -notation (Church [4]), and E. L. Post and A. M. Turing defined the notion of computable functions by introducing the concept of Turing machines. These notions, introduced independently and almost simultaneously, were found to be equivalent. Hence such functions are now simply called recursive functions. Here, instead of giving the definition of recursive functions in the original style (the Herbrand-Gödel-Kleene definition), we give it by utilizing the idea of introducing schemata, a natural extension of the notion of primitive recursive functions. We employ the letters x, y, z, x_1, x_2, \dots for variables ranging over the natural numbers.

in addition to those used to define the primitive recursive functions. Thus, by definition, a primitive recursive function is general recursive. A **general recursive predicate** is a predicate such that its representing function is general recursive. The facts, including the ones concerning relativization, that are valid for pri-

mitive recursive functions are also valid for general recursive functions.

Kleene's Normal Form Theorem. For each n , we can construct a primitive recursive predicate $T_n(z, x_1, \dots, x_n, y)$ and a primitive recursive function $U(y)$ such that given any general recursive function $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$, a natural number e can be found such that

$$\forall x_1 \dots \forall x_n \exists y T_n(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y), \quad (1)$$

$$\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n) = U(\mu y T_n(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y)). \quad (2)$$

Any natural number e for which (1) and (2) hold is said to **define φ recursively** or to be a **Gödel number** of a recursive function φ . Let ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l (abbreviated Ψ) be any given functions. We can relativize Kleene's normal form theorem with respect to them as follows: For each n , we can construct a predicate $T_n^\Psi(z, x_1, \dots, x_n, y)$ that is primitive recursive in Ψ such that given any function φ that is general recursive in Ψ , a natural number e can be found such that

$$\forall x_1 \dots \forall x_n \exists y T_n^\Psi(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y), \quad (3)$$

$$\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n) = U(\mu y T_n^\Psi(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y)), \quad (4)$$

where $U(y)$ is the primitive recursive function mentioned in Kleene's normal form theorem. A natural number e for which (3) and (4) hold is said to **define φ recursively in Ψ** or to be a **Gödel number** of φ from Ψ . In particular, a Gödel number e of φ from Ψ can be found independently of Ψ (except for l and the respective numbers of variables of ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l) when φ is general recursive uniformly in Ψ .

Now let S be a \dagger formal system containing ordinary number theory. A number-theoretic predicate $P(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is said to be **decidable** within S if there is a formula $P(a_1, \dots, a_n)$ (with no \dagger free variables other than the distinct variables a_1, \dots, a_n) of S such that for each n -tuple (x_1, \dots, x_n) of natural numbers (the symbol \vdash means provable in S),

$$(i) \quad \vdash P(x_1, \dots, x_n) \quad \text{or} \quad \vdash \neg P(x_1, \dots, x_n)$$

and

$$(ii) \quad P(x_1, \dots, x_n) \Leftrightarrow \vdash P(x_1, \dots, x_n),$$

where x_1, \dots, x_n designate the numerals corresponding to x_1, \dots, x_n in S . If S is a consistent system such that primitive recursive predicates are decidable within S and the predicates Pf_A (for any formula A , $Pf_A(x_1, \dots, x_n, y)$ means that y is the Gödel number of a proof of $A(x_1, \dots, x_n)$) are primitive recursive, then a necessary and sufficient condition for P to be decidable within S is that P is a general recursive predicate (A. Mostowski, 1947).

Church (1936) proposed the following state-

ment: Every **effectively calculable function** is a general recursive function. The converse of this is evidently true by the definition of recursiveness. So **Church's thesis** and its converse provide the exact definition of the notion of effectively computable functions. Though this notion is somewhat vague and intuitive, the definition seems to be satisfactory, as mentioned at the beginning of this article. Therefore, any function with a computation procedure or **algorithm** can be assumed to be general recursive. Utilizing this, various decision problems have been negatively solved (\rightarrow 97 Decision Problem). Furthermore, traditional descriptive set theory can be reinvestigated from this point of view, and the concept of effectiveness used in \dagger semi-intuitionism is clarified using general recursive functions (\rightarrow 22 Analytic Sets).

D. Recursive Enumerability

A set $\{\varphi(0), \varphi(1), \varphi(2), \dots\}$ enumerated by a general recursive function φ (allowing repetitions) is called a **recursively enumerable set**. The empty set is also considered recursively enumerable. It is known that in this definition "general recursive" can be replaced by "primitive recursive" (J. B. Rosser, 1936). A set E of natural numbers is recursively enumerable if and only if there is a primitive recursive predicate $R(x, y)$ such that $x \in E \Leftrightarrow \exists y R(x, y)$ (Kleene [2]).

Generally, a predicate $E(x_1, \dots, x_m)$ is called a **recursively enumerable predicate** if there is a general recursive predicate $R(x_1, \dots, x_m, y_1, \dots, y_n)$ such that $E(x_1, \dots, x_m) \Leftrightarrow \exists y_1 \dots \exists y_n R(x_1, \dots, x_m, y_1, \dots, y_n)$. (Here "general recursive" can be replaced by "primitive recursive.")

We call a set E a **recursive set** if the predicate $x \in E$ is general recursive. The set $C = \{x \mid \exists y T_1(x, x, y)\}$ is an example of a set that is recursively enumerable but not recursive, and it has the following remarkable property: For every recursively enumerable set E , there is a primitive recursive function such that $x \in E \Leftrightarrow \varphi(x) \in C$. In this sense, the set C is said to be **complete** for the class of recursively enumerable sets. Post's problem, which asked whether the sets that are recursively enumerable but not recursive have the same \dagger degree of (recursive) unsolvability as that of C , was negatively solved simultaneously by R. M. Friedberg (1957) and A. A. Muchnik (1956–1958). A recursively enumerable set E is general recursive if and only if there is a general recursive predicate $R(x, y)$ such that $x \notin E \Leftrightarrow \exists y R(x, y)$ (Kleene [5], Post [6]).

E. Partial Recursive Functions

A function $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is called a **partial function** if it is not necessarily defined for all n -tuples (x_1, \dots, x_n) of natural numbers. For two partial functions $\psi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ and $\chi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$, $\psi(x_1, \dots, x_n) \simeq \chi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ means that if either $\psi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ or $\chi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is defined for x_1, \dots, x_n , so is the other, and the values are the same. For any given natural number e , $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n) \simeq U(\mu y T_n(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y))$ (or $\simeq U(\mu y T_n^{\Psi}(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y))$) is a partial function, in general. We say that such a function is **partial recursive (partial recursive (uniformly) in Ψ)** and that a natural number e defines φ **recursively ((uniformly) in Ψ)** or is a **Gödel number** of a partial recursive function φ (from Ψ). When a natural number e is a Gödel number of $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ (a Gödel number of φ from Ψ), $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is sometimes written as $\{e\}(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ ($\{e\}^{\Psi}(x_1, \dots, x_n)$). If a predicate $R(x_1, \dots, x_n, y)$ is general recursive, then $\mu y R(x_1, \dots, x_n, y)$ is partial recursive. Therefore, $\{z\}(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is a partial recursive function of the variables of z and of x_1, \dots, x_n .

On the partial recursive functions, the following two theorems, given by Kleene [3], are most useful. (1) For natural numbers m, n , a primitive recursive function $S_n^m(z, y_1, \dots, y_m)$ can be found such that, for any natural number e , $\{e\}(y_1, \dots, y_m, x_1, \dots, x_n) \simeq \{S_n^m(e, y_1, \dots, y_m)\}(x_1, \dots, x_n)$. (2) For any partial recursive function $\psi(z, x_1, \dots, x_n)$, a natural number e can be found such that $\{e\}(x_1, \dots, x_n) \simeq \psi(e, x_1, \dots, x_n)$.

The notion of partial recursive functions appeared first in the theory of constructive ordinal numbers of Church and Kleene (1963). Partial recursive functions can be defined in the Herbrand-Gödel-Kleene style as a natural extension of general recursive functions, and they are also definable by a finite series of applications of the schemata (IV), (V), and (VI) (in each schema, $=$ used for the definition of φ should be replaced by \simeq) starting from functions given by (I), (II), and (III).

F. Extension of Recursive Functions to Number-Theoretic Functionals

Let $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m$ be number-theoretic functions of one variable. If $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is (partial) recursive uniformly in $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m$, then a Gödel number e of φ is found independently of $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m$, and $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is expressed as $U(\mu y T_n^{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m}(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y))$. Now suppose that $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m$ range over the set N^N of all number-theoretic functions of one variable,

and put

$$\begin{aligned} & \varphi(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m, x_1, \dots, x_n) \\ & \simeq U(\mu y T_n^{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m}(e, x_1, \dots, x_n, y)). \end{aligned}$$

We call such a functional $\varphi(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m, x_1, \dots, x_n)$ (partial) recursive, and with it we can develop a theory of recursive functions of variables of two types.

Extending the notion of recursive functionals, Kleene introduced and investigated the recursive functionals of variables of arbitrary (finite) types [10, 11]. The natural numbers are the **objects of type 0**, and the one-place functions from type- j objects to natural numbers are **objects of type $j+1$** . Denote variables ranging over the type- j objects by $\alpha^j, \beta^j, \gamma^j, \dots$, or $\alpha_1^j, \alpha_2^j, \alpha_3^j, \dots$, etc. Consider a functional (simply called a function) of a given finite number of such variables of types taking natural numbers as values. A function φ is called a **primitive recursive function** if it is definable by a finite series of applications of the following schemata (I)–(VIII), where a is a variable of type 0, b is any list (possibly empty) of variables that are mutually distinct and different from the other variables of the schema, and ψ, χ are given functions of the indicated variables. (I) $\varphi(a, b) = a'$; (II) $\varphi(b) = q$ (q is a natural number); (III) $\varphi(a, b) = a$; (IV) $\varphi(b) = \psi(\chi(b), b)$; (V) $\varphi(0, b) = \psi(b)$, $\varphi(a', b) = \chi(a, \varphi(a, b), b)$; (VI) $\varphi(a) = \psi(\alpha_1)$ (α_1 is a list of variables from which a is obtained by changing the order of two variables of the same type); (VII) $\varphi(\alpha^1, a, b) = \alpha^1(a)$; (VIII) $\varphi(\alpha^j, b) = \alpha^j(\lambda \alpha^{j-2} \chi(\alpha^j, \alpha^{j-2}, b))$ ($\lambda \alpha^{j-2}$ designates that χ is a function of the variables α^{j-2}).

We assign to each function $\varphi(a)$ a natural number called an **index** (which plays the same role as a Gödel number) in such a way that it reflects the manner of application of the schemata used to introduce $\varphi(a)$. Now, we write $\varphi(a)$ with an index e as $\{e\}(a)$. We call a function $\varphi(a)$ **partial recursive** if it is definable by a finite series of applications of the schemata (I)–(VIII) (\simeq is employed instead of $=$ in (IV)–(VI) and (VIII)), and (IX) $\varphi(a, b, c) \simeq \{a\}(b, c)$ (c is a finite list of variables of arbitrary types). In particular, $\varphi(a)$ is called a **general recursive function** if it is defined for all values of the argument a . These notions can be **relativized** also with respect to any given functions. Note that for the case of types ≤ 1 , primitive recursive functions, partial recursive functions, and also general recursive functions in the present sense are equivalent to the corresponding notions (introduced via relativization with uniformity) in the ordinary sense already described. The following theorem is important: Let r be the maximum type of a . Then there

are two primitive recursive predicates M, N such that

$$\begin{aligned} \{e\}(a) &\simeq \\ w &\Leftrightarrow \forall \xi^{r-1} \exists \eta^{r-2} M(e, a, w, \xi^{r-1}, \eta^{r-2}), \\ & \qquad \qquad \qquad r \geq 2, \\ w &\Leftrightarrow \exists \xi^{r-1} \forall \eta^{r-2} N(e, a, w, \xi^{r-1}, \eta^{r-2}), \\ & \qquad \qquad \qquad r > 2. \end{aligned}$$

Every function definable using (IX') $\psi(a) \simeq \mu x (\psi(a, x) = 0)$ instead of (IX) is partial recursive. However, not all the partial recursive functions of variables of types ≥ 2 can be obtained by applying schemata (I)–(VIII) and (IX').

Further developments have been pursued by J. E. Fenstad, J. Moldestad, and others in abstract computation theory [20–23].

G. Recursive Functions of Ordinal Numbers

G. Takeuti introduced a notion of primitive recursiveness for functions from a segment of the ordinal numbers to ordinal numbers.

Using this, he constructed a model of set theory in ordinal number theory. In connection with recursive functions of ordinal numbers, there are also investigations by A. Lévy, M. Machover, Takeuti and A. Kino, T. Tugué, S. Kripke, and others.

Early treatments of recursive functions of ordinal numbers dealt only with functions on infinite cardinals. For example, Takeuti considered functions with a fixed infinite cardinal κ as a domain and a range, and defined κ -recursive functions using schemata similar to the abovementioned (I)–(VI). Subsequently Kripke observed that the assumption that κ is a cardinal is not necessary, and introduced the notion of **admissible ordinals**. An admissible ordinal κ has the closure properties required for the construction of the calculus, and whenever $\alpha, \beta < \kappa$ and $\beta = f(\alpha)$ is computable, then $\beta = f(\alpha)$ is computable in fewer than κ stages. Given an admissible ordinal κ , κ -**recursiveness** can be defined, as in the case of general recursiveness, by various equivalent methods, e.g., schemata, the equation calculus, and definability in both quantifier forms. Most of the elementary properties of general recursive functions (e.g., the normal form theorem, parametrization theorem, enumeration theorem, etc.) are also valid for κ -recursive functions. The notions of degrees of unsolvability and recursive enumerability can also be generalized, yielding the notions of κ -degrees and κ -recursive enumerability, respectively. The fine structures of these properties are currently the objects of intensive research.

Every infinite cardinal is admissible. The least admissible ordinal is ω , and the next is the ordinal ω_1 of Church and Kleene, i.e., the first nonconstructive ordinal. In fact, for every $n \geq 1$, the first ordinal not expressible as the order type of a Δ_n^1 predicate is admissible (\rightarrow Section H). For each infinite cardinal κ there are κ^+ admissible ordinals of power κ . Platek investigated recursion theory in a still wider setting. He dealt with functions defined, not on a segment of ordinal numbers, but on a set, and introduced the notion of admissible sets, i.e., sets on which a well-behaved recursion theory can be developed. An admissible set is a transitive ε -model of a certain weak set theory, and an ordinal κ is admissible if and only if there exists an admissible set A such that $A \cap O_\kappa = \kappa$, where O_κ is the class of all ordinal numbers.

Recent developments have shown that generalized recursion theory, set theory, and infinitary logic are closely related. In addition to the abovementioned, there are some investigations by Y. N. Moschovakis and others [14–27].

H. Hierarchies

Utilizing the theory of \dagger recursive functions, S. C. Kleene succeeded in establishing a theory of hierarchies that essentially contains classical descriptive set theory as an extreme case [5, 10, 31, 32]. Although research following a similar line had also been done by M. Davis, A. Mostowski, and others, it was Kleene who succeeded in bringing the theory to its present form.

Sets or functions are described by \dagger predicates, which we classify as follows. Let $a, b, \dots, a_1, a_2, \dots, x, y, \dots$, be variables ranging over the set \mathbb{N} of natural numbers, and $\alpha, \beta, \dots, \alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \xi, \eta, \dots$ be variables ranging over the set $\mathbb{N}^\mathbb{N}$ of all \dagger number-theoretic functions with one argument. Let $\psi_1, \dots, \psi_l (l \geq 0)$ be number-theoretic functions. A predicate $P(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m, a_1, \dots, a_n) (m, n \geq 0, m + n > 0)$ with variables of two \dagger types is called **analytic** in $\psi_1, \dots, \psi_l (l \geq 0)$ if it is expressible syntactically by applying a finite number of logical symbols: $\rightarrow, \vee, \wedge, \neg, \exists x, \forall x, \exists \xi, \forall \xi$, to \dagger general recursive predicates in ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l . In particular, when P is expressible without function quantifiers $\exists \xi, \forall \xi$, it is called **arithmetical** in $\psi_1, \dots, \psi_l (l \geq 0)$. When $l = 0$, they are called simply analytic and arithmetical, respectively.

For brevity, consider the case $l = 0$, and denote by α a finite list of variables $(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m, a_1, \dots, a_n)$. Every arithmetical predicate $P(\alpha)$ is expressible in a form contained

in the following table (a):

(a) $R(\alpha)$:

$$\exists x R(\alpha, x), \quad \forall x \exists y R(\alpha, x, y), \dots,$$

$$\forall x R(\alpha, x), \quad \exists x \forall y R(\alpha, x, y), \dots,$$

where each R is † general recursive. In order to obtain such an expression we first transform the given predicate into its † prenex normal form and then contract successive quantifiers of the same kind by the formula

$$\begin{aligned} \exists x_1 \dots \exists x_n A(x_1, \dots, x_n) \\ \Leftrightarrow \exists x A((x)_0, \dots, (x)_{n-1}) \quad (1) \end{aligned}$$

and its "dual form." Each form in (a) (or the class of all predicates with that form) is denoted by Σ_k^0 or Π_k^0 , where the suffix k refers to the number of quantifiers prefixed, and Σ or Π shows that the outermost quantifier is existential or universal, respectively. A predicate that is expressible in both forms Σ_k^0 and Π_k^0 (or the class of such predicates) is denoted by Δ_k^0 . A predicate belongs to Δ_1^0 if and only if it is general recursive (an analog of † Suslin's theorem).

For $k \geq 1$, there exists in Σ_k^0 (or Π_k^0) an **enumerating predicate** that specifies every predicate in Σ_k^0 (Π_k^0). For example, for Π_2^0 and $m = n = 1$, there is a † primitive recursive predicate $S(\alpha, z, a, x, y)$ such that, given a general recursive predicate $R(\alpha, a, x, y)$, we have a natural number e such that

$$\forall x \exists y R(\alpha, a, x, y) \Leftrightarrow \forall x \exists y S(\alpha, e, a, x, y)$$

(**enumeration theorem**). In this theorem, we can take $T_2^{\dagger}(z, a, x, y)$ (\rightarrow Section F) as $S(\alpha, z, a, x, y)$. For each $k \geq 0$, there exists a $\Sigma_{k+1}^0 (\Pi_{k+1}^0)$ predicate that is not expressible in its dual form $\Pi_{k+1}^0 (\Sigma_{k+1}^0)$ (hence, of course, in neither Σ_k^0 nor Π_k^0) (**hierarchy theorem**). Therefore, table (a) gives the classification of the arithmetical predicates in a hierarchy. This hierarchy is called the **arithmetical hierarchy**. For each $k \geq 1$, there exists a **complete** predicate with respect to $\Sigma_k^0 (\Pi_k^0)$, that is, a $\Sigma_k^0 (\Pi_k^0)$ predicate with only one variable such that any $\Sigma_k^0 (\Pi_k^0)$ predicate is expressible by substituting a suitable general (or more strictly, primitive) recursive function for its variable (**theorem on complete form**). When $m = 0$, all the general recursive predicates in Σ_k^0 exhaust Δ_{k+1}^0 (**Post's theorem**).

Concerning the function quantifiers, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \exists \alpha_1 \dots \exists \alpha_m A(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m) \\ \Leftrightarrow \exists \alpha A(\lambda t(\alpha(t))_0, \dots, \lambda t(\alpha(t))_{m-1}) \quad (2) \end{aligned}$$

$$\exists x A(x) \Leftrightarrow \exists \alpha A(\alpha(0)), \quad (3)$$

$$\forall x \exists \alpha A(x, \alpha) \Leftrightarrow \exists \alpha \forall x A(x, \lambda t \alpha(2^x \cdot 3^t)), \quad (4)$$

and their dual forms. For any general recursive predicate R , there is a primitive recursive predicate S such that

$$\exists \alpha R(\alpha, a) \Leftrightarrow \exists \alpha \exists x S(\alpha(x), a) \Leftrightarrow \exists y S(y, a) \quad (5)$$

and its dual hold. Using these facts, we can classify the forms of all analytic predicates by the table (b):

(b) $A(\alpha)$:

$$\forall \alpha \exists x R(\alpha, \alpha, x), \quad \exists \alpha \forall \beta \exists x R(\alpha, \alpha, \beta, x), \dots,$$

$$\exists \alpha \forall x R(\alpha, \alpha, x), \quad \forall \alpha \exists \beta \forall x R(\alpha, \alpha, \beta, x), \dots,$$

where A is arithmetical and each R is general recursive. Similarly, denote by Σ_k^1, Π_k^1 each form of predicate in (b) (or the class of all predicates reducible to that form), where k is the number of function quantifiers prefixed; also, denote by Δ_k^1 the (class of) predicates expressible in both forms Σ_k^1 and Π_k^1 . For Σ_k^1, Π_k^1 ($k \geq 1$), we have the enumeration theorem, the hierarchy theorem, and the theorem on complete form. The hierarchy given by table (b) is called the **analytic hierarchy**.

For $l > 0$ (namely, when predicates are arithmetical or analytic in ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l), we can † uniformly † relativize the above results with respect to ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l . Now let $\{\Sigma_r^{\psi_1, \dots, \psi_l}, \Pi_r^{\psi_1, \dots, \psi_l}\}_{r=0,1}$ be the corresponding hierarchy relative to ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l . Given a set C ($\subset \mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{N}}$) of functions with one argument, we can consider hierarchies of predicates which are arithmetical or analytic in a finite number of functions in C . Such a hierarchy is called a **C-arithmetical** or **C-analytic hierarchy** and denoted by $\{\Sigma_k^C[C], \Pi_k^C[C]\}_k$ or $\{\Sigma_k^1[C], \Pi_k^1[C]\}_k$, respectively. That is, when we regard $\Sigma_k^1[C]$ as a class of predicates (or sets) P , it is the family $\{P \mid P \in \Sigma_k^{\xi_1, \dots, \xi_l}, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_l \in C, l = 0, 1, 2, \dots\}$. These notations have been given by J. W. Addison [28, 29]. The $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{N}}$ -arithmetical hierarchy and the $\mathbb{N}^{\mathbb{N}}$ -analytic hierarchy for sets correspond respectively to the finite Borel hierarchy and the projective hierarchy in the † space of irrational numbers. Addison called the theory of those hierarchies **classical descriptive set theory**, and in contrast to this, the theory of arithmetical and analytic hierarchies for sets ($C = \emptyset$) **effective descriptive set theory** [28].

We now restrict our consideration to predicates for natural numbers (i.e., to the case $m = 0$). Define the predicates L_k by $L_0(a) \Leftrightarrow a = a, L_{k+1}(a) \Leftrightarrow \exists x T_1^{L_k}(a, a, x)$. For each $k \geq 0$, $L_{k+1}(a)$ is a Σ_{k+1}^0 predicate which is of the highest † degree of recursive unsolvability among the Σ_{k+1}^0 predicates, and its degree is properly higher than that of $L_k(a)$. Thus $L_k, k = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, determine the **arithmetical hierarchy of degrees of recursive unsolvability**. Kleene has extended the series of L_k by using

the system S_3 (\rightarrow 81 Constructive Ordinal Numbers) of notations for the constructive ordinal numbers as follows [6]: $H_1(a) \Leftrightarrow a = a$; for $y \in O$, $H_{2^y}(a) \Leftrightarrow \exists x T_1^{H_y}(a, a, x)$; for $3 \cdot 5^y \in O$, $H_{3 \cdot 5^y}(a) \Leftrightarrow H_{y(a)}, ((a)_0)$, where $y_n = \{y\}(n_0)$. This H_y is defined for each $y \in O$, and it is of a properly higher degree than that of H_z when $z <_O y$. If $|y| = |z|$ ($|y|$ is the ordinal number represented by y), then H_y and H_z are of the same degree (C. Spector [34]). Thus a hierarchy of degrees is uniquely determined by constructive ordinal numbers. This hierarchy is called the **hyperarithmetical hierarchy of degrees of recursive unsolvability**. A function or predicate is said to be **hyperarithmetical** if it is recursive in H_y for some $y \in O$. These concepts and the results mentioned below can be relativized to any given functions or predicates.

A necessary (Kleene [31]) and sufficient (Kleene [32]) condition for a predicate to be hyperarithmetical is that it be expressible in both one-function quantifier forms Δ_1^1 (an effective version of Suslin's theorem). Denote by Hyp the set ($\subset N^N$) of all hyperarithmetical functions α . For an arithmetical predicate $A(\alpha, a)$, $\exists \alpha_{\alpha \in \text{Hyp}} A(\alpha, a)$ is always a Π_1^1 predicate (Kleene [33]). Conversely, for any Π_1^1 predicate P , there is a general recursive predicate R such that $P(a) \Leftrightarrow \exists \alpha_{\alpha \in \text{Hyp}} \forall x R(a, \alpha, x)$ (Spector [35]). As to uniformization, for a Π_1^1 predicate $P(a, b)$, we have $\forall x \exists y P(x, y) \Rightarrow \exists \alpha_{\alpha \in \text{Hyp}} \forall x P(x, \alpha(x))$ (G. Kreisel, 1962). Let E be an object of type 2 defined by: $E(\alpha) = 0$ if $\exists x (\alpha(x) = 0)$, otherwise $E(\alpha) = 1$. A function $\varphi(a_1, \dots, a_n)$ is hyperarithmetical if and only if it is general recursive in E (Kleene [10]). A predicate that is hyperarithmetical relative to Π_k^1 predicates ($k \geq 0$) is of Δ_{k+1}^1 (Kleene [32]), but the converse does not hold in general (Addison and Kleene, 1957).

Kleene extended his theory of hierarchy to the case of predicates of variables of any type by utilizing the theory of general recursive functions with variables of finite types $0, 1, 2, \dots$ [10]. Let a^t be a list of variables of types $\leq t$. We say a predicate $P(a^t)$ is of order r in completely defined functions ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l ($l \geq 0$) (for brevity, denote them by Ψ) if P is syntactically expressible in terms of variables of finite types, predicates that are general recursive in Ψ , and symbols of the λ -predicate calculus with quantification consisting only of variables of types $< r$. The predicates of order 0 in Ψ are exactly the general recursive ones in Ψ . When $t \geq 1$, and Ψ are functions of variables of type 0, a predicate $P(a^t)$ is of order 1 (of order 2) in Ψ if and only if P is arithmetical (analytic).

We have theorems similar to (2)–(4) and the following theorem and its dual for $r \geq 2$: For any given general recursive predicate

356 Ref.

Recursive Functions

$P(a^r, \sigma^r, \xi^{r-2})$, there is a primitive recursive predicate $R(a^r, \eta^{r-1}, \xi^{r-2})$ such that

$$\begin{aligned} \exists \sigma^r \forall \xi^{r-2} P(a^r, \sigma^r, \xi^{r-2}) \\ \Leftrightarrow \exists \eta^{r-1} \forall \xi^{r-2} R(a^r, \eta^{r-1}, \xi^{r-2}). \quad (6) \end{aligned}$$

Using these equivalences, each predicate $P(a^t)$ of order $r+1$ ($r \geq 0$) is expressible in one of the following forms:

(c) $B(a)$;

$$\begin{aligned} \forall \alpha^r \exists \xi^{r-1} R(a, \alpha^r, \xi^{r-1}), \\ \exists \alpha^r \forall \beta^r \exists \xi^{r-1} R(a, \alpha^r, \beta^r, \xi^{r-1}), \dots, \\ \exists \alpha^r \forall \xi^{r-1} R(a, \alpha^r, \xi^{r-1}), \\ \forall \alpha^r \exists \beta^r \forall \xi^{r-1} R(a, \alpha^r, \beta^r, \xi^{r-1}), \dots, \end{aligned}$$

where B is of order r and each R is general recursive. When $t = r+1$, table (c) gives the classification of the predicates of order $r+1$ into the hierarchy. In fact, for the predicates $P(a^{r+1})$ in each form, we have the enumeration theorem, the hierarchy theorem, and the theorem on complete form (Kleene [10]). D. A. Clarke [30] has published a detailed review of the general theory of hierarchies.

References

- [1] K. Gödel, Über formal unentscheidbare Sätze der Principia Mathematica und verwandter Systeme I, *Monatsh. Math. Phys.*, 38 (1931), 173–198.
- [2] S. C. Kleene, General recursive functions of natural numbers, *Math. Ann.*, 112 (1936), 727–742.
- [3] S. C. Kleene, On notation for ordinal numbers, *J. Symbolic Logic*, 3 (1938), 150–155.
- [4] A. Church, The calculi of lambda-conversion, *Ann. Math. Studies*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1941.
- [5] S. C. Kleene, Recursive predicates and quantifiers, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 53 (1943), 41–73.
- [6] E. L. Post, Recursively enumerable sets of positive integers and their decision problems, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 50 (1944), 284–316.
- [7] S. C. Kleene, Introduction to metamathematics, Van Nostrand, 1952.
- [8] R. Péter, *Rekursive Funktionen*, Akademische Verlag, 1951.
- [9] A. A. Markov, Theory of algorithms (in Russian), *Trudy Mat. Inst. Steklov.*, 42 (1954).
- [10] S. C. Kleene, Recursive functionals and quantifiers of finite types I, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 91 (1959), 1–52.
- [11] S. C. Kleene, Recursive functionals and quantifiers of finite types II, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 108 (1963), 106–142.
- [12] H. Hermes, *Enumerability, decidability, computability*, Springer, 1965.

- [13] H. Rogers, Theory of recursive functions and effective computability, McGraw-Hill, 1967.
- [14] J. Barwise, Infinitary logic and admissible sets, J. Symbolic Logic, 34 (1969), 226–252.
- [15] R. B. Jensen and C. Karp, Primitive recursive set functions, Proc. Symposia in Pure Math., XIII (1971), 143–176.
- [16] S. Kripke, Transfinite recursions on admissible ordinals, J. Symbolic Logic, 29 (1964), 161–162.
- [17] M. Machover, The theory of transfinite recursion, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 67 (1961), 575–578.
- [18] G. Takeuti, A formalization of the theory of ordinal numbers, J. Symbolic Logic, 30 (1965), 295–317.
- [19] T. Tugué, On the partial recursive functions of ordinal numbers, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 16 (1964), 1–31.
- [20] J. Moldestad, Computation in higher types, Springer, 1977.
- [21] J. E. Fenstad, R. O. Gandy, and G. E. Sacks (eds.), Generalized recursion theory, North-Holland, 1974.
- [22] J. E. Fenstad, R. O. Gandy, and G. E. Sacks (eds.), Generalized recursion theory II, North-Holland, 1978.
- [23] J. E. Fenstad, General recursion theory, Springer, 1980.
- [24] Y. N. Moschovakis, Elementary induction on abstract structures, North-Holland, 1974.
- [25] Y. N. Moschovakis, Descriptive set theory, North-Holland, 1980.
- [26] J. Barwise, Admissible sets and structures, Springer, 1975.
- [27] P. G. Hinman, Recursion theoretic hierarchies, Springer, 1978.
- [28] J. W. Addison, Separation principles in the hierarchies of classical and effective descriptive set theory, Fund. Math., 46 (1958–1959), 123–135.
- [29] J. W. Addison, Some consequences of the axiom of constructibility, Fund. Math., 46 (1958–1959), 337–357.
- [30] D. A. Clarke, Hierarchies of predicates of finite types, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc., 1964.
- [31] S. C. Kleene, Arithmetical predicates and function quantifiers, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 79 (1955), 312–340.
- [32] S. C. Kleene, Hierarchies of number-theoretic predicates, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 61 (1955), 193–213.
- [33] S. C. Kleene, Quantification of number-theoretic functions, Compositio Math., 14 (1959), 23–40.
- [34] C. Spector, Recursive well-orderings, J. Symbolic Logic, 20 (1955), 151–163.
- [35] C. Spector, Hyperarithmetical quantifiers, Fund. Math., 48 (1959–1960), 313–320.

357 (VI.6) Regular Polyhedra

A. Regular Polygons

A \dagger polygon in a Euclidean plane bounding a \dagger convex cell whose sides and interior angles are all respectively congruent is called a **regular polygon**. When the number of vertices (which equals the number of sides) is n , it is called a **regular n -gon**. There exist a circle (**circumscribed circle**) passing through all the vertices of a regular n -gon and a concentric circle (**inscribed circle**) tangent to all the sides. We call the center of these circles the **center** of the regular n -gon. The n vertices of a regular n -gon are obtained by dividing a circle into n equal parts. (When a polygon in a Euclidean plane bounds a \dagger convex cell, this 2-cell is sometimes called a convex polygon. Thus *regular polygon* sometimes means the convex cell bounded by a regular polygon as described above.) A necessary and sufficient condition for a regular n -gon to be geometrically constructible is that n be decomposable into the product of prime numbers $n = 2^m p_1 \dots p_k$ ($m \geq 0$), where the p_i ($i = 1, 2, \dots$) are different \dagger Fermat numbers (\rightarrow 179 Geometric Construction).

B. Regular Polyhedra

Consider a regular polygon on a plane, and take a point on the line perpendicular to the plane at the center of the polygon. The set of points on all half-lines joining this point and points on the polygon (considered as a convex cell) is called a **regular polyhedral angle** having this point as vertex (Fig. 1).

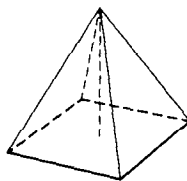


Fig. 1

When a \dagger convex polyhedron \mathfrak{F} in E^3 satisfies the following two conditions, we call it a **regular polyhedron**: (1) Each face of \mathfrak{F} , which is a 2-dimensional cell, is a regular polygon, and all faces of \mathfrak{F} are congruent to each other. (2) Its vertices are all surrounded alike. That is, by the projection of \mathfrak{F} from each vertex of \mathfrak{F} , we obtain a regular polyhedral angle; these regular polyhedral angles are all congruent to each other. From (2) we see that the number of edges emanating from each vertex of \mathfrak{F} is

independent of the vertex. It has been known since Plato's time that there are only five kinds of regular polyhedra: **tetrahedrons** (Fig. 2), **octahedrons** (Fig. 3), **icosahedrons** (Fig. 4), **cubes** or **hexahedrons** (Fig. 5), and **dodecahedrons** (Fig. 6) (see also see Table 1).

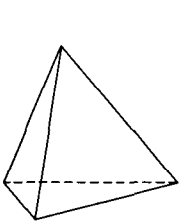


Fig. 2
Regular tetrahedron.

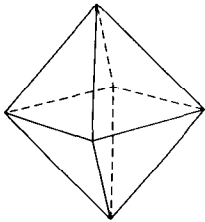


Fig. 3
Regular octahedron.

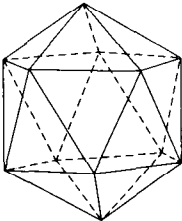


Fig. 4
Regular icosahedron.

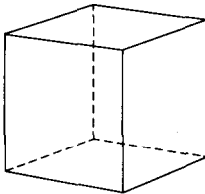


Fig. 5
Regular hexahedron
(or cube).

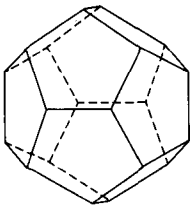


Fig. 6
Regular dodecahedron.

From a given regular polyhedron, we can obtain another one by taking as vertices the centers of all the faces of the given polyhedron (Fig. 7). We say that the given regular polyhedron and the one obtained in this way are **dual** to each other. The octahedron and hexa-

hedron are dual to each other, as are the icosahedron and dodecahedron. The tetrahedron is dual to itself. For a regular polyhedron \mathfrak{F} , there exist concentric circumscribed and inscribed spheres whose center is the center of symmetry of \mathfrak{F} and is called the **center** of \mathfrak{F} . Drawing tangent planes to the circumscribed sphere at each vertex, we can obtain a regular polyhedron dual to the given one (Fig. 8).

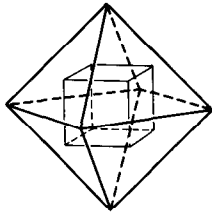


Fig. 7

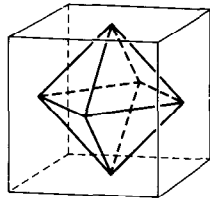


Fig. 8

In a regular polyhedron, let a be the length of an edge, θ the magnitude of the dihedral angle at each edge, and R and r the radii of circumscribed and inscribed spheres, respectively. Then the following relations hold (we assume that each face is a regular p -gon and q faces meet at each vertex):

$$\begin{aligned} \sin \frac{\theta}{2} &= \cos \frac{\pi}{q} / \sin \frac{\pi}{p}, \\ R &= \frac{a}{2} \sin \frac{\pi}{q} / \sin \frac{\pi}{p} \cos \frac{\theta}{2}, \\ r &= \frac{a}{2} \cot \frac{\pi}{p} \tan \frac{\theta}{2}, \quad \frac{R}{r} = \tan \frac{\pi}{p} \tan \frac{\pi}{q} \end{aligned} \tag{1}$$

(see Table 2). Corresponding to these polyhedra, we have finite subgroups of $O(3)$ called regular polyhedral groups (\rightarrow 151 Finite Groups).

C. Higher-Dimensional Cases

It is possible to generalize these considerations to higher dimensions to define inductively

Table 1. Regular Polyhedra in 3-Dimensional Euclidean Space E^3

Figure	Face	Number of Vertices	Number of Edges	Number of Faces	Number of Faces around a Vertex
Regular tetrahedron	Equilateral triangle	4	6	4	3
Regular octahedron	Equilateral triangle	6	12	8	4
Regular icosahedron	Equilateral triangle	12	30	20	5
Regular hexahedron	Square	8	12	6	3
Regular dodecahedron	Regular pentagon	20	30	12	3

Table 2. Numerical Values for Eqs. (1)

Number of Faces	$\sin \theta$	θ	R/a	r/a
4	$2\sqrt{2}/3$	$70^{\circ}31'43.6''$	$\sqrt{6}/4$	$\sqrt{6}/12$
6	1	90°	$\sqrt{3}/2$	$1/2$
8	$2\sqrt{2}/3$	$109^{\circ}28'16.4''$	$1/\sqrt{2}$	$1/\sqrt{6}$
12	$2/\sqrt{5}$	$116^{\circ}33'54.2''$	$\frac{\sqrt{3}(\sqrt{5}+1)}{4}$	$\frac{\sqrt{25+11\sqrt{5}}}{2\sqrt{10}}$
20	$2/3$	$138^{\circ}11'22.8''$	$\frac{\sqrt{(5+\sqrt{5})}}{2\sqrt{2}}$	$\frac{3+\sqrt{5}}{4\sqrt{3}}$

Table 3. Regular Polyhedra in 4-Dimensional Euclidean Space E^4

Figure	3-Dimensional Regular Polyhedra		Number of Vertices	Duality
	Kind	Number		
Regular 5-hedron	Tetrahedron	5	5	a
Regular 8-hedron	Cube	8	16	b
Regular 16-hedron	Tetrahedron	16	8	
Regular 24-hedron	Octahedron	24	24	a
Regular 120-hedron	Dodecahedron	120	600	b
Regular 600-hedron	Tetrahedron	600	120	

a : dual to itself; b : dual to each other

Table 4. Regular Polyhedra in n -Dimensional Euclidean Space ($n \geq 5$)

Figure	Regular Polyhedron in \mathbf{R}^{n-1}		Number of Vertices	Duality
	Kind	Number		
Regular $(n+1)$ -hedron	Regular n -hedron	$n+1$	$n+1$	a
Regular $2n$ -hedron	Regular $(2n-2)$ -hedron	$2n$	2^n	b
Regular 2^n -hedron	Regular n -hedron	2^n	$2n$	

a : dual to itself; b : dual to each other

regular polyhedra in E^n , $n \geq 4$. When $n=4$ we have 6 kinds of regular polyhedra (Table 3). For $n \geq 5$ we have only 3 kinds (Table 4) (\rightarrow 70 Complexes).

References

[1] J. S. Hadamard, *Leçons de géométrie élémentaire II*, Armand Colin, second edition, 1906, 425–427.
[2] D. Hilbert and S. Cohn-Vossen, *Anschauliche Geometrie*, Springer, 1932; English translation, *Geometry and the imagination*, Chelsea, 1952.
[3] E. Steinitz and H. Rademacher, *Vorlesungen über die Theorie der Polyeder*, Springer, 1934.
[4] H. S. M. Coxeter, *Regular polytopes*, Methuen, 1948; third edition, Dower, 1973.
[5] H. S. M. Coxeter, *Regular complex polytopes*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1974.

358 (II.2)
Relations

A. General Remarks

In its wider sense the term *relation* means $^{\dagger}n$ -ary relation ($n=1, 2, 3, \dots$) (\rightarrow 411 Symbolic Logic G), but in this article we restrict ourselves to its most ordinary meaning, i.e., to the case $n=2$. Let X, Y be two sets and x, y be two variables taking their values in X, Y , respectively. A proposition $R(x, y)$ containing x, y is called a **relation** or a **binary relation** if it can be determined whether $R(a, b)$ is true or false for each pair (a, b) in the † Cartesian product $X \times Y$. For example, if both X and Y are the set of rational integers, then the following propositions are relations: $x \leq y$, $x - y$ is even, x divides y . A relation $R(x, y)$ is sometimes written as xRy .

For a given relation R , we define its **inverse relation** R^{-1} by $yR^{-1}x \Leftrightarrow xRy$. Then R is the

inverse relation of R^{-1} . In the example above, the inverse relation of $x \leq y$ is $y \geq x$, and the inverse relation of x is a divisor of y is y is a multiple of x . A relation R is called **reflexive** if xRx holds. R is called **symmetric** if $xRy \Leftrightarrow yRx$ (namely, if R and R^{-1} are identical). R is called **transitive** if xRy and yRz imply xRz . R is called **antisymmetric** if xRy and yRx imply $x = y$. A reflexive, symmetric, and transitive relation is called an **equivalence relation** (\rightarrow 135 Equivalence Relations). A reflexive and transitive relation is called a \dagger preordering. A reflexive, transitive, and antisymmetric relation is called an \dagger ordering (\rightarrow 311 Ordering).

Suppose that we are given a relation xRy ($x \in X, y \in Y$). Then the set $G = \{(x, y) | xRy\}$, which consists of elements (x, y) of the Cartesian product $X \times Y$ satisfying xRy , is called the **graph** of the relation R . Conversely, for any subset G of $X \times Y$, there exists a unique relation R with the graph G given by $xRy \Leftrightarrow (x, y) \in G$.

B. Correspondences

For a subset G of the Cartesian product $X \times Y$, the triple $\Gamma = (G, X, Y)$ is called a **correspondence** from X to Y . The set X is called the **initial set** of the correspondence Γ , and Y the **final set** of Γ . A relation xRy ($x \in X, y \in Y$) determines a correspondence $\Gamma = (G, X, Y)$ by its graph G , and conversely, a correspondence Γ determines a relation R . Given a correspondence $\Gamma = (G, X, Y)$, the sets $A = \text{pr}_X G$ and $B = \text{pr}_Y G$, where $\text{pr}_X: X \times Y \rightarrow X$ and $\text{pr}_Y: X \times Y \rightarrow Y$ are the \dagger canonical projections, are called the **domain** and **range** of the correspondence Γ , respectively. For $x \in X$, the set $\{y \in Y | (x, y) \in G\}$ is denoted by $G(x)$ or $\Gamma(x)$, and we say that any element y of $G(x)$ **corresponds** to x by Γ .

For a subset G of $X \times Y$, we define a subset G^{-1} of $Y \times X$ by $(x, y) \in G \Leftrightarrow (y, x) \in G^{-1}$. Given a correspondence $\Gamma = (G, X, Y)$, the correspondence (G^{-1}, Y, X) is denoted by Γ^{-1} and is called the **inverse correspondence** of Γ . If G is the graph of a relation R , then G^{-1} is the graph of the inverse relation R^{-1} . The domain of the correspondence Γ is the range of Γ^{-1} , and vice versa. We have $(\Gamma^{-1})^{-1} = \Gamma$.

Suppose that we are given correspondences $\Gamma_1 = (G_1, X, Y)$ and $\Gamma_2 = (G_2, Y, Z)$. We define a subset G of $X \times Z$ by: $(x, z) \in G \Leftrightarrow$ there exists $y \in Y$ satisfying $(x, y) \in G_1$ and $(y, z) \in G_2$. Then the correspondence $\Gamma = (G, X, Z)$ is denoted by $\Gamma_2 \circ \Gamma_1$ and is called the **composite** of Γ_1 and Γ_2 . We have the **associative law** $(\Gamma_3 \circ \Gamma_2) \circ \Gamma_1 = \Gamma_3 \circ (\Gamma_2 \circ \Gamma_1)$ and the law $(\Gamma_2 \circ \Gamma_1)^{-1} = \Gamma_1^{-1} \circ \Gamma_2^{-1}$.

Let Γ be a correspondence from X to Y , and

359 B Relativity

assume that to any x belonging to the domain A of Γ there corresponds one and only one $y \in Y$, namely, $\Gamma(x) = \{y\}$ for any $x \in A$. Then Γ is called a **univalent correspondence**. If Γ and Γ^{-1} are both univalent correspondences, Γ is called a **one-to-one correspondence**. For given sets A and B , a univalent correspondence with domain A and range B is called a \dagger mapping (or \dagger function) with domain A and range B (\rightarrow 381 Sets C).

References

See references to 381 Sets.

359 (XX.21) Relativity

A. History

The theory of relativity is a system of theoretical physics established by A. Einstein and is composed of special relativity and general relativity. Toward the end of the 19th century, it was believed that electromagnetic waves propagate through the ether, a hypothetical medium. A number of experimenters tried to find the motion of the earth relative to the ether, but all these attempts were unsuccessful (A. A. Michelson, E. W. Morley). Studying these results, in 1905 Einstein proposed the **special theory of relativity**, which extended Galileo's relativity principle of \dagger Newtonian mechanics to \dagger electromagnetism and radically revised the concepts of space and time. Almost all the conclusions of special relativity theory are now confirmed by experiments, and this theory has even become a guiding principle for developing new theories in physics. By extending special relativity, Einstein established (1915) the **general theory of relativity**. Its principal part is a new theory of gravitation containing Newton's theory as a special case. Its conclusions about the solar system are compatible with observed facts that are regarded as experimental support for the theory. Effects due to general relativity other than those just described have been studied to a considerable extent, but it is hard at present to test theoretical results experimentally, and there are some doubts about the limit of its applicability.

B. Special Relativity

In Newtonian mechanics, natural phenomena are described in a 3-dimensional Euclidean

space considered independent of time. In special relativity, however, it is postulated that space and time cannot be separated but are unified into a 4-dimensional pseudo-Euclidean space with the †fundamental form

$$ds^2 = \sum_{a,b} g_{ab} dx^a dx^b \equiv c^2 dt^2 - dx^2 - dy^2 - dz^2,$$

where $a, b = 0, 1, 2, 3$ and

$$(x^0, x^1, x^2, x^3) = (ct, x, y, z).$$

Here (x, y, z) are spatial Cartesian coordinates, t is time, and c is the speed of light. This space was introduced by H. Minkowski and is called **Minkowski space-time**. By means of it Minkowski gave an ingenious geometric interpretation to special relativity.

A nonzero vector V is called timelike, null (or lightlike), or spacelike according as $V^2 > 0$, $= 0$, or < 0 , where $V^2 = \sum_{a,b} g_{ab} V^a V^b$.

The group of motions in Minkowski space-time is called the **inhomogeneous Lorentz group**. Its elements can be written as

$$x'^i = \sum_a c_a^i x^a + c^i, \quad \sum_{a,b} g_{ab} c_a^i c_b^j = g_{ij},$$

where c_j^i and c^i are constants. The transformations with $c^i = 0$ are usually called **Lorentz transformations**, and the group G composed of these transformations is called the **homogeneous Lorentz group** or simply the **Lorentz group**. These are important concepts in special relativity. If G_0 denotes the †connected component of the identity element of G , the factor group G/G_0 is an Abelian group of type $(2, 2)$ and of order 4. We call G_0 the **proper Lorentz group**. A frequently used element of G_0 is

$$L_v: x' = \frac{x - vt}{\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}}, \quad t' = \frac{t - (v/c^2)x}{\sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2}},$$

$$y' = y, \quad z' = z; \quad |v| < c. \quad (1)$$

Such transformations form a 1-dimensional subgroup of G_0 with v as a parameter, and the composition law of the subgroup is given by

$$L_u \cdot L_v = L_w, \quad w = \frac{u + v}{1 + uv/c^2}.$$

Elements of G not belonging to G_0 are

$$T: x'^0 = -x^0, \quad x'^i = x^i; \quad i = 1, 2, 3,$$

$$S: x'^0 = x^0, \quad x'^i = -x^i; \quad i = 1, 2, 3.$$

Both T (**time reversal**) and S (**space reflection** or **parity transformation**) have aroused much interest among physicists.

Historically, the transformation formula (1) was first obtained by H. A. Lorentz, under the assumption of contraction of a rod in the direction of its movement in order to overcome the difficulties of the ether hypothesis, but his theoretical grounds were not satisfactory. On the other hand, Einstein started with

the following two postulates: (i) **Special principle of relativity**: A physical law should be expressed in the same form in all **inertial systems**, namely, in all coordinate systems that move relative to each other with uniform velocity. (ii) **Principle of invariance of the speed of light**: The speed of light in a vacuum is the same in all inertial systems and in all directions, irrespective of the motion of the light source. From these assumptions Einstein derived (1) as the transformation formula between inertial systems $x = (ct, x, y, z)$ and $x' = (ct', x', y', z')$ that move relative to each other with uniform velocity v along the common x -axis. This was the first step in special relativity, and along this line of thought, Einstein solved successively the problems of the Lorentz-Fitzgerald contraction, the dilation of time as measured by moving clocks, the aberration of light, the Doppler effect, and Fresnel's dragging coefficient.

C. Relativity and Electromagnetism

In special relativity, a physical quantity is represented by a †tensor (or a scalar or a vector) in Minkowski space-time, and physical laws are written in tensor form and are invariant under Lorentz transformations of coordinates. This is the mathematical expression of the special principle of relativity. Since the transformation (1) tends to a **Galileo transformation** in Newtonian mechanics as $c \rightarrow \infty$, the special principle of relativity is a generalization of the Newton-Galileo principle of relativity. To summarize mathematically, it may safely be said that special relativity is a theory of invariants with respect to the Lorentz group. To illustrate this conclusion we consider electromagnetic theory.

The electric field \mathbf{E} is usually represented by a "polar vector" and the magnetic field \mathbf{H} by an "axial vector" in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space. Even if the magnetic field does not exist in one inertial system, the field can arise in another system that moves uniformly relative to the original system. In view of this, electric and magnetic fields are considered in relativity to form one physical quantity with components

$$(F_{ij}) = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -E_x & -E_y & -E_z \\ E_x & 0 & H_z & -H_y \\ E_y & -H_z & 0 & H_x \\ E_z & H_y & -H_x & 0 \end{pmatrix}.$$

This quantity transforms as an †alternating tensor of degree 2 under Lorentz transformations. In like manner, the electric charge density ρ and the electric current density \mathbf{J} are unified into a †contravariant vector with

respect to Lorentz transformations:

$$s = (s^0, s^1, s^2, s^3) \\ = (\rho, J_x/c, J_y/c, J_z/c).$$

Such a vector s in Minkowski space-time is sometimes called a **four-vector** as distinguished from an ordinary vector such as J . If the electromagnetic field F_{ij} and the current four-vector s are thus defined, the \dagger Maxwell equations, the basic equations of electromagnetism, can be written in tensor form:

$$\sum_a \frac{\partial F^{ia}}{\partial x^a} = s^i, \quad \frac{\partial F_{jk}}{\partial x^i} + \frac{\partial F_{ki}}{\partial x^j} + \frac{\partial F_{ij}}{\partial x^k} = 0,$$

where

$$F^{ij} = \sum_{a,b} g^{ia} g^{jb} F_{ab}, \quad \sum_a g^{ia} g_{ja} = \delta_j^i.$$

In the same way, the equation of motion for a charged particle in an electromagnetic field can be expressed as

$$\frac{d^2 x^i}{ds^2} = \frac{e}{mc} \sum_a F_a^i \frac{dx^a}{ds}, \quad F_j^i = \sum_a g^{ia} F_{ja},$$

where e and m are the charge and mass of the particle, respectively, and s is the arc length along the particle trajectory (\rightarrow 130 Electromagnetism).

Though special relativity originated in studies of electromagnetic phenomena, it has gradually become clear that the theory is valid also for other phenomena. One interesting result is that the energy of a particle moving with uniform velocity v is given by

$$E = mc^2 / \sqrt{1 - v^2/c^2},$$

and accordingly even a particle at rest has energy mc^2 (**rest energy**). This shows the equivalence of mass and energy, with the conversion formula given by $E = mc^2$. This conclusion has been verified experimentally by studies of nuclear reactions and has become the basis of the development of nuclear power. The special principle of relativity also showed its validity in the electron theory of P. A. M. Dirac (1928) and the quantum electrodynamics of S. Tomonaga (1943) and others. It has, however, been shown that the invariance for space reflection (namely for the coset SG_0 of the Lorentz group G) is violated in the decay of elementary particles (T. D. Lee and C. N. Yang, 1956; C. S. Wu et al., 1957). Similar results have been obtained for time reversal (J. H. Christenson, J. W. Cronin, V. L. Fitch, and R. Turlay, 1964).

D. General Relativity

Special relativity has its origin in studies of electromagnetic phenomena, while the central

part of general relativity is a theory of gravitation founded on the **general principle of relativity** and the **principle of equivalence**. The first principle is an extension of the special principle of relativity to accelerated systems in general. It requires that a physical law should be independent of the choice of local coordinates in a 4-dimensional \dagger differentiable manifold representing space and time (**space-time manifold**). Since a physical quantity is represented by a tensor on the space-time manifold, physical laws are expressed in tensor form, in agreement with the first principle. The second principle claims that gravitational and inertial mass are equal, and accordingly fictitious forces due to acceleration (such as centrifugal force) cannot be distinguished from gravitational force. This had been shown with high accuracy by the experiments of R. von Eötvös (1890) and others.

Starting from these two principles, Einstein was led to the following conclusion. If a gravitational field is produced by matter, the corresponding space-time structure is altered; namely, flat Minkowski space-time is changed into a curved 4-dimensional manifold with \dagger pseudo-Riemannian metric of \dagger signature (1, 3). The \dagger fundamental tensor g_{ij} of this manifold represents the gravitational potential, and the gravitational equation satisfied by g_{ij} can be expressed as a geometric law of the manifold. Gravitational phenomena are thus reduced to properties of the geometric structure of the space-time manifold. This idea, which was not seen in the older physics, became the motif in the development of \dagger unified field theories.

Now the gravitational law proposed by Einstein is an analog of the \dagger Poisson equation in Newtonian mechanics. Let R_{ij} and R be the \dagger Ricci tensor and the \dagger scalar curvature formed from g_{ij} . Then outside the source of a gravitational field, g_{ij} must satisfy

$$G_{ij} \equiv R_{ij} - g_{ij}R/2 = 0, \quad \text{that is, } R_{ij} = 0, \quad (2)$$

and inside the source,

$$G_{ij} = \kappa T_{ij}, \quad (3)$$

where κ is the gravitational constant. Here the **energy-momentum tensor** T_{ij} is a \dagger symmetric tensor representing the dynamical state of matter (energy, momentum, and stress). Usually (2) and (3) are called the **exterior** and **interior field equations**, respectively.

Next, the **equation of motion** of a particle in a gravitational field is given by

$$\delta^2 x^i / \delta s^2 = 0, \quad \sum_{a,b} g_{ab} \frac{dx^a}{ds} \frac{dx^b}{ds} = +1, \quad (4)$$

if the particle mass is so small that its effect on the field is negligible. Here $\delta/\delta s$ stands for \dagger covariant differentiation with respect to the

arc length s along the particle trajectory. In other words, a particle in a gravitational field moves along a timelike \dagger geodesic in the space-time manifold. Similarly, the path of light is represented by a **null geodesic**, whose equation is formally obtained from (4) by replacing the right-hand side of the second equation by zero.

Experimental verification of the theory of general relativity has been obtained by detection of the following effects: the shift of spectral lines due to the gravity of the earth and of white dwarfs, the deflection of light or radio waves passing near the sun, the time delay of radar echo signals passing near the sun, and the advance of the perihelion of Mercury. All the observational data are compatible with the theoretical results. Time delay and the advance of the perihelion have been observed in a binary system of neutron stars. It is generally accepted that these results are experimental verifications of general relativity.

It should be noted that (2) has wave solutions, which have no counterpart in Newton's gravitational theory. This fact implies that gravitational effects propagate with the velocity of light. The gravitational waves transport energy and momentum, and the gravitational mass is decreased by the emission of the waves. Experiments to detect gravitational waves generated in the universe have been planned, and the decrease of the orbital period of a binary star system due to the emission of gravitational waves has been observed.

The concept of gravitational waves suggests the existence of a quantum of the gravitational field (graviton); however, the detection of the graviton is far from feasible.

In the interior equation (3), the matter producing a gravitational field is represented by a tensor T_{ij} of class C^0 . But there is also a way of representing it by singularities of a solution of the exterior equation (2). From this point of view, the equation of motion of a material particle (i.e., singularity) is not assumed a priori as in (4), but is derived as a result of (2) (A. Einstein, L. Infeld, and B. Hoffman, 1938).

In the static and weak field limits, the fundamental form is approximately given by Newton's gravitational potential φ as

$$ds^2 = c^2(1 - \varphi/c^2)dt^2 - (1 + \varphi/c^2)(dx^2 + dy^2 + dz^2),$$

and (2) and (3) reduce in this limit to Laplace's and Poisson's equations, respectively. Newton's theory of gravity is valid in the limit $\varphi/c^2 \ll 1$.

Stimulated by the discoveries of neutron stars and black holes and by the big-bang theory of the universe in the 1960s, numerous studies of general relativity have been carried

out on such problems as the gravitational field of a spinning mass, the dynamical process of gravitational collapse, the space-time structure of black holes, the generation of gravitational waves, the global structure and dynamics of the universe, and so on. A comparison of the theoretical predictions and the observations is generally favorable, but the phenomena in the universe are so complex that the effects of general relativity cannot always be isolated.

E. Solutions of Einstein's Equations

The isometric symmetry of space-time is described by \dagger Killing vectors. The stationary metric is characterized by a timelike Killing vector, in which case equation (2) reduces to an elliptic partial differential equation on a 3-dimensional manifold. If the space-time is axially symmetric as well as stationary, (2) reduces to the **Ernst equation**:

$$(\varepsilon + \varepsilon^*)\nabla^2\varepsilon = 2\nabla\varepsilon \cdot \nabla\varepsilon, \quad (5)$$

where ∇ represents divergence in a flat space. The metric tensors are derived from the complex potential ε . The solutions of (5) can be obtained using techniques developed for the soliton problem.

One example of stationary and axially symmetric solutions is the **Kerr metric**, which is written as

$$ds^2 = c^2 dt^2 - \frac{2mr}{\rho^2}(a \sin^2 \theta d\varphi - c dt)^2 - \rho^2 \left(\frac{dr^2}{\Delta} + d\theta^2 \right) - (r^2 + a^2) \sin^2 \theta d\varphi^2, \quad (6)$$

with $\rho^2 = r^2 + a^2 \cos^2 \theta$ and $\Delta = r^2 - 2mr + a^2$. This metric solution represents a gravitational field around a spinning mass with mass $M = mc^2/G$ and angular momentum $J = Mac$. When $a=0$, this metric reduces to the Schwarzschild metric.

Applying a Bäcklund transformation to the Kerr metric, an infinite series of stationary and axially symmetric solutions can be derived. All these solutions belong to the space-time metric with, in general, two Killing vectors.

The dynamical evolution of space-time structure has been studied by means of the \dagger Cauchy problem of general relativity. Choosing appropriate dynamical variables, equation (2) or (3) is divided into constraint equations in terms of the initial data and evolution equations in terms of the dynamical variables. The latter \dagger hyperbolic equations may also be written in Hamiltonian form.

A typical example of such a problem is the dynamics of a spatially homogeneous 3-

dimensional manifold; this has been studied as a cosmological model. The space-time with a constant scalar curvature R is called **de Sitter space**, and reduces to the Minkowski space if $R=0$. If the 3-dimensional space is isotropic as well as homogeneous, the metric takes the form

$$ds^2 = c^2 dt^2 - a(t)^2 \{ dx^2 + f(x)^2 \times (d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2) \},$$

where $f(x) = \sin x$, x , or $\sinh x$. These are called **Robertson-Walker metrics** and are considered to describe a realistic expanding universe.

F. Global Structure of Space-Time

Following the advances of modern differential geometry, manifestly coordinate-independent techniques to analyze space-time properties have been applied to general relativity. The mathematical model of space-time is a connected 4-dimensional Hausdorff C^∞ -manifold endowed with a metric of signature (1,3). The metric allows the physical description of local causality and of local conservation of energy and momentum. The metric functions obey the Einstein field equation (2) or (3).

In order to clarify the global structure of the solutions of Einstein's equations, maximally analytic extension of the solutions has been studied. The maximal extension of the Schwarzschild metric is given as

$$ds^2 = \frac{32m^3}{r} e^{-r/2m} (dv^2 - du^2) - r^2 (d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2),$$

using the **Kruskal coordinates**, which are related to the coordinates of (6) by

$$\left(\frac{r}{2m} - 1 \right) e^{r/2m} = u^2 - v^2,$$

$$\tanh t/4m = u/v \quad \text{or} \quad v/u.$$

To study the global structure at infinity, a conformal mapping of the metric is used. For example, the Minkowski metric is written in the form $ds^2 = \Omega^2 d\bar{s}^2$, where

$$ds^2 = dp dq - \frac{1}{4} \sin^2(p-q) (d\theta^2 + \sin^2 \theta d\phi^2)$$

and $\Omega = \sec p \sec q$, $\tan p = t + r$, $\tan q = t - r$. By means of this mapping, all points, including infinity, are assigned finite p, q coordinate values in $-\pi/2 \leq q \leq p \leq \pi/2$.

Singularities in space-time are one of the major problems concerning the global structure of the manifold. For some Cauchy problems relevant to cosmology and gravitational collapse, the inevitable occurrence of a singularity has been proved (**singularity theorem**).

A sufficient condition for occurrence of a singularity is that there be some point p such that all the null geodesics starting from p converge to p again. In addition to this condition, for the proof of the singularity theorem it is presumed that the space-time is free of closed nonspacelike curves, that a Cauchy surface exists, and that the energy-momentum tensor satisfies the condition

$$\sum_{i,j} \left(T_{ij} - \frac{1}{2} T g_{ij} \right) V^i V^j \geq 0$$

for any timelike vector V^i . The singularity whose existence is implied by this theorem means that the space-time manifold is geodesically incomplete (the space-time is complete if every geodesic can be extended to arbitrary values of its affine parameter).

The causal structure of space-time is also related to the global structure of the manifold. In this regard, black holes have been introduced as the final state of gravitational collapse. In the black-hole structure of space-time, there exists a closed surface called an **event horizon** in an asymptotically flat space. The event horizon is the boundary (the set of points) in space-time from which one can escape to infinity, or the boundary of the set of points that one can see from the infinite future. Then the black hole is a region from which no signal can escape to the exterior of the event horizon.

If we assume that singularities do not exist in the exterior of the event horizon, a stationary black-hole structure is uniquely described by the Kerr metric [6]. In the case of spherically symmetric collapse, this assumption is verified and the final metric is given by the Schwarzschild metric. However, it is not known whether this assumption is true in more general gravitational collapse.

References

- [1] A. Einstein, The meaning of relativity, Princeton Univ. Press, fifth edition, 1956.
- [2] H. Weyl, Space, time, matter, Dover, 1950. (Original in German, 1923.)
- [3] A. Lichnerowicz, Théories relativistes de la gravitation et de l'électromagnétisme, Masson, 1955.
- [4] C. W. Misner, K. S. Thorne, and J. A. Wheeler, Gravitation, Freeman, 1973.
- [5] L. Witten (ed.), Gravitation, an introduction to current research, Wiley, 1962.
- [6] C. DeWitt and B. S. DeWitt (eds.), Black holes, Gordon & Breach, 1972.
- [7] S. W. Hawking and G. F. R. Ellis, The large scale structure of space-time, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1973.

- [8] M. Carmeli, Group theory and general relativity, McGraw-Hill, 1977.
 [9] S. W. Hawking and W. Israel (eds.), General relativity, an Einstein centenary survey, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1979.
 [10] A. Held (ed.), General relativity and gravitation I, II, Plenum, 1980.

360 (XXI.8) Renaissance Mathematics

Toward the middle of the 13th century, scholastic theology and philosophy were at their height with the *Summa theologiae* of Thomas Aquinas (1225?–1274); but in the latter half of the century, the English philosopher Roger Bacon (1214–1294) attacked Aquinian philosophy in his *Opus majus*, insisted on the importance of experimental methods in science, and strongly urged the study of mathematics. The Renaissance flourished first in Italy, then in other European countries in the 15th and 16th centuries, in the domains of the arts and literature. Newer ideas in mathematics and the natural sciences dominated the 17th century. However, it was the invention of printing in the 15th century, the translation of the Greek texts of Euclid and Archimedes into European languages, and the importation of Arabian science into Europe during the Renaissance that prepared for this development.

In the 15th century, the German priest Nicolaus Cusanus (1401–1464) discussed infinity, the convergence of infinite series, and some problems of quadrature. During the same period, the German scholar Regiomontanus (1436–1476) wrote the first systematic treatise on trigonometry independent of astronomy. Leonardo da Vinci (1452–1519), the all-encompassing genius born in the same century, left manuscripts in which he wrote about mechanics, geometric optics, and perspective. Da Vinci's contemporary, the German painter A. Dürer (1471–1528), wrote a textbook on perspective. In 1494, L. Pacioli (1445?–1514) published *Summa de arithmetica*, one of the first printed books on mathematics. Its content, influenced by Arabian mathematics, includes practical arithmetic and double-entry bookkeeping. The book enjoyed wide popularity.

The best known result of 16th-century mathematics is the solution of algebraic equations of degrees 3 and 4 by the Italian mathematicians Scipione del Ferro, N. Tartaglia (1506–1557), G. Cardano (1501–1576), and L. Ferrari (1522–1565). Cardano published the

solution of equations of the third degree in his book *Ars magna* (1545). The solution was due to Tartaglia, to whom acknowledgment was made, although publication of the method was against his will. This constitutes a famous episode in the history of mathematics, but what is historically more important is the fact that essential progress beyond Greek mathematics was made by mathematicians of this period, since the Greeks were able to solve equations only of degrees 1 and 2. Algebra was subsequently systematized by the French mathematician F. Viète (1540–1603).

By the end of the 15th century, practical mathematics (influenced by the Arabians) had become popular in Europe, and more advanced mathematics began to be studied in European universities, especially in Italy. In 1543, N. Copernicus (1473–1543) published his heliocentric theory (1543); G. Galilei (called Galileo) (1564–1642), the indomitable proponent of this theory, was also born in the 16th century. Copernicus studied at the Universities of Bologna, Padua, and Ferrara; Galileo studied at the University of Pisa and taught at the Universities of Pisa, Padua, and Florence. A system of numeration was imported from Arabia to Europe in the 13th century; by the time of S. Stevin (1548?–1620?) it took the definite form of a decimal system, and with the development and acceptance of printing, the forms of the numerals became fixed.

References

- [1] M. Cantor, *Vorlesungen über Geschichte der Mathematik II*, Teubner, second edition, 1900.
 [2] J. Cardan (G. Cardano), *The book of my life* (trans. J. Stoner), Dover, 1963.
 [3] G. Cardano, *Opera*, 10 vols., Lyon, 1663.
 [4] N. Bourbaki, *Éléments d'histoire des mathématiques*, Hermann, 1960.

361 (XX.32) Renormalization Group

A. Introduction

The concept of renormalization was introduced by S. Tomonaga, J. S. Schwinger, M. Gell-Mann, and F. E. Low in order to overcome the difficulty of divergence in field theory. If the upper bound of the momentum is limited to a finite cutoff value Λ , then physical quantities, for example, the mass m of an electron, can be obtained as finite quantities by letting

Λ go to infinity after summing all divergent terms. This is called the **renormalization method** using **subtraction**. Since the cutoff Λ is arbitrary insofar as it is finite, the Green's functions are indefinite because they depend on Λ . This dependence on the cutoff Λ corresponds to the response for the scale transformation of length, and this transformation is a certain (semi) group, called a **renormalization group**. Several kinds of renormalization group have been used in field theory, as well as in the statistical mechanics of phase transition.

B. Renormalization Group in Field Theory
[1-3]

A typical method to resolve the ultraviolet divergence is to add **subtraction terms** in the Lagrangian so that they cancel the divergence. This cancellation is usually performed in each order of the perturbation expansion. When the addition of a finite number of subtraction terms cancels the divergence, the relevant Hamiltonian is said to be **renormalizable**. Otherwise it is called **unrenormalizable**. The Lagrangian density

$$\mathcal{L}_0 = \frac{1}{2} \partial^\mu \phi_0 \partial_\mu \phi_0 - \frac{1}{2} m_0^2 \phi_0^2 - \frac{1}{4!} g_0 \phi_0^4,$$

for example, can be renormalized by the transformation $\phi_0 = Z_3^{1/2} \phi$, $g_0 = Z_1 Z_3^{-2} g$, and $m_0^2 = m^2 + \delta m^2$. All the divergences are taken into the renormalization constants Z_3 , Z_1 , and δm^2 , so that the renormalized quantities ϕ , g , and m are finite. These renormalization constants can be calculated by means of a perturbation method, but the requirement of circumventing the divergences alone is not sufficient to determine them explicitly. This indeterminacy is usually expressed as $Z_3(\mu)$ and $Z_1(\mu)$, i.e., in terms of a parameter μ , called the renormalization point. The μ -dependence of these functions can be determined by means of the following renormalization conditions:

$$\lim_{p^2 + \mu^2 \rightarrow 0} (p^2 + m^2) G^{(2)}(p, \mu) = 1;$$
$$\Gamma(p_i, \mu) = 1, \quad p_i p_j = \frac{\mu^2}{3} (1 - 4\delta_{ij}).$$

Since the renormalization constants depend on the continuous parameter μ , the renormalized Green's function and coupling constant g are also functions of μ , and consequently the quantity $d^{(2N)}(\{p_i\}, \mu, g(\mu))$ defined by

$$d^{(2N)}(\{p_i\}, \mu, g(\mu)) \\ \equiv \left[\prod_{i=1}^{2N} (p_i^2 + m^2) \right] G^{(2N)}(p_i, \mu, g(\mu))$$

satisfies the **renormalization equation**

$$\left(\mu \frac{\partial}{\partial \mu} + \beta \frac{\partial}{\partial g} - 2N\gamma \right) d^{(2N)}(\{p_i\}, \mu, g) = 0,$$

where $\beta = \mu dg/d\mu$ and $\gamma = \frac{1}{2} \mu d \log Z_3(\mu)/d\mu$. If the coefficients β and γ are calculated perturbationally up to a certain order, the renormalized Green's function is obtained up to the same order by solving the foregoing renormalization equation. This is the first kind of renormalization group. A second kind expresses the response of the renormalized Green's function to the change in the mass and coupling constant, and is expressed by the **Callan-Symanzik equation** [4, 5]

$$\left(m \frac{\partial}{\partial m} + \beta(g) \frac{\partial}{\partial g} + 2N\gamma_\phi(g) \right) G_R^{(2N)} = \Delta G_R^{(2N)},$$

where $\beta(g) = Z m_0 \partial g / \partial m_0$ and $\gamma_\phi(g) = \frac{1}{2} Z m_0 \cdot \partial \log Z_3 / \partial m_0$, and where Z is determined by $Z m_0 \partial m / \partial m_0 = m$. The inhomogeneous term is defined by

$$\Delta G_R^{(2N)} = Z m_0 \frac{\partial}{\partial m_0} G_R^{(2N)} \\ + Z m_0 \frac{\partial}{\partial m_0} (N \log Z_3) G_R^{(2N)}.$$

The irreducible Green's function $\Gamma_R^{(2N)}$ satisfies

$$\left(m \frac{\partial}{\partial m} + \beta(g) \frac{\partial}{\partial g} - 2N\gamma_\phi(g) \right) \Gamma_R^{(2N)} = i \Delta \Gamma_R^{(2N)}.$$

Since the inhomogeneous term can be neglected in the high-energy region, the foregoing equation becomes homogeneous, and consequently its solution is

$$\Gamma_R^{(2N)} \left(p_i, \frac{m}{\lambda}, g \right) \\ = \exp \left[-2N \int_a^{g(\lambda)} \gamma(g') \beta^{-1}(g') dg' \right] \\ \times \Gamma_R^{(2N)}(p_i, m, g(\lambda)).$$

Here $g(\lambda)$ is the solution of the equation $\int_a^{g(\lambda)} \beta^{-1}(g') dg' = \log \lambda$. Since dimensional analysis yields $\Gamma_R^{(2N)}(\lambda p_i, m, g) = \lambda^{4-2N} \Gamma_R(p_i, m/\lambda, g)$, the foregoing solution shows that high-energy phenomena can be described by the low-energy phenomena whose coupling constant is given by $g_\infty \equiv g(\infty)$. In particular, when $g_\infty = 0$, high-energy phenomena are described by the asymptotically free field. This circumstance is called **asymptotic freedom**.

C. Renormalization Group Theory in Statistical Physics

The renormalization group technique has proved to be powerful in statistical physics,

particularly in studies of phase transitions and critical phenomena [6–10]. The correlation length ξ diverges like $\xi(T) \sim (T - T_c)^{-\nu}$ near the critical point T_c , where ν is called the **critical exponent** of ξ . Similarly, the correlation function $C(R)$ for the distance R behaves like $C(R) \sim R^{-(d-2+\eta)} \exp(-\kappa R)$, $\kappa = \xi^{-1}$, where d is the dimensionality of the system and η is the exponent describing the deviation of the singular behavior of $C(R)$ from classical theory. Renormalization is useful in evaluating these critical exponents systematically. The fundamental idea is to eliminate some degrees of freedom, to find recursion formulas for interaction parameters, and then to evaluate critical exponents from their asymptotic behavior near the fixed point. There are many different ways of carrying out this idea explicitly. Roughly classifying these into two groups, we have (i) momentum-space renormalization group theories [6–10] and (ii) real-space renormalization group theories [10, 11].

The common fundamental structure of these renormalization group techniques is explained as follows. First the momentum space or real space is divided into cells and rapidly fluctuating parts, namely, small-momentum parts inside each cell are integrated or eliminated, and consequently the remaining slowly fluctuating parts, namely, long-wave parts, are renormalized. The original Hamiltonian \mathcal{H}_0 is transformed into \mathcal{H}_1 by means of this elimination process and by some scale transformation that preserves the phase space volume. This renormalization operation is written as \mathbf{R}_b ; i.e., $\mathcal{H}_1 = \mathbf{R}_b \mathcal{H}_0$. Similarly we have $\mathcal{H}_2 = \mathbf{R}_b \mathcal{H}_1 = \mathbf{R}_b^2 \mathcal{H}_0, \dots, \mathcal{H}_n = \mathbf{R}_b \mathcal{H}_{n-1} = \mathbf{R}_b^n \mathcal{H}_0, \dots$. This transformation \mathbf{R}_b has the (semi) group property $\mathbf{R}_{bb'} = \mathbf{R}_b \mathbf{R}_{b'}$. A generator \mathbf{G} is defined by $\mathbf{G} = \lim_{b \rightarrow 1+0} (\mathbf{R}_b - 1)/(b - 1)$. That is, $\mathbf{R}_b = \exp(b\mathbf{G})$, $e^1 = b$. The transformation of \mathcal{H} is expressed as $d\mathcal{H}/d\ln b = \mathbf{G}[\mathcal{H}]$. The fixed point $\mathcal{H}^* = \mathbf{R}_b \mathcal{H}^*$ is the solution of $\mathbf{G}[\mathcal{H}^*] = 0$. In order to find critical exponents from the asymptotic behavior of \mathbf{G} near \mathcal{H}^* , we consider a Hamiltonian of the form $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{H}^* + wQ$ and expand $\mathbf{G}[\mathcal{H}]$ as $\mathbf{G}[\mathcal{H}^* + wQ] = w\mathbf{K}Q + O(w^2)$. If the operator \mathbf{K} thus defined has a negative eigenvalue λ_i , the corresponding physical quantity Q_i becomes irrelevant after repeating the renormalization procedure, and the physical quantity Q_j corresponding to a positive eigenvalue $\lambda_j > 0$ becomes relevant. Thus, by introducing a field h_j conjugate to the relevant operator Q_j , we study the Hamiltonian $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{H}^* + \sum_j h_j Q_j$. The free energy per unit volume $f[\mathcal{H}] \equiv f(h_1, h_2, \dots)$ is found to have the scaling property

$$f(h_1, \dots, h_j, \dots) \simeq b^{-d} f(b^{\lambda_1} h_1, \dots, b^{\lambda_j} h_j, \dots).$$

By taking Q_1 as the energy operator, we have $h_1 \sim T - T_c \equiv t$. By the normalization $b^{\lambda_1} h_1 = 1$, we obtain the scaling law

$$f(t, \dots, h_j, \dots) \simeq t^{d/\lambda_1} f(1, \dots, h_j/t^{\varphi_j}, \dots).$$

The critical exponent of the specific heat defined by $C \sim t^{-\alpha}$ is given by the formula $\alpha = 2 - d/\lambda_1$. Other scaling exponents $\{\varphi_j\}$ can be obtained via the formula $\varphi_j = \lambda_j/\lambda_1$ from the eigenvalues of \mathbf{K} . The simplest example of \mathbf{R}_b is the case where a single interaction parameter K is transformed into a new parameter K' by $K' = f_b(K)$. The fixed point K^* is given by the solution of $K^* = f_b(K^*)$. The correlation exponent ν defined by $\xi \sim (K - K^*)^{-\nu}$ is given by the Wilson formula $\nu = \log b / \log \Lambda$, $\Lambda = (df_b/dK)_{K=K^*}$. In most cases, \mathbf{R}_b is constructed perturbationally, and critical exponents are usually calculated in power series of $\varepsilon \equiv d_c - d$, as $\varphi = \varphi_0 + \varphi_1 \varepsilon + \varphi_2 \varepsilon^2 + \dots$, where d_c denotes the critical dimension. This is called the **ε -expansion**. The first few terms are calculated explicitly for specific models, such as the φ^4 -model. By applying the Borel sum method to these ε -expansions, one can estimate critical exponents [10, 11].

The renormalization group method can be applied to other many-body problems, such as the Kondo effect [12].

References

- [1] E. C. G. Stueckelberg and A. Petermann, La normalisation des constantes dans la théorie des quanta, *Helv. Phys. Acta*, 26 (1953), 499–520.
- [2] M. Gell-Mann and F. E. Low, Quantum electrodynamics at small distances, *Phys. Rev.*, 95 (1954), 1300–1312.
- [3] N. N. Bogolyubov and D. V. Shirkov, Introduction to the theory of quantized fields, Interscience, 1959.
- [4] C. G. Callan, Jr., Broken scale invariance in scalar field theory, *Phys. Rev.*, D2 (1970), 1541–1547.
- [5] K. Symanzik, Small distance behaviour in field theory and power counting, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 18 (1970), 227–246; Small distance-behaviour analysis and Wilson expansions, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 23 (1971), 49–86.
- [6] C. DiCastro and G. Jona-Lasinio, On the microscopic foundation of scaling laws, *Phys. Lett.*, 29A (1969), 322–323; C. DiCastro, The multiplicative renormalization group and the critical behavior in $d = 4 - \varepsilon$ dimensions, *Lett. Nuovo Cimento*, 5 (1972), 69–74.
- [7] K. G. Wilson, Renormalization group and critical phenomena. I, Renormalization group and the Kadanoff scaling picture, *Phys. Rev.*,

- B4 (1971), 3174–3183; II, Phase-space cell analysis of critical behavior, Phys. Rev., B4 (1971), 3184–3205.
- [8] K. G. Wilson and M. E. Fisher, Critical exponents in 3.99 dimensions, Phys. Rev. Lett., 28 (1972), 240–243.
- [9] K. G. Wilson and J. Kogut, The renormalization group and the ϵ expansion, Phys. Rep., 12C (1974), 75–200.
- [10] C. Domb and M. S. Green (eds.), Phase transitions and critical phenomena VI, Academic Press, 1976.
- [11] A. A. Migdal, Recursion equations in gauge field theories, Sov. Phys. JETP, 42 (1975), 413–418; Phase transitions in gauge and sublattice systems, Sov. Phys. JETP, 42 (1975), 743–746. (Original in Russian, 1975.)
- [12] K. G. Wilson, The renormalization group: Critical phenomena and the Kondo problem, Rev. Mod. Phys., 47 (1975), 773–840.
- [13] L. P. Kadanoff, Notes on Migdal's recursion formulas, Ann. Phys., 100 (1976), 359–394.

362 (IV.16) Representations

A. General Remarks

For a mathematical system A , a mapping from A to a similar (but in general “more concrete”) system preserving the structure of A is called a **representation** of A . In this article, we consider the representations of \dagger groups and \dagger associative algebras. For representations of other algebraic systems \rightarrow 42 Boolean Algebras; 231 Jordan Algebras; 248 Lie Algebras. For topological, analytic, and algebraic groups \rightarrow 13 Algebraic Groups; 69 Compact Groups; 249 Lie Groups; 422 Topological Abelian Groups; 423 Topological Groups; 437 Unitary Representations. For specific groups \rightarrow 60 Classical Groups; 61 Clifford Algebras.

B. Permutation Representations of Groups

We denote by \mathfrak{S}_M the group of all \dagger permutations of a set M (\rightarrow 190 Groups B). A **permutation representation** of a group G in M is a homomorphism $G \rightarrow \mathfrak{S}_M$. We denote by a_M the permutation of M corresponding to $a \in G$ and write $a_M(x) = ax$ ($x \in M$). Then we have a condition $(ab)x = a(bx)$, $1x = x$ ($a, b \in G$, 1 is the identity element, $x \in M$). In general, if the product $ax \in M$ of $a \in G$ and $x \in M$ is defined and satisfies this condition, then G is said to **operate on M from the left**, and M is called a **left**

G -set. Giving a permutation representation of G in M is equivalent to giving the structure of a left G -set to M . A **reciprocal permutation representation** of G in M is an \dagger antihomomorphism $G \rightarrow \mathfrak{S}_M$, which becomes a homomorphism if we define the multiplication in \mathfrak{S}_M by the right notation $x(fg) = (xf)g$. If the product $xa \in M$ of $a \in G$ and $x \in M$ is defined and satisfies the conditions $x(ab) = (xa)b$ and $x1 = x$, then, as before, G is said to **operate on M from the right**, and M is called a **right G -set**. Giving a reciprocal permutation representation of G in M is equivalent to giving the structure of a right G -set to M .

A (reciprocal) permutation representation is said to be **faithful** if it is injective; the corresponding G -set is also said to be faithful. In particular, we can take G itself as M and define the left (right) operation by the multiplication from the left (right). Then we have a faithful permutation representation (reciprocal permutation representation), which is called the **left (right) regular representation** of G . For $a \in G$, the induced permutation $a_G: x \rightarrow ax$ (xa) is called the **left (right) translation** by a .

We call a left G -set simply a G -set. If a subset N of a G -set M satisfies the condition that $a \in G$, $x \in N$ implies $ax \in N$, then N forms a G -set, which is called a **G -subset** of M . If a G -set M has no proper G -subset (i.e., one different from M itself and the empty subset), then for any two elements $x, y \in M$ there exists an element $a \in G$ satisfying $ax = y$. In this case, the operation of G on M is said to be **transitive**, and the corresponding permutation representation is also said to be transitive. If an equivalence relation R in a G -set M is compatible with the operation of G (i.e., R satisfies the condition that $a \in G$, $R(x, y)$ implies $R(ax, ay)$), then the quotient set M/R forms a G -set in the natural way, called the **quotient G -set** of M by R . If a G -set M has no nontrivial quotient G -set, i.e., if the only equivalence relations compatible with the operation are

$$R(x, x') \text{ for any } x, x' \in M$$

and

$$R(x, x') \text{ if and only if } x = x',$$

then the operation of G on M and the corresponding permutation representation are said to be **primitive**.

A mapping $f: M \rightarrow M'$ of G -sets is called a **G -mapping (G -map)** if the condition $f(ax) = af(x)$ ($a \in G$, $x \in M$) is satisfied. G -injection, G -surjection, and G -bijection are defined naturally. The inverse mapping of a G -bijection is also a G -bijection. Two permutation representations are said to be **similar** if there exists a G -bijection between the corresponding G -sets.

Let M be a transitive G -set, and fix any element $x \in M$. If we view G as a G -set, the mapping $f: G \rightarrow M$ defined by $f(a) = ax$ is a G -surjection and induces a G -bijection $\bar{f}: G/R \rightarrow M$. Here an equivalence class of R is precisely a left coset of the **stabilizer (stability group or isotropy group)** $H_x = \{a \in G \mid ax = x\}$. Hence we have a G -bijection $G/H_x \rightarrow M$. Conversely, for any subgroup H of G , G/H is a transitive left G -set. A transitive G -set is called a **homogeneous space** of G .

For a family $\{M_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of G -sets, the Cartesian product $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} M_\lambda$ and the \dagger direct sum $\sum_{\lambda \in \Lambda} M_\lambda$ become G -sets in the natural way; they are called the **direct product** of G -sets and the **direct sum** (i.e., disjoint union) of G -sets, respectively. Every G -set M is the direct sum of a family $\{M_\lambda\}$ of transitive G -subsets, and each M_λ is called an **orbit** (or **system of transitivity**). For a G -set M , the direct product G -set $M^k = M \times \dots \times M$ (k times) contains a G -subset $M^{(k)} = \{(x_1, \dots, x_k) \mid i \neq j \text{ implies } x_i \neq x_j\}$. If $M^{(k)}$ is transitive, M is said to be **k -ply transitive**. If M is transitive and the stabilizer of each point of M consists of the identity element alone, M is said to be **simply transitive**.

If M has n elements, a permutation representation of a group G in M is said to be of **degree n** . When G is a group of permutations of M , the canonical injection $G \rightarrow \mathfrak{S}_M$ is a faithful permutation representation; this case has been studied in detail (\rightarrow 151 Finite Groups G).

C. Linear Representations of Groups and Associative Algebras

Let K be a \dagger commutative ring with unity element and M be a K -module. Though we shall mainly treat the case where K is a field and M is a finite-dimensional \dagger linear space over K , the case where K is an \dagger integral domain and M is a \dagger free module over K of finite rank is also important. Since K is commutative, we can write $\lambda x = x\lambda$ ($\lambda \in K, x \in M$). Let $\mathcal{E}_K(M)$ be the \dagger associative algebra over K consisting of all K -endomorphisms of M , and let $GL(M)$ be the group of all \dagger invertible elements in $\mathcal{E}_K(M)$, where we assume $M \neq \{0\}$. Let A be an associative algebra over K . A **linear representation of the algebra A in M** is an algebra homomorphism $A \rightarrow \mathcal{E}_K(M)$. We always assume that A has a unity element and the homomorphisms are unitary. For convenience, we can also consider a linear representation in the trivial space $M = \{0\}$, which is called the **zero representation**. A **reciprocal linear representation** is an antihomomorphism $A \rightarrow \mathcal{E}_K(M)$. A **linear representation of a group G in M** is a group homomorphism $G \rightarrow GL(M)$. This can

be extended uniquely to a linear representation of the \dagger group ring $K[G]$ in M , and conversely, the restriction of a linear representation of $K[G]$ in M to G is a linear representation of G ; and similarly for reciprocal linear representations. Thus the study of (reciprocal) linear representations of a group G in M can be reduced to the study of (reciprocal) linear representations of the group ring $K[G]$ in M .

We now consider the linear representation of associative algebras, which we call simply "**algebras**." (Note that a group ring has a canonical basis—the group itself—and allows a more detailed investigation; \rightarrow Sections G, I.)

Given a commutative ring K with unity and a linear representation ρ of a K -algebra A in a K -module M , we introduce the structure of a left A -module into M by defining $ax = \rho(a)x$ ($a \in A, x \in M$); the structure of a K -module in M obtained by the canonical homomorphism $K \rightarrow A$ coincides with the original one. This A -module is called the **representation module** of ρ . Conversely, for any left A -module M we can define a linear representation ρ of A in M (with M viewed as a K -module via $K \rightarrow A$) by putting $\rho(a)x = ax$; the representation module of ρ coincides with the original one. This representation ρ is called the **linear representation associated with M** . A reciprocal linear representation of A corresponds to a right A -module. Thus the study of (reciprocal) linear representations of A is equivalent to the study of left (right) A -modules. For instance, if the operation of a group G on M is trivial: $\sigma x = x$ ($\sigma \in G, x \in M$), the corresponding representation of G in M assigns the identity mapping I_M to every $\sigma \in G$. Furthermore, if $M = K$, this representation is called the **unit representation** of G (over K).

Let ρ, ρ' be linear representations of A in K -modules M, M' , respectively. Then an A -homomorphism $M \rightarrow M'$ is precisely a K -homomorphism $f: M \rightarrow M'$ satisfying the condition $f \circ \rho(a) = \rho'(a) \circ f$ ($a \in A$); this is sometimes called a **homomorphism** from ρ to ρ' . In particular, an A -isomorphism is a K -isomorphism $f: M \rightarrow M'$ satisfying the condition $f \circ \rho(a) \circ f^{-1} = \rho'(a)$ ($a \in A$); in this case we say that ρ and ρ' are **similar (isomorphic or equivalent)** and write $\rho \cong \rho'$.

Let M be the representation module of a linear representation ρ of an algebra A . If ρ is injective, ρ and the corresponding M are said to be **faithful**. For example, the linear representation associated with the left A -module A is faithful; this is called the **(left) regular representation** of A . If M is \dagger simple as an A -module, ρ is said to be **irreducible (or simple)**. A homomorphism from an irreducible representation ρ to ρ must be an isomorphism or the zero

homomorphism (**Schur's lemma**). In particular, if K is an \dagger algebraically closed field and M is finite-dimensional, then such a homomorphism is a scalar multiplication. A linear representation is said to be **reducible** if it is not irreducible. If M is \dagger semisimple as an A -module, ρ is said to be **completely reducible** (or **semisimple**). If A is a semisimple ring, any linear representation of A is completely reducible. The converse also holds (\rightarrow 368 Rings G).

The linear representations associated with a submodule and a quotient module of M as an A -module are called a **subrepresentation** and a **quotient representation**, respectively. The linear representation associated with the direct sum $M_1 + \dots + M_r$ of the representation modules M_1, \dots, M_r of linear representations ρ_1, \dots, ρ_r is written $\rho_1 + \dots + \rho_r$ and called the **direct sum** of representations. If ρ is never similar to the direct sum of two nonzero linear representations, then ρ is said to be **indecomposable**; this means that M is \dagger indecomposable as an A -module.

For linear representations ρ, ρ' of a group G in M, M' , we define the linear representation $\rho \otimes \rho'$ in $M \otimes M'$ by $(\rho \otimes \rho')(g) = \rho(g) \otimes \rho'(g)$ ($g \in G$); this is called the **tensor product** of representations ρ and ρ' .

D. Matrix Representations

Let K^n be the K -module consisting of all n -tuples (ξ_i) of elements in a commutative ring K . $\mathcal{E}_K(K^n)$ is identified with the K -algebra $M_n(K)$ of all $n \times n$ matrices (λ_{ij}) over $K: (\lambda_{ij})(\xi_j) = (\sum_{j=1}^n \lambda_{ij} \xi_j)$. Thus a linear representation of A in K^n , i.e., a homomorphism $A \rightarrow M_n(K)$, is called a **matrix representation** of A over K , and n is called its **degree**. A matrix representation of a group G over K of degree n is a homomorphism $G \rightarrow GL(n, K)$, where $GL(n, K)$ is the group of all $n \times n$ invertible matrices. If (e_1, \dots, e_n) is a \dagger basis of a K -module M , then by the K -isomorphism $K^n \rightarrow M$ given by the assignment $(\xi_i) \rightarrow \sum_{i=1}^n e_i \xi_i$, we have a bijective correspondence between the matrix representations of A of degree n and the linear representations of A in M , and the corresponding representations are similar. Explicitly, the linear representation ρ corresponding to a matrix representation $a \rightarrow (\lambda_{ij}(a))$ is given by

$$\rho(a)e_j = \sum_{i=1}^n e_i \lambda_{ij}(a), \quad a \in A.$$

Hence giving the finite-dimensional linear representations over a field K is equivalent to giving the matrix representations over K . Let T, T' be matrix representations of degree n, n' . Then a homomorphism from T to T' is an $n' \times n$ matrix P satisfying $PT(a) = T'(a)P$ ($a \in A$).

Therefore T and T' are similar if and only if $n = n'$ and $PT(a)P^{-1} = T'(a)$ ($a \in A$) for some $n \times n$ invertible matrix P . For a representation of a group G , it suffices that this equation is satisfied by all $a \in G$.

We always assume that K is a field. Then a K -module is a linear space over K . A linear representation ρ over K of a K -algebra A is said to be of **degree** n if its representation module M is of dimension n over K . Suppose that a sequence $\{0\} = M_0 \subset M_1 \subset \dots \subset M_r = M$ of A -submodules of M is given. We take a basis (e_1, \dots, e_n) of M over K such that (e_1, \dots, e_{m_i}) forms a basis of M_i over K ($1 \leq i \leq r$). Then the matrix representation corresponding to ρ relative to the basis (e_1, \dots, e_n) has the form

$$a \rightarrow T(a) = \begin{pmatrix} T_{11}(a) & T_{12}(a) & \dots & T_{1r}(a) \\ & T_{22}(a) & \dots & T_{2r}(a) \\ & & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & & & T_{rr}(a) \end{pmatrix}$$

where, if we put $n_i = \dim M_i/M_{i-1} = m_i - m_{i-1}$, $T_{ij}(a)$ is an $n_i \times n_j$ matrix and $T_{ij}(a) = 0$ for $i > j$. The residue classes of $e_{m_{i-1}+1}, \dots, e_{m_i}$ form a basis of the quotient space M_i/M_{i-1} over K , and the matrix representation corresponding to the linear representation ρ_i associated with M_i/M_{i-1} relative to this basis is given by T_{ii} . The sequence $\{M_i\}$ is a **composition series** if and only if each ρ_i (hence T_{ii}) is irreducible. In this case, ρ_1, \dots, ρ_r are uniquely determined by ρ up to their order and similarity (**Jordan-Hölder theorem**). An irreducible representation ρ' similar to some ρ_i is called an **irreducible component** of ρ . The number $p > 0$ of ρ_i similar to ρ' is called the **multiplicity** of ρ' as an irreducible component of ρ . We also say that ρ contains ρ' p times or ρ' appears p times as an irreducible component of ρ . The representation ρ is completely reducible if and only if it is similar to the direct sum of its irreducible components (admitting repetition). In this case, ρ is similar to the matrix representation

$$a \rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} T_{11}(a) & & 0 \\ & \ddots & \\ 0 & & T_{rr}(a) \end{pmatrix}.$$

E. Coefficients and Characters of Linear Representations

We consider the linear representations of an algebra over a field K . A right (left) A -module M is regarded as a linear space over K . In its dual space M^* , we introduce the structure of a left (right) A -module using the inner product $\langle \ , \ \rangle$ as follows: $\langle x, ax^* \rangle = \langle xa, x^* \rangle$ ($\langle x, x^*a \rangle$

$= \langle ax, x^* \rangle$), where $a \in A$, $x \in M$, $x^* \in M^*$. If ρ is the representation associated with M , the representation associated with M^* is called the **transposed representation (dual representation or adjoint representation)** of ρ , and is denoted by ${}^t\rho$. The linear mapping ${}^t\rho(a)$ is the t transposed mapping of $\rho(a)$. If M is finite-dimensional over K , we have $(M^*)^* = M$ as an A -module. For a linear representation ρ of a group G , the mapping $g \rightarrow {}^t\rho(g)^{-1}$ ($g \in G$) is called the **contragredient representation** of ρ . The reciprocal linear representation associated with the right A -module A is called the **right regular representation** of A , and its transposed representation (i.e., the representation associated with the left A -module A^*) is called the **coregular representation** of A . For any finite-dimensional semisimple algebra and group ring of a finite group, the regular representation and the coregular representation are similar (\rightarrow 29 Associative Algebras H).

Let ρ be a linear representation of A over K and M be its representation module. For any $x \in M$, $x^* \in M^*$, we define a t linear form $\rho_{x,x^*} \in A^*$ on A by $\rho_{x,x^*}(a) = \langle ax, x^* \rangle$ ($a \in A$). This is called the **coefficient** of ρ relative to x, x^* and is determined by its values at generators of A as a linear space. In particular, a coefficient of a linear representation ρ of a group G can be regarded as a function on G taking values in K . For a fixed $x^* \in M^*$ the assignment $x \rightarrow \rho_{x,x^*}$ gives an A -homomorphism $M \rightarrow A^*$, where A^* is considered as a left A -module. Therefore any nonzero coefficient ρ_{x,x^*} of an irreducible representation ρ generates an A -submodule of A^* isomorphic to M . In other words, any irreducible representation of A is similar to some subrepresentation of the coregular representation of A . In particular, any irreducible representation of a finite-dimensional semisimple algebra or a finite group is an irreducible component of the regular representation. Let A_ρ^* be the subspace of A^* generated by all coefficients ρ_{x,x^*} ($x \in M$, $x^* \in M^*$) for a given linear representation ρ . Then $\rho \cong \rho'$ implies $A_\rho^* = A_{\rho'}^*$. If ρ_1, \dots, ρ_r are irreducible representations of A such that ρ_i and ρ_j are not similar unless $i = j$, the sum $A_{\rho_1}^* + \dots + A_{\rho_r}^*$ in A^* is direct. In particular, for a semisimple algebra A , let the ρ_i ($1 \leq i \leq r$) be the irreducible representations associated with the minimal left ideals of the t simple components A_i of A . Then any irreducible representation is similar to one and only one of ρ_1, \dots, ρ_r , and A^* can be decomposed into the direct sum of $A_{\rho_1}^*, \dots, A_{\rho_r}^*$. In addition, each $A_{\rho_i}^*$ is canonically identified with A_i^* .

We shall treat finite-dimensional representations exclusively. Let (e_1, \dots, e_n) be a basis of the representation module M of ρ over K , and let $a \rightarrow T(a) = (\lambda_{ij}(a))$ be the matrix representa-

tion that corresponds to ρ with respect to this basis. Then $\lambda_{ij} = \rho_{e_j, e_i^*}$ ($1 \leq i, j \leq n$), where (e_1^*, \dots, e_n^*) is the dual basis. If K is algebraically closed and ρ is irreducible (or more generally, t absolutely irreducible), then $\{\lambda_{ij}\}$ is linearly independent; therefore we have $\dim A_\rho^* = n^2$ (G. Frobenius and I. Schur). We take a matrix representation T corresponding to ρ and put $\chi_\rho(a) = \text{tr } T(a)$ ($a \in A$). Then χ_ρ is a function on A that is uniquely determined by ρ and belongs to A_ρ^* ; χ_ρ is called the **character** of ρ . For a linear representation ρ of a group G , the character of ρ can be regarded as a function on G . Moreover, it can be viewed as a function on the set of all t conjugate classes of G . The character of ρ is equal to the sum of the characters of the irreducible components of ρ taken with their multiplicities. The character of an irreducible representation is called an **irreducible character** (or **simple character**). If K is of characteristic 0, then $\rho \cong \rho'$ is equivalent to $\chi_\rho = \chi_{\rho'}$, and the different irreducible characters are linearly independent. The character of an absolutely irreducible representation (\rightarrow Section F) is called an **absolutely irreducible character**. If we consider absolutely irreducible characters only, the statement holds irrespective of the characteristic of K .

The sum of all absolutely irreducible characters of A is called the **reduced character** (or **reduced trace**) of A . The direct sum of all absolutely irreducible representations of A is called the **reduced representation** of A , and its character is equal to the reduced character. The determinant of the reduced representation is called the **reduced norm** of A .

F. Scalar Extension of Linear Representations

Let K, L be commutative rings with unity element, and fix a homomorphism $\sigma: K \rightarrow L$. We denote by M^σ the scalar extension $\sigma^*(M) = M \otimes_K L$ of a K -module M relative to $\sigma: x\lambda \otimes \mu = x \otimes \lambda^\sigma \mu$ ($x \in M; \lambda \in K, \mu \in L$) (\rightarrow 277 Modules L). For an algebra A over K , the scalar extension A^σ of the K -module A has the natural structure of an algebra over $L: (a \otimes \lambda)(b \otimes \mu) = ab \otimes \lambda\mu$ ($a, b \in A; \lambda, \mu \in L$). For a group G , we can regard $(K[G])^\sigma = L[G]: g \otimes \lambda = g\lambda$ ($g \in G, \lambda \in L$). If M is a left A -module, then M^σ has the natural structure of a left A^σ -module; $(a \otimes \lambda)(x \otimes \mu) = ax \otimes \lambda\mu$ ($a \in A, x \in M; \lambda, \mu \in L$). For the linear representation ρ associated with M , the linear representation ρ^σ over L associated with M^σ is called the **scalar extension** of ρ relative to $\sigma: \rho^\sigma(a \otimes 1) = \rho(a) \otimes 1_L$. Let (e_1, \dots, e_n) be a basis of M over K . If the matrix representation $a \rightarrow (\lambda_{ij}(a))$ corresponds to M relative to this basis, then the matrix representation corre-

sponding to M^σ relative to the basis $(e_1 \otimes 1, \dots, e_n \otimes 1)$ over L is given by $a \otimes 1 \rightarrow (\lambda_{ij}(a)^\sigma)$. A linear representation over L is said to be **realizable** in K if it is similar to the scalar extension ρ^σ of some linear representation ρ over K .

In particular, if $\sigma: K \rightarrow L$ is an isomorphism, ρ^σ is called the **conjugate representation** of ρ relative to σ . The conjugate representation relative to the automorphism $\sigma: \lambda \rightarrow \bar{\lambda}$ (complex conjugation) of the complex number field is called the **complex conjugate representation**. If \mathfrak{m} is an ideal of K and $\sigma: K \rightarrow K/\mathfrak{m}$ (\dagger residue class ring) is the canonical homomorphism, then the construction of ρ^σ from ρ is called the **reduction modulo \mathfrak{m}** (\rightarrow Section I). If \mathfrak{p} is a prime ideal of K and $\sigma: K \rightarrow K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ (\dagger local ring) is the canonical homomorphism, then the construction of ρ^σ from ρ is called the **localization** relative to \mathfrak{p} . If K is an integral domain and $\mathfrak{p} = K - \{0\}$, then $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is the \dagger field of quotients of K . We can also consider the "completion of representation" with respect to \mathfrak{p} .

Let K be a field, L a field extension, and $\sigma: K \rightarrow L$ the canonical injection. Then for a linear representation ρ of A and its representation module M , the scalar extensions ρ^σ, M^σ are written ρ^L, M^L , respectively. In view of $M \subset M^L, A \subset A^L, \mathcal{E}_K(M) \subset \mathcal{E}_L(M^L)$ by the natural injections, we can regard ρ^L as an extension of the mapping ρ . We shall consider finite-dimensional representations exclusively. For linear representations ρ_1, ρ_2 over $K, \rho_1 \cong \rho_2$ is equivalent to $\rho_1^L \cong \rho_2^L$. An irreducible representation ρ over K is said to be **absolutely irreducible** if its scalar extension ρ^L to any field extension L is irreducible; an equivalent condition is that the scalar extension $\rho^{\bar{K}}$ to the \dagger algebraic closure \bar{K} is irreducible. Another equivalent condition is that every endomorphism of the representation module M of ρ must be a scalar multiplication. If every irreducible representation of A over K is absolutely irreducible, K is called a **splitting field** for A . For a group G , if the field K is a splitting field for the group ring $K[G]$, then K is called a splitting field for G . Let A be finite-dimensional over K . If K is a splitting field for A , any irreducible representation of A^L is realizable in K for any field extension L of K . For an arbitrary field K , the scalar extension ρ^L of an irreducible representation ρ to a \dagger separable algebraic extension L of K is completely reducible. For simplicity, we assume that K is \dagger perfect and $L = \bar{K}$. Then the multiplicities of all irreducible components of ρ^L are the same; this multiplicity is called the **Schur index** of ρ .

The set $S(K)$ of \dagger algebra classes over K , each of which is represented by a (central) simple component of the group algebra $K[G]$ of

some finite group G , is a subgroup of the \dagger Brauer group $B(K)$ of K , known as the **Schur subgroup** of $B(K)$. Recent research has clarified considerably the structure of this group [19].

G. Linear Representations of Finite Groups

Let G be a finite group of order g . The linear representation of G over K is equivalent to the linear representation of the group ring $K[G]$, concerning which we have already stated the general facts. If K is the ring \mathbb{Z} of rational integers, a linear representation over K is sometimes called an **integral representation**. We assume that K is a field. If the characteristic of K is zero or more generally not a divisor of g , every linear representation of G over K is completely reducible (H. Maschke). Such a representation is called an **ordinary representation**. If g is divisible by the characteristic of K , we have a **modular representation** (\rightarrow Section I).

The **exponent** of G is the smallest positive integer n satisfying $a^n = 1$ for every element $a \in G$. A field containing all the n th roots of unity is a splitting field for G (R. Brauer, 1945). Consequently, for such a field K , any scalar extension of an irreducible representation over K is irreducible, and any irreducible representation over any field extension of K is realizable in K . We fix a splitting field K for G and assume that K is of characteristic 0; for example, we can assume $K = \mathbb{C}$.

The number of nonsimilar irreducible representations of G is equal to the number of conjugate classes in G . Each irreducible representation appears as an irreducible component of the regular representation with multiplicity equal to the degree. In addition, each degree is a divisor of the order g of G . Let ρ be a linear representation of a subgroup H of G and M be its representation module. Then the linear representation of G associated with the $K[G]$ -module $K[G] \otimes_{K[H]} M$ is called the **induced representation** and is denoted by ρ^G . If the matrix representation T corresponds to ρ , then using the partition of G into the cosets $G = a_1 H \cup \dots \cup a_r H$ we can write the matrix representation corresponding to ρ^G as

$$a \rightarrow \begin{bmatrix} T(a_1^{-1}aa_1) & \dots & T(a_1^{-1}aa_r) \\ \dots & \dots & \dots \\ T(a_r^{-1}aa_1) & \dots & T(a_r^{-1}aa_r) \end{bmatrix},$$

where we define $T(b) = 0$ for $b \notin H$. The induced representation from a representation of degree 1 of a subgroup is called a **monomial representation**. To such a representation corresponds a matrix representation T such that $T(a)$ has exactly one nonzero entry in each row and column for every $a \in G$. For the trivial sub-

group $H = \{e\}$, we obtain the regular representation of G . In general, for an irreducible representation σ of G and an irreducible representation ρ of a subgroup H , the multiplicity of σ in ρ^G coincides with that of ρ in the restriction σ_H of σ to H (the **Frobenius theorem**). The following **orthogonality relations** hold for irreducible characters χ and ψ of G :

$$\sum_{a \in G} \chi(a) \psi(a^{-1}) = \begin{cases} g, & \chi = \psi, \\ 0, & \chi \neq \psi, \end{cases}$$

$$\sum_{\chi} \chi(a) \chi(b^{-1}) = \begin{cases} g/g_a, & C(a) = C(b), \\ 0, & C(a) \neq C(b). \end{cases}$$

In the second formula, χ ranges over all the irreducible characters of G , $C(a)$ denotes the conjugate class of G containing a , and g_a is the number of elements in $C(a)$.

H. Linear Representations of Symmetric Groups

All irreducible representations of a symmetric group \mathfrak{S}_n over the field \mathbf{Q} of rational numbers are absolutely irreducible. Hence the representation theory of \mathfrak{S}_n over a field of characteristic zero reduces to that over \mathbf{Q} . Since the group algebra $A = \mathbf{Q}[\mathfrak{S}_n]$ is semisimple, to obtain an irreducible representation of \mathfrak{S}_n it is sufficient to find a primitive idempotent (i.e., an idempotent that is not the sum of two orthogonal nonzero idempotents) of A . Such an idempotent can be obtained in the following way. As in Fig. 1, we draw a diagram T consisting of n squares arranged in rows of decreasing lengths, the left ends of which are arranged in a single column. Such a diagram T is called a **Young diagram**; if it has k rows of lengths $f_1 \geq f_2 \geq \dots \geq f_k > 0$, $f_1 + f_2 + \dots + f_k = n$, then it is written $T = T(f_1, \dots, f_k)$. We put the numerals 1 to n in any order into the n squares of $T = T(f_1, f_2, \dots, f_k)$, as in Fig. 1, for example. We then denote by σ any permutation of \mathfrak{S}_n that preserves each row and construct an element of A : $s = \sum \sigma$. Similarly, we denote by τ any permutation of \mathfrak{S}_n that preserves each column and set $t = \sum (\text{sgn } \tau) \tau$. If we set $u = t \cdot s = \sum \pm \tau \cdot \sigma$, then u is a primitive idempotent of A except for a numerical factor. This implies that u yields an irreducible representation of \mathfrak{S}_n . The element u of A is called the **Young symmetrizer** associated with T .

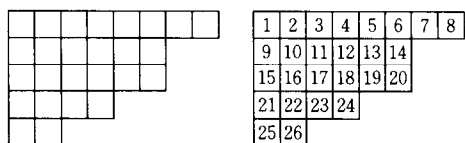


Fig. 1
Young diagram. $n = 26$; $f_1 = 8$, $f_2 = 6$, $f_3 = 4$, $f_4 = 2$.

If we put the numerals 1 to n into the n squares of T in a different order, we obtain another symmetrizer u' associated with T . However, these two irreducible representations associated with u and u' are similar. Hence there corresponds to T a fixed class of irreducible representations of \mathfrak{S}_n , i.e., a fixed irreducible character of \mathfrak{S}_n . Moreover, any two different Young diagrams yield different irreducible characters, and any irreducible character is obtained by a suitable Young diagram. Thus there exists a one-to-one correspondence between the Young diagrams and the irreducible characters of \mathfrak{S}_n .

The method of determining the character associated with a given diagram was found by Schur and H. Weyl (\rightarrow 60 Classical Groups).

I. Modular Representations of Finite Groups

Let G be a finite group of order g , and let K be a splitting field of G of characteristic $p \neq 0$. If p is a divisor of g , we have the case of modular representation, in which the situation is quite different from the case of ordinary representation. The theory of modular representations of a finite group was developed mainly by Brauer after 1935.

The elements of G whose orders are prime to p are called **p -regular**. Let k be the number of p -regular classes of G , i.e., conjugate classes of G containing the p -regular elements. Then there exist exactly k nonsimilar absolutely irreducible modular representations F_1, F_2, \dots, F_k . The number of nonsimilar indecomposable components of the regular representation R of G is also equal to k , and we denote these representations by U_1, U_2, \dots, U_k . We can number them in such a way that F_k appears in U_k as both its top and bottom component. If the degree of F_k is f_k and that of U_k is u_k , then U_k appears f_k times in R and F_k appears u_k times in R . The multiplicities $c_{\kappa\lambda}$ of F_λ in U_κ are called the **Cartan invariants** of G .

Take an algebraic number field Ω that is a splitting field of G . Let \mathfrak{p} be a prime ideal in Ω dividing p , and let \mathfrak{o} be the domain of \mathfrak{p} -integers of Ω . Then the residue class field $\mathfrak{o}/\mathfrak{p}$ is a finite field of characteristic p and a splitting field of G . Hence we can assume that $\mathfrak{o}/\mathfrak{p} = K$, where K is the field considered at the beginning of this section. Let Z_1, Z_2, \dots, Z_n be the nonsimilar irreducible representations of G in Ω . We can assume that all the coefficients of Z_i are contained in \mathfrak{o} . Replacing every coefficient in Z_i by its residue class mod \mathfrak{p} , we obtain a modular representation \bar{Z}_i . The modular representations $\bar{Z}_1, \dots, \bar{Z}_n$ thus obtained may be reducible. The multiplicities $d_{i\kappa}$ of F_κ in \bar{Z}_i are called the **decomposition numbers** of G .

They are related to the Cartan invariants by the fundamental relations

$$c_{\kappa\lambda} = \sum_{i=1}^n d_{i\kappa} d_{i\lambda}.$$

The determinant $|c_{\kappa\lambda}|$ of degree k is a power of p . We set $g = p^e g'$, $(p, g') = 1$. Then we may assume that Ω contains a primitive g' th root of unity $\delta (\in \mathfrak{o})$. Since $(p, g') = 1$, the residue class $\bar{\delta} (\in K)$ of δ is a primitive g' th root of unity. Let M be a modular representation of G . The characteristic roots of $M(a)$ for a p -regular element a are powers $\bar{\delta}^\nu$ of $\bar{\delta}$. We replace each $\bar{\delta}^\nu$ by δ^ν and obtain an element $\xi(a)$ of Ω as the sum of these δ^ν . In this manner we define a complex-valued function ξ on the set of p -regular elements of G . We call ξ the **modular character** (or **Brauer character**) of M . Two modular representations have the same irreducible components if and only if their modular characters coincide. Denoting by φ_κ the modular character of F_κ and by η_κ that of U_κ , we have the following orthogonality relations for the modular characters:

$$\sum_a \varphi_\kappa(a) \eta_\lambda(a^{-1}) = \begin{cases} g, & \kappa = \lambda, \\ 0, & \kappa \neq \lambda, \end{cases}$$

$$\sum_\kappa \varphi_\kappa(a) \eta_\kappa(b^{-1}) = \begin{cases} g/g_a, & C(a) = C(b), \\ 0, & C(a) \neq C(b). \end{cases}$$

In the first sum, a ranges over all p -regular elements of G .

We say that F_κ and F_λ belong to the same **block** if there exists a sequence of indices $\kappa, \alpha, \beta, \dots, \gamma, \lambda$ such that $c_{\kappa\alpha} \neq 0, c_{\alpha\beta} \neq 0, \dots, c_{\gamma\lambda} \neq 0$. This is obviously an equivalence relation, and F_1, F_2, \dots, F_k are classified into a finite number, say s , of blocks B_1, B_2, \dots, B_s . If F_κ belongs to a block B_τ , we say by a stretch of language that the corresponding U_κ also belongs to B_τ . All the irreducible components of \bar{Z}_i belong to the same block since $c_{\kappa\lambda} \neq 0$ if $d_{i\kappa} \neq 0$ and $d_{i\lambda} \neq 0$. If the irreducible components of \bar{Z}_i belong to B_τ , we say that Z_i belongs to B_τ . Let x_τ be the number of Z_i belonging to B_τ and y_τ the number of F_κ belonging to B_τ . Then $x_\tau \geq y_\tau$. If χ_i is the ordinary character of Z_i , then χ_i can be considered as the modular character of \bar{Z}_i . If we denote the degree of Z_i by z_i , then $g_a \chi_i(a)/z_i$ for $a \in G$ is an algebraic integer and hence belongs to \mathfrak{o} . Now Z_i and Z_j belong to the same block if and only if $g_a \chi_i(a)/z_i \equiv g_a \chi_j(a)/z_j \pmod{p}$ for all p -regular elements a of G .

If p^e is the highest power of p that divides all the degrees z_i of Z_i belonging to B_τ , then it is also the highest power of p dividing all the degrees f_κ of F_κ belonging to B_τ . We call $d = e - \alpha$ the **defect** of B_τ ; obviously $0 \leq d \leq e$. If Z_i belongs to a block of defect d , then the power of p dividing z_i is p^{e-d+h_i} ($h_i \geq 0$). A block of

defect 0 contains exactly one ordinary representation Z_i , hence also exactly one modular representation F_κ ($x_\tau = y_\tau = 1$). Moreover, we have $Z_i = F_\kappa = U_\kappa$. It follows that all the degrees z_i of Z_i belonging to a block of defect 1 are exactly divisible by p^{e-1} ; the converse is also true. Z_i belongs to a block of defect 0 if and only if $\chi_i(a) = 0$ for any element a of G whose order is divisible by p .

Let D be any p -Sylow subgroup of the centralizer $C_G(a)$ of an element a of G , and let $(D:1) = p^d$. Then d is called the **defect** of the class $C(a)$, and D is called a **defect group** of $C(a)$. The number of blocks of defect e is equal to the number of p -regular classes of defect e . Let B_τ be a block of defect d . Then there exists a p -regular class of defect d containing an element a such that $g_a \chi_i(a)/z_i \not\equiv 0 \pmod{p}$ for any Z_i in B_τ . The defect group D of $C(a)$ is called the **defect group** of B_τ , and D is uniquely determined up to conjugacy in G . The number of blocks of G with defect group D is equal to the number of blocks of the normalizer $N_G(D)$ with defect group D .

An arbitrary element x of G can be written uniquely as a product $x = sr = rs$, where s , called the **p -factor** of x , is an element whose order is a power of p , and r is a p -regular element. We say that two elements of G belong to the same **section** if and only if their p -factors are conjugate in G . This is an equivalence relation. Obviously, each section is the union of conjugate classes of G . If the p -factor of x is not conjugate to any element of the defect group D of B_τ , then $\chi_i(x) = 0$ for all Z_i in B_τ . Let $\varphi_1^s, \varphi_2^s, \dots, \varphi_{k(s)}^s$ be the absolutely irreducible modular characters of $C_G(s)$, and let χ_i' be the absolutely irreducible ordinary characters of $C_G(s)$. Since

$$\chi_i'(sr) = \varepsilon_i \chi_i'(r) = \varepsilon_i \sum_{\sigma} d'_{i\sigma} \varphi_{\sigma}^s(r), \quad r \in C_G(s),$$

we have

$$\chi_i(sr) = \sum_{\tau} r_{i\tau} \chi_i'(sr) = \sum_{\sigma} d_{i\sigma}^s \varphi_{\sigma}^s(r).$$

The $d_{i\sigma}^s$ are called the **generalized decomposition numbers** of G . If the order of s is p^l , then the $d_{i\sigma}^s$ are algebraic integers of the field of the p^l th roots of unity. Let s be conjugate to an element of D . There corresponds to B_τ a union \bar{B}_τ of blocks of $C_G(s)$, and if $\sigma \neq \rho$, then \bar{B}_τ and \bar{B}_ρ contain no irreducible modular representations in common. We have $d_{i\sigma}^s = 0$ for any Z_i in B_τ (i.e., $\varphi_{\sigma}^s \notin \bar{B}_\tau$). Brauer's original proof of this result was considerably complicated; simpler proofs were given independently by K. Iizuka and H. Nagao. From these relations we get the following refinement of the orthogonality relations for group characters. If Z_i and Z_j belong to different blocks of G , then $\sum_{a \in S} \chi_i(a) \chi_j(a^{-1}) = 0$, where a ranges over all

the elements belonging to a fixed section S of G . If elements a and b of G belong to different sections, then $\sum_{\chi_i} \chi_i(a) \chi_i(b^{-1}) = 0$, where χ_i ranges over all the characters of G belonging to a fixed block B_{τ} .

J. Projective Representations of Finite Groups

Let V be a finite-dimensional linear space over a field K , and let $P(V)$ be the \dagger projective space associated with V (\rightarrow 343 Projective Geometry). The set of all projective transformations of $P(V)$ forms the group $PGL(V)$, which can be identified with the quotient group $GL(V)/K^*1_V$. Here $K^* = K - \{0\}$ and K^*1_V is the set of all scalar multiples of the identity transformation 1_V of V and is the center of $GL(V)$. A homomorphism $G \rightarrow PGL(V)$ is called a **projective representation** of G in V or simply a projective representation of G over K . Two projective representations (ρ, V) and (ρ', V') of G are said to be **similar** if there exists an isomorphism $\varphi: PGL(V) \rightarrow PGL(V')$ induced by a suitable isomorphism $V \rightarrow V'$ such that $\varphi \circ \rho(a) \circ \varphi^{-1} = \rho'(a)$ ($a \in G$). Let $V_1 \neq \{0\}$ be a subspace of V . We can assume that $P(V_1) \subset P(V)$. If (ρ, V) is a projective representation of G such that each $\rho(a)$ ($a \in G$) leaves $P(V_1)$ invariant, we get a projective representation (ρ_1, V_1) by restricting the $\rho(a)$ to $P(V_1)$. In this case (ρ_1, V_1) is called a **subrepresentation** of ρ . A projective representation is said to be **irreducible** if there exists no proper subrepresentation of ρ .

A mapping $\sigma: G \rightarrow GL(V)$ is called a section for (ρ, V) if $\pi(\sigma(a)) = \rho(a)$ for each $a \in G$, where π is the natural projection of $GL(V)$ onto $PGL(V)$. Any section σ defines a mapping $f: G \times G \rightarrow K^*$ satisfying $\sigma(a)\sigma(b) = f(a, b)\sigma(ab)$ ($a, b \in G$). The set $\{f(a, b)\}_{a, b \in G}$ is called the **factor set** of ρ with respect to σ . The mapping f is a $\dagger 2$ -cocycle of G with values in K^* . The 2-cohomology class $c_\rho \in H^2(G, K^*)$ of f is determined by ρ and is independent of the choice of sections for ρ . A projective representation ρ has a section σ which is a linear representation of G in V if and only if $c_\rho = 1$. If G is a finite group, for any $c \in H^2(G, K^*)$ there exists an irreducible projective representation ρ of G over K which belongs to c , i.e., $c_\rho = c$. If ρ and ρ' are similar, then $c_\rho = c_{\rho'}$. The tensor product $\rho \otimes \rho'$ of two projective representations ρ and ρ' can be defined as in the case of linear representations, and we have $c_{\rho \otimes \rho'} = c_\rho \cdot c_{\rho'}$. If K is algebraically closed, then $H^2(G, K^*)$ is determined by the characteristic of K . When K is the complex field \mathbb{C} , the group $H^2(G, \mathbb{C}^*) = \mathfrak{M}(G)$ is called the **multiplier** of G . If $\mathfrak{M}(G) = 1$, then G is called a **closed group**, and any projective representation of G is induced by a

linear representation of G . In general, if ρ is a projective representation of G over \mathbb{C} , then the order of c_ρ is a divisor of the degree of ρ (dimension of V). Moreover, if ρ is irreducible, then both the degree of ρ and the square of the order of c_ρ are divisors of the order of G . K. Yamazaki, among others, studied the projective representations of finite groups in detail.

K. Integral Representations

Every complex matrix representation of G is equivalent to a matrix representation in the ring of algebraic integers. If an algebraic number field K is specified, every $K[G]$ -module V contains G -invariant R -lattices (briefly, G -lattices), where R is the ring of integers in K . A G -lattice L is characterized as an $R[G]$ -module, which is finitely generated and \dagger torsion free (hence \dagger projective) as an R -module. It provides an **integral representation** of G as an automorphism group of the R -projective module L .

$R[G]$ -modules L and M need not be isomorphic even when the $K[G]$ -modules $K \otimes L$ and $K \otimes M$ are isomorphic. The set of G -lattices in a fixed $K[G]$ -module V is divided into a finite number of $R[G]$ -isomorphism classes (**Jordan-Zassenhaus theorem**). Let \mathfrak{p} be a prime ideal of R and $R_{\mathfrak{p}}$ be the localization of R at \mathfrak{p} . The study of $R_{\mathfrak{p}}$ -representations is intimately related with modular representation theory. For any $R[G]$ -module L there is an associated family of $R_{\mathfrak{p}}[G]$ -modules $L_{\mathfrak{p}} = R_{\mathfrak{p}} \otimes L$, where \mathfrak{p} ranges over all primes of R . G -lattices L and M in a $K[G]$ -module V are said to be of the same **genus** if $L_{\mathfrak{p}} \cong M_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for every \mathfrak{p} . The number of genera of G -lattices in V is given by $\prod_{\mathfrak{p} \mid g} h_{\mathfrak{p}}$ ($g = \text{order } G$), where $h_{\mathfrak{p}}$ denotes the number of $R_{\mathfrak{p}}[G]$ -equivalence classes of $R_{\mathfrak{p}}[G]$ -lattices in V . When V is absolutely irreducible, the number of $R[G]$ -equivalence classes in a genus equals the (ideal) \dagger class number of K (J. M. Maranda and S. Takahashi).

The \dagger Krull-Schmidt theorem, asserting the uniqueness of a direct sum decomposition into indecomposable $R[G]$ -modules, holds if R is a complete discrete valuation ring or if R is a discrete valuation ring and K is a splitting field of G . The condition for the finiteness of the number of nonisomorphic indecomposable G -lattices is known. In particular, for $R = \mathbb{Z}$ it reduces to the requirement that the Sylow p -subgroup of G be cyclic of order p or p^2 for every $p \mid g$. Regarding projective $\mathbb{Z}[G]$ -modules \rightarrow 200 Homological Algebra G.

The **isomorphism problem**, i.e., the question of whether the isomorphism $\mathbb{Z}[G] \cong \mathbb{Z}[H]$ of integral group algebras implies the isomor-

phism $G \cong H$ of groups, has been answered affirmatively for certain special cases such as \dagger meta-Abelian groups.

$R[G]$ is an R - \dagger order in $K[G]$, and in this context, a considerable portion of the integral representation theory has been extended to more general orders in separable algebras [14–16].

References

- [1] B. L. van der Waerden, *Gruppen von linearen Transformationen*, Springer, 1935 (Chelsea, 1948).
- [2] B. L. van der Waerden, *Algebra II*, Springer, fifth edition, 1967.
- [3] H. Boerner, *Darstellungen von Gruppen*, Springer, 1955.
- [4] N. Bourbaki, *Éléments de mathématique, Algèbre*, ch. 8, *Actualités Sci. Ind.*, 1261a, Hermann, 1958.
- [5] C. W. Curtis and I. Reiner, *Representation theory of finite groups and associative algebras*, Interscience, 1962.
- [6] R. Brauer and C. Nesbitt, On the modular characters of groups, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 42 (1941), 556–590.
- [7] R. Brauer, Zur Darstellungstheorie der Gruppen endlicher Ordnung I, II, *Math. Z.*, 63 (1956), 406–444; 72 (1959–1960), 25–46.
- [8] M. Osima, Notes of blocks of group characters, *Math. J. Okayama Univ.*, 4 (1955), 175–188.
- [9] I. Schur, Über die Darstellung der endlichen Gruppen durch gebrochene lineare Substitutionen, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 127 (1904), 20–50.
- [10] I. Schur, Untersuchungen über die Darstellung der endlichen Gruppen durch gebrochene lineare Substitutionen, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 132 (1907), 85–137.
- [11] I. Schur, Über die Darstellung der symmetrischen und der alternierenden Gruppe durch gebrochene lineare Substitutionen, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 139 (1911), 155–250.
- [12] R. Brauer, *Representations of finite groups*, *Lectures on modern mathematics*, T. L. Saaty (ed.), Wiley, 1963, vol. 1, 133–175.
- [13] W. Feit, *Characters of finite groups*, Benjamin, 1967.
- [14] I. Reiner, A survey of integral representation theory, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 76 (1970), 159–227.
- [15] R. Swan, *K-theory of finite groups and orders*, *Lecture notes in math.* 149, Springer, 1970.
- [16] K. W. Roggenkamp (with V. Huber-Dyson), *Lattices over orders I, II*, *Lecture notes in math.* 115, 142, Springer, 1970.

363 Ref.

Riemann, Georg Friedrich Bernhard

[17] L. Dornhoff, *Group representation theory*, Dekker, A, 1971; B, 1972.

[18] J.-P. Serre, *Représentations linéaires des groupes finis*, second edition, Hermann, 1972.

[19] T. Yamada, *The Schur subgroup of the Brauer group*, *Lecture notes in math.* 397, Springer, 1974.

363 (XXI.40)

Riemann, Georg Friedrich Bernhard

Georg Friedrich Bernhard Riemann (September 17, 1826–July 20, 1866) was born the son of a minister in Breselenz, Hanover, Germany. He attended the universities of Göttingen and Berlin. In 1851 he received his doctorate at the University of Göttingen and in 1854 became a lecturer there. In 1857 he rose to assistant professor, and in 1859 succeeded P. G. L. \dagger Dirichlet as full professor. In 1862 he contracted tuberculosis, and he died at age 40. Despite his short life, his contributions encompassed all aspects of mathematics.

His doctoral thesis (1851) stated the basic theorem on \dagger conformal mapping and became the foundation for the geometric theory of functions. In his paper presented for the position of lecturer (1854), he defined the \dagger Riemann integral and gave the conditions for convergence of trigonometric series. In his inaugural lecture in the same year, he discussed the foundations of geometry, introduced n -dimensional manifolds, formulated the concept of \dagger Riemannian manifolds, and defined their curvature. In his paper of 1857 on \dagger Abelian functions, he systematized the theory of \dagger Abelian integrals and Abelian functions. In his paper of 1858 on the distribution of prime numbers, he considered the \dagger Riemann zeta function as a function of a complex variable and stated \dagger Riemann's hypothesis concerning the distribution of its zeros. It remains for modern mathematics to investigate whether this hypothesis is correct. In his later years, influenced by W. Weber, Riemann became interested in theoretical physics. He gave lectures on the uses of partial differential equations in physics that were edited and published by H. Weber.

References

- [1] G. F. B. Riemann, *Gesammelte mathematische Werke und wissenschaftlicher Nachlass*, R. Dedekind and H. Weber, (eds.), Teubner, second edition, 1892 (Nachträge, M. Noether and W. Wirtinger (eds.), 1902) (Dover, 1953).

[2] F. Klein, Vorlesungen über die Entwicklung der Mathematik im 19. Jahrhundert I, Springer, 1926 (Chelsea, 1956).

364 (VII.3) Riemannian Manifolds

A. Riemannian Metrics

Let M be a \dagger differentiable manifold of class C^r ($1 \leq r \leq \omega$), and g be a \dagger Riemannian metric of class C^{r-1} on M . Then (M, g) or simply M is called a **Riemannian manifold** (or **Riemannian space**) of class C^r (\rightarrow 105 Differentiable Manifolds). The metric g is a \dagger covariant tensor field of order 2 and of class C^{r-1} ; it is called the **fundamental tensor** of M . Using the value g_p of g at each point $p \in M$, a positive definite inner product $g_p(X, Y)$, $X, Y \in T_p$, is introduced on the \dagger tangent vector space T_p to M at p , and hence T_p can be considered as a \dagger vector space over \mathbf{R} with inner product that can be identified with the Euclidean space E^n of dimension $n = \dim M$. Utilizing the properties of the space E^n , we can introduce various notions on T_p and M . (For example, given a tangent vector $L \in T_p$, we define the length $\|L\| = \|L\|_{g,p}$ of L to be the quantity $g_p(L, L)^{1/2}$. A **normal vector** at a point p of a submanifold N of M is well defined as an element of the orthogonal complement of the subspace $T_p(N)$ of $T_p(M)$ with respect to g_p ; a differential form of degree 1 is identified with a tangent vector field.) A necessary and sufficient condition for a differentiable manifold M of class C^r to have a Riemannian metric is that M be \dagger paracompact. A Euclidean space E^n has a Riemannian metric expressed by $\sum_{i=1}^n dx^i \otimes dx^i$ in terms of an orthogonal coordinate system (x^i) .

We assume that M is connected and of class C^∞ . A curve $x: [a, b] \rightarrow M$ is called **piecewise smooth** or of **class D^∞** if x is continuous and there exists a partition of $[a, b]$ into finite subintervals $[t_{i-1}, t_i]$ such that the restrictions $x|_{[t_{i-1}, t_i]}$ are \dagger immersions of class C^∞ . The length $\|x\|$ of such a curve x is defined to be $\int_a^b \|x'(t)\| dt$, where $x'(t)$ is the tangent vector of x defined for almost all values of t . As in a Euclidean space, the length $\|x\|$ is independent of the choice of parameter t , and the concepts of \dagger canonical parameter and orientation of x can be defined (\rightarrow 111 Differential Geometry of Curves and Surfaces). A function $d: M \times M \rightarrow [0, \infty)$ is defined so that the value $d(p, q)$, $p, q \in M$, is the infimum of the lengths of curves of class D^∞ joining p and q . The function d is a \dagger distance function on M , and the topology of M defined by d coincides with the original

topology of M . There exists an essentially unique structure of a Riemannian manifold on (real or complex) \dagger elliptic or \dagger hyperbolic space (\rightarrow 285 Non-Euclidean Geometry), and d is the distance function of these spaces.

If there exists an immersion φ of a differentiable manifold N in a Riemannian manifold (M, g) , then a Riemannian metric φ^*g is defined on N by the \dagger pullback process ($\|L\|_{\varphi^*g} = \|d\varphi(L)\|_g$). (For example, a submanifold and a \dagger covering manifold of M have Riemannian manifold structures induced by the natural mappings (\rightarrow 365 Riemannian Submanifolds).) If $M = E^3$ and N is a 2-dimensional submanifold of M , then φ^*g is the \dagger first fundamental form of N . Assume further that φ is a diffeomorphism and N has a Riemannian metric h . If $\varphi^*g = h$, then (N, h) is said to be **isometric** to (M, g) , and φ is called an **isometry**. The set $I(M)$ of all isometries (isometric transformations) of M onto M is a group. A necessary and sufficient condition for a mapping $\psi: N \rightarrow M$ to be an isometry is that $d_N(p, q) = d_M(\psi(p), \psi(q))$, $p, q \in N$. In particular, $I(E^n)$ is the \dagger congruent transformation group.

If a differentiable manifold M is the product manifold of Riemannian manifolds (M_1, g_1) and (M_2, g_2) , then $(M, \pi_1^*g_1 + \pi_2^*g_2)$ is called the **Riemannian product** of M_1 and M_2 , where π_α , $\alpha = 1, 2$, are projections from M to M_α .

Let F be the \dagger tangent n -frame bundle over M and $B = B_g(M)$ be the subset of F consisting of all orthonormal frames with respect to g . Then B is an $O(n)$ -subbundle of F of class C^∞ , called the **tangent orthogonal n -frame bundle** (or **orthogonal frame bundle**). In this way we get a one-to-one correspondence between the set of all $O(n)$ -subbundles of F and the set of all Riemannian metrics of M .

B. Riemannian Connections

There exists a unique \dagger affine connection in the orthogonal frame bundle B whose \dagger torsion tensor is zero. This connection is called the **Riemannian connection** (or **Levi-Civita connection**; \rightarrow 80 Connections K). Let ∇ denote the \dagger covariant differential operator defined by this connection (\rightarrow 80 Connections, 417 Tensor Calculus). (For a vector field X , the covariant differential operator ∇_X acts on any tensor field T defined on a submanifold having X as a tangent vector field.) The covariant differential ∇g of the fundamental tensor g vanishes identically. The \dagger connection form of the Riemannian connection is expressed by n^2 differential 1-forms $(\omega_j^i)_{1 \leq i, j \leq n}$ on B , and we have $\omega_j^i + \omega_i^j = 0$. Let $(\omega^i)_{1 \leq i \leq n}$ be the \dagger canonical 1-forms on B . Then $(\omega_j^i)_{1 \leq i, j \leq n}$ together with (ω^i) give rise to an absolute parallelism on B (that is, they are linearly independent at

every point). Let (θ^i) and (θ^j) be the corresponding set of differential 1-forms on the orthogonal frame bundle B_N over another Riemannian manifold N with $\dim N = \dim M$. If there exists an isometry $\psi: M \rightarrow N$, then the differential $d\psi$ is a diffeomorphism from $B = B_M$ to B_N , and we get $(d\psi)^*(\theta^i) = \omega^i$, $(d\psi)^*(\theta^j) = \omega^j$. Conversely, if there exists a diffeomorphism $\Psi: B_M \rightarrow B_N$ satisfying $\Psi^*(\theta^i) = \omega^i$, $\Psi^*(\theta^j) = \omega^j$ and M is \dagger orientable, then there exists an isometry $\psi: M \rightarrow N$ such that $d\psi = \Psi$ holds on a connected component B_0 of B . Moreover, ψ is uniquely determined if we choose one B_0 . In this way the problem of the existence of an isometry from M may be reduced to one of the existence of a diffeomorphism from B preserving absolute parallelism (as well as the order of the basis (ω^i, ω^j)).

According to the general theory of affine connections, the Riemannian connection on M determines a \dagger Cartan connection uniquely with $E^n = I(E^n)/O(n)$ as \dagger fiber, which is called the **Euclidean connection**. As a consequence, every tangent vector space $T_p(M)$ is regarded as a Euclidean space E_p^n , and for a given curve $x: [a, b] \rightarrow M$ of class D^∞ and for $t \in [a, b]$ there exists an isometry $I_{x,t}: E_{x(t)}^n \rightarrow E_{x(a)}^n$ satisfying the following three conditions (we denote $I_{x,b}$ by I_x): (1) If x is a composite of two curves y and z , then $I_x = I_y \cdot I_z$. (2) Differentiability: If x is of class C^∞ at t_0 , then $t \rightarrow I_{x,t}$ is of class C^∞ at t_0 . (3) I_x depends on the orientation of x but not on the choice of its parameter. The **development** \bar{x} of x is the curve in $E_{x(a)}^n$ defined by $\bar{x}(t) = I_{x,t}(x(t))$, and we get $\|\bar{x}\| = \|x\|$. (I_x is sometimes called the **development along** x .) Utilizing the concept of development, the theory of curves in E^n can be used to study curves on M (\rightarrow 111 Differential Geometry of Curves and Surfaces). For example, if \bar{x} is a segment, then x or $x([a, b])$ is called the **geodesic arc** (\rightarrow 80 Connections L); the \dagger Frenet formula is automatically formulated and proved. The rotation part I_x^R of I_x (the composite of I_x and the parallel displacement of E_p^n translating $I_x(x(b))$ to $x(a)$) is regarded as an isomorphism of the inner product space $T_{x(b)}$ to $T_{x(a)}$. I_x^R is extended to an isomorphism of the \dagger tensor algebra $\mathcal{T}(T_{x(b)})$ to $\mathcal{T}(T_{x(a)})$, which is denoted by the same symbol I_x^R and called the **parallel displacement** or **parallel translation along** x . Given a tensor field K on M , we have $\nabla_{x'(a)} K = [dI_{x,t}^R(K(x(t)))/dt]_{t=a}$. In particular, a necessary and sufficient condition for $\nabla K = 0$ is that $I_x^R(K(x(b))) = K(x(a))$ for any x , in which case K is said to be **parallel**.

C. Exponential Mapping (\rightarrow 178 Geodesics)

A curve x on M or the image of x is called a **geodesic** if any subarc $x| [a, b]$ of x is a geo-

desic arc. Let $N(S)$ be the **normal bundle** of a submanifold S of M , that is, the differentiable vector bundle over S consisting of all normal vectors at all points of S . Then S is contained in $N(S)$ as the set of zero vectors at all points of S . There exist a neighborhood U of S in $N(S)$ and a mapping $\text{Exp}_S: U \rightarrow M$ of class C^∞ with the following property: There exists a geodesic arc x with the initial tangent vector $L \in U$, length $\|x\| = \|L\|$, and final point $\text{Exp}_S(L)$. Let U_S be the largest U with this property. Then $\text{Exp}_S: U_S \rightarrow M$ is determined uniquely by S . The mapping Exp_S is called the **exponential mapping** on S . If the rank of the Jacobian matrix of Exp_S is less than n at $L \in U_S$, then L or $\text{Exp}_S(L)$ is called the **focal point** of S on the geodesic $s \rightarrow \text{Exp}_S(sL)$ ($0 \leq s$, $sL \in U_S$). If S is compact, then S has an open neighborhood V_S in $N(S)$ satisfying the following three conditions: (i) $V_S \subset U_S$; (ii) $\|L\| = d(\text{Exp}_S(L), S)$ for $L \in V_S$, where the right-hand member expresses the infimum of the distance between the point $\text{Exp}_S(L)$ and points of S ; (iii) the restriction $\text{Exp}_S| V_S$ is an embedding. The image $\text{Exp}_S(V_S)$ is the **tubular neighborhood** of S . In the special case where S consists of only one point p , $N(\{p\})$ coincides with the tangent vector space $T_p(M)$, and the focal point of p is called the **conjugate point** of p , given as the zero point of the \dagger Jacobi field (\rightarrow 178 Geodesics, 279 Morse Theory). In this case, V_S is denoted by V_p . If T_p is identified with \mathbf{R}^n (or E^n) by means of an orthonormal basis of T_p , then $(\text{Exp}_p)^{-1}$ defined on $\text{Exp}_p(V_p)$ is a coordinate mapping, called the **normal coordinate mapping**. Furthermore, $\text{Exp}_p(V_p)$ contains a neighborhood W_p of p such that there exists a unique geodesic arc x joining any two points q and r of W_p with $\|x\| = d(q, r)$ and contained in W_p . W_p is called a **convex neighborhood** of p .

D. Curvature

The set of differential 1-forms (ω^i, ω^j) , by means of which absolute parallelism is given in the orthogonal frame bundle B of M , satisfies the \dagger structure equation $d\omega^i = -\sum_j \omega_j^i \wedge \omega^j$, $d\omega_j^i = -\sum_k \omega_k^i \wedge \omega_j^k + \Omega_j^i$, and (Ω_j^i) is called the **curvature form** of the Riemannian connection of M . This form is expressed by a tensor field R (\rightarrow 80 Connections; 417 Tensor Calculus) of type (1, 3) on M , called the **curvature tensor**; if R_{jkl}^i are the components of R with respect to an orthonormal frame $b \in B$ of the tangent vector space T_p of M , then $\Omega_j^i = (1/2) \sum R_{jkl}^i \omega^k \wedge \omega^l$ at b . Let (X, Y) be an orthonormal basis of a 2-dimensional subspace P of T_p . Then the inner product $K_p(P)$ of X and $R(X, Y)Y$ is determined by P independently of the choice of the basis (X, Y) , where the i -component of

$R(X, Y)Z$ with respect to the basis b of T_p is given by $\sum R^i_{jkl} Z^j X^k Y^l$. $K_p(P)$ is the \dagger Gaussian curvature of the surface $\text{Exp}_p(V_p \cap P)$ and is called the **sectional curvature** (or **Riemannian curvature**) of P . The curvature tensor R is uniquely determined by the function $K_p(P)$ of p and P . If $\dim M \geq 3$ and if at every point p of M , $K_p(P)$ has a constant value M_p independent of the choice of P , then M_p is a constant independent of the choice of p (F. Schur). If $K_p(P)$ is constant, then M is called a **space of constant curvature**. If $\nabla R = 0$, then M is called a **locally symmetric space** (\rightarrow 412 Symmetric Riemannian Spaces and Real Forms; 413 Symmetric Spaces). In a local sense, Riemannian metrics of these spaces are uniquely determined by the curvature tensor R up to a constant factor. If M is of constant curvature K , complete, and simply connected, then M is isometric to E^n , the sphere (which is the universal covering Riemannian manifold of a real \dagger elliptic space), or a real \dagger hyperbolic space according as K is 0, positive, or negative. The compact spaces of positive constant curvature, that is, the Riemannian manifolds having the sphere as the universal covering Riemannian manifold, were completely classified by J. A. Wolf [1]. A complete, simply connected, and locally symmetric space is a \dagger symmetric Riemannian space. The **Ricci tensor** (R_{ij}) is defined by $R_{ij} = -\sum_k R^k_{ijk}$. Let Q be the quadratic form on T_p given by (R_{ij}) . Then the value $Q(L)$ for a unit vector $L \in T_p$ is the mean of $K_p(P)$ for all sections P (2-dimensional subspaces of T_p) containing L and is called the **Ricci curvature** (or **mean curvature**) of the direction L at p . The mean R of $Q(L)$ for all the unit vectors L at p is called the **scalar curvature** at p (\rightarrow 417 Tensor Calculus). $Q(L)$ and R are expressed by $Q(L) = \sum_i g_p(R(X_i, L)L, X_i)$ and $R = \sum_i Q(X_i)$, up to positive constant factors, in terms of an orthonormal basis (X_i) of T_p . If the Ricci tensor of M is a scalar multiple of the fundamental tensor, then M is called an **Einstein space**. (When $\dim M \geq 3$, this scalar is constant.) If M is a \dagger Kähler manifold and P is restricted to a complex plane (invariant under the almost complex structure), then $K(P)$ is called the **holomorphic sectional curvature**. A Kähler manifold M of constant holomorphic sectional curvature is locally isometric to a complex Euclidean space, elliptic space, or hyperbolic space.

The properties of the sectional curvature and the Ricci curvature are closely related to the behavior of geodesics of Riemannian manifolds, and these properties reflect those of the topological structures of the manifolds (\rightarrow 178 Geodesics). The compact simply connected homogeneous Riemannian manifolds of strictly positive sectional curvature have been

classified [2–4]. Related to algebraic geometry, as the solution of the Frankel conjecture, the following holds: If a compact Kähler manifold has strictly positive sectional curvature, then it is biholomorphic to the complex projective space [5, 6] (\rightarrow 232 Kähler Manifolds). Furthermore, curvature tensors are related to \dagger characteristic classes. For example, we have the **Gauss-Bonnet formula**: If M is an even-dimensional compact and oriented Riemannian manifold, the integral of $a_n K_{(n)} \omega$ on M is equal to the \dagger Euler-Poincaré characteristic, where

$$a_n = n! / (2^n \pi^{n/2} (n/2)!),$$

ω is the volume element of M , and $K_{(n)}$ is defined as follows: For a positive even number s , $K_{(s)}$ is a real-valued function of the s -dimensional subspaces P of the tangent vector spaces T_p of M , which is given by

$$K_{(s)}(P) = b_s \sum \varepsilon_{i_1 \dots i_s} \varepsilon_{j_1 \dots j_s} \langle R_p(X_{i_1}, X_{i_2}) X_{j_1}, X_{j_2} \rangle \dots \langle R_p(X_{i_{s-1}}, X_{i_s}) X_{j_{s-1}}, X_{j_s} \rangle$$

in terms of an orthonormal basis (X_1, \dots, X_s) of P , where $b_s = (-1)^{s/2} / (2^{s/2} s!)$, \sum is summation over all pairs of s -tuples satisfying $\{i_1, \dots, i_s\}, \{j_1, \dots, j_s\} \subset \{1, 2, \dots, n\}$, $\varepsilon_{i_1 \dots i_s}$ is the sign of (i_1, \dots, i_s) , $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ is the inner product in T_p with respect to g_p , R_p is the value of the tensor R at p , and $R_p(X_i, X_j) X_k$ is as already defined at the beginning of this section. In particular, $K_{(2)} = K$. If $K_{(s)}$ of a compact and orientable M is constant for a certain s , then the k th \dagger Pontryagin class of M (with real coefficients) vanishes for all $k \geq s/2$.

E. Holonomy Groups

Let p be a fixed point of M , and let Ω_p be the set of all closed oriented curves of class D^∞ with initial and final points p and with parameters neglected. The set $H = \{I_x | x \in \Omega_p\}$, called the **holonomy group** of M , is a subgroup of $I(T_p)$ (T_p is identified with E^n) independent of the choice of p (\rightarrow 80 Connections), and $x \rightarrow I_x$ is a homomorphism from Ω_p to H . The restriction H_0 of this homomorphism to all closed curves homotopic to zero is called the **restricted holonomy group**. The rotation part h of H , called the **homogeneous holonomy group**, is a subgroup of the orthogonal group $O(n)$ of T_p . The rotation part h_0 of H_0 , called the **restricted homogeneous holonomy group**, is a connected component of h and a \dagger compact Lie group. The \dagger Lie algebra of h_0 is spanned by $\{I_x(R_{x(b)}(X, Y)) | x: [a, b] \rightarrow M \text{ is of class } D^\infty, x(a) = p, \text{ and } X, Y \in T_{x(b)}\}$, where $R_{x(b)}(X, Y)$ is the endomorphism of the linear space $T_{x(b)}$ defined in Section D.

If $M = E^n$, then $H = \{e\}$, where e is the identity element. If $h = \{e\}$ ($h_0 = \{e\}$), then M is called **flat (locally flat)** (\rightarrow 80 Connections E). Local flatness is equivalent to M being locally isometric to E^n . If M is complete and H (regarded as a transformation group of E^n) has a fixed point, then M is isometric to E^n . Any finite rotation group h is the homogeneous holonomy group of some locally flat and compact Riemannian manifold.

With respect to the linear group h of T_p , we get a unique decomposition $T_p = V_{(0)} \oplus V_{(1)} \oplus \dots \oplus V_{(r)}$ of mutually orthogonal subspaces, where $V_{(0)}$ ($\dim V_{(0)} \geq 0$) consists of all h -invariant vectors and $V_{(i)}$, $i = 1, \dots, r$, are irreducible h -invariant subspaces. If h or h_0 is irreducible (reducible) on T_p , then M is called **irreducible (reducible)**. If M is complete and simply connected (hence $h = h_0$), then M is the Riemannian product of closed submanifolds $M_{(\alpha)}$, $\alpha = 0, 1, \dots, r$, satisfying $V_{(\alpha)} = T(M_{(\alpha)})$. This decomposition $M = \prod M_{(\alpha)}$ is determined uniquely by M and called the **de Rham decomposition** of M [7]. In this case h is the direct product of closed subgroups $h_{(\alpha)}$, where every $h_{(\alpha)}$ acts on $V_{(\beta)}$, $\beta \neq \alpha$ as the identity, and can be regarded as the homogeneous holonomy group of $M_{(\alpha)}$. If h_0 is irreducible and M is not locally symmetric, then h_0 acts \dagger transitively on the unit sphere of T_p . The classification of possible candidates for such h_0 has been made [8, 9]. For example, if n is even and h_0 is the \dagger unitary group $U(n/2)$, then h acts transitively on the unit sphere. A necessary and sufficient condition for h to be contained in $U(n/2)$ is that M have a \dagger complex structure and the structure of a Kähler manifold.

The group h acts naturally on the \dagger tensor algebra $\mathcal{T}(T_p)$ of T_p . If a tensor field A on M is parallel, then A_p is invariant under h . Conversely, if $A_0 \in \mathcal{T}(T_p)$ is invariant under h , there exists a unique parallel tensor field A satisfying $A_p = A_0$. The orthogonal frame bundle B is \dagger reducible to the h -bundle.

F. Transformation Groups

The group $I(M)$ consisting of all isometries of M with the \dagger compact-open topology is a \dagger Lie transformation group. The isotropy subgroup at any point is compact. In particular, if M is compact, so is $I(M)$. The differential $d\varphi$ of $\varphi \in I(M)$ is a transformation of the orthogonal frame bundle B . If b_0 is a fixed point of B , then the mapping β defined by $\varphi \rightarrow d\varphi(b_0)$ embeds $I(M)$ as a closed submanifold of B , and the differentiable structure of $I(M)$ is thus determined. If β is surjective, it follows from the structure equation that M is of constant curva-

ture and equals E^n , a real hyperbolic space, or a real elliptic space (or a sphere). A necessary and sufficient condition for the image of β to be a subbundle of B is that $I(M)$ be transitive. If the image of β contains the h -bundle, then M is a symmetric space. If M is compact and $I(M)$ is transitive, then the image of β is contained in the h -bundle (\rightarrow 191 G-Structures). If $I(M)$ is transitive on M , then M is complete and is the \dagger homogeneous space of $I(M)$. Conversely, a homogeneous space $M = G/K$ of a Lie group G by a compact subgroup K has a Riemannian metric invariant under G . In general, an element of $I(M)$ preserves quantities uniquely determined by the Riemannian metric g , such as the Riemannian connection, its curvature, the set of all geodesics, etc. Furthermore, any element of $I(M)$ commutes with ∇ and the \dagger Laplace-Beltrami operator. If M is compact and oriented, then the connected component $I_0(M)$ of $I(M)$ preserves any \dagger harmonic differential form. If M is complete and simply connected, then $I_0(M)$ is clearly decomposed into a direct product by the de Rham decomposition of M . An element of the Lie algebra of $I(M)$ is regarded as a vector field X on M , called the **infinitesimal motion**, which satisfies the equation $L_X g = 0$; that is, $\nabla_j \xi_i + \nabla_i \xi_j = 0$, where L_X denotes \dagger Lie derivation and the ξ_i are \dagger covariant components of X with respect to a natural frame $(\partial/\partial X_i)$, $i = 1, \dots, n$ (\rightarrow 417 Tensor Calculus). This equation is called **Killing's differential equation**, and a solution X of this equation is called a **Killing vector field**. The set of all Killing vector fields is a Lie algebra of finite dimension ($\leq \dim B$). If M is complete, then this Lie algebra coincides with that of $I(M)$. If M is compact and the Ricci tensor is negative definite, then $I(M)$ is discrete. If, furthermore, the sectional curvature is nonpositive, then an isometry of M homotopic to the identity transformation is the identity transformation itself.

It is known that $\dim I(M) \leq n(n+1)/2$ if $\dim M = n$, and the maximum dimension is attained only when M is a space of constant curvature. For Riemannian manifolds with large $I(M)$, extensive work on the structures of M and $I(M)$ has been done by I. P. Egorov, S. Ishihara, N. H. Kuiper, L. N. Mann, Y. Muto, T. Nagano, M. Obata, H. Wakakuwa, K. Yano, and others [10, 11].

The fixed point set of a family of isometries has interesting differential geometric properties [10]. For example, let G be any subset of $I(M)$ and F the set of points of M which are left fixed by all the elements of G . Then each connected component of F is a closed \dagger totally geodesic submanifold of M . If M is compact and f is an isometry of M , then $\Lambda_f = \chi(f)$, where Λ_f denotes the \dagger Lefschetz number and

$\chi(F)$ the \dagger Euler characteristic of the fixed point set F of f . As for the existence of fixed points of an isometry, the following are known: Let f be an isometry of a compact, orientable Riemannian manifold M with positive sectional curvature. If $\dim M$ is even and f is orientation preserving, or if $\dim M$ is odd and f is orientation reversing, then f has a fixed point. In the case of nonpositive curvature, the following is basic: Every compact group of isometries of a complete, simply connected Riemannian manifold with nonpositive sectional curvature has a fixed point (E. Cartan). If a compact, orientable Riemannian manifold admits a fixed-point-free 1-parameter group of isometries, then its \dagger Pontryagin numbers vanish.

On a Riemannian manifold M , a transformation of M which preserves the Riemannian connection, or equivalently which commutes with covariant differentiation ∇ is called an **affine transformation**. Let $A(M)$ denote the group of all affine transformations of M . A transformation preserving the set of all geodesics is called a **projective transformation**. Let $P(M)$ denote the group of all projective transformations of M . A transformation preserving the angle between tangent vectors is called a **conformal transformation**. Let $C(M)$ denote the group of all conformal transformations. They are Lie transformation groups with respect to suitable topologies. Clearly, $I(M) \subset A(M) \subset P(M)$, $I(M) \subset C(M)$ (\rightarrow 191 *G-Structures*).

$A_0(M)$, the connected component of $A(M)$, is decomposed into a direct product according to the de Rham decomposition of M when M is complete and simply connected (J. Hano). If M is complete and irreducible, then $A(M) = I(M)$ except when M is a 1-dimensional Euclidean space. If M is complete and its restricted homogeneous holonomy group h_0 leaves no nonzero vectors, then $A_0(M) = I_0(M)$. If M is compact, then $A_0(M) = I_0(M)$ always.

If M is complete and has a parallel Ricci tensor, then the connected component $P_0(M) = A_0(M)$, unless M is a space of positive constant sectional curvature ($n > 2$) (Nagano, N. Tanaka, Y. Tashiro). If M is compact, simply connected, and has constant scalar curvature, then $P_0(M) = I_0(M)$, unless M is a sphere ($n > 2$) (K. Yamauchi).

Similarly to the case of $P(M)$, it is known that if M is complete and has a parallel Ricci tensor, then the connected component $C_0(M) = I_0(M)$, unless M is a sphere ($n > 2$) (Nagano). A conformal transformation remains conformal if the Riemannian metric g is changed conformally, namely, to $e^{2f}g$, f being any smooth function on M . A subset of $C(M, g)$ is called **essential** if it cannot be reduced to a subset of $I(M, \bar{g})$ for any metric \bar{g} conformal to

g . When M is compact, $C(M)$ or $C_0(M)$ is essential if and only if it is not compact. If $C_0(M)$ is essential, then M is conformally diffeomorphic to a sphere or a Euclidean space ($n > 2$) [12–15]. When M is compact and has constant scalar curvature and $C_0(M) \neq I_0(M)$, sufficient conditions for M to be isometric to a sphere have been obtained by S. I. Goldberg and S. Kobayashi, C. C. Hsiung, S. Ishihara, A. Lichnerowicz, Obata, S. Tanno, Tashiro, K. Yano, and others. For example, if $C_0(M)$ is essential, then M is a sphere [14]. In general, however, there are compact Riemannian manifolds with constant scalar curvature for which $C_0(M) \neq I_0(M)$ (N. Ejiri).

G. Spheres as Riemannian Manifolds

A Euclidean n -sphere S^n ($n \geq 2$) has the properties of a Riemannian manifold. It is a space of positive constant sectional curvature $1/r^2$ (r = radius) with respect to the natural Riemannian metric as a hypersurface of the Euclidean $(n+1)$ -space E^{n+1} . A sphere is characterized by the existence of solutions of certain differential equations on a Riemannian manifold. On a unit sphere S^n in E^{n+1} , the eigenvalues of the \dagger Laplace-Beltrami operator Δ on smooth functions are given by $0 < \lambda_1 < \dots < \lambda_k < \dots$, $\lambda_k = k(n+k-1)$. It is known that eigenfunctions f corresponding to λ_k , $\Delta f = \lambda_k f$, are the restrictions to S^n of harmonic homogeneous polynomial functions F of degree k on E^{n+1} . On a compact Riemannian manifold M , if the Ricci curvature of M is not less than that of S^n , then the first eigenvalue $\bar{\lambda}_1$ of Δ on M satisfies $\bar{\lambda}_1 \geq \lambda_1 = n$ [16]. Conversely, under the same assumption on the Ricci curvature, if $\bar{\lambda}_1 = n$, then M is a sphere (Obata). On the other hand, if g is the standard metric on S^n , then $\Delta f = nf$ is equivalent to the system of differential equations

$$\nabla_j \nabla_i f + f g_{ji} = 0. \quad (E_1)$$

A complete Riemannian manifold M ($n \geq 2$) admits a nontrivial solution of (E_1) if and only if M is a sphere (Obata, Tashiro). In general, the restriction f to S^n of a harmonic homogeneous polynomial of degree k satisfies $\Delta f = k(n+k-1)f$ as well as a certain system (E_k) of differential equations of degree $k+1$ involving the Riemannian metric. For example,

$$\nabla_k \nabla_j \nabla_i f + 2g_{ji} \nabla_k f + g_{ik} \nabla_j f + g_{kj} \nabla_i f = 0. \quad (E_2)$$

If a complete Riemannian manifold M admits a nontrivial solution of (E_k) for some integer $k \geq 2$, then M is locally isometric to a sphere (Obata, Tanno, S. Gallot [17]). The gradient of a solution of (E_1) is an infinitesimal conformal

transformation and that of (E_2) is an infinitesimal projective transformation.

As the Kähler or quaternion Kähler version of (E_2) , there is a system of differential equations characterizing the complex projective space or the quaternion projective space as a Kähler manifold (Obata, Tanno, D. E. Blair, Y. Maeda).

On a sphere, a Riemannian metric which is conformal to the standard metric and has the same scalar curvature as the standard one is always standard, namely, it has a positive constant sectional curvature [14].

H. Scalar Curvature

On a 2-dimensional Riemannian manifold M , the sectional curvature, the Ricci curvature, and the scalar curvature all coincide with the \dagger Gaussian curvature, which is a function on M . If M is compact, by the \dagger Gauss-Bonnet theorem the Gaussian curvature K of M must satisfy the following sign condition in terms of the \dagger Euler characteristic $\chi(M)$:

if $\chi(M) > 0$, then K is positive somewhere;

if $\chi(M) = 0$, then K changes sign unless it is identically zero;

if $\chi(M) < 0$, then K is negative somewhere.

This sign condition is also sufficient for a given function K to be the Gaussian curvature of some metric on M . More precisely, starting with a Riemannian metric with constant Gaussian curvature, one can say that a smooth function K is the Gaussian curvature of some metric conformally equivalent to the original metric if and only if K satisfies the foregoing sign condition [18].

H. Yamabe [19] announced that on every compact Riemannian manifold (M, g) of dimension $n \geq 3$, there exists a strictly positive function u such that the Riemannian metric $\bar{g} = u^{4/(n-2)}g$ has constant scalar curvature. N. S. Trudinger, however, pointed out that his original proof contains a gap in some cases. The problem reduces to the following nonlinear partial differential equation on a compact manifold M :

$$\bar{R}u^{(n+2)/(n-2)} = 4 \frac{n-1}{n-2} \Delta u + Ru,$$

where R is the scalar curvature of g and \bar{R} a constant which should be the scalar curvature of $\bar{g} = u^{4/(n-2)}g$ (\rightarrow 183 Global Analysis). Nevertheless, Yamabe's original proof can be pushed to cover a large class of metrics with $\int_M R dM < 0$. Furthermore, it has since been solved for a wider class: namely, if M is not conformally flat and $n \geq 6$, or if it is conformally flat and its fundamental group is finite,

then the problem has been solved affirmatively [20].

On the other hand, any smooth function on a compact manifold M of dimension $n \geq 3$ that is negative somewhere is the scalar curvature of some metric on M . In particular, on a compact manifold ($n \geq 3$) there always exists a Riemannian metric with constant negative scalar curvature [18]. Any smooth function can be the scalar curvature if and only if M admits a metric of constant positive scalar curvature. The foregoing results show that there is no topological obstruction to the existence of metrics with negative scalar curvature of a compact manifold of dimension $n \geq 3$.

For positive scalar curvature, there is a topological obstruction. A compact \dagger spin structure (spin manifold) having nonvanishing $\dagger\hat{A}$ -genus cannot carry a Riemannian metric of positive scalar curvature. The existence of such a manifold has been shown. If a compact, simply connected manifold M of dimension $n \geq 5$ is not a spin manifold, then there exists a Riemannian metric of positive scalar curvature. Furthermore, if M is a spin manifold and spin \dagger cobordant to M' with positive scalar curvature, then M carries a Riemannian metric of positive scalar curvature [22]. A torus T^n cannot carry a metric of positive scalar curvature. In fact, any metric of nonnegative scalar curvature on T^n must be flat [22].

Let K_g and R_g denote the sectional curvature and the scalar curvature, respectively, of a Riemannian metric g . Then the following are known for a compact manifold M of dimension ≥ 3 : If M carries a metric g with $K_g \leq 0$, then it carries no metric with $R > 0$. If M carries a metric g with $K_g < 0$, then it carries no metric with $R \geq 0$. If M carries metrics g_1, g_2 with $K_{g_1} \leq 0$ and $R_{g_2} \geq 0$, then both metrics are flat [22].

If the assignment of the scalar curvature to a Riemannian metric is viewed as a mapping of a space of Riemannian metrics into a space of functions on a manifold M , then locally it is almost always surjective when M is compact (A. E. Fischer and J. E. Marsden, O. Kobayashi, J. Lafontaine).

I. Ricci Curvature and Einstein Metrics

In this paragraph the manifolds under consideration are assumed to be of dimension $n \geq 3$. The Ricci tensor (R_{ij}) is a symmetric tensor field of type $(0, 2)$ on a Riemannian manifold. The problem of finding a Riemannian metric g which realizes a given Ricci tensor reduces to the one of solving a system of nonlinear second-order partial differential equations for g . The Bianchi identity (\rightarrow 417

Tensor Calculus)

$$g^{kj}\nabla_k R_{ji} - \frac{1}{2}\nabla_i R = 0$$

must be satisfied. There is a symmetric $(0, 2)$ -tensor on \mathbf{R}^n which cannot be the Ricci tensor for any Riemannian metric in a neighborhood of $0 \in \mathbf{R}^n$. However, if a C^∞ (or C^ω) symmetric tensor field (R_{ij}) of type $(0, 2)$ is invertible at a point p , then in a neighborhood of p there exists a C^∞ (or C^ω) Riemannian metric g such that (R_{ij}) is the Ricci tensor of g [24].

The positivity of the Ricci curvature on a Riemannian manifold puts rather strong restrictions on the topology of the manifold (\rightarrow 178 Geodesics). However, nonnegative Ricci curvature and positive Ricci curvature are not too far from each other. If, on a complete Riemannian manifold M with nonnegative Ricci curvature, there is a point at which the Ricci curvature is positive, then there exists a complete metric on M with positive Ricci curvature [25–27].

If a Riemannian manifold (M, g) is an Einstein space, then g is called an **Einstein metric** on the manifold M . Let v_g denote the volume element determined by g . When M is compact, \mathcal{M} denotes the space of Riemannian metrics on M with total volume 1. The integral of the scalar curvature $\mathcal{G}(g) = \int_M R_g v_g$ is a functional on \mathcal{M} . The critical points of \mathcal{G} are Einstein metrics (D. Hilbert). Let $\mathcal{M}_1 (\subset \mathcal{M})$ denote the space of metrics with constant scalar curvature. Then if \mathcal{G} is restricted to \mathcal{M}_1 , then the \dagger nullity and \dagger coindex at the critical point are finite [28, 29].

An Einstein metric is always real analytic in some coordinate system. In particular, if two simply connected Einstein spaces have neighborhoods on which metrics are isometric, then they are isometric [30]. Though S^n with standard Riemannian metric is a typical example of an Einstein space, S^{4k+3} ($k \geq 1$) carries an Einstein metric that is not standard [31].

References

- [1] J. A. Wolf, Spaces of constant curvature, Publish or Perish, 1977.
- [2] M. Berger, Les variétés riemanniennes homogènes simplement connexes à courbure strictment positive, Ann. Scuola Norm. Sup. Pisa, (3) 15 (1961), 179–246.
- [3] N. R. Wallach, Compact homogeneous Riemannian manifolds with strictly positive curvature, Ann. Math., (2) 96 (1972), 277–295.
- [4] L. Berard-Bergery, Les variétés riemanniennes homogènes simplement connexes de

dimension impaire à courbure strictment positive, J. Math. Pures Appl., (9) 55 (1976), 47–67.

- [5] S. Mori, Projective manifolds with ample tangent bundles, Ann. Math., (2) 110 (1979), 593–606.
- [6] Y. T. Siu and S. T. Yau, Compact Kähler manifolds of positive bisectional curvature, Inventiones Math., 59 (1980), 189–204.
- [7] G. de Rham, Sur la reductibilité d'un espace de Riemann, Comment. Math. Helv., 26 (1952), 328–344.
- [8] M. Berger, Sur les groupes d'holonomie homogène des variétés à connexion affine et des variétés riemanniennes, Bull. Soc. Math. France, 83 (1955), 279–330.
- [9] J. Simons, On the transitivity of holonomy systems, Ann. Math., (2) 76 (1962), 213–234.
- [10] S. Kobayashi, Transformation groups in differential geometry, Erg. Math., 70, 1972.
- [11] K. Yano, The theory of Lie derivatives and its applications, North-Holland, 1957.
- [12] J. Lelong-Ferrand, Transformations conformes et quasi conformes des variétés riemanniennes compactes (démonstration de la conjecture de Lichnerowicz), Acad. Roy. Belg., Cl. Sc. Mém. Colloq. 39, no. 5 (1971), 1–44.
- [13] A. J. Ledger and M. Obata, Compact Riemannian manifolds with essential group of conformorphisms, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 150 (1970), 645–651.
- [14] M. Obata, The conjectures on conformal transformations of Riemannian manifolds, J. Differential Geometry, 6 (1971), 247–258.
- [15] D. V. Alekseevskii, Groups of conformal transformations of Riemann spaces, Math. USSR-Sb., 18 (1972), 285–301.
- [16] A. Lichnerowicz, Géométrie des groupes de transformations, Dunod, 1958.
- [17] S. Gallot, Équations différentielles caractéristiques de la sphère, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., 12 (1979), 235–267.
- [18] J. L. Kazdan and F. W. Warner, Existence and conformal deformation of metrics with prescribed Gaussian and scalar curvature, Ann. Math., (2) 101 (1975), 317–331.
- [19] H. Yamabe, On a deformation of Riemannian structures on compact manifolds, Osaka Math. J., 12 (1960), 21–37.
- [20] T. Aubin, Equations différentielles non linéaires et problème de Yamabe concernant la courbure scalaire, J. Math. Pure Appl., 55 (1976), 269–296.
- [21] N. Hitchin, Harmonic spinors, Advances in Math., 14 (1974), 1–55.
- [22] M. Gromov and L. B. Lawson, The classification of simply connected manifold of positive scalar curvature, Ann. Math., (2) 111 (1980), 423–434.
- [23] R. Schoen and S. T. Yau, The structure

of manifolds with positive scalar curvature, *Manuscripta Math.*, 28 (1979), 159–183.

[24] D. DeTurck, Existence of metrics with prescribed Ricci curvature: Local theory, *Inventiones Math.*, 65 (1981), 179–207.

[25] T. Aubin, Métriques riemanniennes et courbure, *J. Differential Geometry*, 4 (1970), 383–424.

[26] P. Ehrlich, Metric deformations of curvature I: local convex deformations, *Geometriae Dedicata*, 5 (1976), 1–23.

[27] J. P. Bourguignon, Ricci curvature and Einstein metrics, *Lecture notes in math.* 838, Springer, 1981, 42–63.

[28] Y. Muto, On Einstein metrics, *J. Differential Geometry*, 9 (1974), 521–530.

[29] N. Koiso, On the second derivative of the total scalar curvature, *Osaka J. Math.*, 16 (1979), 413–421.

[30] D. M. DeTurck and J. L. Kazdan, Some regularity theorems in Riemannian geometry, *Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup.*, 14 (1981), 249–260.

[31] J. E. D'Atri and W. Ziller, Naturally reductive metrics and Einstein metrics on compact Lie groups, *Mem. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 18 (1979).

See also references to 80 Connections, 105 Differentiable Manifolds, 109 Differential Geometry, 111 Differential Geometry of Curves and Surfaces, 178 Geodesics, 191 G-Structures, 365 Riemannian Submanifolds, 417 Tensor Calculus.

365 (VII.13) Riemannian Submanifolds

A. Introduction

If an \dagger immersion (or an \dagger embedding) f of a \dagger Riemannian manifold (M, g) into a Riemannian manifold (\tilde{M}, \tilde{g}) satisfies the condition $f^*\tilde{g} = g$, then f is called an **isometric immersion** (or embedding) and M is called a **Riemannian submanifold** of \tilde{M} . In this article, $f(M)$ will be identified with M except where there is danger of confusion. Suppose $\dim M = n$ and $\dim \tilde{M} = n + p$. Then the \dagger bundle $F(M)$ of orthonormal tangent frames of M , the bundle $F_v(M)$ of orthonormal normal frames of M , and their \dagger Whitney sum $F(M) \oplus F_v(M)$ are \dagger principal fiber bundles over M with \dagger structure groups $O(n)$, $O(p)$, and $O(n) \times O(p)$, respectively. These are subbundles of the restriction to M of the bundle $F(\tilde{M})$ of orthonormal frames of \tilde{M} . The vector bundles associated with $F(M)$, $F_v(M)$, and $F(M) \oplus F_v(M)$ are, respectively, the \dagger tan-

gent bundle $T(M)$, the \dagger normal bundle $v(M)$, and their Whitney sum $T(M) \oplus v(M)$.

B. General Results for Immersibility

An n -dimensional real analytic Riemannian manifold can be locally isometrically embedded into any real analytic Riemannian manifold of dimension $n(n+1)/2$ (M. Janet (1926), E. Cartan (1927)). The generalization to the C^∞ case is an open question even when the ambient space is Euclidean.

An n -dimensional compact C^r Riemannian manifold ($3 \leq r \leq \infty$) can be isometrically embedded into an $(n(3n+11)/2)$ -dimensional Euclidean space (J. F. Nash (1956)). An n -dimensional noncompact C^r Riemannian manifold ($3 \leq r \leq \infty$) can be isometrically embedded into a $2(2n+1)(3n+7)$ -dimensional Euclidean space (Nash (1956), R. E. Greene (1970)).

Let M be an n -dimensional Riemannian manifold with \dagger sectional curvature K_M and \tilde{M} an $(n+p)$ -dimensional Riemannian manifold with sectional curvature $K_{\tilde{M}}$. Then M cannot be isometrically immersed into \tilde{M} in the following cases:

- (1) $p \leq n-2$ and $K_M < K_{\tilde{M}}$ (T. Otsuki (1954));
- (2) $p \leq n-1$, $K_M \leq K_{\tilde{M}} \leq 0$, M is compact, and \tilde{M} is complete and simply connected (C. Tompkins (1939), S. S. Chern and N. H. Kuiper (1952), B. O'Neill (1960));
- (3) $p \leq n-1$, $K_M \leq 0$, $K_{\tilde{M}}$ is constant (≤ 0), M is compact, and \tilde{M} is complete and simply connected [2].

C. Fundamental Equations

Let $f: (M, g) \rightarrow (\tilde{M}, \tilde{g})$ be an isometric immersion. Let ∇ and $\tilde{\nabla}$ denote the \dagger covariant differentiations with respect to the \dagger Riemannian connections of M and \tilde{M} , respectively. For vector fields X and Y on M , the tangential component of $\tilde{\nabla}_X Y$ is equal to $\nabla_X Y$. Put

$$\sigma(X, Y) = \tilde{\nabla}_X Y - \nabla_X Y. \quad (1)$$

Then σ is a $v(M)$ -valued symmetric $(0, 2)$ tensor field on M , which is called the **second fundamental form** of M (or of f). For a normal vector ξ at $x \in M$, put $g(A_\xi X, Y) = \tilde{g}(\sigma(X, Y), \xi)$. Then A_ξ defines a symmetric linear transformation on $T_x(M)$, which is called the second fundamental form in the direction of ξ . The eigenvalues of A_ξ are called the **principal curvatures** in the direction of ξ . The connection on $v(M)$ induced from the Riemannian connection of \tilde{M} is called the **normal connection** of M (or of f). Let $\tilde{\nabla}^\perp$ denote the covariant differentiation with respect to the normal con-

nection. For a tangent vector field X and a normal vector field ξ on M , the tangential (resp. normal) component of $\tilde{\nabla}_X \xi$ is equal to $-A_\xi X$ (resp. $\nabla_X^\perp \xi$), that is to say, the relation

$$\tilde{\nabla}_X \xi = -A_\xi X + \nabla_X^\perp \xi \quad (2)$$

holds. (1) is called the **Gauss formula**, and (2) is called the **Weingarten formula**.

Let R , \tilde{R} , and R^\perp be the \dagger curvature tensors of ∇ , $\tilde{\nabla}$, and ∇^\perp , respectively. Then the \dagger integrability condition for (1) and (2) implies

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{R}(X, Y)Z &= R(X, Y)Z + A_{\sigma(X, Z)}Y - A_{\sigma(Y, Z)}X \\ &\quad + (\nabla'_X \sigma)(Y, Z) - (\nabla'_Y \sigma)(X, Z) \end{aligned} \quad (3)$$

for vector fields X, Y, Z tangent to M , where ∇' denotes covariant differentiation with respect to the connection in $T(M) \oplus \nu(M)$. (3) is called the equation of Gauss and Codazzi. More precisely, the tangential component of (3) is given by the **equation of Gauss** and the normal component of (3) is given by the **equation of Codazzi**. Similarly, for vector fields ξ and η normal to M , the relation

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{g}(\tilde{R}(X, Y)\xi, \eta) &= \tilde{g}(R^\perp(X, Y)\xi, \eta) \\ &\quad - g([A_\xi, A_\eta]X, Y) \end{aligned} \quad (4)$$

holds, which is called the **equation of Ricci**. Formulas (1)–(4) are the fundamental equations for the isometric immersion $f: M \rightarrow \tilde{M}$.

As a particular case, suppose \tilde{M} is a \dagger space form of constant curvature c . Then the equations of Gauss, Codazzi, and Ricci reduce respectively to

$$R(X, Y)Z = c(g(Y, Z)X - g(X, Z)Y) + A_{\sigma(Y, Z)}X - A_{\sigma(X, Z)}Y, \quad (3)_t$$

$$(\nabla'_X \sigma)(Y, Z) - (\nabla'_Y \sigma)(X, Z) = 0, \quad (3)_n$$

$$\tilde{g}(R^\perp(X, Y)\xi, \eta) = g([A_\xi, A_\eta]X, Y). \quad (4)_c$$

Conversely, let (M, g) be an n -dimensional simply connected Riemannian manifold, and suppose there is given a p -dimensional \dagger Riemannian vector bundle $\nu(M)$ over M with curvature tensor R^\perp and a $\nu(M)$ -valued symmetric $(0, 2)$ tensor field σ on M . For a \dagger cross section ξ of $\nu(M)$, define A_ξ by $g(A_\xi X, Y) = \langle \sigma(X, Y), \xi \rangle$, where $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ is the fiber metric of $\nu(M)$. If they satisfy $(3)_t$, $(3)_n$, and $(4)_c$, then M can be immersed isometrically into an $(n + p)$ -dimensional complete and simply connected space form $M^{n+p}(c)$ of curvature c in such a way that $\nu(M)$ is the normal bundle and σ is the second fundamental form. Moreover, such an immersion is unique up to an \dagger isometry of $M^{n+p}(c)$.

Let $(e_A)_{1 \leq A \leq n+p}$ be a local cross section of $F(\tilde{M})$ such that its restriction to M gives a local cross section of $F(M) \oplus F_\nu(M)$, and let (ω^A) be its dual. Then $f^* \omega^\alpha = 0$ for $n + 1 \leq \alpha \leq$

$n + p$. Let $(\tilde{\omega}_B^A)_{1 \leq A, B \leq n+p}$ and $(\tilde{\Phi}_B^A)_{1 \leq A, B \leq n+p}$ be the \dagger connection form and the \dagger curvature form of \tilde{M} with respect to (e_A) , and put $\omega_B^A = f^* \tilde{\omega}_B^A$. Then $(\omega_j^i)_{1 \leq i, j \leq n}$ is the connection form of M with respect to $(e_i)_{1 \leq i \leq n}$. $(\omega_i^\alpha)_{1 \leq i \leq n < \alpha \leq n+p}$ gives the second fundamental form, that is,

$$\sigma(e_i, e_j) = \sum \omega_i^\alpha(e_j) e_\alpha. \quad (1')$$

Put $\omega_j^\alpha = \sum h_{ij}^\alpha \omega^j$. Then (h_{ij}^α) is the matrix representing the symmetric linear transformation A_{e_α} with respect to (e_i) , that is,

$$A_{e_\alpha} e_i = \sum h_{ij}^\alpha e_j. \quad (2')$$

Moreover, $(\omega_\beta^\alpha)_{n+1 \leq \alpha, \beta \leq n+p}$ is the connection form of the normal connection with respect to $(e_\alpha)_{n+1 \leq \alpha \leq n+p}$. Let $(\Phi_j^i)_{1 \leq i, j \leq n}$ and $(\Phi_\beta^\alpha)_{n+1 \leq \alpha, \beta \leq n+p}$ be the curvature forms of (ω_j^i) and (ω_β^α) , respectively. Then the equations of Gauss, Codazzi, and Ricci are given respectively by

$$f^* \tilde{\Phi}_j^i = \Phi_j^i + \sum_{\alpha=n+1}^{n+p} \omega_\alpha^i \wedge \omega_j^\alpha \quad (1 \leq i, j \leq n), \quad (3')_t$$

$$f^* \tilde{\Phi}_i^\alpha = d\omega_i^\alpha + \sum_{A=1}^{n+p} \omega_A^\alpha \wedge \omega_i^A \quad (1 \leq i \leq n < \alpha \leq n+p), \quad (3')_n$$

$$f^* \tilde{\Phi}_\beta^\alpha = \Phi_\beta^\alpha + \sum_{k=1}^n \omega_k^\alpha \wedge \omega_\beta^k \quad (n+1 \leq \alpha, \beta \leq n+p). \quad (4')$$

D. Basic Notions

Let M be a Riemannian submanifold of \tilde{M} . A point $x \in M$ is called a **geodesic point** if $\sigma = 0$ at x . If every point of M is a geodesic point, then M is called a **totally geodesic submanifold** of \tilde{M} . M is a totally geodesic submanifold of \tilde{M} if and only if every geodesic of M is a geodesic of \tilde{M} .

A mapping $h: M \rightarrow \nu(M)$ defined by $x \rightarrow \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^n \sigma(e_i, e_i)$ is independent of the choice of an orthonormal basis (e_i) . h is called the **mean curvature vector** and $\|h\|$ is called the **mean curvature**. M is called a **minimal submanifold** of \tilde{M} if $h \equiv 0$ (\rightarrow 275 Minimal Submanifolds).

A point $x \in M$ is called an **umbilical point** if $\sigma = g \otimes h$ at x . $x \in M$ is an umbilical point if and only if A_ξ is proportional to the identity transformation for all $\xi \in \nu_x(M)$. If every point of M is an umbilical point, then M is called a **totally umbilical submanifold** of \tilde{M} .

A point $x \in M$ is called an **isotropic point** if $\|\sigma(X, X)\|/\|X\|^2$ does not depend on $X \in T_x(M)$. If every point of M is an isotropic point, then M is called an **isotropic submanifold** of \tilde{M} . It is clear that an umbilical point is an isotropic point.

$\mu(x) = \dim \bigcap_{\xi \in \nu_x(M)} \ker A_\xi$ is called the **index of relative nullity** at $x \in M$.

E. Rigidity

An isometric immersion $f: M \rightarrow \tilde{M}$ is said to be **rigid** if it is unique up to an isometry of \tilde{M} , that is, if $f': M \rightarrow \tilde{M}$ is another isometric immersion, then there exists an isometry φ of \tilde{M} such that $f' = \varphi \circ f$. If $f: M \rightarrow \tilde{M}$ is rigid, then every isometry of M can be extended to an isometry of \tilde{M} .

An isometric immersion $f: M \rightarrow M^{n+1}(c)$ of an n -dimensional Riemannian manifold into an $(n+1)$ -dimensional complete and simply connected space form is rigid in each of the following cases:

- (1) $n=2$, $c=0$, and M is compact and of positive curvature (S. Cohn-Vossen (1929)).
- (2) The index of relative nullity is $\leq n-3$ at each point (R. Beez (1876); \rightarrow [8]).
- (3) $n \geq 5$, $c > 0$, M is complete, and the index of relative nullity is $\leq n-2$ at each point (D. Ferus (1970)).
- (4) $n \geq 4$, $c \neq 0$, and the † scalar curvature of M is constant ($\neq n(n-1)c$) (C. Harle (1971)).

A generalization of (2) for the case of higher codimension was obtained by C. Allendoerfer (1939). Various rigidity conditions have been studied by S. Dolbeault-Lemoine, R. Sacksteder, E. Kaneda and N. Tanaka, and others.

F. Totally Geodesic and Totally Umbilical Submanifolds

A totally geodesic submanifold of a space form is also a space form of the same curvature. Totally geodesic submanifolds of compact † symmetric spaces of rank 1 were completely classified by J. A. Wolf (1963), and totally geodesic submanifolds of symmetric spaces of rank ≥ 2 were studied by Wolf and B. Y. Chen and T. Nagano [4].

Let $f: M \rightarrow M^{n+p}(\tilde{c})$ be a totally umbilical immersion of an n -dimensional Riemannian manifold M into an $(n+p)$ -dimensional space form. Then M is a space form $M^n(c)$ with $c \geq \tilde{c}$, and $f(M)$ is contained in a certain $(n+1)$ -dimensional totally geodesic submanifold $M^{n+1}(\tilde{c})$ of $M^{n+p}(\tilde{c})$. If $\tilde{c} > 0$, then $f(M)$ is locally a hypersphere; if $\tilde{c} = 0$, then $f(M)$ is locally a hyperplane or a hypersphere; if $\tilde{c} < 0$, then $f(M)$ is locally a geodesic sphere, a horosphere, or a parallel hypersurface of a totally geodesic hypersurface [2].

G. Minimal Submanifolds

For general properties of minimal submanifolds \rightarrow 275 Minimal Submanifolds.

There is no compact minimal submanifold in a simply connected Riemannian manifold with nonpositive sectional curvature (O'Neill

(1960)). On the contrary, a sphere has plenty of compact minimal submanifolds.

For each positive integer s , an n -dimensional sphere of curvature $\frac{n}{s(s+n-1)}$ can be minimally immersed into a $\left\{ (2s+n-1) \frac{(s+n-2)!}{s!(n-1)!} - 1 \right\}$ -dimensional unit sphere and the immersion is rigid if $n=2$ or $s \leq 3$ (E. Calabi (1967), M. do Carmo and N. Wallach (1971)).

Among all n -dimensional compact minimal submanifolds of an $(n+p)$ -dimensional unit sphere, the totally geodesic submanifold is isolated in the sense that it is characterized by each of the following conditions:

- (1) sectional curvature $> \frac{n}{2(n+1)}$ (T. Itoh (1978)),
- (2) Ricci curvature $> n-2$ (N. Ejiri (1979)),
- (3) scalar curvature $> n(n-1) - \frac{n}{2-1/p}$ (J. Simons (1968)).

H. Submanifolds of Constant Mean Curvature

A manifold of constant mean curvature is a solution to a variational problem. In particular, with respect to any volume-preserving variation of a domain D in a Euclidean space, the mean curvature of $M = \partial D$ is constant if and only if the volume of M is critical.

The interesting question "If the mean curvature of an isometric immersion $f: M \rightarrow M^{n+1}(c)$ of an n -dimensional compact Riemannian manifold M into an $(n+1)$ -dimensional space form $M^{n+1}(c)$ is constant, is M a sphere?" has not yet been completely solved, where $M^{n+1}(c)$ denotes a Euclidean space, a hyperbolic space, or an open hemisphere according as $c=0$, <0 , or >0 . The answer is affirmative in the following cases: (1) $\dim M = 2$, and the † genus of M is zero (H. Hopf (1951), Chern (1955)). (2) f is an embedding (A. D. Alexandrov (1958); \rightarrow [8]).

These results remain true even if the assumption "the mean curvature is constant" is replaced by the weaker condition "the principal curvatures $k_1 \geq \dots \geq k_n$ satisfy a relation $\varphi(k_1, \dots, k_n) = 0$ such that $\partial\varphi/\partial k_i > 0$."

Unlike an open hemisphere, a sphere S^{n+1} admits many compact hypersurfaces of constant mean curvature, among which totally umbilical hypersurfaces and the product of two spheres are the only ones with nonnegative sectional curvature (B. Smyth and K. Nomizu (1969)).

A nonnegatively or nonpositively curved complete surface of nonzero constant mean curvature in a 3-dimensional space form $M^3(c)$ is either a sphere or a † Clifford torus if $c > 0$ and is either a sphere or a right circular

cylinder if $c \leq 0$ (T. Klotz and R. Osserman (1966–1967), D. Hoffman (1973)).

I. Isoparametric Hypersurfaces

A hypersurface M of \tilde{M} is said to be **isoparametric** if M is locally defined as the \dagger level set of a function f on (an open set of) \tilde{M} with property

$$df \wedge d\|df\|^2 = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad df \wedge d(\Delta f) = 0.$$

A hypersurface M of a complete and simply connected space form $M^{n+1}(c)$ is isoparametric if and only if M has locally constant principal curvatures (Cartan). If $c \leq 0$, M has at most two distinct principal curvatures (Cartan). If $c > 0$, the number of distinct principal curvatures of M is 1, 2, 3, 4, or 6 (H. Münzner (1980)). If $c = 0$, then M is locally $S^k \times E^{n-k}$, and if $c < 0$, then M is locally E^n or $S^k \times H^{n-k}$ (Cartan). Isoparametric hypersurfaces of S^{n+1} having at most three distinct principal curvatures were completely classified by Cartan. R. Takagi, T. Takahashi, and H. Ozeki and M. Takeuchi obtained several results for isoparametric hypersurfaces of S^{n+1} with four or six distinct principal curvatures [7].

If a subgroup of the isometry group of $M^{n+1}(c)$ acts transitively on M , then M is isoparametric. The converse is true if $c \leq 0$, or if $c > 0$ and M has at most three distinct principal curvatures (Cartan), but not true in general (Ozeki and Takeuchi [7]).

J. Isometric Immersions between Space Forms

Let $f: M^n(c) \rightarrow M^{n+p}(\tilde{c})$ be an isometric immersion of an n -dimensional space form into an $(n+p)$ -dimensional space form.

- (1) If $n = 2$, $p = 1$, $c > 0$, $c \geq \tilde{c}$, $M^2(c)$ is complete, and $M^3(\tilde{c})$ is complete and simply connected, then f is totally umbilical (H. Liebmann (1901); \rightarrow [2]).
- (2) If $n = 2$, $p = 1$, $c < 0$, $c < \tilde{c}$, $M^2(c)$ is complete, and $M^3(\tilde{c})$ is complete and simply connected, then f does not exist (D. Hilbert (1901); \rightarrow [2]).
- (3) If $n = 2$, $p = 1$, $c = 0 < \tilde{c}$, $M^2(0)$ is complete, and $M^3(\tilde{c})$ is complete and simply connected, then there exist infinitely many f (L. Bianchi (1896); \rightarrow [2]).
- (4) If $n = 2$, $p = 1$, $c = 0 > \tilde{c}$, $M^2(0)$ is complete, and $M^3(\tilde{c})$ is complete and simply connected, then $f(M^2(0))$ is either a horosphere or a set of points at a fixed distance from a geodesic (J. Volkov and S. Vladimirova, S. Sasaki; \rightarrow [2]).
- (5) If $n \geq 3$, $p = 1$, and $c > \tilde{c}$, then f is totally umbilical.
- (6) If $p = 1$, $c = \tilde{c} = 0$, $M^n(0)$ is complete, and $M^{n+1}(0)$ is complete and simply connected,

then f is cylindrical (A. Pogorelov (1956), P. Hartman and L. Nirenberg (1959), and others).

- (7) If $p \leq n - 1$, $c = \tilde{c} > 0$, and both $M^n(c)$ and $M^{n+p}(\tilde{c})$ are complete, then f is totally geodesic (D. Ferus (1975)).
- (8) If $p \leq n - 1$, $\tilde{c} > c > 0$, $M^n(c)$ is complete, and $M^{n+p}(\tilde{c})$ is complete and simply connected, then f does not exist (J. Moore (1972)).

K. Homogeneous Hypersurfaces

Let M be an n -dimensional \dagger homogeneous Riemannian manifold which is isometrically immersed into an $(n+1)$ -dimensional complete and simply connected space form $M^{n+1}(c)$.

- (1) If $c = 0$, then M is isometric to $S^k \times E^{n-k}$ (S. Kobayashi (1958), Nagano (1960), Takahashi [9]).
- (2) If $c > 0$, then M is isometric to E^2 or else is given as an orbit of a subgroup of the isometry group of $M^{n+1}(c)$ (W. Y. Hsiang, H. B. Lawson, Takagi; \rightarrow [7]).
- (3) If $c < 0$, then M is isometric to E^n , $S^k \times H^{n-k}$, or a 3-dimensional group manifold

$$B = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} e^t & 0 & x \\ 0 & e^{-t} & y \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mid x, y, t \in \mathbf{R} \right\}$$

with the metric $ds^2 = e^{-2t} dx^2 + e^{2t} dy^2 + dt^2$ (Takahashi (1971)). Each of the hypersurfaces above except E^2 in (2) and B in (3) is given as an orbit of a certain subgroup of the isometry group of $M^{n+1}(c)$.

L. Kähler Submanifolds

A \dagger complex submanifold of a \dagger Kähler manifold is a Kähler manifold with respect to the induced Riemannian metric. A complex analytic and isometric immersion of a Kähler manifold (M, J, g) into a Kähler manifold $(\tilde{M}, \tilde{J}, \tilde{g})$ is called a **Kähler immersion**, and M is called a **Kähler submanifold** of \tilde{M} . A Kähler submanifold is a minimal submanifold. A compact Kähler submanifold M of a Kähler manifold \tilde{M} can never be homologous to 0, that is, there exists no submanifold M' of \tilde{M} such that $M = \partial M'$. If $[M] \in H_*(\tilde{M}, \mathbf{Z})$ denotes the \dagger homology class represented by a Kähler submanifold M of \tilde{M} , then $\text{vol}(M) \leq \text{vol}(M')$ holds for any submanifold $M' \in [M]$ with equality if and only if M' is a Kähler submanifold (W. Wirtinger (1936)).

A Kähler manifold of constant \dagger holomorphic sectional curvature is called a **complex space form**. An n -dimensional complete and simply connected complex space form is either $P_n(C)$, C^n , or D_n . Every Kähler submanifold of a complex space form is rigid (Calabi [10]).

Kähler immersions of complex space forms

into complex space forms were completely determined by Calabi [10] and by H. Nakagawa and K. Ogiue (1976).

C^n (resp. D_n) is the only \dagger Hermitian symmetric space that can be immersed in C^m (resp. D_m) as a Kähler submanifold (Nakagawa and Takagi [11]), and Kähler immersions of Hermitian symmetric spaces into $P_m(C)$ were precisely studied by Nakagawa, Y. Sakane, Takagi, Takeuchi, and others. More generally, Kähler immersions of homogeneous Kähler manifolds into $P_m(C)$ were determined by Takeuchi (1978).

$Q_n = \{[z_i] \in P_{n+1}(C) \mid \sum z_i^2 = 0\}$ in $P_{n+1}(C)$ is the only Einstein-Kähler hypersurface of a complex space form that is not totally geodesic (B. Smyth (1967), S. S. Chern (1967)). The result remains true even if "Einstein" is replaced by "parallel Ricci tensor" (Takahashi (1967)). Besides linear subspaces, Q_n is the only Einstein-Kähler submanifold of $P_m(C)$ that is a complete intersection (J. Hano (1975)).

Integral theorems and pinching problems with respect to various curvatures for compact Kähler submanifolds of $P_m(C)$ have been studied by K. Ogiue, S. Tanno (1973), S. T. Yau (1975), and others [12]. For example, if the holomorphic sectional curvature of $P_{n+p}(C)$ is 1, then each of the following is sufficient for an n -dimensional compact Kähler submanifold to be totally geodesic:

- (1) holomorphic sectional curvature $> 1/2$ (A. Ros (1985)),
- (2) sectional curvature $> 1/8$ (A. Ros and L. Verstraeten (1984)),
- (3) Ricci curvature $> n/2$ [12],
- (4) embedded and scalar curvature $> n^2$ (J. H. Cheng (1981)).

The index of relative nullity $\mu(x)$ of an n -dimensional complete Kähler submanifold M of $P_m(C)$ satisfies $\text{Min}_{x \in M} \mu(x) = 0$ or $2n$ (K. Abe (1973)).

M. Totally Real Submanifolds

An isometric immersion of a Riemannian manifold (M, g) into a Kähler manifold $(\tilde{M}, \tilde{J}, \tilde{g})$ satisfying $\tilde{J}T_x(M) \subset v_x(M)$ at each point $x \in M$ is called a **totally real immersion**, and M is called a **totally real submanifold** of \tilde{M} . A totally geodesic submanifold $P_n(R)$ in $P_n(C)$, $S^1 \times S^1$ in $P_2(C)$ and an immersion $P_n(C) \rightarrow P_{n(n+2)}(C)$ defined by $[z_i] \rightarrow [z_i \bar{z}_j]$ give typical examples of totally real submanifolds.

N. Submanifolds with Planar Geodesics

A surface in E^3 whose geodesics are all plane curves is (a part of) a plane or sphere. More

generally, let $f: M \rightarrow M^m(c)$ be an isometric immersion of M into a complete and simply connected space form $M^m(c)$. If the image of each geodesic of M is contained in a 2-dimensional totally geodesic submanifold of $M^m(c)$, then f is either a totally geodesic immersion, a totally umbilical immersion or a minimal immersion of a compact symmetric space of rank 1 by harmonic functions of degree 2; the last case occurs only when $c > 0$ (S. L. Hong (1973), J. Little (1976), K. Sakamoto [14]).

A Kähler submanifold of a complete and simply connected complex space form with the same property as above is either a totally geodesic submanifold or a Veronese submanifold (a Kähler immersion of $P_n(C)$ into $P_{n(n+3)/2}(C)$) (K. Nomizu (1976)).

Submanifolds with the above property are closely related to isotropic submanifolds with $\nabla' \sigma = 0$. Submanifolds with $\nabla' \sigma = 0$ in symmetric spaces have been studied by Ferus, H. Naito, Takeuchi, K. Tsukada, and others.

O. Total Curvature

Let $f: M \rightarrow E^m$ be an isometric immersion of an n -dimensional compact Riemannian manifold M into a Euclidean space. Let $v_1(M)$ be the unit normal bundle, S^{m-1} the unit sphere centered at $O \in E^m$, and let $f_{\perp}: v_1(M) \rightarrow S^{m-1}$ be the parallel translation. Let ω and Ω be the \dagger volume elements of $v_1(M)$ and S^{m-1} , respectively. Then for each $\xi \in v_1(M)$, $f_{\perp}^* \Omega = (\det A_{\xi}) \omega$ holds. As a generalization of the \dagger total curvature for a space curve, the **total curvature** of the immersion f is defined as

$$\begin{aligned} \tau(f) &= \frac{1}{\text{vol}(S^{m-1})} \int_{v_1(M)} |f_{\perp}^* \Omega| \\ &= \frac{1}{\text{vol}(S^{m-1})} \int_{v_1(M)} |\det A_{\xi}| \omega. \end{aligned}$$

If $\beta(M)$ is the least number of critical points of a \dagger Morse function on M , then

$$\inf_f \tau(f) = \beta(M) \geq 2$$

holds (Chern and R. Lashof (1957, 1958), Kuiper (1958)). $\tau(f) = 2$ if and only if f is an embedding and $f(M)$ is a convex hypersurface of some E^{n+1} in E^m (Chern and Lashof (1958)). If $\tau(f) < 3$, then M is homeomorphic to S^n (Chern and Lashof (1958)). These results generalize theorems for space curves by W. Fenchel (1929), I. Fary (1949), J. Milnor (1950), and others.

An isometric immersion f which attains $\inf(f)$ is called a **minimum immersion** or a **tight immersion**. \dagger Exotic spheres do not have minimum immersions (Kuiper (1958)). $\dagger R$ -

spaces have minimum immersions and, in particular, a minimum immersion of a symmetric R -space is a †minimal immersion into a hypersphere (Kobayashi and Takeuchi (1968)).

The **total mean curvature** of an isometric immersion $f: M \rightarrow E_m$ of an n -dimensional compact Riemannian manifold into a Euclidean space is, by definition,

$$\int_M \|b\|^n * 1.$$

It satisfies

$$\int_M \|b\|^n * 1 \geq \text{vol}(S^n),$$

where S^n is the n -dimensional unit sphere. The equality holds if and only if f is totally umbilical (T. J. Willmore (1968), Chen [3]).

References

- [1] S. Kobayashi and K. Nomizu, Foundations of differential geometry II, Interscience, 1969.
- [2] M. Spivak, A comprehensive introduction to differential geometry III, IV, V, Publish or Perish, 1975.
- [3] B. Y. Chen, Geometry of submanifolds, Dekker, 1973.
- [4] B. Y. Chen and T. Nagano, Totally geodesic submanifolds of symmetric spaces I, II, III, Duke Math. J., 44 (1977), 745–755; 45 (1978), 405–425.
- [5] S. S. Chern, M. doCarmo, and S. Kobayashi, Minimal submanifolds of a sphere with second fundamental form of constant length, Functional Analysis and Related Fields, Springer, 1970.
- [6] A. D. Alexandrov, A characteristic property of spheres, Ann. Mat. Pura Appl., 58 (1962), 303–315.
- [7] H. Ozeki and M. Takeuchi, On some types of isoparametric hypersurfaces I, II, Tôhoku Math. J., 27 (1975), 515–559; 28 (1976), 7–55.
- [8] P. Ryan, Homogeneity and some curvature conditions for hypersurfaces, Tôhoku Math. J., 21 (1969), 363–388.
- [9] T. Takahashi, Homogeneous hypersurfaces in spaces of constant curvature, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 22 (1970), 395–410.
- [10] E. Calabi, Isometric imbedding of complex manifolds, Ann. Math., (2) 58 (1953), 1–23.
- [11] H. Nakagawa and R. Takagi, On locally symmetric Kähler submanifolds in a complex projective space, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 28 (1976), 638–667.
- [12] K. Ogiue, Differential geometry of Kähler submanifolds, Advances in Math., 13 (1974), 73–114.

[13] B. Y. Chen and K. Ogiue, On totally real submanifolds, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 193 (1974), 257–266.

[14] K. Sakamoto, Planar geodesic immersions, Tôhoku Math. J., 29 (1977), 25–56.

[15] D. Ferus, Totale Absolutkrümmung in Differentialgeometrie und Topologie, Springer, 1968.

366 (VIII.6) Riemann-Roch Theorems

A. General Remarks

The †Riemann-Roch theorem (abbreviation: R. R. theorem) is one of the most significant results in the classical theory of †algebraic functions of one variable. Let X be a compact †Riemann surface of †genus g , and let $D = \sum m_i P_i$ be a †divisor on X . We denote by $\deg D$ the degree of D , which is defined to be $\sum m_i$. The divisor D is said to be positive if $D \neq 0$ and $m_i \geq 0$ for all i . A nonzero †meromorphic function f on X determines a divisor $(f) = \sum a_i Q_i - \sum b_j R_j$ ($a_i, b_j > 0$), where the Q_i are the zeros of order a_i and the R_j are the poles of order b_j . The set of meromorphic functions f such that $(f) + D$ is positive, together with the constant $f = 0$, forms a finite-dimensional linear space $L(D)$ over \mathbb{C} . The R. R. theorem asserts that $\dim L(D) = \deg D - g + 1 + r(D)$, where $r(D)$ is a nonnegative integer determined by D . If K is the †canonical divisor of X , then $r(D) = \dim L(K - D)$ (\rightarrow 9 Algebraic Curves C; 11 Algebraic Functions D). (For the R. R. theorem for algebraic surfaces \rightarrow 15 Algebraic Surfaces D.)

Generalizations of this important theorem to the case of higher-dimensional compact †complex manifolds were obtained by K. Kodaira, F. Hirzebruch, A. Grothendieck, M. F. Atiyah and I. M. Singer, and others. Let X be a compact complex manifold, B be a †complex line bundle over X , and $\mathcal{O}(B)$ be the †sheaf of germs of holomorphic cross sections of B . When B is determined by a divisor D of X , we have $H^0(X, \mathcal{O}(B)) \cong L(D)$. Hence a desirable generalization of the R. R. theorem will provide a description of $\dim_{\mathbb{C}} H^0(X, \mathcal{O}(B))$ in terms of quantities relating to the properties of X and B . Following this idea, various theorems of Riemann-Roch type have been obtained.

B. Hirzebruch's Theorem of R. R. Type

Keeping the notation given in Section A, we put $\chi(X, \mathcal{O}(B)) = \sum_q (-1)^q \dim H^q(X, \mathcal{O}(B))$.

Generally, if \mathcal{F} is an arbitrary †coherent analytic sheaf on X , we can define $\chi(X, \mathcal{F})$ using the same formula (replacing $\mathcal{O}(B)$ by \mathcal{F}). The quantity $\chi(X, \mathcal{F})$ has simple properties in various respects. For example, if the sequence $0 \rightarrow \mathcal{F}' \rightarrow \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}'' \rightarrow 0$ is exact, we have $\chi(X, \mathcal{F}) = \chi(X, \mathcal{F}') + \chi(X, \mathcal{F}'')$. If an †analytic vector bundle F depends continuously on auxiliary parameters, then $\chi(X, \mathcal{O}(F))$ remains constant. Let X be a projective algebraic manifold of complex dimension n . We consider the †Chern class $c = 1 + c_1 + \dots + c_n$ of X and express it formally as the product $\prod_{i=1}^n (1 + \gamma_i)$. Thus the i th Chern class c_i is expressed as the i th elementary symmetric function of $\gamma_1, \dots, \gamma_n$. Consider the formal expression $T(X) = \prod_{i=1}^n \gamma_i / (1 - e^{-\gamma_i})$. $T(X)$ can be expanded as a formal power series in the γ_i , and each homogeneous term, being symmetric in the γ_i , can be expressed as a polynomial in c_1, \dots, c_n , and thus determines a cohomology class of X . Similarly, we consider the formal expression of the Chern class of the vector bundle F as $1 + d_1 + \dots + d_q = \prod_{j=1}^q (1 + \delta_j)$, where q is the dimension of the fiber of F . We put $ch(F) = \sum_{j=1}^q e^{\delta_j}$. The formal series $ch(F)$ is also an element of the cohomology ring of X whose $(v+1)$ st term consists of a $2v$ -dimensional cohomology class. We call $ch(F)$ the †Chern character of F (\rightarrow 237 K-Theory B), and define $T(X, F)$ to be the value of $ch(F) T(X)$ at the †fundamental cycle X . (The multiplication $ch(F) \cdot T(X)$ is formal. $T(X, F)$ is determined by the term of dimension $2n$ alone.) $T(X, F)$ is called the **Todd characteristic** with respect to F . **Hirzebruch's theorem of R. R. type** asserts that $\chi(X, \mathcal{O}(F)) = T(X, F)$. In particular, when $n=1$, $F=[D]$ (the line bundle determined by the divisor D), Hirzebruch's formula yields the classical R. R. theorem. If F satisfies the conditions for the vanishing theorem of cohomologies, the formula gives an estimate for $\dim H^0(X, \mathcal{O}(F))$ [11].

In 1963, Atiyah and Singer developed a theory on indices of elliptic differential operators on a compact orientable differentiable manifold and obtained a general result that includes the proof of Hirzebruch's theorem for an arbitrary compact complex manifold [4, 5] (\rightarrow 237 K-Theory H).

C. R. R. Theorem for Surfaces

If X is a compact complex surface, i.e., a compact complex manifold of dimension 2, then for complex line bundles F_1 and F_2 , the intersection number $(F_1 F_2)$ is defined to be $c_1(F_1) \cup c_1(F_2)[X]$. The **R. R. theorem for a line bundle F** on X is stated as follows: $\chi(X, \mathcal{O}(F)) = (F^2)/2 - (KF)/2 + ((K^2) + c_2(X))/12$, where

Riemann-Roch Theorems

K is the canonical line bundle of X and $c_2(X)$ denotes the value at X of the 2nd Chern class of X , that is, the Euler number of X .

The Noether formula $\chi_X = ((K^2) + c_2(X))/12$ follows from the above identity. The R. R. theorem for surfaces is a powerful tool for the study of compact complex surfaces.

D. Grothendieck's Theorem of R. R. Type

Grothendieck took an entirely new point of view in generalizing Hirzebruch's theorem. The following is a description of his idea as reformulated by A. Borel and J.-P. Serre [8]. We consider a nonsingular quasiprojective algebraic variety X (\rightarrow 16 Algebraic Varieties) over a ground field of arbitrary characteristic. Namely, X is a closed subvariety of an open set in a projective space (over an algebraically closed ground field). Consider the group $K(X)$, which is the quotient of the free Abelian group generated by the equivalence classes of algebraic vector bundles over X modulo the subgroup generated by the elements of the form $F - F' - F''$, where F, F', F'' are classes of bundles such that there exists an exact sequence $0 \rightarrow F' \rightarrow F \rightarrow F'' \rightarrow 0$. A similar construction for the (equivalence classes of the) †coherent algebraic sheaves instead of the vector bundles yields another Abelian group $K'(X)$. It can be shown that $K(X)$ is isomorphic to $K'(X)$ by the correspondence $F \rightarrow \mathcal{O}(F)$ (= the sheaf of germs of regular cross sections of F). Addition in $K(X)$ is induced by the †Whitney sum of the bundles, and $K(X)$ has the structure of a ring with multiplication induced by the tensor product. For a vector bundle F , its Chern class $c(F) = 1 + c_1(F) + \dots + c_q(F)$ (q = the dimension of the fiber) is defined as an element of the †Chow ring $A(X)$ with appropriate properties. ($A(X)$ is the ring of the rational equivalence classes of algebraic cycles on X , and $c_i(F)$ is the class of a cycles of codimension i .) We define $ch(F)$ as before. It can be shown that $c(F)$ and $ch(F)$ are determined by the image of F in $K(X)$, and we have $c(\xi + \eta) = c(\xi)c(\eta)$, $ch(\xi + \eta) = ch(\xi) + ch(\eta)$, $ch(\xi\eta) = ch(\xi)ch(\eta)$ ($\xi, \eta \in K(X)$). If we have a †proper morphism $f: Y \rightarrow X$ between quasiprojective algebraic varieties Y and X , we have homomorphisms $f^!: K(X) \rightarrow K(Y)$ and $f_*: K(Y) \rightarrow K(X)$. The former is defined by taking the induced vector bundle and the latter by the correspondence

$$\mathcal{F} \rightarrow \sum (-1)^q (\mathcal{R}^q f) \mathcal{F},$$

where \mathcal{F} is a coherent algebraic sheaf on Y and $(\mathcal{R}^q f) \mathcal{F}$ is the q th †direct image of \mathcal{F} under f . (Since f is proper, $(\mathcal{R}^q f) \mathcal{F}$ is coherent.) Between Chow rings we have homomor-

phisms $f^*: A(X) \rightarrow A(Y)$ and $f_*: A(Y) \rightarrow A(X)$, defined by taking inverse and direct images of cycles. With this notation, the theorem asserts that if X and Y are quasiprojective and $f: Y \rightarrow X$ is a proper morphism, then $f_*(ch(\xi)T(Y)) = ch(f_!(\xi))T(X)$. This is called **Grothendieck's theorem of R. R. type**. If X consists of a single point, the theorem gives Hirzebruch's theorem for algebraic bundles. Since algebraic and analytic theories of coherent sheaves on a complex projective space are isomorphic, this result covers Hirzebruch's theorem (\rightarrow 237 K-Theory).

The subgroup $R(Y)$ of $A(Y)$ given by $R(Y) = \{ch(\xi) \cdot T(Y) \mid \xi \in K(Y)\}$ is called the **Riemann-Roch group** of Y . Thus, using the notions developed by Grothendieck, the R. R. theorem can be expressed as follows: $R(Y)$ is mapped into $R(X)$ by a proper morphism $f: Y \rightarrow X$. Generalizations to $*$ almost complex manifolds and $*$ differentiable manifolds were made by Atiyah and Hirzebruch in this latter form [1]. One of the remarkable results is that an element of $R(Y)$ takes an integral value at the fundamental cycle. This theorem is obtained by taking X to be a single point.

E. R. R. Theorem for Singular Varieties

Let X be a projective variety over \mathbb{C} and let $H_*(X)$ (resp. $H^*(X)$) denote the singular homology (resp. cohomology) group with rational coefficients. Note that $K(X)$ may not agree with $K'(X)$ when X is singular. The R. R. theorem for X formulated by P. Baum, W. Fulton, and R. MacPherson [6] says that there exists a unique natural transformation $\tau: K'(X) \rightarrow H_*(X)$ such that (1) if $\xi \in K(X)$ and $\eta \in K'(X)$, then $\xi \otimes \eta \in K'(X)$ and $\tau(\xi \otimes \eta) = ch(\xi)(\tau(\eta))$; (2) whenever X is nonsingular, $\tau(\mathcal{O}_X) = T(X)(X)$. Note that the naturality of τ means that for any $f: X \rightarrow Y$ and any $\eta \in K'(X)$, $f_*\tau(\eta) = \tau(f_*\eta)$.

References

- [1] M. F. Atiyah and F. Hirzebruch, Riemann-Roch theorems for differentiable manifolds, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 65 (1959), 276–281.
- [2] M. F. Atiyah, R. Bott, and V. K. Patodi, On the heat equation and the index theorem, *Inventiones Math.*, 19 (1973), 279–330.
- [3] M. F. Atiyah, V. K. Patodi, and I. M. Singer, Spectral asymmetry and Riemann geometry, *Bull. Lond. Math. Soc.*, 5 (1973), 229–234.
- [4] M. F. Atiyah, G. B. Segal, and I. M. Singer, The index of elliptic operators, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 87 (1968), 484–604 (I by Atiyah and

Singer, II by Atiyah and Segal, III by Atiyah and Singer).

- [5] M. F. Atiyah and I. M. Singer, The index of elliptic operators on compact manifolds, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 69 (1963), 422–433.
- [6] P. Baum, W. Fulton, and R. MacPherson, Riemann-Roch for singular varieties, *Publ. Math. Inst. HES*, no. 45 (1975), 101–145.
- [7] P. Berthelot, A. Grothendieck, L. Illusie, et al., *Théorie des intersections et théorème de Riemann-Roch*, *SGA 6, Lecture notes in math.* 225, Springer, 1971.
- [8] A. Borel and J.-P. Serre, La théorie de Riemann-Roch, *Bull. Soc. Math. France*, 86 (1958), 97–136.
- [9] W. Fulton, Rational equivalence on singular varieties, *Publ. Math. Inst. HES*, no. 45 (1975), 147–167.
- [10] W. Fulton and R. MacPherson, Intersecting cycles on an algebraic variety, *Real and Complex Singularities*, *Sijthoff & Noordhoff*, 1976, 179–197.
- [11] F. Hirzebruch, *Topological methods in algebraic geometry*, Springer, third edition, 1966.
- [12] K. Kodaira, On compact analytic surfaces I, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 71 (1961), 111–152.
- [13] R. MacPherson, Chern classes of singular varieties, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 100 (1974), 423–432.
- [14] B. Segre, Nuovi metodi e risultati nella geometria sulle varietà algebriche, *Ann. Mat.* (4) 35 (1953), 1–128.
- [15] J. Todd, The geometrical invariants of algebraic loci, *Proc. London Math. Soc.* (2) 43 (1937), 127–138.

367 (XI.12) Riemann Surfaces

A. General Remarks

Riemann considered certain surfaces, now named after him, obtained by modifying in a suitable manner the domains of definition of multiple-valued $*$ analytic functions on the complex plane in order to obtain single-valued functions defined on the surfaces. For example, consider the function $z = f(w) = w^2$, where w varies in the complex plane, and its inverse function $w = g(z) = \sqrt{z}$. Then $g(0) = 0$ and $g(\infty) = \infty$, whereas if $z \neq 0, \infty$, there exist two values of w satisfying $g(z) = w$. By setting $z = re^{i\theta}$ ($r > 0, 0 \leq \theta < 2\pi$), the corresponding two values of w are $w_1 = \sqrt{r}e^{i(\theta/2)}$ and $w_2 = \sqrt{r}e^{i(\theta/2 + \pi)}$. Now consider how we should modify the complex z -plane so that we can obtain a single-valued function on the modified surface representing the same relationship

between z and w . Let π_1 and π_2 be two copies of the complex plane. Delete the nonnegative real axes from π_1 and π_2 and patch them crosswise along the slits (Fig. 1). The surface R thus obtained is locally homeomorphic to the complex plane except for the origin and the point at infinity, and situations at the origin and the point at infinity are as indicated in Fig. 1. For $z \neq 0, \infty$, there are two points z_1 and z_2 in π_1 and π_2 , respectively, with the same coordinate z . Let w_1 and w_2 correspond to z_1 and z_2 , respectively. Then the function $w = \sqrt{z}$ becomes single-valued on R , and w_1 and w_2 are holomorphic functions of z_1 and z_2 , respectively. The surface R is called the Riemann surface determined by $w = \sqrt{z}$.

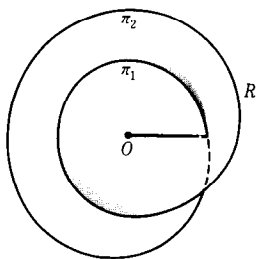


Fig. 1

Working from the idea illustrated by this example, H. Weyl and T. Radó gave rigorous definitions of Riemann surfaces. The usual definition nowadays is as follows: Let \mathfrak{A} be a set of pairs (U, ψ_U) of open sets U in a \dagger connected \dagger Hausdorff space R and topological mappings ψ_U of U onto plane regions satisfying the following two conditions: (i) $R = \bigcup_{(U, \psi_U) \in \mathfrak{A}} U$; (ii) for each $(U_1, \psi_{U_1}), (U_2, \psi_{U_2}) \in \mathfrak{A}$ with $V = U_1 \cap U_2 \neq \emptyset$, $\psi_{U_1} \circ \psi_{U_2}^{-1}$ gives an (orientation-preserving) \dagger conformal mapping of each connected component of $\psi_{U_2}(V)$ onto a corresponding one of $\psi_{U_1}(V)$. Two such sets \mathfrak{A}_1 and \mathfrak{A}_2 are equivalent, by definition, if $\mathfrak{A}_1 \cup \mathfrak{A}_2$ also satisfies conditions (i) and (ii). The equivalence class (\mathfrak{A}) of such \mathfrak{A} is called a **conformal structure** (analytic structure or complex structure) on R (\rightarrow 72 Complex Manifolds). A pair $(R, (\mathfrak{A}))$ consisting of a connected Hausdorff space R and a conformal structure (\mathfrak{A}) is called a **Riemann surface**, with R its **base space** and (\mathfrak{A}) its **conformal structure**. (A Riemann surface in this sense is sometimes called an **abstract Riemann surface**.) It is a complex manifold of \dagger complex dimension 1. For (U, ψ_U) in $\mathfrak{A}(\mathfrak{A})$, (U, ψ_U) (or sometimes U itself) is called an **analytic neighborhood**, and ψ_U is called a **local uniformizing parameter** (or simply a **local parameter**). In the remainder of this article we call R itself a Riemann surface.

From condition (i) it follows that a Riemann surface R is a real 2-dimensional \dagger topological

manifold. Moreover, by condition (ii) it can be deduced that R satisfies the \dagger second countability axiom and consequently is a \dagger surface and admits a \dagger simplicial decomposition (T. Radó, 1925). It is also orientable (\rightarrow 410 Surfaces). Therefore R is a \dagger locally compact metric space. It is not possible to define curve lengths on R compatible with the conformal structure, but since angles can be defined, R is considered to be a real 2-dimensional space with a \dagger conformal connection. It is customary in the theory of functions to call R **closed** if it is compact and **open** otherwise. A plane region D is considered an open Riemann surface with the conformal structure $\mathfrak{A} = (D, 1: D \rightarrow D)$. A Riemann sphere is also considered to be a closed Riemann surface whose analytic neighborhoods are given by $\{U_1, \varphi\}$ and $\{U_2, 1/\varphi\}$, where $U_1(U_2)$ is the domain corresponding to $\{|z| < 2\}(\{|z| > 1/2\} \cup \{\infty\})$ under the stereographic projection φ .

A function f on a Riemann surface is said to be meromorphic, holomorphic, or harmonic on R if $f \circ \psi_U^{-1}$ is \dagger meromorphic, \dagger holomorphic, or \dagger harmonic in the usual sense on $\psi_U(U)$ for every analytic neighborhood (U, ψ_U) . More generally, suppose that for mappings between plane regions we are given a property \mathfrak{P} that is invariant under conformal mappings. A mapping T of a Riemann surface R_1 onto another Riemann surface R_2 is said to have the property \mathfrak{P} if the mapping $\psi_{U_2} \circ T \circ \psi_{U_1}^{-1}$ of $\psi_{U_1}(U_1)$ into $\psi_{U_2}(U_2)$ has the property \mathfrak{P} for every pair of analytic neighborhoods (U_1, ψ_{U_1}) and (U_2, ψ_{U_2}) in R_1 and R_2 , respectively. Thus such a mapping T may be conformal, \dagger analytic, \dagger quasiconformal, harmonic, etc. If there exists a one-to-one conformal mapping of a Riemann surface R_1 onto another Riemann surface R_2 , then R_1 and R_2 are said to be **conformally equivalent**. Two such Riemann surfaces are sometimes identified with each other.

B. Covering Surfaces

One of the main themes of the theory of functions is the study of analytic mappings of a Riemann surface R into another Riemann surface R_0 , i.e., the theory of covering surfaces of Riemann surfaces.

Suppose, in general, that there are two surfaces R and R_0 and a continuous open mapping T of R into R_0 such that the inverse image of a point in R_0 under T is an \dagger isolated set in R . Then T is called an **inner transformation** in the sense of Stoilow and $(R, R_0; T)$ a **covering surface** with R_0 its **basic surface** and T its **projection**. Often R is called simply a covering surface of R_0 . A point p_0 with $p_0 =$

$T(p)$ is called the projection of p , and p is said to lie above p_0 . In this case, there exist surface coordinates (U, ψ) and (U_0, ψ_0) at p and p_0 , respectively, such that $\psi(U) = \{z \mid |z| < 1\}$, $\psi(p) = 0$, $\psi_0(U_0) = \{w \mid |w| < 1\}$, $\psi_0(p_0) = 0$, and $w = (\psi_0 \circ T \circ \psi^{-1})(z) = z^n$, with the positive integer n independent of the choice of coordinate neighborhoods. If $n > 1$, then p is called a **branch point**, n the **multiplicity**, and $n - 1$ the **degree of ramification**. The set of all branch points forms an at most countably infinite set of isolated points. If there is no branch point, then the covering surface $(R, R_0; T)$ and the projection T are said to be **unramified**. For a given curve C_0 in R_0 and a point p in R lying above the initial point of C_0 , a curve C in R with p its initial point satisfying $T(C) = C_0$ is called the **prolongation** along C_0 (or the **lift** of C_0) starting from p . If any proper subarc of C_0 sharing the initial point with C_0 admits a prolongation along itself starting from p but C_0 does not admit a prolongation along itself starting from p , then R is said to have a **relative boundary** above the endpoint of C_0 . A covering surface without a relative boundary is called **unbounded**. A simply connected surface R^∞ that is an unramified unbounded covering surface of R_0 is said to be a **universal covering surface** of R_0 . The universal covering surface exists for every R .

Suppose that R is an unbounded covering surface of R_0 . Then the number of points on R that lie above each point of R_0 is always constant, say n ($\leq +\infty$), where the branch points of R are counted with their multiplicities. n is called the **number of sheets** of R over R_0 , or R is said to be **n -sheeted** over R_0 . If R and R_0 are compact surfaces with \dagger Euler characteristic χ and χ_0 , respectively, and if R is an n -sheeted covering surface of R_0 , then we have the **Riemann-Hurwitz relation**: $\chi = n\chi_0 - V$, V being the sum of the degrees of ramification. A topological mapping S of an unramified unbounded covering surface R of R_0 onto itself such that $T \circ S = T$ is called a **covering transformation**. The group of all covering transformations of a universal covering surface of R_0 is isomorphic to the \dagger fundamental group (i.e., the 1-dimensional homotopy group) of R_0 .

In a covering surface $(R, R_0; T)$ whose basic surface R_0 is a Riemann surface, T can be regarded as an analytic mapping of R onto R_0 by giving R a conformal structure in a natural manner. In particular, if R_0 is the sphere, then its covering surface is a Riemann surface. Conversely, any Riemann surface can be regarded as a covering surface of the sphere. This fact had long been known for closed Riemann surfaces; for open Riemann surfaces, it can be deduced from the existence theorem of an-

alytic functions proved by H. Behnke and K. Stein, which states that an open Riemann surface is a \dagger Stein manifold. Historically, by a Riemann surface mathematicians meant either the abstract Riemann surface or a covering surface of the sphere, until the two notions were proved identical.

Suppose that R is a covering surface of the z -sphere R_0 with the projection $T: R \rightarrow R_0$, and denote by R_a the region that lies above $0 < |z - a| < r_0$. If there exists a topological mapping ψ of R_a onto $\{(r, \theta) \mid 0 < r < r_0, -\infty < \theta < \infty\}$ such that $a + re^{i\theta} = T(\psi^{-1}(r, \theta))$, then R is said to have a **logarithmic branch point** above a ; in contrast, a branch point of multiplicity n of the type defined previously is sometimes called an **algebraic branch point**.

Ahlfors's theory of covering surfaces, which treats covering surfaces $(R, R_0; T)$ not only from the topological viewpoint but also from the metrical one, is particularly important. Let R and R_0 be either compact surfaces with simplicial decompositions or their closed subregions with boundaries consisting of 1-simplexes and vertices such that T preserves simplicial decompositions. Here we call the part of the boundary of R whose projection is in the interior of R_0 the relative boundary. With respect to a suitable metric on R_0 , let S be the ratio of areas of R and R_0 , L the length of the relative boundary, and $-\rho$ and $-\rho_0$ the \dagger Euler characteristics of R and R_0 , respectively. Then **Ahlfors's principal theorem** asserts that $\max(0, \rho) \geq \rho_0 S - hL$, where $h > 0$ is a constant determined only by R_0 . This has been applied widely in various branches of mathematics, including the theory of distribution of values of analytic mappings between Riemann surfaces.

C. Uniformization

Suppose that we are given a correspondence between the z -plane and w -plane determined by a \dagger function element $p_0 = (z_0^*, w_0^*)$ ($z_0^* = P_0(t)$, $w_0^* = Q_0(t)$). This correspondence generally gives rise to a multiple-valued analytic function $w = f(z)$. We show how to construct a Riemann surface so that the function $w = f(z)$ can be considered a single-valued function on it. We use f again to mean the connected component of the set of function elements $p = (z^*, w^*)$ ($z^* = P(t)$, $w^* = Q(t)$) in the wider sense containing p_0 , where the analytic neighborhood of each point p is defined to be the set of elements that are direct analytic continuations of p . Then f is a Riemann surface. For a point $p = (z^*, w^*)$ ($z^* = P(t)$, $w^* = Q(t)$) in f , set $z = F(p) = P(0)$, $w = G(p) = Q(0)$. Then two meromorphic functions $z = F(p)$ and $w = G(p)$

are defined on f , and f can be considered as a covering surface of the z -sphere and the w -sphere. We call f an \dagger analytic function in the wider sense. Thus we obtain a single-valued function $w = G(p)$ on the Riemann surface f that can be regarded as a modification of the original function $w = f(z)$. Suppose that there exist two meromorphic functions $z = \varphi(\zeta)$ and $w = \psi(\zeta)$ on a region D in the ζ -plane, and let $z = P(\zeta - \zeta_0)$ and $w = Q(\zeta - \zeta_0)$ be \dagger Laurent expansions of φ and ψ at each point ζ_0 in D . If the function element $p_{\zeta_0} = (z^*, w^*)$ ($z^* = P(t)$, $w^* = Q(t)$) belongs to the Riemann surface f , then the correspondence $w = f(z)$ determined by the function element p_{ζ_0} is said to be **locally uniformized** on D by $z = \varphi(\zeta)$ and $w = \psi(\zeta)$. In particular, if $\{p_\zeta | \zeta \in D\} = f$, then f is said to be **uniformized** by $z = \varphi(\zeta)$ and $w = \psi(\zeta)$. If an analytic function f in the wider sense, considered as a Riemann surface, is conformally equivalent to a region D in the ζ -plane, then f can be uniformized by $z = F(p)$ and $w = G(p)$. In general, f is not conformally equivalent to a plane region, but if an unramified unbounded covering surface $(\hat{f}, f; T)$ of f is conformally equivalent to a region D in the ζ -plane, then f is uniformized by $z = F \circ T(\zeta)$ and $w = G \circ T(\zeta)$ (**Schottky's uniformization**). In particular, since the universal covering surface $(f^\infty, f; T)$ of f is simply connected, it is conformally equivalent to the sphere $|\zeta| \leq \infty$, the finite plane $|\zeta| < \infty$, or the unit disk $|\zeta| < 1$. Consequently, f is uniformized by $z = F \circ T(\zeta)$ and $w = G \circ T(\zeta)$. Therefore analytic functions in the wider sense are always uniformizable.

For example, an \dagger algebraic function f considered as a Riemann surface is always closed. If its \dagger genus $g = 0$, then f is the sphere and is thus uniformized by rational functions $z = F(\zeta)$ and $w = G(\zeta)$. If $g > 0$, then $(f^\infty, f; T)$ is conformally equivalent to $|\zeta| < 1$ or $|\zeta| < \infty$, and hence f is uniformized by $z = F \circ T(\zeta)$ and $w = G \circ T(\zeta)$. When $|\zeta| < 1$, z and w are \dagger automorphic functions with respect to the group of linear transformations preserving $|\zeta| < 1$, while if $|\zeta| < \infty$, they are \dagger elliptic functions.

D. The Type Problem

A simply connected Riemann surface R is conformally equivalent to the sphere, the finite plane, or the unit disk. Then R is said to be **elliptic**, **parabolic**, or **hyperbolic**, respectively. The problem of determining the types of simply connected covering surfaces of the sphere by their structures, such as the distributions of their branch points, is called the **type problem** for Riemann surfaces. For example, if a simply connected covering surface does not cover three points on the sphere, it must be hyper-

bolic (Picard's theorem). The Nevanlinna theory of meromorphic functions stimulated this type problem. However, it is difficult to measure the ramifications of covering surfaces, and many detailed results of the type problem obtained in the 1930s are limited mainly to the case where all branch points lie above a finite number of points on the sphere. A sufficient condition for R to be of parabolic type, given by Z. Kobayashi (using the so-called Kobayashi net, and a sufficient condition for R to be of hyperbolic type, given by S. Kaku-tani (using quasiconformal mappings), are significant results on the type problem. The type problem had by then been extensively generalized to the following classification theory.

E. Classification Theory of Riemann Surfaces

Riemann surfaces are, as pointed out by Weyl, "not merely devices for visualizing the many-valuedness of analytic functions, but rather an essential component of the theory ... the only soil in which the functions grow and thrive." So the problem naturally arises of how to extend various results in the theory of analytic functions of a complex variable to the theory of analytic mappings between Riemann surfaces. In general, open Riemann surfaces can have infinite genus and are quite complicated. So to obtain fruitful results and systematic development, one usually sets certain restrictions on the properties of the Riemann surfaces. In connection with this, R. Nevanlinna, L. Sario, and others initiated the **classification theory of Riemann surfaces**, which classifies Riemann surfaces by the existence (or non-existence) of functions with certain properties.

Denote by $\mathfrak{X}(R)$ the totality of functions on a Riemann surface R with a certain property \mathfrak{X} . The set of all Riemann surfaces R for which $\mathfrak{X}(R)$ does not contain any function other than constants is denoted by $O_{\mathfrak{X}}$. The family of analytic functions and the family of harmonic functions are denoted by $A(R)$ and $H(R)$, respectively. The family of positive functions, that of bounded functions, and that of functions with finite Dirichlet integrals are denoted by $P(R)$, $B(R)$, and $D(R)$, respectively. From these families, various new families are created, e.g., $ABD(R) = A(R) \cap B(R) \cap D(R)$. Usually O_{HB} , O_{HD} , O_{HBD} , O_{AB} , O_{AD} , O_{ABD} , and also O_G , the family of Riemann surfaces on which there are no Green's functions, are considered. P. J. Myrberg found an example of a Riemann surface of infinite genus which has a large boundary but belongs to O_{AB} . The idea behind Myrberg's example is often used to construct examples in classification theory. From works

of Y. Tôki, L. Sario, K. I. Virtanen, H. L. Royden, M. Parreau, M. Sakai, and others, it can be seen that there are inclusion relations, as indicated in Fig. 2, among the classes just mentioned. There is no inclusion relation between O_{AB} and O_{HD} . For Riemann surfaces of finite genus, $O_G = O_{HD}$. Closed Riemann surfaces are all in O_G .

Open Riemann surfaces in O_G are also said to be **parabolic** (or of **null boundary**), and those not in O_G , **hyperbolic** (or of **positive boundary**). Several characterizations for parabolic Riemann surfaces are known.

$$O_G \subsetneq O_{HP} \subsetneq O_{HB} \subsetneq O_{HD} = O_{HBD} \subsetneq O_{AD} \subsetneq O_{ABD}$$

Fig. 2

From a similar point of view, the classification problem for subregions was studied in detail by Parreau, A. Mori, T. Kuroda, and others. We call a noncompact region Ω which is the complement of a compact subset of a Riemann surface a **Heins's end**. M. Heins called the minimal number ($\leq \infty$) of generators of the semigroup of the additive class of *HP*-functions that vanish continuously at the relative boundary of a Heins's end Ω the **harmonic dimension** of Ω . Its properties were investigated by Z. Kuramochi, M. Ozawa, and others. Generally, a function f is said to be **\mathfrak{X} -minimal** if f is positive and contained in $\mathfrak{X}(R)$ and there exists a constant C_g for every g in $\mathfrak{X}(R)$ with $f \geq g \geq 0$ such that $g \equiv C_g f$. The family of Riemann surfaces R not belonging to O_G and admitting \mathfrak{X} -minimal functions on R is denoted by $U_{\mathfrak{X}}$. C. Constantinescu and A. Cornea and others studied Riemann surfaces in U_{HB} and U_{HD} where HD is the class of positive functions in HD or limits of monotone decreasing sequences of such functions. There are inclusion relations $U_{HB} \supsetneq O_{HB} - O_G$, $U_{HD} \supsetneq O_{HD} - O_G$, and $U_{HD} \supsetneq U_{UB}$. One of the interesting results in classification theory is the fact, discovered by Kuramochi, that $U_{HB} \cup O_G \supsetneq O_{AB}$ and $U_{HD} \cup O_G \supsetneq O_{AD}$.

Classification theory has a very deep connection with the theory of ideal boundaries. A. Pfluger and Royden showed that the classes O_G and O_{HD} are invariant under quasiconformal mappings. However, it is still an open problem whether O_{HB} is invariant in this sense.

F. Prolongations of Riemann Surfaces

As classification theory shows, pathological phenomena occur for Riemann surfaces from the viewpoint of function theory in the plane. These are caused by the complexity of ideal

boundaries of Riemann surfaces, and in particular by the complexity of the set of ideal boundary points at which handles of Riemann surfaces (i.e., parts with cycles not homologous to 0) accumulate. Hence it is desirable to find larger Riemann surfaces so that ideal boundary points of original surfaces that are not accumulating points of handles become interior points. Suppose that a Riemann surface R is conformally equivalent to a proper subregion R' of another Riemann surface R_1 . Then R_1 is said to be a **prolongation** of R , and R is **prolongable**. A nonprolongable Riemann surface is said to be **maximal**. Closed Riemann surfaces are always maximal, but there also exist maximal open Riemann surfaces (Radó). However, every open Riemann surface is homeomorphic to a prolongable Riemann surface (S. Bochner). Characterizations of prolongable Riemann surfaces and relationships between the various null classes mentioned in Section E and prolongations were investigated from several viewpoints by R. de Possel, J. Tamura, and others.

G. Analytic Mappings of Riemann Surfaces

Apart from the development of the classification theory of Riemann surfaces, efforts have been made to extend various results in the theory of analytic functions of a complex variable to the case of analytic mappings between Riemann surfaces. L. Sario studied the method of **normal operators**, which is utilized to construct harmonic functions on Riemann surfaces with given singularities at their ideal boundaries; and he extended the main theorems of Nevanlinna to analytic mappings between arbitrary Riemann surfaces (\rightarrow 124 Distributions of Values of Functions of a Complex Variable). M. Heins introduced the notions of Lindelöf type, Blaschke type, and others which are special classes of analytic mappings. Utilizing these notions, Constantinescu and Cornea, Kuramochi, and others extended various results in the theory of cluster sets (\rightarrow 62 Cluster Sets) by studying the behavior of analytic mappings at ideal boundaries. The theory of capacities on ideal boundaries has also been developed.

On every open Riemann surface R there exists a nonconstant holomorphic function (Behnke and Stein). Furthermore, Gunning and Narasimhan proved that there exists a holomorphic function on R whose derivative never vanishes. In other words, R is conformally equivalent to an unramified covering surface of the sphere. Such a locally homeomorphic analytic mapping is called the **immersion** of R . The proof is based on the fol-

lowing deep result (S. Mergelyan's theorem): Suppose that K is a compact set on R such that $R - K$ has no relatively compact connected component. Then every continuous function which is holomorphic on the interior of K can be approximated uniformly on K by a holomorphic function on R [22].

A surface of genus 0 is said to be **planar** (or **of planar character** or **schlichtartig**). A simply connected surface is planar. Using the Dirichlet principle, P. Koebe proved the following **general uniformization theorem**: Every planar Riemann surface R can be mapped conformally to the canonical slit regions on the extended complex plane C . More precisely, given a point p on R , there exists the **extremal horizontal (vertical) slit mapping** $F_1(F_2)$ such that (i) $F_1(F_2)$ maps R conformally to a region on C whose boundary consists of horizontal (vertical) slits and possibly points; (ii) F_1 and F_2 have a simple pole at p with residue 1; (iii) the total area of the slits and points is zero. Suppose that $F_i = 1/z + a_i + c_i z + \dots$ ($i = 1, 2$) in terms of local parameter z at p . Then $s = (c_1 - c_2)/2$ is called the **span** of R . It is known that $s (= \|d(F_1 - F_2)/2\|^2) \geq 0$, where the equality holds if and only if R belongs to O_{AD} . In the case of finite genus g , there also exist the conformal mappings of R onto the parallel slit regions on the $(g+1)$ -sheeted covering surface of C (Z. Nehari, Y. Kusunoki, and others). L. Ahlfors proved that a Riemann surface of genus g bounded by m contours can be mapped conformally to an at most $(2g+m)$ -sheeted unbounded covering surface of the unit disk.

The structures of closed Riemann surfaces are determined by the algebraic structures of meromorphic function fields on them. H. Iss'sa obtained a noteworthy result which established that open Riemann surfaces are also determined by their meromorphic function fields [24]. It is known too that open Riemann surfaces are determined by their rings of holomorphic functions.

H. Differential Forms on Riemann Surfaces

Since Riemann surfaces are considered real 2-dimensional differentiable manifolds of class C^∞ , differential 1-forms $\omega = u dx + v dy$ and differential 2-forms $\Omega = c dx \wedge dy$ are defined on them, and operations such as the exterior derivative $d\omega = (\partial v/\partial x - \partial u/\partial y) dx \wedge dy$ and exterior product can be defined (\rightarrow 105 Differentiable Manifolds). Since coordinate transformations satisfy the Cauchy-Riemann differential equation, the **conjugate differential** $*\omega = -v dx + u dy$ of ω can be defined. A differential form ω satisfying $d\omega = d*\omega = 0$ is

called a **harmonic differential**, and one with $*\omega = -i\omega$ is said to be **pure**. A pure differential is expressed as $\omega = f dz$. Here, if f is a holomorphic function, then ω is called a **holomorphic** (or **analytic**) **differential**, and if f is a meromorphic function, then ω is called a **meromorphic** (or **Abelian**) **differential**. The differential form ω is a holomorphic differential if and only if it is **closed** (i.e., $d\omega = 0$) and **pure**. The differential ω is called **exact** (or **total**) if ω is written as $dF = F_x dx + F_y dy$ with a globally single-valued function F .

Next, the set of all measurable differentials ω with $\|\omega\|^2 = \iint_R \omega \wedge *\bar{\omega} < \infty$ forms a t Hilbert space with respect to the norm $\|\omega\|$. The method of orthogonal decomposition in the theory of Hilbert spaces is the main device to study this space and also its suitable subspaces and to obtain the existence theorem of harmonic and holomorphic differentials with various properties (\rightarrow 194 Harmonic Integrals). However, in contrast to differentiable manifolds, it should be noted that finer orthogonal decompositions into subspaces with specific properties hold for open Riemann surfaces. For instance, let $\Gamma_a(\Gamma_h)$ be the Hilbert space of analytic (harmonic) differentials with finite norm, and set $\Gamma_{ae} = \{\omega \in \Gamma_a | \omega \text{ is exact}\}$, $\Gamma_{hse} = \{\omega \in \Gamma_h | \omega \text{ is } ^t\text{semixact}\}$; then we have the orthogonal decompositions

$$\Gamma_a = \Gamma_{ae} \dot{+} \Gamma_{as},$$

$$\Gamma_h = *\Gamma_{hse} \dot{+} \Gamma_{hm} = \Gamma_{hse} \dot{+} *\Gamma_{hm}, \text{ etc.,}$$

where $*\Gamma_x$ stands for the space $\{\omega | *\omega \in \Gamma_x\}$ and Γ_{as} and Γ_{hm} are known as the space of analytic Schottky differentials and the space of differentials of harmonic measures, respectively. Both spaces Γ_{as} and Γ_{hm} have remarkable properties [9].

I. Abelian Integrals on Open Riemann Surfaces

The systematic effort to extend the theory of Abelian integrals on closed Riemann surfaces to open Riemann surfaces was initiated by Nevanlinna in 1940. At the first stage of the development, only those Riemann surfaces with small boundaries (i.e., ones in O_G or O_{HD}) were treated; later a more general treatment was made possible by the discovery of the notion of semixact differentials (K. Virtanen, Ahlfors).

Let R be an arbitrary open Riemann surface. A 1-dimensional cycle C is called a **dividing cycle** if for any compact set in R there exists a cycle outside the compact set homologous to C . A differential is said to be **semiexact** if its period along every dividing cycle vanishes.

Ahlfors defined the distinguished (complex harmonic) differentials with polar singularities and obtained in terms of them a generalization of Abel's theorem. Independently, Y. Kusunoki defined the semiexact canonical (meromorphic) differentials and gave in terms of them a formulation of Abel's theorem and the Riemann-Roch theorem on R [27]. It was proved that a meromorphic differential $df = du + idv$ is semiexact canonical if and only if du is (real) distinguished, and then u is almost constant on every ideal boundary component of R (in appropriate compactification of R). Hence every meromorphic function f for which df is distinguished is almost constant on every ideal boundary component, and therefore f reduces to a constant by the boundary theorem of Riesz type if R has a large boundary. Whereas by the Riemann-Roch theorem above a nonconstant meromorphic function f such that df is (exact) canonical exists on any open Riemann surface R with finite genus, and f gives a canonical parallel slit mapping of R (\rightarrow Section G). H. L. Royden [28] and B. Rodin also gave generalizations of the Riemann-Roch theorem. M. Yoshida, H. Mizumoto, M. Shiba, and others further generalized the Kusunoki type theorems. The Riemann-Roch theorem for a closed Riemann surface can be deduced from that for open Riemann surfaces by considering an open Riemann surface obtained from a closed surface by deleting a point.

Riemann's period relation on R has been studied for various classes of differentials, but for the case of infinitely many nonvanishing periods, no definitive result has been obtained. The same is true for the theory of Abelian differentials with infinitely many singularities. On the other hand, the analogy to the classical theory is lost completely if no restriction is posed on the differentials on R . In this context the following results due to Behnke and Stein [26] are outstanding: (1) There exists an Abelian differential of the first kind on R with infinitely many given periods. (2) For two discrete sequences $\{p_n\}$ and $\{q_n\}$ of points in R , there exists a single-valued meromorphic function with zeros at p_n and poles at q_n . It is further proved that there exists an Abelian differential with prescribed divisor and periods (Kusunoki and Sainouchi). This generalizes the results above and the Gunning-Narasimhan theorem.

References

[1] H. Weyl, *Die Idee der Riemannschen Fläche*, Teubner, 1913, third edition, 1955;

English translation, *The concept of a Riemann surface*, Addison-Wesley, 1964.

[2] S. Stoilow, *Leçons sur les principes topologiques de la théorie des fonctions analytiques*, Gauthier-Villars, 1938.

[3] L. Ahlfors, *Zur Theorie der Überlagerungsflächen*, *Acta Math.*, 65 (1935), 157–194.

[4] R. Nevanlinna, *Uniformisierung*, Springer, 1953.

[5] H. Behnke and F. Sommer, *Theorie der analytischen Funktionen einer komplexen Veränderlichen*, Springer, second revised edition, 1962.

[6] A. Pfluger, *Theorie der Riemannschen Flächen*, Springer, 1957.

[7] G. Springer, *Introduction to Riemann surfaces*, Addison-Wesley, 1957.

[8] L. V. Ahlfors (ed.), *Contribution to the theory of Riemann surfaces*, *Ann. Math. Studies*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1953.

[9] L. V. Ahlfors and L. Sario, *Riemann surfaces*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1960.

[10] M. Schiffer and D. C. Spencer, *Functionals of finite Riemann surfaces*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1954.

[11] L. Bers, *Riemann surfaces*, Lecture notes, New York Univ., 1957.

[12] M. Tsuji, *Potential theory in modern function theory*, Maruzen, 1959 (Chelsea, 1975).

[13] R. C. Gunning, *Lectures on Riemann surfaces*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1966.

For the classification of Riemann surfaces \rightarrow [6, 9] and the following:

[14] C. Constantinescu and A. Cornea, *Ideale Ränder Riemannscher Flächen*, Springer, 1963.

[15] L. Sario and M. Nakai, *Classification theory of Riemann surfaces*, Springer, 1970.

[16] M. Sakai, *Analytic functions with finite Dirichlet integrals on Riemann surfaces*, *Acta Math.*, 142 (1979), 199–220.

For analytic mappings of Riemann surfaces \rightarrow [4, 6, 9] and the following:

[17] B. Rodin and L. Sario, *Principal functions*, Van Nostrand, 1968.

[18] L. Sario and K. Noshiro, *Value distribution theory*, Van Nostrand, 1966.

[19] L. Sario and K. Oikawa, *Capacity functions*, Springer, 1969.

[20] L. Ahlfors, *Open Riemann surfaces and extremal problems on compact subregions*, *Comm. Math. Helv.*, 24 (1950), 100–134.

[21] R. Gunning and R. Narasimhan, *Immersion of open Riemann surfaces*, *Math. Ann.*, 174 (1967), 103–108.

[22] E. Bishop, *Subalgebras of functions on a Riemann surface*, *Pacif. J. Math.*, 8 (1958), 29–50.

[23] M. H. Heins, *Algebraic structure and conformal mapping*, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 89 (1958), 267–276.

[24] H. Iss'sa, On the meromorphic function field of a Stein variety, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 83 (1966), 34–46.

For the generalization of algebraic functions and Abelian integrals \rightarrow [4, 6, 9] and the following:

[25] R. Nevanlinna, Quadratisch integrierbare Differentiale auf einer Riemannschen Mannigfaltigkeit, *Ann. Acad. Sci. Fenn.*, 1 (1941), 1–34.

[26] H. Behnke and K. Stein, Entwicklung analytischer Funktionen auf Riemannschen Flächen, *Math. Ann.*, 120 (1949), 430–461.

[27] Y. Kusunoki, Theory of Abelian integrals and its applications to conformal mappings, *Mem. Coll. Sci. Univ. Kyôto, (A, Math.)* 32 (1959), 235–258; 33 (1961), 429–433.

[28] H. L. Royden, The Riemann-Roch theorem, *Comment. Math. Helv.*, 34 (1960), 37–51.

Also \rightarrow reference to 11 Algebraic Functions, 416 Teichmüller Spaces.

368 (III.9) Rings

A. Definition

A nonempty set A is called a **ring** if the following conditions are satisfied.

(1) Two \dagger operations, called **addition** and **multiplication** (the **ring operations**), are defined, which send an arbitrary pair of elements a, b of A to elements $a + b$ and ab of A .

(2) For arbitrary elements a, b, c of A , these operations satisfy the following four laws: (i) $a + b = b + a$ (**commutative law of addition**); (ii) $(a + b) + c = a + (b + c)$, $(ab)c = a(bc)$ (**associative laws**); (iii) $a(b + c) = ab + ac$, $(a + b)c = ac + bc$ (**distributive laws**); and (iv) for every pair a, b of elements of A , there exists a unique element c of A such that $a + c = b$. Thus a ring A is an \dagger Abelian group under addition. Each element a of a ring A determines operations L_a and R_a defined by $L_a(x) = ax$, $R_a(x) = xa$ ($x \in A$). Thus a ring A has the structure of a \dagger left A -module and a \dagger right A -module. Since the operations L_a and R_b commute for every pair a, b of elements of A , the ring A is also an A - A -bimodule (\rightarrow 277 Modules).

The identity element of A under addition is called the **zero element** and is denoted by 0. It satisfies the equation $a0 = 0a = 0$ ($a \in A$). An element $e \in A$ is called a **unity element** (**identity element** or **unit element**) of A if it satisfies $ae = ea = a$ ($a \in A$). If A has such a unity element, it is unique and is often denoted by 1. A ring with unity element is called a **unitary ring**. Most of the important examples of rings are unitary.

368 B Rings

Hence we often call a unitary ring simply a ring. If a ring has only one member (namely, 0), then 0 is the unity element of the ring. Such a ring is called a **zero ring**. However, if a ring has more than one element, the unity element is distinct from the zero element. A ring is called a **commutative ring** if it satisfies (v) $ab = ba$ ($a, b \in A$) (**commutative law for multiplication**) (\rightarrow 67 Commutative Rings).

In this article we shall discuss associative rings. Certain nonassociative rings are important; an example is \dagger Lie algebra. (An algebra is a ring having a \dagger ground ring.)

B. Further Definitions

An element $a \neq 0$ of a ring A is called a **zero divisor** if there exists an element $b \neq 0$ such that $ab = 0$ or $ba = 0$. A commutative unitary ring having more than one element is called an **integral domain** if it has no zero divisors (\rightarrow 67 Commutative Rings). Elements a and b of a ring are said to be **orthogonal** if $ab = ba = 0$. An element a satisfying $a^n = 0$ for some positive integer n is called a **nilpotent element**, and a nonzero element a satisfying $a^2 = a$ is called an **idempotent element**. An idempotent element is said to be **primitive** if it cannot be represented as the sum of two orthogonal idempotent elements. For any subsets S and T of a ring A , let $S + T$ (ST) denote the set of elements $s + t$ (st) ($s \in S, t \in T$). In particular, SS is denoted by S^2 (similarly for S^3, S^4 , etc.), and furthermore, $\{a\} + S(\{a\}S)$ is denoted by $a + S(aS)$. If $ST = TS = \{0\}$, then subsets S and T are said to be **orthogonal**. A subset S of a ring is said to be **nilpotent** if $S^n = 0$ for some positive integer n , and **idempotent** if $S^2 = S$.

For an element a of a unitary ring A , an element a' such that $a'a = 1$ ($aa' = 1$) is called a **left (right) inverse element** of a . There exists a left (right) inverse element of a if and only if A is generated by a as a left (right) A -module. If there exist both a right inverse and a left inverse of a , then they coincide and are uniquely determined by a . This element is called the **inverse element** of a and is denoted by a^{-1} . An element that has an inverse element is called an **invertible element** (**regular element** or **unit**). The set of all invertible elements of a unitary ring forms a group under multiplication. A nonzero unitary ring is called a \dagger **skew field** (or \dagger **division ring**) if every nonzero element is invertible. Furthermore, a skew field that satisfies the commutative law is called a **commutative field** or simply a **field** (\rightarrow 149 Fields). In a general ring A , if we define a new operation $(a, b) \rightarrow a \circ b$ by setting $a \circ b = a + b - ab$, then A is a \dagger semigroup with the identity element 0 with respect to this operation. The inverse

element under this operation is called the **quasi-inverse element**, and an element that has a quasi-inverse element is called a **quasi-invertible element** (or **quasiregular element**). An element a of a unitary ring is quasi-invertible if and only if the element $1 - a$ is invertible.

C. Examples

(1) Rings of numbers. The ring \mathbf{Z} of rational integers, the rational number field \mathbf{Q} , the real number field \mathbf{R} , and the complex number field \mathbf{C} are familiar examples (\rightarrow 14 Algebraic Number Fields, 257 Local Fields).

(2) Rings of functions. The set K^I of functions defined on a set I and taking values in a ring K forms a commutative ring under pointwise addition and multiplication. In particular, let $K = \mathbf{R}$, and let I be an interval of \mathbf{R} . Then the set $C^0(I)$ of continuous functions, the set $C^r(I)$ of functions that are r -times continuously differentiable, and the set $C^\omega(I)$ of analytic functions on I are subrings (\rightarrow Section E) of \mathbf{R}^I .

(3) Rings of expressions. The set $K[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ of polynomials and the set $K[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$ of formal power series in indeterminates X_1, \dots, X_n with coefficients in a commutative ring K are commutative rings (\rightarrow 369 Rings of Polynomials, 370 Rings of Power Series).

(4) **Endomorphism rings** of modules. The set $\mathcal{E}_K(M)$ of endomorphisms of a module M over a ring K is in general a noncommutative ring. In particular, if M is a finite-dimensional linear space over a field K , then $\mathcal{E}_K(M)$ can be identified with a full matrix ring (\rightarrow 256 Linear Spaces, 277 Modules).

(5) For other examples \rightarrow 29 Associative Algebras, 36 Banach Algebras, 67 Commutative Rings, 284 Noetherian Rings, and 439 Valuations.

D. Homomorphisms

A mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ of a ring A into a ring B satisfying conditions (i) $f(a+b) = f(a) + f(b)$ and (ii) $f(ab) = f(a)f(b)$ ($a, b \in A$) is called a **homomorphism**. If a homomorphism f is bijective, then the inverse mapping $f^{-1}: B \rightarrow A$ is also a homomorphism, and in this case f is called an **isomorphism**. More precisely, a homomorphism (isomorphism) of rings is often called a **ring homomorphism** (**ring isomorphism**). There exists only one homomorphism of any ring onto the zero ring. For unitary rings A and B , a homomorphism $f: A \rightarrow B$ is said to be **unitary** if it maps the unity element of A to the unity element of B . By a homomorphism, a unitary homomorphism is usually meant. In this sense there exists a unique homomorphism of the ring \mathbf{Z} of rational integers into an arbitrary unitary ring. A composite of homomorphisms is also a homomorphism. The identity mapping 1_A of a ring A is an isomorphism. A homomorphism of a ring A into itself is called an **endomorphism**, and an isomorphism of A onto itself is called an **automorphism** of A . If a is an invertible element of a unitary ring A , then the mapping $x \rightarrow axa^{-1}$ ($x \in A$) is an automorphism of A , called an **inner automorphism**.

When condition (ii) for a homomorphism is replaced by (ii') $f(ab) = f(b)f(a)$ ($a, b \in A$), a mapping satisfying (i) and (ii') is called an **antihomomorphism**. In particular, if an antihomomorphism f is bijective, then the inverse mapping f^{-1} is also an antihomomorphism, and f is called an **anti-isomorphism**. **Antiautomorphisms** and **antiautomorphisms** are defined similarly.

Antiendomorphisms and **antiautomorphisms** are defined similarly.

E. Subrings, Factor Rings, and Direct Products

A subset S of a ring A is called a **subring** of A if a ring structure is given on S and the canonical injection $S \rightarrow A$ is a ring homomorphism. Thus the ring operations of S are the restrictions of those of A . If we deal only with unitary rings and unitary homomorphisms, then a subring S necessarily contains the unity element of A . The smallest subring containing a subset T of a ring A is called the subring **generated** by T . The set of elements that commute with every element of T forms a subring and is called the **commutor** (or **centralizer**) of T . In particular, the commutor of A itself is called the **center** of A .

A quotient set A/R of a ring A by an equivalence relation R is called a **factor ring** (quotient ring) of A if a ring structure is given on A/R and the canonical surjection $A \rightarrow A/R$ is a ring homomorphism. This is the case if and only if the equivalence relation R is compatible with the ring operations (i.e., aRa' and bRb' imply $(a+b)R(a'+b')$ and $(ab)R(a'b')$). Let α and β be elements of the factor ring A/R , represented by a and b , respectively. Then the definition of factor ring implies that $\alpha + \beta(\alpha\beta)$ is the equivalence class represented by $a + b(ab)$. Every ring A has two trivial factor rings, namely, A itself and the zero ring 0 . If A has no nontrivial factor rings, then A is called a **quasisimple ring** (\rightarrow Section G). If $f: A \rightarrow B$ is a ring homomorphism, then the image $f(A)$ is a subring of B , and the equivalence relation R in A defined by $f(aRb \Leftrightarrow f(a) = f(b))$ is compatible with the ring operations of A . Thus f induces an isomorphism $A/R \rightarrow f(A)$ (\rightarrow Section F).

If $\{A_i\}_{i \in I}$ is a family of rings, the Cartesian

product $A = \prod_{i \in I} A_i$ forms a ring under the componentwise operations $(a_i) + (b_i) = (a_i + b_i)$ and $(a_i)(b_i) = (a_i b_i)$. This ring is called the **direct product** of the family of rings $\{A_i\}_{i \in I}$. The mapping $p_i: A \rightarrow A_i$ that assigns to each (a_i) its i th component a_i is called a **canonical homomorphism**. For any set of homomorphisms $f_i: B \rightarrow A_i$ ($i \in I$), there exists a unique homomorphism $f: B \rightarrow A$ such that $f_i = p_i \circ f$ for each i .

F. Ideals

A subset of a ring A is called a **left (right) ideal** of A if it is a submodule of the left (right) A -module of A (\rightarrow 277 Modules). In other words, a left (right) ideal J of A is an additive subgroup of A such that $AJ \subset J$ ($JA \subset J$). Under the operations induced from A , J is a ring (however, J is not necessarily unitary). A subset of A is called a **two-sided ideal** or simply an **ideal** of A if it is a left and right ideal.

For an ideal J of a ring A , we define a relation R in A by $aRb \Leftrightarrow a - b \in J$. Then R is an equivalence relation that is compatible with the operations of A . Each equivalence class is called a **residue class** modulo J , and the quotient ring A/R is denoted by A/J and called the **residue (class) ring** (or **factor ring**) modulo J . If it is a field, it is called a **residue (class) field**.

Conversely, given an equivalence relation R that is compatible with the operations of A , the equivalence class of 0 forms an ideal J of A , and the equivalence relation defined by J coincides with R .

If $f: A \rightarrow B$ is a ring homomorphism, then the \dagger kernel of f as a homomorphism of additive groups forms an ideal J of A , and f induces an isomorphism $A/J \rightarrow f(A)$. If S is a subring and J is an ideal of a ring A , then $S + J$ is a subring of A and $S \cap J$ is an ideal of S . Furthermore, the natural homomorphism $S \rightarrow (S + J)/J$ induces an isomorphism $S/S \cap J \rightarrow (S + J)/J$ (**isomorphism theorem**).

A left (right) ideal of a ring A is said to be **maximal** if it is not equal to A and is properly contained in no left (right) ideal of A other than A . Similarly, a left (right) ideal of A is said to be **minimal** if it is nonzero and properly contains no nonzero left (right) ideal of A .

If e is an idempotent element of a unitary ring A , then $1 - e$ and e are orthogonal idempotent elements, and $A = Ae + A(1 - e)$ is the direct sum of left ideals. This is called **Peirce's left decomposition**. **Peirce's right decomposition** is defined similarly. A left ideal J of A can be expressed as $J = Ae$ for some idempotent element e if and only if there exists a left ideal J' such that $A = J + J'$ is a direct sum decomposition. More generally, if e_1, \dots, e_n are orthogonal idempotent elements whose sum is equal

to 1, then $A = Ae_1 + \dots + Ae_n$ is the direct sum of left ideals. Conversely, if $A = J_1 + \dots + J_n$ is the direct sum of left ideals and $1 = e_1 + \dots + e_n$ ($e_i \in J_i$) is the corresponding decomposition of the unity element, then e_1, \dots, e_n are orthogonal idempotent elements. In particular, if J_1, \dots, J_n are two-sided ideals, then each J_i is a ring with unity element e_i , and by a natural correspondence, the ring A is isomorphic to the direct product $\prod_{i=1}^n J_i$. In this case, A is called the **direct sum** of ideals J_1, \dots, J_n and is denoted by $A = \bigoplus_{i=1}^n J_i$, or $A = \sum_{i=1}^n J_i$.

A ring A is called a **left (right) Artinian ring** if it is \dagger Artinian as a left (right) A -module (i.e., if A satisfies the \dagger minimal condition for left (right) ideals of A). A ring A is called a **left (right) Noetherian ring** if it is \dagger Noetherian as a left (right) A -module (i.e., if A satisfies the \dagger maximal condition for left (right) ideals of A). If A is commutative, *left* and *right* are omitted in these definitions. The property of being Artinian or Noetherian is inherited by quotient rings and the direct product of a finite family of rings, but not necessarily by subrings. For general rings, the maximal and minimal conditions for left (right) ideals are independent, but for unitary rings, left (right) Artinian rings are necessarily left (right) Noetherian (Y. Akizuki, C. Hopkins).

G. Semisimple Rings

The statement that a unitary ring A is \dagger semi-simple as a left A -module is equivalent to the statement that A is semisimple as a right A -module; in this case A is called a **semisimple ring** (\rightarrow Section H). Every module over a semisimple ring is also semisimple. A semisimple ring is left (right) Artinian and Noetherian. A semisimple ring is called a **simple ring** if it is nonzero and has no proper ideals except $\{0\}$, that is, if A is a quasisimple ring. Thus A is a simple ring if and only if A is a nonzero, unitary, quasisimple, left (right) Artinian ring. If A is a semisimple ring, then it has only a finite number of minimal ideals A_1, \dots, A_n , and A is expressible as the direct sum $A = A_1 + \dots + A_n$, where each A_i is a simple ring, called a **simple component** of A . Any ideal of A is the direct sum of a finite number of simple components of A . Quotient rings of a semisimple ring and the direct product of a finite number of semisimple rings are also semisimple.

Any left (right) ideal of a semisimple ring A is expressible as Ae (eA) for some idempotent element e , and Ae (eA) is minimal if and only if e is primitive. In particular, a minimal left (right) ideal is a simple left (right) A -module that is contained in a certain simple component. Two minimal left (right) ideals are iso-

morphic as A -modules if and only if they are contained in the same simple component. If A_i , $1 \leq i \leq n$, are the simple components of A , then for each simple left A -module M there exists a unique i such that $A_i M \neq \{0\}$, and M is isomorphic to a minimal left ideal contained in A_i .

If M is a finite-dimensional linear space over a (skew) field D , then the endomorphism ring $A = \mathcal{E}_D(M)$ of M over D is a simple ring. Conversely, for any ring A , the endomorphism ring $D = \mathcal{E}_A(M)$ of a simple A -module M is a (skew) field (**Schur's lemma**). If A is a simple ring, then any simple A -module M can be considered as a finite-dimensional linear space over $D = \mathcal{E}_A(M)$, and A is isomorphic to $\mathcal{E}_D(M)$ (**Wedderburn's theorem**). Furthermore, if r is the dimension of M over D , then $\mathcal{E}_D(M)$ is isomorphic to the full matrix ring $M_r(D^\circ)$ of degree r over the field D° , which is anti-isomorphic to D . The dimension r is also equal to the length of A as an A -module. The center of $A = \mathcal{E}_D(M)$ is isomorphic to the center of D , which is a commutative field. Thus a simple ring is an associative algebra over a commutative field (\rightarrow 29 Associative Algebras).

H. Radicals

Let A be a ring. Then among ideals consisting only of quasi-invertible elements of A , there exists a largest one, which is called the **radical** of A and denoted by $\mathfrak{R}(A)$. The radical of the residue ring $A/\mathfrak{R}(A)$ is $\{0\}$. A ring A is called a **semiprimitive ring** if $\mathfrak{R}(A)$ is $\{0\}$. On the other hand, A is called a left (right) **primitive ring** if it has a faithful simple left (right) A -module. The radical $\mathfrak{R}(A)$ is equal to the intersection of all ideals J such that A/J is a left (right) primitive ring. In a unitary ring A , $\mathfrak{R}(A)$ coincides with the intersection of all maximal left (right) ideals of A . Furthermore, in a left (right) Artinian ring A , $\mathfrak{R}(A)$ is the largest nilpotent ideal of A , and the condition $\mathfrak{R}(A) = \{0\}$ is equivalent to the condition that A is a semi-simple ring.

Among ideals consisting only of nilpotent elements of A , there exists a largest one, which is called the **nilradical** (or simply the radical) and denoted by $\mathfrak{N}(A)$ (\rightarrow 67 Commutative Rings). The nilradical of $A/\mathfrak{R}(A)$ is $\{0\}$. In general, $\mathfrak{N}(A)$ is contained in $\mathfrak{R}(A)$, and if A is left (right) Artinian, we have $\mathfrak{N}(A) = \mathfrak{R}(A)$. A ring A is called a **semiprimary ring** if $A/\mathfrak{R}(A)$ is left (right) Artinian and therefore semisimple. Furthermore, a ring A is called a **primary ring** (**completely primary ring**) if $A/\mathfrak{R}(A)$ is a simple ring (skew field). A primary ring is isomorphic to a full matrix ring over a completely primary ring.

References

- [1] B. L. van der Waerden, Algebra, Springer, I, 1966; II, 1967.
- [2] N. Jacobson, The theory of rings, Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys, 1943.
- [3] E. Artin, C. J. Nesbitt, and R. M. Thrall, Rings with minimum condition, Univ. of Michigan Press, 1944.
- [4] N. Jacobson, Structure of rings, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1956.
- [5] N. Bourbaki, Eléments de mathématique, Algèbre, ch. 1, 8, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1144b, 1261a, Hermann, 1964, 1958.
- [6] C. Chevalley, Fundamental concepts of algebra, Academic Press, 1956.
- [7] N. Jacobson, Lectures in abstract algebra I, Van Nostrand, 1951 (Springer, 1976).
- [8] R. Godement, Cours d'algèbre, Hermann, 1963.
- [9] J. P. Jans, Rings and homology, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1964.
- [10] S. Lang, Algebra, Addison-Wesley, 1965.
- [11] N. H. McCoy, The theory of rings, Macmillan, 1964.

369 (III.13) Rings of Polynomials

A. General Remarks

In this article, we mean by a *ring* a \dagger commutative ring with \dagger unity element. Let R be a ring, and let X_1, \dots, X_n be **variables** (**letters**, **indeterminates**, or **symbols**). Then the set of \dagger polynomials in X_1, \dots, X_n with coefficients in R is called the **ring of polynomials** (or **polynomial ring**) in n variables X_1, \dots, X_n over R and is denoted by $R[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ (\rightarrow 67 Commutative Rings; 284 Noetherian Rings; 337 Polynomials; 368 Rings). On the other hand, when R and R' are rings with common unity element and $R \subset R'$, then for a subset S of R' we denote the subring of R' , generated by S over R , by $R[S]$. When $S = \{x_1, \dots, x_n\}$, then there is a homomorphism φ of the polynomial ring $R[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ onto $R[S]$ defined by

$$\varphi(\sum a_{i_1 \dots i_n} X_1^{i_1} \dots X_n^{i_n}) = \sum a_{i_1 \dots i_n} x_1^{i_1} \dots x_n^{i_n} \quad (a_{i_1 \dots i_n} \in R).$$

If φ is an isomorphism, then x_1, \dots, x_n are said to be **algebraically independent** over R ; and otherwise, **algebraically dependent** over R . Thus the ring of polynomials in n variables over R may be regarded as a ring $R[x_1, \dots, x_n]$ generated by a finite system of algebraically independent elements x_1, \dots, x_n over R .

B. Ideals, Homogeneous Rings, and Graded Rings

Consider the polynomial ring $R[X] = R[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ in n variables over a ring R . A polynomial $f \in R[X]$ is a \dagger zero divisor if and only if there is a nonzero member a of R for which $af = 0$. If \mathfrak{a} is an \dagger ideal of R , then $R[X]/\mathfrak{a}R[X] \cong (R/\mathfrak{a})[X_1, \dots, X_n]$. Therefore, if \mathfrak{p} is a \dagger prime ideal of R , then $\mathfrak{p}R[X]$ is a prime ideal of $R[X]$. If R is a \dagger unique factorization domain (u.f.d.), then $R[X]$ is also a u.f.d. If R is a normal ring, then so is $R[X]$. By the \dagger Hilbert basis theorem, if R is \dagger Noetherian, then $R[X]$ is also Noetherian. If m is the \dagger Krull dimension of R , then $\text{Krull dim } R[X] \geq n + m$; the equality holds if R is Noetherian. If R is a field, then $R[X]$ is not only a u.f.d. but also a \dagger Macaulay ring.

A **homogeneous ideal** of $R[X]$ is an ideal generated by a set of \dagger homogeneous polynomials f_λ (the degree of f_λ may depend on λ). When \mathfrak{a} is a homogeneous ideal, an element in $R[X]/\mathfrak{a}$ is defined to be a **homogeneous element** of degree d if it is the class of a homogeneous polynomial of degree d modulo \mathfrak{a} , and the quotient ring $R[X]/\mathfrak{a}$ is called a **homogeneous ring**. More generally, assume that a ring R is, as a \dagger module, the \dagger direct sum $\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} R_i$ of its submodules R_i ($i = 0, 1, 2, \dots$) and that $R_i R_j \subset R_{i+j}$ for every pair (i, j) . Then we call R a **graded ring**, and an element in R_d a **homogeneous element** of degree d . (In some literature the term graded ring is used in a wider sense; see below) In a graded ring R , if an ideal is generated by homogeneous elements, then the ideal is called a **homogeneous ideal** (or **graded ideal**). In a graded ring $R = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} R_i$, if the ideal $\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} R_i$ has a finite basis, then R is generated (as a ring) by a finite number of elements over its subring R_0 . Therefore, the graded ring $R = \sum R_i$ is Noetherian if and only if R_0 is Noetherian and R is generated by a finite number of elements over R_0 . In this case, every homogeneous ideal is the intersection of a finite number of homogeneous \dagger primary ideals, and every prime divisor of a homogeneous ideal is a homogeneous prime ideal.

The notion of a graded ring is generalized further as follows: A ring R is **graded** by an additive semigroup I (containing 0) if $R = \sum_{i \in I} R_i$ (direct sum) and if $R_i R_j \subset R_{i+j}$.

C. Zero Points

(1) **Zero Points in an Affine Space.** We consider the polynomial ring $K[X] = K[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ in n variables over a field K and a field Ω containing K . A point (a_1, \dots, a_n) of an n -dimensional \dagger affine space $\Omega^n = \{(a_1, \dots, a_n) | a_i \in$

$\Omega\}$ is called a **zero point** of a subset S of $K[X]$ if $f(a_1, \dots, a_n) = 0$ for every $f(X_1, \dots, X_n) \in S$. A point (a_1, \dots, a_n) is called **algebraic** over K (**K -rational**) if every a_i is algebraic over K (is an element of K). In this way we define algebraic zero points and rational zero points. Zero points of S are zero points of the \dagger ideals generated by S . Therefore, in order to investigate the set of zero points of S , we may restrict ourselves to the case where S is an ideal. Denote by $V(S)$ the set of zero points of S . If $\mathfrak{a}_1, \mathfrak{a}_2$ are ideals of $K[X]$, then (i) $V(\mathfrak{a}_1 \cap \mathfrak{a}_2) = V(\mathfrak{a}_1 \mathfrak{a}_2) = V(\mathfrak{a}_1) \cup V(\mathfrak{a}_2)$; (ii) $V(\mathfrak{a}_1 + \mathfrak{a}_2) = V(\mathfrak{a}_1) \cap V(\mathfrak{a}_2)$; and (iii) if \mathfrak{a}_1 and \mathfrak{a}_2 have a common \dagger radical, then $V(\mathfrak{a}_1) = V(\mathfrak{a}_2)$.

(2) **Zero Points in a Projective Space.** A point $(\lambda a_1, \dots, \lambda a_n)$ of an $(n-1)$ -dimensional \dagger projective space over Ω (with $a_i \in \Omega$, some $a_i \neq 0$, $\lambda \in \Omega$, $\lambda \neq 0$) is called a **zero point** of a polynomial $f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ if, f being expressed as $\sum f_i$ with homogeneous polynomials f_i of degree i , $f_i(a_1, \dots, a_n) = 0$ for every i (this condition holds if and only if $f(\lambda a_1, \dots, \lambda a_n) = 0$ for any element λ in Ω , provided that Ω contains infinitely many elements). Therefore, zero points of a subset S of $K[X]$ are zero points of the smallest homogeneous ideal containing S . Thus, in order to study the sets of zero points, it is sufficient to consider sets of zero points of homogeneous ideals, and propositions similar to (i), (ii), and (iii) of part 1 of this section hold for homogeneous ideals $\mathfrak{a}_1, \mathfrak{a}_2$.

D. The Normalization Theorem

Let \mathfrak{a} be an ideal of \dagger height h in the polynomial ring $K[X] = K[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ in n variables over a field K . Then there exist elements Y_1, \dots, Y_n of $K[X]$ such that (i) $K[X]$ is \dagger integral over $K[Y] = K[Y_1, \dots, Y_n]$ and (ii) Y_1, \dots, Y_h generate $\mathfrak{a} \cap K[Y]$ (**normalization theorem for polynomial rings**).

Using this theorem, we obtain the following important theorems on finitely generated rings.

(1) **Normalization theorem for finitely generated rings.** If a ring R is finitely generated over an integral domain I , then there exist an element a ($\neq 0$) of I and algebraically independent elements z_1, \dots, z_t of R over I such that the \dagger ring of quotients R_S (where $S = \{a^n | n = 1, 2, \dots\}$) is integral over $I[a^{-1}, z_1, \dots, z_t]$.

(2) If \mathfrak{p} is a prime ideal of an integral domain R that is finitely generated over a field K , then $(\text{height of } \mathfrak{p}) + (\dagger\text{depth of } \mathfrak{p}) = (\dagger\text{transcendence degree of } R \text{ over } K)$, and the depth of \mathfrak{p} coincides with the transcendence degree of R/\mathfrak{p} over K . In particular, if \mathfrak{m} is a maximal ideal of R , then R/\mathfrak{m} is algebraic over K .

(3) **Hilbert's zero point theorem (Hilbert Nullstellensatz).** Let \mathfrak{a} be an ideal of the polynomial ring $K[X] = K[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ over the field K , and assume that the field Ω containing K is \dagger algebraically closed. If $f \in K[X]$ satisfies the condition that every algebraic zero point (\rightarrow Section C) of \mathfrak{a} is a zero point of f , then some power of f is contained in \mathfrak{a} .

E. Elimination Theory

Let f_1, \dots, f_N be elements of the polynomial ring $R = I[X_1, \dots, X_m, Y_1, \dots, Y_n]$ in $m+n$ variables over an integral domain I . For each maximal ideal \mathfrak{m} of I , let $\varphi_{\mathfrak{m}}$ be the canonical homomorphism with modulus \mathfrak{m} , and let $\Omega_{\mathfrak{m}}$ be an algebraically closed field containing I/\mathfrak{m} . Let $W_{\mathfrak{m}}$ be the set of points (a_1, \dots, a_n) of the n -dimensional affine space $\Omega_{\mathfrak{m}}^n$ over $\Omega_{\mathfrak{m}}$ such that the system of equations $\varphi_{\mathfrak{m}}(f_i)(X_1, \dots, X_m, a_1, \dots, a_n) = 0$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, N$) has a solution in $\Omega_{\mathfrak{m}}^m$. To **eliminate** X_1, \dots, X_m from f_1, \dots, f_N is to obtain $g(Y_1, \dots, Y_n) \in I[Y_1, \dots, Y_n]$ such that every point of $W_{\mathfrak{m}}$ is a zero point of $\varphi_{\mathfrak{m}}(g)$ for every \mathfrak{m} ; such a g (or an equation $g=0$) is called a **resultant** of f_1, \dots, f_N . The set \mathfrak{a} of resultants forms an ideal of $I[Y_1, \dots, Y_n]$, and $\{g_1, \dots, g_M\}$ is called a **system of resultants** if the radical of the ideal generated by it coincides with \mathfrak{a} . If I is finitely generated over a field, then, denoting by \mathfrak{b} the radical of the ideal generated by f_1, \dots, f_N , we have $\mathfrak{a} = \mathfrak{b} \cap I[Y_1, \dots, Y_n]$. In particular, let I be a field. It is obvious that $W_{(0)}$ is contained in the set V of zero points of \mathfrak{a} . However, it is not necessarily true that $V = W_{(0)}$. If every f_i is homogeneous in X_1, \dots, X_m and also in Y_1, \dots, Y_n , then we have $V = W_{(0)}$.

If we wish to write a system of resultants explicitly, we can proceed as follows: Regard the f_i as polynomials in X_1 with coefficients in $I[X_2, \dots, X_m, Y_1, \dots, Y_n]$, and obtain resultants $R(f_i, f_j)$ by eliminating X_1 from the pairs f_i, f_j . Then eliminate X_2 from these resultants, and so forth. To obtain $R(f_i, f_j)$, we may use **Sylvester's elimination method**. Namely, let f and g be polynomials in x with coefficients in I : $f = a_0 x^m + a_1 x^{m-1} + \dots + a_m$, $g = b_0 x^n + b_1 x^{n-1} + \dots + b_n$. Let $D(f, g)$ be the following determinant of degree $m+n$:

$$\begin{matrix} n \\ \left\{ \begin{array}{cccccccc} a_0 & a_1 & \cdots & a_m & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ 0 & a_0 & \cdots & a_{m-1} & a_m & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ & & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & & \\ 0 & & \cdots & 0 & a_0 & a_1 & \cdots & a_{m-1} & a_m \\ b_0 & b_1 & \cdots & & b_{n-1} & b_n & 0 & \cdots & 0 \\ & & & & & & & & \\ & & & & & & & & \\ 0 & \cdots & 0 & b_0 & b_1 & & \cdots & b_{n-1} & b_n \end{array} \right. \end{matrix}$$

Then $D(f, g) = 0$ if and only if either f and g have a common root or $a_0 = b_0 = 0$. Therefore, if I is a u.f.d. and a_0 and b_0 have no common factor, then $D(f, g)$ is the required resultant $R(f, g)$. (For other methods of elimination see B. L. van der Waerden, *Algebra*, vol. II. For criteria on whether a finitely generated ring over a field is \dagger regular \rightarrow 370 Rings of Power Series B.)

F. Syzygy Theory

(1) **Classical Case.** The notion of **syzygy** was introduced by Sylvester (*Phil. Trans.*, 143 (1853)), then generalized and clarified by Hilbert [3], whose definition can be formulated as follows: Let $R = k[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ be a polynomial ring of n variables over a field k . R has the natural gradation (i.e., R is a graded ring in which each X_i ($1 \leq i \leq n$) is of degree 1 and elements of k are of degree 0). Let M be a finitely generated graded R -module. If f_1, \dots, f_m form a minimal basis of M over R consisting of homogeneous elements, we introduce m indeterminates u_1, \dots, u_m and put $F = \sum_{1 \leq j \leq m} R u_j$, the free R -module generated by u_1, \dots, u_m . Set $\deg(u_j) = \deg(f_j)$ ($1 \leq j \leq m$) and supply F with the structure of a graded R -module. Let φ be the graded R -homomorphism of F onto M defined by $\varphi(u_j) = f_j$. Then $N = \text{Ker}(\varphi)$ is a graded R -module uniquely determined by M up to isomorphism (of graded R -modules); N is called the **first syzygy** of M . For a positive integer r , the **r th syzygy** of M is inductively defined as the first syzygy of the $(r-1)$ st syzygy of M . The **Hilbert syzygy theorem** states that for any finitely generated graded R -module M , the n th syzygy of M is free. In other words, M admits a **free resolution** of length $\leq n$, i.e., an exact sequence of the form

$$0 \rightarrow F^{(v)} \rightarrow \dots \rightarrow F^{(1)} \rightarrow F^{(0)} \rightarrow M \rightarrow 0,$$

where $v \leq n$ and each $F^{(i)}$ ($0 \leq i \leq v$) is a finitely generated free graded R -module. It follows that if M_d denotes the homogeneous part of degree d in M , there exists a polynomial $P(X)$ of degree $\leq n-1$ such that $\dim_k(M_d) = P(d)$ for sufficiently large d ; $P(X)$ is called the **Hilbert polynomial** (or **characteristic function**) of the graded R -module M .

(2) **Generalization by Serre.** The syzygy theory was generalized by J.-P. Serre [2] as follows: Let R be a Noetherian ring and M a finitely generated R -module. Then we can find a finitely generated free R -module F and an R -homomorphism φ of F onto M . The kernel of φ , called a **first syzygy** of M , is not uniquely

determined by M . However, if N_1 and N_2 are first syzygies of M , then there exist finitely generated \dagger projective R -modules P_1 and P_2 such that $N_1 \oplus P_1 \cong N_2 \oplus P_2$ (\rightarrow 277 Modules K). For a positive integer r , an r th syzygy is defined inductively as in (1) of this section. An important result of Serre is that R is a \dagger regular ring of \dagger Krull dimension at most n if and only if an n th syzygy of every finitely generated R -module is \dagger projective.

(3) Serre Conjecture. D. Quillen (*Inventiones Math.*, 36 (1976)) and A. Suslin (*Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR* (26 Feb. 1976)) solved the Serre conjecture by proving that every projective module over a ring of polynomials over a field is free.

(4) Special Cases. In the following special cases, we can define the first syzygy of M uniquely up to isomorphism: (i) R is a Noetherian \dagger local ring and M is a finitely generated R -module; and (ii) R is a graded Noetherian ring $\sum_{d \geq 0} R_d$, where R_0 is a field and M is a finitely generated graded R -module [4].

References

- [1] M. Nagata, *Local rings*, Wiley, 1962 (Krieger, 1975).
 - [2] J.-P. Serre, *Algèbre locale, multiplicités*, Lecture notes in math., Springer, 1965.
 - [3] D. Hilbert, Über die Theorie der algebraischen Formen, *Math. Ann.*, 36 (1890), 473–534.
 - [4] J.-P. Serre, Sur la dimension homologique des anneaux et des modules noethériens, *Proc. Intern. Symp. Alg. Number Theory*, Tokyo and Nikko (1955), 175–189.
- Also \rightarrow references to 284 Noetherian Rings.

370 (III.14) Rings of Power Series

A. Rings of Formal Power Series (\rightarrow 67 Commutative Rings; 284 Noetherian Rings; 368 Rings)

Let R be a commutative ring with unity element 1. Let F_d be the module of \dagger homogeneous polynomials of degree d in X_1, \dots, X_n with coefficients in R . A formal infinite sum $\sum_{d=0}^{\infty} a_d = a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_n + \dots$ of elements $a_d \in F_d$ is called a **formal power series** or simply **power series** in n variables X_1, \dots, X_n with coefficients in R , and a_d is called the **homogeneous part** of

degree d of the power series. The homogeneous part a_0 of degree zero is called the **constant term**. Addition and multiplication are defined by $(\sum a_d) + (\sum b_d) = \sum (a_d + b_d)$, $(\sum a_d)(\sum b_d) = \sum_d (\sum_{i+j=d} a_i b_j)$. By these operations, the set of power series forms a commutative ring, which is called the **ring of (formal) power series** (or **(formal) power series ring**) in X_1, \dots, X_n over R and is denoted by $R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$ or $R\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$. If there is a natural number N such that $a_d = 0$ for every $d > N$, then the power series $\sum a_d$ is identified with the polynomial $a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_N$. Thus $R[X_1, \dots, X_n] \subset R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$. Set $\mathfrak{X} = \sum_i X_i R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$. Then $R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$ is \dagger complete under the \mathfrak{X} -adic topology (\rightarrow 284 Noetherian Rings B).

Assume that R' is a commutative ring containing R and having a unity element in common with R , \mathfrak{a}' is an ideal of R' such that R' is complete under the \mathfrak{a}' -adic topology, and x_1, \dots, x_n are elements of \mathfrak{a}' . Then an infinite sum $\sum c_{i_1, \dots, i_n} x_1^{i_1} \dots x_n^{i_n}$ (each i_j ranges over nonnegative rational integers and $c_{i_1, \dots, i_n} \in R$) has a well-defined meaning in R' (namely, if S_d is a finite sum of these terms such that $\sum i_j \leq d$, then the infinite sum is defined to be $\lim_{d \rightarrow \infty} S_d$). This element $\sum c_{i_1, \dots, i_n} x_1^{i_1} \dots x_n^{i_n}$ is also called a **power series** in x_1, \dots, x_n with coefficients in R . The set of such power series in x_1, \dots, x_n is a subring of R' , called the **power series ring** in x_1, \dots, x_n over R and denoted by $R[[x_1, \dots, x_n]]$ or $R\{x_1, \dots, x_n\}$. Defining φ by $\varphi(\sum c_{i_1, \dots, i_n} X_1^{i_1} \dots X_n^{i_n}) = \sum c_{i_1, \dots, i_n} x_1^{i_1} \dots x_n^{i_n}$, we obtain a ring homomorphism $\varphi: R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]] \rightarrow R[[x_1, \dots, x_n]]$. If φ is an isomorphism, then we say that x_1, \dots, x_n are **analytically independent** over R .

If \bar{m} is a \dagger maximal ideal of the formal power series ring $R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$, then $m = \bar{m} \cap R$ is a maximal ideal of R and \bar{m} is generated by m and X_1, \dots, X_n . An element f of the power series ring is \dagger invertible if and only if its constant term f_0 is an invertible element of R , and in this case $f^{-1} = \sum_{d=0}^{\infty} f_0^{-d-1} \cdot (f - f_0)^d$. If R is one of the following, then $R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$ is also of the same kind: (i) \dagger Noetherian ring, (ii) \dagger local ring, (iii) \dagger semilocal ring, (iv) \dagger integral domain, (v) \dagger regular local ring, (vi) Noetherian \dagger normal ring. But even if R is a \dagger unique factorization domain (u.f.d.), $R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$ need not be a u.f.d. (If R is a field, or more generally, if R is a regular semilocal ring, then $R[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$ is a u.f.d.). In particular, a formal power series ring $k[[X]]$ in one variable X over a field k is an integral domain whose field of quotients is called the **field of (formal) power series** (or **(formal) power series field**) in one variable X over k and is denoted by $k((X))$; an element of $k((X))$ is expressed uniquely in the form $\sum_{n=-r}^{\infty} a_n X^n$ ($a_n \in k, r \in \mathbb{Z}$).

B. Rings of Convergent Power Series

Let K be a field with multiplicative † valuation v (for instance, $K = \mathbb{C}$, the complex number field, and $v(z) = |z|$ for $z \in \mathbb{C}$). A formal power series $f(X_1, \dots, X_n) = \sum c_{i_1 \dots i_n} X_1^{i_1} \dots X_n^{i_n}$ is said to be a **convergent power series** if there are positive numbers r_1, \dots, r_n, M such that $v(c_{i_1 \dots i_n}) r_1^{i_1} \dots r_n^{i_n} \leq M$ for every (i_1, \dots, i_n) . In this case, if $a_i \in K$ and $v(a_i) < r_i$, then $\sum c_{i_1 \dots i_n} a_1^{i_1} \dots a_n^{i_n}$ has its sum in the † completion of K . The set of convergent power series is a subring of $K[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$. It is called the **ring of convergent power series** (or **convergent power series ring**) in n variables over K and is denoted by $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$ or $K\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$. It is a regular local ring of † Krull dimension n . Hence it is a u.f.d. and its completion is $K[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$. If v is a † trivial valuation, then $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle = K[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$.

Weierstrass's Preparation Theorem. For an element $f = \sum c_{i_1 \dots i_n} X_1^{i_1} \dots X_n^{i_n} \in K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$, assume that $c_{0 \dots 0 i} = 0$ for $i = 0, 1, \dots, r-1$ and $c_{0 \dots 0 r} \neq 0$. Then for an arbitrary element g of $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$, there exists a unique $q \in K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$ such that $g - qf \in \sum_{i=0}^{r-1} X_n^i K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_{n-1} \rangle\rangle$. In particular (considering the case where $g = X_n^r$), there is an invertible element u of $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$ such that $fu = f_0 + f_1 X_n + \dots + f_{r-1} X_n^{r-1} + X_n^r$ ($f_i \in K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_{n-1} \rangle\rangle$).

By this theorem, we see easily that if \mathfrak{a} is an ideal of † height h of $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$, then $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle/\mathfrak{a}$ is isomorphic to a ring that is a finite module over $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_{n-h} \rangle\rangle$.

If \mathfrak{p} is a † prime ideal of $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$, then $\mathfrak{p}K[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$ is a prime ideal.

The Jacobian Criterion. Let K be a field, and let R be the ring of polynomials $K[X_1, \dots, X_n]$, the ring of formal power series $K[[X_1, \dots, X_n]]$, or the ring of convergent power series $K\langle\langle X_1, \dots, X_n \rangle\rangle$ in n variables X_1, \dots, X_n over K . † Partial derivatives $\partial/\partial X_i$ are well defined in R . For $f_1, \dots, f_r \in R$, a † Jacobian matrix $J(f_1, \dots, f_r)$ is defined to be the $t \times n$ matrix whose (i, j) -entry is $\partial f_i / \partial X_j$. Let \mathfrak{p} be a † prime divisor of the ideal $\sum_i f_i R$, and let \mathfrak{q} be a prime ideal containing \mathfrak{p} . If the † rank of $(J(f_1, \dots, f_r))$ modulo \mathfrak{q} is equal to the height of \mathfrak{p} , then the ring $R_{\mathfrak{q}}/\sum_i f_i R_{\mathfrak{q}}$ is a regular local ring. The converse is also true if K is a † perfect field (if K is not a perfect field, then, modifying $J(f_1, \dots, f_r)$, we can have a similar criterion [1]).

C. Hensel Rings

A **Hensel ring** (or **Henselian ring**) is a commutative ring with unity element satisfying the

following two conditions: (i) R has only one maximal ideal \mathfrak{m} (i.e., R is a 'quasilocal ring); and (ii) if f, g_0, h_0 are monic polynomials in one variable x (here, a polynomial in x is called monic if the coefficient of the term of the highest degree is 1) such that $f - g_0 h_0 \in \mathfrak{m}R[x]$, $g_0 R[x] + h_0 R[x] + \mathfrak{m}R[x] = R[x]$, then there are monic polynomials $g, h \in R[x]$ such that $f = gh$ and $g \equiv g_0, h \equiv h_0$ modulo \mathfrak{m} .

Important examples of Hensel rings are complete local rings, rings of convergent power series, and † complete valuation rings. When R is a Hensel ring, a commutative ring R' with unity element such that R' is a finite R -module is the direct sum of a finite number of Hensel rings. For any quasilocal ring Q , there exists a Hensel ring \tilde{Q} , called the **Henselization** of Q (for details \rightarrow [1]), for which the following statements hold: (i) \tilde{Q} is a † faithfully flat Q -module; (ii) if \mathfrak{m} is the maximal ideal of Q , then the maximal ideal of \tilde{Q} is $\mathfrak{m}\tilde{Q}$, and $\tilde{Q}/\mathfrak{m}\tilde{Q} = Q/\mathfrak{m}Q$; (iii) if R is a Hensel ring that contains Q and has a maximal ideal \mathfrak{n} , and $\mathfrak{n} \cap Q = \mathfrak{m}$, then there is one and only one Q -homomorphism φ of \tilde{Q} into R ; (iv) if Q is a † normal ring, then the Q -homomorphism φ is an injection; (v) if Q is a local ring, then \tilde{Q} is also a local ring, and Q is dense in \tilde{Q} .

References

[1] M. Nagata, Local rings, Interscience, 1962 (Krieger, 1975).
[2] O. Zariski and P. Samuel, Commutative algebra II, Van Nostrand, 1960; new edition, Springer, 1975.

371 (XVIII.10)
Robust and Nonparametric Methods

A. General Remarks

Robust and nonparametric or distribution-free methods are statistical procedures specifically devised to deal with broad families of probability distributions.

In the theory of statistical inference it is usual to assume that the probability distribution of the population from which the observed values are chosen at random is specified exactly except for a small number of unknown parameters (\rightarrow 401 Statistical Inference). In practical applications, however, it often happens that the assumptions made for the model,

especially those about the shape of the distribution, may not hold for the actual data. In such cases robust and/or nonparametric procedures that do not require exact knowledge of the shape of the distribution and yet prove to be relatively efficient or valid are required. The term **nonparametric** or **distribution-free** is used for problems of testing hypotheses, and the term **robust** is mainly used for problems of point estimation (— 396 Statistic; 399 Statistical Estimation; 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing).

Although the idea of the sign test appears in the work of J. Arbuthnot (1710), the theoretical foundation for nonparametric tests was first given in the proposals for the permutation test by R. A. Fisher (1935), the rank test by F. Wilcoxon (1945), and the test based on U -statistics by H. B. Mann and D. R. Whitney (1947). In the years that followed two important ideas appeared: the concept of asymptotic relative efficiency by E. J. G. Pitman (1948) and the development of the theory of U -statistics by W. Hoeffding (1948). H. Chernoff and I. R. Savage (1958) showed, in studying the asymptotic distribution of a class of rank statistics, that the asymptotic efficiencies of nonparametric tests are incredibly high. These findings accelerated the studies of nonparametric tests; recent progress is summarized in the books by J. Hájek and Z. Šidák [1], M. L. Puri and P. K. Sen [2], R. H. Randles and D. A. Wolfe [3], and P. J. Huber [6].

On the other hand, G. E. P. Box (1953) first coined the term robustness in his sensitivity studies, in which he investigated how the standard statistical procedures obtained under certain assumptions are influenced when such assumptions are violated. Two papers by J. W. Tukey (1960, 1962) provided the initial foundation for robust estimation. J. L. Hodges and E. L. Lehmann (1963) noticed that estimators of location could be derived from nonparametric tests and that these estimators have sometimes much higher efficiency than the sample mean. A similar study for scale was made by S. Kakeshita and T. Yanagawa (1967). Huber (1964) proposed an estimator of location by generalizing the method of least squares. Along with the idea of the influence curve introduced by F. R. Hampel (1974) the estimator proposed by Huber has become a core of subsequent studies of robust estimation. K. Takeuchi (1971) proposed an adaptive estimate that is asymptotically fully efficient for a wide class of underlying distribution functions. The developments of the theory of robust estimation are reviewed by Huber [4–6] and R. V. Hogg [7]. Various proposed estimators are compared in the book by D. F. Andrews et al. [8].

B. The One-Sample Problem

Let $F(x)$ be a †distribution function of a †random variable X , (X_1, \dots, X_n) be an independent random sample of size n from $F(x)$, and (x_1, \dots, x_n) be an observed sample value. The 100 p percentile of F is denoted by ξ_p , i.e., $F(\xi_p) = p$. For testing the †hypothesis $H: \xi_p \leq \xi^0$ against the †alternative hypothesis $A: \xi_p > \xi^0$, the following procedure is proposed. Let $i(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ be the number of x_i that are greater than ξ^0 . A test procedure by the following †test function φ is †uniformly most powerful in some neighborhood of $\xi_p = \xi^0$ for the double exponential distribution, where $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is defined by the equations

$$\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{when } i(x_1, \dots, x_n) > c, \\ a & \text{when } i(x_1, \dots, x_n) = c, \\ 0 & \text{when } i(x_1, \dots, x_n) < c \end{cases}$$

($0 < a < 1, 0 \leq c \leq n$). This procedure is called the **sign test**.

Suppose that $F(x)$ is symmetric about $x = \xi_{1/2}$. Let R_i^+ be the rank of $|X_i - \xi^0|$ among $|X_1 - \xi^0|, \dots, |X_n - \xi^0|$, and let $\Psi(t) = 1, 0$ according as $t > 0, \leq 0$. Set

$$S_n(X_1, \dots, X_n) = \sum_{i=1}^n a_n(R_i^+) \Psi(X_i - \xi^0)$$

for some weights $a_n(1), \dots, a_n(n)$. The following procedure φ , called the **signed rank test**, is also used for testing the hypothesis $H: \xi_{1/2} \leq \xi^0$ against the alternative hypothesis $A: \xi_{1/2} > \xi^0$:

$$\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{when } S_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) > c, \\ a & \text{when } S_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) = c, \\ 0 & \text{when } S_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) < c. \end{cases}$$

The procedure with $a_n(i) = i$ is frequently used and is called the **Wilcoxon signed rank test**, which is the uniformly most powerful rank test in a neighborhood of $\xi_{1/2} = \xi^0$ for $F(x) = 1/(1 + e^{-x})$, the logistic distribution.

C. The Two-Sample Problem

Let F and G be continuous distribution functions of random variables X and Y , respectively, (X_1, \dots, X_m) and (Y_1, \dots, Y_n) be the corresponding random samples, and (x_1, \dots, x_m) and (y_1, \dots, y_n) be the respective sample values. Consider the problem of testing the hypothesis $H: F(x) \equiv G(x)$ against the alternative hypothesis $A_1: F(x) \not\equiv G(x)$ or $A_2: F(x) \geq G(x)$ for all x and $F(x) \neq G(x)$. When the alternative hypothesis A_2 is true, we say that the random variable Y is **stochastically larger** than X and write $F > G$. A frequently used example of such an alternative hypothesis A_2 is $G(x) = F(x - \theta)$, θ

> 0 . Let \mathcal{K} be the family of all strictly increasing continuous functions. Then the hypothesis H and the alternative hypothesis A_2 are invariant under the group of transformations of the form $x'_i = h(x_i)$, $y'_j = h(y_j)$ ($i = 1, \dots, m$; $j = 1, \dots, n$; $h \in \mathcal{K}$). The †maximal invariant statistic in this case is the rank (R_1, \dots, R_m) of (X_1, \dots, X_m) or the rank (S_1, \dots, S_n) of (Y_1, \dots, Y_n) when the combined sample $(X_1, \dots, X_m; Y_1, \dots, Y_n)$ is ordered in an ascending order. If a test function $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_m; y_1, \dots, y_n)$ satisfies $P_\varphi(F, F) \leq \alpha$ and $P_\varphi(F, G) \geq \alpha$ for any $F > G$, then φ is considered a desirable test, where

$$P_\varphi(F, G) = \int \dots \int \varphi(x_1, \dots, x_m; y_1, \dots, y_n) \times \prod_i dF(x_i) \prod_j dG(y_j).$$

Lehmann's Theorem. If φ satisfies the conditions stating that $y_j^* > y_j$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$) yield $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_m; y_1^*, \dots, y_n^*) \geq \varphi(x_1, \dots, x_m; y_1, \dots, y_n)$, then $P_\varphi(F, G) \geq P_\varphi(F, F)$. If in addition φ is a †similar test, then φ is unbiased (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing C).

The **Wilcoxon test** (or the **Mann-Whitney U-test**) is described by a test function $\varphi = 1$ when $U \geq c$ and $\varphi = 0$ when $U < c$, where U is a †U-statistic defined by

$$U = \frac{1}{mn} \sum_{i=1}^m \sum_{j=1}^n \psi(x_i, y_j)$$

with $\psi(x, y) = 1$ when $x \leq y$ and $\psi(x, y) = 0$ when $x > y$. This test is similar and unbiased.

Testing the hypothesis $H: F = G$ against the alternative hypothesis $A: F \neq G = F(x/\sigma)$, $\sigma > 1$, is another two-sample problem, for which the following test was proposed by T. Tamura. The test function is given by $\varphi = 1$ for $U \geq c$ and $\varphi = 0$ for $U < c$, where $U = \binom{m}{2}^{-1} \binom{n}{2}^{-1} \sum_{i < i'} \sum_{j < j'} \psi(x_i, x_{i'}, y_j, y_{j'})$ with $\psi(u, u'; v, v') = 1$ when $v < u < v'$, $v < u' < v'$ or $v' < u < v$, $v' < u' < v$ and $\psi(u, u'; v, v') = 0$ otherwise.

The following statistic T_N is used frequently in nonparametric problems. Let $x_1, \dots, x_m; y_1, \dots, y_n$ be arranged in order of magnitude. Set $z_k = +1$ or 0 when the k th value ($k = 1, 2, \dots, n+m$) in the arrangement is an x_i or y_j , respectively. For a given set of $N = n+m$ reals $\{e_k\}$, T_N is defined by $T_N = m^{-1} \sum_{k=1}^N e_k z_k$. Set $H_N(x) = \lambda_N F_m(x) + (1 - \lambda_N) G_n(x)$, where $F_m(x)$ and $G_n(x)$ are the †empirical distribution functions based on (x_1, \dots, x_m) and (y_1, \dots, y_n) , respectively, and $0 < \lambda_0 \leq \lambda_N = m/N \leq 1 - \lambda_0 < 1$. Then T_N is represented by the integral

$$\int J_N(H_N(x)) dF_m(x)$$

with $e_k = J_N(k/N)$. Chernoff and Savage [9] proved that under some regularity conditions the asymptotic distribution of T_N is normal and that the asymptotic mean μ and the vari-

ance σ^2 of T_N are given by

$$\begin{aligned} \mu &= \int J(H(x)) dF(x), \\ N\sigma^2 &= 2(1 - \lambda) \left\{ \iint_{x < y} G(x)(1 - G(y)) \right. \\ &\quad \times J'(H(x))J'(H(y)) dF(x) dF(y) \\ &\quad + \frac{1 - \lambda}{\lambda} \iint_{x < y} F(x)(1 - F(y)) \\ &\quad \times J'(H(x))J'(H(y)) dG(x) dG(y) \Big\}, \end{aligned}$$

where $J(H) = \lim_{N \rightarrow \infty} J_N(H)$, $H(x) = \lambda F(x) + (1 - \lambda)G(x)$, and $\lambda = \lim \lambda_N$. When $e_k = k/N$, the statistic T_N is equivalent to the †U-statistic in the Wilcoxon test. When e_k is the mean $E(Z_k)$ of the k th order statistic Z_k in an independent sample of size N from $N(0, 1)$, then the test by T_N is called the **Fisher-Yates-Terry normal score test**. When J is the inverse function of the distribution function of $N(0, 1)$, then the test is called the **van der Waerden test**.

D. The k -Sample Problem

Let $(X_{ij}, j = 1, \dots, n_i)$ be a random sample of size n_i from the population with a distribution function $F_i(x)$ for each $i = 1, \dots, k$. The **k -sample problem** is concerned with testing the hypothesis $H: F_1(x) = \dots = F_k(x)$ against an alternative hypothesis A_1 : not all the $F_i(x)$ are equal, $A_2: F_i(x) = F(x - \theta_i)$ with $\theta_i \neq \theta$, or $A_3: F_i(x) = F(x/\sigma_i)$ with $\sigma_i \neq \sigma$. Several tests have been proposed for this problem, using quadratic forms of the vector-valued U -statistic $\mathbf{U} = (U^1, \dots, U^k)$ whose coordinates U^i are defined by means of a function

$$\psi^i(x_{11}, \dots, x_{1m_1}; \dots; x_{k1}, \dots, x_{km_k}), \quad i = 1, \dots, k.$$

When $N = \sum n_i \rightarrow \infty$ with $n_i = \rho_i N$, $0 < \rho_i < 1$, and $\sum \rho_i = 1$, then

$$\mathbf{V} = (\sqrt{N}(U^1 - E(U^1)), \dots, \sqrt{N}(U^k - E(U^k)))$$

has asymptotically a †multivariate normal distribution $N(0, \Sigma)$. Let B be the projection matrix corresponding to the eigenspace for the zero eigenvalues of the matrix Σ , and let Λ be a matrix such that $\Lambda B = 0$, $\Sigma \Lambda = I - B$. The statistic $\mathbf{V} \Lambda^t \mathbf{V}$ has asymptotically a †noncentral chi-square distribution with degrees of freedom = rank Σ . Several kinds of test represented by a critical region of the form $\mathbf{V} \Lambda^t \mathbf{V} > c$ are proposed, among which the **Kruskal-Wallis test** is a particular one having

$$\psi^i(x_1; \dots; x_k) = \sum_x \frac{1}{n_i n_x} \delta(x_x, x_i), \quad i = 1, \dots, k,$$

as basic functions, where $\delta(x, y) = 1$ when $x < y$ and $\delta(x, y) = 0$ otherwise.

E. Asymptotic Relative Efficiency of Tests

If there is more than one test procedure for a given testing problem, then one may wish to compare these procedures. Let $\{\varphi_n\}$ and $\{\psi_n\}$ be two sequences of level α tests, where φ_n and ψ_n are test functions based on a sample of size n . The power functions of φ_n and ψ_n are denoted by $\beta(\theta|\varphi_n)$ and $\beta(\theta|\psi_n)$, respectively. Let θ be a real parameter and $\{\theta_i\}$ be such that $\theta_i \rightarrow \theta_0$ as $i \rightarrow \infty$. Consider a hypothesis $\theta = \theta_0$ and a sequence $\{\theta_i\}$ of alternative hypotheses. If, for any increasing sequences $\{n_i\}$ and $\{n_i^*\}$ of positive integers satisfying $\alpha < \lim \beta(\theta_i|\varphi_{n_i}) = \lim \beta(\theta_i|\psi_{n_i^*}) < 1$, $\lim n_i^*/n_i = e$ ($\{\varphi_n\}, \{\psi_n\}$, say) exists and is independent of α and $\lim \beta(\theta_i|\varphi_{n_i})$, then e is called Pitman's asymptotic relative efficiency of $\{\varphi_n\}$ against $\{\psi_n\}$. Suppose further that the tests $\{\varphi_n\}$ and $\{\psi_n\}$ are based on statistics $T_n = t_n(\mathbf{X})$ and $T_n^* = t_n^*(\mathbf{X})$, respectively, in the following manner:

$$\varphi_n(\mathbf{x}) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{when } t_n(\mathbf{x}) > c, \\ a & \text{when } t_n(\mathbf{x}) = c, \\ 0 & \text{when } t_n(\mathbf{x}) < c, \end{cases}$$
$$\psi_n(\mathbf{x}) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{when } t_n^*(\mathbf{x}) > c^*, \\ b & \text{when } t_n^*(\mathbf{x}) = c^*, \\ 0 & \text{when } t_n^*(\mathbf{x}) < c^*, \end{cases}$$

where $\mathbf{X} = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ and $\mathbf{x} = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$. Put $\theta_0 = 0$ and $\theta_n = k/\sqrt{n}$ ($k = \text{constant}$) for simplicity. If T_n and T_n^* are asymptotically normal, then under some conditions e is given by the formula

$$e = \lim \frac{(dE_\theta(T_n)/d\theta|_{\theta=0})^2 \sigma_0^2(T_n^*)}{(dE_\theta(T_n^*)/d\theta|_{\theta=0})^2 \sigma_0^2(T_n)}.$$

As an example, consider a two-sample problem on a location parameter. If the population distribution is normal and the Wilcoxon test is used to test the hypothesis of equality of means, then its asymptotic relative efficiency against Student's test is $3/\pi$. For the same problem, the asymptotic relative efficiencies of the Fisher-Yates-Terry normal score test and the van der Waerden test against Student's test are both unity. For the hypothesis of equality of means in the k -sample problem, the asymptotic relative efficiency of the Kruskal-Wallis test against the F -test is $3/\pi$, provided that the sample is distributed normally.

F. Kolmogorov-Smirnov Tests

Let $F_n(x)$ be the empirical distribution function based on a random sample of size n from

$F_0(x)$. Set

$$d_n = \sup |F_n(x) - F_0(x)|,$$

$$D_n = \sup (F_n(x) - F_0(x)),$$

$$s_n = \sup_{a \leq F_0(x)} \left| \frac{F_n(x) - F_0(x)}{F_0(x)} \right|,$$

$$S_n = \sup_{a \leq F_0(x)} \frac{F_n(x) - F_0(x)}{F_0(x)}.$$

Then

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_r(d_n < z/\sqrt{n}) = L(z)$$

$$= \sum_{k=-\infty}^{\infty} (-1)^k e^{-2k^2 z^2},$$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_r(D_n < z/\sqrt{n}) = K(z) = 1 - e^{-2z^2},$$

$$P_r(D_n < D) = 1 - D \sum_{j=0}^{[n(1-D)]} \binom{n}{j} \times \left(1 - D - \frac{j}{n}\right)^{n-j} \left(D + \frac{j}{n}\right)^{j-1},$$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_r(s_n < z/\sqrt{n}) = \frac{4}{\pi} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (-1)^k \times (2k+1)^{-1} e^{-((2k+1)^2 \pi^2/8)((1-a)/a)z^2},$$

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_r(S_n < z/\sqrt{n}) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \int_0^{z\sqrt{a/(1-a)}} e^{-t^2/2} dt.$$

The statistics d_n, D_n, s_n, S_n are frequently used to test the hypothesis $F(x) = F_0(x)$. (This problem is called testing goodness of fit.)

In a two-sample problem, let $F_m(x)$ and $G_n(x)$ be two empirical distribution functions based on samples of sizes m and n from $F(x)$ and $G(x)$, respectively. Set

$$d_{m,n} = \sup |F_m(x) - G_n(x)|,$$

$$D_{m,n} = \sup (F_m(x) - G_n(x)).$$

If the hypothesis $F = G$ is true, we have

$$\lim P_r(d_{m,n} < z/\sqrt{N}) = L(z),$$

$$\lim P_r(D_{m,n} < z/\sqrt{N}) = K(z),$$

provided that m and n tend to ∞ so that $N = mn/(m+n) \rightarrow \infty$ and m/n is constant. Taking account of these facts, $d_{m,n}$ and $D_{m,n}$ are used to test the hypothesis $F = G$. The tests using the statistics $d_n, D_n, d_{m,n}, D_{m,n}$ are called **Kolmogorov-Smirnov tests**.

G. Interval Estimation

Let (X_1, \dots, X_n) be an independent random sample from the population with a distribution function $F(x - \theta)$, where θ is an unknown location parameter, and (x_1, \dots, x_n) be its observed value. Suppose that $F(x)$ is continuous and symmetric about the origin.

Using the statistic $S_n = S(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ for the one-sample nonparametric test for testing the hypothesis $H: \theta = 0$, a γ -confidence interval of θ is constructed as follows. For an appropriately given γ ($0 < \gamma < 1$), select constants d_1 and d_2 in the range of $S(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ that satisfy

$$P_0\{d_1 < S(X_1, \dots, X_n) < d_2\} = 1 - \gamma,$$

where P_0 means the probability under the hypothesis $H: \theta = 0$. If there exist statistics $L_s(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ and $U_s(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ such that $L_s(x_1, \dots, x_n) \leq \theta < U_s(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ if and only if $d_1 < S(x_1 - \theta, \dots, x_n - \theta) < d_2$ for all θ , then the confidence interval of θ with $100(1 - \gamma)\%$ confidence coefficient is given by $(L_s(x_1, \dots, x_n), U_s(x_1, \dots, x_n))$. This interval is distribution-free, i.e., it holds that

$$P\{L_s(X_1, \dots, X_n) < \theta < U_s(X_1, \dots, X_n)\} = 1 - \gamma$$

for all F .

When S_n is the statistic for the Wilcoxon signed rank test, L_s and U_s are given by $L_s = W_{(M+1-d_2)}$ and $U_s = W_{(M-d_1)}$, where $M = n(n+1)/2$ and $W_{(1)} \leq \dots \leq W_{(M)}$ are ordered values for M averages $(x_i + x_j)/2$ ($i \leq j = 1, 2, \dots, n$).

H. Point Estimation

Let (X_1, \dots, X_n) be an independent random sample from the population with a distribution function $F(x - \theta)$, where θ is an unknown location parameter, and let (x_1, \dots, x_n) be its observed value.

There are four methods of constructing robust estimators of θ . Let $X_{(1)} < \dots < X_{(n)}$ be ordered values of X_1, \dots, X_n . The first method is to use $T_n = a_1 X_{(1)} + \dots + a_n X_{(n)}$ for some given constants a_1, \dots, a_n such that $\sum_{i=1}^n a_i = 1$. T_n is called the **L-estimator**. An example is

$$T_n(\alpha) = (pX_{([xn]+1)} + X_{([xn]+2)} + \dots + pX_{(n-[xn])})/n(1 - 2\alpha),$$

where $p = 1 + [xn] - xn$. This estimator is called the **α -trimmed mean**. Let J be a real-valued function such that $\int_0^1 J(t) dt = 1$, and set $a_k = \int_{(k-1)/n}^k J(t) dt$; then as $n \rightarrow \infty$, T_n converges to $T(F) = \int_0^1 J(t) F^{-1}(t) dt$ in probability. Suppose that F is a distribution function having an \dagger absolutely continuous density function f . Denote the derivative of f by f' , and let $I(F)$ be the \dagger Fisher information on θ . Set $\psi(t) = -f'(t)/f(t)$ and $J(t) = \psi'(F^{-1}(t))/I(F)$. Then Chernoff, J. L. Gastwirth, and M. V. Johns [10] proved that under some regularity conditions T_n is an \dagger asymptotically efficient estimator of θ for F .

Let ρ be a real-valued (usually convex) function of a real parameter with derivative $\psi = \rho'$. The second method is to estimate θ by T_n

by minimizing $\sum_{i=1}^n \rho(x_i - T_n)$ or by satisfying

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \psi(x_i - T_n) = 0.$$

T_n is called the **M-estimator**. When $\rho(t) = t^2$, it agrees with the least squares estimator. Let $\Phi(x)$ be the distribution function of the standard normal distribution, $H(x)$ be an arbitrary continuous distribution function which is symmetric about the origin, \mathcal{F} be a class of distribution functions of the form $F(x) = (1 - \varepsilon)\Phi(x) + \varepsilon H(x)$ for a given ε ($0 < \varepsilon < 1$), and $V(\rho, F)$ be the asymptotic variance of T_n . Huber [11] proved that ρ minimizing $\sup_{F \in \mathcal{F}} V(\rho, F)$ is given by $\rho_K(t) = t^2/2$, $K|t| - K^2/2$ defined for $|t| \leq K$, $> K$, respectively, for some constant K . Under quite general conditions, the **M-estimator** converges as $n \rightarrow \infty$ to $T(F)$ in probability, which is defined by $\int \psi(x - T(F)) dF(x) = 0$. If $\psi(t) = -f'(t)/f(t)$ is chosen for $\psi(x)$, then T_n is the \dagger maximum likelihood estimator of θ for F and is asymptotically efficient under some regularity conditions. Generally, the **M-estimator** defined above is not scale invariant. A scale invariant version of the **M-estimator** is obtained by replacing the defining equation by

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \psi\left(\frac{x_i - T_n}{S_n}\right) = 0, \quad (1)$$

where S_n is any robust estimate of scale, e.g., the median of $\{|x_i - M|/0.6745\}_{i=1,2,\dots,n}$ where M is the sample median, or by solving the simultaneous equations (1) and

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \chi\left(\frac{x_i - T_n}{S_n}\right) = 0$$

with respect to T_n and S_n . In the context of the maximum likelihood estimation, χ is chosen to be $\chi(t) = t\psi(t) - 1$ (\rightarrow 399 Statistical Estimation P).

The third method employs nonparametric tests for testing the hypothesis $H: \theta = 0$ against the alternative hypothesis $A: \theta > 0$. Let J be a real-valued and nondecreasing function such that $\int_0^1 J(t) dt = 0$ and $R_k^+(\theta)$ be the rank of $|X_k - \theta|$ among $|X_1 - \theta|, \dots, |X_n - \theta|$. Set $\Psi(t) = 1, 0$ according as $t > 0, \leq 0$ and $S(X_1 - \theta, \dots, X_n - \theta) = \sum_{k=1}^n J((R_k^+(\theta) + n)/(2n + 1))\Psi(X_k - \theta)$. Let

$$\theta^* = \sup\{\theta; S(X_1 - \theta, \dots, X_n - \theta) > \mu\},$$

$$\theta^{**} = \inf\{\theta; S(X_1 - \theta, \dots, X_n - \theta) < \mu\},$$

where μ is the expected value of $S(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ under the hypothesis $H: \theta = 0$. Then an estimator of θ is defined by $T_n = (\theta^* + \theta^{**})/2$. Hodges and Lehmann [12] first proposed this technique, and this estimator is called the **R-estimator**. When $F(x)$ is symmetric about the origin and $J(t) = t - \frac{1}{2}$, S tends to be the statistic for the Wilcoxon signed rank test, and the

R -estimator reduces to the median of $n(n+1)/2$ averages $(X_i + X_j)/2$ ($1 \leq i \leq j \leq n$). As $n \rightarrow \infty$, the R -estimator converges in probability to $T(F)$, defined by

$$\int J\left(\frac{F(x) + 1 - F(2T(F) - x)}{2}\right) dF(x) = 0.$$

For symmetric F , the R -estimator defined by the statistic S with $J(t) = -f'(F^{-1}(t))/f(F^{-1}(t))$ is asymptotically efficient under some regularity conditions.

Although the above three methods provide robust estimators, which are seldom affected by outlying observations or contamination by gross errors, their behavior still depends on F . The last method of constructing robust estimators consists of estimating θ adaptively by utilizing information on the shape of F . Among these, a striking one is the asymptotically fully efficient estimator for a wide class of F proposed by Takeuchi [13]. The estimator is constructed by using subsamples of size K ($K < n$) drawn from the original sample, estimating the elements of the covariance matrix of the order statistics by U -statistics, and selecting the best weights of the L -estimator. L. A. Jaeckel [14] made an α -trimmed mean adaptive estimator by selecting an α that minimizes the estimated asymptotic variance.

I. The Influence Curve

Let $T(F)$ be a functional of a distribution function F , and let an estimator T_n of θ calculated from an empirical distribution function F_n converge to $T(F)$ in probability as $n \rightarrow \infty$. A real-valued function $IC(x; F, T)$ defined by

$$IC(x; F, T) = \lim_{\varepsilon \rightarrow 0} \frac{T((1-\varepsilon)F + \varepsilon\delta_x) - T(F)}{\varepsilon}$$

for all x

is called the **influence curve**, where δ_x is the distribution function of a point mass 1 at x . The curve was first introduced by Hampel [15] to study the stability aspect of estimators against a small change of F . As an example, when F is symmetric about the origin, the influence curve for the α -trimmed mean $IC(x; F, T)$ is given by

$$\begin{aligned} F^{-1}(\alpha)/(1-2\alpha) & \quad \text{when } x < F^{-1}(\alpha), \\ x/(1-2\alpha) & \quad \text{when } F^{-1}(\alpha) \leq x \leq F^{-1}(1-\alpha), \\ F^{-1}(1-\alpha)/(1-2\alpha) & \quad \text{when } x > F^{-1}(1-\alpha). \end{aligned}$$

By substituting the empirical distribution function F_n for F in $T(F)$, we can represent the robust estimators discussed in Section H, at

least approximately, by $T_n = T(F_n)$. Under some conditions, it can be proved that as $n \rightarrow \infty$,

$$n^{1/2}(T(F_n) - T(F) - \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^n IC(X_i; F, T)) \rightarrow 0$$

in probability. Thus it follows that $n^{1/2}(T_n - T(F))$ is asymptotically normally distributed with asymptotic variance $\int (IC(x; F, T))^2 dF(x)$.

J. The Regression Problem

Consider the linear regression problem (\rightarrow 403 Statistical Models D)

$$X_i = \sum_{j=1}^p \theta_j a_{ij} + \varepsilon_i, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

where the X_i are observable variables, the θ_j are regression coefficients to be estimated, the a_{ij} are given constants, and $\varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2, \dots, \varepsilon_n$ are identically and independently distributed random errors whose distribution function is given by $F(x)$. The idea of the M -estimator is a direct generalization of the method of least squares; namely, to adopt $(\hat{\theta}_1, \dots, \hat{\theta}_p)$ as an estimator for $(\theta_1, \dots, \theta_p)$ that minimizes $\sum_{i=1}^n \rho(X_i - \sum_{j=1}^p \theta_j a_{ij})$ for some function ρ such as the one described above.

R -estimators of the regression coefficients are obtained by minimizing $\sum_{i=1}^n a_n(R_i) \Delta_i$, where $\Delta_i = X_i - \sum_{j=1}^p \theta_j a_{ij}$, R_i is the rank of Δ_i among $\Delta_1, \dots, \Delta_n$, and $a_n(\cdot)$ is some monotone function satisfying $\sum_{i=1}^n a_n(i) = 0$. It has been proved that minimizing $\sum_{i=1}^n a_n(R_i) \Delta_i$ is asymptotically equivalent to minimizing

$$\sum_{j=1}^p \left| \sum_{i=1}^n a_n(R_i) a_{ij} \right|,$$

the properties of which were first studied by J. Jurečková [16].

K. Dependence

Let $(X_1, Y_1), \dots, (X_n, Y_n)$ be random samples from a population with a bivariate distribution function, R_i be the rank of X_i among X_1, \dots, X_n when they are rearranged in an ascending order, and S_j be the rank of Y_j among Y_1, \dots, Y_n defined similarly as R_i . Various quantities are devised to measure the degree of dependence between X and Y .

(1) Spearman's Rank Correlation. Set $d_i = R_i - S_i$. Then $r_s = 1 - 6 \sum_{i=1}^n d_i^2 / (n^3 - n)$ is called **Spearman's rank correlation**. If there is no dependence between X and Y , i.e., if the X_i and Y_j are independent random variables, then $E(r_s) = 0$ and $V(r_s) = (n-1)^{-1}$.

(2) Kendall's Rank Correlation. Take pairs (R_i, S_i) and (R_j, S_j) . If $(R_j - R_i)(S_j - S_i) > 0$, set

$\varphi_{ij} = 1$; otherwise, $\varphi_{ij} = -1$. The statistic $r_k = \binom{n}{2}^{-1} \sum \varphi_{ij}$ is called **Kendall's rank correlation**, where \sum runs over all possible pairs chosen from $(R_1, S_1), \dots, (R_n, S_n)$.

If there is no dependence between X and Y , then $E(r_k) = 0$ and $V(r_k) = 2(2n+5)/(9n(n-1))$.

(3) **Rankit Correlation.** R_i and S_i , $i = 1, \dots, n$, are replaced by the corresponding normal scores, i.e., the means of order statistics in an independent sample of size n from $N(0, 1)$; then the usual sample correlation coefficient is calculated from these scores. This correlation coefficient r_R is called rankit correlation; and if there is no dependence between X and Y , then $E(z) = 0$, $V(z) = (n-3)^{-1}$, asymptotically, where $z = \frac{1}{2} \log \frac{1+r_R}{1-r_R}$ (Fisher's z -transformation).

These statistics are used to test the hypothesis of independence.

References

- [1] J. Hájek and Z. Šidák, *Theory of rank tests*, Academic Press, 1967.
- [2] M. L. Puri and P. K. Sen, *Nonparametric methods in multivariate analysis*, Wiley, 1971.
- [3] R. H. Randles and D. A. Wolfe, *Introduction to the theory of nonparametric statistics*, Wiley, 1979.
- [4] P. J. Huber, *Robust statistics: A review*, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 43 (1972), 1041–1067.
- [5] P. J. Huber, *Robust regression: Asymptotics, conjectures and Monte Carlo*, *Ann. Statist.*, 1 (1973), 799–821.
- [6] P. J. Huber, *Robust statistics*, Wiley, 1981.
- [7] R. V. Hogg, *Adaptive robust procedures: A partial review and some suggestions for future applications and theory*, *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.*, 69 (1974), 909–923.
- [8] D. F. Andrews, P. J. Bickel, F. R. Hampel, P. J. Huber, W. H. Rogers, and J. W. Tukey, *Robust estimates of location: Survey and advances*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1972.
- [9] H. Chernoff and I. R. Savage, *Asymptotic normality and efficiency of certain nonparametric test statistics*, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 29 (1958), 972–994.
- [10] H. Chernoff, J. L. Gastwirth, and M. V. Johns, *Asymptotic distribution of linear combinations of functions of order statistics with application to estimation*, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 38 (1967), 52–72.
- [11] P. J. Huber, *Robust estimation of a location parameter*, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 35 (1964), 73–101.
- [12] J. L. Hodges and E. L. Lehmann, *Estimates of location based on rank tests*, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 34 (1963), 598–611.

[13] K. Takeuchi, *A uniformly asymptotically efficient estimator of a location parameter*, *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.*, 66 (1971), 292–301.

[14] L. A. Jaeckel, *Some flexible estimates of location*, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 42 (1971), 1540–1552.

[15] F. R. Hampel, *The influence curve and its role in robust estimation*, *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.*, 69 (1974), 383–393.

[16] J. Jurečková, *Nonparametric estimate of regression coefficients*, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 42 (1971), 1328–1338.

372 (XXI.3) Roman and Medieval Mathematics

The Romans were interested in mathematics for everyday use; their arithmetic consisted of computation (by means of the **abacus**), weights and measures, and money. For their monetary system, they developed a computational method using duodecimal fractions. Julius Caesar (102?–44 B.C.), known for his calendar reform in 46 B.C., also undertook to measure his territory, which aroused a demand for land surveying techniques. Books on practical geometry which provided this knowledge were called *gromatics* (a “groma” was a land surveying instrument). Toward the end of the Western Roman Empire (476), Greek mathematics was studied; during this period Boethius (c. 480–524) wrote his two books on arithmetic and geometry. The former was a summarized translation of Nichomachus’ book, and the latter included propositions from the first three books of Euclid’s *Elements* (without proof) and practical geometry.

Music, astronomy, geometry, and arithmetic, which constituted the “mathemata” of Plato’s Academy (closed in 529), were treated as the “quadrivium” (the four major subjects) in the *Encyclopedia* of Martianus Capella, Cassiodorus, Isidorus, Hispalensis, and others. After the establishment of the Roman Church in the 5th century, the quadrivium was to be studied for the glory of God. Books on mathematics from this period laid emphasis on the computation of an ecclesiastical calendar and mystical interpretations of integers, as seen in books by Bede Venerabilis, Alcuin, and Maurus from the 7th through 9th centuries.

Arabian science was imported first through Spain—under Moorish influence beginning in 711, the year of the fall of the Visigoths—and then through the Crusades (1096–1270). Computation with figures, originating in India, replaced the abacus in the 12th century, when

Arabian books on arithmetic and algebra, along with Greek books on geometry and astronomy (such as books by Euclid and Ptolemy), were translated into Latin. Italian merchants, whose occupation necessitated computation, rapidly adopted the new system. Representative books of this period are *Liber abaci* (1202) and *Practica geometrica* (1220) by Leonardo da Pisa (also known as Fibonacci, c. 1170–1250). The former includes the four arithmetic operations, showing Indian influence, commercial arithmetic, and algebra. The new methods were not limited to merchants. The French bishop Nicole Oresme (c. 1323–1382), who influenced Leonardo da Vinci (1452–1519), introduced fractional exponents and conceived the graphic representation of temperature, a precursor of coordinates and functions.

From the 11th century, universities developed from theological seminaries, first in Italian cities such as Bologna and Palermo, and later in Paris, Oxford, and Cambridge. Mathematics was taught in these universities, although no remarkable creative contributions were made. However, theologians such as Albertus Magnus (c. 1193–1280) and Thomas Aquinas (1225?–1274) discussed infinity in a way that went beyond Greek thought and thus helped to lay a basis for the modern philosophy of mathematics.

References

- [1] M. Cantor, *Vorlesungen über Geschichte der Mathematik*, Teubner, I, 1880; II, 1892.
- [2] M. Clagett, *Greek science in antiquity*, Abelard-Schuman, 1955.
- [3] M. Clagett, *Archimedes in the Middle Ages* I, II, Univ. of Wisconsin Press, 1964.
- [4] M. Clagett, *The science of mechanics in the Middle Ages*, Univ. of Wisconsin Press, 1959.
- [5] G. Sarton, *Introduction to the history of science* I, From Homer to Omar Khayyám, Carnegie Institution, 1927.

S

373 (XVIII.13) Sample Survey

A. General Remarks

The sample survey is a means of getting statistical information about a certain aggregate from the observation of some but not all of it. The aggregate concerned is usually called the **finite population**, and the observed part is called the **sample**. Introducing a random mechanism, J. Neyman established a method of ascertaining objectively the reliability of such information. This method is mainly applied to demographic statistical surveys and opinion polls, but it is also applicable to random samples of physical materials. We briefly sketch the mathematical structure of this method without going into detail about technical problems that arise in the practical survey situation.

Suppose that the population consists of N units, where N is called its **size**. Each unit has some characteristic α , which is an element of some set Ω . The set of all characteristics of the units in the population is designated by $\theta = \{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_N\}$, which we regard as a parameter. The set of all possible θ is denoted by $\Theta \subset \Omega^N$.

Suppose that one unit is chosen and observed according to some procedure, the index number of the unit in the population is J , and the observed characteristic is X . It is assumed that the observation is without error, hence $X = \alpha_J$.

Denote the whole sample by $(\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X}) = (J_1, \dots, J_n, X_1, \dots, X_n)$, where n is the **sample size** and $X_i = \alpha_{J_i}$. The sample size n may be a random variable, and among J_1, \dots, J_n , duplication may be allowed. The probabilistic scheme for \mathbf{J} is called the **sampling procedure**, and if it satisfies the condition

(c) $\Pr\{J_i = j\}$ is independent of α_{J_i} and of X_{i+1}, \dots, X_n (but may depend on X_1, \dots, X_{i-1}),

it is called a **random sampling procedure**. Moreover, if the \dagger joint distribution of \mathbf{J} is independent of θ , it is called **regular**. Specifically, if n is constant and $\Pr\{\mathbf{J}\}$ is symmetric in \mathbf{J} , it is called **uniform**.

The two main mathematical problems of sample surveys are to determine a random sampling procedure and to provide methods whereby statistical inferences can be made concerning θ (\rightarrow 401 Statistical Inference).

B. The Problem of Inference

Condition (c) is assumed. The probability of (\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X}) is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \Pr\{(\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X}) = (j_1, \dots, j_n, X_1, \dots, X_n)\} \\ = \Pr\{J_1 = j_1\} \chi_\theta(X_1) \Pr\{J_2 = j_2 | J_1, X_1\} \chi_\theta(X_2) \\ \dots \Pr\{J_n = j_n | J_1, X_1, \dots, J_{n-1}, X_{n-1}\} \chi_\theta(X_n), \end{aligned}$$

where $\chi_\theta(X_i)$ is defined as 1 if $X_i = \alpha_{J_i}$ and 0 otherwise. This formula can be shortened to the form

$$\Pr\{(\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X})\} = P(\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X}) \chi_\theta(\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{J}), \quad (1)$$

where

$$\chi_\theta(\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{J}) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } X_i = \alpha_{J_i}, i = 1, \dots, n, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Expression (1) is the fundamental model for the sample survey problem. Note that $P(\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X})$ is independent of the parameter θ . Therefore if we let $\mathbf{I} = (I_1, \dots, I_m)$ ($I_1 < \dots < I_m$) be the set of numbers in (J_1, \dots, J_n) after deleting duplications, and let $\mathbf{Y} = (Y_1, \dots, Y_m)$ be the corresponding X values, then the joint distribution of \mathbf{I} and \mathbf{Y} can also be expressed as

$$\Pr\{(\mathbf{I}, \mathbf{Y})\} = P(\mathbf{I}, \mathbf{Y}) \chi_\theta(\mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{I}),$$

where

$$\chi_\theta(\mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{I}) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{if } Y_j = \alpha_{I_j}, j = 1, \dots, m, \\ 0 & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Since $\chi_\theta(\mathbf{Y}, \mathbf{I}) = \chi_\theta(\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{J})$ for all θ , the \dagger conditional probability distribution of (\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X}) for given (\mathbf{I}, \mathbf{Y}) is independent of $\chi_\theta(\mathbf{X}, \mathbf{J})$, and hence (\mathbf{J}, \mathbf{X}) is a \dagger sufficient statistic. According to the general theory of sufficient statistics, we can restrict ourselves to the class of procedures depending only on (\mathbf{I}, \mathbf{Y}) .

C. Estimation

Suppose that $g(\theta) = g(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_N)$ is a real parameter whose unbiased estimators are under discussion.

Theorem. There exists an unbiased estimator of $g(\theta)$ if and only if there exists a decomposition

$$\begin{aligned} g(\theta) &= \sum h_v(\alpha_{j_1(v)}, \dots, \alpha_{j_n(v)}), \\ \Pr\{\mathbf{I} = (j_1(v), \dots, j_n(v))\} &> 0, \quad v = 1, 2, \dots \quad (2) \end{aligned}$$

If the sampling procedure is regular, the second condition can be replaced by $\Pr\{\mathbf{I} \supset (j_1(v), \dots, j_n(v))\} > 0, v = 1, 2, \dots$. Hence, for example, if α_i is real and the sampling procedure is regular, $\bar{\alpha} = \sum \alpha_i / N$ is \dagger estimable if and only if $\Pr\{\mathbf{I} \ni i\} > 0$ for all i , and $\sigma_\alpha^2 = \sum (\alpha_i - \bar{\alpha})^2 / (N - 1) = \sum \sum (\alpha_i - \alpha_j)^2 / N(N - 1)$ is estimable if and only if $\Pr\{\mathbf{I} \ni i, j\} > 0$ for all i and j . Also, $\prod_{i=1}^N \alpha_i$ is not estimable unless $\Pr\{\mathbf{I} = (1, \dots, N)\} > 0$. The decomposition (2) is not unique, and corresponding to different decompositions, different unbiased estimators are derived. Also, for the case of regular sampling

procedures, for any $\theta = \theta_0$ it is always possible to construct an unbiased estimator $g(\theta)$ such that $\Pr\{\hat{g}(\theta) \equiv g(\theta_0) | \theta = \theta_0\} = 1$ if $g(\theta)$ is estimable. Hence the variance of the locally best unbiased estimator is always 0, and the uniformly minimum variance unbiased estimators exist only in the trivial case.

If some kind of symmetry exists among the population units as well as the sampling procedure and the parameter, it would be natural to require the same kind of symmetry for the estimators. Let G be a group of permutations among N numbers. Assume that for any $\theta \in \Theta$ and $\gamma \in G$, we have $\gamma\theta \in \Theta$ and $g(\gamma\theta) = g(\theta)$. If $\Pr\{\gamma J\} = \Pr\{J\}$ for all γ , then the sampling procedure is said to be **invariant** with respect to G . An estimator is also called invariant if its value does not change under any permutation $\gamma \in G$ of the numbers of sample units. Thus if G is the set of all permutations (i.e., the symmetric group), then the invariant estimator is a function of Y (or X) only. Moreover, if the dimension m of Y is constant, Y is complete (under some mild conditions); hence there exists a unique minimum variance invariant unbiased estimator.

When there is some additional information, it can be represented by **auxiliary variables** β_1, \dots, β_N , which are known and assumed to have some relation to $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_N$. Assume that the α_i are real numbers and that the parameter to be estimated is $\theta = \bar{\alpha} = (\sum \alpha_i)/N$. If we can assume that α_i and β_i are approximately proportional, we can estimate the unknown population mean $\bar{\alpha}$ by $\hat{\alpha}^* = (\bar{X}/\bar{Z}) \times \bar{\beta}$ where \bar{X} is the sample mean of the α 's and \bar{Z} the sample mean of the β 's. Although $\hat{\alpha}^*$ is not unbiased, we may expect that it has small error if the relation between two variables is close. $\hat{\alpha}^*$ is usually called the ratio estimator.

In practical research, as an estimator of the population total $A = \sum \alpha_i$, we usually use $\hat{A} = \sum X_i/P_i$, where $P_i = \Pr\{J \ni i\}$. Its variance is $V(\hat{A}) = \sum \sum (P_i P_j - P_{ij})(\alpha_i/P_i - \alpha_j/P_j)^2$ and is estimated by $v(\hat{A}) = \sum \sum \{(P_i P_j - P_{ij})/P_{ij}\} (X_i/P_i - X_j/P_j)^2$, where $P_{ij} = \Pr\{J \ni (i, j)\}$. When N is unknown, it can be estimated by the same procedure as \hat{A} (say \hat{N}), and the population mean $\bar{\alpha}$ can be estimated by $\hat{\alpha} = \hat{A}/\hat{N}$, which is called a ratio estimator. $\hat{\alpha}$ is biased except when N is known.

D. Asymptotic Confidence Intervals

It is usually impossible to obtain any meaningful confidence interval based on exact small-sample theory. But when the α_i are real and the sampling procedure is uniform and without replacement, the sample mean \bar{X} is asymptotically normal with mean $\bar{\alpha}$ and variance

$\frac{1}{n} \left(1 - \frac{n}{N}\right) \sigma_\alpha^2$, where $\sigma_\alpha^2 = \frac{1}{N-1} \sum (\alpha_i - \bar{\alpha})^2$, as N and $n \rightarrow \infty$, and $\limsup n/N < 1$, provided that

$$\limsup_{N \rightarrow \infty} \frac{\max_{1 \leq i \leq N} (\alpha_i - \bar{\alpha})^2}{\sum (\alpha_i - \bar{\alpha})^2} = 0.$$

Also, the sample variance converges to σ_α^2 as $n \rightarrow \infty$. From these results we can construct asymptotic confidence intervals for $\bar{\alpha}$.

E. The Problem of Sampling Procedures

In determining the sampling procedures, both the technical aspects of sampling and the accuracy of the estimators should be considered. The most commonly used methods are **multistage sampling** and **stratified sampling**, or some combination of the two. For example, the population is partitioned into several clusters. First we select some of them according to a probability scheme and then choose units from the selected clusters. This procedure is called **two-stage sampling**. The probabilities for the selection of clusters may be uniform or proportional to the size of the clusters. **Stratified sampling** is the method of dividing the population into several subpopulations, called **strata**, and selecting the sample units within each stratum. If the size of the i th stratum is N_i , the size of the sample chosen from this stratum is n_i , and the probability is uniform within each stratum, then the most common estimator for the population mean $\bar{\alpha}$ is given by

$$\hat{\alpha} = \sum N_i \bar{X}_i / N,$$

where \bar{X}_i is the mean of the sample values in the i th stratum. The variance of $\hat{\alpha}$ is given by

$$V(\hat{\alpha}) = \left(\frac{1}{N}\right)^2 \sum \frac{N_i^2}{n_i} \left(1 - \frac{n_i}{N_i}\right) \sigma_i^2,$$

where σ_i^2 is the population variance within the i th stratum.

If the cost of drawing one sample unit in the i th stratum is equal to c_i , then for fixed cost, the variance of the estimator is minimized when

$$n_i/N_i \propto \sigma_i/\sqrt{c_i},$$

which is called the condition of **optimum allocation**.

F. Replicated Sampling Plan

W. E. Deming proposed an effective method in practical sample surveys, called a replicated sampling plan, following J. W. Tukey's hint. It enables us to easily evaluate variances of esti-

mates for any estimator and any sampling procedure. Let the sample be composed of k subordinate samples which are selected by the same random sampling procedure from the same population, and let $\hat{\theta}_i(\mathbf{J}_i, X_i)$ be the estimate from the i th subordinate sample by the same estimator and $\hat{\theta}$ be the estimate from the whole sample by the same estimator. Then, provided $\hat{\theta} = \sum \hat{\theta}_i/k$ approximately, the variance of $\hat{\theta}$ can be estimated by $v(\hat{\theta}) = \sum (\hat{\theta}_i - \hat{\theta})^2/k(k-1)$. If the sample is selected by the simple random sampling procedure and is of large scale, $\hat{\theta}_i$ and $\hat{\theta}$ are approximately normal variates, and $v(\hat{\theta})$ is evaluated by using the sample range of the $\hat{\theta}_i$. In large-scale sample surveys, even when the random sampling procedure is not simple, the theory related to the normal distribution can be applied to the $\hat{\theta}_i$ and $\hat{\theta}$. It has been shown that $v(\hat{\theta})$ evaluated by the above method includes not only the sampling error but also the random part of the nonsampling errors.

G. Conceptual Problems

Although it has been established that the sample survey method is useful in large-scale social or economic surveys, there are difficult conceptual problems about the foundations of the method (especially when auxiliary information exists) that are still far from being settled.

References

- [1] W. G. Cochran, Sampling techniques, Wiley, third edition, 1977.
- [2] W. E. Deming, On simplifications of sampling design through replication with equal probabilities and without stages, J. Amer. Statist. Assoc., 51 (1956), 24–53.
- [3] R. J. Jensen, Statistical survey techniques, Wiley, 1978.
- [4] J. Neyman, Contribution to the theory of sampling human populations, J. Amer. Statist. Assoc., 33 (1938), 101–116.
- [5] P. V. Sukhatme and B. V. Sukhatme, Sampling theory of surveys with applications, Asia Publishing House, second edition, 1970.
- [6] K. Takeuchi, Some remarks on general theory for unbiased estimation of a finite population, Japan. J. Math., 35 (1966), 73–84.

374 (XVIII.4) Sampling Distributions

A. General Remarks

To perform statistical inference, it is necessary to find the †probability distribution of a †sta-

tistic involved in the situation (→ 396 Statistic, 401 Statistical Inference). In general, the probability distribution of a statistic is called the **sampling distribution**. A set $\{X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n\}$ of †random variables that are independently and identically distributed according to a distribution F is called a **random sample** from F . A common sampling distribution described in this article is that of the statistic $Y = f(X_1, \dots, X_n)$, where the set $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ is a random sample from a †normal distribution. Examples of such a statistic Y of dimension 1 are the †sample mean, †sample variance, linear or quadratic forms of $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$, their ratios, and †order statistic, while examples of Y of higher dimensions are the sample mean vector and the sample covariance matrix and its eigenvalues. The †normal distribution with †mean μ and †variance σ^2 is denoted by $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$, while the † p -dimensional (p -variate) normal distribution with mean vector μ and covariance matrix Σ is denoted by $N(\mu, \Sigma)$ (→ Appendix A, Table 22).

B. Samples from Univariate Normal Distributions

If random variables X_1, \dots, X_n are distributed independently according to $N(\mu_1, \sigma_1^2), \dots, N(\mu_n, \sigma_n^2)$, then a linear form $\sum_i a_i X_i$ has the distribution $N(\sum_i a_i \mu_i, \sum_i a_i^2 \sigma_i^2)$. In particular, if $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ is a random sample from $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$, then the sample mean $\bar{X} = \sum_i X_i/n$ has the distribution $N(\mu, \sigma^2/n)$.

Let $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from the distribution $N(0, 1)$. The sampling distribution of the statistic $Y = \sum_i X_i^2$ is called the **chi-square distribution** with n **degrees of freedom** and is denoted by $\chi^2(n)$. It has the †probability density

$$f_n(y) = 2^{-n/2} \left(\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right) \right)^{-1} y^{-1+n/2} e^{-y/2}$$

for $0 < y < \infty$, $f_n(y) = 0$ elsewhere, where Γ is the †gamma function. The distribution of $Y = \sum_{i=1}^n (X_i + \mu_i)^2$ depends only on n and $\lambda = \sum_i \mu_i^2$, and is called the **noncentral chi-square distribution** with n **degrees of freedom** and **noncentrality** λ and denoted by $\chi^2(n, \lambda)$. It has the probability density

$$f_{n,\lambda}(y) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda/2} \left(\frac{\lambda}{2} \right)^k \frac{1}{k!} f_{n+2k}(y) \\ = e^{-\lambda/2} {}_0F_1\left(\frac{n}{2}; \frac{\lambda y}{4}\right) f_n(y)$$

for $0 < y < \infty$, where f_{n+2k} and f_n are the probability densities of chi-square distributions and ${}_0F_1$ is an extended hypergeometric func-

tion. Noncentral chi-square distributions have the following †reproducing property: If Y_1, \dots, Y_k are distributed independently according to $\chi^2(n_1, \lambda_1), \dots, \chi^2(n_k, \lambda_k)$, then $\sum_i Y_i$ has the distribution $\chi^2(\sum_i n_i, \sum_i \lambda_i)$. Also, we have **Cochran's theorem** (*Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc.*, 30 (1934)): If X_1, \dots, X_n are distributed independently according to $N(\mu_1, 1), \dots, N(\mu_n, 1)$ and if for quadratic forms $Q_m = \sum_i \sum_j a_{ij}^{(m)} X_i X_j$ for $m = 1, \dots, k$ the matrices $A_m = (a_{ij}^{(m)})$ with †rank r_m satisfy the condition $A_1 + \dots + A_k = I$ (unit matrix), then a necessary and sufficient condition for Q_1, \dots, Q_k to have independent noncentral chi-square distributions with r_1, \dots, r_k degrees of freedom, respectively, is that $r_1 + \dots + r_k = n$. In particular, when $\mu_i = 0$ for all i , they have (central) chi-square distributions, and the theorem implies their reproducing property.

Let X and Y be independent random variables having distributions $N(\delta, 1)$ and $\chi^2(n)$, respectively. Then the sampling distribution of $T = X/\sqrt{Y/n}$ is called the **noncentral t -distribution** with n **degrees of freedom** and **noncentrality** δ and is denoted by $t(n, \delta)$. Its probability density is given by

$$f_{n,\delta}(t) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} e^{-\delta^2/2} \delta^k \frac{2^{k/2} \Gamma((n+k+1)/2)}{k! \sqrt{\pi n} \Gamma(n/2)} \times \frac{(t/\sqrt{n})^k}{(1+t^2/n)^{(n+k+1)/2}}$$

for $-\infty < t < \infty$. In particular, when $\delta = 0$, the distribution is called the **t -distribution** with n **degrees of freedom** and is denoted by $t(n)$. Its probability density is simplified to

$$f_n(t) = \frac{\Gamma((n+1)/2)}{\sqrt{\pi n} \Gamma(n/2)} \left(1 + \frac{t^2}{n}\right)^{-(n+1)/2}$$

for $-\infty < t < \infty$.

Let $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$. Exact sampling distributions of the †sample variance $S^2 = \sum (X_i - \bar{X})^2 / (n-1)$ and of the **t -statistic** $T = \sqrt{n}(\bar{X} - \mu_0) / \sqrt{S^2}$, where $\mu = \mu_0$ is a given number, were essentially obtained by Student [5]: $(n-1)S^2/\sigma^2$ and T are distributed according to $\chi^2(n-1)$ and $t(n-1)$, respectively. His proof was made rigorous by R. A. Fisher (*Metron*, 5 (1925)), who proved in particular that \bar{X} and S^2 are independent. If $\mu \neq \mu_0$, then T follows the distribution $t(n-1, \sqrt{n}(\mu - \mu_0)/\sigma)$.

Let X and Y be distributed independently according to $\chi^2(m, \lambda)$ and $\chi^2(n)$, respectively. The distribution of $Z = (X/m)/(Y/n)$ is called the **noncentral F -distribution** with m and n **degrees of freedom** and **noncentrality** λ . In the special case when $\lambda = 0$ it is called the **F -distribution** with m and n **degrees of freedom** and is denoted by $F(m, n)$. The probability

densities $f_{m,n,\lambda}$ and $f_{m,n}$ of these distributions are given by

$$f_{m,n}(z) = \frac{(m/n)^{m/2}}{B(m/2, n/2)} \frac{z^{(m/2)-1}}{(1+mz/n)^{(m+n)/2}},$$
$$f_{m,n,\lambda}(z) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} e^{-\lambda/2} \left(\frac{\lambda}{2}\right)^k \frac{1}{k!} \frac{(m/n)^{(m/2)+k}}{B((m/2)+k, n/2)} \times \frac{z^{(m/2)+k-1}}{(1+mz/n)^{((m+n)/2)+k}}$$
$$= e^{-\lambda/2} {}_1F_1\left(\frac{m+n}{2}; \frac{m}{2}; \frac{mz/n}{2+1+mz/n}\right) f_{m,n}(z)$$

for $0 < z < \infty$, where B and ${}_1F_1$ are the †beta function and the confluent hypergeometric function (\rightarrow 167 Functions of Confluent Type), respectively.

Let X be a random variable having the distribution $F(m, n)$. The distribution of $Z = \frac{1}{2} \log X$ is called the **z -distribution** with m and n **degrees of freedom** and is denoted by $z(m, n)$. Its probability density is given by

$$\frac{2(m/n)^{m/2}}{B(m/2, n/2)} \frac{e^{mz}}{(1+me^{2z}/n)^{(m+n)/2}}$$

for $-\infty < z < \infty$. If $S_1^2 = \sum_{i=1}^m (X_i - \bar{X})^2 / (m-1)$ and $S_2^2 = \sum_{i=1}^n (Y_i - \bar{Y})^2 / (n-1)$ are sample variances based on independent samples of sizes m and n taken from $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$ and $N(v, \tau^2)$, respectively, then the statistic $z = \frac{1}{2} \log(S_1^2/S_2^2)$, which was introduced by Fisher (*Proc. Int. Math. Congress*, 1924), is distributed according to $z(m-1, n-1)$ under the hypothesis $\sigma^2 = \tau^2$. Fisher [6] tabulated percent points of $z(m, n)$.

C. Samples from Multivariate Normal Distributions

Let \mathbf{X} be a p -dimensional random vector, namely, a vector having real random variables as its components. \mathbf{X} has the p -variate normal distribution $N(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$ if and only if for any real vector $\mathbf{a} = (a_1, \dots, a_p)'$, the random variable $\mathbf{a}'\mathbf{X}$ has the normal distribution $N(\mathbf{a}'\boldsymbol{\mu}, \mathbf{a}'\boldsymbol{\Sigma}\mathbf{a})$. If $\mathbf{X}_1, \dots, \mathbf{X}_n$ are independent and have p -variate normal distributions $N(\boldsymbol{\mu}_1, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_1), \dots, N(\boldsymbol{\mu}_n, \boldsymbol{\Sigma}_n)$, respectively, and if A_1, \dots, A_n are $m \times p$ real matrices, then the random vector $A_1\mathbf{X}_1 + \dots + A_n\mathbf{X}_n$ has the m -variate normal distribution $N(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$, where $\boldsymbol{\mu} = \sum_{j=1}^n A_j\boldsymbol{\mu}_j$ and $\boldsymbol{\Sigma} = \sum_{j=1}^n A_j\boldsymbol{\Sigma}_jA_j'$.

Suppose that $\{\mathbf{X}_1, \dots, \mathbf{X}_n\}$ is a random sample from the p -variate normal distribution $N(\mathbf{0}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$, and let $\mathbf{X} = (\mathbf{X}_1, \dots, \mathbf{X}_n)$ be a $p \times n$ matrix. Then the probability distribution of $\mathbf{W} = \mathbf{X}\mathbf{X}'$ is called the **Wishart distribution** with **scale matrix** $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ and n **degrees of freedom** and is denoted by $W_p(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}, n)$ or simply $W(\boldsymbol{\Sigma}, n)$. If $n > p-1$, the joint probability density function

of $p(p+1)/2$ arguments of $W=(W_{ij})$ is

$$f_{\Sigma,n}(W) = (\Gamma_p(n/2) |2\Sigma|^{n/2})^{-1} \times \text{etr}(-\Sigma^{-1}W/2) |W|^{(n-p-1)/2}$$

for $W > 0$, where $W > 0$ means that W is positive definite, $\text{etr}(A) = \exp(\text{tr } A)$, and Γ_p , a **multi-dimensional gamma function**, is defined as

$$\Gamma_p(a) = \pi^{p(p-1)/4} \prod_{i=1}^p \Gamma\left(a - \frac{1}{2}(i-1)\right)$$

for $a > (p-1)/2$. When $n \leq p-1$ the distribution is **singular** and has no probability density.

Suppose that X_1, \dots, X_n are independent and obey normal distributions $N(\mu_1, \Sigma)$, \dots , $N(\mu_n, \Sigma)$, and let $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$, $M = (\mu_1, \dots, \mu_n)$. Then the distribution of $W = XX'$ is called the **p -dimensional noncentral Wishart distribution** with **scale matrix** Σ , **n degrees of freedom**, and **noncentrality matrix** $\Omega = \Sigma^{-1}MM'$ and is denoted by $W(\Sigma, n, \Omega)$. If $n > p-1$, the probability density function is

$$\text{etr}(-\Omega/2) {}_0F_1(n/2; \Omega \Sigma^{-1}W/4) f_{\Sigma,n}(W)$$

for $W > 0$. ${}_x F_\beta$ is a hypergeometric function with matrix argument, which is defined by ${}_x F_\beta(a_1, \dots, a_x; b_1, \dots, b_\beta; S) = {}_x F_\beta^{(p)}(a_1, \dots, a_x; b_1, \dots, b_\beta; S, I)$, where

$${}_x F_\beta^{(p)}(a_1, \dots, a_x; b_1, \dots, b_\beta; S, T) = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \sum_{\kappa} \left(\frac{\prod_{i=1}^x (a_i)_{\kappa_i}}{\prod_{j=1}^{\beta} (b_j)_{\kappa_j}} \right) \frac{C_{\kappa}(S) C_{\kappa}(T)}{k! C_{\kappa}(I_p)},$$

$\kappa = (k_1, \dots, k_p)$ is an ordered set of integers such that $k_1 + \dots + k_p = k$ and $k_1 \geq \dots \geq k_p \geq 0$, and where $C_{\kappa}(S)$ is a **zonal polynomial** (\rightarrow [8]) of a symmetric matrix S . The multivariate hypergeometric coefficient $(a)_{\kappa}$ is given by

$$(a)_{\kappa} = \prod_{i=1}^p \left(a - \frac{1}{2}(i-1) \right)_{k_i},$$

$$(a)_k = a(a+1) \dots (a+k-1).$$

The noncentral Wishart distribution is singular when $n \leq p-1$. Similarly to the noncentral chi-square distribution, the noncentral Wishart distribution has the reproducing property with respect to both the number of degrees of freedom and the noncentrality matrix. Also, Cochran's theorem can be extended to the multivariate case: Let X_1, \dots, X_n be p -variate random vectors independently distributed according to $N(\mu_1, \Sigma), \dots, N(\mu_n, \Sigma)$, respectively, and let $A_m = (a_{ij}^{(m)})$, $m = 1, \dots, k$, be $p \times p$ real matrices of rank r_m and such that $A_1 + A_2 + \dots + A_k = I$ (unit matrix). A necessary and sufficient condition for random matrices $Q_m = \sum_{i,j} a_{ij}^{(m)} X_i X_j'$, $m = 1, \dots, k$, to be independently distributed according to noncentral

Wishart distributions with r_1, \dots, r_k degrees of freedom, respectively, is that $r_1 + \dots + r_k = n$. If, in particular, $\mu_1 = \dots = \mu_n = 0$ and if $r_m \geq p$, then Q_m is distributed according to $W(\Sigma, r_m)$.

If W has the distribution $W(\Sigma, n)$ with $n > p-1$, then the eigenvalues $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_p$ ($\lambda_1 \geq \dots \geq \lambda_p > 0$) of W have the joint probability density function $C_{p,n} |\Sigma|^{-n/2} {}_0F_0^{(p)}(-\Sigma^{-1}/2, \Lambda) |\Lambda|^{(n-p-1)/2} \prod_{i < j} (\lambda_i - \lambda_j)$, where Λ is a diagonal matrix with diagonal elements $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_p$ and $C_{p,n} = \pi^{p^2/2} (2^{pn/2} \Gamma_p(p/2) \Gamma_p(n/2))^{-1}$. If $\Sigma = I$, then the joint probability density function becomes

$$C_{p,n} \text{etr}(-\Lambda/2) |\Lambda|^{(n-p-1)/2} \prod_{i < j} (\lambda_i - \lambda_j).$$

Suppose that S_1 and S_2 have independent Wishart distributions $W(\Sigma, n_1)$ and $W(\Sigma, n_2)$, respectively. The random matrix $B = (S_1 + S_2)^{-1/2} S_1 (S_1 + S_2)^{-1/2}$ is called the **beta matrix**, and its distribution is denoted by $B(n_1/2, n_2/2)$. Its probability density function is

$$\left(\Gamma_p\left(\frac{n_1+n_2}{2}\right) / \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n_1}{2}\right) \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n_2}{2}\right) \right) |B|^{(n_1-p-1)/2} \times |I-B|^{(n_2-p-1)/2}$$

for $0 < B < I$.

Suppose that S has the distribution $W(\Sigma, n)$ and B has $B(n_1/2, n_2/2)$; then, for any non-singular symmetric matrix Ω ,

$$P\{S < \Omega\} = \left\{ |2\Sigma\Omega^{-1}|^{-n/2} \Gamma_p\left(\frac{p+1}{2}\right) / \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n+p+1}{2}\right) \right\} {}_1F_1\left(\frac{n+p+1}{2}; \frac{n+p+1}{2}; -\frac{1}{2}\Sigma^{-1}\Omega\right)$$

and

$$P\{B < \Omega\} = \left\{ \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n_1+n_2}{2}\right) \Gamma_p\left(\frac{p+1}{2}\right) / \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n_1+p+1}{2}\right) \Gamma_p\left(\frac{n_2}{2}\right) \right\} |\Omega|^{n_1/2} \times {}_2F_1\left(\frac{n_1}{2}, -\frac{n_2}{2} + \frac{p+1}{2}; \frac{n_1+p+1}{2}; \Omega\right).$$

If $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ is a random sample from $N(\mu, \Sigma)$, then the sample mean $\bar{X} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^n X_{\alpha}/n$ and the sample covariance matrix $S = \sum_{\alpha=1}^n (X_{\alpha} - \bar{X})(X_{\alpha} - \bar{X})'/(n-1)$ are distributed independently according to the respective distributions $N(\mu, \Sigma/n)$ and $W(\Sigma, n-1)$. If $n > p-1$, $T^2 = n(\bar{X} - \mu_0)' S^{-1} (\bar{X} - \mu_0)$ is called the **noncentral Hotelling T^2 statistic** with $n-1$ **degrees of freedom** and **noncentrality** $\lambda = n(\mu - \mu_0)' \Sigma^{-1} (\mu - \mu_0)$. $(n-p)T^2/p(n-1)$ has a noncentral F -distribution with p and $n-p$ degrees of freedom and noncentrality λ .

Let $X = (X_1, \dots, X_p)'$ and $Y = (Y_1, \dots, Y_q)'$, $p \leq q$ denote two random vectors, Σ_{11} and Σ_{22} their respective covariance matrices, and Σ_{12} the $p \times q$ matrix of covariances between

the components of \mathbf{X} and \mathbf{Y} . Each of the nonnegative roots ρ_1, \dots, ρ_p of the equation $|\Sigma_{12}\Sigma_{22}^{-1}\Sigma_{21} - \rho^2\Sigma_{11}| = 0$ is called the **canonical correlation coefficient**. Let $(X_1, Y_1), \dots, (X_n, Y_n)$ be a random sample from the $(p+q)$ -variate normal distribution $N(\mathbf{0}, \Sigma)$, and let $S_{11} = \Sigma_{\alpha=1}^n X_\alpha X_\alpha/n$, $S_{12} = S'_{21} = \Sigma_{\alpha=1}^n X_\alpha Y'_\alpha/n$, $S_{22} = \Sigma_{\alpha=1}^n Y_\alpha Y'_\alpha/n$, and $\mathbf{S} = (S_{ij})_{i,j=1,2}$. The sample canonical correlation coefficients are the nonnegative roots r_1, \dots, r_p of $|\mathbf{S}_{12}\mathbf{S}_{22}^{-1}\mathbf{S}_{21} - r^2\mathbf{S}_{11}| = 0$ and for $n \geq p+q$ the probability density function of r_1^2, \dots, r_p^2 is

$$C_{p,q,n} |I - P^2|^{n/2} |R^2|^{(q-p-1)/2} |I - R^2|^{(n-q-p-1)/2} \times \prod_{i < j} (r_i^2 - r_j^2) {}_2F_1^{(p)} \left(\frac{n}{2}, \frac{n}{2}; \frac{q}{2}; R^2, P^2 \right),$$

where

$$C_{p,q,n} = \pi^{p^2/2} \Gamma_p \left(\frac{n}{2} \right) / \left\{ \Gamma_p \left(\frac{n-q}{2} \right) \Gamma_p \left(\frac{p}{2} \right) \Gamma_p \left(\frac{q}{2} \right) \right\},$$

and R^2 and P^2 are diagonal matrices with elements r_i^2 and ρ_j^2 , respectively. If, in particular, $p=1$, then ρ_1 and r_1 are, respectively, the population and the sample multiple correlation coefficients, and $(n-q)r_1^2/q(1-r_1^2)$ follows the distribution $F(q, n-q)$ whenever $\rho_1=0$.

Let $\{(X_1, Y_1), \dots, (X_n, Y_n)\}$ be a random sample from the 2-dimensional normal distribution with correlation coefficient ρ . Then the sample correlation coefficient

$$R = \frac{\Sigma_i (X_i - \bar{X})(Y_i - \bar{Y})}{(\Sigma_i (X_i - \bar{X})^2 \Sigma_i (Y_i - \bar{Y})^2)^{1/2}}$$

has probability density

$$f_n(r; \rho) = (2^{n-3}/\pi(n-3)!) (1-\rho^2)^{(n-1)/2} (1-r^2)^{(n-4)/2} \times \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \Gamma^2 \left(\frac{1}{2}(n+k-1) \right) \frac{(2\rho r)^k}{k!}$$

for $-1 < r < 1$. For the special case $\rho=0$, the probability density becomes

$$f_n(r) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi}} \frac{\Gamma \left(\frac{1}{2}(n-1) \right)}{\Gamma \left(\frac{1}{2}(n-2) \right)} (1-r^2)^{(n-4)/2},$$

which implies that $T = \sqrt{n-2}R/\sqrt{1-R^2}$ has the t -distribution with $n-2$ degrees of freedom.

Given a random sample from a p -variate normal distribution, the probability density of the sample partial correlation coefficient $R_{12 \cdot 3 \dots p}$ between the first and the second components with the remaining components fixed is given by $f_{n-p+2}(r; \rho_{12 \cdot 3 \dots p})$, where f is

the density of R mentioned in the previous paragraph and $\rho_{12 \cdot 3 \dots p}$ is the population partial correlation.

D. Large-Sample Theory

So far we have dealt with random samples $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ composed of finitely many random variables (or vectors). The theory dealing with such finite cases is called small-sample theory, which is not always suitable for numerical applications. In comparison with this, in large-sample theory, where the sample size is assumed to be sufficiently large, an approximation of the sampling distribution can often be obtained easily by means of the central limit theorem.

If for three sequences X_n , μ_n , and σ_n , $n=1, 2, \dots$, of random variables, real numbers, and positive numbers, respectively, the sequence $(X_n - \mu_n)/\sigma_n$ converges in distribution to $N(0, 1)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then the sequence X_n is said to be **asymptotically distributed** according to $N(\mu_n, \sigma_n^2)$. The definition can be extended to higher dimensions. We write $X_n = o_p(r_n)$ for a sequence r_n of positive numbers if and only if X_n/r_n converges in probability to zero as $n \rightarrow \infty$. The following theorem is useful: If $X_n = a + o_p(r_n)$, where a is a constant and $r_n = o(1)$, and if a real-valued function $f(x)$ is of class C^s in a neighborhood of $x=a$, then

$$f(X_n) = \sum_{k=0}^s \frac{1}{k!} f^{(k)}(a)(X_n - a)^k + o_p(r_n^s).$$

If X_n is asymptotically distributed according to $N(\mu, \sigma^2/n)$ and $f(x)$ is differentiable at $x=\mu$ with the derivative $f'(\mu) \neq 0$, then $f(X_n)$ is asymptotically distributed according to $N(f(\mu), (f'(\mu))^2 \sigma^2/n)$. In higher-dimensional cases, if \mathbf{X}_n is asymptotically distributed according to $N(\mu, \Sigma/n)$ and $f(\mathbf{x})$ is continuously differentiable in a neighborhood of $\mathbf{x}=\mu$ with nonzero vector $\mathbf{c} = (\partial f/\partial x_1, \dots, \partial f/\partial x_p)_{\mathbf{x}=\mu}$, then $f(\mathbf{X}_n)$ is asymptotically distributed according to $N(f(\mu), \mathbf{c}\Sigma\mathbf{c}'/n)$.

Let $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from a univariate distribution with finite moments $v_i = E(X^i)$ for $i=1, \dots, k$, and let $a_i = \Sigma_{\alpha} X_\alpha^i/n$ be its i th sample moment. Then the random vector (a_1, \dots, a_k) asymptotically follows the k -variate normal distribution as $n \rightarrow \infty$ with mean vector (v_1, \dots, v_k) and covariance matrix $n^{-1}(\sigma_{ij})$, where $\sigma_{ij} = v_{i+j} - v_i v_j$. Let $M_i = \Sigma_{\alpha} (X_\alpha - \bar{X})^i/n$ and $\mu_i = E(X - v_1)^i$ for $i=2, \dots, k$ be the sample central moment of order i and population central moment of order i , respectively. Then the random vector $(\bar{X}, M_2, \dots, M_k)$ obeys the k -variate normal distribution asymptotically as $n \rightarrow \infty$ with mean vector $(v_1, \mu_2, \dots, \mu_k)$

and covariance matrix $n^{-1}(\sigma_{ij})$, where $\sigma_{11} = \mu_2$, $\sigma_{1i} = \mu_{i+1} - i\mu_2\mu_{i-1}$, $\sigma_{ij} = \mu_{i+j} - i\mu_{i-1}\mu_{j+1} - j\mu_{i+1}\mu_{j-1} - \mu_i\mu_j + ij\mu_2\mu_{i-1}\mu_{j-1}$ for $i, j \geq 2$.

A random variable χ_n^2 that has a \dagger chi-square distribution with n degrees of freedom obeys the distribution $N(n, 2n)$ asymptotically as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Also, $\sqrt{2\chi_n^2} - \sqrt{2n-1}$ obeys $N(0, 1)$ asymptotically. The latter distribution approximates χ_n^2 indirectly better than $N(n, 2n)$ approximates χ_n^2 directly. The t -distribution with n degrees of freedom obeys $N(0, 1)$ asymptotically as $n \rightarrow \infty$. If X_n obeys an F -distribution with m and n degrees of freedom, then mX_n obeys asymptotically the distribution $\chi^2(m)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. If X_n obeys a \dagger binomial distribution $Bin(n, p)$, then X_n obeys asymptotically the distribution $N(np, np(1-p))$, and $\text{Arcsin} \sqrt{X_n/n}$ obeys asymptotically $N(\text{Arcsin} \sqrt{p}, 1/4n)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. This transformation is called the **arcsin** (or **angular**) **transformation**. If (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_k) obeys the multinomial distribution $Mu(n; p_1, p_2, \dots, p_k)$, then it is asymptotically distributed according to the normal distribution $N(\mu_n, \Sigma_n)$, where $\mu_n = (np_1, \dots, np_k)$, $\Sigma_n = (\sigma_{ij}^{(n)})$, $\sigma_{ii}^{(n)} = np_i(1-p_i)$, and $\sigma_{ij}^{(n)} = -np_ip_j$, ($i \neq j$), and the random variable $\sum_{j=1}^{k+1} (X_j - np_j)^2 / np_j$, where $X_{k+1} = n - (X_1 + \dots + X_k)$ and $p_{k+1} = 1 - (p_1 + \dots + p_k)$, obeys asymptotically the distribution $\chi^2(k)$ [11].

If X_n has the \dagger Poisson distribution with mean λ_n , where $\lambda_n \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then X_n and $\sqrt{X_n}$ obey the respective distributions $N(\lambda_n, \lambda_n)$ and $N(\sqrt{\lambda_n}, 1/4)$ asymptotically. If R is the sample correlation coefficient based on a random sample of size n from a 2-dimensional (bivariate) normal distribution with population correlation coefficient ρ , then R is asymptotically distributed according to $N(\rho, (1-\rho^2)^2/n)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, and therefore $z = \frac{1}{2} \log((1+R)/(1-R))$ obeys asymptotically the distribution $N(\frac{1}{2} \log((1+\rho)/(1-\rho)), 1/n)$ asymptotically. This transformation is called **Fisher's z -transformation**. The distribution

$$N\left(\frac{1}{2} \log \frac{1+\rho}{1-\rho} + \frac{\rho}{2(n-1)}, \frac{1}{n-3}\right)$$

gives a better approximation.

E. Empirical Distribution Function

Let $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from a distribution F . The random function

$$F_n(x) = \frac{1}{n} \{\text{number of } X\text{'s that are } \leq x\}$$

is called the **empirical distribution function**. For any collection of fixed x 's ($-\infty = x_0 < x_1 < \dots < x_k < \infty$), the random vector $(nF_n(x_1), n(F_n(x_2) - F_n(x_1)), \dots, n(F_n(x_k) - F_n(x_{k-1})))$ obeys the \dagger multinomial distribution $Mu(n; p_1, \dots, p_k)$,

where $p_j = F(x_j) - F(x_{j-1})$, $j = 1, \dots, k$, provided that the p 's are positive. In particular, the vector is asymptotically distributed according to the k -variate normal. The result is substantially strengthened as follows: the **Glivenko-Cantelli theorem** states that $\sup_x |F_n(x) - F(x)|$ converges to zero with probability 1 as n tends to infinity. If $F(x)$ is continuous, then the random function $\sqrt{n}(F_n(t) - F(t))$ converges in distribution to a \dagger Gaussian process $X(t)$ such that $E(X(t)) = 0$ and $E(X(s)X(t)) = F(s)(1 - F(t))$ for $s \leq t$. A Gaussian process $X(t)$, $0 \leq t \leq 1$, with this moment condition is called a **Brownian bridge** if $F(t) = t$, for $0 \leq t \leq 1$. If $F(x)$ is continuous, then the distributions of the random variables $C_n = \sqrt{n} \sup_x (F_n(x) - F(x))$ and $D_n = \sqrt{n} \sup |F_n(x) - F(x)|$ do not depend on F . Asymptotically, they have identical distributions with $\sup_t B(t)$ and $\sup_t |B(t)|$, respectively, where $B(t)$ is a Brownian bridge. We have

$$P(\sup_t B(t) \leq x) = 1 - e^{-2x^2},$$

$$P(\sup_t |B(t)| \leq x) = 1 - 2 \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} (-1)^k e^{-2k^2 x^2},$$

$x > 0$.

Let $\{X_1, \dots, X_m\}$ and $\{Y_1, \dots, Y_n\}$ be random samples from continuous distributions F and G , respectively, and let $F_m(x)$ and $G_n(x)$ be their empirical distribution functions. Under the hypothesis $H_0: F \equiv G$, the distribution of the **Kolmogorov-Smirnov test statistic**

$$D_{m,n} = \sup_x |F_m(x) - G_n(x)|$$

does not depend on F (or G), and asymptotically, as $m \rightarrow \infty$ and $m/n \rightarrow \lambda \leq 1$, the random function $\sqrt{m}(F_m(t) - G_n(t))$ converges in distribution to a Gaussian process $X(t)$ such that $E(X(t)) = 0$ and $E(X(s)X(t)) = (1+\lambda)F(s)(1-F(t))$, $s \leq t$.

F. Edgeworth and Cornish-Fisher Expansions

Let $\{X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n\}$ be a sample from a distribution with mean μ and variance σ^2 . The random variable $(X_1 + X_2 + \dots + X_n - n\mu)/\sqrt{n}\sigma$ is called the normalized sum of the sample. The distribution function $F_n(x)$ of the normalized sum of a sample from an absolutely continuous distribution F with higher-order moments admits the **Edgeworth expansion** [15]:

$$F_n(x) = \Phi(x) + \sum_{k=1}^{v-2} R_k(x) \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right)^k \phi(x) + B\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}}\right)^{v-1},$$

where Φ and ϕ are the \dagger cumulative distribution and the \dagger probability density functions, respec-

tively, of $N(0, 1)$, and B is a quantity bounded by a constant depending on F and v . $R_k(x)$ is the polynomial given by

$$R_k(x) = -\Sigma H_{k+2l-1}(x) \prod_{j=1}^k \frac{1}{m_j!} \left(\frac{\gamma_{j+2}}{(j+2)!} \right)^{m_j},$$

where $H_k(x)$ is the † Hermite polynomial of degree k , γ_k is the † cumulant († semi-invariant) of order k of the distribution of $(X_1 - \mu)/\sigma$, the summation extends over all nonnegative m 's such that $m_1 + 2m_2 + \dots + km_k = k$, and $l = m_1 + m_2 + \dots + m_k$. In particular, we have $R_1(x) = -\gamma_3(x^2 - 1)/6$ and $R_2(x) = -\gamma_4(x^3 - 3x)/24 - \gamma_3^2(x^5 - 10x^3 + 15x)/72$. For a † lattice distribution F concentrated on $0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$ but not on $0, \pm \rho, \pm 2\rho, \dots$ for any $\rho > 1$, the following expansion is valid for $x = 0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$:

$$F_n \left(\frac{x - n\mu}{\sqrt{n}\sigma} \right) = \Phi(z) + \sum_{k=1}^{v-2} Q_k(z) \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^k \phi(z) + B \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^{v-1},$$

where $z = (x - n\mu + 1/2)/\sqrt{n}\sigma$ and the Q 's are suitable polynomials; $Q_1(z) = R_1(z)$ and $Q_2(z) = R_2(z) + z/24\sigma^2$.

The Edgeworth expansion makes it possible to derive asymptotic formulas for the relation between those u and v such that $F_n(v) = \Phi(u)$. If F is an absolutely continuous distribution with moments of order $v (\geq 3)$, then we have the **Cornish-Fisher expansions** [16]:

$$u = v + \sum_{k=1}^{v-2} A_k(v) \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^k + O(n^{-(v-1)/2})$$

and

$$v = u + \sum_{k=1}^{v-2} B_k(u) \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^k + O(n^{-(v-1)/2}),$$

where the A 's and B 's are polynomials derived from the R 's of the Edgeworth expansion; $A_1(v) = -\gamma_3(v^2 - 1)/6$, $A_2(v) = -\gamma_4(v^3 - 3v)/24 + \gamma_3^2(4v^3 - 7v)/36$, $B_1(u) = \gamma_3(u^2 - 1)/6$, $B_2(u) = \gamma_4(u^3 - 3u)/24 - \gamma_3^2(2u^3 - 5u)/36$.

The expansions imply, in particular, that the random variable $v + \sum_{k=1}^{v-2} A_k(v)n^{-k/2}$ with $v = (X_1 + X_2 + \dots + X_n - n\mu)/\sqrt{n}\sigma$ is asymptotically distributed according to $N(0, 1)$ and that the $100\alpha\%$ point v_α of F_n is approximated by $u_\alpha + \sum_{k=1}^{v-2} B_k(u_\alpha)n^{-k/2}$, where u_α is the $100\alpha\%$ point of $N(0, 1)$. These approximations can be improved further in some cases by a suitable transformation of the sum $X_1 + X_2 + \dots + X_n$. Thus, for example, if X is distributed according to $\chi^2(n)$, then the Cornish-Fisher expansions with $v = 3$ are

$$u = v - \frac{1}{3\sqrt{n}}(v^2 - 1) + O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right)$$

and

$$v = u + \frac{1}{3\sqrt{n}}(u^2 - 1) + O\left(\frac{1}{n}\right),$$

where $v = (X - n)/\sqrt{2n}$. However, the distribution of the random variable

$$\sqrt{\frac{9n}{2}} \left\{ \left(\frac{X}{n} \right)^{1/3} - 1 + \frac{2}{9n} \right\}$$

is much better approximated by $N(0, 1)$, and

$$n \left(1 - \frac{2}{9n} + \sqrt{\frac{2}{9n}} u_\alpha \right)^3$$

gives a more accurate approximation to the $100\alpha\%$ point of the distribution $\chi^2(n)$. These are called the **Wilson-Hilferty approximations** (*Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US*, 17 (1931)).

The Edgeworth expansion was shown to be valid in more general situations by R. N. Bhat-tacharya and J. K. Ghosh [17]. In particular, they obtained the following: Let $\{X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from a p -variate distribution with a nonzero † absolutely continuous component w.r.t. † Lebesgue measure on \mathbf{R}^p . Let $f_0 (\equiv 1)$, f_1, \dots, f_k be linearly independent, real-valued, and continuously differentiable functions. For $i = 1, \dots, n$, put $Z_i = (f_1(X_i), f_2(X_i), \dots, f_k(X_i))$, and assume that the distribution of Z_1 has moments up to the order $v (\geq 3)$. Let H be a real-valued function on \mathbf{R}^k such that the v th order derivatives are continuous in a † neighborhood of $\mu \equiv E(Z_1)$. Let $V = (v_{ij})$, $i, j = 1, \dots, k$, be the covariance matrix of the random vector Z_1 , and put $\sigma^2 = \sum v_{ij} l_i l_j$, where $l_i = \partial H(z)/\partial z_i|_{z=\mu}$, and $z = (z_1, \dots, z_k)$. Then

$$\sup_B \left| \Pr \{ \sqrt{n}(H(\bar{Z}) - H(\mu)) \in B \} - \int_B \psi_{v,n}(x) dx \right| = O(n^{-(v-2)/2}),$$

where $\bar{Z} = \sum_{i=1}^n Z_i/n$, the supremum is taken over all Borel measurable sets B ,

$$\psi_{v,n}(x) = \left(1 + \sum_{k=1}^{v-2} \left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{n}} \right)^k P_k \left(-\frac{d}{dx} \right) \right) \phi_\sigma(x),$$

$\phi_\sigma(x)$ is the probability density function of the normal distribution $N(0, \sigma^2)$, and the P 's are polynomials whose coefficients are independent of n .

G. Order Statistics

Let $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from a univariate distribution with continuous probability density $f(x)$ and distribution function $F(x)$, and let $X_{(1)} \leq \dots \leq X_{(n)}$ be † order statistics. The joint probability density of $Y_1 = X_{(\alpha)}$, $Y_2 =$

$X_{(\beta)}, \dots, Y_{p-1} = X_{(\epsilon)}$, and $Y_p = X_{(\eta)}$ is given by

$$\frac{n!}{(\alpha-1)!(\beta-\alpha-1)! \dots (\eta-\epsilon-1)!(n-\eta)!} \\ \times (F(y_1))^{\alpha-1} (F(y_2)-F(y_1))^{\beta-\alpha-1} \dots \\ \times (F(y_p)-F(y_{p-1}))^{\eta-\epsilon-1} (1-F(y_p))^{n-\eta} \dots \\ \times f(y_1)f(y_2) \dots f(y_p)$$

for $-\infty < y_1 < \dots < y_p < \infty$, where $\alpha < \beta < \dots < \epsilon < \eta$. If for given constants $0 < \lambda_1 < \dots < \lambda_p < 1$, each of the subscripts α, \dots, η tends to infinity as $n \rightarrow \infty$ under the conditions $r_i = n\lambda_i + o(\sqrt{n})$, where $\alpha = r_1, \dots, \eta = r_p$, then the random vector (Y_1, \dots, Y_p) asymptotically obeys the p -dimensional normal distribution with mean vector (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_p) and covariance matrix $n^{-1}(\sigma_{ij})$, where $\sigma_{ij} = \sigma_{ji} = \lambda_i(1-\lambda_j)/f(\xi_i)f(\xi_j)$ for $i \leq j$ and ξ_i is the λ_i -quantile of the population, defined by $\lambda_i = F(\xi_i)$.

Suppose that there exist two sequences a_n and b_n of real and positive numbers, respectively, such that as $n \rightarrow \infty$ the sequence $(X_{(n)} - a_n)/b_n$ converges in distribution to a nondegenerate distribution G . The underlying distribution F is said to belong to the **domain of attraction** of the limiting distribution G (DA(G), for short). Except for the change of location and scale, only the following three distributions have nonempty domains of attraction:

$$G_1(x) = \begin{cases} 0 & x < 0 \\ e^{-x^{-\gamma}} & x \geq 0, \end{cases}$$

$$G_2 = \begin{cases} e^{-(-x)^{\gamma}} & x < 0 \\ 1, & x \geq 0, \end{cases}$$

$$G_3(x) = e^{-e^{-x}}.$$

Writing $\bar{F}(x) = 1 - F(x)$, $\alpha(F) = \inf\{x | F(x) > 0\}$ and $\omega(F) = \sup\{x | F(x) < 1\}$, we have the following theorem (B. V. Gnedenko, *Ann. Math.*, 44 (1943)):

$F \in \text{DA}(G_1)$ iff $\omega(F) = \infty$ and there exists an a such that

$$\lim_{u \rightarrow \infty} \bar{F}(a+ux)/\bar{F}(a+u) = x^{-\gamma} \quad \text{for all } x;$$

$F \in \text{DA}(G_2)$ iff $a \equiv \omega(F) < \infty$ and

$$\lim_{u \rightarrow 0} \bar{F}(a-ux)/\bar{F}(a-u) = x^{\gamma} \quad \text{for all } x > 0;$$

$F \in \text{DA}(G_3)$ iff there exists a positive function $R(t)$ such that

$$\lim_{t \rightarrow \omega(F)} \bar{F}(t+xR(t))/\bar{F}(t) = e^{-x} \quad \text{for all } x.$$

If $F(x)$ is twice differentiable, $f(x) = F'(x)$ is positive for sufficiently large x , and $\lim_{x \rightarrow \omega(F)} d\{(1-F(x))/f(x)\}/dx = 0$, then $F \in \text{DA}(G_3)$. Noticing the relation $X_{(1)} = -\max\{-X_1, -X_2, \dots, -X_n\}$, we can also derive the possible limiting distributions for

the sequence $(X_{(1)} - a_n)/b_n$ and their domains of attraction. The statistics $R_n = X_{(n)} - X_{(1)}$ and $M_n = (X_{(1)} + X_{(n)})/2$ are called the range and the **midrange** of the sample, respectively. If, for some a_n, a'_n , and b_n , both sequences $(X_{(n)} - a_n)/b_n$ and $(X_{(1)} - a'_n)/b_n$ converge to nondegenerate distributions G and H , respectively, then they are asymptotically independent, and we have

$$\lim \Pr\{(R_n - a_n + a'_n)/b_n \leq x\}$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} (1 - H(y-x)) dG(y),$$

$$\lim \Pr\{(2M_n - a_n - a'_n)/b_n \leq x\}$$

$$= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} H(x-y) dG(y).$$

H. Characterization of the Distribution by means of a Property of the Sampling Distribution

A distribution or a family of distributions can be characterized by a property of the sampling distribution of a suitable statistic. Let $\{X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from a nondegenerate distribution F , and let $X_{(1)} \leq \dots \leq X_{(n)}$ be the \dagger order statistics. The \dagger sample mean \bar{X} is independent of the \dagger sample variance $S^2 = \sum (X_j - \bar{X})^2 / (n-1)$ iff F is normal $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$ (Kawata and Sakamoto, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 1 (1949)). Let $a_{ij}, i, j = 1, \dots, n$, be real numbers such that $\sum a_{ij} = 0$ and $\sum a_{ii} \neq 0$. If F has a finite second moment, then the condition $E(\sum a_{ij} X_i X_j | \bar{X}) = \text{const.}$ implies that F is normal. Two linear statistics $L_1 = a_1 X_1 + \dots + a_n X_n$ and $L_2 = b_1 X_1 + \dots + b_n X_n$ are independent only if F is normal, provided that $a_j b_j \neq 0$ for some j . In fact, the X 's need not be identically distributed: If L_1 and L_2 are independent and $a_j b_j \neq 0$, then the distribution of X_j is normal (**Skitovich-Darmois theorem**). Yu. V. Linnik [23] gave a necessary and sufficient condition for the normality of F to be equivalent to the identity of the distributions of L_1 and L_2 . The condition is stated in terms of the zeros of the entire function $\sigma(z) = |a_1|^2 + \dots + |a_n|^2 - |b_1|^2 - \dots - |b_n|^2$. The result contains as a special case the following characterization theorem for the normal distribution: If $\sum a_j^2 = 1$ and L_1 has a distribution identical to that of X_1 , then F is normal $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$ with $\mu(\sum a_j - 1) = 0$. R. Shimizu gave a complete description of the characteristic function of the distribution for which L_1 has the same distribution as X_1 . In particular, it was proved that if $\log|a_1|/\log|a_2|$ is an irrational number, α is the positive number given by $\sum |a_j|^\alpha = 1$, and if L_1 has a distribution identical to that of X_1 , then F is the \dagger stable distribution with \dagger characteristic

exponent α . The result was extended in [24] to the cases where the a 's are random variables independent of the X 's. If $E(X_i)=0$ and $E(\bar{X} | X_1 - \bar{X}, X_2 - \bar{X}, \dots, X_n - \bar{X})=0$, then F is normal [26]. Let $\mu_1, \mu_2, \dots, \mu_n$ be a set of real numbers. If the sampling distribution of the statistic $\sum (X_i + \mu_i)^2$ depends on the μ 's only through $\sum \mu_i^2$, then F is normal. If X_i is positive and has finite mean, then the condition $E(\bar{X} | X_2/X_1, X_3/X_1, \dots, X_n/X_1)=\text{const.}$ implies that F is the gamma distribution. If the distribution F is not concentrated on a lattice $0, \rho, 2\rho, \dots$, then $E(X_{(k+1)} - X_{(k)} | X_{(k)}) = \text{const.}$ for some k implies that F is the exponential distribution: $F(x) = 1 - e^{-\lambda x}$, $x > 0$. $X_{(k+1)} - X_{(k)}$ has the identical distribution for some k with $\min\{X_1, X_2, \dots, X_{n-k}\}$ iff F is exponential. If a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n are positive numbers such that $a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_n = 1$ and such that $\log a_1 / \log a_2$ is irrational, then the sampling distribution of $\min\{X_1/a_1, X_2/a_2, \dots, X_n/a_n\}$ is the same as that of X_1 iff F is exponential. $X_{(1)}$ is independent of $X_{(1)} - \bar{X}$ iff F is exponential.

Suppose that the distribution F has a bounded density function and that the integral $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{tx} dF(x)$ is finite on a neighborhood of $t = 0$. Let $\{X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from a distribution of the family $\mathcal{P} = \{F((x - \mu)/\sigma) | -\infty < \mu < \infty, \sigma > 0\}$. For $n \geq 9$, the sampling distribution of the statistics

$$\left\{ \frac{(X_3 - X_1)}{(X_9 - X_7)}, \frac{(X_2 - X_1)}{(X_8 - X_7)}, \frac{(X_6 - X_4)}{(X_9 - X_7)}, \frac{(X_5 - X_4)}{(X_8 - X_7)}, \right. \\ \left. \text{sgn}(X_3 - X_1), \text{sgn}(X_2 - X_1), \right. \\ \left. \text{sgn}(X_6 - X_4), \text{sgn}(X_5 - X_4) \right\}$$

uniquely determines the family \mathcal{P} . If F is symmetric, then for $n \geq 6$ the distribution of $\{|(X_4 - X_3)/(X_2 - X_1)|, |(X_6 - X_5)/(X_2 - X_1)|\}$ uniquely determines \mathcal{P} [25].

I. U-Statistics

Let $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ be a random sample from a certain distribution, and let $\varphi(x_1, \dots, x_m)$ be a real-valued function that is symmetric with respect to the arguments x_1, \dots, x_m . The statistic

$$U = \binom{n}{m}^{-1} \sum \varphi(X_{\alpha_1}, \dots, X_{\alpha_m}),$$

where the summation extends over all combinations $(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m)$ taken from $(1, 2, \dots, n)$, is called a **U-statistic**. Let $\theta = E(\varphi(X_1, \dots, X_m))$, and assume that $E(\varphi(X_1, \dots, X_m)^2)$ is finite. Then the mean and variance of U are given by

$$E(U) = \theta, \quad V(U) = \binom{n}{m}^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^m \binom{m}{i} \binom{n-m}{m-i} \zeta_i,$$

where ζ_i is the covariance between $\varphi(X_1, \dots, X_m)$ and $\varphi(X_1, \dots, X_i, X'_{i+1}, \dots, X'_m)$, with X'_{i+1}, \dots, X'_m an additional independent random sample of size $m - i$ from the same distribution. If $\zeta_1 \neq 0$, then U obeys the distribution $N(\theta, m^2 \zeta_1/n)$ asymptotically as $n \rightarrow \infty$ (W. Hoeffding, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 19 (1948)).

These results can be generalized to the case of several populations and samples. Let $X_{11}, \dots, X_{1n_1}; \dots; X_{c1}, \dots, X_{cn_c}$ be c independent random samples, each drawn from one of c populations. Assume that a real-valued function $\varphi(x_{11}, \dots, x_{1m_1}; \dots; x_{c1}, \dots, x_{cm_c})$ is symmetric with respect to the arguments x_{i1}, \dots, x_{im_i} for each $i = 1, \dots, c$. Then

$$U = \prod_{i=1}^c \binom{n_i}{m_i}^{-1} \cdot \sum \varphi(X_{1\alpha(11)}, \dots, X_{1\alpha(1m_1)}; \dots; \\ X_{c\alpha(c1)}, \dots, X_{c\alpha(cm_c)}),$$

where the summation extends over all combinations $(\alpha(i1), \dots, \alpha(im_i))$ of m_i numbers taken from $(1, 2, \dots, n_i)$ for each $i = 1, \dots, c$, is called a **U-statistic**. The mean and variance of U can be obtained as before, while U is asymptotically normally distributed as the sample sizes n_1, \dots, n_c tend to infinity in fixed proportion. Furthermore, if there are given several U -statistics, their joint distribution is asymptotically normal.

J. Distributions Having Monotone Likelihood Ratio, and Pólya-Type Distributions

Let $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ be a sample space and

$$\mathcal{P} = \{p_\theta(x) | \theta \in \Omega\}$$

be a family of probability densities with respect to a fixed σ -finite measure. The function $p_\theta(x)$ regarded as a function of θ with a fixed observed value of x is called the **likelihood function**, and its value at a particular point θ is called the **likelihood** of that point. The family \mathcal{P} with $\Omega \subset \mathbf{R}$ is said to have **monotone likelihood ratio** with respect to a real-valued function $T(x)$ if and only if for any $\theta < \theta'$ such that θ and θ' belong to Ω the ratio $p_{\theta'}(x)/p_\theta(x)$ is a nondecreasing function of $T(x)$. Under the assumption that $\mathcal{X} \subset \mathbf{R}$ and $\partial^2 \log p_\theta(x) / \partial x \partial \theta$ exists, a necessary and sufficient condition for \mathcal{P} to have monotone likelihood ratio with respect to $T(x) \equiv x$ is that $\partial^2 \log p_\theta(x) / \partial x \partial \theta \geq 0$ for any x and θ . If $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ is a random sample from a distribution that has a monotone likelihood ratio and if a real-valued function $\psi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is nondecreasing in each of its arguments, then the expectation $E_\theta(\psi(X_1, \dots, X_n))$ is a nondecreasing function of θ .

The family \mathcal{P} is said to be of **Pólya type n** if and only if for any $m = 1, 2, \dots, n$ and any

real numbers $x_1 < \dots < x_m$ and $\theta_1 < \dots < \theta_m$, the determinant of the matrix $(p_{\theta_i}(x_j))$, $i, j = 1, \dots, m$, is nonnegative, and \mathcal{P} is said to be **strictly of Pólya type n** if the determinant is positive. Being of Pólya type 2 is equivalent to having a monotone likelihood ratio. If \mathcal{P} is (strictly) of Pólya type n for any positive integer n , then it is said to be (strictly) of **Pólya type**. An exponential family of distributions with probability density $p_{\theta}(x) = \exp(\theta x + \alpha(\theta) + s(x))$ for $x \in \mathcal{X} \subset \mathbf{R}$ and $\theta \in \Omega \subset \mathbf{R}$ is strictly of Pólya type. Each of the noncentral chi-square distribution, noncentral t -distribution, and noncentral F -distribution is strictly of Pólya type with respect to the noncentrality parameter.

References

- [1] H. Cramér, *Mathematical methods of statistics*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1946.
- [2] S. S. Wilks, *Mathematical statistics*, Wiley, 1962.
- [3] M. G. Kendall and A. Stuart, *The advanced theory of statistics I*, Griffin, fifth edition, 1952.
- [4] N. L. Johnson and S. Kotz, *Distributions in statistics*, 4 vols., Wiley, 1969–1972.
- [5] Student (W. G. Gosset), The probable error of a mean, *Biometrika*, 6 (1908), 1–25.
- [6] R. A. Fisher, *Statistical methods for research workers*, Oliver & Boyd, 1925.
- [7] T. W. Anderson, *An introduction to multivariate statistical analysis*, Wiley, 1958.
- [8] A. T. James, Distributions of matrix variates and latent roots derived from normal samples, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 35 (1964), 475–501.
- [9] A. G. Constantine, Some non-central distribution problems in multivariate analysis, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 34 (1963), 1270–1285.
- [10] H. Chernoff, Large-sample theory: Parametric case, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 27 (1956), 1–22.
- [11] K. Pearson, On the criterion that a given system of deviations from the probable in the case of a correlated system of variables is such that it can be reasonably supposed to have arisen from random sampling, *Philos. Mag.*, (5) 50 (1900). Reproduced in K. Pearson, *Early statistical papers*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1948.
- [12] K. R. Parthasarathy, *Probability measures on metric spaces*, Academic Press, 1967.
- [13] P. Billingsley, *Convergence of probability measures*, Wiley, 1968.
- [14] R. H. Randles and D. A. Wolfe, *Introduction to the theory of nonparametric statistics*, Wiley, 1979.
- [15] F. Y. Edgeworth, The law of errors, *Trans. Cambridge Philos. Soc.*, 20 (1904).
- [16] E. A. Cornish and R. A. Fisher, Moments and cumulants in the specification of distributions, *Rev. Int. Statist. Inst.*, 5 (1937). Reproduced in R. A. Fisher, *Contributions to mathematical statistics*, Wiley, 1950.
- [17] R. N. Bhattacharya and J. K. Ghosh, On the validity of the formal Edgeworth expansion, *Ann. Statist.*, 6 (1978), 434–451.
- [18] R. N. Bhattacharya and R. Ranga Rao, *Normal approximation and asymptotic expansions*, Wiley, 1976.
- [19] E. J. Gumbel, *Statistics of extremes*, Columbia Univ. Press, 1958.
- [20] A. E. Sarhan and B. G. Greenberg (eds.), *Contributions to order statistics*, Wiley, 1962.
- [21] H. A. David, *Order statistics*, Wiley, second edition, 1981.
- [22] J. Galambos, *The asymptotic theory of extreme order statistics*, Wiley, 1978.
- [23] Yu. V. Linnik, Linear forms and statistical criteria, *Selected Transl. Math. Statist. Prob.*, 3 (1962), 1–90. (Original in Russian, 1953.)
- [24] R. Shimizu and L. Davies, General characterization theorems for the Weibull and the stable distributions, *Sankhyā*, ser. A, 43 (1981), 282–310.
- [25] Yu. V. Prokhorov, On a characterization of a class of probability distributions by distributions of some statistics, *Theory of Prob. Appl.*, 10 (1965), 438–445. (Original in Russian, 1965.)
- [26] A. M. Kagan, Yu. V. Linnik, and C. R. Rao, *Characterization problems in mathematical statistics*, Wiley, 1973.
- [27] J. Galambos and S. Kotz, *Characterizations of probability distributions*, Springer, 1978.
- [28] G. P. Patil, S. Kotz, and J. K. Ord (eds.), *Statistical distributions in scientific work III, Characterizations and applications*, Reidel, 1975.
- [29] S. Karlin, Decision theory for Pólya type distributions, Case of two actions I, *Proc. 3rd Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. I*, Univ. of California Press, 1956, 115–128.

375 (XX.26) Scattering Theory

A. General Remarks

The path of a moving (incident) particle is distorted when it interacts with another (target) particle, such as an atom or a molecule. Phenomena of this sort are generally called

scattering. Scattering is called **elastic** when the internal properties of the incident particle and the target remain unchanged after the collision, and **inelastic** when the internal properties change, other particles are emitted, or the two particles form a bound state.

The extent of scattering depends on the sizes of the incident and target particles. The **scattering cross section** is defined as the probability that the incident beam will be scattered per unit time (normalized to one particle per unit time crossing unit area perpendicular to the direction of incidence). In \dagger classical mechanics the scattering cross section is equal to the cross section of the target perpendicular to the incoming beam, hence the term "cross section." The probability of scattering into a unit solid angle in a particular direction is called the **differential cross section**. The probability that the incoming particle is absorbed by the target, called the **absorption cross section**, is intimately connected with the scattering cross section. Analyses of scattering give information on the structure and interactions of atoms, molecules, and elementary particles. One can also study the scattering of acoustic and electromagnetic waves by inhomogeneous media and obstacles, by considering notions similar to the above.

Scattering theory may be dated back to Lord Rayleigh. Since the advent of quantum mechanics in the mid-1920s, scattering problems, mainly for central (spherically symmetric) potentials, have been investigated strenuously by physicists. It may be said, however, that a scattering theory having mathematically rigorous foundations began around the 1950s, when the pioneering work of K. Friedrichs (*Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 1 (1948)), A. Ya. Povzner (*Mat. Sb.*, 32 (1953)), T. Kato (*J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 9 (1957)), J. M. Cook (*J. Math. Phys.*, 36 (1957)), and J. M. Jauch (*Helv. Phys. Acta*, 31 (1958)), among others, appeared, and scattering theory has now grown into a branch of mathematical physics.

General references for mathematical scattering theory are, e.g., [1-5].

B. Wave and Scattering Operators

In \dagger quantum mechanics the dynamics of an interacting system is given by a \dagger one-parameter group of unitary operators e^{-itH} , where t denotes the time and H , called the Hamiltonian of the system, is a \dagger self-adjoint operator acting in a \dagger Hilbert space \mathcal{H} . Elements of \mathcal{H} represent (pure) states of the system. Let H_0 be the "free" Hamiltonian of the corresponding "noninteracting" system. (There are at present no generally accepted definite

criteria for "free" and "noninteracting.") H_0 is assumed to be \dagger absolutely continuous, which is the case in most practical situations. Then the **outgoing** and **incoming wave operators** $W_{\pm} = W_{\pm}(H, H_0)$ are defined, if they exist, by

$$W_{\pm} = s\text{-}\lim_{t \rightarrow \pm\infty} e^{itH} e^{-itH_0} \quad (s\text{-}\lim = \dagger\text{strong limit}).$$

This means that given any free motion $e^{-itH_0}u$ there is an initial ($t=0$) state u_{\pm} ($= W_{\pm}u$) such that $e^{-itH}u_{\pm}$ and $e^{-itH_0}u$ are asymptotically equal at $t = \pm\infty$. W_{\pm} are \dagger isometric, intertwine the two dynamics: $e^{-itH}W_{\pm} = W_{\pm}e^{-itH_0}$, and map \mathcal{H} (which is nothing but the \dagger absolutely continuous subspace $\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H_0)$ for H_0) onto a closed subspace of $\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$. The **scattering operator** S is defined as $S = W_{+}^{*}W_{-}$ (A^{*} is the Hilbert-space \dagger adjoint of A). S commutes with H_0 and maps states in the remote past into states in the distant future. One of the most important problems in scattering theory is to prove the \dagger unitarity of S , or equivalently, $\text{Ran } W_{+} = \text{Ran } W_{-}$ ($\text{Ran} = \dagger\text{range} = \dagger\text{image}$). W_{\pm} is called **complete** if $\text{Ran } W_{\pm} = \mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$. The completeness of W_{\pm} implies that S is unitary.

As a typical example we consider the 1-body problem. Note that the 2-body problem reduces to the 1-body problem by separating out the center-of-mass motion, which is free. Then $H_0 = -\Delta$ (the negative \dagger Laplacian in \mathbf{R}^3), $H = -\Delta + V$, the operator V being multiplication by a real-valued function $V(x)$, called the **potential**, and $\mathcal{H} = L_2(\mathbf{R}^3)$. If V is **short range**, i.e., if, roughly speaking, $V(x) = O(|x|^{-1-\varepsilon})$ ($\varepsilon > 0$) at ∞ , the wave operators are known to exist and to be complete (S. Agmon, *Ann. Scuola Norm. Sup. Pisa*, (4) 2 (1975)). If the potential $V(x)$ is **long range**, i.e., if, roughly speaking, $V(x) = O(|x|^{-\varepsilon})$ ($\varepsilon > 0$) at ∞ , then the foregoing definition of the wave operators has to be modified. For the Coulomb potential $V(x) = c/x$, for instance, one can adopt the following definition of **modified wave operators**:

$$\tilde{W}_{\pm} = s\text{-}\lim_{t \rightarrow \pm\infty} e^{itH} \exp(-itH_0 - i(c/2)H_0^{-1/2} \log t).$$

It can be shown that the \tilde{W}_{\pm} exist (which implies that the ordinary wave operators do not exist) and are complete: $\text{Ran } \tilde{W}_{\pm} = \mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$ (J. D. Dollard, in [6]). The same result obtains for more general long-range potentials (H. Kitada, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 30 (1978); T. Ikebe and H. Isozaki, *Integral Equations and Operator Theory*, 5 (1982)).

If the wave operators exist and are complete, they give \dagger unitary equivalence between the \dagger absolutely continuous parts of H_0 and H (\rightarrow T. Kato [7]; 331 Perturbation of Linear Operators).

In the foregoing discussion it was tacitly assumed that in dealing with scattering phenomena we adhere to states in $\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H_0)$ and

$\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$. A more physically intuitive definition in the case of potential scattering ($H_0 = -\Delta$, $H = H_0 + V$) of **scattering states** $\Sigma_{\pm}(H)$ is the following: $f \in \Sigma_{\pm}(H)$ if and only if for any $r > 0$,

$$\lim_{T \rightarrow \pm\infty} \frac{1}{T} \int_0^T \|F_r e^{-itH} f\|^2 dt = 0$$

($\|\cdot\| = L_2$ -norm),

where F_r is the (projection) operator of multiplication by the characteristic function of $\{x \in \mathbb{R}^3 \mid |x| < r\}$. In general no inclusion relations between $\Sigma_{\pm}(H)$ and $\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$ are known. But for a wide class of potentials it is known that $\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$ as well as the \dagger continuous subspace of H coincides with $\Sigma_{\pm}(H)$ (in this case there is no \dagger singular continuous spectrum) (W. O. Amrein and V. Georgescu, *Helv. Phys. Acta*, 46 (1973); C. Wilcox, *J. Functional Anal.*, 12 (1973); Amrein, in [8]).

A purely abstract result in scattering theory may be noted. Let H_0 and H be self-adjoint operators in an abstract Hilbert space \mathcal{H} such that $V = H - H_0$ is a \dagger trace-class (\dagger nuclear) operator. Then the **generalized wave operators** $W_{\pm}(H, H_0) = s\text{-}\lim_{t \rightarrow \pm\infty} \exp(itH) \exp(-itH_0) P_{ac}(H_0)$ exist, where $P_{ac}(H_0)$ is the \dagger projection onto $\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H_0)$. Since this statement is symmetric in H_0 and H , the "inverse" generalized wave operators $W_{\pm}(H_0, H)$ also exist, from which one can conclude that $W_{\pm}(H, H_0)$ are complete. Moreover, the **invariance principle** holds, which means roughly the following: If ϕ is a strictly increasing function on \mathbb{R} , then $W_{\pm}(\phi(H), \phi(H_0))$ exists and is equal to $W_{\pm}(H, H_0)$. This result can be applied to potential scattering when $V(x) \in L_2(\mathbb{R}^3) \cap L_1(\mathbb{R}^3)$ (Kato [7]; D. B. Pearson, *J. Functional Anal.*, 28 (1978)).

C. Stationary (Time-Independent) Approach

We again consider the 1-body problem as in Section B. $V(x)$ is assumed to verify certain appropriate decay conditions at ∞ as the case may be. Consider the \dagger resolvents $R_0(z) = (H_0 - z)^{-1}$ and $R(z) = (H - z)^{-1}$ for $z \in \mathbb{C} - \mathbb{R}$, which are well-defined bounded integral operators on $\mathcal{H} = L_2(\mathbb{R}^3)$. Here we note the following: $[0, \infty)$ is the \dagger continuous spectrum of H_0 and H , $(-\infty, 0)$ is contained in the \dagger resolvent set of H_0 , and H has possibly \dagger discrete \dagger eigenvalues in $[-a, 0)$ with $(-\infty, -a)$ contained in the resolvent set, where a is a positive number. When z approaches a positive real value, $R_0(z)$ and $R(z)$ do not have limits as \dagger bounded operators on \mathcal{H} . But if we regard them as operators from $L_{2,\gamma}$ to $L_{2,-\gamma}$ ($L_{2,\alpha} = \{u \mid (1+|x|)^{\alpha} u(x) \in L_2(\mathbb{R}^3)\}$), $\gamma > 1/2$, they can be shown to have boundary values $R_0(\lambda \pm i0)$ and

$R(\lambda \pm i0)$, $\lambda > 0$ (**limiting absorption principle**; \rightarrow Agmon, *loc. cit.*, for short-range potentials; for long-range potentials \rightarrow R. Lavine, *J. Functional Anal.*, 12 (1973); T. Ikebe and Y. Saitō, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 12 (1972); and Saitō, *Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 9 (1974). With these boundary values we can define "stationary" wave operators whose range is easily proved to coincide with $\mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$, and show their equality to the time-dependent wave operators discussed in Section B, thus obtaining the completeness of the latter.

H_0 is known to have **generalized** (improper) **eigenfunctions** $\varphi_0(x, \xi) = e^{ix \cdot \xi}$ with **generalized** (improper) **eigenvalues** $|\xi|^2$. The associated eigenfunction expansion is nothing but the Fourier integral expansion. An eigenfunction expansion, similar to the Fourier expansion, that diagonalizes H can be obtained by using generalized eigenfunctions

$$\begin{aligned} \varphi_{\pm}(x, \xi) \\ = \varphi_0(x, \xi) - (R(|\xi|^2 \pm i0) V \varphi_0(\cdot, \xi))(x), \end{aligned}$$

which are the solutions to the **Lippmann-Schwinger equation**

$$\begin{aligned} \varphi_{\pm}(x, \xi) &= \varphi_0(x, \xi) \\ &\quad - \frac{1}{4\pi} \int_{\mathbb{R}^3} \frac{e^{\pm i|\xi||x-y|}}{|x-y|} V(y) \varphi_{\pm}(y, \xi) dy. \end{aligned}$$

A rough statement of this is the following:

Let $\tilde{u}_{\pm}(\xi) = (2\pi)^{-3/2} \int \varphi_{\pm}(x, \xi) u(x) dx$. Then $\|\tilde{u}\| = \|u\|$, $(Hu)^{\sim}(\xi) = |\xi|^2 \tilde{u}(\xi)$, and $u(x) = (2\pi)^{-3/2} \int \varphi_{\pm}(x, \xi) \tilde{u}(\xi) d\xi$ (\rightarrow e.g. [4, XI.6] for a more precise statement).

In view of the fact that S commutes with H_0 , we can show that S admits the following representation: Let $\hat{u}(\xi) = (2\pi)^{-3/2} \int \varphi_0(x, \xi) u(x) dx$ be the \dagger Fourier transform of u . Then

$$\begin{aligned} (Su)^{\sim}(\xi) &\equiv (\hat{S}\hat{u})(\xi) \\ &= \hat{u}(\xi) - \pi i \int_{S^2} |\xi| T(\xi, |\xi| \omega') \hat{u}(|\xi| \omega') d\omega', \end{aligned}$$

where

$$T(\xi, \xi') = (2\pi)^{-3} \int \varphi_0(x, \xi) V(x) \varphi(x, \xi') dx$$

is the kernel of the so-called **T -operator**, which is a \dagger compact operator on $L_2(S^2)$ under suitable conditions on $V(x)$. $T(\xi, \xi')$ is related to the experimentally measurable total cross section (for incident momentum ξ) $\sigma(\xi)$:

$$\begin{aligned} \sigma(\xi) &= 2\pi \int_{S^2} |f(|\xi|; \omega, \omega')|^2 d\omega' \quad (\omega = \xi/|\xi|), \\ f(\lambda; \omega, \omega') &= -2\pi^2 T(\lambda\omega, \lambda\omega') \quad (\lambda > 0). \end{aligned}$$

The quantity $f(\lambda; \omega, \omega')$ is called the **scattering amplitude** and appears in the asymptotic

expansion of $\varphi_{\pm}(x, \xi)$ as

$$\varphi_{\pm}(x, \xi) \sim \varphi_0(x, \xi) + \frac{e^{\pm i|\xi||x|}}{|x|} f(|\xi|; \hat{x}, \hat{\xi}),$$

where $a = a/|a|$ for $a \in \mathbb{R}^3$.

An abstract version of the limiting absorption principle and eigenfunction expansion is known as the Kato-Kuroda theory, for which the reader is referred to Kato and S. T. Kuroda in [6] and in *Functional analysis and related fields*, Springer, 1970, and to Kuroda (*J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 25 (1973)).

D. Time-Dependent Approach

Consider the same situation as in Section C. Since scattering is a time-dependent phenomenon, it seems natural to develop scattering theory in a time-dependent fashion. Indeed, there is an approach to the completeness of wave operators that does not resort to any eigenfunction expansion results, but instead follows the temporal development of the wave packet $e^{-itH}u$. The completeness of W_{\pm} will be established if one can show that any $u \in \mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$ orthogonal to $\text{Ran } W_{\pm}$ is 0. A crucial step to prove this is to find a clever decomposition of a wave packet into an outgoing and an incoming one, or to find projections P_{\pm} such that $P_+ + P_- = I$ and $P_{\pm}e^{-itH_0}$ goes to 0 as $t \rightarrow \mp\infty$. Some compactness arguments are also needed.

To construct such a decomposition or projections one looks at the scalar product $x \cdot \xi$, x and ξ being the position and momentum (operators), respectively. The main idea is that if this is positive, the particle will be outgoing (to infinity), and if negative, incoming (from infinity). But since we work in the framework of quantum mechanics, this classical-mechanical intuition should be properly modified.

Besides the completeness of wave operators it can also be shown through the above approach that the singular continuous spectrum of H is absent. For details \rightarrow [4, XI.17] and V. Enss, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 61 (1978).

E. Partial Wave Expansion

In this section we assume that the potential $V(x)$ is central, i.e., $V(x)$ is a function of $|x|$ alone. Then the scattering operator S turns out to commute not only with H_0 but also with the angular momentum operator $L = x \times i^{-1}\nabla$ (vector product). The eigenvalues of $L^2 = L \cdot L$ (scalar product) are $l(l+1)$ ($l=0, 1, 2, \dots$), and those of L_z , the third component of L , are $m = -l, -(l-1), \dots, l-1, l$ if L^2 has eigenvalue $l(l+1)$, while simultaneous eigenfunctions are given by suitably normalized † spherical har-

monics $Y_{lm}(\omega)$, $\omega \in S^2$. Let E_l be the projection onto the subspace spanned by functions of the form $\sum_{m=-l}^l u_{lm}(r) Y_{lm}(\omega)$ ($r = |x| > 0, \omega = x/r$). \mathcal{H} becomes an orthogonal sum of $\mathcal{H}_l = E_l \mathcal{H}$. The aforementioned commutation property claims that $E_l S = S E_l \equiv S_l$, and the operator \hat{S}_l reduces to multiplication by a scalar function $e^{2i\delta_l(\lambda)}$ in \mathcal{H}_l (\rightarrow Section C). $\delta_l(\lambda)$ is called the **phase shift**. Defining the **partial wave scattering amplitude** $f_l(\lambda) = (2i\lambda)^{-1}(e^{2i\delta_l(\lambda)} - 1)$, one obtains the **partial wave expansion** of the scattering amplitude:

$$f(\lambda; \omega, \omega') = \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} (2l+1) f_l(\lambda) P_l(\cos \theta),$$

where θ is the angle between ω and ω' , and P_l is a † Legendre polynomial. The total cross section is $\sigma(\lambda) = 4\pi\lambda^{-2} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} (2l+1) |f_l(\lambda)|^2$ [1-5, 9].

F. Many-Body Problem (Multichannel Scattering)

We consider only the 3-body case, which is complicated enough compared with the 2- (essentially 1-) body case. The complications are both kinematical and dynamical. The configuration of a 3-body system is given by a point in \mathbb{R}^9 . Once we choose the center-of-mass coordinates, there is no kinematically natural way to choose the remaining six coordinates. In the 2-body case a freely moving particle in the remote past will be freely moving in the distant future. But in the 3-body case there come into play various other dynamical processes, such as capture, breakup, rearrangement, and excitation.

The 3-body Hamiltonian is a self-adjoint operator in $L_2(\mathbb{R}^9)$ of the form

$$\tilde{H} = - \sum_{i=1}^3 \frac{1}{2m_i} \Delta_i + \sum_{i < j} V_{ij}(x_i - x_j),$$

where Δ_i is the 3-dimensional Laplacian associated with particle i , m_i is the mass of particle i , and each $V_{ij}(x) (= V_{ji}(x) = V_{ij}(-x))$ is a real-valued function decaying at ∞ in \mathbb{R}^3 (not in \mathbb{R}^9). If we remove the center-of-mass motion, \tilde{H} can be written in the form

$$\tilde{H} = H_0 \otimes I + I \otimes H \quad (\otimes = ^{\dagger}\text{tensor product}),$$

where H_0 is the center-of-mass Hamiltonian in $L_2(\mathbb{R}^3)$ representing the uniform free motion of the center of mass, and H is the Hamiltonian of relative motion in $L_2(\mathbb{R}^6)$. One should note as mentioned above that there is no unique natural way of choosing coordinates in \mathbb{R}^6 and representing H , but there are many equivalent representations. Suppose, for instance, that particles 1 and 2 and particles 1 and 3 form † bound states (12) and (13) and that there are

no bound states between 2 and 3. We partition the whole system into **clusters**: (1) (2) (3), (12) (3), and (13) (2) () represents a cluster and figures in () are the particles forming the cluster). A **channel** is a partition into clusters together with a specified bound-state eigenfunction. Take, for instance, channel (12) (3), and suppose $\psi \in L_2(\mathbf{R}^3)$ is the eigenfunction in question. If we take $x = x_2 - x_1$ and $y = x_3 - (m_1 + m_2)^{-1}(m_1 x_1 + m_2 x_2)$, then

$$H = -\frac{1}{2m}\Delta_y - \frac{1}{2n}\Delta_x + V_{12}(x) + V_{23}\left(\frac{m_1 x}{m_1 m_2} - y\right) + V_{31}\left(\frac{m_2 x}{m_1 + m_2} + y\right),$$

where $m^{-1} = m_3^{-1} + (m_1 + m_2)^{-1}$, $n^{-1} = m_1^{-1} + m_2^{-1}$. Let us neglect the interactions between (12) and (3), i.e., set $V_{23} = V_{31} = 0$ to define the **cluster decomposition Hamiltonian**

$$H_{(12)(3)} = -\frac{1}{2m}\Delta_y - \frac{1}{2n}\Delta_x + V_{12}(x).$$

Let $\mathcal{H}_{(12)(3)} = L_2(\mathbf{R}^3)$ (called the **channel Hilbert space** consisting of functions of y), and define a mapping $\tau: \mathcal{H}_{(12)(3)} \rightarrow \mathcal{H} = L_2(\mathbf{R}^6)$ (functions of x and y) by $(\tau f)(x, y) = \psi(x)f(y)$. The **channel wave operators** $W_{(12)(3)\pm}$ are defined by

$$W_{(12)(3)\pm} = \text{s-lim}_{t \rightarrow \pm\infty} e^{itH} e^{-itH_{(12)(3)}} \tau$$

as isometries from $\mathcal{H}_{(12)(3)}$ into \mathcal{H} . Their ranges are not expected to coincide as in the 2-body case. $W_{(1)(2)(3)\pm}$ and $W_{(13)(2)\pm}$ are similarly defined. Note that $\mathcal{H}_{(1)(2)(3)} = \mathcal{H}$. If α and β are distinct channels, we have $\text{Ran } W_{\alpha+} \perp \text{Ran } W_{\beta+}$ and $\text{Ran } W_{\alpha-} \perp \text{Ran } W_{\beta-}$, but no such relations exist between $\text{Ran } W_{\alpha+}$ and $\text{Ran } W_{\beta-}$ or $\text{Ran } W_{\alpha-}$ and $\text{Ran } W_{\beta+}$. Define, for channels α and β , $S_{\alpha\beta}: \mathcal{H}_\beta \rightarrow \mathcal{H}_\alpha$ by $S_{\alpha\beta} = (W_{\alpha+})^* W_{\beta-}$. Now the **scattering operator** S for the 3-body system is defined as the \dagger direct sum of $S_{\alpha\beta}$ acting in the Hilbert space $\Sigma_\alpha \oplus \mathcal{H}_\alpha: S = \Sigma_{\alpha,\beta} \oplus S_{\alpha\beta}$. Naturally the question arises: Is S unitary? The first affirmative answer was made by L. D. Faddeev (*Israel Program for Scientific Translations*, 1965 (in English; original in Russian, 1963)), and later the work of J. Ginibre and M. Moulin (*Ann. Inst. H. Poincaré*, A21 (1974)) and L. Thomas (*Ann. Phys.*, 90 (1975)) came out. The method of these authors is stationary. There have also been some attempts using time-dependent methods.

G. Inverse Problem

The **inverse problem** in potential scattering may be formulated at least mathematically as follows: Given the scattering operator or scat-

tering amplitude, determine the potential(s) giving rise to the operator or amplitude. We consider here only the 2-body case (as to the many-body case, almost nothing is known). The central-potential case can be reduced to 1-dimensional problems on $(0, \infty)$. In the 1-dimensional case the celebrated Gel'fand-Levitan theory (\rightarrow 112 Differential Operators O) has long been known and has been successfully applied even to nonlinear problems such as the \dagger Korteweg-de Vries equation. In the 3-dimensional case, however, the problem becomes difficult; so far there has not been any satisfactory theory comparable to that for the 1-dimensional case. The potential $V(x)$ is a function $\mathbf{R}^3 \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$. The scattering amplitude $f(\lambda; \omega, \omega')$ is a function $f: \mathbf{R} \times S^2 \times S^2 \rightarrow \mathbf{C}$. Let M be the mapping that takes V into f . The inverse problem deals with M^{-1} . Several questions may be posed (in order of increasing difficulty): (1) Is M one-to-one? (2) When it is known that M is one-to-one and f is in the image of M , how does one (re-)construct the V that yields f ? (3) What conditions characterize the image of M ? Question (1) has been rather satisfactorily answered insofar as short-range potentials are concerned. Concerning questions (2) and (3), attempts have been and are being made to generalize the Gel'fand-Levitan theory, but it may be said that we are still at the beginning stage. References are [2, 9, 10] and R. G. Newton (*J. Math. Phys.*, 20 (1980); 21 (1981); 22 (1982)).

H. Scattering for the Wave Equation

Consider the \dagger wave equation $u_{tt} - \Delta u = 0$ in \mathbf{R}^3 . The solution $u(t) = u(t, x)$ is uniquely determined by the initial data $\{f, g\} = \{u(0), u_t(0)\}$, and $U_0(t)\{f, g\} = \{u(t), u_t(t)\}$ defines the solution operator $U_0(t)$. The set of data $\{f, g\}$ with finite energy: $\int (|\nabla f|^2 + |g|^2) dx < \infty$ forms a Hilbert space \mathcal{H}_0 . $U_0(t)$ is a unitary group on \mathcal{H}_0 . A similar description is possible for solutions of the wave equation in an exterior domain Ω outside an obstacle with zero boundary condition. Denote the resulting Hilbert space and solution operator by \mathcal{H} and $U(t)$, respectively. Let $J: \mathcal{H}_0 \rightarrow \mathcal{H}$ be the identification operator defined by $(J\{f, g\})(x) = \{f, g\}(x)$, $x \in \Omega$. The **wave operators** are defined by $W_\pm = \text{s-lim}_{t \rightarrow \pm\infty} U(-t)J U_0(t)$. The existence of W_\pm is shown rather easily by using \dagger Huygens's principle. As in Section B, we define the **scattering operator** $S = W_+^* W_-$ and say that W_\pm is **complete** if $\text{Ran } W_\pm = \mathcal{H}_{ac}(H)$, where H is the self-adjoint \dagger infinitesimal generator of $U(t): U(t) = e^{-itH}$. The completeness of W_\pm and the unitarity of S are proved on the basis of the abstract **translation representation**

theorem: Let $U(t)$ be a unitary group on a Hilbert space \mathcal{H} . Suppose there exist subspaces D_+ and D_- , called **outgoing and incoming subspaces**, such that $U(t)D_{\pm} \subset D_{\pm}$ for $\pm t \geq 0$, $\bigcap_{t \in \mathbb{R}} U(t)D_{\pm} = \{0\}$, and $\bigcup_{t \in \mathbb{R}} U(t)D_{\pm}$ is dense in \mathcal{H} . Then we have two unitary operators $\mathcal{R}_{\pm} : \mathcal{H} \rightarrow L_2(\mathbb{R}; N)$, where N is an auxiliary Hilbert space, such that $\mathcal{R}_{\pm} U(t) \cdot \mathcal{R}_{\pm}^{-1}$ is right translation by t , and $D_+ (D_-)$ is mapped onto $L_2(0, \infty; N) (L_2(-\infty, 0; N))$ by $\mathcal{R}_+ (\mathcal{R}_-)$.

Turning to the concrete situation, one can study the detailed properties of S . The uniqueness theorem in the inverse problem is also obtained, to the effect that S determines the obstacle uniquely. The foregoing treatment of scattering is known as the Lax-Phillips theory (P. D. Lax and R. S. Phillips, in [6, 8, 11].

References

[1] W. O. Amrein, J. M. Jauch, and K. B. Sinha, Scattering theory in quantum mechanics, Benjamin, 1977.
[2] R. G. Newton, Scattering theory of waves and particles, McGraw-Hill, 1966.
[3] E. Prugovečki, Quantum mechanics in Hilbert space, Academic Press, 1971.
[4] M. Reed and B. Simon, Methods of modern mathematical physics III, Scattering theory, Academic Press, 1979.
[5] J. R. Taylor, Scattering theory, Wiley, 1972.
[6] Rocky Mountain J. Math., 1 (1) (1971) (special issue on scattering theory).
[7] T. Kato, Perturbation theory for linear operators, Springer, 1976.
[8] J. A. Lavita and J.-P. Marchand (eds.), Scattering theory in mathematical physics, Proc. NATO Adv. Study Inst., Denver, Colo., 1973, Reidel, 1974.
[9] V. De Alfaro and T. Regge, Potential scattering, North-Holland, 1965.
[10] K. Chadan and P. C. Sabatier, Inverse problems in quantum scattering theory, Springer, 1977.
[11] P. D. Lax and R. S. Phillips, Scattering theory, Academic Press, 1967.

376 (XIX.15)
Scheduling and Production Planning

Production planning emerges in many situations. Models of economic planning can be classified as (1) fiscal policy-oriented, (2) final demand-oriented, (3) structure-oriented, (4)

expenditure-oriented, and (5) industrialization-oriented. Types (2), (3), and (5) belong to production planning in a broad sense, as emphasis is placed on production in these models.

A typical **production planning** theory of primary importance is **activity analysis**, which has made remarkable progress since its initiation by T. C. Koopmans [1]. Its principal theoretical content consists of linear programming. Most applications of linear programming are more or less concerned with production activities. Because of the additivity and divisibility of production as well as the limitation of production intensities, problems of production planning can be formulated as problems of linear programming. The methods of linear algebra are used to obtain an optimal production plan and are very important in modern economic analysis, because these methods not only provide practical algorithms but also clarify the role of price, especially in dual linear programming problems.

The originators of general equilibrium theory (\rightarrow 128 Econometrics) failed to give an analytical demonstration of the existence of solutions of certain systems of equations of economic relevance. The existence of a determinate equilibrium was established first by A. Wald for a system of equations of the Walras-Cassel type. On the other hand, J. von Neumann [3] proved the existence of non-negative solutions α, β, x_i, y_j for a system of inequalities

$$\alpha \sum_{i=1}^m a_{ij} x_i \leq \sum_{i=1}^m b_{ij} x_i, \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$
$$\beta \sum_{j=1}^n a_{ij} y_j \geq \sum_{j=1}^n b_{ij} y_j, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, m,$$

by reducing the problem to the proof of the existence of a saddle point (\rightarrow 292 Nonlinear Programming A) of the function

$$\Phi(X, Y) \equiv \sum_{i=1}^m \sum_{j=1}^n b_{ij} x_i y_j / \sum_{i=1}^m \sum_{j=1}^n a_{ij} x_i y_j$$

by means of Brouwer's fixed-point theorem. In this result an equilibrium is defined in the broad sense that demand for goods does not exceed their supply, rather than requiring exact balance.

A second important kind of production planning is related to both inventory control (\rightarrow 227 Inventory Control) and sales planning. An example is the minimization of

$$\int_0^T (z(t) + \beta \max(dz/dt, 0)) dt$$

subject to the condition $z(t) \geq r(t)$, where $z(t)$ and $r(t)$ are the output and demand, respectively, at time t . Stabilization of employment

and production can also be classified as a production planning problem of this kind, in which inventory holding is considered as a means for lessening the change of employment level. This is related to the problem of smoothing production by inventory control. Dynamic programming (\rightarrow 127 Dynamic Programming) is very useful in dealing with problems of smoothing production.

Production planning as a production management tool is often embodied in **scheduling**. Consider a project that consists of n indivisible tasks (jobs or activities) J_i , $i = 1, 2, \dots, n$, each requiring p_i units of time for processing, where p_i is given either deterministically or probabilistically. A precedence constraint (generally a \dagger partial ordering) partially specifying the order in which these tasks are to be processed is also imposed by technical considerations: One attempts to find a schedule (i.e., a specification of the time to process the tasks J_i) consistent with the given precedence constraint.

Well-known techniques developed for this purpose are **PERT** (program evaluation and review technique) [4] and **CPM** (critical path method) [5], in which the precedence constraint is represented by an acyclic \dagger directed graph, called an arrow diagram, a project network, or a PERT network, such that each task J_i corresponds to an arc of length equal to p_i . An arrow diagram is illustrated in Fig. 1. The longest path from the start node to the end node in the network is called the **critical path**, and gives the minimum time necessary to complete the project. Following computation of the critical path by means of dynamic programming, computations are also made for the earliest (latest) start time, the earliest (latest) finish time, and the floats (i.e., the allowances for such start and finish times) of each task to be satisfied in order to complete the project within the indicated minimum time. These are used to review and control the progress of the project. In PERT the processing time of each task is probabilistically treated on the basis of three estimates: most likely, optimistic, and pessimistic. From these data other parameters,

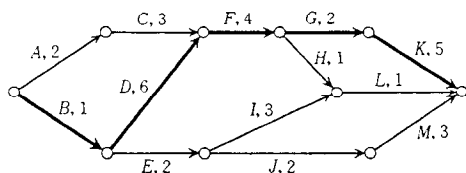


Fig. 1

A, B, \dots, M denote tasks, while the associated integers are their processing times. Bold arrows indicate the critical path. The start node is on the left, the end node is on the right.

such as the probability of completing the project before the specified due date, are computed. In CPM, on the other hand, a minimum cost schedule to attain the given due date is obtained by utilizing \dagger network flow algorithms (J. E. Kelley [6], D. R. Fulkerson [7]), in which the processing time of a task is determined by linear interpolation between the normal time (achieved with low cost) and the crash time (high cost).

PERT and CPM are used in various areas of application, e.g., civil engineering and the construction industry, shipbuilding, production of automobiles, machines, and electric apparatus, and management of research and development programs. PERT was originally developed by the US Navy to monitor and control the development of the Polaris fleet ballistic missile program, while CPM was developed by the RAND Corporation and the Du Pont Corporation, both in the late 1950s. Computers have been essential from the beginning, to handle the large amount of associated data. A number of application program packages, each with some additional features, are currently available, e.g., PERT/TIME, PERT/COST, CPM, and RAMPS.

The **machine sequencing (scheduling) problem** arises when the resources, instruments, workers, and so forth, required to process a task are abstractly formulated as machines and if the restriction on the number of available machines is taken into consideration (i.e., the conflict between tasks competing for the same machine at the same time must be resolved). Usually one machine is assigned to each task. Such a machine is either (a) uniquely determined for each task or (b) chosen from a given set of machines; in the latter case, there might be (i) parallel machines with the same capability or (ii) machines with different capabilities. The precedence constraints are also ramified into independent (i.e., no constraint), in-tree, out-tree, series-parallel, and general partial ordering constraints. Each task has a ready time (release time) r_i such that J_i cannot be processed before it, and a due time d_i . One is asked to find a schedule satisfying the above machine constraints, precedence constraints, and ready time constraints, while considering an optimality criterion that is a function of the completion time C_i of J_i ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$). Typical criteria for minimization are: (1) maximum completion time (makespan) $C_{\max} = \max_i C_i$; (2) flowtime (total completion time) $F = \sum C_i$; weighted flowtime $\sum w_i C_i$, where $w_i \geq 0$ are weights representing the relative importance of J_i ; (3) maximum lateness $L_{\max} = \max_i L_i$, $L_i = C_i - d_i$; (4) total tardiness $T = \sum T_i$, $T_i = \max(0, L_i)$, and weighted total

tardiness $\sum w_i T_i$; (5) number of tardy tasks $U = \sum U_i$, $U_i = 1$ (if $C_i > d_i$), 0 (otherwise), and weighted number of tardy tasks $\sum w_i U_i$.

Numerous problems can be defined by combining the above conditions. Typical ones might be: the **job-shop scheduling problem**, in which n tasks are scheduled on m machines of type (a), and where the maximum completion time is minimized; the **flow-shop scheduling problem**, which is the same as the job-shop scheduling problem except that $n = n'm$ tasks are divided into n' groups of m tasks processed on machine 1, machine 2, ..., machine m , respectively, in this order; the **multiprocessor scheduling problem**, in which the maximum completion time of n independent tasks on m parallel machines is minimized; the **one-machine sequencing problem**, assuming only one machine (with various types of precedence constraints and optimality criteria), and others [8, 9].

These machine sequencing problems are examples of the combinatorial optimization problem (\rightarrow 281 Network Flow Problems E), as the processing time p_i is usually considered to be a given constant. Their computational complexity (\rightarrow 71 Complexity of Computations) has been extensively studied with an emphasis on the classification between those problems solvable in polynomial time and those that are \dagger NP-complete, as summarized in [10]. Table 1 lists representative results for one-machine sequencing problems with $r_i = 0$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$). The improvement of the algorithm efficiency is pursued for both polynomially solvable problems and NP-complete problems. \dagger Branch and bound (\rightarrow 215 Integral Programming D) is a common approach used to solve NP-complete problems such as the

job-shop and flow-shop scheduling problems [8, 9]. Many approximation algorithms to obtain good suboptimal schedules in reasonable computation time are also known, and their worst-case and average accuracies have been analyzed [10], as these are important in practical applications.

In more realistic scheduling situations, other factors, such as the set-up cost, balancing of production lines, frequent modifications and updatings of project data, capacity of factories, manpower planning including the possibility of overtime and part-time employment, should be taken into account. Both deterministic and probabilistic models have been proposed for these cases. Mathematical tools used to compute adequate schedules include \dagger mathematical programming, \dagger queuing theory, and \dagger simulation techniques.

References

[1] T. C. Koopmans, Activity analysis of production and allocation, Wiley, 1951.
[2] O. Morgenstern, Economic activity analysis, Wiley, 1954.
[3] J. von Neumann, Über ein ökonomisches Gleichungssystem und eine Verallgemeinerung des Brouwerischen Fixpunktsatzes, Ergebnisse eines Mathematischen Kolloquiums, 8 (1937), 73–83; English translation, A model of general economic equilibrium, Collected Works, Pergamon, 1963, vol. 6, 29–37.
[4] D. G. Malcolm, J. H. Reseboom, C. E. Clark, and W. Fazar, Application of a technique for research and development program evaluation, Operations Res., 7 (1959), 646–669.

Table 1. One-Machine Sequencing Problems with $r_i = 0$

Optimality Criterion	Precedence Constraint	Other Constraints	Complexity
C_{\max}	Partial order	None	$O(n^2)$
$\sum C_i$	Partial order	None	NP-complete
$\sum w_i C_i$	Series-parallel	None	$O(n \log n)$
	Partial order	$p_i = 1$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$)	NP-complete
L_{\max}	Partial order	None	$O(n^2)$
$\sum T_i$	Independent	None	Not known ^a
	Partial order	None	NP-complete
$\sum w_i T_i$	Independent	None	NP-complete
$\sum U_i$	Independent	None	$O(n \log n)$
	In-tree, out-tree	$p_i = 1$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$)	NP-complete
$\sum w_i U_i$	Independent	$p_i < p_j \Rightarrow w_i \geq w_j$	$O(n \log n)$
	Independent	None	NP-complete ^b

a. An algorithm with $O(n^5 p_{\max})$ running time is known, where $p_{\max} = \max_i p_i$.
b. An algorithm with $O(n \sum p_i)$ running time is known.

- [5] J. E. Kelley, Jr., and M. R. Walker, Critical path planning and scheduling, Proc. Eastern Joint Computer Conference, 1959, 160–173.
[6] J. E. Kelley, Jr., Critical-path planning and scheduling: Mathematical basis, Operations Res., 9 (1961), 296–320.
[7] D. R. Fulkerson, A network flow computation for project cost curves, Management Sci., 7 (1961), 167–178.
[8] R. W. Conway, W. L. Maxwell, and L. W. Miller, Theory of scheduling, Addison-Wesley, 1967.
[9] K. R. Baker, Introduction to sequencing and scheduling, Wiley, 1974.
[10] R. L. Graham, E. L. Lawler, J. K. Lenstra, and A. H. G. Rinnooy Kan, Optimization and approximation in deterministic sequencing and scheduling: A survey, Ann. Discrete Math., 5 (1979), 287–326.

377 (XX.27) Second Quantization

A. Fock Space

For a complex Hilbert space K with $\dim K \geq 1$, $K^{\otimes n}$ denotes the n -fold tensor product of K with itself (where the vectors $f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes f_n$ with $f_j \in K$ are total). Let $E_{\pm}^{(n)}$ be the projection operators on totally symmetric and antisymmetric parts of $K^{\otimes n}$:

$$E_{\pm}^{(n)}(f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes f_n) \\ = (n!)^{-1} \sum \varepsilon_{\pm}(P) f_{P(1)} \otimes \dots \otimes f_{P(n)},$$

where the sum is over all permutations P , $\varepsilon_{+}(P) = 1$ and $\varepsilon_{-}(P)$ is the signature of P (+1 for even permutations and -1 for odd permutations). The following orthogonal direct sum is called a **Fock space** (symmetric for E_{+} , and antisymmetric for E_{-}):

$$\mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \oplus E_{\pm}^{(n)} K^{\otimes n}.$$

Here the term for $n=0$ is the 1-dimensional space \mathbb{C} , and a vector Ω represented by $1 \in \mathbb{C}$ is called the **vacuum vector** in $\mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K)$. The subspace $\mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K)_n = E_{\pm}^{(n)} K^{\otimes n}$ is called the **n -particle subspace**. The operator $N = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} n$, which takes the value n on $\mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K)_n$, is called the **number operator**.

On the algebraic sum

$$D_{\pm} = \bigcup_{n=0}^N \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \oplus \mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K)_n \subset \mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K),$$

the **creation operator** $a^{+}(f)$ for $f \in K$ is defined as the unique linear operator with domain D_{\pm}

satisfying

$$a^{+}(f) E_{\pm}^{(n)} f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes f_n \\ = (n+1)^{1/2} E_{\pm}^{(n+1)} f \otimes f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes f_n.$$

For $f \in K$, \bar{f} denotes the element of the dual K^{*} satisfying $\bar{f}(g) = (g, f)$ for $g \in K$ (the inner product is linear in the first entry). The **annihilation operator** $a(\bar{f})$ is defined by

$$a(\bar{f}) E_{\pm}^{(n)} f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes f_n \\ = n^{-1/2} \sum_{j=1}^n \varepsilon^{j-1}(f_j, f) E_{\pm}^{(n-1)} f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes f_n,$$

where the tensor product of f_k , $k \neq j$, appears in the j th term and $\varepsilon = \pm 1$ depending on which of \pm is taken in $\mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K)$. For $n=0$, $a(\bar{f})\Omega$ is defined to be 0. The adjoint of $a^{+}(f)$ coincides with $a(\bar{f})$ on D_{\pm} .

The creation and annihilation operators map D_{\pm} into itself and satisfy the following commutation relations on D_{\pm} :

$$[a^{+}(f_1), a^{+}(f_2)]_{\mp} = [a(\bar{f}_1), a(\bar{f}_2)]_{\mp} = 0, \\ [a(\bar{f}_1), a^{+}(f_2)]_{\mp} = (f_2, f_1),$$

where $[A, B]_{\mp} = AB \mp BA$ and \mp is used depending on the choice of \pm in $\mathcal{F}_{\pm}(K)$. These relations are often called **canonical commutation relations** for $[\ , \]_{-}$ (CCRs) and **canonical anticommutation relations** for $[\ , \]_{+}$ (CARs).

On $\mathcal{F}_{-}(K)$, $a^{+}(f)$ and $a(\bar{f})$ are bounded with $\|a^{+}(f)\| = \|a(\bar{f})\| = \|f\|$. On $\mathcal{F}_{+}(K)$, both $a^{+}(f)$ and $a(\bar{f})$ are not bounded, though $a^{+}(f)N^{-1/2}$ and $a(\bar{f})N^{-1/2}$ are bounded.

On $\mathcal{F}_{+}(K)$, $2^{-1/2}(a^{+}(f) + a(\bar{f}))$ is essentially self-adjoint. Let $\psi(f)$ be its closure. The operator $W(f) = e^{i\psi(f)}$ is unitary and satisfies the identity

$$W(f_1)W(f_2) = W(f_1 + f_2)\exp(-i\operatorname{Im}(f_1, f_2)/2).$$

It also satisfies $(W(f)\Omega, \Omega) = \exp(-4^{-1}\|f\|^2)$.

Let K_{ϕ} be a real subspace of K such that the inner product (f, g) in K is real for any f and g in K_{ϕ} and $K = K_{\phi} + iK_{\phi}$. (K_{ϕ} is then a real Hilbert space.) The unitary operators $U(f) = W(f)$ and $V(f) = W(if)$ for $f \in K_{\phi}$ satisfy the following **Weyl form of the CCRs**:

$$U(f_1)U(f_2) = U(f_1 + f_2), \\ V(f_1)V(f_2) = V(f_1 + f_2), \\ U(f_1)V(f_2) = V(f_2)U(f_1)\exp(-i(f_1, f_2)).$$

The infinitesimal generators of the continuous one-parameter groups of unitaries $U(tf)$ and $V(tg)$ ($t \in \mathbb{R}$) are denoted by $\varphi(f)$ and $\pi(g)$ and satisfy the following CCRs:

$$[\varphi(f_1), \varphi(f_2)]\Psi = [\pi(g_1), \pi(g_2)]\Psi = 0, \\ [\varphi(f), \pi(g)]\Psi = i(f, g)\Psi,$$

where $[A, B] = AB - BA$ and $\Psi \in D_{+}$.

If Q is a linear operator on K , $\Gamma(Q)$ denotes the linear operator on $\mathcal{F}_\pm(K)$ defined as the closure of $\sum_{n=0}^\infty Q^{\otimes n} |D_\pm$. It is bounded if $\|Q\| \leq 1$. $\Gamma(Q_1)\Gamma(Q_2) = \Gamma(Q_1 Q_2)$ on D_\pm . If H is a self-adjoint operator on K , then $\Gamma(e^{i\mu H}) = \exp i d\Gamma(H)$ defines a self-adjoint operator $d\Gamma(H)$ on $\mathcal{F}_\pm(K)$, usually called a **bilinear Hamiltonian** and denoted (a^\pm, Ha) . More explicitly,

$$\begin{aligned} d\Gamma(H)E_\pm^{(n)}f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes f_n \\ = \sum_{j=1}^n E_\pm^{(n)}f_1 \otimes \dots \otimes Hf_j \otimes \dots \otimes f_n. \end{aligned}$$

If U is a unitary operator on K , then $\Gamma(U)W(f)\Gamma(U)^{-1} = W(Uf)$.

B. Second Quantization

A single (scalar) particle in quantum mechanics is described by a wave function $\Psi(x)$, $x \in \mathbb{R}^3$, considered as a unit vector in a Hilbert space $K = L_2(\mathbb{R}^3)$. The system consisting of n such identical particles is described by a totally symmetric function $\Psi(x_1, \dots, x_n)$, $x_j \in \mathbb{R}^3$, considered as a unit vector in the totally symmetric part $E_+^{(n)}K^{\otimes n}$ of the n -fold tensor product of the one-particle Hilbert space K , where the restriction to totally symmetric wave functions is referred to as **Bose statistics**. In a non-relativistic system, the Hamiltonian operator on a 1-particle space is

$$T = -\hbar^2(2m)^{-1}\Delta_x,$$

called the kinetic energy (Δ_x denotes the Laplacian); on an n -particle space it is typically given by

$$H_n = -\hbar^2(2m)^{-1} \sum_{j=1}^n \Delta_{x_j} + \sum_{i < j}^n V(x_i - x_j),$$

where V is a 2-body potential.

The totality of multiparticle spaces $E_\pm^{(n)}K^{\otimes n}$ can be described in terms of the Fock space $\mathcal{F}_\pm(K)$, the vacuum vector Ω (no-particle state), and the annihilation and creation operators, denoted by

$$a(\bar{f}) = \int \Psi(x) \bar{f}(x) d^3x,$$

$$a^*(f) = \int \Psi^+(x) f(x) d^3x.$$

Since the CCRs (for operator-valued distributions)

$$\begin{aligned} [\Psi(x), \Psi(y)]_- &= [\Psi^+(x), \Psi^+(y)]_- = 0, \\ [\Psi(x), \Psi^+(y)]_- &= \delta^3(x - y) \end{aligned}$$

are a continuous generalization of CCRs for canonical variables in quantum mechanics and since $\Psi(x)$ comes from the wave function by way of quantization, the above formalism is

called **second quantization**. The Hamiltonians H_n for all n can now be combined into the expression

$$\begin{aligned} H = \int \Psi^+(x) T \Psi(x) d^3x \\ + \frac{1}{2} \int \Psi^+(x) \Psi^+(y) V(x - y) \\ \times \Psi(x) \Psi(y) d^3x d^3y, \end{aligned}$$

where the first term is $d\Gamma(T)$.

For particles such as electrons the system of n identical particles is described by a totally antisymmetric wave function, the total antisymmetry being referred to as **Fermi statistics**. Then the antisymmetric Fock space $\mathcal{F}_-(K)$ can be used in exactly the same manner as $\mathcal{F}_+(K)$ in the preceding case.

The method of second quantization was introduced by P. Dirac [2] for the case of bosons and extended by P. Jordan and E. Wigner [3] to fermions. Electromagnetic waves, when quantized in this way, represent a system of **photons**, and the quantization of electron waves leads to the particle picture of the **electron**. The method of second quantization is intimately connected with the notion of fields, as shown below for free fields, and is the basis of the perturbation approach in field theory (\rightarrow 150 Field Theory).

C. Free Fields

Let σ_j ($j = 1, 2, 3$) be \dagger Pauli spin matrices and $\sigma_0 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$. Let $\tilde{p} = \sum_{\mu=0}^3 \sigma_\mu p^\mu$ for a 4-vector $p = (p^0, \mathbf{p})$ with $\mathbf{p} = (p^1, p^2, p^3)$ and $p^0 = (m^2 + \mathbf{p}^2)^{1/2}$. Let $u_j(a, A)$ be the irreducible unitary representation $[m_+, j]$ of \mathcal{P}_+^\dagger on a Hilbert space $K_j = L_2(\mathbb{R}^3, \mathbb{C}^{2j}, (2p^0)^{-1}(m/\tilde{p})^{\otimes 2j} d^3\mathbf{p})$ (\rightarrow 258 Lorentz Group C (3)).

Consider first the symmetric Fock space $\mathcal{F}_+(K_0)$. For any complex-valued rapidly decreasing C^∞ -function f ($f \in \mathcal{S}(\mathbb{R}^4)$), let

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{f}(\mathbf{p}) &= (2\pi)^{-3/2} \int e^{ip \cdot x} f(x) d^4x \\ (p &= (p^0, \mathbf{p}), \quad p^0 = (\mathbf{p}^2 + m^2)^{1/2}), \end{aligned}$$

$$A(f) = a^+(\tilde{f}) + a(\tilde{\bar{f}}) \quad \left(= \int A(x) f(x) d^4x \right),$$

where $p \cdot x = p^0 x^0 - \sum_{j=1}^3 p^j x^j$ and the bar denotes the complex conjugate. Then $A(x)$ as an operator-valued distribution satisfies the \dagger Wightman axiom and is called the **free scalar field** of mass m . It satisfies the **Klein-Gordon equation**

$$\begin{aligned} (\square_x + m^2) A(x) \Psi &= 0 \\ \left(\square_x &= (\partial/\partial x^0)^2 - \sum_{j=1}^3 (\partial/\partial x^j)^2 \right), \end{aligned}$$

it has the 4-dimensional scalar commutator

$$i[A(x), A(y)]_- \Psi = \Delta_m(x-y)\Psi,$$

and it has the two-point function

$$i(A(x)A(y)\Omega, \Omega) = \Delta_m^+(x-y).$$

Here Ψ is any vector in D_+ ; for example, Ω is the vacuum vector, and the **invariant distributions** Δ_m and Δ_m^+ are defined by

$$\Delta_m^+(x) = i(2\pi)^{-3} \int e^{-ip \cdot x} (2p^0)^{-1} d^3 p,$$

$$\Delta_m(x) = (2\pi)^{-3} \int (\sin p \cdot x) (p^0)^{-1} d^3 p.$$

If we define $U(a, \Lambda(A)) = \Gamma(u_0(a, A))$, then

$$U(a, \Lambda)A(x)U(a, \Lambda)^* = A(\Lambda x + a).$$

If $g \in \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R}^3)$ and $h \in \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R}^3)$, $\tilde{g}(\mathbf{p})$ and $\tilde{h}(\mathbf{p})$ obtained by substituting $g(\mathbf{x})\delta(x^0)$ and $-h(\mathbf{x})\delta'(x^0)$ into f in the defining equation of \tilde{f} above are in K_0 . We then define

$$\varphi(g) = a^+(\tilde{g}) + a(\tilde{\tilde{g}}) \quad \left(= \int \varphi(\mathbf{x})g(\mathbf{x})d^3 \mathbf{x} \right),$$

$$\pi(h) = a^+(\tilde{h}) + a(\tilde{\tilde{h}}) \quad \left(= \int \pi(\mathbf{x})h(\mathbf{x})d^3 \mathbf{x} \right).$$

The operator-valued distributions $\varphi(\mathbf{x})$ and $\pi(\mathbf{x})$ are the **canonical field** and its **conjugate field** at time 0 for the free scalar field and satisfy the following **canonical commutation relations**:

$$[\varphi(\mathbf{x}), \varphi(\mathbf{y})]_- \Psi = [\pi(\mathbf{x}), \pi(\mathbf{y})]_- \Psi = 0,$$

$$[\varphi(\mathbf{x}), \pi(\mathbf{y})]_- \Psi = i\delta^3(\mathbf{x} - \mathbf{y})\Psi.$$

If we set $T(t) \equiv U(te_0, 1)$ for $e_0 = (1, 0, 0, 0)$ and $(\alpha \otimes g)(x) = \alpha(x^0)g(\mathbf{x})$ for $\alpha \in \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R})$ and $g \in \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R}^3)$, then for $\Psi \in D_+$

$$A(\alpha \otimes g)\Psi = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} T(t)\varphi(g)T(t)^*\Psi\alpha(t)dt,$$

$$-A(\alpha' \otimes g)\Psi = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} T(t)\pi(g)T(t)^*\Psi\alpha(t)dt,$$

or, equivalently,

$$A(x) = T(x^0)\varphi(\mathbf{x})T(x^0)^*,$$

$$\partial A(x)/\partial x^0 = T(x^0)\pi(\mathbf{x})T(x^0)^*.$$

If $A(x)$ is a classical field, then $\varphi(\mathbf{x})$ and $\pi(\mathbf{x})$ are the value of $A(x)$ and its time derivative at $x^0=0$, and they serve as initial data for the Klein-Gordon equation

$$(\square_x + m^2)A(x) = 0.$$

Consider next the antisymmetric Fock space $\mathcal{F}_-(K_{1/2} \otimes K_{1/2})$. For $f_{\pm} \in \mathcal{S}(\mathbf{R}^4, \mathbf{C}^2)$ (\mathbf{C}^2 -valued rapidly decreasing \mathbf{C}^∞ -functions), write $f = (f_+, f_-)$, $f_+ = (f_1, f_2)$, $f_- = (f_3, f_4)$, define \tilde{f}_{\pm}

as before, and let

$$\begin{aligned} \psi(f) &\equiv m^{1/2} \{ u((\tilde{f}_- + (\tilde{p}/m)\tilde{f}_+) \oplus 0) \\ &\quad + a^+(0 \oplus (\sigma_2 \tilde{f}_+ - (\tilde{p}/m)\sigma_2 \tilde{f}_-)) \} \\ &= \sum_{\alpha=1}^4 \int \psi_{\alpha}(x) f_{\alpha}(x) d^4 x, \end{aligned}$$

where $\sigma_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -i \\ i & 0 \end{pmatrix} = -i\varepsilon$. Then $\psi_{\alpha}(x)$ as an operator-valued distribution satisfies the $^+$ Wightman axiom and is called the **free Dirac field** of mass m . In the present formulation, $\{\psi_1, \psi_2\}$ is a contravariant spinor of rank (1, 0) and $\{\psi_3, \psi_4\}$ is a covariant spinor of rank (0, 1). This field satisfies the **Dirac equation**

$$\left(\sum_{\mu} \gamma^{\mu} (\partial/\partial x^{\mu}) + im \right) \psi(x) = 0,$$

as well as the relations

$$[\psi_{\alpha}(x), \psi_{\beta}(y)]_+ \Psi = 0,$$

$$[\psi_{\alpha}(x), \psi_{\beta}(y)^*]_+ \Psi$$

$$= \left\{ \left(\sum_{\mu} \gamma^{\mu} (\partial/\partial x^{\mu}) - im \right) \gamma^0 \right\}_{\alpha\beta} \Delta_m(x-y),$$

$$(\psi_{\alpha}(x)\psi_{\beta}(y))^* \Omega, \Omega)$$

$$= \left\{ \left(\sum_{\mu} \gamma^{\mu} (\partial/\partial x^{\mu}) - im \right) \gamma^0 \right\}_{\alpha\beta} \Delta_m^+(x-y).$$

Here $\Psi \in D_+$, Δ_m and Δ_m^+ are as described above, and the γ 's are **Dirac matrices** in the following form (somewhat different from but equivalent to the usual form; \rightarrow 351 Quantum Mechanics):

$$\gamma^0 = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ 1 & 0 \end{pmatrix}, \quad \gamma^j = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & -\sigma_j \\ \sigma_j & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

and the σ 's are $^+$ Pauli spin matrices.

D. Coherent Vectors and Exponential Hilbert Space

In the symmetric Fock space $\mathcal{F}_+(K)$, a vector of the form

$$\exp f \equiv \Omega \oplus \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (n!)^{-1/2} f^{\otimes n} \in \mathcal{F}_+(K)$$

for $f \in K$ is called a **coherent vector**. The set of $\exp f$ is linearly independent (in the algebraic sense) and total. The inner product is given by

$$(\exp f_1, \exp f_2) = \exp(f_1, f_2).$$

Conversely, we can define $\mathcal{F}_+(K)$ abstractly by introducing this inner product into the formal linear combinations of $\exp f$, $f \in K$, and by completion. In this sense, $\mathcal{F}_+(K)$ is also denoted as $\exp K$ and is called an **exponential Hilbert space** [5]. Then

$$\exp \sum^{\oplus} K_j = \otimes \exp K_j,$$

where $\exp \Sigma^{\oplus} f_j$ is identified with $\otimes \exp f_j$. If the number of indices is infinite, the right-hand side is the incomplete infinite tensor product containing the product of the vacuum vector Ω .

If $K = \int_{\Xi} K_{\lambda} d\mu(\lambda)$ and the measure μ is nonatomic, then for any measurable set S in Ξ , there corresponds a decomposition $\exp K = (\exp K(S)) \otimes (\exp K(S^c))$, where $K(S) = \int_S K_{\lambda} d\mu(\lambda)$ and S^c is the complement of S in Ξ , and an associated von Neumann algebra $R(S) = B(K(S)) \otimes 1$, where $B(K(S))$ is the set of all bounded linear operators on $K(S)$. The system $\{R(S)\}$ forms a complete Boolean lattice of type I factors on $\exp K$. Coherent vectors are characterized by the property of being a product vector for $\{R(S)\}$ in the sense that for any $S, A \in R(S)$ and $A' \in R(S^c)$, the vector $\Psi = \exp f$ satisfies

$$(AA'\Psi, \Psi) \|\Psi\|^2 = (A\Psi, \Psi)(A'\Psi, \Psi).$$

In this sense, we can interpret $\exp K$ as a **continuous tensor product** of $\exp K_{\lambda}$ and also, if $\Psi = \int \Psi_{\lambda} d\mu(\lambda)$, $\exp \Psi$ as a continuous tensor product of $\exp \Psi_{\lambda}$ [5].

References

[1] V. Fock, Konfigurationsraum und zweite Quantelung, Z. Phys., 75 (1932), 622–647.
[2] P. A. M. Dirac, The quantum theory of the emission and absorption of radiation, Proc. Roy. Soc. London, 114 (1927), 243–265.
[3] P. Jordan and E. P. Wigner, Über das Paulische Äquivalenzverbot, Z. Phys., 47 (1928), 631–651.
[4] F. A. Berezin, The method of second quantization, Academic Press, 1966. (Original in Russian, 1965.)
[5] H. Araki and E. J. Woods, Complete Boolean algebras of type I factors, Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci., A2 (1966), 157–242, 451–452.
[6] J. Avery, Creation and annihilation operators, McGraw-Hill, 1976.

378 (XII.14)
Semigroups of Operators
and Evolution Equations

A. Introduction

The analytical theory of semigroups was inaugurated around 1948 in order to define exponential functions in infinite-dimensional

function spaces. Then it was generalized to the theory of evolution equations as ordinary differential equations in infinite-dimensional linear spaces.

B. The Hille-Yosida Theorem

Let X be a locally convex topological linear space, and denote by $L(X)$ the totality of continuous linear operators defined on X with values in X . A family $\{T_t | t \geq 0\}$ of operators $T_t \in L(X)$ is called a **(one-parameter) semigroup of class (C^0)** or a **strongly continuous semigroup** if it satisfies the following two conditions: (i) $T_t T_s = T_{t+s}$ (the semigroup property), $T_0 = I$ (the identity operator); and (ii) $\lim_{t \rightarrow t_0} T_t x = T_{t_0} x$ ($\forall x \in X, \forall t_0 \geq 0$). When X is a Banach space, (ii) is implied by $w\text{-}\lim_{t \downarrow 0} T_t x = x$ ($\forall x \in X$), as proved by N. Dunford in 1938. In this case there exist constants $M > 0$ and $\beta \geq 0$ such that (iii') $\|T_t\| \leq M e^{\beta t}$ ($\forall t \geq 0$). Hence, considering $e^{-\beta t} T_t$ in place of T_t , we can assume the equicontinuity: (iii) For any continuous seminorm p on X , there exists a continuous seminorm q on X such that $p(T_t x) \leq q(x)$ ($\forall x \in X, \forall t \geq 0$). Such semigroups are called **equicontinuous semigroups of class (C^0)** (abbreviated e.c.s.g. (C^0)).

Example 1. $X = L_p(0, \infty)$ with $\infty > p \geq 1$.

$$(T_t x)(s) = x(s + t).$$

Example 2. $X = L_p(-\infty, \infty)$ with $\infty > p \geq 1$.

$$(T_t x)(s) = (2\pi t)^{-1/2} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \exp\left(\frac{(s-u)^2}{2t}\right) x(u) du, \quad t > 0, \\ = x(s), \quad t = 0.$$

Example 3. $X = BC(-\infty, \infty)$.

$$(T_t x)(s) = e^{-\lambda t} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\lambda t)^k}{k!} x(s - k\mu), \quad t \geq 0.$$

Here λ and μ are positive constants. (For these examples, we have $\|T_t\| \leq 1$; hence (iii) is satisfied.) For L_p and $BC \rightarrow 168$ Function Spaces.

We assume in the remainder of the article that X is sequentially complete, that is, if a sequence $\{x_n\}$ of X satisfies $\lim_{n,m \rightarrow \infty} p(x_n - x_m) = 0$ for every continuous seminorm p on X , then there exists a unique $x \in X$ such that $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} p(x - x_n) = 0$.

The **infinitesimal generator** A of an e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\{T_t | t \geq 0\}$ is defined by

$$Ax = \lim_{t \downarrow 0} t^{-1} (T_t - I)x. \tag{1}$$

(This is also called the **generator** of T_t .) Then we have the following results.

(I) Differentiability theorem. For every complex number λ with $\operatorname{Re} \lambda > 0$, the resolvent $(\lambda I - A)^{-1} \in L(X)$ exists and

$$(\lambda I - A)^{-1}x = \int_0^\infty e^{-\lambda t} T_t x \, dt \quad (\forall x \in X), \quad (2)$$

where the integration is Riemannian. Hence the domain $D(A)$ of A is dense in X and coincides with the range $R((\lambda I - A)^{-1})$, and A is a closed linear operator such that the family

$$\{(\lambda(\lambda I - A)^{-1})^n | \lambda > 0, n = 0, 1, 2, \dots\} \quad (3)$$

is equicontinuous.

(II) Representation theorem. Let $J_n = (I - n^{-1}A)^{-1}$ and consider the approximations to T_t :

$$T_t^{(n)}x = e^{-nt} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} (m!)^{-1} (nt J_n)^m x,$$

$$\hat{T}_t^{(n)}x = (J_{nt})^n x.$$

Then

$$T_t x = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} T_t^{(n)} x = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \hat{T}_t^{(n)} x \quad (5)$$

uniformly on every compact set of t .

(III) Converse theorem. Let a linear operator A with both dense domain $D(A)$ and range $R(A)$ in X satisfy the condition $(nI - A)^{-1} \in L(X)$ for $n = 1, 2, \dots$. Then a necessary and sufficient condition for A to be the infinitesimal generator of an e.c.s.g. (C^0) is that the family of operators

$$\{(I - n^{-1}A)^{-m} | n = 1, 2, \dots; m = 0, 1, \dots\} \quad (3')$$

be equicontinuous. Since such a semigroup $\{T_t | t \geq 0\}$ is uniquely determined by A , we can write $T_t = \exp(tA)$.

These three theorems together are called the **Hille-Yosida theorem** or the Hille-Yosida-Feller-Phillips-Miyadera theorem.

Examples of Infinitesimal Generators. $A = d/ds$ for example 1 above, $A = 2^{-1}d^2/ds^2$ for example 2, and $(Ax)(s) = \lambda(x(s - \mu) - x(s))$ for example 3.

C. Groups

An operator A in a Hilbert space X generates a group $\{T_t | -\infty < t < \infty\}$ of unitary operators of class (C^0) satisfying $T_t T_s = T_{t+s}$ for $-\infty < t, s < \infty$ if and only if A is equal to iH for some self-adjoint operator H (**M. H. Stone's theorem**, 1932). In a locally convex space, a necessary and sufficient condition for a given e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\{T_t | t \geq 0\}$ to be extended to an **equicontinuous group of class (C^0)** $\{T_t | -\infty < t < \infty\}$ is that the family (3') be equicontinuous also for $n = \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$.

D. Holomorphic Semigroups

For an e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\{T_t | t \geq 0\}$, the following three conditions are equivalent (K. Yosida, 1963; the equivalence between (ii) and (iii) for Banach spaces was proved earlier by E. Hille, 1948): (i) When $t > 0$,

$$T_t' x = \lim_{h \rightarrow 0} h^{-1} (T_{t+h} - T_t)x$$

exists for all $x \in X$ and $\{(CtT_t')^n | n = 1, 2, \dots$ and $0 < t \leq 1\}$ is equicontinuous for a certain constant $C > 0$. (ii) When $t > 0$, T_t admits a convergent expansion T_λ given locally by $T_\lambda x = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (\lambda - t)^n T_t^{(n)} x / n!$. The extension exists for $|\arg \lambda| \leq \arctan(Ce^{-1})$, and the family of operators $\{e^{-\lambda} T_\lambda\}$ is equicontinuous in λ for $|\arg \lambda| \leq \arctan(2^{-k}Ce^{-1})$ with some positive constant k . (iii) For the infinitesimal generator A of T_t , there exists a positive constant C_1 such that $\{(C_1 \lambda(\lambda I - A)^{-1})^n\}$ is equicontinuous in $n = 1, 2, \dots$ and in λ with $\operatorname{Re}(\lambda) \geq 1 + \varepsilon$, $\varepsilon > 0$. An e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\{T_t\}$ satisfying the above conditions is called a **holomorphic semigroup**.

For example, introduce

$$\begin{aligned} f_{t,\alpha}(\lambda) &= (2\pi i)^{-1} \int_{\sigma-i\infty}^{\sigma+i\infty} e^{z\lambda-tz^\alpha} dz, \\ &\lambda \geq 0, \quad t > 0, \quad \sigma > 0, \quad 0 < \alpha < 1, \\ &= 0, \quad \lambda < 0, \end{aligned} \quad (6)$$

where the branch of z^α is taken so that $\operatorname{Re} z^\alpha > 0$ for $\operatorname{Re} z > 0$. Following S. Bochner (1949), we define

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{T}_{t,\alpha} x &= \hat{T}_t x = \int_0^\infty f_{t,\alpha}(s) T_s x \, ds, \quad t > 0, \\ &= x, \quad t = 0, \end{aligned} \quad (7)$$

from a given e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\{T_t | t \geq 0\}$. Then $\{\hat{T}_{t,\alpha} | t \geq 0\}$ is a holomorphic semigroup (Yosida, T. Kato, and A. V. Balakrishnan, 1960). Its infinitesimal generator \hat{A}_α can be considered as the **fractional power** $(-A)^\alpha$ of $-A$, multiplied by -1 .

Fractional powers $(-A)^\alpha$, $\alpha \in \mathbb{C}$, of operators have also been defined for operators A satisfying the weaker condition than (3') that $\{\lambda(\lambda I - A)^{-1} | \lambda > 0\}$ is equicontinuous (Balakrishnan, H. Komatsu). If A is such an operator, $-\sqrt{-A}$ generates a holomorphic semigroup and the unique uniformly bounded solution of the "elliptic" equation

$$x_t'' = -Ax_t, \quad t > 0, \quad \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} x_t = x_0 \quad (8)$$

is the solution of

$$x_t' = -\sqrt{-A} x_t, \quad t > 0, \quad \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} x_t = x_0,$$

and therefore $x_t = \exp(-t\sqrt{-A})x_0$ (Balakrishnan). Equation (8) has also been discussed by

M. Sova and H. O. Fattorini from a different point of view.

E. Convergence of Semigroups

Let a sequence $\{\exp(tA_n) | n = 1, 2, \dots\}$ of e.c.s.g. (C^0) be equicontinuous as a family of operators $\in L(X)$. Then a necessary and sufficient condition for there to exist an e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\exp(tA)$ such that $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (\exp(tA_n)x) = (\exp(tA))x$ uniformly on every compact interval of t is that $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (\lambda_0 I - A_n)^{-1}x = J_{\lambda_0}x$ exist (for some λ_0 with $\operatorname{Re} \lambda_0 > 0$ and for all $x \in X$) and be such that $R(J_{\lambda_0})$ is dense in X (H. F. Trotter, Kato).

F. Miscellaneous Semigroups

(i) **Distribution semigroups.** The semigroup of translations $(T_t x)(s) = x(t+s)$ in $X = L_\infty(-\infty, \infty)$ is not continuous and hence not measurable in t . However, $T_t x$ is an X -valued distribution. For semigroups $\{T_t\}$ such that $T_t x$ is an X -valued distribution for $x \in X$, an analog of the Hille-Yosida theorem is known (J.-L. Lions, 1960). It has been generalized to ultradistribution semigroups by J. Chazarain and to hyperfunction semigroups by S. Ōuchi.

(ii) **Dual semigroups.** The above semigroup $\{T_t\}$ of translations in $L_\infty(-\infty, \infty)$ is obtained as $T_t = S_t^*$ from the e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\{S_t\}$ defined by $(S_t x)(s) = x(s-t)$ in $L_1(-\infty, \infty)$. Let $B = d/ds$ be the infinitesimal generator of $\{S_t\}$. The restriction of $\{S_t^*\}$ to the space of uniformly continuous functions, which is the closure of the domain $D(B^*)$ of the dual B^* in $L_\infty(-\infty, \infty)$, is an e.c.s.g. (C^0) . This fact holds for the semigroup $\{S_t^*\}$ of an e.c.s.g. (C^0) $\{S_t\}$ in a Banach space X in general (R. Phillips, 1955) and also in a locally convex space.

(iii) **Locally equicontinuous semigroups.** The infinitesimal generator A of the semigroup of translations $(T_t x)(s) = x(t+s)$ in $X = C(-\infty, \infty)$ is d/ds . A has no resolvent since all complex numbers are eigenvalues of A . $\{T_t\}$ is not equicontinuous but locally equicontinuous, i.e., $\{T_t | 0 \leq t \leq t_1\}$ is equicontinuous for any $t_1 > 0$. For locally equicontinuous (C^0) semigroups an analog of the Hille-Yosida theorem is obtained by using the notion of generalized resolvents (T. Kôamura, 1968; Ōuchi, 1973).

(iv) **Differentiable semigroups.** The notion of the holomorphy of semigroups in Section D is weakened to the differentiability. A characterization of a semigroup $\{T_t\}$ such that $T_t x$ is infinitely differentiable in $t > 0$ is given by using the resolvent of the infinitesimal generator (A. Pazy, 1968).

(v) **Nonlinear semigroups.** For a (C^0) semigroup $\{T_t\}$ of contractions (i.e., $\|T_t x - T_t y\| \leq$

$\|x - y\|$ for $x, y \in X$) in a Hilbert space X , an analog of the Hille-Yosida theorem is known (Y. Kôamura, 1969). This result has been partially extended to Banach spaces (\rightarrow 286 Nonlinear Functional Analysis X).

G. The Evolution Equation

Let $T_t = \exp(tA)$ be an e.c.s.g. (C^0) . Then for $x \in D(A)$,

$$T_t' x = A T_t x (= T_t A x). \quad (9)$$

Considered in suitable function spaces, the \dagger equation of heat conduction ($A = \Delta =$ the \dagger Laplacian), the \dagger Schrödinger equation ($A = \sqrt{-1}(\Delta - V(x))$), and the \dagger wave equation given in matrix form

$$\begin{pmatrix} u \\ v \end{pmatrix}' = \begin{pmatrix} u' \\ v' \end{pmatrix} = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & I \\ \Delta & 0 \end{pmatrix} \begin{pmatrix} u \\ v \end{pmatrix}$$

are all of the form (9). For a linear operator A_t in X depending on t , the ordinary differential equation in X

$$x_t' = A_t x_t + f(t), \quad t \geq 0, \quad (10)$$

is called the **evolution equation**. A family of operators $\{V(r, s) | r \geq s \geq 0\}$ in X which gives general solutions to the homogeneous evolution equation

$$x_t' = A_t x_t \quad (11)$$

(i.e., for any $s \geq 0$, $a \in D(A_s)$, $x_t = V(t, s)a$ is a solution to (11) for $x_s = a$) is called the **evolution operator** associated with the generators $\{A_t\}$. An evolution operator $\{V(r, s)\}$ satisfies (i) $V(r, r) = I$, (ii) $V(r, s)V(s, t) = V(r, t)$. The solution to (10) is formally expressed by

$$x_t = V(t, 0)x_0 + \int_0^t V(t, s)f(s)ds. \quad (12)$$

H. Integration of the Evolution Equation

For equation (11) we have the following result (Kato, 1953; Yosida, 1966). Assume the following four conditions: (i) $D(A_t)$ is independent of t and dense in the Banach space X , and for all $\alpha > 0$, $(I - \alpha A_t)^{-1} \in L(X)$ with the estimate $\|(I - \alpha A_t)^{-1}\| \leq 1$; (ii) $B_{t,s} = (I - A_t)(I - A_s)^{-1}$ is uniformly bounded in the norm for $0 \leq s, t \leq l$; (iii) $\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} \|B_{t_{j+1}, t_0} - B_{t_j, t_0}\| \leq N$, where N is independent of the partition $(0 = t_0 < t_1 < \dots < t_n = l)$; (iv) $B_{t,0}$ is weakly differentiable with respect to t such that the differentiated operator $\partial B_{t,0}/\partial t$ is strongly continuous in t . Under these assumptions, we can prove that for $x_0 \in D(A_0)$, the limit $V(t, 0)x_0 = s\text{-}\lim_{k \rightarrow \infty} V_k(t, 0)x_0$,

with

$$V_k(t, s) = \left(I - \left(t - \frac{[kt]}{k} \right) A \left(\frac{[kt]}{k} \right) \right)^{-1} \\ \times \left(I - \frac{1}{k} A \left(\frac{[kt] - 1}{k} \right) \right)^{-1} \\ \times \dots \times \left(I - \frac{1}{k} A \left(\frac{[ks] + 1}{k} \right) \right)^{-1} \\ \times \left(I - \left(\frac{[ks] + 1}{k} - s \right) A \left(\frac{[ks]}{k} \right) \right)^{-1}$$

($0 \leq s \leq t \leq l$), exists and gives the unique solution of (11). If $f(t)$ is continuously differentiable, the right-hand side of (12) exists and gives a unique solution to the inhomogeneous equation (10).

I. The Evolution Equation of Parabolic Type

Equation (10), for which every A_t is the infinitesimal generator of a holomorphic semigroup, is said to be of **parabolic type** by analogy to parabolic partial differential equations. Under weaker conditions, especially without the condition that $D(A_t)$ is independent of t , the existence of solutions of an equation of this type is obtained. Moreover, differentiability or analyticity of solutions follow from some natural assumptions.

(i) Existence of weak solutions. Let X be a Hilbert space. For $t \in [0, l]$, let V_t be a subspace and at the same time a Hilbert space with respect to a norm $\|\cdot\|_t$, stronger than $\|\cdot\|$. Since the form $(A_t x, y)$ is \dagger sesquilinear (linear in x and antilinear in y), we get a sesquilinear functional $a(t, \cdot, \cdot)$ on $V_t \times V_t$ such that

$$a(t, x, y) = -(A_t x, y), \quad x, y \in D(A_t),$$

if $D(A_t)$ is dense in V_t with respect to $\|\cdot\|_t$ and if

$$|(A_t x, y)| \leq C \|x\|_t \|y\|_t, \quad x, y \in D(A_t).$$

$V_t, a(t, \cdot, \cdot)$ should be measurable in a certain sense. A solution x_t of the equation (10) in $[0, l]$ satisfies

$$\int_0^t a(t, x_t, v_t) dt - \int_0^t (x_t, v_t) dt \\ = \int_0^t (f(t), v_t) dt + (x_0, v_0) \quad (13)$$

for any differentiable X -valued function v_t such that $v_t \in V_t, v_t = 0, \int_0^t \|v_t\|^2 dt < \infty$, and $\int_0^t \|v_t'\|^2 dt < \infty$. A solution x_t of (13) is called a **weak solution** of equation (10), though it does not necessarily satisfy (10). If the relation

$$a(t, x, x) + \lambda \|x\|^2 \geq \alpha \|x\|_t^2, \quad x \in V_t,$$

holds for some $\lambda, \alpha > 0$, a weak solution of (10) in the sense of (13) exists for a given $x_0 \in X$

(Lions, 1961). In order to obtain the uniqueness or the differentiability of weak solutions, we need some additional conditions.

(ii) Some properties of strong solutions. Let X be a Banach space. Let every semigroup $\{T_t^\alpha\}$ generated by A_t be holomorphic in a complex sector $|\arg \lambda| \leq \theta, \theta > 0$, independent of t . Suppose one of the following conditions holds: (1) For some $\alpha, 0 < \alpha < 1, D(A_t^\alpha)$ is independent of t and for $1 - \alpha < \beta < 1$,

$$\|(A_t^\alpha - A_s^\alpha) A_0^{-\alpha}\| \leq C' |t - s|^\beta, \quad t, s \in [0, 1]$$

(P. E. Sobolevskii, 1958–1961; Kato, 1961);

(2) A_t^{-1} is differentiable in t ,

$$\|dA_t^{-1}/dt - dA_s^{-1}/ds\| \leq C' |t - s|^\beta$$

for some $C' > 0, 0 < \beta \leq 1$, and

$$\left\| \frac{\partial}{\partial t} (A_t - \lambda)^{-1} \right\| \leq \frac{N}{|\lambda|^\alpha}$$

for every $\lambda: |\arg \lambda| \geq \pi/2 - \theta$ for some $N, 0 < \alpha < 1$ (Kato and H. Tanabe, 1962). Then a differentiable evolution operator $\{V(t, s)\}$ associated with (11) exists.

The most interesting property of evolution equations of parabolic type is the analyticity of solutions. If A_t is holomorphic in t in a certain sense, then the solutions are holomorphic (Tanabe, 1967; first noted by Komatsu, 1961). Furthermore, a characterization of evolution operators $\{V(t, s)\}$ holomorphic in some complex neighborhood of $[0, l]$ (called **holomorphic evolution operators**) is obtained by using the resolvent of A_t (Kato and Tanabe, 1967; K. Masuda, 1972; → [8]).

J. Application to Semilinear Evolution Equations

The evolution equation with a nonlinear additive term $f(t, x_t): x_t' = A_t x_t + f(t, x_t)$ can be written as an inhomogeneous integral equation $x_t = V(t, 0)x_0 + \int_0^t V(t, s)f(s, x_s)ds$ in the Banach space X , by means of the evolution operator $\{V(t, s)\}$ introduced in Section G. The existence, differentiability (Kato, H. Fujita, and Sobolevskii, 1963–1966), and analyticity (Masuda, 1967) of solutions of the Navier-Stokes equation has been obtained by reducing it to an integral equation of this type.

Concerning quasilinear equations in which A_t depends on x_t , the existence, differentiability, and analyticity of their solutions have been discussed.

References

- [1] E. Hille and R. S. Phillips. Functional analysis and semi-groups, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1957.

- [2] N. Dunford and J. T. Schwartz, *Linear operators I*, Interscience 1958.
- [3] J. L. Lions, *Equations différentielles opérationnelles et problèmes aux limites*, Springer, 1961.
- [4] K. Yosida, *Functional analysis*, Springer, 1980.
- [5] S. G. Krein, *Linear differential equations in a Banach space*, Amer. Math. Soc., 1971. (Original in Russian, 1967.)
- [6] P. L. Butzer and H. Berens, *Semigroups of operators and applications*, Springer, 1967.
- [7] R. W. Carroll, *Abstract methods in partial differential equations*, Harper & Row, 1969.
- [8] H. Tanabe, *Equations of evolution*, Pitman, 1979. (Original in Japanese, 1975.)

379 (X.18) Series

A. Convergence and Divergence of Infinite Series

Let $\{a_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$) be a sequence of real or complex numbers. Then the formal infinite sum $a_1 + a_2 + \dots$ is called an **infinite series** (or **series**) and is denoted by $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n$ or $\sum a_n$. The number a_n is the n th **term** of the series $\sum a_n$, and $s_n = a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_n$ is the n th **partial sum** of $\sum a_n$. Also, for a finite sequence a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n , the sum $a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_n$ is called a **series**. To distinguish these two series, the latter is called a **finite series**. In this article, *series* means an infinite series. If the sequence of partial sums $\{s_n\}$ †converges to s , we say that the series $\sum a_n$ **converges** or is **convergent** to the **sum** s and write $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n = s$ or $\sum a_n = s$. If the sequence $\{s_n\}$ is not convergent, we say that the series **diverges** or is **divergent**. In particular, if $\{s_n\}$ is divergent to $+\infty$ ($-\infty$) or †oscillating, we say that the series is **properly divergent** to $+\infty$ ($-\infty$) or **oscillating**, respectively.

The notation $\sum a_n$ is customarily used for both the sum s of the convergent series and the formal series, which may or may not be convergent. When the series is convergent, the sum is sometimes called the **Cauchy sum** in contrast to the “summations” of series, which are not necessarily convergent (\rightarrow Sections K ff.).

Applying the †Cauchy criterion for the convergence of a sequence, we see that a necessary and sufficient condition for $\sum a_n$ to be convergent is that for any given $\varepsilon > 0$, we can take N sufficiently large so that

$$|s_m - s_n| = |a_{n+1} + \dots + a_m| < \varepsilon$$

for all m, n such that $m > n > N$. Hence if $\sum a_n$

converges, the $a_n \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, but the converse is not always true.

Elementary properties of the convergence of series are: (1) If $\sum a_n$ and $\sum b_n$ converge to a, b , respectively, then $\sum(a_n + b_n)$ converges to $a + b$. (2) If $\sum a_n$ converges to a , then $\sum ca_n$ converges to ca for any constant c . (3) Suppose that $\{b_m\}$ is a subsequence of $\{a_n\}$ obtained by deleting a finite number of terms a_n from $\{a_n\}$. Then $\sum b_m$ is convergent if and only if $\sum a_n$ is convergent. (4) When a series $\sum a_n$ converges to a and $\{b_m\}$ is a sequence such that $b_1 = a_1 + a_2 + \dots + a_{r_1}$, $b_2 = a_{r_1+1} + a_{r_1+2} + \dots + a_{r_2}$, $b_3 = a_{r_2+1} + \dots + a_{r_3}$, ..., then $\sum b_m$ also converges to a . The converse, however, is not always true. For example, $1 - 1 + 1 - 1 + \dots$ is oscillating, but $(1 - 1) + (1 - 1) + \dots = 0$.

B. Series of Positive Terms

Suppose that $\sum a_n$ is a **series of positive** (or **nonnegative**) **terms**. Since its partial sums s_n form a †monotonically increasing sequence, the series is convergent if and only if $\{s_n\}$ is bounded. For example, the series $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n^{-p}$ ($p > 0$) converges if $p > 1$ because $s_n < 2^{p-1}/(2^{p-1} - 1)$, whereas it diverges if $p \leq 1$ because $s_{2^{m+1}} > 1 + (m+1)/2$. The **geometric series** $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a^{n-1}$ ($a > 0$) converges for $a < 1$ because $s_n = (1 - a^n)/(1 - a)$, and diverges for $a \geq 1$ because $s_n \geq n$.

Some criteria for the convergence of a series $\sum a_n$ of nonnegative terms are: (1) If $\{a_n\}$ is monotone decreasing, then the series $\sum a_n$ and $\sum 2^n a_{2^n}$ have the same convergence behavior (**Cauchy's condensation test**). (2) Suppose that $f(x)$ is a positive monotone decreasing function defined for $x \geq 1$ such that $f(n) = a_n$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$). Then the series $\sum a_n$ and the integral $\int_1^{\infty} f(x) dx$ have the same convergence behavior (**Cauchy's integral test**), for example, $\sum n^{-p}$ ($p > 0$) and $\int_1^{\infty} x^{-p} dx$. (3) If for any positive constant k we have $a_n \leq kb_n$ except for a finite number of n , then the convergence of $\sum b_n$ implies the convergence of $\sum a_n$. If $kb_n \leq a_n$ and $\sum b_n$ diverges, then $\sum a_n$ also diverges (**comparison test**). (4) Let $a_n > 0$ and $b_n > 0$. If $a_{n+1}/a_n \leq b_{n+1}/b_n$ except for a finite number of values of n and $\sum b_n$ converges, then $\sum a_n$ also converges; if $a_{n+1}/a_n \geq b_{n+1}/b_n$ and $\sum b_n$ diverges, then $\sum a_n$ also diverges (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 10).

C. Absolute Convergence and Conditional Convergence

A series $\sum a_n$ (with real or complex terms a_n) is called **absolutely convergent** if the series $\sum |a_n|$ is convergent. If a convergent series is not

absolutely convergent, then it is called **conditionally convergent**. An absolutely convergent series is convergent. A real series $\sum a_n$ whose terms have alternating signs is called an **alternating series**. An alternating series $\sum a_n$ is convergent if the absolute values of terms $|a_n|$ form a monotone decreasing sequence which converges to zero (**Leibniz's test**). An absolutely convergent series remains absolutely convergent under every rearrangement of terms and retains its sum under the rearrangement (**Dirichlet's theorem**). If a series with real terms is conditionally convergent, then it is possible to rearrange its terms so that the rearranged series converges to any given number, diverges to $+\infty$ (or $-\infty$), or is oscillating (**Riemann's theorem**). A convergent series whose convergence behavior is unaffected by rearrangement and whose sum remains unchanged is called **unconditionally convergent** (or **commutatively convergent**). A real or complex series is unconditionally convergent if and only if it is absolutely convergent. The notion of infinite series can be extended to any complete normed linear space, and absolute convergence can be defined by replacing the absolute values of the terms by the norm of the terms. However, in general, unconditional convergence is not always equivalent to absolute convergence.

D. Abel's Partial Summation

Let $\{a_0, a_1, a_2, \dots\}$ and $\{b_0, b_1, b_2, \dots\}$ be arbitrary sequences, and put $A_n = a_0 + a_1 + \dots + a_n$ for $n \geq 0$. Then the following formula of **Abel's partial summation** holds:

$$\sum_{v=n+1}^{n+k} a_v b_v = \sum_{v=n+1}^{n+k} A_v (b_v - b_{v+1}) - A_n b_{n+1} + A_{n+k} b_{n+k-1}$$

for any $n \geq 0$ and any $k \geq 1$; this formula also holds for $n = -1$ if we put $A_{-1} = 0$.

Abel's partial summation enables us to deduce a number of tests of convergence for series of the form $\sum a_n b_n$. In particular, the following criteria are easy to apply:

- (1) $\sum a_n b_n$ is convergent if $\sum a_n$ is convergent and if the sequence $\{b_n\}$ is monotone and bounded (**Abel's test**).
- (2) $\sum a_n b_n$ is convergent if the sequence $\{s_n\}$ of partial sums of $\sum a_n$ is bounded and if $\{b_n\}$ is monotone and converges to zero (**Dirichlet's test**).
- (3) $\sum a_n b_n$ is convergent if $\sum (b_n - b_{n+1})$ is absolutely convergent and if $\sum a_n$ is (at least conditionally) convergent (**test of du Bois-Reymond and Dedekind**).

For example, criterion (2) implies that if $\{b_n\}$

is monotone and converges to zero, then the power series $\sum b_n z^n$ of a complex variable z is convergent on the unit circle $|z| = 1$ except at most for $z = 1$; the case $z = -1$ gives Leibniz's test for alternating series (\rightarrow Section C).

E. Double Series

A sequence with two indices, i.e., a mapping from the Cartesian product $\mathbf{N} \times \mathbf{N}$ of two copies of the set of natural numbers \mathbf{N} to a subset of the real or complex numbers, is called a **double sequence** and is denoted by $\{a_{mn}\}$ or $\{a_{m,n}\}$. If there exists a number l such that for any positive ε there is a natural number $N(\varepsilon)$ satisfying $|a_{mn} - l| < \varepsilon$ for all $m > N(\varepsilon)$ and $n > N(\varepsilon)$, then we say that the sequence $\{a_{mn}\}$ has a limit l and write $\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty, n \rightarrow \infty} a_{mn} = l$. This limit should not be confused with repeated limits such as $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty} a_{mn})$. If $\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty} a_{mn} = \alpha_n$ uniformly in n and $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \alpha_n = l$, then $\lim_{m \rightarrow \infty, n \rightarrow \infty} a_{mn} = l$. For a given double sequence $\{a_{mn}\}$, the formal series $\sum_{m,n=1}^{\infty} a_{mn}$ is called a **double series** and is sometimes denoted by $\sum a_{mn}$. In contrast with double series, the ordinary series discussed previously is called a **simple series**.

Given a double series $\sum a_{mn}$, when the double sequence of partial sums $s_{mn} = \sum_{k=1}^m \sum_{l=1}^n a_{kl}$ is convergent to s , then $\sum a_{mn}$ is said to be **convergent** to the **sum** s . On the other hand, if s_{mn} is not convergent, $\sum a_{mn}$ is said to be **divergent**. If $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_{mn}$ converges to b_m for each m , then $\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} b_m = \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} (\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_{mn})$ is called the **repeated** (or **iterated**) **series by rows**. If $\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} a_{mn}$ converges to c_n for each n , then $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_n = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} a_{mn})$ is called the **repeated** (or **iterated**) **series by columns**. Even if two repeated series by rows and columns are convergent, the two sums are not always identical, and $\sum a_{mn}$ is not always convergent. However, if the double series $\sum a_{mn}$ is convergent and $\sum_n a_{mn}$ is convergent for each m , then the repeated series by rows is convergent to the same sum. A similar statement is valid for the repeated series by columns.

Suppose that we are given a double series $\sum a_{mn}$ of nonnegative terms. If any one of $\sum_{m,n} a_{mn}$, $\sum_m \sum_n a_{mn}$, and $\sum_n \sum_m a_{mn}$ is convergent, the other two converge to the same sum. If the **diagonal partial sum** $s_{mn} = \sum_{k=1}^m \sum_{l=1}^n a_{kl}$ converges to a , then the double series $\sum a_{mn}$ also converges to a .

If $\sum |a_{mn}|$ converges, the double series $\sum a_{mn}$ is called **absolutely convergent**, whereas if $\sum a_{mn}$ converges but not absolutely, then $\sum a_{mn}$ is called **conditionally convergent**. If $\sum a_{mn}$ is absolutely convergent, then any series obtained from $\sum a_{mn}$ by arranging the terms in an arbitrary order is convergent to the same sum.

F. Multiplication of Series

The series $\sum_{n=1}^\infty c_n$, where $c_n = a_1 b_n + a_2 b_{n-1} + \dots + a_n b_1$, is called the **Cauchy product** of two series $\sum_{n=1}^\infty a_n$ and $\sum_{n=1}^\infty b_n$. (1) Let $\sum a_n$ and $\sum b_n$ be two convergent series and A, B be the sums of these series. If their Cauchy product $\sum c_n$ is also convergent, then it has the sum $C = AB$ (**Abel's theorem**). (2) If at least one of the two convergent series $\sum a_n$ and $\sum b_n$ with the sums A, B , respectively, is absolutely convergent, then their Cauchy product $\sum c_n$ is also convergent and has the sum $C = AB$ (**Mertens's theorem**). (3) If $\sum a_n$ and $\sum b_n$ are absolutely convergent, then their Cauchy product $\sum c_n$ is absolutely convergent (**Cauchy's theorem**). (4) Let $\sum a_n$ and $\sum b_n$ be two convergent series with the sums A, B , respectively. If $\{na_n\}$ and $\{nb_n\}$ are bounded from below, then $\sum c_n$ is convergent and has the sum $C = AB$ (**Hardy's theorem**).

G. Infinite Product

Let $\{a_n\}$ be a given sequence with terms $a_n \neq 0$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$). The formal **infinite product** $a_1 \cdot a_2 \cdot a_3 \cdot \dots$ is denoted by $\prod_{n=1}^\infty a_n$. We call $p_n = a_1 \cdot a_2 \cdot \dots \cdot a_n$ its n th **partial product**. If the sequence $\{p_n\}$ is convergent to a nonzero limit p , then this infinite product is said to **converge** to p , and p is called the **value** of the infinite product. We write $\prod a_n = p$. If $\{p_n\}$ is not convergent or is convergent to 0, then the infinite product is called **divergent**. Sometimes we consider the infinite product $\prod a_n$ with $a_n = 0$ for a finite number of n 's; and then by convergence or divergence of $\prod a_n$ we mean that of the infinite product $\prod a'_n$, where the sequence $\{a'_n\}$ is obtained by deleting zero terms from $\{a_n\}$. Usually we do not treat an infinite product with $a_n = 0$ for an infinite number of n 's.

A necessary and sufficient condition for $\prod_{n=1}^\infty a_n$ to be convergent is that for any positive ε there is a number N such that $|p_m/p_n - 1| < \varepsilon$ for all $n, m > N$. If $\prod a_n$ converges, then $a_n \rightarrow 1$, but the converse is not always true.

It is often convenient to write an infinite product as $\prod(1 + a_n)$. Then $\prod(1 + a_n)$ and $\sum \log(1 + a_n)$ have the same convergence behavior, where the imaginary part $i\theta$ of the logarithm is assumed to satisfy $0 \leq |\theta| < \pi$. If $a_n \geq 0$, convergence of $\prod(1 + a_n)$ implies convergence of $\sum a_n$, and vice versa.

If $\prod(1 + |a_n|)$ converges, then $\prod(1 + a_n)$ is said to be **absolutely convergent**. An absolutely convergent infinite product is also convergent, and the value of the infinite product is unchanged by the alteration of the order of terms.

H. Termwise Differentiation of Infinite Series with Function Terms

Uniform convergence of an infinite series $\sum f_n(x)$ is defined by uniform convergence of the sequence of the partial sums $\sum_{k=1}^n f_k(x)$ (\rightarrow 435 Uniform Convergence). If the infinite series $\sum f_n(x)$ defined on an interval I of the real line is convergent at least at one point of I and $\sum f'_n(x)$ is convergent uniformly in I when the derivatives $f'_n(x)$ exist, then $\sum f_n(x)$ is convergent to $f(x)$ uniformly in I , and $\sum f_n(x)$ is **termwise differentiable**, that is, $f'(x) = \sum f'_n(x)$. If the $\varphi_n(z)$ are holomorphic in a complex domain D and $\sum \varphi_n(z)$ converges to $\varphi(z)$ uniformly on every compact subset of D , then $\sum \varphi'_n(z)$ also converges to $\varphi'(z)$ uniformly on every compact subset of D (**Weierstrass's theorem of double series**). (For termwise integration \rightarrow 216 Integral Calculus.)

I. Numerical Evaluation of Series

In some special cases, we can express the n th partial sum s_n of a series $\sum a_n$ as a well-known function of n . Specifically, if $\sum a_n$ is an **arithmetic progression** $\sum_{k=1}^n (a + (k-1)d)$ or a **geometric progression** $\sum_{k=1}^n aq^{k-1}$, we have

$$s_n = \frac{n}{2}(2a + (n-1)d), \quad s_n = \frac{a(q^n - 1)}{q - 1},$$

respectively. If $|q| < 1$, then $\sum_{n=0}^\infty aq^n$ converges to $a/(1 - q)$. If $B_{r+1}(x)$ is the $(r+1)$ st \dagger Bernoulli polynomial, then $s_n = 1^r + 2^r + \dots + n^r = [B_{r+1}(x)]_1^{n+1}/(r+1)$. This sum was studied by J. Bernoulli, who gave formulas up to $r = 10$ in his *Ars conjectandi*.

In the series $\sum u_n$, if we can find another sequence $\{v_n\}$ such that $u_n = v_n - v_{n-1}$, then $s_n = u_1 + u_2 + \dots + u_n = v_n - v_0$. For example, if $u_n = n(n+1)(n+2)$, then $v_n = n(n+1)(n+2)(n+3)/4$ and $s_n = v_n$ because $v_0 = 0$ (\rightarrow 104 Difference Equations). Series with trigonometric function terms are calculated analogously.

There are cases where the sum $\sum a_n$ itself can be expressed in a satisfactory form although we cannot find an appropriately simple expression for each partial sum s_n . For example, $\zeta(r) = \sum_{m=1}^\infty 1/m^r$ can be represented by \dagger Bernoulli numbers if r is even. In particular, $\zeta(2) = \pi^2/6$, $\zeta(4) = \pi^4/90$ (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 10).

If an infinite series converges rapidly, we can get a good approximation by taking a suitable partial sum. On the other hand, if the series converges less rapidly, an effective means for evaluating series is afforded by transformation of series. If the k th \dagger difference is exactly zero, then

$$s_n = \sum_{i=1}^k \binom{n+1}{i} \Delta^{i-1} u_1.$$

Since the absolute value of finite differences often decreases rapidly, it is sometimes convenient to consider the series whose terms are the differences of the original series. One finite difference method is **Euler's transformation** of infinite series. In particular, the formula

$$\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} (-1)^k a_k = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\Delta^n a_0}{2^{n+1}}$$

is useful for numerical calculation of sums of slowly converging alternating series. In numerical calculation of the series, we usually start calculating the numerical values of the first few terms; we then apply such transformations as Euler's to the remainder, and calculate the partial sums of the transformed series.

When we calculate the sum of an infinite series approximately, we must estimate the error, i.e., the remainder that must be added to yield the sum of the series itself. We can estimate the maximum error by derivatives or differences of higher orders. We also have the transformations of Markov and Kummer. In the former, every term of the series is represented by convergent series, and in the latter, the given series is reduced by subtracting another convergent series, which has a known sum and similar terms [1].

J. Infinite Series and Integrals

In numerical calculation of functions, we sometimes use the **Euler-Maclaurin formula** [5]:

$$f(x + \xi\omega) = \frac{1}{\omega} \int_x^{x+\omega} f(z) dz + \sum_{r=1}^m \left(\frac{\omega^r}{r!} B_r(\xi) \Delta_{\omega} f^{(r-1)}(x) \right) + R_m,$$

$$R_m = -\omega \int_0^1 \frac{\bar{B}_m(\xi - z)}{m!} f^{(m)}(x + \omega z) dz,$$

where

$$\bar{B}_m(\xi - z) = \begin{cases} B_m(\xi - z + 1), & \xi < z, \\ B_m(\xi - z), & \xi \geq z. \end{cases}$$

The speed of the convergence for this formula is greater than that for Taylor's expansion when $\xi\omega$ is large, since the terms of the formula are \dagger Bernoulli polynomials $B_r(\xi)$ in $0 \leq \xi \leq 1$. We also have Boole's formula, with \dagger Euler polynomials as its terms [4]. The formulas discussed in this section are also used to calculate approximately the partial sums of infinite series.

Another method of evaluating sums of infinite series analytically entails transforming infinite series to definite integrals using the \dagger residue theorem. If an analytic function $f(z)$ is

holomorphic except at poles a_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots, k$) in a domain bounded by the closed curve C and containing the points $z = m$ ($m = 1, 2, \dots, N$), then

$$\sum_{m=1}^N f(m) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_C \pi(\cot \pi z) f(z) dz - \sum_{n=1}^k \text{Res}[\pi(\cot \pi z) f(z)]_{z=a_n}.$$

When the left-hand side of this equation is replaced by

$$\sum_{m=1}^N (-1)^m f(m),$$

we replace $\cot \pi z$ by $\text{cosec } \pi z$. $\text{Res}[F(z)]_{z=a}$ is the \dagger residue of $F(z)$ at $z = a$. The line integral along C is often calculated easily by choosing a suitable deformation of C . Sometimes it can be shown immediately that the integral along C is zero, or its asymptotic value can be evaluated by the \dagger method of steepest descent.

K. History of the Study of Divergent Series

Mathematicians in the 18th century did not concern themselves with the question of whether \dagger series were \dagger convergent or \dagger divergent. This indiscriminateness led to various contradictions. In 1821 an exact definition of the notion of convergence of series (Section A) was given by A. L. Cauchy; since then, mathematicians have mostly concerned themselves with convergent series. However, since divergent series appeared in many problems in analysis, the study of such series could not be neglected, and it became desirable to give a suitable definition of their sum. Although some results were given by L. Euler, N. Abel, and others, it was during the latter part of the 19th century that methods of summation of divergent series were studied systematically. This study constituted a new branch of mathematics.

In the following sections, some important methods of summation of divergent series are mentioned. Cesàro's method (\rightarrow Section M) was the forerunner of the theory whose general foundation is now the theory of linear transformations.

L. Linear Transformations

For a sequence $\{s_n\}$ ($n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$) of real or complex numbers, assume that $\sigma_n = \sum_{i=0}^n a_{ni} s_i$ converges for $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, where (a_{ik}) is a given matrix ($i, k = 0, 1, 2, \dots$). The mapping $T: \{s_n\} \rightarrow \{\sigma_n\}$ is called a **linear transformation**, and $\{\sigma_n\}$ is called the **transform** of $\{s_n\}$ under T . If the matrix satisfies $a_{ik} = 0$ ($k > i$), then T is defined for any sequence $\{s_n\}$ and T is said to

be **triangular**. If the transform $\{\sigma_n\}$ under T is defined and convergent whenever $\{s_n\}$ converges, then T is called a **semiregular transformation**. If in addition $\{\sigma_n\}$ has the same limit as $\{s_n\}$, then T is called a **regular transformation**. If for any bounded sequence $\{s_n\}$ the transform $\{\sigma_n\}$ is defined and convergent, then T is called a **normal transformation**. If T is triangular and the transform $\{\sigma_n\}$ of $\{s_n\}$ under T is divergent to ∞ whenever $s_n \rightarrow \infty$, then T is called a **totally regular transformation**.

Let T be a regular transformation. If for at least one divergent sequence $\{s_n\}$ the transform $\{\sigma_n\}$ of $\{s_n\}$ under T converges, then T is called a **method of summation**. The limit s of $\{\sigma_n\}$ is called the **sum** of $\{s_n\}$ under the method T of summation, and $\{s_n\}$ is said to be **T -summable** to s . For a given method of summation T_1 , let $D(T_1)$ be the set of sequences that are T_1 -summable. If $D(T_1) = D(T_2)$, then the methods T_1 and T_2 are called **equivalent**. If $D(T_1) \subset D(T_2)$, then we say that T_1 is **weaker** than T_2 and T_2 is **stronger** than T_1 . If $D(T_1) \not\subset D(T_2)$ and $D(T_2) \not\subset D(T_1)$, then T_1 and T_2 are called **mutually noncomparable**. The following theorems on linear transformations of sequences are important:

(1) **Kojima-Schur theorem**. In order that T be semiregular it is necessary and sufficient that (i) $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_{nk}$ exist for each k ; (ii) $t_n = \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} |a_{nk}|$ exist and $\{t_n\}$ be bounded; and (iii) $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{nk}$ exist. In that case, we have

$$\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} |\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_{nk}| < \infty$$

and

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sigma_n &= \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{nk} s_k \\ &= \left(\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} s_n \right) \left(\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{nk} \right) \\ &\quad + \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \left(\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_{nk} \right) \left(s_k - \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} s_n \right). \end{aligned}$$

In particular, in order that $\{\sigma_n\}$ converge whenever $s_n \rightarrow 0$ it is necessary and sufficient that conditions (i) and (ii) be satisfied. In that case,

$$\begin{aligned} \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sigma_n &= \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{nk} s_k \\ &= \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \left(\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_{nk} \right) s_k \end{aligned}$$

(I. Schur, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 151 (1921); T. Kojima, *Tôhoku Math. J.*, 12 (1917)).

(2) **Toeplitz's theorem**. In order that T be regular it is necessary and sufficient that (i') $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} a_{nk} = 0$ for each k ; (ii); and (iii') $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} a_{nk} = 1$ (O. Toeplitz, *Prace Mat.-Fiz.*, 22 (1914)). In particular, (ii) and (i')

$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{k=K}^{\infty} a_{nk} = 1$ for each K imply that T is regular (**Perron's theorem**).

(3) **Schur's theorem**. In order that T be normal it is necessary and sufficient that (i); (ii); (iii); and (iv) for any $\varepsilon > 0$ there exist a $K > 0$ such that $\sum_{k=K+1}^{\infty} |a_{nk}| < \varepsilon$ for each n .

(4) In order that the regular triangular transformation T be totally regular, it is necessary and sufficient that $a_{nk} \geq 0$ except for a finite number of k .

M. Cesàro's Method of Summation

We write

$$(1-x)^{-\alpha-1} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} A_n^{\alpha} x^n,$$

$$A_n^{\alpha} = \binom{n+\alpha}{n} \sim \frac{n^{\alpha}}{\Gamma(\alpha+1)},$$

$$\begin{aligned} (1-x)^{-\alpha-1} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_n x^n &= (1-x)^{-\alpha} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} s_n x^n \\ &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} s_n^{\alpha} x^n, \end{aligned}$$

where $s_n = \sum_{i=0}^n u_i$. Thus the series $\sum u_i$ is associated with the sequence $\{s_n^{\alpha}\}$. If $s_n^{\alpha} = s_n^{\alpha}/A_n^{\alpha}$ converges to s as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then we say that $\sum u_n$ is **summable by Cesàro's method of order α** (or simply **(C, α) -summable**) to s and write $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_n = s (C, \alpha)$. This method of summation is called **Cesàro's method of summation of order α** (or simply **(C, α) -summation**).

It is natural to consider (C, α) -summation for $\alpha > -1$. We say that $\sum u_n$ is **$(C, -1)$ -summable** if $\sum u_n$ converges and $nu_n = o(1)$. Here $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_n = s (C, 0)$ means $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} s_n = s$, and $\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} u_n = s (C, 1)$ means $s = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (s_0 + s_1 + \dots + s_{n-1})/n$. Generally, we have the following results:

(1) A_n^{α} is increasing if $\alpha > 0$ and decreasing if $0 > \alpha > -1$. $A_n^0 = 1$ and $A_n^{\alpha} > 0$ if $\alpha > -1$.

(2) $s_n^{\alpha+\beta+1} = \sum_{k=0}^n A_{n-k}^{\beta} s_k^{\alpha}$, $A_n^{\alpha} - A_{n-1}^{\alpha} = A_n^{\alpha-1}$, $s_n^{\alpha} - s_{n-1}^{\alpha} = s_{n-1}^{\alpha-1}$.

(3) (C, α) ($\alpha \geq 0$) is regular, and $D(C, \alpha) \supset D(C, \beta)$ if $\alpha > \beta > -1$.

(4) If $\sum u_n = s (C, \alpha)$, then $u_n = o(n^{\alpha})$. Moreover, if $\sum u'_n = s' (C, \alpha)$, then $\sum (u_n + u'_n) = s + s' (C, \alpha)$ and $\sum \lambda u_n = \lambda s (C, \alpha)$ for any number λ .

(5) If $\sum u_n = s (C, \alpha)$ and $\sum u'_n = s' (C, \beta)$, then their \dagger Cauchy product $\sum v_n = ss' (C, \alpha + \beta + 1)$ (**Chapman's theorem**). Moreover, if $\sum_{k=0}^n A_k^{\alpha} |s_{n-k}^{\beta-\alpha-1} (u'_{n-k})|/A_n^{\beta} = O(1)$, then $\sum v_n = ss' (C, \beta)$ (T. Kojima). If $\alpha', \beta' > -1$, $s_n^{(\alpha')}(u_n) = O(n^{\alpha'})$, and $s_n^{(\beta')}(u'_n) = O(n^{\beta'})$, then $\sum v_n = ss' (C, \alpha' + \beta' + 2)$ (G. Doetsch).

(6) For any integer $\alpha > 0$, in order that $\sum u_n = s (C, \alpha)$ it is necessary and sufficient that there exist $\{v_n\}$ such that $u_n = (n+1)(v_n - v_{n+1})$ and $\sum v_n = s (C, \alpha-1)$ (G. H. Hardy, *Proc. London Math. Soc.*, (2) 8 (1910)). This condi-

tion is equivalent to (i)–(iii) together: (i) the series $\sum_{k=n}^{\infty} s_n^{x-2}/(k+1) \dots (k+\alpha)$ converges to the limit b_n ; (ii) $b_n = o(1)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$; and (iii) $(s_n^{x-1}/A_n^{x-1}) + (n+\alpha)\Gamma(\alpha)b_{n+1} \rightarrow s$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

(7) If $\sum u_n = s$ (C, α) ($\alpha > 0$), one of the following five conditions is sufficient for the convergence of $\sum u_n$ (this is a kind of †Tauberian theorem): (i) $nu_n = o(1)$; (ii) $t_n = \sum_{v=1}^n v u_v = o(n)$; (iii) $\sum n^p |u_n|^{p+1} < \infty$ ($p \geq 0$); (iv) $nu_n > -K$ (K is independent of n); (v) $\liminf(s_m - s_n) \geq 0$ as $m > n \rightarrow \infty$, $m/n \rightarrow 1$ (**R. Schmidt's condition**).

(8) If $\alpha' > \alpha > -1$ and $\sum u_n = s(C, \alpha')$, then $\sum u_n = s(C, \alpha + \varepsilon)$ for any $\varepsilon > 0$.

For a given series $\sum u_n$, we write H_n^0 for s_n , H_n^1 for the arithmetic mean of $\{H_n^0\}$, and H_n^2 for the arithmetic mean of $\{H_n^1\}$. Similarly, we can define $\{H_n^p\}$ for any integer p . If $H_n^p \rightarrow s$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **summable by Hölder's method of order p** (or (H, p) -summable) to s , and we write $\sum u_n = s(H, p)$. For any integer $p \geq 0$, (H, p) -summability is equivalent to (C, p) -summability (**Knopp-Schnee theorem**).

N. Abel's Method of Summation

If the radius of convergence of the power series $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_n r^n$ is ≥ 1 and $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_n r^n \rightarrow s$ as $r \rightarrow 1$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **summable by Abel's method** (or **A-summable**) to s , and we write $\sum u_n = s(A)$. The transformation matrix is denoted by A , and the transformation is called **Abel's method of summation**.

(1) If $\sum u_n = s(A)$, then $\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} |u_n|^{1/n} \leq 1$. (2) If $\sum u_n = s(A)$ and $\sum u'_n = s'(A)$, then $\sum(u_n + u'_n) = s + s'(A)$ and $\sum \lambda u_n = \lambda s(A)$ for any constant λ . Moreover, $\sum_{n=k+1}^{\infty} u_n = s - u_0 - u_1 - \dots - u_k(A)$. (3) If $\sum u_n = s(A)$ and $\sum u'_n = s'(A)$, then the Cauchy product is $\sum u_n = ss'(A)$. (4) If $\sum u_n = s(A)$ and one of the following five conditions is satisfied, then $\sum u_n = s$: (i) $nu_n = o(1)$; (ii) $t_n = \sum_{v=1}^n v u_v = o(n)$; (iii) $nu_n = O(1)$; (iv) $nu_n > -M$; (v) $\liminf(s_m - s_n) \geq 0$ as $m > n \rightarrow \infty$ and $m/n \rightarrow 1$. These theorems are †Tauberian, in the original form proved by Tauber (*Monatsh. Math.*, 8 (1897)). (5) The matrix A is regular, and $D(C, \alpha) \subset D(A)$ for any $\alpha > -1$. (6) If $\sum u_n = s(A)$ and $s_n \geq 0$, then $\sum u_n = s(C, 1)$. Moreover, if $\sigma_n^{(\alpha)} = O(1)$, then $\sum u_n = s(C, \alpha + \varepsilon)$ for $\alpha > -1$ and $\varepsilon > 0$.

O. Borel's Method of Summation

If for a given series $\sum u_n$,

$$u(x) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{s_n x^n}{n!}$$

is convergent for all x , and $u(x)/e^x \rightarrow s$ as $x \rightarrow \infty$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **summable by**

Borel's exponential method to the sum s , and we write $\sum u_n = s(B)$. The transformation thus determined is denoted by B and is called **Borel's method of summation**. If

$$\int_0^{\infty} u(x) e^{-x} dx = s,$$

then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **summable by Borel's integral method** (or **B-summable**) to s , and we write $\sum u_n = s(\mathfrak{B})$. Then we have: (1) B is regular and $D(C, \alpha) \subset D(B)$ ($\alpha > -1$), while $D(C, \alpha)$ and $D(\mathfrak{B})$ are noncomparable. (2) If the radius of convergence of $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_n x^n$ is ≥ 1 and $\sum u_n = s(B)$, then $\sum u_n = s(A)$. (3) If $\sum_{n=k+1}^{\infty} u_n = s(B)$ (resp. (\mathfrak{B})), then $\sum u_n = s + u_0 + u_1 + \dots + u_k(B)$ (resp. (\mathfrak{B})), but the converse is not always true. (4) $\sum u_n = s(B)$ implies $|u_n|^{1/n} = o(n)$. (5) If $\sum u_n = s(B)$ and $\sum u'_n = s'(B)$, then $\sum(u_n + u'_n) = s + s'(B)$, and $\sum \lambda u_n = \lambda s(B)$ for any constant λ . The same is true for summation (\mathfrak{B}) . (6) If $\sum u_n = s(B)$ and if one of the following two conditions is satisfied, then $\sum u_n = s$: (i) $\sqrt{n} u_n = o(1)$; (ii) $\liminf(s_m - s_n) \geq 0$ as $m > n \rightarrow \infty$ and $(m - n)\sqrt{n} \rightarrow 0$. (7) If $\sum u_n = s(B)$ and $s_{n-1}^{x-1} = o(n^{x-1/2})$, then $\sum u_n = s(C, \alpha)$ ($\alpha \geq 0$). (8) If $\sum u_n = s(A)$ and $u(t) > -Mt^{-1} \exp t$, then $\sum u_n = s(B)$. (9) If the sequences $\{n_k\}$ and $\{n'_k\}$ satisfy $n_{k+1} > n_k$, $n'_k/n_k > 1 + \varepsilon$ ($k = 1, 2, \dots$; $\varepsilon > 0$), $u_v = 0$ ($n_k < v \leq n'_k$), and $\sum u_n = s(B)$, then $s_{n_k} \rightarrow s$ as $k \rightarrow \infty$.

If $\sum u_n = s(\mathfrak{B})$ and

$$\int_0^{\infty} \left| \frac{d^{\lambda} u(x)}{dx^{\lambda}} \right| e^{-x} dx$$

converges for all $\lambda = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **absolute Borel summable** (or **|\mathfrak{B}|-summable**). Concerning this we have: (1) If $\sum |u_n|$ converges, then $\sum u_n$ is $|\mathfrak{B}|$ -summable, but even if $\sum u_n$ converges, $\sum u_n$ is not always $|\mathfrak{B}|$ -summable. If $\sum u_n$ is $|\mathfrak{B}|$ -summable, then $\sum u_n$ is \mathfrak{B} -summable to s . In this case, we write $\sum u_n = s(|\mathfrak{B}|)$. (2) $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} u_n = s(|\mathfrak{B}|)$ implies $\sum_{n=k+1}^{\infty} u_n = s - (u_0 + u_1 + \dots + u_k)(|\mathfrak{B}|)$. (3) If $\sum u_n = s(B)$, $\sum u'_n = s'(B)$, and if at least one of them is $|\mathfrak{B}|$ -summable, then their Cauchy product is $\sum v_n = ss'(|\mathfrak{B}|)$.

P. Euler's Method of Summation

In the series $\sum u_n$, if

$$\left\{ \binom{k+1}{1} s_0 + \binom{k+1}{2} s_1 + \dots + \binom{k+1}{k+1} s_k \right\} 2^{-(k+1)}$$

($s_n = \sum_{k=0}^n u_k$) converges to s as $k \rightarrow \infty$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **summable by Euler's method**, and we write $\sum u_n = s(E)$. The transformation thus obtained is called **Euler's method of summation**. A necessary and sufficient condition

for $\sum u_n = s$ (E) is that $\sum v_n = s$, where $v_n = 2^{-(n+1)} \sum_{k=0}^n \binom{n}{k} u_k$. This summation method is regular. We have $\sum u_n = s$ if $\sum u_n = s$ (E) and if one of the following two conditions is satisfied: (i) $\sqrt{n} u_n = O(1)$; (ii) $\liminf(s_m - s_n) \geq 0$ for $m > n \rightarrow \infty$, $(m-n)/\sqrt{n} \rightarrow 1$. Cesàro and Euler summations are noncomparable. As an extension of Euler's method, the Euler method of summation of p th order is also defined (e.g., \rightarrow [6]).

Q. Nörlund's Method of Summation

For a positive sequence $\{p_n\}$, let $P_n = \sum_{v=0}^n p_v \rightarrow \infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$ and $p_n/P_n \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. If

$$\left(\sum_{k=0}^n s_k p_{n-k} \right) / P_n = \left(\sum_{k=0}^n u_k P_{n-k} \right) / P_n$$

converges to s as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **summable by Nörlund's method** of type $\{p_n\}$, and we write $\sum u_n = s$ (N, $\{p_n\}$). The transformation thus obtained is also regular and is called **Nörlund's method of summation**. If $\sum u_n = s$ (C, 1) and $0 \leq p_0 \leq p_1 \leq \dots$, then $\sum u_n = s$ (N, $\{p_n\}$). Cesàro's method is actually a special case of this method.

R. M. Riesz's Method of Summation

Let $\{\lambda_n\}$ be a sequence with increasing terms and tending to $+\infty$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. If

$$R(\lambda_n, k, \tau) = \left(\sum_{\lambda_n < \tau} (\tau - \lambda_n)^k u_n \right) / \tau^k$$

converges to s as $\tau \rightarrow \infty$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **summable by Riesz's method of order k** and type λ_n , and we write $\sum u_n = s$ (R, λ_n, k). The transformation thus obtained is regular and is called **Riesz's method of summation of the k th order**. In particular, if $\lambda_n = n$, then $D(R, \lambda_n, k) = D(C, k)$.

S. Riemann's Method of Summation

If

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} u_n \left(\frac{\sin nh}{nh} \right)^k, \quad u_0 = 0,$$

converges for $h > 0$ and tends to s as $h \rightarrow 0$, then $\sum u_n$ is said to be **(R, k)-summable** to s . When $k = 1$, this method, often called **Lebesgue's method of summation**, is not regular. When $k = 2$, it is ordinarily called **Riemann's method of summation** and is regular. Corresponding to these cases, if

$$\frac{2}{\pi} \sum s_n \frac{\sin nh}{n} \rightarrow s \quad \text{or} \quad \frac{2}{\pi h} \sum s_n \left(\frac{\sin nh}{n} \right)^2 \rightarrow s$$

as $h \rightarrow 0$, then $\sum u_n$ is called **(R₁)-summable** or **(R₂)-summable** to s , respectively. The summation method (R₁) is not regular, while (R₂) is regular. If $\sum u_n$ is (R₁)-summable, then it is also (R₂)-summable, but (R, 2) and (R₂) are noncomparable.

Other methods of summation were developed by G. H. Hardy and J. E. Littlewood, E. Le Roy, C. J. de La Vallée Poussin, and others (e.g., \rightarrow [6]).

For related topics \rightarrow 121 Dirichlet Series, 159 Fourier Series, 339 Power Series.

References

- [1] K. Knopp, *Theorie und Anwendung der unendlichen Reihen*, Springer, 1921; fifth edition, 1964; English translation from the second edition, *Theory and application of infinite series*, Blackie, 1928.
- [2] T. J. I'A. Bromwich, *An introduction to the theory of infinite series*, Macmillan, second edition, 1926.
For numerical computation of series,
- [3] L. B. W. Jolley, *Summation of series*, Chapman & Hall, 1925.
- [4] N. E. Nörlund, *Vorlesungen über Differenzenrechnung*, Springer, 1924.
For the Euler-Maclaurin formula,
- [5] N. Bourbaki, *Éléments de mathématique*, Fonctions d'une variable réelle, ch. 6, *Actualités Sci. Ind.*, 1132a, Hermann, second edition, 1961.
For the summation of divergent series and Tauberian theorems,
- [6] G. H. Hardy, *Divergent series*, Clarendon Press, 1949.
- [7] R. G. Cooke, *Infinite matrices and sequence spaces*, Macmillan, 1950.
- [8] K. Zeller, *Theorie der Limitierungsverfahren*, *Erg. Math.*, Springer, 1958; second edition, 1970.
- [9] K. Chandrasekharan and S. Minakshisundaram, *Typical means*, Oxford Univ. Press, 1952.
- [10] H. R. Pitt, *Tauberian theorems*, Oxford Univ. Press, 1958.

380 (X.15) Set Functions

A. General Remarks

A \dagger function whose domain is a \dagger family of sets is called a **set function**. Usually we consider set functions that take real values or $\pm\infty$. For example, if $f(x)$ is a real-valued function

defined on a set X , and if we assign to each subset A of X values such as $\sup_A f$, $\inf_A f$, or $\sup_A f - \inf_A f$, then we obtain a corresponding set function. In particular, a set function whose domain is the family of left open intervals in \mathbf{R}^m is called an **interval function**. To distinguish between set functions and ordinary functions defined at each point of a set, we call the latter **point functions**. For example, if $f(x)$ is an integrable (point) function with \mathbf{R} ($=\mathbf{R}^1$) as its domain and we put $F(I) = \int_a^b f(x) dx$ for $I = (a, b]$, then we obtain an interval function F on \mathbf{R} .

B. Finitely Additive Set Functions

Let $\Phi(E)$ be a real-valued set function defined on a \mathfrak{F} finitely additive class \mathfrak{B} in a space X . If Φ satisfies the finite additivity condition:

$$E_1, E_2 \in \mathfrak{B}, \quad E_1 \cap E_2 = \emptyset \quad \text{imply}$$

$$\Phi(E_1 \cup E_2) = \Phi(E_1) + \Phi(E_2),$$

then $\Phi(E)$ is called a **finitely additive set function** on \mathfrak{B} . For each $E \in \mathfrak{B}$ we denote $\sup\{\Phi(A) \mid A \subseteq E, A \in \mathfrak{B}\}$ ($\inf\{\Phi(A) \mid A \subseteq E, A \in \mathfrak{B}\}$) by $\bar{V}(\Phi; E)$ ($\underline{V}(\Phi; E)$), the **upper (lower) variation** of Φ . Since $\Phi(\emptyset) = 0$, we have $\underline{V}(\Phi; E) \leq 0 \leq \bar{V}(\Phi; E)$. $V(\Phi; E) = \bar{V}(\Phi; E) + |\underline{V}(\Phi; E)|$ is called the **total variation** of Φ on E . When we deal with a fixed Φ , instead of $\bar{V}(\Phi; E)$, $\underline{V}(\Phi; E)$, $V(\Phi; E)$ we write simply $\bar{V}(E)$, $\underline{V}(E)$, $V(E)$. If $V(\Phi; E)$ is bounded, then Φ is said to be of **bounded variation**. If $\Phi(E) \geq 0$ (≤ 0) for every $E \in \mathfrak{B}$, i.e., $E \subseteq E'$ implies $\Phi(E) \leq \Phi(E')$ ($\Phi(E) \geq \Phi(E')$), then Φ is said to be **monotone increasing (decreasing)**. Every finitely additive set function of bounded variation can be represented as the difference of two monotone increasing finitely additive set functions.

Let I_0 be a fixed interval in \mathbf{R}^m and $F(I)$ be an interval function defined for left open intervals $I \subseteq I_0$, where \emptyset is considered as a degenerate left open interval. If, for any two left open intervals I_1, I_2 such that $I_1 \cup I_2$ is an interval and $I_1 \cap I_2 = \emptyset$, we have $F(I_1 \cup I_2) = F(I_1) + F(I_2)$, then we call $F(I)$ an **additive interval function** in I_0 . Specifically, if $f(x)$ is a real-valued bounded function on \mathbf{R} and D is an interval function determined by $D(I) = f(b) - f(a)$, where $I = [a, b)$ (i.e., $D(I)$ is the increment of $f(x)$), then D is an additive interval function on \mathbf{R} , called the **increment function** of f . For a given f the increment function is determined uniquely. Conversely, for a given D , a function f such that D is its increment function is determined uniquely up to an additive constant. In this sense an additive interval function in \mathbf{R} may be identified with the corresponding point function on \mathbf{R} .

Let $\mathfrak{R}(I_0)$ be the finitely additive class of all

finite unions R of left open intervals in I_0 . Then any additive interval function $F(I)$ can be extended to a finitely additive set function $F(R)$ defined on $\mathfrak{R}(I_0)$. For the rest of this article, it is understood that an additive interval function means this extended set function. If for any $\varepsilon > 0$ there exists a $\delta > 0$ such that $|I| < \delta$ implies $F(I) < \varepsilon$ (where $|I|$ is the volume of the interval I), then we say that F is **continuous**.

C. Completely Additive Set Functions

Let $\Phi(E)$ be a real-valued set function defined on a \mathfrak{F} completely additive class \mathfrak{B} in a space X . If Φ satisfies the complete additivity condition:

$$E_j, E_k \in \mathfrak{B}, \quad E_j \cap E_k = \emptyset \quad (j \neq k)$$

$$\text{imply} \quad \Phi\left(\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} E_j\right) = \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \Phi(E_j),$$

then $\Phi(E)$ is called a **completely additive set function** (or simply **additive set function**) on \mathfrak{B} . In this case the corresponding upper variation $\bar{V}(E)$, lower variation $\underline{V}(E)$, and total variation $V(E)$ are all completely additive set functions, and for every $E \in \mathfrak{B}$ we have $\Phi(E) = \bar{V}(E) + \underline{V}(E)$ (**Jordan decomposition**). Furthermore, $V(E) = \sup \sum_{j=1}^n |\Phi(E_j)|$, where the supremum is taken over all decompositions of E such that $E = \bigcup_{j=1}^n E_j$ ($E_j \in \mathfrak{B}$, $E_j \cap E_k = \emptyset$, $j \neq k$). The completely additive nonnegative set functions are the same as the finite measures. Hence the Jordan decomposition implies that every completely additive set function is represented as the difference of two finite measures. A completely additive set function is also called a **signed measure**.

Any continuous additive interval function of bounded variation can be extended to a completely additive set function. The notion of additive interval function of bounded variation is a generalization of that of function of bounded variation (\rightarrow 166 Functions of Bounded Variation).

Let Φ be a completely additive set function and μ a finite or σ -finite measure, both defined on \mathfrak{B} . If $\mu(E) = 0$ implies $\Phi(E) = 0$, then Φ is said to be **absolutely continuous** with respect to μ or μ -**absolutely continuous**. Then Φ is μ -absolutely continuous if and only if for any $\varepsilon > 0$, there exists a $\delta > 0$ such that $\mu(E) < \delta$ implies $|\Phi(E)| < \varepsilon$. If for given Φ and μ there exists an $E_0 \in \mathfrak{B}$ such that $\mu(E_0) = 0$ and $\Phi(E) = \Phi(E \cap E_0)$ for every $E \in \mathfrak{B}$, then Φ is said to be **singular** with respect to μ or μ -**singular**.

In a σ -finite measure space (X, \mathfrak{B}, μ) , every completely additive set function $\Phi(E)$ defined on \mathfrak{B} can be represented uniquely as the sum of a μ -absolutely continuous set function and a

μ -singular set function (**Lebesgue decomposition theorem**). Also, $\Phi(E)$ is μ -absolutely continuous if and only if $\Phi(E)$ can be represented as the indefinite integral $\int_E f(x) d\mu$ of a function f that is integrable on X with respect to μ (**Radon-Nikodym theorem**). This function $f(x)$ is called the **Radon-Nikodym derivative**, $d\Phi/d\mu$, of Φ with respect to μ (\rightarrow 270 Measure Theory L (iii)).

D. Differentiation of Set Functions

Let m be the Lebesgue measure in \mathbf{R}^m and E a Lebesgue measurable set. We denote $\sup(m(E)/m(Q))$ for all cubes Q such that $E \subset Q$ by $r(E)$ and call it the **parameter of regularity** of E . If for a sequence of sets $\{E_n\}$ there exists an α such that $r(E_n) > \alpha > 0$, then $\{E_n\}$ is called a **regular sequence**. If all the E_n contain a point P and the diameter of E_n tends to 0 as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then we say that $\{E_n\}$ converges to the point P . Let Φ be a set function in \mathbf{R}^m . For a regular sequence $\{E_n\}$ of closed sets converging to a point P , we put $l = \limsup(\Phi(E_n)/m(E_n))$ and define the **general upper derivative** of Φ at P to be the least upper bound of l for all such sequences $\{E_n\}$, denoted by $\bar{D}\Phi(P)$. Similarly, the **general lower derivative** $\underline{D}\Phi(P)$ of Φ at P is defined to be the greatest lower bound of $\liminf(\Phi(E_n)/m(E_n))$ for all regular sequences $\{E_n\}$ of closed sets converging to P . The **ordinary upper (lower) derivative**, denoted by $\bar{\Phi}(E)(\Phi(E))$, is defined in the same way by taking regular sequences of closed intervals instead of closed sets. $\bar{D}\Phi$, $\underline{D}\Phi$, $\bar{\Phi}$, Φ are point functions derived from Φ . Clearly, $\underline{D}\Phi(P) \leq \Phi(P) \leq \bar{\Phi}(P) \leq \bar{D}\Phi(P)$. If $\bar{D}\Phi(P) = \underline{D}\Phi(P)$, then we write it simply as $D\Phi(P)$. If $D\Phi(P)$ is finite, then we call it the **general derivative** of Φ at P and say that Φ is **derivable in the general sense** at P . If $\bar{\Phi}(P) = \Phi(P)$, then we write it as $\Phi(P)$. If $\Phi(P)$ is finite, then we call it the **ordinary derivative** of Φ at P and say that Φ is **derivable in the ordinary sense**. We have the following theorems: (1) A completely additive set function is derivable in the general sense almost everywhere (Lebesgue). The Radon-Nikodym derivative of a set function absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure is equal almost everywhere to the generalized derivative of the set function. (2) An additive interval function of bounded variation is derivable in the ordinary sense almost everywhere (Lebesgue). (3) An additive interval function Φ is derivable in the ordinary sense at almost all points such that $\bar{\Phi}(P) < +\infty$ or $\underline{\Phi}(P) > -\infty$.

For the proof of these theorems, **Vitali's covering theorem** is essential: Let A be a given set and \mathfrak{F} a family of measurable sets in Euclidean space. If for each $x \in A$ there is a

regular sequence of sets belonging to \mathfrak{F} that converges to x , then there exists a finite or countable set of disjoint $E_n \in \mathfrak{F}$ such that $m(A \setminus \bigcup_{j=1}^{\infty} E_j) = 0$.

References

- [1] H. Lebesgue, *Leçons sur l'intégration et la recherche des fonctions primitives*, Gauthier-Villars, 1904, second edition, 1928.
- [2] S. Saks, *Theory of the integral*, Stechert, 1937 (Dover, 1964).
- [3] W. Rudin, *Real and complex analysis*, McGraw-Hill, second edition, 1974.
- [4] H. L. Royden, *Real analysis*, Macmillan, second edition, 1963.

381 (II.1) Sets

A. Definitions and Symbols

G. Cantor defined a **set** as a collection of objects of our intuition or thought, within a certain realm, taken as a whole. Each object in the collection is called an **element** (or **member**) of the set. The notation $a \in A$ ($A \ni a$) means that a is an element of the set A . In this case we say that a is a member of A or a **belongs to** A . The negation of $a \in A$ ($A \ni a$) is written $a \notin A$ or $a \bar{\in} A$ ($A \not\ni a$ or $A \bar{\ni} a$). The set having no element, namely the set A such that $a \notin A$ for every object a , is called the **empty set** (or **null set**) and is usually denoted by \emptyset . Two sets A and B are identical, i.e., $A = B$, if every element of A belongs to B , and vice versa. The set containing a, b, c, \dots as its elements is said to consist of a, b, c, \dots and is denoted by $\{a, b, c, \dots\}$. The symbol $\{x | C(x)\}$ (or $\{x; C(x)\}$, sometimes $E_x[C(x)]$) denotes the set of all objects that have the property $C(x)$. Thus $\{a\}$ is the set whose only element is a , and $\{a, b\}$ is the set with two elements a and b , provided that $a \neq b$. A set is called a **finite set** or an **infinite set** according as the number of its elements is finite or infinite.

A set A is a **subset** of a set B if each element of A is an element of B . In this case we also say that A is contained in B or that B **contains** A , and we write $A \subset B$ and $B \supset A$. The negation of $A \subset B$ ($B \supset A$) is $A \not\subset B$ ($B \not\supset A$). For every set A , $\emptyset \subset A$. $A \subset B$ and $B \subset C$ imply $A \subset C$. If $A \subset B$ and $B \subset A$, then $A = B$. A is a **proper subset** of B (in symbols: $A \subsetneq B$, $B \supsetneq A$) if $A \subset B$ and $A \neq B$. Some authors use \subsetneq (\supsetneq) for \subset (\supset), and \subset (\supset) for \subsetneq (\supsetneq).

B. Algebra of Sets

The **union** (**join** or **sum**) of sets A and B , written $A \cup B$, is the set of all elements which belong either to A or to B or to both. The **intersection** (**meet** or **product**) of sets A and B , written $A \cap B$, is the set of all elements which belong to both A and B . In other words, $x \in A \cup B$ if and only if $x \in A$ or $x \in B$ or both, and $x \in A \cap B$ if and only if $x \in A$ and $x \in B$. Given sets A , B , and C , $A \cup B = B \cup A$, $A \cap B = B \cap A$ (**commutative law**); $(A \cup B) \cup C = A \cup (B \cup C)$, $(A \cap B) \cap C = A \cap (B \cap C)$ (**associative law**); $A \cup (B \cap C) = (A \cup B) \cap (A \cup C)$, $A \cap (B \cup C) = (A \cap B) \cup (A \cap C)$ (**distributive law**); $A \cup (A \cap B) = A$, $A \cap (A \cup B) = A$ (**absorption law**).

Two sets A and B are **disjoint** if $A \cap B = \emptyset$. In this case the set $C = A \cup B$ is said to be the **disjoint union** (or **sum**) of A and B , and is written sometimes as $C = A + B$. The set of elements of A which are not members of B is denoted by $A - B$, and is called the **difference** of A and B (or **relative complement** of B in A). If $A \supset B$, $A - B$ is called the **complement** (or **complementary set**) of B with respect to A .

We often consider a theory in which we restrict our attention to elements and subsets of a certain fixed set Ω , and call it the **universal set** of the theory. In geometric terms, Ω is also called the **space** or the **abstract space**, elements of Ω are called **points**, and subsets of Ω **point sets**. If A is a subset of Ω , $\Omega - A$ is simply called the **complement** of A and is denoted A^c . For $A \subset \Omega$ and $B \subset \Omega$, $A \supset B$ and $A^c \subset B^c$ are equivalent. Furthermore, we have $A \cup A^c = \Omega$, $A \cap A^c = \emptyset$, $A^{cc} = A$; and $(A \cap B)^c = A^c \cup B^c$, $(A \cup B)^c = A^c \cap B^c$ (**de Morgan's law**).

The **power set** of a set X , written $\mathfrak{P}(X)$, is the set of all subsets of X . A set whose elements are sets is often called a **family of sets**.

The **pair** consisting of objects a and b is denoted by (a, b) . Two pairs (a, b) , (c, d) are defined to be equal if and only if $a = c$ and $b = d$. A pair (a, b) is called an **ordered pair**, while the set $\{a, b\}$ is sometimes called an **unordered pair**. Generally the n -tuple (a, b, c, \dots, d) of n given objects a, b, c, \dots, d is defined to be $((\dots((a, b), c), \dots), d)$, so that $(a, b, c, \dots, d) = (a', b', c', \dots, d')$ if and only if $a = a'$, $b = b'$, $c = c'$, $d = d'$. The **Cartesian product** (or **direct product**) of sets A and B , written $A \times B$, is the set of all pairs (a, b) such that $a \in A$ and $b \in B$. $A \times B = \emptyset$ if and only if either $A = \emptyset$ or $B = \emptyset$; $A \times B \subset C \times D$ if and only if $A \subset C$ and $B \subset D$, provided that neither A nor B is empty. Furthermore,

$$(A \times B) \cup (A' \times B) = (A \cup A') \times B,$$

$$(A \times B) \cap (C \times D) = (A \cap C) \times (B \cap D).$$

The subset $\{(a, a) | a \in A\}$ of $A \times A$ is called the **diagonal** of $A \times A$ and is denoted by Δ_A .

Generally the **Cartesian product** (or **direct product**) of sets A, B, \dots, D , written $A \times B \times \dots \times D$, is defined as the set $\{(a, b, \dots, d) | a \in A, b \in B, \dots, d \in D\}$.

C. Mappings

If there exists a rule which assigns to each element of a set A an element of a set B , this rule is said to define a **mapping** (or simply **map**), **function**, or **transformation** from A into B . The term *transformation* is sometimes restricted to the case where $A = B$. Usually letters $f, g, \varphi, \psi, \dots$ stand for mappings. The expression $f: A \rightarrow B$ ($A \xrightarrow{f} B$) means that f is a function which maps A into B . If $f: A \rightarrow B$ and $a \in A$, then $f(a)$ denotes the element of B which is assigned to a by f . We call $f(a)$ the **image** of a under f . The notation $f: a \mapsto b$ (or $f: a \rightarrow b$) is often used to mean $f(a) = b$ (but not in the present volumes). The **domain** of a mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ is the set A , and its **range** (or **codomain**), written $f(A)$, is the subset $\{f(a) | a \in A\}$ of B . Two functions f and g are equal ($f = g$) if their domains coincide and $f(a) = g(a)$ for each a in the common domain.

For a mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ and a set $C \in \mathfrak{P}(A)$, $f(C)$ is defined to be the set $\{f(x) | x \in C\}$. This definition induces the mapping from $\mathfrak{P}(A)$ to $\mathfrak{P}(B)$ which is usually also denoted by f . If $A_i \in \mathfrak{P}(A)$ ($i = 1, 2$), then $f(A_1 \cup A_2) = f(A_1) \cup f(A_2)$ and $f(A_1 \cap A_2) \subset f(A_1) \cap f(A_2)$. The **inverse image** of $D \in \mathfrak{P}(B)$, denoted by $f^{-1}(D)$, is defined to be the set $\{x | x \in A, f(x) \in D\}$; thus the mapping $f^{-1}: \mathfrak{P}(B) \rightarrow \mathfrak{P}(A)$ is defined. If $B_i \in \mathfrak{P}(B)$ ($i = 1, 2$), then $f^{-1}(B_1 \cup B_2) = f^{-1}(B_1) \cup f^{-1}(B_2)$; $f^{-1}(B_1 \cap B_2) = f^{-1}(B_1) \cap f^{-1}(B_2)$; $f^{-1}(B - B_1) = A - f^{-1}(B_1)$. Furthermore, $A_1 \subset f^{-1} \circ f(A_1)$ and $f \circ f^{-1}(B_1) \subset B_1$.

A mapping g is an **extension** of a mapping f to a set A' if A' is the domain of g and contains the domain A of f , and if $g(a) = f(a)$ for each a in A . In this case f is called a **contraction** (or **restriction**) of g to A or simply a **partial mapping** of g , and is denoted by $g|A$. A mapping f is the **constant mapping** (or **constant function**) with the value b_0 if $f(a) = b_0$ for every a in the domain of f . The **identity mapping** (or **identity function**) on A , often denoted by 1_A , is the mapping with the domain A such that $f(a) = a$ for every a in A . Given two mappings $f: A \rightarrow B$ and $g: B \rightarrow C$, the mapping from A to C which assigns $g(f(a))$ to each $a \in A$ is called the **composite** of f and g and is denoted by $g \circ f$. If $f: A \rightarrow B$, $g: B \rightarrow C$, and $h: C \rightarrow D$, then $(h \circ g) \circ f = h \circ (g \circ f)$ (associative law for composition of mappings).

A mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ is from A **onto** B if $f(A) = B$. In this case f is also called a **surjection** (or a **surjective mapping**). A mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$

is **one-to-one** (**1-1**, or **injective**) if $a \neq a'$ implies $f(a) \neq f(a')$ for every pair of elements a and a' in A , that is, if for each b in the range of A , there exists only one element a of A such that $f(a) = b$. Such an f is also called an **injection**. In particular, given a subset B of a set A , the injection $f: B \rightarrow A$ defined by the condition $f(b) = b$ for each $b \in B$ is called the **inclusion mapping** (**inclusion** or **canonical injection**). A necessary and sufficient condition for $f: A \rightarrow B$ to be a surjection is that $g \circ f = h \circ f$ imply $g = h$ for every pair of mappings $g: B \rightarrow C$ and $h: B \rightarrow C$. For $f: A \rightarrow B$ to be an injection it is necessary and sufficient that $f \circ g = f \circ h$ imply $g = h$ for every pair of mappings $g: C \rightarrow A$ and $h: C \rightarrow A$. A mapping which is both a surjection and an injection is called a **bijection** (or **bijective mapping**). If $f: A \rightarrow B$ is a bijection, then the mapping from B to A which assigns to each element b of B the unique element a of A such that $f(a) = b$ is called the **inverse mapping** (**inverse function** or simply **inverse**) of f , and is denoted by f^{-1} . We have $f \circ f^{-1} = 1_B$ and $f^{-1} \circ f = 1_A$ for every bijection $f: A \rightarrow B$.

If the domain A of a mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ is the Cartesian product of A_1 and A_2 , $f(a) = b$ (where $a = (a_1, a_2)$) is written as $f(a_1, a_2) = b$. Given $A = A_1 \times A_2$, $B = B_1 \times B_2$, and $f_i: A_i \rightarrow B_i$ ($i = 1, 2$), the mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ defined by the condition $f(a_1, a_2) = (f_1(a_1), f_2(a_2))$ is called the **Cartesian product** (or **direct product**) of the mappings of f_1 and f_2 , and is denoted by $f_1 \times f_2$.

For a mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$, the subset $G = \{(a, f(a)) | a \in A\}$ of $A \times B$ is called the **graph** of f . The basic properties of the graph G of f are: (1) For every $a \in A$ there exists a $b \in B$ such that $(a, b) \in G$. (2) $(a, b) \in G$ and $(a, b') \in G$ imply $b = b'$. Conversely, a subset G of $A \times B$ with these two properties determines a mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ such that $(a, b) \in G$ if and only if $f(a) = b$. All notions concerning a mapping $f: A \rightarrow B$ can be transferred by means of its graph to those concerning a subset of a Cartesian product $A \times B$.

Given sets A and B , we denote by B^A the set of mappings from A to B . If a mapping is identified with its graph, B^A is considered to be a subset of $\mathfrak{P}(A \times B)$. For $X \in \mathfrak{P}(A)$, the mapping $c_X: A \rightarrow \{0, 1\}$ such that $c_X(x) = 1$ if $x \in X$ and $c_X(x) = 0$ if $x \notin X$ is called the **characteristic function** (or **representing function**) of X . By assigning to each $X \in \mathfrak{P}(A)$ its characteristic function $c_X \in \{0, 1\}^A$, we obtain a one-to-one correspondence between $\mathfrak{P}(A)$ and $\{0, 1\}^A$; hence $\mathfrak{P}(A)$ is sometimes denoted by 2^A .

D. Families of Sets

A mapping from a set Λ to a set A is also called a family of elements of A indexed by Λ . Λ is its **index set** (or **indexing set**). In this case,

the image $f(\lambda)$ of $\lambda \in \Lambda$ is denoted by a_λ , and the mapping itself is denoted by $\{a_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ ($\{a_\lambda\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$), or simply $\{a_\lambda\}$). In particular, if the set A is the power set of a set, the family $\{a_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ is called a **family of sets indexed by Λ** , or simply a **family of sets**. (Moreover, if Λ is chosen to be a subset of the power set $\mathfrak{P}(X)$ of a set X and f to be the identity mapping on Λ , then the family of sets resulting from f can be identified with the set of subsets Λ itself.)

The union $\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ of a family of sets $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ is the set of all elements a such that $a \in A_\lambda$ for at least one λ in Λ . Their intersection $\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ is the set of all elements a such that $a \in A$ for all λ in Λ . A family of sets $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ is **mutually disjoint** if $\lambda \neq \mu$ implies $A_\lambda \cap A_\mu = \emptyset$. In this case $A = \bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ is called the **disjoint union** (or **direct sum**) of the sets of the family, and $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ is called a **partition** (or **decomposition**) of A . For families of sets, the following hold: $\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_{\lambda\mu} = \bigcup_{\lambda} (\bigcup_{\mu} A_{\lambda\mu})$, $\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_{\lambda\mu} = \bigcap_{\lambda} (\bigcap_{\mu} A_{\lambda\mu})$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$, $\mu \in M_\lambda$) (associative law); $(\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda) \cap (\bigcup_{\mu \in M} B_\mu) = \bigcup_{(\lambda, \mu) \in \Lambda \times M} (A_\lambda \cap B_\mu)$, $(\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda) \cup (\bigcap_{\mu \in M} B_\mu) = \bigcap_{(\lambda, \mu) \in \Lambda \times M} (A_\lambda \cup B_\mu)$ (distributive law); $(\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda)^c = \bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda^c$, $(\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda)^c = \bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda^c$ (de Morgan's law).

A family $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of sets is a **covering** of a set A , or **covers** A , if $A \subset \bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$.

Given $f: X \rightarrow Y$, $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ and $\{B_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ (where $A_\lambda \subset X$ and $B_\lambda \subset Y$), then $f(\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda) = \bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} f(A_\lambda)$, $f(\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda) \subset \bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} f(A_\lambda)$; and $f^{-1}(\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} B_\lambda) = \bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} f^{-1}(B_\lambda)$, $f^{-1}(\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} B_\lambda) = \bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} f^{-1}(B_\lambda)$.

E. Direct Sum and Direct Product of Families of Sets

Given a family $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of sets indexed by Λ , a set S , and a family of injections $\{i_\lambda: A_\lambda \rightarrow S\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$, then the pair $(S, \{i_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda})$ is called the **direct sum** of $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ if $\{i_\lambda(A_\lambda)\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ is a partition of S . In this case, S is written $\sum_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ (or $\sum_\lambda A_\lambda$ or $\coprod_\lambda A_\lambda$). Each A_λ is called a **direct summand** of S , and each i_λ is called a **canonical injection**.

The **Cartesian product** (or **direct product**) $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ ($\prod_\lambda A_\lambda$) of $\{A_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ (where $A_\lambda \subset X$) is the set of all mappings from Λ to X such that $f(\lambda) \in A_\lambda$ for every $\lambda \in \Lambda$. The sets A_λ are the **direct factors** of $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$. Each element f of $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ is denoted by $\{x_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ or $(\dots, x_\lambda, \dots)$ (where $x_\lambda = f(\lambda)$). The element x_λ is the λ th **component** (or **coordinate**) of f . The mapping $\text{pr}_\lambda: \prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda \rightarrow A_\lambda$ which assigns x_λ to each $\{x_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda} \in \prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ is called the **projection** of $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ onto its λ th component. If $\Lambda = \{1, 2\}$, $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} A_\lambda$ can be identified with $A_1 \times A_2$.

F. Set Theory

It was G. Cantor who introduced the concept of the set as an object of mathematical study.

Cantor stated: "A set is a collection of definite, well-distinguished objects of our intuition or thought. These objects are called the elements of the set" (G. Cantor, *Math. Ann.*, 46 (1895)). Cantor introduced the notions of \dagger cardinal number and \dagger ordinal number and developed what is now known as **set theory**. He proved that the cardinal number of the set of transcendental numbers is greater than that of algebraic numbers, and that all Euclidean spaces have the same cardinal number regardless of their dimension. He stated the \dagger continuum hypothesis and also conjectured the \dagger well-ordering theorem (G. Cantor, *Math. Ann.*, 21 (1883)), which was proved by E. Zermelo [2]. In this proof Zermelo stated the \dagger axiom of choice explicitly for the first time, and used it in an essential way.

Meanwhile it was pointed out that Cantor's naive set concept leads to various logical \dagger paradoxes (\rightarrow 319 Paradoxes). Since the set concept plays a fundamental role in every branch of mathematics, the discovery of the paradoxes had a serious impact upon mathematics, and led to a systematic investigation of the \dagger foundations of mathematics. In the course of attempts to avoid paradoxes, set theory was reconstructed as \dagger axiomatic set theory (\rightarrow 33 Axiomatic Set Theory), in which Cantor's theory of cardinal numbers and ordinal numbers was restored. Also, the theory of the algebra of sets, which forms a basis for various branches of mathematics, was reconstructed. Axiomatic set theory is considered to be free from paradoxes.

G. Classes

A set in the naive sense is a collection $\{x \mid C(x)\}$ of all x which satisfy a certain condition $C(x)$. The only principle for generating sets in naive set theory is the **axiom of comprehension**, which asserts the existence of the set $\{x \mid C(x)\}$ for any condition $C(x)$. However, this principle leads to paradoxes if the notion of an **arbitrary set** is considered to be well defined; for example, the \dagger Russell paradox is caused by the set $\{x \mid x \notin x\}$. This situation necessitates some restrictions on the axiom of comprehension. The simplest way to overcome the paradoxes is to adopt Zermelo's **axiom of subsets**: Given a set M and a condition $C(x)$, there exists a set $\{x \mid x \in M, C(x)\}$. But this axiom cannot produce any sets other than subsets of sets whose existence is preassumed. Hence further generating principles of sets had to be introduced. The following axioms are usually chosen as generating principles.

Axiom of pairing: For any two objects (possibly sets) a and b , there exists a set $\{a, b\}$.

Axiom of power set: Given a set A , its power set $\mathfrak{P}(A)$ exists.

Axiom of union: For any family of sets the union exists.

Axiom of substitution (or replacement): For any set A and any mapping f from A , there exists a set of all images $f(x)$ with $x \in A$.

In ordinary theories of mathematics the set of natural numbers, the set of real numbers, etc., are assumed to exist, in addition to sets generated by the axioms in this section. In pure set theory the **axiom of infinity** is needed to secure the existence of infinite sets.

The concept of the "set" $\{x \mid x \notin x\}$ does not automatically lead to Russell's paradox. The trouble arises when this "set" is regarded as a member of a collection represented by x . This leads to a narrower concept of sets. Consider a fixed collection V consisting of sets in the naive sense and closed under the set-theoretic operations mentioned in the axioms. Call a member of V a set in the narrow sense. Then set theory becomes free from the known paradoxes if the qualification for being a set is restricted in this narrow sense. When sets in the narrow sense are called simply sets, sets in the naive sense are called **classes**. The object $\{x \mid x \notin x\}$ (where x ranges over sets in the narrow sense) is a class which is not a set. Those classes which are not sets are called **proper classes**; for example, the class V of all sets and the class of all ordinal numbers are both proper classes. For classes, unrestricted use of the comprehension axiom again leads to paradoxes, but other set-theoretic operations are justifiably applicable to classes.

The notion of classes was first introduced in connection with the construction of an axiomatic set theory. The term *class* was used originally to denote certain subclasses of the class V of all sets. In these volumes the term *set* is mostly used to mean a set in the naive sense, and most of the notions defined for sets are applicable to classes.

References

- [1] G. Cantor, *Gesammelte Abhandlungen*, Springer, 1932.
- [2] E. Zermelo, Beweis, dass jede Menge wohlgeordnet werden kann, *Math. Ann.*, 59 (1904), 511–516.
- [3] A. Schoenflies, *Entwicklung der Mengenlehre und ihrer Anwendungen*, Teubner, 1913.
- [4] F. Hausdorff, *Grundzüge der Mengenlehre*, Veit, 1914 (Chelsea, 1949).
- [5] A. Fraenkel, *Einleitung in die Mengenlehre*, Springer, third edition, 1928.
- [6] F. Hausdorff, *Mengenlehre*, Teubner, 1927; English translation, *Set theory*, Chelsea 1962.

- [7] A. Fraenkel, Abstract set theory, North-Holland, 1953.
 [8] J. L. Kelley, General topology, Van Nostrand, 1955, appendix.
 [9] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, I. Théorie des ensembles, ch. 2, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1212c, Hermann, second edition, 1960; English translation, Theory of sets, Addison-Wesley, 1968.
 [10] P. R. Halmos, Naive set theory, Van Nostrand, 1960.

382 (IX.23) Shape Theory

A. General Remarks

In 1968 K. Borsuk introduced the notion of shape as a modification of the notion of homotopy type. His idea was to take into account the global properties of topological spaces and neglect the local ones. It is a classification of spaces that is coarser than the homotopy type but that coincides with it on ANR-spaces.

Let \mathcal{P} be the category whose objects are all polyhedra and whose morphisms are homotopy classes of continuous mappings between them. For spaces X and Y , denote the set of all homotopy classes of continuous mappings of X to Y by $[X, Y]$ and the homotopy class of a mapping f by $[f]$. For a space X , let Π_X be the functor from \mathcal{P} to the category of sets and functions that assigns to a polyhedron P the set $\Pi_X(P) = [X, P]$. A morphism $\varphi: P \rightarrow Q$ of \mathcal{P} induces the function $\varphi_*: [X, P] \rightarrow [X, Q]$ defined by $\varphi_*([f]) = \varphi \cdot [f]$ for $[f]: X \rightarrow P$. A natural transformation from Π_Y to Π_X is a **shape morphism** from X to Y . A continuous mapping $f: X \rightarrow Y$ defines the shape morphism $f^\#$ of X to Y as follows: For $[g]: Y \rightarrow P$ in $\Pi_Y(P)$, the composition $[g \cdot f]$ is an element of $\Pi_X(P)$. The correspondence: $[g] \rightarrow [g \cdot f]$ defines a natural transformation from Π_Y to Π_X and hence determines the shape morphism $f^\#: X \rightarrow Y$. The identity mapping 1_X on X defines the identity shape morphism $1_X^\#$ on X . Given spaces X and Y , X **shape dominates** Y if there are shape morphisms $\xi: Y \rightarrow X$ and $\eta: X \rightarrow Y$ such that $\xi\eta = 1_Y^\#$, and we write $\text{Sh}(X) \leq \text{Sh}(Y)$. If, in addition, $\eta\xi = 1_X^\#$, then X and Y are of the **same shape**, and we write $\text{Sh}(X) = \text{Sh}(Y)$. A **shape category** \mathcal{S} is the category whose objects are all topological spaces and whose morphisms are shape morphisms between them. If we replace topological spaces by pointed ones, the **pointed shape category** is obtained. In what follows,

for simplicity, we assume that all spaces are metrizable and the mappings are continuous. General references are Borsuk [1], J. Dydak and J. Segal [3], R. H. Fox [4], S. Mardešić [7].

B. Chapman's Complement Theorem

Let X be a compactum. A closed set A of X is a **Z-set** in X if for any $\varepsilon > 0$ there is a mapping $f: X \rightarrow X - A$ such that $d(x, f(x)) < \varepsilon$ for $x \in X$, where d is a metric on X . The **Hilbert cube** Q is the countable product $\prod_{i=1}^{\infty} I_i$, where I_i is the closed interval $[0, 1]$. The subset $s = \prod_{i=1}^{\infty} I_i^0$ ($I_i^0 = (0, 1)$) is called the **pseudointerior** of Q . The following facts are known: (1) If a compact metric space X is contained in s or $Q - s$, then X is a Z-set in Q . (2) For any continuous mapping f of a compact metric space X into Q , there exists an embedding g of X into Q such that g is arbitrarily close to f and the image $g(X)$ in Q is a Z-set. The **complement theorem** (T. A. Chapman [2]) states: Let X and Y be Z-sets in Q . Then $\text{Sh}(X) = \text{Sh}(Y)$ iff $Q - X$ and $Q - Y$ are homeomorphic.

C. FAR, FANR, Movability, and Shape Group: Shape Invariants

A closed set A of a compactum X is a **fundamental retract** of X if there is a shape morphism $r: X \rightarrow A$ such that $r \cdot i^\# = 1_A^\#$, where i is the inclusion of A into X . A compactum X is a **fundamental absolute retract (FAR)** (resp. **fundamental absolute neighborhood retract (FANR)**) if for any compactum Y containing X , X is a fundamental retract of Y (resp. of some closed neighborhood of X in Y). A compactum X is **movable** if for any embedding $X \subset Q$ and for any neighborhood U of X in Q there is a neighborhood V of X satisfying the following condition: For any mapping f of a compactum Y to V and for any neighborhood W of X , there is a homotopy $H: Y \times I \rightarrow U$ such that $H(y, 0) = f(y)$ and $H(y, 1) \in W$ for $y \in Y$. In this definition, if Y is replaced by a compactum with dimension $\leq k$, then X is said to be **k-movable**. Pointed FAR, FANR, movability, and k -movability are defined similarly in the pointed shape category. The following facts are known (Borsuk [1], Dydak and Segal [3], J. Keislings [5], J. Krasinkiewicz [8]). A compactum X is a FAR if and only if X is a pointed FAR iff $\text{Sh}(X) = \text{Sh}(\text{point})$, i.e., X has the same shape as a one-point space. A pointed compactum (X, x) is a pointed FANR iff $\text{Sh}(X, x) \leq \text{Sh}(K, k)$ for some pointed polyhedron (K, k) . An FANR is movable. A compact connected Abelian topological group is movable if and only if it is locally connected.

A continuous image of a pointed 1-movable compactum is pointed 1-movable. It is unknown whether (i) an FANR is a pointed FANR and (ii) movability means pointed movability. For a pointed compactum (X, x) , let $\{(K_i, k_i) \mid i = 1, 2, \dots\}$ be a countable \dagger inverse system consisting of pointed finite polyhedra whose limit is (X, x) . The limit group $\varprojlim \pi_n(K_i, k_i)$ is the k th **shape group** of (X, x) , where $\pi_n(K, k)$ is the k th homotopy group of (K, k) . It is known that the shape groups for movable compacta behave like homotopy groups for ANR. A property P of spaces is a **shape invariant** if whenever X has P and $\text{Sh}(X) = \text{Sh}(Y)$, then Y has P . FAR, FANR, movability, k -movability, and shape groups are shape invariants.

D. CE Mappings

A mapping f of a space X onto a space Y is a **cell-like (CE) mapping** if it is proper and $\text{Sh}(f^{-1}(y)) = \text{Sh}(\text{point})$ for each point y of Y . It is known (R. B. Sher [9], Y. Kodama [6]) that if there is a CE mapping of X to Y with finite dimension, then $\text{Sh}(X) = \text{Sh}(Y)$. Here the finite-dimensionality of Y is essential. A **Q -manifold** is a space, each point of which has a closed neighborhood homeomorphic to Q . The following are known (Chapman [2], J. E. West [10]): (1) If f is a CE mapping of a Q -manifold M to an ANR X , then the mapping $g: M \times Q \rightarrow X \times Q$ defined by $g(m, x) = (f(m), x)$ for $(m, x) \in M \times Q$ is approximated by homeomorphisms. As a consequence, if X is a locally compact ANR, then $X \times Q$ is a Q -manifold. (2) Every compact ANR is a CE image of a compact Q -manifold. (3) Every compact ANR has the same homotopy type as that of a compact polyhedron. The following problem raised by R. H. Bing is open: Is a CE image of a finite-dimensional compactum finite-dimensional?

References

- [1] K. Borsuk, Theory of shape, Monograf. mat. 59, Polish Scientific Publishers, 1975.
- [2] T. A. Chapman, Lectures on Hilbert cube manifolds, CBMS 28 regional conf. ser. in math., Amer. Math. Soc., 1976.
- [3] J. Dydak and J. Segal, Shape theory, Lecture notes in math. 688, Springer, 1978.
- [4] R. H. Fox, On shape, Fund. Math., 74 (1972), 47–71.
- [5] J. Keesling, Shape theory and compact connected Abelian topological groups, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 194 (1974), 349–358.
- [6] Y. Kodama, Decomposition spaces and shape in the sense of Fox, Fund. Math., 97 (1977), 199–208.
- [7] S. Mardešić, Shapes for topological spaces, General Topology and Appl., 3 (1973), 265–282.
- [8] J. Krasinkiewicz, Continuous images of continua and 1-movability, Fund. Math., 98 (1978), 141–164.
- [9] R. B. Sher, Realizing cell-like maps in Euclidean spaces, General Topology and Appl., 2 (1972), 75–89.
- [10] J. E. West, Mapping Hilbert cube manifolds to ANR's: A solution of a conjecture of Borsuk, Ann. Math., (2) 106 (1977), 1–8.

383 (II.26) Sheaves

A. Presheaves

Let X be a \dagger topological space. Suppose that the following conditions are satisfied: (i) There exists an (additive) Abelian group $\mathcal{F}(U)$ for each open set U of X , and $\mathcal{F}(\emptyset) = \{0\}$; and (ii) there exists a homomorphism $r_{UV}: \mathcal{F}(V) \rightarrow \mathcal{F}(U)$ for each pair $U \subset V$, such that $r_{UU} = 1$ (identity) and $r_{UW} = r_{UV} \circ r_{VW}$ for $U \subset V \subset W$. We call \mathcal{F} , consisting of a family $\{\mathcal{F}(U)\}$ of Abelian groups and a family of mappings $\{r_{UV}\}$, a **presheaf** (of Abelian groups) on X . If $a \in \mathcal{F}(V)$ and $U \subset V$, we write $r_{UV}(a) = a|U$ and call it the **restriction** of a to U . A **homomorphism** ϕ between two presheaves \mathcal{F} and \mathcal{G} on X is a family $\{\phi(U)\}$ of group homomorphisms $\phi(U): \mathcal{F}(U) \rightarrow \mathcal{G}(U)$ satisfying $r_{UV} \circ \phi(V) = \phi(U) \circ r_{UV}$ whenever $U \subset V$. The presheaves on X and their homomorphisms form a \dagger category.

B. Axioms for Sheaves

A presheaf \mathcal{F} is called a **sheaf** (of Abelian groups) if it satisfies the following condition: If U is open in X and $(U_i)_{i \in I}$ is an \dagger open covering of U , and if for each $i \in I$ an element s_i of $\mathcal{F}(U_i)$ is given such that $s_i|U_i \cap U_j = s_j|U_i \cap U_j$ for all i and j , then there exists a unique $s \in \mathcal{F}(U)$ such that $s|U_i = s_i$ for all i . By definition, a **homomorphism** between two sheaves is a homomorphism of the presheaves. The sheaves on X also form a category.

Let \mathcal{F} be a presheaf, x a point of X , and \mathfrak{N}_x the \dagger directed set of open neighborhoods of x , with the order opposite to that of inclusion. Then $\{\mathcal{F}(U) \mid U \in \mathfrak{N}_x\}$ is an inductive system of groups. The \dagger inductive limit $\varinjlim_{U \in \mathfrak{N}_x} \mathcal{F}(U)$ of groups $\{\mathcal{F}(U)\}$ is denoted by \mathcal{F}_x and called the **stalk** of \mathcal{F} over x . The image of $s \in \mathcal{F}(U)$ in \mathcal{F}_x is called the **germ** of s at x and is written s_x .

A homomorphism $\varphi: \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}$ of presheaves induces a homomorphism $\varphi_x: \mathcal{F}_x \rightarrow \mathcal{G}_x$ of stalks.

C. Sheaf Spaces

We introduce a topology on the \dagger direct sum $\mathcal{F}' = \coprod_{x \in X} \mathcal{F}'_x$ in the following way: For each open set U of X and each $s \in \mathcal{F}'(U)$, consider the set $M_{U,s} = \{s_x | x \in U\}$ of the germs defined by s at the points of U , and take the set of all such $M_{U,s}$ as a \dagger base of open sets of the topology. If $p: \mathcal{F}' \rightarrow X$ is the mapping that maps the points of \mathcal{F}'_x to x , then p is continuous, and each $p^{-1}(x)$ ($= \mathcal{F}'_x$) has the structure of an Abelian group. Moreover, the following conditions are satisfied: (i) p is a \dagger local homeomorphism, and (ii) the group operations on $p^{-1}(x)$ are continuous in the sense that $(a, b) \rightarrow a + b$ is a continuous mapping from the \dagger fiber product $\mathcal{F}' \times_X \mathcal{F}'$ (i.e., the subspace $\{(a, b) | p(a) = p(b)\}$ of the product space $\mathcal{F}' \times \mathcal{F}'$) to \mathcal{F}' and $a \rightarrow -a$ is a continuous mapping from \mathcal{F}' to itself. In general, a topological space \mathcal{F}' with a structure satisfying these conditions is called a **sheaf space** over X .

When \mathcal{F}' is a sheaf space, a continuous mapping s from a subspace A of X to \mathcal{F}' such that $p \circ s = 1_A$ is called a **section** of \mathcal{F}' over A . The set of sections over A , denoted by $\Gamma(A, \mathcal{F}')$, is an Abelian group in the obvious way. If we associate $\Gamma(U, \mathcal{F}')$ with each open set U and define r_{UV} by the restriction of sections ($r_{UV}(s) = s|U$), then we get a sheaf \mathcal{F}'' on X . If we start from a presheaf \mathcal{F} and get \mathcal{F}'' via \mathcal{F}' , the correspondence $\mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{F}''$ is a \dagger covariant functor from the category of presheaves to the category of sheaves, and \mathcal{F}'' is called the **sheaf associated with the presheaf \mathcal{F}** . If \mathcal{F} is a sheaf, we can prove $\mathcal{F}'' \cong \mathcal{F}$. Conversely, if we start from a sheaf space \mathcal{F}' and construct the sheaf \mathcal{F}'' and then the sheaf space \mathcal{F}''' , then \mathcal{F}''' is canonically isomorphic to \mathcal{F}' . Since we can identify a sheaf and the corresponding sheaf space, both are usually denoted by the same letter. In particular, when \mathcal{F} is a sheaf, $\mathcal{F}(U)$ is usually written $\Gamma(U, \mathcal{F})$.

Given a section $s \in \Gamma(X, \mathcal{F})$ of a sheaf, the points $x \in X$ for which $s_x \neq 0$ in \mathcal{F}_x form a closed set (the sheaf space \mathcal{F} is not necessarily Hausdorff even if X is so). This set is called the **support** of s and is denoted by $\text{supp } s$.

In the theory of this and the previous two sections, we can replace Abelian groups by groups, rings, etc. Then $\mathcal{F}(U)$ is a group or ring accordingly, and $\mathcal{F}(\emptyset)$ the group consisting of the identity element or the ring consisting of the zero element, respectively. We thus obtain the theories of **sheaves of groups**, **sheaves of rings**, etc. In general, a presheaf \mathcal{F} on X with values in a category \mathcal{C} is a \dagger con-

travariant functor from the category of open sets of X to \mathcal{C} , and a homomorphism between presheaves \mathcal{F} and \mathcal{G} on X is a \dagger natural transformation between the functors \mathcal{F} and \mathcal{G} .

The presheaves (sheaves) of Abelian groups on a space X form a \dagger Abelian category, denoted by $\mathcal{P}^X(\mathcal{C}^X)$. For a homomorphism $f: \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}$ of presheaves, the **image**, **coimage**, **kernel**, and **cokernel** of f in \mathcal{P}^X are given by

$$(\text{Im } f)(U) = \text{Im } f(U),$$

$$(\text{Coim } f)(U) = \text{Coim } f(U),$$

$$(\text{Ker } f)(U) = \text{Ker } f(U),$$

$$(\text{Coker } f)(U) = \text{Coker } f(U).$$

When \mathcal{F} and \mathcal{G} are sheaves, the kernel of f in \mathcal{C}^X coincides with the kernel in \mathcal{P}^X , while the image and cokernel of f in \mathcal{C}^X are the associated sheaves of the image and the cokernel in \mathcal{P}^X , respectively. Thus, $f: \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}$ induces $f_x: \mathcal{F}_x \rightarrow \mathcal{G}_x$ at each $x \in X$, $(\text{Ker } f)_x = \text{Ker } f_x$, $(\text{Im } f)_x = \text{Im } f_x$, $(\text{Coker } f)_x = \text{Coker } f_x$, and a sequence of sheaves $0 \rightarrow \mathcal{F} \xrightarrow{f} \mathcal{G} \xrightarrow{g} \mathcal{H} \rightarrow 0$ is **exact** if and only if $0 \rightarrow \mathcal{F}_x \xrightarrow{f_x} \mathcal{G}_x \xrightarrow{g_x} \mathcal{H}_x \rightarrow 0$ is exact at each $x \in X$.

D. Examples

(1) Let G be an Abelian group (or some other \dagger algebraic system) with \dagger discrete topology. The Cartesian product $X \times G$ gives rise to a sheaf on X , called a **constant sheaf** (or **trivial sheaf**).

(2) Let X be a topological space and Y be a topological Abelian group (e.g., the real or complex numbers). We obtain a sheaf \mathcal{F} on X by putting $\mathcal{F}(U) =$ the set of all continuous mappings $U \rightarrow Y$ and $r_{UV} =$ the natural restriction. The stalk over $x \in X$ is the set of germs at x of continuous functions into Y . This sheaf is called the **sheaf of germs of continuous functions** with values in Y .

(3) When X is an \dagger analytic manifold and Y is a commutative \dagger Lie group, we define the **sheaf of germs of analytic mappings** with values in Y in the same way. If Y is the complex number field \mathbb{C} , this sheaf is the **sheaf \mathcal{O} of germs of analytic (or holomorphic) functions**. A \dagger connected component of the sheaf space \mathcal{O} can be identified with the \dagger analytic function determined by the function element corresponding to a point on that component. The **sheaf of germs of functions of class C^r** on a C^s -manifold ($r \leq s$) is similarly defined.

(4) Given a \dagger vector bundle B over a topological space X , we define a sheaf on X by $\mathcal{F}(U) = \Gamma(U)$ ($=$ the module of sections of B over U) and $r_{UV} =$ the natural restriction. Here the stalk over $x \in X$ consists of the germs at x of sections of B , and is called the **sheaf of germs of sec-**

tions of the vector bundle B . We have similar definition for the **sheaf of germs of differentiable (analytic) sections** when X is a \dagger differentiable (complex) manifold. The case where B is a \dagger tensor bundle (e.g., the \dagger cotangent bundle $\mathfrak{T}^*(X)$) is important. The sheaf $\mathfrak{U}^r(X)$ of germs of C^∞ -sections of the r -fold \dagger exterior power of $\mathfrak{T}^*(X)$ is called the **sheaf of germs of differential forms of degree r** ($0 \leq r \leq \dim X$).

E. Sheaf Cohomology

The category \mathcal{C}^X of sheaves of Abelian groups on X has sufficiently many \dagger injective objects. A sheaf \mathcal{F} with the property that $r_{U \times X}: \Gamma(X, \mathcal{F}) \rightarrow \Gamma(U, \mathcal{F})$ is surjective for any open set U is said to be **flabby** (or **scattered**). An injective sheaf is flabby.

Fix a nonempty family Φ of closed subsets of X satisfying the following two conditions: (i) $A, B \in \Phi \Rightarrow A \cup B \in \Phi$; (ii) any closed set contained in an element of Φ belongs to Φ . Putting $\Gamma_\Phi(\mathcal{F}) = \{s \in \Gamma(X, \mathcal{F}), \text{supp } s \in \Phi\}$ for each $\mathcal{F} \in \mathcal{C}^X$, we obtain a \dagger left-exact \dagger covariant functor Γ_Φ from \mathcal{C}^X to the category (Ab) of Abelian groups. Therefore, by the general theory of homological algebra, we can define the \dagger right derived functors $R^q \Gamma_\Phi: \mathcal{C}^X \rightarrow (\text{Ab})$ ($q = 0, 1, 2, \dots$). We put $R^q \Gamma_\Phi(\mathcal{F}) = H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ and call the $H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ ($q = 0, 1, \dots$) the **cohomology groups with coefficient sheaf \mathcal{F}** and family of supports Φ (\rightarrow 200 Homological Algebra I). When Φ is the family of all closed subsets of X , we write $H^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ instead of $H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{F})$.

Thus the cohomology group $H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ is the q th cohomology of the complex $\Gamma_\Phi(\mathcal{Q}^0) \xrightarrow{d^0} \Gamma_\Phi(\mathcal{Q}^1) \xrightarrow{d^1} \Gamma_\Phi(\mathcal{Q}^2) \xrightarrow{d^2} \dots$ induced by an \dagger injective resolution $0 \rightarrow \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{Q}^0 \rightarrow \mathcal{Q}^1 \rightarrow \dots$ of the sheaf $\mathcal{F}: H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{F}) = \text{Ker } d^q / \text{Im } d^{q-1}$ ($q = 0, 1, \dots; d^{-1} = 0$).

$H_\Phi^0(X, \mathcal{F}) = \Gamma_\Phi(\mathcal{F})$, and from an exact sequence of sheaves $0 \rightarrow \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{G} \rightarrow \mathcal{H} \rightarrow 0$ we get an exact sequence $0 \rightarrow H_\Phi^0(X, \mathcal{F}) \rightarrow H_\Phi^0(X, \mathcal{G}) \rightarrow H_\Phi^0(X, \mathcal{H}) \rightarrow H_\Phi^1(X, \mathcal{F}) \rightarrow H_\Phi^1(X, \mathcal{G}) \rightarrow H_\Phi^1(X, \mathcal{H}) \rightarrow H_\Phi^2(X, \mathcal{F}) \rightarrow \dots$

Similarly, the cohomology groups $H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ can also be calculated with an exact sequence $0 \rightarrow \mathcal{F} \rightarrow \mathcal{Q}^0 \rightarrow \mathcal{Q}^1 \rightarrow \dots$, where each \mathcal{Q}^i is assumed to be Γ_Φ -acyclic (i.e., $H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{Q}^i) = 0$ for $q > 0$) instead of injective. The flabby sheaves, for instance, are Γ_Φ -acyclic, so we can compute $H_\Phi^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ by a flabby resolution of \mathcal{F} (R. Godement). For example, let X be an n -dimensional \dagger paracompact C^∞ -manifold and $\mathcal{F} = \mathbf{R}$. Then $0 \rightarrow \mathbf{R} \rightarrow \mathfrak{U}^0(X) \xrightarrow{d^0} \mathfrak{U}^1(X) \xrightarrow{d^1} \dots$ is exact, where $\mathfrak{U}^q(X)$ is the \dagger sheaf of germs of C^∞ -differential forms of degree q , d^q is \dagger exterior differentiation (**Poincaré's theorem**), and we have $H^p(X, \mathfrak{U}^q) = 0$ for $p > 0$. Therefore

$H^q(X, \mathbf{R})$ is the q th cohomology of the complex $0 \rightarrow D^0(X) \xrightarrow{d^0} D^1(X) \xrightarrow{d^1} \dots$, where $D^i(X) = \Gamma(X, \mathfrak{U}^i(X)) =$ the group of C^∞ -differential forms of degree i on X . This proves the de Rham theorem, which says that the \dagger de Rham cohomology group is isomorphic to the \dagger (singular) cohomology group of X with real coefficients (\rightarrow 105 Differentiable Manifolds R). For a sheaf \mathcal{F} of noncommutative groups, we can define the first cohomology $H^1(X, \mathcal{F})$ [2].

F. The Čech Cohomology Group

Let $\mathfrak{U} = \{U_i\}$ be an open covering of X , and write $U_i \cap U_j = U_{ij}$, etc. Put

$$C^p(\mathcal{F}) = \prod_{i_0, \dots, i_p} \Gamma(U_{i_0 \dots i_p}, \mathcal{F}), \quad p = 0, 1, 2, \dots$$

An element of $C^p(\mathcal{F})$ is called a cochain of degree p . Define $d: C^p(\mathcal{F}) \rightarrow C^{p+1}(\mathcal{F})$ by $(df)_{i_0 \dots i_{p+1}} = \sum_{r=0}^{p+1} (-1)^r (f_{i_0 \dots \hat{i}_r \dots i_{p+1}} | U_{i_0 \dots i_{p+1}})$, and denote the q th cohomology of the complex $(C^p(\mathcal{F}), d)$ thus obtained by $H^q(\mathfrak{U}, \mathcal{F})$. When an open covering \mathfrak{B} is a refinement of \mathfrak{U} , there is a canonical homomorphism $H^q(\mathfrak{U}, \mathcal{F}) \rightarrow H^q(\mathfrak{B}, \mathcal{F})$. So we can take the inductive limit of the groups $H^q(\mathfrak{U}, \mathcal{F})$ with respect to the refinement of open coverings. This limit group is denoted by $\check{H}^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ and is called the **Čech cohomology group with coefficient sheaf \mathcal{F}** . It coincides with $H^q(X, \mathcal{F})$ for $q \leq 1$, and if X is paracompact, for all q .

G. Relation to Continuous Mappings

Let X and Y be topological spaces and $f: X \rightarrow Y$ be a continuous mapping. If \mathcal{F} is a sheaf on Y , the fiber product $X \times_Y \mathcal{F}$ (where \mathcal{F} is viewed as a sheaf space over Y) is a sheaf on X . It is denoted by $f^*(\mathcal{F})$ or $f^{-1}(\mathcal{F})$ and is called the **inverse image** of \mathcal{F} . The correspondence $\mathcal{F} \rightarrow f^*(\mathcal{F})$ is an exact functor from \mathcal{C}^Y to \mathcal{C}^X . Next, let \mathcal{G} be a sheaf on X . Associating $\Gamma(f^{-1}(U), \mathcal{G})$ with each open set U of Y , we obtain a sheaf on Y , which we denote by $f_*(\mathcal{G})$ and call the **direct image** of \mathcal{G} . The correspondence f_* is a left-exact functor $\mathcal{C}^X \rightarrow \mathcal{C}^Y$, and we can consider its right derived functors $R^q f_*$. The sheaf $R^q f_*(\mathcal{G})$ is the sheaf associated with the presheaf that associates $H^q(f^{-1}(U), \mathcal{G})$ with each open set U .

A homomorphism ψ from \mathcal{F} to $f_*(\mathcal{G})$ is also called an f -homomorphism from \mathcal{F} to \mathcal{G} . To give such a ψ is equivalent to giving a family of homomorphisms of the stalks $\psi_x: \mathcal{F}_{f(x)} \rightarrow \mathcal{G}_x$ ($x \in X$) satisfying the continuity condition: For any open set U of Y and any section $s \in \Gamma(U, \mathcal{G})$ over U , the mapping φ from $f^{-1}(U)$ to \mathcal{G} defined by $\varphi(x) = \psi_x(s(f(x)))$ is continuous.

The functors f^* and f_* are related by

$\text{Hom}(f^*(\mathcal{F}), \mathcal{G}) \cong \text{Hom}(\mathcal{F}, f_*(\mathcal{G}))$. The Leray spectral sequence

$$E_2^{p,q} = H^p(Y, R^q f_*(\mathcal{G})) \Rightarrow H^n(X, \mathcal{G})$$

exists and connects the cohomologies of X and of Y .

H. Ringed Spaces

Let X be a topological space and \mathcal{O} be a sheaf on X of commutative rings with unity element such that $\mathcal{O}_x \neq \{0\}$ for any $x \in X$. Then the pair (X, \mathcal{O}) is called a **ringed space**, and \mathcal{O} is called its **structure sheaf**. A morphism $(X, \mathcal{O}) \rightarrow (X', \mathcal{O}')$ is by definition a pair (f, θ) consisting of a continuous mapping $f: X \rightarrow X'$ and an f -homomorphism $\theta: \mathcal{O} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}'$. When each \mathcal{O}_x is a local ring, (X, \mathcal{O}) is called a **local ringed space**. A morphism of local ringed spaces is defined to be a pair $(f, \theta): (X, \mathcal{O}) \rightarrow (X', \mathcal{O}')$ as before, satisfying the additional condition that θ is local (i.e., $\theta_x: \mathcal{O}'_{f(x)} \rightarrow \mathcal{O}_x$ maps the maximal ideal into the maximal ideal for each $x \in X$). These concepts are important in algebraic geometry and the theory of functions of several complex variables.

I. Direct Products and Tensor Products

Let \mathcal{F}_λ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) be sheaves of Abelian groups on a topological space X . The sheaf \mathcal{F} on X defined by $\mathcal{F}(U) = \prod_\lambda \mathcal{F}_\lambda(U)$ and $r_{UV} = \prod_\lambda r_{UV}^\lambda$ is denoted by $\mathcal{F} = \prod_\lambda \mathcal{F}_\lambda$ and called the **direct product** of sheaves $\{\mathcal{F}_\lambda\}$. For each $x \in X$ there is a natural mapping $\mathcal{F}_x \rightarrow \prod_\lambda (\mathcal{F}_\lambda)_x$, which is in general neither injective nor surjective. When Λ is a finite set, $\prod \mathcal{F}_i$ is also written $\mathcal{F} = \mathcal{F}_1 + \dots + \mathcal{F}_n$ and is called the **direct sum** of the sheaves. The **inductive limit** $\mathcal{F} = \text{ind lim } \mathcal{F}_\lambda$ of an inductive system of sheaves on X also exists, and $\mathcal{F}_x = \text{ind lim } \mathcal{F}_{\lambda,x}$.

Let (X, \mathcal{O}) be a ringed space. A sheaf of Abelian groups \mathcal{F} on X is called a **sheaf of \mathcal{O} -modules** (or simply an **\mathcal{O} -module**) if $\mathcal{F}(U)$ is an $\mathcal{O}(U)$ -module for each U and $r_{UV}: \mathcal{F}(V) \rightarrow \mathcal{F}(U)$ is a module homomorphism compatible with $\mathcal{O}(V) \rightarrow \mathcal{O}(U)$ for each $U \subset V$. Then \mathcal{F}_x is an \mathcal{O}_x -module for each $x \in X$. For a fixed (X, \mathcal{O}) , the \mathcal{O} -modules form an Abelian category. When \mathcal{F} and \mathcal{G} are \mathcal{O} -modules, the **tensor product** $\mathcal{H} = \mathcal{F} \otimes_{\mathcal{O}} \mathcal{G}$ of \mathcal{F} and \mathcal{G} as sheaves over \mathcal{O} is defined as follows: Define a presheaf by $U \rightarrow \mathcal{F}(U) \otimes_{\mathcal{O}(U)} \mathcal{G}(U)$ and $r_{UV} = r_{UV}^\mathcal{F} \otimes r_{UV}^\mathcal{G}$, and let \mathcal{H} be the associated sheaf of this presheaf. Then we have $\mathcal{H}_x = \mathcal{F}_x \otimes_{\mathcal{O}_x} \mathcal{G}_x$.

The notion of coherent sheaves is important in the theory of \mathcal{O} -modules (\rightarrow 16 Algebraic Varieties E).

J. History

About 1945, J. Leray established the theory of sheaf coefficient cohomology groups (in a form slightly different from that in Sections E and F) and the theory of spectral sequences to study the relation between the local properties of a continuous mapping and the global cohomologies. In the theory of functions of several complex variables, K. Oka conceived the idea of "ideals of indefinite domain." These two ideas were unified by H. Cartan into the present form of sheaf theory. As a link between local properties and global properties, sheaf theory has been applied in many branches of mathematics (\rightarrow 16 Algebraic Varieties; 21 Analytic Functions of Several Complex Variables; 23 Analytic Spaces; 72 Complex Manifolds).

References

- [1] F. Hirzebruch, *Neue topologische Methoden in der algebraischen Geometrie*, Erg. Math., Springer, second edition, 1962; English translation, *Topological methods in algebraic geometry*, Springer, third enlarged edition, 1966.
- [2] A. Grothendieck, *Sur quelques points d'algèbre homologique*, Tôhoku Math. J., (2) 9 (1957), 119–221.
- [3] R. Godement, *Topologie algébrique et théorie des faisceaux*, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1252, Hermann, 1958.
- [4] R. G. Swan, *The theory of sheaves*, Univ. of Chicago Press, 1964.
- [5] G. E. Bredon, *Sheaf theory*, McGraw-Hill, 1967.
- [6] J. Leray, *L'anneau spectral et l'anneau filtré d'homologie d'un espace localement compact et d'une application continue*, J. Math. Pure Appl., 29 (1950), 1–139.
- [7] H. Cartan, *Sém. de topologie algébrique*, Paris, 1948–1949; 1950–1951.
- [8] A. Borel, *Sém. de topologie algébrique de l'Ecole polytechnique fédérale*, 1951. (Cohomologie des espaces localement compacts d'après J. Leray, *Lecture notes in math.* 2, Springer, 1964.)

384 (VII.20) Siegel Domains

A. Siegel Domains

Let D be a bounded domain in \mathbb{C}^n and $G_h(D)$ the full holomorphic automorphism group of

D , which is a † Lie transformation group with respect to the † compact-open topology. If $G_h(D)$ acts transitively on D , then D is called a **† homogeneous bounded domain**. The study of homogeneous bounded domains was initiated systematically by E. Cartan in 1936, while the notion of **Siegel domains**, which was introduced by I. I. Pyatetskii-Shapiro, has made remarkable contributions to the study of homogeneous bounded domains.

Let V be a convex domain in an n -dimensional real vector space R . V is called a **regular cone** if for every $x \in V$ and $\lambda > 0$, $\lambda x \in V$ and if V contains no entirely straight lines. Let W be a complex vector space. A mapping $F: W \times W \rightarrow R^C$ (the † complexification of R) is a **V -Hermitian form** if the following conditions are satisfied: (Fi) $F(u, v)$ is C -linear in u , (Fii) $\overline{F(u, v)} = F(v, u)$, where the bar denotes the † conjugation with respect to R , (Fiii) $F(u, u) \in \bar{V}$ (the closure of V), and (Fiv) $F(u, u) = 0$ implies $u = 0$. Given a regular cone $V \subset R$ and a V -Hermitian form F on W , one can define a **Siegel domain $D(V, F)$ (of the second kind)** by putting $D(V, F) = \{(x + iy, u) \in R^C \times W \mid y - F(u, u) \in V\}$, which is holomorphically equivalent to a bounded domain in $R^C \times W$. When $W = (0)$, $D(V, F)$ is reduced to $D(V) = \{x + iy \in R^C \mid y \in V\}$, which is called a **Siegel domain of the first kind**. A mapping $L: W \times W \rightarrow R^C$ is a nondegenerate semi-Hermitian form if L can be written as $L = L_1 + L_2$, where L_1 and L_2 are R^C -valued functions satisfying the conditions: (Li) L_1 satisfies (Fi) and (Fii); (Lii) L_2 is a symmetric C -bilinear form; (Liii) $L(u, v) = 0$ for all $u \in W$ implies $v = 0$. Let B be a bounded domain in a complex vector space X and L_p ($p \in B$) an R^C -valued nondegenerate semi-Hermitian form on W depending differentiably on $p \in B$. Consider a domain $D(V, L, B)$ in $R^C \times W \times X$ defined by putting $D(V, L, B) = \{(x + iy, u, p) \in R^C \times W \times X \mid y - \text{Re } L_p(u, u) \in V, p \in B\}$. The domain $D(V, L, B)$ is called a **Siegel domain of the third kind** over B if it is holomorphically equivalent to a bounded domain. $D(V, L, B)$ is a fiber space over B .

By the affine automorphism group G_a of a Siegel domain $D(V, F) \subset R^C \times W$ we mean the group consisting of all elements in the complex affine transformation group of $R^C \times W$ leaving $D(V, F)$ stable. The full holomorphic automorphism group G_h of $D(V, F)$ contains G_a as a closed subgroup. If G_h acts transitively on $D(V, F)$, then $D(V, F)$ is said to be homogeneous. A homogeneous Siegel domain is necessarily affinely homogeneous, i.e., G_a acts transitively on $D(V, F)$ [2]. The † Bergman metric of $D(V, F)$ which is a G_h -invariant † Kähler metric, is † complete [3], and so $D(V, F)$ is a † domain of holomorphy.

Examples. $H(n, R)$ denotes the vector space of all real symmetric matrices of degree n , and $H^+(n, R)$ the regular cone consisting of all positive definite matrices in $H(n, R)$.

(i) The Siegel domain of the first kind $D(H^+(n, R)) = \{X + iY \mid X \in H(n, R), Y \in H^+(n, R)\}$ is called the † Siegel upper half-plane, which is holomorphically equivalent to the classical † symmetric domain of type III.

(ii) Let $u, v \in C$ and $F(u, v)$ be the 2×2 diagonal matrix $\text{diag}(u\bar{v}, 0)$, which is an $H^+(2, R)$ -Hermitian form on C . The resulting Siegel domain is

$$D(H^+(2, R), F) = \left\{ (z_1, z_2, z_3, u) \in C^4 \mid \begin{pmatrix} \text{Im } z_1 - |u|^2 & \text{Im } z_3 \\ \text{Im } z_3 & \text{Im } z_2 \end{pmatrix} \in H^+(2, R) \right\}.$$

(iii) Let $B = \{t \in C \mid |t| < 1\}$, and let $u, v \in C$. Put $L_t(u, v) = (1 - |t|^2)^{-1}(u\bar{v} + t\bar{u}v)$. Then $L_t(u, v)$ is a nondegenerate semi-Hermitian form, and we have $D(H^+(2, R), L, B) = \{(z, u, t) \in C^3 \mid \text{Im } z - (1 - |t|^2)^{-1} \text{Re}(|u|^2 + \bar{t}u^2) > 0, |t| < 1\}$, which is a Siegel domain of the third kind and is holomorphically equivalent to the Siegel upper half-plane of dimension 3.

The domains in (i) and (ii) are both affinely homogeneous; the latter was originally found by Pyatetskii-Shapiro in 1959 [1] and provides the least-dimensional example of non-symmetric homogeneous bounded domains, which answered affirmatively Cartan's conjecture (1936): Are there non- † symmetric homogeneous bounded domains in C^n ($n \geq 4$)?

B. Infinitesimal Automorphisms of Siegel Domains

For a Siegel domain $D(V, F) \subset R^C \times W$, the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g}_h of G_h can be identified with the Lie algebra of infinitesimal automorphisms, i.e., all complete holomorphic vector fields on $D(V, F)$. Let $G(V)$ be the group consisting of all the linear automorphisms of R leaving V stable. Let us fix a base in R , and let (z_1, z_2, \dots, z_n) be the complex linear coordinate system in R^C corresponding to it. Choose a complex linear coordinate system (u_1, u_2, \dots, u_m) in W . We write $F(u, v)$ as $F(u, v) = (F_1(u, v), \dots, F_n(u, v))$. Consider the following two vector fields in the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g}_a of G_a :

$$E = 2 \sum_k z_k \frac{\partial}{\partial z_k} + \sum_{\alpha} u_{\alpha} \frac{\partial}{\partial u_{\alpha}}, \quad I = \sum_{\alpha} i u_{\alpha} \frac{\partial}{\partial u_{\alpha}},$$

and put $\mathfrak{g}_a^{\lambda} = \{X \in \mathfrak{g}_a \mid [E, X] = \lambda X\}$, $\lambda \in Z$. Then \mathfrak{g}_a can be written as a † graded Lie algebra in the following way: $\mathfrak{g}_a = \mathfrak{g}_a^{-2} + \mathfrak{g}_a^{-1} + \mathfrak{g}_a^0$. Here

we have

$$g_a^{-2} = \left\{ \sum_k a_k \frac{\partial}{\partial z_k} \mid a_k \in \mathbf{R} \right\},$$

$$g_a^{-1} = \left\{ 2i \sum_k F_k(u, c) \frac{\partial}{\partial z_k} + \sum_a c_a \frac{\partial}{\partial u_a} \mid \right.$$

$$\left. c = (c_a), \quad c_a \in \mathbf{C} \right\},$$

and g_a^0 consists of all vector fields $X_{(A, B)}$ of the form

$$\sum_{k,j} a_{kj} z_j \frac{\partial}{\partial z_k} + \sum_{\alpha, \beta} b_{\alpha\beta} u_\beta \frac{\partial}{\partial u_\alpha},$$

where the matrices $A = (a_{kj})$, $B = (b_{\alpha\beta})$ satisfy the conditions: $\exp tA \in G(V)$, $t \in \mathbf{R}$; $AF(u, v) = F(Bu, v) + F(u, Bv)$. For $X_{(A, B)} \in g_a^0$ we define $\text{tr } X_{(A, B)}$ to be the sum of the trace of A and that of B . Let g^λ be the λ -eigenspace of $\text{ad } E$ in g_h ($\lambda \in \mathbf{Z}$). Then g_h can be written also in the form of a graded Lie algebra: $g_h = g^{-2} + g^{-1} + g^0 + g^1 + g^2$, and $g^\lambda = g_a^\lambda$ is valid for $\lambda = -2, -1, 0$. Furthermore g_h can be nicely determined by g_a in the following manner. $p_{\mu\lambda}$ denotes a polynomial on $\mathbf{R}^C \times W$ homogeneous of degree μ in z_1, \dots, z_n , and homogeneous of degree λ in u_1, \dots, u_m . Let \hat{g}^1 (resp. \hat{g}^2) be the set of all polynomial vector fields of the form

$$\sum_k p_{1,1}^k \frac{\partial}{\partial z_k} + \sum_a (p_{1,0}^a + p_{0,2}^a) \frac{\partial}{\partial u_a}$$

$$\left(\text{resp. } \sum_k p_{2,0}^k \frac{\partial}{\partial z_k} + \sum_a p_{1,1}^a \frac{\partial}{\partial u_a} \right).$$

Then we have $g^1 = \{X \in \hat{g}^1 \mid [X, g^{-1}] \subset g^0\}$, and $g^2 = \{X \in \hat{g}^2 \mid [X, g^{-2}] \subset g^0, [X, g^{-1}] \subset g^1, \text{Im Tr}[X, Y] = 0 \text{ for } Y \in g^{-2}\}$. Another description of g^1 and g^2 has been given in terms of Jordan triple systems [4]. The explicit descriptions of g^1 and g^2 have been given for most homogeneous Siegel domains $D(V, F)$ over irreducible self-dual cones V (\rightarrow Section D; T. Tsuji, *Nagoya Math. J.*, 55 (1974)). $g_h = g_a$ is valid for the Siegel domains which are irreducible quasisymmetric but not symmetric (\rightarrow Section D). Main references for this section are [2–6].

C. j -Algebras and Homogeneous Bounded Domains

The notion of j -algebra was introduced by Pyatetskii-Shapiro [1], which reduces the study of homogeneous bounded domains to purely algebraic problems. Let g be a Lie algebra over \mathbf{R} , and \mathfrak{f} a subalgebra of g , (j) a collection of linear endomorphisms of g , and ω be a linear form on g . Then the quadruple

$\{g, \mathfrak{f}, (j), \omega\}$ (sometimes abbreviated g) is called a j -algebra if the following conditions are satisfied: (i) $j\mathfrak{f} \subset \mathfrak{f}$ for $j \in (j)$ and $j \equiv j' \pmod{\mathfrak{f}}$ for $j, j' \in (j)$; (ii) $j^2 \equiv -\text{id} \pmod{\mathfrak{f}}$; (iii) $j[k, x] \equiv [k, jx] \pmod{\mathfrak{f}}$ for $k \in \mathfrak{f}$, $x \in g$; (iv) $[jx, jy] \equiv j[jx, y] + j[x, jy] + [x, y] \pmod{\mathfrak{f}}$ for $x, y \in g$; (v) $\omega([k, x]) = 0$ for $k \in \mathfrak{f}$; (vi) $\omega([jx, jy]) = \omega([x, y])$; (vii) $\omega([jx, x]) > 0$ for $x \notin \mathfrak{f}$. Let g' be a subalgebra of g such that $jg' \subset g' + \mathfrak{f}$. Then, putting $\mathfrak{f}' = g' \cap \mathfrak{f}$, one can naturally induce a j -algebra structure on the pair $\{g', \mathfrak{f}'\}$. The j -algebra thus obtained is called a j -subalgebra of $\{g, \mathfrak{f}, (j), \omega\}$. A j -algebra $\{g, \mathfrak{f}, (j), \omega\}$ is called proper (resp. effective), if, for any j -subalgebra $\{g', \mathfrak{f}'\}$ with g' compact semisimple, g' is contained in \mathfrak{f} (resp. if $\{g, \mathfrak{f}\}$ is an effective pair).

Now let D be a homogeneous bounded domain in \mathbf{C}^n , G a connected \dagger Lie subgroup of $G_h(D)$ acting \dagger transitively on D , and K the \dagger isotropy subgroup at a point in D . The Lie algebras of G and K are denoted by g and \mathfrak{f} , respectively. Then the pair $\{g, \mathfrak{f}\}$ becomes an effective proper j -algebra. Conversely, to every effective proper j -algebra there corresponds a homogeneous bounded domain. The identity component of $G_h(D)$ is isomorphic to the identity component of a \dagger real algebraic group via the \dagger adjoint representation. Let $\{g, \mathfrak{f}, (j), \omega\}$ be a j -algebra. Suppose that g satisfies the following conditions: (i) $g = g^{-2} + g^{-1} + g^0$ as a graded Lie algebra; (ii) $g^0 = \mathfrak{f} + jg^{-2}$; (iii) there exists a $j \in (j)$ such that $jg^{-1} = g^{-1}$; and (iv) there exists an $r \in g^{-2}$ such that $[jx, r] = x$ for $x \in g^{-2}$. Such a decomposition is called a Siegel decomposition of g . To an effective j -algebra admitting a Siegel decomposition there corresponds a unique Siegel domain up to affine equivalence. Vinberg, Gindikin, and Pyatetskii-Shapiro (Appendix in [1] or *Trans. Moscow Math. Soc.*, 12 (1963)) proved that the Lie algebra $g_h(D)$ of $G_h(D)$ contains a j -subalgebra admitting a Siegel decomposition and corresponding to the same domain D , and obtained the realization theorem: Every homogeneous bounded domain D is holomorphically equivalent to a Siegel domain. In consequence, D is diffeomorphic to a Euclidean space, and the isotropy subgroup $K_h(D)$ is a maximal compact subgroup of $G_h(D)$. We have the decomposition $G_h(D) = K_h(D) \cdot T$ (semi-direct), where T is an \mathbf{R} -splittable solvable subgroup of $G_h(D)$ acting simply transitively on D . T is uniquely determined up to conjugacy in $G_h^0(D)$ (= the identity component of $G_h(D)$), and is called the **Iwasawa group** of D .

The j -algebra structure of the Lie algebra \mathfrak{t} of the Iwasawa group T is characterized by the following properties: (i) for every $t \in \mathfrak{t}$, the eigenvalues of $\text{ad } t$ are all real; (ii) there exists a \dagger complex structure j such that $[jx, jy] =$

$j[jx, y] + j[x, jy] + [x, y]$ for $x, y \in \mathfrak{t}$; and (iii) there exists a linear form ω on \mathfrak{t} such that $\omega([jx, jy]) = \omega([x, y])$ and that $\omega([jx, x]) > 0$ for $x \neq 0$. A Lie algebra satisfying (i)–(iii) is called a **normal j -algebra**. There exists a one-to-one correspondence between the set of holomorphic equivalence classes of homogeneous bounded domains and the set of j -isomorphism classes of normal j -algebras; by a j -isomorphism here we mean an isomorphism which commutes with j . Let $\{g, j, \omega\}$ be a normal j -algebra and define an inner product $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ on g by $\langle x, y \rangle = \omega([jx, y])$. The orthogonal complement \mathfrak{h} with respect to $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ of the \mathfrak{t} -commutator subalgebra g_1 of g is an Abelian subalgebra of g , and the adjoint representation of \mathfrak{h} on g_1 is fully reducible. One has $g = \sum \mathfrak{t}_\alpha$, $\mathfrak{h} = \mathfrak{t}_0$, and $g_1 = \sum_{\alpha \neq 0} \mathfrak{t}_\alpha$, where $\mathfrak{t}_\alpha = \{x \in g \mid [h, x] = \alpha(h)x, h \in \mathfrak{h}\}$. The linear form α on \mathfrak{h} is called a root of g . There exist l roots $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_l$ ($l = \dim \mathfrak{h}$) such that \mathfrak{h} can be written in the form $\mathfrak{h} = j\mathfrak{t}_{\alpha_1} + \dots + j\mathfrak{t}_{\alpha_l}$, l being the **rank** of g . Then, after a suitable change of the numbering of the α_i 's, any root α will be seen to be of the form $(\alpha_i + \alpha_k)/2$, $(\alpha_i - \alpha_k)/2$ or $\alpha_i/2$, where $1 \leq i \leq k \leq l$. A normal j -algebra admits a unique Siegel decomposition which can be constructed by using root spaces.

D. Equivariant Holomorphic Embedding

We retain the notation of Section B. Let $D(V, F) \subset R^C \times W$ be a Siegel domain and g_C be the \mathfrak{t} -complexification of the Lie algebra g_h . g^{-1} has the complex structure defined by the endomorphism $\text{ad } I$. Let g_\pm^{-1} be the $\pm i$ -eigenspaces in the complexification g_C^{-1} of g^{-1} under $\text{ad } I$. Let us consider the complex subalgebras $\mathfrak{b} = g^{-1} + g_C^0 + g_C^1 + g_C^2$ and $\mathfrak{n} = g_C^{-2} + g_+^{-1}$ of g_C , where the subscripts C denote the complexification of the respective space. Let G_C be the connected \mathfrak{t} -complex Lie group generated by g_C and containing G_h^0 (=the identity component of G_h) as a subgroup. The Lie algebra of the normalizer B of \mathfrak{b} in G_C coincides with \mathfrak{b} . Identifying $R^C \times W$ with \mathfrak{n} as a complex vector space, and denoting by π the natural projection of G_C onto the complex coset space G_C/B , the composite mapping $\tau = \pi \exp$ is a holomorphic embedding of \mathfrak{n} into G_C/B , which induces a holomorphic G_h^0 - \mathfrak{t} -equivariant embedding of $D(V, F)$ into G_C/B as an open submanifold. This embedding is called the **Tanaka embedding**. By the (Shilov) **boundary** S of $D(V, F)$ we mean the real submanifold $S = \{(x + iy, u) \in R^C \times W \mid y = F(u, u)\}$ of $R^C \times W$, which is a subset of the boundary of $D(V, F)$. S has the natural \mathfrak{t} -CR-structure induced from the complex structure of $R^C \times W$. Every element of g_h can be extended to a unique holomorphic

vector field on $R^C \times W$ which is tangent to S , and its restriction to S is an infinitesimal \mathfrak{t} -CR-automorphism on S , i.e., a complete vector field generating a 1-parameter group of \mathfrak{t} -CR-equivalences of S onto itself. Conversely, every infinitesimal CR-automorphism on S can be extended uniquely to a holomorphic vector field on $R^C \times W$, and an element of g_h is characterized as an infinitesimal CR-automorphism on S whose extension leaves the \mathfrak{t} -Bergman kernel form of $D(V, F)$ invariant [6]. Let $n = \dim_C g_C$, $m = \dim_C \mathfrak{b}$, and let $k = \binom{n}{m} - 1$. Then G_C/B , and consequently $D(V, F)$, is embedded holomorphically into the complex \mathfrak{t} -Grassmann manifold of m -dimensional subspaces in g_C and so into the \mathfrak{t} -complex projective space $P_k(\mathbb{C})$. Any element of G_h^0 is induced from a projective transformation and hence is a birational transformation on $D(V, F)$.

Let D be a homogeneous bounded domain in \mathbb{C}^n , g_h the Lie algebra of $G_h(D)$, and \mathfrak{t}_h the isotropy subalgebra of g_h ; and let g_C be the complexification of g_h . g_h is a j -algebra. Let us define the complex subalgebra g_- of g_C by putting $g_- = \{x + ijx \mid x \in g_h, j \in (j)\}$. Then we have $g_C = g_h + g_-$, $g_h \cap g_- = \mathfrak{t}_h$. Let G_C be the connected Lie group generated by g_C and containing $G_h^0(D)$ as a subgroup. Let G_- be the connected (closed) Lie subgroup of G_C generated by g_- . Then D can be holomorphically embedded in G_C/G_- as the open $G_h^0(D)$ -orbit of the origin of G_C/G_- [8]. This embedding is called the **generalized Borel embedding**. G_C/G_- is compact if and only if D is symmetric, and in this case G_C/G_- coincides with the compact dual [9].

Let $\{t_0, j, \omega\}$ be a normal j -algebra of rank l corresponding to a homogeneous bounded domain D_0 , and define the Hermitian inner product h by $h(x, y) = \omega([jx, y]) + i\omega([x, y])$ for $x, y \in t_0$. t_0 has $l-1$ (normal) nontrivial j -ideals (i.e., j -invariant ideals) up to j -isomorphisms. Take a j -ideal t_1 of t_0 . Then we have $t_0 = t_1 + t_2$, t_2 being a (normal) j -subalgebra of t_0 defined as the orthogonal complement of t_1 in t_0 with respect to h . The geometric version of this is that D_0 is represented as a holomorphic fiber space over the homogeneous bounded domain D_2 corresponding to t_2 , with fibers holomorphically equivalent to the homogeneous bounded domain D_1 corresponding to t_1 . For this fibering there exists a universal fiber space D over the product \hat{D}_2 of certain classical symmetric domains, with the same fibers, which plays the same role as that of a \mathfrak{t} -universal fiber bundle in topology. Here, D is again a homogeneous bounded domain. The fiber space $D_0 \rightarrow D_2$ is induced from the fiber space $D \rightarrow \hat{D}_2$ by the classifying mapping λ of D_2 to \hat{D}_2 . Let β be the generalized Borel embedding of D into G_C/G_- . Then there exists a

complex Abelian subalgebra \mathfrak{m} of $\mathfrak{g}_{\mathbb{C}}$ satisfying $\mathfrak{g}_{\mathbb{C}} = \mathfrak{g}_{-} + \mathfrak{m}$ (semidirect), and one can construct a biholomorphic mapping f of $\beta(D)$ onto a certain Siegel domain of the third kind over D_2 in the vector space \mathfrak{m} [8]. The fiber space $D_0 \rightarrow D_2$ coincides with the one induced from the aforementioned Siegel domain of the third kind by the composite mapping of λ and $f \cdot \beta$. Every realization of a homogeneous bounded domain as a Siegel domain of the third kind is obtained by this method.

E. Classification of Homogeneous Bounded Domains

The main concern is to classify all homogeneous bounded domains in \mathbb{C}^n up to holomorphic equivalence. Since the realization as Siegel domains has been set up, the second step is to get the uniqueness theorem: The holomorphic equivalence of two homogeneous Siegel domains implies that they are linearly equivalent, that is, there exists a (complex) linear isomorphism between the ambient vector spaces which carries the one domain to the other. The uniqueness theorem was first stated in 1963 (Appendix in [1]), rigorously proved in 1967 [10], and in 1970 the homogeneity assumption was removed [2]. A homogeneous Siegel domain is called **irreducible** if it is not holomorphically equivalent to a product of two homogeneous Siegel domains. Every homogeneous Siegel domain is linearly equivalent to a product of irreducible homogeneous Siegel domains [3, 10]. A homogeneous Siegel domain $D(V, F)$ is irreducible if and only if the regular cone V is irreducible, i.e., if V cannot be written as a direct sum of two regular cones. So the problem is to classify irreducible homogeneous Siegel domains up to linear equivalence. This reduces to classifying two kinds of nonassociative algebras with bigradation, called T -algebras and S -algebras [11]. Nonsymmetric homogeneous Siegel domains appear in dimension 4. The numbers of such domains are finite up to dimension 6, but in every dimension ≥ 7 there is at least one continuous family of nonsymmetric irreducible homogeneous Siegel domains, which are not mutually holomorphically equivalent.

There is a remarkable class of homogeneous Siegel domains, called **quasisymmetric** [12], which contains the class of symmetric bounded domains. A regular cone $V \subset R$ is called **self-dual** if there exists an inner product (\cdot, \cdot) on R such that $V = \{x \in R \mid (x, y) > 0 \text{ for } y \in \bar{V} - \{0\}\}$, \bar{V} denoting the closure of V . V is called homogeneous if the group $G(V)$ is transitive on V . Suppose that V is homogeneous self-dual. Then the group $G(V)$ is \dagger self-adjoint

with respect to the inner product (\cdot, \cdot) on R . Let $\mathfrak{g}(V)$ be the Lie algebra of $G(V)$. Then the totality $\mathfrak{t}(V)$ of skew-symmetric operators in $\mathfrak{g}(V)$ with respect to (\cdot, \cdot) is a \dagger maximal compact subalgebra of $\mathfrak{g}(V)$ and is the isotropy subalgebra of $\mathfrak{g}(V)$ at a point $e \in V$. Consider the associated \dagger Cartan decomposition $\mathfrak{g}(V) = \mathfrak{t}(V) + \mathfrak{p}(V)$. For each $x \in R$ there exists a unique element $T(x) \in \mathfrak{p}(V)$ such that $T(x)e = x$. Let F be a V -Hermitian form on a complex vector space W . Define a Hermitian inner product $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ on W by $\langle u, v \rangle = (e, F(u, v))$ for $u, v \in W$, and let $H(W)$ be the set of Hermitian operators on W with respect to $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$. A (homogeneous) Siegel domain $D(V, F) \subset R^{\mathbb{C}} \times W$ is called quasisymmetric if V is homogeneous self-dual and if for each $x \in R$ there exists $R(x) \in H(W)$ such that $F(R(x)u, v) + F(u, R(x)v) = T(x)F(u, v)$ for $u, v \in W$. The normal j -algebra \mathfrak{t} of an irreducible quasisymmetric Siegel domain is characterized by the following conditions: $\dim \mathfrak{t}_{(\alpha_i + \alpha_k)/2} = a$ ($1 \leq i \leq k \leq l$); and $\dim \mathfrak{t}_{\alpha_i/2} = b$ ($1 \leq i \leq l$), where a, b are some constants and l is the rank of \mathfrak{t} (D'Atri and de Miatello). Quasisymmetric Siegel domains have been completely classified (M. Takeuchi, *Nagoya Math. J.*, 59 (1975), also [12]).

F. Generalized Siegel Domains and Further Results

Let Ω be a domain in $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^m$ ($n, m \geq 0$) which is holomorphically equivalent to a bounded domain and contains a point of the form $(z, 0)$, $z \in \mathbb{C}^n$. Ω is called a **generalized Siegel domain** with exponent c ($c \in \mathbb{R}$), if Ω is invariant under holomorphic transformations of $\mathbb{C}^n \times \mathbb{C}^m$ of the types

$$(z, u) \mapsto (z + a, u) \quad \text{for all } a \in \mathbb{R}^n,$$

$$(z, u) \mapsto (z, e^{it}u) \quad \text{for all } t \in \mathbb{R},$$

$$(z, u) \mapsto (e^t z, e^{ct}u) \quad \text{for all } t \in \mathbb{R}.$$

Let D be a bounded domain in \mathbb{C}^n , and Γ a subgroup of $G_h(D)$. Γ is said to **sweep** D if there exists a compact set $K \subset D$ such that $\Gamma K = D$. Γ is said to **divide** D if Γ , provided with discrete topology, acts properly on D and sweeps D . D is called **sweepable** (resp. **divisible**) if there exists a subgroup Γ of $G_h(D)$ which sweeps (resp. divides) D . A divisible generalized Siegel domain is symmetric. A sweepable generalized Siegel domain with exponent $c \neq 0$ (resp. $c = 0$) is a Siegel domain (resp. a product of a Siegel domain of the first kind and of a homogeneous bounded circular domain) ([13]; also A. Kodama, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 33 (1981)).

Some results have been obtained concerning geometry of bounded domains, homogeneous bounded domains, and Siegel domains in

complex Banach spaces [14], and also concerning the unitary representations of the generalized Heisenberg group on the square-integrable cohomology spaces of $\bar{\partial}_b$ -complexes on the Shilov boundary of a Siegel domain [15].

References

- [1] I. I. Pyatetskii-Shapiro, Automorphic functions and the geometry of classical domains, Gordon & Breach, 1969.
- [2] W. Kaup, Y. Matsushima, and T. Ochiai, On the automorphisms and equivalences of generalized Siegel domains, Amer. J. Math., 92 (1970), 267–290.
- [3] K. Nakajima, Some studies on Siegel domains, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 27 (1975), 54–75.
- [4] J. Dorfmeister, Homogene Siegel-Gebiete, Habilitation, Univ. Münster, 1978.
- [5] S. Murakami, On automorphisms of Siegel domains, Lecture notes in math. 286, Springer, 1972.
- [6] N. Tanaka, On infinitesimal automorphisms of Siegel domains, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 22 (1970), 180–212.
- [7] S. G. Gindikin, E. B. Vinberg, and I. I. Pyatetskii-Shapiro, Homogeneous Kähler manifolds, Geometry of Homogeneous Bounded Domains, C.I.M.E. 1967; Cremonese, 1968, 3–87.
- [8] S. Kaneyuki, Homogeneous bounded domains and Siegel domains, Lecture notes in math. 241, Springer, 1971.
- [9] K. Nakajima, On Tanaka's embeddings of Siegel domains, J. Math. Kyoto Univ., 14 (1974), 533–548.
- [10] S. Kaneyuki, On the automorphism groups of homogeneous bounded domains, J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo, 14 (1967), 89–130.
- [11] M. Takeuchi, Homogeneous Siegel domains, Publ. study group geometry 7, Kyoto, 1973.
- [12] I. Satake, Algebraic structure of symmetric domains, Iwanami and Princeton Univ. Press, 1980.
- [13] J. Vey, Sur la division des domaines de Siegel, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., 3 (1970), 479–506.
- [14] J. P. Vigué, Le groupe des automorphismes analytiques d'un domaine borné d'un espace de Banach complexe, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., 9 (1976), 203–282.
- [15] H. Rossi and M. Vergne, Group representations on Hilbert spaces defined in terms of $\bar{\partial}_b$ -cohomology on the Shilov boundary of a Siegel domains, Pacific J. Math., 65 (1976), 193–207.

385 (XVI.6) Simulation

A. General Remarks

Simulation, in its widest sense, is a method of utilizing models to study the nature of certain phenomena. This method is employed when experimentation with the actual phenomena in question is difficult because of high cost in time or money. Also, it is sometimes almost impossible to carry out observations when the behavior of the objects can be influenced by their surroundings.

We can classify simulation techniques into the following four types, although simulations in practical use are usually a mixture of them.

The first type is **model experimentation**, which includes model basins and wind tunnels in hydrodynamics and pilot plants in the chemical industry. In advance of construction in a real situation, we perform experiments on a small scale and verify or modify those theories upon which the construction is based.

The second type is **analog simulation** or **experimental analysis**. We investigate the properties of real objects by experiments on alternative phenomena satisfying the same differential equations as those known for or assumed to be satisfied by the real objects. For example, we use an equivalent electric network to study dynamic vibration, and dynamic systems to study heat conduction problems. When theoretical analysis of the actual phenomenon is difficult, we look for other phenomena with similar properties and study them in order to construct mathematical models for them. This type of simulation has come into practical use mainly in engineering problems, but recently it has been utilized for the study of economic phenomena, nervous systems, the circulating system of an artificial heart, etc. Analog simulation was in the past often performed by means of analog computers. Nowadays, analog simulation is more frequently performed by digital computers than by analog ones. And with the progress of electronics it has become easier to make special-purpose simulators.

The third method of simulation, **simulation in the narrow sense**, has become more important as digital computers have been developed. In general this method is applied to problems that are more complicated and of larger scale than problems treated by analog simulation. When the mathematical expressions of the phenomenon and the algorithms of its dynamic structure are known, it is easy to simulate it by means of a computer program. In

particular, when these techniques are used to study systems such as sets of machines, equipment at factories, or management organization, we call them **system simulations**. Major fields where system simulation techniques have been used are traffic control on highways or at airports, arrangement or operation of machines at factories, balancing problems in chemical processes, production scheduling in connection with demands and stocks, overall management problems, and design of information systems. The method has also been applied in designing plants and highways and in the study of social or biological phenomena. Also, when we investigate instruction systems of computers that are yet to be completed or develop programming systems for such computers, existing computers can be used to simulate the new ones. *Random numbers play an important role where the simulation must include random fluctuations (\rightarrow 354 Random Numbers). In such instances, the method is often called the Monte Carlo method (\rightarrow Section C).

The fourth method of simulation deals with systems containing human beings. Among them are war games for training in military-operation planning, business games for training in business enterprises, and simulators for training pilots and operators of atomic power plants. The contribution of human decision to simulation processes is characteristic of these cases. For example, the participants in a business game are divided into several enterprise groups. Each group discusses and decides how to invest in plants, equipment, research, and advertising and how to schedule production for each quarter. On the basis of the decisions, a computer outputs the records of sales, stocks, and cash for each quarter, according to hidden rules. From the results, each group decides on the next steps. In this way, the groups compete for development. This type of simulation is important not only for training but also for investigating the mechanism of human decision. Slightly different from this type of simulation, the "perceptron" and EPAM (Elementary Perceiver and Memorizer) are related to artificial intelligence and have been used extensively in the cognitive sciences and in research into the structure and function of the human brain.

The third type of simulation has attracted attention in particular and has been used both in theoretical problems, such as the explication of various phenomena, and in practical problems, such as design or optimum operation of systems or prediction of their behavior. For school education and training of technicians, this is put to use together with simulations of

the fourth type. But their use has also induced heated discussions and controversies on the validity of results.

B. Programming Languages for Simulation

We usually describe models by using general purpose language: such as FORTRAN, or list processing languages such as LISP to simulate situations on computers. For system simulation, a number of programming languages have been developed and put to practical use. They can be divided roughly into two categories: those for which systems change continuously and those describing discrete changes. CSMP (Continuous System Modeling Program), CSSI (Continuous System Simulation Language), and DDS (Digital Dynamics Simulator) belong to the former, and hence all involve integration mechanisms; but each has a different way of describing a model. DYNAMO, which has been implemented, or J. W. Forrester's Industrial Dynamics and World Dynamics, are used extensively. To control simulation time, one may use GPSS (General Purpose Simulation System), SIMULA (Simulation Language), or SIMSCRIPT (Simulation Scriptor), each employing a different method to describe state transitions.

C. The Monte Carlo Method

The **Monte Carlo method** was introduced by J. von Neumann and S. M. Ulam around 1945. They defined this as a method of solving deterministic mathematical problems using *random numbers. L. de Buffon's needle experiment, in which the approximate value of π is obtained by dropping needles at random many times, is a classical example of this method.

Another example is the problem of evaluating a definite integral $I = \int_a^b f(x) dx$ ($B \geq f(x) \geq A \geq 0$). First we generate many pairs of (uniform) random numbers (x, y) , where $a \leq x \leq b$ and $A \leq y \leq B$. The proportion (p) of pairs satisfying $y \leq f(x)$ gives an estimate of the integral, i.e., $I \approx p(B - A)(b - a)$. The techniques for inverting matrices, solving *boundary value problems of partial differential equations, and so on, are also examples of the Monte Carlo method in this sense. However, direct numerical calculation seems to be more useful in dealing with this sort of problem. At present, *Monte Carlo methods* are usually used when it is difficult to construct (or solve) mathematical equations describing the phenomena in question, for example, when the phenomena involve *stochastic processes such as *random

walks. Some methods have been devised so as to get precise results efficiently.

References

[1] B. P. Zeigler, Theory of modeling and simulation, Wiley, 1976.
[2] R. S. Lehman, Computer simulation and modeling, Wiley, 1977.
[3] R. E. Shannon, Systems simulations: The art and science, Prentice-Hall, 1975.
[4] J. M. Hammersley and D. C. Handscomb, Monte Carlo methods, Wiley, 1964.
[5] A. Newell and H. A. Simon, Human problem solving, Prentice-Hall, 1972.
[6] M. Minsky and S. Papert, Perceptrons, MIT Press, 1969; second printing with corrections by the authors, June 1972.
[7] J. W. Forrester, World dynamics, Wright-Allen Press, 1972.

386 (XX.29)
S-Matrices

A. Basic Notion

It is often useful to focus attention on the relation between a physical system's input and output, without worrying about intermediate processes (the black box), which may be insufficiently understood or too complicated to analyze. For the scattering of particles, this leads to the notion of an **S-matrix** that directly relates the state of incoming particles (before scattering processes take place) to that of outgoing (scattered) particles.

In typical cases, the incoming and outgoing particles are described as mutually noninteracting (these are called free particles). This implies particle motions along straight lines at constant speeds (asymptotic to the actual motion at infinite past for incoming particles and at infinite future for outgoing particles) in classical mechanics, and wave functions (or vectors in a Hilbert space) obeying the Schrödinger equation with a free Hamiltonian H_0 in quantum mechanics and more or less the same in quantum field theory.

A wave function for n particles is an L_2 -function of their momenta p_1, \dots, p_n (each p_j being a 3-dimensional vector) with respect to an appropriate measure (normally the Lebesgue measure $d\mu(p) = \prod d^3 p_j$ in quantum mechanics and the Lorentz-invariant measure $d\mu(p) = \prod \{(m^2 + p_j^2)^{-1/2} d^3 p_j\}$ in quantum field

theory, where m is the mass of the particle), and the S -matrix S is described in terms of the S -matrix elements $(p_1, \dots, p_n | S | p'_1, \dots, p'_n)$ (which is a distribution) as

$$(\Phi, S\Psi) = \int \overline{\Phi(p)} (p | S | p') \Psi(p') d\mu(p) d\mu(p'),$$

where Φ and Ψ are wave functions for n and n' particles, $p = (p_1, \dots, p_n)$, and similarly for p' . $(p | S | p')$ gives quantities measured in scattering experiments, as will be explained in Section B (2).

In quantum mechanics, the free and actual (interacting) motion of particles is described in the same Hilbert space with free and interacting Hamiltonians H_0 and H . A vector Φ in interacting motion behaves like a vector φ in free motion at infinite past if

$$\|(\exp[-iHt])\Phi - (\exp[-iH_0t])\varphi\| \rightarrow 0 \quad \text{as } t \rightarrow -\infty$$

and hence

$$\Phi = W_-(H; H_0)\varphi,$$

$$W_-(H; H_0) = \lim_{t \rightarrow -\infty} e^{iHt} e^{-iH_0t}.$$

Such a Φ is often written as

$$\Phi = \Phi^{\text{in}}(\varphi) = \int \Phi^{\text{in}}(p) \varphi(p) d\mu(p),$$

and is called an **in-state**. A definition for an **out-state** Φ^{out} is obtained by changing $t \rightarrow -\infty$ to $t \rightarrow +\infty$ and W_- to W_+ . The S -matrix element is defined (as a distribution) by

$$(p | S | p') = (\Phi^{\text{out}}(p), \Phi^{\text{in}}(p')).$$

The existence and properties of W_{\pm} (called \dagger wave operators) are central subjects in scattering theory (\rightarrow 375 Scattering Theory).

In quantum field theory, the asymptotic description is given in terms of vectors in \dagger Fock space, and the in- and out-states are constructed in terms of \dagger asymptotic fields (\rightarrow 150 Field Theory).

The foregoing description actually applies only to a system of one-component particles of the same kind. More generally, additional (discrete) variables, say α , are needed to distinguish different kinds of particles and different spin components of each kind of particle, and the p 's appearing in the above formulas should be replaced by (p, α) 's, along with related changes in the measure.

Even in a quantum mechanics of many identical particles a bound state, if it exists, is to be treated as another particle (different from the original one) and should be distinguished by α 's in the asymptotic description φ .

If the interaction is of long range (e.g.,

Coulomb interaction), the classical path of a particle does not have an asymptote in general, and correspondingly the wave operators W_{\pm} do not exist for the usual free Hamiltonian. Still, an asymptotic description of scattering is possible in some cases.

In the presence of massless particles, such as photons in quantum field theory, another difficulty, called the infrared problem, can arise in the asymptotic description of scattering because the scattered particle may be accompanied by an infinite number of massless particles (with very small energy). In such a situation, a representation of a free massless field not equivalent to the standard Fock representation is believed to be a possible candidate for the asymptotic description of scattering.

B. Basic Properties

(1) Invariance. Let \mathcal{H}_0 be the Hilbert space for the asymptotic description of scattering, such as the space of L_2 -functions $\varphi(p_1, \dots, p_n)$ relative to the measure $d\mu(p)$. The **S-matrix** is an operator on \mathcal{H}_0 whose matrix element is as described above. (The corresponding operator **S** in the Hilbert space \mathcal{H} describing the interacting states is defined by $S\Phi^{\text{out}}(\varphi) = \Phi^{\text{in}}(\varphi)$ and is sometimes called an **S-operator**.)

S is said to be **invariant** under a group G of transformations of the p 's (and possibly the α 's) if $(U(g)\varphi)(p) = \varphi(g^{-1}p)$ defines a continuous unitary representation $U(g)$ and if $U(g)S = SU(g)$ for all $g \in G$. First, S is usually invariant under time translation. In the quantum mechanics of a particle scattered by a rotationally invariant potential, S is invariant under the group of rotations of 3-dimensional vectors p ; in the quantum mechanics of many particles (mutually interacting through central potentials), S is invariant under the 3-dimensional Euclidean group of transformations $p \rightarrow Rp + a$ with rotation R ; in relativistic field theory, S is assumed to be invariant under the inhomogeneous Lorentz group of transformations $p \rightarrow \Lambda p + a$ with $p = (p^0, \mathbf{p})$ and homogeneous Lorentz transformation Λ .

In all these examples, G is of type I, i.e., there is a direct integral decomposition

$$\mathcal{H}_0 = \int \mathcal{H}(k) \otimes \mathcal{L}(k) dv(k),$$

$$U(g) = \int U_k(g) \otimes 1_{\mathcal{L}(k)} dv(k),$$

into irreducible representations U_k on $\mathcal{H}(k)$, which are mutually inequivalent, where $\mathcal{L}(k)$ is some Hilbert space for each k . The S -matrix is

invariant under G if and only if

$$S = \int 1_{\mathcal{H}(k)} \otimes S(k) dv(k).$$

When a (scalar) particle is scattered by a central potential, irreducible representations are labeled by the energy $E(p) = p^2/(2m)$ (for time translation) and the angular momentum l (for rotations) with $\dim \mathcal{L}(E(p), l) = 1$. Therefore each $S(k) = S_l(|p|)$ is a number. For any given energy, $l = 0, 1, 2, \dots$ are referred to as the S -wave, P -wave, D -wave, ... or generally as **partial waves**.

For relativistic scalar particles, irreducible representations (with positive energy and nonzero real mass) are labeled by the center-of-mass energy squared $s = (\sum(m^2 + p_i^2)^{1/2})^2 - (\sum p_i)^2$ and the total angular momentum l . If s is below the threshold $(3m)^2$ of 3-particle scattering, $\dim \mathcal{L}(k) = 1$ and $S(k) = S_l(s)$ is a number.

(2) Unitarity. $S\varphi$ is supposed to represent the $t = +\infty$ asymptotic (free) behavior of the state that initially (i.e., at $t = -\infty$) behaves like a free state φ . If there is no loss of probability in the description of scattering, the S -matrix is isometric. If all asymptotic configurations are realized as a result of scattering, the S -matrix must also be unitary. The mappings $\Phi^{\text{in}} : \varphi \in \mathcal{H}_0 \rightarrow \Phi^{\text{out}}(\varphi) \in \mathcal{H}$ (W_{\pm} in quantum mechanics) are proved to be isometric under a general assumption. The unitarity is then proved in potential scattering (under some conditions on the potential) by showing that the two wave operators W_{\pm} have the same range. In fact, a somewhat stronger result—that this range is the same as the absolutely continuous spectral subspace for the interacting Hamiltonian H —is usually proved and is called **completeness (of scattering states in the absolutely continuous spectral subspace of H)**. If the mappings Φ^{out} and Φ^{in} (or W_{\pm}) are isometric and have the same range, then $\Phi^{\text{in}}(\varphi) = \Phi^{\text{out}}(S\varphi)$, which shows that the state behaving like φ at $t = -\infty$ behaves like $S\varphi$ at $t = +\infty$.

In the simple multiplicity cases such as $S_l(|p|)$ and $S_l(s)$ above (which correspond to the physical situation of purely elastic scattering without any production or change of particles), these numbers must be of the form $e^{2i\delta_l}$ due to unitarity, where the real number δ_l is called the **phase shift**. In terms of the phase shift, the **differential cross section** $d\sigma/d\Omega$, which is the average number of particles scattered per unit time per unit solid angle around the direction forming an angle θ with the incident uniform parallel beam of unit intensity (one particle per unit time per unit area) when

viewed in the center-of-mass system, and the **total elastic cross section** $\sigma_{el} = \int (d\sigma/d\Omega) d\Omega$ are given by the following formulas, called the **partial wave expansion**:

$$d\sigma/d\Omega = |f(s, \theta)|^2,$$

$$f(s, \theta) = k^{-1} \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} (2l+1) f_l P_l(\cos \theta), \quad f_l = \sin \delta_l e^{i\delta_l},$$

$$\sigma_{el} = 4\pi k^{-2} \sum_l (2l+1) \sin^2 \delta_l,$$

where $d\Omega = \sin \theta d\theta d\varphi$ (invariant measure on a 2-dimensional sphere S^2) and k is the wave number of the particle in the center-of-mass system ($k = \hbar^{-1}|p| = \hbar^{-1}[(s/4) - m^2]^{1/2}$). The function f is called the **scattering amplitude**. The forward scattering amplitude $f(s, 0)$ is related to the total cross section σ_{tot} by the **optical theorem**:

$$\sigma_{tot} = 4\pi k^{-1} \text{Im} f(s, 0),$$

which follows from the unitarity of the S -matrix. Here the **total cross section** is expressed as the area of the transverse cross section of a classical (impenetrable) scatterer that would scatter the same amount of particles. In a purely elastic region, $\sigma_{tot} = \sigma_{el}$, and the optical theorem is the same as the assertion $\text{Im} f_l = |f_l|^2$.

Even for values of s above the threshold of inelastic scattering, the restriction of S_0 to the subspace of two particles is again described by numbers $e^{2i\delta_l}$, where δ_l is now complex, and the same formulas for the differential and total elastic cross sections hold, except that unitarity of S_0 now implies $\text{Im} f_l \geq |f_l|^2$.

(3) TCP Symmetry. In the framework of either \dagger axiomatic quantum field theory or the \dagger theory of local observables, the TCP theorem (or PCT theorem) shows [1] that to every particle there corresponds another particle with the same mass and spin, which is called the **anti-particle** and can be the original particle itself, such that any particle is the antiparticle of its antiparticle, and the following relation, called **TCP invariance** (or **PCT invariance** [2]) holds for S -matrix elements:

$$(p, \alpha | S | p', \alpha')$$

$$= \eta(\alpha) \eta(\alpha') i^{F(\alpha) - F(\alpha')} (p', \theta_0 \alpha' | S | p, \theta_0 \alpha).$$

Here $F(\alpha)$ and $F(\alpha')$ are the number of particles with half odd integer spin amongst the incoming and outgoing particles (i.e., in α and α'), $\eta(\alpha)$ and $\eta(\alpha')$ are the product of ± 1 assigned to each particle in α and α' , respectively, with the assignment to a particle and its antiparticle the same for bosons and opposite for fermions, (p, α) is an abbreviation for an ordered n -tuple of energy-momentum 4-vectors p_i and other indices α_i (for spin components and particle

species), $i = 1, \dots, n$, and similarly for (p', α') , and θ_0 is the mapping from particles to their anti-particles (without changing spin indices). We may view the mapping $|p, \alpha\rangle \rightarrow \eta(\alpha) i^{F(\alpha)} |p, \theta_0 \alpha\rangle$ as an antiunitary operator Θ_0 on \mathcal{H}_0 satisfying $\Theta_0 S \Theta_0^{-1} = S^*$ so that

$$(\varphi_1, S_0 \varphi_2) = (\Theta_0 \varphi_2, S_0 \Theta_0 \varphi_1).$$

This is related to the \dagger TCP operator Θ in quantum field theory by $\Theta \Psi^{\text{out}}(\varphi) = \Psi^{\text{in}}(\Theta_0 \varphi)$ and $\Theta \Psi^{\text{in}}(\varphi) = \Psi^{\text{out}}(\Theta_0 \varphi)$. The name TCP comes from the combination of T for time reversal (incoming \rightleftharpoons outgoing, $v \equiv p/m \rightarrow -v$), C for charge conjugation (particle \rightleftharpoons anti-particle), and P for parity, which is a quantum number for space inversion ($p \rightarrow -p$).

TCP symmetry was suggested to G. Lüders (*Dansk. Mat. Fys. Medd.*, 1954) by B. Zumino in the form that P-invariance implies TC symmetry. W. Pauli (*Niels Bohr and the development of physics*, Pergamon 1955, 30) realized that TCP is a symmetry. R. Jost (*Helv. Phys. Acta*, 1957) gave its proof in the framework of axiomatic quantum field theory.

(4) Crossing Symmetry. In the framework of either axiomatic quantum field theory or the theory of local observables, it has been shown by J. Bros, H. Epstein, and V. Glaser (*Comm. Math. Phys.*, 1 (1965); also [3]) that there exist analytic functions $H(k, \alpha)$ of complex variables $k = (k_1, \dots, k_4)$ in a certain domain D such that each k_j is a complex 4-vector, the variables are on the mass-shell manifold defined by $k_j^2 = m_j^2$ (k_j^2 is in the Minkowski metric) and $\sum k_j = 0$, and the boundary value of $H(k, \alpha)$ as k_j approaches $\varepsilon_j p_j$ from $\text{Im} s > 0$ (s being the square of the sum of two k 's for incoming particles) in D is the scattering amplitude for the following processes involving the particles A_j and their antiparticles \bar{A}_j ($j = 1, \dots, 4$) with 4-momenta p_j , $\varepsilon_j = 1$ for A_j and -1 for \bar{A}_j (some of the A 's and \bar{A} 's may coincide):

$$(i) \quad A_1 + A_2 \rightarrow \bar{A}_3 + \bar{A}_4,$$

$$(i') \quad A_3 + A_4 \rightarrow \bar{A}_1 + \bar{A}_2,$$

$$(ii) \quad A_1 + A_3 \rightarrow \bar{A}_2 + \bar{A}_4,$$

$$(ii') \quad A_2 + A_4 \rightarrow \bar{A}_1 + \bar{A}_3,$$

$$(iii) \quad A_1 + A_4 \rightarrow \bar{A}_2 + \bar{A}_3,$$

$$(iii') \quad A_2 + A_3 \rightarrow \bar{A}_1 + \bar{A}_4.$$

Any pair of relations taken from (i)–(iii) constitutes a **crossing symmetry**.

(5) High Energy Theorems. M. Froissart (*Phys. Rev.*, 123 (1961)) obtained from the Mandelstam representation the following bound for the forward scattering amplitude (called the

Froissart bound) at large s :

$$|F(s, 0)| < (\text{const}) s (\log s)^2,$$

$$F(s, t) = kf(s, \theta), \quad t = 2k^2(\cos \theta - 1).$$

A. Martin has obtained such a bound in the axiomatic framework. As a consequence we have the **Froissart-Martin bound**:

$$\sigma_{\text{tot}} < 4\pi R^{-1} (1 + \varepsilon)^2 (\log(s/s_0))^2,$$

where $\varepsilon > 0$ is arbitrary, R can be taken to be $4m_\pi^2$ (m_π is the mass of a pion) for many cases, such as $\pi\pi$, πK , πN , and $\pi\Lambda$ scattering, and s_0 is an unknown constant.

Many other upper and lower bounds for scattering amplitudes have been obtained under other assumptions [4, 5].

I. Ya. Pomeranchuk (*Sov. Phys. JETP*, 7 (1958)) suggested the asymptotic coincidence of total cross sections at high energy for scattering of AB and $A\bar{B}$, where \bar{B} is the antiparticle of B . This **Pomeranchuk theorem** has been shown to hold by Martin (*Nuovo Cimento*, 39 (1965)) by using the analyticity derived in the axiomatic framework under the following sufficient condition: The existence of $\lim_{s \rightarrow \infty} [\sigma(AB) - \sigma(A\bar{B})]$ and $\lim_{s \rightarrow \infty} (s \log s)^{-1} f(s, 0) = 0$.

C. S-Matrix Approach

(1) History. All the information needed to understand the experimental elementary-particle scattering data seems to be expressible by S -matrix elements. It was therefore natural to try to develop a foundation (and practical methods of calculation) for the theory of elementary particles on the basis of some general properties of the S -matrix, especially when other approaches, such as quantum field theory, faced difficulties. W. Heisenberg (*Z. Phys.*, 120 (1943)) first pointed out the possibility of such an approach soon after the introduction of the S -matrix by J. A. Wheeler (*Phys. Rev.*, 52 (1937)). Unfortunately, in the early 1940s not much dynamical content could be given to such an S -matrix-theoretic approach because only unitarity and some invariance properties, such as † Lorentz invariance, were used to characterize the S -matrix. In the late 1950s, through the study of the analyticity of the S -matrix in connection with dispersion relations in quantum field theory, it became evident that causality is another important determinant of S -matrix structure. In practice, causality in position space is used in the form of the analyticity of the S -matrix elements in the energy-momentum space (variables dual to space-time positions in the Fourier transform). Subsequently it was realized that analyticity combined with unitarity gives surprisingly

strong control over the structure of the S -matrix (G. F. Chew [6]; H. P. Stapp, *Phys. Rev.*, 125 (1962); J. C. Polkinghorne, *Nuovo Cimento*, 23 and 25 (1962); J. Gunson, *J. Math. Phys.*, 6 (1965); D. I. Olive, *Phys. Rev.*, 135B (1964); Chew [7]; R. J. Eden et al. [8]). The study of the S -matrix based on its general properties, such as invariance, unitarity, and analyticity, is called **S -matrix theory**. In the present form, it is adapted only to massive particles with short-range interactions, and its applicability is believed to be limited to strongly interacting systems.

(2) Landau-Nakanishi Variety. C. Chandler and Stapp (*J. Math. Phys.*, 10 (1969)) and D. Iagolnitzer and Stapp (*Comm. Math. Phys.*, 14 (1969)) clarified the analytic structure of the S -matrix in terms of Landau equations (\rightarrow 146 Feynman Integrals) based on the important physical idea of **macroscopic causality**, which gives much more precise information in the physical region than a superficial application of † locality (also called microcausality) in axiomatic quantum field theory, though it is possible that a detailed study starting from microcausality and incorporating † asymptotic completeness (the so-called nonlinear program in axiomatic quantum field theory) might eventually entail the macroscopic causality condition (e.g., J. Bros, in [9]; Iagolnitzer [10, ch. IV]; also K. Symanzik, *J. Math. Phys.*, 1 (1960)).

(3) Microlocal Analysis. An important fact is that the **normal analytic structure** of the S -matrix discussed by Iagolnitzer and Stapp essentially coincides with the notion of analyticity in microlocal analysis, i.e., with microanalyticity (\rightarrow 274 Microlocal Analysis; F. Pham and Iagolnitzer, *Lecture notes in math.* 449, Springer, 1975; M. Sato, *Lecture notes in phys.* 39, Springer, 1975)). In a word, the † Landau equations have acquired a new interpretation in the description of the microanalytic structure of the S -matrix. In the new developments, the Landau equations define a variety in the cotangent bundle (over the mass-shell manifold in momentum space), and the † singularity spectrum of S -matrix elements is assumed to be confined to $\bigcup_G \mathcal{L}^+(G)$ (except for the so-called \mathcal{M}_0 -points), where G ranges over all possible **Feynman graphs** and $\mathcal{L}^+(G)$ denotes the positive- α Landau-Nakanishi variety associated with G (\rightarrow 146 Feynman Integrals). The union $\bigcup_G \mathcal{L}^+(G)$ is known to be locally finite and hence makes sense (Stapp, *J. Math. Phys.*, 8 (1967)). The old interpretation of Landau equations, as defining a variety in energy-momentum space, corresponds now to considering the variety $L^+(G)$

obtained by projecting $\mathcal{L}^+(G)$ from the co-tangent bundle to the base manifold (i.e., the mass shell manifold). The new interpretation of Landau equations led Sato (*Lecture notes in phys.* 39, Springer, 1975) to make a further intriguing conjecture that the S-matrix would satisfy a special \dagger overdetermined system (a \dagger holonomic system) of \dagger (micro-) differential equations whose \dagger characteristic variety is given by the complexification of Landau-Nakanishi varieties. This conjecture is closely related to the monodromy-theoretic approach by T. Regge (*Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 12 suppl. (1977) and the references cited therein) and his co-workers.

(4) Discontinuity Formula. It has turned out that the above approach is closely related to the so-called **discontinuity formula** obtained by combining the unitarity and the analyticity of the S-matrix. Actually T. Kawai and Stapp (*Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 12 suppl. (1977)) have shown that Sato's conjecture can be verified at several physically important points on the basis of the discontinuity formula. The discontinuity formula was first found by R. E. Cutkosky (*J. Math. Phys.*, 1 (1960)) for Feynman integrals. It describes the ramification property of the integral around its singularities (\rightarrow 146 Feynman Integrals). An analogous formula has been shown to be valid also for the S-matrix, and it demonstrates how strict are the constraints derived from unitarity and analyticity (Eden et al. [8, ch. 4]; M. J. D. Bloxham et al., *J. Math. Phys.*, 10 (1969); J. Coster and Stapp, *J. Math. Phys.*, 10 (1969); also Stapp in [11] and Iagolnitzer [10]). Note, however, that the derivation of the hitherto-known discontinuity uses either some *ad hoc* assumptions or some heuristic reasoning which is not rigorous or sometimes is even erroneous from the mathematical viewpoint. Efforts to give a rigorous proof are still being made, and these present several mathematically interesting problems (e.g., Iagolnitzer in [9] and M. Kashiwara and Kawai in [9]).

(5) Regge Poles. The results stated so far concerning the analyticity of the S-matrix have been primarily derived in the low-energy region. It is commonly hoped that these results can be related to its high-energy behavior through the inner consistency of S-matrix theory, even though it is still unclear to what extent such a relationship can be developed. Such a hope was advocated by Chew, who had been inspired by the results of Regge (*Nuovo Cimento*, 14 (1959); 18 (1960)) for potential scattering. After being adapted to the relativistic case, Regge's idea took the following form: Consider the scattering of two incoming

and two outgoing scalar particles with equal mass $m > 0$. Let $f_l(s)$ be the partial scattering amplitude defined earlier. Regge introduced the idea of extending the function $f_l(s)$ to an analytic function $f(l, s)$ ($l \in \mathbb{C}$) and of applying the Sommerfeld-Watson transformation in order to replace the partial wave expansion by the integral

$$\sqrt{-1/2} \int_C (2l+1) f(l, s) P_l(-\cos \theta) dl / \sin \pi l \\ = F(s, t)$$

for a certain contour C in the complex l -plane which encircles $\{0, 1, 2, \dots\}$. If $f(l, s)$ is meromorphic in $\text{Re } l > -1/2$ and if it tends to zero sufficiently rapidly at infinity, then one can change the contour C so that, with the help of Cauchy's integral formula, $F \sim \text{constant} \cdot t^{\alpha(s)}$, $\alpha(s) = \max \text{Re } l(s)$, where the maximum is taken over all the poles of $f(l, s)$. Thus the poles of the extended function $f(l, s)$ determine the asymptotic behavior of F as $t \rightarrow \infty$ (**Regge behavior**) under the assumption that $f(l, s)$ can be chosen to satisfy suitable analyticity and growth order conditions. These poles are called **Regge poles**. Even though meromorphy conditions are found to be satisfied for scattering by a (Yukawa) potential, they do not seem to be satisfied for the full S-matrix in the relativistic case. More general cases than those discussed here, i.e., the cases where more variables are considered, are also being studied but without full success at the moment. For details and references \rightarrow [7, 12, 13].

(6) Veneziano Model. In connection with Regge-pole theory, we note an interesting observation by G. Veneziano (*Nuovo Cimento*, 57A (1968)) to the effect that $\Gamma(1-\alpha(s))\Gamma(1-\alpha(t))/\Gamma(1-\alpha(s)-\alpha(t))$, with $\alpha(s)$ being linear in s , satisfies a crossing symmetry (in s and t) and shows an exact Regge-pole behavior. Although the many results that have been obtained give rise to a hope of constructing a realistic model of the S-matrix starting from the aforementioned function, no one has yet succeeded [14]. A more promising approach is the topological expansion procedure in which the first term of the expansion apparently shares with the potential-scattering functions the property of having only poles in the complex l -plane, along with several other physically important properties of Veneziano's function.

References

- [1] H. Epstein, CPT invariance of the S-matrix in a theory of local observables, *J. Math. Phys.*, 8 (1967), 750–767.

- [2] R. F. Streater and A. S. Wightman, PCT, spin and statistics, and all that, Benjamin, 1964.
- [3] H. Epstein, in Axiomatic field theory, M. Chretien and S. Deser (eds.), Gordon & Breach, 1966.
- [4] A. Martin and F. Cheung, Analyticity property and bounds of the scattering amplitudes, Gordon & Breach, 1970.
- [5] A. Martin, Scattering theory in unitarity, analyticity and crossing, Lecture notes in phys. 3, Springer, 1969.
- [6] G. F. Chew, S-matrix theory of strong interaction physics, Benjamin, 1962.
- [7] G. F. Chew, The analytic S-matrix: A basis for nuclear democracy, Benjamin, 1966.
- [8] R. J. Eden, P. V. Landshoff, D. I. Olive, and J. C. Polkinghorne, The analytic S-matrix, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1966.
- [9] D. Iagolnitzer (ed.), Proc. Les Houches, Lecture notes in phys. 126, Springer, 1980.
- [10] D. Iagolnitzer, The S-Matrix, North-Holland, 1978.
- [11] R. Balian, and D. Iagolnitzer (ed.), Structural analysis of collision amplitudes, North-Holland, 1976.
- [12] S. Frautschi, Regge poles and S-matrix theory, Benjamin, 1963.
- [13] P. O. B. Collins, An introduction to Regge theory and high energy physics, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1977.
- [14] M. Jacob, Dual theory, North-Holland, 1974.

387 (XX.34) Solitons

A. General Remarks

Solitons are nonlinear waves that preserve their shape under interaction. Mathematically, the theory of solitons continues to develop as a theory of completely integrable mechanical systems. Typical examples are the **Korteweg-de Vries equation** (\rightarrow Section B), the **Toda lattice** (\rightarrow 287 Nonlinear Lattice Dynamics), and the **Sine-Gordon equation**

$$u_{tt} - u_{xx} = \sin u,$$

studied classically in connection with transformations of surfaces of constant negative curvature.

B. The KdV Equation

In the late 19th century J. Boussinesq and then D. Korteweg and G. de Vries obtained equa-

tions describing water waves having traveling-wave solutions. The equation

$$u_t - 6uu_x + u_{xx} = 0, \quad u = u(x, t), \quad (1)$$

derived by de Vries is called the **KdV equation** for short. Putting $u(x, t) = s(x - ct - \delta)$, we find that s is an elliptic function, and we obtain

$$s = -\frac{c}{2} \operatorname{sech}^2\left(\frac{\sqrt{c}}{2}x\right)$$

as its degenerate form. This solution is called a **solitary wave**.

Around 1965, M. Kruskal and N. Zabusky solved the KdV equation numerically, taking several separated solitary waves as the initial data. They found that the waves interact in a complicated way but that eventually the initial solitary waves reappear. Noting the particle-like character of the waves, they called each of these waves a **soliton**. Subsequently, the KdV equation was found to have an infinite number of constants of motion.

C. Gardner, J. Greene, Kruskal, and R. Miura associated the 1-dimensional \dagger Schrödinger operator $-d^2/dx^2 + u(x, t)$ to each solution $u(x, t)$ of the KdV equation and showed that its \dagger eigenvalues are preserved in time. Moreover, they applied inverse scattering theory (\rightarrow Section D) and obtained explicit formulas for the solutions.

C. Lax Representation

Let

$$L = -D^2 + u(x), \quad D = d/dx.$$

For

$$M = -4D^3 + 6uD + 3u_x,$$

the commutator $[M, L] = ML - LM$ is the operator of multiplication by the function $6uu_x - u_{xxx}$. So $u = u(x, t)$ is a solution of the KdV equation if and only if

$$L_t = [M, L]. \quad (2)$$

Equation (2) is also the condition that all $L = L(t)$ are \dagger unitarily equivalent to each other and the \dagger spectrum of L is preserved through time.

Most equations having soliton solutions can be represented in the form of (2) for a suitable pair of L and M . This representation is called the **Lax representation**. One sometimes says that an **isospectral deformation** of L is given by (2).

On the other hand, isomonodromic deformations (\rightarrow 253 Linear Ordinary Differential Equations (Global Theory)) have been studied extensively by M. Sato and his co-workers, and relations to soliton theory have been

discovered (Sato, T. Miwa, and M. Jimbo, *Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.*, 14 (1978), 15 (1979)).

In the present case, the requirement that the commutator $[M, L]$ be a multiplication by a function determines an essentially unique $(2n+1)$ th-order ordinary differential operator $M = A_n$, the differential operator part of the \dagger fractional power $L^{n+1/2}$. $[A_n, L]$ is a polynomial in u and its derivatives, denoted by $K_n[u]$. The equation $u_t = K_n[u]$ is called the n th KdV equation. The transformation taking the initial data $u(x)$ to the solution $u_n(x, t)$ of the n th KdV equation is denoted by $T_n(t)$. Then $T_n(t)T_m(s) = T_m(s)T_n(t)$, i.e., the flows defined by these higher-order KdV equations commute. This property and the existence of infinite number of invariant integrals are consequences of the complete integrability of the higher-order KdV equations considered as infinite-dimensional Hamiltonian systems. The KdV equations can be studied group-theoretically as Hamiltonian systems on a certain coadjoint orbit in the \dagger dual space of the \dagger Lie algebra of a certain class of \dagger pseudo-differential operators (M. Adler, *Inventiones Math.*, 50 (1979); also \rightarrow B. Kostant, *Advances in Math.*, 34 (1979) for the analogous facts for the Toda lattice).

The ordinary differential equation $K_n[u] = 0$ is called a stationary KdV equation. By the commutativity of the flows $T_n(t)$, each KdV flow leaves invariant the space of solutions of $K_n[u] = 0$. The flows restricted to this space form a completely integrable Hamiltonian system with finitely many degrees of freedom (S. P. Novikov, *Functional Anal. Appl.*, 8 (1974)).

$K_n[u] = 0$ is also the condition that there exist an ordinary differential operator M which commutes with L . J. Burchnal and T. Chaundy (*Proc. London Math. Soc.*, (2) 21 (1922)) studied this problem and showed that such L and M are connected by the relation $M^2 = P(L)$, where P is a certain polynomial of degree $2n+1$ and that the potential u is expressed by the \dagger theta function associated with the \dagger hyperelliptic curve $w^2 = P(z)$.

D. Inverse Scattering Method

Let $u(x)$ be a potential such that $u(x) \rightarrow 0$ as $x \rightarrow \pm\infty$. The equation $Lf = \zeta^2 f$ ($\text{Im } \zeta \geq 0$) has solutions $f_{\pm}(x, \zeta)$ that can be represented as

$$f_{\pm}(x, \zeta) = e^{\pm i\zeta x} (1 + \int_0^{\infty} K_{\pm}(x, t) e^{\pm 2i\zeta t} dt).$$

Putting $\zeta = \xi + i\eta$ and noting that $f_{+}(x, \xi)$ and $f_{+}(x, -\xi)$ are independent solutions of $Lf = \xi^2 f$, one can express f_{-} as

$$f_{-}(x, \xi) = a(\xi)f_{+}(x, -\xi) + b(\xi)f_{+}(x, \xi).$$

The coefficient $a(\xi)$ can be continued analytically to the upper half-plane, where it has only a finite number of zeros, all of which are simple and lie on the imaginary axis. Denote them by $i\eta_j$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$). The \dagger point spectrum of the operator L consists of the numbers $-\eta_j^2$, and the associated eigenfunctions are $f_{+}(x, i\eta_j)$, which are real-valued. Put

$$c_j = (\int f_{+}(x, i\eta_j)^2 dx)^{-1},$$

and call $t(\xi) = a(\xi)^{-1}$ and $r(\xi) = b(\xi)/a(\xi)$ the **transmission coefficient** and the **reflection coefficient**, respectively. The triplet $r(\xi)$, η_j , c_j ($j = 1, \dots, n$) is called the **scattering data**. It is connected with the kernel $K = K_{+}$ by the **Gel'fand-Levitan-Marchenko equation**

$$K(x, t) + F(x+t) + \int_0^{\infty} F(x+t+s)K(x, s)ds \\ (t > 0),$$

$$F(x) = \pi^{-1} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} r(\xi) e^{2i\xi x} d\xi + 2 \sum_{j=1}^n c_j e^{-2\eta_j x}.$$

The potential is given by

$$u(x) = -(\partial K / \partial x)(x, 0).$$

When the reflection coefficient $r(\xi)$ vanishes identically, the potential is called a **reflectionless potential**. The kernel K then becomes a \dagger degenerate kernel and the potential is expressed by

$$u(x) = -2 \frac{d^2}{dx^2} \log D(x),$$

where $D(x)$ is the determinant of the $n \times n$ matrix whose j, k entry is $\delta_{jk} + c_j \exp\{-(\eta_j + \eta_k)x\}/(\eta_j + \eta_k)$.

The authors of [1] showed that if $u(x, t)$ is a solution of the KdV equation and if $u(x, t) \rightarrow 0$ ($x \rightarrow \pm\infty$), then the time development of the scattering data of the potential $u(x, t)$ is as follows: n and η_j do not depend on t , and

$$c_j(t) = c_j e^{8\eta_j^3 t}, \quad r(\xi, t) = r(\xi) e^{8i\xi^3 t}.$$

The solution associated with the reflectionless potentials are obtained by replacing c_j by $c_j(t)$ in the formula for $D(x)$. These are soliton solutions of the KdV equation.

R. Hirota developed a method of treating functions like $D(x)$ directly for most of the equations in the soliton theory (*Lecture notes in math.* 515, Springer, 1976).

A certain geometric method that enables one to obtain solutions of the Sine-Gordon equation from a known solution has been studied in the transformation theory of surfaces of constant negative curvature (G. Darboux, *Leçons sur la théorie générale des surfaces*, Chelsea, 1972, vol. 3, ch. 12), and its generalizations are called Bäcklund transfor-

mations. Soliton solutions of the KdV equation can also be constructed by this method. Relations to the inverse scattering method, differential systems, and transformation groups have also been studied (*Lecture notes in math.* 515, Springer, 1976).

E. Periodic Problem

Let the potential $u(x)$ be of period l , and consider Hill's equation (\rightarrow 268 Mathieu Functions E) $Lf = \lambda f$. The real (λ -) axis is divided into intervals of unstable solutions (u -intervals) alternating with intervals of stable solutions. One of the u -intervals is of the form $(-\infty, \lambda_0]$ and the others are finite, possibly degenerating to points. The special potentials that have only a finite number of nondegenerate u -intervals are the periodic analog of the reflectionless potentials, and are called the **finite-gap** (or **-band**) potentials.

Consider the eigenvalue problem $Lf = \lambda f$, $f(\tau) = f(\tau + l) = 0$ for a fixed real parameter τ . Exactly one of its eigenvalues belongs to each finite u -interval. These eigenvalues move with τ , but those in degenerate intervals cannot move.

Let u be a finite-gap potential, $I_j = [\lambda_{2j-1}, \lambda_{2j}]$ ($j = 1, \dots, g$) be the nondegenerate (finite) u -intervals, and $\mu_j(\tau)$ be the associated eigenvalues in I_j . The potential is recovered by the formula

$$u(x) = \sum_{j=1}^{2g} \lambda_j - 2 \sum_{j=1}^g \mu_j(x).$$

Put $P(\lambda) = \prod_{j=1}^{2g} (\lambda - \lambda_j)$, realize the † Riemann surface S of the hyperelliptic curve $w^2 = P(z)$ as a two-sheeted cover of the † Riemann sphere, and consider the $\mu_j(\tau)$ as points on S . Let ω_j ($j = 1, \dots, g$) be a basis for the space of the † differentials of the first kind on S . Fix a point P_0 in S and put

$$w_j(\tau) = \sum_{k=1}^g \int_{P_0}^{\mu_k(\tau)} \omega_j \quad (j = 1, \dots, g)$$

(\rightarrow 3 Abelian Varieties L). Then the locus $(w_1(\tau), \dots, w_g(\tau))$ ($-\infty < \tau < \infty$) on the † Jacobian variety turns out to be a straight line, the direction v_x being determined by the † periods of certain † differentials of the second kind on S . Employing the solution of † Jacobi's inverse problem, we can write the potential in terms of the † Riemann theta function as

$$u(x) = -2 \frac{d^2}{dx^2} \log \theta(xv_x + c) + C, \quad (3)$$

where c is a certain constant vector and C is a constant.

Suppose now that $u(x, t)$ is a solution of the KdV equation which is a finite-gap potential

for each t . Then g and λ_j are preserved in time. The determination of the direction v_t on the Jacobian variety is similar to that of v_x , and the solutions of the KdV equation are obtained by replacing the vector c by $tv_t + c'$ in (3). The case $g = 1$ is the elliptic traveling wave solution (\rightarrow Section B). Most of these results have been extended to the general periodic problem (H. P. McKean and E. Trubowitz, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 29 (1976)).

F. Two-Dimensional KdV Equation

Let S be a compact † Riemann surface of † genus g , and let p_x be a fixed point on S . Put $F(\kappa) = a_n \kappa^n + \dots + a_0$ and $G(\kappa) = b_m \kappa^m + \dots + b_0$. A function $\psi(x, y, t, p)$ of $p \in S$ and of x, y, t is uniquely determined by the following conditions: (a) it is meromorphic on $S - \{p_x\}$, and its pole † divisor is a general divisor of degree g and does not depend on x, y, t ; (b) for a † local parameter z at p_x ($z(p_x) = 0$) and $\kappa = z^{-1}$, $\psi_0 = \psi \exp(-\kappa x - F(\kappa)y - G(\kappa)t)$ is holomorphic near p_x , and $\psi_0(p_x) = 1$.

Moreover, there is a differential operator $L = a_n D^n + a_{n-1} D^{n-1} + \sum_{j=0}^{n-2} u_j(x, y, t) D^j$ such that $\psi_y = L\psi$. Expanding ψ_0 at p_x as $1 + \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \zeta_j(x, y, t) z^j$, one can express the coefficients u_j by ζ_1, ζ_2, \dots . Analogously, there is an $M = b_m D^m + b_{m-1} D^{m-1} + \sum_{j=0}^{m-2} v_j D^j$ such that $\psi_t = M\psi$. The operators L and M satisfy the relation

$$L_t - M_y = [L, M], \quad (4)$$

which is a generalization of the Lax representation. The coefficients of L and M satisfy a certain system of nonlinear differential equations (V. E. Zakharov and A. B. Shabat, *Functional Anal. Appl.*, 8 (1974); I. M. Krichever, *Functional Anal. Appl.*, 11 (1977)).

Example. Let $F(\kappa) = \kappa^2$ and $G(\kappa) = \kappa^3 + c\kappa$. Then one finds

$$L = D^2 + u, \quad M = D^3 + (3u/2 + c)D + v,$$

where $u = -2\zeta_1'$ and $v = 3\zeta_1 \zeta_1' - 3\zeta_1'' - 3\zeta_2'$. Eliminating v from (4), one has

$$3u_{yy} + (-4u_t + 4cu_x + u_{xxx} + 6uu_x)_x = 0,$$

the so-called **two-dimensional KdV equation** (**Kadomtsev-Petviashvili equation**). If $u(x, y, t)$ does not depend on y , the equation reduces to the KdV equation, and if u does not depend on t , to the **Boussinesq equation**.

The condition for reduction to these special cases can be described in terms of the meromorphic functions admitted by S . Suppose that there is a meromorphic function $E_F(p)$ holomorphic for $p \neq p_x$ and of † principal part $F(\kappa)$ at $p = p_x$. Then ψ is written as $\varphi(x, t, p) \exp\{E_F(p)y\}$, and the coeffi-

cients of L and M do not depend on y . φ satisfies $L\varphi = E\varphi$, and (4) reduces to the Lax representation.

If such an E_F exists, S is hyperelliptic, and p_∞ is one of its \dagger branch points over the Riemann sphere. Thus the result of the previous section is recovered.

G. Solvable Models in Field Theory

The Sine-Gordon equation has been studied extensively as a solvable model in \dagger field theory. It is a special case of a field in two space-time dimensions with values in a \dagger symmetric space; this can also be treated by a variant of the inverse scattering method (V. E. Zakharov and A. V. Mikhailov, *Sov. Phys. JETP*, 47 (1978)).

Much work has been done on the semiclassical \dagger quantization of equations encountered in soliton theory. Recently, a method of exact quantization (called quantum inverse scattering) was developed (see, for example, L. A. Takhtadzhyan and L. D. Faddeev, *Russian Math. Surveys*, 34 (5) (1979)).

References

- [1] C. S. Gardner, J. M. Greene, M. D. Kruskal, and R. M. Miura, Method for solving the Korteweg-de Vries equation, *Phys. Rev. Lett.*, 19 (1967), 1095–1097.
- [2] P. D. Lax, Integrals of nonlinear equations of evolution and solitary waves, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 21 (1968), 467–490.
- [3] B. A. Dubrovin, V. B. Matveev, and S. P. Novikov, Nonlinear equations of Korteweg-de Vries type, finite-band operators and Abelian varieties, *Russian Math. Surveys* 31 (1) (1976), 59–146. (Original in Russian, 1976.)
- [4] H. P. McKean, Integrable systems and algebraic curves, *Lecture notes in math.* 755, Springer, 1979, 83–200.
- [5] Yu. I. Manin, Algebraic aspects of nonlinear differential equations, *J. Sov. Math.*, 11 (1) (1979), 1–122. (Original in Russian, 1978.)

388 (XIII.32) Special Functional Equations

A. General Remarks

The term **special functional equations** usually means functional equations that do not involve limit operations. Such functional equations appear in various fields, but there is no systematic method for solving them. Usually

they are solved by reduction to functional equations of some standard type. In this article functions are all real-valued functions of real variables unless otherwise specified.

B. Additive Functional Equations and Related Equations

Suppose that we are given an equation

$$f(x+y) = f(x) + f(y). \quad (1)$$

Clearly, $f(x) = cx$ (c a constant) is a solution. If $f(x)$ is continuous, (1) has no other solution (Cauchy). The same conclusion holds under any one of the following weaker conditions: (i) $f(x)$ is continuous at a point; (ii) $f(x)$ is bounded in a neighborhood of a point; (iii) $f(x)$ is \dagger measurable in a neighborhood of a point. However, it was shown by G. Hamel and H. Lebesgue by means of \dagger transfinite induction that equation (1) has infinitely many nonmeasurable solutions. On the other hand, it was proved by A. Ostrowski [2] that if a solution $f(x)$ of equation (1) does not take any value between two distinct numbers for x on a set of positive measure, then $f(x)$ is continuous. This result can be extended to the case where x is a point (x_1, \dots, x_n) of an n -dimensional Euclidean space. In this case, any continuous solution is of the form

$$f(x) = \sum_{j=1}^n C_j x_j$$

(C_j constant).

Next, we consider the equation

$$f\left(\frac{x+y}{2}\right) = \frac{f(x)+f(y)}{2}. \quad (2)$$

Any solution of equation (1) satisfies this equation. When x is a point (x_1, \dots, x_n) of an n -dimensional Euclidean space, any continuous solution of (2) is of the form $f(x) = \sum_{j=1}^n C_j x_j + C_0$ (C_j constant). If a solution $f(x)$ of (2) defined on a \dagger convex set K does not take any value between two distinct numbers for x on a set of positive measure, then $f(x)$ is continuous (M. Hukuhara).

Consider the equation

$$g(x+y) = g(x)g(y). \quad (3)$$

If a solution $g(x)$ vanishes at some point ξ , then $g(x) \equiv 0$. Excluding this trivial case, we assume that $g(x)$ never vanishes. Then, putting $y = x$, we see that $g(x) > 0$ for all x . The substitution $f(x) = \log g(x)$ then reduces equation (3) to equation (1). Thus we see that any continuous solution of (3) is of the form $g(x) = \exp(cx)$.

Next, we consider the equation

$$g(uv) = g(u)g(v). \quad (4)$$

If a solution $g(u)$ vanishes at some $\xi \neq 0$, then $g(u) \equiv 0$. Excluding this case, we assume that $g(u) \neq 0$ for $u \neq 0$. For $u, v > 0$, by the substitution $x = \log u, y = \log v$, we have an equation of the form (3). On the other hand, putting $v = -1$, we have $g(-u) = g(-1)g(u)$. Since $g^2(-1) = g(1) = 1$, we see that any continuous solution of (4) is of the form $|u|^c$ or $(\operatorname{sgn} u)|u|^c$ according as $g(-1) = 1$ or -1 .

C. The General Addition Theorem and Related Functional Equations

The **general addition theorem** is: If the equation

$f(x+y) = F(f(x), f(y))$ (5)

has a continuous nonconstant solution $f(x)$ on $-\infty < x < +\infty$, then $f(x)$ is strictly monotone, and $F(u, v)$ is strictly monotone increasing and continuous with respect to u and v for $\alpha < u, v < \beta$ and satisfies $\alpha < F(u, v) < \beta$ for $\alpha < u, v < \beta$. There is also a constant c satisfying $F(c, c) = c$, and the identity $F(F(u, v), w) = F(u, F(v, w))$ holds for any u, v, w in the interval (α, β) . Conversely, if $F(u, v)$ is such a function, then (5) has a continuous nonconstant solution on $-\infty < x < +\infty$. Let $f(x)$ be such a solution. Then any other continuous solution is given by $f(cx)$. When $F(u, v)$ is continuously differentiable, a continuous solution $f(x)$ of (5) can be obtained as a solution of the differential equation

$f'(x) = F_v(f(x), a)c, \quad c = f'(0),$

satisfying the initial condition $f(0) = a$.

Consider the equation

$F(f(x), f(y), f(x+y)) = 0.$

Suppose that $F(u, v, w)$ is a polynomial in u, v , and w . If this equation has a meromorphic solution $f(x)$, then $f(x)$ must be a rational function, a rational function of $\exp cx$, or an elliptic function [1, p. 64].

Next, consider the equation

$f(x+y) + f(x-y) = 2(f(x) + f(y)).$ (6)

Any solution continuous on $-\infty < x < \infty$ is of the form $f(x) = cx^2$. When x is a point (x_1, \dots, x_n) of an n -dimensional Euclidean space, any continuous solution of (6) is given by a quadratic form $f(x) = \sum_{i,j}^n c_{ij}x_i x_j$.

Consider the equation

$f(x+y) + f(x-y) = 2f(x)f(y).$ (7)

Any solution continuous on $-\infty < x < \infty$ is of the form $f(x) = \cosh cx = (e^{cx} + e^{-cx})/2$ or $f(x) = \cos cx$. If $f(x)$ is allowed to take complex values, then any continuous solution can be written in the form $f(x) = (e^{bx} + e^{-bx})/2$ in terms of a complex number b . A special case

is $\cos x$, since b may take purely imaginary values.

D. Schröder's Functional Equation

Schröder's functional equation is

$f(\theta(x)) = cf(x),$ (8)

where $\theta(x)$ is a given function and c is a constant. A general solution of (8) can be written as $f(x) = f_1(x)\varphi(x)$, where $f_1(x) \neq 0$ is a particular solution of (8) and $\varphi(x)$ is a general solution of the equation $\varphi(\theta(x)) = \varphi(x)$. Suppose that there is a point a such that $\theta(a) = a$, and $\theta(x)$ and $f(x)$ are both differentiable in a neighborhood of $x = a$. Then we have $f'(a) = 0$ or $\theta'(a) = c$. Consider the case where $\theta'(a) = c$, and suppose that $\theta(x)$ is twice differentiable at $x = a$. When $|c| = |\theta'(a)| < 1$, define $\theta_n(x)$ ($n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$) by $\theta_0(x) = x$ and $\theta_n(x) = \theta(\theta_{n-1}(x))$. Then the sequence $\{\theta_n(x-a)c^{-n}\}$ ($n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$) converges uniformly in a neighborhood of $x = a$, and its limit function $f(x)$ is a solution of (8). When $|c| = |\theta'(a)| > 1$, put $\theta(x) = u$. Then we have the equation $f(\theta^{-1}(u)) = c^{-1}f(u)$, and the problem reduces to the previous case. The results obtained for equation (8) can be extended to the following system of equations:

$f_j(\theta_1(x), \theta_2(x), \dots, \theta_n(x))$
 $= \lambda_j f_j(x) + \delta_j f_{j-1}(x) + g_j(x), \quad j = 1, 2, \dots, n,$ (9)

where the $\theta_j(x)$ are given functions holomorphic in a neighborhood of $x = 0$, $\theta_j(0) = 0$, the coefficients of f in the right-hand side of (9) are numbers such that the matrix $A = (a_{ij})$ ($a_{ij} = 0$ except for $a_{ij} = \lambda_j, a_{j-1,j} = \delta_j$) is the \dagger Jordan canonical form of the matrix formed by $\{(\partial\theta_j/\partial x_k)_{x=0}\}$, and the $g_j(x)$ are polynomials consisting of terms of the form constant $\times x_1^{m_1} x_2^{m_2} \dots x_n^{m_n}$ with exponents m_1, m_2, \dots, m_n for which $\lambda_j = \lambda_1^{m_1} \dots \lambda_n^{m_n}$. If $0 < |\lambda_j| < 1$ ($j = 1, 2, \dots, n$), then we can always choose the coefficients of the polynomials $g_j(x)$ so that equation (9) has a solution $\{f_j(x)\}$ holomorphic in a neighborhood of $x = 0$. The same conclusion can be obtained for $|\lambda_j| > 1$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$).

Consider **Abel's functional equation**

$f(\theta(x)) = f(x) + 1.$ (10)

If we put $\exp f(x) = \varphi(x)$, then we have Schröder's functional equation

$\varphi(\theta(x)) = e\varphi(x).$

Consider the equation

$f(x+1) = A(x)f(x).$ (11)

If we put $\varphi(x) = \log f(x)$, then we have a linear difference equation of the form

$\varphi(x+1) - \varphi(x) = \log A(x).$

References

- [1] E. C. Picard, *Leçons sur quelques équations fonctionnelles*, Gauthier-Villars, 1928.
 [2] A. Ostrowski, *Mathematische Miszellen XIV, Über die Funktionalgleichung der Exponentialfunktion und verwandte Funktionalgleichungen*, Jber. Deutsch. Math. Verein., 38 (1929), 54–62.
 [3] F. Hausdorff, *Mengenlehre*, de Gruyter, second edition, 1927, 175; English translation, *Set theory*, Chelsea, 1962.
 [4] J. Aczél, *Lectures on functional equations and their applications*, Academic Press, 1966. (Original in German, 1961.)

389 (XIV.1) Special Functions

A. Special Functions

The term **special functions** usually refers to the classes of functions listed in (1)–(4) (other terms, such as **higher transcendental functions**, are sometimes used). (1) The \dagger gamma function and related functions (\rightarrow 174 Gamma Function); (2) \dagger Fresnel's integral, the \dagger error function, the \dagger logarithmic integral, and other functions that can be expressed as indefinite integrals of elementary functions (\rightarrow 167 Functions of Confluent Type D); (3) \dagger elliptic functions (\rightarrow 134 Elliptic Functions); (4) solutions of \dagger linear ordinary differential equations of the second order derived by the method of separation of variables in certain partial differential equations, e.g., \dagger Laplace's equation, in various \dagger curvilinear coordinates. Recently, new types of special functions, such as \dagger Painlevé's, have been introduced as the solutions of special differential equations.

In this article we discuss class (4); for the other classes, see the articles quoted. Class (4) is further divided into the following three types, according to the character of the \dagger singular points of the differential equations of which the functions are solutions. Equations with a smaller number of singular points than those indicated in (1)–(3) below can be integrated in terms of elementary functions.

(1) **Special functions of hypergeometric type** are solutions of differential equations with three \dagger regular singular points on the Riemann sphere. Examples are the \dagger hypergeometric function and the \dagger Legendre function. Any function of this type reduces to a hypergeometric function through a simple transformation (\rightarrow 206 Hypergeometric Functions; 393 Spherical Functions).

(2) **Special functions of confluent type** are solutions of differential equations that are derived from \dagger hypergeometric differential equations by the confluence of two regular singular points, that is, by making one of the regular singular points tend to the other one so that the resulting singularity is an \dagger irregular singular point of class 1 (\rightarrow 167 Functions of Confluent Type). Any function of this type can be expressed by means of \dagger Whittaker functions, of which many important special functions, such as \dagger Bessel functions, are special cases (\rightarrow 39 Bessel Functions). Also, one can reduce to this type the \dagger parabolic cylindrical functions, that is, the solutions of differential equations with only one singular point which is at infinity and is irregular of class 2.

(3) **Special functions of ellipsoidal type** are solutions of differential equations with four or five regular singular points, some of which may be confluent to become irregular singular points. Examples are \dagger Lamé functions, \dagger Mathieu functions, and \dagger spheroidal wave functions (\rightarrow 133 Ellipsoidal Harmonics; 268 Mathieu Functions). In contrast to types (1) and (2), functions of type (3) are difficult to characterize by means of \dagger difference-differential equations and have not been fully explored. Sometimes the term *special function* in the strict sense is not applied to them. To specify the special functions of types (1) and (2), the term *classical special functions* has been proposed.

B. Unified Theories of Special Functions

Though many special functions were introduced separately to solve practical problems, several unified theories have been proposed. The classification in Section A based on differential equations may be regarded also as a kind of unified theory. Other examples are:

(1) Expression by \dagger Barnes's extended hypergeometric function or its extension to the case of several variables by means of a definite integral of the form

$$\int (\zeta - a_1)^{b_1} (\zeta - a_2)^{b_2} \dots (\zeta - a_m)^{b_m} (\zeta - z)^c d\zeta$$

(\rightarrow 206 Hypergeometric Functions).

(2) A unified theory [14] that includes the gamma function and is based upon Truesdell's difference-differential equation

$$\partial F(z, \alpha) / \partial z = F(z, \alpha + 1).$$

(3) Unification from the standpoint of expansions in terms of \dagger zonal spherical functions of a differential operator (the Laplacian) invariant under a transitive group of motions on a \dagger symmetric Riemannian manifold (\rightarrow 437

Unitary Representations). With this approach a great variety of formulas can be derived in a unified way [3, 4].

References

- [1] J. Dieudonné, Special functions and linear representations of Lie groups, Expository lectures from the CBMS regional conference held at East Carolina Univ., March 1979, Amer. Math. Soc., 1980.
- [2] B. C. Carlson, Special functions of applied mathematics, Academic Press, 1977.
- [3] J. D. Talman, Special functions: A group-theoretic approach, Benjamin, 1968.
- [4] N. Ya. Vilenkin, Special functions and the theory of group representations, Amer. Math. Soc. Transl. of Math. Monographs 22, 1968. (Original in Russian, 1965.)
- [5] W. Miller, Jr., Lie theory and special functions, Academic Press, 1968.
- [6] Y. L. Luke, The special functions and their approximations I, II, Academic Press, 1969.
- [7] S. Moriguti, K. Udagawa, and S. Hitotumatu, Mathematical formulas, Special functions (in Japanese), Iwanami, 1960.
- [8] E. T. Whittaker and G. N. Watson, A course of modern analysis, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1902; fourth edition, 1958.
- [9] E. Jahnke and F. Emde, Funktionentafeln mit Formeln und Kurven, Teubner, 1933; bilingual edition, Tables of functions with formulas and curves, Dover, 1945.
- [10] W. Magnus and F. Oberhettinger, Formulas and theorems for the special functions of mathematical physics, Springer, third enlarged edition, 1966.
- [11] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, Methods of mathematical physics I, II, Interscience, 1953, 1962.
- [12] A. Erdélyi (ed.), Higher transcendental functions I–III, McGraw-Hill, 1953–1955.
- [13] J. Meixner, Spezielle Funktionen der mathematischen Physik, Handbuch der Physik II, Springer, second edition, 1933.
- [14] C. A. Truesdell, An essay toward a unified theory of special functions based upon the functional equation $\partial F(z, \alpha)/\partial z = F(z, \alpha + 1)$, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1948.
- [15] I. N. Sneddon, Special functions of mathematical physics and chemistry, Oliver & Boyd, 1956.
- [16] F. W. Schäfke, Einführung in die Theorie der speziellen Funktionen der mathematischen Physik, Springer, 1963.
- [17] G. Szegő, Orthogonal polynomials, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., revised edition, 1959.
- [18] E. D. Rainville, Special functions, Macmillan, 1960; Chelsea, second edition, 1971.

390 (XII.12) Spectral Analysis of Operators

A. General Remarks

Throughout this article, X stands for a \dagger complex linear space and A for a \dagger linear operator in X . Except when X is finite-dimensional, A need not be defined over all X . A linear operator A in X is by definition a linear mapping whose \dagger domain $D(A)$ and \dagger range $R(A)$ are linear subspaces of X . A complex number λ is said to be an **eigenvalue** (**proper value** or **characteristic value**) of A if there exists an $x \in D(A)$ such that $Ax = \lambda x$, $x \neq 0$. Any such x is called an **eigenvector** (**eigenelement**, **proper vector**, **characteristic vector**) associated with λ . When X is a \dagger function space, the word **eigenfunction** is also used. For an eigenvalue λ of A , the subspace $M(\lambda)$ of X given by

$$M(\lambda) = M(\lambda; A) = \{x \mid Ax = \lambda x\},$$

i.e., the subspace consisting of 0 and all eigenvectors associated with λ , is called the **eigenspace** associated with λ , and the number $m(\lambda) = \dim M(\lambda)$ is called the **geometric multiplicity** of λ . The eigenvalue λ is said to be (**geometrically**) **simple** or **degenerate** according as $m(\lambda) = 1$ or $m(\lambda) \geq 2$. The problem of seeking eigenvalues and eigenvectors is referred to as the **eigenvalue problem**.

When X is a \dagger topological linear space, the notion of eigenvalues leads to a more general object called the spectrum of A . Let λ be a complex number and put $A_\lambda = \lambda I - A$, where I is the \dagger identity operator in X . Furthermore, put $R_\lambda = (A_\lambda)^{-1} = (\lambda I - A)^{-1}$, if the inverse exists. Then the **resolvent set** $\rho(A)$ of A is defined to be the set of all λ such that R_λ exists, has domain \dagger dense in X , and is continuous. The **spectrum** $\sigma(A)$ of A is, by definition, the complement of $\rho(A)$ in the complex plane, and it is divided into three mutually disjoint sets: the **point spectrum** $\sigma_p(A)$, the **continuous spectrum** $\sigma_c(A)$, and the **residual spectrum** $\sigma_R(A)$. These are defined as follows: $\sigma_p(A) = \{\lambda \mid R_\lambda \text{ does not exist}\} = \{\lambda \mid \lambda \text{ is an eigenvalue of } A\}$; $\sigma_c(A) = \{\lambda \mid R_\lambda \text{ exists and has domain dense in } X, \text{ but is not continuous}\}$; $\sigma_R(A) = \{\lambda \mid R_\lambda \text{ exists, but its domain is not dense in } X\}$.

Let X be a \dagger Banach space and $\mathbf{B}(X)$ the set of all \dagger bounded linear operators with domain X . If A is a \dagger closed operator in X , then $\lambda \in \rho(A)$ if and only if $R_\lambda \in \mathbf{B}(X)$. Moreover, $\sigma(A)$ is a closed set. In particular, if $A \in \mathbf{B}(X)$, then $\sigma(A)$ is a nonempty compact set. In this case the **spectral radius** $r_\sigma(A)$ is defined as $r_\sigma(A) = \sup_{\lambda \in \sigma(A)} |\lambda|$. Then $r_\sigma(A) \leq \|A^n\|^{1/n}$, $n = 1, 2, \dots$, and $\|A^n\|^{1/n} \rightarrow r_\sigma(A)$, $n \rightarrow \infty$.

In many problems of analysis crucial roles have been played by methods involving the spectrum and other related concepts. This branch of analysis is called **spectral analysis**. For an infinite-dimensional X the theory is well developed when X is a * Hilbert space and A is * self-adjoint or * normal.

B. Eigenvalue Problems for Matrices

Throughout this section let X be an N -dimensional complex linear space ($N < \infty$) and A a linear operator in X . (We assume that A is defined over all X .) With respect to a fixed basis (ψ_1, \dots, ψ_N) of X , the operator A is represented by an $N \times N$ matrix, also denoted by A . Then the eigenvalues of A coincide with the roots of the * characteristic equation $\det(\lambda I - A) = 0$. There are no points of the spectrum other than eigenvalues, that is $\sigma(A) = \sigma_p(A)$. Let $\lambda \in \sigma(A)$. The multiplicity $\tilde{m}(\lambda)$ of λ as a root of the characteristic equation is called the **(algebraic) multiplicity** of the eigenvalue λ . The sum of $\tilde{m}(\lambda)$ over all the eigenvalues of A is equal to N . The eigenvalue λ is said to be **(algebraically) simple** or **degenerate** according as $\tilde{m}(\lambda) = 1$ or $\tilde{m}(\lambda) \geq 2$. Let $v = 1, 2, \dots$, and $N_v(\lambda) = \{x | (\lambda I - A)^v x = 0\}$. Then $\{N_v(\lambda)\}$ forms a nondecreasing chain of subspaces $M(\lambda) = N_1(\lambda) \subset N_2(\lambda) \subset \dots$, which ceases to increase after a finite number of steps. When $v \geq \tilde{m}(\lambda)$, the space $N_v(\lambda)$ is equal to a fixed subspace $\tilde{M}(\lambda)$, sometimes called the **root subspace** (or **generalized eigenspace** or **principal subspace**) of A associated with λ . A vector in the root subspace is called a **root vector** (or a **generalized eigenvector**). Then $\dim \tilde{M}(\lambda) = \tilde{m}(\lambda)$ and hence $m(\lambda) \leq \tilde{m}(\lambda)$. When A is a * normal matrix, $M(\lambda) = \tilde{M}(\lambda)$ and $m(\lambda) = \tilde{m}(\lambda)$.

If two matrices A and B are * similar, i.e., if there exists an invertible matrix P such that $B = P^{-1}AP$, then A and B have the same eigenvalues with the same algebraic (and geometric) multiplicities. The same conclusion holds for A and A' , where A' is the * transpose of A . For the adjoint matrix A^* we have $\sigma(A^*) = \overline{\sigma(A)} \equiv \{\bar{\lambda} | \lambda \in \sigma(A)\}$. For an arbitrary polynomial f the relation $\sigma(f(A)) = f(\sigma(A)) \equiv \{f(\lambda) | \lambda \in \sigma(A)\}$ holds (**Frobenius's theorem**). These relations can be extended to operators in a Banach space. In particular, $\sigma(f(A)) = f(\sigma(A))$ if A is a bounded operator and f is a function holomorphic in a neighborhood of $\sigma(A)$ (for the * spectral mapping theorem — 251 Linear Operators).

In the next four paragraphs, in which the spectral properties of * normal or * Hermitian matrices is discussed, we introduce into X the Euclidean * inner product (\cdot, \cdot) , regarding X as a space of N -tuples of scalars. Let A be an

$N \times N$ normal matrix. Then the eigenspaces associated with different eigenvalues of A are mutually orthogonal. Moreover, the eigenspaces of A as a whole span the entire space X . One can therefore choose a * basis of X formed by a * complete orthonormal set of eigenvectors of A . Specifically, there exists a basis $\{\varphi_j | j = 1, \dots, N\}$ of X such that $A\varphi_j = \mu_j\varphi_j$ and $(\varphi_i, \varphi_j) = \delta_{ij}$, where δ_{ij} is the * Kronecker delta. Moreover, μ_1, \dots, μ_N exhaust all the eigenvalues of A . In terms of the basis $\{\varphi_j\}$, an arbitrary $x \in X$ can be expanded as

$$Ax = \sum_{j=1}^N \mu_j(x, \varphi_j)\varphi_j = \sum_{\lambda \in \sigma(A)} \lambda P_\lambda x, \quad (1)$$

where P_λ is the orthogonal * projection on the eigenspace associated with the eigenvalue λ .

Of particular importance among normal matrices are Hermitian matrices and * unitary matrices. The eigenvalues of a Hermitian matrix are real, and those of a unitary matrix have the absolute value 1.

Solving the eigenvalue problem of a normal matrix A leads immediately to the diagonalization of A . For instance, let U be the $N \times N$ matrix whose j th column is equal to φ_j . Here the basis $\{\varphi_j\}$ is as before, and each φ_j is regarded as a column vector. Then U is unitary, and the transform U^*AU of A by U is the diagonal matrix whose diagonal entries are the μ_j . The problem of transforming a * Hermitian form to its canonical form can also be solved by means of U . In fact, a Hermitian form $Q = Q(x)$ on X is expressed as $Q(x) = (Ax, x)$ with a Hermitian matrix A . For this A , construct U as before. Then by the transformation $x = Uy$ of the coordinates of X , the form Q is converted to its canonical form $Q = \mu_1|y_1|^2 + \dots + \mu_N|y_N|^2$. When X is a real linear space and A is a real symmetric matrix, U is an orthogonal matrix. By means of the orthogonal transformation $x = Uy$, the surface of the second order $Q(x) = 1$ in \mathbf{R}^N is converted to the form $\mu_1 y_1^2 + \dots + \mu_N y_N^2 = 1$. The orthogonal transformation $x = Uy$ is called the **transformation to principal axes** of the surface $Q(x) = 1$.

When A is not normal, it can be transformed into * Jordan's canonical form by a basis φ_j taken from the root subspaces $\tilde{M}(\lambda)$. However, φ_j need not be orthonormal even when A is diagonalizable.

C. Spectral Analysis in Hilbert Spaces

Throughout the rest of this article except for the last section, X is assumed to be a Hilbert space with inner product (\cdot, \cdot) . Furthermore, the most complete discussions will be confined to * normal or * self-adjoint operators. A funda-

mental theorem in spectral analysis for such operators is the spectral theorem, which asserts that a representation such as (1) holds in a generalized form. When the operator is \dagger compact, we have only to replace the sum by an infinite sum (\rightarrow 68 Compact and Nuclear Operators). In the general case we need a kind of integral. This is discussed in detail in Sections D and E. The general theory of spectral analysis for nonnormal operators, however, is rather involved even in Hilbert spaces, but two important developments can be noted. One is the theory of Volterra operators, and the other is the theory of essentially normal operators. The former is discussed in Section H and the latter and its related results in Sections I and J.

D. Spectral Measure

Let \mathcal{B} be a \dagger completely additive class of subsets of a set Ω , that is, (Ω, \mathcal{B}) is a \dagger measurable space. An operator-valued set function $E = E(\cdot)$ defined on \mathcal{B} is said to be a (self-adjoint) **spectral measure** if (i) $E(M)$, $M \in \mathcal{B}$, is an \dagger orthogonal projection in X ; (ii) $E(\Omega) = I$; and (iii) E is \dagger countably additive, that is,

$$E\left(\bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} M_n\right) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} E(M_n)$$

(\dagger strong convergence) for a disjoint sequence $\{M_n\}$ of subsets in \mathcal{B} . A spectral measure E satisfies $E(M \cap N) = E(M)E(N) = E(N)E(M)$, $M, N \in \mathcal{B}$. Spectral measures which are frequently used in spectral analysis are those defined on the family $\mathcal{B}_r(\mathcal{B}_c)$ of all \dagger Borel sets in the field of real (complex) numbers \mathbf{R} (\mathbf{C}). A spectral measure on $\mathcal{B}_r(\mathcal{B}_c)$ is sometimes referred to as a **real (complex) spectral measure**. For such a spectral measure E the **support** (or the **spectrum**) of E , denoted by $\Lambda(E)$, is defined to be the complement of the largest open set G for which $E(G) = 0$. A complex spectral measure such that $\Lambda(E) \subset \mathbf{R}$ can be identified with a real spectral measure.

Let E be a spectral measure on \mathcal{B}_r , and put

$$E_\lambda = E((-\infty, \lambda]), \quad -\infty < \lambda < \infty. \quad (2)$$

Then E_λ satisfies the relations

$$\begin{aligned} E_\lambda E_\mu &= E_{\min(\lambda, \mu)}, & \text{s-lim}_{\lambda \rightarrow \mu+0} E_\lambda &= E_\mu, \\ \text{s-lim}_{\lambda \rightarrow -\infty} E_\lambda &= 0, & \text{s-lim}_{\lambda \rightarrow +\infty} E_\lambda &= I, \end{aligned} \quad (3)$$

where s-lim stands for strong convergence. A family $\{E_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \mathbf{R}}$ of orthogonal projections satisfying the relation (3) is called a **resolution of the identity**. Relation (2) gives a one-to-one correspondence between the resolutions of the identity and the spectral measures on \mathcal{B}_r .

Let E be a spectral measure on \mathcal{B}_r , and let $x, y \in X$. Then the set function $M \rightarrow (E(M)x, x) =$

$\|E(M)x\|^2$ is a bounded regular \dagger measure in the ordinary sense, and the set function $M \rightarrow (E(M)x, y)$ is a complex-valued regular \dagger completely additive set function. For every complex Borel \dagger measurable function f on \mathbf{R} , the operator $S(f)$ in X is defined by the relations

$$\begin{aligned} D(S(f)) &= \left\{ x \mid \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} |f(\lambda)|^2 (E(d\lambda)x, x) < \infty \right\}, \\ (S(f)x, y) &= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(\lambda) (E(d\lambda)x, y), \end{aligned} \quad (4)$$

$$x \in D(S(f)), \quad y \in X.$$

$S(f)$ is a densely defined closed operator and is denoted by $S(f) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(\lambda) E(d\lambda)$. The correspondence $f \mapsto S(f)$ satisfies formulas of the so-called operational calculus (\rightarrow 251 Linear Operators). In particular, $S(\bar{f}) = S(f)^*$, and hence $S(f)$ is self-adjoint if f is real-valued. If f is bounded on the support of E , then $S(f)$ is everywhere defined in X and is bounded. $S(f)$ is sometimes called the **spectral integral** of f with respect to E . The operator $S(f)$ can be defined in a similar way for a spectral measure on \mathcal{B}_c (and for a more general spectral measure).

E. Spectral Theorems

For every self-adjoint operator H in a Hilbert space X , there exists a unique real spectral measure E such that

$$H = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \lambda E(d\lambda). \quad (5)$$

In other words, H and E correspond to each other by the relations

$$\begin{aligned} D(H) &= \left\{ x \mid \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \lambda^2 (E(d\lambda)x, x) < +\infty \right\}, \\ (Hx, y) &= \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \lambda (E(d\lambda)x, y), \end{aligned} \quad (6)$$

$$x \in D(H), \quad y \in X.$$

This is the **spectral theorem** for self-adjoint operators. The support of E is equal to the spectrum $\sigma(H)$, so that we can write

$$H = \int_{\sigma(H)} \lambda E(d\lambda) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \lambda \chi_{\sigma(H)}(\lambda) E(d\lambda),$$

where χ_M stands for the \dagger characteristic function of M . Formulas (5) and (6) are called the **spectral resolution** (or **spectral representation**) of the **self-adjoint operator** H . We call E the spectral measure for H , and the $\{E_\lambda\}$ corresponding to E by formula (2) (or sometimes E itself) the resolution of the identity for H . Let λ be a real number. Then $\lambda \in \sigma_p(H)$ if and only if $E(\{\lambda\}) \neq 0$. Also, $\lambda \in \sigma_c(H)$ if and only if $E(\{\lambda\}) = 0$ and $E(V) \neq 0$ for any neighborhood

V of λ . The spectral measure E can be represented in terms of the resolvent $R(\alpha; H) = (\alpha I - H)^{-1}$ of H by the formula

$$E((a, b)) = \lim_{\delta \downarrow 0} \lim_{\varepsilon \downarrow 0} \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{a+\delta}^{b-\delta} \{R(\mu - \varepsilon i; H) - R(\mu + \varepsilon i; H)\} d\mu$$

(strong convergence).

For every normal operator A in X , there exists a unique spectral measure E on the family of all complex Borel sets \mathcal{B}_c such that

$$A = \int_C z E(dz).$$

This is called the **complex spectral resolution** (or **complex spectral representation**) of the **normal operator** A . The support $\Lambda(E)$ is equal to $\sigma(A)$. There are characterizations of point and continuous spectra similar to the case of self-adjoint operators. Normal operators have no residual spectra. For a unitary operator U , the support of the associated spectral measure is contained in the unit circle Γ , so that U can be represented as

$$U = \int_{\Gamma} e^{i\theta} F(d\theta) \quad (7)$$

with a spectral measure F defined on Γ . Formula (7) is the **spectral resolution** of the **unitary operator** U .

For a self-adjoint operator $H = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \lambda E(d\lambda)$ the following two types of classification of $\sigma(H)$ are often useful.

(i) The **essential spectrum** $\sigma_e(H)$ is by definition the set $\sigma(H)$ minus all the isolated eigenvalues of H with finite multiplicity. When H is bounded this definition of the essential spectrum coincides with that to be given in Section I for a general $A \in B(X)$. $\sigma(H) \setminus \sigma_e(H)$ is called the **discrete spectrum** of H .

(ii) The set $X_{ac}(H)$ (resp. $X_s(H)$) (called the **space of absolute continuity** (resp. **singularity**) with respect to H) of all $u \in X$ such that the measure $(E(d\lambda)u, u)$ is absolutely continuous (resp. singular) with respect to the † Lebesgue measure is a closed subspace of X that reduces H . The restriction of H to X_{ac} (resp. $X_s(H)$) is called the absolutely continuous (resp. singular) part of H , and its spectrum, denoted by $\sigma_{ac}(H)$ (resp. $\sigma_s(H)$), is called the **absolutely continuous** (resp. **singular**) **spectrum** of H . Note that $\sigma_{ac}(H)$ and $\sigma_s(H)$ may not be disjoint.

F. Functions of a Self-Adjoint Operator

Let $H = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \lambda E(d\lambda)$ be a self-adjoint operator in X . For a complex-valued Borel measurable function f on \mathbf{R} , we define $f(H)$ to be the operator $S(f)$ determined by (4) in reference to the

resolution of the identity E associated with H :

$$f(H) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(\lambda) E(d\lambda).$$

For an arbitrary $a \in X$, let $L_2(a)$ be the L_2 -space over the measure $\mu_a = \mu_a(\cdot) = (E(\cdot)a, a)$. In other words, $f \in L_2(a)$ if and only if $a \in D(f(H))$. The correspondence $f \mapsto f(H)a$ gives an isometric isomorphism between $L_2(a)$ and the subspace $M(a) = \{f(H)a \mid f \in L_2(a)\}$ of X . (In particular, $M(a)$ is closed.) H is reduced by $M(a)$, and the part of H in $M(a)$ corresponds to the multiplication $f(\lambda) \mapsto \lambda f(\lambda)$ in $L_2(a)$.

For a given self-adjoint operator H there exists a (not necessarily countable) family $\{a_{\theta}\}_{\theta \in \Theta}$ of elements a_{θ} of X such that

$$X = \sum_{\theta \in \Theta} M(a_{\theta}), \quad (8)$$

where \sum stands for the † direct sum of mutually orthogonal closed subspaces. Consequently, X is represented by the direct sum $\sum_{\theta \in \Theta} L_2(a_{\theta})$ of L_2 -spaces. If $x \in D(H)$ is represented by $\{f_{\theta}\}_{\theta \in \Theta}$ in this representation, Hx is represented by $\{\lambda f_{\theta}\}_{\theta \in \Theta}$.

G. Unitary Equivalence and Spectral Multiplicity

In this section X is assumed to be a † separable Hilbert space. Then (8) can be made more precise. Namely, for a self-adjoint operator H , we can find a countable family $\{a_n\}_{n=1}^{\infty}$ of elements of X such that

$$X = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} M(a_n) \cong \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} L_2(a_n), \quad (9)$$

$\mu_{a_{n+1}}$ is † absolutely continuous

$$\text{with respect to } \mu_{a_n}, \quad n = 1, 2, \dots \quad (10)$$

Furthermore, if $\{a'_n\}$ is another family satisfying (9) and (10), then μ_{a_n} and $\mu_{a'_n}$ are absolutely continuous with respect to each other (**Hellinger-Hahn theorem**). μ_{a_1} is said to be the **maximum spectral measure**.

Two operators H_1 and H_2 are said to be **unitarily equivalent** if there exists a unitary operator U such that $H_2 = U^* H_1 U$. A criterion for unitary equivalence of self-adjoint operators can be given in terms of the spectral representation given previously. Namely, let $\{a_n^{(i)}\}$, $i = 1, 2$, be a sequence satisfying (9) and (10) with respect to H_i . Then H_1 and H_2 are unitarily equivalent if and only if $\mu_{a_n^{(1)}}$ and $\mu_{a_n^{(2)}}$ are absolutely continuous with respect to each other for all $n = 1, 2, \dots$.

A self-adjoint operator H is said to have a **simple spectrum** if there exists an $a \in X$ such that $M(a) = X$. Such an $a \in X$ is called a **generating element** of X with respect to H .

Self-adjoint operators with simple spectra are closely related to Jacobi matrices. Let H be such an operator with a generating element $a \in X$. Take a complete orthonormal set $\{G_n\}_{n=1}^\infty$ in $L_2(a)$ such that $G_n = G_n(\lambda)$ is a polynomial of degree $n-1$ and $\lambda G_n(\lambda) \in L_2(a)$. Then $\{g_n\}_{n=1}^\infty$, $g_n = G_n(H)a$, is a complete orthonormal set in X . The matrix representation $\{a_{mn}\}$, $a_{mn} = (Hg_n, g_m)$ of H with respect to the basis $\{g_n\}$ has the following properties: (i) $a_{mn} = 0$ if $|m-n| \geq 2$; (ii) $a_{n,n+1} = \overline{a_{n+1,n}} \neq 0$; (iii) a_{nn} is real. Any infinite matrix $\{a_{mn}\}$ satisfying (i), (ii), and (iii) is called a **Jacobi matrix**. A Jacobi matrix determines a * -symmetric operator whose * -deficiency index is either $(0, 0)$ or $(1, 1)$. Any self-adjoint extension has a simple spectrum. (For more details about Jacobi matrices and their applications \rightarrow [8].)

H. Triangular Representation of Volterra Operators

A linear operator A in a Hilbert space X is called a * -Volterra operator if it is * -compact and * -quasinilpotent (i.e., 0 is the only spectrum). The name is justified because under very general assumptions such an operator is unitarily equivalent to the integral operator of Volterra type in the vector-valued L_2 space on $[0, 1]$. Let \mathfrak{P} be a maximal * -totally ordered family of orthogonal projections in X such that PX is an * -invariant subspace of a Volterra operator A for every $P \in \mathfrak{P}$. Such a family \mathfrak{P} always exists and is called a maximal **eigenchain** of A . Then generalizing the triangular representation of nilpotent matrices, we have the integral representation

$$A = 2i \int_{\mathfrak{P}} P A_I dP,$$

where $A_I = (A - A^*)/(2i)$ is the imaginary part of A and the integral is the limit in norm of approximating sums of the form $\sum Q_i A_I (P_i - P_{i-1})$ for finite partitions $0 = P_0 < P_1 < \dots < P_n = I$ of \mathfrak{P} in which Q_i is an arbitrary projection in \mathfrak{P} such that $P_{i-1} \leq Q_i \leq P_i$ (M. S. Brodskii). Conversely, let \mathfrak{P} be a totally ordered family of orthogonal projections that contains 0 and the identity. If the integral $A = \int_{\mathfrak{P}} P B dP$ converges in norm for a compact linear operator B , then A is a Volterra operator and \mathfrak{P} is an eigenchain of A . If, moreover, B is self-adjoint, we have $B = A_I$ (I. C. Gokhberg and M. G. Krein; Brodskii). Furthermore, assume for simplicity that \mathfrak{P} is continuous in the sense that for every $P_1 < P_2$ in \mathfrak{P} there exists an element P in \mathfrak{P} such that $P_1 < P < P_2$. If B is a * -Hilbert-Schmidt operator, then the integral $A = \int_{\mathfrak{P}} P B dP$ converges in the * -Hilbert-Schmidt norm and the mapping $B \mapsto A$ is an orthogonal

projection to the set of all Volterra operators of Hilbert-Schmidt class possessing \mathfrak{P} as an eigenchain (Gokhberg and Krein). Volterra operators with the imaginary part of the * -trace class are especially important for applications. In this case we have the following fundamental theorem on the density of the spectrum of the real part A_R of the Volterra operator A : Let $n_+(r; A_R)$ and $n_-(r; A_R)$ be the numbers of eigenvalues of A_R in the intervals $[1/r, \infty)$ and $(-\infty, -1/r]$, respectively.

$$\text{Then } \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} n_+(r; A_R)/r = \lim_{r \rightarrow \infty} n_-(r; A_R)/r = h/\pi.$$

The number h is given by

$$h = \int_{\mathfrak{P}} \|dP A_I dP\|_1 \\ = \inf \sum \| (P_i - P_{i-1}) A_I (P_i - P_{i-1}) \|_1,$$

where the norm is the * -trace norm and the infimum is taken over all finite partitions P_i of a maximal eigenchain \mathfrak{P} for A . We refer for further details and applications to the books by Gokhberg and Krein [9, 10].

I. Fredholm Operators and Essential Spectra of Operators

Throughout Sections I and J we assume that X is a separable infinite-dimensional complex Hilbert space, and we consider only bounded linear operators in X . The set $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ of all * -compact linear operators in X is a * -maximal two-sided ideal of the * -C*-algebra $\mathbf{B}(X)$ of all bounded linear operators. The simple quotient C*-algebra $\mathbf{A}(X) = \mathbf{B}(X)/\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ is called the **Calkin algebra**. We denote the quotient mapping by $\pi: \mathbf{B}(X) \rightarrow \mathbf{A}(X)$. Then an operator $A \in \mathbf{B}(X)$ is a * -Fredholm operator if and only if its image $\pi(A)$ is an invertible element of $\mathbf{A}(X)$. Let $\mathbf{F}(X)$ be the set of all Fredholm operators in X , and let $\mathbf{F}_n(X)$, $n \in \mathbf{Z}$, be its subset of all operators of * -index n . $\mathbf{F}_n(X)$ is a connected set in $\mathbf{B}(X)$, and in particular, $\mathbf{F}_0(X)$ is the inverse image of the connected component of the identity in the multiplicative topological group $\pi(\mathbf{F}(X))$ of all invertible elements in $\mathbf{A}(X)$. The index gives the group isomorphisms $\mathbf{F}(X)/\mathbf{F}_0(X) \cong \pi(\mathbf{F}(X))/\pi(\mathbf{F}_0(X)) \cong \mathbf{Z}$. More generally, we have for any compact topological space Y the group isomorphisms $[Y, \mathbf{F}(X)] \cong [Y, \pi(\mathbf{F}(X))] \cong K(Y)$ of the groups of * -homotopy classes of continuous mappings and the K -group in the * -K-theory (M. F. Atiyah [12]).

If N is a * -normal operator, its **essential spectrum** $\sigma_e(N)$ is defined to be the set of all $\lambda \in \sigma(N)$ that is not an isolated eigenvalue of finite multiplicity. Let H_1 and H_2 be self-adjoint operators. Then $\sigma_e(H_1) = \sigma_e(H_2)$ if and

only if $U^*H_1U = H_2 + K$ for a unitary operator U and a compact operator K (Weyl-von Neumann theorem).

I. D. Berg and W. Sikonja (1971) extended this result to normal operators N_1 and N_2 . Moreover, for any compact subset Y of \mathbb{C} there exists a normal operator N such that $\sigma_e(N) = Y$. Hence it follows that the essential spectrum $\sigma_e(N)$ of a normal operator N coincides with the \sharp spectrum $\sigma(\pi(N))$ of the image in $\mathbf{A}(X)$. Thus we define the **essential spectrum** $\sigma_e(A)$ of an arbitrary operator A to be the spectrum $\sigma(\pi(A))$ in $\mathbf{A}(X)$. An operator $A \in \mathbf{B}(X)$ is said to be **essentially normal** (resp. **essentially self-adjoint**, **essentially unitary**) if $\pi(A)$ is normal (resp. self-adjoint, unitary) in $\mathbf{A}(X)$. (Note that this definition of essentially self-adjoint operators is completely different from that in 251 Linear Operators E.) Since an essentially self-adjoint operator is the sum of a self-adjoint operator and a compact operator, the Weyl-von Neumann theorem classifies essentially self-adjoint operators up to \sharp unitary equivalence modulo $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$. An operator A is essentially normal if and only if the commutator $[A, A^*]$ is compact, but it need not be the sum of a normal operator and a compact operator. For example, let V be the **unilateral shift operator** that maps the orthonormal basis e_i of X into e_{i+1} for every $i = 1, 2, \dots$. Then V is essentially unitary, but it cannot be written as the sum of a normal operator and a compact operator. The essential spectrum $\sigma_e(V)$ is the unit circle, whereas the spectrum $\sigma(V)$ is the unit disk and $\text{ind}(V - \lambda) = -1$ for $|\lambda| < 1$.

J. The Brown-Douglas-Fillmore (BDF) Theory

The following is the main theorem for essentially normal operators, due to L. G. Brown, R. G. Douglas, and P. A. Fillmore [14]. Let A_1 and A_2 be essentially normal operators. There are a unitary operator U and a compact operator K such that $U^*A_1U = A_2 + K$ if and only if $\sigma_e(A_1) = \sigma_e(A_2)$ and $\text{ind}(A_1 - \lambda) = \text{ind}(A_2 - \lambda)$ for every λ in the complement of the essential spectrum. An essentially normal operator A is the sum of a normal operator and a compact operator if and only if $\text{ind}(A - \lambda) = 0$ for every λ in the complement of $\sigma_e(A)$.

To prove this and many other facts, they developed the theory of extension of $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ by the C^* -algebra $C(Y)$ of continuous complex-valued functions on a compact metrizable space Y [14–16]. This revealed deep relations between the theory of operator algebras on Hilbert spaces (\rightarrow 36 Banach Algebras, 308 Operator Algebras) and algebraic topology (in particular, K -theory; \rightarrow 237 K -Theory). Extension

theory also gives a natural setting for the \sharp index theory of elliptic differential operators due to Atiyah and I. M. Singer [13, 16].

An **extension** of $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ by $C(Y)$ is a \sharp short exact sequence

$$0 \rightarrow \mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X) \xrightarrow{\iota} E \xrightarrow{\varphi} C(Y) \rightarrow 0 \quad (11)$$

of a C^* -subalgebra E of $\mathbf{B}(X)$ and \sharp^* -homomorphisms, i.e., E is a C^* -subalgebra of $\mathbf{B}(X)$ containing the identity I and including $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ as a C^* -subalgebra, and φ is a \sharp^* -homomorphism onto $C(Y)$ whose kernel is equal to $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$. Or equivalently, an extension is a unital (identity preserving) \sharp^* -monomorphism $\tau: C(Y) \rightarrow \mathbf{A}(X)$ defined by $\tau = \pi \circ \varphi^{-1}$. (For general extension of C^* -algebras \rightarrow 36 Banach Algebras.) Two extensions (E_1, φ_1) and (E_2, φ_2) (or τ_1 and τ_2) are said to be equivalent if there exists a \sharp^* -isomorphism $\psi: E_1 \rightarrow E_2$ such that $\varphi_2 \circ \psi = \varphi_1$ (or equivalently there exists a unitary operator U such that $\pi(U^*)\tau_1(f)\pi(U) = \tau_2(f)$ for every $f \in C(Y)$). We denote by $\text{Ext}(Y)$ the set of all equivalence classes of extensions of $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ by $C(Y)$.

Let A be an essentially normal operator in X with the essential spectrum $\sigma_e(A) = Y$. Then the C^* -algebra E_A generated by $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$, A and the identity I , and the \sharp^* -homomorphism φ_A of E_A onto $C(Y)$ which sends A to the function $\chi(z) = z$ define an extension (E_A, φ_A) . It is easy to see that two essentially normal operators A_1 and A_2 are unitarily equivalent modulo $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ if and only if $\sigma_e(A_1) = \sigma_e(A_2)$ and the extensions (E_{A_1}, φ_{A_1}) and (E_{A_2}, φ_{A_2}) are equivalent. Conversely, if Y is a compact subset of \mathbb{C} and (11) is an extension, then (E, φ) is equivalent to (E_A, φ_A) , where A is an essentially normal operator in E such that $\varphi(A) = \chi$.

Extensions of $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ by $C(Y)$ appear also in different parts of analysis. Let X be the Hilbert space $L_2(M)$ on a compact differentiable manifold M relative to a fixed smooth measure and let E be the C^* -subalgebra of $\mathbf{B}(X)$ generated by all zeroth-order \sharp pseudodifferential operators together with $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$. Then E and the \sharp symbol mapping $\varphi: E \rightarrow C(S^*(M))$ define an extension of $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(X)$ by $C(S^*(M))$, where $S^*(M)$ is the \sharp cosphere bundle of M . This extension is closely related to the \sharp Atiyah-Singer index theorem. Let Ω be a \sharp strongly pseudoconvex domain in \mathbb{C}^n . Then the C^* -algebra generated by \sharp Toeplitz operators with continuous symbol gives rise to an extension of $\mathbf{B}^{(c)}(H_2(\partial\Omega))$ by $C(\partial\Omega)$.

Let τ_1 and τ_2 be \sharp^* -monomorphisms from $C(Y)$ into $\mathbf{A}(X)$ and $a_1 = [\tau_1]$ and $a_2 = [\tau_2]$ be corresponding elements in $\text{Ext}(Y)$. Then the sum $a_1 + a_2 \in \text{Ext}(Y)$ is defined to be the equivalence class of $\tau: C(Y) \rightarrow \mathbf{A}(X)$ which sends f to $\tau_1(f) \oplus \tau_2(f) \in \mathbf{A}(X) \oplus \mathbf{A}(X) \subset \mathbf{A}(X \oplus X) \cong \mathbf{A}(X)$. It does not depend on the

choice of τ_1, τ_2 and the unitary $X \oplus X \cong X$. An extension $\tau: C(Y) \rightarrow A(X)$ is said to be **trivial** if there exists a unital $*$ -monomorphism $\sigma: C(Y) \rightarrow B(X)$ such that $\tau = \pi \circ \sigma$. For each compact metrizable space Y there exists a unique equivalence class of trivial extensions in $\text{Ext}(Y)$. $\text{Ext}(Y)$ is an Abelian group in which the class of trivial extensions is the identity element. The extension (E_A, φ_A) for an essentially normal operator A is trivial if and only if $A = N + K$ with N normal and K compact. Hence follows the Weyl-von Neumann-Berg-Sikonia theorem. The BDF theorem for essentially normal operators is proved by the pairing $\text{Ext}(Y) \times K^1(Y) \rightarrow \mathbf{Z}$ defined by the index, where $K^1(Y) = \tilde{K}(SY^+) = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} [Y, GL(n, \mathbf{C})]$ (\rightarrow 237 *K-Theory*; [13]). The induced homomorphism $\gamma_\infty: \text{Ext}(Y) \rightarrow \text{Hom}(K^1(Y), \mathbf{Z})$ is always surjective, and it is an isomorphism for $Y \subset \mathbf{R}^3$ or $Y = S^n$ but not for $Y \subset \mathbf{R}^4$.

Ext is a $*$ covariant functor from the category of compact metrizable spaces to the category of Abelian groups. It is $*$ homotopy invariant. Define for $n = 0, 1, \dots$ the group $\text{Ext}_{1-n}(Y)$ by $\text{Ext}(S^n Y)$, where $S^n Y$ is the n -fold $*$ suspension. Then we have the **periodicity** $\text{Ext}_{n+2}(Y) \cong \text{Ext}_n(Y)$. Moreover, for each pair of compact metrizable spaces $Y \supset Z$ we have the long exact sequence

$$\text{Ext}_n(Z) \xrightarrow{i_*} \text{Ext}_n(Y) \xrightarrow{p_*} \text{Ext}_n(Y/Z) \xrightarrow{\partial} \text{Ext}_{n-1}(Z) \xrightarrow{i_*} \dots,$$

where Y/Z is the space obtained from Y by collapsing Z to a point and ∂ is $q_* r_*^{-1}$: $\text{Ext}_n(Y/Z) \rightarrow \text{Ext}_n(SZ)$ defined by $q: Y \cup CZ \rightarrow (Y \cup CZ)/Y = SZ$ and $r: Y \cup CZ \rightarrow (Y \cup CZ)/CZ = Y/Z$, CZ being the $*$ cone over Z . Ext_* satisfies the $*$ Eilenberg-Steenrod axioms for homology theory except for the dimension axiom, which is replaced by $\text{Ext}_n(S^0) = \text{Ext}(S^{n-1}) = \mathbf{Z}$ for n even and $= 0$ for n odd.

The von Neumann algebra $B(X)$ is classified as a $*$ factor of type I_∞ . In the case of a factor M of type II_∞ another index theory has been developed by H. Breuer [17] and others replacing $B^{(c)}(X)$ by the closed ideal of M generated by finite projections and using the $*$ semifinite trace on M for the dimensions of kernels and cokernels of operators in M .

K. Spectral Analysis in Banach Spaces

Spectral analysis becomes rather involved for general operators in a Banach space as well as for nonnormal operators in Hilbert space.

For a $*$ compact operator A , the nature of the spectrum $\sigma(A)$ and the structure of A in the root subspace associated with a nonzero eigenvalue are well known (\rightarrow 68 *Compact and*

Nuclear Operators). However, a full spectral analysis may not be possible without further assumptions.

For a $*$ closed operator with nonempty resolvent set $\rho(A)$, an $*$ operational calculus can be developed by means of a function-theoretic method based on the fact that the resolvent $R_\lambda = (\lambda I - A)^{-1}$ is a $B(X)$ -valued holomorphic function of λ in $\rho(A)$. In particular, the $*$ spectral mapping theorem holds (\rightarrow 251 *Linear Operators G*).

A general class of operators having associated spectral resolution was introduced by N. Dunford. Let X be a Banach space. An operator $E \in B(X)$ is called a projection if $E^2 = E$. As before we can define a (projection-valued countably additive) **spectral measure** on \mathcal{B}_c . An operator $A \in B(X)$ is said to be a **spectral operator** if there exists a **spectral measure** E on \mathcal{B}_c satisfying the following properties: (i) $E(M)A = AE(M)$, $M \in \mathcal{B}_c$; (ii) $\sigma(A|_{E(M)X}) \subset \bar{M}$, $M \in \mathcal{B}_c$, where $A|_Y$ is the restriction of A to Y and \bar{M} is the closure of M ; (iii) there exists a $k \geq 0$ such that $\|E(M)\| \leq k$ for all $M \in \mathcal{B}_c$. E is unique. A spectral operator A is expressed as $A = S + N$, where $S = \int_{\mathbf{C}} z E(dz)$ and N is $*$ quasinilpotent. A is said to be a **scalar operator** if $N = 0$. Unbounded spectral operators are defined similarly, with (i') $E(M)A \subset AE(M)$ in place of (i). However, for unbounded spectral operators A we no longer have the decomposition $A = S + N$. (For more details about spectral operators \rightarrow [3]. For other topics related to the material discussed in this section \rightarrow 68 *Compact and Nuclear Operators*; 251 *Linear Operators*; and 287 *Numerical Computation of Eigenvalues*.)

References

- [1] N. I. Akhiezer and I. M. Glazman, *Theory of linear operators in Hilbert space I, II*, Ungar, 1961, 1963. (Original in Russian, 1950.)
- [2] F. Riesz and B. Sz. Nagy, *Functional analysis*, Ungar, 1955. (Original in French, 1952.)
- [3] N. Dunford and J. T. Schwartz, *Linear operators, I, II, III*, Interscience, 1958, 1963, 1971.
- [4] K. Yosida, *Functional analysis*, Springer, 1965.
- [5] T. Kato, *Perturbation theory for linear operators*, Springer, 1966.
- [6] M. Reed and B. Simon, *Methods of modern mathematical physics, Academic Press, I, 1972; II, 1975; III, 1979; IV, 1978*.
- [7] P. R. Halmos, *Introduction to Hilbert space and the theory of spectral multiplicity*, Chelsea, second edition, 1957.

- [8] M. H. Stone, Linear transformations in Hilbert space and their applications to analysis, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1932.
- [9] I. C. Gokhberg (Gohberg) and M. G. Kreĭn, Introduction to the theory of linear non-self-adjoint operators, Amer. Math. Soc., 1969. (Original in Russian, 1965.)
- [10] I. C. Gokhberg (Gohberg) and M. G. Kreĭn, Theory and applications of Volterra operators in Hilbert space, Amer. Math. Soc., 1970. (Original in Russian, 1967.)
- [11] R. G. Douglas, Banach algebra techniques in operator theory, Academic Press, 1972.
- [12] M. F. Atiyah, *K*-theory, Benjamin, 1967.
- [13] M. F. Atiyah, Global theory of elliptic operators, Proc. Intern. Conf. on Functional Analysis and Related Topics, Univ. Tokyo Press, 1970, 21–30.
- [14] L. G. Brown, R. G. Douglas, and P. A. Fillmore, Unitary equivalence modulo the compact operators and extensions of C^* -algebras, Lecture notes in math. 345, Springer, 1973, 58–128.
- [15] L. G. Brown, R. G. Douglas, and P. A. Fillmore, Extensions of C^* -algebras and K -homology, Ann. Math., 105 (1977), 265–324.
- [16] R. G. Douglas, C^* -algebra extensions and K -homology, Ann. math. studies 95, Princeton Univ. Press, 1980.
- [17] M. Breuer, Fredholm theories on von Neumann algebras, Math. Ann., I, 178 (1968), 243–254; II, 180 (1969), 313–325.

391 (VII.21) Spectral Geometry

A. General Remarks

Let E^3 be a Euclidean 3-space with a standard coordinate system (x_1, x_2, x_3) and E^2 be the $x_1 x_2$ -plane. Consider a domain D in E^2 as a vibrating membrane with the fixed boundary ∂D . Then the height $x_3 = F(x_1, x_2, t)$ obeys the differential equation of hyperbolic type, $\partial^2 F(x_1, x_2, t)/\partial t^2 = c^2 \Delta F(x_1, x_2, t)$, where $\Delta = \partial^2/\partial x_1^2 + \partial^2/\partial x_2^2$ denotes the t Laplacian in E^2 and c is a constant (we put $c = 1$ in the following). For solutions of the form $F(x_1, x_2, t) = U(x_1, x_2)V(t)$, U is a solution of the t Dirichlet problem in $D \subset E^2$; $\Delta U + \lambda U = 0$, where λ is a positive constant called an t eigenvalue of Δ . Solutions of the form $F(x_1, x_2, t) = U(x_1, x_2)\sin\sqrt{\lambda}t$ represent the pure tones that the membrane produces as normal modes. That is, the shape of D is related to the possible sounds or vibrations (i.e., to the eigenvalues of Δ) through the Dirichlet problem.

The set of eigenvalues of Δ is called the **spectrum of D** and is denoted by $\text{Spec}(D)$. There arises the question of how much information $\text{Spec}(D)$ can impart about the geometric properties (i.e., the shape, extent, and connectedness) of D . Generally, **spectral geometry** is the study of the relations between the spectrum of domains D of t Riemannian manifolds or compact Riemannian manifolds (M, g) and the geometric properties of D or (M, g) .

B. Spectra

Let $\mathcal{D}^p(M)$ denote the space of smooth $^t p$ -forms on a compact m -dimensional C^∞ -Riemannian manifold (M, g) . Then eigenvalues of the t Laplacian (Laplace-Beltrami operator) Δ acting on $\mathcal{D}^p(M)$ are discretely distributed in $[0, \infty)$, and each multiplicity is finite (\rightarrow 68 Compact and Nuclear Operators, 323 Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type). The **spectrum for p -forms** $\text{Spec}^p(M, g)$ is $\{\lambda_{p,1} \leq \lambda_{p,2} \leq \dots\}$, where each eigenvalue is repeated as many times as its multiplicity indicates. If 0 is an eigenvalue, its multiplicity is equal to the p th t Betti number of M .

In the following, mainly the case $p = 0$ is explained. $\text{Spec}^0(M, g)$ is denoted by $\text{Spec}(M, g)$. 0 is always in $\text{Spec}(M, g)$ and its multiplicity is 1. So we put $\lambda_0 = 0$, and λ_1 is the first nonzero eigenvalue. A geometric meaning of Δf at x for a function f is as follows: If $\{\gamma_h\}_{h=1}^m$ are m geodesics mutually orthogonal at x and parametrized by arc length, then $(\Delta f)(x) = \sum_h (f \circ \gamma_h)''(0)$.

Let $\{\varphi_i\}_{i=0}^\infty$ be an orthonormal basis of $\mathcal{D}^0(M)$ consisting of eigenfunctions: $\Delta \varphi_i + \lambda_i \varphi_i = 0$, $\langle \varphi_i, \varphi_j \rangle = \int_M \varphi_i \varphi_j = \delta_{ij}$. Then the t fundamental solution $E(x, y, t)$ of the heat equation $\Delta - \partial/\partial t = 0$ is given by $E(x, y, t) = \sum_i e^{-\lambda_i t} \varphi_i(x) \otimes \varphi_i(y)$ as a function on $M \times M \times (0, \infty)$. We put $Z(t) = \int_M E(x, x, t) = \sum_i e^{-\lambda_i t}$. $Z(t)$ and $\text{Spec}(M, g)$ are equivalent. The Minakshisundaram-Pleijel **asymptotic expansion of $Z(t)$** ,

$$Z(t) \sim (1/4\pi t)^{m/2} (a_0 + a_1 t + a_2 t^2 + \dots), \quad t \downarrow 0,$$

is the bridge connecting $\text{Spec}(M, g)$ and geometric properties of (M, g) , because a_0, a_1, \dots can be expressed as the integrals of functions over M defined by $g = (g_{ij})$, the components R_{jki}^i of the t Riemannian curvature tensor, and their derivatives of finite order [1]. a_0 is the volume of (M, g) and $a_1 = (1/6) \int_M S$, where S is the t scalar curvature. a_2 was calculated by H. P. McKean, I. M. Singer, and M. Berger, and a_3 by T. Sakai.

Let D be a bounded domain in E^2 or, more generally, a bounded domain in a Riemannian manifold, and assume that the boundary ∂D is piecewise smooth. For smooth functions which

take the value 0 on ∂D , eigenvalues of the Laplacian Δ are discretely distributed in $(0, \infty)$, and each multiplicity is finite. We denote the spectrum of D by $\text{Spec}(D) = \{\lambda_1 < \lambda_2 \leq \dots\}$. The multiplicity of λ_1 is 1, and an eigenfunction f corresponding to λ_1 takes the same sign in D . The behavior of $Z(t) = \sum_i e^{-\lambda_i t}$ for D is different from that for (M, g) since $Z(t)$ reflects the geometric situation of ∂D in this case.

(M, g) and (N, h) , or D_1 and D_2 are called **isospectral** if they have the same spectra.

Examples for which the spectrum is explicitly calculable are as follows: spheres $(S^m, g_0 = \text{canonical})$, real projective spaces (RP^m, g_0) , complex projective spaces (CP^n, J_0, g_0) , $(S^{2n+1}, g_s = \text{suitably deformed from } g_0)$, flat tori, (and for domains D) unit disks, rectangles, equilateral triangles, etc.

C. Congruence and Characterization

Let D_1 and D_2 be bounded domains in E^2 . An open question is whether isospectral D_1, D_2 are congruent. Concerning this, there is M. Kac's paper with the famous title "Can one hear the shape of a drum?" Let D be a bounded domain in E^2 with smooth boundary ∂D . If D has r holes, then

$$Z(t) \sim A(D)/4\pi t - L(\partial D)/4\sqrt{4\pi t} + (1-r)/12, \tag{t \downarrow 0,}$$

holds (A. Pleijel, Kac, P. McKean, I. M. Singer; \rightarrow [7]), where $A(D)$ denotes the area of D and $L(\partial D)$ denotes the length of ∂D . This theorem implies that the area, the length of ∂D , and the number of holes are determined by $\text{Spec}(D)$. In particular, if D_2 is a unit disk, $\text{Spec}(D_1) = \text{Spec}(D_2)$ implies that D_1 and D_2 are congruent. There are some other results on $Z(t)$ for domains D of surfaces in E^m or for domains D in Riemannian manifolds (M, g) .

Two isometric $(M, g), (N, h)$ are isospectral. Concerning the question of whether isospectral $(M, g), (N, h)$ are isometric, there are some counterexamples. The first is the case of two flat tori T^{16} , given by J. Milnor. Examples with nonflat metrics were given by N. Ejiri using warped products and by M. F. Vigneras for surfaces of constant negative curvature. In those examples, M and N are homeomorphic. A. Ikeda showed that there are lens spaces that are isospectral but not homotopy equivalent.

Examples of affirmative cases are as follows: $\text{Spec}(M, g) = \text{Spec}(S^m, g_0), m \leq 6$, implies that (M, g) is isometric to (S^m, g_0) (M. Berger, S. Tanno). The result is the same for $(RP^m, g_0), m \leq 6$. For $n \leq 6, (CP^n, J_0, g_0)$ is characterized by a spectrum among \ast Kählerian manifolds (M, J, g) .

The number of nonisometric flat tori (or more generally, compact flat Riemannian manifolds) with the same spectrum is finite (M. Kneser, T. Sunada).

If one considers spectra for two types of forms, then the situation turns out to be simpler. For example, if $\text{Spec}^p(M, g) = \text{Spec}^p(N, h)$ for $p = 0, 1$, then (M, g) is of constant curvature K if and only if (N, h) is also and $K' = K$ (V. K. Patodi [9]).

D. The First Eigenvalue

The first eigenvalue λ_1 for (M, g) or for a domain D in (M, g) reflects the geometric situation of (M, g) or D . A lower bound of λ_1 given by J. Cheeger is $\lambda_1 \geq h(M)^2/4$, where $h(M)$ is the **isoperimetric constant**, defined by

$$h(M) = \inf\{\text{vol}(S)/\min[\text{vol}(M_1), \text{vol}(M_2)]\},$$

where the inf is taken over all smoothly embedded hypersurfaces S dividing M into two open submanifolds $M_1, M_2, \partial M_1 = \partial M_2 = S$, and vol means the volume. $1/4$ is the best possible estimate.

Let ρ denote the maximum radius of a disk included in a simply connected $D \subset E^2$. Then $\lambda_1 \geq 1/(4\rho^2)$ (W. K. Hayman, R. Osserman).

If (M, g) has \ast Ricci curvature $\geq k > 0$, then $\lambda_1 \geq mk/(m-1)$ holds, and the equality holds if and only if (M, g) is isometric to $(S^m, (1/k)g_0)$ (A. Lichnerowicz, M. Obata). λ_1 can also be estimated from k and the diameter $d(M)$ of M (P. Li, S. T. Yau).

To obtain upper bounds of λ_1 the **minimum principle of λ_1** is useful. We state it only for (M, g) :

$$\lambda_1 = \inf\left\{\frac{\int_M (\nabla f, \nabla f)}{\int_M f^2}\right\},$$

where inf is taken over all piecewise smooth functions f satisfying $\int_M f = 0, f \neq 0$, and $(\ , \)$ denotes the local inner product with respect to g . An upper bound of λ_1 for (M, g) of nonnegative curvature is $\lambda_1 \leq c(m)/d(M)^2$, where $c(m)$ is some constant depending on m (Cheeger).

For (M, g) or D a submanifold of another Riemannian manifold, there exist some estimates of λ_1 in terms of second fundamental forms, etc.

$\lambda_1 \geq j^2/(A(D))$ holds for $D \subset E^2$, and the equality holds if and only if ∂D is a circle (C. Faber, E. Krahn), where j denotes the first zero of the \ast Bessel function J_0 . This estimate is generalized in many directions; for example, for $D \subset (M^2, g)$ in terms of the integral of the Gauss curvature, etc. It is very useful to note that the estimate of λ_1 for D is deeply related to the isoperimetric inequality (\rightarrow 228 Isoperimetric Problems).

E. Hersch Type Theorem

With respect to the first eigenvalue $\lambda_1(g)$ and the volume $\text{Vol}(M, g)$ of (M, g) , $\lambda_1(g) \cdot \text{vol}(M, g)^{2/m}$ is invariant under a change of metric $g \rightarrow c^2 g$ (c is a constant). **Hersch's problem** is stated as follows: Is there a constant $k(M)$ depending on M so that for any Riemannian metric g on M , $\lambda_1(g) \cdot \text{vol}(M, g)^{2/m} \leq k(M)$? J. Hersch proved this for a 2-sphere $M = S^2$ with $k(S^2) = 8\pi$, and in this case the equality holds if and only if g is proportional to the canonical metric g_0 .

The Hersch type theorem holds for an oriented Riemann surface M of genus q with $k(M) = 8\pi(q + 1)$ (P. C. Yang, S. T. Yau). There is no such constant $k(S^m)$ for an m -sphere S^m , $m \geq 3$ (H. Urakawa, H. Muto, S. Tanno).

F. The Multiplicity of λ_i

By a theorem of K. Uhlenbeck each eigenvalue for a Riemannian manifold (M, g) is simple. However, for (S^m, g_0) the first eigenvalue λ_1 is m and its multiplicity is $m + 1$. Furthermore, for some g_s deformed from g_0 , $\lambda_1(g_s)$ of (S^{2n+1}, g_s) has multiplicity $n^2 + 4n + 2$, which is larger than $m + 1$ ($= 2n + 2$).

The multiplicity $m(\lambda_i)$ of the i th eigenvalue λ_i for a Riemann surface of genus q satisfies $m(\lambda_i) \leq 4q + 2i + 1$ (S. Y. Cheng, G. Besson).

G. k th Eigenvalue

The **minimum principle** for λ_k of $\text{Spec}(M, g)$ is stated as follows: Let f_i be an eigenfunction corresponding to λ_i , $0 \leq i \leq k - 1$. Define H_{k-1} to be the set of piecewise smooth functions $f \neq 0$ orthogonal to each f_i , i.e., $\int_M f f_i = 0$. Then

$$\lambda_k = \inf \left\{ \frac{\int_M (\nabla f, \nabla f)}{\int_M f^2} \right\},$$

where \inf is taken over $f \in H_{k-1}$. We have the **minimax principle** for λ_k of the first and second type. We state the second type only:

$$\lambda_k = \inf_{L_{k+1}} \sup_{0 \neq f \in L_{k+1}} \left\{ \frac{\int_M (\nabla f, \nabla f)}{\int_M f^2} \right\},$$

where L_k denotes a k -dimensional linear subspace of $\mathcal{D}^0(M)$. From this, for 1-parameter metrics g_u ($a < u < b$) on M , the continuity of $\lambda_k(g_u)$ with respect to u follows.

H. Courant-Cheng Nodal Domain Theorem

Let f be an eigenfunction on (M, g) or D . The set of all zero points of f is called the **nodal set** of f (or the **nodal curve** of f if $m = 2$). Each connected component of the complement of

the nodal set in (M, g) or D is called a **nodal domain** of f . The nodal set of f is a smooth submanifold of (M, g) or D except for a set of lower dimension. The number of nodal domains of an eigenfunction corresponding to the i th eigenvalue is $\leq i + 1$ for (M, g) and $\leq i$ for D (**Courant-Cheng nodal domain theorem**).

I. Estimate of $N(\lambda)$

$N(\lambda)$ is defined as the number of eigenvalues of (M, g) or D which are less than or equal to λ . For $D \subset E^2$, H. A. Lorentz conjectured that the behavior of $N(\lambda)$ for $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$ does not depend on the shape of D but only on the area $A(D)$ of D , i.e., $\lim_{\lambda \rightarrow \infty} N(\lambda)/\lambda = A(D)/4\pi$. This was proved by H. Weyl. Generally, for D or (M, g) , the behavior of $N(\lambda)$ for $\lambda \rightarrow \infty$ is $\text{vol}(D)\lambda^{m/2}/(4\pi)^{m/2}\Gamma(m/2 + 1)$, and this is related to the first term $\text{vol}(D)/(4\pi t)^{m/2}$ of the asymptotic expansion of $Z(t)$ by † Tauberian and † Abelian theorems.

J. $\text{Spec}(M, g)$ and Geodesics

Let $T^m = E^m/\Gamma$ be a flat torus, Γ being the lattice for T^m . Let Γ^* be the lattice dual to Γ . Then **Poisson's formula**,

$$\sum_{y \in \Gamma^*} e^{-4\pi^2|y|^2 t} = (\text{vol}(T^m)/(4\pi t)^{m/2}) \sum_{x \in \Gamma} e^{-|x|^2/4t},$$

gives a clear relation between $\text{Spec}(T^m) = \{4\pi^2|y|^2, y \in \Gamma^*\}$ and the set $\{|x|, x \in \Gamma\}$ of lengths of closed geodesics on T^m .

If (M, g) satisfies some conditions, then $\text{Spec}(M, g)$ determines the set of lengths of periodic geodesics (Y. Colin de Verdiere), and the spectrum characterizes those Riemannian manifolds whose geodesics are all periodic (J. J. Duistermaat, V. W. Guillemin).

K. $\text{Spec}^p(M, g)$ and the Euler-Poincaré Characteristic

Let (M, g) be oriented and even dimensional. Let $E^p(x, y, t)$ be the † fundamental solution of the † heat equation for p -forms. Corresponding to $Z(t)$ for $\text{Spec}(M, g)$, we get $Z^p(t) = \int_M E^p = \sum_i e^{-\lambda_{p,i} t}$. Then

$$\sum_{p=0}^m (-1)^p Z^p(t) = \sum_{p=0}^m (-1)^p \int_M \text{tr } E^p = \chi(M),$$

where $\chi(M)$ denotes the † Euler-Poincaré characteristic of M (McKean, Singer). On the other hand, the † Gauss-Bonnet theorem is $\chi(M) = \int_M C$, where C is a function on M expressed as a homogeneous polynomial of components of the Riemannian curvature tensor. Then

Patodi proved

$$\sum_{p=0}^m (-1)^p \operatorname{tr} E^p = C + O(t), \quad t \downarrow 0.$$

L. η -Function

Let (X, g) be a compact oriented $4k$ -dimensional Riemannian manifold with boundary $\partial X = Y$ and assume that some neighborhood of Y in (X, g) is isometric to a Riemannian product $Y \times [0, \varepsilon]$. Define an operator B acting on forms of even degree on Y by

$$Bw = (-1)^{k+r+1} (*d - d*)w, \quad w \in \mathcal{D}^{2r}(Y),$$

where $*$ denotes the \dagger Hodge star operator and d denotes exterior differentiation on Y . Then $B^2 = \Delta$ holds. Using the spectrum $\{\mu\}$ of B , we define the η -function by

$$\eta(s) = \sum_{\mu \neq 0} (\operatorname{sgn} \mu) |\mu|^{-s}.$$

$\eta(s)$ is a spectral invariant, and

$$\operatorname{sgn}(X) = \int_X L_k(p_1, \dots, p_k) - \eta(0)$$

holds (Atiyah, Patodi, and Singer [2]), where $\operatorname{sgn}(X)$ is the \dagger signature of the quadratic form defined by the \dagger cup product on the image of $H^{2k}(X, Y)$ in $H^{2k}(X)$, L_k is the k th \dagger Hirzebruch L -polynomial, and p_1, \dots, p_k are the Pontryagin forms of (X, g) .

M. Analytic Torsion

Let χ be a representation of the fundamental group $\pi_1(M)$ of (M, g) by the orthogonal group and E_χ be the associated vector bundle. Let Δ^χ be the Laplacian acting on E_χ -valued p -forms on M and $\{\lambda_{p,i}^\chi\}$ be its spectrum. Then

$$\log T(M, \chi) = \sum_{p=0}^m (-1)^p p \log \frac{d}{ds} \left(\sum_i (\lambda_{p,i}^\chi)^{-s} \right) \Big|_{s=0}$$

is independent of the choice of g . $T(M, \chi)$ is called the **analytic torsion** of M . $T(M, \chi)$ is equal to the $\dagger R$ -torsion $\tau(M, \chi)$ (W. Müller, Cheeger).

N. Concluding Remarks

An \dagger isometry ψ of (M, g) commutes with the Laplacian and induces a linear transformation $\psi_\lambda^\#$ of each eigenspace V_λ . Using the asymptotic expansion of $\sum \operatorname{tr}(\psi_\lambda^\#) e^{-\lambda t}$, the Atiyah-Singer $\dagger G$ -signature theorem has been proved (H. Donnelly, Patodi).

The Atiyah-Singer \dagger index theorem has been proved by using Gilkey's theory and the heat equation (Atiyah, R. Bott, Patodi).

Let (N, h) be a complete Riemannian manifold of negative curvature. Then Δ is extended

to an unbounded self-adjoint operator for $L_2(N)$. Generally Δ has a continuous spectrum. Some conditions for (N, h) to have pure point spectrum were given in terms of curvature (Donnelly, P. Li).

If D is a minimal submanifold of another Riemannian manifold, estimates of λ_1 are related to the stability of D (\rightarrow 275 Minimal Submanifolds).

On the nonexistence of the 1-parameter isospectral deformation $(M, g_0) \rightarrow (M, g_t)$, there are results for (i) $m = 2$ and g_0 of negative curvature, $m \geq 3$ and negatively pinched g_0 (V. Guillemin, D. Kazhdan); (ii) flat metrics g_0 (R. Kuwabara); and (iii) g_0 of constant positive curvature (Tanno).

As for spectral geometry for complex Laplacian on Hermitian manifolds, there are results by P. Gilkey, Tsukada, and others.

References

- [1] M. F. Atiyah, R. Bott, and V. K. Patodi, On the heat equation and the index theorem, *Inventiones Math.*, 19 (1973), 279–330.
- [2] M. F. Atiyah, V. K. Patodi, and I. M. Singer, Spectral asymmetry and Riemannian geometry I, II, III, *Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc.*, 77 (1975), 43–69, 405–432; 79 (1976), 71–99.
- [3] M. Berger, P. Gauduchon and E. Mazet, Le spectre d'une variété riemannienne, *Lecture notes in math.* 194, Springer, 1971.
- [4] J. Cheeger, A lower bound for the smallest eigenvalue of the Laplacian, *Problems in Analysis: Symposium in Honor of Salomon Bochner*, R. C. Gunning (ed.), Princeton Univ. Press, 1970, 175–199.
- [5] P. B. Gilkey, The index theorem and the heat equation, *Publish or Perish*, 1974.
- [6] M. Kac, Can one hear the shape of a drum? *Amer. Math. Monthly*, 73 (April 1966), 1–23.
- [7] H. P. McKean and I. M. Singer, Curvature and eigenvalues of the Laplacian, *J. Differential Geometry*, 1 (1967), 43–69.
- [8] S. Minakshisundaram and A. Pleijel, Some properties of the eigenfunctions of the Laplace operator on Riemannian manifolds, *Canad. J. Math.*, 1 (1949), 242–256.
- [9] V. K. Patodi, Curvature and the fundamental solution of the heat operator, *J. Indian Math. Soc.*, 34 (1970), 269–285.

392 (XX.5) Spherical Astronomy

Spherical astronomy is concerned with the apparent positions of celestial bodies and their

motions on a celestial sphere with center at an observer on the Earth, while 'celestial mechanics is concerned with computing heliocentric true positions of planets and comets and geocentric true positions of satellites. The purpose of spherical astronomy is to find all possible causes of displacement of the apparent positions of celestial bodies on the celestial sphere from their geocentric positions and to study their effects. Atmospheric refraction, geocentric parallax, aberration, annual parallax, precession, nutation, and proper motion are examples of these causes.

When light from a celestial body passes through the Earth's atmosphere, it is refracted since air densities at different heights are different. This phenomenon is called **atmospheric refraction**. The effect of refraction on the apparent direction of the celestial body is a minimum when the body is at its culmination, and vanishes when this coincides with the observer's zenith, while the maximum refraction of 34.5 occurs when the body is at the horizon.

Topocentric positions differ appreciably from geocentric positions for the Moon and planets, since their geocentric distances are not large compared with the radius of the Earth. The difference is largest when the observer is on the equator and the celestial body is at the horizon, and this largest value is called the **geocentric parallax**. The geocentric parallax of the Moon is between 53.9 and 60.2; those of the Sun, Mercury, Venus, Mars, Jupiter, and Saturn are, respectively, 8".64–8".94, 6"–16".5, 5"–32", 3".5–23".5, 1".4–2".1, and 0".8–1".1. For fixed stars geocentric parallaxes can be regarded as zero since the stars are far from the Earth.

The Earth moves in an orbit around the Sun with period of one year (365.2564 days) and rotates around the polar axis, which is inclined at 66°5 to the orbital plane (the **ecliptic**), with period of one day (23 hours, 56 minutes, 4.091 seconds). Therefore the observer on the Earth moves with a speed depending on the latitude (0.465 km/sec on the equator) due to the rotation and moves with an average speed of 29.785 km/sec on the ecliptic. Due to these motions of the observer, apparent directions of celestial bodies are displaced from their geometric directions. Displacement due to the rotation is called **diurnal aberration**, and that due to the orbital motion, **annual aberration**. The effect of diurnal aberration is between 0" and 0".32 and varies with a period of one day, while that of the annual aberration is between 0" and 20".496 and varies with a period of one year. Moreover, to compute the positions of celestial bodies, the travel time of light to the observer should be taken into account.

Annual parallax for a fixed star is half the difference of its apparent directions, which are measured at the ends of a diameter perpendicular to the direction of the star from the orbit of the Earth. The effect of the annual parallax varies with a period of one year. However, except for nearby stars, it is not necessary to take this effect into account when computing apparent positions.

The pole of the Earth on the celestial sphere moves on a circle around the pole of the ecliptic due to the gravitational attraction of the Moon, Sun, and planets, and therefore the equinox moves clockwise on the ecliptic. Because the resultant of the attractive force of the Moon, Sun, and planets changes periodically, the motion of the equinox is not uniform. Therefore the motion is expressed as the sum of secular motion, called **precession**, and periodic motion, called **nutation**. Since the positions of fixed stars on the celestial sphere are measured with respect to the equator and the equinox, their right ascensions and declinations are continuously changing because of precession and nutation.

Since the stars are not fixed in space but themselves have **proper motions**, their positions on the celestial sphere are continuously changing.

Spherical astronomy also includes predictions of solar and lunar eclipses, the theory of orbit determination to compute apparent positions of celestial bodies in the solar system by use of orbital elements, and the computation of ephemerides for the Sun, Moon, planets, and fixed stars. Practical astronomy, which develops theories and methods of observation by use of meridian circles, transit instruments, zenith telescopes, sextants, theodolites, telescopes with equatorial mountings, and astronomical clocks, and navigational astronomy, which deals with methods for determining the positions of ships and aircraft, are closely connected to spherical astronomy.

It should be noted that recently radar has been used to measure distances to the Moon and planets accurately, a contribution to determining the size of the solar system with precision.

References

- [1] W. Chauvenet, *A manual of spherical and practical astronomy* I, II, Dover, 1960.
- [2] S. Newcomb, *A compendium of spherical astronomy*, Dover, 1960.
- [3] W. M. Smart, *Textbook on spherical astronomy*, Cambridge Univ. Press, fifth edition, 1965.

[4] E. W. Woolard and G. M. Clemence,
Spherical astronomy, Academic Press, 1966.

393 (XIV.6) Spherical Functions

A. Spherical Functions

The term *spherical functions* in modern terminology means a certain family of functions on \dagger symmetric Riemannian spaces obtained as simultaneous \dagger eigenfunctions of certain integral operations (\rightarrow 437 Unitary Representations). In this article, however, we explain only the classical theory of **Laplace's spherical functions** with respect to the rotation group in 3-dimensional space.

Solutions of \dagger Laplace's equation $\Delta V = 0$ that are homogeneous polynomials of degree n with respect to the orthogonal coordinates x, y, z are called **solid harmonics** of degree n . If n is a positive integer, there are $2n+1$ linearly independent solid harmonics of degree n . In \dagger polar coordinates (r, θ, φ) they are of the form $r^n Y_n(\theta, \varphi)$, where $Y_n(\theta, \varphi)$, the **surface harmonic** of degree n , satisfies the differential equation

$$\frac{1}{\sin \theta} \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta} \left(\sin \theta \frac{\partial Y_n}{\partial \theta} \right) + \frac{1}{\sin^2 \theta} \frac{\partial^2 Y_n}{\partial \varphi^2} + n(n+1) Y_n = 0.$$

Here, if we apply \dagger separation of variables to θ and φ and put $z = \cos \theta$, then the component in φ is represented by trigonometric functions, and the other component in θ reduces to a solution of **Legendre's associated differential equation**

$$(1-z^2) \frac{d^2 w}{dz^2} - 2z \frac{dw}{dz} + \left(n(n+1) - \frac{m^2}{1-z^2} \right) w = 0. \quad (1)$$

B. Legendre Functions

With $m=0$ in (1) and n replaced by an arbitrary complex number ν , the equation is reduced to **Legendre's differential equation**

$$(1-z^2) \frac{d^2 w}{dz^2} - 2z \frac{dw}{dz} + \nu(\nu+1)w = 0, \quad (2)$$

whose fundamental solutions are represented by

$$P_\nu(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \oint_{(1+, z+)} \frac{(\zeta^2 - 1)^\nu}{2^\nu (z - \zeta)^{\nu+1}} d\zeta, \quad (3)$$

$$Q_\nu(z) = \frac{1}{4i \sin \nu \pi} \oint_{(1+, -1+)} \frac{(\zeta^2 - 1)^\nu}{2^\nu (z - \zeta)^{\nu+1}} d\zeta, \quad (4)$$

where the contour of integration in (3) is a closed curve with positive direction on the ζ -plane, avoiding the half-line $(-\infty, -1)$, and admitting 1 and z as inner points of the domain it bounds, whereas the contour in (4) is a closed ∞ -shaped curve encircling the point 1 once in the negative direction and the point -1 once in the positive direction. The functions $P_\nu(z)$ and $Q_\nu(z)$ are called **Legendre functions of the first and second kind**, respectively. The integral representation (3) is **Schl\"afli's integral representation**. If $\text{Re}(\nu+1) > 0$, we can deform the contour of integration and obtain

$$Q_\nu(z) = \frac{1}{2^{\nu+1}} \int_{-1}^1 \frac{(1-\zeta^2)^\nu}{(z-\zeta)^{\nu+1}} d\zeta. \quad (5)$$

If ν is an integer, it is convenient to use the representation (5).

From (3)–(5), we can obtain the recurrence formulas for Legendre functions of distinct degrees. The recurrence formulas for $P_\nu(z)$ and $Q_\nu(z)$ have exactly the same form (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 18.II). Expanding the integrand in (3) and (4) with respect to $z-1$ and ζ/z , the following identities are obtained:

$$P_\nu(z) = F\left(\nu+1, -\nu, 1, \frac{1-z}{2}\right), \quad |1-z| < 2,$$

$$Q_\nu(z) = \frac{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma(\nu+1)}{(2z)^{\nu+1} \Gamma(\nu+3/2)} \times F\left(\frac{\nu+1}{2}, \frac{\nu+2}{2}, \nu+2, \frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{z^2}\right),$$

$$|z| > 1, |\arg z| < \pi,$$

where $F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma, z)$ is the \dagger hypergeometric function. These expansions are the solutions in series of Legendre's differential equation in the neighborhood of the \dagger regular singular points $z=1$ and ∞ , respectively (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 18.II).

If ν is a positive integer, since $\zeta=1$ is not a \dagger branch point in (3), $P_n(z)$ is represented by **Rodrigues's formula**

$$P_n(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \oint \frac{(\zeta^2 - 1)^n}{2^n (z - \zeta)^{n+1}} d\zeta$$

$$= \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dz^n} (z^2 - 1)^n. \quad (6)$$

In this case, $P_n(z)$ is a polynomial of degree n such that

$$P_n(z) = \sum_{r=0}^{[n/2]} (-1)^r \frac{(2n-2r)!}{2^n r! (n-r)! (n-2r)!} z^{n-2r},$$

$$P_0(z) = 1,$$

which is called the **Legendre polynomial** (Legendre, 1784). The \dagger generating function for the

Legendre polynomials is $(1 - 2\rho \cos \theta + \rho^2)^{-1/2}$, whose expansion with respect to ρ is of the form $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} P_n(z) \rho^n$, $z = \cos \theta$. Here the †generating function $(1 - 2\rho \cos \theta + \rho^2)^{-1/2}$ is the inverse of the distance between two points (ρ, θ) and $(1, 0)$ in polar coordinates. Hence $P_n(z)$ is also called the **Legendre coefficient**. If z is real, $\{(2n+1)/2\}^{1/2} P_n(z)\}_{n=0}^{\infty}$ constitutes an orthonormal system on $[-1, 1]$ (\rightarrow 317 Orthogonal Functions). The n zeros of $P_n(z)$ are all real, simple, and lie in $(-1, 1)$. For sufficiently large n , we have

$$P_n(\cos \theta) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{n\pi \sin \theta}} \sin \left(\left(n + \frac{1}{2} \right) \theta + \frac{\pi}{4} \right) + O(1/n^{3/2}),$$

$$Q_n(\cos \theta) = \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2\pi \sin \theta}} \cos \left(\left(n + \frac{1}{2} \right) \theta + \frac{\pi}{4} \right) + O(1/n^{3/2})$$

as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

C. Associated Legendre Functions

For any positive integer m , the functions

$$P_v^m(z) = (1 - z^2)^{m/2} d^m P_v(z) / dz^m,$$

$$Q_v^m(z) = (1 - z^2)^{m/2} d^m Q_v(z) / dz^m$$

are called the **associated Legendre functions of the first and second kind**, respectively. This definition, due to N. M. Ferrers, is convenient for the case $-1 < z < 1$. For arbitrary complex z in a domain G obtained by deleting the segment $[-1, 1]$ from the complex plane, the following definition, due to H. E. Heine and E. W. Hobson, is used:

$$P_v^m(z) = (z^2 - 1)^{m/2} d^m P_v(z) / dz^m,$$

$$Q_v^m(z) = (z^2 - 1)^{m/2} d^m Q_v(z) / dz^m.$$

The associated Legendre functions satisfy the associated Legendre differential equation (1). In particular, for $v = n$ (a positive integer) and $z = x$ (real),

$$\{(2n+1)(n-m)!/2(n+m)!\}^{1/2} P_n^m(z),$$

$$n = 0, 1, \dots, m = \text{constant},$$

constitute an orthonormal system on $[-1, 1]$.

The **addition theorem** for the Legendre functions is

$$P_n \left(z_1 z_2 \pm \sqrt{\pm(1-z_1^2)} \sqrt{\pm(1-z_2^2)} \cos \varphi \right)$$

$$= P_n(z_1) P_n(z_2) + 2 \sum_{m=1}^n \frac{(n-m)!}{(n+m)!} P_n^m(z_1)$$

$$\times P_n^m(z_2) \cos m\varphi,$$

where the equality with the plus sign was

obtained by Ferrers and that with the minus sign by Heine and Hobson.

D. Surface Harmonics

From the considerations so far for the surface harmonics $Y_n(\theta, \varphi)$, $2n+1$ independent solutions

$$P_n(\cos \theta), \quad P_n^m(\cos \theta) \sin m\varphi,$$

$$q P_n^m(\cos \theta) \cos m\varphi, \quad 1 \leq m \leq n,$$

are obtained. Since $P_n(\cos \theta)$ vanishes on n latitudes of the unit sphere, and $P_n^m(\cos \theta) \cdot \cos m\varphi$ and $P_n^m(\cos \theta) \sin m\varphi$ vanish on $n-m$ latitudes and m longitudes of the unit sphere, respectively, the former functions are called **zonal harmonics** and the latter, **tesseral harmonics**. The general form of surface harmonics Y_n of order n is given by a linear combination of zonal and tesseral harmonics:

$$Y_n(\theta, \varphi) = A_{n,0} P_n(\cos \theta)$$

$$+ \sum_{m=1}^n (A_{n,m} \cos m\varphi + B_{n,m} \sin m\varphi) P_n^m(\cos \theta). \quad (7)$$

Expressing two surface harmonics $Y_n^{(1)}$ and $Y_l^{(2)}$ in linear combinations such as (7), the following orthogonality relations hold:

$$\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \int_0^{\pi} Y_n^{(1)}(\theta, \varphi) Y_l^{(2)}(\theta, \varphi) \sin \theta d\theta d\varphi$$

$$= \delta_{n,l} \frac{4\pi}{2n+1} \left(A_{n,0}^{(1)} A_{n,0}^{(2)} \right.$$

$$\left. + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{m=1}^n \frac{(n+m)!}{(n-m)!} (A_{n,m}^{(1)} A_{n,m}^{(2)} + B_{n,m}^{(1)} B_{n,m}^{(2)}) \right).$$

Since the family of all zonal and tesseral harmonics constitutes a †complete orthogonal system, it is possible to expand a function $f(\theta, \varphi)$ on the sphere into an orthogonal series:

$$f(\theta, \varphi) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} Y_n(\theta, \varphi)$$

$$= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left(A_{n,0} P_n(\cos \theta) + \sum_{m=1}^n (A_{n,m} \cos m\varphi \right.$$

$$\left. + B_{n,m} \sin m\varphi) P_n^m(\cos \theta) \right).$$

To obtain surface harmonics, the following method is effective. Let v be a direction proportional to the direction cosines l, m, n . Then a function

$$\left(l \frac{\partial}{\partial x} + m \frac{\partial}{\partial y} + n \frac{\partial}{\partial z} \right) \frac{1}{r} = \alpha \frac{\partial}{\partial v} \left(\frac{1}{r} \right),$$

$$\alpha = \sqrt{l^2 + m^2 + n^2}$$

is a solution of Laplace's equation. Physically, this corresponds to a †potential of double pole with moment α and direction v . A more gen-

eral multipole potential

$$V=c\left(\prod_{i=1}^n\alpha_i\frac{\partial}{\partial v_i}\right)\left(\frac{1}{r}\right)$$

also satisfies Laplace's equation. If we put $V=U_n(x,y,z)r^{-2n-1}$, U_n is a spherical function of order n (**Maxwell's theorem**). Various spherical functions correspond to particular directions v_i . For example, if every v_i is equal to z , we have zonal harmonics; and if $n-m$ of the v_i are equal to z and m of the v_i are symmetric on the xy -plane, we obtain tesseral harmonics. Let γ be an angle between two segments connecting the origin to the points (r,θ,φ) and (r',θ',φ') in polar coordinates. Then $\cos\gamma=\cos\theta\cos\theta'+\sin\theta\sin\theta'\cos(\varphi-\varphi')$, and if we choose the line connecting the origin to a point (r',θ',φ') as the axis defining P_n , we have

$$P_n(\cos\gamma)=(-1)^n\frac{r^{n+1}}{n!}\left(\frac{x'}{r'}\frac{\partial}{\partial x}+\frac{y'}{r'}\frac{\partial}{\partial y}+\frac{z'}{r'}\frac{\partial}{\partial z}\right)^n\left(\frac{1}{r}\right).$$

These are called **biaxial spherical harmonics**, which can also be represented (by the addition theorem) by means of spherical harmonics with respect to each axis.

E. Extension of the Legendre Functions

We extend the associated functions with positive integer m to any number m . First, if m is a negative integer, we put

$$P_v^{-m}(z)=(1-z^2)^{-m/2}\int_1^zd\zeta_m\int_1^{\zeta_m}d\zeta_{m-1}\dots\times\int_1^{\zeta_3}d\zeta_2\int_1^{\zeta_2}P_v(\zeta_1)d\zeta_1,$$
$$Q_v^{-m}(z)=(1-z^2)^{-m/2}\int_\infty^zd\zeta_m\int_\infty^{\zeta_m}d\zeta_{m-1}\dots\times\int_\infty^{\zeta_3}d\zeta_2\int_\infty^{\zeta_2}Q_v(\zeta_1)d\zeta_1,$$

a definition due to Ferrers. Then

$$P_v^{-m}(z)=(-1)^m\frac{\Gamma(v-m+1)}{\Gamma(v+m+1)}P_v^m(z),$$
$$Q_v^{-m}(z)=(-1)^m\frac{\Gamma(v-m+1)}{\Gamma(v+m+1)}Q_v^m(z).$$

When we use the definition due to Heine and Hobson, the factor $(-1)^m$ in these formulas is excluded. Two fundamental solutions, called **hypergeometric functions of the hyperspherical differential equation**

$$(1-z^2)d^2w/dz^2-2(\mu+1)zdw/dz+(v-\mu)(v+\mu+1)w=0,$$

are

$$P_{v-\mu}^{(\mu,\mu)}(z)=\frac{e^{-v\pi i}}{2^{v-\mu}4\pi\sin v\pi}\times\oint_{(z+,1+,z-,1-)}\frac{(\zeta^2-1)^v}{(\zeta-2)^{v+\mu+1}}d\zeta,$$
$$Q_{v-\mu}^{(\mu,\mu)}(z)=\frac{e^{(1+v)\pi i}}{2^{v-\mu}4i\sin v\pi}\oint_{(-1+,1-)}\frac{(\zeta^2-1)^v}{(\zeta-z)^{v+\mu+1}}d\zeta,$$

where the contour of integration for the latter integral is a curve encircling the point -1 once in the positive direction and the point 1 once in the negative direction. Then the associated Legendre functions for an arbitrary number μ are defined as follows:

$$P_v^\mu(z)=\frac{\Gamma(v+\mu+1)}{2^\mu\Gamma(v+1)}(z^2-1)^{\mu/2}P_{v-\mu}^{(\mu,\mu)}(z),$$
$$Q_v^\mu(z)=\frac{\Gamma(v+\mu+1)}{2^\mu\Gamma(v+1)}(z^2-1)^{\mu/2}Q_{v-\mu}^{(\mu,\mu)}(z).$$

If $v-\mu$ is a positive integer, $P_{v-\mu}^{(\mu,\mu)}$ is called the **Gegenbauer polynomial**, also denoted by $C_{v-\mu}(z)$. The $C_{v-\mu}(z)$ are obtained as coefficients of the expansion of the generating function $(1-2hz+z^2)^{-(2\mu+1)/2}$ (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 20.I).

For spherical functions of several variables there is an investigation by P. Appell and J. Kempé de Fériet [2] (\rightarrow 206 Hypergeometric Functions D).

References

[1] E. W. Hobson, The theory of spherical and ellipsoidal harmonics, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1931 (Chelsea, 1955).
[2] P. Appell and J. Kempé de Fériet, Fonctions hypergéométriques et hypersphériques, polynomes d'Hermite, Gauthier-Villars, 1926.
[3] C. Müller, Spherical harmonics, Lecture notes in math. 7, Springer, 1967.
[4] T. MacRobert, Spherical harmonics, Snedden, third revised edition, 1967.
Also \rightarrow references to 206 Hypergeometric Functions, 389 Special Functions.

394 (XIII.13)
Stability

A. General Remarks

Stability was originally a concept concerned with stationary physical states. When a state is affected by a small disturbance, this state is said to be **stable** if the disturbance subsequently remains small, and **unstable** if the dis-

turbance gradually increases. For instance, consider a rod placed in the Earth's gravitational field with one end fixed at a point around which the rod can rotate freely. When the rod is placed vertically, this state is stationary. It is stable if the rod is hanging down from the fixed end, and unstable if it is standing on the fixed end. In physical systems only the stable state is practically realizable, so this distinction is important.

The concept of stability is used not only in relation to physical states but also in many other fields of science. We shall restrict ourselves to stability of solutions of differential equations. There, the term *stability* is used in the sense that a small change in the initial values results in a small change in the solution. As long as the solution is considered within a finite interval of the independent variable, this stability is naturally guaranteed by the continuity of the solution with respect to its initial values (\rightarrow 316 Ordinary Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems)). The problem arises when an independent variable moves over an unbounded interval.

Let $(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \mathbf{x}$, $(x_1(t), \dots, x_n(t)) = \mathbf{x}(t)$, $(x'_1(t), \dots, x'_n(t)) = \mathbf{x}'(t)$ (the symbol ' means differentiation by t), and $|\mathbf{x}| = \sum_{j=1}^n |x_j|$. Consider the differential equation

$$\mathbf{x}' = \mathbf{f}(t, \mathbf{x}), \quad (1)$$

for which the existence and uniqueness of the solution of the initial value problem is assumed for $|t| < \infty$, $|\mathbf{x}| < \infty$. Let $\mathbf{x} = \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ be a solution of (1). If for any $\varepsilon > 0$ and t_0 , a $\delta > 0$ can be chosen so that $|\mathbf{x}(t_0) - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t_0)| < \delta$ implies $|\mathbf{x}(t) - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)| < \varepsilon$ for $t_0 \leq t < \infty$ ($-\infty < t \leq t_0$), where $\mathbf{x}(t)$ is any solution of (1), then $\mathbf{x} = \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is said to be **(Lyapunov) stable in the positive (negative) direction**. If it is stable both in the positive and negative directions, it is said to be **stable in both directions**. In the remainder of this article we will consider stability in the positive direction only. Corresponding assertions for stability in the negative direction can be obtained by reversing the sign of t .

B. Classification

We denote by $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}(t, t_0, \mathbf{x}_0)$ a solution of (1) such that $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}_0$ at $t = t_0$.

Suppose a solution $\mathbf{x} = \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is stable. If for any t_0 there exists a $\zeta > 0$ such that $|\mathbf{x}(t, t_0, \mathbf{x}_0) - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)| \rightarrow 0$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$ for any $\mathbf{x}(t_0, \mathbf{x}_0)$ with $|\mathbf{x}_0 - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t_0)| < \zeta$, $\boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is said to be **asymptotically stable**.

If a constant δ in the definition of stability can be chosen independently of t_0 , $\boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is said to be **uniformly stable**. When equation (1)

is autonomous, stability implies uniform stability.

If (1) $\boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is uniformly stable and (2) for any t_0 and $\eta > 0$, there exist a $\zeta > 0$ independent of t_0 and a $T > 0$ independent of t_0 such that $|\mathbf{x}_0 - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t_0)| < \zeta$ and $t > t_0 + T$ imply $|\mathbf{x}(t, t_0, \mathbf{x}_0) - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)| < \eta$, then $\boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is said to be **uniformly asymptotically stable**.

Suppose that there exists a positive number λ with the following property: For any t_0 and $\varepsilon > 0$ one can take a $\delta(\varepsilon) > 0$ such that $|\mathbf{x}_0 - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t_0)| < \delta(\varepsilon)$ implies $|\mathbf{x}(t, t_0, \mathbf{x}_0) - \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)| < \varepsilon e^{-\lambda(t-t_0)}$ for $t \geq t_0$. Then $\boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is said to be **exponentially stable**. Exponential stability implies uniform asymptotic stability.

C. Criteria

To deal with the stability of $\mathbf{x} = \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$, we need consider only the case $\boldsymbol{\varphi}(t) \equiv \mathbf{0}$, since the transformation $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{y} + \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ reduces equation (1) to

$$\mathbf{y}' = \mathbf{f}(t, \mathbf{y} + \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)) - \mathbf{f}(t, \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)) = \mathbf{F}(t, \mathbf{y}),$$

$$\mathbf{F}(t, \mathbf{0}) = \mathbf{0}, \quad (2)$$

and thus $\mathbf{x} = \boldsymbol{\varphi}(t)$ is transformed into $\mathbf{y} \equiv \mathbf{0}$. If \mathbf{F} is continuously differentiable with respect to \mathbf{y} , (2) can be written in the form

$$\mathbf{y}' = \mathbf{F}_y(t, \mathbf{0})\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{g}(t, \mathbf{y}), \quad \mathbf{g}(t, \mathbf{y}) = o(|\mathbf{y}|).$$

The linear part of this equation,

$$\mathbf{y}' = \mathbf{F}_y(t, \mathbf{0})\mathbf{y},$$

is called the **variational equation** for (1). So, in this section, we can state several criteria for stability of the null solution $\mathbf{y} \equiv \mathbf{0}$ of the equation

$$\mathbf{y}' = P(t)\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{g}(t, \mathbf{y}), \quad |\mathbf{g}(t, \mathbf{y})| = o(|\mathbf{y}|). \quad (3)$$

(I) If (3) is linear (i.e., $\mathbf{g}(t, \mathbf{y}) \equiv \mathbf{0}$), then $\mathbf{y} \equiv \mathbf{0}$ is stable if and only if every solution of (3) is bounded as $t \rightarrow \infty$.

(II) If (3) is linear, uniform asymptotic stability implies exponential stability.

Let $f(t, \mathbf{y})$ be a function defined for $|\mathbf{y}| < \rho$, $t > \alpha$. If there exists a continuous function $w(\mathbf{y})$ such that $w(\mathbf{0}) = 0$, $w(\mathbf{y}) > 0$ ($\mathbf{y} \neq \mathbf{0}$), $f(t, \mathbf{y}) \geq w(\mathbf{y})$ ($|\mathbf{y}| < \rho$, $t > \alpha$), then $f(t, \mathbf{y})$ is said to be **positive definite**. If $-f(t, \mathbf{y})$ is positive definite, then $f(t, \mathbf{y})$ is said to be **negative definite**.

(III) The existence of a **Lyapunov function** $V(t, \mathbf{y})$ with the following properties implies the stability of $\mathbf{y} \equiv \mathbf{0}$: (i) $V(t, \mathbf{y})$ is positive definite and differentiable, (ii) $V(t, \mathbf{0}) = 0$, (iii) $\dot{V}(t, \mathbf{y}) = V_t + V_y \cdot (P(t)\mathbf{y} + \mathbf{g}(t, \mathbf{y})) \leq 0$.

The existence of $V(t, \mathbf{y})$ with the following properties implies the uniform asymptotic stability of $\mathbf{y} \equiv \mathbf{0}$: (i) same as (i) above, (ii) there exists a continuous function $v(\mathbf{y})$ such that

$v(0)=0$, $v(y)>0$ ($y\neq 0$), $V(t,y)\leq v(y)$, (iii) $\dot{V}(t,y)$ is negative definite.

Hereafter we shall assume that $|g(t,y)|=o(|y|)$ as $y\rightarrow 0$ uniformly with respect to t .

(IV) If $P(t)$ is a constant matrix all of whose \dagger eigenvalues have negative real parts, then $y\equiv 0$ is asymptotically stable [3, 4].

(V) Let $P(t)$ be continuous and periodic with period T and Z be a \dagger fundamental system of solutions of the variational equation

$$z' = P(t)z. \quad (4)$$

Then there exists a constant matrix C such that $Z(t+T)=Z(t)C$. Let $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_n$ be the eigenvalues of C . Then the numbers $\mu_k = (\log \lambda_k)/T$ ($k=1, \dots, n$) are called the **characteristic exponents** of (4). Obviously they are determined up to integral multiples of $2\pi i/T$. If the real parts of the characteristic exponents are all negative, then $y\equiv 0$ is asymptotically stable [3, 4].

(VI) If $f(t, x)$ in (1) is periodic in t with period T and (1) admits a periodic solution $x=\varphi(t)$ with period T , then (1) can be reduced to (3) by putting $x=y+\varphi(t)$, and $P(t)$, $g(t, y)$ are both periodic in t with period T . Thus criterion (V) can be applied as a stability criterion for the periodic solution of (1). There are many other criteria for various particular forms of the equation (\rightarrow 290 Nonlinear Oscillation). For the \dagger autonomous case where $f(t, x)$ is of the form $p(x)$ or $p(x)+q(t)$ with $q(t+T)=q(t)$, many results have been found.

(VII) If the solution $z\equiv 0$ of

$$z' = P(t)z$$

is uniformly asymptotically stable, then the solution $y\equiv 0$ of (3) is also uniformly asymptotically stable [4].

D. Conditional Stability

Let $\varphi(t)$ be a solution and \mathfrak{F} a family of solutions of (1). If for any $\varepsilon>0$, a $\delta>0$ can be determined so that $|x(t_0)-\varphi(t_0)|<\delta$ implies $|x(t)-\varphi(t)|<\varepsilon$ for $t_0\leq t<\infty$ for any solution $x(t)$ in \mathfrak{F} , then $\varphi(t)$ is said to be stable with respect to the family \mathfrak{F} . If a family \mathfrak{F} can be found so that a solution is stable with respect to \mathfrak{F} , the solution is said to be **conditionally stable**. For instance, in equation (3), if $P(t)$ is a constant matrix some of whose eigenvalues have negative real parts, $g(t, y)$ is differentiable with respect to y , and $g_y(t, y)=o(1)$ uniformly in t as $y\rightarrow 0$, then $y\equiv 0$ is conditionally stable.

We now mention a weaker kind of stability called orbital stability. Let $\varphi(t)$ be a solution and ε any positive number. If there can be found a positive number δ such that for

any solution $x(t)$ with $|x(t_1)-\varphi(t_0)|<\delta$ for some t_0 and t_1 , $\bigcup_{t_1\leq t<\infty} x(t)$ belongs to the ε -neighborhood of $\bigcup_{t_0\leq t<\infty} \varphi(t)$, then $\varphi(t)$ is said to have **orbital stability**.

When $f(t, x)$ in equation (1) is independent of t , (1) is often called a \dagger dynamical system. In the theory of dynamical systems, not merely the stability of a solution itself but also the stability of a closed invariant set is of importance (\rightarrow 126 Dynamical Systems).

It is also of importance to investigate the change in solution caused by a small change in the right-hand member of the equation. Suppose, for instance, that the right-hand member of the equation depends continuously on a parameter ε . Then the question arises as to how the solution changes if ε changes. The theory of such problems is called \dagger perturbation theory. Suppose that the equation

$$x' = f(t, x, \varepsilon)$$

admits a periodic solution $\varphi(t)$ for $\varepsilon=0$. Then $\varphi(t)$ is said to be stable under perturbation if for $\varepsilon\neq 0$ the same equation admits a periodic solution lying near $\varphi(t)$. In \dagger celestial mechanics and \dagger nonlinear oscillation theory this concept plays an important role.

References

- [1] R. E. Bellman, Stability theory of differential equations, McGraw-Hill, 1953.
- [2] L. Cesari, Asymptotic behavior and stability problems in ordinary differential equations, Springer, third edition, 1971.
- [3] E. A. Coddington and N. Levinson, Theory of ordinary differential equations, McGraw-Hill, 1955.
- [4] S. Lefschetz, Differential equations, geometric theory, Interscience, 1957.
- [5] A. Lyapunov (Ljapunov), Problème général de la stabilité du mouvement, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1947.
- [6] V. V. Nemytskii (Nemyckii) and V. V. Stepanov, Qualitative theory of differential equations, Princeton Univ. Press, 1960. (Original in Russian, 1947.)
- [7] O. Perron, Über eine Matrixtransformation, Math. Z., 32 (1930), 465–473.
- [8] O. Perron, Die Stabilitätsfrage bei Differentialgleichungen, Math. Z., 32 (1930), 703–728.
- [9] A. Halanay, Differential equations, stability, oscillations, time lags, Academic Press, 1966.
- [10] T. Yoshizawa, Stability theory by Ljapunov's second method, Publ. Math. Soc. Japan, 1966.

395 (XVII.12) Stationary Processes

A. Definitions

Stationary process is a general name given to all †stochastic processes (\rightarrow 407 Stochastic Processes) that have the property of being stationary (to be defined in the next paragraph) under a shift of a time parameter t that extends over T , which is either the set of all real numbers \mathbf{R} (a continuous parameter) or the set of all integers \mathbf{Z} (a discrete parameter).

Let $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ be a †probability space and $\{X_t(\omega)\}$ ($t \in T, \omega \in \Omega$) a complex-valued †stochastic process. If for every n , every $t_1, t_2, \dots, t_n \in T$, and every †Borel subset E_n of complex n -dimensional space C^n , the equality

$$\begin{aligned} P((X_{t_1+t}, \dots, X_{t_n+t}) \in E_n) \\ = P((X_{t_1}, \dots, X_{t_n}) \in E_n) \end{aligned} \quad (1)$$

holds, then $\{X_t\}$ is called a **strongly** (or **strictly**) **stationary process**; while if $E(|X_t|^2)$ is finite for every t , and if the †moments up to the second order are stationary, i.e., if

$$\begin{aligned} E(X_{t+h}) &= E(X_t), \\ E(X_{t+h} \bar{X}_{s+h}) &= E(X_t \bar{X}_s), \end{aligned} \quad (2)$$

then $\{X_t\}$ is called a **weakly stationary process** or a **stationary process in the wider sense**. The “stationary” in the latter sense obviously includes the former if $E(|X_t|^2) < \infty$. Condition (2) is equivalent to

$$\begin{aligned} E(X_t) &= m \quad (\text{a constant independent of } t), \\ E((X_t - m)(\bar{X}_s - \bar{m})) &= \rho(t - s) \\ &\quad (\text{a function of } t - s). \end{aligned} \quad (3)$$

We call m and $\rho(t)$ the **mean** and the **covariance function** of $\{X_t\}$.

In the continuous parameter case, we assume †continuity in probability,

$$\lim_{h \rightarrow 0} P(|X_{t+h} - X_t| > \varepsilon) = 0, \quad \varepsilon > 0,$$

for a strongly stationary process, and continuity in mean square,

$$\lim_{h \rightarrow 0} E(|X_{t+h} - X_t|^2) = 0,$$

for a weakly stationary process. The latter assumption is equivalent to continuity of the covariance function $\rho(t)$.

A †Gaussian process is strongly stationary if and only if it is weakly stationary; and so it is simply called a †stationary Gaussian process. Such processes constitute a typical class of stationary processes (\rightarrow 176 Gaussian Processes C).

B. Spectral Decomposition of Weakly Stationary Processes

The covariance function $\rho(t)$ is obviously †positive definite and continuous. Therefore, by †Bochner's theorem, we have the †spectral decomposition of $\rho(t)$:

$$\rho(t) = \int_{T'} e^{i\lambda t} F(d\lambda), \quad (4)$$

where T' is either \mathbf{R} (when $T = \mathbf{R}$) or $[-\pi, \pi]$ (when $T = \mathbf{Z}$) and F is a bounded measure on T' . The decomposition (4) is called the **Khinchin decomposition** of $\rho(t)$, and $F(d\lambda)$ is called the **spectral measure**. If the process $\{X_t\}$ is real-valued, then the spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$ is symmetric with respect to the origin.

To obtain the spectral decomposition of a weakly stationary process X_t itself, we introduce the †Hilbert space $L_2(\Omega)$ (where $\Omega = \Omega(\mathfrak{B}, P)$ is the basic probability space on which each X_t is regarded as a †square integrable function). Let $\mathfrak{M}(X)$ be the subspace of $L_2(\Omega)$ spanned by the X_t ($t \in T$) and the constant function 1. Since $\{X_t\}$ is weakly stationary, we can define a one-parameter group of †unitary operators U_t ($t \in T$) determined by $U_t X_s = X_{t+s}$ and $U_t 1 = 1$. By †Stone's theorem we have the spectral decomposition of U_t :

$$U_t = \int_{T'} e^{i\lambda t} E(d\lambda). \quad (5)$$

Setting $M(\Lambda) = E(\Lambda)(X_0 - m)$, we obtain the **spectral decomposition** of X_t :

$$X_t = U_t X_0 = m + \int_{T'} e^{i\lambda t} M(d\lambda). \quad (6)$$

We also have

$$\begin{aligned} (M(\Lambda), 1) &= 0, \\ (M(\Lambda_1), M(\Lambda_2)) &= F(\Lambda_1 \cap \Lambda_2). \end{aligned} \quad (7)$$

The study of weakly stationary processes is based on the decomposition (6). For example, the **weak law of large numbers** for $\{X_t\}$,

$$\text{l.i.m.}_{B \rightarrow A \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{B - A} \int_A^B X_t dt = m + M(\{0\}), \quad (8)$$

is an immediate consequence of (6). In the discrete parameter case a similar result is obtained by replacing the integral sign in expression (8) by the summation sign. In particular, if F is continuous at the origin, we have $M(\{0\}) = 0$, and only the constant m remains in the right-hand side of (8) [1, 2].

C. Weakly Stationary Random Distributions

Just as we introduce †distributions as generalizations of ordinary functions, we define

weakly stationary random distributions as generalizations of weakly stationary processes. Let \mathcal{D} be the space of all functions of class C^∞ on $T = \mathbf{R}$ with compact support. We introduce the same topology on \mathcal{D} as in the theory of distributions. If a random variable $X_\varphi \in L_2(\Omega)$ is defined for every $\varphi \in \mathcal{D}$ and the mapping $\varphi \rightarrow X_\varphi$ is continuous in the L_2 -sense and linear, then the family $\{X_\varphi\}$ of random variables is called a **random distribution in the wider sense** (\rightarrow 407 Stochastic Processes). Furthermore, if

$$\begin{aligned} (X_{\tau_h\varphi}, 1) &= (X_\varphi, 1), \\ (X_{\tau_h\varphi}, X_{\tau_h\psi}) &= (X_\varphi, X_\psi) \end{aligned} \tag{9}$$

for every $h \in \mathbf{R}^1$, where $(\ , \)$ stands for the inner product in $L_2(\Omega)$ and

$$\tau_h\varphi(t) = \varphi(t - h),$$

then $\{X_\varphi\}$ is said to be a **weakly stationary random distribution**. With a weakly stationary process we can associate a weakly stationary random distribution by the relation

$$X_\varphi = \int_T X_t \varphi(t) dt. \tag{10}$$

This correspondence is one-to-one, and therefore we can identify $\{X_t\}$ with $\{X_\varphi\}$ as we identify an ordinary function with a distribution. From equations (9) it follows that there exist a constant m and a distribution ρ such that $E(X_\varphi) = m \int \varphi(t) dt$ and $E(X_\varphi - E(X_\varphi))(X_\psi - E(X_\psi)) = \rho(\varphi * \check{\psi})$, where $*$ denotes convolution, and $\check{\psi}(t) = \overline{\psi(-t)}$. We call m and ρ the **mean value** and **covariance distribution** of $\{X_\varphi\}$, respectively. By the generalized Bochner theorem ρ can be expressed in the form

$$\rho(\varphi) = \int \hat{\varphi}(\lambda) F(d\lambda), \quad \hat{\varphi}(\lambda) = \int e^{i\lambda t} \varphi(t) dt,$$

where $F(d\lambda)$ is a slowly increasing measure, i.e.,

$$\int (1 + \lambda^2)^{-k} F(d\lambda) < \infty \tag{11}$$

for some positive integer k . $F(d\lambda)$ is called the **spectral measure**. This expression is the generalization of the Khinchin decomposition. The spectral decomposition corresponding to (6) and the law of large numbers for X_φ can be discussed in a manner similar to that for weakly stationary processes (K. Itô [3]).

D. Prediction Theory

Let $\{X_t\}$ be a weakly stationary process. Suppose that its values X_s ($s \leq t$) up to time t are observed. **Prediction theory** deals with the problem of forecasting the future value $X_{t+\tau}$

($\tau > 0$) from the known values X_s ($s \leq t$). If the domain of the admissible predictors is limited to linear functions of X_s ($s \leq t$), the theory is called **linear prediction theory**. We can assume without loss of generality that the mean value m of X_t is zero and that the spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$ of $\{X_t\}$ is not a zero measure.

Let $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$ be the subspace of $L_2(\Omega)$ spanned by the X_s ($s \leq t$), then $\mathcal{M}(X) = \bigvee_t \mathcal{M}_t(X)$. A **linear predictor** for $X_{t+\tau}$ from X_s ($s \leq t$) is an element Y of $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$. If a linear predictor minimizes the prediction error $\sigma^2(\tau) = E(|X_{t+\tau} - Y|^2)$ in $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$, it is called an **optimum linear predictor**, which turns out to be the (orthogonal) projection of $X_{t+\tau}$ on $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$ and which is denoted by $\hat{X}_{t,\tau}$. Since $\{X_t\}$ is stationary, the error $\sigma^2(\tau)$ does not depend on t for such a predictor. Corresponding to the spectral decomposition (6) of X_t , the optimum linear predictor is expressed in the form

$$\hat{X}_{t,\tau} = \int_{T'} e^{i\lambda t} \hat{\varphi}_\tau(\lambda) M(d\lambda), \tag{12}$$

where $\hat{\varphi}_\tau(\cdot)$ is square integrable with respect to the spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$.

The subspace $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$ is nondecreasing in t . If $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$ is independent of t , i.e., $\mathcal{M}_t(X) = \mathcal{M}(X)$ for every t , then $\{X_t\}$ is said to be **deterministic**. In this case we have $\hat{X}_{t,\tau} = X_{t+\tau}$ for every t and $\tau > 0$, since $X_{t+\tau} \in \mathcal{M}_t(X)$. This means that the linear predictor enables us to determine the unknown quantities without error, and therefore such a process is of no probabilistic interest. On the other hand, if $\bigcap_t \mathcal{M}_t(X) = \{0\}$, then $\{X_t\}$ is said to be **purely nondeterministic**. A general $\{X_t\}$ is expressed as the sum of the deterministic part $\{X_t^d\}$ and the purely nondeterministic part $\{X_t^n\}$ (**Wold decomposition**). Furthermore, we have $\mathcal{M}(X^d) = \bigcap_t \mathcal{M}_t(X)$, and $\mathcal{M}_t(X) = \mathcal{M}(X^d) + \mathcal{M}_t(X^n)$ (direct sum). Thus $\{X_t^d\}$ and $\{X_t^n\}$ can be dealt with separately.

A weakly stationary process $\{X_t\}$ is purely nondeterministic if and only if the spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$ is absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure, and the density $f(\lambda)$ is positive almost everywhere and satisfies

$$\int_{-\pi}^\pi \log f(\lambda) d\lambda > -\infty$$

(discrete parameter case),

$$\int_{-\infty}^\infty \frac{\log f(\lambda)}{1 + \lambda^2} d\lambda > -\infty$$

(continuous parameter case).

By using $f(\lambda)$ the optimum linear predictor can be obtained.

First, we explain the discrete parameter case. There exists a function $\gamma(z) = \sum_{t=0}^\infty a_t z^t$ in the Hardy class H_2 relative to the unit disk

such that its boundary value satisfies

$$f(\lambda) = (1/2\pi) |\gamma(e^{-i\lambda})|^2.$$

Then we can find a sequence of mutually orthogonal random variables $\{\xi_t\}$ ($t \in \mathbf{Z}$) such that $\{X_t\}$ admits a **backward moving average representation**

$$X_t = \sum_{s=-\infty}^t a_{t-s} \xi_s. \quad (13)$$

There are many pairs $\{a_t\}$ and $\{\xi_t\}$ which give the representation (13), but if $\gamma(z)$ is maximal (optimal), namely, if $\gamma(z)$ is expressed as

$$\gamma(z) = \sqrt{2\pi} \exp \left(\frac{1}{4\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \log f(\lambda) \frac{e^{-i\lambda} + z}{e^{-i\lambda} - z} d\lambda \right), \quad (14)$$

then the representation (13) is **canonical** in the sense that $\mathcal{M}_t(X) = \mathcal{M}_t(\xi)$ for every t . Hence the optimum predictor $\hat{X}_{t,\tau}$ for $X_{t+\tau}$ is given by

$$\hat{X}_{t,\tau} = \sum_{s=-\infty}^t a_{t+\tau-s} \xi_s = \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} e^{i\lambda t} \hat{\phi}_t(\lambda) M(d\lambda), \quad (15)$$

where

$$\hat{\phi}_t(\lambda) = \frac{e^{i\lambda t}}{\gamma(e^{-i\lambda})} \left(\gamma(e^{-i\lambda}) - \sum_{s=0}^{\tau-1} a_s e^{-i\lambda s} \right).$$

The prediction error $\sigma^2(\tau)$ of this predictor is given by

$$\sigma^2(\tau) = \sum_{s=0}^{\tau-1} |a_s|^2.$$

Example. Let the covariance function of a weakly stationary process $\{X_t\}$ be $e^{-\alpha|t|}$ ($\alpha > 0$). Then we have

$$f(\lambda) = (1/2\pi) (1 - \beta^2) |1 - \beta e^{-i\lambda}|^{-2},$$

$$\beta = e^{-\alpha}.$$

The maximal $\gamma(z)$ is expressed as $\sqrt{1 - \beta^2} (1 - \beta z)^{-1}$, and

$$\begin{aligned} \hat{X}_{t,\tau} &= \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} e^{i\lambda t} \frac{e^{i\lambda \tau}}{1 - \beta e^{-i\lambda}} \sum_{s=\tau}^{\infty} \beta^s e^{-i\lambda s} M(d\lambda) \\ &= \beta^{\tau} X_t, \end{aligned}$$

$$\sigma^2(\tau) = 1 - 2\beta^{\tau} e^{-\alpha\tau} + \beta^{2\tau} = 1 - e^{-2\alpha\tau}.$$

We now come to the continuous parameter case. By replacing the holomorphic function $\gamma(z)$ on the unit disk with the one on the half-plane, we see that almost all results obtained in the discrete parameter case hold similarly in this case. The maximal $\gamma(z)$ is expressed as

$$\gamma(z) = \sqrt{\pi} \exp \left(\frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \log f(\lambda) \frac{1 + \lambda z}{z - \lambda} \frac{d\lambda}{1 + \lambda^2} \right).$$

Using the Fourier transform a_t of the boundary function of $\gamma(z)$ and a process $\{\xi_t\}$ with orthogonal increments, we have the **canonical backward moving average representation** for

the process $\{X_t\}$:

$$X_t = \int_{-\infty}^t a_{t-s} d\xi_s,$$

which enables us to obtain the optimum predictor and the prediction error in a manner similar to the discrete parameter case [4]. In particular, if the optimal $\gamma(z)$ is of the form $\gamma(z) = c/P(iz)$, where c is a constant and $P(z)$ is a polynomial of degree p , then X_t is $p-1$ times differentiable and $P(d/dt)X_t = (d/dt)\xi_t$ up to a multiplicative constant; therefore $\hat{X}_{t,\tau}$ is obtained explicitly. To obtain the optimum linear predictor for $Y \in \mathcal{M}(X)$, we first establish the expression

$$Y = \sum_{s=-\infty}^{\infty} f(s) \xi_s \quad \text{or} \quad \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(s) d\xi_s,$$

and then take $\sum_{s=-\infty}^0 f(s) \xi_s$ or $\int_{-\infty}^0 f(s) d\xi_s$ for the optimum linear predictor.

The results stated above can be generalized to multivariate (n -dimensional) stationary processes [6, 7] and to the case where the parameter space T is multidimensional.

N. Wiener observed the individual sample process $X(t, \omega)$ and discussed a method of finding the optimum predictor for $X(t + \tau, \omega)$ by using a linear functional

$$\int_0^{\infty} X(t-s, \omega) dK(s)$$

(K is of bounded variation) of the values X_s ($s \leq t$) [8]. The spectral measure played an important role in his observation. Calculations in this case are analogous to those mentioned above.

For a weakly stationary random distribution $\{X(\varphi)\}$ ($\varphi \in \mathcal{D}$), the prediction theory is reduced to that for ordinary stationary processes. Assume that the spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$ of $\{X(\varphi)\}$ satisfies (11). Set $e(t) = \exp(it)$ ($t \leq 0$), $= 0$ ($t > 0$), and let $e_k(t)$ be the k -times convolution of $e(t)$ with itself. Set $Y(\varphi) = X(e_k * \varphi)$. Then $\{Y(\varphi)\}$ is equivalent to a weakly stationary process. It is obvious that $\mathcal{M}_t(X) = \mathcal{M}_t(Y)$ for every t , where $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$ is the linear subspace spanned by $\{X(\varphi) | \text{support of } \varphi \subset (-\infty, t]\}$. This consideration allows us to reduce the prediction problem for $\{X(\varphi)\}$ to that for the stationary process corresponding to $\{Y(\varphi)\}$.

Nonlinear prediction theory is formulated as follows. Let \mathfrak{B}_t be the smallest σ -algebra with respect to which every X_s ($s \leq t$) is measurable and $H_t(X)$ be the subspace of $L_2(\Omega)$ consisting of all \mathfrak{B}_t -measurable elements. The problem is to forecast $X_{t+\tau}$ ($\tau > 0$) by using an element of $H_t(X)$. The optimum predictor is obviously equal to $E(X_{t+\tau} | \mathfrak{B}_t)$. For a stationary Gaussian process it has been proved that

the optimum predictor found in $H_t(X)$ belongs to $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$. Therefore the optimum nonlinear predictor coincides with the optimum linear predictor. However, except for stationary Gaussian processes, no systematic approach for nonlinear prediction theory has been established so far. (For a typical case that arises from a stationary Gaussian process → 176 Gaussian Processes H.)

E. Interpolation and Filtering

Interpolation and filtering of stationary processes have many similarities with prediction theory, both in the formulation of the problems and in their method of solution.

Let $\{X_t\}$ be a weakly stationary process, all of whose values $\{X_t | t \notin T_1\}$. T_1 some interval, are known with the exception of those at $t \in T_1$. The problem of linear interpolation of the unknown value X_t ($t \in T_1$) is to find the best approximation of this random variable by the limit of linear combinations of the known values. The following example illustrates the problem in the discrete parameter case.

Example. Let $T_1 = \{t_0\}$ and $f(\lambda)d\lambda$ be the spectral measure of $\{X_t\}$. The interpolation of X_{t_0} has an error if and only if

$$\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \frac{1}{f(\lambda)} d\lambda < \infty.$$

Expressing X_t in the form (6) with $m=0$, the best (linear) interpolation \hat{X}_{t_0} of X_{t_0} is given by

$$\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} e^{i\lambda t_0} \left(1 - 2\pi \left(f(\lambda) \int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \frac{1}{f(\mu)} d\mu \right)^{-1} \right) M(d\lambda),$$

and the error of the interpolation is expressed by

$$E(|X_{t_0} - \hat{X}_{t_0}|^2) = 4\pi^2 \left(\int_{-\pi}^{\pi} \frac{1}{f(\lambda)} d\lambda \right)^{-1}.$$

The problem of interpolation for multivariate stationary processes has also been discussed [7].

The filtering problem originated in communication theory as a technique to extract the relevant component from a received signal with noise [8, 13]. Suppose that a complex-valued stationary process $\{X_t\}$ with continuous parameter is expressed in the form

$$X_t = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{i\lambda t} M(d\lambda) = S_t + N_t,$$

where (S_t, N_t) is a (2-dimensional) weakly stationary process with mean vector 0. Here, S_t and N_t indicate the signal and noise, respectively. The filtering problem is to find the element of $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$ that approximates $S_{t+\tau}$ as

closely (relative to the $\mathcal{M}(X)$ -norm) as possible. The best approximation is the projection of $S_{t+\tau}$ on $\mathcal{M}_t(X)$, but its expression in terms of the spectral measure becomes extremely complicated [8]. This problem is usually discussed under the assumption that S_t and N_t are orthogonal. Let us further assume that their spectral measures are absolutely continuous. The density functions are denoted by $f_S(\lambda)$ and $f_N(\lambda)$, respectively. If $\{X_t | t \in T\}$ is observed, then the best (linear) approximation \hat{S}_t of S_t is given by

$$\hat{S}_t = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{i\lambda t} \varphi_0(\lambda) M(d\lambda),$$

where $\varphi_0(\lambda) = f_S(\lambda)/(f_S(\lambda) + f_N(\lambda))$. The mean square error $E(|S_t - \hat{S}_t|^2)$ of this filtering is

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f_S(\lambda) f_N(\lambda) / (f_S(\lambda) + f_N(\lambda)) d\lambda.$$

F. Strongly Stationary Processes and Flows

Let $\{X_t(\omega)\}$ ($t \in T$, $\omega \in \Omega(\mathfrak{B}, P)$) be a strongly stationary process. To study it we take the coordinate representation of $\{X_t\}$ as follows. Let Ω be the complex vector space \mathbb{C}^T , \mathfrak{B} the σ -algebra generated by the Borel cylinder sets, $X_t(\omega)$ the t th coordinate of the function $\omega \in \mathbb{C}^T$, and P the probability distribution of the process $\{X_t\}$ defined on (Ω, \mathfrak{B}) . Define the shift transformation S_t of Ω onto itself by $(S_t \omega)(s) = \omega(s+t)$. Then $\{S_t\}$ forms a group of measure-preserving transformations on $\Omega(\mathfrak{B}, P)$ (→ 136 Ergodic Theory) since $\{X_t\}$ is strongly stationary. Thus we are given a (measure-preserving) flow $\{S_t\}$ ($t \in T$) on $\Omega(\mathfrak{B}, P)$. Conversely, if $\{S_t\}$ ($t \in T$) is a (measure-preserving) flow on a probability space $\Omega(\mathfrak{B}, P)$, then $\{X_t\}$, given by $X_t(\omega) = f(S_t \omega)$, is a strongly stationary process, provided that f is measurable. Many properties of a strongly stationary process are closely related to those of the corresponding flow. For example, the strong law of large numbers for a strongly stationary process follows from Birkhoff's individual ergodic theorem for flows. Ergodicity, several kinds of mixing properties, and the spectral properties of a strongly stationary process are defined in accordance with the respective notions for the corresponding flow. Now we give some examples of flows corresponding to strongly stationary processes.

(1) If X_t ($t \in \mathbb{Z}$) are mutually independent and have the same probability distribution, then the process $\{X_t\}$ ($t \in \mathbb{Z}$) is strongly stationary and $\bigcap_t \mathfrak{B}_t$ is trivial (the definition of $\mathfrak{B}_t \rightarrow \mathcal{D}$). Hence the corresponding flow is a Kolmogorov flow.

(2) Similarly to (1), the flow corresponding to \dagger Gaussian white noise (\rightarrow 176 Gaussian Process) is also a Kolmogorov flow.

(3) The mixing properties of the flow corresponding to a stationary Gaussian process is determined by the smoothness of its spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$. The flow is ergodic if and only if F is continuous (i.e., F has no point mass). In this case, the flow is also \dagger weakly mixing. For the flow to be \dagger strongly mixing, it is necessary and sufficient that the covariance function $\rho(t)$ of the process tend to zero as $|t| \rightarrow \infty$. In this case the flow is \dagger mixing of all orders (\rightarrow 136 Ergodic Theory) [14–16].

G. Analytic Properties of Sample Functions of Stationary Processes

In the continuous parameter case, we always assume that \dagger continuity in probability holds for strongly stationary processes and \dagger mean square continuity holds for weakly stationary processes. Hence the processes discussed here are all continuous in probability, and without loss of generality we can assume that the stationary processes are \dagger separable and \dagger measurable (\rightarrow 407 Stochastic Processes).

Let $\{X_t\}$ be a weakly stationary process. Assume that the moments up to order $2n$ of the spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$ are all finite. Then almost all \dagger sample functions of $\{X_t\}$ are $n-1$ times continuously differentiable, and almost all sample functions of $\{X_t^{(n-1)}\}$ are absolutely continuous. Define the spectral distribution function $F(\lambda) = F((-\infty, \lambda])$ for the spectral measure $F(d\lambda)$ of $\{X_t\}$. If F satisfies

$$\sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} |n|^r (F(n+1) - F(n))^{1/2} < \infty \quad (16)$$

for a nonnegative integer r , then almost all sample functions of $\{X_t\}$ have continuous r th derivatives. In particular, if the condition (16) is satisfied for $r=0$, then almost all sample functions are continuous. Conditions for Hölder continuity of almost all sample functions of a weakly stationary process have also been obtained [17, 18]. (For sample functions of stationary Gaussian processes \rightarrow 176 Gaussian Processes F.)

For a strongly stationary process $\{X_t\}$ with $E(X_0) = 0$ and finite $E(X_0^2)$, the **sample covariance function**

$$R(t) = \lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{2T} \int_{-T}^T X_{t+s}(\omega) \overline{X_s(\omega)} ds$$

is determined with probability 1. We can therefore apply the theory of \dagger generalized harmonic analysis, due to Wiener [9]. (Further results on sample function properties are found in [19].)

H. Strongly Stationary Random Distributions

Let \mathscr{D} be the space of all C^∞ -functions with compact support and \mathscr{D}' be the space of \dagger distributions. If $X_\varphi(\omega)$ is defined for $\omega \in \Omega(\mathfrak{B}, P)$ and $\varphi \in \mathscr{D}$, and if for almost all ω , $X_\varphi(\omega)$ belongs to \mathscr{D}' as a linear functional of φ , then $\{X_\varphi\}$ is called a **random distribution**. Suppose that the joint distribution of the random variables $X_{\tau_h \varphi_1}, X_{\tau_h \varphi_2}, \dots, X_{\tau_h \varphi_n}$ ($\tau_h \varphi(t) = \varphi(t-h)$) is independent of h . Then we call $\{X_\varphi(\omega)\}$ a **strongly** (or **strictly**) **stationary random distribution**. If we identify random distributions that have the same probability law, then $\{X_\varphi\}$ is determined by the characteristic functional

$$C(\varphi) = E(e^{iX_\varphi}).$$

For $\{X_\varphi\}$ to be strictly stationary it is necessary and sufficient that the equality $C(\tau_h \varphi) = C(\varphi)$ hold. The simplest example of a strictly stationary random distribution is the Gaussian white noise (\rightarrow 176 Gaussian Processes, 341 Probability Measures) [20].

I. Generalizations of Stationary Processes

The concept of stationary processes is generalized in many directions.

(1) Let T be a set different from \mathbf{R} or \mathbf{Z} , and suppose that there is given a group G of transformations that map T onto itself. If a family $\{X_t\}$ of random variables with parameter $t \in T$ has the property that for every choice of random variables $X_{t_1}, X_{t_2}, \dots, X_{t_n}$, the joint distribution of $(X_{gt_1}, \dots, X_{gt_n})$ is always independent of $g \in G$, then $\{X_t\}$ ($t \in T$) is said to be a **strictly G -stationary** system of random variables.

Similarly, a **weakly G -stationary** system of random variables can be defined [21, 22].

(2) Let T be a Riemannian space, and let G be the group of all isometric transformations on T or one of its subgroups. Suppose that a \dagger tensor field $\mathbf{X}_t(\omega)$ of constant rank is associated with any $\omega \in \Omega(\mathfrak{B}, P)$ at every point t . Then $\mathbf{X}(\omega) \equiv \{\mathbf{X}_t(\omega) | t \in T\}$ is called a **random tensor field** over the Riemannian space T . Any $g \in G$ induces an isometric transformation of the tangent vector space at t to that at gt . Hence g maps a tensor field $\mathbf{X}(\omega)$ to another tensor field $g\mathbf{X}(\omega)$ for every ω . If $\mathbf{X}(\omega)$ and $g\mathbf{X}(\omega)$ have the same probability law, then $\mathbf{X}(\omega)$ is said to be **strictly G -stationary**. $\mathbf{X}(\omega)$ is defined to be **weakly G -stationary** in a similar way [21, 22].

(3) In the same way as we extended stochastic processes to random distributions, we can generalize random tensor fields to **random currents** and discuss stationary random currents [21].

(4) **Stochastic process with stationary incre-**

ments of order n . Assume that $\{X_t\}$ ($t \in \mathbf{R}$) is not necessarily a stationary process but that the n th-order increment of X_t is stationary. Then by taking the n th derivative $D^n X_t$ in the sense of random distributions, we obtain a stationary random distribution. From the properties of $D^n X_t$, we can investigate the original process itself. Brownian motion is an example of a stochastic process with stationary increments of order 1.

(5) **Weakly stationary processes of degree k .**

A weakly stationary process is a process whose moments up to order 2 are stationary. Generalizing this, we can define a weakly stationary process of degree k by requiring the moments up to order k to be stationary. We can obtain more detailed properties of such processes than those of weakly stationary processes [23].

References

- [1] J. L. Doob, *Stochastic processes*, Wiley, 1953.
- [2] U. Grenander and M. Rosenblatt, *Statistical analysis of stationary time series*, Wiley, 1957.
- [3] K. Itô, *Stationary random distributions*, Mem. Coll. Sci. Univ. Kyôto, (A) 28 (1954), 209–223.
- [4] K. Karhunen, Über die Struktur stationärer zufälliger Funktionen, Ark. Mat., 1 (1950), 141–160.
- [5] H. Cramér, On the linear prediction problem for certain stochastic processes, Ark. Mat., 4 (1963), 45–53.
- [6] N. Wiener and P. Masani, The prediction theory of multivariate stochastic processes I, II, Acta Math., 98 (1957), 111–150; 99 (1958), 93–137.
- [7] Yu. A. Rozanov, *Stationary random processes*, Holden-Day, 1967. (Original in Russian, 1963.)
- [8] N. Wiener, *Extrapolation, interpolation, and smoothing of stationary time series*, MIT Press, 1949.
- [9] N. Wiener, Generalized harmonic analysis, Acta Math., 55 (1930), 117–258.
- [10] N. Wiener, The homogeneous chaos, Amer. J. Math., 60 (1938), 897–936.
- [11] N. Wiener, *Nonlinear problems in random theory*, MIT Press, 1958.
- [12] P. Masani and N. Wiener, Non-linear prediction, in *Probability and Statistics: The H. Cramér Volume*, Wiley, 1959, 190–212.
- [13] A. Blanc-Lapierre and R. Fortet, *Théorie des fonctions aléatoires*, Masson, 1953.
- [14] G. Maruyama, The harmonic analysis of stationary stochastic processes, Mem. Fac. Sci. Kyushu Univ., (A) 4 (1949), 45–106.
- [15] S. Kakutani, Spectral analysis of stationary Gaussian processes, Proc. 4th Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. II, Univ. of California Press (1961), 239–247.
- [16] H. Totoki, The mixing property of Gaussian flows, Mem. Fac. Sci. Kyushu Univ., (A) 18 (1964), 136–139.
- [17] I. Kubo, On a necessary condition for the sample path continuity of weakly stationary processes, Nagoya Math. J., 38 (1970), 103–111.
- [18] T. Kawata and I. Kubo, Sample properties of weakly stationary processes, Nagoya Math. J., 39 (1970), 7–21.
- [19] H. Cramér and M. R. Leadbetter, *Stationary and related processes*, Wiley, 1967.
- [20] I. M. Gel'fand and N. Ya. Vilenkin, *Generalized functions IV*, Academic Press, 1964. (Original in Russian, 1961.)
- [21] K. Itô, Isotropic random current, Proc. 3rd Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. II, Univ. of California Press (1956), 125–132.
- [22] A. M. Yaglom, Second-order homogeneous random fields, Proc. 4th Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. II, Univ. of California Press (1961), 593–622.
- [23] A. N. Shiryaev, Some problems in the spectral theory of higher-order moments I, Theory Prob. Appl., 5 (1960), 265–284. (Original in Russian, 1960.)

396 (XVIII.3) Statistic

A. General Remarks

A statistic is a function of a value (i.e., a sample value) observed in the process of statistical inference (\rightarrow 401 Statistical Inference). A statistic is used for two purposes: (a) to characterize the set of observed values or sample values, and (b) to summarize the information contained in the sample about the unknown parameters of the population from which it is assumed to have been drawn.

B. Samples and Statistics

The basic concepts in statistical inference are *population and *sample. Let (Ω, \mathcal{B}, P) be a *probability space, where P is a *probability measure on \mathcal{B} . A *random variable X defines a 1-dimensional probability distribution $\Phi(A) = P\{\omega \mid X(\omega) \in A\}$, where A is a 1-dimensional *Borel set, which gives rise to a 1-dimensional probability space $(\mathbf{R}, \mathcal{B}^1, \Phi)$. Here \mathcal{B}^1 is the

family of all 1-dimensional \dagger Borel sets. Let X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n be \dagger independent random variables with identical 1-dimensional distributions. The $\dagger n$ -dimensional random variable $X = (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n)$ is called a **random sample** of **size n** from the population (Ω, \mathcal{B}, P) . In particular, when each of X_1, \dots, X_n takes only two values (usually 0 and 1), the sample is called a **Bernoulli sample** or a **sequence of Bernoulli trials**. Generally, if Φ_n is the $\dagger n$ -dimensional probability distribution determined by X (i.e., the direct product of n copies of the 1-dimensional probability distribution Φ), then the n -dimensional probability space $(\mathbf{R}^n, \mathcal{B}^n, \Phi_n)$, where \mathcal{B}^n is the family of n -dimensional Borel sets, is called an **n -dimensional sample space**. A point belonging to the set of actually observed values of the sample X , which is a random variable by definition, is called a **sample value** and is denoted by x . Thus the sample value can be expressed as $x = X(\omega)$ ($\omega \in \Omega$) and regarded as a point in the sample space (**sample point**). The basic underlying structure which determines the probability distribution is the set Ω , which we can view as describing the physical structure of the observed phenomena, but statistical procedures are always carried out through the observations of samples, and Ω itself is often disregarded. The 1-dimensional probability distribution Φ (the n -dimensional probability distribution Φ_n determined by X) is called the **population distribution** in the 1-dimensional (n -dimensional) sample space, since it is induced from the probability measure on (Ω, \mathcal{B}) .

A **statistic** Y is a random variable expressed as $Y = f(X)$, where f is a \dagger measurable function from the sample space $(\mathbf{R}^n, \mathcal{B}^n, \Phi_n)$ into a measurable space $(\mathbf{R}, \mathcal{B}^1)$. The value of the statistic Y corresponding to a sample value x of the sample X is denoted by $y = f(x)$.

When we deal with a statistical problem we often have no exact knowledge of the population distribution $\Phi(\Phi_n)$ except that it belongs to a family $\mathcal{P} = \{P_\theta | \theta \in \Theta\}$ of probability measures on $\mathcal{B}^1(\mathcal{B}^n)$. We call θ the **parameter** of the probability distribution and Θ the **parameter space**. The typical cases described in this section can be extended as follows: (1) The distribution Φ may be an r -dimensional probability distribution. In this case a sample of size n induces an nr -dimensional sample space. (2) Random variables X_1, \dots, X_n , being mutually independent, may not have identical distributions. (3) Random variables X_1, \dots, X_n may not be mutually independent. In both cases (2) and (3) the sample space is of the form $(\mathbf{R}^n, \mathcal{B}^n, \Phi_n)$, but n may not be the sample size itself, nor Φ_n be the direct product of n copies of identical 1-dimensional components. (4) The most general sample space is expressed as a

certain measurable space $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A})$ and a family $\mathcal{P} = \{P_\theta | \theta \in \Theta\}$ of probability measures on \mathcal{A} .

A **statistic**, in general, is a random variable expressed as $Y = f(X)$ by a measurable function f defined on a sample space $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A})$ taking values in another measurable space $(\mathcal{Y}, \mathcal{C})$. When $(\mathcal{Y}, \mathcal{C})$ is $(\mathbf{R}, \mathcal{B}^1)$ or $(\mathbf{R}^n, \mathcal{B}^n)$, $Y = f(X)$ is accordingly called a **1-dimensional** or **n -dimensional statistic**.

C. Population and Sample Characteristics in the 1-Dimensional Case

In a 1-dimensional probability space $(\mathbf{R}, \mathcal{B}^1, P_0)$ the following quantities, called **population characteristics**, are used to characterize the population distribution P_0 : Letting $F(z) = P_0((-\infty, z])$ be the \dagger distribution function of P_0 , we use the **population mean** $\mu = \int z dF(z)$; the **population variance** $\sigma^2 = \int (z - \mu)^2 dF(z)$; the **population standard deviation** $\sigma (\geq 0)$; the **population moment of order k** $\mu'_k = \int z^k dF(z)$ ($\mu'_1 = \mu$); the **kurtosis** μ_4/σ^4 ; the **coefficient of excess** $(\mu_4/\sigma^4) - 3$; the **skewness** μ_3/σ^3 ; the **α -quantile** or **100 α %-point m** satisfying $F(m - 0) \leq \alpha \leq F(m + 0)$; the **median**, which is the 50%-point; the **first** and **third quartiles**, which are the 25%-point and 75%-point, respectively; the **range**, which is the third quartile minus the first quartile; and the **mode**, which is the value or values of z for which $dF(z)/dz$ attains its maximum.

Sometimes the kurtosis and others are called **population kurtosis**, etc. Here the word "population" is used when it is desirable to distinguish population characteristics from the sample characteristics defined in 341 Probability Measures.

Let $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$ be a point of an n -dimensional sample space (a sample value). Corresponding to each 1-dimensional Borel set A , the number of components of x that belong to A is called the **frequency** of A in the sample value $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$, and (frequency)/ n is called the **relative frequency** of A . If we take $A = (-\infty, z]$ and regard its relative frequency $F_x(z)$ as a function of z , it becomes a \dagger distribution function for every $x \in \mathbf{R}^n$, called the **empirical distribution function** based on x .

Various characteristics can be defined from the empirical distribution function in exactly the same way as population characteristics are derived from a population distribution function. These are called **sample characteristic values** and can be expressed as functions of x_1, \dots, x_n .

Assuming that $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is a sample value of a sample $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$, the statistic obtained by substituting X for x in the function denoting a sample characteristic value is

called a **sample characteristic** and given the same name as the corresponding population characteristic, except that the word “population” is replaced by the word “sample.” A sample characteristic is a function of random variables. Hence it is also a random variable, and the problem of deriving its probability distribution from the assumed population distribution is called that of sampling distribution (→ 374 Sampling Distributions). Thus we define the **sample mean** $\bar{X} = \sum_{i=1}^n X_i/n$; the **sample variance** $\sum_{i=1}^n (X_i - \bar{X})^2/n$ (sometimes $\sum_{i=1}^n (X_i - \bar{X})^2/(n-1)$ is taken as the sample variance); the **sample standard deviation**

$$\sqrt{\sum_{i=1}^n (X_i - \bar{X})^2/n},$$

which is the positive square root of the sample variance; the **sample mode**, which is the value taken by the largest number of X_i ; and the **sample moment of order k** $\sum_{i=1}^n (X_i - \bar{X})^k/n$.

Among other statistics of frequent use are the **order statistic**, i.e., the set of values of X_1, \dots, X_n arranged in order of magnitude and usually denoted by $X_{(1)} < X_{(2)} < \dots < X_{(n)}$. Various other statistics are defined in terms of order statistics: the **sample median** $X_{med} = X_{((n+1)/2)}$ for odd n and $=(X_{(n/2)} + X_{((n/2)+1)})/2$ for even n , the **sample range** $R = \max X_i - \min X_i = X_{(n)} - X_{(1)}$, and so on. The empirical distribution function $F_X(z)$ or its standardized form $S_X(z) = \sqrt{n}\{F_X(z) - F(z)\}$ can also be considered to be a function of the order statistics, and hence is a statistic taking values in the space of functions of a real variable. So is the **empirical characteristic function**

$$\phi_X(t) = \int \exp(itz) dF_X(z) = \sum_j \exp(itx_{(j)})/n.$$

In a sequence of Bernoulli trials, a set of successive components with an identical value is called a **run**. For example, (01100010) has a run of 0 of the length 3 and a run of 1 of the length 2.

Among the statistics listed in the previous paragraphs, the order statistic is an n -dimensional statistic and all others are 1-dimensional.

D. Other Cases

Let $(\mathbf{R}^2, \mathcal{B}^2, P_0)$ be a 2-dimensional probability space with a 2-dimensional population distribution P_0 , and let (X_1, \dots, X_n) ($X_i = (U_i, V_i)$) be a random sample of size n from P_0 . In this case also, the population characteristics for the 'marginal distributions of U_i and V_i and sample characteristics for (U_1, \dots, U_n) and (V_1, \dots, V_n) are defined as in Section C.

As an index for association between U_i and

V_i the **population covariance** $\int (u - \mu_{(1)})(v - \mu_{(2)}) dF(u, v)$ of U_i and V_i and the **population correlation coefficient**, which is equal to (population covariance)/ $(\sigma_{(1)}\sigma_{(2)})$, are defined. Here $F(u, v)$ is the joint distribution function of U_i and V_i , $\mu_{(1)}$ and $\mu_{(2)}$ are the respective population means of U_i and V_i , and $\sigma_{(1)}$ and $\sigma_{(2)}$ are the respective standard deviations. As corresponding sample characteristics, we have the **sample covariance** $\sum_{i=1}^n (U_i - \bar{U})(V_i - \bar{V})/n$ of (U_1, \dots, U_n) and (V_1, \dots, V_n) and the **sample correlation coefficient**

$$\frac{\sum_{i=1}^n (U_i - \bar{U})(V_i - \bar{V})}{\left(\sum_{i=1}^n (U_i - \bar{U})^2\right)^{1/2} \left(\sum_{i=1}^n (V_i - \bar{V})^2\right)^{1/2}},$$

where $\bar{U} = \sum_{i=1}^n U_i/n$ and $\bar{V} = \sum_{i=1}^n V_i/n$.

Similarly, statistics of the samples from a population of k -dimensional distribution ($k \geq 3$) can be defined (→ 280 Multivariate Analysis). More generally, in statistical inference we encounter samples where observed values may not be mutually independent or identically distributed, but have more complicated probability structures. Statistics as functions of such samples are also considered.

E. General Properties of Statistics

The general theory of statistics has been studied in a measure-theoretic framework. $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A}, \mathcal{P})$ is called a **statistical structure**, where $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A})$ is a measurable space and \mathcal{P} is a family of probability measures on $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A})$. A σ -subfield \mathcal{B} of \mathcal{A} (hereafter abbreviated σ -field) is called **sufficient** for \mathcal{P} if for any $A \in \mathcal{A}$ there exists a \mathcal{B} -measurable conditional probability of A independent of $P_\theta \in \mathcal{P}$, that is, a \mathcal{B} -measurable function $\varphi_A(x)$ satisfying

$$P_\theta(A \cap B) = \int_B \varphi_A(x) dP_\theta(x)$$

for all $P_\theta \in \mathcal{P}$ and $B \in \mathcal{B}$.

For any two σ -fields \mathcal{B}_1 and \mathcal{B}_2 , the notation $\mathcal{B}_1 \subset \mathcal{B}_2[\mathcal{P}]$ means that to each set A_1 in \mathcal{B}_1 there corresponds an A_2 in \mathcal{B}_2 satisfying $P_\theta((A_1 - A_2) \cup (A_2 - A_1)) = 0$ for all $P_\theta \in \mathcal{P}$. When the reverse relation $\mathcal{B}_2 \subset \mathcal{B}_1[\mathcal{P}]$ also holds, we write $\mathcal{B}_1 = \mathcal{B}_2[\mathcal{P}]$.

For a statistic t which is a measurable function from $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A})$ to $(\mathcal{Y}, \mathcal{C})$, $\mathcal{B}(t) = \{B \mid B \in \mathcal{A}, t(B) \in \mathcal{C}\}$ is a σ -field and is called the σ -field induced by t . If $\mathcal{B}(t)$ is sufficient for \mathcal{P} , t is said to be sufficient for \mathcal{P} . Since sufficiency of a statistic means that of a σ -field, we consider only sufficiency of a σ -field.

\mathcal{B} is called **necessary** if for any sufficient \mathcal{B}_0 we have $\mathcal{B} \subset \mathcal{B}_0[\mathcal{P}]$. A necessary and sufficient σ -field is called a **minimal sufficient σ -field**. A

necessary and sufficient statistic is also called a **minimal sufficient statistic**. Such a statistic does not always exist; \mathcal{B}_2 containing a sufficient \mathcal{B}_1 is not always sufficient.

\mathcal{B} is said to be **complete** if for every \mathcal{B} -measurable integrable function φ , $\int_{\mathcal{X}} \varphi(x) dP_{\theta}(x) = 0$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$ implies $P_{\theta}(\{x | \varphi(x) \neq 0\}) = 0$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$. \mathcal{B} is said to be **boundedly complete** if for every bounded \mathcal{B} -measurable φ , $\int_{\mathcal{X}} \varphi(x) dP_{\theta}(x) = 0$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$ implies $P_{\theta}(\{x | \varphi(x) \neq 0\}) = 0$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$. When $\mathcal{B}(t)$ is (boundedly) complete, t is called (boundedly) complete. If $\mathcal{B}_1 \subset \mathcal{B}_2$ and \mathcal{B}_2 is (boundedly) complete, \mathcal{B}_1 is also (boundedly) complete. If \mathcal{B}_1 is (boundedly) complete and sufficient and \mathcal{B}_2 is minimal sufficient, we have $\mathcal{B}_1 = \mathcal{B}_2[\mathcal{P}]$.

F. Dominated Statistical Structure

When all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$ are absolutely continuous with respect to a σ -finite measure λ on \mathcal{A} , then $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A}, \mathcal{P})$ is said to be a **dominated statistical structure** and \mathcal{P} is said to be a dominated family of probability distributions. In this case, P_{θ} has the density $f_{\theta}(x) = dP_{\theta}/d\lambda$ with respect to λ by the Radon-Nikodym theorem. If \mathcal{A} is separable, \mathcal{P} is a separable metric space with respect to the metric $\rho(P_{\theta_1}, P_{\theta_2}) = \sup_{B \in \mathcal{A}} |P_{\theta_1}(B) - P_{\theta_2}(B)|$. There exists a countable subset $\mathcal{P}' = \{P_{\theta_1}, P_{\theta_2}, \dots\}$ of \mathcal{P} such that $P_{\theta}(N) = 0$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}'$ implies $P_{\theta}(N) = 0$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$. If we put $\lambda_0 = \sum_i c_i P_{\theta_i}$, $c_i > 0$, $\sum_i c_i = 1$, λ_0 dominates \mathcal{P} , and if \mathcal{B} is sufficient for \mathcal{P} we can choose a \mathcal{B} -measurable version of $dP_{\theta}/d\lambda_0$. Conversely, if there exists a σ -finite measure λ such that we can choose a \mathcal{B} -measurable version of $dP_{\theta}/d\lambda$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$, then \mathcal{B} is sufficient.

If \mathcal{P} is dominated by a σ -finite λ , \mathcal{B} is sufficient if and only if there exist a \mathcal{B} -measurable g_{θ} and an \mathcal{A} -measurable h independent of θ satisfying

$$\frac{dP_{\theta}}{d\lambda} = g_{\theta}h \text{ a.e. } (\mathcal{A}, \lambda) \text{ for all } P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}.$$

This is called **Neyman's factorization theorem**.

With a dominated statistical structure, there exists a minimal sufficient σ -field, and a σ -field containing a sufficient σ -field is also sufficient.

We say that a σ -field \mathcal{B} is **pairwise sufficient** for \mathcal{P} if it is sufficient for every pair $\{P_{\theta_1}, P_{\theta_2}\}$ of measures in \mathcal{P} . A necessary and sufficient condition for \mathcal{B} to be sufficient for a dominated set \mathcal{P} is that \mathcal{B} be pairwise sufficient for \mathcal{P} .

Recently, a more general statistical structure has been studied. Put $\mathcal{A}_e(\mu) = \{A | A \in \mathcal{A}, \mu(A) < \infty\}$. A measure μ on \mathcal{A} is said to be a localizable measure if there exists $\text{ess-sup } \mathcal{F}(\mu)$ for any subfamily $\mathcal{F} \subset \mathcal{A}_e(\mu)$, that is, if there exists a set $E \in \mathcal{A}$ such that $\mu(A - E) = 0$ holds

for all $A \in \mathcal{F}$, and $\mu(A - S) = 0$ for all $A \in \mathcal{F}$ implies $\mu(E - S) = 0$. A σ -finite measure is localizable. A measure μ is said to have the **finite subset property** if for any A satisfying $0 < \mu(A) < \infty$, there exists a $B \subset A$ satisfying $0 < \mu(B) < \infty$. A statistical structure $(\mathcal{X}, \mathcal{A}, \mathcal{P})$ is said to be **weakly dominated** if \mathcal{P} is dominated by a localizable measure μ with the finite subset property and a density $dP_{\theta}/d\mu$ exists for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$. In this case a minimal sufficient σ -field exists, and a pairwise sufficient σ -field is sufficient. For example, let $\mathcal{A} = 2^{\mathcal{X}}$ and \mathcal{P} be the set of all discrete probability measures on \mathcal{A} . \mathcal{P} is weakly dominated by the counting measure μ which is localizable on \mathcal{A} .

The order statistic is sufficient if \mathcal{P} is dominated, X_1, \dots, X_n are mutually independent and identically distributed random variables with $\mathcal{X} = \mathbf{R}^n$, and each $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$ is invariant under every permutation of the components of the points $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$ in \mathcal{X} . Moreover, the order statistic is complete if \mathcal{P} is large enough. For example, we have the following theorem: The order statistic is complete if every P_{θ}^0 (the component of P_{θ} on $\mathcal{B}_0 \subset \mathcal{B}^1$, $\theta \in \Theta$) is absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure l on \mathbf{R} and $\{P_{\theta}^0 | \theta \in \Theta\}$ contains all P_{θ}^0 for which $g(z) = dP_{\theta}^0/dl$ is constant on some finite disjoint intervals in $\mathcal{X}_0 \subset \mathbf{R}$. A similar result holds for discrete distributions.

We call θ a **selection parameter** when $f_{\theta}(x) = c(\theta)\chi_{E_{\theta}}(x)h(x)$, where $h(x)$ is a positive \mathcal{B} -measurable function, $\chi_{E_{\theta}}(x)$ is the indicator function of a set $E_{\theta} \in \mathcal{B}$, and $c(\theta)$ is a constant depending on θ . Here θ determines the carrier E_{θ} of $f_{\theta}(x)$ but does not essentially affect the functional form of $f_{\theta}(x)$. A necessary and sufficient statistic is given by $t^*(x) = \bigcap \{E_{\theta} | E_{\theta} \ni x, P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}\}$. Here the class of sets of the form given in the right-hand side of this expression is taken as \mathcal{U} , and we set $\mathcal{C} = \{C | C \subset \mathcal{U}, t^{*-1}(C) \in \mathcal{B}\}$. We call $t^*(x)$ the **selection statistic**. Two examples follow.

(I) [†]Uniform distributions. Let $\Theta = \{(\alpha, \beta) | -\infty < \alpha < \beta < \infty\}$, $\mathcal{X}_0 = \mathbf{R}$, P_{θ}^0 be the uniform distribution on (α, β) , and $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ be a random sample of size n having P_{θ}^0 as its population distribution. Then $E_{\theta} = \{x | \alpha \leq \min_i x_i \leq \max_i x_i \leq \beta\}$ and $f_{\theta}(x) = (\beta - \alpha)^{-n} \chi_{E_{\theta}}(x)$. If we put $t(x) = (\min_i x_i, \max_i x_i)$, $\mathcal{U} = \mathbf{R}^2$, and \mathcal{C} = the set of all Borel sets of \mathbf{R}^2 , it follows that $t(x) = t^*(x)[\mathcal{P}]$, where $t^*(x)$ is the selection statistic. Hence $t(x)$ itself is necessary and sufficient.

(II) [†]Exponential distributions. Put $\Theta = (-\infty, \infty)$, $\mathcal{X}_0 = \mathbf{R}$, and

$$g_{\theta}(z) = \begin{cases} \alpha e^{-\alpha(z-\theta)}, & z \geq \theta, \\ 0, & z < \theta, \end{cases}$$

where α is a known constant, and let $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ be a random sample of size n

having a population distribution with density function $g_\theta(z)$. Then

$$E_\theta = \left\{ x \mid \theta \leq \min_i x_i \right\},$$

$$f_\theta(x) = \alpha^n e^{n\alpha\theta} \chi_{E_\theta}(x) \exp\left(-\alpha \sum_{i=1}^n x_i\right).$$

If we put $t(x) = \min_i x_i$ and let $t^*(x)$ be the selection statistic, it follows that $t(x) = t^*(x) [\mathcal{P}]$, and $t(x)$ is necessary and sufficient. If $\Theta = \{(\alpha, \theta) \mid 0 < \alpha < \infty, -\infty < \theta < \infty\}$, then $t(x) = \{\min_i x_i, \sum_i x_i\}$ is a necessary and sufficient statistic.

G. Exponential Families of Distributions

A dominated \mathcal{P} is called an **exponential family of distributions** if and only if $f_\theta(x) = dP_\theta/d\lambda$ can be expressed in the form

$$f_\theta(x) = \exp\left(\sum_{j=1}^k s_j(x) \alpha_j(\theta) + \alpha_0(\theta) + s_0(x)\right),$$

$$x \in \mathcal{X}, \quad \theta \in \Theta, \quad (1)$$

where the $s_j(x)$ ($j=0, 1, \dots, k$) are real-valued \mathcal{B} -measurable functions and the $\alpha_j(\theta)$ ($j=0, 1, \dots, k$) are constants depending on θ . If there exists a sufficient statistic for \mathcal{P} that is not equivalent to but is in a certain sense simpler than the sample itself or the order statistics, then it can be shown under some regularity conditions that \mathcal{P} must be an exponential family. The following theorem provides an instance of the hypotheses that guarantee such a conclusion: Let X be a sample from a 1-dimensional probability space $(\mathcal{X}_0, \mathcal{B}_0, P_\theta^0)$ with P_θ^0 the population distribution, where \mathcal{X}_0 is a finite or infinite interval in \mathbf{R} and \mathcal{B}_0 is the class of all Borel sets. Let l denote the Lebesgue measure. Assume that $\{P_\theta^0\}$ is dominated by l and $g_\theta(z) = dP_\theta^0/dl$ is greater than a positive constant and continuously differentiable in z on \mathcal{X}_0 . Assume further that there exists a sufficient statistic $t(x)$ with the property that for each open subset B of \mathcal{X} ($\subset \mathbf{R}^n$) and λ -null set N there are two points $x \notin x'$ in $B - N$ such that $t(x) \neq t(x')$. Then \mathcal{P} is an exponential family, and the k given in (1) is less than n . Similar results are known also for cases where X_1, \dots, X_n are not identically distributed.

It is evident from the construction of a necessary and sufficient statistic that the statistic $t(x) = (s_1(x), \dots, s_k(x))$, where the $s_j(x)$ are those appearing in (1), is sufficient for an exponential family and necessary if $\alpha_1(\theta), \dots, \alpha_k(\theta)$ are linearly independent. If $\{(\alpha_1(\theta), \dots, \alpha_k(\theta)) \mid \theta \in \Theta\}$ contains a k -dimensional interval, $t(x)$ is complete. The distribution of $t(x)$ is of exponential type. When X_1, \dots, X_n are mutu-

ally independent with a common distribution of exponential type, the distribution of $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ is of exponential type, and vice versa. The family (1) of distributions is a special form of *Pólya-type distributions, and various distributions given in (III)–(VII) below are written in this form. In the following examples, for a sample of size n from the specified distribution, $f_\theta(x)$ is the density with respect to Lebesgue measure in (III), (IV), and (V) and to counting measure in (VI) and (VII) (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 22).

(III) *Normal distributions $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$, $\mathcal{X}_0 = (-\infty, \infty)$.

$$f_\theta(x) = \exp\left(-\left(\sum_{i=1}^n x_i\right) \frac{1}{2\sigma^2} + \left(\sum_{i=1}^n x_i\right) \frac{\mu}{\sigma^2} - \frac{n\mu^2}{2} - n \log \sigma - \frac{n}{2} \log 2\pi\right).$$

(IV) *Gamma-distributions $\Gamma(p, \sigma)$, $\mathcal{X}_0 = (0, \infty)$.

$$f_\theta(x) = \exp\left((p-1) \sum_{i=1}^n \log x_i - \frac{1}{\sigma} \sum_{i=1}^n x_i - np \log \sigma - n \log \Gamma(p)\right).$$

(V) *Exponential distributions $e(\mu, \sigma)$, $\mathcal{X}_0 = (\mu, \infty)$.

$$f_\theta(x) = \exp\left(-\left(\sum_{i=1}^n x_i\right) \frac{1}{\sigma} - n \log \sigma + n \frac{\mu}{\sigma}\right).$$

(VI) *Binomial distributions $\text{Bin}(N, p)$, $\mathcal{X}_0 = \{0, 1, \dots, N\}$.

$$f_\theta(x) = \exp\left(\left(\sum_{i=1}^n x_i\right) \log \frac{p}{1-p} + nN \log(1-p) - \sum_{i=1}^n \log \binom{N}{x_i}\right).$$

(VII) *Poisson distributions $P(\lambda)$, $\mathcal{X}_0 = \{0, 1, 2, 3, \dots\}$.

$$f_\theta(x) = \exp\left(\left(\sum_{i=1}^n x_i\right) \log \lambda - \sum_{i=1}^n \log(x_i!) - n\lambda\right).$$

H. Ancillary Statistics

A statistic $t(x)$ is called an **ancillary statistic** when for every element A in $\mathcal{A}(t)$, $P_\theta(A)$ is independent of θ , or in other words, when the distribution of $t(x)$ is independent of θ . A sufficient condition for a statistic to be ancillary is that it is independent of some sufficient statistic. Conversely, an ancillary statistic is independent of all boundedly complete sufficient statistics.

I. Invariant Statistics

Suppose that we are given groups of one-to-one measurable transformations G and \bar{G} on

\mathcal{X} and Θ , respectively. Suppose also that we are given a homomorphism $g \rightarrow \bar{g}$ from G to \bar{G} satisfying $P_{\bar{g}}(g^{-1}B) = P_{g\bar{g}}(B)$. In this case $\mathcal{P} = \{P_{\theta} | \theta \in \Theta\}$ is called **G-invariant**. If \bar{G} is transitive, there exists a fixed element θ_0 of Θ that is sent to an arbitrary θ by an element g of G . In this case, θ is called a **transformation parameter**. In particular, if $\Theta = \mathbf{R}$, X is a random sample from a population distribution, and $P_{\theta}(B) = P_{\theta_0}(B - \theta)$, where $B - \theta = \{x | (x_1 + \theta, \dots, x_n + \theta) \in B\}$, then θ is called a **location parameter**. When $\Theta = (0, \infty)$ and $P_{\theta}(B) = P_1(B/\theta)$, where $B/\theta = \{x | (\theta x_1, \dots, \theta x_n) \in B\}$, θ is called a **scale parameter**. Now assume that θ is a combination of these two kinds of parameters such that $\theta = (\alpha, \beta)$ ($-\infty < \alpha < \infty, 0 < \beta < \infty$) and $P_{\theta}(B) = P_{\theta_0}((B - \alpha)/\beta)$, where $\theta_0 = (0, 1)$. Then if \mathcal{P} is an exponential family, (1) of Section G can be written as

$$g_{\theta}(z) = \frac{dP_{\theta}^0}{dI} = \frac{1}{\beta} \exp \left(\sum_{j=0}^m k_j \left(\frac{z - \alpha}{\beta} \right)^j \right),$$

where the k_j ($j=0, 1, \dots, m$) are constants.

We call $t(x)$ an **invariant statistic** with respect to a general transformation group G when $t(gx) = t(x)$ for all $g \in G$ and $x \in \mathcal{X}$. An invariant statistic is said to be **maximal invariant** with respect to G if, for $t(x) = t(x')$, there exists a $g \in G$ such that $x = gx'$. If t_0 is maximal invariant with respect to G , a statistic t is invariant under G if and only if $t_0(x) = t_0(x')$ implies $t(x) = t(x')$.

When \mathcal{P} is G -invariant, a set $A \in \mathcal{A}$ is called G -invariant if $gA = A$ for all $g \in G$. We denote by \mathcal{A}^0 the set of all G -invariant sets in \mathcal{A} . \mathcal{A}^0 is clearly a σ -field. A set $A \in \mathcal{A}$ is called **almost G -invariant** if $gA = A$ (\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{P}) for all $g \in G$. We denote by \mathcal{A}^* the σ -field consisting of all almost G -invariant sets. If \mathcal{P} is G -invariant, \mathcal{B} is sufficient for \mathcal{P} , $g\mathcal{B} = \mathcal{B}$ for all $g \in G$, and moreover, $\mathcal{B}^0 = \mathcal{B}^*(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{P})$, then \mathcal{B}^0 is a sufficient σ -subfield of \mathcal{A}^0 , where $\mathcal{B}^0 = \mathcal{B} \cap \mathcal{A}^0$ and $\mathcal{B}^* = \mathcal{B} \cap \mathcal{A}^*$.

J. Various Definitions of Sufficiency

There are many different definitions of sufficiency, and the relations among them have been investigated. A σ -field \mathcal{B} is called **decision-theoretically sufficient** or **D-sufficient** if for a given \mathcal{A} -measurable decision function δ there exists a \mathcal{B} -measurable decision function δ' such that

$$\int_{\mathcal{X}} \delta(x, E) dP_{\theta}(x) = \int_{\mathcal{X}} \delta'(x, E) dP_{\theta}(x)$$

for all $E \in \mathcal{D}$, $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$, where a decision space (D, \mathcal{D}) is quite arbitrary. \mathcal{B} is called **test sufficient** if for any given \mathcal{A} -measurable test function ϕ , there exists a \mathcal{B} -measurable test func-

tion ϕ' satisfying $E_{\theta}(\phi) = E_{\theta}(\phi')$ for all $P_{\theta} \in \mathcal{P}$. Let (Θ, \mathcal{C}) be a measurable space of parameter θ and $\tilde{\Theta}$ be the set of all probability measures on \mathcal{C} . Moreover we assume that $P_{\theta}(B)$ is \mathcal{C} -measurable as a function of θ for any fixed $B \in \mathcal{A}$. For any $\xi \in \tilde{\Theta}$, we define λ_{ξ} by

$$\lambda_{\xi}(A \times C) = \int_C P_{\theta}(A) d\xi(\theta), \quad A \in \mathcal{A}, C \in \mathcal{C}.$$

We denote by $\tilde{\lambda}_{\xi}$ the extension of λ_{ξ} to $\mathcal{A} \times \mathcal{C}$. \mathcal{B} is said to be **Bayes sufficient** if

$$E_{\tilde{\lambda}_{\xi}}(I_{\mathcal{X} \times \mathcal{C}} | \mathcal{A} \times \mathcal{C}) = E_{\tilde{\lambda}_{\xi}}(I_{\mathcal{X} \times \mathcal{C}} | \mathcal{B} \times \mathcal{C})$$

for all $\xi \in \tilde{\Theta}$, $C \in \mathcal{C}$, that is, the a posteriori distribution on Θ given \mathcal{A} coincides with that given \mathcal{B} for any a priori ξ . When \mathcal{P} is dominated, these definitions coincide with the classical definition of sufficiency. Generally, a D-sufficient σ -field contains at least one sufficient σ -field. A σ -field containing a sufficient σ -field is Bayes sufficient. Hence Bayes sufficiency follows from D-sufficiency and from classical sufficiency. If a D-sufficient σ -field is separable it is sufficient.

The notion of **prediction sufficiency** or **adequacy** was defined by Skibinsky [10]. Let (X, Y) be a pair of random variables defined over the probability space $(\mathcal{X} \times \mathcal{Y}, \mathcal{A} \times \mathcal{B}, P_{\theta})$. We suppose that X is the sample to be observed, and Y is (are) the value(s) of future observation(s) about which we are to make prediction(s) based on X . X and Y have joint probability distribution with an unknown parameter. A statistic $T = T(X)$ or a subfield \mathcal{C} of \mathcal{A} is said to be prediction sufficient or adequate if (a) given T , X and Y are conditionally independent (or given \mathcal{C} , \mathcal{A} and \mathcal{B} are conditionally independent or Markov) and (b) T is sufficient for X (\mathcal{C} is sufficient for \mathcal{A}). It was proved that in any form of prediction on Y , we may restrict ourselves to the class of procedures that are functions of T (or are \mathcal{C} -measurable).

References

- [1] D. A. S. Fraser, Nonparametric methods in statistics, Wiley, 1957.
- [2] E. L. Lehmann, Testing statistical hypotheses, Wiley, 1959.
- [3] S. S. Wilks, Mathematical statistics, Wiley, 1962.
- [4] R. R. Bahadur, Sufficiency and statistical decision functions, Ann. Math. Statist., 25 (1954), 423–462.
- [5] T. S. Pitcher, A more general property than domination for sets of probability measures, Pacific J. Math., 15 (1965), 597–611.
- [6] L. Brown, Sufficient statistics in the case of independent random variables, Ann. Math. Statist., 35 (1964), 1456–1474.

- [7] E. W. Barankin and A. P. Maitra, Generalization of the Fisher-Darmois-Koopman-Pitman theorem on sufficient statistics, *Sankhyā*, ser. A, 25 (1963), 217–244.
- [8] W. J. Hall, R. A. Wijsman, and J. K. Ghosh, The relationship between sufficiency and invariance with applications in sequential analysis, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 36 (1965), 575–614.
- [9] K. K. Roy and R. V. Ramamoorthi, Relationship between Bayes, classical and decision theoretic sufficiency, *Sankhyā*, ser. A, 41 (1979), 48–58.
- [10] M. Skibinsky, Adequate subfields and sufficiency, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 38 (1967), 155–161.

397 (XVIII.1) Statistical Data Analysis

A. Statistical Data

Statistical data analysis is comprised of a collection of mathematical methods whereby we can deal with numerical data obtained through observations, measurements, surveys, or experiments on the “objective” world. The purpose of statistical analysis is to extract the relevant information from that numerical data pertinent to the subject under consideration. The nature and the properties of the subject and also the purpose of the analysis may vary greatly. The subject may be physical, biological, chemical, sociological, psychological, economic, etc. in nature, and the purpose of the analysis can be purely scientific, as well as technological, medical, or managerial. Because of the great diversity of statistical data, the methods of statistical data analysis and the manner of application should differ greatly from situation to situation; we cannot expect a single unified system of methods to be applicable to all cases. Nevertheless, we have several formal methods of statistical analysis that are more or less mutually related and have been successfully applied to most, if not all, statistical data.

Statistical data can be classified into several types according to a few criteria: according to the property of each observation or measurement, they can be either **quantitative** or **qualitative**; according to whether only one observation is made on each object under investigation or many observations on the same object, they can be either **univariate** or **multivariate**; and according to whether the observations are made at one time or consecutively in the course of time, they may be either

cross sectional or **time series**. Each different type of statistical data requires a different type of procedure (→ 280 Multivariate Analysis, 421 Time Series Analysis).

B. Frequency Distributions and Histograms

Statistical data have the simplest structure when they consist of a collection of observations made on an aggregate of objects supposedly of the same kind. Such an aggregate is usually called a **population**, and the number of its members (its size) is denoted by N . When the data are qualitative or **categorical**, each member of the population is classified into several types according to some criteria, the data consist of the numbers of the members of the population classified into each of the categories. Such numbers are usually called **frequencies**, and the set of frequencies is called the **frequency distribution**.

When the data are quantitative and univariate, one quantitative attribute of each member of the population is observed, and the results are given as a set of N real numbers (x_1, x_2, \dots, x_N) . When N is large, as is usually expected, it is necessary to summarize these results in some manner. One common method is to tabulate the frequency distribution: We define a certain number of intervals $(a_{i-1}, a_i]$, $i = 1, \dots, K$, $a_0 < a_1 < \dots < a_K$, $a_0 \leq \min x_i$, $\max x_i \leq a_K$; and we count the numbers of those x 's falling within each of the intervals and tabulate those numbers or frequencies f_i , $i = 1, 2, \dots, K$. Frequency distribution is often represented in the form of a **histogram**, where the endpoints of the intervals are marked on the horizontal axis, and above each interval a rectangle of area proportional to the frequency for the interval is drawn. It is usually recommended that the widths of the intervals in the frequency distribution be equal, especially when it is to be represented by a histogram. It is, however, often impossible or impractical to do so, and sometimes a logarithmic or other functional scale is used in the abscissa of the histogram; then it is desirable that the intervals of the transformed values are approximately of equal lengths. The number K of the intervals should also be of an appropriate magnitude, neither too large nor too small; K is often constrained by the size N of the population, the shape of the distribution, or other factors. Usually, K is chosen to be between 6 and 20.

From the frequency distribution, we obtain the **cumulative distribution** by associating with each endpoint a_i of the intervals the number F_i of x 's not greater than a_i , namely, $F_i = \sum_{j \leq i} f_j$. The curve obtained by connecting $K + 1$ points

of coordinates (a_i, F_i) , $i = 0, 1, \dots, K$, by linear segments is called the **cumulative distribution curve** (or **polygon**).

C. Characteristics of the Distribution

In order to summarize univariate quantitative data, various values are calculated from the values x_1, \dots, x_N . Such values are called **statistics** (singular, †statistic) and are used to characterize the distribution of the values. Various types of statistics characterize different aspects of the distribution:

(a) **Representative value or measure of location**: a value which is supposed to give the “representative,” “typical,” or “most common” value in the population. By far the most commonly used measure is the **mean** $\bar{x} = \sum_{i=1}^N x_i / N$. \bar{x} is sometimes called the **arithmetic mean**, and some other “means” are also calculated: especially when all the values are positive, the **geometrical mean** $\bar{x}_G = (\prod_i x_i)^{1/N}$ or **harmonic mean** $\bar{x}_H = (\sum_i (1/x_i) / N)^{-1}$ may be calculated; more generally, for some monotone function $f(x)$ we can calculate the f -mean by $\bar{x}_f = f^{-1}(\sum_i f(x_i) / N)$, of which the geometric and the harmonic means are special cases. Another measure of location is the **median**, which is the value in the population located exactly in the middle of the ordering of the magnitudes; more precisely, if $x_{(1)} < x_{(2)} < \dots < x_{(N)}$ are the values in the population arranged according to their magnitudes, the median $x_{med} = x_{((N+1)/2)}$ for odd N , and $= \frac{1}{2}(x_{(N/2)} + x_{((N/2)+1)})$ for even N . The **mode** is also sometimes used; this is defined as the value (usually the center) corresponding to the highest frequency.

(b) The **measure of variability or dispersion** shows how widely the values in the population vary. The most common measure is the **standard deviation**, which is defined by $s_x = \sqrt{\sum_i (x_i - \bar{x})^2 / N}$, and its square is called the **variance** V_x^2 . A similar measure is the **mean absolute deviation** $D_x = \sum_i |x_i - \bar{x}| / N$. Another type of a measure of dispersion is the **range** $R_x = \max x_i - \min x_i$, and the **interquartile range** $Q_x = x_{(3N/4)} - x_{(N/4)}$ and more generally the interquartile range $x_{(\alpha N)} - x_{((1-\alpha)N)}$ for some α . The ratio of the standard deviation to the mean is called the **coefficient of variation** (C. V. for short) and is used as a measure of relative variability when all the values in the population are positive.

(c) Characteristics often used to characterize the “shape” of distributions are the **moments** (around the origin) $m_k = N^{-1} \sum_i x_i^k$ and the **central moments** (moments around the mean) $M_k = N^{-1} \sum_i (x_i - \bar{x})^k$ for a positive integer k ; for a specific k these are called the k th moments. Central k th moments with odd k are equal to zero when the distribution is symmetric, i.e.,

when the histogram is symmetrically shaped. Hence the third moment or its ratio to the third power of the standard deviation s_x^3 is used as a measure of the asymmetry of a distribution; this is called the **skewness**. The fourth moment is large if there are some values which are far off from others and small when all values are concentrated; hence it tends to be large when the histogram has a rather sharp peak in the center and has a long tail in either direction or both, and tends to be small when the histogram is flat in the center and drops off sharply at both ends. Accordingly, the ratio M_4/V_x^2 is used as a measure of long-tailedness of the distribution; this ratio minus 3 is called the **kurtosis**.

D. Theoretical Frequency Distribution

When the observed values can be any real number (sometimes in an interval), the size of the population N is increased indefinitely, and the widths of the intervals are decreased to 0, the histogram is expected to approach a smooth curve. And in the limit when N is infinity, we can assume that the distribution is represented by a mathematically well-behaved function $f(x)$ and that the ratio of the numbers of those values in the population within the interval (a, b) to the size of the population approaches $\int_a^b f(x) dx$. Such a function $f(x)$ is called the **frequency function** or **density function**. Various types of functions have been proposed and used as “theoretical” frequency functions to approximate the actually observed frequency distributions. The most important is the **normal density function**

$$\varphi(x) = \frac{1}{\sigma\sqrt{2\pi}} \exp\left\{-\frac{1}{2\sigma^2}(x-\mu)^2\right\}.$$

The following density functions most commonly appear in applications: the **gamma density**, $f(x) = x^{p-1} \exp(-x/a) / a^p \Gamma(p)$ for $x > 0$ and $= 0$ for $x \leq 0$; the **beta density**, $f(x) = x^{p-1} (1-x)^{q-1} / B(p, q)$ for $0 < x < 1$ and $= 0$ otherwise.

We can conceive of a population of infinite size with some density function; the term **theoretical distribution** is used to mean such a population with its density function, and more specifically the †normal distribution, etc. Such a population and associated density is often called a continuous distribution. For a theoretical distribution, the mean, variance, and moments are naturally defined by

$$\mu = \int x f(x) dx, \quad \sigma^2 = \int (x - \mu)^2 f(x) dx,$$

$$\mu_k = \int (x - \mu)^k f(x) dx, \quad \mu'_k = \int x^k f(x) dx.$$

It should, however, be noted that the mean, the variance, or the moments may not exist for particular distributions.

K. Pearson introduced a system of density functions defined as solutions of the differential equation

$$d \ln f(x)/dx = (A + Bx)/(C + Dx + Ex^2),$$

where A, B, \dots, E are constants. A distribution thus obtained is called a **Pearson distribution**. The normal, gamma, and beta distributions together with some other commonly used distributions, such as the t - and F -distributions, are Pearson distributions.

E. Measure of Concentration

When all the observed values are nonnegative in nature, we may sometimes require some measure of inequality or concentration of the distribution. For such a purpose we order the observed values according to their magnitudes and obtain $x_{(1)} \leq x_{(2)} \leq \dots \leq x_{(N)}$; we define $S_i = \sum_{j \leq i} x_{(j)}$ for $i = 1, \dots, N$, and $S_0 = 0$, plot $N + 1$ points $(S_i/S_N, i/N)$, $i = 0, 1, \dots, N$, and connect them by line segments. The graph thus obtained is called the **Lorentz curve** or the curve of concentration, and it connects the origin and the point $(1, 1)$. It lies below the 45° line, and if all the values are nearly equal the curve comes close to the 45° line, but if values are widely unequal, the curve comes close to the horizontal axis and suddenly jumps to the point $(1, 1)$. The area between the curve and the 45° line is called the **area of concentration**, and it is equal to one-fourth of the mean difference δ divided by the mean, where δ is defined by

$$\delta = \frac{1}{N^2} \sum_i \sum_j |x_i - x_j|.$$

$G = \delta/\bar{x}$ is called the **Gini coefficient of concentration** and is used as a measure of concentration or inequality of distribution. Other measures, including the coefficient of variation, are also used to represent the concentration.

F. Discrete Distributions

There are cases where the observed values are taken only from the nonnegative integers, e.g., the number of individual animals of a specific species in an area, of accidents during a specified time, etc. In such cases, when we increase the number of observations, the distribution does not approach one with a continuous density function but rather one with a certain theoretical discrete distribution. Among theoretical discrete distributions, the most commonly used are the **binomial distribution**:

binomial distribution: $f_j = {}_n C_j p^j (1-p)^{n-j}$ for $0 \leq j \leq n$, and the **Poisson distribution**: $f_j = e^{-\lambda} \lambda^j / j!$ for $j = 0, 1, \dots$. The **hypergeometric distribution**: $f_j = {}_M C_j \cdot {}_{N-M} C_{n-j} / {}_N C_n$, for $\max(0, M + n - N) \leq j \leq \min(n, M)$, and the **negative binomial distribution**: $f_j = {}_{j+r-1} C_{r-1} p^r (1-p)^j$, $j = 0, 1, \dots$, are also often used.

For discrete distributions we can define moments by $\mu = \sum_j j f_j$ and $\mu_k = \sum_j (j - \mu)^k f_j$, and $\mu'_k = \sum_j j^k f_j$, $k = 2, 3, \dots$.

G. Generating Functions and Cumulants

For a theoretical distribution with the density function $f(x)$, the **moment generating function** $M(\theta)$ is defined by $M(\theta) = \int e^{\theta x} f(x) dx$. When $M(\theta)$ is well defined in an open interval including the origin, the distribution has all k th moments, and it can be expanded as

$$M(\theta) = 1 + \mu'_1 \theta + \frac{1}{2!} \mu'_2 \theta^2 + \dots + \frac{1}{k!} \mu'_k \theta^k,$$

from which the term "moment generating function" is derived. When θ is replaced by it with real t , we have the **characteristic function** $\phi(t) = M(it)$, which can be expanded as

$$\phi(t) = 1 + \mu'_1(it) + \frac{1}{2!} \mu'_2(it)^2 + \dots + \frac{1}{k!} \mu'_k(it)^k + o(|t|^k)$$

if the distribution has moments up to the k th. The function $K(\theta) = \ln M(\theta)$ is called the **cumulant generating function**, and the coefficients κ_j in the expansion

$$K(\theta) = \kappa_1 \theta + \frac{\kappa_2}{2} \theta^2 + \dots$$

are called the **cumulants**. The k th cumulant κ_k is expressed as a polynomial of the moments of order not exceeding k ; thus

$$\kappa_1 = \mu'_1, \quad \kappa_2 = \mu'_2 - \mu_1^2, \quad \kappa_3 = \mu'_3 - 3\mu'_2\mu'_1 + 2\mu_1^3, \quad \text{etc.}$$

For the normal distribution,

$$M(\theta) = \exp \left\{ \mu\theta + \frac{\sigma^2 \theta^2}{2} \right\};$$

hence

$$K(\theta) = \mu\theta + \frac{\sigma^2 \theta^2}{2},$$

and the k th cumulant for $k \geq 3$ is equal to 0. Cumulants are used as measures indicating whether the distribution is close to or different from the normal.

For discrete distributions, the **moment generating function** is defined as $M(\theta) = \sum e^{\theta j} f_j$, but the **probability generating func-**

tion $P(t) = \sum f_j t^j = M(\ln t)$, the **factorial moment generating function** $\tilde{M}(\theta) = P(\theta + 1)$, and the **factorial cumulant generating functions** $\tilde{K}(t) = \ln \tilde{M}(t)$ are also of use. The coefficient of t^j in the Maclaurin expansion of $\tilde{M}(t)$ is expressed as $\mu_{[k]}$ and called the **kth factorial moment**; it is equal to $\mu_{[k]} = \sum_j j(j-1)\dots(j-k+1)f_j$. That in the expansion of $\tilde{K}(t)$ is the **factorial cumulant**. The factorial cumulant $\kappa_{[k]}$ is expressed by the same polynomial in $\mu_{[k]}$ as κ_k is expressed in μ'_k . For the Poisson distribution, $M(\theta) = \exp \lambda(e^\theta - 1)$; hence $\tilde{K}(t) = \lambda t$ and it follows that the factorial cumulants $\kappa_{[k]}$ for $k \geq 2$ are all equal to zero if and only if the distribution is Poisson.

H. Bivariate Distribution

When two quantitative observations are obtained for each member of a population of size N , the results are given as N pairs of real numbers (x_i, y_i) , $i = 1, 2, \dots, N$. Such data are called **bivariate data** and the distribution, **bivariate distribution**. Those data can be illustrated as N points in a plane with coordinates (x_i, y_i) , and such an illustration is called a **scatter diagram**. In order to characterize a bivariate distribution, we often use **bivariate moments**

$$M_{k,l} = \frac{1}{N} \sum (x_i - \bar{x})^k (y_i - \bar{y})^l,$$

where \bar{x} and \bar{y} are the means of x and y , respectively; especially, the (1,1) moment $M_{1,1}$ is called the **covariance** and is denoted as $\text{Cov}(x, y)$. The most often used measure of the strength of the relation between x and y values is the **correlation coefficient** $r_{x,y} = \text{Cov}(x, y)/s_x s_y$, where s_x and s_y are the standard deviations of x and y . It is easily shown that $-1 \leq r_{x,y} \leq 1$, and when there exists a nearly linear relationship between x and y values, $r_{x,y}$ is close to either $+1$ or -1 according to whether the x and y values change in the same direction or in opposite directions. When there is no clear relationship between x and y , the correlation coefficient is close to zero, but it may not be a good measure of the relationship when x and y values are related nonlinearly.

A linear function $y = a + bx$ is called the **linear regression function** of y on x , for which the sum of the square distances $\sum_i (y_i - a - bx_i)^2$ is minimized. For the linear regression function the coefficients a and b are determined by $b = \text{Cov}(x, y)/s_x^2$ and $a = \bar{y} - b\bar{x}$, and b is called the **regression coefficient**. We have that $\sum_i (y_i - a - bx_i)^2 / \sum_i (y_i - \bar{y})^2 = 1 - r_{xy}^2$, i.e., that the square of the correlation coefficient is

equal to 1 minus the ratio of the variance of the residual $y_i - a - bx_i$ to that of y ; hence it is sometimes called the **coefficient of determination**. Similarly, the linear regression function of x on y is defined by $x = c + dy$, where $d = \text{Cov}(x, y)/s_y^2$ and $c = \bar{x} - d\bar{y}$. We have $bd = r_{xy}^2$, and $|1/d| = |b/r_{xy}^2| \geq |b|$.

We can tabulate the bivariate frequency distribution by splitting the range of x values into K intervals $(a_{i-1}, a_i]$, $i = 1, \dots, K$, and the range of y values into L intervals $(b_{j-1}, b_j]$, $j = 1, \dots, L$, and counting the number f_{ij} of cases for which $a_{i-1} < x \leq a_i$ and $b_{j-1} < y \leq b_j$. In contrast to the bivariate frequency distribution, the distributions of x and y values are called the **marginal distributions**.

I. Bivariate Density Function

As we did for the univariate distribution, we can consider the limiting shape of the bivariate frequency distribution when the size N of the population tends to infinity and define a continuous bivariate distribution with density function $f(x, y)$, with which the ratio of those members in the population with values (x, y) in a set S in a plane is given by $\iint_S f(x, y) dx dy$. The bivariate density function is also called the **joint density**, and then the density functions of x and y are called the **marginal density functions** and are given by $f_1(x) = \int f(x, y) dy$ and $f_2(y) = \int f(x, y) dx$. The joint moments of a continuous bivariate distribution are defined by $\mu_{k,l} = \iint (x - \mu_1)^k (y - \mu_2)^l f(x, y) dx dy$, where μ_1 and μ_2 are the means of x and y , respectively. The **joint moment generating function** is defined by $M(t_1, t_2) = \iint e^{t_1 x + t_2 y} f(x, y) dx dy$, and the cumulant generating function by $K(t_1, t_2) = \log M(t_1, t_2)$, from which the **joint cumulants**

$$\kappa_{k,l} = \frac{\partial^{k+l}}{\partial t_1^k \partial t_2^l} K(t_1, t_2) \Big|_{t_1=0, t_2=0}$$

are derived.

The **conditional density** of y given x is defined by $f(y|x) = f(x, y)/f_1(x)$, and the distribution with this density function is the **conditional distribution** of y given x ; this latter can be interpreted as the distribution of y of those members in the population with x values in the interval $(x, x + dx]$, where dx is small. The conditional density and the conditional distribution of x given y are similarly defined. The mean and the moments of the conditional distribution are called the **conditional mean** and the **conditional moments**. The conditional mean of y given x , considered as a function of x , is called the **regression function** of y on x .

By far the most important theoretical bivariate density is the **bivariate normal density**,

which is given by

$$f(x, y) = (2\pi\sigma_1\sigma_2\sqrt{1-\rho^2})^{-1} \times \exp \left\{ \frac{1}{2(1-\rho^2)} \left[\frac{(x-\mu_1)^2}{\sigma_1^2} + \frac{(y-\mu_2)^2}{\sigma_2^2} - 2\rho \frac{(x-\mu_1)(y-\mu_2)}{\sigma_1\sigma_2} \right] \right\},$$

for which the mean of x is μ_1 and that of y is μ_2 , the variances of x and y are σ_1^2 and σ_2^2 , respectively, and the covariance of x and y is equal to $\rho\sigma_1\sigma_2$. The bivariate normal distribution has several remarkable properties: All the k, l joint cumulants are equal to zero for $k+l \geq 3$; the marginal distributions of x and y are normal; the regression functions of y on x and x on y are both linear; the conditional distribution of y given x (and x given y) is normal and the conditional variance is constant; and the contours $f(x, y) = c$ for different values of c are equicentric ellipsoids.

J. Higher-Dimensional Data

When the data are of more than two dimensions, i.e., more than two observations are made on each of the objects, we designate the data by Nk -tuples of real numbers $(x_{i1}, x_{i2}, \dots, x_{ik})$, $i = 1, \dots, N$ ($k \geq 3$). Then we can calculate the moments of each of the variates and the joint moments, which are defined by

$$M_{k_1, k_2, \dots, k_k} = \frac{1}{N} \sum (x_{i1} - \bar{x}_1)^{k_1} (x_{i2} - \bar{x}_2)^{k_2} \dots (x_{ik} - \bar{x}_k)^{k_k}.$$

Also, we can arrange the variances and covariances in a symmetric matrix of order k , and we call it the (**variance-**) **covariance matrix**. A covariance matrix is easily shown to be non-negative definite. The determinant of the covariance matrix is called the **generalized variance**. The matrix with the (i, j) element equal to the correlation coefficient of the i th and the j th variates (r_{ij} is set equal to 1) is called the **correlation matrix** and is denoted by R . R is also nonnegative definite. If we denote the (i, j) cofactor of R by R_{ij} , the quantity defined by

$$R_{i|1, \dots, (i), \dots, k} = \sqrt{1 - |R|/R_{ii}}$$

is called the **multiple correlation coefficient** of the i th variate and all other variates; and

$$r_{ij|1, \dots, (1), \dots, (j), \dots, k} = -R_{ij}/\sqrt{R_{ii}R_{jj}}$$

is called the **partial correlation coefficient** of the i th and the j th variates given all other variates. The meaning of these coefficients will be elucidated below. A linear function $a_0 + a_1x_1 + a_2x_2 + \dots + a_{k-1}x_{k-1}$ is called the **linear**

regression function of x_k on x_1, \dots, x_{k-1} , when the coefficients a_1, \dots, a_{k-1} are so determined that the sum $Q = \sum_i (x_{ik} - a_0 - a_1x_{i1} - \dots - a_{k-1}x_{ik-1})^2$ is minimized. They are determined from the equation

$$C_{i1}a_1 + C_{i2}a_2 + \dots + C_{ik-1}a_{k-1} = C_{ik}, \quad (*)$$

$$i = 1, \dots, k-1,$$

with $a_0 = \bar{x}_k - a_1\bar{x}_1 - \dots - a_{k-1}\bar{x}_{k-1}$, where C_{ij} are the covariances. a_1, \dots, a_{k-1} thus determined are called the **regression coefficients** of x_k on x_1, \dots, x_{k-1} , and such a procedure is called the **method of least squares**. The equation (*) is called the **normal equation**. If we write $\hat{x}_{ik} = a_0 + a_1x_{i1} + \dots + a_{k-1}x_{ik-1}$, we have $Q = \sum (x_{ik} - \hat{x}_{ik})^2 = \sum (x_{ik} - \bar{x}_k)^2 - \sum (\hat{x}_{ik} - \bar{x}_k)^2 = \sum (x_{ik} - \bar{x}_k)^2 \times (1 - R_{k|1, \dots, k-1}^2)$, where $R_{k|1, \dots, k-1}$ is the multiple correlation coefficient of x_k and x_1, \dots, x_{k-1} , which is also equal to the correlation coefficient of x_k and \hat{x}_k . The square of the multiple correlation coefficient is also called the **coefficient of determination**. The quantities $x_{ik} - \hat{x}_{ik}$ are called the residuals. Let \hat{x}_{ik-1} and \hat{x}_{ik} be the values of regression functions of x_{k-1} and x_k , respectively, on x_1, \dots, x_{k-2} , and let $y_{ik-1} = x_{ik-1} - \hat{x}_{ik-1}$ and $y_{ik} = x_{ik} - \hat{x}_{ik}$ be the residuals; then the correlation coefficient of y_{k-1} and y_k is equal to the partial correlation coefficient of x_{k-1} and x_k given x_1, \dots, x_{k-2} . We have the following relation between the multiple and the partial correlation coefficients:

$$1 - R_{k|1, \dots, k-1}^2 = (1 - R_{k-1|1, \dots, k-2}^2)(1 - r_{k-1, k|1, \dots, k-2}^2).$$

Multiple and partial correlation coefficients are also expressed in terms of the correlation coefficients of the variates. For example, it can be shown that

$$R_{3|12}^2 = (r_{13}^2 + r_{23}^2 - 2r_{12}r_{13}r_{23})/(1 - r_{12}^2)$$

and that

$$r_{23|1} = (r_{23} - r_{12}r_{13})/\sqrt{(1 - r_{12}^2)(1 - r_{13}^2)}.$$

For higher dimensions, we can also define the (**joint**) **density function** $f(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_k)$ and the (**joint**) **moment generating function**

$$M(t_1, t_2, \dots, t_k) = \int \dots \int \exp(t_1x_1 + t_2x_2 + \dots + t_kx_k) \times f(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_k) dx_1 \dots dx_k.$$

The most important multivariate joint density is that of the **multivariate normal distribution**, which is expressed by

$$f(x_1, \dots, x_k) = (2\pi)^{-R/2} |\Sigma| \exp \left\{ \frac{1}{2} \sum \sum \sigma^{ij}(x_i - \mu_i)(x_j - \mu_j) \right\},$$

where Σ is the covariance matrix with elements σ_{ij} , $\Sigma^{-1} = (\sigma^{ij})$, and μ_i is the mean of the i th variate. For the multivariate normal distribution the moment generating function is given by

$$M(t_1, \dots, t_k) = \exp\left(\sum \mu_i t_i + \frac{1}{2} \sum \sigma_{ij} t_i t_j\right).$$

K. Contingency Tables

When several qualitative observations are made on N objects, each object is classified according to the combination of the categories, and the data are summarized by the numbers $N(i_1, i_2, \dots, i_k)$ of the objects that fall in the i_1 th category according to the first observation, i_2 th category in the second observation, etc. A table that shows the results of such observations is called a (k -way) **contingency table**. If there are m_1 categories in the first criterion, m_2 categories in the second, etc., the contingency table is also called an m_1 by m_2 by ... by m_k table. The numbers $\tilde{N}(j, i_j)$ of the objects which are classified into the i_j th category according to the j th criterion are called marginal frequencies. If we have

$$N(i_1, i_2, \dots, i_k)/N = \tilde{N}(1, i_1)\tilde{N}(2, i_2) \dots \tilde{N}(k, i_k)/N^k$$

for all i_1, i_2, \dots, i_k ,

then the k observations or criteria are independent.

The simplest contingency table is a 2 by 2 table, where several measures for the relation of two observations or criteria have been proposed, among which the most commonly used are the **measure of association** defined by

$$Q = \frac{N(1, 1)N(2, 2) - N(1, 2)N(2, 1)}{N(1, 1)N(2, 2) + N(1, 2)N(2, 1)}$$

and the **odds ratio**

$$\delta = \frac{N(1, 1)N(2, 2)}{N(1, 2)N(2, 1)}$$

and also

$$V = \frac{N(1, 1)N(2, 2) - N(1, 2)N(2, 1)}{\sqrt{\tilde{N}(1, 1)\tilde{N}(1, 2)\tilde{N}(2, 1)\tilde{N}(2, 2)}},$$

where $N(i, j_i)$ are marginal frequencies. The two observations are independent if and only if $Q=0$ or $\sigma=1$ and $V=0$. V is equal to the correlation coefficient of the variables x_1 and x_2 , for which $x_i=0$ if the object is classified into the first category according to the i th criterion and $x_i=1$ if it is classified into the second category. In a two-way m_1 by m_2 table a measure of association is defined by

$$\frac{X^2}{N} = \sum \sum \left(\frac{N(i_1, i_2)N}{\tilde{N}(1, i_1)\tilde{N}(2, i_2)} - 1 \right)^2;$$

it can be shown that $X^2/N=0$ if and only if the two criteria are independent, and that $0 \leq X^2/N \leq \min(m_1 - 1, m_2 - 1)$. When we take $x_i=1$ if the object is classified into the i th category according to the first criterion and $x_i=0$ otherwise and take $y_j=1$ if it belongs to the j th category in the second criterion and $y_j=0$ otherwise, it is shown that the sum of squares of the multiple correlation coefficients of x_i and y_1, \dots, y_{m_2-1} is equal to X^2/N .

L. Decomposition of the Variance

When one observation is qualitative while another is quantitative the objects are classified into several categories according to the first observation, while for each object the value of the second observation is also given. Let x_{ij} be the observed value of the j th object in the group of the i th category; then for each i we can obtain frequency distributions of x_{ij} , and compare these distributions. Let N_i be the number of objects in the i th category, and $\bar{x}_i = \sum x_{ij}/N_i$ be the mean in the i th category. Then the weighted variance of the \bar{x}_i defined by $v_B = \sum_i N_i(\bar{x}_i - \bar{x})^2/N$, where \bar{x} is the mean of all the observations, i.e., $\bar{x} = \sum N_i \bar{x}_i/N$, is called the **between-group variance**, and the weighted mean of the variances of each of the groups defined by $v_W = \sum_i \sum_j (x_{ij} - \bar{x}_i)^2/N$ is called the **within-group variance**. It can be shown that $V_B + V_W = V = \sum \sum (x_{ij} - \bar{x})^2/N$, i.e., the variance of all the observations is decomposed as a sum of the between-group and the within-group variances. The ratio V_B/V is called the **correlation ratio**, which is equal to the square of the multiple correlation coefficient of x and y_1, \dots, y_m , where $y_i=1$ if the object is in the i th category and $y_i=0$ otherwise.

M. Ordinal Data

When the observation is not quantitative but there exists a natural ordering among the categories into which the objects are classified, the observation is said to be in an **ordinal scale**, or simply ordinal.

When two ordinal observations are made on the same set of N objects, we can define several measures of association between the two ordinal scales. For each pair of objects we define a variable c_{ij} , $i, j=1, \dots, N$, $i \neq j$, as $c_{ij}=1$ if the i th object is classified as "better" (or "superior") than the j th object according to both of the measurements, $c_{ij}=-1$ if the orderings are different in the two scales, or $c_{ij}=0$ if they are in the same category according to either or both of the scales. A measure of association is then given by $S = \sum \sum c_{ij}/N(N-1)$,

which takes a value between -1 and $+1$ but usually cannot attain ± 1 . Other ways of normalizing the sum $\sum \sum c_{ij}$ have been proposed.

Another method of calculating the association is the **scoring method**, i.e., giving a set of ordered real numbers to the categories of each of the scales and calculating the correlation coefficient between the scores. The simplest scores are $0, 1, \dots, m-1$ when there are m categories, but other methods of scoring are also used. Scores that give the largest possible correlation are called **canonical scores**, which are obtained as the characteristic vectors of the matrices NN' and $N'N$, where N is the matrix of the contingency table.

N. Time Series Data

Time series data can be recorded in a continuous time scale, but usually measurements are made at discrete times, which are most commonly equally spaced. Hence we here denote them as $x(t)$, $t = 1, 2, \dots, T$. First we consider the quantitative univariate case. The intertemporal change of $x(t)$ is often decomposed into three parts:

$$x(t) = m(t) + c(t) + e(t),$$

where $m(t)$ is called the **trend**, and represents the secular, systematic change of x ; $c(t)$ is called the **cycle**, and represents the recurrent pattern of the change; and $e(t)$ is called the error or random fluctuation, and represents the irregular changes. Such a decomposition cannot be defined rigorously without assuming some probabilistic or stochastic model for $x(t)$, but it is intuitively clear and practically useful in many applications.

There are two ways to estimate the trend. One is to calculate the **moving average** $\hat{x}(t) = (x(t-k) + x(t-k+1) + \dots + x(t) + \dots + x(t+k))/(2k+1)$ and use it as an estimate of the trend of $x(t)$; here k should be chosen to substantially eliminate the cyclic and random parts. More generally we can use the weighted moving average defined as $x(t) = \sum_{j=-k}^k w(j)x(t+j)$, where $w(-j) = w(j)$ and $\sum w(j) = 1$. The second method is to assume some functional form, usually a polynomial in t , for the trend: $m(t) = a_0 + a_1 t + \dots + a_k t^k$, and to determine the coefficient by least squares, i.e., to calculate the values of a_0, a_1, \dots, a_k which minimize $\sum_t (x(t) - a_0 - a_1 t - \dots - a_k t^k)^2$.

There are two cases of cyclical changes. One is the case when there is a clearly defined relevant external time period, such as the seasons of the year or the days of the week. In such cases the effects of such external periodical cycles must be eliminated, and the process which does that is called **seasonal adjustment**

of the time series data. Various methods of seasonal adjustment have been proposed and applied, but none is definitive. The other case is where the cyclical changes are produced from the observed process itself; here, the length of the period and the pattern of the cyclical change must be estimated.

Now assume that the data do not contain any trend, or that the trend has been effectively eliminated. First we calculate the correlation coefficient between $x(t)$ and $x(t+s)$ by

$$r(s) = \frac{\sum (x(t) - \bar{x}'_s)(x(t+s) - \bar{x}''_s)}{\sqrt{\sum (x(t) - \bar{x}'_s)^2 \sum (x(t+s) - \bar{x}''_s)^2}},$$

where

$$\bar{x}'_s = \sum_{t=1}^{T-s} x(t)/(T-s), \quad \bar{x}''_s = \sum_{t=s+1}^T x(t)/(T-s),$$

or more simply by

$$r(s) = T \sum (x(t) - \bar{x})(x(t+s) - \bar{x}) / ((T-s) \sqrt{\sum (x(t) - \bar{x})^2}),$$

where $\bar{x} = \sum x(t)/T$. $r(s)$ is called the **serial correlation coefficient** or the **autocorrelation coefficient** of lag s . When there exists a clear and definite cyclical change of period s in the data, $r(s)$ is close to 1. The diagram in which the serial correlation coefficient $r(s)$ is plotted against s is called the **correlogram**. In order to see the cyclical properties of the data more clearly, we calculate the **power spectral density**

$$w(\lambda) = 1 + 2 \sum_s r(s) \cos \lambda s.$$

The graph of $w(\lambda)$ is called the **power spectrum**, or simply the **spectrum**. $w(\lambda)$ represents the square of the width of the sine curve of frequency $\lambda/2\pi$ or of period $2\pi/\lambda$ contained in the data. The spectral density is closely related to the intensity, defined by

$$I(\lambda) = \frac{1}{T} \left(\left(\sum_t x(t) \cos \lambda t \right)^2 + \left(\sum_t x(t) \sin \lambda t \right)^2 \right),$$

which is proportional to the square of the multiple correlation coefficient of $x(t)$ and the functions $\cos \lambda t$ and $\sin \lambda t$ and is large if the data contains a sine curve of frequency $\lambda/2\pi$. It can be shown that $I(\lambda)$ is approximately equal to $w(\lambda)V(x)/\pi$. The spectral density thus obtained usually oscillates irregularly and far from smoothly; hence smoothing by use of a "spectral window" is often applied (\rightarrow 421 Times Series Analysis).

When several observations are made in time series data, we speak of multivariate time series. Let $x_i(t)$ be the i th observation in the t th period. The correlation coefficient between $x_i(t)$ and $x_j(t+s)$ is called the **serial cross-correlation coefficient** and is denoted by $r_{ij}(s)$ ($s = 0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots$). Analogously to the univari-

ate case we define

$$w_{ij}(\lambda) = \sum_s r_{ij}(s) \cos \lambda s + i \sum_s r_{ij}(s) \sin \lambda s \\ = p_{ij}(\lambda) + i q_{ij}(\lambda),$$

and we call $p_{ij}(\lambda)$ the **cospectral density** between the i th and the j th variables, and $q_{ij}(\lambda)$ the **quadrature spectral density**. $p_{ij}^2 + q_{ij}^2$ is called the **amplitude**, and

$$C_{ij}(\lambda) = \frac{p_{ij}^2(\lambda) + q_{ij}^2(\lambda)}{\sqrt{w_i(\lambda) w_j(\lambda)}},$$

where w_i and w_j are the spectral densities of the i th and the j th variables, is called the **coherence**.

O. Events in Time Scale

Some data give us the time points at which a specific event occurs. Let T_i be the time when the event occurs for the i th time. Then usually the most important information we want to obtain is about the time intervals $d_i = T_{i+1} - T_i$. If there is a periodicity in the occurrences of the event, the d_i will be approximately equal. On the other hand, if the event tends to occur repeatedly after its first appearance, some d_i will be small while others will be large. When there is no periodicity, no tendency to repetition, and no increasing or decreasing trend in the occurrences, we can suppose that the event occurs simply by chance, and this is good reason to suppose that the density function of the distribution of the intervals is exponential, i.e., it can be expressed by $f(d) = (\exp(-d/\alpha))/\alpha$ for $d > 0$. Also in such a case the number of occurrences in fixed time intervals are distributed according to the Poisson distribution. Such a sequence of occurrences of an event is called a **Poisson process**. More generally, let $f(d)$ be the density function of the time intervals; then

$$h(d) = \frac{f(d)}{1 - \int_0^d f(c) dc}$$

is called the **hazard rate** or **hazard function**. The hazard function is constant if and only if the process is Poisson.

P. Probabilistic Models

In many applications of statistical data analysis, the data exhibit variabilities and fluctuations that are due to fortuitous or hazardous causes or chance effects and that obscure the information contained in the data. In such cases we assume that the chance variabilities and fluctuations are random variables distributed according to some probability distribu-

tion, and the information we require is represented by a set of unknown constants that characterize the probability distribution of the data as unknown parameters. Suppose, to take the simplest case, that we have repeated observations of results of some experiment under a fixed condition and that we obtain the values x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n . Since the experimental condition is fixed, the variations among the x_i values can be considered to be due to chance causes, such as variations in materials, uncontrolled small fluctuations in experimental conditions or instruments, and various other variations usually called the errors. Whatever the true causes of the variations, we can consider them to be random, and we can regard the values x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n as the results of random experiments or the realizations of random variables X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n independently and identically distributed according to some probability distribution. Or we may think of a **hypothetical infinite population** of the results of supposedly infinite replications of the experiment under the same fixed condition, and regard the actual observations as n values chosen from this population at random. We may also consider that in this hypothetical infinite population, the frequency distribution is represented by a density function f , which in turn determines the probability distribution of each observation. We may be interested in the "average" values of the result of the experiment as well as the magnitude of the variability; then those values are represented by the mean and the variance of the population distribution. If the form of the population distribution is assumed to be completely specified except for the mean μ and the variance σ^2 , the density function f is determined without these two parameters, and is expressed as $f(x; \mu, \sigma)$. The joint density for n repeated observations is $\prod_i f(x_i; \mu, \sigma)$. The set of assumptions that determines the probability distributions of the observations in terms of the unknown parameters is called the **probabilistic model**, and its determination is called the **problem of specification**.

Once the probabilistic model is given, the purpose of statistical data analysis can be formulated as making judgments on the values of the parameters, which may sometimes go wrong but can be relied on with some margin of probability of error that can be mathematically rigorously ascertained. The formal procedure of making such judgments is called **statistical inference**, and its mathematical theory has been well established over the last hundred years (\rightarrow 401 Statistical Inference).

In most cases of statistical inference, the joint density function of the data plays an important role, and when it is regarded as a function of the unknown parameters for given

values of observations it is called the [†]likelihood function.

Q. Exploratory Procedures

In many applications of statistical data analysis, we are not quite sure of the validity of the probabilistic model assumed, or we admit that the models are, at best, approximations to reality and hence cannot be exactly correct; the approximation may not be precise enough for the conclusions drawn from the assumptions to be practically reliable. Therefore we have to check whether the model assumed is at least approximately valid for the data, and if not, we have to look for a better model that reflects more accurately the structure of the actual data. Thus in many practical applications of data analysis, we have to scrutinize the structure of the data and try various models before settling on a model and drawing final conclusions (which are still susceptible to further revisions when more data are obtained). Methods used in such a process are called **exploratory procedures**, which depend partly on the formal procedure of testing hypotheses and partly on intuitive reasoning sometimes combined with graphical presentations of the data, and also on scientific and empirical understanding of the subject matter.

Suppose in the simplest case that n observations X_1, \dots, X_n are assumed to be independently and identically distributed. Under the condition that all those values are observed under the same well-controlled situation, this assumption is reasonable. But in reality some of the observations may be subject to some unexpected effect due to either a fortuitous outside cause or some “gross error” in the measurement procedure, the process of reporting, etc., and may show much greater variation than others. Such observations can be detected by certain **outlier tests** or simply by looking at the data carefully, and if it is established that some observations are definitely outside of the possible random variability or are subject to some hazardous external effect, those data could be omitted from consideration. Further, the assumed probability density $f(x, \theta)$ may not well approximate the distribution of the actual data even after the “outliers” are omitted. Some test for **goodness of fit** should be applied, and if the hypothesis is rejected, we have to modify our model. Also, if we are provided with several candidates for the model to be adopted, we have to apply some procedure of model selection (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing, 403 Statistical Models). It could also happen that the supposedly uniform conditions of

observation, measurement, or experimentation did not actually prevail but that there has been some heterogeneity among the observations. Bimodality or multimodality of the histogram, i.e., existence of two or more peaks in the histogram, usually strongly suggests such heterogeneity. In such cases, grouping or stratification of the observations is required to make the conditions of observation within each group nearly uniform.

References

- [1] R. A. Fisher, Statistical methods for research workers, Oliver & Boyd, first edition, 1925.
- [2] M. G. Kendall and A. Stuart, The advanced theory of statistics, 3 vols., Griffin, 1958–1966.
- [3] J. W. Tukey, Exploratory data analysis, Addison-Wesley, 1977.

398 (XVIII.6) Statistical Decision Functions

A. General Remarks

The theory of statistical decision functions was established by A. Wald as a mathematically unified theory of statistics (\rightarrow 401 Statistical Inference). In this theory, the problems of mathematical statistics, for example, statistical hypothesis testing and [†]statistical estimation, are formulated in a unified way [1].

A [†]measurable space $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ with a fixed [†]probability measure is called a **sample space**, and an element $x \in \mathcal{X}$ is called a **sample point**. Suppose that we are given a family $\mathcal{P} = \{P_\theta \mid \theta \in \Omega\}$ of probability measures on $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$, where Ω is called the **parameter space**, and a [†]random variable X takes values in \mathcal{X} according to a true probability distribution P assumed to belong to \mathcal{P} . This article deals with the problems involved in making a decision about the parameter θ , called determining the **true value of the parameter**, such that $P = P_\theta$. To describe the procedure for such a decision based on the observation of the behavior of X , we need a triple $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C}; D)$ consisting of a set \mathcal{A} , a [†] σ -algebra \mathfrak{C} of subsets of \mathcal{A} , and a set D of mappings δ from \mathcal{X} into the set of probability measures on $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C})$, $\delta: x \rightarrow \delta(\cdot \mid x)$, such that for a fixed $C \in \mathfrak{C}$, the function $\delta(C \mid x)$ is \mathfrak{B} -measurable. We call \mathcal{A} an **action space** or **decision space**, δ a **statistical decision function** (or simply a **decision function**) or **statistical deci-**

sion procedure, and D a **space of decision functions**. In actual decision procedures, $\delta(C|x)$ is the probability that an action belonging to C is taken, based on the observation of sample point x . We further consider a nonnegative function $w: \Omega \times \mathcal{A} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$, called a **loss function**, such that for a fixed θ , $w(\theta, a)$ is \mathbb{C} -measurable. By averaging the loss, we obtain the **risk function**:

$$r(\theta, \delta) = \int_{\mathcal{X}} \int_{\mathcal{A}} w(\theta, a) \delta(da|x) P_{\theta}(dx).$$

Two decision functions δ and δ' are identified if $\delta(C|x) = \delta'(C|x)$ for almost every x with respect to P_{θ} , for all $\theta \in \Omega$ and all $C \in \mathbb{C}$. When to each $x \in \mathcal{X}$ there corresponds a unique action a_x such that $\delta(\{a_x\}|x) = 1$, the decision function δ is said to be **nonrandomized**; otherwise, **randomized**. The system $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, \mathcal{P}, \Omega, \mathcal{A}, \mathbb{C}, W, D)$ is called a **statistical decision problem**.

From the point of view of this theory, \dagger point estimation, \dagger interval estimation, and statistical hypothesis testing (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing) are described as follows.

(1) In point estimation we assume that the action space \mathcal{A} is a subset of \mathbf{R} and that we are given functions $\varphi: \mathcal{X} \rightarrow \mathcal{A}$ and $l: \mathcal{P} \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$. The problem is to estimate the value of $l(P)$ by using the real value $\varphi(x)$ at an observed sample point $x \in \mathcal{X}$. As the loss function, we often set $w(\theta, a) = C(\theta)(a - l(P_{\theta}))^2$, where $C(\theta)$ is a function of θ , and call it a **quadratic loss function** (\rightarrow 399 Statistical Estimation).

(2) In interval estimation we assume that each action is represented as an interval in \mathbf{R} . Each interval $[u, v]$ can be represented by a point (u, v) of the half-space $\mathbf{R}^2 = \{z = (z_1, z_2) | z_1 \leq z_2\}$, which may be taken as the action space. A weighted sum $\alpha w_1(\theta, z) + \beta w_2(\theta, z)$ ($\alpha, \beta \geq 0$) of two functions,

$$w_1(\theta, z) = \begin{cases} 1 & (\theta \notin [z_1, z_2]), \\ 0 & (\theta \in [z_1, z_2]), \end{cases}$$

$$w_2(\theta, z) = z_2 - z_1,$$

often supplies the loss function (\rightarrow 399 Statistical Estimation).

(3) In testing a hypothesis $\mathbf{H}: \theta \in \omega_0$ versus an \dagger alternative $\mathbf{A}: \theta \in \omega_1$ ($\omega_0 \cap \omega_1 = \emptyset$, $\omega_0 \cup \omega_1 = \Omega$), the action space can be expressed by the set consisting of two points a_1, a_2 , where a_1 denotes the decision to reject \mathbf{H} and a_2 the decision to accept \mathbf{H} . The loss function is defined as follows:

$$w(\theta, a_1) = \begin{cases} 1 & (\theta \in \omega_0), \\ 0 & (\theta \in \omega_1), \end{cases}$$

$$w(\theta, a_2) = \begin{cases} 0 & (\theta \in \omega_0), \\ 1 & (\theta \in \omega_1). \end{cases}$$

This is called a **simple loss function**. Whatever

testing procedure δ is adopted, the probabilities of the \dagger errors of the first or second kind coincide with the values of $r(\theta, \delta)$ for $\theta \in \omega_0$ or $\theta \in \omega_1$, respectively (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing).

When Ω is the union of mutually disjoint nonempty sets $\omega_1, \omega_2, \dots, \omega_n$, $\mathcal{A} = \{a_1, a_2, \dots, a_n\}$, and $w(\theta, a_j) = c_{ij}$ ($\theta \in \omega_i$) with $c_{ij} \geq 0$ ($i \neq j$), $c_{ii} = 0$, the decision problem is called an **n -decision problem**.

B. Optimality of Statistical Decision Functions

Consider the problem of choosing the best decision function δ . When $r(\theta, \delta_1) \leq r(\theta, \delta_2)$ for all θ and there exists at least one θ_0 such that $r(\theta_0, \delta_1) < r(\theta_0, \delta_2)$, the decision function δ_1 is said to be **uniformly better** than δ_2 . If there exists a decision function δ_0 in D that is uniformly better than any other δ in D , it is the **best** decision function. However, such a function δ_0 does not always exist. A decision function $\tilde{\delta}$ in D is said to be **admissible** if there exists no other decision function δ in D that is uniformly better than $\tilde{\delta}$. In other words, $\tilde{\delta}$ is admissible if and only if the validity of the inequality $r(\theta, \delta) \leq r(\theta, \tilde{\delta})$ for some $\delta \in D$ and all $\theta \in \Omega$ implies $r(\theta, \delta) = r(\theta, \tilde{\delta})$ for all $\theta \in \Omega$. When there is no information about P except that it is a member of \mathcal{P} , we follow the **minimax principle** and choose a function δ^* for which we have $\inf_{\delta \in D} \sup_{\theta \in \Omega} r(\theta, \delta) = \sup_{\theta \in \Omega} r(\theta, \delta^*)$. This decision function δ^* is called a **minimax decision function** or **minimax solution**.

Let \mathfrak{F} be a σ -algebra of subsets of Ω , and suppose that $r(\theta, \delta)$ is \mathfrak{F} -measurable for any fixed δ . If, furthermore, we are given a probability measure ξ , called an **a priori distribution**, on (Ω, \mathfrak{F}) , we choose a $\hat{\delta}$ that satisfies

$$\inf_{\delta \in D} \int_{\Omega} r(\theta, \delta) d\xi(\theta) = \int_{\Omega} r(\theta, \hat{\delta}) d\xi(\theta).$$

Such a $\hat{\delta}$ and the integral of $r(\theta, \hat{\delta})$ are called a **Bayes solution** and the **Bayes risk** relative to ξ , respectively. Let F be a family of a priori distributions on (Ω, \mathfrak{F}) . If $\hat{\delta}$ satisfies

$$\inf_{\xi \in F} \left(\int_{\Omega} r(\theta, \hat{\delta}) d\xi(\theta) - \inf_{\delta \in D} \int_{\Omega} r(\theta, \delta) d\xi(\theta) \right) = 0,$$

$\hat{\delta}$ is called a **Bayes solution in the wider sense** relative to F . If \mathcal{P} is \dagger dominated by λ with a $\mathfrak{B} \times \mathfrak{F}$ -measurable $f(x, \theta) = dP_{\theta}/d\lambda$, $w(\theta, a)$ is $\mathfrak{F} \times \mathbb{C}$ -measurable, and

$$\begin{aligned} A_x &= \left\{ \tilde{a} \in \mathcal{A} \mid \int_{\Omega} w(\theta, \tilde{a}) f(x, \theta) d\xi(\theta) \right. \\ &\quad \left. = \inf_{a \in \mathcal{A}} \int_{\Omega} w(\theta, a) f(x, \theta) d\xi(\theta) \right\} \end{aligned}$$

is nonempty and \mathbb{C} -measurable for λ -almost

every x , then a Bayes solution δ with respect to ξ satisfies $\delta(A_x|x) = 1$ for λ -almost every x . For a sample point x with $\int_{\Omega} f(x, \theta) d\xi(\theta) \neq 0$, a probability measure $\eta(\cdot|x, \xi)$ on (Ω, \mathfrak{F}) defined by

$$\eta(B|x, \xi) = \frac{\int_B f(x, \theta) d\xi(\theta)}{\int_{\Omega} f(x, \theta) d\xi(\theta)}$$

is called an **a posteriori distribution**. To get a Bayes solution it is enough to minimize the value of $\int_{\Omega} w(\theta, a) d\eta(\theta|x, \xi)$ for every observed x .

If ξ in the definition of A_x defined above is a σ -finite measure on (Ω, \mathfrak{F}) , a decision function δ satisfying $\delta(A_x|x) = 1$ for λ -almost every x is called a **generalized Bayes solution** with respect to ξ .

Let D' be a subset of the space D . If for any $\delta \in D - D'$ there exists a $\delta' \in D'$ that is uniformly better than δ , then D' is called a **complete class**. If for any $\delta \in D$ there exists a $\delta' \in D'$ that is either uniformly better than δ or has the same risk function as δ , then D' is called an **essentially complete class**. If D' is complete and any proper subset of D' is not complete, then D' is called a **minimal complete class**. If a minimal complete class exists, it is unique and coincides with the set of all admissible decision functions.

C. *n*-Decision Problems

In an n -decision problem where $\mathcal{A} = \{a_1, \dots, a_n\}$, we set $\delta_i(x) = \delta(a_i|x)$ for a decision function δ , where $\delta_i(x)$ is \mathfrak{B} -measurable and satisfies $\delta_i(x) \geq 0$, $\delta_1(x) + \dots + \delta_n(x) = 1$. We consider the set \mathcal{D} of vector-valued functions $\Delta(x) = (\delta_1(x), \dots, \delta_n(x))$ whose components $\delta_i(x)$ satisfy the conditions just given. Such a vector-valued function $\Delta(x)$ can be identified with $\delta(x)$; we write $\delta(x)$ instead of $\Delta(x)$ also. If in addition the parameter space Ω is a finite set $\{\theta_1, \theta_2, \dots, \theta_k\}$, we can consider a mapping $\psi: \mathcal{D} \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^k$ defined by $\psi(\delta) = (r(\theta_1, \delta), \dots, r(\theta_k, \delta))$, and then $S = \psi(\mathcal{D}) = \{\psi(\delta) | \delta \in \mathcal{D}\}$ is convex and closed in \mathbb{R}^k . If δ is nonrandomized, then for each x , one and only one of the $\delta_i(x)$ is 1, and all others are 0. Hence, in this case, \mathcal{X} is the disjoint union of \mathfrak{B} -measurable subsets B_i ($i = 1, \dots, n$) such that $\delta(a_i|x) = 1$ if and only if $x \in B_i$. A probability measure m on $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ is said to be **atomless** if for any set $A \in \mathfrak{B}$ with $m(A) > 0$ and any b with $0 < b < m(A)$, there exists a subset $B \in \mathfrak{B}$ of A such that $m(B) = b$. If Ω is finite and every member of \mathcal{P} is atomless, the image $\psi(\mathcal{D}^0)$ of the set \mathcal{D}^0 of all nonrandomized decision functions coincides with $\psi(\mathcal{D})$. This shows that \mathcal{D}^0 is an essentially complete

class in \mathcal{D} . However, when some members of \mathcal{P} are not atomless, $\psi(\mathcal{D})$ is not always equal to $\psi(\mathcal{D}^0)$, but $\psi(\mathcal{D}^0)$ is a closed subset of \mathbb{R}^k . In particular, when $n = 2$ for given probability measures P_1, \dots, P_k over $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$, the set S of all points $(P_1(B), \dots, P_k(B))$ ($B \in \mathfrak{B}$) in \mathbb{R}^k is a closed set. If in addition P_1, \dots, P_k are all atomless, S is convex. These results are known as the **Lyapunov theorem**.

A two-decision problem with $\omega_1 = \{1\}$, $\omega_2 = \{2\}$, and $c_{ij} = 1$ ($i \neq j$), $= 0$ ($i = j$) is called a **dichotomy**. We discuss this problem in some detail in order to explain the concept of optimality of decision functions. For a dichotomy, $S = \psi(\mathcal{D})$ is a set in \mathbb{R}^2 that (i) is convex, (ii) is closed, (iii) is symmetric about $(1/2, 1/2)$, (iv) contains the points $(0, 1)$, $(1, 0)$, and (v) is a subset of interval $[0, 1] \times [0, 1]$ (Fig. 1). The set of decision functions δ that is mapped under ψ onto the curve $ACDB$ in Fig. 1 constitutes the minimal complete class, and a decision function δ mapped onto the point D is a minimax solution. Let ξ be an a priori distribution such that

$$\xi(1) = \alpha, \quad \xi(2) = \beta \quad (\alpha + \beta = 1, \alpha \geq 0, \beta \geq 0).$$

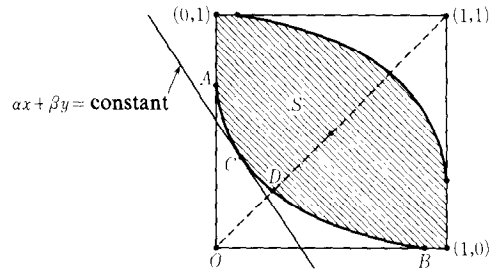


Fig. 1

Then a Bayes solution relative to ξ is mapped under ψ onto a supporting point c with direction ratio $-\alpha/\beta$ and is obtained as the characteristic function of the set $E = \{x | \alpha f(x) < \beta g(x)\}$, where f and g are \dagger Radon-Nikodym derivatives $dP_1/d\lambda$ and $dP_2/d\lambda$ with respect to $\lambda = P_1 + P_2$, that is, f, g are measurable functions on \mathcal{X} such that for any measurable set E , we have

$$P_1(E) = \int_E f d\lambda, \quad P_2(E) = \int_E g d\lambda.$$

This fact implies that the most powerful test constructed in the Neyman-Pearson fundamental lemma (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing B) is precisely a Bayes solution.

D. Complete Class Theorems

Suppose that \mathcal{P} is \dagger dominated by a σ -finite measure λ , and let $f(x, \theta)$ be the Radon-Nikodym derivative of P_θ with respect to λ .

Consider a subspace L of $L_1(\mathcal{X}, \lambda)$ containing $\{f(x, \theta) | \theta \in \Omega\}$, and the following equivalence relation between bounded \mathfrak{B} -measurable functions on \mathcal{X} : φ_1 and φ_2 are defined to be equivalent if and only if $\int \varphi_1 f d\lambda = \int \varphi_2 f d\lambda$ holds for every $f \in L$. We further assume that the dual space of L is the linear space \mathfrak{M} of the equivalence classes of bounded measurable functions just defined. Let $C_0(\mathcal{A})$ be the set of all continuous functions on \mathcal{A} with compact support, $\pi \circ \alpha$ the integral of $\alpha \in C_0(\mathcal{A})$ with respect to a probability measure π over \mathcal{A} , and $g \circ \delta$ the integral

$$\int \delta(\cdot | x) g(x) d\lambda$$

for $g \in L$, $\delta \in D$. As a base for neighborhoods of the space of decision functions around $\delta_0 \in D$, we consider $V(\delta_0: \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n, g_1, \dots, g_n, \epsilon) = \{\delta | |g_i \circ \delta_0 \circ \alpha_i - g_i \circ \delta \circ \alpha_i| < \epsilon, i = 1, \dots, n\}$, where $\alpha_i \in C_0(\mathcal{A})$, $g_i \in L$, $\epsilon > 0$.

Let F be the set of all a priori distributions ξ on (Ω, \mathfrak{F}) each of which assigns the total mass 1 to a finite subset of Ω , B the set of all Bayes solutions relative to some $\xi \in F$, and W the set of all Bayes solutions in the wide sense relative to F . Suppose that \mathcal{A} is a locally compact, separable metric space and $w(\theta, a)$ is lower semicontinuous with respect to a for every fixed θ . Then if D is compact and convex, the intersection of W and the closure \bar{B} of B constitutes an essentially complete class [2]. Moreover, if Ω is compact with respect to the metric $d(\theta_1, \theta_2) = \sup_{B \in \mathfrak{B}} |P_{\theta_1}(B) - P_{\theta_2}(B)|$ and $\{w(\cdot, a) | a \in \mathcal{A}\}$ is a uniformly bounded and equicontinuous family on Ω , then the class of Bayes solutions relative to some a priori distribution is a complete class [1]. These propositions are called **complete class theorems** (for complete classes in specified problems and admissibility of individual procedures → 399 Statistical Estimation; 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing; and Appendix A, Table 23).

Two measurable spaces (S, \mathcal{S}) and (R, \mathcal{R}) are said to be **isomorphic** if there exists a correspondence ρ of S and R ($E \in \mathcal{S}$ implies $\rho(E) \in \mathcal{R}$ and, conversely, $\rho(E) \in \mathcal{R}$ implies $E \in \mathcal{S}$) where ρ is one-to-one onto. Let \mathcal{D} be the set of all decision functions associated with a sample space $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ and an action space $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C})$, T be a \mathfrak{B} -statistic on $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ taking values in a measurable space $(\mathcal{Y}, \mathfrak{E})$, and \mathcal{D}^* be the set of all decision functions having sample space $(\mathcal{Y}, \mathfrak{E})$ and action space $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C})$. The set of all $\delta \in \mathcal{D}$ for which there exists a $\delta^* \in \mathcal{D}^*$ satisfying $\delta(C | x) = \delta^*(C | T(x))$ ($C \in \mathfrak{C}$) is denoted by \mathcal{D}_T . If (i) T is a \mathfrak{B} -sufficient statistic and if (ii) $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C})$ is isomorphic to the measurable space \mathbf{R}^k associated with the σ -algebra of its Borel subsets, then \mathcal{D}_T is essentially complete in \mathcal{D} . Conversely, if (i) \mathcal{P} is a dominated family, (ii) $f(x, \theta) > 0$ always

holds on \mathcal{X} , and (iii) for any pair $\theta_1, \theta_2 \in \Omega$, there exists a $\theta_3 \in \Omega$ such that no element a in \mathcal{A} makes two of the $w(\theta_i, a)$ ($i = 1, 2, 3$) attain their minimum simultaneously, then essential completeness of \mathcal{D}_T in \mathcal{D} implies that T is sufficient [3] (→ 399 Statistical Estimation).

E. Invariance

Suppose that there exist one-to-one transformation groups G, \bar{G} , and \tilde{G} of X, Ω , and \mathcal{A} , respectively, onto themselves (transformations belonging to G, \bar{G} , and \tilde{G} are $\mathfrak{B}, \mathfrak{F}$, and \mathfrak{C} , respectively) and that there exist homomorphisms $g \rightarrow \bar{g}, g \rightarrow \tilde{g}$ of G to \bar{G} and \tilde{G} , respectively, such that for $B \in \mathfrak{B}$ we have $P_\theta(g^{-1}B) = P_{\bar{\theta}}(B)$ and $w(\bar{g}\theta, \bar{g}a) = w(\theta, a)$. Then a decision problem $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, \mathcal{P}, \Omega, \mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C}, w, D)$ is said to be **invariant** under (G, \bar{G}, \tilde{G}) . In a decision problem invariant under (G, \bar{G}, \tilde{G}) , a decision function satisfying $\delta(\bar{g}C | \bar{g}x) = \delta(C | x)$ is called an **invariant decision function**.

Suppose that the transformation group G is locally compact and is the union of a countable family $\{K_n\}$ of compact subsets. Let Γ be the σ -algebra of Borel subsets of G such that the mapping $(g, x) \rightarrow (g, gx)$ is measurable in the sense that the inverse image of any set in $\Gamma \times \mathfrak{B}$ is also a set in $\Gamma \times \mathfrak{B}$. For such a Γ the orbit $G(x)$ of G through x is Γ -measurable. We assume that following conditions: (1) \mathcal{P} is dominated; (2) G operates effectively on \mathcal{X} ; (3) \bar{G} operates transitively on Ω ; (4) for any compact subset J of G ,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \{\mu^r(K_n) / \mu^r(K_n \cdot J^{-1})\} = 1,$$

where μ^r is a right-invariant Haar measure (→ 225 Invariant Measures C) on G and $K_n \cdot J^{-1} = \{gh^{-1} | g \in K_n, h \in J\}$; (5) there is a conditional probability distribution $P_\theta(\cdot : z)$, given $z \in G(x)$, on \mathcal{X} ; (6) the integral $\int_{G(x)} w(\theta, \bar{g}a) P_\theta(dgx : z)$ attains its minimum value $b(\theta, z)$ for any θ and $z \in G(x)$; and (7)

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left\{ \int_{K_n x} w(\theta, \bar{g}a) P_\theta(dgx : z) - b(\theta, z) \right\} \geq 0$$

uniformly in a , where $K_n x = \{gx | g \in K_n\}$. Then the best invariant decision function exists which is also minimax in \mathcal{D} [4] (→ 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing). It is shown in [9] that some invariant minimax decision functions are not admissible.

F. Sequential Decision Problems

In the general framework of statistical decision theory, not only the decisions to be taken but the number of samples to be observed

may be determined based on the previous observations.

A simple formulation is illustrated for the sequential decision problem given below. Suppose that X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n are independently and identically distributed random variables with probability measure P_θ . We assume that the X 's are to be observed one by one, and at the i th stage, when we have observed X_1, \dots, X_i , we are to decide whether to continue sampling and observe X_{i+1} or to stop observation and choose an action or decision in \mathcal{D} , utilizing all the observations thus far obtained. Then a decision rule is defined by a sequence of pairs (δ_n, s_n) , $n = 0, 1, \dots$, where δ_n is a mapping from the space X^n to \mathcal{D} (for the sake of simplicity we here exclude randomized decisions), and $s_n = s_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is a measurable function from X^n to the interval $[0, 1]$. s_n gives the probability of stopping the sampling when the first n of the X 's are observed, and δ_n defines the decision taken when the observations are stopped. We include s_0 and δ_0 to denote the probability of taking a decision without making any observation and the decision to be taken then. We call δ_n the **terminal decision rule** and s_n the **stopping rule**. Then for such a decision rule $\tilde{\delta}$ the total expected loss or the risk is given by

$$r(\theta, \tilde{\delta}) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \int \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} (1 - s_j(x_1, \dots, x_j)) \\ \times \{s_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)w(\theta, \delta_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)) \\ + c_n(x_n | x_1, \dots, x_{n-1})\} \prod_{j=1}^n dP_\theta(x_j),$$

where $c_n(x_n | x_1, \dots, x_{n-1})$ is the **cost of observation** of $X_n = x_n$ when $X_1 = x_1, \dots, X_{n-1} = x_{n-1}$. The rule $\tilde{\delta}$ is called a **sequential decision rule** or a **sequential decision function**, and the whole setup a **sequential decision problem**. In most of the sequential decision problems the cost of observation is assumed to be equal to a constant c per observation, and then the Bayes risk $r^*(\xi_\theta)$ for the prior distribution ξ_θ satisfies the relation

$$r^*(\xi_\theta) = \min \left\{ \inf_d \int w(\theta, d) d\xi_\theta, \right. \\ \left. \int \int r^*(\pi_\theta(x_1, \xi_\theta)) dP_\theta(x_1) d\xi_\theta + c \right\},$$

where $\pi_\theta(x_1, \xi_\theta)$ denotes the posterior distribution when $X_1 = x_1$ is observed under the prior distribution ξ_θ ; and the Bayes decision rule satisfies the condition

$$s_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) = 1 \text{ if } r^*(\pi_\theta(x_1, \dots, x_n; \xi_\theta)) \\ = \inf \int w(\theta, d) d\pi_\theta(x_1, \dots, x_n; \xi_\theta), \\ = 0 \text{ otherwise,}$$

and $\delta_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) = d^*$ if $\int w(\theta, d^*) d\pi_\theta(x_1, \dots, x_n; \xi_\theta) = \inf_d \int w(\theta, d) d\pi_\theta(x_1, \dots, x_n; \xi_\theta)$, where $\pi_\theta(x_1, \dots, x_n; \xi_\theta)$ is the posterior distribution given $X_1 = x_1, \dots, X_n = x_n$ under the prior ξ_θ .

For the dichotomy problem with the simple loss function discussed above, the Bayes decision rule has the form

$$s_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) = 1 \text{ if } \pi_0(x_1, \dots, x_n) \leq \pi_1 \text{ or } \geq \pi_2, \\ = 0 \text{ otherwise,}$$

and

$$\delta_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) = d_1 \text{ if } \pi_0(x_1, \dots, x_n) \leq \pi_1, \\ = d_0 \text{ if } \pi_0(x_1, \dots, x_n) \geq \pi_2,$$

where $\pi_0(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is the posterior probability that $\theta = \theta_0$, given $X_1 = x_1, X_n = x_n$. This amounts to the following rule: Continue sampling as long as

$$\gamma_1 < \lambda(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \prod_i P_{\theta_0}(x_i) / \prod_i P_{\theta_1}(x_i) < \gamma_2,$$

and decide on d_0 as soon as $\lambda(x_1, \dots, x_n) \geq \gamma_2$ and on d_1 as soon as $\lambda(x_1, \dots, x_n) \leq \gamma_1$, which is actually equivalent to a sequential probability ratio test (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing).

G. Information in Statistical Experiments

The part $\mathcal{E} = (\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, \mathcal{P}, \Omega)$ of a decision problem $\Delta = (\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, \mathcal{P}, \Omega, \mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C}, w, D)$ is called a **statistical experiment**. In this section, we consider n -decision problems, i.e., those wherein Ω consists of a finite number $\{1, 2, \dots, n\}$ of states, and we denote the set $S = \{r(1, \delta), r(2, \delta), \dots, r(n, \delta) | \delta \in \mathcal{D}\}$ by $L(\Delta)$. Let \mathcal{E}_1 and \mathcal{E}_2 be two experiments having a common parameter space Ω , and let Δ_1 and Δ_2 be two decision problems composed of \mathcal{E}_1 and \mathcal{E}_2 , respectively, and a common $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C}, w)$. We say that the experiment \mathcal{E}_1 is **more informative** than the experiment \mathcal{E}_2 if $L(\Delta_1) \supset L(\Delta_2)$ for any action space $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C})$ and any loss function w [6]; that is, whatever the actions proposed and the loss incurred, the experiment \mathcal{E}_1 can offer a decision procedure at least as efficient as the experiment \mathcal{E}_2 . Thus the set $L(\Delta)$ with $\Delta = (\mathcal{E}, \mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C}, w, D)$ represents some feature of information that \mathcal{E} can provide about the states Ω . However, comparison of $L(\Delta)$ is not easy to carry out. S. Kullback and R. A. Leibler defined the concept of information for the case of a dichotomy Δ [5]. If the probability distribution induced by a random variable X has a Radon-Nikodym derivative $f_1(x) (>0)$ or $f_2(x) (>0)$ with respect to λ , we define

$$I(X : 2) = I(f_1, f_2) = \int_x \log \frac{f_1(x)}{f_2(x)} f_1(x) d\lambda,$$

calling this the **Kullback-Leibler information number** (or **K-L information number**). This number is uniquely determined by the set $S = L(\Delta)$ in Fig. 1, and the larger S becomes, the larger $I(f_1, f_2)$ becomes. If α, β ($\alpha + \beta = 1$) are a priori probabilities and $\eta(1|x)$ and $\eta(2|x)$ are a posteriori probabilities of 1 and 2, respectively, we have, from the Bayes theorem,

$$\log \frac{f_1(x)}{f_2(x)} = \log \frac{\eta(1|x)}{\eta(2|x)} - \log \frac{\alpha}{\beta}.$$

Here the right-hand side stands for the change in the probability of the occurrence of the state after an observation of x , and the *expectation of the left-hand side under f_1 is $I(f_1, f_2)$. The K-L information number has the following properties: (i) $I(X:1, 2) \geq 0$, and $I(X:1, 2) = 0 \Leftrightarrow f = g$; (ii) *independence of X and Y implies $I(X:1, 2) + I(Y:1, 2) = I(X, Y:1, 2)$; (iii) for a statistic $T = t(x)$, $I(X:1, 2) \leq I(T:1, 2)$, where the equality holds if and only if T is sufficient for $\mathcal{P} = \{P_1, P_2\}$, in which $dP_1/d\lambda = f_1$ and $dP_2/d\lambda = f_2$; and, as a result of (ii), (iv) if X_1, \dots, X_n are distributed independently with the same distribution, $I(X_1, \dots, X_n:1, 2) = nI(X_1:1, 2)$.

Suppose next that Ω is the real line and that the Radon-Nikodym derivative $g(t:\theta)$ of the distribution of a statistic T with respect to a measure λ has the following properties: (i) the set of all t at which $g(t:\theta) > 0$ is independent of θ ; (ii) $g(t:\theta)$ is continuously twice differentiable; and (iii) the order of differentiation with respect to θ and integration with respect to t can be interchanged. Then $I(T:\theta, \theta + d\theta) = I(T:\theta)d\theta^2$ for an infinitesimal displacement $d\theta$ of θ , where

$$I(T:\theta) = \int_x \left(\frac{\partial \log g(t:\theta)}{\partial \theta} \right)^2 g(t:\theta) d\lambda.$$

Here $I(T:\theta)$ coincides with the Fisher information (\rightarrow 399 Statistical Estimation).

Suppose that we are given a sequence (X_1, X_2, \dots) of independent random variables whose distributions have as their density either (f_1, f_2, \dots) or (g_1, g_2, \dots) , that is, f_i and g_i are candidates for the density of distribution of X_i ($i = 1, 2, \dots$). A method to determine which of the sequences $(f_i), (g_i)$ actually corresponds to (X_i) is given by the **Kakutani theorem**. Let F be the distribution of (X_1, X_2, \dots) when each X_i is distributed according to f_i , and let G be that of (X_1, X_2, \dots) when each X_i is distributed according to g_i . To see how X_1, X_2, \dots are actually distributed, we assume that the loss incurred by an incorrect decision is 1 and the loss incurred by a correct decision is 0. Denote such a decision problem (dichotomy) by Δ . Then we generally have $L(\Delta) \subset I$, where $I = \{(x, y) | 0 \leq x, y \leq 1\}$. A necessary and sufficient condition for

$L(\Delta) = I$ is that $\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \rho(f_n, g_n) = 0$, where

$$\rho(f_n, g_n) = \int_x \sqrt{f_n(x)g_n(x)} dx.$$

Consequently, if the X_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) have the same distribution, we have $L(\Delta) = I$, and the correct decision can be made with no error based on infinitely many independent observations of X_1, X_2, \dots .

H. Relation to Game Theory

The theory of statistical decision functions is closely related to game theory. From the game-theoretic viewpoint, a statistical decision problem is considered to be a zero-sum two-person game played by the statistician against nature. A strategy of nature is the true distribution P of the variable X or the true value of θ , and a strategy of the statistician is a decision δ . In this setup, the risk function $r(\theta, \delta)$ can be regarded as a *payoff function paid by the statistician to nature. An a priori distribution ξ is a *mixed strategy of nature. A randomized decision function is a mixed strategy of the statistician. A minimax decision function corresponds to a minimax strategy of the statistician. A minimax strategy of nature is called a **least favorable a priori distribution**. If a decision problem is *strictly determined as a game, a minimax solution is a Bayes solution in the wide sense.

If δ_0 is a Bayes solution with respect to ξ_0 and $r(\theta, \delta_0) \leq R(\xi_0, \delta_0)$ for all θ , the decision problem is strictly determined, and δ_0 is minimax and ξ_0 is a least favorable a priori distribution, where $R(\xi_0, \delta_0) = \int_{\Omega} r(\theta, \delta_0) d\xi_0(\theta)$. If δ_0 is a Bayes solution in the wide sense and $r(\theta, \delta_0)$ is constant as a function of θ , the decision problem is strictly determined, and δ_0 is minimax. If δ_0 is admissible and $r(\theta, \delta_0) \equiv c < \infty$, δ_0 is minimax. If Ω is a finite set and $\inf_{\delta} \sup_{\theta} r(\theta, \delta) < \infty$, the decision problem is strictly determined and there exists a least favorable a priori distribution. We have few general results about generalized Bayes solutions (\rightarrow 173 Game Theory; [6]).

References

- [1] A. Wald, Statistical decision functions, Wiley, 1950 (Chelsea, 1971).
- [2] L. LeCam, An extension of Wald's theory of statistical decision functions, Ann. Math. Statist., 26 (1955), 69–81.
- [3] R. R. Bahadur, Sufficiency and statistical decision functions, Ann. Math. Statist., 25 (1954), 423–462.

[4] H. Kudō, On minimax invariant estimates of the transformation parameter, Nat. Sci. Rep. Ochanomizu Univ., 6 (1955), 31–73.
[5] S. Kullback, Information theory and statistics, Wiley, 1959.
[6] D. H. Blackwell and M. A. Girshick, Theory of games and statistical decisions, Wiley, 1954.
[7] L. Weiss, Statistical decision theory, McGraw-Hill, 1961.
[8] H. Raiffa and R. Schlaifer, Applied statistical decision theory, Harvard Univ. Graduate School of Business Administration, 1961.
[9] W. James and C. Stein, Estimation with quadratic loss, Proc. 4th Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. I, Univ. of California Press (1961), 361–379.
[10] J. O. Berger, Statistical decision theory, foundations, concepts, and methods, Springer, 1980.
[11] R. H. Farrell, Weak limits of sequences of Bayes procedures in estimation theory, Appendix, Decision theory, Proc. 5th Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. I, Univ. of California Press, 1967, 83–111.

399 (XVIII.7)
Statistical Estimation

A. General Remarks

Statistical estimation is one of the most important methods of statistical inference (→ 401 Statistical Inference). Its purpose is to estimate the values of ^{*}parameters (or their functions) involved in a distribution of a statistical ^{*}population by using observations on the population (→ 396 Statistic). Let $\mathcal{P} = \{P_\theta | \theta \in \Theta\}$ be a family of ^{*}probability distributions, indexed by a parameter θ and defined over a ^{*}measurable space (i.e., sample space) $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$. Let X be a ^{*}random variable taking values in \mathcal{X} and distributed according to a probability distribution P that is a member of \mathcal{P} . **Statistical estimation** is a method of estimating the ^{*}true value of the parameter θ (i.e., the parameter θ such that $P = P_\theta$) or the (true) value $g(\theta)$ of a given **parametric function** g (i.e., a function defined over Θ) or both, at θ , based on the observed value x of the random variable X . The function g maps the parameter values into \mathbf{R}, \mathbf{R}^k , or some function space. Statistical estimation methods are classified into two types: point estimation, which deals with individual values of $g(\theta)$, and interval (or region) estimation, by means of which regions that may contain the value $g(\theta)$ are considered. We can also

include in statistical estimation the problem of predicting the tolerance region in which the value of a yet unobserved random variable may come out.

B. Point Estimation

In the method of **point estimation** for a given parametric function g , we choose a measurable mapping φ from the sample space $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ into a measurable space $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C})$ and state that “the value of $g(\theta)$ is $\varphi(x)$ ” for an observed value x , where \mathcal{A} is a set containing the range of g and \mathfrak{C} is a ^{*}complete additive class of subsets in \mathcal{A} . The mapping φ , or the random variable $\varphi(X)$ taking values in the space \mathcal{A} , is called an **estimator** of $g(\theta)$, while the value $\varphi(x)$ determined by the observed value x is called an **estimate** of $g(\theta)$. This estimate is sometimes termed a **nonrandomized estimate** in contrast to the following generalized notion of estimator. A mapping from \mathcal{X} to a set of probability distributions defined over $(\mathcal{A}, \mathfrak{C})$ is called a **randomized estimator**, which reduces to a nonrandomized estimator when each image distribution degenerates to a single point. We assume that $\mathcal{A} = \mathbf{R}$ and \mathfrak{C} = the class \mathfrak{B} of all ^{*}Borel sets in \mathbf{R} , unless stated otherwise. We denote the ^{*}expectation and ^{*}variance with respect to P_θ by E_θ and V_θ , respectively.

C. Unbiasedness

An estimator $\varphi(X)$ of $g(\theta)$ may not be exactly equal to $g(\theta)$ for any $\theta \in \Theta$ except for trivial cases, but could instead be stochastically distributed around it. An estimator $\varphi(X)$ is said to have **unbiasedness** if it is stochastically balanced around $g(\theta)$ in some sense, such as mean, median, or mode. A statistic $\varphi(X)$ is called a (mean) **unbiased estimator** of $g(\theta)$ if

$$E_\theta(\varphi(X)) = g(\theta)$$

for any $\theta \in \Theta$. A parametric function g is said to be **estimable** if it has an unbiased estimator. For example, the sample mean is unbiased for the population mean: $E_\theta(\bar{X}) = E_\theta(X)$ for any $\theta \in \Theta$. Unbiasedness usually implies mean unbiasedness, and we assume this unless stated otherwise. The function

$$b(\theta) = E_\theta(\varphi(X)) - g(\theta)$$

is called the **bias** of the estimator $\varphi(X)$. If we restrict ourselves to unbiased estimators $\varphi(X)$ only, it is best to choose, if possible, a $\varphi(X)$ whose variance $V_\theta(\varphi(X))$ is minimum uniformly for every $\theta \in \Theta$.

Theorem (Rao-Blackwell). If $T = t(X)$ is a ^{*}sufficient statistic, then for any unbiased

estimator $\varphi(X)$ of g the †conditional expectation $\psi(t) = E(\varphi(X) | T = t)$ yields another unbiased estimator $\varphi^*(X) = \psi(t(X))$ of g , which satisfies $V_\theta(\varphi^*) \leq V_\theta(\varphi)$ for all $\theta \in \Theta$, with the equality holding if and only if $\varphi(x) = \varphi^*(x)$ (a.e. \mathcal{P}). The notation a.e. \mathcal{P} means that the statement concerned holds with probability 1 with respect to P_θ for each $\theta \in \Theta$. An estimator φ of $g(\theta)$ is called a **uniformly minimum variance (or UMV) unbiased estimator** if φ is unbiased for $g(\theta)$ and has a minimum variance uniformly in Θ among the class of unbiased estimators for $g(\theta)$.

Theorem (Lehmann-Scheffé). If T is a sufficient and †complete statistic, then for any estimable parametric function $g(\theta)$, there exists a unique UMV unbiased estimator of $g(\theta)$ that is a function of T . For example, suppose that $X = (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n)$ is a random sample from a population with exponential type distribution P_θ with density $p_\theta(x) = \beta(\theta)u(x)\exp(\sum_{i=1}^k \alpha_i(\theta)t_i(x))$ with respect to Lebesgue measure and that the set $\{(\alpha_1(\theta), \dots, \alpha_k(\theta)) | \theta \in \Theta\}$ contains some open set of \mathbf{R}^k . In this case, $T = (t_1(X), \dots, t_k(X))$ is a sufficient and complete statistic, and hence every real-valued measurable function $\psi(T)$ is the unique UMV unbiased estimator of the parametric function $E_\theta(\psi(T))$. If for any $\theta \in \Theta$ the †median of the distribution of an estimator $\varphi(X)$ equals a real parametric function $g(\theta)$ when X is distributed as P_θ , i.e., if

$$P_\theta\{\varphi(X) < g(\theta)\} \leq \frac{1}{2} \leq P_\theta\{\varphi(X) \leq g(\theta)\},$$

then $\varphi(X)$ is called a **median unbiased estimator**. For example, a sample median (suitably defined for the case of an even number of samples) is median unbiased for the population median. If $\varphi(X)$ is a median unbiased estimator of g , then for any real-valued monotone function h , an estimator $h(\varphi(X))$ for $h(g(\theta))$ is median unbiased, that is, median unbiasedness is preserved under monotone transformations, which is not the case with mean unbiasedness.

Restricting our consideration to the class of all median unbiased estimators, we can use the function

$$a(u, \theta, \varphi) = \begin{cases} P_\theta\{\varphi(X) \leq u\} & \text{for } u < \theta \\ P_\theta\{\varphi(X) \geq u\} & \text{for } u > \theta \end{cases}$$

as an indicator of the behavior pattern of an estimator φ . The estimator φ that minimizes $a(u, \theta, \varphi)$ for all values of u and θ ($u \neq \theta$) is said to be **uniformly best**. This property is also preserved under monotone transformations.

Theorem (Birnbaum). If a family of distributions $\{P_\theta | \theta \in \Theta \subset \mathbf{R}\}$ has a monotone †likelihood ratio with respect to a statistic $t(x)$ and the distribution function $F(t, \theta)$ of $T = t(X)$ is continuous both in t for any θ and in θ for any

t , then there exists a uniformly best median unbiased estimator of θ . Actually, if $\theta = \hat{\theta}(t)$ is a solution of $F(t, \theta) = 1/2$, then $\varphi(X) = \hat{\theta}(t(X))$ is such an estimator.

If for any $\theta \in \Theta$ the †mode of the density function or the probability mass function of an estimator $\varphi(X)$ is equal to $g(\theta)$, then $\varphi(X)$ is called a **modal unbiased estimator** of $g(\theta)$.

D. Lower Bounded of the Variance of an Unbiased Estimator

When there does not exist a sufficient and complete statistic, we can still seek to minimize the variance of the (mean) unbiased estimator at every fixed point $\theta = \theta_0$. In the remainder of this section, \mathcal{P} is assumed to be dominated by a measure μ , and $p_\theta(x)$ denotes the density function of P_θ with respect to μ and $\pi_\theta(x) = p_\theta(x)/p_{\theta_0}(x)$. The following theorem guarantees the existence of the locally best unbiased estimator.

Theorem (Barankin). Let \mathcal{M} be the set of all unbiased estimators of a parametric function $g(\theta)$ with finite variance at $\theta = \theta_0$. Assume that \mathcal{M} is not empty and $E_{\theta_0}((\pi_\theta(X))^2) < \infty$. Then there exists an estimator φ_0 in \mathcal{M} that minimizes the variance at θ_0 within \mathcal{M} . Actually, $\{\varphi_0\} = \mathcal{M} \cap \mathcal{P}_0$, where \mathcal{P}_0 is the linear space generated by $\{\pi_\theta(x) | \theta \in \Theta\}$. The minimum variance is given as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} V_{\theta_0}(\varphi_0) &= \inf\{V_{\theta_0}(\varphi(X)); \varphi \in \mathcal{M}\} \\ &= \sup_I \left\{ \left(\sum_{i=1}^n a_i h(\theta_i) \right)^2 / E_{\theta_0} \left(\sum_{i=1}^n a_i \pi_{\theta_i}(X) \right)^2 \right\} \\ &= \sup_{II} \left\{ \sum_{i=1}^n \sum_{j=1}^n h(\theta_i) h(\theta_j) \lambda^{ij} \right\}, \end{aligned}$$

where $h(\theta) = g(\theta) - g(\theta_0)$ and λ^{ij} is the (i, j) -component of the inverse of the $n \times n$ matrix (λ_{ij}) with $\lambda_{ij} = E_{\theta_0}(\pi_{\theta_i}(X)\pi_{\theta_j}(X))$ and where the supremum \sup_I is taken over all positive integers n , $\theta_1, \dots, \theta_n \in \Theta$ and $a_1, \dots, a_n \in \mathbf{R}$, and becomes \sup_{II} when the supremum is taken over n and the θ_j . This theorem leads to the following three theorems with respect to the lower bound of the variance of an unbiased estimator. The first is immediate and the last two are obtained by replacing some order differences of π_θ with the corresponding differentials.

Theorem. For any unbiased estimator $\varphi(X)$ of g and $\theta_0 \in \Theta$, we have

$$V_{\theta_0}(\varphi(X)) \geq \sup_{\theta \in \Theta} \{ (g(\theta) - g(\theta_0))^2 / E_{\theta_0}(\pi_\theta(X) - \pi_{\theta_0}(X))^2 \}$$

(Chapman-Robbins-Kiefer inequality).

Theorem. Suppose $\Theta \subset \mathbf{R}$. For any unbiased estimator $\varphi(X)$ of g and under certain regularity conditions, we have

$$V_{\theta_0}(\varphi(X)) \geq \frac{(g'(\theta_0))^2}{E_{\theta_0}((\partial \log p_{\theta}(X)/\partial \theta|_{\theta=\theta_0})^2)}$$

(**Cramér-Rao inequality**), where the equality holds only for the exponential type distribution $p_{\theta}(x) = \beta(\theta)u(x)\exp(\alpha(\theta)\varphi(x))$. An example of such regularity conditions is (i)–(iii): (i) $E_{\theta_0}((\pi_{\theta}(X))^2) < \infty$ for all $\theta \in \Theta$; (ii) $p_{\theta}(x)$ has a partial derivative $p'_{\theta}(x)$ at $\theta = \theta_0$ (a.e. P_{θ_0}); and (iii)

$$\lim_{\Delta\theta \rightarrow 0} E_{\theta_0} \left[\left(\frac{p_{\theta_0+\Delta\theta}(X) - p_{\theta_0}(X)}{p_{\theta_0}(X)\Delta\theta} - \frac{p'_{\theta_0}(X)}{p_{\theta_0}(X)} \right)^2 \right] = 0.$$

Corollary. Let $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ be a random sample from a distribution with density $f(x, \theta)$ and let

$$I(\theta) = E_{\theta}((\partial \log f(X_1, \theta)/\partial \theta)^2).$$

Since $E_{\theta}((\partial \log p_{\theta}(X)/\partial \theta)^2) = nI(\theta)$, the Cramér-Rao inequality implies

$$V_{\theta_0}(\varphi(X)) \geq (g'(\theta_0))^2/nI(\theta_0).$$

The number $I(\theta_0)$ is called the **Fisher information** of the distribution $f(x, \theta)$. When the equality holds for an unbiased estimator $\varphi(X)$, $\varphi(X)$ is called an **efficient estimator** of $g(\theta)$. In general, the **efficiency** of an unbiased estimator φ at $\theta = \theta_0$ is defined by

$$\text{Eff}(\varphi) = (g'(\theta_0))^2/(nI(\theta_0)V_{\theta_0}(\varphi)).$$

Theorem. For any unbiased estimator $\varphi(X)$ of $g(\theta)$ and under certain regularity conditions, we have

$$V_{\theta_0}(\varphi(X)) \geq \sum_{i=1}^k \sum_{j=1}^k g^{(i)}(\theta_0)g^{(j)}(\theta_0)K^{ij}$$

(**Bhattacharyya inequality**), where $g^{(i)}(\theta_0) = d^i g(\theta)/d\theta^i|_{\theta=\theta_0}$ and K^{ij} is the (i, j) -component of the inverse of the matrix (K_{ij}) with

$$K_{ij} = E_{\theta_0} \left(\frac{p_{\theta_0}^{(i)}(X)p_{\theta_0}^{(j)}(X)}{p_{\theta_0}(X)p_{\theta_0}(X)} \right), \quad i, j = 1, \dots, k.$$

An example of such regularity conditions is (i)–(iii): (i) $E_{\theta_0}((\pi_{\theta}(X))^2) < \infty$; (ii) $p_{\theta}(x)$ is k -times differentiable with respect to θ at $\theta = \theta_0$; (iii) the i th partial derivative $p_{\theta_0}^{(i)}(x)$, $i \leq k$, satisfies

$$\lim_{\Delta\theta \rightarrow 0} E_{\theta_0} \left[\left(\frac{\Delta^i p_{\theta}(X)|_{\theta=\theta_0}}{p_{\theta_0}(X)(\Delta\theta)^i} - \frac{p_{\theta_0}^{(i)}(X)}{p_{\theta_0}(X)} \right)^2 \right] = 0,$$

where $\Delta p_{\theta}(X)|_{\theta=\theta_0} = P_{\theta_0+\Delta\theta}(X) - P_{\theta_0}(X)$ and $\Delta^i P_{\theta}(X) = \Delta(\Delta^{i-1}P_{\theta}(X))$ for $i \geq 2$. For $k=1$ the Bhattacharyya lower bound is the same as the Cramér-Rao lower bound. In general, the former gives a sharper lower bound than the latter.

If the parameter is multidimensional, $\theta = (\theta_1, \dots, \theta_k)'$, then for any unbiased estimator

$\varphi(X)$ of $g(\theta)$ and under similar conditions to those for the 1-dimensional case, we have

$$V_{\theta_0}(\varphi(X)) \geq \sum_{i=1}^k \sum_{j=1}^k g'_i(\theta_0)g'_j(\theta_0)J^{ij},$$

where $g'_i(\theta_0) = \partial g(\theta)/\partial \theta_i|_{\theta=\theta_0}$ and J^{ij} is the (i, j) -component of the inverse of the matrix (J_{ij}) with

$$J_{ij} = E_{\theta_0}(\partial \log p_{\theta}(X)/\partial \theta_i|_{\theta=\theta_0} \partial \log p_{\theta}(X)/\partial \theta_j|_{\theta=\theta_0}).$$

If $\theta^*(X) = (\theta_1^*(X), \dots, \theta_k^*(X))'$ is an unbiased estimator of $\theta = (\theta_1, \dots, \theta_k)'$ (i.e., $E_{\theta}(\theta_i^*(X)) = \theta_i$ for $i = 1, 2, \dots, k$), then the covariance matrix $V_{\theta_0}(\theta^*(X))$ of $\theta^*(X)$ at θ_0 satisfies $V_{\theta_0}(\theta^*(X)) \geq J^{-1}$, that is, the difference $V_{\theta_0}(\theta^*(X)) - J^{-1}$ is a nonnegative definite matrix. If $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ is a random sample from a distribution having density $f(x_1, \theta)$, then by setting

$$I_{ij} = E_{\theta_0}(\partial \log f(X_1, \theta)/\partial \theta_i|_{\theta=\theta_0} \times \partial \log f(X_1, \theta)/\partial \theta_j|_{\theta=\theta_0}),$$

we have $J_{ij} = nI_{ij}$. The matrix $I = (I_{ij})$ is called the **Fisher information matrix** of the distribution $f(x_1, \theta)$.

E. Decision-Theoretic Formulation (→ 398 Statistical Decision Functions)

Let $W(\theta, a)$ (≥ 0) be the loss incurred from an estimate (or action) a of the parameter when the true value of the parameter is θ . The risk function of an estimator $\varphi(X)$ of the parametric function $g(\theta)$ is then defined as

$$r(\theta, \varphi) = E_{\theta}(W(\theta, \varphi(X))).$$

Statistical decision theory deals with the problem of minimizing, in an appropriate manner, the risk function by a suitable choice of φ . The notions of complete class, Bayes estimator, admissibility, minimax estimator, and invariant estimator, explained here and in Sections F–I, are the most important of the theory. The unbiased estimator explained in Section C may also be considered an important concept of the theory.

A class C of estimators is said to be essentially complete if for any estimator φ there exists an estimator φ_0 in C such that

$$r(\theta, \varphi_0) \leq r(\theta, \varphi)$$

for any $\theta \in \Theta$. The following two theorems hold, provided that the action space \mathcal{A} is \mathbf{R} and the loss function $W(\theta, a)$ is convex with respect to $a \in \mathcal{A}$ for any $\theta \in \Theta$.

Theorem (Hodges-Lehmann). If $W(\theta, a) \rightarrow \infty$ as $|a| \rightarrow \infty$, then the class of all nonrandomized estimators is essentially complete.

Theorem. If $T = t(X)$ is a sufficient statistic, then the class of all functions of T is essentially

complete. Actually, given any estimator $\varphi(X)$ of $g(\theta)$, the conditional expectation $\psi(t) = E(\varphi(X) | T = t)$ yields an estimator $\varphi_0(X) = \psi(t(X))$ satisfying $r(\theta, \varphi_0) \leq r(\theta, \varphi)$ for any θ , where the equality holds when and only when $\varphi \equiv \varphi_0$, provided that W is convex in the strict sense.

A loss function of the form

$$W(\theta, a) = \lambda(\theta)(a - g(\theta))^2, \quad \lambda(\theta) > 0,$$

is called a **quadratic loss functions**. If, in particular, $\lambda(\theta) \equiv 1$, then

$$r(\theta, \varphi) = E_\theta((\varphi(X) - g(\theta))^2)$$

is called the **mean square error** of the estimator $\varphi(X)$ of $g(\theta)$. This error coincides with the variance when the estimator is unbiased.

F. Bayes Estimators

Let ξ be an a priori distribution over the parameter space Θ associated with a certain σ -algebra \mathfrak{F} , and assume that $r(\theta, \varphi)$ is \mathfrak{F} -measurable for every φ . Denote by E^ξ the average operator relative to ξ . The infimum of the average risk $r(\xi, \varphi) = E^\xi(r(\theta, \varphi)) = E^\xi E_\theta(W(\theta, \varphi(X)))$ for φ running over its range is called the **Bayes risk** relative to ξ , while an estimator $\varphi(X)$ of $g(\theta)$ at which the average risk $r(\xi, \varphi)$ attains the infimum is called a **Bayes estimator** relative to ξ . A Bayes estimator is obtained as follows: Assume that \mathcal{P} is dominated by a measure μ with $\mathfrak{B} \times \mathfrak{F}$ -measurable density $p_\theta(x)$, the loss function $W(\theta, a)$ is $\mathfrak{F} \times \mathbb{C}$ -measurable, and

$$\int_{\Theta} p_\theta(x) d\xi(\theta) < \infty.$$

For each observed value of x , the Bayes estimator $\varphi(x)$ takes the value a that minimizes

$$r(a | x) = E^\xi(W(\theta, a) | x)$$

$$= \int_{\Theta} W(\theta, a) p(\theta | x) d\xi(\theta),$$

where $p(\theta | x)$ is the probability density, with given x , of θ . We call $r(a | x)$ the **posterior risk**.

Theorem (Girshick-Savage). Suppose that the loss function is quadratic. For any x the value of the posterior risk is either ∞ (for every value of a) or finite (for all or only one value of a). If the Bayes risk relative to ξ is finite, then a Bayes estimator $\varphi^*(X)$ relative to ξ is determined uniquely as follows: $\varphi^*(x) = a_0$ if $r(a_0 | x) < \infty$ for only one value a_0 , whereas $\varphi^*(x) = E^\xi(g(\theta) | x)$ if $r(a | x) < \infty$ for every a . If $E^\xi(\lambda(\theta)) < \infty$, then a Bayes estimator is either biased or has average risk zero.

G. Admissibility of Estimators

An estimator $\varphi_0(X)$ of a parametric function $g(\theta)$ is said to be **admissible** if and only if for any estimator $\varphi(X)$ of $g(\theta)$ the inequality $r(\theta, \varphi) \leq r(\theta, \varphi_0)$ for all $\theta \in \Theta$ implies that

$$r(\theta, \varphi) = r(\theta, \varphi_0)$$

for all $\theta \in \Theta$. If an estimator is the unique Bayes estimator relative to some a priori distribution, then it is admissible. For example, let X_1, \dots, X_n be a random sample from $N(\theta, 1)$, and let $W(\theta, a) = (a - \theta)^2$. Then $\varphi(X) = (c + n\sigma^2 \bar{X}) / (1 + n\sigma^2)$ is the unique Bayes estimator relative to the prior distribution $N(c, \sigma^2)$ of θ , where \bar{X} is the sample mean. Hence any estimator of the form $\varphi(X) = a\bar{X} + b$ is admissible when $0 < a < 1$ and $-\infty < b < \infty$.

In the rest of this section and the next section, we restrict ourselves to quadratic loss functions. If a statistic of the form $c\varphi(X)$ with real c is an admissible estimator of $g(\theta)$, then

$$\inf_{\theta} \left(g(\theta) \frac{E_{\theta}(\varphi)}{E_{\theta}(\varphi^2)} \right) \leq c \leq \sup_{\theta} \left(g(\theta) \frac{E_{\theta}(\varphi)}{E_{\theta}(\varphi^2)} \right).$$

Theorem (Karlin). Let X be a random variable having a 1-dimensional exponential type distribution $dP_{\theta}(x) = \beta(\theta)e^{\theta x} d\mu(x)$ with a parameter space $\Theta = I(\underline{\theta}, \bar{\theta}) = \{\theta | \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{\theta x} d\mu(x) < \infty\}$ a closed or open interval, and let $g(\theta) = E_{\theta}(X) = -\beta'(\theta)/\beta(\theta)$ be a parametric function to be estimated. Then the estimator $\varphi_{\lambda}(X) = X/(\lambda + 1)$ for real λ is admissible provided that $\int_{\underline{\theta}}^{\bar{\theta}} (\beta(\theta))^{-\lambda} d\theta \rightarrow \infty$ as $\bar{\theta} \rightarrow \bar{\theta}$ and $\int_a^c (\beta(\theta))^{-\lambda} d\theta \rightarrow \infty$ as $a \rightarrow \underline{\theta}$ for any $c \in (\underline{\theta}, \bar{\theta})$.

Corollary. When $\Theta = (-\infty, \infty)$ the estimator $\varphi_0(X) = X$ is admissible.

Corollary. Let $\Theta = (-\infty, \infty)$, and assume that both intervals $(-\infty, 0]$ and $[0, \infty)$ have positive measure with respect to μ . Then every estimator of the form $\varphi(X) = aX$ with $0 < a \leq 1$ is admissible. This theorem can be applied to a random sample X_1, \dots, X_n drawn from an exponential type distribution because the sufficient statistic $\bar{X} = \sum X_i/n$ has an exponential type distribution and $E_{\theta}(\bar{X}) = E_{\theta}(X_1)$.

Theorem (Karlin). Let X be a random variable having a distribution $dP_{\theta}(x) = q(\theta) \cdot r(x) dx$ for $0 \leq x \leq \theta$ and $= 0$ otherwise, with the parameter space $\Theta = (0, \infty)$, where $\int_0^{\theta} r(x) dx < +\infty$ and $\int_0^{\infty} r(x) dx = \infty$. Among the estimators of the type $\varphi_c(X) = c(q(X))^{-\alpha}$ for $g(\theta) = (q(\theta))^{-\alpha}$ with $\alpha > 0$, only one estimator with the value $c = (2\alpha + 1)/(\alpha + 1)$ is admissible. This theorem is applicable also when the size of the random sample is larger than 1.

Theorem (Stein). Let X_1, \dots, X_n be a random sample from a univariate distribution $dP_{\theta}(x) = f(x - \theta) dx$ with a location parameter θ . Define

$$A_k = A_k(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \theta^k \left(\prod_{i=1}^n f(x_i - \theta) \right) d\theta$$

for $k=0, 1, 2$. If

$$\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \dots \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \left(\frac{A_2}{A_0} - \left(\frac{A_1}{A_0} \right)^2 \right)^{3/2} \prod_{i=1}^n f(x_i) \times \prod_{i=1}^n dx_i < \infty,$$

then the **Pitman estimator** $\varphi_0(X_1, \dots, X_n) = A_1(X_1, \dots, X_n)/A_0(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ of the parameter θ is admissible.

Inadmissibility of the Usual Estimator for Three or More Location Parameters. Let $X = (X_1, \dots, X_k)'$ be a k -variate normal random variable with mean $\theta = (\theta_1, \dots, \theta_k)'$ and covariance matrix I , the identity. Then the Pitman estimator of θ is $\hat{\theta} = X$. However, Stein showed that X is inadmissible. It is strictly dominated by the estimator $\theta^*(X) = (1 - (k-2)/|X|^2)X$, where $|\cdot|$ denotes the Euclidean norm $|X|^2 = \sum_{i=1}^k X_i^2$. That is, if $k \geq 3$, $E|\theta^*(X) - \theta|^2 < E|X - \theta|^2$ for any θ .

An estimator such as $\theta^*(X)$ is called **Stein's shrinkage estimator** (James and Stein, *Proc. 4th Berkeley Symp.*, 1 (1960)).

H. Minimax Estimation

An estimator $\varphi^*(X)$ is said to be **minimax** if and only if

$$\sup_{\theta} r(\theta, \varphi^*) = \inf_{\varphi} \sup_{\theta} r(\theta, \varphi).$$

If an estimator φ^* is admissible and the risk $r(\theta, \varphi^*)$ is constant with respect to θ , then φ^* is minimax.

Theorem (Hodges-Lehmann). A Bayes estimator φ^* relative to an a priori distribution ξ is minimax if ξ assigns the whole probability to a subset $\omega \subset \Theta$, $r(\theta, \varphi^*)$ is constant (say, c) for $\theta \in \omega$, and $r(\theta, \varphi^*) \leq c$ for $\theta \in \Theta$. Let X have a binomial distribution $B(n, \theta)$, $0 < \theta < 1$; θ is unknown. If the prior distribution of θ is a beta distribution $\beta(\sqrt{n/2}, \sqrt{n/2})$, then the Bayes estimator is $T^*(X) = (X + \sqrt{n/2})/(n + \sqrt{n})$, which has constant risk $E_{\theta}(T^*(X) - \theta)^2 = (2(1 + \sqrt{n}))^{-2}$ for all θ , $0 < \theta < 1$. Thus, according to this theorem, $T^*(X)$ is minimax. It is interesting to compare the mean square error of $T^*(X)$ to that of minimum variance unbiased estimator $\hat{\theta} = X/n$, $\theta(1 - \theta)/n$.

Theorem (Wald). If there exists a sequence of prior distributions $\{\xi_n\}$ such that

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(r(\theta, \varphi^*) - \inf_{\varphi} \int_{\Theta} r(\theta, \varphi) d\xi_n(\theta) \right) \leq 0$$

for any $\theta \in \Theta$, then φ^* is minimax. For example, the last theorem led to the proof of the fact that the Pitman estimator of a location parameter is minimax [4]. In the discussion of robust estimation, Huber (*Ann. Math. Statist.*,

35 (1964)) proved that Huber's minimax robust location estimator minimizes the maximum asymptotic variance over some family of symmetric distributions in a neighborhood of the normal distribution (\rightarrow 371 Robust and Non-parametric Methods).

I. Invariant Estimator

For simplicity, assume that the range A of a parametric function $g(\theta)$ coincides with the parameter space, and consider the point estimation of $g(\theta) \equiv 0$ (θ is not necessarily real). Suppose that there exist two groups $G = \{\tau\}$ and $\bar{G} = \{\bar{\tau}\}$ of one-to-one measurable transformations of \mathcal{X} and Θ , respectively, onto themselves such that (i) there exists a homeomorphic mapping $\tau \rightarrow \bar{\tau}$ from G to \bar{G} ; (ii) if X has a distribution P_{θ} , then τX has the distribution $P_{\bar{\tau}\theta}$; and (iii) $W(\bar{\tau}\theta, \bar{\tau}a) = W(\theta, a)$ for any θ, a , and τ . An estimator φ is said to be **invariant** if it satisfies $\varphi(\tau x) = \bar{\tau}\varphi(x)$ for any $\tau \in G$, a.e. \mathcal{P} . An estimator φ is called a **best invariant estimator** if the risk function $r(\theta, \varphi')$, where φ' is an invariant estimator, takes its minimum value when $\varphi' = \varphi$.

If the group \bar{G} is \dagger transitive on Θ , then the risk function of any invariant estimator is independent of the value of θ , and hence any admissible invariant estimator is best invariant. For example, in the point estimation of a location parameter with a quadratic loss function, the Pitman estimator is best invariant.

Theorem. If Θ is a compact topological space, \bar{G} is a group of homeomorphisms of Θ onto itself, and \bar{G} is homeomorphic to Θ under $g \in \bar{G} \rightarrow \bar{g}\theta_0 \in \Theta$ with a fixed $\theta_0 \in \Theta$, then any Bayes estimator relative to the \dagger right-invariant Haar measure over \bar{G} is best invariant. This result can be generalized to a locally compact Θ (\rightarrow 398 Statistical Decision Functions).

J. Sequential Estimation

Estimation methods based on sequential sampling are not as popular as \dagger sequential tests, because their efficiency is not very large compared to that of nonsequential estimation. A generalization of the Cramér-Rao inequality to any sequential unbiased estimator $\varphi(X)$ of a parametric function $g(\theta)$ is the **Wolfowitz inequality**,

$$V_{\theta}(\varphi(X)) \geq (g'(\theta))^2 / (E_{\theta}(N)I(\theta))$$

for every $\theta \in \Theta$, under regularity conditions similar to those for the fixed-size sample problem, where N is the sample size and $I(\theta)$ the Fisher information.

K. Asymptotic Theory

In practical problems of statistical inference the sample size n is often large enough to give sharp estimates of the parameters involved; then the sample distributions of estimators can be approximated closely by their asymptotic distributions, which are of a simpler nature. Assume that $X = (X_1, X_2, \dots)$ is a sequence of independent and identically distributed (i.i.d.) random variables with the common distribution P_θ , $\theta \in \Theta$. For each n , let $\varphi_n = \varphi_n(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ be an estimator of $g(\theta)$ that is a function of θ to \mathcal{A} ($\subset \mathbf{R}^p$). Thus φ_n is a measurable mapping from $(\mathcal{X}^n, \mathfrak{B}^n)$ to $(\mathcal{A}, \mathcal{C})$. Let us denote the distribution of φ_n by $\mathcal{L}(\varphi_n)$, $\mathcal{L}(\varphi_n|\theta)$ or $\mathcal{L}(\varphi_n|P_\theta)$, the last two emphasizing that the underlying probability distribution is P_θ . For example, if the mean vector $E_\theta(\varphi_n) = m_n(\theta)$ and the covariance matrix $v_n(\theta) = V_\theta(\varphi_n)$ exist for every n , and if $\mathcal{L}[v_n(\theta)^{-1/2}(\varphi_n(X) - m_n(\theta))|\theta] \rightarrow N_p(0, I)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then $\mathcal{L}(\varphi_n|\theta)$ is approximated by a p -variate normal distribution $N_p(m_n(\theta), v_n(\theta))$ (\rightarrow 341 Probability Measures D). φ_n is said to be **asymptotically (mean) unbiased** for $g(\theta)$ if $m_n(\theta) \rightarrow g(\theta)$ for any $\theta \in \Theta$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. But we often calculate the asymptotic distribution without obtaining the exact mean and covariance matrix of the estimator φ_n for each n . In the asymptotic theory it may be reasonable to regard the sequence of estimators $\{\varphi_n\}$ rather than each estimator φ_n as an "estimator," but we do not bother with the difference between these definitions of an estimator.

Consistency. $\{\varphi_n\}$ is called a **consistent estimator** of $g(\theta)$ if φ_n converges to $g(\theta)$ in probability as $n \rightarrow \infty$:

$$\lim P_\theta\{|\varphi_n - g(\theta)| > \varepsilon\} = 0 \text{ for any } \varepsilon > 0 \text{ and} \\ \text{every } \theta \in \Theta.$$

If the convergence is almost sure, it is called **a.s. consistent**. For example, if φ_n is asymptotically unbiased with the covariance matrix $v_n(\theta)$ such that $|v_n(\theta)| \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$, then φ_n is a consistent estimator of $g(\theta)$. A sufficient condition for existence of a consistent estimator is given by the following result.

Theorem (LeCam). Let \mathcal{X} be a Euclidean space and \mathfrak{B} the σ -algebra of all Borel sets in \mathcal{X} . If the parameter space Θ is a locally compact subset of \mathbf{R}^k , $P_\theta \neq P_{\theta'}$ for any $\theta \neq \theta'$ (identifiability condition), and $P_{\theta_n} \rightarrow P_\theta$ whenever $\theta_n \rightarrow \theta$, then there exists a consistent estimator of θ . $\varphi_n = g(T_n)$ is a consistent estimator of $g(\theta)$ if $\{T_n\}$ is a consistent estimator of θ and $g(\theta)$ is a continuous function of θ .

Asymptotic Normality. The class of estimators is restricted to what are called consistent esti-

mators. An estimator $\{\varphi_n\}$ is said to be **asymptotically normally distributed** if the asymptotic distribution of $n^{1/2}(\varphi_n - g(\theta))$ is normal:

$$\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(\varphi_n - g(\theta))|\theta] \rightarrow N_p(\mu(\theta), v(\theta)) \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty.$$

$\mu(\theta)$ and $v(\theta)$ are called the **asymptotic bias** and **asymptotic covariance matrix**, respectively. They are not always equal to the limits, if any, of the mean and covariance matrix of $n^{1/2}(\varphi_n - g(\theta))$. $\{\varphi_n\}$ is usually called a **consistent and asymptotically normal (CAN) estimator** if the asymptotic distribution of $n^{1/2}(\varphi_n - g(\theta))$ is normal with the asymptotic bias zero. Then the distribution $\mathcal{L}(\varphi_n|\theta)$ is approximated by $N_p(0, v(\theta)/n)$. For example, the "moment method estimator is a CAN estimator.

Theorem. Let $\{\varphi_n\}$ be a CAN estimator of $g(\theta) \in \mathbf{R}^1$ with asymptotic variance $v(\theta)$. Then $\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} E_\theta\{n|\varphi_n - g(\theta)|^2\} \geq v(\theta)$ for every $\theta \in \Theta$.

Theorem. Suppose that $g(\theta)$ is a continuously differentiable function from Θ ($\subset \mathbf{R}^k$) to \mathbf{R}^p ($p \leq k$). Let $G(\theta) = (\partial g_i(\theta)/\partial \theta_j)$, the \dagger Jacobian matrix. If $\{T_n\}$ is a CAN estimator of θ with asymptotic covariance matrix $v(\theta)$, then $\{g(T_n)\}$ is a CAN estimator of $g(\theta)$:

$$\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(g(T_n) - g(\theta))|\theta] \rightarrow N_p(0, G(\theta)v(\theta)G(\theta)').$$

An estimator $\{T_n\}$ is said to be a **best asymptotically normal (BAN) estimator** of θ if $\{T_n\}$ is a CAN estimator of θ with asymptotic variance $I^{-1}(\theta)$, where $I(\theta)$ is the \dagger Fisher information matrix on θ in a single observation. We can see that the maximum likelihood (ML) estimator (\rightarrow Section M) is a BAN estimator.

Functional on Distribution Functions. Let $\varphi(F)$ be a functional on distribution functions to \mathbf{R}^1 . Let us consider the class of estimators that are defined by $\varphi_n = \varphi(\hat{F}_n)$, where \hat{F}_n is the empirical distribution function of n samples X_1, \dots, X_n . An estimator $\{\varphi_n\}$ with $\varphi_n = \varphi(\hat{F}_n)$ for each n is said to be **Fisher consistent** for $g(\theta)$ if $\varphi(F_\theta) = g(\theta)$ for every $\theta \in \Theta$ when F_θ is the true distribution function. $\{\varphi_n\}$ is also a.s. consistent for $g(\theta)$ if $\{\varphi_n\}$ is a Fisher consistent estimator of $g(\theta)$ and if φ is a continuous functional. Furthermore, if φ is differentiable, we can see that $\{\varphi_n\}$ is also a CAN estimator by using the fact that $n^{1/2}(\hat{F}_n(F_\theta^{-1}(t)) - t)$, $0 \leq t \leq 1$, converges weakly to the \dagger Brownian bridge. Let S be a set of distribution functions. S is said to be a star-shaped set of F if $H \in S$ implies $F^{(t)} = (1-t)F + tH \in S$ for any $t \in [0, 1]$.

Theorem (Von Mises). Assume that (F1) there exists a star-shaped set S_θ at F such that $\lim_n P_\theta\{\hat{F}_n \in S_\theta\} = 1$; (F2) for any $t \in [0, 1]$ and $H \in S_\theta$, there exist derivatives $(d/dt)\varphi[(1-t)F + tH]$, $i = 1, 2$; (F3) there exists $\psi_\theta(y)$ from \mathbf{R}^1 to \mathbf{R}^1 such that

$\frac{d}{dt} \varphi[(1-t)F_\theta + tH]|_{t=0} = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \psi_\theta(y) d(H(y) - F_\theta(y))$ for all $H \in \mathcal{S}_\theta$; and
(F4) $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_\theta \left\{ n^{1-\delta} \sup_{t \in [0,1]} \left| \frac{d^2}{dt^2} \varphi[F_{\theta n}^{(t)}] \right| > \varepsilon \right\} = 0$
for any δ and $\varepsilon > 0$, where $F_{\theta n}^{(t)} = (1-t)F_\theta + t\hat{F}_n$. Then if φ_n with $\varphi_n = \varphi(\hat{F}_n)$ is Fisher consistent for $g(\theta)$, we have

$$\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(\varphi_n - g(\theta))|\theta] \rightarrow N(0, v(\theta)),$$

where

$$v(\theta) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \psi_\theta(y)^2 dF_\theta(y) - \left\{ \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \psi_\theta(y) dF_\theta(y) \right\}^2.$$

$\{c_n\}$ -Consistency. For a sequence of positive numbers c_n tending to infinity as $n \rightarrow \infty$, an estimator T_n is called **consistent for $\theta \in \Theta$ with order c_n** (or **$\{c_n\}$ -consistent** for short) if for every $\varepsilon > 0$ and every $\theta \in \Theta$ there exist a sufficiently small positive number δ and a sufficiently large number K satisfying

$$\limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sup [P_\tau \{c_n |T_n - \tau| \geq K\}; |\tau - \theta| < \delta] < \varepsilon.$$

Let $\{c_n\}$ be a maximal order of consistency. This notion was introduced by Takeuchi and Akahira. They studied consistent estimators of location parameters with various orders. Let $\mathcal{X} = \Theta = \mathbf{R}^1$. Suppose that for every $\theta \in \Theta$, P_θ has a density function $f(x - \theta)$ with respect to the Lebesgue measure.

Theorem. Assume that

- (OC1) $f(x) > 0$ if $a < x < b$ and $f(x) = 0$ if $x \leq a$ or $x \geq b$;
- (OC2) there exist positive numbers $0 < \alpha \leq \beta < \infty$ and $0 < A', B' < \infty$ such that

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow a+0} (x-a)^{1-\alpha} f(x) = A',$$

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow b-0} (b-x)^{1-\beta} f(x) = B';$$

- (OC3) $f(x)$ is twice continuously differentiable in the interval (a, b) and there exist positive numbers $0 < A'', B'' < \infty$ such that

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow a+0} (x-a)^{2-\alpha} |f'(x)| = A'',$$

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow b-0} (b-x)^{2-\beta} |f'(x)| = B''.$$

Assume further that $f''(x)$ is bounded if $\alpha \geq 2$. Then for each α there exists a consistent estimator with the order given in Table 1.

Table 1

α	order c_n	$\{c_n\}$ -consistent estimator
$0 < \alpha < 2$	$n^{1/\alpha}$	$\{\min X_i + \max X_i - (a+b)\}/2$
$\alpha = 2$	$(n \log n)^{1/2}$	ML estimator
$\alpha > 2$	$n^{1/2}$	ML estimator

L. Moment Method

The moment method is also utilized to obtain estimators. Suppose that $\mathcal{X} \subset \mathbf{R}^1$ and $\Theta \subset \mathbf{R}^k$. Denote the \dagger population distribution function by F_θ and the \dagger empirical distribution function of n samples X_1, \dots, X_n by \hat{F}_n . The following system of simultaneous equations is derived from letting the j th \dagger population moment

$$\mu_j(\theta) = E_\theta(X^j) = \int x^j F_\theta(dx)$$

be equal to the j th \dagger sample moment

$$m_{nj} = n^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^n X_i^j = \int x^j \hat{F}_n(dx).$$

For example, for $j = 1, \dots, k$,

$$\mu(\theta) = (\mu_1(\theta), \dots, \mu_k(\theta))' = (m_{n1}, \dots, m_{nk})' = m_n.$$

A **moment method estimator** is determined as a solution $\theta = \tilde{\theta}_n(x) \in \Theta$ of k numbers of simultaneous equations.

Theorem. Assume that the function $\mu(\theta)$ from Θ to \mathbf{R}^k is continuously differentiable and that the Jacobian matrix $M(\theta) = \partial \mu(\theta) / \partial \theta = (\partial \mu_i(\theta) / \partial \theta_j)$, $i, j = 1, \dots, k$, is nonsingular in a neighborhood of the true parameter. Then the moment method estimator exists and is a CAN estimator:

$$\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(\tilde{\theta}_n - \theta)|\theta] \rightarrow N_k(0, M(\theta)^{-1} v(\theta) M(\theta)^{-1}),$$

where $v(\theta) = (\text{cov}_\theta(X^i, X^j))$, $i, j = 1, \dots, k$. In general, a moment method estimator is not a BAN estimator. However, in view of its simple form, a moment method estimator is important and often utilized as a first-step estimator in order to determine the maximum likelihood estimator by the iteration method.

M. Maximum Likelihood Method

Suppose that a distribution P_θ has the density function $f(x, \theta)$, $\theta \in \Theta \subset \mathbf{R}^k$, with respect to a $\dagger\sigma$ -finite measure μ , and let x_1, \dots, x_n be observed values of random samples X_1, \dots, X_n from the population $f(x, \theta)$. Then the function L_n of θ defined by

$$L_n(\theta; x_1, \dots, x_n) = \prod_{i=1}^n f(x_i, \theta)$$

is called the **likelihood function**. If $\theta = \hat{\theta}_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ maximizes the value of $L_n(\theta)$ for fixed x_1, \dots, x_n and if it is a measurable mapping from $(\mathcal{X}^n, \mathfrak{B}^n)$ to (Θ, \mathcal{C}) with \mathcal{C} a $\dagger\sigma$ -algebra of subsets of Θ , then $\hat{\theta}_n(X) = \hat{\theta}_n(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ is called the **maximum likelihood (ML) estimator of θ** . This method of finding estimators is called the **maximum likelihood method**. If the parameter is transformed into a new parameter $\eta = h(\theta)$ by means of a known one-to-

one bimeasurable transformation h and if there exists a unique ML estimator $\hat{\theta}_n$ of θ , then $\hat{\eta}_n(X) = h(\hat{\theta}_n(X))$ is a unique ML estimator of η . In other words, the ML estimator is invariant for every one-to-one transformation.

Many statisticians have investigated and improved known adequate regularity conditions under which the ML estimator exists and is a BAN estimator.

Theorem (Wald). Assume that

(C1) Θ is a closed subset of \mathbf{R}^k with nonempty interior Θ^0 ;

(C2) for any $x \in \mathcal{X}$, $f(x, \theta)$ is continuous with respect to θ and $\lim_{|\theta| \rightarrow \infty} f(x, \theta) = 0$ if Θ is not bounded;

(C3) if $\theta_1 \neq \theta_2$, then $P_{\theta_1} \neq P_{\theta_2}$ and $\int |f(x, \theta_1) - f(x, \theta_2)| d\mu(x) > 0$;

(C4) $E_{\theta_0}(|\log f(X, \theta_0)|) < \infty$; and

(C5) $E_{\theta_0}(\log^+ f(X, \theta, \rho)) < \infty$ and $E_{\theta_0}(\log^+ \varphi(X, r)) < \infty$, where $f(x, \theta, \rho) = \sup\{f(x, \theta'); |\theta' - \theta| \leq \rho\}$ and $\varphi(x, r) = \sup\{f(x, \theta); |\theta| > r\}$. (The last two functions are measurable according to assumption (C2).)

Then if a sequence of measurable functions, $\{\bar{\theta}_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)\}$, satisfies

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left\{ \frac{L_n(\bar{\theta}_n; x_1, \dots, x_n)}{L_n(\theta_0; x_1, \dots, x_n)} \right\} \geq C > 0 \quad (\text{a.s. } P_{\theta_0}),$$

then as $n \rightarrow \infty$, $\bar{\theta}_n(X_1, \dots, X_n)$ converges a.s. to the true value θ_0 of the parameter. Hence if the ML estimator exists, it is a.s. consistent. Pfanzagl (*Metrika*, 14 (1969)) and Fu and Gleser (*Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.*, 27 (1975)) gave rigorous proofs for the existence of the ML estimator.

Theorem. Under assumptions (C1) and (C2), there exists a maximum likelihood estimator $\hat{\theta}_n$ for any positive integer n . That is, $\hat{\theta}_n = \hat{\theta}_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is a measurable function from $(\mathcal{X}^n, \mathfrak{B}^n)$ to (Θ, \mathcal{C}) and satisfies $L(\hat{\theta}_n; x_1, \dots, x_n) = \sup_{\theta \in \Theta} L(\theta; x_1, \dots, x_n)$.

In the remainder of this section we suppose that assumptions (C1)–(C5) are satisfied. We use the notation

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial \theta} = \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_i} f(x, \theta) \right), \text{ a } k\text{-column vector,}$$

$$\frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial \theta^2} = \left(\frac{\partial^2}{\partial \theta_i \partial \theta_j} f(x, \theta) \right), \text{ a } k \times k \text{ matrix,}$$

$$\frac{\partial^3 \log f}{\partial \theta^3} = \left(\frac{\partial^3 \log f(x, \theta)}{\partial \theta_h \partial \theta_i \partial \theta_j} \right), \quad h, i, j = 1, \dots, k.$$

Theorem (Cramér). Assume that

(AN1) for a.s. $[\mu]x$, $f(x, \theta)$ is three-times continuously differentiable with respect to each component of $\theta = (\theta_1, \dots, \theta_k) \in \Theta^0$;

(AN2) for $\theta \in \Theta^0$, $\int_{\mathcal{X}} \frac{\partial f(x, \theta)}{\partial \theta} d\mu = 0$

and $\int_{\mathcal{X}} \frac{\partial^2 f(x, \theta)}{\partial \theta^2} d\mu = 0$;

(AN3) $E_{\theta} \left(\left| \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta} \log f(x, \theta) \right|^3 \right) < \infty$ for $\theta \in \Theta^0$;

(AN4) the Fisher information matrix $I(\theta) =$

$$E_{\theta} \left[\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta} \log f(x, \theta) \right) \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta} \log f(x, \theta) \right)' \right] \text{ exists and}$$

is positive definite for $\theta \in \Theta^0$; and

(AN5) there exists an $H(x)$ such that

$$\left| \frac{\partial^3}{\partial \theta^3} \log f(x, \theta) \right| < H(x) \text{ and } E_{\theta}(H(X)) < C, \text{ a}$$

constant for $\theta \in \Theta^0$.

Then the maximum likelihood estimator is a BAN estimator: $\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(\hat{\theta}_n - \theta) | \theta] \rightarrow N(0, I(\theta)^{-1})$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$ for $\theta \in \Theta^0$. Note that under assumption (AN1) the likelihood function attains the maximum in Θ^0 with probability tending to 1 as $n \rightarrow \infty$ if the true value of the parameter exists in Θ^0 . Hence the ML estimator is determined as a root $\theta = \hat{\theta}_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ of the **likelihood equation** with the same probability as above:

$$\frac{\partial}{\partial \theta} \log L_n(\theta) = \left(\sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta_j} \log f(x_i, \theta) \right)_{j=1, \dots, k} = 0.$$

We also call $n^{-1} \partial \log L_n(\theta) / \partial \theta$ the **likelihood estimating function**. The essential fact used in the proof of the above theorem is the asymptotic equivalence of the ML estimator and the likelihood estimating function:

$$\Delta_n(\theta) - I(\theta)n^{1/2}(\hat{\theta}_n - \theta) \rightarrow 0 \text{ in } P_{\theta} \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty,$$

where $\Delta_n(\theta) = n^{-1/2} \partial \log L_n(\theta) / \partial \theta$. Note the fact that

$$\mathcal{L}[\Delta_n(\theta) | \theta] \rightarrow N_k(0, I(\theta)) \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty$$

holds according to the central limit theorem (\rightarrow 250 Limit Theorems in Probability Theory B (1)).

Contiguity. We now turn to the situation where we need asymptotic distributions under the alternative distribution $P_{\theta + n^{-1/2}h}$ with $\theta + n^{-1/2}h \in \Theta$ in estimation as we do in testing hypotheses (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing). The notion of contiguity, due to LeCam (1960), is basic for the asymptotic methods of estimation theory. We consider sequences $\{P_n\}$ and $\{P'_n\}$ of probability measures on $(\mathcal{X}^n, \mathfrak{B}^n)$ with the \dagger Radon-Nikodym derivatives p_n and p'_n with respect to a σ -finite measure, such as $P_n + P'_n$. Denote by $\chi_n = \Lambda[P'_n; P_n]$ a generalized log-likelihood ratio that is defined by $\log p'_n/p_n$ on the set $\{p_n p'_n > 0\}$ and is an arbitrary measurable function on the set $\{p_n p'_n = 0\}$. Let $\{B_n\}$ be any sequence of $\{\mathfrak{B}^n\}$ -measurable sets, and let $\{T_n\}$ be any sequence of $\{\mathfrak{B}^n\}$ -measurable functions. A sequence of distributions $\{\mathcal{L}[T_n | P_n]\}$ is said to be **relatively compact** if every subsequence $\{n'\} \subset \{n\}$ contains a further subsequence $\{m\} \subset \{n'\}$ along which it converges to a prob-

ability distribution. In the Euclidean space relative compactness is equivalent to **tightness**: that is, for every $\varepsilon > 0$ there is a $b(\varepsilon)$ such that $P_n\{|T_n| > b(\varepsilon)\} < \varepsilon$ for every n .

Theorem. The following statements are all equivalent.

- (1) For any $\{T_n\}$, $T_n \rightarrow 0$ in P_n if and only if $T_n \rightarrow 0$ in P'_n .
- (2) For any $\{T_n\}$, $\{\mathcal{L}[T_n|P_n]\}$ is relatively compact if and only if $\{\mathcal{L}[T_n|P'_n]\}$ is relatively compact.
- (3) For any $\{B_n\}$, $P_n\{B_n\} \rightarrow 0$ if and only if $P'_n\{B_n\} \rightarrow 0$.
- (4) Whatever the choice of χ_n , $\{\mathcal{L}[\chi_n|P_n]\}$ and $\{\mathcal{L}[\chi_n|P'_n]\}$ are relatively compact.
- (5) Whatever the choice of χ_n , $\{\mathcal{L}[\chi_n|P_n]\}$ is relatively compact. Furthermore, if $\{m\} \subset \{n\}$ is a subsequence of $\{n\}$ such that $\mathcal{L}[\chi_m|P_m]$ converges to $\mathcal{L}[\chi]$, then $E\{e^\chi\} = 1$.

Two sequences $\{P_n\}$ and $\{P'_n\}$ satisfying requirements (1)–(5) of the above theorem are said to be **contiguous**.

Theorem. Suppose that $\{P_n\}$ and $\{P'_n\}$ are contiguous. Let $\{m\} \subset \{n\}$ be a subsequence such that $\mathcal{L}[\chi_m, T_m|P_m]$ converges to a limit $\mathcal{L}[\chi, T]$. Then $\mathcal{L}[\chi_m, T_m|P'_m]$ converges to $e^\chi \mathcal{L}[\chi, T]$, where $v = e^\chi \mathcal{L}[\chi, T]$ is given by $v(A) = \int_A e^\chi d\mathcal{L}[\chi, T]$.

Now, set $P_n = P_\theta^n$ and $P'_n = P_{\theta+n^{-1/2}h}^n$ for each n . Under suitable regularity conditions, such as assumptions (C1)–(C5) and (AN1)–(AN5), it is easy to see that $\{P_\theta^n\}$ and $\{P_{\theta+n^{-1/2}h}^n\}$ are contiguous. At the same time, we can see that the asymptotic linearity of $\Lambda_n(\theta + n^{-1/2}h; \theta) = \Lambda[P_{\theta+n^{-1/2}h}^n; P_\theta^n]$ holds (say) in the vicinity of the true parameter as follows:

$$\Lambda_n(\theta + n^{-1/2}h; \theta) - h' \Delta_n(\theta) + \frac{1}{2} h' I(\theta) h \rightarrow 0 \quad \text{in } P_\theta.$$

The asymptotic equivalence of the ML estimator and $\Delta_n(\theta)$, and the asymptotic linearity of the log-likelihood function and $\Delta_n(\theta)$, leads to the regularity (\rightarrow Section N) of the ML estimator.

Theorem. Under suitable regularity conditions as above, the ML estimator is regular:

$$\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(\hat{\theta}_n - \theta) - h | \theta + n^{-1/2}h] \rightarrow N_k(0, I(\theta)^{-1}),$$

for any $h \in \mathbf{R}^k$ with $\theta + n^{-1/2}h \in \Theta$.

N. Asymptotic Efficiency

In Section D we discussed lower bounds of variances of unbiased estimators for finite sample size and defined the efficiency of an unbiased estimator with variance $v_n(\theta)$ by $(v_n(\theta)nI(\theta))^{-1}$. In this section we first discuss the asymptotic efficiency of a CAN estimator in the same vein as in the case of finite sample size. Second, we see a specific approach to the large-sample theory of estimation. Throughout

this section we assume (C1)–(C5) and (AN1)–(AN5) stated in Section M.

BAN Estimators. We suppose that the parameter space Θ is a subset of \mathbf{R}^1 in this paragraph. We restrict our attention to the class of CAN estimators $\{T_n\}$ of the real-valued parameter θ for which $\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta) | \theta] \rightarrow N(0, v(\theta))$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Fisher's conjecture concerning the lower bound to asymptotic variance $v(\theta)$ of any CAN estimator is

$$v(\theta) \geq I(\theta)^{-1},$$

where $I(\theta)$ is the Fisher information on θ in a single observation. The **asymptotic efficiency** of a CAN estimator with asymptotic variance $v(\theta)$ is defined by $(v(\theta)I(\theta))^{-1}$. A CAN estimator with asymptotic variance $I(\theta)^{-1}$ is called a **BAN estimator** or an **asymptotically efficient estimator**. Note that under suitable regularity conditions there always exists an asymptotic efficient estimator, for example a ML estimator, although for a sample of finite size there exists an efficient estimator if and only if the family of density functions is of the exponential type.

Unfortunately, Fisher's conjecture is not true without further conditions on the competing estimators. A counterexample was provided by Hodges and reported by LeCam (1953). Let $\{T_n\}$ be any CAN estimator with the asymptotic variance $v(\theta)$. Consider the estimator

$$T'_n = \begin{cases} \alpha T_n & \text{if } |T_n| < n^{-1/4}, \\ T_n & \text{if } |T_n| \geq n^{-1/4}, \end{cases}$$

where $0 < \alpha < 1$ is a constant. $\{T'_n\}$ is also a CAN estimator with asymptotic variance $v'(\theta)$ such that

$$v'(\theta) = \begin{cases} \alpha^2 v(\theta) & \text{if } \theta = 0, \\ v(\theta) & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Let $\{T_n\}$ be a BAN estimator; then T'_n is an estimator with asymptotic variance less than $I(\theta)^{-1}$ and is called a **superefficient estimator**.

Theorem (LeCam). The set of points θ for which the inequality due to Fisher fails is of Lebesgue measure zero. A condition due to Bahadur leads to the continuity of asymptotic variance which implies the validity of the above inequality.

Theorem (Bahadur). Suppose that $\{T_n\}$ is a CAN estimator with asymptotic variance $v(\theta)$ satisfying the condition

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_{\theta_0 + n^{-1/2}}\{T_n < \theta_0 + n^{-1/2}\} \leq \frac{1}{2}$$

or

$$\liminf_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_{\theta_0 + n^{-1/2}}\{T_n > \theta_0 + n^{-1/2}\} \leq \frac{1}{2}.$$

Then the following inequality, due to Fisher, holds at $\theta = \theta_0$:

$$v(\theta_0) \geq I(\theta_0)^{-1}.$$

Regular Estimators. Wolfowitz and Kaufman considered an operationally more justifiable restriction on competing estimators, called the **uniformity property**, stating that, for an estimator $\{T_n\}$ of θ , $\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta) | \theta](y)$ converges to any limit $L_\theta(y)$ uniformly in $(y, \theta) \in \mathbf{R}^k \times C$, where C is any compact subset of the interior Θ^0 of $\Theta \subset \mathbf{R}^k$. The ML estimator $\{\hat{\theta}_n\}$ also has this uniformity property under suitable regularity conditions, such as (C1)–(C5) and (AN1)–(AN5) to which some uniformity properties are added [29]. We note that asymptotic variance is not a good measurement of asymptotic efficiency unless an estimator is a CAN estimator, and that **asymptotic concentration** is in general a more pertinent measurement.

Theorem. For an estimator $\{T_n\}$ with uniformity property above, it holds that the limit $L_\theta(y)$ is a probability distribution function and continuous for either one of the variables y or θ if the other is fixed and furthermore that the probability measure L_θ is absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure on \mathbf{R}^k .

Theorem. The asymptotic concentration of the ML estimator $\{\hat{\theta}_n\}$ about θ is not less than that of any estimator $\{T_n\}$ with uniformity property: For any convex and symmetric set $S \subset \mathbf{R}^k$ about the origin,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_\theta\{n^{1/2}(\hat{\theta}_n - \theta) \in S\} \geq \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_\theta\{n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta) \in S\}.$$

Schmetterer (*Research papers in statistics*, F. N. David (ed.), 1966) provided the notion of the continuous convergence of distributions of estimators of θ which is weaker than uniform convergence. An estimator $\{T_n\}$ is said to be **regular** if

$$\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta) - h | \theta + n^{-1/2}h] \rightarrow L_\theta \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty,$$

where L_θ is a probability distribution independent of h with $\theta + n^{-1/2}h \in \Theta$. It was shown that the ML estimator $\{\hat{\theta}_n\}$ is regular under ordinary regularity conditions. Hájek obtained the following characterization of the asymptotic distribution of any regular estimator and, independently Inagaki (*Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.*, 22 (1970); 25 (1973)) obtained a similar result.

Theorem. The asymptotic distribution L_θ of any regular estimator $\{T_n\}$ is represented as the * convolution of a normal distribution N_θ and some residual distribution G_θ :

$$L_\theta = N_\theta * G_\theta,$$

where $N_\theta = N_k(0, I(\theta)^{-1})$, the asymptotic distri-

bution of the ML estimator $\{\hat{\theta}_n\}$ in the ordinary regular case. It follows from the characterization $L_\theta = N_\theta * G_\theta$, that the first two theorems in this section hold also for regular estimators. (\rightarrow LeCam, *Proc. 6th Berkeley Symp.*, 1972, and Roussas and Soms, *Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.*, 25 (1973).)

O. Higher-Order Asymptotic Efficiency

In Section N it was shown that the ML estimator is a BAN estimator. In general, however, there exist many BAN estimators. For example, consider the case of a * multinomial distribution where probabilities of events are parametrized. That is, let $X = (n_1, \dots, n_m)'$, $n = n_1 + \dots + n_m$, be distributed as a multinomial distribution $M(n; \pi_1, \dots, \pi_m)$, $\pi_1 + \dots + \pi_m = 1$, and let Π_Θ be a subset of m -vectors, $\Pi_\Theta = \{\pi(\theta) = (\pi_1(\theta), \dots, \pi_m(\theta))'; \theta \in \Theta\}$, $\Theta \subset \mathbf{R}^1$. Define $\hat{p} = (\hat{p}_1, \dots, \hat{p}_m)' = (n_1/n, \dots, n_m/n)'$. Then we consider (i) the ML estimator, (ii) the minimum-chi-square estimator, (iii) the minimum modified chi-square estimator, (iv) the minimum Haldane discrepancy (D_k) estimator, (v) the minimum Hellinger distance (HD) estimator, and (vi) the minimum Kullback-Leibler (K-L) information estimator. These are defined as the values of the parameter θ that minimize the following quantities, respectively: (i) $ML = -\log L_n = -n \sum_{i=1}^m \hat{p}_i \log \pi_i(\theta)$; (ii) $\chi^2 = \sum_{i=1}^m (n\hat{p}_i - n\pi_i(\theta))^2 / (n\pi_i(\theta))$; (iii) $\text{mod } \chi^2 = \sum_{i=1}^m (n\hat{p}_i - n\pi_i(\theta))^2 / (n\hat{p}_i)$; (iv) $D_k = \sum_{i=1}^m \pi_i(\theta)^{k+1} / \hat{p}_i^k$; (v) $HD = \cos^{-1} \sum_{i=1}^m (\hat{p}_i \pi_i(\theta))^{1/2}$; and (vi) $K-L = \sum_{i=1}^m \pi_i(\theta) \log(\pi_i(\theta) / \hat{p}_i)$. Rao [32] showed that under suitable regularity conditions these estimators are Fisher consistent and BAN estimators.

Fisher-Rao Approach to Second-Order Asymptotic Efficiency. For $\theta \in \Theta \subset \mathbf{R}^1$, let $p_{\theta n}$ be the density for n i.i.d. observations $x := (x_1, \dots, x_n)$, and let $q_{\theta n}$ be the density of estimator T_n . The * Fisher information contained in X and in T_n are defined by $nI(\theta) = E(d \log p_{\theta n} / d\theta)^2$ and $nI_{T_n}(\theta) = E(d \log q_{\theta n} / d\theta)^2$, respectively. Rao defined the **first-order (asymptotic) efficient estimator** T_n satisfying one of the following conditions: (1) $n^{1/2} |d \log p_{\theta n} / d\theta - d \log q_{\theta n} / d\theta| \rightarrow 0$ in probability; (2) $I(\theta) - I_{T_n}(\theta) \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$; (3) the asymptotic correlation between $n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta)$ and $n^{1/2} d \log p_{\theta n} / d\theta$ is unity; (4) $|n^{1/2} d \log p_{\theta n} / d\theta - \alpha - \beta n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta)| \rightarrow 0$ in probability. We note that the larger the condition number (j), the stronger the condition. A first-order efficient estimator is a BAN estimator. Fisher proposed

$$E'_2 = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (nI(\theta) - nI_{T_n}(\theta)) = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} V_\theta(d \log p_{\theta n} / d\theta - d \log q_{\theta n} / d\theta)$$

as a measure of **second-order (asymptotic) efficiency** to distinguish different BAN estimators. Fisher stated without any sort of proof that the maximum likelihood estimator minimizes E'_2 , i.e., maximizes second-order efficiency. Rao proposed

$$E_2 = \min_{\lambda} V_{\theta}(d \log p_{\theta n} / d \theta - \alpha n^{1/2} - \beta n(T_n - \theta) - \lambda n(T_n - \theta)^2)$$

as a measure of second-order efficiency for first-order efficient estimators $\{T_n\}$ satisfying condition (4). He showed that the estimators mentioned above for multinomial distribution are first-order efficient estimators satisfying condition (4) and furthermore calculated second-order efficiencies of these estimators measured in terms of E_2 : (i) $E_2(\text{ML}) = \gamma^2(\theta)I(\theta)$; (ii) $E_2(\chi^2) = \Delta(\theta) + E_2(\text{ML})$; (iii) $E_2(\text{mod } \chi^2) = 4\Delta(\theta) + E_2(\text{ML})$; (iv) $E_2(D_k) = (k+1)^2 \Delta(\theta) + E_2(\text{ML})$; (v) $E_2(\text{HD}) = \Delta(\theta)/4 + E_2(\text{ML})$; (vi) $E_2(\text{K-L}) = \Delta(\theta) + E_2(\text{ML})$ with

$$\gamma^2(\theta) = (\mu_{02} - 2\mu_{21} + \mu_{40})/I^2(\theta) - 1 - (\mu_{11}^2 + \mu_{30}^2 - 2\mu_{11}\mu_{30})/I^3(\theta),$$

$$\Delta(\theta) = \sum_{i=1}^m (\pi'_i(\theta)/\pi_i(\theta))^2/2 - \mu_{40}/I(\theta) + \mu_{30}^2/(2I^2(\theta)),$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} \mu_{rs} &= \mu_{rs}(\theta) = E_{\theta}\{((df(X, \theta)/d\theta)/f(X, \theta))^r \\ &\quad \times ((d^2f(X, \theta)/d\theta^2)/f(X, \theta))^s\} \\ &= \sum_{i=1}^m \pi_i(\theta)(\pi'_i(\theta)/\pi_i(\theta))^r (\pi''_i(\theta)/\pi_i(\theta))^s. \end{aligned}$$

Rao [33] gave another definition of second-order efficiency based on the expansion of the variance of T_n after correcting for bias: $V_{\theta}(T_n) = (nI(\theta))^{-1} + \psi(\theta)n^{-2} + o(n^{-2})$. The quantity $\psi(\theta)$ is considered to be a measure of second-order efficiency. The results of Fisher and Rao were confined to multinomial distributions. Efron (*Ann. Statist.*, 3 (1975)) and Ghosh and Subramanyan (*Sankhyā*, sec. A, 36 (1974)) extended the results to the so-called curved exponential family of distributions. Efron gave a geometric interpretation to the effect that second-order efficiency is related to the curvature of a statistical problem corresponding to $\gamma(\theta)$ above, and S. Amari recently extended this differential-geometric approach to the discussion of higher-order efficiency of estimators. Rao suggested that E'_2 is equal to E_2 . Ghosh and Subramanyan gave a sufficient condition for the equality to hold, whereas Efron provided a counterexample to show that $E'_2 \neq E_2$ in general.

Pfanzagl and Takeuchi-Akahira Approaches to Higher-Order Asymptotic Efficiency. For each

$k = 1, 2, \dots$, a $\{c_n\}$ -consistent estimator $\{T_n\}$ is said to be the **k th-order asymptotically median unbiased (AMU) estimator** if for any $\theta \in \Theta$ ($\subset \mathbf{R}^1$) there exists a positive number δ such that

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sup_{|\tau - \theta| < \delta} c_n^{k-1} \left| P_{\tau}\{T_n \leq \tau\} - \frac{1}{2} \right| = 0$$

or

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \sup_{|\tau - \theta| < \delta} c_n^{k-1} \left| P_{\tau}\{T_n \geq \tau\} - \frac{1}{2} \right| = 0.$$

This notion, which is an extension of the condition due to Bahadur for the asymptotic efficiency, was introduced by Takeuchi and Akahira. For a k th-order AMU estimator $\{T_n\}$, $G_0(t, \theta) + c_n^{-1}G_1(t, \theta) + \dots + c_n^{-k+1}G_{k-1}(t, \theta)$ is called the **k th-order asymptotic distribution** of $c_n(T_n - \theta)$ if

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} c_n^{k-1} |P_{\theta}\{c_n(T_n - \theta) \leq t\} - G_0(t, \theta) - c_n^{-1}G_1(t, \theta) - \dots - c_n^{-k+1}G_{k-1}(t, \theta)| = 0.$$

Pfanzagl and Takeuchi and Akahira obtained the concrete form of the second- or third-order asymptotic distribution of the ML estimator. A k th-order AMU estimator is said to be **k th-order asymptotic efficient** if the k th-order asymptotic distribution of it attains uniformly the bound for the k th-order asymptotic distributions of the k th-order AMU estimators. Takeuchi and Akahira showed that under suitable regularity conditions, T_n is second-order asymptotic efficient if

$$\begin{aligned} P_{\theta}\{(nI(\theta))^{1/2}(T_n - \theta) \leq t\} &= \Phi(t) + n^{-1/2}(3\mu_{11}(\theta) \\ &\quad + 2\mu_{30}(\theta))/(6I(\theta)^{3/2}) \\ &\quad \times t^2 \varphi(t) + o(n^{-1/2}), \end{aligned}$$

where $\Phi(t)$ is the standard normal distribution function and $\varphi(t)$ is its density function, and further that the modified ML estimator

$$\hat{\theta}_n^* = \hat{\theta}_n + n^{-1}\mu_{30}(\hat{\theta}_n)/(6I(\hat{\theta}_n)^2)$$

for the ML estimator $\hat{\theta}_n$ is second-order asymptotic efficient. Pfanzagl (*Ann. Statist.*, 1 (1973)) obtained a similar result. The formulation due to Takeuchi and Akahira is more extensive since it can be applied to the so-called non-regular cases.

P. Estimating Equations

We often determine an estimator as a solution $\theta = T_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ of an equation $\Psi_n(x_1, \dots, x_n; \theta) = 0$; for example, the ML estimator as a solution of the likelihood equation. In such case, such an equation is called an **estimating equation** and $\Psi_n(\theta) = \Psi_n(X_1, \dots, X_n; \theta)$, a random function, is called an **estimating function** [3].

Call T_n an estimator based on an estimating function $\Psi_n(\theta)$. The following result is a modification of a theorem due to Hodges and Lehmann (*Ann. Math. Statist.*, 34 (1963)).

Theorem. Let Θ be an interval of \mathbf{R}^1 . Suppose that a real-valued estimating function $\Psi_n(\theta)$ satisfies the following three conditions: (M1) $\Psi_n(\theta)$ is a nonincreasing function of the real parameter θ ; (M2) for any real number h , $n^{1/2}\Psi_n(\theta_0 + n^{-1/2}h) - n^{1/2}\Psi_n(\theta_0) + \gamma h \rightarrow 0$ in probability, where γ is a positive constant; and (M3) $\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}\Psi_n(\theta_0)](y) \rightarrow \Phi(y/\sigma)$, where Φ is a continuous distribution function with zero mean and unit variance.

Define an estimator based on Ψ_n by $T_n = (\theta_n^* + \theta_n^{**})/2$, where $\theta_n^* = \sup\{\theta | \Psi_n(\theta) > 0\}$ and $\theta_n^{**} = \inf\{\theta | \Psi_n(\theta) < 0\}$. Then we have $\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta_0)](y) \rightarrow \Phi(y/\sigma)$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Huber considered a formulation that guarantees the asymptotic normality of an *M-estimator*. An *M-estimator* T_n is defined by a minimum problem of the form $\sum_{i=1}^n \rho(X_i, T_n) = \min_{\theta} \sum_{i=1}^n \rho(X_i, \theta)$ or by an implicit equation $\sum_{i=1}^n \psi(X_i, T_n) = 0$, where ρ is an arbitrary function and $\psi(x, \theta) = \partial \rho(x, \theta) / \partial \theta$. Note that $\rho(x, \theta) = -\log f(x, \theta)$ gives the ordinary ML estimator. Let Θ be a closed subset of \mathbf{R}^k , let $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ be a probability space, and let $\psi(x, \theta)$ be some function on $\mathcal{X} \times \Theta$ with value in \mathbf{R}^k . Assume that X_1, X_2, \dots are independent random variables with values in \mathcal{X} having the common probability distribution P that need not be a member of the parametric family. Consider an estimating function

$$\Psi_n(\theta) = \frac{1}{n} \sum_{i=1}^n \psi(X_i, \theta).$$

Assume that

- (N1) for each fixed $\theta \in \Theta$, $\psi(x, \theta)$ is \mathfrak{B} -measurable and $\psi(x, \theta)$ is 'separable';
- (N2) the expected value $\lambda(\theta) = E\{\psi(X, \theta)\}$ exists for all $\theta \in \Theta$, and has a unique zero at $\theta = \theta_0 \in \Theta^0$;
- (N3) there exists a continuous function that is bounded away from zero, $b(\theta) \geq b_0 > 0$, such that $E(\sup_{\theta} \{|\psi(X, \theta)|/b(\theta)\}) < \infty$, $\liminf_{|\theta| \rightarrow \infty} \{|\lambda(\theta)|/b(\theta)\} \geq 1$, and $E(\limsup_{|\theta| \rightarrow \infty} \{|\psi(X, \theta) - \lambda(\theta)|/b(\theta)\}) < 1$;
- (N4) for $u(x, \theta, d) = \sup\{|\psi(x, \tau) - \psi(x, \theta)| | |\tau - \theta| \leq d\}$, (i) as $d \rightarrow 0$, $E(u(X, \theta, d)) \rightarrow 0$, (ii) there exist positive numbers d_0, b_1 , and b_2 such that $E(u(X, \theta, d)) \leq b_1 d$ and $E(u(X, \theta, d)^2) \leq b_2 d$ for θ and d satisfying $0 < |\theta - \theta_0| + d \leq d_0$;
- (N5) in some neighborhood of θ_0 , $\lambda(\theta)$ is continuously differentiable and the Jacobian matrix at $\theta = \theta_0$, $\Lambda = (\partial \lambda_i(\theta_0) / \partial \theta_j)$, is nonsingular; and
- (N6) the covariance matrix $\Sigma = E\{\psi(X, \theta_0) \cdot \psi(X, \theta_0)'\}$ exists and is positive definite.

Theorem. Suppose that an estimator $\{T_n\}$ satisfies $\Psi_n(T_n) \rightarrow 0$ a.s. (or in probability) as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Then, under (N1)–(N4) (i), $T_n \rightarrow \theta_0$ a.s. (or in probability) as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

Lemma. Under (N1)–(N5),

$$\sup\{|\Psi_n(\tau) - \Psi_n(\theta_0) - \lambda(\tau)|/(n^{-1/2} + |\lambda(\tau)|); |\tau - \theta_0| \leq d_0\} \rightarrow 0$$

in probability as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

Suppose that $\{\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}\Psi_n(T_n)]\}$ is †tight. It implies that $\Psi_n(T_n) \rightarrow 0$ in probability, and hence from the above theorem $T_n \rightarrow \theta_0$ in probability. Thus letting $\tau = T_n$ we have

$$|\Psi_n(T_n) - \Psi_n(\theta_0) - \lambda(T_n)|/(n^{-1/2} + |\lambda(T_n)|) \rightarrow 0$$

in probability. That is, for any $\varepsilon > 0$ there exists an n_0 such that for $n \geq n_0$, $P\{n^{1/2}|\lambda(T_n)| < \varepsilon + |n^{1/2}\Psi_n(T_n) - n^{1/2}\Psi_n(\theta_0)|\} > 1 - \varepsilon$. This and the tightness of $\{\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}\Psi_n(T_n)]\}$ and $\{\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}\Psi_n(\theta_0)]\}$ lead to the tightness of $\{\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta_0)]\}$, and the converse is also true. At the same time we have $n^{1/2}\Psi_n(T_n) - n^{1/2}\Psi_n(\theta_0) - \Lambda n^{1/2}(T_n - \theta_0) \rightarrow 0$ in probability. The following theorem is a straightforward consequence.

Theorem. Suppose that an estimator $\hat{\theta}_n$ satisfies $n^{1/2}\Psi_n(\hat{\theta}_n) \rightarrow 0$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$. Then, under (N1)–(N6), $\mathcal{L}[n^{1/2}(\hat{\theta}_n - \theta_0) | P] \rightarrow N_k(0, \Lambda^{-1} \Sigma \Lambda'^{-1})$ as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

Q. Interval Estimation

Interval estimation or **region estimation** is a method of statistical inference utilized to estimate the true value $g(\theta)$ of the given parametric function by stating that $g(\theta)$ belongs to a subset $S(x)$ of \mathcal{A} , based on the observed value x of the random variable X . If

$$P_{\theta}\{g(\theta) \in S(X)\} \geq 1 - \alpha \quad \text{for any } \theta \in \Theta$$

for a constant α ($0 < \alpha < 1$), then the random region $S(X)$ is called a **confidence region** of $g(\theta)$ of **confidence level** $1 - \alpha$, and the infimum of the left-hand side with respect to $\theta \in \Theta$ is called the **confidence coefficient**. In particular, if $\Theta \subset \mathbf{R}$ and a confidence region is an interval, as is often the case, then the region is called a **confidence interval**, and two boundaries of the interval are called **confidence limits**. If a particular subset $S(X)$ among the set of confidence regions of $g(\theta)$ of confidence level $1 - \alpha$ minimizes $P_{\theta}\{g(\theta') \in S(X)\}$ for all pairs θ and θ' ($\neq \theta$), $S(X)$ is said to be **uniformly most powerful**. If a confidence region $S(X)$ of $g(\theta)$ of confidence level $1 - \alpha$ satisfies $P_{\theta}\{g(\theta') \in S(X)\} \leq 1 - \alpha$ for all pairs θ and θ' ($\neq \theta$), then it is said to be **unbiased**. The notion of **invariance of a confidence region** can be defined similarly, and the definition for $S(X)$ being **uniformly most powerful unbiased (UMPBU)** or **uniformly most**

powerful invariant (UMPI) can be formulated in an obvious manner.

For each $\theta_0 \in \Theta$ let $A(\theta_0)$ be an acceptance region of a test of level α of the hypothesis $\theta = \theta_0$. For each $x \in \mathcal{X}$ let $S(x) = \{\theta | x \in A(\theta), \theta \in \Theta\}$. Then $S(X)$ is a confidence region of θ of confidence level $1 - \alpha$. If $A(\theta_0)$ is an acceptance region of a UMP test of the hypothesis $\theta = \theta_0$ for each θ_0 , then $S(X)$ is a UMP confidence region of θ of confidence level $1 - \alpha$. Furthermore, corresponding to an acceptance region $A(\theta_0)$ of a UMP unbiased (invariant) test, a UMP unbiased (invariant) confidence region can be constructed in a similar manner.

R. Tolerance Regions

Let X and Y be distributed according to probability distributions P_θ^X and P_θ^Y labeled by a common $\theta \in \Theta$ over measurable spaces $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ and $(\mathcal{Y}, \mathfrak{C})$, respectively, and consider the problem of predicting a future value of the random variable Y using the observed value x of the random variable X . If a mapping $S(x)$ sending a point x to a set belonging to \mathfrak{C} is used to predict that the value of Y will lie in the set $S(x)$, then the random region is called a **tolerance region** of Y . In particular, if a tolerance region of a real random variable is an interval, it is called a **tolerance interval** and its boundaries **tolerance limits**.

For simplicity, suppose that X and Y are independent. There are several kinds of tolerance regions. First, if $P_\theta^X(P_\theta^Y\{Y \in S(X)\} \geq \beta) \geq \gamma$ for any $\theta \in \Theta$, then $S(X)$ is called a tolerance region of Y of **content** β and **level** γ . Second, if $E_\theta^X(P_\theta^Y\{Y \in S(X)\}) \geq \beta$ for any $\theta \in \Theta$, then $S(X)$ is called a tolerance region of Y of **mean content** β . Suppose that the random variable $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)'$ is a random sample and that both X_1 and Y obey the same distribution. If further the set $\{P_\theta^Y | \theta \in \Theta\}$ forms the totality of 1-dimensional continuous distributions and the distribution of $P_\theta^Y\{Y \in S(X)\}$ does not depend on the choice of θ , then $S(X)$ is called a distribution-free tolerance region. For example, if $X_{(1)} \leq X_{(2)} \leq \dots \leq X_{(n)}$ is an order statistic, then the interval $[X_{(r)}, X_{(s)}]$ (for $r < s$) is a distribution-free tolerance interval for a random variable Y , independent of X_1, \dots, X_n , which has the same distribution as X_1 .

References

- [1] H. Cramér, *Mathematical methods of statistics*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1946.
- [2] C. R. Rao, *Linear statistical inference and its applications*, Wiley, second edition, 1973.
- [3] S. S. Wilks, *Mathematical statistics*, Wiley, 1962.

- [4] S. Zacks, *The theory of statistical inference*, Wiley, 1971.
- [5] A. Birnbaum, On the foundation of statistical inference, *J. Amer. Statist. Assoc.*, 57 (1962), 269–326.
- [6] E. L. Lehmann and H. Scheffé, Completeness, similar regions and unbiased estimation I, II, *Sankhyā*, sec. A, 10 (1950), 305–340; 15 (1955), 219–236.
- [7] H. Morimoto, N. Ikeda, and Y. Washio, Unbiased estimates based on sufficient statistics, *Bull. Math. Statist.*, 6 (1956).
- [8] E. W. Barankin, Locally best unbiased estimates, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 20 (1949), 477–501.
- [9] A. Bhattacharya, On some analogues to the amount of information and their uses in statistical estimation, *Sankhyā*, sec. A, 8 (1946), 1–14.
- [10] K. Ishii, Inequalities of the types of Chebyshev and Cramer-Rao and mathematical programming, *Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.*, 16 (1964), 277–293.
- [11] C. R. Rao, Information and the accuracy attainable in the estimation of statistical parameters, *Bull. Calcutta Math. Soc.*, 37 (1945), 81–91.
- [12] M. A. Girshick and L. G. Savage, Bayes and minimax estimates for quadratic loss function, *Proc. 2nd Berkeley Symp. Math. Prob.*, 1 (1951), 53–74.
- [13] S. Karlin, Admissibility for estimation with quadratic loss, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 29 (1958), 406–436.
- [14] E. J. Pitman, The estimation of the location and scale parameters of a continuous population of any given form, *Biometrika*, 30 (1939), 391–421.
- [15] C. Stein, Inadmissibility of the usual estimator for the mean of a multivariate normal distribution, *Proc. 3rd Berkeley Symp. Math. Prob.*, 1 (1956), 197–206.
- [16] C. Stein, The admissibility of the Pitman's estimator for a single location parameter, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 30 (1959), 970–979.
- [17] J. L. Hodges and E. L. Lehmann, Some problems in minimax estimation, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 21 (1950), 182–197.
- [18] H. Kudo, On minimax invariant estimates of the transformation parameter, *Nat. Sci. Rep. Ochanomizu Univ.*, 6 (1955), 31–73.
- [19] J. Wolfowitz, The efficiency of sequential estimates and Wald's equation for sequential processes, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 18 (1947), 215–230.
- [20] R. A. Fisher, On the mathematical foundations of theoretical statistics, *Philos. Trans. Roy. Soc. London*, 222 (1922), 309–368.
- [21] R. A. Fisher, Theory of statistical estimation, *Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc.*, 22 (1925), 700–725.

- [22] R. von Mises, On the asymptotic distributions of differentiable statistical functions, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 18 (1947), 309–348.
- [23] L. LeCam, On some asymptotic properties of maximum likelihood estimates and related Bayes estimates, *Univ. California Publ. Statist.*, 1 (1953), 277–330.
- [24] L. LeCam, Locally asymptotically normal families of distributions, *Univ. California Publ. Statist.*, 3 (1960), 37–98.
- [25] G. G. Roussas, *Contiguity of probability measures*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1972.
- [26] A. Wald, Note on the consistency of the maximum likelihood estimate, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 20 (1949), 595–601.
- [27] R. R. Bahadur, On Fisher's bound for asymptotic variances, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 35 (1964), 1545–1552.
- [28] J. Hájek, A characterization of limiting distributions of regular estimates, *Z. Wahrscheinlichkeitstheorie und Verw. Gebiete*, 14 (1970), 323–330.
- [29] S. Kaufman, Asymptotic efficiency of the maximum likelihood estimator, *Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.*, 18 (1966), 155–178.
- [30] J. Wolfowitz, Asymptotic efficiency of the maximum likelihood estimator, *Theory Prob. Appl.*, 10 (1965), 247–260.
- [31] M. Akahira and K. Takeuchi, Asymptotic efficiency of statistical estimators: Concepts and higher order asymptotic efficiency, *Lecture notes in statist.* 7, Springer, 1981.
- [32] C. R. Rao, Asymptotic efficiency and limiting information, *Proc. 4th Berkeley Symp. Math. Prob.*, 1 (1961), 531–546.
- [33] C. R. Rao, Criteria of estimation in large samples, *Sankhyā*, sec. A, 25 (1963), 189–206.
- [34] P. J. Huber, The behavior of maximum likelihood estimates under nonstandard conditions, *Proc. 5th Berkeley Symp. Math. Statist. Prob.*, 1 (1967), 221–233.

400 (XVIII.8) Statistical Hypothesis Testing

A. General Remarks

A **statistical hypothesis** is a proposition about the \dagger probability distribution of a \dagger sample X . If it is known that the \dagger distribution of X belongs to a family of distributions $\mathcal{P} = \{P_\theta | \theta \in \Omega\}$ with a parameter space Ω , the hypothesis can be stated as follows: The value of the parameter θ belongs to ω_H , where ω_H is a nonempty subset of the parameter space Ω . This hypothesis is also written simply as $\mathbf{H}: \theta \in \omega_H$. When ω_H

consists of one point, it is called a **simple hypothesis**, otherwise a **composite hypothesis**.

Let \mathcal{X} be a \dagger sample space associated with a $\dagger\sigma$ -algebra \mathfrak{B} of subsets of \mathcal{X} . To test a hypothesis \mathbf{H} is to decide whether \mathbf{H} is false, based on the observation of a sample $X (\in \mathcal{X})$. The assertion that \mathbf{H} is not false does not necessarily imply the validity of \mathbf{H} . Such an assertion is called the **acceptance** of \mathbf{H} , while the opposite assertion, that \mathbf{H} is false, is called the **rejection** of \mathbf{H} . In this framework for the testing problem, \mathbf{H} is often called a **null hypothesis** (\rightarrow 401 Statistical Inference).

Consider a testing procedure in which \mathbf{H} is rejected with probability $\varphi(x)$ ($0 \leq \varphi(x) \leq 1$) and accepted with probability $1 - \varphi(x)$, when $x \in \mathcal{X}$ is observed. This testing procedure is characterized by the function φ on \mathcal{X} with range in $[0, 1]$. Here $\varphi(x)$ is taken as \mathfrak{B} -measurable on \mathcal{X} , and is called a **test function** or **test**. If $\varphi(x)$ is the indicator function $\chi_B(x)$ of a set $B (\in \mathfrak{B})$, then the test is rejecting \mathbf{H} when x belongs to B and accepting \mathbf{H} otherwise. The set B is called a **critical region**, and its complementary set an **acceptance region**. A test is called a **nonrandomized test** if it is the indicator function of a set. Other tests are called **randomized tests**.

Suppose that the \dagger distribution of the sample X is a probability measure P_θ on $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$. The probability of rejecting \mathbf{H} when θ is the true value of the parameter is calculated from

$$E_\theta(\varphi) = \int_{\mathcal{X}} \varphi(x) P_\theta(dx).$$

Let α be a given constant in $(0, 1)$. If a test $\varphi(x)$ satisfies $E_\theta(\varphi) \leq \alpha$ for all $\theta \in \omega_H$, or, in other words, if the probability of rejecting \mathbf{H} when \mathbf{H} is true is not greater than α , α is called the **level** of φ and such a test is called a **level α test**. We denote the set of all level α tests by $\Phi(\alpha)$, and $\sup_{\theta \in \omega_H} E_\theta(\varphi)$ is called the **size** of φ . To judge the merit of tests, we introduce a different hypothesis \mathbf{A} : The true value of θ belongs to $\omega_A \subset \Omega - \omega_H$. This is called an **alternative hypothesis**, or, for simplicity, an **alternative**. The errors of a test are divided into two kinds: errors owing to the rejection of the hypothesis \mathbf{H} when it is true, and errors owing to the acceptance of \mathbf{H} when it is false. The former are called **errors of the first kind**, and the latter, **errors of the second kind**. The probability $E_\theta(\varphi)$ of rejecting \mathbf{H} when $\theta \in \omega_A$, that is, the probability of the correct decision being made for $\theta \in \omega_A$, is called the **power** of a test or the **power function**. The probability of committing an error of the second kind is $1 - E_\theta(\varphi)$ for $\theta \in \omega_A$. A testing problem is indicated by the notation $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, \mathcal{P}, \omega_H, \omega_A)$. A test φ in a class $\Phi(\alpha)$ of tests is said to be **uniformly most powerful** in $\Phi(\alpha)$ (or **UMP** in $\Phi(\alpha)$) if for any

$\psi \in \Phi(\alpha)$, $E_\theta(\varphi) \geq E_\theta(\psi)$ for all $\theta \in \omega_A$. When ω_A consist of a single point, it is said to be **most powerful**.

B. The Neyman-Pearson Fundamental Lemma

Let μ be a σ -finite measure over $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B})$ and f_1, \dots, f_{n+1} be μ -integrable real-valued functions. If c_1, \dots, c_n are constants such that the set $\Phi(c_1, \dots, c_n)$ of test functions φ satisfying

$$\int \varphi f_i d\mu \leq c_i, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

is not empty, then there exists at least one test φ_0 in $\Phi(c_1, \dots, c_n)$ that maximizes $\int \varphi f_{n+1} d\mu$ among all φ in $\Phi(c_1, \dots, c_n)$. A test $\tilde{\varphi}$ is one of these tests if it satisfies the following two conditions:

(1) For appropriate constants $k_1, \dots, k_n \geq 0$,

$$\tilde{\varphi}(x) = \begin{cases} 1 & \text{when } f_{n+1}(x) > \sum_{i=1}^n k_i f_i(x), \\ 0 & \text{when } f_{n+1}(x) \leq \sum_{i=1}^n k_i f_i(x) \end{cases}$$

almost everywhere with respect to μ , and

(2) the equation

$$\int \tilde{\varphi} f_i d\mu = c_i, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n,$$

holds.

If (c_1, \dots, c_n) is an interior point of the subset

$$\mathbf{M} = \left\{ \left(\int \varphi f_1 d\mu, \dots, \int \varphi f_n d\mu \right) \mid \varphi \text{ is a test} \right\}$$

of the n -space \mathbf{R}^n and $\tilde{\varphi}$ satisfies (2) and maximizes $\int \varphi f_{n+1} d\mu$ among all φ in $\Phi(c_1, \dots, c_n)$, then $\tilde{\varphi}$ satisfies (1). These statements are called the **Neyman-Pearson lemma**.

As an illustration, suppose that $\Omega = (1, 2, \dots, n, n+1)$ and that $\{P_\theta \mid \theta \in \Omega\}$ is dominated by a σ -finite measure μ . Let $f_i(x)$ be the density of P_i with respect to μ . When ω_H is a finite set $\{1, \dots, n\}$ and ω_A consists of a single point $n+1$, then $\tilde{\varphi}$ satisfying (1) and (2) with $c_1 = \dots = c_n = \alpha$ is a uniformly most powerful level α test.

If \mathfrak{B} is generated by a countable number of sets, then there exists a most powerful level α test for any hypothesis against a simple alternative $\mathbf{A}: \theta = \tilde{\theta}$. A method of obtaining such a most powerful test is given in the **Lehman-Stein theorem**: Denote by f_θ the density function of P_θ with respect to a σ -finite measure μ , and define

$$h_\lambda(x) = \int_{\omega_H} f_\theta(x) d\lambda(\theta)$$

for a probability measure λ on ω_H . Consider testing the simple hypotheses \mathbf{H}_λ : The density

of distribution of the sample is h_λ , against the alternative $\mathbf{A}: \theta = \tilde{\theta}$, and let φ_λ be a most powerful level α test for this problem ($\mathbf{H}_\lambda: \mathbf{A}$). If $\sup_{\theta \in \omega_H} E_\theta(\varphi_\lambda) \leq \alpha$, φ_λ is a most powerful level α test for testing $\mathbf{H}: \theta \in \omega_H$ against $\mathbf{A}: \theta = \tilde{\theta}$. The measure λ satisfies $E_\theta(\varphi_\lambda) \geq E_\theta(\varphi_\lambda')$ for any probability measure λ' on ω_H and is called a **least favorable distribution**.

When the alternative hypothesis ω_A consists of more than one point, a uniformly most powerful test does not generally exist. However, if $\Omega = \mathbf{R}$, $\omega_H = (-\infty, \theta_0]$, $\omega_A = (\theta_0, \infty)$, and $f_\theta(x)$ is a density function with \dagger monotone likelihood ratio with respect to a statistic $T(x)$, then a UMP level α test $\varphi(x)$ exists and is defined by $\varphi(x) = 1$ if $T(x) > c$; $=$ a constant if $T(x) = c$; and $= 0$ if $T(x) < c$. For a one-parameter exponential family of distributions, there exists a UMP level α test for testing $\mathbf{H}: \omega_H = (-\infty, \theta_1] \cup [\theta_2, \infty)$ against $\mathbf{A}: \omega_A = (\theta_1, \theta_2)$ ($\theta_1 < \theta_2$). However, a UMP test does not exist for the problem obtained by interchanging the positions of ω_H and ω_A .

Since hypothesis-testing problems admitting UMP tests are rather rare, alternative ways for judging the merit of tests are needed, and two have been devised. The first is to restrict the class Φ of tests and to find a UMP test in this restricted class. The second is to introduce an alternative criterion of optimality and to select a test accordingly. The first is discussed in detail in Sections C, D, and E, and the second in Section F.

C. Unbiased Tests

The unbiasedness criterion is based on the idea that the probability of rejecting the hypothesis \mathbf{H} when it is true (the probability of an error of the first kind) should preferably be no larger than that of rejecting \mathbf{H} when it is false (the power). If a level α test φ satisfies $E_\theta(\varphi) \geq \alpha$ for $\theta \in \omega_A$, then φ is called an **unbiased level α test**. Let $\Phi_u(\alpha)$ be the set of all unbiased level α tests. A UMP test in $\Phi_u(\alpha)$ is called a **uniformly most powerful (or UMP) unbiased level α test**.

If P_θ is of the \dagger exponential family whose parameter space Ω is a finite or an infinite open interval of \mathbf{R}^k , then there exists a UMP unbiased level α test for the following two problems: (1) $\mathbf{H}: \theta_1 \leq a$, $\mathbf{A}: \theta_1 > a$, where θ_1 is the first coordinate of $\theta = (\theta_1, \dots, \theta_k)$; and (2) $\mathbf{H}: \theta_1 = a$, $\mathbf{A}: \theta_1 \neq a$. For example, when the sample is normally distributed with unknown mean μ and unknown variance σ^2 , the Student test (defined in Section G) for a hypothesis $\mathbf{H}: \mu = \mu_0$ against an alternative $\mathbf{A}: \mu \neq \mu_0$ is a UMP unbiased test.

D. Similar Tests and Neyman Structure

If $E_\theta(\varphi)$ is constant for all $\theta \in \omega$ ($\subset \Omega$), φ is called a **similar test** with respect to ω . If $E_\theta(\varphi)$ is a continuous function of θ , an unbiased test φ is similar with respect to the common boundary $\tilde{\omega}$ of ω_H and ω_A , provided that Ω is a topological space and the density function is continuous in ω . Therefore, in this case, unbiased tests are found in the class of all tests similar with respect to $\tilde{\omega}$. Let a statistic $y = T(x)$ be \dagger sufficient for $\mathcal{P}_\omega = \{P_\theta | \theta \in \omega\}$. A test φ is said to have **Neyman structure** with respect to T if the conditional expectation $E(\varphi | T(x) = y)$ of φ equals a constant $[\mathcal{P}_\omega]$. (For the notation $[\mathcal{P}_\omega] \rightarrow 396$ Statistic.) A test φ having Neyman structure with respect to the statistic $T(x)$ is similar with respect to ω . A test φ similar with respect to ω has Neyman structure with respect to $T(x)$ if and only if the family $\mathcal{Q} = \{Q_\theta = P_\theta T^{-1} | \theta \in \omega\}$ of \dagger marginal distributions of T is \dagger boundedly complete.

E. Invariant Tests

Consider groups G and \bar{G} of one-to-one transformations on \mathcal{X} and Ω , respectively. Suppose that each element of G is a measurable transformation of \mathcal{X} onto itself (i.e., $gB \in \mathfrak{B}$ for any $B \in \mathfrak{B}$) and that a homomorphism $g \rightarrow \bar{g}$ of G into \bar{G} is defined so that $P_\theta(g^{-1}B) = P_{\bar{g}\theta}(B)$. The hypothesis $H: \theta \in \omega_H$ and the alternative $A: \theta \in \omega_A$ are said to be **invariant** under G if $\bar{g}\omega_H = \omega_H$ and $\bar{g}\omega_A = \omega_A$ for all $g \in G$, and in this case the testing problem $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, \mathcal{P}, \omega_H, \omega_A)$ is said to be **invariant** under G . A test is called an **invariant test** if $\varphi(gx) = \varphi(x)$ for every $g \in G$, and $E_{\bar{g}\theta}(\varphi) = E_\theta(\varphi)$ holds for any invariant φ . Accordingly, if \bar{G} is \dagger transitive on ω_H , and invariant test is similar with respect to ω_H . If the sample space \mathcal{X} is a subset of \mathbf{R}^n that is invariant under the translation $(x_1, \dots, x_n) \rightarrow (x_1 + a, \dots, x_n + a)$ with a real a and if there exists a $\theta' = \bar{a} \cdot \theta \in \Omega$ such that $P_{\theta'}(B) = P_\theta(\{(x_1 - a, \dots, x_n - a) | (x_1, \dots, x_n) \in B\})$ for any $\theta \in \Omega$, then \bar{a} is a transformation on Ω . In this case the real number a is called a **location parameter**. Furthermore, if the sample space \mathcal{X} is a subset invariant under the similarity transformation $(x_1, \dots, x_n) \rightarrow (ax_1, \dots, ax_n)$ ($a > 0$) and if there exists a $\theta' = \bar{a} \cdot \theta \in \Omega$ such that $P_{\theta'}(B) = P_\theta(\{(x_1/a, \dots, x_n/a) | (x_1, \dots, x_n) \in B\})$ for any $\theta \in \Omega$, then the real number a is called a **scale parameter**. The **invariance principle** states that a test for a testing problem invariant under G should preferably be invariant under G . A test $\varphi(x)$ is called an **almost invariant test** if $\varphi(gx) = \varphi(x) [\mathcal{P}]$ for all $g \in G$.

Suppose that the testing problem of a hypothesis under consideration is invariant under a

transformation group G on the sample space \mathcal{X} . Denote the set of all invariant level α tests by $\Phi_I(\alpha)$. A test that is uniformly most powerful in $\Phi_I(\alpha)$ is called a **uniformly most powerful** (in short, **UMP**) **invariant level α test**. If there exists a unique UMP unbiased level α test φ^* , then a UMP invariant level α test (if it exists) coincides with $\varphi^*[\mathcal{P}]$. When $T(x)$ is \dagger maximal invariant under G , a necessary and sufficient condition for $\varphi(x)$ to be invariant is that φ be a function of $T(x)$.

For example, suppose that the sample $X = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ is taken from $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$ with unknown μ and σ^2 . In this situation, $Y = (\bar{X}, S)$ is a sufficient statistic, where $\bar{X} = \sum_i X_i/n$ and $S = \sqrt{\sum (X_i - \bar{X})^2}$. Let G be the group of transformations $(\bar{x}, s) \rightarrow (c\bar{x}, cs)$ ($c > 0$) on the range \mathcal{Y} of Y and \bar{G} be the group of transformations $(\mu, \sigma^2) \rightarrow (c\mu, c\sigma^2)$ ($c > 0$) on the parameter space. Both the hypotheses $H_1: \mu/\sigma^2 \leq 0$ and $H_2: \mu/\sigma^2 = 0$ are invariant under G . Since $t = \sqrt{n} \cdot \bar{x}/(s/\sqrt{n-1})$ is maximal invariant, any invariant level α test is in the class of functions of t . The Student test, defined in Section G, is UMP invariant under G .

F. Minimax Tests and Most Stringent Tests

Minimax tests and most stringent tests are sometimes used as alternatives to UMP tests. Suppose that $\mathcal{P} = \{P_\theta | \theta \in \Omega\}$ is a \dagger dominated family and \mathfrak{B} is generated by a countable number of sets. A level α test φ^* is called a **minimax level α test** if for any level α test φ ,

$$\inf_{\theta \in \omega_A} E_\theta(\varphi^*) \geq \inf_{\theta \in \omega_A} E_\theta(\varphi).$$

Such a test exists for any $\alpha \in (0, 1)$. If a group G of measurable transformations on \mathcal{X} leaves a testing problem invariant, then an intimate relation exists between the minimax property and invariance. Concerning this relation, we have the following theorem: For each $\alpha \in (0, 1)$ there is an almost invariant level α test that is minimax if there exists a σ -field \mathfrak{A} of subsets of G and a sequence $\{v_n\}$ of probability measures on (G, \mathfrak{A}) such that (i) $B \in \mathfrak{B}$ implies $\{(x, g) | gx \in B\} \in \mathfrak{B} \times \mathfrak{A}$; (ii) $A \in \mathfrak{A}$, $g \in G$ implies $Ag \in \mathfrak{A}$; and (iii) $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} |v_n(Ag) - v_n(A)| = 0$ for any $A \in \mathfrak{A}$ and $g \in G$. Fundamental in the invariant testing problem is the **Hunt-Stein lemma**: Under the condition just stated, for any φ there exists an almost invariant test ψ such that

$$\inf_{\bar{g} \in \bar{G}} E_{\bar{g}\theta}(\varphi) \leq E_\theta(\psi) \leq \sup_{\bar{g} \in \bar{G}} E_{\bar{g}\theta}(\varphi).$$

The following six types of transformation groups satisfy the condition of the theorem: (1) the group of translations on \mathbf{R}^n , (2) the group of similarity transformations on \mathbf{R}^n , (3) the

group of transformations $g=(a,b):(x_1,\dots,x_n)\in\mathbf{R}^n\rightarrow(ax_1+b,\dots,ax_n+b)\in\mathbf{R}^n$ ($0<a<\infty$, $-\infty<b<\infty$), (4) finite groups, (5) the group of orthogonal transformations on \mathbf{R}^n , and (6) the direct product of a finite number of the groups mentioned in (1)–(5).

We call $\beta_\alpha^*(\theta)=\sup_{\varphi\in\Phi(\alpha)}E_\theta(\varphi)$ an **envelope power function**, and $\varphi^*(\in\Phi(\alpha))$ is called a **most stringent level α test** if

$$\sup_{\theta\in\omega_A}(\beta_\alpha^*(\theta)-E_\theta(\varphi^*))\leq\sup_{\theta\in\omega_A}(\beta_\alpha^*(\theta)-E_\theta(\varphi))$$

for any $\varphi\in\Phi(\alpha)$. There exists a most stringent level α test for each $\alpha\in(0,1)$. If a testing problem is invariant under a transformation group G on X and G satisfies the condition in the Hunt-Stein lemma, then a uniformly most powerful invariant level α test is most stringent among the level α tests (\rightarrow 398 Statistical Decision Functions).

Admissibility of a test and completeness of a class of tests are defined with respect to the probability of an error of the second kind (\rightarrow 398 Statistical Decision Functions). The uniformly most powerful level α test and the uniformly most powerful unbiased level α test are admissible.

G. Useful Tests Concerning Normal Distributions (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 23)

In this section, we treat the rejection regions S that are commonly used in testing problems related to normal distributions. Let α be the level of S , and let $c(\alpha)$ and $d(\alpha)$ be positive numbers determined by α . In (1)–(5) below, the sample consists of n mutually independent random variables X_1,\dots,X_n each of which is assumed to be normally distributed with mean μ and variance σ^2 . For any sample point $x=(x_1,\dots,x_n)$, denote $\sum_{i=1}^n x_i/n$ by \bar{x} and $\sum_{i=1}^n (x_i-\bar{x})^2$ by s^2 . (1) To test the hypothesis $\mu\leq\mu_0$ against an alternative $\mu>\mu_0$, we can use as a critical region $S=\{x|t(x)>c(\alpha)\}$, where the test statistic $t(x)$ is given by $\sqrt{n}(\bar{x}-\mu_0)/\sqrt{s^2/(n-1)}$. (2) To test the hypothesis $\mu=\mu_0$ against an alternative $\mu\neq\mu_0$, we can use $S=\{x||t(x)|\geq c(\alpha)\}$ with the same test statistic $t(x)$ as in (1). These tests based on the statistic $t(x)$ are generally called **Student tests** or ***t*-tests**. (3) To test the hypothesis $\sigma^2=\sigma_0^2$ against the alternative $\sigma^2>\sigma_0^2$ with $\sigma_0^2>0$, we can use $S=\{x|\chi^2(x)\geq c(\alpha)\}$, where $\chi^2=s^2/\sigma_0^2$. (4) To test the hypothesis $\sigma^2>\sigma_0^2$ against the alternative $\sigma^2<\sigma_0^2$, we can use $S=\{x|\chi^2(x)\leq c(\alpha)\}$, where χ^2 is the same as in (3). (5) To test the hypothesis $\sigma^2=\sigma_0^2$ against $\sigma^2\neq\sigma_0^2$, we can use $S=\{x|\chi^2(x)\leq c(\alpha)\text{ or } \geq d(\alpha)\}$, where χ^2 is the same as in (3). Each of these tests based on the statistic χ^2 is called a **chi-square test**. Among

these tests, (3) is UMP and (1) is UMP when $\alpha\geq 1/2$. All tests (1)–(5) are UMP unbiased, and (3)–(5) are UMP invariant under the translations $(x_1,\dots,x_n)\rightarrow(x_1+a,\dots,x_n+a)$ ($-\infty<a<\infty$). Since (1) and (2) are also UMP invariant under the transformations $(x_1,\dots,x_n)\rightarrow(ax_1,\dots,ax_n)$ ($0<a<\infty$), they are most stringent tests.

Suppose that X_1,\dots,X_m are independently distributed according to $N(\mu_1,\sigma_1^2)$ and that Y_1,\dots,Y_n are independently distributed according to $N(\mu_2,\sigma_2^2)$, where μ_1,μ_2,σ_1 , and σ_2 are assumed unknown unless otherwise stated. Here we give the important tests for $\mu_1,\mu_2,\sigma_1^2,\sigma_2^2$. Let $x=(x_1,\dots,x_m)$ and $y=(y_1,\dots,y_n)$ be sample points in \mathbf{R}^m and \mathbf{R}^n , respectively, and denote $\sum_{i=1}^m x_i/m$, $\sum_{i=1}^n y_i/n$, $\sum_{i=1}^m (x_i-\bar{x})^2$, and $\sum_{i=1}^n (y_i-\bar{y})^2$ by \bar{x} , \bar{y} , s_x^2 , and s_y^2 , respectively. (6) Assume that σ_1 and σ_2 are known, and consider a hypothesis $\mu_1=\mu_2$. When an alternative $\mu_1>\mu_2$ ($\mu_1\neq\mu_2$) is taken, we can use as a critical region $S=\{(x,y)|T(x,y)\geq c(\alpha)\}$ ($S=\{(x,y)||T(x,y)|\geq c(\alpha)\}$), where $T(x,y)=(\bar{x}-\bar{y})/\sqrt{\sigma_1^2/m+\sigma_2^2/n}$. These tests are both UMP unbiased and invariant under the translations $(x_1,\dots,x_m,y_1,\dots,y_n)\rightarrow(x_1+a,\dots,x_m+a,y_1+a,\dots,y_n+a)$. (7) Assume that $\sigma_1=\sigma_2$, and consider a hypothesis $\mu_1=\mu_2$. When $\mu_1\neq\mu_2$ ($\mu_1>\mu_2$) is the alternative, $S=\{(x,y)||T(x,y)|\geq c(\alpha)\}$ ($S=\{(x,y)|T(x,y)>c(\alpha)\}$) can be used as a critical region, where $T(x,y)=(\bar{x}-\bar{y})\sqrt{m+n-2}/(\sqrt{1/m+1/n}\sqrt{s_x^2+s_y^2})$. Both tests are UMP unbiased and are invariant under $(x_1,\dots,x_m,y_1,\dots,y_n)\rightarrow(ax_1+b,\dots,ax_m+b,ay_1+b,\dots,ay_n+b)$ ($-\infty<b<\infty,0<a<\infty$). (8) Testing the hypothesis **H**: $\mu_1=\mu_2$ is called the **Behrens-Fisher problem**. Note that nothing is assumed about the relation of the variances σ_1^2 and σ_2^2 of the two samples X and Y , in contrast to (7). It is difficult to construct a statistic whose distribution is independent of σ_1^2 and σ_2^2 when **H** is true. Compare this with (1)–(7), where the proposed statistics have this property and are used to construct similar critical regions S . The critical region

$$\{(x,y)|(\bar{x}-\bar{y})/\sqrt{s_x^2/m(m-1)+s_y^2/n(n-1)}\geq f(s_y^2/s_x^2)\},$$

with an appropriately chosen f , is similar to such a region S . This test is called **Welch's test**.

(9) For a hypothesis $\sigma_1=\sigma_2$, we can use as a critical region $S=\{(x,y)|F(x,y)\leq c(\alpha)\}$, $S=\{(x,y)|F(x,y)\geq c(\alpha)\}$, or $S=\{(x,y)|F(x,y)\geq d(\alpha)\text{ or } <c(\alpha)\}$, when $\sigma_1<\sigma_2$, $\sigma_2<\sigma_1$, or $\sigma_1\neq\sigma_2$, respectively, is taken as alternative, where $F(x,y)=(n-1)s_x^2/(m-1)s_y^2$. All these tests are UMP unbiased and are invariant under the transformations $(x_1,\dots,x_m,y_1,\dots,y_n)\rightarrow(ax_1+b,\dots,ax_m+b,ay_1+b,\dots,ay_n+b)$ ($-\infty<$

$b < \infty, 0 < a < \infty$). A test based on $F(x, y)$ is called an F -test.

H. Linear Hypotheses

Let X_1, \dots, X_n be independent and distributed according to $N(\mu_i, \sigma^2)$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$), where $\mu_1, \mu_2, \dots, \mu_s$ ($s < n$), σ are assumed to be unknown and $\mu_i = 0$ ($s < i \leq n$). The hypothesis is $\mathbf{H}: \mu_1 = \mu_2 = \dots = \mu_r = 0$ ($r \leq s$), and the alternative hypothesis is that at least one $\mu_i, 1 \leq i \leq r$, does not vanish. The critical region $S = \{(x_1, \dots, x_n) | F(x_1, \dots, x_r; x_{s+1}, \dots, x_n) = \sum_{i=1}^r x_i^2 / \sum_{i=s+1}^n x_i^2 \geq c(\alpha)\}$ is a UMP unbiased test for this problem, and S is invariant under the group g_1 of translations

$$(x_1, \dots, x_r, x_{r+1}, \dots, x_s, x_{s+1}, \dots, x_n) \\ \rightarrow (x_1, \dots, x_r, x_{r+1} + a, \dots, x_s + a, x_{s+1}, \dots, x_n),$$

the group g_2 of similarity transformations $(x_1, \dots, x_n) \rightarrow (cx_1, \dots, cx_n)$, the group $g_3 = O(r)$ of orthogonal transformations in $\mathbf{R}^r = \{(x_1, \dots, x_r)\}$, the group $g_4 = O(n-s)$ of orthogonal transformations in $\mathbf{R}^{n-s} = \{(x_{s+1}, \dots, x_n)\}$, and finite products of elements of the groups g_1, g_2, g_3 , and g_4 . This test is also a kind of F -test. More generally, let us denote $\mathbf{X} = (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_n)'$ and assume that it is expressed as

$$\mathbf{X} = A\xi + \mathbf{W}, \quad \mathbf{W} = (W_1, W_2, \dots, W_n)', \quad (1)$$

where $\xi = (\xi_1, \xi_2, \dots, \xi_s)'$, $s \leq n$ is a vector of unknown parameters and A a matrix of known constants, and W_1, W_2, \dots, W_n are distributed independently according to the normal distribution with mean θ and variance σ^2 . Then a **general linear hypothesis** is a hypothesis stating that the vector ξ lies within a linear subspace M of \mathbf{R}^s . The set of points $A\xi$ with ξ satisfying a linear hypothesis \mathbf{H} is the linear subspace $L(B)$ of $L(A)$ spanned by the column vectors of an $n \times k_1$ matrix B . Assume, for example, that the dimension of $L(B)$ (=the rank of B) is $s-r$. Let C be an $n \times k_2$ matrix whose column vectors span the orthocomplement $L_A^\perp(B)$ of the space $L(B)$ with respect to the space $L(A)$. Then the model (1) can be written as

$$\mathbf{X} = B\eta + C\zeta + \mathbf{W}, \quad E(\mathbf{W}) = \mathbf{0}, \quad (2)$$

with a k_1 -vector η and a k_2 -vector ζ , and hence the hypothesis \mathbf{H} is represented by $\zeta = \mathbf{0}'$. We denote by $\mathbf{Y} = P_A \mathbf{X}$ the projection of \mathbf{X} onto the space $L(A)$ and by \mathbf{Z} the projection $P_B \mathbf{X}$ of \mathbf{X} onto the space $L(B)$. The quantity $Q_H = \mathbf{X}'(P_A - P_B)\mathbf{X}$ equals the square of the length of the vector $\mathbf{Y} - \mathbf{Z}$ and represents the sum of squares of residuals for the hypothesis \mathbf{H} . The error mean square $\hat{\sigma}^2 = \mathbf{X}'(I - P_A)\mathbf{X}/(n-s) = Q_e/(n-s)$ and also $\hat{\sigma}_H^2 = Q_H/r$ under \mathbf{H} are unbiased estimators of σ^2 .

Assume that $B'C = 0$. Let U be an orthogonal transformation in \mathbf{R}^n such that the first, \dots, r th, $(s+1)$ st, \dots, n th rows of UB and the $(s+1)$ st, \dots, n th rows of UC are all equal to zero vectors. Using the notation $\tilde{\mathbf{X}} = U\mathbf{X}$, $\tilde{\eta} = UB\eta$, $\tilde{\zeta} = UC\zeta$, and $\tilde{\mathbf{W}} = U\mathbf{W}$, we obtain the **canonical form** $\tilde{\mathbf{X}} = \tilde{\eta} + \tilde{\zeta} + \tilde{\mathbf{W}}$ of the model (2). $\tilde{\mathbf{W}}$ is also a vector of independently and identically distributed normal random variables. The hypothesis \mathbf{H} is expressed as $\tilde{\zeta} = \mathbf{0}$. In this model, we have $E(\tilde{X}_i) = 0$ for $i = s+1, \dots, n$, and moreover, $E(\tilde{X}_i) = 0$ for $i = 1, \dots, r, s+1, \dots, n$ if and only if \mathbf{H} is true.

The least squares estimator \mathbf{Y} of $A\xi$ is the \dagger maximum likelihood estimator, and $\mathbf{X} - \mathbf{Y}$, $\mathbf{Y} - \mathbf{Z}$, \mathbf{Z} are distributed independently according to the n -variate normal distributions $N(\mathbf{0}, \sigma^2(I - P_A))$, $N((P_A - P_B)C\zeta, \sigma^2(P_A - P_B))$, and $N(B\eta + P_B C\zeta, \sigma^2 P_B)$, respectively. Hence Q/σ^2 , Q_H/σ^2 , and $\mathbf{X}'P_B \mathbf{X}/\sigma^2$ are distributed independently according to the \dagger noncentral χ^2 -distributions with $n-s$, r , and $s-r$ degrees of freedom and \dagger noncentrality parameters 0 , $\zeta'C(P_A - P_B)C\zeta/\sigma^2$, and $(B\eta + P_B C\zeta)'(B\eta + P_B C\zeta)/\sigma^2$, respectively. The \dagger likelihood ratio test of the hypothesis \mathbf{H} has a critical region $\hat{\sigma}_H^2/\hat{\sigma}^2 > c$, is a \dagger uniformly most powerful invariant test with respect to the group of linear transformations leaving the hypothesis \mathbf{H} invariant, and is the \dagger most stringent test. This test is also uniformly most powerful among the tests whose \dagger power function has a single variable $\zeta'C(P_A - P_B)C\zeta/\sigma^2$. Furthermore, for $s-r=1$, this test is a \dagger uniformly most powerful unbiased test. In the decomposition $\mathbf{X}'\mathbf{X} = \mathbf{X}'(P_A - P_B)\mathbf{X} + \mathbf{X}'P_B \mathbf{X} + \mathbf{X}'(I - P_A)\mathbf{X} = Q_H + Q_B + Q_e$ the terms Q_H and Q_e are called the sum of squares due to the hypothesis and due to the error, respectively. Such a process of decomposition is called the analysis of variance and its result is summarized in the analysis of variance table (Table 1).

I. The Likelihood Ratio Test

The likelihood ratio test is comparatively easy to construct. Let $L(x_1, \dots, x_n; \theta)$ be the \dagger likelihood function. Then

$$\Lambda(x_1, \dots, x_n) = \frac{\sup_{\theta \in \omega_H} L(x_1, \dots, x_n; \theta)}{\sup_{\theta \in \omega_H \cup \omega_A} L(x_1, \dots, x_n; \theta)}$$

is called the **likelihood ratio**, and the test corresponding to the critical region $S = \{(x_1, \dots, x_n) | \Lambda(x_1, \dots, x_n) \leq c_\alpha\}$ is called the **likelihood ratio test**, where c_α is a positive constant determined by the level α . Let $\hat{\theta}_H(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ and $\hat{\theta}_{H \vee A}(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ be the \dagger maximum likelihood estimators for θ in ω_H and in $\omega_H \cup \omega_A$, respectively; that is, $L(x; \hat{\theta}_H(x)) = \sup_{\theta \in \omega_H} L(x; \theta)$ and $L(x; \hat{\theta}_{H \vee A}(x)) = \sup_{\theta \in \omega_H \cup \omega_A} L(x; \theta)$. Then

Table 1

Factor	Sum of Squares	Degrees of Freedom	Mean Square	Ratio of Variances
H	$Q_H = \mathbf{X}'(P_A - P_B)\mathbf{X}$	r	$\hat{\sigma}_H^2 = Q_H/r$	$\hat{\sigma}_H^2/\hat{\sigma}^2$
B	$Q_B = \mathbf{X}'P_B\mathbf{X}$	$s - r$	$\hat{\sigma}_B^2/(s - r)$	
Error	$Q_e = \mathbf{X}'(I - P_A)\mathbf{X}$	$n - s$	$\hat{\sigma}^2 = Q_e/(n - s)$	
Total	$\mathbf{X}'\mathbf{X}$	n		

$$\Lambda(x) = \frac{L(x; \hat{\theta}_H)}{L(x; \hat{\theta}_{H \vee A})}.$$

The F -test for a linear hypothesis is a likelihood ratio test, and other examples of the likelihood ratio test are shown in Appendix A, Table 23. However, the likelihood ratio test does not necessarily have the desirable properties stated in the preceding sections.

J. Complete Classes

The set of critical regions of the type $\{x|T(x) > c\}$ for the problems $\mathbf{H}: \theta \leq \theta_0$ and $\mathbf{A}: \theta > \theta_0$, where the distribution family \mathcal{P} of the statistic T is of $^+\text{P}\acute{o}$ lya type 2 in the strict sense, and the set of regions of the type $\{x|c < T(x) < d\}$ for the problem $\mathbf{H}: \theta_1 \leq \theta \leq \theta_2$ and $\mathbf{A}: \theta < \theta_1$ or $\theta_2 < \theta$, where the distribution family \mathcal{P} of the statistic T is of $^+\text{P}\acute{o}$ lya type 3 in the strict sense, are examples of minimal complete classes [6]. It has been proved under a mild condition that the set of all tests with convex critical regions is essentially complete when the underlying distributions are of exponential type and the null hypothesis is simple.

Let $P_{\theta_i} \in \mathcal{P}$ ($i = 0, 1$) and let \mathfrak{B}_0 be a σ -subalgebra of \mathfrak{B} . \mathfrak{B}_0 is sufficient for \mathfrak{B} w.r.t. $\{P_{\theta_0}, P_{\theta_1}\}$ if and only if the class of all \mathfrak{B}_0 -measurable test functions is essentially complete, i.e. iff for every critical region $B \in \mathfrak{B}$ there exists a \mathfrak{B}_0 -measurable test function φ_0 such that $E_{\theta_0}(\varphi_0) \leq E_{\theta_0}(\chi_B)$ and $E_{\theta_1}(\varphi_0) \geq E_{\theta_1}(\chi_B)$. Assume that $\mathcal{P} = \{P_\theta | \theta \in \Theta\}$ is dominated; if for every \mathfrak{B} -measurable test function φ there exists a \mathfrak{B}_0 -measurable test function ψ such that $E_\theta(\psi) = E_\theta(\varphi)$ for all $\theta \in \Theta$, then \mathfrak{B}_0 is sufficient for \mathfrak{B} w.r.t. \mathcal{P} [9, 10] (\rightarrow 398 Statistical Decision Functions D, 399 Statistical Estimation E).

K. Asymptotic Theory

Let $(\mathcal{X}_v, \mathfrak{B}_v, P_{v\theta})$ ($v = 1, 2, \dots, n$) be a sequence of probability spaces, where the parameter space Ω is common to all v . Let $(\mathcal{X}^{(n)}, \mathfrak{B}^{(n)}, P_\theta^{(n)})$ be the direct product probability space of $(\mathcal{X}_v, \mathfrak{B}_v, P_{v\theta})$ for $v = 1, 2, \dots, n$. For each sample space $(\mathcal{X}^{(n)}, \mathfrak{B}^{(n)}, P_\theta^{(n)})$, denote a test function for $\mathbf{H}: \theta \in \omega_H (\subset \Omega)$ and $\mathbf{A}: \theta \in \omega_A (\subset \Omega - \omega_H)$ by $\varphi_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)$. A sequence $\{\varphi_n\}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) is often

called a test. For example, a likelihood ratio test is frequently understood as a sequence of tests $S_n = \{(x_1, \dots, x_n) | \Lambda_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) \leq \lambda_n\}$, where $\{\lambda_n\}$ is a sequence of constants and $\Lambda_n(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is the likelihood ratio defined by $(\mathcal{X}^{(n)}, \mathfrak{B}^{(n)}, P_\theta^{(n)})$ and ω_H . If a test $\{\varphi_n\}$ satisfies $E_\theta(\varphi_n) \rightarrow 0$ ($\theta \in \omega_H$) and $E_\theta(\varphi_n) \rightarrow 1$ ($\theta \in \omega_A$) as $n \rightarrow \infty$, $\{\varphi_n\}$ is said to be a **consistent test**. If these convergences are uniform with respect to θ , $\{\varphi_n\}$ is said to be a **uniformly consistent test**. When a uniformly consistent test exists, ω_H and ω_A are said to be **finitely distinguishable**. Suppose that the observed values are identically distributed (that is, $(\mathcal{X}_v, \mathfrak{B}_v, P_{v\theta})$ is a copy of a probability space $(\mathcal{X}, \mathfrak{B}, P_\theta)$) and ω_H and ω_A are both compact with respect to the metric $\rho(\theta, \theta') = \sup_{B \in \mathfrak{B}} |P_\theta(B) - P_{\theta'}(B)|$. In this case, ω_H and ω_A are finitely distinguishable if $E_\theta(\varphi)$ is a continuous function of θ for any φ [4]. Kakutani's theorem (\rightarrow 398 Statistical Decision Functions) is regarded as a proposition concerning distinguishability when the null hypothesis and the alternative are both simple.

The following result about the limit distribution of a likelihood ratio is due to H. Chernoff [3]: Let $\mathcal{X}^{(n)}$ be an n -space and Ω be an open subset of \mathbf{R}^k containing the origin 0. Suppose that the observed random variables are independent and distributed according to a density $f(x, \theta)$; that is, the likelihood function $L(x; \theta)$ is $\prod_{i=1}^n f(x_i, \theta)$. Moreover, assume the following regularity conditions:

- (1) $\log f(x, \theta)$ is three-times differentiable with respect to θ at every point of the closure of some neighborhood N of $\theta = 0$.
- (2) There exist an integrable function F and a measurable function H such that (i) $|\partial f / \partial \theta_i| < F(x)$ for every $\theta \in N$; (ii) $|\partial^2 f / \partial \theta_i \partial \theta_j| < F(x)$ for every $\theta \in N$; (iii) $|\partial^3 \log f / \partial \theta_i \partial \theta_j \partial \theta_m| < H(x)$; and (iv) $\sup_\theta E_\theta(H(x)) < \infty$.

- (3) For every $i, j = 1, 2, \dots, k$, we have $J_\theta^{ij} = E_\theta[(\partial \log f / \partial \theta_i)(\partial \log f / \partial \theta_j)] < \infty$, and the matrix $J_\theta = (J_\theta^{ij})$ is positive definite for all $\theta \in N$. Let $P(x_1, \dots, x_n; \omega) = \sup_{\theta \in \omega} L(x_1, \dots, x_n; \theta)$ for a subset ω of Ω . Consider testing a hypothesis $\theta \in \omega_H$ against an alternative $\theta \in \omega_A$, where 0 is an accumulation point of ω_H . If $\lambda^*(x_1, \dots, x_n) = P(x_1, \dots, x_n; \omega_H) / P(x_1, \dots, x_n; \omega_A)$, λ^* plays essentially the same role as the likelihood ratio λ and hence can be used in its place. We call a subset C of Ω a cone if $\theta \in C$ implies $a\theta \in C$ for

any $a > 0$. A subset ω of Ω is said to be approximated by C if ω satisfies $\inf_{x \in C} \|x - y\| = o(\|y\|)$ for all $y \in \omega$ and $\inf_{y \in \omega} \|x - y\| = o(\|x\|)$ for all $x \in C$ around the origin, where $\|x\|^2 = \sum_{i=1}^n x_i^2$. Suppose that ω_H and ω_A are approximated by two cones C_H and C_A , respectively. Then, setting $z_n = \sqrt{n} J_0^{-1} A(x)$ with

$$A(x) = \left[\frac{1}{n} \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \frac{\partial \log f(x_\alpha, 0)}{\partial \theta_1}, \dots, \frac{1}{n} \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \frac{\partial \log f(x_\alpha, 0)}{\partial \theta_k} \right]^T,$$

the limit distribution of $-2 \log \lambda^*$, when $\theta = 0$, coincides with that of $\inf_{\theta \in C_H} (z_n - \theta)' J_0 (z_n - \theta) - \inf_{\theta \in C_A} (z_n - \theta)' J_0 (z_n - \theta)$. In particular, when $\Omega = \mathbf{R}^k$ and $\omega_H = \{(\theta_1^0, \dots, \theta_s^0, \theta_{s+1}, \dots, \theta_k) \mid -\infty < \theta_i < \infty, i = s+1, \dots, k\}$ and some regularity conditions are assumed, the limit distribution of $-2 \log \lambda^*$ is the χ^2 -distribution with s degrees of freedom if the hypothesis is true.

The asymptotic behavior of the chi-square test of goodness of fit is also very important. Suppose that (X_1, \dots, X_k) has a multinomial distribution $n!(x_1! \dots x_k!)^{-1} p_1^{x_1} \dots p_k^{x_k} (\sum_{i=1}^k x_i = n, x_i \geq 0)$, and consider testing $\mathbf{H}: p_1 = p_1^0, \dots, p_k = p_k^0$. The **chi-square test of goodness of fit** has a critical region of the type $\{x \mid \chi^2(x_1, \dots, x_k) \geq c\}$, where $\chi^2(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ is $\sum_{i=1}^k ((x_i - np_i^0)^2 / np_i^0)$, i.e., the weighted sum of the squares of the differences between the value p_i^0 of p_i and the maximum likelihood estimator x_i/n of p_i . The limit distribution of $\chi^2(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ when $p_i = p_i^0, i = 1, 2, \dots, k$, is the chi-square distribution with $k - 1$ degrees of freedom.

Suppose moreover that k functions $p_i(\theta)$ ($i = 1, \dots, k; s < k$) of $\theta \in \mathbf{R}^s$ are given and that the hypothesis to be tested is that the sample has been drawn from a population having a distribution determined by $\mathbf{H}: p_i = p_i(\theta)$ ($i = 1, \dots, k; s < k$) for some value of θ . In this case the chi-square test of goodness of fit could be applied after replacing the parameter θ in $p_i = p_i(\theta)$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$) by the solutions $\tilde{\theta}_n(x_1, \dots, x_k)$ of the system of equations of the **modified minimum chi-square method**,

$$\sum_{i=1}^k \frac{x_i - np_i}{p_i} \frac{\partial p_i}{\partial \theta_j} = 0$$

($j = 1, \dots, s$). Suppose that (1) $p_i(\theta) > c^2 > 0$ ($i = 1, \dots, k$) and $\sum_{i=1}^k p_i(\theta) = 1$; (2) $p_i(\theta)$ is twice continuously differentiable with respect to the coordinates of θ ; and (3) the rank of the matrix $(\partial p_i / \partial \theta_j)$ is k . Then the system of equations above has a unique solution $\theta = \tilde{\theta}_n(x_1, \dots, x_k)$, and $\tilde{\theta}_n$ converges in probability to θ_0 when $\theta = \theta_0$. The asymptotic distribution of $\chi^2(x) = \sum_{i=1}^k ((x_i - np_i(\tilde{\theta}_n))^2 / np_i(\tilde{\theta}_n))$ is the chi-square distribution with $n - s - 1$ degrees of freedom

[5]. For the test of goodness of fit, the empirical distribution function may also be used (\rightarrow 371 Robust and Nonparametric Methods).

A test of independence by contingency tables is one application of the chi-square test of goodness of fit. We suppose that n individuals are classified according to two categories A and B , where A has r ranks A_1, A_2, \dots, A_r and B has s ranks B_1, B_2, \dots, B_s . Let p_i, p_j, p_{ij} be the probabilities that the observed value of an individual belongs to $A_i, B_j, A_i \cap B_j$, respectively. Let x_i, x_j, x_{ij} be the numbers of individuals belonging to A_i, B_j , and $A_i \cap B_j$, respectively. Table 2 is called a **contingency table**. To test the null hypothesis \mathbf{H} that the divisions of A and B into their ranks are independent, that is, $\mathbf{H}: p_{ij} = p_i p_j$, the statistic $\chi^2 = \sum_{i=1}^r \sum_{j=1}^s (x_{ij} - x_i x_j / n)^2 / (x_i x_j / n)$ is applied. When \mathbf{H} is true, χ^2 is asymptotically distributed according to the chi-square distribution with $(r - 1)(s - 1)$ degrees of freedom as $n \rightarrow \infty$.

Likelihood ratio tests and chi-square tests of goodness of fit are consistent tests under conditions stated in their respective descriptions. In general, there are many consistent tests for a problem. Therefore it is necessary to consider another criterion that has to be satisfied by the best test among consistent tests. Pitman's asymptotic relative efficiency is such a criterion. Other notions of efficiency have also been introduced.

A completely specified form of distribution is rather exceptional in applications. More often we encounter cases where distribution of the sample belongs in a large domain. Various tests independent of the functional form of distribution have been proposed, and the asymptotic theory plays an important role in those cases (\rightarrow 371 Robust and Nonparametric Methods).

The following concept of asymptotic efficiency is due to R. R. Bahadur [11]: Let $\{T_n\}$ be a sequence of real-valued statistics defined on $\mathcal{X}^{(n)}$. $\{T_n\}$ is said to be a standard sequence (for testing \mathbf{H}) if the following three conditions are satisfied.

(I) There exists a continuous probability distribution function F such that for each $\theta \in \omega_H, \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_\theta^{(n)}\{T_n < t\} = F(t)$ for every $t \in \mathbf{R}^1$.

Table 2. Contingency Table

	B_1	B_2	\dots	B_s	Total
A_1	x_{11}	x_{12}	\dots	x_{1s}	$x_{1\cdot}$
A_2	x_{21}	x_{22}	\dots	x_{2s}	$x_{2\cdot}$
\vdots	\vdots	\vdots	\vdots	\vdots	\vdots
A_r	x_{r1}	x_{r2}	\dots	x_{rs}	$x_{r\cdot}$
Total	$x_{\cdot 1}$	$x_{\cdot 2}$	\dots	$x_{\cdot s}$	n

(II) There exists a constant a , $0 < a < \infty$, such that $\log\{1 - F(t)\} = -(at^2/2)\{1 + o(1)\}$ as $t \rightarrow \infty$.

(III) There exists a function $b(\theta)$ on $\Omega - \omega_H$ with $0 < b(\theta) < \infty$ such that for each $\theta \in \Omega - \omega_H$,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} P_{\theta}^{(n)}\{|(T_n/n^{1/2}) - b(\theta)| > t\} = 0$$

for every $t > 0$.

Suppose that $\{T_n\}$ is a standard sequence. Then T_n has the asymptotic distribution F if **H** is satisfied, but otherwise $T_n \rightarrow \infty$ in probability. Consequently, large values of T_n are significant when T_n is regarded as a test statistic for **H**. Accordingly, for any given $x \in \mathcal{X}^{(n)}$, $1 - F(T_n(x))$ is called the critical level in terms of T_n , and is regarded as a random variable defined on $\mathcal{X}^{(n)}$ [1]. It is convenient to describe the behavior of this random variable as $n \rightarrow \infty$ in terms of K_n , where $K_n(x) = -2 \log[1 - F(T_n(x))]$. Then for each $\theta \in \omega_H$, K_n is asymptotically distributed as a chi-square variable χ_2^2 with 2 degrees of freedom and for $\theta \in \Omega - \omega_H$, $K_n/n \rightarrow ab^2(\theta)$ in probability as $n \rightarrow \infty$. The asymptotic slope of the test based on $\{T_n\}$ (or simply the slope of $\{T_n\}$) is defined to be $c(\theta) = ab^2(\theta)$. Note that the statistic $K_n^{1/2}$ is equivalent to T_n in the following technical sense: (i) $\{K_n^{1/2}\}$ is a standard sequence; (ii) for each $\theta \in \Omega$, the slope of $\{K_n^{1/2}\}$ equals that of $\{T_n\}$; and (iii) for any given n and x , the critical level in terms of $K_n^{1/2}$ equals the critical level in terms of T_n . Since the critical level of $K_n^{1/2}$ is found by substituting $K_n^{1/2}$ into the function representing the upper tail of a fixed distribution independent of F , $\{K_n^{1/2}\}$ is a normalized version of $\{T_n\}$. Suppose that $\{T_n^{(1)}\}$ and $\{T_n^{(2)}\}$ are two standard sequences defined on $\mathcal{X}^{(n)}$, and let $F^{(i)}(x)$, a_i , and $b_i(\theta)$ be the functions and constants prescribed by conditions (I)–(III) for $i = 1, 2$. Consider an arbitrary but fixed θ in $\Omega - \omega_H$, and suppose that x is distributed according to P_{θ} . The asymptotic efficiency of $\{T_n^{(1)}\}$ relative to $\{T_n^{(2)}\}$ is defined to be $\varphi_{12}(\theta) = c_1(\theta)/c_2(\theta)$, where $c_i(\theta) = a_i b_i^2(\theta)$ is the slope of $\{T_n^{(i)}\}$, $i = 1, 2$. The asymptotic efficiency is called **Bahadur efficiency**.

Several comparisons of standard sequences are given in [11]. The relationship between Bahadur efficiency and Pitman efficiency for hypothesis-testing problems has also been studied. Under suitable conditions the two efficiencies coincide.

L. Sequential Tests

Let X_1, X_2, \dots be a given sequence of random variables. To test a hypothesis concerning the distributions of these variables (sample sizes are not predetermined), we observe first X_1 ,

400 Ref.

Statistical Hypothesis Testing

then X_2 , etc. At each stage a decision is made on the basis of the previously obtained data whether the observation should be stopped and a judgment made on the acceptability of the hypothesis. Such a test is called a **sequential test**. Let X_1, X_2, \dots be independent and identically distributed by $f_{\theta}(x)$. For testing a simple hypothesis **H**: $\theta = 0$ against a simple alternative **A**: $\theta = 1$, we have the **sequential probability ratio test**: Let $G_n(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n) = \prod_{i=1}^n f_1(x_i) / \prod_{i=1}^n f_0(x_i)$, and preassign two constants $a_0 < a_1$. After the observations of X_1, \dots, X_n are performed, the next random variable X_{n+1} is observed if $a_0 < G_n(x_1, \dots, x_n) < a_1$. Otherwise the experiment is stopped, and we accept **H** when $G_n \leq a_0$ or accept **A** when $a_1 \leq G_n$. The constants a_0 and a_1 are determined by the desired probabilities α_1 and α_2 of errors of the first and second kind, respectively. It is known that, among the class of sequential tests in which the probability of error of the first (second) kind is not greater than α_0 (α_1), the sequential probability ratio test minimizes the expected number of observations when either **H** or **A** is true (\rightarrow 398 Statistical Decision Functions; 404 Statistical Quality Control).

References

- [1] E. L. Lehmann, Testing statistical hypotheses, Wiley, 1959.
- [2] A. Wald, Sequential analysis, Wiley, 1947.
- [3] H. Chernoff, On the distribution of the likelihood ratio, Ann. Math. Statist., 25 (1954), 573–578.
- [4] W. Hoeffding and J. Wolfowitz, Distinguishability of sets of distributions, Ann. Math. Statist., 29 (1958), 700–718.
- [5] M. G. Kendall and A. Stuart, The advanced theory of statistics II, Griffin, 1961.
- [6] S. Karlin, Decision theory for Pólya type distributions, Case of two actions I, Proc. 3rd Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. I, Univ. of California Press (1956), 115–128.
- [7] A. Birnbaum, Characterizations of complete classes of tests of some multiparametric hypotheses, with applications to likelihood ratio tests, Ann. Math. Statist., 26 (1955), 21–36.
- [8] H. Cramér, Mathematical methods of statistics, Princeton Univ. Press, 1946.
- [9] K. Takeuchi and M. Akahira, Characterizations of prediction sufficiency (adequacy) in terms of risk functions, Ann. Statist., 3 (1975), 1018–1024.
- [10] J. Pfanzagl, A characterization of sufficiency by power functions, Metrika, 21 (1974), 197–199.

[11] R. R. Bahadur, Stochastic comparison of tests, *Ann. Math. Statist.*, 31 (1960), 276–295.

401 (XVIII.2) Statistical Inference

A. The Statistical Model

Broadly and loosely speaking, the term “statistical inference” may imply any procedure for drawing conclusions from statistical data. But now it is usually understood more rigorously to mean those procedures based upon a probabilistic model of the data to obtain conclusions concerning the unknown parameters of the population that represents the probabilistic model by viewing the observed data as a random sample extracted from the population.

As the simplest example, suppose that, for some system, we have a number of observations from repeated measurements or experiments under a supposedly uniform condition. If we can assume that there are no systematic trends or tendencies involved, we can suppose that the variations among repeated observations are due to random causes and assume that the observed values X_1, X_2, \dots are independently and identically distributed random variables. Our purpose in making observations is to draw some information from the data, that is, to make some judgment on an unknown system quantity θ , which together with some other quantity (quantities) η characterizing the measurement or the experiment, determines the distribution of the X_i . We assume that the distribution has a density function $f(x; \theta, \eta)$. This amounts to assuming that the observed values X_1, X_2, \dots are a sample randomly drawn from a hypothetical population of the results of the measurements or experiments supposedly continued indefinitely. Then the problem of statistical inference is one of making some judgment based on the random sample. The set of hypotheses postulating the distribution of the observed values is called the probabilistic model of the observations, and the problem of determining a model in a specific situation is called that of **specification**.

B. Bayesian and Non-Bayesian Approaches

There are two different ways to make inferences on the population parameters: the **Bayesian approach** and the **non-Bayesian approach**.

In the Bayesian approach it is assumed that we have some probability density $\pi(\theta, \eta)$ for

the parameters θ and η . Then, given the observations $X_1 = x_1, X_2 = x_2, \dots$, the conditional probability density for θ and η is given by

$$\tilde{P}(\theta, \eta | x_1, x_2, \dots) = \frac{\prod f(x_i; \theta, \eta) \pi(\theta, \eta)}{\iint \prod f(x_i; \theta, \eta) \pi(\theta, \eta) d\theta d\eta}.$$

π is called the **prior density** and \tilde{p} the **posterior density** for the parameters. Then all the information obtained from the sample is considered to be contained in the **posterior distribution** with the density $\tilde{p}(\theta, \eta)$, and conclusions on the parameters can be drawn from it.

The prior density $\pi(\theta, \eta)$ does not necessarily represent a frequency function of a population of which the parameters are a random sample, but in most cases treated by the Bayesian approach it is considered to be a summary of the statistician's judgment over relative possibilities of the different values of the parameters based on all the information obtained before the observations are made. Bayesians claim that it is always possible to determine such a **prior distribution** in a coherent way, specifying the **subjective probability**, representing a person's judgment under uncertainty, as opposed to the **objective probability**, representing the relative frequencies in a population. L. J. Savage [7] succeeded in developing a formal mathematical theory of the subjective probability from a set of postulates about the consistent behavior of a person under uncertainty.

The non-Bayesian statisticians, however, do not accept the Bayesians' viewpoint and insist that statistical inference should be free from any subjective judgment and be based solely on the objective properties of the sample derived from the assumed model. The theory developed by R. A. Fisher, J. Neyman, and E. S. Pearson, and others is based on the non-Bayesian approach.

C. Problems of Non-Bayesian Inference

The most commonly used forms of statistical inference are **point estimation**, used when we want to get a value as the estimate for the parameter; **interval estimation**, when we want to get an interval that contains the true value of the parameter with a probability not smaller than the preassigned level; and **hypothesis testing**, when it is required to determine whether or not some hypothesis about the parameter values is wrong (\rightarrow 399 Statistical Estimation, 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing).

In any type of statistical inference, the problem can be abstractly formulated by determining a procedure that defines a rule, based on the sample observed, for choosing an element from the set of possible conclusions.

Such a procedure is evaluated by the probabilistic properties derived under different values of the parameter from the distribution of the sample, and it is usually required to satisfy some type of validity criteria (such as unbiasedness of an estimator, size of a test, etc.), and among those satisfying them, one which is considered to be best according to some optimality criterion (such as minimum variance or most-powerfulness) is looked for. But in the sense of objective probability, the probabilistic property of a procedure is relevant only for the frequencies in repeated trials when the same procedure is applied to a sequence of samples obtained from the population and has no direct implications for the conclusion obtained by applying the procedure to a specific sample we have in hand. For this reason Neyman argued that in statistical inference there is really no such thing as inductive inference but only inductive behavior. Fisher disagreed strongly with this argument and emphasized that statistical analysis is induction and that its purpose is to allow us to draw the proper conclusions from a particular sample and that the probabilistic properties of the procedure should and could have relevance for a particular conclusion obtained from a specific sample, provided that all the information contained in the sample is used. The arguments between Fisher and Neyman led to a heated controversy between their followers that is still not completely settled. Fisher's arguments lead to the **principle of sufficiency** and the **principle of conditionality**. The principle of sufficiency dictates that all inferences should be based on a sufficient statistic if there is one, and the principle of conditionality requires that any inference should be based on the conditional distribution given the **ancillary statistic**, i.e., a statistic whose distribution is independent of the parameter, if there is such a statistic. These two principles are accepted by many statisticians who do not follow all of Fisher's arguments, though the principle of conditionality sometimes leads to difficulties due to nonuniqueness of the ancillary.

D. Specification Problem

It is often difficult and sometimes impossible to have an exactly correct model for the data, and we must be satisfied with a model that gives a sufficiently close approximation and is mathematically tractable as well. It may also happen, however, that a model first specified may be far from reality and could lead to erroneous conclusions if relied on blindly. Here, the problem of **model selection** arises (→

403 Statistical Models), i.e., choosing the best of various possible models.

We may also seek procedures that are little affected by the departure of the distribution of the data from the assumed or some other model that satisfies the condition of validity without any assumption about the exact shape of the distributions (→ 371 Robust and Nonparametric Methods). Generally, the problem of determining the model or specification should not be dealt with by mathematical methods alone, and it should be considered by taking into account the properties and nature of the subject under consideration and also the process of measurement or experimentation.

E. History

The first appearance of statistical inference as a method of grasping numerical characteristics of a collective was seen in the study by J. Graunt (1662) of the number of people who died in London. W. Petty applied Graunt's method further to the comparison of communities in his *Political arithmetic* (1690). J. P. Süßmilch, a member of the Graunt school, perceived the regularity in mass observations and stressed the statistical importance of this regularity. The development of the theory of probability inevitably affected the theory of statistical inference. The method of T. Bayes was the first procedure of statistical inference in the current meaning of this expression. We now have a theorem bearing his name (the Bayes theorem), which is stated in current language as follows: If we know the probability $P_C(E)$ that a cause C produces an effect E and if the prior (or *a priori*) probability $P(C)$ of the existence of the cause C is also known, then the posterior (or *a posteriori*) probability of C , given an effect E , is equal to

$$P_E(C) = \frac{P(C)P_C(E)}{\sum_C P(C)P_C(E)}$$

(→ 342 Probability Theory F). This theorem, easily extendable to the continuous case, suggests the following inference procedure: If we are informed that an effect E has taken place, then we calculate the probabilities $P_E(C)$ for every cause C , compare them, and infer that the C^* with $P_E(C^*) = \max_C P_E(C)$ is the **most probable cause** of E .

Both P. S. Laplace and C. F. Gauss discussed the theory of estimation of parameters (→ 399 Statistical Estimation) as an application of the Bayes theorem. In his research, Laplace considered a monotone function $W(|t - \theta|)$, and $W = |t - \theta|$ in particular, of the distance $|t - \theta|$ between a parameter value θ and its

estimate t as a measure of significance of the error of the estimate t . Gauss, following Laplace, used this weight function $W(|t - \theta|)$ of error, and going beyond Laplace, realized that it would be mathematically fruitful to put $W(|t - \theta|) = (t - \theta)^2$. Such considerations led him to the study of the †least squares method, in which the terminology and notation he devised are still in use. He also developed the theory of errors and recognized the importance of the normal distribution and found that the least square estimate is equal to the most probable value if the errors are normally distributed.

F. Galton, a biologist, revealed the usefulness of statistical methods in biological research and explored what we call †regression analysis (→ 403 Statistical Models) by introducing the concepts of regression line and †correlation coefficient. His research on regression analysis originated from the study of the correlation between characteristics of parents and children, but he failed to realize the difference between †population characteristics and †sample characteristics.

Following Galton, K. Pearson developed the theory of regression and correlation, with which he succeeded in establishing the basis of biometrics (→ 40 Biometrics). He arrived at the concept of population in statistics: A statistical **population** is a collective consisting of observable individuals, while a **sample** is a set of individuals drawn out of the population and containing something telling us about characteristics of the population. Thus statistical research is regarded as investigation that focuses not on a sample as such but on a population from which the sample has been drawn. This consideration raised the problem of the **goodness-of-fit test** (→ 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing), that is, the problem of knowing whether a sample is likely to have been drawn from a population whose distribution was determined by theoretical considerations. K. Pearson characterized some population distributions occurring in practice by a differential equation, and classified them into several types. Using this classification, he discussed goodness-of-fit tests and developed the χ^2 -distribution (†chi-square distribution) in relation to the problem of testing hypotheses.

Statisticians in the time of K. Pearson thought of a population as a collective having infinitely many individuals (i.e., an **infinite population**), which led to the idea that the larger the **size** of a sample (i.e., the number of individuals in the sample), the more precisely could the sample give information about the population. They carried out inferences, including the testing of hypotheses (→ 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing), by approximate

methods, which later came to be termed **large sample theory**. Suppose, for instance, that $\{X_1, \dots, X_n\}$ is an †independent sample of size n from a normal population $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$. The random variable $Z = \sqrt{n}(\bar{X} - \mu_0)/\sigma$ with $\bar{X} = \sum_i X_i/n$ is distributed according to $N(0, 1)$ when $\mu = \mu_0$. Therefore, if the size n is sufficiently large ($n \rightarrow \infty$), we estimate σ by $\hat{\sigma} = \{\sum_i (X_i - \bar{X})^2 / (n - 1)\}^{1/2}$ and deal with the random variable $T = \sqrt{n}(\bar{X} - \mu_0)/\hat{\sigma}$ obtained by inserting $\hat{\sigma}$ in place of σ in the expression for Z , as if T itself were distributed according to $N(0, 1)$.

F. Development in the 20th Century

W. S. Gosset, writing under the pen name “Student,” reported in 1908 the discovery of the exact distribution of T and thereby opened the new epoch of **exact sampling theory** (→ 374 Sampling Distributions). This work of Student made it possible to perform statistical inference by means of **small samples** and consequently changed statistical research from the study of collectives to that of uncertain phenomena; in other words, the concept of population was once again related to a †probability space with a †probability distribution (i.e., a **population distribution**) containing unknown **parameters**. Thus it began to be emphasized that a sample has to be drawn **at random** (i.e., a **random sample**) from the population if we are to make an inference about a parameter based on the sample.

Fisher presented a complete derivation, using the multiple integration method, of the † t -distribution (the sampling distribution of T). In addition, Fisher introduced the concepts of †null hypothesis and significance test, which were the starting points for later progress in the theory of hypothesis testing. He also added the concepts of †consistency, †efficiency, and †sufficiency to the list of possible properties of †estimators, and he studied the connection between the information contained in a sample and the accuracy of an estimator, which led to the idea of amount of information. Fisher also proposed the †maximum likelihood estimator, which is formally equivalent to the most probable value, but he renamed it and gave it a foundation completely independent of any prior information and showed that it leads to the at least asymptotically efficient estimator.

Fisher made efforts to obtain a distribution of the parameter directly from the sample observation, hence independently of the concept of prior probability. He sought in this way to be released from the weakness of the Bayes method. For this purpose he introduced

the concept of **fiducial distribution**, which was the subject of bitter controversy in the period that followed. As an example of a fiducial distribution, we consider here the †Behrens-Fisher problem: Let X_1, \dots, X_m and Y_1, \dots, Y_n be samples drawn independently from the populations $N(\mu_1, \sigma_1^2)$ and $N(\mu_2, \sigma_2^2)$, respectively, where the parameters μ_1, μ_2, σ_1 , and σ_2 are all unknown. The problem raised is to test the hypothesis $\mu_1 = \mu_2$ or to estimate $\delta = \mu_1 - \mu_2$ by an interval. To solve this problem, we put

$$\bar{X} = \sum_i X_i/m, \quad \bar{Y} = \sum_j Y_j/n,$$

$$S_1^2 = \sum_i (X_i - \bar{X})^2/(m-1),$$

$$S_2^2 = \sum_j (Y_j - \bar{Y})^2/(n-1),$$

and learn that $T_1 = \sqrt{m}(\bar{X} - \mu_1)/S_1$ and $T_2 = \sqrt{n}(\bar{Y} - \mu_2)/S_2$ are mutually independent and distributed according to the t -distribution with degrees of freedom $m-1$ and $n-1$, respectively. From this fact Fisher reasoned as follows: Given observed values $\bar{x}, \bar{y}, s_1, s_2$ of the variables $\bar{X}, \bar{Y}, S_1, S_2$, the distributions of the parameters μ_1 and μ_2 are induced from the distributions of T_1 and T_2 by means of transformations

$$\mu_1 = \bar{x} - \frac{T_1 s_1}{\sqrt{m}}, \quad \mu_2 = \bar{y} - \frac{T_2 s_2}{\sqrt{n}}.$$

Consequently the distribution of $\delta = \bar{x} - \bar{y} - (T_1 s_1/\sqrt{m} - T_2 s_2/\sqrt{n})$ is obtained. These distributions are called the fiducial distributions of the parameters μ_1, μ_2 , and δ . The interval $|\delta - (\bar{x} - \bar{y})| < c$ of δ deduced from the fiducial distribution of δ is called a **fiducial interval** of δ .

Neyman and E. S. Pearson developed a mathematical theory of testing hypotheses, in which they deliberately defined a family of population distributions admissible for formal treatment and considered alternative hypotheses within the family. They proposed to relate a test to its †power function, on the basis of which the test would be judged. Their ideas brought mathematical clarity to the theory of inference. Furthermore, concerning interval estimation, Neyman devised an alternative to the fiducial interval, the †confidence interval, which has full mathematical justification. Unfortunately it was later found that the confidence interval, fiducial interval, and the Bayes posterior interval based on the posterior distribution often gave distinctly different results to the same problem, which became a source of controversy among different schools of thought.

Since the publication of A. Wald's theory of statistical decision functions (→ 398 Statistical

Decision Functions) in 1939, there has been a steady increase in its importance. In this theory the totality \mathcal{D} of available statistical procedures, which is considered implicitly in the Neyman-Pearson theory, is put forth explicitly as a set and defined as the space of decision functions. Wald also defined the †risk function of a statistical decision procedure and used it as a basis for judging procedures. In addition, he employed the concept of prior probability and the Bayes procedure for the purpose of proving the †complete class theorem. Wald's idea of bringing the concept of prior probability back into statistical theory carried a great deal of weight, and much literature has now been accumulated on this subject. Prior probability as a technique in statistics was abandoned after Fisher's introduction of the maximum likelihood method independent of prior probability and Neyman's assertion that a probability distribution on the †parameter space made no sense. In addition, Wald linked statistical inference to games (→ 173 Game Theory) and introduced the †minimax principle into statistics. The decision-theoretic setup also enabled him to develop a theory of sequential analysis by comparing the cost of sampling with the risk of erroneous decisions (→ 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing).

After the publication of Savage's book in 1954, there was a revival of the Bayesian approach, i.e., one based on the concept of subjective probability, and now the group of those statisticians who accept the Bayesian approach are called Bayesians or neo-Bayesians.

G. Applications

Methods of statistical inference are applied in many fields where statistical data are used for scientific, engineering, medical, or managerial purposes. Methods of producing data that are appropriate for statistical inference have also been developed. R. A. Fisher developed the method of statistical †design of experiments (→ 102 Design of Experiments) that when it is impossible or impractical to eliminate completely experimental errors or variabilities, provides the procedures to obtain such data. These data, though subject to random errors, are susceptible to rigorous statistical inference. For this purpose Fisher introduced the principles of †randomization, †local control, and †replication in the design of experiments. W. A. Shewhart defined the †state of statistical control in mass-production processes, where the variabilities of the products can be considered to be due to chance causes alone and hence are statistically analyzable.

Applying the idea of statistical inference to this situation, Shewhart established the method of statistical quality control (→ 404 Statistical Quality Control). Neyman introduced the method of random sampling into statistical surveys and developed the theory of estimation and allocation based on the theory of statistical inference (→ 373 Sample Survey).

In many applied fields there exist systems of statistical methods which have been developed specifically for the respective fields, and although all of them are based essentially on the same general principles of statistical inference, each has its own special techniques and procedures. Specific names have been invented, such as biometrics (→ 40 Biometrics) econometrics (→ 128 Econometrics), psychometrics (→ 346 Psychometrics), technometrics, sociometrics, etc.

References

- [1] R. A. Fisher, Statistical methods for research workers, Oliver & Boyd, 1925; eleventh edition, 1950.
- [2] R. A. Fisher, The design of experiments, Oliver & Boyd, 1935; fourth edition, 1947.
- [3] R. A. Fisher, Contributions to mathematical statistics, Wiley, 1950.
- [4] R. A. Fisher Statistical methods and scientific inference, Oliver & Boyd, 1956.
- [5] J. Neyman and E. S. Pearson, Contributions to the theory of testing statistical hypotheses I, II, Statist. Res. Mem. London Univ., 1 (1936), 1–37; 2 (1938), 25–57.
- [6] A. Wald, Statistical decision functions, Wiley, 1950 (Chelsea, 1971).
- [7] L. J. Savage, The foundation of statistical inference, Methuen, 1962.
- [8] C. R. Rao, Linear statistical inference and its applications, Wiley, 1965.
- [9] D. A. Fraser, The structure of inference, Wiley, 1968.
- [10] D. V. Lindley, Introduction to probability and statistics from a Bayesian viewpoint I, II, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1965.

402 (XX.19) Statistical Mechanics

A. General Remarks

One cubic centimeter of water contains about 3×10^{22} water molecules. A macroscopic system of matter thus consists of an enormous number of particles incessantly moving in accordance with the laws of dynamics (→ 271

Mechanics; 351 Quantum Mechanics). Dynamical description of such microscopic motion in full detail is impossible and even meaningless. A physical process in thermodynamics or hydrodynamics is described in terms of a relatively small number of macroscopic variables, such as temperature, pressure, and a velocity field. Such a process shows a remarkable simplicity which is a statistical result of the molecular chaos. This is the reason why statistical mechanics is needed as a theoretical model to unify microscopic dynamics and probability theory. Thus **statistical mechanics** aims at deriving physical laws in the macroscopic world from the atomistic structures of the microscopic world on the basis of microscopic dynamical laws and probabilistic laws. Its function is twofold. First, statistical mechanics should give microscopic proofs of the macroscopic laws of physics, such as those of thermodynamics or the laws of macroscopic electromagnetism. Second, it should also provide us with detailed knowledge of physical properties of a given material system once its microscopic structure is known. In this sense, statistical mechanics is an essential basis of the modern science of materials.

Strictly speaking, the dynamics of the microscopic world obeys 'quantum mechanics. However, even before the birth of quantum mechanics, statistical mechanics had progressed on the basis of classical mechanics. This stage of statistical mechanics is often called **classical statistical mechanics**, in contrast to **quantum statistical mechanics** based on quantum mechanics. Statistical mechanics has a fully developed formalism to apply to physical systems in thermal equilibrium. This is sometimes called **statistical thermodynamics** or **equilibrium statistical mechanics**. Until the 1950s the term "statistical mechanics" had often been used in this narrow sense. In a wider sense it is concerned with systems in more general states, for instance, in nonequilibrium states. In the modern literature, a general statistical mechanical theory of nonequilibrium systems is often referred to as the statistical mechanics of **irreversible processes**.

B. History

The early stage of statistical mechanics can be traced back to the **kinetic theory of gases**, which started in the 18th century. In dilute gases, gas molecules fly freely through the whole volume of the vessel and collide only from time to time. In thermal equilibrium, the average energy of each molecule is determined by the temperature of the gas; namely

$$m \overline{v_x^2}/2 = m \overline{v_y^2}/2 = m \overline{v_z^2}/2 = kT/2,$$

where (v_x, v_y, v_z) is the velocity, an overbar means the average, m is the mass of a molecule, T is the absolute temperature, and k is the **Boltzmann constant** ($= 1.38 \times 10^{-16}$ erg · deg⁻¹). The velocity of each molecule is only probabilistic, and a †distribution function $f(v_x, v_y, v_z)$ is defined as the †probability density that the velocity of a given molecule is found to be in the neighborhood of (v_x, v_y, v_z) . In a dilute gas, this is given by

$$f(v_x, v_y, v_z) = C \exp \left[-\frac{m}{2} (v_x^2 + v_y^2 + v_z^2) / kT \right], \quad (1)$$

the **Maxwell-Boltzmann distribution law**.

L. Boltzmann viewed the velocity distribution function as changing in time as a result of molecular collisions and gave an equation of the form

$$\frac{\partial f}{\partial t} = A[f] + \Gamma[f], \quad (2)$$

where $A[f]$ is the change of the distribution function f by acceleration due to the presence of external forces and $\Gamma[f]$ is the change caused by molecular collisions. $\Gamma[f]$ is an integral which is nonlinear in f . This type of equation is called a **Boltzmann equation** [1, 2].

Boltzmann introduced the **H-function** by the definition

$$H = \iiint f \log f \, dv_x \, dv_y \, dv_z \quad (3)$$

and proved on the basis of equation (2) that $dH/dt \leq 0$. This theorem is known as the **H-theorem** [1–4]. The equilibrium distribution (1) is therefore obtained from equation (2) as the solution that makes H a minimum. In fact the H -function is related to the **entropy** S by

$$S = -kH. \quad (4)$$

Boltzmann further showed (1877) that the distribution function of a system in thermal equilibrium can be obtained on more general grounds without relying on a kinetic equation of the type (2) and that the statistical mechanics of systems in equilibrium can thus be constructed on a basis much more general than that given by a kinetic theory. It was W. Gibbs, however, who clearly established (1902) the complete framework of statistical thermodynamics, although he had to confine himself to classical statistical mechanics [5].

C. The Ergodic Hypothesis

For a given dynamical system with n †degrees of freedom, the **phase space** is defined as a $2n$ -dimensional space with †generalized coordinates q_1, \dots, q_n and †generalized momenta

p_1, \dots, p_n . Dynamical states of the system constitute a set of points in this space. At a given time, the state of the system is represented by a point P in the phase space, and hence the motion of the system is represented by the motion of P . If the system is conservative, its energy function is constant. Let \mathcal{H} be the †Hamiltonian function. Then the motion of P is confined to an **energy surface** defined by the condition $\mathcal{H} = E = \text{constant}$. Measure on an energy surface is defined as the limit of the volume element lying between two neighboring energy surfaces corresponding to the energies E and $E + dE$. The motions of P form a †topological group that makes this measure invariant (†Liouville's theorem).

A dynamical quantity $A(p, q)$ of the system changes its value as the phase point P moves on the energy surface. The time average \bar{A} of A is identified with the value of A observed in the equilibrium state of the system, namely, the average of A with respect to the invariant measure. Boltzmann justified this assumption by the following reasoning. If the energy surface has a finite measure and the trajectory of P does not make a closed curve on the energy surface, it can be assumed that the trajectory will move around practically everywhere on the surface. Mathematically formulated, the only measurable subset of the surface that has a nonzero measure and is invariant under the motion is the whole surface. This assumption is the **ergodic hypothesis** [6–9]. The long-time average of A will then equal the average of A over the entire energy surface with weight function equal to the measure previously introduced. The latter average is called the **phase average** and is denoted by $\langle A \rangle$. Boltzmann thus asserted that

$$\bar{A} = \langle A \rangle. \quad (5)$$

Efforts of mathematicians to study the ergodic hypothesis created an important branch of mathematics called ergodic theory (→ 136 Ergodic Theory).

D. Ensembles in Classical Statistical Mechanics

Once we admit the ergodic hypothesis, or more specifically the assumption (5), the calculation of the observed value of a physical quantity A for a system in equilibrium is reduced to finding the phase average of A on an energy surface. The task of statistical mechanics of systems in equilibrium is thus reduced essentially to calculating phase averages and establishing relationships between them [10–13].

For a set (called an **ensemble** in this case) of

identical systems with the same energy, we consider the phase average for the †probability space with the measure mentioned in Section C on the energy surface corresponding to the given energy value. Gibbs called a probability space of this kind a **microcanonical ensemble**. An average in this probability space is defined by

$$\langle A \rangle = \int_{\mathcal{H}=E} \frac{A dS}{|\text{grad } \mathcal{H}|} \bigg/ \int_{\mathcal{H}=E} \frac{dS}{|\text{grad } \mathcal{H}|}, \quad (6)$$

where \mathcal{H} is the Hamiltonian function, $\text{grad } \mathcal{H}$ is its gradient in the $2n$ -dimensional phase space, and the integration is carried over the energy surface with dS as surface element.

When the observed system is in mechanical contact with a heat reservoir, the composite system consisting of the system and the heat reservoir is regarded as an isolated system with constant energy. Then an ensemble of the composite systems is treated as a microcanonical ensemble. It is more convenient and more physical, however, to consider the heat reservoir simply as providing an environment characterized by its temperature T , and to concentrate only on the system in which we are interested. Then the system is no longer isolated and exchanges energy with its environment. Since the energy of the system is no longer constant, the system will be found in any part of the phase space with a certain probability. To find the probability distribution for an ensemble of this system is a problem of asymptotic evaluation which is solved on the basis of the ergodic hypothesis and the fact that a heat reservoir has an extremely large number of degrees of freedom. This asymptotic evaluation is traditionally done with the help of †Stirling's formula or by using the Fowler-Darwin method [10], but it is essentially based on the †central limit theorem [11].

The probability space of this kind of ensemble of systems in contact with heat reservoirs was called a **canonical ensemble** by Gibbs [5]. If $d\Gamma$ is a volume element of the phase space of the system, the probability of finding a system arbitrarily chosen from the ensemble in a volume element $d\Gamma$ is given by

$$\text{Pr}(d\Gamma) = C \exp(-\mathcal{H}/kT) d\Gamma. \quad (7)$$

Accordingly, the average of a dynamical quantity A is given by

$$\langle A \rangle = \int A e^{-\mathcal{H}/kT} d\Gamma \bigg/ \int e^{-\mathcal{H}/kT} d\Gamma. \quad (8)$$

For example, the average energy is

$$\langle \mathcal{H} \rangle \equiv E = \int \mathcal{H} e^{-\mathcal{H}/kT} d\Gamma \bigg/ \int e^{-\mathcal{H}/kT} d\Gamma. \quad (9)$$

By a traditional convention we introduce the parameter

$$\beta = 1/kT$$

and write (9) as

$$E = -\partial \log Z(\beta) / \partial \beta,$$

where $Z(\beta)$ is called the **partition function** or the **sum over states** and is given for a system composed of N identical particles by

$$Z(\beta) = \int e^{-\beta \mathcal{H}} d\Gamma / N!. \quad (10)$$

If an exchange of particles with the environment takes place in addition to an exchange of energy, the probability of finding a system with particle number N in the volume element $d\Gamma$ is given by

$$C \exp(-\beta \mathcal{H} + \beta \mu N) d\Gamma / N!,$$

where μ is a real parameter called the **chemical potential**; this characterizes the environment with regard to the exchange of particles. This ensemble is called the **grand canonical ensemble**. The average of a dynamical quantity A is then given by

$$\langle A \rangle = \sum_N N!^{-1} \int A_N e^{-\beta \mathcal{H}(N) + \beta \mu N} d\Gamma / \Xi(\beta, \mu), \quad (11)$$

where the dependence of A and \mathcal{H} on N is now explicitly written, and where

$$\Xi(\beta, \mu) = \sum_N N!^{-1} \int e^{-\beta \mathcal{H}(N) + \beta \mu N} d\Gamma \quad (12)$$

is called the **grand partition function**.

E. Ensembles in Quantum Statistical Mechanics

The quantum counterpart of the classical ergodic hypothesis is that to each of these quantum states an equal probability weight should be assigned [10]. A **microcanonical ensemble** is then defined by this **principle of equal weight**, which yields in turn

$$\langle A \rangle = \sum_l A_l / \sum_l 1 \quad (13)$$

instead of (6). Here the index l refers to the quantum states lying in the interval ΔE , and A_l is the quantum-mechanical expectation of a dynamical variable A in the quantum state l . A canonical ensemble is now defined by assigning

$$P_j = e^{-\beta E_j} / \sum_j e^{-\beta E_j} \quad (14)$$

to the j th quantum state as the probability that the system will be found in that state. The

expectation value of A must be given by

$$\langle A \rangle = \sum_j A_j e^{-\beta E_j} / \sum_j e^{-\beta E_j} = \text{tr} A e^{-\beta H} / \text{tr} e^{-\beta H}, \quad (15)$$

where H is the Hamiltonian. The partition function is defined by

$$Z = \sum_j e^{-\beta E_j} = \text{tr} e^{-\beta H}, \quad (16)$$

corresponding to (10).

For a system consisting of identical particles, quantum mechanics requires a particular symmetry of its wave function; namely, the wave function must be even or odd with respect to permutation of any two particles according as the particles are bosons or fermions. This symmetry requirement is peculiar to quantum mechanics. Thus, even for an ideal gas consisting of noninteracting particles, quantum statistics leads to results characteristically different from those of classical statistical mechanics. This difference becomes more significant when the particle mass is smaller, the density is larger, and the temperature is lower. Quantum effects of this kind are seen in metallic electrons, in liquid helium, in an assembly of photons or phonons, and in high-density stars. The statistical laws obeyed by bosons are called **Bose statistics**, and those obeyed by fermions, **Fermi statistics**.

The expectation value of A in the **grand canonical ensemble** is given in quantum statistics by

$$\langle A \rangle = \Xi(\beta, \mu)^{-1} \text{tr}(A e^{-\beta H + \beta \mu N}), \quad (17)$$

where H is the second-quantized Hamiltonian, N is the number operator, the trace is taken on the (nonrelativistic) Fock space (symmetric or antisymmetric according to Bose or Fermi statistics), and $\Xi(\beta, \mu)$ is the **grand partition function** given by

$$\Xi(\beta, \mu) = \text{tr} e^{-\beta H + \beta \mu N}. \quad (18)$$

F. Many-Body Problems in Statistical Mechanics

Since statistical mechanics is primarily concerned with systems with large numbers of particles, problems in statistical mechanics are essentially many-body problems. In practice, however, there are some cases where extreme idealization is possible, as in ideal gases, where the interaction between gas molecules is ignored. In some cases we can proceed by successive approximation, taking the particle interactions as perturbations. Such perturbational treatments are, however, entirely useless for some problems, such as phase transitions, of which an example is the condensation of gases into liquid states, where the

interaction of particles plays a critical role. Such problems are clearly many-body problems. There are a number of important and interesting problems in this category, for example, transitions between ferromagnetic and paramagnetic states and those between the superconducting and normal states of metals. Transition from a high-temperature phase to a low-temperature phase is generally regarded as a consequence of the appearance of a certain type of order in thermal motion. This kind of phase change is called an **order-disorder transition** [14–16].

G. Thermodynamic Limit and Characterization of Equilibrium States

Although an actual system is finitely extended, the enormous sizes of the usual macroscopic systems in comparison to the sizes of their constituent particles justifies the idealization to infinitely extended systems. At the same time, there are several mathematical advantages in considering infinitely extended systems, such as the absence of walls (replaced by the boundary condition at infinity, should it be relevant), appearance of phase transitions as mathematical discontinuities rather than mathematically smooth though quantitatively sudden changes, and mathematically clear-cut occurrence of broken symmetries.

Equilibrium states of infinitely extended systems are usually obtained by taking the limit of the equilibrium states of systems in a finite volume V as both V and the number of particles N tend to ∞ with the density $\rho = N/V$ fixed; this is called the **thermodynamic limit**.

It is sometimes possible to formulate the dynamics of infinitely extended systems directly and to characterize their equilibrium states, which more or less coincide with the thermodynamic limit of equilibrium states of finitely extended systems [17–21]. The simplest and most fully investigated case of **lattice spin systems** is explained below in detail [17]. Since classical systems can be viewed as special cases of quantum systems, we start with the latter. To be definite, we take a v -dimensional cubic lattice Z^v with a lattice site $n = (n_1, \dots, n_v)$ specified by its integer coordinates n_j . (In the lattice case, the thermodynamic limit is simply the limit as $V \rightarrow \infty$.)

The C^* -algebra \mathfrak{A} of observables is generated by the subalgebra \mathfrak{A}_n at each lattice site n , which is assumed to be the algebra of all $d \times d$ matrices (for example, linear combinations of Pauli spin matrices $\sigma^{(n)} = (\sigma_x^{(n)}, \sigma_y^{(n)}, \sigma_z^{(n)})$ and the identity for $d=2$) and to commute with operators at other lattice sites. The group of lattice translations $n \rightarrow n + a$ is represented by

automorphisms γ_a of \mathfrak{A} , satisfying $\gamma_a \mathfrak{A}_n = \mathfrak{A}_{n+a}$ ($\gamma_a \sigma^{(n)} = \sigma^{(n+a)}$). For any subset Λ of \mathbb{Z}^v , $\mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$ denotes the C^* -subalgebra of \mathfrak{A} generated by \mathfrak{A}_n , $n \in \Lambda$.

A model is specified by giving a **potential** Φ which assigns to each finite nonempty subset I of \mathbb{Z}^v an operator $\Phi(I) = \Phi(I)^* \in \mathfrak{A}(I)$. The Hamiltonian for a finite subset Λ of \mathbb{Z}^v is given by $U(\Lambda) = \sum_{I \subset \Lambda} \Phi(I)$. In order to control long-range interactions, various assumptions are introduced. Examples are finiteness of either of the following:

$$\|\Phi\| = \sup_n \sum_{I \ni n} N(I)^{-1} \|\Phi(I)\|, \quad (19)$$

$$\|\|\Phi\|\| = \sup_n \sum_{I \ni n} \|\Phi(I)\|. \quad (20)$$

Here $N(I)$ is the number of points in I .

Let $\mathfrak{A}_n^{\text{cl}}$ be a maximal Abelian $*$ -subalgebra of \mathfrak{A}_n (such as $\{c_1 + c_2 \sigma_z^{(n)}\}$) satisfying $\gamma_a \mathfrak{A}_n^{\text{cl}} = \mathfrak{A}_{n+a}^{\text{cl}}$ and \mathfrak{A}^{cl} be the Abelian C^* -subalgebra of \mathfrak{A} generated by $\mathfrak{A}_n^{\text{cl}}$, $n \in \mathbb{Z}^v$. If $\Phi(I)$ is in \mathfrak{A}^{cl} for all I , we call the potential Φ **Abelian** or **classical**. There exists a conditional expectation π^{cl} which is a positive mapping of norm 1 from \mathfrak{A} onto \mathfrak{A}^{cl} satisfying $\pi^{\text{cl}}(ABC) = A\pi^{\text{cl}}(B)C$ for A and C in \mathfrak{A}^{cl} and $\pi^{\text{cl}}(1) = 1$. If a state φ on \mathfrak{A} satisfies $\varphi(A) = \varphi(\pi^{\text{cl}}(A))$, we call the state φ **classical**. Classical states are in one-to-one correspondence with the restriction on \mathfrak{A}^{cl} , which can be viewed as a probability measure on the spectrum (also called **configuration space**) of the C^* -algebra \mathfrak{A}^{cl} of observables for classical spin lattice systems. This correspondence makes it possible to view classical spin lattice systems as quantum spin lattice systems with Abelian interactions.

For a given potential Φ , the time evolution of the infinitely extended system is described by the one-parameter group α_t , $t \in \mathbb{R}$, of $*$ -automorphisms of \mathfrak{A} defined as the following limit:

$$\alpha_t(A) = \lim_{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{Z}^v} e^{itU(\Lambda)} A e^{-itU(\Lambda)} \quad (A \in \mathfrak{A}). \quad (21)$$

The limit exists if $\Phi(I) = 0$ for $N(I) > N$ and $\|\|\Phi\|\| < \infty$, or if for some $\lambda > 0$ $\sum_n e^{\lambda n} (\sup_x \sum_I \{\|\Phi(I)\| \mid I \ni x, N(I) = n\}) < \infty$, or if $v = 1$ (1-dimensional lattice) and $\sup_x \sum_I \{\|\Phi(I)\| \mid I \cap (-\infty, x) \neq \emptyset, I \cap [x, \infty) \neq \emptyset\} < \infty$. An alternative way is first to define $\delta_\Phi(A) = \sum_I i[\Phi(I), A]$ for $A \in \bigcup_\Lambda \mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$ (Λ is a finite subset of \mathbb{Z}^v), which exists if $\|\|\Phi\|\| < \infty$, and to prove that the closure $\bar{\delta}_\Phi$ of δ_Φ is a generator of a one-parameter subgroup $\alpha_t (= \exp t\bar{\delta}_\Phi)$. In the above cases, $\bar{\delta}_\Phi$ is a generator.

A general canonical ensemble for a system in a finite subset Λ of the lattice \mathbb{Z}^v , with some boundary condition in the outside $\Lambda^c = \mathbb{Z}^v \setminus \Lambda$, is given by $\varphi_\Lambda(A) = (\tau_\Lambda \otimes \psi)(e^{-\beta H(\Lambda)} \times$

$A e^{-\beta H(\Lambda^c)/2}$), where $\tau_\Lambda \otimes \psi$ is the product of the unique tracial state τ_Λ on $\mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$ and a state ψ on $\mathfrak{A}(\Lambda^c)$ (the boundary condition), $H(\Lambda) = U(\Lambda) + W(\Lambda)$ and $W(\Lambda) = \sum_I \{\Phi(I) \mid I \cap \Lambda \neq \emptyset, I \cap \Lambda^c \neq \emptyset\}$ (the **surface energy**). The following conditions on a state φ of \mathfrak{A} are mutually equivalent under the condition that $\bar{\delta}_\Phi$ is a generator (which holds under any one of the conditions described above) and is satisfied by any limit state of the above φ_Λ as $\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{Z}^v$ (i.e., a state in $\bigcap_{\Lambda'} \{\varphi_{\Lambda'} \mid \Lambda' \subset \Lambda, \psi\}$, with the bar denoting weak closure).

1. **KMS condition:** $\varphi(A\alpha_{i\beta}(B)) = \varphi(BA)$ for any $A, B \in \mathfrak{A}$ such that $\alpha_t(B)$ is an entire function of t . (φ is called a **β -KMS state**.)

2. **Local thermodynamic stability:** For any finite subset Λ of \mathbb{Z}^v and for any state ψ having the same restriction to $\mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$ as the state φ under consideration, $\tilde{F}_{\Lambda, \beta}(\varphi) \leq \tilde{F}_{\Lambda, \beta}(\psi)$ (the minimality of the **free energy** multiplied by β), where $\tilde{F}_{\Lambda, \beta}(\varphi) = \beta\varphi(H(\Lambda)) - S_\Lambda(\varphi)$, $S_\Lambda(\varphi) = \lim \{S_{\Lambda'}(\varphi) - S_{\Lambda' \setminus \Lambda}(\varphi)\}$ as $\Lambda' \nearrow \mathbb{Z}^v$ (the **open system entropy**), $S_\Lambda(\varphi) = -\varphi(\log \rho_\Lambda(\varphi))$ (the **closed system entropy**) and the density matrix $\rho_\Lambda(\varphi) \in \mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)^+$ is defined by $\varphi(A) = \tau_\Lambda(\rho_\Lambda(\varphi)A)$ for all $A \in \mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$.

3. **Gibbs condition:** For every finite subset Λ of \mathbb{Z}^v , the perturbed state $\varphi^{\beta W(\Lambda)}$ (not necessarily normalized) is the product $\varphi_\Lambda^G \times \psi$ of the Gibbs state $\varphi_\Lambda^G(A) = \text{tr}(e^{-\beta U(\Lambda)} A) / \text{tr } e^{-\beta U(\Lambda)}$ on $A \in \mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$ and some (unknown) state ψ on $\mathfrak{A}(\Lambda^c)$, where the representative vector Φ for φ for the GNS representation π_φ is assumed to be separating for $\pi_\varphi(\mathfrak{A})''$, and then $\varphi^{\beta W(\Lambda)}(A) = (\Omega, \pi_\varphi(A)\Omega)$ for

$$\Omega = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \beta^n \int_0^{1/2} ds_1 \int_0^{s_1} ds_2 \dots \int_0^{s_{n-1}} ds_n \Delta_\Phi^{s_n} \pi_\varphi \times (W(\Lambda)) \Delta_\Phi^{s_{n-1} - s_n} \dots \Delta_\Phi^{s_1 - s_2} \pi_\varphi(W(\Lambda)) \Phi, \quad (22)$$

where Δ_Φ is the \dagger modular operator for Φ and the series converges.

For a classical potential, this condition reduces to the conditions that φ is classical and that the restriction of φ to \mathfrak{A}^{cl} as a measure on the configuration space $\{1 \dots d\}^{\mathbb{Z}^v}$ satisfies the following **DLR equation** due to R. L. Dobrushin, O. E. Lanford, and D. Ruelle: The conditional probability for $\xi(\Lambda) \in \{1 \dots d\}^\Lambda$ knowing $\xi(\Lambda^c) \in \{1 \dots d\}^{\mathbb{Z}^v \setminus \Lambda}$ is proportional to $\exp(-\beta H(\Lambda))$, where $H(\Lambda) = U(\Lambda) + W(\Lambda)$ is a function of $\xi(U(\Lambda))$ depending only on $\xi(\Lambda)$.

4. **Roepstorff-Araki-Sewell inequality:** For any $A \in \bigcup_\Lambda \mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$, $i\varphi(A^* \delta_\Phi(A))$ is real and

$$-i\beta\varphi(A^* \delta_\Phi(A)) \geq S(\varphi(A^* A), \varphi(AA^*)), \quad (23)$$

where $S(u, v) = u \log(u/v)$ if $u > 0, v > 0$, $S(0, v) = 0$ for $v \geq 0$ and $S(u, 0) = +\infty$ for $u > 0$.

5. **Roepstorff-Fannes-Verbeure inequality:**

For α -entire $A \in \mathfrak{A}$,

$$\beta^{-1} \int_0^\beta \varphi(A^* \alpha_{i,\lambda}(A)) d\lambda \leq F(\varphi(A^* A), \varphi(AA^*)), \quad (24)$$

where $F(u, v) = (u - v)/\log(u/v)$ for $u > 0, v > 0, u \neq v$, $F(u, u) = u$ for $u > 0$, $F(u, 0) = F(0, v) = 0$.

If the interaction is translationally invariant (i.e., $\gamma_a \Phi(I) = \Phi(I + a)$ for all $a \in \mathbb{Z}^v$ and I) and if we restrict our attention to translationally invariant states (i.e., $\varphi(\gamma_a(A)) = \varphi(A)$ for all $A \in \mathfrak{A}$ and $a \in \mathbb{Z}^v$), then the following conditions are also equivalent to the above.

6. Variational principle: $\beta e(\varphi) - s(\varphi) \leq \beta e(\psi) - s(\psi)$ for all translationally invariant ψ (the minimality of the **mean free energy**), where $e(\varphi) = \lim N(\Lambda)^{-1} \varphi(U(\Lambda)) = \lim N(\Lambda)^{-1} \varphi(H(\Lambda))$ (the **mean energy**), $s(\varphi) = \lim N(\Lambda)^{-1} S_\Lambda(\varphi)$ (the **mean entropy**), the infimum value $\beta e(\varphi) - s(\varphi)$ is $-P(\beta\Phi)$ with $P(\beta\Phi) = \lim N(\Lambda)^{-1} \log \tau_\Lambda(e^{-\beta U(\Lambda)})$ (the **pressure**), and the limits exist if $\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{Z}^v$ is taken in the following **van Hove sense**: For any given cube C of lattice points, the minimal number $n_\Lambda^+(C)$ of translations of C that cover Λ and the maximal number $n_\Lambda^-(C)$ of mutually disjoint translations of C in Λ satisfy $n_\Lambda^+(C)/n_\Lambda^-(C) \rightarrow 1$ as $\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{Z}^v$.

7. Tangent to the pressure function: $P(\Phi)$ is a continuous convex function on the Banach space of translationally invariant Φ with $\|\Phi\| < \infty$. A continuous linear functional α on this Banach space is a **tangent** to P at Φ if $P(\Phi + \Psi) \geq P(\Phi) + \alpha(\Psi)$ for all Ψ . For a translationally invariant state ψ , we define $\alpha_\psi(\Psi) = \psi(\sum_{I \ni 0} N(I)^{-1} \Psi(I))$. The condition is that $-\alpha_\psi$ is a tangent to P at $\beta\Phi$. (Conversely, any tangent α to P at $\beta\Phi$ arises in this manner.)

The set K_β of all (normalized) β -KMS states is nonempty, compact, and convex. A β -KMS state φ is an extremal point of K_β if and only if it is factorial (i.e., the associated von Neumann algebra $\pi_\varphi(\mathfrak{A})''$ has a trivial center). It then has the **clustering property** $\lim_{a \rightarrow \infty} \{\varphi(A \gamma_a(B)) - \varphi(A)\varphi(\gamma_a(B))\} = 0$ and is interpreted as a **pure phase**. Any β -KMS state has a unique integral decomposition into extremal β -KMS states.

For any Φ , K_β is a one-point set for sufficiently small $|\beta|$. For a 1-dimensional system ($v = 1$), K_β consists of only one point (uniqueness of equilibrium states usually interpreted as indication of no phase transition) if the surface energy $W([-N, N])$ is uniformly bounded (H. Araki, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 44 (1975); A. Kishimoto, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 47 (1976)). For the two-body interaction $\Phi(\{m, n\}) = -J|m - n|^{-\alpha} \sigma_z^{(m)} \sigma_z^{(n)}$, this condition is satisfied if $\alpha > 2$ while $\|\Phi\| < \infty$ and α_t defined if $\alpha > 1$. There is more than one KMS state (with spontaneous magnetization) for $2 \geq \alpha > 1$ and large $\beta J > 0$, and hence a phase transition exists (F. J.

Dyson, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 12 (1969); J. Fröhlich and T. Spencer, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 83 (1982)). If a 1-dimensional interaction has a finite range (i.e., $\Phi(I) = 0$ if the diameter of I exceeds some number r_0) or if it is classical and $\sum_{I \ni 0} N(I)^{-1} (\text{diam } I + 1) \|\Phi(I)\| < \infty$ for $d = 2$, then $\varphi(A)$ for $\varphi \in K_\beta$ and $A \in \mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$ for a finite Λ is real analytic in β and any other analytic parameter in the potential (Araki, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 14 (1969); [22]; M. Cas-sandro and E. Olivieri, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 80 (1981)).

For a 2-dimensional **Ising model** with the nearest-neighbor ferromagnetic interaction [23], K_β consists of only one point for $0 \leq \beta \leq \beta_c$ while K_β for $\beta > \beta_c$ has exactly two extremal points corresponding to positive and negative magnetizations (M. Aizenman, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 73 (1980); Y. Higuchi, *Colloquia Math. Soc. János Bolyai*, 27 (1979)). In this case, all KMS states are translationally invariant, while there exist (infinitely many) translationally noninvariant KMS states for sufficiently large β if $v = 3$ (Dobrushin, *Theory Prob. Appl.*, 17 (1972); H. van Beijeren, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 40 (1975)).

The accumulation points of β -KMS states as $\beta \rightarrow +\infty$ (or $-\infty$) provide examples of **ground** (or **ceiling**) states defined by any one of the following mutually equivalent conditions $1_+, 2_+$ (or $1_-, 2_-$) (O. Bratteli, A. Kishimoto, and D. W. Robinson, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 64 (1978)):

1_+ (1_-). Positivity (negativity) of energy: For any $A \in \bigcup_\Lambda \mathfrak{A}(\Lambda)$, $-i\varphi(A^* \delta_\Phi(A))$ is real and positive (negative).

2_+ (2_-). Local minimality (maximality) of energy: For any finite subset Λ of \mathbb{Z}^v and for any state ψ with the same restriction to $\mathfrak{A}(\Lambda^c)$ as the state φ under consideration, $\varphi(H(\Lambda)) \leq \psi(H(\Lambda))$ ($\varphi(H(\Lambda)) \geq \psi(H(\Lambda))$).

For translationally invariant potentials and states, the following condition is also equivalent to the above:

3_+ (3_-). Global minimality (maximality) of energy: $e(\varphi) \leq e(\psi)$ ($e(\varphi) \geq e(\psi)$) for all translationally invariant states ψ .

The totality of KMS, ground, and ceiling states can be characterized by the following formulation of the impossibility of **perpetual motion**: Let $P_t = P_t^* \in \mathfrak{A}$ be a norm-differentiable function of the time $t \in \mathbb{R}$ with a compact support, representing (external) time-dependent perturbations. Then there exists a unique perturbed time evolution α_t^P as a one-parameter family of $*$ -automorphisms of \mathfrak{A} satisfying $(d/dt)\alpha_t^P(A) = \alpha_t^P(\delta_\Phi(A) + i[P_t, A])$ for all $A \in \mathfrak{A}$ in the domain of δ_Φ . A state φ changes with time t as $\varphi_t(A) = \varphi(\alpha_t^P(A))$ under the perturbed dynamics α_t^P , and the total

energy given to the system (mechanical work performed by the external forces) is given by $L^P(\varphi) = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \varphi_t(dP_t/dt)dt$. For KMS states at any β , as well as ground and ceiling states, $L^P(\varphi) \geq 0$ for any P_t . If φ is a factor state, the converse holds, i.e., $L^P(\varphi) \geq 0$ for all P_t implies that φ is either a KMS, ground, or ceiling state. The condition $L^P(\varphi) \geq 0$ for all P_t is equivalent to $-i\varphi(U^*\delta_\Phi(U)) \geq 0$ for all unitary U in the domain of δ_Φ and in the identity component of the group of all unitaries of \mathfrak{A} . A state φ satisfying this condition is called **passive**, and a state φ whose n -fold product with itself as a state on $\mathfrak{A}^{\otimes n}$ is passive relative to $\alpha_t^{\otimes n}$ for all n is called **completely passive**. The last property holds if and only if φ is a KMS, ground, or ceiling state (W. Pusz and S. L. Woronowicz, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 16 (1970)).

The totality of KMS, ground, and ceiling states can be characterized by a certain stability under perturbations (P_t considered above) under some additional condition on α_t (R. Haag, D. Kastler, and E. B. Trych-Pohlmeyer, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 38 (1974); O. Bratteli, A. Kishimoto, and D. W. Robinson, *Comm. Math. Phys.*, 61 (1978)).

When a lattice spin system is interpreted as a lattice gas, an operator $N_n \in \mathfrak{A}_n^{\text{cl}}$ (such as $(\sigma_z^{(n)} + 1)/2$) is interpreted as the particle number at the lattice site n and $N(\Lambda) = \sum_{n \in \Lambda} N_n$ is the particle number in Λ . It defines a representation of a unit circle T by automorphisms τ_θ of \mathfrak{A} defined as $\tau_\theta(A) = \lim_{\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{Z}^v} e^{iN(\Lambda)\theta} A e^{-iN(\Lambda)\theta}$ ($\Lambda \nearrow \mathbb{Z}^v$), called **gauge transformations** (of the first kind). The **grand canonical ensemble** can be formulated as a β -KMS state with respect to $\alpha_t \tau_{\mu t}$ (instead of α_t), where the real constant μ is called the **chemical potential**. It can be interpreted as an equilibrium state when the gauge-invariant elements $\{A \in \mathfrak{A} \mid \tau_\theta(A) = A\}$ instead of \mathfrak{A} are taken to be the algebra of observables or as a state stable under those perturbations that do not change the particle number.

H. The Boltzmann Equation

Statistical mechanics of irreversible processes originated from the kinetic theory of gases. Long ago, Maxwell and Boltzmann tried to calculate viscosity and other physical quantities characterizing gaseous flow in nonequilibrium. The \dagger Boltzmann equation is generally a nonlinear \dagger integrodifferential equation. On the basis of this equation mathematical theories were developed by D. Enskog, S. Chapman, and D. Hilbert [2].

Free electrons in a metal can be regarded

as forming an electron gas, in which electron scattering by lattice vibrations or by impurities is more important than electron-electron scattering. Following the example of gas theories H. A. Lorentz set forth a simple theory of irreversible processes of metallic electrons. His theory was, however, not quite correct, since metallic electrons are highly quantum-mechanical and classical theories cannot be applied to them. Quantum-mechanical theories of metal electrons were developed by A. Sommerfeld and F. Bloch.

I. Master Equations

The Boltzmann equation gives the velocity distribution function of a single particle in the system. This line of approach can be extended in two directions. The first is the so-called master equation. For example, consider a gaseous system consisting of N particles, and ask for the probability distribution of all the momenta, namely, the distribution function $f_N(p_1, \dots, p_N; t)$, where p_1, \dots, p_N are the momenta of the N particles. The equations of motion are deterministic with respect to the complete set of dynamical variables $(x_1, p_1, \dots, x_N, p_N)$. The equation for $f(p_1, \dots, p_N, t)$ may not be deterministic, but it may be stochastic because we are concerned only with the variables p_1, \dots, p_N , with all information about the space coordinates x_1, \dots, x_N disregarded. This situation is essentially the same in both classical and quantum statistical mechanics. If the duration of the observation process is limited to a finite length of time and the precision of the observation to a certain degree of crudeness, the time evolution of the momentum distribution function f_N can be regarded as a \dagger Markov process. In general, an equation describing a Markov process of a certain distribution function is called a **master equation**. Typically it takes the following form for a suitable choice of variables x :

$$\begin{aligned} &(\partial/\partial t)f(x, t) \\ &= \int dx' (W(x', x)f(x', t) - W(x, x')f(x, t)), \end{aligned} \quad (25)$$

where $W(x, x')$ is the transition probability from x to x' . By expanding the first integrand into a power series in $x - x'$, with x' fixed and by retaining the first few terms, we obtain the **Fokker-Planck equation**:

$$\begin{aligned} &(\partial/\partial t)f(x, t) = -(\partial/\partial x)(\alpha_1(x)f(x, t)) \\ &\quad + (\partial^2/\partial x^2)(\alpha_2(x)f(x, t))/2, \end{aligned} \quad (26)$$

$$a_n(x) = \int W(x, x+r)r^n dr. \quad (27)$$

J. The Hierarchy of Particle Distribution Functions

Another way of extending the Boltzmann equation is to consider a set of distribution functions of one particle, of two particles, and generally of n ($< N$) particles selected from the whole system of N particles. For example, a two-particle distribution function is the function $f_2(x_1, v_1, x_2, v_2, t)$ for positions and velocities of two particles at time t . The complete dynamics of the entire system of particles can be projected to the time evolution of this hierarchy of distribution functions. The equation of motion for f_1 then contains the function f_2 if the interaction of particles is pairwise, the equation for f_2 contains f_3 , and so on. Thus the equations of motion for the set of distribution functions make a chain of equations. The whole chain is equivalent to the deterministic equations of motion for the dynamics of N particles. However, if the particle number N is made indefinitely large, with the time scale of observation always finite, the chain of equations for the distribution functions asymptotically approaches a stochastic process if certain conditions are satisfied. Approximate methods of solving the hierarchy equations in classical cases have been developed by J. Yvon, J. G. Kirkwood, M. Born, H. S. Green, and others.

In quantum statistics, similar hierarchy equations can be considered. A typical example is the so-called **Green's function method** [27].

K. Irreversible Processes and Stochastic Processes

The statistical mechanics of physical processes evolving in time is a hybrid of dynamics and the mathematical theory of stochastic processes. A typical example is the theory of Brownian motion. A colloidal particle floating in a liquid moves incessantly and irregularly because of thermal agitation from surrounding liquid molecules. For simplicity, an example of 1-dimensional Brownian motion is considered here. Phenomenologically we assume that a colloid particle follows an equation of motion of the form

$$m\dot{u} = -m\gamma u + f(t), \tag{28}$$

called the **Langevin equation**, where m is the mass of the colloid particle and u is the velocity. The first term on the right-hand side is the friction force due to viscous resistance, and the second term represents a random force acting on the particle from surrounding molecules.

If (28) describes the Brownian motion in thermal equilibrium, the friction constant $m\gamma$

and the random force cannot be independent, but are related by a theorem asserting that

$$m\gamma = \int_0^\infty \langle f(t_1)f(t_1+t) \rangle dt. \tag{29}$$

In an electric conductor, the thermal motion of charge carriers necessarily induces irregularities of charge distribution, and so an electromotive force that varies in time in a random manner is created. This random electromotive force is similar to the random motion of a Brownian particle and is called the **thermal noise**. For such a thermal noise there exists a relation similar to (29) between the resistance and the random electromotive force. This relation is known as the **Nyquist theorem**. These theorems are contained in a more general theorem called the **fluctuation-dissipation theorem**.

When an external force is applied to a system in thermal equilibrium, some kind of irreversible flow, an electric current, for example, is induced in the system. The relationship between the flow and the external force is generally represented by an admittance. If the external force is periodic, the admittance is a function of frequency ω and is given by

$$\chi(\omega) = \int_0^\infty e^{-i\omega t} \psi(t) dt, \tag{30}$$

where $\psi(t)$ is equal to the correlation function of the flow that appears spontaneously as the fluctuation in thermal equilibrium when no external force is applied. This general expression for an admittance, often called the **Kubo formula**, gives a unified viewpoint from which responses of physical systems to weak external disturbances can be treated without recourse to the traditional kinetic approach.

The static limit ($\omega \rightarrow 0$) of the admittance is the **transport coefficient**. The reversibility of dynamics leads to relations among transport coefficients, called **Onsager's reciprocity relations** in the thermodynamics of irreversible processes.

When external disturbances are so large that the system deviates considerably from thermal equilibrium, the responses may show characteristic nonlinearities. Such nonlinear phenomena are important from both experimental and theoretical points of view, and constitute a central subject of modern research (\rightarrow 433 Turbulence and Chaos).

References

[1] L. Boltzmann, Lectures on gas theory, Univ. of California Press, 1964. (Original in German, 1912.)

Statistical Models

- [2] S. Chapman and T. G. Cowling, *The mathematical theory of non-uniform gases*, Cambridge Univ. Press, third edition, 1970.
- [3] R. C. Tolman, *The principles of statistical mechanics*, Oxford Univ. Press, 1938.
- [4] D. ter Haar, *Elements of statistical mechanics*, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1961.
- [5] J. W. Gibbs, *Elementary principles in statistical mechanics*, Yale Univ. Press, 1902 (Dover, 1960).
- [6] P. and T. Ehrenfest, *The conceptual foundations of the statistical approach in mechanics*, Cornell Univ. Press, 1959. (Original in German, 1911.)
- [7] I. E. Farquhar, *Ergodic theory in statistical mechanics*, Interscience, 1964.
- [8] V. I. Arnol'd and A. Avez, *Ergodic problems of classical mechanics*, Benjamin, 1968.
- [9] R. Jancel, *Foundations of classical and statistical mechanics*, Pergamon, 1963.
- [10] R. H. Fowler, *Statistical mechanics*, Cambridge Univ. Press, second edition, 1936.
- [11] A. Ya. Khinchin, *Mathematical foundation of statistical mechanics*, Dover, 1949. (Original in Russian, 1943.)
- [12] L. D. Landau and E. M. Lifshits, *Statistical physics*, Pergamon, 1969. (Original in Russian, 1964.)
- [13] R. Kubo, *Statistical mechanics*, North-Holland, 1965.
- [14] H. S. Green and C. A. Hurst, *Order-disorder phenomena*, Interscience, 1964.
- [15] H. E. Stanley, *Introduction to critical phenomena*, Oxford Univ. Press, 1971.
- [16] C. Domb and M. S. Green, *Phase transitions and critical phenomena*, Academic Press, 1972.
- [17] O. Bratteli and D. W. Robinson, *Operator algebras and quantum statistical mechanics II*, Springer, 1981.
- [18] D. Ruelle, *Statistical mechanics: Rigorous results*, Benjamin, 1969.
- [19] D. Ruelle, *Thermodynamic formalism*, Addison-Wesley, 1978.
- [20] D. W. Robinson, *The thermodynamic pressure in quantum statistical mechanics*, Springer, 1971.
- [21] R. B. Israel, *Convexity in the theory of lattice gas*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1979.
- [22] D. H. Mayer, *The Ruelle-Araki transfer operator in classical statistical mechanics*, Springer, 1980.
- [23] B. M. McCoy and T. T. Wu, *The two-dimensional Ising model*, Harvard Univ. Press, 1973.
- [24] N. S. Krylov, *Works on the foundation of statistical physics*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1979.
- [25] K. Huang, *Statistical mechanics*, Wiley, 1963.
- [26] F. Reif, *Fundamentals of statistical and thermal physics*, McGraw-Hill, 1965.

- [27] A. A. Abrikosov, L. P. Gor'kov, and I. E. Dzyaloshinskii, *Methods of quantum field theory in statistical physics*, Prentice-Hall, 1963. (Original in Russian, 1962.)
- [28] E. H. Lieb and D. C. Mattis, *Mathematical physics in one dimension*, Academic Press, 1966.

403 (XVIII.5) Statistical Models

A. General Remarks

A statistical model is defined by specifying the structure of the probability distributions of the relevant quantities. When a statistical model is used for the analysis of a set of data, its role is to measure the characteristics of a certain configuration of the data points. R. A. Fisher [1] advanced a systematic procedure for the application of statistical models. The process of statistical inference contemplated by Fisher may be characterized by the following three phases: (1) specification of the model, (2) estimation of the unknown parameters, and (3) testing the goodness of fit. The last phase is followed by the first when the result of the testing is negative. Thus the statistical inference contemplated by Fisher is realized through the process of introduction and selection of statistical models.

We always assume that the true distribution of an observation exists in each particular application of statistical inference, even though it may not be precisely known to us. Our partial knowledge of the generating mechanism of the observation suggests various possible constraints on the form of the true distribution. The basic problem of statistical inference is then to generate an approximation to the true distribution by using the available observational data and a model defined by a set of probability distributions satisfying the constraints.

B. The Criterion of Fit

The use of statistical models can best be explained by adopting the predictive point of view, which defines the objective of statistical inference as the determination of the predictive distribution, the probability distribution of a future observation defined as a function of the information available at present. The performance of a statistical inference procedure is then evaluated in terms of the expected discrepancy of the predictive distribution from the true distribution of the future observation.

The probabilistic interpretation of thermodynamic entropy developed by L. Boltzmann [2] provides a natural measure of the discrepancy between two probability distributions. The **entropy of a distribution** specified by the density $f(y)$ with respect to the distribution specified by $g(y)$ is defined by

$$B(f;g) = - \int \frac{f(y)}{g(y)} \log \left[\frac{f(y)}{g(y)} \right] g(y) dy,$$

where, as in what follows, the integral is taken with respect to some appropriate measure dy . This definition of entropy is a faithful reproduction of the original probabilistic interpretation of the thermodynamic entropy by Boltzmann and allows the interpretation that the entropy $B(f;g)$ is proportional to the logarithm of the probability of getting a statistical distribution of observations closely approximating $f(y)$ by taking a large number of independent observations from the distribution $g(y)$. (For a detailed discussion → [3].)

Obviously we have

$$B(f;g) = \int f(y) \log g(y) dy - \int f(y) \log f(y) dy.$$

The second term on the right-hand side is a constant depending only on $f(y)$. The first term is the expected log likelihood of the distribution $g(y)$ with respect to the true distribution $f(y)$. Thus a distribution with a larger value of the expected log likelihood provides a better approximation to the true distribution. Even when $f(y)$ is unknown, $\log g(y)$ provides an unbiased estimate of the expected log likelihood. This fact constitutes the basis of the objectivity of the likelihood as a criterion for judging the goodness of a distribution as an approximation to the true distribution.

C. Parametrization of Probability Distributions

When we construct a statistical model it is a common practice to represent the uncertain aspect of the true distribution by a family of probability distributions with unknown parameters. This type of family is called a parametric family; the model is called a parametric model. The parameters in a parametric model are the keys to the realization of the information extraction from data by statistical methods. Accordingly, the introduction of mathematically manageable parametric models forms the basis for the advance of statistical methods.

(1) Pearson's System of Distributions. A wide family of distributions can be generated by assuming a rational-function representation of

the sensitivity of the density function $f(y)$ given by

$$\frac{d}{dy} \log f(y) = \frac{a_0 + a_1 y + \dots + a_p y^p}{b_0 + b_1 y + \dots + b_q y^q}.$$

Pearson's system of distributions is defined by putting $p = 1$ and $q = 2$ and by assuming various constraints on the parameters a_i and b_j and the support of $f(y)$ [4].

E. Wong [5] discussed the construction of continuous-time stationary Markov processes with the distributions of Pearson's system as their stationary distributions. This allows a structural interpretation of the parameters of a distribution of the system.

(2) Maximum Entropy Principle and the Exponential Family. To develop a formal theory of statistical mechanics E. T. Janes [6] introduced the concept of the maximum entropy estimate of a probability distribution. This concept leads to a natural introduction of the exponential family. Following Kullback [7], we start with a distribution $g(y)$ and try to find $f(y)$ with prescribed expectations of statistics $T_1(y), \dots, T_k(y)$ and with maximum entropy $B(f;g)$. Such a distribution $f(y)$ is given by the relation

$$f(y) \propto \exp[\tau_1 T_1(y) + \dots + \tau_k T_k(y)] g(y),$$

where it is assumed that the right-hand side is integrable. By varying the parameters τ_1, \dots, τ_k over the allowable range we get the exponential family of distributions. I. J. Good [8] considered the Janes procedure as a principle for the generation of statistical hypotheses and called it the maximum entropy principle.

(3) Parametric Models of Normal Distributions. Of particular interest within the exponential family is the family of normal distributions. This is obtained by assuming the knowledge of the first- and second-order moments of a distribution and applying the maximum entropy principle [9]. Obviously, the parametrization of a normal distribution is concerned only with the mean vector and the variance-covariance matrix.

Let $\mathbf{X} = (X_1, \dots, X_n)'$ be an n -dimensional normal random variable with mean $E\mathbf{X} = (m_1, \dots, m_n)'$ and variance-covariance matrix $\Sigma = (\sigma_{ij})$, where $\sigma_{ij} = E(X_i - m_i)(X_j - m_j)$. (E denotes expectation and $'$ denotes the transpose.) A nonrestrictive family of n -dimensional normal distributions is characterized by $n + n(n + 1)/2$ parameters, m_i ($i = 1, \dots, n$), and σ_{ij} ($i = 1, \dots, n; j = 1, \dots, n$). The prior information on the generating mechanism of \mathbf{X} introduces constraints on these parameters and reduces the number of free parameters.

Reduction of the dimensionality of the

parameter vector $\mathbf{m} = (m_1, \dots, m_n)'$ is realized by assuming that \mathbf{m} is an element of a k -dimensional subspace of \mathbf{R}^n spanned by the vectors $\mathbf{a}_1 = (a_{11}, \dots, a_{1n})', \dots, \mathbf{a}_k = (a_{k1}, \dots, a_{kn})'$, i.e., by assuming the relation

$$\mathbf{m} = A\mathbf{c},$$

where $A = (\mathbf{a}_1, \dots, \mathbf{a}_k)$ is an $n \times k$ matrix and $\mathbf{c} = (c_1, \dots, c_k)'$ is a k -dimensional vector with $k < n$. This parametrization is obtained when for each X_i the observation (a_{i1}, \dots, a_{ik}) is made on a set of k factors and the analysis of the linear effect of these factors on the mean of X_i is required. We have the representation $\mathbf{X} = A\mathbf{c} + \mathbf{W}$, where \mathbf{W} is an n -dimensional normal random vector with $E\mathbf{W} = \mathbf{0}$ and variance-covariance matrix Σ (\rightarrow Section D).

To complete the model we have to specify the variance-covariance matrix Σ . One of the simplest possible specifications is obtained by assuming that the X_i are mutually independent and of the same variance σ^2 . This reduces Σ to $\sigma^2 I$, where I denotes an $n \times n$ identity matrix. With this assumption the number of necessary parameters to represent the variance-covariance matrix reduces from $n(n+1)/2$ to 1. The model obtained with the assumptions $\Sigma = \sigma^2 I$ and $\mathbf{m} = A\mathbf{c}$ is called the general linear model (or regression model) with normal error, or simply the **normal linear model**. The model is called a regression model also when the a_i are random variables (\rightarrow e.g., [10, 11]).

A typical example of nontrivial parametrization of the covariance structure of \mathbf{X} is obtained by assuming the representation

$$\mathbf{X} = \mathbf{m} + A\mathbf{F} + \mathbf{W},$$

where $\mathbf{F} = (f_1, \dots, f_g)'$ denotes the vector of random effects and \mathbf{W} the vector of measurement errors. It is assumed that \mathbf{F} and \mathbf{W} are mutually independent and normally distributed with $E\mathbf{F} = \mathbf{0}$ and $E\mathbf{W} = \mathbf{0}$. Also the components of \mathbf{W} are assumed to be mutually independent. The variance-covariance matrix Σ of \mathbf{X} is then given by

$$\Sigma = A\Phi A' + \Delta,$$

where $\Phi = E\mathbf{F}\mathbf{F}'$ and $\Delta = E\mathbf{W}\mathbf{W}'$, which is diagonal.

When A is a design matrix, the parametrization provides a **components-of-variance model** (or **random-effects model**) of which the main use is the measurement of the variance-covariance matrix Φ of the random effects f_1, \dots, f_g rather than the measurement of \mathbf{F} itself. If we consider \mathbf{F} to be representing the effects of some latent factors for which A is not uniquely specified, the above representation of Σ gives merely a formal, or noncausal, parametrization of Σ . In this case the model is

called the **factor analysis model** and the dimension g of \mathbf{F} is called the number of factors. By keeping the number of factors sufficiently smaller than the dimension of \mathbf{X} , we get a parametrization of Σ with a smaller number of free parameters than the unconstrained model. Starting with $g = 1$ and successively increasing the number of factors, we can get a hierarchy of models with successively increasing numbers of parameters. (\rightarrow [12] for a very general modeling of the variance-covariance matrix.)

(4) Parametrization of Discrete Distribution.

Consider the situation where the observation produces one of the events represented by $r = 0, 1, 2, \dots, k$ with probability $p(r)$, where k may be infinite. Represent by $\mathbf{X} = (X_1, \dots, X_n)$ the result of n independent observations. The probability $p(\mathbf{X})$ of getting such a result is given by the relation

$$\log p(\mathbf{X}) = \sum_{r=0}^k \theta_r n_r(\mathbf{X}),$$

where $\theta_r = \log p(r)$ and $n_r(\mathbf{X})$ denotes the number of X_i 's which are equal to r . (The term not depending on the θ_r 's is omitted in the above and subsequent formulas, since it is immaterial for problems of inference.) Thus a nonrestrictive model is obtained by assuming only the relations $\theta_r \leq 0$ and $\sum_{r=0}^k e^{\theta_r} = 1$. Obviously the model defines an exponential family and various useful parametrizations are realized by introducing some constraints on the parameters θ_r .

When the events r are arranged in a 2-dimensional array (i, j) ($i = 1, \dots, m; j = 1, \dots, n$) we have

$$\log p(\mathbf{X}) = \sum_{i=1}^m \sum_{j=1}^n \theta_{ij} n_{ij}(\mathbf{X}).$$

One simple parametrization is given by

$$\theta_{ij} = \mu + \alpha_i + \beta_j + \gamma_{ij},$$

where it is assumed that $\sum_{i=1}^m \alpha_i = \sum_{j=1}^n \beta_j = \sum_{i=1}^m \sum_{j=1}^n \gamma_{ij} = 0$. Obviously this is a parametrization of θ_{ij} as a linear function of the parameters α_i , β_j , and γ_{ij} , and the model thus obtained is called the **log linear model**. The model shows a formal similarity to the analysis-of-variance model (\rightarrow Section D). By introducing successively more restrictive assumptions on the parameters, we can get a hierarchy of models for the analysis of a two-way contingency table. Extension to cases when more than two factors are involved is obvious (\rightarrow e.g., [13]).

Here we consider that X_i is a dichotomous variable, i.e., $k = 1$, and that the probability of $X_i = 1$ may depend on i , i.e., we have

$$\log p(X_i) = n\theta_{0i} + (\theta_{1i} - \theta_{0i})n_1(X_i),$$

where $\theta_{0i} = \log \text{Prob}(X_i = 0)$ and $\theta_{1i} = \log \text{Prob}(X_i = 1)$. We assume that a vector of observations $\mathbf{a}_i = (a_{i1}, \dots, a_{im})'$ is available simultaneously with X_i and that we are interested in analyzing the relation between \mathbf{a}_i and the probability distribution of X_i . The analysis is realized by exploring the functional relation between $\tau_i = \theta_{1i} - \theta_{0i}$ and \mathbf{a}_i . We can assume a linear relation

$$\tau = A\mathbf{c},$$

where $\tau = (\tau_1, \dots, \tau_n)'$, $A = (\mathbf{a}_1, \dots, \mathbf{a}_n)'$, and $\mathbf{c} = (c_1, \dots, c_m)'$. The parameter $\tau_i = \log \{p(X_i = 1)/(1 - p(X_i = 1))\}$ is the log odds ratio or logit of the event $X_i = 1$, and the model is called the **linear logistic model** [14]. A hierarchy of models can be generated by assuming a successively more restrictive linear relations among the components of \mathbf{C} .

D. General Linear Models

Another class of models often used in practical applications is composed of general linear models or linear regression models, where the observed value is considered to be the sum of the effects of some fixed causes and the error.

Let $\mathbf{X} = (X_1, \dots, X_n)'$ be an n -dimensional random variable, and denote the expectation of \mathbf{X} by $E(\mathbf{X}) = (\mu_1, \dots, \mu_n)'$. If $E(\mathbf{X})$ is of the form $A\xi$ with an unknown parameter $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_k)'$, and a given $n \times k$ matrix A , then we can express \mathbf{X} as

$$\mathbf{X} = A\xi + \mathbf{W}, \quad E(\mathbf{W}) = (0, \dots, 0)', \tag{1}$$

with the **error term** $\mathbf{W} = (W_1, \dots, W_n)'$. We frequently assume a set of conditions on the distribution of \mathbf{X} ; for example, (i) X_1, \dots, X_n are mutually independent, (ii) X_1, \dots, X_n have a common unknown variance σ^2 , (iii) (X_1, \dots, X_n) is distributed according to an n -dimensional normal distribution. The equations (1) together with conditions on the distribution are called a **linear model**.

Among the methods of statistical analysis of linear models are regression analysis, analysis of variance, and analysis of covariance as explained below, but these are not clearly distinguished from each other. (I) In **design-of-experiment analysis**, i.e., **analysis of variance**, the matrix A and the vector ξ in (1) are called a **design matrix** and an **effect**, respectively. In this case entries of A are assumed to be either 1 or 0. (II) In **regression analysis**, we are first given a linear form $x = \sum_{j=1}^k a_j \xi_j$ of a vector $\mathbf{a} = (a_1, \dots, a_k)'$ with coefficient vector $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_k)'$. Let X_1, \dots, X_n be the observed values of x at n points $\mathbf{a}_1 = (a_{11}, \dots, a_{1k})', \dots, \mathbf{a}_n = (a_{n1}, \dots, a_{nk})'$, respectively, where $n > k$. If the observations are unbiased, that is, if $E(X_i) =$

$\sum_{j=1}^k a_{ij} \xi_j$, $i = 1, \dots, n$, then the model (1) is obtained with $A = (a_{ij})$. Usually one of the components of the vector \mathbf{a} is taken as unity. In this framework the form $x = \sum_j a_j \xi_j$ is called the **linear regression function** or **regression hyperplane**, and for $k = 2$, the graph of the linear function $x = a_1 \xi_1 + \xi_2$ and its coefficient ξ_1 are called the **regression line** and **regression coefficient**, respectively. The components of the vector \mathbf{a} are called **fixed variates** or **explanatory variables**. Frequently we encounter the case where the vector \mathbf{a} , and consequently the matrix A , are random variables. When this is the case, a discussion like that above can be carried out for given A by regarding $A\xi$ in (1) as the conditional expectation of the vector \mathbf{X} .

E. The Method of Least Squares

Consider the subspace $L(A)$ of the sample space \mathbf{R}^n spanned by the column vectors of A . Then the dimension s of $L(A)$ equals the rank of A , and $L(A)$ and its orthogonal complement $L^\perp(A)$ are called the **estimation space** and the **error space**, respectively. The orthogonal projection \mathbf{y} of a point \mathbf{x} to the space $L(A)$ is expressed as $\mathbf{y} = P_A \mathbf{x}$ with a real projection matrix P_A . The variable $\mathbf{Y} = P_A \mathbf{X}$ is called the **least squares estimator** of $E(\mathbf{X})$, and the routine of getting such an estimator \mathbf{Y} , called the **method of least squares**, minimizes the squared error $(\mathbf{X} - A\xi)'(\mathbf{X} - A\xi)$ for a given \mathbf{X} . This method consists of two operations solving the **normal equation** $A' A \xi = A' \mathbf{X}$ with respect to ξ , and setting $\mathbf{Y} = A \hat{\xi}$, where $\hat{\xi}$ is a solution of the equation. For $s = k$, we obtain $\mathbf{Y} = A(A'A)^{-1} A' \mathbf{X}$ directly. Even when $s < k$, where the solution of the normal equation is not unique, \mathbf{Y} is uniquely determined. The quantity $Q = \mathbf{X}'(I - P_A)\mathbf{X}$, where I is the unit $n \times n$ matrix, is the squared distance of the point \mathbf{X} from the space $L(A)$ and is called the **error sum of squares with $n - s$ degrees of freedom**.

A linear function $\beta' \xi$ of the parameter ξ with coefficient vector $\beta = (\beta_1, \dots, \beta_k)'$ is called a **linearly estimable parameter** (or **estimable parameter**) if there is a linear unbiased estimator, that is, an unbiased estimator of the form $\mathbf{b}' \mathbf{X}$, of $\beta' \xi$. In order that $\beta' \xi$ be estimable it is necessary and sufficient that β' be a linear combination $\mathbf{u}' A$ of the row vectors of the matrix A . A linear unbiased estimator that has minimum variance among all linear unbiased estimator uniformly in ξ is called the **best linear unbiased estimator (b.l.u.e.)**. If the conditions (i) and (ii) of Section D are satisfied, then for any given n -vector \mathbf{u} the b.l.u.e. of a parameter $\gamma = \mathbf{u}' A \xi$ is given by $\hat{\gamma} = \mathbf{u}' \mathbf{Y}$ with $\mathbf{Y} = P_A \mathbf{X}$, and its variance equals $(\mathbf{u}' P_A \mathbf{u}) \sigma^2$, while the expectation of the quantity Q is

given by $(n-s)\sigma^2$. This proposition is known as the **Gauss-Markov theorem**. Hence the b.l.u.e. $\hat{\gamma} = \mathbf{u}'\mathbf{Y}$ is frequently cited as the least squares estimator of γ . The quantity $\sigma^2 = Q/(n-s)$ is an unbiased estimator of σ^2 and is called the **mean square error**. If in addition the condition (iii) of Section D is assumed, then $\hat{\gamma}$ and $\hat{\sigma}^2$ are the uniformly minimum variance unbiased estimators of γ and σ^2 , respectively.

When the error term \mathbf{W} in (1) has covariance matrix $\Sigma = \sigma^2 \Sigma_0$ with an unknown real parameter σ^2 and a known matrix Σ_0 , the value of the parameter ξ minimizing $Q = (\mathbf{X} - A\xi)' \Sigma_0^{-1} (\mathbf{X} - A\xi)$ is called the **generalized least squares estimator** of ξ if it exists. This estimator has properties similar to those of the least squares estimator.

F. Model Selection and the Method of Maximum Likelihood

When a parametric family of distributions $\{f(\cdot|\theta); \theta \in \Theta\}$ is given and an observation x is made, $\log f(x|\theta)$ provides an unbiased estimate of the expected log likelihood of the distribution $f(\cdot|\theta)$ with respect to the true distribution of the observation. The value of θ which maximizes this estimate is the maximum likelihood estimate of the parameter and is denoted by $\hat{\theta}(x)$ (\rightarrow 399 Statistical Estimation).

In a practical application we often have to consider a **multiple model**, defined by a set of component models $\{f_i(\cdot|\theta_i); \theta_i \in \Theta_i\}$ ($i = 1, \dots, k$). The problem of model selection is concerned with the selection of a **component model** from a multiple model. The difference of the difficulties of handling a **simple model** defined by a one-component model, and a multiple model is quite significant. For a simple model $\{f(\cdot|\theta); \theta \in \Theta\}$, each member of the family is a probability distribution. In the case of a multiple model, its member is a model which is simply a collection of distributions and does not uniquely specify a probabilistic structure for the generation of an observation. Thus the likelihood of each component model with respect to the observation x cannot be defined and the direct extension of the method of maximum likelihood to the problem of model selection is impossible. This constitutes a serious difficulty for the handling of multiple models. Apparently, Fisher used the procedure of testing to solve this difficulty.

(1) Analysis of log Likelihood Ratios. The procedure of model selection by testing, which is applicable to a wide class of models, is the method of analysis of log likelihood ratios [15]. Consider the situation where a model is to be determined by using a hierarchy of

models $\{f(\cdot|\theta_i); \theta_i \in \Theta_i\}$ ($i = 1, \dots, k$) such that $\Theta_1 \subset \Theta_2 \subset \dots \subset \Theta_k$. The comparison of models is then realized through the comparison of the maximum likelihoods $f(x|\theta_i(x))$, where $\theta_i(x)$ denotes the maximum likelihood estimate of θ_i based on the data x . For $\Theta_i \subset \Theta_j$ the log likelihood ratio is defined by

$$\Lambda(\Theta_i/\Theta_j; x) = -2 \log \{f(x|\theta_i(x))/f(x|\theta_j(x))\}.$$

The analysis of log likelihood ratios is realized by the decomposition

$$\Lambda(\Theta_1/\Theta_k; x) = \Lambda(\Theta_1/\Theta_2; x) + \Lambda(\Theta_2/\Theta_3; x) + \dots + \Lambda(\Theta_{k-1}/\Theta_k; x).$$

The log likelihood ratios $\Lambda(\Theta_{k-1}/\Theta_k; x)$, $\Lambda(\Theta_{k-2}/\Theta_{k-1}; x)$, \dots , $\Lambda(\Theta_1/\Theta_2; x)$ are successively tested by referring to chi-square distributions with the degrees of freedom $d(k) - d(k-1)$, $d(k-1) - d(k-2)$, \dots , $d(2) - d(1)$, respectively, where $d(i)$ denotes the dimension of the manifold Θ_i . The assumption of the chi-square distributions is only asymptotically valid under the usual regularity conditions (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing). The model defined with Θ_i for which $\Lambda(\Theta_i/\Theta_{i-1}; x)$ first becomes significant is selected and $f(y|\theta_i(x))$ is accepted as the predictive distribution. The problem of how to choose the levels of significance to make the test procedure a procedure for model selection remains open.

(2) Model selection by AIC. One way out of the difficulty of model selection is to assume a prior distribution over Θ_i for each model $\{f_i(\cdot|\theta_i); \theta_i \in \Theta_i\}$. This leads to Bayesian modeling, which is discussed in Section G. Another possibility is to replace each component model $\{f_i(\cdot|\theta_i); \theta_i \in \Theta_i\}$ by a distribution $f_i(\cdot|\hat{\theta}_i(x))$ specified by the maximum-likelihood estimate $\hat{\theta}_i(x)$. The problem here is how to define the likelihood of each distribution $f_i(\cdot|\hat{\theta}_i(x))$. An information criterion **AIC** was introduced by H. Akaike [16] for this purpose; it is defined by

$$\text{AIC} = (-2) \log_e (\text{maximum likelihood}) + 2 (\text{number of estimated parameters}).$$

We may consider -0.5 AIC to be the log "likelihood" of $f(\cdot|\hat{\theta}(x))$ which is corrected for its bias as an estimate of $E_x E_y \log f(y|\hat{\theta}(x))$, where E_x denotes the expectation with respect to the true distribution of x , and where it is assumed that x and y are independent and identically distributed. The maximum "likelihood" estimate of the model is then defined by the model with minimum AIC. This realizes a procedure of model selection that avoids the ambiguity of the testing procedure. It is applicable, at least formally, even to the case of a nonhierarchical set of models.

G. Bayesian Models

Consider the situation where an observation x is made and it is desired to produce an estimate $p(y|x)$ of the true distribution of a future observation y . $p(y|x)$ is called a **predictive distribution**. Assume that x and y are sampled from one of the distributions within the family $\{g(y|\theta)f(x|\theta); \theta \in \Theta\}$, i.e., x and y are stochastically independent but share common structural information represented by θ . As a design criterion of $p(y|x)$ we assume a probability distribution $\pi(\theta)$ of θ . The model $\{f(\cdot|\theta); \theta \in \Theta\}$ with $\pi(\theta)$ is called a **Bayesian model** and $\pi(\theta)$ is called the **prior distribution**. From the relation

$$E_{\theta} E_{x|\theta} E_{y|\theta} \log p(y|x) = E_x E_{y|x} \log p(y|x),$$

where $E_{y|x}$ denotes the expectation of y conditional on x and E_x the expectation with respect to the marginal distribution of x , it can be seen that the optimal choice of $p(y|x)$ which maximizes the expected log likelihood is given by the conditional distribution

$$p(y|x) = \int g(y|\theta) p(\theta|x) d\theta,$$

where $p(\theta|x)$ is the **posterior distribution** of θ defined by

$$p(\theta|x) = f(x|\theta) \pi(\theta) \left(\int f(x|\theta) \pi(\theta) d\theta \right)^{-1}.$$

When a prior distribution $\pi(\theta)$ is specified, the parametric family of distributions $\{f(\cdot|\theta); \theta \in \Theta\}$ is converted into a stochastic structure which specifies a probability distribution of the observations. The likelihood of the structure, or the Bayesian model, with respect to an observation x is defined by

$$\int f(x|\theta) \pi(\theta) d\theta.$$

When there is uncertainty about the choice of the prior distribution we can consider a set of possible prior distributions and apply the method of maximum likelihood. Such a procedure is called the method of type II maximum likelihood by I. J. Good [17]. For a multiple model $\{f_i(\cdot|\theta_i); \theta_i \in \Theta_i\}$ ($i = 1, \dots, k$), if prior distributions $\pi_i(\theta_i)$ are defined, a model selection procedure is realized by selecting the Bayesian model with maximum likelihood.

Bayesian modeling has often been considered as not quite suitable for scientific applications unless the prior distribution is objectively defined. However, even the construction of an ordinary statistical model is always heavily dependent on our subjective judgment. Once the objective nature of the likelihood of a Bayesian model is recognized, the selection or determination of a Bayesian model can

proceed completely analogously to Fisher's scheme of statistical inference (\rightarrow e.g., [18]). The basic underlying idea of both the minimum AIC procedure and Bayesian modeling is the balancing of the complexity of the model against the amount of information available from the data. This unifying view of the construction of statistical models is obtained by the introduction of entropy as the criterion for judging the goodness of fit of a statistical model (\rightarrow [19] for more details).

References

- [1] R. A. Fisher, Statistical methods for research workers, Oliver & Boyd, 1925; Hafner, fourteenth edition, 1970.
- [2] L. Boltzmann, Über die Beziehung zwischen dem Zweiten Hauptsatz der mechanischen Wärmetheorie und der Wahrscheinlichkeitsrechnung respektive den Sätzen über das Wärmegleichgewicht, Wiener Berichte, 76 (1877), 373–435.
- [3] I. N. Sanov, On the probability of large deviations of random variables, IMS and AMS Selected Transl. Math. Statist. Prob., 1 (1961), 213–244. (Original in Russian, 1957.)
- [4] K. Pearson, Contributions to the mathematical theory of evolution II, Skew variation in homogeneous material, Philos. Trans. Roy. Soc. London, ser. A, 186 (1895), 343–414. Also included in Karl Pearson's early statistical papers, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1948, 41–112.
- [5] E. Wong, The construction of a class of stationary Markoff processes, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc. Symp. Appl. Math., 16 (1963), 264–276. Also included in A. H. Haddad (ed.), Nonlinear systems, Dowden, Hutchinson & Ross, 1975, 33–45.
- [6] E. T. Janes, Information theory and statistical mechanics, Phys. Rev., 106 (1957), 620–630.
- [7] S. Kullback, Information theory and statistics, Wiley, 1959 (Dover, 1967).
- [8] I. J. Good, Maximum entropy for hypothesis formulation, especially for multidimensional contingency tables, Ann. Math. Statist., 34 (1963), 911–934.
- [9] C. E. Shannon and W. Weaver, The mathematical theory of communication, Univ. of Illinois Press, 1949.
- [10] S. R. Searle, Linear models, Wiley, 1971.
- [11] F. A. Graybill, Theory and application of the linear model, Duxbury Press, 1976.
- [12] K. G. Jöreskog, A general method for analysis of covariance structures, Biometrika, 57 (1970), 239–251.
- [13] Y. M. M. Bishop, S. E. Feinberg, and P. W. Holland, Discrete multivariate analysis: Theory and practice, MIT Press, 1975.

Statistical Quality Control

- [14] D. R. Cox, *The analysis of binary data*, Chapman & Hall, 1970.
- [15] I. J. Good, Comments on the paper by Professor Anscombe, *J. Roy. Statist. Soc., ser. B*, 29 (1967), 39–42.
- [16] H. Akaike, A new look at the statistical model identification, *IEEE Trans. Automatic Control*, AC-19 (1974), 716–723.
- [17] I. J. Good, *The estimation of probabilities*, MIT Press, 1965.
- [18] G. E. P. Box, Sampling and Bayes' inference in scientific modeling and robustness, *J. Roy. Statist. Soc., ser. A*, 143 (1980), 383–430.
- [19] H. Akaike, A new look at the Bayes procedure, *Biometrika*, 65 (1978), 53–59.

404 (XVIII.14) Statistical Quality Control

A. General Remarks

According to the Japanese Industrial Standard (JIS) Z 8101, “**Quality Control (QC)** is a system comprising all the methods used in manufacturing products or providing services economically that meet the quality requirements of consumers.” To emphasize that modern quality control makes use of statistical methods, it is sometimes referred to as **Statistical Quality Control (SQC)**. In order to implement effective QC, statistical concepts and methods must be applied and the “Plan-Do-Check-Action” (PDCA) cycle must be followed in research and development, design, procurement, production, sales, and so on. These QC activities are executed on a company-wide basis from the top management to the production workers. This type of QC is called **Company-Wide Quality Control (CWQC)** or **Total Quality Control (TQC)**.

The quality Q is an abstract notion of the conformity of a product or service to consumers' requirements; it also refers to the total of the characteristics of a product or service as perceived by consumers. The quality characteristics may include both measurable physical and/or chemical features, such as strength and purity, or features such as color or texture as appreciated by individuals. These latter characteristics could be called “consumer qualities.” Furthermore, the concept “quality” has also been used to describe the social impact of a product or service. This might be called “social quality.” Examples of social-quality issues are pollution by solid waste or drainage in the production stage; degradation, maintainability, and safety of a product in

daily use; and pollution following disposal. For a product or service to conform to this sort of quality it has become necessary to conduct QC activities not only during production but also at early stages of design and development of new products.

The measured characteristics of quality vary from one product to another because of natural variability in the material and production process involved, ability of individual workers, errors in different sorts of measurement, etc. If the variations among the measured values from a process can be attributed to “chance causes” and their distribution expressed by a probability or a probability density function, the process is said to be in a “state of statistical control” according to W. A. Shewhart or in a “stable state” by JIS. In this case the value of a characteristic is deemed to be the realization of a random variable X . Sometimes the variations are attributed to “assignable causes,” which must be identified and eliminated.

B. Control Charts

The control chart provides a means of evaluating whether a process is in a stable state.

The control chart is made by plotting points illustrating a statistic of the quality characteristics or manufacturing conditions for an ordered series of samples or subgroups. A sheet of the control chart is provided with a middle line between a pair of lines depicting the upper control limit (UCL) and the lower control limit (LCL). The stable state is assumed to be exhibited by points within the control limits. Points falling outside the control limits suggest some assignable causes, which should be eliminated through corrective measures.

The idea underlying control charts as developed by Shewhart is to apply the statistical principle of significance to the control of production processes. Other types of control charts have also been developed, for example, acceptance control charts and adaptive control charts. These have been successfully applied to many quality control problems.

The foundation of Shewhart's control chart is the division of observations into what are called “rational subgroups.” A rational subgroup is the one within which variability is due only to chance causes. Between different subgroups, however, variations due to assignable causes might be detected. In most production processes the rational subgroup comprises the data collected over a short period of time during which essentially the same con-

dition in material, tool setting, environmental factors, etc., prevails.

The limits on the control charts are placed, according to Shewhart, at a 3σ distance from the middle line, where σ is the population standard deviation (or standard error) of the statistic; 3σ expresses limits of variability within the subgroup. Assuming that the population distribution of an observed characteristic is "normal," the range between the limits should include 99.7% of the points plotted so long as the process is "in control" at the middle value. Accordingly, 0.3% of the plotted points from the "in control" process fall outside the limits, and thus give an erroneous "out of control" signal.

To determine that the process is in control for a normally distributed characteristic $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$, we have to investigate the variability between the means μ and the standard deviations σ of different distributions of X for different subgroups. Thus the state of control of a process is determined with control charts for

$$\bar{X} = \sum_{i=1}^n X_i/n \quad \text{and} \quad s = \sqrt{\sum_{i=1}^n (X_i - \bar{X})^2 / (n-1)},$$

which are the appropriate statistics corresponding to μ and σ . Despite the theoretical drawback of the statistical range $R = \max_i X_i - \min_i X_i$ against s , use of the range is often preferred in QC work because of its simplicity in computation. Hence the \bar{X} - R charts are obtained from the previously collected k rational subgroups each of size n as follows:

$$UCL = \bar{\bar{X}} + A_2 \bar{R}, \quad UCL = D_4 \bar{R},$$

$$LCL = \bar{\bar{X}} - A_2 \bar{R}, \quad LCL = D_3 \bar{R},$$

where $\bar{\bar{X}}$ and \bar{R} are the averages of the k values of \bar{X} and R , respectively, and

$$A_2 = \frac{3}{\sqrt{nd_2}}, \quad D_4 = 1 + 3 \frac{d_3}{d_2}, \quad D_3 = 1 - 3 \frac{d_3}{d_2},$$

$$E[R] = d_2 \sigma, \quad V[R] = E[(R - E[R])^2] = d_3^2 \sigma^2.$$

For $n < 7$, LCL for R cannot be given because D_3 becomes negative.

The other commonly used control charts are the p chart (proportion of nonconformity: binomial distribution) and the c chart (number of defects: Poisson distribution). For those charts the above theory of normal distribution is also used to approximate the binomial and Poisson values.

It is generally sufficient to use the agreed-on decision criterion (3σ limits) and to recognize a relatively small risk ($\alpha = 0.003$) for practical purposes. It should be noted, however, that a shift of the process mean μ by 1σ would not be

observed at a ratio of 97.7%, which is the value of the risk β for each plotted point, under the normal distribution of the plotted statistic.

One reason why the control chart has been a practical tool in many applications is this lack of sensitivity to a relatively small shift of the level. If greater sensitivity is required, 2σ limits, "warning limits" are used. This results in a greater risk α of erroneously finding a process out of control.

Other decision criteria based on aspects of run theory are also used. Charts using accumulated data from several rational subgroups for each plotted value are sometimes recommended: Moving average and moving range charts and the cusum ("cumulative sum") chart are examples. The statistical theory for these charts is more complicated than that for the simple charts discussed here.

C. Sampling Inspection

Sampling inspection determines whether a lot should be accepted or rejected by drawing a sample from it, observing a quality characteristic of the sample, and comparing the observed value to a prescribed acceptance criterion. Sampling may be conducted in several stages. Definite criteria are required to decide at each stage whether to accept or reject the lot or continue sampling on the basis of sample values observed so far. There also must be some rules to determine the size of the next sample if it is to be taken. These criteria and rules together are called the **sampling inspection plan**. The number of samples eventually drawn and observed and their sizes are generally random variables. In **single sampling inspection** the final decision is always reached after one stage of sampling is completed. **Double sampling inspection** makes the final decision after at most two stages of sampling are completed. **Multiple sampling inspection** makes the final decision after at most N stages of sampling are completed ($N < \infty$). Inspection without a predetermined limit on the number of sampling stages, **sequential sampling inspection**, is usually constructed so that the probability of the indefinite continuation of sampling is 0.

Once a sampling inspection plan is determined, the probability for accepting a lot with given composition can be calculated. This probability as a function of lot composition is called the **operating characteristic** of the plan.

In most cases, the quality of a lot is expressed by a real parameter θ (e.g., fraction defective, i.e., percentage of defective products, or the average of some quality characteristic), and we use only inspection plans whose operating

characteristics are expressed as a function of θ . The graph of this function is called an **OC-curve**. We impose certain desirable conditions on the OC-curve and design plans to satisfy them. Tables for this purpose, **sampling inspection tables**, are prepared for practical use. The condition most frequently employed is expressed in the following form in terms of four constants $\theta_0, \theta_1, \alpha, \beta$: The probability of rejection is required to be at most α when $\theta \leq \theta_0$ (or $\theta \geq \theta_0$), and the probability of acceptance at most β when $\theta \geq \theta_1$ (or $\theta \leq \theta_1$). Here α is called the **producer's risk**, and β the **consumer's risk**.

If the rejection of a lot is identified with the rejection of a statistical hypothesis $\theta \leq \theta_0$, the OC-curve is actually the power curve of the test upside down (i.e., the graph of 1 minus the \dagger power function), and the producer's and consumer's risks are precisely the \dagger errors of the first and second kind. The choice of a plan is actually the choice of a test under certain conditions on its power curve. Commonly used plans are mostly based on well-established tests, some of which have certain optimum properties. A few examples, (1)–(4), are given below. Here **sampling inspection by attribute** is an inspection plan that uses a statistic with a discrete distribution, whereas **sampling inspection by variables** uses a statistic with a continuous distribution (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing).

(1) Single sampling inspection by attribute concerning the fraction of defective items in a lot: Let the defective fraction be denoted by p and identified with θ in the preceding paragraph. Assign two values of p , say p_0 and p_1 ($0 < p_0 < p_1 < 1$), the producer's risk α , and the consumer's risk β . Together they give conditions to be fulfilled by the OC-curve. Draw n items from a lot at random, and suppose that they contain Z defective items. The decision is then made after observing Z , whose distribution is \dagger hypergeometric and approximately \dagger binomial when the size of the lot is large enough. There exists a plan that minimizes n among all plans satisfying the imposed conditions under either of the two assumptions about the distribution of Z . It rejects the lot when Z is greater than a fixed number determined by p_0, p_1, α , and β . This plan is based on the \dagger UMP test of the hypothesis $p \leq p_0$ against the alternative $p \geq p_1$.

(2) Single sampling inspection by variables concerning the population mean μ in the case where the population distribution is $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$ with known σ^2 : Draw a sample (X_1, \dots, X_n) of size n from a lot. Assume that the X are independently distributed with the same distribution $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$. Suppose that smaller values of the quality characteristic stand for a more desirable quality. If two values of μ , say μ_0 and

μ_1 , α , and β are assigned, a plan can be established to minimize n . It rejects the lot when the sample mean $\bar{X} = \sum_{i=1}^n X_i/n$ exceeds a fixed number determined by μ_0, μ_1, α , and β . This too is based on the UMP test of $\mu \leq \mu_0$ against $\mu \geq \mu_1$.

(3) Cases where the samples are drawn in more than one stage: As in (2), assign two values of θ, α , and β ; there is still liberty to choose n_1, n_2, \dots , which are the sizes of the samples drawn at each stage. Hence there are many possible plans fulfilling the imposed conditions. Among them a plan is sought to minimize the expectation of $n = n_1 + n_2 + \dots$ (called the **average sample number**). For example, plans based on the sequential probability ratio tests are in common use (\rightarrow 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing).

(4) Among other special plans, **sampling inspection with screening** and **sampling inspection with adjustment** are worthy of mention. In the first plan, all the units in the rejected lots are inspected and defective units replaced by nondefective ones. In this case, fixing p_1 (the **lot tolerance percent defective**) and β , or the average fraction defective after the inspection (**average outgoing quality level**), we attempt to minimize the **expected amount of inspection**, that is, the expected number of inspected units including those in the rejected lots. In the second plan, acceptance criteria are tightened or loosened according to the quality of the lots just inspected.

References

- [1] J. M. Juran, Quality control handbook, McGraw-Hill, 1974.
- [2] Japanese Standard Association, Terminology, JIS Z 8101, 1963.
- [3] Japanese Standard Association, Sampling inspection, JIS Z 9001–9006, 1957.
- [4] Japanese Standard Association, Control charts, JIS Z 9021–9023, 1963.

405 (XVII.16) Stochastic Control and Stochastic Filtering

A. General Description of Stochastic Control

Stochastic control is an optimization method for systems subject to random disturbance. Let Γ be a compact convex subset of \mathbf{R}^k , called a control region. Let W_t be an $\dagger n$ -dimensional Brownian motion and $\sigma_t(W) = \sigma(W_s; s \leq t)$ (say \mathcal{F}_t) be the least $\dagger \sigma$ -field for which $W_s, s \leq t$, are

measurable. An \mathcal{F}_t -progressible measurable Γ -valued process is called an **admissible control**. For an admissible control U_t the system evolves according to an n -dimensional **controlled stochastic differential equation (CSDE)**

$$dX_t = \alpha(X_t, U_t) dW_t + \gamma(X_t, U_t) dt,$$

where a symmetric $n \times n$ matrix $\alpha(x, u)$ and n -vector $\gamma(x, u)$ are continuous in $\mathbf{R}^n \times \Gamma$ and Lipschitz continuous in $x \in \mathbf{R}^n$. Hence the CSDE has a unique solution, called the **response for U_t** . The problem is to maximize (or minimize) the performance J :

$$J(\tau, x, \varphi, U) = E_x \left[\int_0^\tau e^{-\int_0^s c(X_s, U_s) ds} f(X_s, U_s) dt + e^{-\int_0^\tau c(X_s, U_s) ds} \varphi(X_\tau) \right],$$

where X_t is the response for U_t with $X_0 = x$ and τ is a constant time or a \dagger hitting time associated with a target set. We put $V(\tau, x, \varphi) = \sup_{U \in \text{adm. control}} J(\tau, x, \varphi, U)$ the **value function** as a function of x . If the supremum value is attained at an admissible control \tilde{U}_t , then \tilde{U}_t is called an **optimal control**.

B. Bellman Principle

In order to get $V(t+s, x, \varphi)$, R. Bellman applied the following two-stage optimization. After using any U up to time t , a controller changes U to an optimal one. Then at time $t+s$ the performance $J(t+s, x, V(s, \cdot, \varphi), U)$ is obtained. Taking the supremum with respect to U , one gets $V(t+s, x, \varphi)$. This is called the **Bellman principle**. Let C be the \dagger Banach lattice of the totality of bounded and uniformly continuous functions on \mathbf{R}^n . Suppose that α, γ, f and $c(\geq 0)$ are bounded and smooth; then for constant time t , the value function $V(t, x, \varphi)$ belongs to C whenever $\varphi \in C$. Moreover, the family of operators $V(t)$ defined by $V(t)\varphi(x) = V(t, x, \varphi)$ becomes a \dagger monotone contraction semigroup on C . The semigroup property $V(t+s, x, \varphi) = V(t, x, V(s, \cdot, \varphi))$ is nothing but the Bellman principle. The \dagger generator G is expressed by

$$G\varphi(x) = \sup_{u \in \Gamma} \{L^u \varphi(x) - c(x, u)\varphi(x) + f(x, u)\}$$

for a smooth function φ , where L^u is the generator of \dagger diffusion of the response for constant control $u(\in \Gamma)$, namely,

$$L^u = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j,p=1}^n \alpha_{ip}(x, u) \alpha_{jp}(x, u) \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} + \sum_{i=1}^n \gamma_i(x, u) \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i}.$$

Furthermore, assume that α is uniformly posi-

tive definite and φ is smooth. Then $V(t)\varphi(x)$ belongs to $\dagger W_{p, \text{loc}}^{1,2}$ for any p and is the unique solution of the **Bellman equation** (=dynamic programming equation)

$$\frac{\partial W}{\partial t} = \sup_{u \in \Gamma} \{L^u W - c(x, u)W + f(x, u)\}$$

a.e. on $(0, \infty) \times \mathbf{R}^n$, $W(0, x) = \varphi(x)$ on \mathbf{R}^n .

In addition if $\inf_{x,u} c(x, u) > 0$, then $W = \lim_{t \rightarrow \infty} V(t)\varphi$ exists and is the unique solution of the Bellman equation $\sup_{u \in \Gamma} \{L^u W - c(x, u)W + f(x, u)\} = 0$ a.e. on \mathbf{R}^n . When τ is the hitting time, the value function is related to the Bellman equation with a boundary condition.

C. Feedback Control

In practical problems we specify the kind of information on which the decision of the controller can be based at each time. We frequently assume that the data obtained up to that time is available. The following situations are possible: (1) The controller knows the complete state of the system. This is called the case of **complete observation**. (2) The controller has partial knowledge of the state of system. This is called the case of **partial observation**. A feedback control (= **policy**) is a function of available information, namely, a Γ -valued progressible measurable function defined on $[0, \infty) \times C^j[0, \infty)$, where j is the dimension of data and $C^j[0, \infty)$ is a metric space of totality of j -vector valued continuous functions on $[0, \infty)$. A policy U is called a **Markovian policy** if $U(t, \xi)$ is a Borel function of t and the t th coordinate of ξ . When a policy U is applied, the system is governed by the \dagger SDE

$$dX_t = \alpha(X_t, U(t, Y)) dW_t + \gamma(X_t, U(t, Y)) dt$$

with data process Y . When the SDE has a \dagger weak solution, U is called admissible. For example, when $X = Y$, any Markovian policy is admissible if α is uniformly positive definite. Let X_t be a weak solution for U . Then its performance $J(\tau, x, \varphi, U) \leq V(\tau, x, \varphi)$.

(1) The case of **complete observation**. When α is uniformly positive definite, an optimal Markovian policy can be constructed in the following way. Since Γ is compact, there exists a Borel function \tilde{U} on $[0, \infty) \times \mathbf{R}^n$ which gives the supremum, namely,

$$\begin{aligned} \sup_{u \in \Gamma} \{L^u V(t)\varphi(x) - c(x, u)V(t)\varphi(x) + f(x, u)\} \\ = L^{\tilde{U}(t,x)} V(t)\varphi(x) - c(x, \tilde{U}(t, x))V(t)\varphi(x) \\ + f(x, \tilde{U}(t, x)). \end{aligned}$$

This relation implies that $V(t)\varphi(x) = J(t, x, \varphi, \tilde{U}(t, X_t))$ for any weak solution X_t . Hence

\tilde{U} is an optimal Markovian policy. Especially when α , c , and f are independent of u and $\gamma(x, u) = R(x) \cdot u$, where $R(x)$ is an $n \times k$ matrix, an optimal Markovian policy \tilde{U} is obtained by a measurable selection of maximum points of $(\text{grad. } V(t)\phi, R(x) \cdot u)$. Since the supremum of a linear form is attained at the boundary $\partial\Gamma$, one can suppose that $\tilde{U}(t, x)$ belongs to $\partial\Gamma$. This is called **bang-bang control**.

(2) The case of **partial observation**. One useful method is the **separation principle**. This means that the control problem can be split into two parts. The first is the mean square estimate for the system using a \dagger filtering. The second is a stochastic optimal control with complete observation. But generally speaking, the problem of deciding under what conditions the separation principle is valid is difficult. In the case of the following linear regulator the separation principle holds.

Suppose that the system process X_t and the observation process Y_t obey the following SDEs:

$$dX_t = A(t)dW_t + (B(t)X_t + b(t, U(t, Y)))dt,$$

$$dY_t = d\tilde{W}_t + H(t)X_t dt,$$

where $A(t)$, $B(t)$, and $H(t)$ are nonrandom matrix-valued functions and \tilde{W}_t is a j -dimensional Brownian motion independent of W_t . The problem is to search for a feedback control which gives the maximum value. Suppose that a feedback control $U(t, \xi)$ is Lipschitz continuous in $\xi \in C^j[0, \infty)$. Put

$$Q(s, x) = \sup_{U, \text{Lip}} E_{sx} \left[\int_s^T L(t, X_t, U(t, Y)) dt + \Phi(X_T) \right],$$

where (X_t, Y_t) is the unique solution for U with the initial condition $X_s = x$, $Y_s = 0$. By the Lipschitz condition of U , $\sigma_t = \sigma(Y_s; s \leq t)$ is independent of U , and the \dagger conditional expectation $\hat{X}_t = E(X_t/\sigma_t)$ is governed by the following SDE, by way of the \dagger Kalman-Bucy filter:

$$d\hat{X}_t = P(t)H'(t)dW_t^* + (B(t)\hat{X}_t + b(t, \tilde{U}_t))dt$$

with some σ_t -progressible measurable control \tilde{U}_t and an n -dimensional Brownian motion W_t^* adapted to σ_t . Moreover, $P(t)$ is the \dagger error matrix satisfying the \dagger Riccati equation, and H' is the transpose of H . Let $g(t, x)$ be the probability density of the normal distribution $N(0, P(t))$, and put $\tilde{L}(t, \hat{x}, u) = \int L(t, x, u) g(t, x - \hat{x}) dx$ and $\tilde{\Psi}(\hat{x}) = \int \Psi(x) g(T, x - \hat{x}) dx$; then the problem turns into

$$Q(s, x) = \sup_{\tilde{U}} E_{sx} \left[\int_s^T \tilde{L}(t, \hat{X}_t, \tilde{U}_t) dt + \tilde{\Psi}(\hat{X}_T) \right].$$

Recalling the SDE for \hat{X}_t , we can use the Bellman equation for choosing an optimal one.

D. Stochastic Maximum Principle

A stochastic version of \dagger Pontryagin's maximum principle gives a necessary condition for optimality. This means that the instantaneous value of optimal control maximizes the stochastic analog of Pontryagin's Hamiltonian. Suppose that the system evolves according to an n -dimensional CSDE

$$dX_t = \alpha(X_t)dW_t + \gamma(X_t, U_t)dt.$$

The problem is to seek conditions on admissible control U_t such that $E_x[\int_0^T f(X_t, U_t)dt]$ is maximized, where T is a constant time. Assume that α , γ , and f are bounded and smooth. Define a Hamiltonian H on $\mathbf{R}^n \times \Gamma \times \mathbf{R}^n$ by $H(x, u, \Psi) = \gamma(x, u) \cdot \Psi + f(x, u)$. Let \tilde{U}_t be optimal and \tilde{X}_t its response starting at x . Then under some conditions there exist $\lambda \geq 0$ and \mathcal{F}_t -progressively measurable $q_{t,k} = (q_{t,k_1}, q_{t,k_2}, \dots, q_{t,k_n})$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) and $\Psi_t = (\Psi_{t,1}, \dots, \Psi_{t,n})$ which satisfy the SDE

$$d\Psi_{t,k} = - \left(\frac{\partial \gamma}{\partial x_k}(\tilde{X}_t, \tilde{U}_t) \cdot \Psi_t + \lambda \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_k}(\tilde{X}_t, \tilde{U}_t) \right) dt + q_{t,k} dW_t, \quad k = 1, \dots, n,$$

and $H(\tilde{X}_t, \tilde{U}_t, \Psi_t) = \max_{u \in \Gamma} H(\tilde{X}_t, u, \Psi_t)$ a.e.

E. Optimal Stopping and Impulse Control

Suppose that X_t is an n -dimensional diffusion whose generator A is an elliptic differential operator. Let τ be a \dagger stopping time. The optimal stopping problem is to seek a stopping time $\tilde{\tau}$ so that $E_x[g(X_{\tilde{\tau}})]$ is maximized, where g is nonnegative and continuous. $\tilde{\tau}$ is called optimal. The value function $V(x) = \sup_{\tau} E_x[g(X_{\tau})]$ is characterized as the least \dagger excessive majorant of g . Moreover, under some conditions V belongs to the domain of A and is the unique solution of the \dagger free boundary problem; $V \geq g$, $AV \leq 0$, and $(V - g) \cdot AV = 0$. Therefore, in the Hilbert space framework, the value function is related to the variational inequality. An optimal stopping time is provided by the hitting time for the set $\{x | V(x) = g(x)\}$.

Impulse control is a variant of the optimal stopping problem. At some moment (= stopping time) a controller shifts the current state to some other state. But not all shifts are allowed: State x can be shifted to a state of $x + [0, \infty)^n$. Let τ_k , $k = 1, 2$, be a sequence of increasing stopping times and ξ_k be a $[0, \infty)^n$ -valued $\sigma_{\tau_k}(X)$ -measurable random variable. The sequence $U = \{\tau_1, \xi_1, \tau_2, \xi_2, \dots\}$ is called an impulse control. U transfers the process X_t to

$$Y_t^U = X_0 + \int_0^t \alpha(Y_s^U)dw_s + \int_0^t \gamma(Y_s^U)ds + \sum_{\tau_i \leq t} \xi_i,$$

if

$$A = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j} \alpha \alpha^*(x)_{ij} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} + \sum_i \gamma_i(x) \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i},$$

and the problem is to seek U so as to maximize $E_x[\int_0^T e^{-\lambda t} f(Y_t^U) dt - \sum_{k=1}^\infty e^{-\lambda t_k} K(\xi_k)]$, where $\lambda (>0)$ is constant and the function $K (>0)$ stands for the cost of shifting. The value function is related to a quasivariational inequality.

F. General Description of Stochastic Filtering

The problem of estimating the original signal from data disturbed by noises is called a **stochastic filtering** problem. Let $X_t, t \in [0, T]$, be a continuous stochastic process with values in \mathbf{R}^n , called a **signal** (or **system**) process. It is transformed (or coded) to $h(t, X_t)$, where $h(t, x)$ is an m -vector-valued continuous function. Suppose that it is disturbed by a noise \dot{W}_t and we observe $\dot{Y}_t = h(t, X_t) + \dot{W}_t$. Usually \dot{W}_t is assumed to be a \dagger white noise independent of X_t . Since the white noise is a generalized function, the integral of \dot{Y}_t , i.e.,

$$Y_t = \int_0^t h(s, X_s) ds + W_t,$$

is called an **observation process**, where W_t is an $\dagger m$ -dimensional Brownian motion independent of X_t . It is assumed for convenience that $|X_t|^2$ and $\int_0^t |h(s, X_s)|^2 ds$ are integrable.

Assume that X_t is a 1-dimensional signal process. The least square estimation of X_t by nonlinear functions of observed data $Y_s, s \leq t$, is called a **nonlinear filter** of X_t and is denoted by \hat{X}_t . Let \mathcal{F}_t or $\sigma(Y_s; s \leq t)$ be the least $\dagger \sigma$ -field for which $Y_s, s \leq t$, are measurable. Then the filter \hat{X}_t is equal to an $\dagger \mathcal{F}_t$ -measurable random variable such that $E|X_t - \hat{X}_t|^2 \leq E|X_t - Z|^2$ holds for any \mathcal{F}_t -measurable L^2 random variable Z . Hence it coincides with the \dagger conditional expectation $E[X_t | \mathcal{F}_t]$. Now let H_t be the closed linear space spanned by $Y_s, s \leq t$. The least square estimation of X_t by elements of H_t , i.e., the orthogonal projection of X_t onto H_t , is called the **linear filter** of X_t and is denoted by \tilde{X}_t . Obviously, the mean square error of a nonlinear filter is less than or equal to that of a linear filter, but a linear filter is calculated more easily. If (X_t, Y_t) is a \dagger Gaussian process, both filters coincide.

When X_t is an n -dimensional process (X_t^1, \dots, X_t^n) , the n -vector process $\hat{X}_t = (\hat{X}_t^1, \dots, \hat{X}_t^n)$ (or $\tilde{X}_t = (\tilde{X}_t^1, \dots, \tilde{X}_t^n)$) is called the **nonlinear** (or **linear**) **filter** of X_t .

G. Kalman-Bucy Filter

Suppose that the signal process X_t is governed by a \dagger linear stochastic differential equation

(LSDE)

$$\dot{X}_t = A(t)X_t + \int_0^t B(s)X_s ds + \int_0^t C(s) d\tilde{W}_s,$$

where $A(s)$ (or $B(s)$) is an $n \times n$ (or $n \times r$) matrix-valued continuous function, \tilde{W}_t is an r -dimensional Brownian motion independent of the noise W_t , and the initial data X_0 is a Gaussian random variable independent of W_t and \tilde{W}_t . Suppose further that $h(t, x)$ is linear, i.e., $h(t, x) = H(t)x$, where $H(t)$ is an $m \times n$ -matrix-valued function. Then the joint process (X_t, Y_t) is Gaussian. Hence the nonlinear filter \hat{X}_t coincides with the linear filter and satisfies

$$\begin{aligned} \dot{\hat{X}}_t &= E[X_0] + \int_0^t (A(s) - P(s)H(s)'H(s))\hat{X}_s ds \\ &\quad + \int_0^t P(s)H(s)' dY_s, \end{aligned}$$

where $H(s)'$ is the transpose of $H(s)$, and $P(t) = (P_{ij}(t))$ is the **error matrix** defined by $P_{ij}(t) = E(X_t^i - \hat{X}_t^i)(X_t^j - \hat{X}_t^j)$. It satisfies the **matrix Riccati equation**

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{dP(t)}{dt} &= A(t)P(t) + P(t)A(t)' \\ &\quad - P(t)H(t)'H(t)P(t) + B(t)B(t)', \end{aligned}$$

$P(0) = \text{covariance of } X_0$.

Let $\Phi(t, s)$ be the \dagger fundamental solution of the linear differential equation $dx/dt = (A(t) - P(t)H(t)'H(t))x$. Then the solution \hat{X}_t is represented by

$$\hat{X}_t = \Phi(t, 0)E[X_0] + \int_0^t \Phi(t, s)P(s)H(s)' dY_s.$$

This algorithm is called the **Kalman-Bucy filter** [1]. Analogous results for discrete-time models have been obtained by Kalman.

H. Nonlinear Filter

In the study of nonlinear filters, the \dagger conditional distribution $\pi(dx) = P(X_t \in dx | \mathcal{F}_t)$ is considered besides \hat{X}_t . Suppose that X_t is governed by the SDE

$$\dot{X}_t = a(t, X_t) + \int_0^t b(s, X_s) d\tilde{W}_s,$$

where $a(s, x)$ (or $b(s, x)$) is an n -vector ($n \times r$ -matrix) valued Lipschitz continuous function. Then $\pi_t(f) = \int f(x)\pi_t(dx)$ satisfies the SDE

$$\begin{aligned} \dot{\pi}_t(f) &= E[f(X_0)] + \int_0^t \pi_s(Lf) ds \\ &\quad + \int_0^t (\pi_s(h_s f) - \pi_s(h_s)(f))(dY_s - \pi_s(h_s)ds), \end{aligned}$$

where $h_s(x) = h(s, x)$ and

$$L_f(x) = \sum_i a^i(s, x) \frac{\partial f}{\partial x^i} + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j} \left(\sum_k b_{ik}(s, x) b_{jk}(s, x) \right) \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x^i \partial x^j}.$$

Under additional conditions on $a(s, x)$ and $b(s, x)$, $\pi_t(dx)$ has a density function $\rho_t(x)$, and it satisfies

$$\pi_t(x) = \pi_0(x) + \int_0^t L^* \pi_s(x) ds + \int_0^t \pi_s(x) (h_s(x) - \int \pi_s(x) h_s(x) dx) \left(dy_s - \left(\int \pi_s(x) h_s(x) dx \right) ds \right),$$

where L^* is the formal adjoint of L .

The process $I_t \equiv Y_t - \int_0^t \pi_s(h_s) ds$ is a Brownian motion such that $\sigma(I_s; s \leq t) \subset \mathcal{F}_t$ holds for any t . If $\sigma(I_s; s \leq t) = \mathcal{F}_t$ holds for all t , I_t is called the **innovation** of Y_t . The innovation property is not valid in general. A sufficient condition is that (X_t, Y_t) is a Gaussian process or $h(t, x)$ be a bounded function. However, in any case, \mathcal{F}_t -adapted martingales are always represented as \mathcal{F}_t -stochastic integrals of the form $\sum_{i=1}^n \int_0^t f_s^i(\omega) dI_s^i$, where the f_s^i are \mathcal{F}_s -adapted processes.

I. Bayes Formula

Let C (or D) be the space of all continuous mappings x (or y) from $[0, T]$ into \mathbf{R}^n (or \mathbf{R}^m) equipped with the uniform topology. x_t (y_t) is the value of x (y) at time t . Let $\mathcal{B}_t(C)$ be the least σ -field of C for which $x_s, s \leq t$, are measurable. $\mathcal{B}_t(D)$ is defined similarly. We denote by $\Phi_X, \Phi_W, \Phi_{X,Y}$ the laws of processes X_t, W_t , and (X_t, Y_t) , respectively. These are defined on $\mathcal{B}_T(C), \mathcal{B}_T(D)$, and $\mathcal{B}_T(C) \otimes \mathcal{B}_T(D)$, respectively. Then $\Phi_{X,Y}$ is equivalent (mutually absolutely continuous) to the product measure $\Phi_X \otimes \Phi_W$ on each $\mathcal{B}_t(C) \otimes \mathcal{B}_t(D)$. The \mathcal{F}_t -Radon-Nikodym density α_t of $\Phi_{X,Y}$ with respect to $\Phi_X \otimes \Phi_W$ is written as

$$\alpha_t(x, y) = \exp \left\{ \sum_i \int_0^t h^i(s, x_s) dy_s^i - \frac{1}{2} \sum_i \int_0^t h^i(s, x_s)^2 ds \right\},$$

where h^i and y^i are the corresponding components of vectors and dy_s^i denotes the \mathcal{F}_t -Ito integral.

The conditional distribution $\pi_t(dx)$ is computed by the Bayes formula:

$$\pi_t(f) = \frac{\rho_t(f)}{\rho_t(1)}, \quad \rho_t(f) = \int f(x_t) \alpha_t(x, Y) \Phi_X(dx),$$

where $Y = (Y_s; 0 \leq s \leq T)$. Moreover, $\rho_t(f)$ satisfies the LSDE

for the LSDE

$$\rho_t(f) = \rho_0(f) + \int_0^t \rho_s(Lf) ds + \int_0^t \rho_s(h_s) \rho_s(f) dI_s.$$

The density $\rho_t(x)$ (if x exists) satisfies

$$\rho_t(x) = \rho_0(x) + \int_0^t L^* \rho_s(x) ds + \int_0^t \rho_s(x) \left(\int \rho_s(y) h_s(y) dy \right) dI_s.$$

If $h(t, x)$ is a smooth function, then $\alpha_t(x, y)$ is continuous in y , so that $\pi_t(f)$ or $\rho_t(f)$ is a continuous functional of the observed data $(Y_s; s \leq t)$. Thus the filter π_t is a \mathcal{F}_t -robust statistic.

Remarks. (i) the signal and noise are not independent if the signal is controlled based on the observed data. In these cases, correction terms are sometimes needed for the SDE of the nonlinear filter. (ii) If the \mathcal{F}_t -sample paths of the signal process are not continuous, a similar SDE for a nonlinear filter is valid with L being replaced by some integrodifferential operator. If it is a \mathcal{F}_t -Markov chain with finite state, L is the generator of the chain. (iii) Several results are known for the case where the noise W_t is not a Brownian motion but a \mathcal{F}_t -Poisson process.

References

- [1] W. F. Fleming and R. W. Rishel, Deterministic and stochastic optimal control, Springer, 1975.
- [2] R. Bellman, Dynamic programming, Princeton Univ. Press, 1957.
- [3] N. V. Krylov, Controlled diffusion processes, Springer, 1980. (Original in Russian, 1977.)
- [4] M. Nisio, Stochastic control theory, Indian Statist. Inst. Lect. Notes, Macmillan, 1981.
- [5] H. J. Kushner, On the stochastic maximum principle, fixed time of control, J. Math. Anal. Appl., 11 (1965), 78–92.
- [6] A. N. Shiryaev, Optimal stopping rules, Springer, 1980. (Original in Russian, 1976.)
- [7] A. Bensoussan and J. L. Lions, Sur la théorie du contrôle optimal. I, Temps d'arrêt; II, Contrôle impulsif, Hermann, 1977.
- [8] R. S. Bucy and R. E. Kalman, New results in linear filtering and prediction theory, J. Basic Eng. ASME, (D) 83 (1961), 95–108.
- [9] R. S. Bucy and D. D. Joseph, Filtering for stochastic processes with applications to guidance, Interscience, 1968.
- [10] M. Fujisaki, G. Kallianpur, and H. Kunita, Stochastic differential equations for the nonlinear filtering problem, Osaka J. Math., 9 (1972), 19–40.

[11] R. S. Liptzer and A. N. Shiryaev, Statistics of stochastic processes. I, General theory; II, Applications, Springer, 1977, 1978. (Original in Russian, 1974.)

[12] G. Kallianpur, Stochastic filtering theory, Springer, 1980.

406 (XVII.14) Stochastic Differential Equations

A. Introduction

Stochastic differential equations were rigorously formulated by K. Itô [7] in 1942 to construct diffusion processes corresponding to Kolmogorov's differential equations. For this purpose he introduced the notion of stochastic integrals, and thus a differential-integral calculus for sample paths of stochastic processes was established. This theory, often called Itô's stochastic analysis or stochastic calculus, has brought an epoch-making method to the theory of stochastic processes. It provides us with a fundamental tool for describing and analyzing diffusion processes that we can apply effectively to limit theorems and to the probabilistic study of problems in analysis. It also plays an important role in the statistical theory of stochastic processes, such as [†]stochastic control or [†]stochastic filtering. Stochastic differential equations on manifolds provide a probabilistic method for differential geometry, sometimes called stochastic differential geometry. Recently, many interesting examples of infinite-dimensional stochastic differential equations have been introduced to describe probabilistic models in physics, biology, etc.

A unified theory of stochastic calculus has been developed in the framework of Doob's martingale theory and this, combined with Stroock and Varadhan's idea of martingale problems, provides an important method in the theory of stochastic processes (\rightarrow 262 Martingales).

B. Stochastic Integrals

As is well known, almost all sample paths of a Wiener process are continuous but nowhere differentiable (\rightarrow 45 Brownian Motion), and hence integrals with respect to these functions cannot be defined as the usual Stieltjes integrals. But these integrals can be defined by making use of the stochastic nature of Brownian motion. Wiener defined them (the Wiener integrals) for nonrandom integrands, but Itô

defined them for a large class of random integrands. Itô's integrals have been extended in the martingale framework by H. Kunita and S. Watanabe, and by others [14, 19], as shown below.

Let (Ω, \mathcal{F}, P) be a probability space, and let $\mathbf{F} = \{\mathcal{F}_t\}_{t \geq 0}$ be an increasing family of σ -subfields of \mathcal{F} . Usually we assume that $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ is right continuous, i.e., $\mathcal{F}_{t+0} = \bigcap_{\varepsilon > 0} \mathcal{F}_{t+\varepsilon} = \mathcal{F}_t$ for every $t \geq 0$. Denote by $\mathcal{M} = \mathcal{M}(\mathbf{F})$ the totality of all continuous square-integrable martingales $X = (X_t)$ relative to $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$; to be precise, X is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -martingale such that, with probability 1, $X_0 = 0$, $t \rightarrow X_t$ is continuous and $E(X_t^2) < \infty$ for every $t \geq 0$. We introduce the metric $\|X - Y\| = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} 2^{-k} \min(1, \|X_k - Y_k\|_2)$ on \mathcal{M} where $\|\cdot\|_2$ stands for the $L_2(\Omega, P)$ -norm. We always identify two stochastic processes $X = (X_t)$ and $Y = (Y_t)$ if sample functions $t \rightarrow X_t$ and $t \rightarrow Y_t$ coincide with probability 1. Then, by virtue of Doob's inequality $\|\max_{0 \leq s \leq t} |X_s - Y_s|\|_2 \leq 2\|X_t - Y_t\|_2$ (\rightarrow 262 Martingales), \mathcal{M} becomes a complete metric vector space.

Next, by an **integrable increasing process** we mean a process $A = (A_t)$ with the following properties: (i) A is adapted to $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$, i.e., A_t is \mathcal{F}_t -measurable for every $t \geq 0$; (ii) with probability 1, $A_0 = 0$, $t \rightarrow A_t$ is continuous and nondecreasing; (iii) A_t (≥ 0) is integrable for every $t \geq 0$, i.e., $E(A_t) < \infty$. We denote by $\mathcal{A} = \mathcal{A}(\mathbf{F})$ the totality of integrable increasing processes. We call a process $V = (V_t)$ an **integrable process of bounded variation** if V is expressed as $V_t = A_t^1 - A_t^2$ with $A^1, A^2 \in \mathcal{A}$. The totality of integrable processes of bounded variation is denoted by $\mathcal{V} = \mathcal{V}(\mathbf{F})$. It follows from the [†]Doob-Meyer decomposition theorem that, for every $M, N \in \mathcal{M}$, there exists a unique $V \in \mathcal{V}$ such that $M_t N_t - V_t$ is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -martingale. We denote this V as $\langle M, N \rangle$. In particular, $\langle M, M \rangle \in \mathcal{A}$, and it is denoted simply by $\langle M \rangle$. $\langle M, N \rangle$ is called the **quadratic variation process** because $\sum_{i=1}^n (M_{t_i} - M_{t_{i-1}})(N_{t_i} - N_{t_{i-1}}) \rightarrow \langle M, N \rangle_t$ in probability as $|\Delta| \rightarrow 0$, where $\Delta: t_0 = 0 < t_1 < \dots < t_n = t$ is a partition and $|\Delta| = \max_{1 \leq i \leq n} |t_i - t_{i-1}|$. Brownian motion is the most important example of continuous square-integrable martingales, and this is characterized in our framework as follows. Suppose that a d -dimensional continuous $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -adapted process $X = (X_t^i)$ satisfies $M_t^i = X_t^i - X_0^i \in \mathcal{M}$ and $\langle M^i, M^j \rangle_t = \delta^{ij} t$, $i, j = 1, 2, \dots, d$. Then X is a d -dimensional Brownian motion such that $X_u - X_v$, and the \mathcal{F}_t are independent for every $u \geq v \geq t$. Such a Brownian motion is called an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -**Brownian motion**, and a system of martingales $M^i \in \mathcal{M}$ having this property is often called a system of $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -**Wiener martingales**.

Now, we fix $M \in \mathcal{M}$. We denote by $\mathcal{L}_2(M)$ the totality of real, $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -adapted, and measurable processes $\Phi = (\Phi(t))$ such that $\|\Phi\|_{t,M}^2 =$

$E[\int_0^t \Phi(s)^2 d\langle M \rangle_s] < \infty$ for every $t \geq 0$. Two $\Phi_1, \Phi_2 \in \mathcal{L}_2(M)$ are identified if $\|\Phi_1 - \Phi_2\|_{t,M} = 0$ for all $t \geq 0$. Since $\|\cdot\|_{t,M}$ is an L_2 -norm on $[0, t] \times \Omega$ with respect to the measure $\mu_M(ds, d\omega) = d\langle M \rangle_s(\omega)P(d\omega)$, it is easy to see that $\mathcal{L}_2(M)$ is a complete metric vector space with the metric $\|\Phi - \Phi'\|_M = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} 2^{-n} \min(1, \|\Phi - \Phi'\|_{n,M})$, $\Phi, \Phi' \in \mathcal{L}_2(M)$. If $\Phi = (\Phi(t))$ is given, for a partition $0 = t_0 < t_1 < \dots < t_n \dots \rightarrow \infty$ and \mathcal{F}_{t_i} -measurable bounded functions $f_i, i = 0, 1, \dots$, by

$$\Phi(t, \omega) = \begin{cases} f_0(\omega), & t = 0, \\ f_{i-1}(\omega), & t_{i-1} < t \leq t_i, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, \end{cases}$$

then $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2(M)$ and the totality \mathcal{L}_0 of such processes are dense in $\mathcal{L}_2(M)$. If $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_0$, we define $I^M(\Phi) = (I^M(\Phi)(t))_{t \geq 0}$ by

$$I^M(\Phi)(t) = \sum_{i=0}^{n-1} f_i(M_{t_{i+1}} - M_{t_i}) + f_n(M_t - M_{t_n}),$$

$$t_n \leq t \leq t_{n+1}.$$

Then $I^M(\Phi) \in \mathcal{M}$, and it holds also that $\langle I^M(\Phi), I^N(\Psi) \rangle = \int_0^t \Phi(s)\Psi(s)d\langle M, N \rangle_s$ for $M, N \in \mathcal{M}$ and $\Phi, \Psi \in \mathcal{L}_0$. In particular, $\|I^M(\Phi)(t)\|_2^2 = E[\langle I^M(\Phi) \rangle_t] = \|\Phi\|_{t,M}^2$, and hence $\|I^M(\Phi)\| = \|\Phi\|_M$. This implies that $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_0 \subset \mathcal{L}_2(M) \rightarrow I^M(\Phi) \in \mathcal{M}$ is an isometric linear mapping, and hence it can be extended to $\mathcal{L}_2(M)$ uniquely, preserving the isometric property. $I^M(\Phi) \in \mathcal{M}$ is called the **stochastic integral** of $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2(M)$ by $M \in \mathcal{M}$. $I^M(\Phi)(t)$ is often denoted by $\int_0^t \Phi(s) dM_s$, and the random variable $I^M(\Phi)(t)$ obtained by fixing t is also called a stochastic integral.

The definition of stochastic integrals can be extended further by the following localization method. For an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -progressively measurable process $X = (X_t)$ and $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -stopping time σ , the stopped process $X^\sigma = (X_t^\sigma)$ is defined by $X_t^\sigma = X_{t \wedge \sigma}$ ($t \wedge \sigma = \min(t, \sigma)$). It follows from the optional sampling theorem of Doob that $X^\sigma \in \mathcal{M}$ if $X \in \mathcal{M}$. For $\Phi = (\Phi(t)) \in \mathcal{L}_2(M)$ and an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -stopping time σ , $\Phi_\sigma = (\Phi_\sigma(t))$ defined by $\Phi_\sigma(t) = I_{t \leq \sigma} \Phi(t)$ also belongs to $\mathcal{L}_2(M)$ and it holds that $I^M(\Phi_\sigma) = [I^M(\Phi)]^\sigma$. Keeping these facts in mind, we give the following definition. Let $\mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}} = \{M = (M_t) | \text{there exists a sequence of } \{\mathcal{F}_t\}\text{-stopping times } \sigma_n \text{ such that } \sigma_n < \infty, \sigma_n \uparrow \infty \text{ as } n \rightarrow \infty \text{ a.s. and } M^{\sigma_n} \in \mathcal{M} \text{ for every } n = 1, 2, \dots\}$. \mathcal{M}^{loc} and \mathcal{V}^{loc} are defined in a similar way. For $M, N \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, $\langle M, N \rangle \in \mathcal{V}^{\text{loc}}$ is defined to be the unique process in \mathcal{V}^{loc} such that $\langle M^{\sigma_n}, N^{\sigma_n} \rangle = \langle M, N \rangle^{\sigma_n}$ for a sequence of stopping times $\{\sigma_n\}$ as above, which can be chosen common to M and N . $\langle M, M \rangle$ is denoted by $\langle M \rangle$ as before. We fix $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$ and set $\mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M) = \{\Phi = (\Phi(t)) | \text{a real, } \{\mathcal{F}_t\}\text{-adapted and measurable process such that, with probability one, } \int_0^t \Phi(s)^2 d\langle M \rangle_s < \infty \text{ for every } t \geq 0\}$.

For $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$, we can choose a sequence of $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -stopping times $\{\sigma_n\}$ such that $\sigma_n < \infty$, $\sigma_n \uparrow \infty$ a.s. and $M^{\sigma_n} \in \mathcal{M}$, $\Phi_{\sigma_n} \in \mathcal{L}_2(M^{\sigma_n})$, $n = 1, 2, \dots$. For example, set $\sigma_n = \min\{n, \inf\{t | \langle M \rangle_t + \int_0^t \Phi(s)^2 d\langle M \rangle_s \geq n\}\}$. Then there exists an $I^M(\Phi) \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$ such that $I^M(\Phi)^{\sigma_n} = I^{M^{\sigma_n}}(\Phi_{\sigma_n})$ for $n = 1, 2, \dots$, which is unique and independent of a particular choice of $\{\sigma_n\}$. $I^M(\Phi)$ is called the **stochastic integral** of $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$ by $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$. $I^M(\Phi)(t)$ is often denoted by $\int_0^t \Phi(s) dM_s$, and the random variable $I^M(\Phi)(t)$ obtained by fixing t is also called a stochastic integral.

Some of the basic properties of stochastic integrals are: (i) If $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$, and $\Psi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(I^M(\Phi))$, then $\Phi\Psi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$ and $I^M(\Phi\Psi) = I^{I^M(\Phi)}(\Psi)$. (ii) If $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$ and $\Phi, \Psi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$, then for every $\alpha, \beta \in \mathbf{R}$ we have $\alpha\Phi + \beta\Psi = (\alpha\Phi(t) + \beta\Psi(t)) \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$ and $I^M(\alpha\Phi + \beta\Psi) = \alpha I^M(\Phi) + \beta I^M(\Psi)$. Also if $M, N \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$ and $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M) \cap \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(N)$, then for $\alpha, \beta \in \mathbf{R}$ we have $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(\alpha M + \beta N)$ and $I^{\alpha M + \beta N}(\Phi) = \alpha I^M(\Phi) + \beta I^N(\Phi)$. (iii) If $M, N \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$, and $\Psi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(N)$, then $\Phi\Psi \in \mathcal{L}_1^{\text{loc}}(\langle M, N \rangle)$ and $\langle I^M(\Phi), I^N(\Psi) \rangle_t = \int_0^t \Phi_s \Psi_s d\langle M, N \rangle_s$. Here, $\mathcal{L}_p^{\text{loc}}(V)$ for $V \in \mathcal{V}^{\text{loc}}$ is defined as follows: With probability 1, $s \rightarrow V_s$ is of bounded variation on every finite interval $[0, t]$, the total variation of which is denoted by $|V|_t$. Then $|V| \in \mathcal{A}^{\text{loc}}$, and we define $\mathcal{L}_p^{\text{loc}}(V)$ ($p \geq 1$) to be the totality of real, $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -adapted, and measurable processes $\Phi = (\Phi(t))$ such that, with probability 1, $\int_0^t |\Phi(s)|^p d|V|_s < \infty$ for every $t \geq 0$. In particular, $\mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M) = \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(\langle M \rangle)$. (iv) If $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$, and σ is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -stopping time, then $I^M(\Phi_\sigma) = I^{M^\sigma}(\Phi) = I^{M^\sigma}(I^M(\Phi)_\sigma) = [I^M(\Phi)]^\sigma$. (v) If $\Phi(t) = I_{\{\sigma < t\}} \cdot f$, where σ is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -stopping time and f is a bounded \mathcal{F}_σ -measurable random variable, then $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$ for every $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$ and $I^M(\Phi)(t) = f(M_t - M_{t \wedge \sigma})$. (vi) The definition of stochastic integrals is independent of the increasing family of σ -subfields in the following sense: If $\{\mathcal{G}_t\}$ is another family such that M belongs to the class \mathcal{M}^{loc} for both $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ and $\{\mathcal{G}_t\}$ and Φ belongs to the class $\mathcal{L}_2(M)$ for both $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ and $\{\mathcal{G}_t\}$, then $I^M(\Phi)$ is the same whether it is defined with respect to $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ or $\{\mathcal{G}_t\}$.

In particular, $N = I^M(\Phi)$, $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$, satisfies $\langle N, L \rangle_t = \int_0^t \Phi(s) d\langle M, L \rangle_s$ for all $L \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$. Conversely, $N \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$ having this property is unique, and hence it coincides with $I^M(\Phi)$. $I^M(\Phi) \in \mathcal{M}$ if and only if $\int_0^t \Phi(s)^2 d\langle M \rangle_s \in \mathcal{A}$.

The above definition of stochastic integrals can be extended with a slight technical modification to the case when M_t is not necessarily continuous [19]. Among such general stochastic integrals, a particularly important role is played by stochastic integrals describing point

processes, including Poisson point processes as an important special case. These stochastic integrals are important in the study of discontinuous processes including † Lévy processes; even in the study of continuous processes, such as diffusion, they provide an important tool for the treatment of excursions [4, 6, 8].

Let (Ω, \mathcal{F}, P) and $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ be as above. By a **continuous semimartingale** with respect to $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$, or simply a **semimartingale** when there is no danger of confusion, we mean a process $X = (X(t))$ of the following form: $X(t) = X(0) + M(t) + V(t)$, where $X(0)$ is an \mathcal{F}_0 -measurable random variable, $M = (M(t)) \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$ and $V = (V(t)) \in \mathcal{V}^{\text{loc}}$. M and V are uniquely determined from X , and this decomposition is called the **semimartingale decomposition** of X . M is called the **martingale part** and V the **drift part** of the semimartingale X . A semimartingale X is often called an **Itô process** if $M(t) = \int_0^t \Phi(s) dB(s)$ and $V(t) = \int_0^t \Psi(s) ds$, where $B(t) \in \mathcal{M}$ is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -Brownian motion, $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}$, and $\Psi \in \mathcal{L}_1^{\text{loc}}$. (When $V_t = t$, $\mathcal{L}_p^{\text{loc}}(V)$ is denoted simply by $\mathcal{L}_p^{\text{loc}}$.) A d -dimensional process whose components are semimartingales is called a d -dimensional semimartingale. The following formula, originally due to Itô and extended by Kunita and Watanabe, is of fundamental importance in stochastic calculus.

Itô's formula. Let $X(t) = (X^1(t), \dots, X^d(t))$ be a d -dimensional semimartingale and $X^i(t) = X^i(0) + M^i(t) + V^i(t)$ be the semimartingale decomposition of components. Let $F(x) = F(x^1, \dots, x^d)$ be a C^2 -function defined on \mathbf{R}^d . Then $F(X(t))$ is also a semimartingale, and we have

$$\begin{aligned} F(X(t)) &= F(X(0)) + \sum_{i=1}^d \int_0^t D_i F(X(s)) dM^i(s) \\ &\quad + \sum_{i=1}^d \int_0^t D_i F(X(s)) dV^i(s) \\ &\quad + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j=1}^d \int_0^t D_i D_j F(X(s)) d\langle M^i, M^j \rangle(s) \end{aligned}$$

(where $D_i = \partial/\partial x^i$).

In other words, if $Y(t) = Y(0) + M(t) + V(t)$ is the semimartingale decomposition of $Y(t) = F(X(t))$, then $M(t) = \sum_{i=1}^d \int_0^t D_i F(X(s)) dM^i(s)$ and $V(t) = \sum_{i=1}^d \int_0^t D_i F(X(s)) dV^i(s) + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j=1}^d \int_0^t D_i D_j F(X(s)) d\langle M^i, M^j \rangle(s)$.

We now discuss other important transformations on semimartingales.

Time change. Let $A \in \mathcal{A}^{\text{loc}}$, and assume further that with probability 1, $t \rightarrow A_t$ is strictly increasing and $\lim_{t \uparrow \infty} A_t = \infty$. Let $u \rightarrow C_u$ be the inverse function of $t \rightarrow A_t$, i.e., $C_u = \min\{t | A_t \geq u\}$. Then for every $u \geq 0$, C_u is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -stopping time. Set $\tilde{\mathcal{F}}_t = \mathcal{F}_{C_t}$, $t \geq 0$. For an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ - † progressively measurable process $X = (X(t))$,

we define $X^A = (X^A(t))$ by $X^A(t) = X(C_t)$ and call it the **time change of X determined by A** . Then X^A is progressively measurable with respect to $\{\tilde{\mathcal{F}}_t\}$. If $X: X(t) = X(0) + M(t) + V(t)$ is a semimartingale with respect to $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$, then X^A is a semimartingale with respect to $\{\tilde{\mathcal{F}}_t\}$, and its semimartingale decomposition is given by $X^A(t) = X(0) + M^A(t) + V^A(t)$. The mappings $M \rightarrow M^A$ and $V \rightarrow V^A$ are bijections between \mathcal{M}^{loc} and $\tilde{\mathcal{M}}^{\text{loc}}$ and between \mathcal{V}^{loc} and $\tilde{\mathcal{V}}^{\text{loc}}$, respectively, where $\tilde{\mathcal{M}}^{\text{loc}}$ and $\tilde{\mathcal{V}}^{\text{loc}}$ are defined relative to $\{\tilde{\mathcal{F}}_t\}$. Furthermore, $\langle M^A, N^A \rangle = \langle M, N \rangle^A$ for every $M, N \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$. Noting that $\Phi \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$ can always be chosen $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -progressively measurable (in fact $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ - † predictable), the mapping $\Phi \rightarrow \Phi^A$ defines a bijection between $\mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$ and $\mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M^A)$, and we have $I^{M^A}(\Phi^A) = [I^M(\Phi)]^A$.

Transformation of drift (Girsanov transformation). For $m \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, set $D_m(t) = \exp[m_t - \frac{1}{2}\langle m \rangle_t]$. Then $D_m - 1 \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, and if m satisfies a certain integrability condition (for example, $E(\exp[\frac{1}{2}\langle m \rangle_t]) < \infty$ for every $t \geq 0$, in particular, $\langle m \rangle_t \leq ct$ for all t for some constant $c > 0$), then D_m is a martingale, i.e., $E(D_m(t)) = 1$ for all $t \geq 0$. If $E(D_m(t)) = 1$ for all t , then there exists a probability \tilde{P} on (Ω, \mathcal{F}) (if (Ω, \mathcal{F}) is a nice measurable space and $\mathcal{F} = \bigvee_{t \geq 0} \mathcal{F}_t$, which we can assume without loss of generality) such that $P(A) = E(D_m(t); A)$ for all $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$, $t \geq 0$. Let X be a semimartingale with the decomposition $X(t) = X(0) + M(t) + V(t)$. On the probability space $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, \tilde{P})$ with the same family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$, X is still a semimartingale but its semimartingale decomposition is given by $X(t) = X(0) + \tilde{M}(t) + \tilde{V}(t)$, where $\tilde{M}(t) = M(t) - \langle M, m \rangle(t)$ and $\tilde{V}(t) = V(t) + \langle M, m \rangle(t)$. Furthermore, it holds that $\langle \tilde{M}, \tilde{N} \rangle = \langle M, N \rangle$, $M, N \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$. This result is known as **Girsanov's theorem**. The transformation of probability spaces given above is called a **transformation of drift** or a **Girsanov transformation** since it produces a change as shown above of the drift part in the semimartingale decomposition.

In the discussion above, the increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ was fixed. It is also important to study how the semimartingale character changes under a changing increasing family [12].

C. Stochastic Differentials

In this section, we introduce stochastic differentials of semimartingales and rewrite the results in the previous section in more convenient form. Let (Ω, \mathcal{F}, P) and $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ be as above and $\mathcal{M}, \mathcal{A}, \mathcal{V}, \tilde{\mathcal{M}}^{\text{loc}}, \tilde{\mathcal{A}}^{\text{loc}}, \tilde{\mathcal{V}}^{\text{loc}}$ be defined as in Section B. By \mathcal{L} we denote the totality of continuous semimartingales relative to $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$.

For $X \in \mathcal{Q}$, let $X(t) = X(0) + M_X(t) + V_X(t)$ be the semimartingale decomposition. We write formally $X(t) - X(0) = \int_0^t dX(s)$ and call dX (denoted also by dX_t or $dX(t)$) the **stochastic differential** of X . To be precise, dX can be considered as a random interval function $dX(I) = X(t) - X(s)$, $I = (s, t]$ or the equivalence class containing X under the equivalence relation $X \sim Y$ on \mathcal{Q} defined by $X \sim Y$ if and only if $X(t) - X(0) = Y(t) - Y(0)$, $t \geq 0$. For $X, Y \in \mathcal{Q}$ and $\alpha, \beta \in \mathbf{R}$, $\alpha dX + \beta dY$ is defined by $d(\alpha X + \beta Y)$ and $dX \cdot dY$ by $d\langle M_X, M_Y \rangle$. Let $d\mathcal{Q}$ be the totality of stochastic differentials of elements in \mathcal{Q} and $d\mathcal{M}$ and $d\mathcal{V}$ be that of elements in \mathcal{M}^{loc} and \mathcal{V}^{loc} , respectively. $d\mathcal{Q}$ is a commutative algebra under the operations just introduced. Note that $dX \cdot dY \in d\mathcal{V}$ and that $dX \cdot dY = 0$ if either of dX and dY is in $d\mathcal{V}$. In particular, $dX \cdot dY \cdot dZ = 0$ for every dX, dY , and dZ . Let \mathcal{B} be the totality of $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -progressively measurable processes $\Phi = (\Phi(t))$ such that, with probability 1, $\sup_{0 \leq s \leq t} |\Phi(s)| < \infty$ for every $t \geq 0$. Noting that $\mathcal{B} \subset \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}(M)$ for any $M \in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$, we define $\Phi \cdot dX \in d\mathcal{Q}$ for $\Phi \in \mathcal{B}$ and $X \in \mathcal{Q}$ to be the stochastic differential of the semimartingale $\int_0^t \Phi(s) dM_X(s) + \int_0^t \Phi(s) dV_X(s)$. $\Phi \cdot dX$ is uniquely determined by Φ and dX . Itô's formula is stated, in this context, as follows: For $X = (X^1, \dots, X^d)$, $X^i \in \mathcal{Q}$, and $F: \mathbf{R}^d \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$, which is of class C^2 , $F(X) \in \mathcal{Q}$, and

$$dF(X) = \sum_{i=1}^d D_i F(X) \cdot dX^i + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j=1}^d D_i D_j F(X) \cdot dX^i \cdot dX^j.$$

We now define another important operation on the space $d\mathcal{Q}$. Noting that $\mathcal{Q} \subset \mathcal{B}$, we define $X \circ dY$ for $X, Y \in \mathcal{Q}$ by

$$X \circ dY = X \cdot dY + \frac{1}{2} dX \cdot dY.$$

This is uniquely determined from X and dY , and is called the **symmetric multiplication** of X and dY . It is also called a **stochastic differential of the Stratonovich type** or **Itô's circle operation** since the notation was introduced by Itô [9]. $\int_0^t X \circ dY$ is called the **stochastic integral of the Stratonovich type**, whereas $\int_0^t X \cdot dY$ is that of the **Itô type**. Under this operation, Itô's formula is rewritten as follows: For $X = (X^1, \dots, X^d)$, $X^i \in \mathcal{Q}$, and $F: \mathbf{R}^d \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$, which is of class C^3 , $F(X)$, $D_i F(X) \in \mathcal{Q}$, and

$$dF(X) = \sum_{i=1}^d D_i F(X) \circ dX^i.$$

This chain rule for stochastic differentials takes the same form as in the ordinary calculus. For this reason symmetric multiplication plays an

important role in transferring notions used in ordinary calculus into stochastic calculus and in defining intrinsic (i.e., coordinate-free) notions probabilistically. In particular, it is fundamental to the study of stochastic differential equations on manifolds (\rightarrow Section G).

D. Stochastic Differential Equations

Here, we give a general formulation of stochastic differential equations in which the infinitesimal change of the system may depend on the past history of the system; however, equations of **Markovian type**, in which the infinitesimal change of the system depends only on the present state of the system, are considered in most cases. Let W^d be the space of d -dimensional continuous paths: $W^d = C([0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^d) :=$ the totality of all continuous functions $w: [0, \infty) \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^d$, endowed with the topology of the uniform convergence on finite intervals and $\mathcal{B}(W^d)$ be the topological σ -field. For each $t \geq 0$, define $\rho_t: W^d \rightarrow W^d$ by $(\rho_t w)(s) = w(t \wedge s)$, and let $\mathcal{B}_t(W^d) = \rho_t^{-1}(\mathcal{B}(W^d))$, $t \geq 0$. Let $\mathcal{A}^{d,r}$ be the totality of functions $\alpha(t, w) = (\alpha_j^i(t, w))$: $[0, \infty) \times W^d \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^d \otimes \mathbf{R}^r$ ($=$ the totality of $d \times r$ real matrices) such that each component $\alpha_j^i(x, w)$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, d; j = 1, 2, \dots, r$) is $\mathcal{B}([0, \infty)) \times \mathcal{B}(W^d)$ -measurable and $\mathcal{B}_t(W^d)$ -measurable for each fixed $t \geq 0$. In general, $\alpha_j^i(t, w)$ is called **nonanticipative** if it satisfies the second property above. An important case of $\alpha \in \mathcal{A}^{d,r}$ is when it is given as $\alpha(t, w) = \sigma(t, w(t))$ by a Borel function $\sigma: [0, \infty) \times \mathbf{R}^d \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^d \otimes \mathbf{R}^r$. In this case, α is called **independent of the past history** or of **Markovian type**. For a given $\alpha \in \mathcal{A}^{d,r}$ and $\beta \in \mathcal{A}^{d,1}$, we consider the following stochastic differential equation:

$$(1) \quad dX^i(t) = \sum_{j=1}^r \alpha_j^i(t, X) dB^j(t) + \beta^i(t, X) dt, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, d,$$

also denoted simply as

$$dX(t) = \alpha(t, X) dB(t) + \beta(t, X) dt.$$

Here $X(t) = (X^1(t), \dots, X^d(t))$ is a d -dimensional continuous process. $B(t) = (B^1(t), \dots, B^r(t))$ is a r -dimensional Brownian motion with $B(0) = 0$. A precise formulation of equation (1) is as follows. $X = (X(t))$ is called a **solution** of equation (1) if it satisfies the following conditions: (i) X is a d -dimensional, continuous, and $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -adapted process defined on a probability space (Ω, \mathcal{F}, P) with an increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$, i.e., $X: \Omega \rightarrow W^d$ which is $\mathcal{F}_t/\mathcal{B}_t(W^d)$ -measurable for every $t \geq 0$; (ii) $\alpha_j^i(t, X) \in \mathcal{L}_2^{\text{loc}}$, $\beta^i(t, X) \in \mathcal{L}_1^{\text{loc}}$, $i = 1, \dots, d, j = 1, \dots, r$ (\rightarrow Section B for the definition of $\mathcal{L}_p^{\text{loc}}$); (iii) there exists an r -

dimensional $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -Brownian motion $B(t)$ with $B(0)=0$ such that the equality

$$X^i(t) - X^i(0) = \sum_{j=1}^r \int_0^t \alpha_j^i(s, X) dB^j(s) + \int_0^t \beta^i(s, X) ds, \quad i=1, 2, \dots, d,$$

holds with probability 1.

Thus a solution X is always accompanied by a Brownian motion B . To emphasize this, we often call X a solution with the Brownian motion B or call the pair (X, B) itself a solution of (1). In the above definition, a solution is given with reference to an increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$. The essential point is that σ -fields $\sigma(B(u) - B(v); u \geq v \geq t)$ and $\sigma(X(s), B(s); 0 \leq s \leq t)$ are independent for every t . If X satisfies the conditions of solutions stated above, then the specified independence is obvious, and conversely, if this independence is satisfied, then by setting $\mathcal{F}_t = \bigcap_{\varepsilon > 0} \sigma(X(s), B(s); 0 \leq s \leq t + \varepsilon)$, the conditions of solutions stated above are satisfied. But it is usually convenient to introduce some increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ into the definition of solutions as above. When α and β are of the Markovian type, $\alpha(t, w) = \sigma(t, w(t))$, $\beta(t, w) = b(t, w(t))$, the corresponding equation

$$(2) \quad dX(t) = \sigma(t, X(t))dB(t) + b(t, X(t))dt$$

is called a **stochastic differential equation of Markovian type**. Furthermore, if $\sigma(t, x)$ and $b(t, x)$ are independent of t , i.e., $\sigma(t, x) = \sigma(x)$ and $b(t, x) = b(x)$, the equation

$$(3) \quad dX(t) = \sigma(X(t))dB(t) + b(X(t))dt$$

is called a **stochastic differential equation of time homogeneous (or time-independent) Markovian type**.

Next, we define the notions of the uniqueness of solutions. There are two kinds of uniqueness: uniqueness in the sense of law (in distribution) and pathwise uniqueness. When we consider the stochastic differential equations as a means to determine the laws of continuous stochastic processes, uniqueness in the sense of law is sufficient. If, on the other hand, we regard the stochastic differential equation as a means to define the sample paths of solutions as a functional of the accompanying Brownian motion, i.e., if we regard the equation as a machine that produces a solution as an output when we input a Brownian motion, the notion of pathwise uniqueness is more natural and more important. As we shall see, this notion is closely related to the notion of **strong solutions**.

These notions are defined as follows. For a solution $X = (X(t))$ of (1), $X(0)$ is called the **initial value**, its law on \mathbf{R}^d is called the **initial**

law (distribution), and the law of X on W^d is called the **law (distribution) of X** . We say that the **uniqueness in the sense of law of solutions** for (1) holds if the law of any solution X is uniquely determined by its initial law, i.e., if whenever X and X' are two solutions whose initial laws coincide, then the laws of X and X' coincide. In this definition, we restrict ourselves to the solutions whose initial values are nonrandom, i.e., the initial laws are δ -distributions at some points in \mathbf{R}^d . Next, we say that the **pathwise uniqueness of solutions** for (1) holds if whenever X and X' are any two solutions defined on the same probability space (Ω, \mathcal{F}, P) with the same increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ and the same r -dimensional $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -Brownian motion such that $X(0) = X'(0)$ a.s., then $X(t) = X'(t)$ for all $t \geq 0$ a.s. In this definition also, the solutions can be restricted to those having nonrandom initial values.

We say that equation (1) has a **unique strong solution** if there exists a function $F(x, w): \mathbf{R}^d \times W_0^r \rightarrow W^d$ ($W_0^r = \{w \in W^r | w(0) = 0\}$) such that the following are true: (i) For any solution (X, B) of (1), $X = F(X(0), B)$ holds a.s.; (ii) for any \mathbf{R}^d -valued random variable $X(0)$ and an r -dimensional Brownian motion $B = (B(t))$ with $B(0) = 0$ which are mutually independent, $X = F(X(0), B)$ is a solution of (1) with the Brownian motion B and the initial value $X(0)$. If this is the case, $F(x, w)$ itself is a solution of (1) with the initial value x , and with respect to the canonical Brownian motion $B(t, w) = w(t)$ on the r -dimensional Wiener space (W_0^r, \mathcal{F}, P) , \mathcal{F} is the completion of $\mathcal{B}(W_0^r)$ with respect to the r -dimensional Wiener measure P . If equation (1) has a unique strong solution, then it is clear that pathwise uniqueness holds. Conversely, if pathwise uniqueness holds for (1) and if a solution exists for any given initial law, then equation (1) has a unique strong solution, [6, 25].

The existence of solutions was discussed by A. V. Skorokhod [20]. If the coefficients α and β are bounded and continuous on $[0, \infty) \times W^d$, a solution of (1) exists for any given initial law. This is shown as follows [6]. We first construct approximate solutions by Cauchy's polygonal method and then show that their probability laws are ϵ -tight. A limit process in the sense of probability law can be shown to be a solution. The assumption of boundedness above can be weakened, e.g., to the following condition: For every $T > 0$, a constant $K_T > 0$ exists such that

$$(4) \quad \|\alpha(t, w)\| + \|\beta(t, w)\| \leq K_T(1 + \|w\|_t), \\ t \in [0, T], \quad w \in W^d.$$

Here $\|w\|_t = \max_{0 \leq s \leq t} |w(s)|$. In the case of the

Markovian equation (2), it is sufficient to assume that $\sigma(t, x)$ and $b(t, x)$ are continuous:

$$(5) \quad \|\sigma(t, x)\| + \|b(t, x)\| \leq K_T(1 + |x|), \\ t \in [0, T], \quad x \in \mathbf{R}^d.$$

If these conditions are violated, a solution $X(t)$ does not exist globally in general but exists up to a certain time e , called the **explosion time**, such that $\lim_{t \uparrow e} |X(t)| = \infty$ if $e < \infty$. To extend the notion of solutions in such cases, we have to replace the path space W^d by the space \hat{W}^d that consists of all continuous functions $w: [0, \infty) \rightarrow \hat{\mathbf{R}}^d (= \mathbf{R}^d \cup \{\Delta\})$ (the one-point compactification) satisfying $w(t) = \Delta$ for every $t \geq e(w) (= \inf\{t \mid w(t) = \Delta\})$.

Now, we list some results on the uniqueness of solutions. First consider the equations of the Markovian type (2), and assume that the coefficients are continuous and satisfy the condition (5). (i) If σ, b are Lipschitz continuous, i.e., for every $N > 0$ there exists a constant K_N such that $\|\sigma(t, x) - \sigma(t, y)\| + \|b(t, x) - b(t, y)\| \leq K_N|x - y|$, $t \in [0, T]$, $x, y \in B_N := \{z \in \mathbf{R}^d \mid |z| \leq N\}$, then the pathwise uniqueness of solutions holds for equation (2). Thus the unique strong solution of (2) exists, and this is constructed directly by Picard's successive approximation (Itô [7, 8]). (ii) If $d = 1$, σ is Hölder continuous with exponent $1/2$ and b is Lipschitz continuous, i.e., for every $N > 0$, K_N exists such that

$$|\sigma(t, x) - \sigma(t, y)|^2 + |b(t, x) - b(t, y)| \leq K_N|x - y|, \\ t \in [0, N], \quad x, y \in B_N,$$

then the pathwise uniqueness of solutions holds for equation (2) (T. Yamada and Watanabe [25]). (iii) If the matrix $a(t, x) = \sigma(t, x)\sigma(t, x)^*$ (i.e., $a^{ij}(t, x) = \sum_{k=1}^r \sigma_k^i(t, x)\sigma_k^j(t, x)$) is strictly positive definite, then the uniqueness in the sense of law of the solution for (2) holds (D. W. Stroock and S. R. S. Varadhan [21]). (iv) An example of stochastic differential equations for which the uniqueness in the sense of law holds but the pathwise uniqueness does not hold was given by H. Tanaka as follows: $d = r = 1$, $b(t, x) \equiv 0$ and $\sigma(t, x) = I_{\{x \geq 0\}} - I_{\{x < 0\}}$. Another example in the non-Markovian cases was given by B. S. Tsirel'son (see below).

Next, consider non-Markovian equations of the following form:

$$(6) \quad dX(t) = dB(t) + \beta(t, X)dt;$$

i.e., the case $d = r$ and $\alpha(t, w) = I$ (identity matrix). Assume further that $\beta \in \mathcal{C}^{d,1}$ is bounded. Then a solution of (6) exists for any given initial distribution, unique in the sense of law, and it can be constructed by the Girsanov transformation of Section B as follows. On a suitable probability space (Ω, \mathcal{F}, P) with an

increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ such that $\mathcal{F} = \bigvee_{t>0} \mathcal{F}_t$, we set up an \mathcal{F}_0 -measurable, d -dimensional random variable $X(0)$ with a given law and a d -dimensional $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -Brownian motion $\tilde{B} = (\tilde{B}(t))$ such that $\tilde{B}(0) = 0$. Set $X(t) = X(0) + \tilde{B}(t)$ and $M(t) = \exp[\int_0^t \beta(s, X) d\tilde{B}(s) - \frac{1}{2} \int_0^t |\beta(s, X)|^2 ds]$. Then $M(t)$ is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -martingale, and the probability \tilde{P} on (Ω, \mathcal{F}) is determined by $\tilde{P}(A) = E(M_t; A)$, $A \in \mathcal{F}_t$. By Girsanov's theorem, $B(t) = X(t) - X(0) - \int_0^t \beta(s, X) ds$ is a d -dimensional $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -Brownian motion on $(\Omega, \mathcal{F}, \tilde{P})$, and hence (X, B) is a solution of (6). Any solution is given in this way and hence the uniqueness in the sense of law holds. But the pathwise uniqueness does not hold in general; an example was given by Tsirel'son [1, 6] as follows. Let $\{t_n\}$ be a sequence such that $0 < \dots < t_n < t_{n-1} < t_0 = 1$ and $\lim_{n \uparrow \infty} t_n = 0$. Set

$$\beta(t, w) = \begin{cases} 0, & t \geq t_0 \text{ and } t = 0, \\ \theta \left(\frac{w(t_{i+1}) - w(t_{i+2})}{t_{i+1} - t_{i+2}} \right), & \\ t \in [t_{i+1}, t_i], & i = 0, 1, 2, \dots, \end{cases}$$

where $\theta(x) = x - [x]$, $x \in \mathbf{R}$, is the decimal part of x .

Time changes (\rightarrow Section B) are also used to solve some stochastic differential equations [6].

E. Stochastic Differential Equations and Diffusion Processes

In this section we consider equations of time-independent Markovian type (3) only. The time-dependent case can be reduced to the time-independent case by adding one more component $X^{d+1}(t)$ such that $dX^{d+1}(t) = dt$. Further, we assume that coefficients $\sigma(x) \in \mathbf{R}^d \otimes \mathbf{R}^r$ and $b(x) \in \mathbf{R}^d$ are continuous on \mathbf{R}^d and the uniqueness in the sense of law of solutions holds. Let P_x , $x \in \mathbf{R}^d$, be the law on W^d , or on \hat{W}^d if there is an explosion, of a solution with the initial law δ_x (= the unit measure at x). Then $\{P_x\}$ possesses the strong Markov property with respect to $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$, where \mathcal{F}_t is a suitable completion of $\mathcal{B}(W^d)$ or $\mathcal{B}(\hat{W}^d)$, and hence $(W^d, \{\mathcal{F}_t\}, P_x)$ or $(\hat{W}^d, \{\mathcal{F}_t\}, P_x)$ is a diffusion process on \mathbf{R}^d (\rightarrow 115 Diffusion Processes, 261 Markov Processes).

Let A be the differential operator

$$A = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j=1}^d a^{ij}(x) D_i D_j + \sum_{i=1}^d b^i(x) D_i \quad (D_i = \partial / \partial x^i)$$

with the domain $C_0^2(\mathbf{R}^d)$ (= the totality of C^2 -functions on \mathbf{R}^d with compact supports), where $a^{ij}(x) = \sum_{k=1}^r \sigma_k^i(x) \sigma_k^j(x)$. By Itô's formula,

$$(7) \quad f(w(t)) - f(w(0)) - \int_0^t (Af)(w(s)) ds$$

is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -martingale for every $f \in C_0^2(\mathbf{R}^d)$ (we set $f(\Delta) = 0$), and this property characterizes the diffusion process. The diffusion is generated by the operator A in this sense. Furthermore, if for some $\lambda > 0$, $(\lambda - A)(C_0^2(\mathbf{R}^d))$ is a dense subset of $C_\infty(\mathbf{R}^d)$ (= the totality of continuous functions f on \mathbf{R}^d such that $\lim_{|x| \rightarrow \infty} f(x) = 0$) then the \dagger transition semigroup of the diffusion is a \dagger Feller semigroup on $C_\infty(\mathbf{R}^d)$, and its infinitesimal generator A is the closure of $(A, C_0^2(\mathbf{R}^d))$. Hence $u(t, x) = E_x[f(w(t))]$, $f \in C_0^2(\mathbf{R}^d)$, is the unique solution of the evolution equation $du/dt = Au$, $u|_{t=0} = f$. Generally, if the coefficients σ and b are sufficiently smooth, we can show, by using the stochastic differential equation (3), that $u(t, x)$ is also smooth for a smooth f and satisfies the heat equation $\partial u / \partial t = Au$. Taking the expectations in (7), we have the relation $E_x[f(w(t))] = f(x) + \int_0^t E_x[Af(w(s))] ds$, which implies that the transition probability $P(t, x, dy)$ of the diffusion satisfies the equation $\partial p / \partial t = A^*p$ in (t, y) in a weak sense, where A^* is the adjoint operator of A . If $\partial / \partial t - A^*$ is \dagger hypoelliptic, we can conclude that $P(t, x, dy)$ possesses a smooth density $p(t, x, y)$ by appealing to the theory of partial differential equations. Recently, P. Malliavin showed that a probabilistic method based on the stochastic differential equations can also be applied to this problem effectively, [6, 16, 17].

If $c(t, x)$ is continuous and $v(t, x)$ is sufficiently smooth in (t, x) on $[0, \infty) \times \mathbf{R}^d$, then the following fact, more general than (7), holds:

$$(8) \quad v(t, w(t)) \exp \left[\int_0^t c(s, w(s)) ds \right] - v(0, x) - \int_0^t \exp \left[\int_0^s c(u, w(u)) du \right] \times (\partial v / \partial t + (A + c)v)(s, w(s)) ds$$

is a local martingale (i.e., $\in \mathcal{M}^{\text{loc}}$) with respect to $\{\mathcal{F}_t, P_x\}$. By applying the optional sampling theorem to (8) for a class of $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -stopping times, we can obtain the probabilistic representation in terms of the diffusion of solutions for initial or boundary value problems related to the operator A [3, 4].

F. Stochastic Differential Equations with Boundary Conditions

As we saw in the previous section, diffusion processes generated by differential operators can be constructed by stochastic differential equations. A diffusion process on a domain with boundary is generated by a differential operator that describes the behavior of the process inside the domain, and a boundary condition that describes the behavior of the process on the boundary of the domain. For

example, consider a reflecting \dagger Brownian motion on the half-line $[0, \infty)$. This is a diffusion process $X = (X_t)$ on $[0, \infty)$ obtained by setting $X_t = |x_t|$ from a 1-dimensional Brownian motion x_t . The corresponding differential operator is $A = \frac{1}{2} d^2/dx^2$, and the boundary condition is $Lu \equiv du/dx|_{x=0} = 0$, that is, the transition expectation $u(t, x) = E_x[f(X_t)]$ is determined by $\partial u / \partial t = Au$, $Lu = 0$, and $u|_{t=0} = f$. In constructing such diffusion processes with boundary conditions, stochastic differential equations can be used effectively. In the case of reflecting Brownian motion, it was formulated by Skorokhod in the form

$$(9) \quad dX(t) = dB(t) + d\varphi(t).$$

Here $B(t)$ is a 1-dimensional Brownian motion ($B(0) = 0$), $X(t)$ is a continuous process such that $X(t) \geq 0$, and $\varphi(t)$ has the following property with probability 1: $\varphi(0) = 0$, $t \rightarrow \varphi(t)$ is continuous and nondecreasing and increases only on such t that $X(t) = 0$, i.e., $\int_0^t I_{\{0\}}(X(s)) d\varphi(s) = \varphi(t)$. Given a Brownian motion $B(t)$ and a nonnegative random variable $X(0)$ which are mutually independent, $X(t)$ satisfying (9) and with the initial value $X(0)$ is unique and given by $X(t) = X(0) + B(t)$, $t < \sigma_0 = \min\{t | X(0) + B(t) = 0\}$ and $X(t) = B(t) - \min_{\sigma_0 \leq s \leq t} B(s)$, $t \geq \sigma_0$ (P. Lévy, Skorokhod; \rightarrow [6, 18]).

In the case of multidimensional processes, possible boundary conditions were determined by A. D. Venttsel' [24]. Stochastic differential equations describing these diffusions were formulated by N. Ikeda [5] in the 2-dimensional case and by Watanabe [23] in the general case as follows. Let D be the upper half-space $\mathbf{R}_+^d = \{x = (x^1, \dots, x^d) | x^d \geq 0\}$, $\partial D = \{x | x^d = 0\}$, and $\bar{D} = \{x | x^d \geq 0\}$. The general case can be reduced, at least locally, to this case. Suppose that the following system of functions is given: $\sigma(x): D \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^d \times \mathbf{R}^r$, $b(x): D \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^d$, $\tau(x): \partial D \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^{d-1} \times \mathbf{R}^s$, $\beta(x): \partial D \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^{d-1}$, and $\rho(x): \partial D \rightarrow [0, \infty)$, which are all bounded and continuous. Consider the following stochastic differential equation:

$$(10) \quad \begin{cases} dX^i(t) = \sum_{j=1}^r \sigma_j^i(X(t)) I_B(X(t)) dB^j(t) \\ \quad + b^i(X(t)) I_B(X(t)) dt \\ \quad + \sum_{k=1}^s \tau_k^i(X(t)) I_{\partial D}(X(t)) dM^k(t) \\ \quad + \beta^i(X(t)) d\psi(t), \\ \quad \quad \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, d-1, \\ dX^d(t) = \sum_{j=1}^r \sigma_j^d(X(t)) I_B(X(t)) dB^j(t) \\ \quad + b^d(X(t)) I_B(X(t)) dt + d\varphi(t), \\ I_{\partial D}(X(t)) dt = \rho(X(t)) d\varphi(t). \end{cases}$$

By a solution of this equation, we mean a system of continuous semimartingales $\mathfrak{X} = (X(t), B(t), M(t), \varphi(t))$ over a probability space (Ω, \mathcal{F}, P) with an increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ satisfying the following conditions: (i) $X(t) = (X^1(t), \dots, X^d(t))$ is D -valued, i.e., $X^d(t) \geq 0$; (ii) with probability 1, $\varphi(0) = 0$, $t \rightarrow \varphi(t)$ is nondecreasing, and $\int_0^t I_{\partial D}(X(s)) d\varphi(s) = \varphi(t)$; (iii) $B(t)$ and $M(t)$ are r -dimensional and s -dimensional systems of elements in \mathcal{M}^{loc} , respectively, such that $\langle B^i, B^j \rangle_t = \delta^{ij}t$, $\langle B^i, M^n \rangle_t = 0$, and $\langle M^m, M^n \rangle_t = \delta^{mn}\varphi(t)$, $i, j = 1, \dots, r$, $m, n = 1, \dots, s$; and finally (iv) the stochastic differentials of these semimartingales satisfy (10).

The processes $B(t)$, $M(t)$, and $\varphi(t)$ are subsidiary, and the process $X(t)$ itself is often called a solution. We say that the uniqueness of solution holds if the law of $X = (X(t))$ is uniquely determined from the law of $X(0)$. As before, the existence and the uniqueness of solutions imply that solutions define a diffusion process on D , and these are guaranteed if, for example, $\min_{x \in \partial D} a^{dd}(x) > 0$ and σ , b , τ , β are Lipschitz continuous, [6, 23]. Here, we set $a^{ij}(x) = \sum_{k=1}^r \sigma_k^i(x) \sigma_k^j(x)$ and $\alpha^i(x) = \sum_{k=1}^s \tau_k^i(x) \tau_k^j(x)$. It is a diffusion process generated by the differential operator

$$A = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j=1}^d a^{ij}(x) D_i D_j + \sum_{i=1}^d b^i(x) D_i,$$

and by the Venttsel' boundary condition,

$$Lu(x) \equiv \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i,j=1}^{d-1} \alpha^{ij}(x) D_i D_j u(x) + \sum_{i=1}^{d-1} \beta^i(x) D_i u(x) + D_d u(x) - \rho(x)(Au)(x) = 0 \text{ on } \partial D.$$

G. Stochastic Differential Equations on Manifolds

Let M be a connected σ -compact C^∞ -manifold of dimension d , and let $W_M = C([0, \infty) \rightarrow M)$ be the space of all continuous paths in M . If M is not compact, let $\tilde{M} = M \cup \{\Delta\}$ be the one-point compactification of M and \tilde{W}_M be the space of all continuous paths in \tilde{M} with Δ as a trap. These path spaces are endowed with the σ -fields $\mathcal{B}(W_M)$ and $\mathcal{B}(\tilde{W}_M)$, respectively, which are generated by Borel cylinder sets. By a continuous process on M we mean a $(W_M, \mathcal{B}(W_M))$ -valued random variable, and by a continuous process on M admitting explosions we mean a $(\tilde{W}_M, \mathcal{B}(\tilde{W}_M))$ -valued random variable. In this section the probability space is taken to be the r -dimensional Wiener space (W_r^0, \mathcal{F}, P) with the increasing family $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$, where \mathcal{F}_t is generated by $\mathcal{B}_t(W_r^0)$ and P -null sets. Then $w = (w(t))$, $w \in W_r^0$, is an r -dimensional $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -Brownian motion.

Suppose that we are given a system of C^∞ -vector fields A_0, A_1, \dots, A_r on M . We consider

the following stochastic differential equation on M :

$$(11) \quad dX_t = A_k(X_t) \circ dw^k(t) + A_0(X_t) dt.$$

(Here, the usual convention for the omission of the summation sign is used.) A precise meaning of equation (11) is as follows: We say that $X = (X_t)$ satisfies equation (11) if X is an $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -adapted continuous process on M admitting explosions such that, for any C^∞ -function f on M with compact support (we set $f(\Delta) = 0$), $f(X_t)$ is a continuous semimartingale satisfying

$$(12) \quad df(X_t) = (A_k f)(X_t) \circ dw^k(t) + (A_0 f)(X_t) dt,$$

where \circ is Itô's circle operation defined in Section C. This is equivalent to saying that $X_t = (X_t^1, \dots, X_t^d)$, in each local coordinate, is a d -dimensional semimartingale such that

$$(13) \quad dX_t^i = \sigma_k^i(X_t) \circ dw^k(t) + b^i(X_t) dt \\ = \sigma_k^i(X_t) dw^k(t) + \left[\frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=1}^r D_j \sigma_k^i \sigma_k^j + b^i \right] (X_t) dt,$$

where $A_k(x) = \sigma_k^i(x) D_i$, $k = 1, 2, \dots, r$, and $A_0(x) = b^i(x) D_i$. By solving the equation in each local coordinate and then putting these solutions together, we can obtain for each $x \in M$ a unique solution X_t of (11) such that $X_0 = x$. We can also embed the manifold M in a higher-dimensional Euclidean space and solve the stochastic differential equation there. We denote the solution by $X(t, x, w)$. The law P_x on \tilde{W}_M of $[t \rightarrow X(t, x, w)]$ defines a diffusion process on M which is generated by the differential operator $A = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{k=1}^r A_k^2 + A_0$.

Next, if we consider the mapping $x \rightarrow X(t, x, w)$; then, except for w belonging to a set of P -measure 0, the following is valid: For all (t, w) such that $X(t, x_0, w) \in M$, the mapping $x \rightarrow X(t, x, w)$ is a diffeomorphism between a neighborhood of x_0 and a neighborhood of $X(t, x_0, w)$. This is based on the following fact for stochastic differential equations on \mathbb{R}^d . If in equation (3) the coefficients σ_k^i and b^i are C^∞ -functions with bounded derivatives of all orders α , $|\alpha| \geq 1$, then, denoting by $X(t, x, w)$ the solution such that $X(0) = x$, we have that $x \rightarrow X(t, x, w)$ is, with probability 1, a diffeomorphism of \mathbb{R}^d for all t [13].

Example 1: Stochastic moving frame [6, 15]. Let M be a Riemannian manifold of dimension d , $O(M)$ be the orthonormal frame bundle over M , and L_1, L_2, \dots, L_d be the basic vector fields on $O(M)$, that is,

$$(L_i f)(x, e) = \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} \frac{1}{t} [f(x_t, e_t) - f(x, e)],$$

$i = 1, \dots, d$,

where $\mathbf{e} = (e_1, \dots, e_d)$ is an orthonormal basis in $T_x(M)$, $x_t = \text{Exp}(te_i)$, i.e., the geodesic such that $x_0 = x$ and $\dot{x} = e_i$, and \mathbf{e}_t is the parallel translate of \mathbf{e} along x_t . Let b be a vector field on M and L_b be its horizontal lift on $O(M)$, i.e., L_b is a vector field on $O(M)$ determined by the following two properties: (i) L_b is horizontal and (ii) $d\pi(L_b) = b$, where $\pi: O(M) \rightarrow M$ is the projection. Consider the following stochastic differential equation on $O(M)$:

$$dr(t) = L_i(r(t)) \circ dw^i(t) + L_b(r(t)) dt.$$

Solutions determine a family of (local) diffeomorphisms $r \rightarrow r(t, r, w) = (X(t, r, w), \mathbf{e}(t, r, w))$ on $O(M)$. The law of $[t \rightarrow X(t, r, w)]$ depends only on $x = \pi(r)$, and it defines a diffusion process on M that is generated by the differential operator $\frac{1}{2}\Delta_M + b$ (Δ_M is the Laplace-Beltrami operator). Using this stochastic moving frame $r(t, r, w)$, we can realize a stochastic parallel translation of tensor fields along the paths of Brownian motion on M (a diffusion generated by $\frac{1}{2}\Delta_M$) that was first introduced by Itô [10], and by using it we can treat heat equations for tensor fields by means of a probabilistic method.

Example 2: Brownian motion on Lie groups.

Let G be a Lie group. A stochastic process $\{g(t)\}$ on G is called a **right-invariant Brownian motion** if it satisfies the following conditions: (i) With probability 1, $g(0) = e$ (the identity), and $t \rightarrow g(t)$ is continuous; (ii) for every $t \geq s$, $g(t)g(s)^{-1}$ and $\sigma(g(u); u \leq s)$ are independent; and (iii) for every $t \geq s$, $g(t)g(s)^{-1}$ and $g(t-s)$ are equally distributed.

Let A_0, A_1, \dots, A_r be a system of right-invariant vector fields on G , and consider the stochastic differential equation

$$(14) \quad dg_t = A_i(g_t) \circ dw^i(t) + A_0(g_t) dt.$$

Then a solution of (14) with $g_0 = e$ exists uniquely and globally; we denote this solution by $g^0(t, w)$. It is a right-invariant Brownian motion G , and conversely, every right-invariant Brownian motion can be obtained in this way. The system of diffeomorphisms $g \rightarrow g(t, g, w)$ defined by the solutions of (14) is given by $g \rightarrow g(t, g, w) = g^0(t, w)g$.

Generally, if M is a compact manifold, the system of diffeomorphisms $g_t: x \rightarrow X(t, x, w)$ defined by equation (11) can be considered as a right-invariant Brownian motion on the infinite-dimensional Lie group consisting of all diffeomorphisms of M [2].

References

- [1] B. S. Tsirel'son (Cirel'son), An example of stochastic differential equation having no

406 Ref.

Stochastic Differential Equations

- strong solution, *Theory Prob. Appl.*, 20 (1975), 416–418.
- [2] K. D. Elworthy, Stochastic dynamical systems and their flows, *Stochastic Analysis*, A. Friedman and M. Pinsky (eds.), Academic Press, 1978, 79–95.
- [3] A. Friedman, *Stochastic differential equations and applications I, II*, Academic Press, 1975.
- [4] I. I. Gikhman and A. V. Skorokhod, *Stochastic differential equations*, Springer, 1972.
- [5] N. Ikeda: On the construction of two-dimensional diffusion processes satisfying Wentzell's boundary conditions and its application to boundary value problems, *Mem. Coll. Sci. Univ. Kyoto*, (A, Math.) 33 (1961), 367–427.
- [6] N. Ikeda and S. Watanabe, *Stochastic differential equations and diffusion processes*, Kodansha and North-Holland, 1981.
- [7] K. Itô, Differential equations determining Markov processes (in Japanese), *Zenkoku Shijô Sûgaku Danwakai*, 1077 (1942), 1352–1400.
- [8] K. Itô, On stochastic differential equations, *Mem. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 4 (1951).
- [9] K. Itô, Stochastic differentials, *Appl. Math. and Optimization*, 1 (1975), 347–381.
- [10] K. Itô, The Brownian motion and tensor fields on Riemannian manifold, *Proc. Intern. Congr. Math.*, Stockholm 1962, 536–539.
- [11] K. Itô and S. Watanabe, Introduction to stochastic differential equations, *Proc. Intern. Symp. SDE*, Kyoto, 1976, K. Itô (ed.), Kinokuniya, 1978, i–xxx.
- [12] T. Jeulin, Semi-martingales et grossissement d'une filtration, *Lecture notes in math.* 833, Springer, 1980.
- [13] H. Kunita, On the decomposition of solutions of stochastic differential equations, *Proc. LMS Symp. Stochastic Integrals*, Durham, 1980.
- [14] H. Kunita and S. Watanabe, On square integrable martingales, *Nagoya Math. J.*, 30 (1967), 209–245.
- [15] P. Malliavin, *Géométrie différentielle stochastique*, Les Presses de l'Université de Montréal, 1978.
- [16] P. Malliavin, Stochastic calculus of variation and hypoelliptic operators, *Proc. Intern. Symp. SDE*, Kyoto, 1976, K. Itô (ed.), Kinokuniya, 1978, 195–263.
- [17] P. Malliavin, C^k -hypoellipticity with degeneracy, *Stochastic Analysis*, A. Friedman and M. Pinsky (eds.), Academic Press, 1978, 199–214, 327–340.
- [18] H. P. McKean, *Stochastic integrals*, Academic Press, 1969.
- [19] P. A. Meyer, *Un cours sur les intégrales stochastiques*, *Lecture notes in math.* 511, Springer, 1976, 245–400.

- [20] A. V. Skorokhod, *Studies in the theory of random processes*, Addison-Wesley, 1965.
- [21] D. W. Stroock and S. R. S. Varadhan, *Diffusion processes with continuous coefficients I, II*, *Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 22 (1969), 345–400, 479–530.
- [22] D. W. Stroock and S. R. S. Varadhan, *Multidimensional diffusion processes*, Springer, 1979.
- [23] S. Watanabe, *On stochastic differential equations for multi-dimensional diffusion processes with boundary conditions, I, II*, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 11 (1971), 169–180, 545–551.
- [24] A. D. Venttsel' (Wentzell), *On boundary conditions for multidimensional diffusion processes*, *Theory Prob. Appl.*, 4 (1959), 164–177.
- [25] T. Yamada and S. Watanabe, *On the uniqueness of solutions of stochastic differential equations*, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 13 (1973), 497–512.

407 (XVII.4) Stochastic Processes

A. Definitions

The theory of stochastic processes was originally involved with forming mathematical models of phenomena whose development in time obeys probabilistic laws. Given a basic \dagger probability space $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ and a set T of real numbers, a family $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ of real-valued \dagger random variables defined on $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ is called a **stochastic process** (or simply **process**) over $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$, where t is usually called the **time parameter** of the process. For each finite t -set $\{t_1, \dots, t_n\}$, the \dagger joint distribution of $(X_{t_1}, \dots, X_{t_n})$ is called a **finite-dimensional distribution** of the process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$. Stochastic processes are classified into large groups such as \dagger additive processes (or processes with independent increments), \dagger Markov processes, \dagger Markov chains, \dagger diffusion processes, \dagger Gaussian processes, \dagger stationary processes, \dagger martingales, and \dagger branching processes, according to the properties of their finite-dimensional distributions. This classification is possible because of the following fact, a consequence of Kolmogorov's \dagger extension theorem (\rightarrow 341 Probability Measures I): Given a system \mathscr{P} of finite-dimensional distributions satisfying certain \dagger consistency conditions, we can construct a suitable probability measure on the space $W = \mathbf{R}^T$ of real-valued functions on T so that the stochastic process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$, obtained by setting $X_t(w) =$ the value of $w \in W$ at t , has \mathscr{P} as its system of finite-dimensional distributions.

Now, consider two stochastic processes $\mathcal{X} = \{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ and $\mathcal{Y} = \{Y_t\}_{t \in T}$. \mathcal{Y} is called a **modification** of \mathcal{X} if they are defined over a common probability space $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ and $P(X_t = Y_t) = 1$ ($t \in T$). Regardless of whether \mathcal{X} and \mathcal{Y} are defined over a common probability space or over different probability spaces, X and Y are said to be **equivalent** or each is said to be a **version** of the other if their finite-dimensional distributions are the same. According to Kolmogorov's extension theorem, every stochastic process has a version over the space $W = \mathbf{R}^T$.

The function $X(\omega)$ of t obtained by fixing ω in a stochastic process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ is called the **sample function** (**sample process** or **path**) corresponding to ω . In applying various operations to stochastic processes and studying detailed properties of stochastic processes, such as continuity of sample functions, the notions of measurability and separability play important roles. We assume that T is an interval in the real line, and (if needed) that the probability measure P is \dagger complete. Denote by \mathfrak{F} the class of all \dagger Borel subsets of T . A stochastic process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ is said to be **measurable** if the function $X_t(\omega)$ of (t, ω) is $\mathfrak{F} \times \mathfrak{B}$ -measurable. Continuity in probability defined in the next paragraph gives a sufficient condition for a stochastic process to have a measurable modification. A stochastic process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ is said to be **separable** if there exists a countable subset S of T such that

$$P \left\{ \omega \left| \liminf_{s \rightarrow t, s \in S} X_s(\omega) \leq X_t(\omega) \leq \limsup_{s \rightarrow t, s \in S} X_s(\omega) \text{ for any } t \in T \right. \right\} = 1.$$

It was proved by J. L. Doob that every stochastic process has a separable modification [6].

Various types of continuity are considered for stochastic processes. $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ is said to be **continuous in probability** at $s \in T$ if $P(|X_t - X_s| > \varepsilon) \rightarrow 0$ ($t \rightarrow s, t \in T$) for each $\varepsilon > 0$; it is said to be **continuous in the mean (of order 1)** at $s \in T$ if $E(|X_t - X_s|) \rightarrow 0$ ($t \rightarrow s, t \in T$). **Continuity in the mean of order p (> 1)** is defined similarly. Continuity in the mean of any order implies continuity in probability. Suppose that $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ is separable. Then

$$D_s = \left\{ \omega \left| X_s(\omega) = \lim_{t \rightarrow s, t \in T} X_t(\omega) \right. \right\}^c \text{ and } \bigcup_{s \in T} D_s$$

are measurable events. If $P(D_s) > 0$, then $s \in T$ is called a **fixed point of discontinuity**. The condition $P(\bigcup_{s \in T} D_s) = 0$ means that almost all sample functions are continuous. Regularity properties of sample functions of processes, such as continuity or right continuity, have

been studied by many people. The following theorem is due to A. N. Kolmogorov: Let $T = [0, 1]$. If

$$E(|X_t - X_s|^\gamma) \leq c|t - s|^{1+\varepsilon}$$

for constants $\gamma > 0$, $\varepsilon > 0$, and $c > 0$, then $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ has a modification $\{\tilde{X}_t\}_{t \in T}$ for which almost all sample functions are continuous, and

$$P \left[\lim_{h \downarrow 0} h^{-\delta} \sup_{\substack{|t-s| \leq h \\ t, s \in T}} |\tilde{X}_t - \tilde{X}_s| = 0 \right] = 1$$

for any $\delta(0 < \delta < \varepsilon/\gamma)$. Each of the following is a sufficient condition for $\mathcal{X} = \{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ to have a modification for which almost all sample paths are right continuous functions with left limits.

(i) \mathcal{X} is an additive process which is continuous in probability (P. Lévy [3, 4], K. Itô [8]; → 5 Additive Processes B). (ii) \mathcal{X} is a supermartingale that is continuous in probability (Doob [6]; → 262 Martingales C).

B. Increasing Families of σ -Algebras

In the investigation of stochastic processes (especially Markov processes, martingales, and stochastic differential equations), the notion of increasing families of σ -algebras often plays an important role. Let $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ be a probability space, and let $T = [0, \infty)$. A family $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}_{t \in T}$ of σ -subalgebras of \mathfrak{B} is called an **increasing family of σ -algebras** on $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ if $\mathfrak{B}_s \subset \mathfrak{B}_t$ for $s < t$. A process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ is said to be **adapted** to $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$ if X_t is \mathfrak{B}_t -measurable for each $t \in T$. $\{X_t\}$ is said to be **progressively measurable** (or a **progressive process**) with respect to $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$ if for every $t \in T$ the mapping $(s, \omega) \mapsto X_s(\omega)$ of $[0, t] \times \Omega$ into \mathbf{R} is measurable with respect to the σ -field $\mathfrak{B}([0, t]) \times \mathfrak{B}_t$. A process $\{X_t\}$ with right continuous paths, adapted to $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$, is progressively measurable with respect to $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$. The same conclusion holds for a process with left continuous paths. A subset A of $[0, \infty) \times \Omega$ is said to be **progressive** if the indicator process $a_t(\omega) = \mathbf{1}_A(t, \omega)$ of A is a progressive process. A random time τ on Ω with values in $[0, \infty]$ is called a **stopping time** (or **Markov time**) if $\{\tau \leq t\} \in \mathfrak{B}_t$ for all $t \geq 0$. Constants (≥ 0) are stopping times. If σ and τ are stopping times, then $\min(\sigma, \tau)$ and $\max(\sigma, \tau)$ are also stopping times. The limit of an increasing sequence of stopping times is a stopping time, while the limit of a decreasing sequence of stopping times is a stopping time with respect to $\{\mathfrak{B}_{t+}\}$, where $\mathfrak{B}_{t+} = \bigcap_{s>t} \mathfrak{B}_s$. Let \mathfrak{B}_τ be the class of $A \in \mathfrak{B}$ such that $A \cap \{\tau \leq t\} \in \mathfrak{B}_t$ ($\forall t \in T$); then it is a σ -algebra if τ is a stopping time. If $\{X_t\}$ is a progressive process and if τ is a stopping time, then $X_\tau \mathbf{1}_{\{\tau < \infty\}}$ is \mathfrak{B}_τ -measurable. An increasing family $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$

of σ -algebras on $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ is said to be **complete** if the probability space $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ is complete and if all the P -negligible sets belong to \mathfrak{B}_0 . From now on we assume that $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$ is complete and right continuous (i.e., $\mathfrak{B}_t = \mathfrak{B}_{t+}$ for all $t \geq 0$). Let B be a subset of \mathbf{R} and $\{X_t\}$ be a process. We call $\tau_B = \inf\{t \geq 0 | X_t(\omega) \in B\}$ a **hitting time** for B . Measurability of τ_B is not always guaranteed, that is, τ_B is not always a stopping time. G. A. Hunt showed that for a wide class of Markov processes hitting times for analytic sets are stopping times. This result is based on a theorem of G. Choquet on capacitability and was generalized by P. A. Meyer as follows: (i) For every progressively measurable process, hitting times for analytic sets are stopping times; and (ii) for every progressive set A , $D_A = \inf\{t \geq 0 | (t, \omega) \in A\}$ is a stopping time. The following notions on measurability are also important. The **predictable σ -algebra** on $[0, \infty) \times \Omega$, denoted by \mathcal{P} , is defined to be the least σ -algebra on $[0, \infty) \times \Omega$ with respect to which every process $X_t(\omega)$ that is adapted to $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$ and has left continuous paths is measurable in (t, ω) . The **well-measurable** or **optional σ -algebra** on $[0, \infty) \times \Omega$, denoted by \mathcal{O} , is defined to be the least σ -algebra on $[0, \infty) \times \Omega$ with respect to which every process $X_t(\omega)$ that is adapted to $\{\mathfrak{B}_t\}$ and has right continuous paths with left limits is measurable in (t, ω) . A process $\{X_t\}$ defined on Ω is said to be **predictable** (resp. **well-measurable** or **optional**) if the function $(t, \omega) \mapsto X_t(\omega)$ on $[0, \infty) \times \Omega$ is measurable with respect to the predictable σ -algebra \mathcal{P} (resp. the optional σ -algebra \mathcal{O}). For further information regarding the notions given in this section → [10].

Up to this point it was assumed that the space in which a process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ takes values, namely, the **state space** of $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$, is a set of real numbers; but in general, topological spaces or merely measurable spaces can be taken for the state spaces of stochastic processes. The general definitions and results already given can be extended to stochastic processes whose state spaces are *locally compact Hausdorff spaces satisfying the second *countability axiom.

Moreover, the time parameter set T of a process $\{X_t\}_{t \in T}$ need not be a set of real numbers. For example, P. Lévy [12] and H. P. McKean [13] investigated stochastic processes with several-dimensional time; such processes are sometimes called **random fields**. The case in which T is \mathcal{D} , \mathcal{S} , or in general a space of functions (which is nuclear) has also been investigated (→ Section C). A probabilistic formulation of equilibrium states given by R. L. Dobrushin [14] initiated recent probabilistic study of statistical mechanics. For further information concerning processes with general

time parameter spaces → 136 Ergodic Theory, 176 Gaussian Processes, 340 Probabilistic Methods in Statistical Mechanics.

C. Random Distributions and Generalized Stochastic Processes

The investigation of random distributions was initiated by I. M. Gel'fand [15] and Itô [17]. Denote by \mathcal{D} the space of functions of t ($-\infty < t < \infty$) of class C^∞ with compact support, and by \mathcal{D}' the space of distributions. At function $X(\varphi, \omega)$ of $\omega \in \Omega$ and $\varphi \in \mathcal{D}$ is called a **random distribution** (or **generalized stochastic process**) if $X(\varphi, \omega)$ is a distribution as a function of φ for almost all ω and is measurable as a function of ω for each fixed φ . Denote by $\mathfrak{B}(\mathcal{D}')$ the smallest σ -algebra containing sets of the form $\{y \in \mathcal{D}' \mid y(\varphi) \in E\}$ ($\varphi \in \mathcal{D}$, E is a Borel set). A random distribution is nothing but a \mathcal{D}' -valued random variable. For a random distribution $X(\varphi, \omega)$, a probability measure Φ_X on $\mathfrak{B}(\mathcal{D}')$ is induced by

$$\Phi_X(B) = P\{\omega \mid X(\cdot, \omega) \in B\}, \quad B \in \mathfrak{B}(\mathcal{D}').$$

The functional

$$c(\varphi) = E(e^{iX(\varphi, \omega)}) = \int e^{iy(\varphi)} \Phi_X(dy), \quad \varphi \in \mathcal{D},$$

is called the **characteristic functional** of $X(\varphi, \omega)$ or Φ_X . The functional $c(\varphi)$ is continuous positive definite, and $c(0) = 1$. Conversely, given a functional $c(\varphi)$ with these properties, a theorem of R. A. Minlos (→ 341 Probability Measures J) states that there exists a unique probability measure Φ on $\mathfrak{B}(\mathcal{D}')$ whose characteristic functional equals $c(\varphi)$. In other words, a random distribution with the characteristic functional $c(\varphi)$ can be constructed over $(\mathcal{D}', \mathfrak{B}(\mathcal{D}'), \Phi)$.

Typical classes of random distributions that have been investigated so far are stationary random distributions and random distributions with independent values at every point. (For stationary ones → 395 Stationary Processes.) A random distribution $X(\varphi, \omega)$ is called a **random distribution with independent values at every point** if $\varphi_1(t)\varphi_2(t) \equiv 0$ implies the independence of $X(\varphi_1, \omega)$ and $X(\varphi_2, \omega)$, that is, $c(\varphi_1 + \varphi_2) = c(\varphi_1)c(\varphi_2)$. A sufficient condition for the functional of the form

$$c(\varphi) = \exp\left(\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} f(\varphi(t), \varphi'(t), \dots, \varphi^{(k)}(t)) dt\right)$$

(f is continuous and $f(0, \dots, 0) = 0$) to be the characteristic functional of a stationary random distribution with independent values at every point is that the function $\exp(sf(x_0, x_1, \dots, x_k))$ of $(x_0, x_1, \dots, x_k) \in \mathbf{R}^k$ be positive definite for each $s > 0$ [16]. Under this condition,

a concrete representation of f is known [16]. When $k=0$, a necessary and sufficient condition for $c(\varphi)$ to be the characteristic functional of a stationary random distribution with independent values at every point is that $\exp f(x)$ be the characteristic function of an infinitely divisible distribution. One such random distribution is the so-called **Gaussian white noise**, namely, the distribution derivative of Brownian motion whose characteristic functional is

$$\exp\left(-\frac{1}{2} \int |\varphi(t)|^2 dt\right).$$

A family $\{X_\varphi\}_{\varphi \in \mathcal{D}}$ of real-valued random variables indexed by \mathcal{D} is called a **random distribution in the wide sense** if X_φ is linear in φ , namely, $X_{a\varphi+b\psi} = aX_\varphi + bX_\psi$ with probability 1 for fixed $\varphi, \psi \in \mathcal{D}$, and real constants a, b , and if $X_\varphi \rightarrow 0$ in probability whenever $\varphi \rightarrow 0$ in the topology of \mathcal{D} . (For a typical class of random distributions in the wide sense → 395 Stationary Processes C.) A random distribution in the wide sense has a modification that is a random distribution.

In the definition of random distributions (in the wide sense) one can replace the space \mathcal{D} by the space \mathcal{S} of rapidly decreasing C^∞ -functions or in general by some space Φ of functions that is nuclear. For example, one can define random distributions as \mathcal{S}' -valued random variables.

Up to this point random distributions of one variable have been considered. Random distributions of several variables are called generalized random fields and have been investigated by Itô [18], A. M. Yaglom [19], Gel'fand and N. Ya. Vilenkin [16], and others. Moreover, K. Urbanik [20, 21] developed a theory of generalized stochastic processes based on G. Mikusiński's theory instead of L. Schwartz's theory of distributions.

D. Random Measure

Let (S, \mathfrak{F}, m) be any σ -finite measure space, and put $\mathfrak{F}_0 = \{A \in \mathfrak{F} \mid m(A) < \infty\}$. By virtue of Kolmogorov's extension theorem, there exists a family $\{W(A)\}_{A \in \mathfrak{F}_0}$ of real random variables indexed by \mathfrak{F}_0 such that (i) for any mutually disjoint $A_1, \dots, A_n \in \mathfrak{F}_0$, $\{W(A_1), \dots, W(A_n)\}$ is independent; (ii) for any $A \in \mathfrak{F}_0$, $W(A)$ is Gaussian distributed with mean 0 and variance $m(A)$; and (iii) for any $A, B \in \mathfrak{F}_0$, $E(W(A)W(B)) = m(A \cap B)$. Similarly, there exists a family $\{N(A)\}_{A \in \mathfrak{F}_0}$ of real-valued random variables indexed by \mathfrak{F}_0 such that (i) for any mutually disjoint $A_1, \dots, A_n \in \mathfrak{F}_0$, $\{N(A_1), \dots, N(A_n)\}$ is independent; (ii) for any $A \in \mathfrak{F}_0$, $N(A)$ is t Poisson distributed with mean $m(A)$; and (iii) for

any $A, B \in \mathfrak{F}_0$, $E(N(A)N(B)) = m(A \cap B)$. $\{W(A)\}_{A \in \mathfrak{F}_0}$ and $\{N(A)\}_{A \in \mathfrak{F}_0}$ are called a **Gaussian random measure** and a **Poisson random measure** associated with the measure space (S, \mathfrak{F}, m) , respectively. By using these random measures, the theory of multiple integrals can be developed.

By a **point function** p on S we mean a mapping $p: D_p \rightarrow S$, where the domain D_p is a countable subset of $(0, \infty)$. p defines a counting measure N_p on $(0, \infty) \times S$ such that $N_p((0, t] \times U) = \#\{s \in D_p; s \leq t, p(s) \in U\}$ ($t > 0, U \in \mathfrak{F}_0$). For a point function p and $t > 0$, the shift point function $\Theta_t p$ is defined by $D_{\Theta_t p} = \{s \in (0, \infty); s + t \in D_p\}$ and $(\Theta_t p)(s) = p(s + t)$. Let Π_S be the totality of point functions on S and $\mathcal{B}(\Pi_S)$ be the smallest σ -field on Π_S with respect to which all $p \rightarrow N_p((0, t] \times U, t > 0, U \in \mathfrak{F}_0)$ are measurable. A **point process** on S is a $(\Pi_S, \mathcal{B}(\Pi_S))$ -valued random variable. Then there exists a point process p on S such that (i) for any $t > 0$, p and $\Theta_t p$ have the same probability law, and (ii) N_p is a Poisson random measure associated with $((0, \infty) \times S, \mathcal{B}(0, \infty) \times \mathcal{B}(\Pi_S), dt \times m(ds))$. The point process p is called the **stationary Poisson point process** with the **characteristic measure** m .

References

- [1] A. N. Kolmogorov, Grundbegriffe der Wahrscheinlichkeitsrechnung, Erg. Math., 1933; English translation, Foundations of the theory of probability, Chelsea, 1950.
- [2] N. Wiener, Differential-space, J. Math. Phys., 2 (1923), 131–174.
- [3] P. Lévy, Processus stochastiques et mouvement brownien, Gauthier-Villars, 1948.
- [4] P. Lévy, Théorie de l'addition des variables aléatoires, Gauthier-Villars, 1937.
- [5] M. S. Bartlett, An introduction to stochastic processes, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1955.
- [6] J. L. Doob, Stochastic processes, Wiley, 1953.
- [7] J. L. Doob, Stochastic processes depending on a continuous parameter, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 42 (1937), 107–140.
- [8] K. Itô, Stochastic processes, Aarhus Univ. lecture notes 16, 1969.
- [9] P. A. Meyer, Une présentation de la théorie des ensembles sousliniens; application aux processus stochastiques, Sémin. Théorie du Potentiel, 1962–1963, no. 2, Inst. H. Poincaré, Univ. Paris, 1964.
- [10] C. Dellacherie and P. A. Meyer, Probabilités et potentiel, Hermann, 1975, chs. I–IV.
- [11] C. Dellacherie, Capacités et processus stochastiques, Springer, 1972.
- [12] P. Lévy, Le mouvement brownien fonction d'un ou de plusieurs paramètres, Rend. Sem. Math. Univ. Padova, (5) 22 (1963), 24–101.
- [13] H. P. McKean, Jr., Brownian motion with a several-dimensional time, Theory Prob. Appl., 8 (1963), 335–354.
- [14] R. L. Dobrushin, The description of the random field by its conditional distributions and its regularity conditions, Theory Prob. Appl., 13–14 (1968), 197–224. (Original in Russian, 1968).
- [15] I. M. Gel'fand, Generalized random processes (in Russian), Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR (N.S.), 100 (1955), 853–856.
- [16] I. M. Gel'fand and I. Ya. Vilenkin, Generalized functions IV, Academic Press, 1964. (Original in Russian, 1961.)
- [17] K. Itô, Stationary random distributions, Mem. Coll. Sci. Univ. Kyoto, (A) 28 (1954), 209–223.
- [18] K. Itô, Isotropic random current, Proc. 3rd Berkeley Symp. Math. Stat. Prob. II, Univ. of California Press, 1956, 125–132.
- [19] A. M. Yaglom (Jaglom), Some classes of random fields in n -dimensional space related to stationary random processes, Theory Prob. Appl., 2 (1957), 273–320. (Original in Russian, 1957.)
- [20] K. Urbanik, Stochastic processes whose sample functions are distributions, Theory Prob. Appl., 1 (1956), 132–134. (Original in Russian, 1956.)
- [21] K. Urbanik, Generalized stochastic processes, Studia Math., 16 (1958), 268–334.

408 (XIX.7) Stochastic Programming

A. General Remarks

Stochastic programming is a method of finding optimal solutions in mathematical programming in its narrow sense (\rightarrow 264 Mathematical Programming), when some or all coefficients are stochastic variables with known probability distributions. There are essentially two different types of models in stochastic programming situations: One is **chance-constrained programming** (CCP), and the other is a **two-stage stochastic programming** (TSSP). The difference between them depends mainly on the informational structure of the sequence of observations and decisions. For simplicity, let us here consider stochastic linear programming, which is the best-known model at present. Let A_0 , A be $m \times n$ -dimensional matrices and $x, c \in \mathbb{R}^n$ and $b, b_0 \in \mathbb{R}^m$. Suppose further that components of A, b, c are random variables, while those of A_0, b_0 are constants. Consider

the following formally defined linear programming problem: $\min_x \{c'x \mid Ax \leq b, x \in X_0\}$, $X_0 = \{x \mid A_0x \leq b_0, x \geq 0\}$. Let $(\Omega, \mathfrak{B}, P)$ be a probability space (\rightarrow 342 Probability Theory) such that $\{A(\omega), b(\omega), c(\omega)\}$ is a measurable transformation on Ω into $\mathbf{R}^{m \times n + m + n}$.

B. Chance-Constrained Programming (CCP)

This method is based on the assumption that a decision x has to be made in advance of the realization of the random variables. Suppose that $A_i(\omega)$ is the i th row of $A(\omega)$, and $b_i(\omega)$ is the i th component of $b(\omega)$. We call $P(\{\omega \mid A_i(\omega)x \leq b_i(\omega)\}) \geq \alpha_i$ a **chance constraint**, where α_i is a prescribed fractional value determined by the decision maker according to his attitude toward the constraint $A_i(\omega)x \leq b_i(\omega)$: if he attaches importance to it, he will take α_i as great as possible. Defining feasible sets $X_i(\alpha_i)$ and X by $X_i(\alpha_i) = \{x \mid P(\{\omega \mid A_i(\omega)x \leq b_i(\omega)\}) \geq \alpha_i\}$, $X = X_0 \cap \{\bigcap_{i=1}^m X_i(\alpha_i)\}$, we can formulate CCP as follows: $\min_x \{F(x) \mid x \in X\}$, where $F: X \rightarrow \mathbf{R}$, is the **certainty equivalent** of the stochastic objective function $c'x$. We have four models of CCP corresponding to different types of $F(x)$: (i) E -model: $F(x) = \bar{c}'x$, $\bar{c} = E_\omega c(\omega)$. (ii) V -model: $F(x) = \text{Var}(c(\omega)'x) = x'V_c x$, where V_c is a variance-covariance matrix of $c(\omega)$. (iii) P_1 -model: $F(x) = f$, $P(\{\omega \mid c(\omega)'x \leq f\}) \geq \alpha_0$, $1/2 \leq \alpha_0 \leq 1$. (iv) P_2 -model: $F(x) = P(\{\omega \mid c(\omega)'x \geq \gamma\})$ for a given constant γ . In particular, if the components of $A(\omega)$, $b(\omega)$, $c(\omega)$ have a multidimensional normal distribution, the certainty equivalent of the i th chance constraint is derived in the following form: $\bar{A}_i x + \Phi^{-1}(\alpha_i)(x'V_i x + 2w_i'x + v_i^2)^{1/2} \leq \bar{b}_i$, where \bar{A}_i , V_i , w_i , v_i , \bar{b}_i are expectation vectors or a variance-covariance matrix of $A_i(\omega)$ and $b_i(\omega)$ and $\Phi(t) = \int_{-\infty}^t \exp(-z^2/2) dz / \sqrt{2\pi}$. The set $X_i(\alpha_i)$ for this constraint can be shown to be convex for $1/2 \leq \alpha_i \leq 1$, by using the convexity of the function $\sqrt{x'Vx}$ for a positive semidefinite matrix V . Under the same assumption we can obtain the objective functions $F(x) = \bar{c}'x + \Phi^{-1}(\alpha_0)\sqrt{x'V_c x}$ for the P_1 -model and $F(x) = (\bar{c}'x - \gamma) / \sqrt{x'V_c x}$ for the P_2 -model. These four models have been shown to be computable by applying convex programming techniques, including the conjugate gradient method. Further studies on the convexity of a more general chance constraint $P(\{\omega \mid A(\omega)x \leq b(\omega)\}) \geq \alpha$, $0 \leq \alpha \leq 1$, appear in several articles.

C. Two-Stage Stochastic Programming (TSSP)

This method divides the decision process into two stages. First stage: Before the realization of random variables, one makes a decision x ,

being allowed to compensate for it after the specification of those values. Second stage: One obtains an optimal compensation $y \in \mathbf{R}^r$ for the given x and the realized values of the random variables. Assuming that $q \in \mathbf{R}^r$ is a random vector in addition to A , b , c , we can formulate TSSP as follows. First stage: $\min_x E_\omega \{(c(\omega)'x + Q(x, \omega) \mid x \in X)\}$; second stage: $Q(x, \omega) = \min_y \{q(\omega)'y \mid Wy = A(\omega)x - b(\omega), y \geq 0\}$, where $X = X_0 \cap K$, $K = \{x \mid Q(x, \omega) < +\infty \text{ with probability } 1\}$ and $q(\omega)'y$ is a loss function for the deviation $A(\omega)x - b(\omega)$. The $m \times n$ matrix W is called a compensation matrix. Several theorems have been proved: (i) K is a closed convex set; (ii) $Q(x) = E_\omega Q(x, \omega)$ is a convex function on K if the random variables in $A(\omega)$, $b(\omega)$, $q(\omega)$ are square integrable; (iii) if P has a density function, then $Q(x)$ has a continuous gradient on K ; (iv) when P has a finite discrete probability distribution, a TSSP problem is reduced to a linear programming problem having a dual decomposition structure.

References

- [1] A. Charnes and W. W. Cooper, Chance-constrained programming, *Management Sci.*, 6 (1959), 73–79.
- [2] G. B. Dantzig and A. Madansky, On the solution of two-stage linear programs under uncertainty, *Proc. 4th Berkeley Symp. Math. Statist. Probab. I*, Univ. of California Press, 1961.
- [3] S. Kataoka, A stochastic programming model, *Econometrica*, 31 (1963), 181–196.
- [4] I. M. Stancu-Minasian and M. J. Wets, A research bibliography in stochastic programming 1955–1975, *Operations Res.*, 24 (1976), 1078–1119.
- [5] S. Vajda, *Probabilistic programming*, Academic Press, 1972.
- [6] P. Kall, *Stochastic linear programming*, Springer, 1976.
- [7] V. V. Kolbin, *Stochastic programming*, Reidel 1977. (Original in Russian, 1977.)

409 (II.7) Structures

A. Examples of Structure

Structure is a unified description of mathematical objects such as \dagger ordered sets, \dagger trings, \dagger linear spaces, \dagger topological spaces, \dagger probability spaces, \dagger manifolds, etc., using only the concepts \dagger set and \dagger relation. The following are examples.

(1) Order. An \dagger ordering on a set A is a binary relation in A (\rightarrow 358 Relations) with a \dagger graph α such that (i) if $a \in A$, then $(a, a) \in \alpha$; (ii) if $(a, b) \in \alpha$ and $(b, a) \in \alpha$, then $a = b$; and (iii) if $(a, b) \in \alpha$ and $(b, c) \in \alpha$, then $(a, c) \in \alpha$, where α is an element of the \dagger power set $\mathfrak{P}(A \times A)$. We say that α determines a structure of ordering on the set A .

(2) Law of composition. A **law of composition** on a set A is a mapping from $A \times A$ (or a subset) to A . This mapping is considered as a ternary relation with a graph $\alpha \in \mathfrak{P}(A \times A \times A)$, satisfying the following two conditions (or possibly only (ii)): (i) if $(a, b) \in A \times A$, then $(a, b, c) \in \alpha$ for some $c \in A$; (ii) if $(a, b, c) \in \alpha$ and $(a, b, c') \in \alpha$, then $c = c'$. We say that α determines the structure of a law of composition in A . The \dagger associative law in the law of composition determined by α is given by: (iii) if $(a, b, x) \in \alpha$, $(b, c, y) \in \alpha$, $(x, c, z) \in \alpha$, and $(a, y, z') \in \alpha$, then $z = z'$. A set with conditions (i), (ii), and (iii) is called a **semigroup**.

(3) Operation. An **operation** of a set A on a set B is a mapping from $A \times B$ (or a subset) to B . It is considered as a ternary relation with the graph $\gamma \in \mathfrak{P}(A \times B \times B)$, satisfying the following two conditions (or possibly only (ii)): (i) if $(a, b) \in A \times B$, then $(a, b, c) \in \gamma$ for some $c \in B$; (ii) if $(a, b, c) \in \gamma$ and $(a, b, c') \in \gamma$, then $c = c'$. We say that γ determines the structure of an operation of A on B . Each element a of A is called an **operator** on B ; A is called a **domain of operators** on B , and B is called an **A -set**. When B is the main object of consideration, an operation of A on B is sometimes called an **external law of composition** of A on B . The law of composition of A as described in (2) is then called an **internal law of composition** of A . When a domain of operators A on B determined by $\gamma \in \mathfrak{P}(A \times B \times B)$ has an internal law of composition determined by $\alpha \in \mathfrak{P}(A \times A \times A)$, it is usually assumed that the following conditions on α, γ are satisfied: (iii) if $(a, b, x) \in \alpha$, $(b, c, y) \in \gamma$, $(x, c, z) \in \gamma$, and $(a, y, z') \in \gamma$, then $z = z'$. If we denote the law of composition by $(a, b) \rightarrow ab$ and the operation by $(a, b) \rightarrow a \cdot b$, then condition (iii) may be written: (iii') $(ab) \cdot c = a \cdot (b \cdot c)$ for $a, b \in A$ and $c \in B$. When an A -set B with an external law of composition determined by $\gamma \in \mathfrak{P}(A \times B \times B)$ has an internal law of composition determined by $\beta \in \mathfrak{P}(B \times B \times B)$, it is usually assumed that the following condition on β, γ is satisfied: (iv) if $(a, b, x) \in \gamma$, $(a, c, y) \in \gamma$, $(b, c, z) \in \beta$, $(x, y, w) \in \beta$, and $(a, z, w') \in \gamma$, then $w = w'$. According to the notation ab and $a \cdot b$, it is described as: (iv') $(a \cdot b)(a \cdot c) = a \cdot (bc)$ for $a \in A$ and $b, c \in B$.

The mapping $A \times B \rightarrow B(B \times A \rightarrow B)$ is called a **left (right) operation** of A on B . To emphasize leftness or rightness, "left-" or "right-" is attached to corresponding concepts.

(4) Topology. A \dagger topology on a set A is determined by a set $\alpha \in \mathfrak{P}\mathfrak{P}(A)$, called the \dagger system of open sets, satisfying the following conditions: (i) $\emptyset \in \alpha$ and $A \in \alpha$; (ii) if $\beta \subset \alpha$, then $\bigcup \beta \in \alpha$; and (iii) if $\beta \subset \alpha$ is finite, then $\bigcap \beta \in \alpha$. We say that α defines the structure of a topology on the set A (\rightarrow 425 Topological Spaces).

B. Mathematical Structures

We now explain the concept of mathematical structure for the case of a \dagger linear space (\rightarrow 256 Linear Spaces). A linear space has two basic sets, one of which is a set K of elements called scalars and the other, a set V of elements called \dagger vectors, two laws of compositions in K called addition and multiplication, a law of composition in V called addition, and an operation of K on V called scalar multiplication. The laws of composition and the operation are given by elements of power sets: $\alpha_1, \alpha_2 \in \mathfrak{P}(K \times K \times K)$, $\alpha_3 \in \mathfrak{P}(V \times V \times V)$, and $\alpha_4 \in \mathfrak{P}(K \times V \times V)$; and the basic properties of the linear space, such as $\lambda(a + b) = \lambda a + \lambda b$ ($\lambda \in K, a, b \in V$), are described as propositions on $K, V, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_4$ and denoted by $P(K, V, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_4), \dots$.

Up to now, we have been considering a given linear space. To give a description of a linear space in general, we use the symbols $X_1, X_2, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_4$ instead of the symbols $K, V, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_4$, replace conditions such as $\alpha_1 \in \mathfrak{P}(K \times K \times K), \dots$ by $\xi_1 \in \mathfrak{P}(X_1 \times X_1 \times X_1), \dots$, and consider the set Σ of these symbols and formulas:

$$\Sigma: X_1, X_2, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_4;$$

$$\xi_1 \in \mathfrak{P}(X_1 \times X_1 \times X_1), \dots,$$

$$\xi_4 \in \mathfrak{P}(X_1 \times X_2 \times X_2).$$

The set Σ is called the **type** of linear space. Similarly, we consider the set Γ of all $P(X_1, X_2, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_4), \dots$ corresponding to the basic properties $P(K, V, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_4), \dots$ of the linear space. The set Γ is called the **axiom system** of the linear space.

In general, let A_1, \dots, A_m be the **basic sets** (K and V in the preceding example). The **basic concepts** $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ ($\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_4$ in the preceding example) are given as elements of finitely generated sets from A_1, \dots, A_m , i.e., elements of sets obtained by a finite number of applications of the operations of forming the \dagger Cartesian product and the \dagger power set from A_1, \dots, A_m . **Basic properties** are given as propositions on $A_1, \dots, A_m, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$. These basic properties and $A_1, \dots, A_m, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ determine a **mathematical system**. We consider also a type Σ of symbols X_1, \dots, X_m of basic sets and symbols ξ_1, \dots, ξ_n of basic concepts, and an

axiom system Γ of basic properties. The pair (Σ, Γ) determines a **mathematical structure**. When we substitute sets A_1, \dots, A_m for X_1, \dots, X_m and $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ for ξ_1, \dots, ξ_n , where X_1, \dots, X_m and ξ_1, \dots, ξ_n satisfy the axiom system Γ , then $(A_1, \dots, A_m, \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)$ is called a mathematical system with the mathematical structure (Σ, Γ) , or a **model** of the structure (Σ, Γ) . Two mathematical systems are called **similar** or **of the same kind** if they have the same mathematical structure. Groups, rings, topological spaces, etc., are mathematical structures. Mathematical systems are sometimes called **algebraic systems in the wider sense**, and when we consider mainly their laws of composition (and operations), we call them **algebraic systems**. We explain this in further detail in Section C.

C. Algebraic Systems

Algebraic systems are sets with laws of composition and operations satisfying certain axiom systems; the laws of composition and operations and the axiom systems they satisfy determine their type (\rightarrow 2 Abelian Groups, 29 Associative Algebras, 42 Boolean Algebra, 67 Commutative Rings, 149 Fields, 151 Finite Groups, 190 Groups, 231 Jordan Algebras, 248 Lie Algebras, 368 Rings). Each algebraic system has its own theory, but general properties and related concepts are dealt with from a common standpoint. From this common ground we often get an insight into concepts from which arose a general theory of mathematical systems. We describe here only algebraic systems, but it is possible to describe similar concepts for mathematical systems. The following is a description based mainly on one law of composition $(a, b) \rightarrow ab$; a similar description is possible for the case of two or more laws of composition.

The law of composition ab is sometimes written $a + b$, $a \cdot b$, $[a, b]$, etc. A mapping $f: A \rightarrow A'$ of similar algebraic systems A and A' is called a **homomorphism** provided that $f(ab) = f(a)f(b)$ ($a, b \in A$). A' is said to be **homomorphic** to A if there is homomorphism from A onto A' . If f is one-to-one, onto, and its inverse mapping $f^{-1}: A' \rightarrow A$ is also a homomorphism, then f is called an **isomorphism**, A' is said to be **isomorphic** to A , and the relation is written $A \cong A'$. The composition of homomorphisms is a homomorphism, and the identity mapping is an isomorphism. A homomorphism of A to A itself is called an **endomorphism**, and if it is also an isomorphism, then it is an **automorphism**. The set of all endomorphisms of A forms a \dagger semigroup under

composition, and the set of automorphisms forms a group under composition. The concept of homomorphism is a fundamental concept appearing in all algebraic systems. A homomorphism is sometimes called a **representation**.

An element e of an algebraic system A with a law of composition ab is called an **identity element** if $ae = ea = a$ (for all $a \in A$). If such an element exists, then it is unique. In the case of a ring, two laws of composition, addition and multiplication, are given. In this case the identity element for multiplication (if it exists) is called the identity element (or \dagger unity element) of the ring. In the case of homomorphism between groups, the identity element is mapped to the identity element, but this does not always hold in general algebraic systems. Since the identity element plays an important role, it is frequently added to the basic concepts. Homomorphism between mathematical systems is generally defined to induce a mapping between basic concepts. A semigroup and a ring with a unity element are called a **unitary semigroup (monoid)** and a **unitary ring**, respectively, and homomorphisms between these systems are restricted to mappings that map the identity element to the identity element.

Let A and A' be similar algebraic systems, and let A be a subset of A' . A is called a **subsystem** of A' if the mapping $f: A \rightarrow A'$ defined by $f(a) = a$ ($a \in A$) is a homomorphism. A subsystem of a group (ring) is called a \dagger subgroup (\dagger subring), and similarly for other algebraic systems.

An \dagger equivalence relation R in an algebraic system A is called **compatible** with the law of composition if $R(a, a')$ and $R(b, b')$ imply $R(ab, a'b')$. Consider the \dagger quotient set A/R . Then the law of composition in A/R is uniquely determined so that the mapping $f: A \rightarrow A/R$ defined by $a \in f(a)$ is a homomorphism. The algebraic system thus obtained is called a **quotient system**. A quotient system of a group (ring) is a group (ring), called a \dagger quotient group (\dagger quotient ring). Other cases, including those where operations are given, are treated similarly (\rightarrow 52 Categories and Functors).

References

- [1] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, I. Théorie des ensembles, ch. 4, Structures, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1258a, Hermann, second edition, 1966; English translation, *Theory of sets*, Addison-Wesley, 1968.
- [2] C. Chevalley, *Fundamental concepts of algebra*, Academic Press, 1956.

410 (VI.21) Surfaces

A. The Notion of a Surface

The notion of a surface may be roughly expressed by saying that by moving a curve we get a surface or that the boundary of a solid body is a surface. But these propositions cannot be considered mathematical definitions of a surface. We also make a distinction between surfaces and planes in ordinary language, where we mean by surfaces only those that are not planes. In mathematical language, however, planes are usually included among the surfaces.

A surface can be defined as a 2-dimensional \dagger continuum, in accordance with the definition of a curve as a 1-dimensional continuum.

However, while we have a theory of curves based on this definition, we do not have a similar theory of surfaces thus defined (\rightarrow 93 Curves).

What is called a surface or a curved surface is usually a 2-dimensional \dagger topological manifold, that is, a topological space that satisfies the \dagger second countability axiom and of which every point has a neighborhood \dagger homeomorphic to the interior of a circular disk in a 2-dimensional Euclidean space. In the following sections, we mean by a surface such a 2-dimensional topological manifold.

B. Examples and Classification

The simplest examples of surfaces are the 2-dimensional \dagger simplex and the 2-dimensional \dagger sphere. Surfaces are generally \dagger simplicially decomposable (or triangulable) and hence homeomorphic to 2-dimensional polyhedra (T. Radó, *Acta Sci. Math. Szeged.* (1925)). A \dagger compact surface is called a **closed surface**, and a noncompact surface is called an **open surface**. A closed surface is decomposable into a finite number of 2-simplexes and so can be interpreted as a \dagger combinatorial manifold. A 2-dimensional topological manifold having a boundary is called a **surface with boundary**. A 2-simplex is an example of a surface with boundary, and a sphere is an example of a closed surface without boundary.

Surfaces are classified as \dagger orientable and \dagger nonorientable. In the special case when a surface is \dagger embedded in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space E^3 , whether the surface is orientable or not depends on its having two sides (the "surface" and "back") or only one side. Therefore, in this special case, an orientable surface is called **two-sided**, and a nonorientable

surface, **one-sided**. A nonorientable closed surface without boundary cannot be embedded in the Euclidean space E^3 (\rightarrow 56 Characteristic Classes, 114 Differential Topology).

The first example of a nonorientable surface (with boundary) is the so-called **Möbius strip** or **Möbius band**, constructed as an \dagger identification space from a rectangle by twisting through 180° and identifying the opposite edges with one another (Fig. 1).

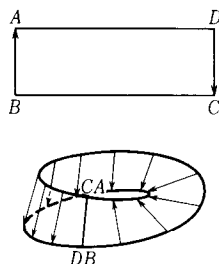


Fig. 1

As illustrated in Fig. 2, from a rectangle $ABCD$ we can obtain a closed surface homeomorphic to the product space $S^1 \times S^1$ by identifying the opposite edges AB with DC and BC with AD . This surface is the so-called 2-dimensional **torus** (or **anchor ring**). In this case, the four vertices A, B, C, D of the rectangle correspond to one point p on the surface, and the pairs of edges AB, DC and BC, AD correspond to closed curves a' and b' on the surface. We use the notation $aba^{-1}b^{-1}$ to represent a torus. This refers to the fact that the torus is obtained from an oriented four-sided polygon by identifying the first side and the third (with reversed orientation), the second side and the fourth (with reversed orientation). Similarly, aa^{-1} represents a sphere (Fig. 3), and $a_1b_1a_1^{-1}b_1^{-1}a_2b_2a_2^{-1}b_2^{-1}$ represents the closed surface shown in Fig. 4.

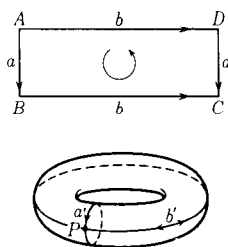


Fig. 2

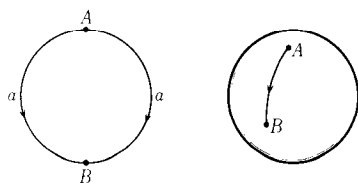


Fig. 3

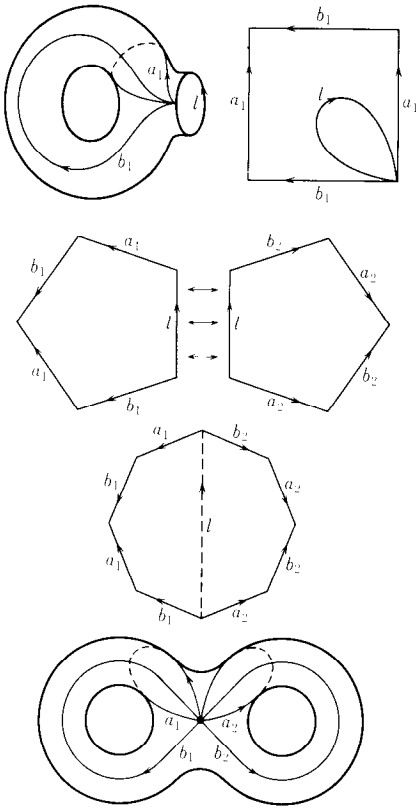


Fig. 4

All closed surfaces without boundary are constructed by identifying suitable pairs of sides of a $2n$ -sided polygon in a Euclidean plane E^2 . Furthermore, a closed orientable surface without boundary is homeomorphic to the surface represented by aa^{-1} or

$$a_1 b_1 a_1^{-1} b_1^{-1} \dots a_p b_p a_p^{-1} b_p^{-1}. \tag{1}$$

The 1-dimensional \ast Betti number of this surface is $2p$, the 0-dimensional and 2-dimensional \ast Betti numbers are 1, the \ast torsion coefficients are all 0, and p is called the **genus** of the surface. Also, a closed orientable surface of genus p with boundaries c_1, \dots, c_k is represented by

$$w_1 c_1 w_1^{-1} \dots w_k c_k w_k^{-1} a_1 b_1 a_1^{-1} b_1^{-1} \dots a_p b_p a_p^{-1} b_p^{-1} \tag{2}$$

(Fig. 5). A closed nonorientable surface without boundary is represented by

$$a_1 a_1 a_2 a_2 \dots a_q a_q. \tag{3}$$

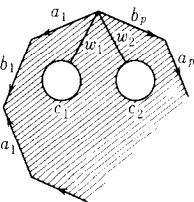


Fig. 5

The 1-dimensional Betti number of this surface is $q - 1$, the 0-dimensional and 2-dimensional Betti numbers are 1 and 0, respectively, the 1-dimensional torsion coefficient is 2, the 0-dimensional and 2-dimensional torsion coefficients are 0, and q is called the **genus** of the surface. A closed nonorientable surface of genus q with boundaries c_1, \dots, c_k is represented by

$$w_1 c_1 w_1^{-1} \dots w_k c_k w_k^{-1} a_1 a_1 \dots a_q a_q. \tag{4}$$

Each of forms (1)–(4) is called the **normal form** of the respective surface, and the curves a_i, b_i, w_k are called the **normal sections** of the surface. To explain the notation in (3), we first take the simplest case, aa . In this case, the surface is obtained from a disk by identifying each pair of points on the circumference that are end-points of a diameter (Fig. 6). The surface aa is then homeomorphic to a \ast projective plane of which a decomposition into a complex of triangles is illustrated in Fig. 7. On the other hand, $aabb$ represents a surface like that shown in Fig. 8, called the **Klein bottle**. Fig. 9 shows a **handle**, and Fig. 10 shows a **cross cap**.

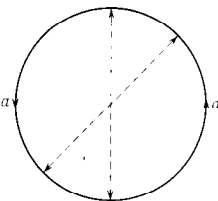


Fig. 6

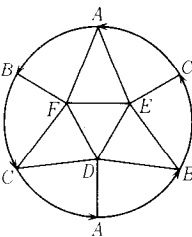


Fig. 7

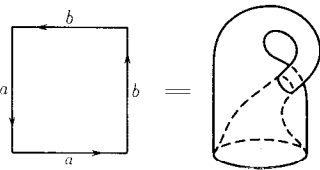


Fig. 8

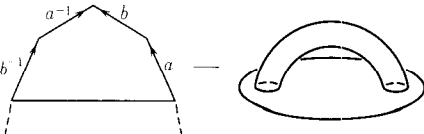


Fig. 9

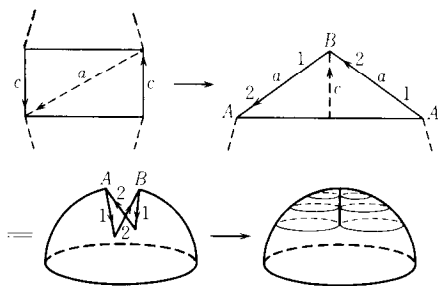


Fig. 10

The last two surfaces have boundaries; a handle is orientable, while a cross cap is non-orientable and homeomorphic to the Möbius strip. If we delete p disks from a sphere and replace them with an equal number of handles, then we obtain a surface homeomorphic to the surface represented in (1), while if we replace the disks by cross caps instead of by handles, then the surface thus obtained is homeomorphic to that represented in (3). Now we decompose the surfaces (1) and (3) into triangles and denote the number of i -dimensional simplexes by α_i ($i=0, 1, 2$). Then in view of the \dagger Euler-Poincaré formula, the surfaces (1) and (3) satisfy the respective formulas

$$\alpha_0 - \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 = 2(1 - p),$$

$$\alpha_0 - \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 = 2 - q.$$

The \dagger Riemann surfaces of \dagger algebraic functions of one complex variable are always surfaces of type (1), and their genera p coincide with those of algebraic functions.

All closed surfaces are homeomorphic to surfaces of types (1), (2), (3), or (4). A necessary and sufficient condition for two surfaces to be homeomorphic to each other is coincidence of the numbers of their boundaries, their orientability or nonorientability, and their genera (or \dagger Euler characteristic $\alpha^0 - \alpha^1 + \alpha^2$). This proposition is called the **fundamental theorem of the topology of surfaces**. The \dagger homeomorphism problem of closed surfaces is completely solved by this theorem. The same problem for n ($n \geq 3$) manifolds, even if they are compact, remains open. (For surface area \rightarrow 246 Length and Area. For the differential geometry of surfaces \rightarrow 111 Differential Geometry of Curves and Surfaces.)

References

- [1] B. Kerékjártó, *Vorlesungen über Topologie*, Springer, 1923.
- [2] H. Seifert and W. Threlfall, *Lehrbuch der Topologie*, Teubner, 1934 (Chelsea, 1945).
- [3] S. Lefschetz, *Introduction to topology*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1949.

[4] D. Hilbert and S. Cohn-Vossen, *Anschauliche Geometrie*, Springer, 1932; English translation, *Geometry and the imagination*, Chelsea, 1952.

[5] W. S. Massey, *Algebraic topology: An introduction*, Springer, 1967.

[6] E. E. Moise, *Geometric topology in dimensions 2 and 3*, Springer, 1977.

411 (I.4) Symbolic Logic

A. General Remarks

Symbolic logic (or **mathematical logic**) is a field of logic in which logical inferences commonly used in mathematics are investigated by use of mathematical symbols.

The **algebra of logic** originally set forth by G. Boole [1] and A. de Morgan [2] is actually an algebra of sets or relations; it did not reach the same level as the symbolic logic of today. G. Frege, who dealt not only with the logic of propositions but also with the first-order predicate logic using quantifiers (\rightarrow Sections C and K), should be regarded as the real originator of symbolic logic. Frege's work, however, was not recognized for some time. Logical studies by C. S. Peirce, E. Schröder, and G. Peano appeared soon after Frege, but they were limited mostly to propositions and did not develop Frege's work. An essential development of Frege's method was brought about by B. Russell, who, with the collaboration of A. N. Whitehead, summarized his results in *Principia mathematica* [4], which seemed to have completed the theory of symbolic logic at the time of its appearance.

B. Logical Symbols

If A and B are propositions, the propositions (A and B), (A or B), (A implies B), and (not A) are denoted by

$$A \wedge B, \quad A \vee B, \quad A \rightarrow B, \quad \neg A,$$

respectively. We call $\neg A$ the **negation** of A , $A \wedge B$ the **conjunction** (or **logical product**), $A \vee B$ the **disjunction** (or **logical sum**), and $A \rightarrow B$ the **implication** (or B by A). The proposition $(A \rightarrow B) \wedge (B \rightarrow A)$ is denoted by $A \leftrightarrow B$ and is read " A and B are **equivalent**." $A \vee B$ means that at least one of A and B holds. The propositions (For all x , the proposition $F(x)$ holds) and (There exists an x such that $F(x)$ holds) are denoted by $\forall x F(x)$ and $\exists x F(x)$, respectively. A proposition of the form $\forall x F(x)$

is called a **universal proposition**, and one of the form $\exists xF(x)$, an **existential proposition**. The symbols $\wedge, \vee, \rightarrow, \leftrightarrow, \neg, \forall, \exists$ are called **logical symbols**.

There are various other ways to denote logical symbols, including:

$$A \wedge B: A \& B, A \cdot B,$$

$$A \vee B: A + B,$$

$$A \rightarrow B: A \supset B, A \Rightarrow B,$$

$$A \leftrightarrow B: A \rightleftharpoons B, A \equiv B, A \sim B, A \supset \subset B, A \Leftrightarrow B,$$

$$\neg A: \sim A, \bar{A},$$

$$\forall xF(x): (x)F(x), \prod xF(x), \bigwedge xF(x),$$

$$\exists xF(x): (Ex)F(x), \sum xF(x), \bigvee xF(x).$$

C. Free and Bound Variables

Any function whose values are propositions is called a **propositional function**. $\forall x$ and $\exists x$ can be regarded as operators that transform any propositional function $F(x)$ into the propositions $\forall xF(x)$ and $\exists xF(x)$, respectively. $\forall x$ and $\exists x$ are called **quantifiers**; the former is called the **universal quantifier** and the latter the **existential quantifier**. $F(x)$ is transformed into $\forall xF(x)$ or $\exists xF(x)$ just as a function $f(x)$ is transformed into the definite integral $\int_0^1 f(x)dx$; the resultant propositions $\forall xF(x)$ and $\exists xF(x)$ are no longer functions of x . The variable x in $\forall xF(x)$ and in $\exists xF(x)$ is called a **bound variable**, and the variable x in $F(x)$, when it is not bound by $\forall x$ or $\exists x$, is called a **free variable**. Some people employ different kinds of symbols for free variables and bound variables to avoid confusion.

D. Formal Expressions of Propositions

A formal expression of a proposition in terms of logical symbols is called a **formula**. More precisely, formulas are constructed by the following **formation rules**: (1) If \mathfrak{A} is a formula, $\neg \mathfrak{A}$ is also a formula. If \mathfrak{A} and \mathfrak{B} are formulas, $\mathfrak{A} \wedge \mathfrak{B}$, $\mathfrak{A} \vee \mathfrak{B}$, $\mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \mathfrak{B}$ are all formulas. (2) If $\mathfrak{F}(a)$ is a formula and a is a free variable, then $\forall x\mathfrak{F}(x)$ and $\exists x\mathfrak{F}(x)$ are formulas, where x is an arbitrary bound variable not contained in $\mathfrak{F}(a)$ and $\mathfrak{F}(x)$ is the result of substituting x for a throughout $\mathfrak{F}(a)$.

We use formulas of various scope according to different purposes. To indicate the scope of formulas, we fix a set of formulas, each element of which is called a **prime formula** (or **atomic formula**). The scope of formulas is the set of formulas obtained from the prime formulas by formation rules (1) and (2).

E. Propositional Logic

Propositional logic is the field in symbolic logic in which we study relations between propositions exclusively in connection with the four logical symbols $\wedge, \vee, \rightarrow$, and \neg , called **propositional connectives**.

In propositional logic, we deal only with operations of **logical operators** denoted by propositional connectives, regarding the variables for denoting propositions, called **proposition variables**, only as prime formulas. We examine problems such as: What kinds of formulas are identically true when their proposition variables are replaced by any propositions, and what kinds of formulas can sometimes be true?

Consider the two symbols \vee and \wedge , read **true** and **false**, respectively, and let $\mathbf{A} = \{\vee, \wedge\}$. A univalent function from \mathbf{A} , or more generally from a Cartesian product $\mathbf{A} \times \dots \times \mathbf{A}$, into \mathbf{A} is called a **truth function**. We can regard $\wedge, \vee, \rightarrow, \neg$ as the following truth functions: (1) $A \wedge B = \vee$ for $A = B = \vee$, and $A \wedge B = \wedge$ otherwise; (2) $A \vee B = \wedge$ for $A = B = \wedge$, and $A \vee B = \vee$ otherwise; (3) $A \rightarrow B = \wedge$ for $A = \vee$ and $B = \wedge$, and $A \rightarrow B = \vee$ otherwise; (4) $\neg A = \wedge$ for $A = \vee$, and $\neg A = \vee$ for $A = \wedge$.

If we regard proposition variables as variables whose domain is \mathbf{A} , then each formula represents a truth function. Conversely, any truth function (of a finite number of independent variables) can be expressed by an appropriate formula, although such a formula is not uniquely determined. If a formula is regarded as a truth function, the value of the function determined by a combination of values of the independent variables involved in the formula is called the **truth value** of the formula.

A formula corresponding to a truth function that takes only \vee as its value is called a **tautology**. For example, $\mathfrak{A} \vee \neg \mathfrak{A}$ and $((\mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \mathfrak{B}) \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}) \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$ are tautologies. Since a truth function with n independent variables takes values corresponding to 2^n combinations of truth values of its variables, we can determine in a finite number of steps whether a given formula is a tautology. If $\mathfrak{A} \leftrightarrow \mathfrak{B}$ is a tautology (that is, \mathfrak{A} and \mathfrak{B} correspond to the same truth function), then the formulas \mathfrak{A} and \mathfrak{B} are said to be **equivalent**.

F. Propositional Calculus

It is possible to choose some specific tautologies, designate them as axioms, and derive all tautologies from them by appropriately given rules of inference. Such a system is called a **propositional calculus**. There are many ways

to stipulate axioms and rules of inference for a propositional calculus.

The abovementioned propositional calculus corresponds to the so-called classical propositional logic (\rightarrow Section L). By choosing appropriate axioms and rules of inference we can also formally construct intuitionistic or other propositional logics. In intuitionistic logic the law of the \dagger excluded middle is not accepted, and hence it is impossible to formalize intuitionistic propositional logic by the notion of tautology. We therefore usually adopt the method of propositional calculus, instead of using the notion of tautology, to formalize intuitionistic propositional logic. For example, V. I. Glivenko's theorem [5], that if a formula \mathfrak{A} can be proved in classical logic, then $\neg \neg \mathfrak{A}$ can be proved in intuitionistic logic, was obtained by such formalistic considerations. A method of extending the classical concepts of truth value and tautology to intuitionistic and other logics has been obtained by S. A. Kripke. There are also studies of logics intermediate between intuitionistic and classical logic (T. Umezawa).

G. Predicate Logic

Predicate logic is the area of symbolic logic in which we take quantifiers in account. Mainly propositional functions are discussed in predicate logic. In the strict sense only single-variable propositional functions are called **predicates**, but the phrase **predicate of n arguments** (or **n -ary predicate**) denoting an n -variable propositional function is also employed. Single-variable (or unary) predicates are also called **properties**. We say that a has the property F if the proposition $F(a)$ formed by the property F is true. Predicates of two arguments are called **binary relations**. The proposition $R(a, b)$ formed by the binary relation R is occasionally expressed in the form aRb . Generally, predicates of n arguments are called **n -ary relations**. The domain of definition of a unary predicate is called the **object domain**, elements of the object domain are called **objects**, and any variable running over the object domain is called an **object variable**. We assume here that the object domain is not empty. When we deal with a number of predicates simultaneously (with different numbers of variables), it is usual to arrange things so that all the independent variables have the same object domain by suitably extending their object domains.

Predicate logic in its purest sense deals exclusively with the general properties of quantifiers in connection with propositional connectives. The only objects dealt with in this

field are **predicate variables** defined over a certain common domain and object variables running over the domain. Propositional variables are regarded as predicates of no variables. Each expression $F(a_1, \dots, a_n)$ for any predicate variable F of n variables a_1, \dots, a_n (object variables designated as free) is regarded as a prime formula ($n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$), and we deal exclusively with formulas generated by these prime formulas, where bound variables are also restricted to object variables that have a common domain. We give no specification for the range of objects except that it be the common domain of the object variables.

By designating an object domain and substituting a predicate defined over the domain for each predicate variable in a formula, we obtain a proposition. By substituting further an object (object constant) belonging to the object domain for each object variable in a proposition, we obtain a proposition having a definite truth value. When we designate an object domain and further associate with each predicate variable as well as with each object variable a predicate or an object to be substituted for it, we call the pair consisting of the object domain and the association a **model**. Any formula that is true for every model is called an **identically true formula** or **valid formula**. The study of identically true formulas is one of the most important problems in predicate logic.

H. Formal Representations of Mathematical Propositions

To obtain a formal representation of a mathematical theory by predicate logic, we must first specify its object domain, which is a non-empty set whose elements are called **individuals**; accordingly the object domain is called the **individual domain**, and object variables are called **individual variables**. Secondly we must specify **individual symbols**, **function symbols**, and **predicate symbols**, signifying specific individuals, functions, and \dagger predicates, respectively. Here a function of n arguments is a univalent mapping from the Cartesian product $D \times \dots \times D$ of n copies of the given set to D . Then we define the notion of **term** as in the next paragraph to represent each individual formally. Finally we express propositions formally by formulas.

Definition of terms (formation rule for terms):

- (1) Each individual symbol is a term. (2) Each free variable is a term. (3) $f(t_1, \dots, t_n)$ is a term if t_1, \dots, t_n are terms and f is a function symbol of n arguments. (4) The only terms are those given by (1)–(3).

As a prime formula in this case we use any

formula of the form $F(t_1, \dots, t_n)$, where F is a predicate symbol of n arguments and t_1, \dots, t_n are arbitrary terms. To define the notions of term and formula, we need logical symbols, free and bound individual variables, and also a list of individual symbols, function symbols, and predicate symbols.

In pure predicate logic, the individual domain is not concrete, and we study only general forms of propositions. Hence, in this case, predicate or function symbols are not representations of concrete predicates or functions but are **predicate variables** and **function variables**. We also use free individual variables instead of individual symbols. In fact, it is now most common that function variables are dispensed with, and only free individual variables are used as terms.

I. Formulation of Mathematical Theories

To formalize a theory we need **axioms** and **rules of inference**. Axioms constitute a certain specific set of formulas, and a rule of inference is a rule for deducing a formula from other formulas. A formula is said to be **provable** if it can be deduced from the axioms by repeated application of rules of inference. Axioms are divided into two types: **logical axioms**, which are common to all theories, and **mathematical axioms**, which are peculiar to each individual theory. The set of mathematical axioms is called the **axiom system** of the theory.

(I) Logical axioms: (1) A formula that is the result of substituting arbitrary formulas for the proposition variables in a tautology is an axiom. (2) Any formula of the form

$$\forall x \mathfrak{F}(x) \rightarrow \mathfrak{F}(t) \quad \text{or} \quad \mathfrak{F}(t) \rightarrow \exists x \mathfrak{F}(x)$$

is an axiom, where $\mathfrak{F}(t)$ is the result of substituting an arbitrary term t for x in $\mathfrak{F}(x)$.

(II) Rules of inference: (1) We can deduce a formula \mathfrak{B} from two formulas \mathfrak{A} and $\mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \mathfrak{B}$ (**modus ponens**). (2) We can deduce $\mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \forall x \mathfrak{F}(x)$ from a formula $\mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \mathfrak{F}(a)$ and $\exists x \mathfrak{F}(x) \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$ from $\mathfrak{F}(a) \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$, where a is a free individual variable contained in neither \mathfrak{A} nor $\mathfrak{F}(x)$ and $\mathfrak{F}(a)$ is the result of substituting a for x in $\mathfrak{F}(x)$.

If an axiom system is added to these logical axioms and rules of inference, we say that a **formal system** is given.

A formal system S or its axiom system is said to be **contradictory** or to contain a **contradiction** if a formula \mathfrak{A} and its negation $\neg \mathfrak{A}$ are provable; otherwise it is said to be **consistent**. Since

$$(\mathfrak{A} \wedge \neg \mathfrak{A}) \rightarrow \mathfrak{B}$$

is a tautology, we can show that any formula is provable in a formal system containing a

contradiction. The validity of a proof by **reductio ad absurdum** lies in the fact that

$$(\mathfrak{A} \rightarrow (\mathfrak{B} \wedge \neg \mathfrak{B})) \rightarrow \neg \mathfrak{A}$$

is a tautology. An affirmative proposition (formula) may be obtained by reductio ad absurdum since the formula (of propositional logic) representing the **discharge of double negation**

$$\neg \neg \mathfrak{A} \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$$

is a tautology.

J. Predicate Calculus

If a formula has no free individual variable, we call it a **closed formula**. Now we consider a formal system S whose mathematical axioms are closed. A formula \mathfrak{A} is provable in S if and only if there exist suitable mathematical axioms $\mathfrak{C}_1, \dots, \mathfrak{C}_n$ such that the formula

$$(\mathfrak{C}_1 \wedge \dots \wedge \mathfrak{C}_n) \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}$$

is provable without the use of mathematical axioms. Since any axiom system can be replaced by an equivalent axiom system containing only closed formulas, the study of a formal system can be reduced to the study of pure logic.

In the following we take no individual symbols or function symbols into consideration and we use predicate variables as predicate symbols in accordance with the commonly accepted method of stating properties of the pure predicate logic; but only in the case of **predicate logic with equality** will we use predicate variables and the equality predicate $=$ as a predicate symbol. However, we can safely state that we use function variables as function symbols.

The formal system with no mathematical axioms is called the **predicate calculus**. The formal system whose mathematical axioms are the equality axioms

$$a = a, \quad a = b \rightarrow (\mathfrak{F}(a) \rightarrow \mathfrak{F}(b))$$

is called the **predicate calculus with equality**.

In the following, by being provable we mean being provable in the predicate calculus.

(1) Every provable formula is valid.

(2) Conversely, any valid formula is provable (K. Gödel [6]). This fact is called the **completeness** of the predicate calculus. In fact, by Gödel's proof, a formula \mathfrak{A} is provable if \mathfrak{A} is always true in every interpretation whose individual domain is of \dagger countable cardinality. In another formulation, if $\neg \mathfrak{A}$ is not provable, the formula \mathfrak{A} is a true proposition in some interpretation (and the individual domain in this case is of countable cardinality). We can

extend this result as follows: If an axiom system generated by countably many closed formulas is consistent, then its mathematical axioms can be considered true propositions by a common interpretation. In this sense, **Gödel's completeness theorem** gives another proof of the †Skolem-Löwenheim theorem.

(3) The predicate calculus is consistent. Although this result is obtained from (1) in this section, it is not difficult to show it directly (D. Hilbert and W. Ackermann [7]).

(4) There are many different ways of giving logical axioms and rules of inference for the predicate calculus. G. Gentzen gave two types of systems in [8]; one is a natural deduction system in which it is easy to reproduce formal proofs directly from practical ones in mathematics, and the other has a logically simpler structure. Concerning the latter, Gentzen proved **Gentzen's fundamental theorem**, which shows that a formal proof of a formula may be translated into a "direct" proof. The theorem itself and its idea were powerful tools for obtaining consistency proofs.

(5) If the proposition $\exists x\mathfrak{A}(x)$ is true, we choose one of the individuals x satisfying the condition $\mathfrak{A}(x)$, and denote it by $ex\mathfrak{A}(x)$. When $\exists x\mathfrak{A}(x)$ is false, we let $ex\mathfrak{A}(x)$ represent an arbitrary individual. Then

$$\exists x\mathfrak{A}(x) \rightarrow \mathfrak{A}(ex\mathfrak{A}(x)) \quad (1)$$

is true. We consider ex to be an operator associating an individual $ex\mathfrak{A}(x)$ with a proposition $\mathfrak{A}(x)$ containing the variable x . Hilbert called it the **transfinite logical choice function**; today we call it **Hilbert's ε -operator** (or **ε -quantifier**), and the logical symbol ε used in this sense **Hilbert's ε -symbol**. Using the ε -symbol, $\exists x\mathfrak{A}(x)$ and $\forall x\mathfrak{A}(x)$ are represented by

$$\mathfrak{A}(ex\mathfrak{A}(x)), \quad \mathfrak{A}(ex \neg \mathfrak{A}(x)),$$

respectively, for any $\mathfrak{A}(x)$. The system of predicate calculus adding formulas of the form (1) as axioms is essentially equivalent to the usual predicate calculus. This result, called the **ε -theorem**, reads as follows: When a formula \mathfrak{C} is provable under the assumption that every formula of the form (1) is an axiom, we can prove \mathfrak{C} using no axioms of the form (1) if \mathfrak{C} contains no logical symbol ε (D. Hilbert and P. Bernays [9]). Moreover, a similar theorem holds when axioms of the form

$$\forall x(\mathfrak{A}(x) \leftrightarrow \mathfrak{B}(x)) \rightarrow ex\mathfrak{A}(x) = ex\mathfrak{B}(x) \quad (2)$$

are added (S. Maehara [10]).

(6) For a given formula \mathfrak{A} , call \mathfrak{A}' a normal form of \mathfrak{A} when the formula

$$\mathfrak{A} \leftrightarrow \mathfrak{A}'$$

is provable and \mathfrak{A}' satisfies a particular condition. For example, for any formula \mathfrak{A} there is

a normal form \mathfrak{A}' satisfying the condition: \mathfrak{A}' has the form

$$Q_1x_1 \dots Q_nx_n\mathfrak{B}(x_1, \dots, x_n),$$

where Qx means a quantifier $\forall x$ or $\exists x$, and $\mathfrak{B}(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ contains no quantifier and has no predicate variables or free individual variables not contained in \mathfrak{A} . A normal form of this kind is called a **prenex normal form**.

(7) We have dealt with the classical first-order predicate logic until now. For other predicate logics (\rightarrow Sections K and L) also, we can consider a predicate calculus or a formal system by first defining suitable axioms or rules of inference. Gentzen's fundamental theorem applies to the intuitionistic predicate calculus formulated by V. I. Glivenko, A. Heyting, and others. Since Gentzen's fundamental theorem holds not only in classical logic and intuitionistic logic but also in several systems of first-order predicate logic or propositional logic, it is useful for getting results in modal and other logics (M. Ohnishi, K. Matsumoto). Moreover, Glivenko's theorem in propositional logic [5] is also extended to predicate calculus by using a rather weak representation (S. Kuroda [12]). G. Takeuti expected that a theorem similar to Gentzen's fundamental theorem would hold in higher-order predicate logic also, and showed that the consistency of analysis would follow if that conjecture could be verified [13]. Moreover, in many important cases, he showed constructively that the conjecture holds partially. The conjecture was finally proved by M. Takahashi [14] by a nonconstructive method. Concerning this, there are also contributions by S. Maehara, T. Simauti, M. Yasuhara, and W. Tait.

K. Predicate Logics of Higher Order

In ordinary predicate logic, the bound variables are restricted to individual variables. In this sense, ordinary predicate logic is called **first-order predicate logic**, while predicate logic dealing with quantifiers $\forall P$ or $\exists P$ for a predicate variable P is called **second-order predicate logic**.

Generalizing further, we can introduce the so-called **third-order predicate logic**. First we fix the individual domain D_0 . Then, by introducing the whole class D_1^n of predicates of n variables, each running over the object domain D_0 , we can introduce predicates that have D_1^n as their object domain. This kind of predicate is called a **second-order predicate** with respect to the individual domain D_0 . Even when we restrict second-order predicates to one-variable predicates, they are divided into vari-

ous types, and the domains of independent variables do not coincide in the case of more than two variables. In contrast, predicates having D_0 as their object domain are called **first-order predicates**. The logic having quantifiers that admit first-order predicate variables is second-order predicate logic, and the logic having quantifiers that admit up to second-order predicate variables is third-order predicate logic. Similarly, we can define further **higher-order predicate logics**.

Higher-order predicate logic is occasionally called **type theory**, because variables arise that are classified into various types. Type theory is divided into **simple type theory** and **ramified type theory**.

We confine ourselves to variables for single-variable predicates, and denote by P such a bound predicate variable. Then for any formula $\mathfrak{F}(a)$ (with a a free individual variable), the formula

$$\exists P \forall x (P(x) \leftrightarrow \mathfrak{F}(x))$$

is considered identically true. This is the point of view in simple type theory.

Russell asserted first that this formula cannot be used reasonably if quantifiers with respect to predicate variables occur in $\mathfrak{F}(x)$. This assertion is based on the point of view that the formula in the previous paragraph asserts that $\mathfrak{F}(x)$ is a first-order predicate, whereas any quantifier with respect to first-order predicate variables, whose definition assumes the totality of the first-order predicates, should not be used to introduce the first-order predicate $\mathfrak{F}(x)$. For this purpose, Russell further classified the class of first-order predicates by their **rank** and adopted the axiom

$$\exists P^k \forall x (P^k(x) \leftrightarrow \mathfrak{F}(x))$$

for the predicate variable P^k of rank k , where the rank i of any free predicate variable occurring in $\mathfrak{F}(x)$ is $\leq k$, and the rank j of any bound predicate variable occurring in $\mathfrak{F}(x)$ is $< k$. This is the point of view in ramified type theory, and we still must subdivide the types if we deal with higher-order propositions or propositions of many variables. Even Russell, having started from his ramified type theory, had to introduce the **axiom of reducibility** afterwards and reduce his theory to simple type theory.

L. Systems of Logic

Logic in the ordinary sense, which is based on the **law of the excluded middle** asserting that every proposition is in principle either true or false, is called **classical logic**. Usually, propo-

sitional logic, predicate logic, and type theory are developed from the standpoint of classical logic. Occasionally the reasoning of intuitionistic mathematics is investigated using symbolic logic, in which the law of the excluded middle is not admitted (\rightarrow 156 Foundations of Mathematics). Such logic is called **intuitionistic logic**. Logic is also subdivided into propositional logic, predicate logic, etc., according to the extent of the propositions (formulas) dealt with.

To express **modal propositions** stating **possibility**, **necessity**, etc., in symbolic logic, J. Łukasiewicz proposed a propositional logic called **three-valued logic**, having a third truth value, neither true nor false. More generally, **many-valued logics** with any number of truth values have been introduced; classical logic is one of its special cases, **two-valued logic** with two truth values, true and false. Actually, however, many-valued logics with more than three truth values have not been studied much, while various studies in **modal logic** based on classical logic have been successfully carried out. For example, studies of **strict implication** belong to this field.

References

- [1] G. Boole, An investigation of the laws of thought, Walton and Maberly, 1854.
- [2] A. de Morgan, Formal logic, or the calculus of inference, Taylor and Walton, 1847.
- [3] G. Frege, Begriffsschrift, eine der arithmetischen nachgebildete Formalsprache des reinen Denkens, Halle, 1879.
- [4] A. N. Whitehead and B. Russell, Principia mathematica I, II, III, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1910–1913; second edition, 1925–1927.
- [5] V. Glivenko, Sur quelques points de la logique de M. Brouwer, Acad. Roy. de Belgique, Bulletin de la classe des sciences, (5) 15 (1929), 183–188.
- [6] K. Gödel, Die Vollständigkeit der Axiome des logischen Funktionenkalküls, Monatsh. Math. Phys., 37 (1930), 349–360.
- [7] D. Hilbert and W. Ackermann, Grundzüge der theoretischen Logik, Springer, 1928, sixth edition, 1972; English translation, Principles of mathematical logic, Chelsea, 1950.
- [8] G. Gentzen, Untersuchungen über das logische Schliessen, Math. Z., 39 (1935), 176–210, 405–431.
- [9] D. Hilbert and P. Bernays, Grundlagen der Mathematik II, Springer, 1939; second edition, 1970.
- [10] S. Machara, Equality axiom on Hilbert's ε -symbol, J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo, (I), 7 (1957), 419–435.

- [11] A. Heyting, Die formalen Regeln der intuitionistischen Logik I, S.-B. Preuss. Akad. Wiss., 1930, 42–56.
- [12] S. Kuroda, Intuitionistische Untersuchungen der formalistischen Logik, Nagoya Math. J., 2 (1951), 35–47.
- [13] G. Takeuti, On a generalized logic calculus, Japan. J. Math., 23 (1953), 39–96.
- [14] M. Takahashi, A proof of the cut-elimination theorem in simple type-theory, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 19 (1967), 399–410.
- [15] S. C. Kleene, Mathematical logic, Wiley, 1967.
- [16] J. R. Shoenfield, Mathematical logic, Addison-Wesley, 1967.
- [17] R. M. Smullyan, First-order logic, Springer, 1968.

412 (IV.13) Symmetric Riemannian Spaces and Real Forms

A. Symmetric Riemannian Spaces

Let M be a * Riemannian space. For each point p of M we can define a mapping σ_p of a suitable neighborhood U_p of p onto U_p itself so that $\sigma_p(x_t) = x_{-t}$, where x_t ($|t| < \varepsilon$, $x_0 = p$) is any * geodesic passing through the point p . We call M a **locally symmetric Riemannian space** if for any point p of M we can choose a neighborhood U_p so that σ_p is an * isometry of U_p . In order that a Riemannian space M be locally symmetric it is necessary and sufficient that the * covariant differential (with respect to the * Riemannian connection) of the * curvature tensor of M be 0. A locally symmetric Riemannian space is a * real analytic manifold. We say that a Riemannian space M is a **globally symmetric Riemannian space** (or simply **symmetric Riemannian space**) if M is connected and if for each point p of M there exists an isometry σ_p of M onto M itself that has p as an isolated fixed point (i.e., has no fixed point except p in a certain neighborhood of p) and such that σ_p^2 is the identity transformation on M . In this case σ_p is called the **symmetry** at p . A (globally) symmetric Riemannian space is locally symmetric and is a * complete Riemannian space. Conversely, a * simply connected complete locally symmetric Riemannian space is a (globally) symmetric Riemannian space.

B. Symmetric Riemannian Homogeneous Spaces

A * homogeneous space G/K of a connected * Lie group G is a **symmetric homogeneous**

space (with respect to θ) if there exists an **involutive automorphism** (i.e., automorphism of order 2) θ of G satisfying the condition $K_\theta^0 \subset K \subset K_\theta$, where K_θ is the closed subgroup consisting of all elements of G left fixed by θ and K_θ^0 is the connected component of the identity element of K_θ . In this case, the mapping $aK \rightarrow \theta(a)K$ ($a \in G$) is a transformation of G/K having the point K as an isolated fixed point; more generally, the mapping $\theta_{a_0}: aK \rightarrow a_0\theta(a_0)^{-1}\theta(a)K$ is a transformation of G/K that has an arbitrary given point a_0K of G/K as an isolated fixed point. If there exists a G -invariant Riemannian metric on G/K , then G/K is a symmetric Riemannian space with symmetries $\{\theta_{a_0} | a_0 \in G\}$ and is called a **symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space**. A sufficient condition for a symmetric homogeneous space G/K to be a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space is that K be a compact subgroup. Conversely, given a symmetric Riemannian space M , let G be the connected component of the identity element of the Lie group formed by all the isometries of M ; then M is represented as the symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space $M = G/K$ and K is a compact group. In particular, a symmetric Riemannian space can be regarded as a Riemannian space that is realizable as a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space.

The Riemannian connection of a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space G/K is uniquely determined (independent of the choice of G -invariant Riemannian metric), and a geodesic x_t ($|t| < \infty$, $x_0 = a_0K$) passing through a point a_0K of G/K is of the form $x_t = (\exp tX)a_0K$. Here X is any element of the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} of G such that $\theta(X) = -X$, where θ also denotes the automorphism of \mathfrak{g} induced by the automorphism θ of G and $\exp tX$ is the * one-parameter subgroup of G defined by the element X . The covariant differential of any G -invariant tensor field on G/K is 0, and any G -invariant * differential form on G/K is a closed differential form.

C. Classification of Symmetric Riemannian Spaces

The * simply connected * covering Riemannian space of a symmetric Riemannian space is also a symmetric Riemannian space. Therefore the problem of classifying symmetric Riemannian spaces is reduced to classifying simply connected symmetric Riemannian spaces M and determining * discontinuous groups of isometries of M . When we take the * de Rham decomposition of such a space M and represent M as the product of a real Euclidean space and a number of simply connected irre-

ducible Riemannian spaces, all the factors are symmetric Riemannian spaces. We say that M is an **irreducible symmetric Riemannian space** if it is a symmetric Riemannian space and is irreducible as a Riemannian space.

A simply connected irreducible symmetric Riemannian space is isomorphic to one of the following four types of symmetric Riemannian homogeneous spaces (here Lie groups are always assumed to be connected):

(1) The symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space $(G \times G)/\{(a, a) | a \in G\}$ of the direct product $G \times G$, where G is a simply connected compact * simple Lie group and the involutive automorphism of $G \times G$ is given by $(a, b) \rightarrow (b, a)$ ($(a, b) \in G \times G$). This space is isomorphic, as a Riemannian space, to the space G obtained by introducing a two-sided invariant Riemannian metric on the group G ; the isomorphism is induced from the mapping $G \times G \ni (a, b) \rightarrow ab^{-1} \in G$.

(2) A symmetric homogeneous space G/K_θ of a simply connected compact simple Lie group G with respect to an involutive automorphism θ of G . In this case, the closed subgroup $K_\theta = \{a \in G | \theta(a) = a\}$ of G is connected. We assume here that θ is a member of the given complete system of representatives of the * conjugate classes formed by the elements of order 2 in the automorphism group of the group G .

(3) The homogeneous space G^C/G , where G^C is a complex simple Lie group whose * center reduces to the identity element and G is an arbitrary but fixed maximal compact subgroup of G^C .

(4) The homogeneous space G_0/K , where G_0 is a noncompact simple Lie group whose center reduces to the identity element and which has no complex Lie group structure, and K is a maximal compact subgroup of G . In Section D we shall see that (3) and (4) are actually symmetric homogeneous spaces. All four types of symmetric Riemannian spaces are actually irreducible symmetric Riemannian spaces, and G -invariant Riemannian metrics on each of them are uniquely determined up to multiplication by a positive number. On the other hand, (1) and (2) are compact, while (3) and (4) are homeomorphic to Euclidean spaces and not compact. For spaces of types (1) and (3) the problem of classifying simply connected irreducible symmetric Riemannian spaces is reduced to classifying * compact real simple Lie algebras and * complex simple Lie algebras, respectively, while for types (2) and (4) it is reduced to the classification of noncompact real simple Lie algebras (\rightarrow Section D) (for the result of classification of these types \rightarrow Appendix A, Table 5.II). On the other hand, any (not necessarily simply connected) irreducible

symmetric Riemannian space defines one of (1)–(4) as its * universal covering manifold; if the covering manifold is of type (3) or (4), the original symmetric Riemannian space is necessarily simply connected.

D. Symmetric Riemannian Homogeneous Spaces of Semisimple Lie Groups

In Section C we saw that any irreducible symmetric Riemannian space is representable as a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space G/K on which a connected semisimple Lie group G acts * almost effectively (\rightarrow 249 Lie Groups). Among symmetric Riemannian spaces, such a space $M = G/K$ is characterized as one admitting no nonzero vector field that is * parallel with respect to the Riemannian connection. Furthermore, if G acts effectively on M , G coincides with the connected component $I(M)^0$ of the identity element of the Lie group formed by all the isometries of M .

We let $M = G/K$ be a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space on which a connected semisimple Lie group G acts almost effectively. Then G is a Lie group that is * locally isomorphic to the group $I(M)^0$, and therefore the Lie algebra of G is determined by M . Let \mathfrak{g} be the Lie algebra of G , \mathfrak{k} be the subalgebra of \mathfrak{g} corresponding to K , and θ be the involutive automorphism of G defining the symmetric homogeneous space G/K . The automorphism of \mathfrak{g} defined by θ is also denoted by θ . Then $\mathfrak{k} = \{X \in \mathfrak{g} | \theta(X) = X\}$. Putting $\mathfrak{m} = \{X \in \mathfrak{g} | \theta(X) = -X\}$, we have $\mathfrak{g} = \mathfrak{m} + \mathfrak{k}$ (direct sum of linear spaces), and \mathfrak{m} can be identified in a natural way with the tangent space at the point K of G/K . The * adjoint representation of G gives rise to a representation of K in \mathfrak{g} , which induces a linear representation $\text{Ad}_\mathfrak{m}(k)$ of K in \mathfrak{m} . Then $\{\text{Ad}_\mathfrak{m}(k) | k \in K\}$ coincides with the * restricted homogeneous holonomy group at the point K of the Riemannian space G/K .

Now let φ be the * Killing form of \mathfrak{g} . Then \mathfrak{k} and \mathfrak{m} are mutually orthogonal with respect to φ , and denoting by $\varphi_\mathfrak{k}$ and $\varphi_\mathfrak{m}$ the restrictions of φ to \mathfrak{k} and \mathfrak{m} , respectively, $\varphi_\mathfrak{k}$ is a negative definite quadratic form on \mathfrak{k} . If $\varphi_\mathfrak{m}$ is also a negative definite quadratic form on \mathfrak{m} , \mathfrak{g} is a compact real semisimple Lie algebra and G/K is a compact symmetric Riemannian space; in this case we say that G/K is of **compact type**. In the opposite case, where $\varphi_\mathfrak{m}$ is a * positive definite quadratic form, G/K is said to be of **noncompact type**. In this latter case, G/K is homeomorphic to a Euclidean space, and if the center of G is finite, K is a maximal compact subgroup of G . Furthermore, the group of isometries $I(G/K)$ of G/K is canonically

isomorphic to the automorphism group of the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} . When G/K is of compact type (noncompact type), there exists one and only one G -invariant Riemannian metric on G/K , which induces in the tangent space \mathfrak{m} at the point K the positive definite inner product $-\varphi_{\mathfrak{m}}(\varphi_{\mathfrak{m}})$.

A symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space G/K_{θ} of compact type defined by a simply connected compact semisimple Lie group G with respect to an involutive automorphism θ is simply connected. Let $\mathfrak{g} = \mathfrak{m} + \mathfrak{k}_{\theta}$ be the decomposition of the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} of G with respect to the automorphism θ of \mathfrak{g} , and let $\mathfrak{g}^{\mathbb{C}}$ be the \dagger complex form of \mathfrak{g} . Then the real subspace $\mathfrak{g}_{\theta} = \sqrt{-1} \mathfrak{m} + \mathfrak{k}_{\theta}$ in $\mathfrak{g}^{\mathbb{C}}$ is a real semisimple Lie algebra and a \dagger real form of $\mathfrak{g}^{\mathbb{C}}$. Let G_{θ} be the Lie group corresponding to the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g}_{θ} with center reduced to the identity element, and let K be the subgroup of G_{θ} corresponding to \mathfrak{k}_{θ} . Then we get a (simply connected) symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space of noncompact type G_{θ}/K .

When we start from a symmetric Riemannian space of noncompact type G/K instead of the symmetric Riemannian space of compact type G/K_{θ} and apply the same process as in the previous paragraphs, taking a simply connected G_{θ} as the Lie group corresponding to \mathfrak{g}_{θ} , we obtain a simply connected symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space of compact type. Indeed, each of these two processes is the reverse of the other, and in this way we get a one-to-one correspondence between simply connected symmetric Riemannian homogeneous spaces of compact type and those of noncompact type. This relationship is called **duality** for symmetric Riemannian spaces; when two symmetric Riemannian spaces are related by duality, each is said to be the **dual** of the other.

If one of the two symmetric Riemannian spaces related by duality is irreducible, the other is also irreducible. The duality holds between spaces of types (1) and (3) and between those of types (2) and (4) described in Section C. This fact is based on the following theorem in the theory of Lie algebras, where we identify isomorphic Lie algebras. (i) Complex simple Lie algebras $\mathfrak{g}^{\mathbb{C}}$ and compact real simple Lie algebras \mathfrak{g} are in one-to-one correspondence by the relation that $\mathfrak{g}^{\mathbb{C}}$ is the complex form of \mathfrak{g} . (ii) Form the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g}_{θ} in the above way from a compact real simple Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} and an involutive automorphism θ of \mathfrak{g} . We assume that θ is a member of the given complete system of representatives of conjugate classes of involutive automorphisms in the automorphism group of \mathfrak{g} . Then we get from the pair (\mathfrak{g}, θ) a noncompact real simple Lie algebra \mathfrak{g}_{θ} , and any noncompact real

simple Lie algebra is obtained by this process in one and only one way.

Consider a Riemannian space given as a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space $M = G/K$ with a semisimple Lie group G , and let K be the \dagger sectional curvature of M . Then if M is of compact type the value of K is ≥ 0 , and if M is of noncompact type it is ≤ 0 . On the other hand, the **rank** of M is the (unique) dimension of a commutative subalgebra of \mathfrak{g} that is contained in and maximal in \mathfrak{m} . (For results concerning the group of isometries of M , distribution of geodesics on M , etc. — [3].)

E. Symmetric Hermitian Spaces

A connected \dagger complex manifold M with a \dagger Hermitian metric is called a **symmetric Hermitian space** if for each point p of M there exists an isometric and \dagger biholomorphic transformation of M onto M that is of order 2 and has p as an isolated fixed point. As a real analytic manifold, such a space M is a symmetric Riemannian space of even dimension, and the Hermitian metric of M is a \dagger Kähler metric. Let $I(M)$ be the (not necessarily connected) Lie group formed by all isometries of M , and let $A(M)$ be the subgroup consisting of all holomorphic transformations in $I(M)$. Then $A(M)$ is a closed Lie subgroup of $I(M)$. Let G be the connected component $A(M)^0$ of the identity element of $A(M)$. Then G acts transitively on M , and M is expressed as a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space G/K .

Under the de Rham decomposition of a simply connected symmetric Hermitian space (regarded as a Riemannian space), all the factors are symmetric Hermitian spaces. The factor that is isomorphic to a real Euclidean spaces as a Riemannian space is a symmetric Hermitian space that is isomorphic to the complex Euclidean space \mathbb{C}^n . A symmetric Hermitian space defining an irreducible symmetric Riemannian space is called an **irreducible symmetric Hermitian space**. The problem of classifying symmetric Hermitian spaces is thus reduced to classifying irreducible symmetric Hermitian spaces.

In general, if the symmetric Riemannian space defined by a symmetric Hermitian space M is represented as a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space G/K by a connected semisimple Lie group G acting effectively on M , then M is simply connected, G coincides with the group $A(M)^0$ introduced in the previous paragraph, and the center of K is not a \dagger discrete set. In particular, an irreducible symmetric Hermitian space is simply connected. Moreover, in order for an irreducible symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space G/K to be defined by an irreducible symmetric Hermitian

space M , it is necessary and sufficient that the center of K not be a discrete set. If G acts effectively on M , then G is a simple Lie group whose center is reduced to the identity element, and the center of K is of dimension 1. For a space G/K satisfying these conditions, there are two kinds of structures of symmetric Hermitian spaces defining the Riemannian structure of G/K .

As follows from the classification of irreducible symmetric Riemannian spaces, an irreducible Hermitian space defines one of the following symmetric Riemannian homogeneous spaces, and conversely, each of these homogeneous spaces is defined by one of the two kinds of symmetric Hermitian spaces.

(I) The symmetric homogeneous space G/K of a compact simple Lie group G with respect to an involutive automorphism θ such that the center of G reduces to the identity element and the center of K is not a discrete set. Here θ may be assumed to be a representative of a conjugate class of involutive automorphisms in the automorphism group of G .

(II) The homogeneous space G_0/K of a noncompact simple Lie group G_0 by a maximal compact subgroup K such that the center of G_0 reduces to the identity element and the center of K is not a discrete set.

An irreducible symmetric Hermitian space of type (I) is compact and is isomorphic to a \dagger rational algebraic variety. An irreducible symmetric Hermitian space of type (II) is homeomorphic to a Euclidean space and is isomorphic (as a complex manifold) to a bounded domain in \mathbb{C}^n (Section F).

By the same principle as for irreducible symmetric Riemannian spaces, a duality holds for irreducible symmetric Hermitian spaces which establishes a one-to-one correspondence between the spaces of types (I) and (II). Furthermore, an irreducible symmetric Hermitian space M_b of type (II) that is dual to a given irreducible symmetric Hermitian space $M_a = G/K$ of type (I) can be realized as an open complex submanifold of M_a in the following way. Let $G^{\mathbb{C}}$ be the connected component of the identity element in the Lie group formed by all the holomorphic transformations of M_a . Then $G^{\mathbb{C}}$ is a complex simple Lie group containing G as a maximal compact subgroup, and the complex Lie algebra $\mathfrak{g}^{\mathbb{C}}$ of $G^{\mathbb{C}}$ contains the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} of G as a real form. Let θ be the involutive automorphism of G defining the symmetric homogeneous space G/K , and let $\mathfrak{g} = \mathfrak{m} + \mathfrak{k}$ be the decomposition of \mathfrak{g} determined by θ . We denote by G_0 the real subgroup of $G^{\mathbb{C}}$ corresponding to the real form $\mathfrak{g}_0 = \sqrt{-1}\mathfrak{m} + \mathfrak{k}$ of $\mathfrak{g}^{\mathbb{C}}$. Then G_0 (i) is a closed subgroup of $G^{\mathbb{C}}$ whose center reduces to the identity element and (ii) contains K as a maximal com-

pact subgroup. By definition the space M_b is then given by G_0/K . Now the group G_0 acts on M_a as a subgroup of $G^{\mathbb{C}}$, and the orbit of G_0 containing the point K of M_a is an open complex submanifold that is isomorphic to M_b (as a complex manifold). M_a regarded as a complex manifold can be represented as the homogeneous space $G^{\mathbb{C}}/U$ of the complex simple Lie group $G^{\mathbb{C}}$.

F. Symmetric Bounded Domains

We denote by D a bounded domain in the complex Euclidean space \mathbb{C}^n of dimension n . We call D a **symmetric bounded domain** if for each point of D there exists a holomorphic transformation of order 2 of D onto D having the point as an isolated fixed point. On the other hand, the group of all holomorphic transformations of D is a Lie group, and D is called a **homogeneous bounded domain** if this group acts transitively on D . A symmetric bounded domain is a homogeneous bounded domain. The following theorem gives more precise results: On a bounded domain D , \dagger Bergman's kernel function defines a Kähler metric that is invariant under all holomorphic transformations of D . If D is a symmetric bounded domain, D is a symmetric Hermitian space with respect to this metric, and its defining Riemannian space is a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space of noncompact type G/K with semisimple Lie group G . Conversely, any symmetric Hermitian space of noncompact type is isomorphic (as a complex manifold) to a symmetric bounded domain. When D is isomorphic to an irreducible symmetric Hermitian space, we call D an **irreducible symmetric bounded domain**. A symmetric bounded domain is simply connected and can be decomposed into the direct product of irreducible symmetric bounded domains.

The connected component of the identity element of the group of all holomorphic transformations of a symmetric bounded domain D is a semisimple Lie group that acts transitively on D . Conversely, D is a symmetric bounded domain if a connected semisimple Lie group, or more generally, a connected Lie group admitting a two-sided invariant \dagger Haar measure, acts transitively on D . Homogeneous bounded domains in \mathbb{C}^n are symmetric bounded domains if $n \leq 3$ but not necessarily when $n \geq 4$.

G. Examples of Irreducible Symmetric Riemannian Spaces

Here we list irreducible symmetric Riemannian spaces of types (2) and (4) (\rightarrow Section C) that

can be represented as homogeneous spaces of classical groups, using the notation introduced by E. Cartan. We denote by $M_u = G/K$ a simply connected irreducible symmetric Riemannian space of type (2), where G is a group that acts almost effectively on M_u and K is the subgroup given by $K = K_\theta^0$ for an involutive automorphism θ of G . For such an M_u , the space of type (4) that is dual to M_u is denoted by $M_\theta = G_\theta/K$. Clearly $\dim M_u = \dim M_\theta$. (For the dimension and rank of M_u and for those M_u that are represented as homogeneous spaces of simply connected exceptional compact simple Lie groups — Appendix A, Table 5.III.) In this section (and also in Appendix A, Table 5.III), $O(n)$, $U(n)$, $Sp(n)$, $SL(n, \mathbf{R})$, and $SL(n, \mathbf{C})$ are the orthogonal group of degree n , the unitary group of degree n , the symplectic group of degree $2n$, and the real and complex special linear groups of degree n , respectively. Let $SO(n) = SL(n, \mathbf{R}) \cap O(n)$ and $SU(n) = SL(n, \mathbf{C}) \cap U(n)$. We put

$$I_{p,q} = \begin{pmatrix} -I_p & 0 \\ 0 & I_q \end{pmatrix}, \quad J_n = \begin{pmatrix} 0 & I_n \\ -I_n & 0 \end{pmatrix},$$

$$K_{p,q} = \begin{pmatrix} -I_p & 0 & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & I_q & 0 & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & -I_p & 0 \\ 0 & 0 & 0 & I_q \end{pmatrix},$$

where I_p is the $p \times p$ unit matrix.

Type AI. $M_u = SU(n)/SO(n)$ ($n > 1$), where $\theta(s) = \bar{s}$ (with \bar{s} the complex conjugate matrix of s). $M_\theta = SL(n, \mathbf{R})/SO(n)$.

Type AII. $M_u = SU(2n)/Sp(n)$ ($n > 1$), where $\theta(s) = J_n s J_n^{-1}$. $M_\theta = SU^*(2n)/Sp(n)$. Here $SU^*(2n)$ is the subgroup of $SL(2n, \mathbf{C})$ formed by the matrices that commute with the transformation $(z_1, \dots, z_n, z_{n+1}, \dots, z_{2n}) \rightarrow (\bar{z}_{n+1}, \dots, \bar{z}_{2n}, -\bar{z}_1, \dots, -\bar{z}_n)$ in \mathbf{C}^{2n} ; $SU^*(2n)$ is called the **quaternion unimodular group** and is isomorphic to the commutator group of the group of all regular transformations in an n -dimensional vector space over the quaternion field \mathbf{H} .

Type AIII. $M_u = SU(p+q)/S(U_p \times U_q)$ ($p \geq q \geq 1$), where $S(U_p \times U_q) = SU(p+q) \cap (U(p) \times U(q))$, with $U(p) \times U(q)$ being canonically identified with a subgroup of $U(p+q)$, and $\theta(s) = I_{p,q} s I_{p,q}$. This space M_u is a complex Grassmann manifold. $M_\theta = SU(p, q)/S(U_p \times U_q)$, where $SU(p, q)$ is the subgroup of $SL(p+q, \mathbf{C})$ consisting of matrices that leave invariant the Hermitian form $z_1 \bar{z}_1 + \dots + z_p \bar{z}_p - z_{p+1} \bar{z}_{p+1} - \dots - z_{p+q} \bar{z}_{p+q}$.

Type AIV. This is the case $q = 1$ of type AIII. M_u is the $(n-1)$ -dimensional complex projective space, and M_θ is called a **Hermitian hyperbolic space**.

Type BDI. $M_u = SO(p+q)/SO(p) \times SO(q)$ ($p \geq q \geq 1, p > 1, p+q \neq 4$), where $\theta(s) = I_{p,q} s I_{p,q}$. M_u is the real Grassmann manifold formed by

the oriented p -dimensional subspaces in \mathbf{R}^{p+q} . $M_\theta = SO_0(p, q)/SO(p) \times SO(q)$, where $SO(p, q)$ is the subgroup of $SL(n, \mathbf{R})$ consisting of matrices that leave invariant the quadratic form $x_1^2 + \dots + x_p^2 - x_{p+1}^2 - \dots - x_{p+q}^2$, and $SO_0(p, q)$ is the connected component of the identity element.

Type BDII. This is the case $q = 1$ of type BDI. M_u is the $(n-1)$ -dimensional sphere, and M_θ is called a **real hyperbolic space**.

Type DIII. $M_u = SO(2n)/U(n)$ ($n > 2$), where $U(n)$ is regarded as a subgroup of $SO(2n)$ by identifying $s \in U(n)$ with

$$\begin{pmatrix} \operatorname{Re} s & \operatorname{Im} s \\ -\operatorname{Im} s & \operatorname{Re} s \end{pmatrix} \in SO(2n),$$

and $\theta(s) = J_n s J_n^{-1}$. $M_\theta = SO^*(2n)/U(n)$. Here $SO^*(2n)$ denotes the group of all complex orthogonal matrices of determinant 1 leaving invariant the skew-Hermitian form $z_1 \bar{z}_{n+1} - z_{n+1} \bar{z}_1 + z_2 \bar{z}_{n+2} - z_{n+2} \bar{z}_2 + \dots + z_n \bar{z}_{2n} - z_{2n} \bar{z}_n$; this group is isomorphic to the group of all linear transformations leaving invariant a nondegenerate skew-Hermitian form in an n -dimensional vector space over the quaternion field \mathbf{H} .

Type CI. $M_u = Sp(n)/U(n)$ ($n \geq 1$), where $U(n)$ is considered as a subgroup of $Sp(n)$ by the identification $U(n) \subset SO(2n)$ explained in type DIII and $\theta(s) = \bar{s} (= J_n s J_n^{-1})$. $M_\theta = Sp(n, \mathbf{R})/U(n)$, where $Sp(n, \mathbf{R})$ is the real symplectic group of degree $2n$.

Type CII. $M_u = Sp(p+q)/Sp(p) \times Sp(q)$ ($p \geq q \geq 1$), where $Sp(p) \times Sp(q)$ is identified with a subgroup of $Sp(p+q)$ by the mapping

$$\left(\begin{pmatrix} A_1 & B_1 \\ C_1 & D_1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} A_2 & B_2 \\ C_2 & D_2 \end{pmatrix} \right) \rightarrow \begin{pmatrix} A_1 & 0 & B_1 & 0 \\ 0 & A_2 & 0 & B_2 \\ C_1 & 0 & D_1 & 0 \\ 0 & C_2 & 0 & D_2 \end{pmatrix}$$

and $\theta(s) = K_{p,q} s K_{p,q}$. $M_\theta = Sp(p, q)/Sp(p) \times Sp(q)$. Here $Sp(p, q)$ is the group of complex symplectic matrices of degree $2(p+q)$ leaving invariant the Hermitian form $(z_1, \dots, z_{p+q}) K_{p,q} (\bar{z}_1, \dots, \bar{z}_{p+q})$; this group is interpreted as the group of all linear transformations leaving invariant a nondegenerate Hermitian form of index p in a $(p+q)$ -dimensional vector space over the quaternion field \mathbf{H} . For $q = 1$, M_u is the quaternion projective space, and M_θ is called the **quaternion hyperbolic space**.

Among the spaces introduced here, there are some with lower p, q, n that coincide (as Riemannian spaces) — Appendix A, Table 5.III).

H. Space Forms

A Riemannian manifold of constant curvature is called a **space form**; it is said to be **spherical**,

Euclidean, or **hyperbolic** according as the constant curvature K is positive, zero, or negative. A space form is a locally symmetric Riemannian space; a simply connected complete space form is a sphere if $K > 0$, a real Euclidean space if $K = 0$, and a real hyperbolic space if $K < 0$. More generally, a complete spherical space form of even dimension is a sphere or a projective space, and one of odd dimension is an orientable manifold. A complete 2-dimensional Euclidean space form is one of the following spaces: Euclidean plane, cylinder, torus, † Möbius strip, † Klein bottle. Except for these five spaces and the 2-dimensional sphere, any † closed surface is a 2-dimensional hyperbolic space form (for details about space forms \rightarrow [6]).

I. Examples of Irreducible Symmetric Bounded Domains

Among the irreducible symmetric Riemannian spaces described in Section H, those defined by irreducible symmetric Hermitian spaces are of types AIII, DIII, BDI ($q = 2$), and CI. We list the irreducible symmetric bounded domains that are isomorphic to the irreducible Hermitian spaces defining these spaces. Positive definiteness of a matrix will be written $\gg 0$.

Type I_{m,m'} ($m' \geq m \geq 1$). The set of all $m \times m'$ complex matrices Z satisfying the condition $I_m - {}^{\dagger}\bar{Z}Z \gg 0$ is a symmetric bounded domain in $\mathbb{C}^{mm'}$, which is isomorphic (as a complex manifold) to the irreducible symmetric Hermitian space defined by M_θ of type AIII ($p = m$, $q = m'$).

Type II_m ($m \geq 2$). The set of all $m \times m$ complex † skew-symmetric matrices Z satisfying the condition $I_m - {}^{\dagger}\bar{Z}Z \gg 0$ is a symmetric bounded domain in $\mathbb{C}^{m(m-1)/2}$ corresponding to the type DIII ($n = m$).

Type III_m ($m \geq 1$). The set of all $m \times m$ complex symmetric matrices satisfying the condition $I_m - {}^{\dagger}\bar{Z}Z \gg 0$ is a symmetric bounded domain in $\mathbb{C}^{m(m+1)/2}$ corresponding to the type CI ($n = m$). This bounded domain is holomorphically isomorphic to the † Siegel upper half-space of degree m .

Type IV_m ($m \geq 1, m \neq 2$). This bounded domain in \mathbb{C}^m is formed by the elements (z_1, \dots, z_m) satisfying the condition $|z_1|^2 + \dots + |z_m|^2 < (1 + |z_1^2 + \dots + z_m^2|)/2 < 1$, and corresponds to the type BDI ($p = m, q = 2$).

Among these four types of bounded domains, the following complex analytic isomorphisms hold: $I_{1,1} \cong II_2 \cong III_1 \cong IV_1$, $II_3 \cong I_{1,3}$, $IV_3 \cong III_2$, $IV_4 \cong I_{2,2}$, $IV_6 \cong II_4$. (For details about these symmetric bounded domains \rightarrow [2].) There are two more kinds of irreducible symmetric bounded domains,

which are represented as homogeneous spaces of exceptional Lie groups.

J. Weakly Symmetric Riemannian Spaces

A generalization of symmetric Riemannian space is the notion of weakly symmetric Riemannian space introduced by Selberg. Let M be a Riemannian space. M is called a **weakly symmetric Riemannian space** if a Lie subgroup G of the group of isometries $I(M)$ acts transitively on M and there exists an element $\mu \in I(M)$ satisfying the relations (i) $\mu G \mu^{-1} = G$; (ii) $\mu^2 \in G$; and (iii) for any two points x, y of M , there exists an element m of G such that $\mu x = my$, $\mu y = mx$. A symmetric Riemannian space M becomes a weakly symmetric Riemannian space if we put $G = I(M)$ and $\mu =$ the identity transformation; as the element m in condition (iii) we can take the symmetry σ_p at the midpoint p on the geodesic arc joining x and y . There are, however, weakly symmetric Riemannian spaces that do not have the structure of a symmetric Riemannian space. An example of such a space is given by $M = G = SL(2, \mathbb{R})$ with a suitable Riemannian metric, where μ is the inner automorphism defined by

$$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & 0 \\ 0 & -1 \end{pmatrix}$$

(Selberg [4]). On a weakly symmetric Riemannian space, the ring of all G -invariant differential-integral operators is commutative; this fact is useful in the theory of spherical functions (\rightarrow 437 Unitary Representations).

References

- [1] S. Helgason, *Differential geometry, Lie groups, and symmetric spaces*, Academic Press, 1978.
- [2] C. L. Siegel, *Analytic functions of several complex variables*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1950.
- [3] J.-L. Koszul, *Exposés sur les espaces homogènes symétriques*, São Paulo, 1959.
- [4] A. Selberg, *Harmonic analysis and discontinuous groups in weakly symmetric Riemannian spaces with application to Dirichlet series*, J. Indian Math. Soc., 20 (1956), 47–87.
- [5] E. Cartan, *Sur certaines formes riemanniennes remarquables des géométries à groupe fondamental simple*, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., 44 (1927), 345–467 (Oeuvres complètes, Gauthier-Villars, 1952, pt. I, vol. 2, 867–989).
- [6] E. Cartan, *Sur les domaines bornés homogènes de l'espace de n -variables complexes*, Abh. Math. Sem. Univ. Hamburg, 11 (1936), 116–162 (Oeuvres complètes, Gauthier-Villars, 1952, pt. I, vol. 2, 1259–1305).

[7] J. A. Wolf, Spaces of constant curvature, McGraw-Hill, 1967.

[8] S. Kobayashi and K. Nomizu, Foundations of differential geometry II, Interscience, 1969.

[9] O. Loos, Symmetric spaces. I, General theory; II, Compact spaces and classification, Benjamin, 1969.

413 (VII.7) Symmetric Spaces

A \dagger Riemannian manifold M is called a **symmetric Riemannian space** if M is connected and if for each $p \in M$ there exists an involutive \dagger isometry σ_p of M that has p as an isolated fixed point. For the classification and the group-theoretic properties of symmetric Riemannian spaces \rightarrow 412 Symmetric Riemannian Spaces and Real Forms. We state here the geometrical properties of a symmetric Riemannian space M . Let M be represented by G/K , a \dagger symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space. The \dagger Lie algebras of G and K are denoted by \mathfrak{g} and \mathfrak{k} respectively. Let us denote by τ_a the \dagger left translation of M defined by $a \in G$, and by X^* the vector field on M generated by $X \in \mathfrak{g}$. We denote by θ the differential of the involutive automorphism of G defining G/K and identify the subspace $\mathfrak{m} = \{X \in \mathfrak{g} \mid \theta(X) = -X\}$ of \mathfrak{g} with the tangent space $T_o(M)$ of M at the origin $o = K$ of M . The \dagger representation of \mathfrak{k} on \mathfrak{m} induced from the \dagger adjoint representation of \mathfrak{g} is denoted by $\text{ad}_{\mathfrak{m}}$.

A. Riemannian Connections

M is a complete real analytic \dagger homogeneous Riemannian manifold. If M is a \dagger symmetric Hermitian space, it is a \dagger homogeneous Kählerian manifold. The \dagger Riemannian connection ∇ of M is the \dagger canonical connection of the homogeneous space G/K and satisfies $\nabla_Y X^* = [X, Y]$ ($Y \in \mathfrak{m}$) for each $X \in \mathfrak{k}$ and $\nabla_Y X^* = 0$ ($Y \in \mathfrak{m}$) for each $X \in \mathfrak{m}$. For each $X \in \mathfrak{m}$, the curve γ_X of M defined by $\gamma_X(t) = (\exp tX)o$ ($t \in \mathbf{R}$) is a \dagger geodesic of M such that $\gamma_X(0) = o$ and $\dot{\gamma}_X(0) = X$. In particular, the \dagger exponential mapping Exp_o at o is given by $\text{Exp}_o X = (\exp X)o$ ($X \in \mathfrak{m}$). For each $X \in \mathfrak{m}$, the \dagger parallel translation along the geodesic arc $\gamma_X(t)$ ($0 \leq t \leq t_0$) coincides with the differential of $\tau_{\exp t_0 X}$. If M is compact, for each $p \in M$ there exists a smooth simply closed geodesic passing through p . Any G -invariant tensor field on M

is \dagger parallel with respect to ∇ . Any G -invariant \dagger differential form on M is closed. The Lie algebra \mathfrak{h} of the \dagger restricted homogeneous holonomy group of M at o coincides with $\text{ad}_{\mathfrak{m}}[\mathfrak{m}, \mathfrak{m}]$. If the group $I(M)$ of all isometries of M is \dagger semisimple, one has $\mathfrak{h} = \{A \in \text{gl}(\mathfrak{m}) \mid A \cdot g_o = 0, A \cdot R_o = 0\} = \text{ad}_{\mathfrak{m}}\mathfrak{k}$. Here, g_o and R_o denote the values at o of the Riemannian metric g and the \dagger Riemannian curvature R of M , respectively, and $A \cdot$ is the natural action of A on the tensors over \mathfrak{m} . If, moreover, M is a symmetric Hermitian space, the value J_o at o of the \dagger almost complex structure J of M belongs to the center of \mathfrak{h} . In general, $\mathfrak{h} = \{0\}$ if and only if M is \dagger flat, and \mathfrak{h} has no nonzero invariant on \mathfrak{m} if and only if $I(M)$ is semisimple.

B. Riemannian Curvature Tensors

The Riemannian curvature tensor R of M is parallel and satisfies $R_o(X, Y) = -\text{ad}_{\mathfrak{m}}[X, Y]$ ($X, Y \in \mathfrak{m}$). Assume that $\dim M \geq 2$ in the following. Let P be a 2-dimensional subspace of \mathfrak{m} , and $\{X, Y\}$ an orthonormal basis of P with respect to g_o . Then the \dagger sectional curvature $K(P)$ of P is given by $K(P) = g_o([X, Y], X)$. $K = 0$ everywhere if and only if M is flat. If M is of \dagger compact type (resp. of \dagger noncompact type), then $K \geq 0$ (resp. $K \leq 0$) everywhere. $K > 0$ (resp. $K < 0$) everywhere if and only if the \dagger rank of M is 1 and M is of compact type (resp. of noncompact type). For any four points p, q, p', q' of a manifold M of any of these types satisfying $d(p, q) = d(p', q')$, d being the \dagger Riemannian distance of M , there exists a $\phi \in I(M)$ such that $\phi(p) = p'$ and $\phi(q) = q'$. Other than the aforementioned M 's, the only Riemannian manifolds having this property are circles and Euclidean spaces. If $K > 0$ everywhere, any geodesic of M is a smooth simply closed curve and all geodesics are of the same length. For a symmetric Hermitian space M , the \dagger holomorphic sectional curvature H satisfies $H = 0$ (resp. $H > 0$, $H < 0$) everywhere if and only if M is flat (resp. of compact type, of noncompact type).

C. Ricci Tensors

The \dagger Ricci tensor S of M is parallel. If $\varphi_{\mathfrak{m}}$ denotes the restriction to $\mathfrak{m} \times \mathfrak{m}$ of the \dagger Killing form φ of \mathfrak{g} , the value S_o of S at o satisfies $S_o = -\frac{1}{2}\varphi_{\mathfrak{m}}$. If M is \dagger irreducible, it is an \dagger Einstein space. $S = 0$ (resp. positive definite, negative definite, nondegenerate) everywhere if and only if M is flat (resp. M is of compact type, M is of noncompact type, $I(M)$ is semisimple). If M is a \dagger symmetric bounded domain and g is the \dagger Bergman metric of M , one has $S = -g$.

D. Symmetric Riemannian Spaces of Noncompact Type

Let M be of noncompact type. For each $p \in M$, p is the only fixed point of the \dagger symmetry σ_p , and the exponential mapping at p is a diffeomorphism from $T_p(M)$ to M . In particular, M is diffeomorphic to a Euclidean space. For each pair $p, q \in M$, a geodesic arc joining p and q is unique up to parametrization. For each $p \in M$ there exists neither a \dagger conjugate point nor a \dagger cut point of p . If M is a symmetric Hermitian space, that is, if it is a symmetric bounded domain, then it is a \dagger Stein manifold and holomorphically homeomorphic to a \dagger Siegel domain.

E. Groups of Isometries

The isotropy subgroup at o in $I(M)$ is denoted by $I_o(M)$. Then the smooth mapping $I_o(M) \times \mathfrak{m} \rightarrow I(M)$ defined by the correspondence $\phi \times X \mapsto \phi \tau_{\exp X}$ is surjective, and it is a diffeomorphism if M is of noncompact type. If M is of noncompact type, $I(M)$ is isomorphic to the group $A(\mathfrak{g})$ of all automorphisms of \mathfrak{g} in a natural way, and $I_o(M)$ is isomorphic to the subgroup $A(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f}) = \{\phi \in A(\mathfrak{g}) \mid \phi(\mathfrak{f}) = \mathfrak{f}\}$ of $A(\mathfrak{g})$, provided that G acts almost effectively on M . Moreover, in this case the center of the identity component $I(M)^0$ of $I(M)$ reduces to the identity, and the isotropy subgroup at a point in $I(M)^0$ is a maximal compact subgroup of $I(M)^0$. If $I(M)$ is semisimple, any element of $I(M)^0$ may be represented as a product of an even number of symmetries of M . In the following, let M be a symmetric Hermitian space, and denote by $A(M)$ (resp. $H(M)$) the group of all holomorphic isometries (resp. all holomorphic homeomorphisms) of M , and by $A(M)^0$ and $H(M)^0$ their identity components. All these groups act transitively on M . If M is compact or if $I(M)$ is semisimple, one has $A(M)^0 = I(M)^0$. If $I(M)$ is semisimple, M is simply connected and the center of $I(M)^0$ reduces to the identity. If M is of compact type, M is a \dagger rational \dagger projective algebraic manifold, and $H(M)^0$ is a complex semisimple Lie group whose center reduces to the identity, and it is the \dagger complexification of $I(M)^0$. In this case, the isotropy subgroup at a point in $H(M)^0$ is a \dagger parabolic subgroup of $H(M)^0$. If M is of noncompact type, one has $H(M)^0 = I(M)^0$. In the following we assume that G is compact.

F. Cartan Subalgebras

A maximal Abelian \dagger Lie subalgebra in \mathfrak{m} is called a **Cartan subalgebra** for M . Cartan sub-

algebras are conjugate to each other under the \dagger adjoint action of K . Fix a Cartan subalgebra \mathfrak{a} and introduce an inner product $(\ , \)$ on \mathfrak{a} by the restriction to $\mathfrak{a} \times \mathfrak{a}$ of g_θ . For an element α of the dual space \mathfrak{a}^* of \mathfrak{a} , we put $m_\alpha = \{X \in \mathfrak{m} \mid [H, [H, X]] = -\alpha(H)^2 X \text{ for any } H \in \mathfrak{a}\}$. The subset $\Sigma = \{\alpha \in \mathfrak{a}^* - \{0\} \mid m_\alpha \neq \{0\}\}$ of \mathfrak{a}^* is called the **root system** of M (relative to \mathfrak{a}). We write $m_\alpha = \dim m_\alpha$ for $\alpha \in \Sigma$. The subset $D = \{H \in \mathfrak{a} \mid \alpha(H) \in \pi\mathbb{Z} \text{ for some } \alpha \in \Sigma\}$ of \mathfrak{a} is called the **diagram** of M . A connected component of $\mathfrak{a} - D$ is called a **fundamental cell** of M . The quotient group W of the normalizer of \mathfrak{a} in K modulo the centralizer of \mathfrak{a} in K is called the **Weyl group** of M . W is identified with a finite group of orthogonal transformations of \mathfrak{a} .

G. Conjugate Points

For a geodesic arc γ with the initial point o , any \dagger Jacobi field along γ that vanishes at o and the end point of γ is obtained as the restriction to γ of the vector field X^* generated by an element $X \in \mathfrak{f}$. For $H \in \mathfrak{a} - \{0\}$, $\text{Exp}_o H$ is a conjugate point to o along the geodesic γ_H if and only if $\alpha(H) \in \pi\mathbb{Z} - \{0\}$ for some $\alpha \in \Sigma$. In this case, the multiplicity of the conjugate point $\text{Exp}_o H$ is equal to $\frac{1}{2} \sum_{\alpha \in \Sigma, \alpha(H) \in \pi\mathbb{Z} - \{0\}} m_\alpha$. From this fact and Morse theory (\rightarrow 279 Morse Theory), we get a \dagger cellular decomposition of the \dagger loop space of M . The set of all points conjugate to o coincides with $K \text{Exp}_o D$ and is stratified to a disjoint union of a finite number of connected regular submanifolds with dimension $\leq \dim M - 2$.

H. Cut Points

We define a \dagger lattice group Γ of \mathfrak{a} by $\Gamma = \{A \in \mathfrak{a} \mid \text{Exp}_o A = o\}$, and put $C_o = \{H \in \mathfrak{a} \mid \text{Max}_{A \in \Gamma - \{0\}} 2(H, A)/(A, A) = 1\}$. Then, for $H \in \mathfrak{a} - \{0\}$, $\text{Exp}_o H$ is a cut point of o along the geodesic γ_H if and only if $H \in C_o$. The set C_o of all cut points of o coincides with $K \text{Exp}_o C_o$ and is stratified to a disjoint union of a finite number of connected regular submanifolds with dimension $\leq \dim M - 1$. The set of all points \dagger first conjugate to o coincides with C_o if and only if M is simply connected.

I. Fundamental Groups

Let Γ_o denote the subgroup of Γ generated by $\{(2\pi/(\alpha, \alpha))\alpha \mid \alpha \in \Sigma\}$, identifying \mathfrak{a}^* with \mathfrak{a} by means of the inner product $(\ , \)$ of \mathfrak{a} . This is a subgroup of Γ . We regard Γ as a subgroup of the group $I(\mathfrak{a})$ of all motions of \mathfrak{a} by parallel

translations. The subgroup $\tilde{W} = W\Gamma$ of $I(\alpha)$ generated by Γ and the Weyl group W is called the **affine Weyl group** of M . \tilde{W} leaves the diagram D invariant and acts transitively on the set of all fundamental cells of M . Take a fundamental cell σ such that its closure $\bar{\sigma}$ contains 0, and put $\tilde{W}_\sigma = \{w \in \tilde{W} \mid w(\sigma) = \sigma\}$. Then the fundamental group $\pi_1(M)$ of M is an \dagger Abelian group isomorphic to the groups \tilde{W}_σ and Γ/Γ_0 . $\pi_1(M)$ is a finite group if and only if M is of compact type. In this case, the order of $\pi_1(M)$ is equal to the cardinality of the set $\Gamma \cap \bar{\sigma}$ as well as to the index $[\Gamma : \Gamma_0]$. Moreover, if we denote by \tilde{W}_σ^* the group \tilde{W}_σ for the symmetric Riemannian space $M^* = G^*/K^*$ defined by the \dagger adjoint group G^* of G and $K^* = \{a \in G^* \mid a\theta = \theta a\}$, then \tilde{W}_σ is isomorphic to a subgroup of \tilde{W}_σ^* . If M is irreducible, \tilde{W}_σ^* is isomorphic to a subgroup of the group of all automorphisms of the \dagger extended Dynkin diagram of the root system Σ .

J. Cohomology Rings

Let $P(\mathfrak{g})$ (resp. $P(\mathfrak{f})$) be the \dagger graded linear space of all \dagger primitive elements in the \dagger cohomology algebra $H(\mathfrak{g})$ of \mathfrak{g} (resp. $H(\mathfrak{f})$ of \mathfrak{f}), and $P(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f})$ the intersection of $P(\mathfrak{g})$ with the image of the natural homomorphism $H(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f}) \rightarrow H(\mathfrak{g})$, where $H(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f})$ denotes the relative cohomology algebra for the pair $(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f})$. Then one has $\dim P(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f}) + \dim P(\mathfrak{f}) = \dim P(\mathfrak{g})$. Denote by $\Lambda P(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f})$ the exterior algebra over $P(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f})$. The \dagger graded algebra of all G -invariant polynomials on \mathfrak{g} (resp. all K -invariant polynomials on \mathfrak{f}) is denoted by $I(G)$ (resp. $I(K)$), where the degree of a homogeneous polynomial with degree p is defined to be $2p$. We denote by $I^+(G)$ the ideal of $I(G)$ consisting of all $f \in I(G)$ such that $f(0) = 0$, and regard $I(K)$ as an $I^+(G)$ -module through the restriction homomorphism. Then the \dagger real cohomology ring $H(M)$ of M is isomorphic to the tensor product $\Lambda P(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f}) \otimes (I(K)/I^+(G)I(K))$. If K is connected and the \dagger Poincaré polynomials of $P(\mathfrak{g})$, $P(\mathfrak{f})$, and $P(\mathfrak{g}, \mathfrak{f})$ are $\sum_{i=1}^r t^{2m_i-1}$, $\sum_{i=1}^s t^{2n_i-1}$, and $\sum_{i=s+1}^r t^{2m_i-1}$, respectively, then the Poincaré polynomial of $H(M)$ is given by $\prod_{i=s+1}^r (1 + t^{2m_i-1}) \prod_{i=1}^s (1 - t^{2m_i}) \prod_{i=1}^s (1 - t^{2n_i})^{-1}$.

References

- [1] E. Cartan, Sur certaines formes riemanniennes remarquables des géométries à groupe fondamental simple, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., 44 (1927), 345–467.
- [2] S. Helgason, Differential geometry, Lie groups, and symmetric spaces, Academic Press, 1978.

- [3] S. Kobayashi and K. Nomizu, Foundations of differential geometry II, Interscience, 1969.
- [4] H. C. Wang, Two point homogeneous spaces, Ann. Math., (2) 55 (1952), 177–191.
- [5] A. Korányi and J. A. Wolf, Realization of Hermitian symmetric spaces as generalized half-planes, Ann. Math., (2) 81 (1965), 265–288.
- [6] R. Bott and H. Samelson, Applications of the theory of Morse to symmetric spaces, Amer. J. Math., 80 (1958), 964–1029.
- [7] T. Sakai, On cut loci of compact symmetric spaces, Hokkaido Math. J., 6 (1977), 136–161.
- [8] M. Takeuchi, On conjugate loci and cut loci of compact symmetric spaces I, Tsukuba J. Math., 2 (1978), 35–68.
- [9] R. Crittenden, Minimum and conjugate points in symmetric spaces, Canad. J. Math., 14 (1962), 320–328.
- [10] J. L. Koszul, Sur un type d'algèbre différentielles avec la transgression, Colloque de Topologie (Espaces fibrés), Brussels, 1950, 73–81.

414 (XX.1) Systems of Units

A. International System of Units

Units representing various physical quantities can be derived from a certain number of **fundamental (base) units**. By a **system of units** we mean a system of fundamental units. Various systems of units have been used in the course of the development of physics. Today, the standard is set by the **international system of units** (système international d'unités; abbreviated SI) [1], which has been developed in the spirit of the meter-kilogram system. This system consists of the seven fundamental units listed in Table 1, units induced from them, and unit designations with prefixes representing the powers of 10 where necessary. It also contains two **auxiliary units** for plane and solid angles, and a large number of derived units [1].

B. Systems of Units in Mechanics

Units in mechanics are usually derived from length, mass, and time, and SI uses the meter, kilogram, and second as base units. Neither the CGS system, derived from centimeter, gram, and second, nor the **system of gravitational units**, derived from length, force, and time, are recommended for general use by

Table 1

Quantity	SI unit	Symbol	Description
Length	meter	m	The meter is the length equal to 1,650,763.73 wave-lengths in vacuum of the radiation corresponding to the transmission between the levels $2p^{10}$ and $5d^5$ of the krypton-86 atom.
Mass	kilogram	kg	The kilogram is equal to the mass of the international prototype of the kilogram.
Time	second	s	The second is the duration of 9,192,631.770 periods of the radiation corresponding to the transmission between the two hyperfine levels of the ground state of the cesium-133 atom.
Intensity of electric current	ampere	A	The ampere is the intensity of the constant current maintained in two parallel, rectilinear conductors of infinite length and of negligible circular section, placed 1 m apart in vacuum, and producing a force between them equal to 2×10^{-7} newton ($\text{m} \cdot \text{kg} \cdot \text{s}^{-2}$) per meter of length.
Temperature	kelvin	K	The kelvin, the unit of thermodynamical temperature, is $1/273.16$ of the thermodynamical temperature of the triple point of water.
Amount of substance	mole	mol	The mole is the amount of substance of a system containing as many elementary entities as there are atoms in 0.012 kg of carbon-12.
Luminous intensity	candela	cd	The candela is the luminous intensity in a given direction of a source emitting monochromatic radiation of frequency 540×10^{12} hertz ($= \text{s}^{-1}$), the radiant intensity of which in that direction is $1/683$ watt per steradian. (This revised definition of candela was adopted in 1980.)

Table 2

Quantity	SI unit	Symbol	Unit in terms of SI base or derived units
Frequency	hertz	Hz	$1 \text{ Hz} = 1 \text{ s}^{-1}$
Force	newton	N	$1 \text{ N} = 1 \text{ kg} \cdot \text{m}/\text{s}^2$
Pressure and stress	pascal	Pa	$1 \text{ Pa} = 1 \text{ N}/\text{m}^2$
Work, energy, quantity of heat	joule	J	$1 \text{ J} = 1 \text{ N} \cdot \text{m}$
Power	watt	W	$1 \text{ W} = 1 \text{ J}/\text{s}$
Quantity of electricity	coulomb	C	$1 \text{ C} = 1 \text{ A} \cdot \text{s}$
Electromotive force, potential difference	volt	V	$1 \text{ V} = 1 \text{ W}/\text{A}$
Electric capacitance	farad	F	$1 \text{ F} = 1 \text{ C}/\text{V}$
Electric resistance	ohm	Ω	$1 \Omega = 1 \text{ V}/\text{A}$
Electric conductance	siemens	S	$1 \text{ S} = 1 \Omega^{-1}$
Flux of magnetic induction magnetic flux	weber	Wb	$1 \text{ Wb} = 1 \text{ V} \cdot \text{s}$
Magnetic induction, magnetic flux density	tesla	T	$1 \text{ T} = 1 \text{ Wb}/\text{m}^2$
Inductance	henry	H	$1 \text{ H} = 1 \text{ Wb}/\text{A}$
Luminous flux	lumen	lm	$1 \text{ lm} = 1 \text{ cd} \cdot \text{sr}$
Illuminance	lux	lx	$1 \text{ lx} = 1 \text{ lm}/\text{m}^2$
Activity	becquerel	Bq	$1 \text{ Bq} = 1 \text{ s}^{-1}$
Adsorbed dose	gray	Gy	$1 \text{ Gy} = 1 \text{ J}/\text{kg}$
Radiation dose	sievert	Sv	$1 \text{ Sv} = 1 \text{ J}/\text{kg}$

the SI Committee. Besides the base units, minute, hour, and day, degree, minute, and second (angle), liter, and ton have been approved by the SI Committee. Units such as the electron volt, atomic mass unit, astronomical unit, and parsec (not SI) are empirically defined and have been approved. Several other units, such as nautical mile, knot, are (area), and bar, have been provisionally approved.

C. System of Units in Thermodynamics

The base unit for temperature is the degree Kelvin ($^{\circ}\text{K}$; formerly called the absolute temperature). Degree Celsius ($^{\circ}\text{C}$), defined by $t = T - 273.15$, where T is in $^{\circ}\text{K}$, is also used.

The unit of heat is the joule J, the same as the unit for other forms of energy. Formerly, one calorie was defined as the quantity of heat that must be supplied to one gram of water to raise its temperature from 14.5°C to 15.5°C ; now one calorie is defined by $1 \text{ cal} = 4.1855 \text{ J}$.

D. Systems of Units in Electricity and Magnetism

Three distinct systems of units have been developed in the field of electricity and magnetism: the electrostatic system, which originates from Coulomb's law for the force between two electric charges and defines magnetic quantities by means of the Biot-Savart law; the electromagnetic system, which originates from Coulomb's law for magnetism; and the Gaussian system, in which the dielectric constant and permeability are taken to be non-dimensional. At present, however, the rationalized MKSA system of units is adopted as the international standard. It uses the **derived units** listed in Table 2 (taken from [2]), where the derived units with proper names in other fields are also listed.

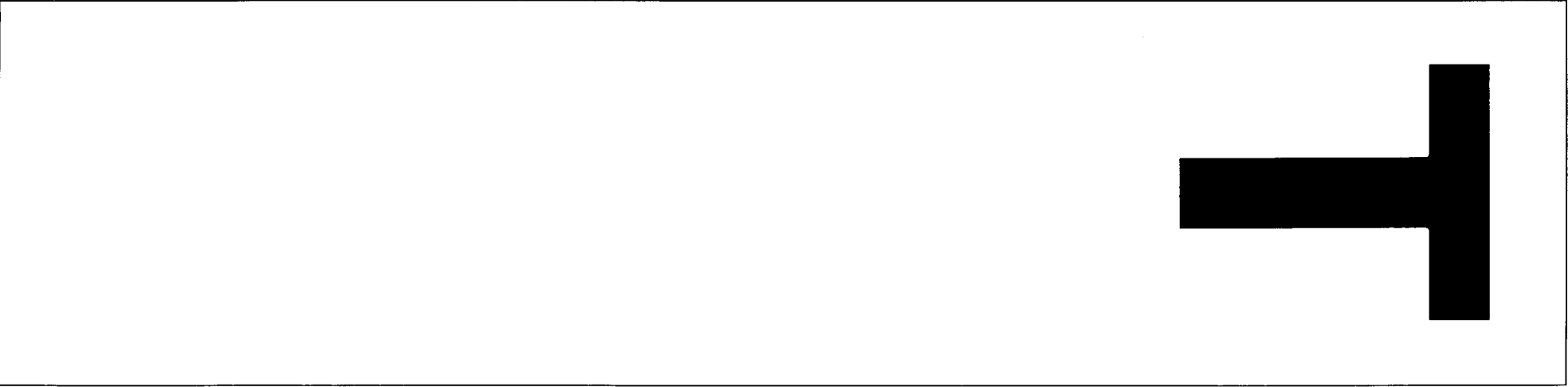
E. Other Units

In the field of photometry, the following definition was adopted in 1948: One candela (cd) (≈ 0.98 old candle) is defined as $1/(6 \times 10^5)$ of the luminous intensity in the direction normal to a plane surface of 1 m^2 area of a black body at the temperature of the solidifying point of platinum. The total luminous flux emanating uniformly in all directions from a source of luminous intensity 1 cd is defined as 4π lumen (lm). One lux (lx) is defined as the illuminance on a surface area of 1 m^2 produced by a luminous flux of 1 cd uniformly incident on the surface. In 1980, the definition was revised as shown in Table 1.

For theoretical purposes, a system of units called the absolute system of units is often used, in which units of mass, length, and time are chosen so that the values of universal constants, such as the universal gravitational constant, speed of light, Planck's constant, and Boltzmann's constant, are equal to 1.

References

- [1] Bureau International des Poids et Mesures, *Le système international d'unités*, 1970, fourth revised edition, 1981.
- [2] R. G. Lerner and G. L. Trigg (eds.), *Encyclopedia of physics*, Addison-Wesley, 1981.



415 (XXI.41) Takagi, Teiji

Teiji Takagi (April 21, 1875–February 28, 1960) was born in Gifu Prefecture, Japan. After graduation from the Imperial University of Tokyo in 1897, he continued his studies in Germany, first with Frobenius in Berlin and then with Hilbert in Göttingen. He returned to Japan in 1901 and taught at the Imperial University of Tokyo until 1936, when he retired. He died in Tokyo of cerebral apoplexy.

Since his student years he had been interested in Kronecker's conjecture on \dagger Abelian extensions of imaginary quadratic number fields. He solved it affirmatively for the case of $\mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-1})$ while still in Göttingen and presented this result as his doctoral thesis. During World War I, he pursued his research in the theory of numbers in isolation from Western countries. It developed into \dagger class field theory, a beautiful general theory of Abelian extensions of algebraic number fields. This was published in 1920, and was complemented by his 1922 paper on the \dagger reciprocity law of power residues and then by \dagger Artin's general law of reciprocity published in 1927. Besides these arithmetical works, he also published papers on algebraic and analytic subjects and on the foundations of the theories of natural numbers and of real numbers. His book (in Japanese) on the history of mathematics in the 19th century and his *General course of analysis* (also in Japanese) as well as his teaching and research activities at the University exercised great influence on the development of mathematics in Japan.

Reference

[1] S. Kuroda (ed.), The collected papers of Teiji Takagi, Iwanami, 1973.

416 (XI.16) Teichmüller Spaces

Consider the set \mathbf{M}_g consisting of the conformal equivalence classes of closed Riemann surfaces of genus g . In 1859 Riemann stated, without rigorous proof, that \mathbf{M}_g is parametrized by $m(g)$ ($=0$ if $g=0$, $=1$ if $g=1$, $=3g-3$ if $g\geq 2$) complex parameters (\rightarrow 11 Algebraic Functions). Later, the introduction of a topology and $m(g)$ -dimensional complex structure on \mathbf{M}_g were discussed rigorously in various ways. The following explanation of these methods is due to O. Teichmüller [1, 2], L. V. Ahlfors [3, 4], and L. Bers [5–7]. For the

algebraic-geometric approach \rightarrow 9 Algebraic Curves.

The trivial case $g=0$ is excluded, since \mathbf{M}_0 consists of a single point. Take a closed Riemann surface \mathfrak{R}_0 of genus $g\geq 1$, and consider the pairs (\mathfrak{R}, H) consisting of closed Riemann surfaces \mathfrak{R} of the same genus g and the homotopy classes H of orientation-preserving homeomorphisms of \mathfrak{R}_0 into \mathfrak{R} . Two pairs (\mathfrak{R}, H) and (\mathfrak{R}', H') are defined to be conformally equivalent if the homotopy class $H'H^{-1}$ contains a conformal mapping. The set \mathbf{T}_g consisting of the conformal equivalence classes $\langle \mathfrak{R}, H \rangle$ is called the **Teichmüller space** (with center at \mathfrak{R}_0). Let \mathfrak{S}_g be the group of homotopy classes of orientation-preserving homeomorphisms of \mathfrak{R}_0 onto itself. \mathfrak{S}_g is a transformation group acting on \mathbf{T}_g in the sense that each $\eta \in \mathfrak{S}_g$ induces the transformation $\langle \mathfrak{R}, H \rangle \rightarrow \langle \mathfrak{R}, H\eta \rangle$. It satisfies $\mathbf{T}_g/\mathfrak{S}_g = \mathbf{M}_g$. The set \mathfrak{I}_g of elements of \mathfrak{S}_g fixing every point of \mathbf{T}_g consists only of the unity element if $g\geq 3$ and is a normal subgroup of order 2 if $g=1, 2$. For the remainder of this article we assume that $g\geq 2$. The case $g=1$ can be discussed similarly, and the result coincides with the classical one: \mathbf{T}_1 can be identified with the upper half-plane and $\mathfrak{S}_1/\mathfrak{I}_1$ is the \dagger modular group.

Denote by $B(\mathfrak{R}_0)$ the set of measurable invariant forms $\mu \overline{dz} dz^{-1}$ with $\|\mu\|_\infty < 1$. For every $\mu \in B(\mathfrak{R}_0)$ there exists a pair (\mathfrak{R}, H) for which some $h \in H$ satisfies $h_z = \mu h_{\bar{z}}$ (\rightarrow 352 Quasiconformal Mappings). This correspondence determines a surjection $\mu \in B(\mathfrak{R}_0) \mapsto \langle \mathfrak{R}, H \rangle \in \mathbf{T}_g$. Next, if $Q(\mathfrak{R}_0)$ denotes the space of holomorphic quadratic differentials ϕdz^2 on \mathfrak{R}_0 , a mapping $\mu \in B(\mathfrak{R}_0) \mapsto \phi \in Q(\mathfrak{R}_0)$ is obtained as follows: Consider μ on the universal covering space U ($=$ upper half-plane) of \mathfrak{R}_0 . Extend it to U^* ($=$ lower half-plane) by setting $\mu=0$, and let f be a quasiconformal mapping f of the plane onto itself satisfying $f_{\bar{z}} = \mu f_z$. Take the \dagger Schwarzian derivative $\psi = \{f, z\}$ of the holomorphic function f in U^* . The desired ϕ is given by $\phi(z) = \psi(\bar{z})$ on U . It has been verified that two μ induce the same ϕ if and only if the same $\langle \mathfrak{R}, H \rangle$ corresponds to μ . Consequently, an injection $\langle \mathfrak{R}, H \rangle \in \mathbf{T}_g \mapsto \phi \in Q(\mathfrak{R}_0)$ is obtained. Since $Q(\mathfrak{R}_0) = \mathbb{C}^{m(g)}$ by the Riemann-Roch theorem, this injection yields an embedding $\mathbf{T}_g \subset \mathbb{C}^{m(g)}$, where \mathbf{T}_g is shown to be a domain.

As a subdomain of $\mathbb{C}^{m(g)}$, the Teichmüller space is an $m(g)$ -dimensional complex analytic manifold. It is topologically equivalent to the unit ball in real $2m(g)$ -dimensional space and is a bounded \dagger domain of holomorphy in $\mathbb{C}^{m(g)}$.

Let $\{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_{2g}\}$ be a 1-dimensional homology basis with integral coefficients in \mathfrak{R}_0 such that the intersection numbers are $(\alpha_i, \alpha_j) = (\alpha_{g+i}, \alpha_{g+j}) = 0$, $(\alpha_i, \alpha_{g+j}) = \delta_{ij}$, $i, j = 1, \dots, g$.

Given an arbitrary $\langle \mathfrak{R}, H \rangle \in \mathbf{T}_g$, consider the \dagger period matrix Ω of \mathfrak{R} with respect to the homology basis $H\alpha_1, \dots, H\alpha_{2g}$ and the basis $\omega_1, \dots, \omega_g$ of \dagger Abelian differentials of the first kind with the property that $\int_{H\alpha_i} \omega_j = \delta_{ij}$. Then Ω is a holomorphic function on \mathbf{T}_g . Furthermore, the analytic structure of the Teichmüller space introduced previously is the unique one (with respect to the topology defined above) for which the period matrix is holomorphic.

\mathfrak{S}_g is a properly discontinuous group of analytic transformations, and therefore \mathbf{M}_g is an $m(g)$ -dimensional normal \dagger analytic space. \mathfrak{S}_g is known to be the whole group of the holomorphic automorphisms of \mathbf{T}_g (Royden [8]); thus \mathbf{T}_g is not a \dagger symmetric space.

To every point τ of the Teichmüller space, there corresponds a Jordan domain $D(\tau)$ in the complex plane in such a way that the fiber space $F_g = \{(\tau, z) | z \in D(\tau), \tau \in \mathbf{T}_g \subset \mathbf{C}^{m(g)}\}$ has the following properties: F_g is a bounded domain of holomorphy of $\mathbf{C}^{m(g)+1}$. It carries a properly discontinuous group \mathfrak{G}_g of holomorphic automorphisms, which preserves every fiber $D(\tau)$ and is such that $D(\tau)/\mathfrak{G}_g$ is conformally equivalent to the Riemann surface corresponding to τ . F_g carries holomorphic functions $F_j(\tau, z)$, $j = 1, \dots, 5g - 5$ such that for every τ the functions F_j/F_1 , $j = 2, \dots, 5g - 5$ restricted to $D(\tau)$ generate the meromorphic function field of the Riemann surface $D(\tau)/\mathfrak{G}_g$.

By means of the \dagger extremal quasiconformal mappings, it can be verified that \mathbf{T}_g is a complete metric space. The metric is called the **Teichmüller metric**, and is known to be a Kobayashi metric.

The Teichmüller space also carries a naturally defined Kähler metric, which for $g = 1$ coincides with the \dagger Poincaré metric if \mathbf{T}_1 is identified with the upper half-plane. The \dagger Ricci curvature, \dagger holomorphic sectional curvature, and \dagger scalar curvature are all negative (Ahlfors [9]).

By means of the quasiconformal mapping f , which we considered previously in order to construct the correspondence $\mu \mapsto \varphi$, it is possible to regard the Teichmüller space as a space of quasi-Fuchsian groups (\rightarrow 234 Kleinian Groups). To the boundary of \mathbf{T}_g , it being a bounded domain in $\mathbf{C}^{m(g)}$, there correspond various interesting Kleinian groups, which are called \dagger boundary groups (Bers [10], Maskit [11]).

The definition of Teichmüller spaces can be extended to open Riemann surfaces \mathfrak{R}_0 and, further, to those with signatures. A number of propositions stated above are valid to these cases as well. In particular, the Teichmüller space for the case where \mathfrak{R}_0 is the unit disk is called the **universal Teichmüller space**. It is a bounded domain of holomorphy in an infinite-

dimensional Banach space and is a symmetric space. Every Teichmüller space is a subspace of the universal Teichmüller space.

References

- [1] O. Teichmüller, *Extremale quasikonforme Abbildungen und quadratische Differentiale*, Abh. Preuss. Akad. Wiss., 1939.
- [2] O. Teichmüller, *Bestimmung der extremalen quasikonformen Abbildung bei geschlossenen orientierten Riemannschen Flächen*, Abh. Preuss. Akad. Wiss., 1943.
- [3] L. V. Ahlfors, *The complex analytic structure of the space of closed Riemann surfaces*, Analytic functions, Princeton Univ. Press, 1960, 45–66.
- [4] L. V. Ahlfors, *Lectures on quasiconformal mappings*, Van Nostrand, 1966.
- [5] L. Bers, *Spaces of Riemann surfaces*. Proc. Intern. Congr. Math., Edinburgh, 1958, 349–361.
- [6] L. Bers, *On moduli of Riemann surfaces*, Lectures at Forschungsinstitut für Mathematik, Eidgenössische Technische Hochschule, Zürich, 1964.
- [7] L. Bers, *Uniformization, moduli, and Kleinian groups*, Bull. London Math. Soc., 4 (1972), 257–300.
- [8] H. L. Royden, *Automorphisms and isometries of Teichmüller spaces*, Advances in the Theory of Riemann Surfaces, Princeton Univ. Press, 1971, 369–383.
- [9] L. V. Ahlfors, *Curvature properties of Teichmüller's space*, J. Analyse Math., 9 (1961), 161–176.
- [10] L. Bers, *On boundaries of Teichmüller spaces and on Kleinian groups I*, Ann. Math., (2) 91 (1970), 570–600.
- [11] B. Maskit, *On boundaries of Teichmüller spaces and on Kleinian groups II*, Ann. Math., (2) 91 (1970), 608–638.

417 (VII.5) Tensor Calculus

A. General Remarks

In a \dagger differentiable manifold with an \dagger affine connection (in particular, in a \dagger Riemannian manifold), we can define an important operator on tensor fields, the operator of covariant differentiation. The **tensor calculus** is a differential calculus on a differentiable manifold that deals with various geometric objects and differential operators in terms of covariant differentiation, and it provides an important tool for studying geometry and analysis on a differentiable manifold.

B. Covariant Differential

Let M be an n -dimensional smooth manifold. We denote by $\mathfrak{F}(M)$ the set of all smooth functions on M and by $\mathfrak{X}_s(M)$ the set of all smooth tensor fields of type (r, s) on M . $\mathfrak{X}_0^1(M)$ is the set of all smooth vector fields on M , and we denote it simply by $\mathfrak{X}(M)$.

In the following we assume that an affine connection ∇ is given on M . Then we can define the **covariant differential** of tensor fields on M with respect to the connection (\rightarrow 80 Connections). We denote the **covariant derivative** of a tensor field K in the direction of a vector field X by $\nabla_X K$ and the covariant differential of K by ∇K . The operator ∇_X maps $\mathfrak{X}_s(M)$ into itself and has the following properties:

- (1) $\nabla_{X+Y} = \nabla_X + \nabla_Y$, $\nabla_{fX} = f\nabla_X$,
- (2) $\nabla_X(K + K') = \nabla_X K + \nabla_X K'$,
- (3) $\nabla_X(K \otimes K') = (\nabla_X K) \otimes K' + K \otimes (\nabla_X K')$,
- (4) $\nabla_X f = Xf$,
- (5) ∇_X commutes with contraction of tensor fields, where K and K' are tensor fields on M , $X, Y \in \mathfrak{X}(M)$ and $f \in \mathfrak{F}(M)$.

The **torsion tensor** T and the **curvature tensor** R of the affine connection ∇ are defined by

$$T(X, Y) = \nabla_X Y - \nabla_Y X - [X, Y],$$

$$R(X, Y)Z = \nabla_X(\nabla_Y Z) - \nabla_Y(\nabla_X Z) - \nabla_{[X, Y]}Z$$

for vector fields X, Y , and Z . The torsion tensor is of type $(1, 2)$, and the curvature tensor is of type $(1, 3)$. Some authors define $-R$ as the curvature tensor. We here follow the convention used in [1–6], while in [7, 8] the sign of the curvature tensor is opposite. The torsion tensor and the curvature tensor satisfy the identities

$$T(X, Y) = -T(Y, X), \quad R(X, Y) = -R(Y, X),$$

$$\begin{aligned} R(X, Y)Z + R(Y, Z)X + R(Z, X)Y \\ = (\nabla_X T)(Y, Z) + (\nabla_Y T)(Z, X) + (\nabla_Z T)(X, Y) \\ + T(T(X, Y), Z) + T(T(Y, Z), X) \\ + T(T(Z, X), Y), \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} (\nabla_X R)(Y, Z) + (\nabla_Y R)(Z, X) + (\nabla_Z R)(X, Y) \\ = R(X, T(Y, Z)) + R(Y, T(Z, X)) \\ + R(Z, T(X, Y)). \end{aligned}$$

The last two identities are called the **Bianchi identities**.

The operators ∇_X and ∇_Y for two vector fields X and Y are not commutative in general, and they satisfy the following formula, the **Ricci formula**, for a tensor field K :

$$\nabla_X(\nabla_Y K) - \nabla_Y(\nabla_X K) - \nabla_{[X, Y]}K = R(X, Y) \cdot K,$$

where in the right-hand side $R(X, Y)$ is re-

garded as a derivation of the tensor algebra $\Sigma_{r,s} \mathfrak{X}_s(M)$.

A **moving frame** of M on a neighborhood U is, by definition, an ordered set (e_1, \dots, e_n) of n vector fields on U such that $e_1(p), \dots, e_n(p)$ are linearly independent at each point $p \in U$. For a moving frame (e_1, \dots, e_n) of M on a neighborhood U we define n differential 1-forms $\theta^1, \dots, \theta^n$ by $\theta^i(e_j) = \delta_j^i$, and we call them the **dual frame** of (e_1, \dots, e_n) . For a tensor field K of type (r, s) on M , we define n^{r+s} functions $K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ on U by

$$K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} = K(e_{j_1}, \dots, e_{j_s}, \theta^{i_1}, \dots, \theta^{i_r})$$

and call these functions the components of K with respect to the moving frame (e_1, \dots, e_n) .

Since the covariant differentials ∇e_j are tensor fields of type $(1, 1)$, n^2 differential 1-forms ω_j^i are defined by

$$\nabla e_j = \omega_j^i \otimes e_i,$$

where in the right-hand side (and throughout the following) we adopt **Einstein's summation convention**: If an index appears twice in a term, once as a superscript and once as a subscript, summation has to be taken on the range of the index. (Some authors write the above equation as $de_j = \omega_j^i e_i$ or $De_j = \omega_j^i e_i$.) We call these 1-forms ω_j^i the **connection forms** of the affine connection with respect to the moving frame (e_1, \dots, e_n) . The torsion forms Θ^i and the curvature forms Ω_j^i are defined by

$$\Theta^i = d\theta^i + \omega_j^i \wedge \theta^j, \quad \Omega_j^i = d\omega_j^i + \omega_k^i \wedge \omega_j^k.$$

These equations are called the **structure equation** of the affine connection ∇ . If we denote the components of the torsion tensor and the curvature tensor with respect to (e_1, \dots, e_n) by T_{jk}^i and $R_{jkl}^i (= \theta^i(R(e_k, e_l)e_j))$, respectively, then they satisfy the relations

$$\Theta^i = \frac{1}{2} T_{jk}^i \theta^j \wedge \theta^k, \quad \Omega_j^i = \frac{1}{2} R_{jkl}^i \theta^k \wedge \theta^l.$$

Using these forms, the Bianchi identities are written as

$$d\Theta^i + \omega_j^i \wedge \Theta^j = \Omega_j^i \wedge \theta^j,$$

$$d\Omega_j^i + \omega_k^i \wedge \Omega_j^k - \omega_j^k \wedge \Omega_k^i = 0.$$

Let K be a tensor field of type (r, s) on M and $K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ be the components of K with respect to (e_1, \dots, e_n) . We define the covariant differential $DK_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ and the covariant derivative $K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ by

$$\begin{aligned} DK_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} = K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \theta^k = dK_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} + \sum_{v=1}^r K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_{v-1} i_{v+1} \dots i_r} \omega_a^{i_v} \\ - \sum_{v=1}^s K_{j_1 \dots a \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \omega_{j_v}^a, \end{aligned}$$

Then $K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ are the components of ∇K with respect to the moving frame (e_1, \dots, e_n) . Some authors write $\nabla_k K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ instead of $K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ [5, 6].

Using components, the Bianchi identities are written as

$$R_{ijk}^h + R_{jki}^h + R_{kij}^h = T_{ij, k}^h + T_{jk, i}^h + T_{ki, j}^h \\ + T_{ai}^h T_{jk}^a + T_{aj}^h T_{ki}^a + T_{ak}^h T_{ij}^a, \\ R_{ijk, l}^h + R_{ikl, j}^h + R_{ilj, k}^h = R_{iak}^h T_{jl}^a + R_{iaj}^h T_{lk}^a + R_{ial}^h T_{kj}^a.$$

The Ricci formula is written as

$$K_{j_1 \dots j_s, kl}^{i_1 \dots i_r} - K_{j_1 \dots j_s, lk}^{i_1 \dots i_r} = \sum_{v=1}^r R_{aik}^{i_v} K_{j_1 \dots a \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \\ - \sum_{v=1}^s R_{jv, lk}^a K_{j_1 \dots a \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \\ + T_{kl}^a K_{j_1 \dots j_s, a}^{i_1 \dots i_r}.$$

Let (x^1, \dots, x^n) be a local coordinate system defined on a neighborhood U of M . Then $(\partial/\partial x^1, \dots, \partial/\partial x^n)$ is a moving frame of M on U , and we call it the **natural moving frame** associated with the coordinate system (x^1, \dots, x^n) . Components of a tensor field with respect to the natural moving frame $(\partial/\partial x^1, \dots, \partial/\partial x^n)$ are often called components with respect to the coordinate system (x^1, \dots, x^n) . We define an n^3 function Γ_{kj}^i on U by $\omega_j^i = \Gamma_{kj}^i dx^k$, where ω_j^i are the connection forms for the natural moving frame. Γ_{kj}^i are called the coefficients of the affine connection ∇ . The components of the torsion tensor and the curvature tensor with respect to (x^1, \dots, x^n) are given by

$$T_{jk}^i = \Gamma_{jk}^i - \Gamma_{kj}^i, \\ R_{ijk}^h = \partial_j \Gamma_{ki}^h - \partial_k \Gamma_{ji}^h + \Gamma_{ki}^a \Gamma_{ja}^h - \Gamma_{ji}^a \Gamma_{ka}^h,$$

where $\partial_i = \partial/\partial x^i$.

With respect to the foregoing coordinate system, the components $K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ of the covariant differential ∇K of a tensor field K of type (r, s) are given by

$$K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r} = \partial_j K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} + \sum_{v=1}^r \Gamma_{ja}^{i_v} K_{j_1 \dots a \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \\ - \sum_{v=1}^s \Gamma_{jv, k}^a K_{j_1 \dots a \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}.$$

C. Covariant Differential of Tensorial Forms

A **tensorial p -form** of type (r, s) on a manifold M is an alternating $\mathfrak{F}(M)$ -multilinear mapping of $\mathfrak{X}(M) \times \dots \times \mathfrak{X}(M)$ to $\mathfrak{X}_s^r(M)$. A tensorial p -form of type $(0, 0)$ is a differential p -form in the usual sense. A tensorial p -form of type $(1, 0)$ is often called a **vectorial p -form**.

If an affine connection ∇ is provided on M , we define the covariant differential of tensorial forms. Let α be a tensorial p -form of type (r, s) .

The covariant differential $D\alpha$ of α is a tensorial $(p+1)$ -form of type (r, s) and is defined by

$$(p+1)D\alpha(X_1, \dots, X_{p+1}) \\ = \sum_{i=1}^{p+1} (-1)^{i-1} \nabla_{X_i}(\alpha(X_1, \dots, \hat{X}_i, \dots, X_{p+1})) \\ + \sum_{i < j} (-1)^{i+j} \alpha([X_i, X_j], \\ X_1, \dots, \hat{X}_i, \dots, \hat{X}_j, \dots, X_{p+1}),$$

where \hat{X}_i means that X_i is deleted. If α is of type $(0, 0)$, $D\alpha$ coincides with the usual exterior differential $d\alpha$.

The simplest example of a tensorial form is the identity mapping of $\mathfrak{X}(M)$, which will be denoted by θ . Some authors write this vectorial form as dp or dx , where p or x expresses an arbitrary point of a manifold. We call θ the **canonical vectorial form** of M . The torsion tensor T can be regarded as a vectorial 2-form, and we have $2D\theta = T$. The curvature tensor R can be regarded as a tensorial 2-form of type $(1, 1)$, i.e., $(X, Y) \rightarrow R(X, Y) \in \mathfrak{X}_1^1(M)$, and the Bianchi identities are written as $DT = R \wedge \theta$, $DR = 0$, where the exterior product $R \wedge \alpha$ of R and a tensorial p -form α is defined by

$$(p+1)(p+2)(R \wedge \alpha)(X_1, \dots, X_{p+2}) \\ = 2 \sum_{i < j} (-1)^{i+j-1} R(X_i, X_j) \alpha(X_1, \dots, \hat{X}_i, \dots, \hat{X}_j, \\ \dots, X_{p+2}).$$

In general, $2D^2\alpha = R \wedge \alpha$ holds for an arbitrary tensorial form α .

Let (e_1, \dots, e_n) be a moving frame of M on a neighborhood U and $\theta^1, \dots, \theta^n$ be its dual frames. A tensorial p -form α of type (r, s) is written as

$$\alpha = \alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \otimes e_{i_1} \otimes \dots \otimes e_{i_r} \otimes \theta^{j_1} \otimes \dots \otimes \theta^{j_s},$$

on U , where the $\alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ are the usual differential p -forms on U . We call them the components of α with respect to (e_1, \dots, e_n) . Then the components of $D\alpha$, which we denote by $D\alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$, are given by

$$D\alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} = d\alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} + \sum_{v=1}^r \omega_a^{i_v} \wedge \alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots a \dots i_r} \\ - \sum_{v=1}^s \omega_{j_v}^a \wedge \alpha_{j_1 \dots a \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}.$$

Then we have

$$D^2\alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} = \sum_{v=1}^r \Omega_a^{i_v} \wedge \alpha_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots a \dots i_r} - \sum_{v=1}^s \Omega_{j_v}^a \wedge \alpha_{j_1 \dots a \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}.$$

This is an expression of $2D^2\alpha = R \wedge \alpha$ in terms of components. The components of the canonical vectorial form θ are the dual forms $\theta^1, \dots, \theta^n$ of (e_1, \dots, e_n) , and we have $D\theta^i = \Theta^i$, which means that the components of $D\theta$ are the torsion forms Θ^i .

D. Tensor Fields on a Riemannian Manifold

Let (M, g) be an n -dimensional Riemannian manifold (\rightarrow 364 Riemannian Manifolds). The fundamental tensor g defines a one-to-one correspondence between vector fields and differential 1-forms. A differential 1-form α which corresponds to a vector field X is defined by $\alpha(Y) = g(X, Y)$ for any vector field Y . This correspondence is naturally extended to a one-to-one correspondence between $\mathfrak{X}_s(M)$ and $\mathfrak{X}'_s(M)$, where $r + s = r' + s'$. Let (e_1, \dots, e_n) be a moving frame of M on a neighborhood U and g_{ij} be the components of g with respect to the moving frame. Let (g^{ij}) be the inverse matrix of the matrix (g_{ij}) . The g^{ij} are the components of a symmetric contravariant tensor field of order 2. Let X^i be the components of a vector field X and α_i be the components of the differential 1-form α corresponding to X . Then X^i and α_i satisfy the relations $\alpha_i = g_{ij}X^j$ and $X^i = g^{ij}\alpha_j$. If K^h_{ij} are the components of a tensor field K of type $(1, 2)$ (here taken for simplicity), then

$$K_{hi} = K^a_{ij}g_{ah}, \quad K^{hi}_j = K^h_{aj}g^{ai},$$

$$K^{hij} = K^h_{ab}g^{ai}g^{bj}, \dots,$$

are the components of a tensor field of type $(0, 3)$, $(2, 1)$, $(3, 0)$, ..., respectively, all of which correspond to K . We call this process of obtaining the components of the corresponding tensor fields from the components of a given tensor field **raising the subscripts and lowering the superscripts** by means of the fundamental tensor g .

On a Riemannian manifold, we use the \dagger Riemannian connection, unless otherwise stated. The covariant derivative with respect to the Riemannian connection is given by

$$\begin{aligned} 2g(\nabla_X Y, Z) &= Xg(Y, Z) + Yg(X, Z) - Zg(X, Y) \\ &\quad + g([X, Y], Z) - g([X, Z], Y) \\ &\quad - g(X, [Y, Z]) \end{aligned}$$

for vector fields X , Y , and Z . The coefficients of the Riemannian connection with respect to a local coordinate system (x^1, \dots, x^n) are usually written as $\{\overset{i}{k}j\}$, called the **Christoffel symbols**, which are given by $\{\overset{i}{k}j\} = g^{ia}(\partial_k g_{ja} + \partial_j g_{ka} - \partial_a g_{kj})/2$. The curvature tensor R of the Riemannian connection satisfies the identities

$$R(X, Y)Z + R(Y, Z)X + R(Z, X)Y = 0,$$

$$(\nabla_X R)(Y, Z) + (\nabla_Y R)(Z, X) + (\nabla_Z R)(X, Y) = 0,$$

$$R(X, Y) = -R(Y, X),$$

$$g(R(X, Y)Z, W) = g(R(Z, W)X, Y)$$

$$= -g(Z, R(X, Y)W),$$

$$g(R(X, Y)Z, W) + g(R(X, Z)W, Y)$$

$$+ g(R(X, W)Y, Z) = 0.$$

In terms of the components, these identities are

$$R^h_{ijk} + R^h_{jki} + R^h_{kij} = 0,$$

$$R^h_{ijk,i} + R^h_{ikt,j} + R^h_{ij,k} = 0,$$

$$R^h_{ijk} = -R^h_{ikj}, \quad R_{hijk} = R_{jkhi} = -R_{ihjk},$$

$$R_{hijk} + R_{hjki} + R_{hkij} = 0,$$

$$\text{where } R_{hijk} = R^a_{ijk}g_{ah}.$$

The \dagger Ricci tensor S of the Riemannian manifold is a tensor field of type $(0, 2)$ defined by

$$S(X, Y) = \text{trace of the mapping } Z \rightarrow R(Z, X)Y$$

for vector fields X and Y . The components S_{ji} of the Ricci tensor are given by $S_{ji} = R^a_{jai}$. The \dagger scalar curvature k of the Riemannian manifold M is a scalar on M defined by $k = g^{ji}S_{ji}$. The Ricci tensor and the scalar curvature satisfy the identities

$$S(X, Y) = S(Y, X) \quad \text{or} \quad S_{ji} = S_{ij},$$

$$S_{ij,k} - S_{ik,j} = R^a_{ikj,a}, \quad 2g^{jk}S_{ij,k} = \partial_i k.$$

For a moving frame of a Riemannian manifold, it is convenient to use an **orthonormal moving frame**. A moving frame (e_1, \dots, e_n) is orthonormal if e_1, \dots, e_n satisfy $g(e_i, e_j) = \delta_{ij}$. Since the components of the fundamental tensor with respect to an orthonormal moving frame are δ_{ij} , raising or lowering the indices does not change the values of the components. Some authors write all the indices as subscripts. Also they write the dual 1-forms, the connection forms, and the curvature forms as θ_i , ω_{ji} , and Ω_{ji} , respectively, instead of θ^i , ω^i_j , and Ω^i_j . With respect to an orthonormal moving frame, the connection forms ω^i_j and the curvature forms Ω^i_j satisfy

$$\omega^i_j + \omega^j_i = 0 \quad \text{and} \quad \Omega^i_j + \Omega^j_i = 0.$$

On a Riemannian manifold, the divergence of a vector field and the operators d , δ , and Δ on differential forms (\rightarrow 194 Harmonic Integrals) can be expressed by using the covariant derivatives with respect to the Riemannian connection.

If X^i are the components of a vector field X with respect to a local coordinate system (x^1, \dots, x^n) , the divergence $\text{div } X$ of X is given by $\text{div } X = X^i_{,i}$.

Let α be a differential p -form on M . α is written locally in the form $\alpha = (1/p!)\alpha_{i_1 \dots i_p} dx^{i_1} \wedge \dots \wedge dx^{i_p}$, where the coefficients $\alpha_{i_1 \dots i_p}$ are skew-symmetric in all the indices. We call $\alpha_{i_1 \dots i_p}$ the components of α with respect to the coordinate system. Since α is regarded as an alternating tensor field of type $(0, p)$, we can define the covariant differential $\nabla \alpha$ of α . Then the components of $d\alpha$, $\delta\alpha$, and $\Delta\alpha$ are

given by

$$\begin{aligned} (d\alpha)_{i_1 \dots i_{p+1}} &= \sum_{v=1}^{p+1} (-1)^{v-1} \alpha_{i_1 \dots \widehat{i_v} \dots i_{p+1}, i_v}, \\ (\delta\alpha)_{i_1 \dots i_{p-1}} &= -g^{ab} \alpha_{a i_1 \dots i_{p-1}, b}, \\ (\Delta\alpha)_{i_1 \dots i_p} &= -g^{ab} \left[\alpha_{i_1 \dots i_p, ab} - \sum_{v=1}^p S_{i, a} \alpha_{i_1 \dots b \dots i_p} \right. \\ &\quad \left. - \sum_{v < w} R_{a i_v i_w}^c \alpha_{i_1 \dots b \dots c \dots i_p} \right]. \end{aligned}$$

For a smooth function f and a differential 1-form β we have

$$\Delta f = -\frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \tilde{e}_i (g^{ij} \sqrt{g} \partial_j f),$$

$$(\Delta\beta)_i = -g^{ab} [\beta_{i, ab} - S_{ia} \beta_b],$$

where $g = \det(g_{ij})$.

E. Van der Waerden–Bortolotti Covariant Differential

Let E be a finite dimensional smooth $+$ vector bundle over a smooth manifold M and $\Gamma(E)$ be an $\mathfrak{F}(M)$ -module of all smooth sections of E . A connection ∇' in E is a mapping of $\mathfrak{X}(M) \times \Gamma(E)$ to $\Gamma(E)$ such that

- (1) $\nabla'_X(\xi + \eta) = \nabla'_X \xi + \nabla'_X \eta$,
- (2) $\nabla'_X(f\xi) = Xf \cdot \xi + f \nabla'_X \xi$,
- (3) $\nabla'_{X+Y} \xi = \nabla'_X \xi + \nabla'_Y \xi$,
- (4) $\nabla'_{fX} \xi = f \nabla'_X \xi$,

for $X, Y \in \mathfrak{X}(M)$, $\xi, \eta \in \Gamma(E)$, and $f \in \mathfrak{F}(M)$. $\nabla'_X \xi$ is called the covariant derivative of ξ in the direction X .

An element K of $\mathfrak{X}^s(M) \otimes \Gamma(E)$ is called a **tensor field of type (r, s) with values in E** (or simply an E -valued tensor field of type (r, s)). K can be regarded as an $\mathfrak{F}(M)$ -linear mapping of $\mathfrak{X}^s(M)$ to $\Gamma(E)$ or an $\mathfrak{F}(M)$ -multilinear mapping of $\mathfrak{X}(M) \times \dots \times \mathfrak{X}(M)$ to $\mathfrak{X}_0^s(M) \otimes \Gamma(E)$. For a given $\xi \in \Gamma(E)$, a mapping $X \rightarrow \nabla'_X \xi$ defines a tensor field of type $(0, 1)$ with values in E which we call the covariant differential of ξ , denoted by $\nabla' \xi$.

The curvature tensor R' of ∇' is a tensor field of type $(0, 2)$ with values in $E^* \otimes E$ (E^* is the dual vector bundle of E), and is defined by

$$R'(X, Y)\xi = \nabla'_X(\nabla'_Y \xi) - \nabla'_Y(\nabla'_X \xi) - \nabla'_{[X, Y]}\xi$$

for any vector fields X and Y and any $\xi \in \Gamma(E)$.

If an affine connection ∇ is given on M , we can define the **van der Waerden–Bortolotti covariant derivative** $\bar{\nabla}_X K$ for ∇ and ∇' of a tensor field K of type (r, s) with values in E . It is defined by

$$(\bar{\nabla}_X K)(S) = \nabla'_X(K(S)) - K(\nabla_X S)$$

for any $S \in \mathfrak{X}^s(M)$. If we regard $\xi \in \Gamma(E)$ as an E -

valued tensor field of type $(0, 0)$, we have $\bar{\nabla}_X \xi = \nabla'_X \xi$. The covariant derivative $\bar{\nabla}_X R'$ of the curvature tensor R' of ∇' is a tensor field of type $(0, 2)$ with values in $E^* \otimes E$ is defined by

$$\begin{aligned} (\bar{\nabla}_X R')(Y, Z)\xi &= \nabla'_X(R'(Y, Z)\xi) - R'(\nabla_X Y, Z)\xi \\ &\quad - R'(Y, \nabla_X Z)\xi - R'(Y, Z)\nabla'_X \xi. \end{aligned}$$

The Bianchi identity is written as

$$\begin{aligned} (\bar{\nabla}_X R')(Y, Z) + (\bar{\nabla}_Y R')(Z, X) + (\bar{\nabla}_Z R')(X, Y) \\ = R'(X, T(Y, Z)) + R'(Y, T(Z, X)) \\ + R'(Z, T(X, Y)), \end{aligned}$$

where T is the torsion tensor of ∇ . The Ricci formula is given by

$$\begin{aligned} (\bar{\nabla}_X(\bar{\nabla}_Y K))(S) - (\bar{\nabla}_Y(\bar{\nabla}_X K))(S) - (\bar{\nabla}_{[X, Y]}K)(S) \\ = R'(X, Y) \cdot K(S) - K(R(X, Y) \cdot S), \end{aligned}$$

where R is the curvature tensor of ∇ , $K \in \mathfrak{X}^s(M) \otimes \Gamma(E)$ and $S \in \mathfrak{X}^s(M)$.

In the following we assume that the fiber of E is of finite dimension m . A moving frame of E on a neighborhood U of M is an ordered set (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) of local sections ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m on U such that $\xi_1(p), \dots, \xi_m(p)$ are linearly independent at each point p of U . Let (e_1, \dots, e_n) be a moving frame of M on U . Then an E -valued tensor field K of type (r, s) is locally written as

$$K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} e_{i_1} \otimes \dots \otimes e_{i_r} \otimes \theta^{j_1} \otimes \dots \otimes \theta^{j_s} \otimes \xi_\alpha,$$

where $\theta^1, \dots, \theta^n$ are the dual 1-forms of (e_1, \dots, e_n) . The $n^r \times m$ functions $K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ on U are called the components of K with respect to (e_1, \dots, e_n) and (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) . We define the connection forms ω_β^α of the connection ∇' by $\nabla' \xi_\beta = \omega_\beta^\alpha \otimes \xi_\alpha$. Then the curvature forms Ω_β^α are defined by

$$\Omega_\beta^\alpha = d\omega_\beta^\alpha + \omega_\lambda^\alpha \wedge \omega_\beta^\lambda = \frac{1}{2} R_{\beta\mu}^\alpha \theta^j \wedge \theta^i,$$

where $R_{\beta\mu}^\alpha$ are the components of the curvature tensor R' , i.e., $R'(e_j, e_i)\xi_\beta = R_{\beta\mu}^\alpha \xi_\alpha$.

For a given tensor field K of type (r, s) with values in E , the mapping $X \rightarrow \bar{\nabla}_X K$ defines a tensor field $\bar{\nabla} K$ of $(r, s+1)$ with values in E which we call the van der Waerden–Bortolotti covariant differential of K . Then if $K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ are the components of K with respect to (e_1, \dots, e_n) and (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) , the components $K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r}$ of $\bar{\nabla} K$ are given by

$$\begin{aligned} K_{j_1 \dots j_s, k}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \theta^k &= dK_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} + \sum_{v=1}^r K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_{v-1} i_{v+1} \dots i_r} \omega_a^{i_v} \\ &\quad - \sum_{v=1}^s K_{j_1 \dots j_{v-1} j_{v+1} \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r} \omega_{j_v}^a + K_{j_1 \dots j_s}^{i_1 \dots i_r \beta} \omega_\beta^\alpha. \end{aligned}$$

Let f be a smooth mapping of M into a smooth manifold M' . The differential f_* (or df) can be regarded as a tensor field of type $(0, 1)$ with values in $f^*T(M')$. Assume that M (resp. M') has a Riemannian metric g (resp. g'). We denote the Riemannian connection of M by ∇ .

From the Riemannian connection of M' a connection ∇' in $f^*T(M')$ can be defined. Let (y^1, \dots, y^m) be a local coordinate system of M' on a neighborhood V and (x^1, \dots, x^n) be a local coordinate system on a neighborhood U of M such that $f(U) \subset V$. Put $\xi_\alpha(p) = (\partial/\partial y^\alpha)(f(p))$ for a point $p \in U$. Then (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) is a moving frame of $f^*T(M')$. The components of f_* with respect to $(\partial/\partial x^1, \dots, \partial/\partial x^n)$ and (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) are given by $f^\alpha(p) = (\partial y^\alpha/\partial x^i)(p)$. The Laplacian Δf of the mapping f is a tensor field of type $(0, 0)$ with values in $f^*T(M')$ and is defined by $(\Delta f)^\alpha = g^{ij}f_{i,j}^\alpha$. If $\Delta f = 0$, the mapping f is called a harmonic mapping (\rightarrow 195 Harmonic Mappings).

F. Tensor Fields on a Submanifold

Consider an n -dimensional smooth manifold M immersed in an $(n+m)$ -dimensional Riemannian manifold (\bar{M}, \bar{g}) . If we denote the immersion $M \rightarrow \bar{M}$ by f , then $g = f^*\bar{g}$ is a Riemannian metric on M , and we denote its Riemannian connection by ∇ . The induced bundle $f^*T(\bar{M})$ splits into the sum of the tangent bundle $T(M)$ of M and the normal bundle $T^\perp(M)$. The Riemannian connection on \bar{M} induces connections in $f^*T(\bar{M})$ and in $T^\perp(M)$ which are denoted by $\bar{\nabla}$ and ∇^\perp , respectively. The van der Waerden–Bortolotti covariant derivative for ∇ and ∇^\perp is denoted by $\bar{\nabla}$.

For vector fields X and Y on M , the tangential part of $\bar{\nabla}_X Y$ (here we regard Y as a section of $f^*T(\bar{M})$) is $\nabla_X Y$, and we denote the normal part of $\bar{\nabla}_X Y$ by $h(X, Y)$. Then h is a symmetric tensor field of type $(0, 2)$ with values in $T^\perp(M)$, and we call h the **second fundamental tensor** of the immersion f . For $\xi \in \Gamma(T^\perp(M))$, the tangential part of $\bar{\nabla}_X \xi$ (here ξ is also regarded as a section of $f^*T(\bar{M})$) is denoted by $-A_\xi X$ and the normal part of $\bar{\nabla}_X \xi$ is $\nabla_X^\perp \xi$. Thus we have

$$\bar{\nabla}_X Y = \nabla_X Y + h(X, Y), \quad \bar{\nabla}_X \xi = -A_\xi X + \nabla_X^\perp \xi.$$

h and A are related by

$$\bar{g}(h(X, Y), \xi) = g(A_\xi X, Y).$$

We have the following formulas, called the equations of Gauss, Codazzi, and Ricci:

$$\begin{aligned} \bar{g}(\bar{R}(X, Y)Z, W) &= g(R(X, Y)Z, W) \\ &\quad + \bar{g}(h(X, Z), h(Y, W)) \\ &\quad - \bar{g}(h(X, W), h(Y, Z)), \\ \bar{g}(\bar{R}(X, Y)Z, \xi) &= \bar{g}((\bar{\nabla}_X h)(Y, Z), \xi) \\ &\quad - \bar{g}((\bar{\nabla}_Y h)(X, Z), \xi), \\ \bar{g}(\bar{R}(X, Y)\xi, \eta) &= \bar{g}(R^\perp(X, Y)\xi, \eta) \\ &\quad + g([A_\xi, A_\eta]X, Y), \end{aligned}$$

for $X, Y, Z, W \in X(M)$ and $\xi, \eta \in \Gamma(T^\perp(M))$, where R, \bar{R} , and R^\perp are the curvature tensors of $\nabla, \bar{\nabla}$, and ∇^\perp , respectively.

For the manifold M immersed in \bar{M} , we use a moving frame $(e_1, \dots, e_n, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_m)$ such that (e_1, \dots, e_n) is an orthonormal moving frame of M on a neighborhood U and (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) is a moving frame of $T^\perp(M)$ on U with $\bar{g}(\xi_\alpha, \xi_\beta) = \delta_{\alpha\beta}$. Then we can define the connection forms ω_j^i for ∇ and ω_β^α for ∇^\perp . If we extend $(e_1, \dots, e_n, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_m)$ to an orthonormal moving frame $(\bar{e}_1, \dots, \bar{e}_{n+m})$ of \bar{M} such that $\bar{e}_i(p) = e_i(p)$ ($i = 1, \dots, n$) and $\bar{e}_{n+\alpha}(p) = \xi_\alpha(p)$ ($\alpha = 1, \dots, m$) for $p \in U$, then the restriction $f^*\bar{\theta}^A$ and $f^*\omega_B^A$ of the dual 1-forms and the connection forms of \bar{M} with respect to $(\bar{e}_1, \dots, \bar{e}_{n+m})$ satisfy the relations

$$\begin{aligned} f^*\bar{\theta}^i &= \theta^i, \quad f^*\bar{\theta}^{n+\alpha} = 0, \quad f^*\omega_j^i = \omega_j^i, \\ f^*\omega_{n+\alpha}^{n+\beta} &= \omega_\beta^\alpha, \quad f^*\omega_i^{n+\alpha} = \sum_j h_{ij}^\alpha \theta^j, \end{aligned}$$

where h_{ij}^α are the components of the second fundamental tensor h with respect to $(e_1, \dots, e_n, \xi_1, \dots, \xi_m)$.

The components $h_{ij,k}^\alpha$ of the covariant differential $\bar{\nabla}h$ of h are defined by

$$h_{ij,k}^\alpha \theta^k = dh_{ij}^\alpha - h_{aj}^\alpha \omega_i^a - h_{ia}^\alpha \omega_j^a + h_{ij}^\beta \omega_\beta^\alpha.$$

In terms of the components, the equations of Gauss, Codazzi, and Ricci are given by

$$\bar{R}_{hijk} = R_{hijk} + \sum_\alpha (h_{ij}^\alpha h_{hk}^\alpha - h_{ik}^\alpha h_{hj}^\alpha),$$

$$\bar{R}_{ijk}^\alpha = h_{ik,j}^\alpha - h_{ij,k}^\alpha,$$

$$\bar{R}_{\beta jk}^\alpha = R^\perp \alpha_{\beta jk} - \sum_a (h_{ja}^\beta h_{ak}^\alpha - h_{ja}^\alpha h_{ak}^\beta).$$

Let (x^1, \dots, x^n) be a local coordinate system on a neighborhood U of M and (y^1, \dots, y^{n+m}) be a local coordinate system on a neighborhood V of \bar{M} such that $f(U) \subset V$. Regarding the differential f_* of the immersion f as a tensor field of type $(0, 1)$ with values in $f^*T(\bar{M})$, we denote the components of f_* with respect to (x^1, \dots, x^n) and (y^1, \dots, y^{n+m}) by B_i^A ($i = 1, \dots, n; A = 1, \dots, n+m$). Then we have $B_i^A = \partial y^A/\partial x^i$. We denote by ∇' the van der Waerden–Bortolotti covariant derivative for ∇ and $\bar{\nabla}$. Then the components $B_{i,j}^A$ of $\nabla' f_*$ are given by

$$B_{i,j}^A = \partial_j B_i^A - \{ \begin{smallmatrix} a \\ ji \end{smallmatrix} \} B_i^a + B_j^C B_i^B \{ \begin{smallmatrix} A \\ CB \end{smallmatrix} \},$$

where $\partial_j = \partial/\partial x^j$, $\{ \begin{smallmatrix} h \\ ji \end{smallmatrix} \}$, and $\{ \begin{smallmatrix} A \\ CB \end{smallmatrix} \}$ are the Christoffel symbols of the Riemannian metrics g and \bar{g} , respectively.

Let (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) be an orthonormal moving frame of $T^\perp(M)$ on U and ξ_α^A be the components of ξ_α with respect to (y^1, \dots, y^{n+m}) . Then we have

$$B_{i,j}^A = h_{ij}^\alpha \xi_\alpha^A,$$

where h_{ij} are the components of the second

fundamental tensor with respect to $(\partial/\partial x^1, \dots, \partial/\partial x^n)$ and (ξ_1, \dots, ξ_m) .

A tensor field K with values in $T^\perp(M)$ can be regarded as a tensor field with values in $f^*T(M)$, and $\tilde{\nabla}K$ is the normal component of ∇K . For example, if we regard the second fundamental tensor h as a tensor field with values in $f^*T(\bar{M})$, the components of h with respect to the coordinates (x^1, \dots, x^n) and (y^1, \dots, y^{n+m}) are equal to $B_{i,j}^A$, and we have

$$h_{ij,k}^z = B_{i,j,k}^A \xi_\alpha^{B\bar{\alpha}} \vartheta_{AB}.$$

References

- [1] E. Cartan, *Leçon sur la géométrie des espaces de Riemann*, Gauthier-Villars, second edition, 1946; English translation, *Geometry of Riemannian Spaces*, Math-Sci Press, 1983.
- [2] B.-Y. Chen, *Geometry of submanifolds*, Dekker, 1973.
- [3] S. Helgason, *Differential geometry, Lie groups, and symmetric spaces*, Academic Press, 1978.
- [4] S. Kobayashi and K. Nomizu, *Foundations of differential geometry*, Interscience, I, 1963; II, 1969.
- [5] J. A. Schouten, *Ricci-calculus*, Springer, second edition, 1954.
- [6] K. Yano, *Integral formulas in Riemannian geometry*, Dekker, 1970.
- [7] G. de Rham, *Variétés différentiables*, Actualités Sci. Ind., Hermann, second edition, 1960.
- [8] L. P. Eisenhart, *Riemannian geometry*, Princeton Univ. Press, second edition, 1949.
- [9] R. L. Bishop and S. I. Goldberg, *Tensor analysis on manifolds*, Macmillan, 1968.

418 (IX.20) Theory of Singularities

A. Introduction

Let f_1, f_2, \dots, f_r be \dagger holomorphic functions defined in an open set U of the complex space \mathbb{C}^n . Let X be the analytic set $f_1^{-1}(0) \cap \dots \cap f_r^{-1}(0)$. Let $z_0 \in X$, and let g_1, \dots, g_s be a system of generators of the ideal $\mathcal{I}(X)_{z_0}$ of the germs of the holomorphic functions which vanish identically on a neighborhood of z_0 in X . z_0 is called a **simple point** of X if the matrix $(\partial g_i / \partial z_j)$ attains its maximal rank, say k , at $z = z_0$. In this case, X is a \dagger complex manifold of dimension $n - k$ near z_0 . Otherwise, z_0 is called a **singular point** of X .

B. Resolution of Singularities

Let X be a complex analytic space, and let Y be its singular locus. A **resolution of the singularity** of X is a pair of a complex manifold \tilde{X} and a proper surjective holomorphic mapping $\pi: \tilde{X} \rightarrow X$ such that the restriction $\pi|_{\tilde{X} - \pi^{-1}(Y)}$ is biholomorphic and $\tilde{X} - \pi^{-1}(Y)$ is dense in \tilde{X} . H. Hironaka proved that there exists a resolution for any X such that $\pi^{-1}(Y)$ is a divisor in \tilde{X} with only \dagger normal crossings [16, 17].

Suppose that a compact connected analytic subset \tilde{Y} of a complex manifold \tilde{X} has a \dagger strongly pseudoconvex neighborhood in \tilde{X} . Then the contraction \tilde{X}/\tilde{Y} naturally has a structure of a \dagger normal complex analytic variety such that the projection $\tilde{X} \rightarrow \tilde{X}/\tilde{Y}$ is a resolution of \tilde{X}/\tilde{Y} (H. Grauert [14]).

C. Two-Dimensional Singularities

Let X be a normal 2-dimensional analytic space. Then the singular points of X are discrete.

Among the resolutions of X , there exists a unique resolution $\pi: \tilde{X} \rightarrow X$ with the following universal property: For any resolution $\pi': \tilde{X}' \rightarrow X$, there exists a unique mapping $\rho: \tilde{X}' \rightarrow \tilde{X}$ with $\pi' = \pi \circ \rho$. This resolution is called the **minimal resolution**.

Let $\pi: \tilde{X} \rightarrow X$ be a resolution of a singular point x of X , and let A_i ($i = 1, \dots, m$) be the irreducible components of $\pi^{-1}(x)$. The matrix $(A_i \cdot A_j)$ of the \dagger intersection numbers is known to be negative definite (P. Du Val [12]).

The resolution $\pi: \tilde{X} \rightarrow X$ is called **good** if (i) each A_i is nonsingular, (ii) $A_i \cap A_j$ ($i \neq j$) is at most one point and the intersection is transverse and (iii) no three A_i 's meet at a point. For a given good resolution $\pi: \tilde{X} \rightarrow X$, we associate a diagram in which the vertices v_i ($i = 1, \dots, m$) correspond to A_i ($i = 1, \dots, m$) and v_i and v_j are joined by a segment if and only if $A_i \cap A_j \neq \emptyset$.

The **geometric genus** $p_g(X, x)$ of a singular point $x \in X$ is the dimension of the \dagger stalk at x of the first direct image sheaf $R^1 \pi_* \mathcal{O}_{\tilde{X}}$, where $\pi: \tilde{X} \rightarrow X$ is a resolution of $x \in X$ and $\mathcal{O}_{\tilde{X}}$ is the \dagger structure sheaf of \tilde{X} . The definition is independent of the choice of the resolution, and $p_g(X, x)$ is a finite integer.

Among the positive cycles of the form $Z = \sum_{i=1}^n n_i A_i$ (i.e., $n_i \geq 0$) such that $Z \cdot A_i < 0$ for each $i = 1, \dots, m$, there exists a smallest one Z_0 , which is called the **fundamental cycle** [3].

(1) **Rational singularities**. A singular point x of X is called **rational** if $p_g(X, x) = 0$. (The singularity (X, x) is also called rational even when $\dim X \geq 3$ if the direct image sheaf $R^i \pi_* \mathcal{O}_{\tilde{X}} = 0$ for $i > 0$.)

For a rational singularity $x \in X$, the multiplicity of X at x equals $-Z_0^2$ and the local embedding dimension of X at x is $-Z_0^2 + 1$. Hence a rational singularity with multiplicity 2, which is called a **rational double point**, is a hypersurface singularity. The following weighted homogeneous polynomials (\rightarrow Section D) give the complete list of the defining equations up to analytic isomorphism:

$$\begin{aligned} A_n: x^{n+1} + y^2 + z^2, \\ \text{weights } (1/(n+1), 1/2, 1/2), \quad n \geq 1; \\ D_n: x^{n-1} + xy^2 + z^2, \\ \text{weights } (1/(n-1), (n-2)/2(n-1), 1/2), \quad n \geq 4; \\ E_6: x^4 + y^3 + z^2, \\ \text{weights } (1/4, 1/3, 1/2); \\ E_7: x^3y + y^3 + z^2, \\ \text{weights } (2/9, 1/3, 1/2); \\ E_8: x^5 + y^3 + z^2, \\ \text{weights } (1/5, 1/3, 1/2), \end{aligned}$$

where the labels appearing at the left are given according to the coincidence of the diagram of the respective minimal resolutions and the \dagger Dynkin diagrams. Rational double points have many different characterizations [11].

The generic part of the singular locus of the unipotent variety of a \dagger complex simple Lie group G (=the orbit of the subregular \dagger unipotent elements in G) is locally expressed as the product of a rational double point and a polydisk. The \dagger universal deformation of a rational double point and its \dagger simultaneous resolution are constructed by restricting the following diagram on a transverse slice to the subregular unipotent orbit (Brieskorn [7]; [34]):

$$\begin{array}{ccc} Y & \longrightarrow & G \\ \downarrow & & \downarrow \\ T & \longrightarrow & T/W \end{array}$$

where T is a \dagger Cartan subgroup of G with the action of the Weyl group W , $G \rightarrow T/W$ is the quotient mapping by the \dagger adjoint action of G and $Y = \{(x, B) | x \in G \text{ and } B \text{ is a } \dagger\text{Borel subgroup of } G \text{ with } x \in B\}$, and other morphisms are defined naturally so that the diagram commutes. Here, $Y \rightarrow T$ is the simultaneous resolution of the morphism $G \rightarrow T/W$.

(2) **Quotient singularities.** A singular point $x \in X$ is called a **quotient singularity** if there exists a neighborhood of x which is analytically isomorphic to an orbit space U/G , where U is a neighborhood of 0 in \mathbb{C}^2 and G is a finite group of analytic automorphisms of U with the unique fixed point 0. The quotient singularities are rational, and their resolutions

have been well studied [6]. U/G has a rational double point at 0 if and only if G is conjugate to a nontrivial finite subgroup of $SU(2)$.

(3) **Elliptic singularities.** The singularity (X, x) is called **minimally elliptic** if $p_g(X, x) = 1$ and (X, x) is Gorenstein [23]. The following are examples of minimally elliptic singularities.

A singular point $x \in X$ is called **simply elliptic** if the exceptional set A of the minimal resolution is a smooth \dagger elliptic curve [33]. When $A^2 = -1, -2, -3$, (X, x) is a hypersurface singularity given by the following weighted homogeneous polynomials:

$$\begin{aligned} \tilde{E}_6: x^3 + y^3 + z^3 + axyz, \\ \text{weights } (1/3, 1/3, 1/3), \quad A^2 = -3; \\ \tilde{E}_7: x^4 + y^4 + z^2 + axyz, \\ \text{weights } (1/4, 1/4, 1/2), \quad A^2 = -2; \\ \tilde{E}_8: x^6 + y^3 + z^2 + axyz, \\ \text{weights } (1/6, 1/3, 1/2), \quad A^2 = -1, \end{aligned}$$

(4) **Cusp singularities.** A singular point $x \in X$ is called a **cusp singularity** if the exceptional set of the minimal resolution is either a single rational curve with a \dagger node or a cycle of smooth rational curves. Cusp singularities appear as the boundary of \dagger Hilbert modular surfaces [18]. The hypersurface cusp singularities are given by the polynomials

$$T_{p,q,r}: x^p + y^q + z^r + axyz,$$

where $1/p + 1/q + 1/r < 1$ and $a \neq 0$.

D. The Milnor Fibration for Hypersurface Singularities

Let V be an analytic set in \mathbb{C}^N , and take a point $z_0 \in V$. Let $S_\varepsilon = S(z_0, \varepsilon)$ be a $(2N-1)$ -dimensional sphere in \mathbb{C}^N with center z_0 and radius $\varepsilon > 0$, and let $K_\varepsilon = V \cap S_\varepsilon$. If ε is sufficiently small, the topological type of the pair $(S_\varepsilon, K_\varepsilon)$ is independent of ε [27]. By virtue of this fact, the study of singular points constitutes an important aspect of the application of topology to the theory of functions of several complex variables.

A singular point z_0 of V is said to be **isolated** if, for some open neighborhood W of z_0 in \mathbb{C}^N , $W \cap V - \{z_0\}$ is a smooth submanifold of $W - \{z_0\}$. In that case, K_ε is a closed smooth submanifold of S_ε , and the diffeomorphism type of $(S_\varepsilon, K_\varepsilon)$ is independent of (sufficiently small) $\varepsilon > 0$. So far, the topological study of such singular points has been primarily focused on isolated singularities. When V is a plane curve, that is, $N = 2$ and $r = 1$, all the singular points of V are isolated, and the submanifold K_ε of the 3-sphere S_ε can be described as an iterated torus link, where type numbers are

completely determined by the \dagger Puiseux expansion of the defining equation f of V at the point z_0 [5]. In 1961, D. Mumford, using a resolution argument, showed that if an algebraic surface V is \dagger normal at z_0 and if the closed 3-manifold K_ε is simply connected, then K_ε is diffeomorphic to the 3-sphere and z_0 is nonsingular [29]. The following theorem in the higher-dimensional case is due to E. Brieskorn [8] (1966):

Every \dagger homotopy $(2n-1)$ -sphere ($n \neq 2$) that is a boundary of a $\dagger\pi$ -manifold is diffeomorphic to the K_ε of some complex hypersurface defined by an equation of the form $f(z) = z_1^{a_1} + \dots + z_{n+1}^{a_{n+1}} = 0$ at the origin in \mathbf{C}^{n+1} , provided that $n \neq 2$. The hypersurface of this type is called the **Brieskorn variety**. Inspired by Brieskorn's method, J. W. Milnor developed topological techniques for the study of hypersurface singularities and obtained results such as the **Milnor fibering theorem**, which can be briefly stated as follows:

Suppose that V is defined by a single equation $f(z) = 0$ in the neighborhood of $z_0 \in \mathbf{C}^{n+1}$. Then there is an associated smooth \dagger fiber bundle $\varphi: S_\varepsilon - K_\varepsilon \rightarrow S^1$, where $\varphi(z) = f(z)/|f(z)|$ for $z \in S_\varepsilon - K_\varepsilon$. The fiber $F = \varphi^{-1}(p)$ ($p \in S^1$) has the homotopy type of a finite CW-complex of dimension n , and K_ε is $(n-2)$ -connected.

Suppose that z_0 is an isolated critical point of f . Then F has the homotopy type of a \dagger bouquet of spheres of dimension n [27]. The **Milnor number** $\mu(f)$ of f is defined by the n th Betti number of F , and it is equal to $\dim_{\mathbf{C}} \mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{C}^{n+1}, z_0} / (\partial f / \partial z_1, \dots, \partial f / \partial z_{n+1})$, where $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{C}^{n+1}, z_0}$ is the ring of the germs of analytic functions of $n+1$ variables at $z = z_0$. The **Milnor monodromy** h_* is the automorphism of $H_n(F)$ that is induced by the action of the canonical generator of the fundamental group of the base space S^1 . The \dagger Lefschetz number of h_* is zero if z^0 is a singular point of V . Let $\Delta(t)$ be the characteristic polynomial of h_* . Then K_ε is a homology sphere if and only if $\Delta(1) = \pm 1$ [27]. It is known that $\Delta(t)$ is a product of \dagger cyclotomic polynomials.

The diffeomorphism class of $(S_\varepsilon, K_\varepsilon)$ is completely determined by the congruence class of the linking matrix $L(e_i, e_j)$ ($1 \leq i, j \leq \mu(f)$), where $e_1, \dots, e_{\mu(f)}$ is an integral basis of $H_n(F)$ and $L(e_i, e_j)$ is the \dagger linking number [21, 10].

The Milnor fibration is also described in the following way. Let $E(\varepsilon, \delta)$ be the intersection of $f^{-1}(D_\delta^*)$ and $B(\varepsilon)$, the open disk of radius ε and center z_0 , where D_δ^* is $\{\eta \in \mathbf{C} \mid 0 < |\eta| < \delta\}$. The restriction of f to $E(\varepsilon, \delta)$ is a \dagger locally trivial fibration over D_δ^* if δ is sufficiently smaller than ε [27].

Let $f(z)$ be an analytic function; suppose that $f(0) = 0$ and let $\sum_{p \in \mathbf{N}^{n+1}} a_p z^p$ be the Taylor expansion of f at $z = 0$. Let $\Gamma_+(f)$ be the con-

vex hull of the union of $\{p + (\mathbf{R}^+)^{n+1}\}$ for $p \in \mathbf{N}^{n+1} \subset \mathbf{R}^{n+1}$ with $a_p \neq 0$, where $\mathbf{R}^+ = \{x \in \mathbf{R} \mid x \geq 0\}$, and let $\Gamma(f)$ be the union of compact faces of $\Gamma_+(f)$. We call $\Gamma(f)$ the **Newton boundary** of f in the coordinates z_1, \dots, z_{n+1} . For a closed face Δ of $\Gamma(f)$ of any dimension, let $f_\Delta(z) = \sum_{p \in \Delta} a_p z^p$. We say that f has a **non-degenerate Newton boundary** if $(\partial f_\Delta / \partial z_1, \dots, \partial f_\Delta / \partial z_{n+1})$ is a nonzero vector for any $z \in (\mathbf{C}^*)^{n+1}$ and any $\Delta \in \Gamma(f)$. Suppose that f has a non-degenerate Newton boundary and 0 is an isolated critical point of f . Then the Milnor fibration of f is determined by $\Gamma(f)$ and $\mu(f)$, and the characteristic polynomial can be explicitly computed by $\Gamma(f)$ [22, 38].

$f(z)$ is called **weighted homogeneous** if there exist positive rational numbers r_1, \dots, r_{n+1} , which are called **weights**, such that $a_p = 0$ if $\sum_{i=1}^{n+1} p_i r_i \neq 1$. An analytic function $f(z)$ with an isolated critical point at 0 is weighted homogeneous in suitable coordinates if and only if f belongs to the ideal $(\partial f / \partial z_1, \dots, \partial f / \partial z_{n+1})$ (K. Saito [32]). Suppose that $f(z)$ is a weighted homogeneous polynomial with an isolated critical point at 0. Then the Milnor fibration of f is uniquely determined by the weights, and $\mu(f) = \prod_{i=1}^{n+1} \left(\frac{1}{r_i} - 1 \right)$. The surface $f^{-1}(0)$ for $n = 2$ is a rational double point if and only if $\sum_{i=1}^3 r_i > 1$.

E. Unfolding Theory

An **unfolding** of a germ of an analytic function $f(z)$ at 0 is a germ of an analytic function $F(z, t)$, where $t \in \mathbf{C}^m$ (m is finite) such that $F(z, 0) = f(z)$. We assume that f has an isolated critical point at 0. Among all the unfoldings of f , there exists a universal one, in a suitable sense, that is unique up to a local analytic isomorphism. It is called the **universal unfolding** of f [36, 37, 26] (\rightarrow 51 Catastrophe Theory). Explicitly it can be given by $F(z, t) = f(z) + t_1 \varphi_1(z) + \dots + t_\mu \varphi_\mu(z)$, where $\varphi_i(z)$ ($i = 1, \dots, \mu$) are holomorphic functions which form a \mathbf{C} -basis of the Jacobi ring $\mathcal{O}_{\mathbf{C}^{n+1}, 0} / (\partial f / \partial z_1, \dots, \partial f / \partial z_{n+1})$ ($\mu = \mu(f)$).

In the universal unfolding $F(z, t)$ of f , the set of points (z_0, t_0) such that $F(z, t_0)$ has an isolated critical point at z_0 with the Milnor number $\mu(f)$ and $F(z_0, t_0) = 0$ forms an analytic set at $(z, t) = 0$. The **modulus number** of f is the dimension of this set at 0. This set is sometimes called the μ -**constant stratum**. Let g be a germ of an analytic function. g is said to be **adjacent** to f (denoted by $f \rightarrow g$), if there exists a sequence of points $(z(m), t(m))$ in $\mathbf{C}^{n+1} \times \mathbf{C}^\mu$ that converges to the origin such that the term of $F(z, t(m))$ at $z(m)$ is equivalent to g . Adjacency relations are important for the

understanding of the degeneration phenomena of functions. The unfolding theory can be considered in exactly the same way as that for the germ of a real-valued smooth function that is finitely determined [36, 26].

The germs of analytic functions with modulus number 0, 1, and 2 are called **simple**, **unimodular**, and **bimodular**, respectively. They were classified by V. I. Arnold [1] (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 5.V). Simple germs correspond to the equations for the rational double points, and unimodular germs define simply elliptic singularities or cusp singularities. Every unimodular or bimodular germ defines a singularity with $p_g = 1$.

F. Picard-Lefschetz Theory

Let $f(z)$ be a holomorphic function such that $f(0) = 0$ and 0 is an isolated critical point with the Milnor number μ . Let $F(z, t)$ be a universal unfolding of f at 0. Let $f: E(\varepsilon, \delta) \rightarrow D_\delta^*$ be the Milnor fibration of f by the second description in Section D. There exists a positive number r and a codimension 1 analytic subset Δ (called the **bifurcation set**) of $B'(r)$, the open disk of radius r with the center 0 in the parameter space \mathbb{C}^u , such that for any $t_0 \in B'(r) - \Delta$, $f_{t_0} = F|_{B(\varepsilon) \times t_0}$ has μ different nondegenerate critical points in $B(\varepsilon)$. Let p_1, \dots, p_μ be the critical points of f_{t_0} . For each p_i , one can choose local coordinates (y_1, \dots, y_{n+1}) so that $f_{t_0}(y) = f_{t_0}(p_i) + y_1^2 + \dots + y_{n+1}^2$. Such an f_{t_0} is called a **Morsification** of f .

Let B_i be a small disk with center p_i in \mathbb{C}^{n+1} . Then for any q_i which is near enough to $f_{t_0}(p_i)$, the intersection $f_{t_0}^{-1}(q_i) \cap B_i$ is diffeomorphic to the tangent disk bundle of the sphere S^n . The **vanishing cycle** e_i is the corresponding n -dimensional homology class of $f_{t_0}^{-1}(q_i) \cap B_i$. (We fix q_i .) The self-intersection number of e_i is given by

$$\langle e_i, e_i \rangle = \begin{cases} 2(-1)^{n(n-1)/2}, & n \text{ even,} \\ 0, & n \text{ odd.} \end{cases}$$

For a sufficiently small $t_0 \in B'(r) - \Delta$, one has the following: (i) $|f_{t_0}(p_i)| < \delta$; (ii) the restriction of f_{t_0} to E is a fiber bundle over D' , where $D' = \{w \in \mathbb{C} \mid |w| \leq \delta, \text{ and } w \neq f_{t_0}(p_i) \text{ for } i = 1, \dots, \mu\}$ and $E = f_{t_0}^{-1}(D') \cap B(\varepsilon)$; (iii) the restriction of the above fibration to $\{w \mid |w| = \delta\}$ is equivalent to the restriction of the Milnor fibration of f to $\{w \mid |w| = \delta\}$. Let w_0 be a fixed point of D' , and let $F = f_{t_0}^{-1}(w_0) \cap E$. Then F is diffeomorphic to the Milnor fiber of f . Let l_i be a simple path from w_0 to q_i , and let γ_i be the loop $|w - f_{t_0}(p_i)| = |q_i - f_{t_0}(p_i)|$. We suppose that the union of the l_i is contractible to w_0 . By parallel translation of the vanishing cycle e_i along l_i , we consider $e_i \in H_n(F)$. The collection $\{e_i \mid i =$

$1, \dots, \mu\}$ is an integral basis of $H_n(F)$, which is called a **strongly distinguished basis** (Fig. 1).

Now let h_i be the linear transformation of $H_n(F)$ that is induced by the parallel translation along $l_i \gamma_i l_i^{-1}$. The **Picard-Lefschetz formula** says that

$$h_i(e) = e - (-1)^{n(n-1)/2} \langle e, e_i \rangle \cdot e_i \text{ for } e \in H_n(F).$$

Here $\langle \cdot, \cdot \rangle$ is the intersection number in $H_n(F)$. For n even, h_i is a \dagger reflection.

The Milnor monodromy h_* of f is equal to the composition $h_1 \dots h_\mu$ under a suitable ordering of the h_i . The subgroup of the group of linear isomorphisms of $H_n(F)$ generated by h_1, \dots, h_μ is called the **total monodromy group**.

When f is a simple germ and $n \equiv 2 \pmod{4}$, the total monodromy group is isomorphic to the \dagger Weyl group of the corresponding Dynkin diagram. Even-dimensional simple singularities are the only ones for which the monodromy group is finite. These are also characterized as the singularities with definite intersection forms.

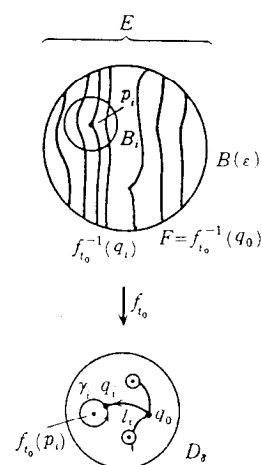


Fig. 1

G. Stratification Theory

The notion of **Whitney stratification** was first introduced by H. Whitney to study the singularities of analytic varieties [39] and was developed by R. Thom for the general case [37].

Let X and Y be submanifolds of the space \mathbb{R}^n . We say that the pair (X, Y) satisfies the **Whitney condition (b)** at a point $y \in Y$ if the following holds: Let $x_i (i = 1, 2, \dots)$ and $y_i (i = 1, 2, \dots)$ be sequences in X and Y , respectively, that converge to y . Suppose that the tangent space $T_{x_i} X$ converges to a plane T in the corresponding Grassmannian space and the secant $\overline{x_i y_i}$ converges to a line L . Then $L \subset T$. We say that (X, Y) satisfies the **Whitney condition (b)** if it satisfies the Whitney con-

dition (b) at any point $y \in Y$. Let h be a local diffeomorphism of a neighborhood of y . One can see that $(h(X), h(Y))$ satisfies the Whitney condition (b) at $h(y)$ if (X, Y) satisfies it at y . Thus the Whitney condition can be considered for a pair of submanifolds X and Y of a manifold M using a local coordinate system. Let S be a subset of a manifold M , and let \mathcal{S} be a family of submanifolds of M . \mathcal{S} is called a **Whitney prestratification** of S if \mathcal{S} is a locally finite disjoint cover of S satisfying the following: (i) For any $X \in \mathcal{S}$, the frontier $\bar{X} - X$ is a union of $Y \in \mathcal{S}$; (ii) for any pair (X, Y) ($X, Y \in \mathcal{S}$), the Whitney condition (b) is satisfied. A submanifold X in \mathcal{S} is called a **stratum**. There exists a canonical partial order in \mathcal{S} that is defined by $X < Y$ if and only if $X \subset \bar{Y} - Y$.

Let V be an analytic variety, and let \mathcal{S} be an analytic stratification of V that satisfies the frontier condition (i). Then there exists a Whitney prestratification \mathcal{S}' that is finer than \mathcal{S} (Whitney [39]).

For a given Whitney prestratification \mathcal{S} , one can construct the following **controlled tubular neighborhood system**: For each $X \in \mathcal{S}$, a \dagger tubular neighborhood $|T_X|$ of X in M and the projection $\pi_X: |T_X| \rightarrow X$ and a tubular function $\rho_X: |T_X| \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^+$ (=the square of a norm under the identification of $|T_X|$ with the \dagger normal disk bundle of X) are given such that the commutation relations

$$\pi_X \cdot \pi_Y(m) = \pi_X(m), \quad \rho_X \pi_Y(m) = \rho_X(m) \\ \text{for } m \in M, X < Y.$$

are satisfied whenever both sides are defined.

By virtue of this, the notions of vector fields and their integral curves can be defined on a Whitney prestratified set so that several important results on a differentiable manifold can be generalized to the case of stratified sets. For example, the following is **Thom's first isotopy lemma**: Let M and P be differentiable manifolds, and let (S, \mathcal{S}) be a Whitney prestratified subset of M . Let $f: S \rightarrow P$ be a continuous mapping that is the restriction of a differentiable mapping from M to P . Suppose that the restriction of f to each stratum X of \mathcal{S} is a proper submersion onto P . Then $f: S \rightarrow P$ is a fiber bundle [37].

H. b -Functions

Let $f(z)$ be a germ of an analytic function in \mathbf{C}^{n+1} with $f(0)=0$. The **b -function** of f at 0 is the monic polynomial $b_f(s)$ of lowest degree among all polynomials $b(s)$ with the following property [4, 20]: There exists a differential operator $P(z, \partial/\partial z, s)$, which is a polynomial in s , such that $b(s)f^*(z) = P(z, \partial/\partial z, s)f^{s+1}(z)$. Since $b_f(s)$ is always

418 Ref. Theory of Singularities

divisible by $s+1$, we define $\tilde{b}_f(s) = b_f(s)/(s+1)$. All the roots of $\tilde{b}_f(s)=0$ are negative rational numbers (M. Kashiwara [20]). When f has an isolated critical point at 0, the set $\{\exp(2\pi i \alpha) | \alpha \text{ is a root of } b_f(s)=0\}$ coincides with the set of eigenvalues of the Milnor monodromy [25].

The name " b -function" is due to M. Sato. He first introduced it in the study of \dagger prehomogeneous vector spaces. Some authors call it the **Bernstein (Bernshtein) polynomial**.

I. Hyperplane Sections

Let V be an algebraic variety of complex dimension k in the complex projective space \mathbf{P}^n . Let L be a hyperplane that contains the singular points of V . Then the \dagger relative homotopy group $\pi_i(V, V \cap L)$ is zero for $i < k$. Thus the same assertion is true for the \dagger relative homology groups (S. Lefschetz [24]; [28]).

Let f be a holomorphic function defined in the neighborhood of $0 \in \mathbf{C}^{n+1}$ and $f(0)=0$. Let H be the hypersurface $f^{-1}(0)$. There exists a \dagger Zariski open subset U of the space $(=\mathbf{P}^n)$ of hyperplanes such that for each $L \in U$, there exists a positive number ε such that $\pi_i(B(r) - H, (B(r) - H) \cap L) = 0$ for $i < n$ and $0 < r \leq \varepsilon$, where $B(r)$ is a disk of radius r (D. T. Lê and H. Hamm [15]). This implies the following theorem of Zariski: Let V be a hypersurface of \mathbf{P}^n , and let \mathbf{P}^2 be a general plane in \mathbf{P}^n . Then the fundamental group of $\mathbf{P}^n - V$ is isomorphic to the fundamental group of $\mathbf{P}^2 - C$, where $C = V \cap \mathbf{P}^2$. The fundamental group of $\mathbf{P}^2 - C$ is an Abelian group if C is a nodal curve [9, 13].

Suppose that f has an isolated critical point at 0. Let $\mu^{(n+1)}$ be the Milnor number $\mu(f)$. Take a generic hyperplane L . The Milnor number of $f|_L$ is well defined, and we let $\mu^{(n)} = \mu(f|_L)$. Similarly one can define $\mu^{(i)}$ of f and let $\mu^* = (\mu^{(n+1)}, \mu^{(n)}, \dots, \mu^{(1)})$. Let $f_t(z)$ be a deformation of f . Each f_t has an isolated critical point at 0, and t is a point of a disk D of the complex plane. Let $W = \{(z, t) | f_t(z) = 0\}$ and $D' = \{0\} \times D$. $W - D'$ and D' satisfy the Whitney condition (b) if and only if $\mu^*(f_t)$ is invariant under the deformation [35]. The Whitney condition (b) implies topological triviality of the deformation.

References

- [1] V. I. Arnol'd, Local normal forms of functions, *Inventiones Math.*, 35 (1976), 87–109.
- [2] V. I. Arnol'd, Normal forms for functions near degenerate critical points, the Weyl group of A_k, D_k, E_k and Lagrangian singularities, *Functional Anal. Appl.*, 6 (1972), 254–272. (Original in Russian, 1972.)

- [3] M. Artin, On isolated rational singularities of surfaces, *Amer. J. Math.*, 88 (1966), 129–136.
- [4] I. N. Bernshtein, The analytic continuation of generalized functions with respect to parameter, *Functional Anal. Appl.*, 6 (1972), 273–285. (Original in Russian, 1972.)
- [5] K. Brauer, Zur Geometrie der Funktionen zweier komplexen Veränderlichen III, *Abh. Math. Sem. Hamburg*, 6 (1928), 8–54.
- [6] E. Brieskorn, Rationale Singularitäten Komplexer Flächen, *Inventiones Math.*, 4 (1968), 336–358.
- [7] E. Brieskorn, Singular elements of semi-simple algebraic groups, *Actes Congrès Int. Math.*, 1970, vol. 2, 279–284.
- [8] E. Brieskorn, Beispiele zur Differentialtopologie, *Inventiones Math.*, 2 (1966), 1–14.
- [9] P. Deligne, Le groupe fondamental du complément d'une courbe plane n'ayant que des points doubles ordinaires est abélien, *Sém. Bourbaki*, no. 543, 1979–1980.
- [10] H. Durfee, Fibered knots and algebraic singularities, *Topology*, 13 (1974), 47–59.
- [11] A. H. Durfee, Fifteen characterizations of rational double points and simple critical points, *Enseignement Math.*, 25 (1979), 131–163.
- [12] P. Du Val, On isolated singularities of surfaces which do not affect the condition of adjunction I–III, *Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc.*, 30 (1933/34), 453–465, 483–491.
- [13] W. Fulton, On the fundamental group of the complement of a node curve, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 111, (1980), 407–409.
- [14] H. Grauert, Über Modifikationen und exzeptionelle analytische Mengen, *Math. Ann.*, 146 (1962), 331–368.
- [15] H. Hamm and D. T. Lê, Un théorème de Zariski du type de Lefschetz, *Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup.*, 3, 1973.
- [16] H. Hironaka, Resolution of singularities of an algebraic variety over a field of characteristic zero, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 79 (1964), 109–326.
- [17] H. Hironaka, Bimeromorphic smoothing of a complex analytic space, *Acta Math. Vietnamica*, 2, no. 2 (1977), 106–168.
- [18] F. Hirzebruch, Hilbert modular surfaces, *Enseignement Math.*, 19 (1973), 183–281.
- [19] P. Holm, Real and complex singularities, *Sijthoff and Noordhoff*, 1976.
- [20] M. Kashiwara, B -functions and holonomic systems, *Inventiones Math.*, 38 (1976), 33–54.
- [21] M. Kato, A classification of simple spinable structure on a 1-connected Alexander manifold, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 26 (1974), 454–463.
- [22] A. G. Kouchnirenko, Polyèdre de Newton et nombres de Milnor, *Inventiones Math.*, 32 (1976), 1–31.
- [23] H. Laufer, On minimally elliptic singularities, *Amer. J. Math.*, 99 (1977), 1257–1295.
- [24] S. Lefschetz, *L'analyse situs et la géométrie algébrique*, Gauthiers-Villars, 1924.
- [25] B. Malgrange, Le polynôme de Bernstein d'une singularité isolée, *Lecture notes in math.* 459, Springer, 1976, 98–119.
- [26] J. N. Mather, Stability of C^∞ -mappings. I, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 87 (1968), 89–104; II, (2) 89 (1969), 254–291; III, *Publ. Math. Inst. HES*, 35 (1970), 301–336; IV, *Lecture notes in math.* 192, Springer, 1971, 207–253.
- [27] J. W. Milnor, Singular points of complex hypersurfaces, *Ann. math. studies* 61, Princeton Univ. Press, 1968.
- [28] J. W. Milnor, Morse theory, *Ann. math. studies* 51, Princeton Univ. Press, 1963.
- [29] D. Mumford, The topology of normal singularities of an algebraic surface and a criterion for simplicity, *Publ. Math. Inst. HES*, 9 (1961), 5–22.
- [30] F. Pham, Formules de Picard-Lefschetz généralisées et ramification des intégrales, *Bull. Soc. Math. France*, 93 (1965), 333–367.
- [31] E. Picard and S. Simart, *Traité des fonctions algébriques de deux variables I*, Gauthier-Villars, 1897.
- [32] K. Saito, Quasihomogene isolierte Singularitäten von Hyperflächen, *Inventiones Math.*, 14 (1971), 123–142.
- [33] K. Saito, Einfach elliptische Singularitäten, *Inventiones Math.*, 23 (1974), 289–325.
- [34] P. Slodowy, Simple singularities and simple algebraic groups, *Lecture notes in math.* 815, Springer, 1980.
- [35] B. Teissier, Cycles evanescents, sections planes et conditions de Whitney, *Astérisque*, 78 (1973), 285–362.
- [36] R. Thom, La stabilité topologique des applications polynomiales, *Enseignement Math.*, 8 (1962), 24–33.
- [37] R. Thom, Ensembles et morphismes stratifiés, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 75 (1969), 240–284.
- [38] A. N. Varchenko, Zeta function of the monodromy and Newton's diagram, *Inventiones Math.*, 37 (1976), 253–262.
- [39] H. Whitney, Tangents to an analytic variety, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 81 (1964), 496–549.
- [40] O. Zariski, Algebraic surfaces, *Erg. math.* 61, Springer, 1971.

419 (XX.18) Thermodynamics

A. Basic Concepts and Postulates

Thermodynamics traditionally focuses its attention on a particular class of states of a

given system called (thermal) equilibrium states, although a more recent extension, called the thermodynamics of irreversible processes, deals with certain nonequilibrium states. In a simple system, an **equilibrium state** is completely specified (up to the shape of the volume it occupies) by the volume V (a positive real number), the **mole numbers** N_1, \dots, N_r (nonnegative reals) of its chemical components, and the **internal energy** U (real). (More variables might be needed if the system were, e.g., inhomogeneous, anisotropic, electrically charged, magnetized, chemically not inert, or acted on by electric, magnetic, or gravitational fields.) This means that any of the quantities associated with equilibrium states (called **thermodynamical quantities**) of a simple system under consideration is a function of V , N_1, \dots, N_r , and U .

When n copies of the same state are put next to each other and the dividing walls are removed, V , N_1, \dots, N_r , and U for the new state will be n times the old values of these variables under the assumptions that each volume is sufficiently large and that the effects of the boundary walls can be neglected. Thermodynamical quantities behaving in this manner are called **extensive**. Those that are invariant under the foregoing procedure are called **intensive**. More precisely, the thermodynamic variables are defined by homogeneity of degree 1 and 0 as functions of V , N_1, \dots, N_r , and U .

By a shift of the position of the boundary (called an **adiabatic wall** if energy and chemical substances do not move through it) or by transport of energy through the boundary (called a **diathermal wall** if this is allowed) or by transport of chemical components through the boundary (called a **permeable membrane**) (in short, by thermodynamical processes), these variables can change their values. If these shifts or transports are not permitted (especially for a composite system consisting of several simple systems, at its boundary with the outside), the system is called **closed**. Otherwise it is called **open**.

Those equilibrium states that do not undergo any change when brought into contact with each other across an immovable and impermeable diathermal wall (called a **thermal contact**) form an equivalence class. This is sometimes called the **0th law of thermodynamics**. The equivalence class, called the **temperature** of states belonging to it, is an intensive quantity.

The force needed to keep a movable wall at rest, divided by the area of the wall, is called the **pressure**. It is another intensive quantity. For a (slow) change of the volume by an amount dV under a constant pressure P , mechanical work of amount $-PdV$ is done on

the system. Together with a possible change of the internal energy, say of amount dU , the amount

$$\delta Q = dU - PdV \quad (1)$$

of energy is somehow gained (if it is positive) or lost (if it is negative) by the system. This amount of energy is actually transported from or to a neighboring system through diathermal walls so that the total energy for a bigger closed composite system is conserved. This is called the **first law of thermodynamics**, and δQ is called the **heat gain** or **loss** by the system.

If two states of different temperatures T_1 and T_2 are brought into thermal contact, energy is transferred from one, say T_1 , to the other (called heat transfer). This defines a binary class relation denoted by $T_1 > T_2$. The Clausius formulation of the **second law of thermodynamics** says that it is impossible to make a positive heat transfer from a state of lower temperature to another state of higher temperature without another change elsewhere. By considering a certain composite system, one reaches the conclusion that there exists a labeling of temperatures by positive real numbers T , called the **absolute temperature**, for which the following is an exact differential:

$$\delta Q/T = (dU - PdV)/T = dS. \quad (2)$$

The integral S is an extensive quantity, called the **entropy**. Furthermore, the sum of the entropies of component simple systems in an isolated composite system is nondecreasing during any thermodynamic process, and the following **entropy maximum principle** holds: An isolated composite system reaches an equilibrium at those values of extensive parameters that maximize the sum of the entropies of component simple systems (for constant total energy and volume and within the set of allowed states under a given constraint).

A relation expressing the entropy of a given system as a function of the extensive parameters (specifying equilibrium states) is known as the **fundamental relation** of the system. If it is given as a continuous and differentiable homogeneous function of V , N_1, \dots, N_r , and U and is monotone increasing in U for fixed V , N_1, \dots, N_r , then one can develop the thermodynamics of the system based on the above entropy maximum principle. A relation expressing an intensive parameter as a function of some other independent variables is called an **equation of state**.

Another postulate, which is much less frequently used, is the **Nernst postulate** or the **third law of thermodynamics**, which says that the entropy vanishes at the vanishing absolute temperature.

B. Various Coefficients and Relationships

The partial derivative $\partial/\partial x$ of a function $f(x, y, \dots)$ with respect to the variable x with the variables y, \dots fixed is denoted by $(\partial f/\partial x)_{y, \dots}$. We abbreviate N_1, \dots, N_r as N in the following.

If the fundamental relation is written as $U = U(V, N_1, \dots, N_r, S)$ (instead of S being represented as a function of the other quantities), then (2) implies

$$(\partial U/\partial S)_{V, N} = T, \quad (\partial U/\partial V)_{S, N} = -P.$$

The other first-order partial derivatives of U are

$$\mu_j = (\partial U/\partial N_j)_{V, N_1, \dots, \hat{N}_j, \dots, N_r, S},$$

with μ_j called the **chemical potential** (or electrochemical potential) of the j th component.

If a system is surrounded by an adiabatic wall (i.e., the system is thermally isolated) and goes through a gradual reversible change (**quasistatic adiabatic process**), then the entropy has to stay constant. If a system is in thermal contact through a diathermal wall with a large system (called the **heat bath**) whose temperature is assumed to remain unchanged during the thermal contact, then the temperature of the system itself remains constant (an **isothermal process**). The decrease of the volume per unit increase of pressure under the latter circumstance is called the **isothermal compressibility** and is given by

$$\kappa_T = -V^{-1}(\partial V/\partial P)_{T, N}.$$

Under constant pressure, the increase of the volume per unit increase of the temperature is called the **coefficient of thermal expansion** and is given by

$$\alpha = V^{-1}(\partial V/\partial T)_{P, N}.$$

Under constant pressure, the amount of (quasistatic) heat transfer into the system per mole required to produce a unit increase of temperature is called the **specific heat at constant pressure** and is given by

$$c_P = N^{-1}T(\partial S/\partial T)_{P, N},$$

where $N = N_1 + \dots + N_r$. The same quantity under constant volume is called the **specific heat at constant volume** and is given by

$$c_V = N^{-1}T(\partial S/\partial T)_{V, N}.$$

The positivity of c_V is equivalent to the convexity of energy as a function of entropy for fixed values of V and N .

Because of the first-order homogeneity of an extensive quantity as a function of other extensive variables, one can derive an **Euler**

relation, such as

$$U = TS - PV + \mu_1 N_1 + \dots + \mu_r N_r,$$

for a simple system. Its differential form implies the following **Gibbs-Duhem relation**:

$$SdT - VdP + N_1 d\mu_1 + \dots + N_r d\mu_r = 0.$$

Because of the identity

$$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x}\right)\left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial y}\right) = \left(\frac{\partial}{\partial y}\right)\left(\frac{\partial f}{\partial x}\right),$$

there arise relationships among second derivatives, known as the **Maxwell relations**:

$$(\partial T/\partial V)_{S, N} = -(\partial P/\partial S)_{V, N},$$

$$(\partial V/\partial S)_{P, N} = (\partial T/\partial P)_{S, N},$$

$$(\partial S/\partial V)_{T, N} = (\partial P/\partial T)_{V, N},$$

$$(\partial S/\partial P)_{T, N} = -(\partial V/\partial T)_{P, N}.$$

By computing the Jacobian of transformations of variables, further relations can be obtained.

For example,

$$c_P = c_V + N^{-1}TV\alpha^2/\kappa_T.$$

C. Legendre Transform and Variational Principles

The **Legendre transform** of a function $f(x_1, \dots, y_1, \dots)$ relative to the variables x is given by

$$g(p_1, \dots, y_1, \dots) = f - \sum_j x_j p_j$$

as a function of the variables $p_j = \partial f/\partial x_j$ and y . The original variables x can be recovered as $-x_j = \partial g/\partial p_j$.

In terms of Legendre transforms, the entropy maximum principle can be reformulated in various forms:

Energy minimum principle: For given values of the total entropy and volume, the equilibrium is reached at those values of unconstrained parameters that minimize the total energy. This principle is applicable in reversible processes where the total entropy stays constant.

Helmholtz free energy minimum principle: For given values of the temperature (equal to that of a heat bath in thermal contact with the system) and the total volume, the equilibrium is reached at those values of the unconstrained parameters that minimize the total Helmholtz free energy, where the **Helmholtz free energy** for a simple system is defined as a function of T, V, N_1, \dots, N_r by

$$F = U - TS,$$

$$dF = -SdT - PdV + \mu_1 dN_1 + \mu_r dN_r.$$

Enthalpy minimum principle: For given values of the pressure and the total entropy,

the equilibrium is reached at those values of unconstrained parameters that minimize the total enthalpy, where the **enthalpy** for a simple system is defined as a function of S, P, N_1, \dots, N_r by

$$H = U + PV,$$

$$dH = TdS + VdP + \mu_1 dN_1 + \dots + \mu_r dN_r.$$

Gibbs free energy minimum principle: For constant temperature and pressure, the equilibrium is reached at those values of unconstrained parameters that minimize the total Gibbs free energy, where the **Gibbs free energy** for a simple system is given as a function of T, P, N_1, \dots, N_r by

$$G = U - TS + PV,$$

$$dG = -SdT + VdP + \mu_1 dN_1 + \dots + \mu_r dN_r.$$

References

[1] M. W. Zemansky, Heat and thermodynamics, McGraw-Hill, 1951.
[2] H. B. Callen, Thermodynamics, Wiley, 1960.
[3] J. W. Gibbs, The collected works of J. Willard Gibbs, vol. 1, Thermodynamics, Yale Univ. Press, 1948.
[4] M. Planck, Treatise on thermodynamics, Dover, 1945. (Original in German, seventh edition, 1922.)
[5] E. A. Guggenheim, Thermodynamics, North-Holland, 1949.
[6] F. C. Andrews, Thermodynamics: Principles and applications, Wiley, 1971.

420 (XX.8)
Three-Body Problem

A. n -Body Problem and Classical Integrals

In the n -body problem, we study the motions of n particles $P_i(x_i, y_i, z_i)$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$) with arbitrary masses m_i (> 0) following * Newton's law of motion,

$$m_i \frac{d^2 w_i}{dt^2} = \frac{\partial U}{\partial w_i}, \quad i = 1, 2, \dots, n, \tag{1}$$

where w_i is any one of x_i, y_i , or z_i ,

$$U = \sum_{i \neq j} k^2 m_i m_j / r_{ij},$$

with k^2 the gravitation constant, and

$$r_{ij} = \sqrt{(x_i - x_j)^2 + (y_i - y_j)^2 + (z_i - z_j)^2}.$$

Although the one-body and two-body problems have been completely solved, the prob-

420 C
Three-Body Problem

lem has not been solved for $n > 2$. The **three-body problem** is well known and is important both in celestial mechanics and in mathematics. For $n > 3$ the problem is called the **many-body problem**.

The equations (1) have the so-called ten classical integrals, that is, the **energy integral** $\sum_i (m_i/2)((\dot{x}_i)^2 + (\dot{y}_i)^2 + (\dot{z}_i)^2) - U = \text{constant}$ ($\dot{w} = dw/dt$), six **integrals of the center of mass** $\sum_i m_i \dot{w}_i = \text{constant}$, $\sum_i m_i w_i = (\sum_i m_i \dot{w}_i)t + \text{constant}$, and three **integrals of angular momentum** $\sum_i m_i (u_i \dot{w}_i - w_i \dot{u}_i) = \text{constant}$ ($u \neq w$). Using these integrals and eliminating the time t and the ascending node by applying Jacobi's method, the order of the equations (1) can be reduced to $6n - 12$. H. Bruns proved that algebraic integrals cannot be found except for the classical integrals, and H. Poincaré showed that there is no other single-valued integral (Bruns, *Acta Math.*, 11 (1887); Poincaré [2, I, ch. 5]). These results are called **Poincaré-Bruns theorems**. Therefore we cannot hope to obtain general solutions for the equations (1) by quadrature. General solutions for $n \geq 3$ have not been discovered except for certain specific cases.

B. Particular Solutions

Let r_i be the position vector of the particle P_i with respect to the center of mass of the n -body system. A configuration $r \equiv \{r_1, \dots, r_n\}$ of the system is said to form a **central figure** (or **central configuration**) if the resultant force acting on each particle P_i is proportional to $m_i r_i$, where each proportionality constant is independent of i . The proportionality constant is uniquely determined as $-U/\sum_{i=1}^n m_i r_i^2$ by the configuration of the system. A configuration r is a central figure if and only if r is a * critical point of the mapping $r \mapsto U^2(r) \sum_{i=1}^n m_i r_i^2$ [5, 6]. A rotation of the system, in planar central figure, with appropriate angular velocity is a particular solution of the planar n -body problem.

Particular solutions known for the three-body problem are the **equilateral triangle solution** of Lagrange and the **straight line solution** of Euler. They are the only solutions known for the case of arbitrary masses, and their configuration stays in the central figure throughout the motion.

C. Domain of Existence of Solutions

The solutions for the three-body problem are analytic, except for the collision case, i.e., the case where $\min r_{ij} = 0$, in a strip domain enclosing the real axis of the t -plane (Poincaré, P.

Painlevé). K. F. Sundman proved that when two bodies collide at $t = t_0$, the solution is expressed as a power series in $(t - t_0)^{1/3}$ in a neighborhood of t_0 , and the solution which is real on the real axis can be uniquely and analytically continued across $t = t_0$ along the real axis. When all three particles collide, the total angular momentum f with respect to the center of mass must vanish (and the motion is planar) (**Sundman's theorem**); so under the assumption $f \neq 0$, introducing $s = \int^t (U + 1) dt$ as a new independent variable and taking it for granted that any binary collision is analytically continued, we see that the solution of the three-body problem is analytic on a strip domain $|\operatorname{Im} s| < \delta$ containing the real axis of the s -plane. The conformal mapping

$$\omega = (\exp(\pi s / 2\delta) - 1) / (\exp(\pi s / 2\delta) + 1)$$

maps the strip domain onto the unit disk $|\omega| < 1$, where the coordinates of the three particles w_k , their mutual distances r_{kl} , and the time t are all analytic functions of ω and give a complete description of the motion for all real time (Sundman, *Acta Math.*, 36 (1913); Siegel and Moser [7]).

When a triple collision occurs at $t = t_0$, G. Biscocini, Sundman, H. Block, and C. L. Siegel showed that as $t \rightarrow t_0$, (i) the configuration of the three particles approaches asymptotically the Lagrange equilateral triangle configuration or the Euler straight line configuration, (ii) the collision of the three particles takes place in definite directions, and (iii) in general the triple-collision solution cannot be analytically continued beyond $t = t_0$.

D. Final Behavior of Solutions

Suppose that the center of mass of the three-body system is at rest. The motion of the system was classified by J. Chazy into seven types according to the asymptotic behavior when $t \rightarrow +\infty$, provided that the angular momentum f of the system is different from zero. In terms of the \dagger order of the three mutual distances r_{ij} (for large t) these types are defined as follows:

- (i) H^+ : **Hyperbolic motion**. $r_{ij} \sim t$.
- (ii) HP^+ : **Hyperbolic-parabolic motion**. $r_{13}, r_{23} \sim t$ and $r_{12} \sim t^{2/3}$.
- (iii) HE^+ : **Hyperbolic-elliptic motion**. $r_{13}, r_{23} \sim t$ and $r_{12} < a$ ($a = \text{finite}$).
- (iv) P^+ : **Parabolic motion**. $r_{ij} \sim t^{2/3}$.
- (v) PE^+ : **Parabolic-elliptic motion**. $r_{13}, r_{23} \sim t^{2/3}$ and $r_{12} < a$.
- (vi) L^+ : **Lagrange-stable motion or bounded motion**. $r_{ij} < a$.
- (vii) OS^+ : **Oscillating motion**. $\overline{\lim}_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup r_{ij} = \infty$, $\underline{\lim}_{t \rightarrow \infty} \sup r_{ij} < \infty$.

Define H^- , HE^- , etc. analogously but with $t \rightarrow -\infty$. There are three classes for each of the motions HP, HE, and PE, depending on which of the three bodies separates from the other two bodies and recedes to infinity, denoted by HP_i , HE_i , PE_i ($i = 1, 2, 3$), respectively. The energy constant h is positive for H- and HP-motion, zero for P-motion, and negative for PE-, L-, and OS-motion. For HE-motion, h may be positive, zero, or negative.

We say that a **partial capture** takes place when the motion is H^- for $t \rightarrow -\infty$ and HE_i^+ for $t \rightarrow +\infty$ (for $h > 0$), and a **complete capture** when the motion is HE_i^- for $t \rightarrow -\infty$ and L^+ for $t \rightarrow +\infty$ (for $h < 0$). We say also that an **exchange** takes place when HE_i^- for $t \rightarrow -\infty$ and HE_j^+ for $t \rightarrow +\infty$ ($t \neq j$). The probability of complete capture in the domain $h < 0$ is zero (J. Chazy, G. A. Merman).

E. Perturbation Theories

The radius of convergence in the s -plane for Sundman's solution is too small and the convergence is too slow in the ω -plane to make it possible to compute orbits of celestial bodies, and for that purpose a perturbation method is usually adopted. When the masses m_2, \dots, m_n are negligibly small compared with m_1 for the n -body problem, the motion of the n th body is derived as the solution of the two-body problem for m_1 and m_n by assuming $m_2 = \dots = m_{n-1} = 0$ as a first approximation, and then the deviations of the true orbit from the ellipse are derived as \dagger perturbations. In the **general theory of perturbations** the deviations are derived theoretically by developing a disturbing function, whereas in the **special theory of perturbations** they are computed by numerical integration. In general perturbation theory, problems concerning convergence of the solution are important, and it becomes necessary to simplify the disturbing function in dealing with the actual relations among celestial bodies. Specific techniques have to be developed in order to compute perturbations for lunar motion, motions of characteristic asteroids, and motions of satellites (e.g., the system of the Sun, Jupiter, and Jovian satellites).

F. The Restricted Three-Body Problem

Since the three-body problem is very difficult to handle mathematically, mathematical interest has been concentrated on the **restricted three-body problem** (in particular, the planar problem) since Hill studied lunar theory in the 19th century. For the restricted three-body problem, the third body, of zero mass, cannot have any influence on the motion of the other

two bodies, which are of finite masses and which move uniformly on a circle around the center of mass. In the planar case, let us choose units so that the total mass, the angular velocity of the two bodies about their center of mass, and the gravitation constant are all equal to 1, and let (q_1, q_2) be the coordinates of the third body with respect to a rotating coordinate system chosen in such a way that the origin is at the center of mass and the two bodies of finite masses μ and $1-\mu$ are always fixed on the q_1 -axis. Then the equations of motion for the third body are given by a Hamiltonian system:

$$\frac{dq_i}{dt} = \frac{\partial H}{\partial p_i}, \quad \frac{dp_i}{dt} = -\frac{\partial H}{\partial q_i}, \quad i = 1, 2, \quad (2)$$

with

$$H = \frac{1}{2}(p_1^2 + p_2^2) + q_2 p_1 - q_1 p_2 - U(q_1, q_2),$$

$$U = \frac{1-\mu}{\sqrt{(q_1+\mu)^2 + q_2^2}} + \frac{\mu}{\sqrt{(q_1+\mu-1)^2 + q_2^2}}.$$

The equations (2) have the energy integral $H(p, q) = \text{constant}$, called **Jacobi's integral**. Siegel showed that there is no other algebraic integral, and it can be proved by applying Poincaré's theorem that there is no other single-valued integral. Regularization of the two singular points for the equations (2) and solutions passing through the singular points were studied by T. Levi-Civita, and solutions tending to infinity were studied by B. O. Koopman.

After reducing the number of variables by means of the Jacobi integral, the equations (2) give rise to a flow in a 3-dimensional manifold of which the topological type was clarified by G. D. Birkhoff (*Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo*, 39 (1915)). Since this flow has an invariant measure, the equations have been studied topologically, and important results for the restricted three-body problem, particularly on periodic solutions, have been obtained.

G. Stability of Equilateral Triangular Solutions

Suppose that the origin $q_i = p_i = 0$ is an equilibrium point for an autonomous Hamiltonian system with two degrees of freedom:

$$\frac{dq_i}{dt} = \frac{\partial H}{\partial p_i}, \quad \frac{dp_i}{dt} = -\frac{\partial H}{\partial q_i}, \quad i = 1, 2,$$

with the Hamiltonian H being analytic at the origin. When the eigenvalues of the corresponding linearized system are purely imaginary and distinct, denoted by $\pm\lambda_1$, $\pm\lambda_2$, and $\lambda_1 k_1 + \lambda_2 k_2 \neq 0$ for $0 < |k_1| + |k_2| \leq 4$ (where k_i is an integer), we can find suitable coordinates

ξ_i, η_i so that the Hamiltonian H takes the form

$$H = \lambda_1 \xi_1 + \lambda_2 \xi_2 + \frac{1}{2}(c_{11} \xi_1^2 + 2c_{12} \xi_1 \xi_2 + c_{22} \xi_2^2) + H_5 + \dots$$

with $\xi_i \equiv \xi_i \eta_i$ and real c_{ij} . It is necessary that $\eta_i = \sqrt{-1} \bar{\xi}_i$ for the solutions to be real. In addition, if the condition

$$D \equiv c_{11} \lambda_2^2 - 2c_{12} \lambda_1 \lambda_2 + c_{22} \lambda_1^2 \neq 0$$

is satisfied, then the origin is a †stable equilibrium point of the original system (V. I. Arnol'd, J. Moser) [7].

For Lagrange equilateral triangular solutions of the planar restricted three-body problem, the eigenvalues λ of the linearized system derived from (2) are given as roots of the equation $\lambda^4 + \lambda^2 + (27/4)\mu(1-\mu) = 0$ and are purely imaginary if $\mu(1-\mu) < 1/27$. Applying the Arnol'd-Moser result, A. M. Leontovich and A. Deprit and Bartholomé showed that the Lagrange equilibrium points are stable for μ such that $0 < \mu < \mu_0$, where μ_0 is the smaller root of $27\mu(1-\mu) = 1$, excluding three values: μ_1, μ_2 at which $\lambda_1 k_1 + \lambda_2 k_2 = 0$ $|k_1| + |k_2| \leq 4$ and μ_3 at which $D = 0$.

Arnol'd proved that if the masses m_2, \dots, m_n are negligibly small in comparison with m_1 , the motion of the n -body system is †quasi-periodic for the majority of initial conditions for which the eccentricities and inclinations of the osculating ellipses are small.

References

- [1] Y. Hagihara, *Celestial mechanics. I, Dynamical principles and transformation theory*, MIT Press, 1970; *II, Perturbation theory*, pts. 1, 2, MIT 1972; *III, Differential equations in celestial mechanics*, pts. 1, 2, Japan Society for the Promotion of Science, 1974; *IV, Periodic and quasi-periodic solutions*, pts. 1, 2, Japan Society, 1975; *V, Topology of the three-body problem*, pts. 1, 2, Japan Society, 1976.
- [2] H. Poincaré, *Les méthodes nouvelles de la mécanique céleste I-III*, Gauthier-Villars, 1892-1899.
- [3] E. T. Whittaker, *A treatise on the analytical dynamics of particles and rigid bodies*, Cambridge Univ. Press, fourth edition, 1937.
- [4] H. Happel, *Das Dreikörperproblem*, Koehler, 1941.
- [5] A. Wintner, *The analytical foundations of celestial mechanics*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1947.
- [6] R. Abraham and J. E. Marsden, *Foundations of mechanics*, Benjamin, second edition, 1978.
- [7] C. L. Siegel and J. Moser, *Lectures on celestial mechanics*, Springer, 1971.

[8] V. M. Alekseev (Alexeyev), Sur l'allure finale de mouvement dans le problème des trois corps, Actes Congrès Intern. Math., 1970, vol. 2, 893–907.

[9] V. Szebehely, Theory of orbits, Academic Press, 1967.

421 (XVIII.11) Time Series Analysis

A. Time Series

A time series is a sequence of observations ordered in time. Here we assume that measurements are quantitative and the times of measurements are equally spaced. We consider this sequence to be a realization of a stochastic process X_t (\rightarrow 407 Stochastic Processes). Usually time series analysis means a statistical analysis based on samples drawn from a stationary process (\rightarrow 395 Stationary Processes) or a related process. In what follows we denote the sample by $\mathbf{X} = (X_1, X_2, \dots, X_T)$.

B. Statistical Inference of the Autocorrelation

Let us assume X_t (t an integer) to be real-valued and weakly stationary (\rightarrow 395 Stationary Processes) and for simplicity $EX_t = 0$ and consider the estimation of the **autocorrelation** $\rho_h = R_h/R_0$ of time lag h , where $R_t = EX_t X_{t+t}$. We denote the **sample autocovariance** of time lag h as

$$\tilde{R}_h = \frac{1}{T-|h|} \sum_{t=1}^{T-|h|} X_t X_{t+|h|},$$

and define the **serial correlation coefficient** of time lag h by $\tilde{\rho}_h = \tilde{R}_h/\tilde{R}_0$. It can be shown that the joint distribution of $\{\sqrt{T}(\tilde{\rho}_h - \rho_h) \mid 1 \leq h \leq H\}$ tends to an H -dimensional \dagger normal (Gaussian) distribution with mean vector $\mathbf{0}$, if one assumes that X_t is expressed as $X_t = \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} b_j \xi_{t-j}$, where $\sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} |b_j| < +\infty$, $\sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} |j|^{1/2} b_j^2 < +\infty$, and the ξ_t are independently and identically distributed random variables with $E\xi_t = 0$ and $E\xi_t^4 < +\infty$.

When X_t is an autoregressive process of order K (\rightarrow Section D) and also a \dagger Gaussian process, it can be shown that the asymptotic distribution of $\{\sqrt{T}(\tilde{\rho}_h - \rho_h) \mid 1 \leq h \leq K\}$ as $T \rightarrow \infty$ is equal to the asymptotic distribution of $\{\sqrt{T}(\hat{\rho}_h - \rho_h) \mid 1 \leq h \leq K\}$, where $\hat{\rho}_h$ is the \dagger maximum likelihood estimator of ρ_h . In general, it is difficult to obtain the maximum likelihood estimator of ρ_h . The statistical properties of other estimators of ρ_h , e.g., an estimator constructed by using $\text{sgn}(X_t)$ ($\text{sgn}(y)$ means

1 ($y > 0$), 0 ($y = 0$), -1 ($y < 0$)) have also been investigated.

Testing hypotheses concerning autocorrelation can be carried out by using the above results. Let us now consider the problem of testing the hypothesis that X_t is a \dagger white noise. Assume that X_t is a Gaussian process and that a white noise with $EX_t^2 = \sigma^2$ exists, and define $\tilde{C}_h = \sum_{t=1}^T (X_t - \bar{X})(X_{t+h} - \bar{X})$ and $\tilde{\gamma}_h = \tilde{C}_h/\tilde{C}_0$ for $h \geq 0$, where $X_{T+j} = X_j$ and $\bar{X} = \sum_{t=1}^T X_t/T$. Then the probability density function of $\tilde{\gamma}_1$ can be obtained and it can be shown that

$$P(\tilde{\gamma}_1 > \gamma) = \sum_{j=1}^m (\lambda_j - \gamma)^{(T-3)/2} \frac{1}{\Lambda_j}, \quad \lambda_{m+1} \leq \gamma \leq \lambda_m,$$

where $\lambda_j = \cos 2\pi j/T$ and

$$\Lambda_j = \prod_{\substack{k=1 \\ (k \neq j)}}^{(T-1)/2} (\lambda_j - \lambda_k), \quad T = 3, 5, \dots,$$

$$\Lambda_j = \prod_{\substack{k=1 \\ (k \neq j)}}^{T/2-1} (\lambda_j - \lambda_k) \sqrt{1 + \lambda_j}, \quad T = 4, 6, \dots,$$

$$1 \leq m \leq (T-3)/2 \quad \text{if } T \text{ is odd,}$$

$$1 \leq m \leq T/2 - 1 \quad \text{if } T \text{ is even.}$$

This can be used to obtain a test of significance.

C. Statistical Inference of the Spectrum

To find the periodicities of a real-valued \dagger weakly stationary process X_t with mean 0, the statistic, called the **periodogram**,

$$I_T(\lambda) = \left| \frac{1}{\sqrt{T}} \sum_{t=1}^T X_t e^{-2\pi i t \lambda} \right|^2$$

is used. If X_t is expressed as

$$X_t = \sum_{l=1}^L \{m_l \cos 2\pi \lambda_l t + m'_l \sin 2\pi \lambda_l t\} + Y_t,$$

where $\{m_l\}$, $\{m'_l\}$, and $\{Y_t\}$ are mutually independent random variables with $Em_l = Em'_l = 0$ and $V(m_l) = V(m'_l) = \sigma_l^2$ and $\{Y_t\}$ is independent and identically distributed with means 0 and finite variances σ^2 , the distribution of $I_T(\lambda)$ converges to a distribution with finite mean and finite variance at $\lambda \neq \pm \lambda_l$ for $1 \leq l \leq L$ when T tends to infinity. On the other hand, the magnitude of $I_T(\lambda)$ is of the order of T at $\lambda = \pm \lambda_l$, $1 \leq l \leq L$. This means that we can find the periodicities of X_t by using $I_T(\lambda)$. When $X_t = Y_t$, we find that the distribution of $2I_T(\lambda)/\sigma^2$ (when $\lambda \neq 0, \pm 1/2$) or $I_T(\lambda)/\sigma^2$ (when $\lambda = 0$ or $\pm 1/2$) tends to the $\dagger\chi^2$ distribution with degrees of freedom 2 or 1, respectively, and $I(\mu_1), I(\mu_2), \dots, I(\mu_M)$ are asymptotically independent random variables for $0 \leq |\mu_1| < |\mu_2| < \dots < |\mu_M| \leq 1/2$ when $T \rightarrow \infty$. Applying this result, we can test for periods in the data.

Let $f(\lambda)$ be the spectral density function of a real-valued weakly stationary process X_t . In general, the variance of $|\sum_{t=1}^T X_t e^{2\pi i t \lambda} / \sqrt{T}|$ does not tend to 0 as T tends to infinity; hence $I_T(\lambda)$ cannot be used as a good estimator for the spectral density. To obtain an estimate of $f(\lambda)$, several estimators defined by using weight functions have been proposed by several authors. Let $W_T(\lambda)$ be a weight function defined on $(-\infty, \infty)$, and construct a statistic $\tilde{f}(\lambda) = \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} I_T(\mu) W_T(\lambda - \mu) d\mu$. Let us use $\tilde{f}(\mu)$ for the estimation of $f(\lambda)$. $W_T(\lambda)$ is called a **window**. An important class of $W_T(\lambda)$ is as follows. Let $W(\lambda)$ be continuous, $W(\lambda) = W(-\lambda)$, $W(0) = 1$, $|W(\lambda)| < 1$, and $\int_{-\infty}^{\infty} W(\lambda)^2 d\lambda < +\infty$, and let H be a positive integer depending on T such that $H \rightarrow \infty$ and $H/T \rightarrow 0$ as $T \rightarrow \infty$. Putting $w_j = W(j/H)$, we define $W_T(\lambda)$ by $W_T(\lambda) = \sum_{j=-T+1}^{T-1} w_j e^{-2\pi i j \lambda}$. Then $\tilde{f}(\lambda)$ can be expressed as $\tilde{f}(\lambda) = \sum_{h=-T+1}^{T-1} \tilde{R}_h w_h e^{-2\pi i h \lambda}$, where $\tilde{R}_h = \sum_{t=1}^{T-h} X_{t+h} X_t / T$ for $h \geq 0$ and $\tilde{R}_h = \sum_{t=|h|+1}^T X_{t+h} X_t / T$ for $h < 0$. Let X_t be stationary to the fourth order (\rightarrow 395 Stationary Processes) and satisfy

$$\sum_{h=-\infty}^{\infty} |R_h| < +\infty,$$

$$\sum_{h,l,p=-\infty}^{\infty} |C_{o,h,l,p}| < +\infty,$$

where $C_{o,h,l,p}$ is the fourth-order joint cumulant of X_t, X_{t+h}, X_{t+l} , and X_{t+p} . Then we have

$$\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \frac{T}{H} V(\tilde{f}(0)) = 2f(0)^2 \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} W(\lambda)^2 d\lambda,$$

$$\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \frac{T}{H} V(\tilde{f}(\pm 1/2)) = 2f(1/2)^2 \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} W(\lambda)^2 d\lambda,$$

$$\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \frac{T}{H} V(\tilde{f}(\lambda)) = f(\lambda)^2 \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} W(\lambda)^2 d\lambda,$$

$$\lambda \neq 0, \pm 1/2,$$

$$\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \frac{T}{H} \text{Cov}(\tilde{f}(\lambda), \tilde{f}(\mu)) = 0, \quad \lambda \neq \mu. \quad (1)$$

$\{w_h\}$ or $W_T(\lambda)$ should have an optimality, e.g., to minimize the mean square error of $\tilde{f}(\lambda)$. But, generally, it is difficult to obtain such a $\{w_h\}$ or $W_T(\lambda)$.

Several authors have proposed specific types of windows. The following are some examples: (i) (Bartlett) $w_h = (1 - |h|/H)$ for $|h| \leq H$ and $w_h = 0$ for $|h| > H$; (ii) (Tukey) $w_h = \sum_{i=-\infty}^{\infty} a_i \cos(\pi i h / H)$ for $|h| \leq H$ and $w_h = 0$ for $|h| > H$, where the a_i are constants such that $\sum_{i=-\infty}^{\infty} |a_i| < +\infty$, $\sum_{i=-\infty}^{\infty} a_i = 1$ and $a_i = a_{-i}$. The Hanning and Hamming windows are $a_0 = 0.50$, $a_1 = a_{-1} = 0.25$, and $a_i = 0$ for $|i| \geq 2$ and $a_0 = 0.54$, $a_1 = a_{-1} = 0.23$, and $a_i = 0$ for $|i| \geq 2$, respectively [2]. Let $X_t = \sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} b_j \varepsilon_{t-j}$, where $\sum_{j=-\infty}^{\infty} |b_j| < +\infty$ and the ε_t are independently and identically distributed random variables

with $E\varepsilon_t = 0$ and $E\varepsilon_t^4 < +\infty$. Let $\{\lambda_j | 1 \leq j \leq M\}$ be arbitrary real numbers such that $0 \leq \lambda_1 < \lambda_2 < \dots < \lambda_M \leq 1/2$, where M is an arbitrary positive integer. Then the joint distribution of $\{\sqrt{T/H}(\tilde{f}(\lambda_v) - E\tilde{f}(\lambda_v)) | 1 \leq v \leq M\}$ tends to the normal distribution with means 0 and covariance matrix Σ , which is defined by (1). Let us assume, furthermore, that $\lim_{x \rightarrow 0} (1 - w(x))/|x|^q = C$ and $\sum_{h=-\infty}^{\infty} |h|^p |R_h| < +\infty$, where C, q , and p are some positive constants satisfying the following conditions: (i) when $p \geq q$, $H^q/T \rightarrow 0$ ($p \geq 1$) and $H^{q+1-p}/T \rightarrow 0$ ($p \geq 1$) as $T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} T/H^{2q+1}$ is finite; (ii) when $p < q$, $H^p/T \rightarrow 0$ ($p \geq 1$) and $H/T \rightarrow 0$ ($p \leq 1$) as $T \rightarrow \infty$ and $\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} T/H^{2p+1} = 0$. Then $\sqrt{T/H}(\tilde{f}(\lambda_v) - E\tilde{f}(\lambda_v))$ in the results above can be replaced by $\sqrt{T/H}(\tilde{f}(\lambda_v) - f(\lambda_v))$.

Estimation of higher-order spectra, particularly the bispectrum, has also been discussed. Let X_t be a weakly stationary process with mean 0, and let its spectral decomposition be given by $X_t = \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} e^{2\pi i t \lambda} dZ(\lambda)$ (\rightarrow 395 Stationary Processes). We assume that X_t is a weakly stationary process of degree 3 and put $R_{h_1, h_2} = EX_t X_{t+h_1} X_{t+h_2}$ for any integers h_1 and h_2 . Then we have

$$R_{h_1, h_2} = \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} e^{2\pi i (h_1 \lambda_1 + h_2 \lambda_2)} dF(\lambda_1, \lambda_2).$$

Symbolically, $dF(\lambda_1, \lambda_2) = EdZ(\lambda_1) dZ(\lambda_2) dZ(-\lambda_1 - \lambda_2)$. If $F(\lambda_1, \lambda_2)$ is absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure of \mathbf{R}^2 and $\partial F(\lambda_1, \lambda_2) / \partial \lambda_1 \partial \lambda_2 = f(\lambda_1, \lambda_2)$, we call $f(\lambda_1, \lambda_2)$ the **bispectral density function**. When X_t is Gaussian, $R_{h_1, h_2} = 0$ and $f(\lambda_1, \lambda_2) = 0$ for any h_1, h_2 and any λ_1, λ_2 . $f(\lambda_1, \lambda_2)$ can be considered to give a kind of measure of the departure from a Gaussian process or a kind of nonlinear relationship among waves of different frequencies. We can construct an estimator for $f(\lambda_1, \lambda_2)$ by using windows as in the estimation of a spectral density [3].

D. Statistical Analysis of Parametric Models

When we assume merely that X_t is a stationary process and nothing further, then X_t contains infinite-dimensional unknown parameters. In this case, it may be difficult to develop a satisfactory general theory for statistical inference about X_t . But in most practical applications of time series analysis, we can safely assume at least some of the time dependences to be known. For this reason, we can often use a model with finite-dimensional parameters. This means, mainly, that the moments (usually, second-order moments) or the spectral density are assumed to be expressible in terms of finite-dimensional parameters. As examples of such

models, autoregressive models, moving average models, and autoregressive moving average models are widely used.

A process X_t is called an **autoregressive process** of order K if X_t satisfies a difference equation $\sum_{k=0}^K a_k X_{t-k} = \xi_t$, where the a_k are constants, $a_0 = 1$, $a_K \neq 0$, and the ξ_t are mutually uncorrelated with $E\xi_t = 0$ and $V(\xi_t) = \sigma_\xi^2 > 0$. We usually assume that X_t is a weakly stationary process with $EX_t = 0$. We sometimes use the notation $AR(K)$ to express a weakly stationary and autoregressive process of order K . Let $\{\xi_t\}$ be as above. If X_t is expressed as $X_t = \sum_{l=0}^L b_l \xi_{t-l}$, where the b_l are constants, $b_0 = 1$ and $b_L \neq 0$, X_t is called a **moving average process** of order L ($MA(L)$ process). Furthermore, if X_t is weakly stationary with $EX_t = 0$ and expressed as $\sum_{k=0}^K a_k X_{t-k} = \sum_{l=0}^L b_l \xi_{t-l}$ with $a_0 = 1$, $b_0 = 1$, and $a_K b_L \neq 0$, then X_t is called an **autoregressive moving average process** of order (K, L) ($ARMA(K, L)$ process). Let $A(Z)$ and $B(Z)$ be two polynomials of Z such that $A(Z) = \sum_{k=0}^K a_k Z^{K-k}$ and $B(Z) = \sum_{l=0}^L b_l Z^{L-l}$, and let $\{\alpha_k | 1 \leq k \leq K\}$ and $\{\beta_l | 1 \leq l \leq L\}$ be the solutions of the associated polynomial equations $A(Z) = 0$ and $B(Z) = 0$, respectively, we assume that $|\alpha_k| < 1$ for $1 \leq k \leq K$ and $|\beta_l| < 1$ for $1 \leq l \leq L$. This condition implies that X_t is purely nondeterministic. Let the observed sample be $\{X_t | 1 \leq t \leq T\}$. If we assume that X_t is Gaussian and an $ARMA(K, L)$ process, we can show that the †maximum likelihood estimators $\{\hat{a}_k\}$ and $\{\hat{b}_l\}$ of $\{a_k\}$ and $\{b_l\}$ are †consistent and asymptotically efficient when $T \rightarrow \infty$ ("asymptotically efficient" means that the covariance matrix of the distribution of the estimators is asymptotically equal to the inverse of the information matrix) [5] (\rightarrow 399 Statistical Estimation D). Furthermore, if X_t is an $AR(K)$ process, the joint distribution of $\{\sqrt{T}(\hat{a}_k - a_k) | 1 \leq k \leq K\}$ tends to a K -dimensional normal distribution with means 0, and this distribution is the same as the one to which the distribution of the †least-square estimators $\{\hat{a}_k\}$ minimizing $Q = \sum_{t=K+1}^T (X_t + \sum_{k=1}^K a_k X_{t-k})^2$ tends when $T \rightarrow \infty$. If X_t is a $MA(L)$ or $ARMA(K, L)$ process ($L \geq 1$), the likelihood equations are complicated and cannot be solved directly. Many approximation methods have been proposed to obtain the estimates.

When X_t is an $AR(K)$ process with $|\alpha_k| < 1$ for $1 \leq k \leq K$, R_h satisfies $\sum_{k=0}^K a_k R_{h-k} = 0$ for $h \geq 1$. These are often called the **Yule-Walker equations**. R_h can be expressed as $R_h = \sum_{j=1}^K C_j \alpha_j^h$ if the α_k are distinct and $a_K \neq 0$, where $\{C_j\}$ are constants and determined by R_h for $0 \leq h \leq K-1$. When X_t is an $ARMA(K, L)$ process, $\sum_{k=0}^K a_k R_{h-k} = 0$ for $h \geq L+1$, and the C_j of $R_h = \sum_{j=1}^K C_j \alpha_j^h$ are determined by $\{R_h | 0 \leq h \leq \max(K, L)\}$.

The spectral density is expressed as $f(\lambda) = \sigma_\xi^2 |B(e^{2\pi i \lambda})|^2 / |A(e^{2\pi i \lambda})|^2$. If X_t is Gaussian, the maximum likelihood estimator of $f(\lambda)$ is asymptotically equal to the statistic obtained by replacing σ_ξ^2 , $\{b_l\}$, and $\{a_k\}$ in $f(\lambda)$ with $\hat{\sigma}_\xi^2$, $\{\hat{b}_l\}$, and $\{\hat{a}_k\}$, respectively, where $\hat{\sigma}_\xi^2$ is the maximum likelihood estimator of σ_ξ^2 , when $T \rightarrow \infty$.

When we analyze a time series and intend to fit an $ARMA(K, L)$ model, we have to determine the values of K and L . For $AR(K)$ models, many methods have been proposed to determine the value of K . Some examples are: (i) (Quenouille) Let $(Z^K A(1/Z))^2 = \sum_{j=0}^{2K} A_j Z^j$, and $G_K = \sum_{j=0}^{2K} \hat{A}_j (\hat{R}_j / \hat{R}_0)$, where \hat{A}_j is obtained by replacing $\{a_k\}$ in A_j by $\{\hat{a}_k\}$, and we construct the statistic $\chi_f^2 = \sum_{j=1}^f G_{K+j}$. Then χ_f^2 has a $\dagger\chi^2$ distribution asymptotically with f degrees of freedom under the assumption that $K \geq K_0$, where K_0 is the true order, as $T \rightarrow \infty$. Using this fact, we can determine the order of an AR model. (ii) (Akaike) We consider choosing an order K satisfying $K_L \leq K \leq K_M$, where K_L and K_M are minimum order and maximum order, respectively, specified a priori. Then we construct the statistic $AIC(K) = (T-K) \log \hat{\sigma}_\xi^2(K) + 2K$, where

$$\hat{\sigma}_\xi^2(K) = \sum_{t=K+1}^T (X_t + \hat{a}_1 X_{t-1} + \dots + \hat{a}_K X_{t-K})^2 / T$$

and $\{\hat{a}_k | 1 \leq k \leq K\}$ are the least square estimators of the autoregressive coefficients of an $AR(K)$ model fitting X_t . Calculate $AIC(K)$ for $K = K_L, K_L + 1, \dots, K_M$. If $AIC(K)$ has the minimum value at $K = \hat{K}$, we determine the order to be \hat{K} [6] (\rightarrow 403 Statistical Models F). Parzen proposed another method by using the criterion autoregressive transfer function (CAT). Here $CAT(K) = 1 - \hat{\sigma}^2(\infty) / \hat{\sigma}_\xi^2(K) + K/T$, where $\hat{\sigma}_\xi^2(K) = (T/(T-K)) \hat{\sigma}_\xi^2(K)$ and $\hat{\sigma}^2(\infty)$ is an estimator of $\sigma^2(\infty) = \exp(\int_{-1/2}^{1/2} \log f(\lambda) d\lambda)$ [7]. (iii) We can construct a test statistic for the null hypothesis $AR(K)$ against the alternative hypothesis $AR(K+1)$ (Jenkins) or use a multiple decision procedure (T. W. Anderson [8]).

Not much is known about the statistical properties of the above methods, and few comparisons have been made among them.

Another parametric model is an exponential model for the spectrum. The spectral density is expressed by $f(\lambda) = C^2 \exp\{2 \sum_{k=1}^K \theta_k \cos(2\pi k \lambda)\}$, where the θ_k and C are constants.

We now discuss some general theories of estimation for finite-dimensional-parameter models. Let X_t be a real-valued Gaussian process of mean 0 and of spectral density $f(\lambda)$ which is continuous and positive in $[-1/2, 1/2]$, and let the moving average representation of X_t be $X_t = \sum_{l=0}^\infty b_l \xi_{t-l}$, where ξ_t is a white noise and $\sigma_\xi^2 = E\xi_t^2$. We assume that $f(\lambda)/\sigma_\xi^2 = g(\lambda)$

depends only on M parameters $\theta = (\theta_1, \theta_2, \dots, \theta_M)'$ which are independent of σ_ξ^2 . Then the logarithm of the likelihood function can be approximated by $-(1/2) \{T \log 2\pi\sigma_\xi^2 + \mathbf{X}' \Sigma_T^{-1}(\theta) \mathbf{X} / \sigma_\xi^2\}$ by ignoring the lower-order terms in T , where $\sigma_\xi^2 \Sigma_T(\theta)$ is the covariance matrix of \mathbf{X} . Usually, it is difficult to find an explicit expression for each element of $\Sigma_T^{-1}(\theta)$. Another approximation for the logarithm of the likelihood function is given by

$$-\frac{T}{2} \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} \left[\log f(\lambda) + \frac{I_T(\lambda)}{f(\lambda)} \right] d\lambda.$$

Under mild conditions on the regularity of $g(\lambda)$, the estimators $\hat{\theta} = (\hat{\theta}_1, \hat{\theta}_2, \dots, \hat{\theta}_M)$ and $\hat{\sigma}_\xi^2$, obtained as the solutions of the likelihood equations, are consistent and asymptotically normal as T tends to infinity. This means that the distribution of $\sqrt{T}(\hat{\sigma}_\xi^2 - \sigma_\xi^2)$ is asymptotically normal and $\sqrt{T}(\hat{\sigma}_\xi^2 - \sigma_\xi^2)$ and $\sqrt{T}(\hat{\theta} - \theta)$ are asymptotically independent. The asymptotic distribution of $\sqrt{T}(\hat{\theta} - \theta)$ is the normal distribution $N(\mathbf{0}, \Gamma^{-1})$, where the (k, l) -component Γ_{kl} of Γ is given by

$$\Gamma_{kl} = \frac{1}{2} \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} \left(\frac{\partial \log g(\lambda)}{\partial \theta_k} \cdot \frac{\partial \log g(\lambda)}{\partial \theta_l} \right)_\theta d\lambda.$$

E. Statistical Analysis of Multiple Time Series

Let $\mathbf{X}_t = (X_t^{(1)}, X_t^{(2)}, \dots, X_t^{(p)})'$ be a complex-valued weakly stationary process with $E\mathbf{X}_t = \mathbf{0}$ and $E\mathbf{X}_t \bar{\mathbf{X}}_s' = \mathbf{R}_{t-s}$. \mathbf{R}_{t-s} is the $p \times p$ matrix whose (k, l) -component is $R_{t-s}^{(k, l)} = E X_t^{(k)} \bar{X}_s^{(l)}$. We discuss the case when t is an integer. \mathbf{R}_h has the spectral representation

$$\mathbf{R}_h = \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} e^{2\pi i h \lambda} dF(\lambda),$$

where $F(\lambda)$ is a $p \times p$ matrix and $F(\lambda_1) - F(\lambda_2)$, $\lambda_1 \geq \lambda_2$, is Hermitian nonnegative. Let $f^{k, l}(\lambda)$ be the (k, l) -component of the spectral density matrix $f(\lambda)$, i.e., $F_a(\lambda) = \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} f(\mu) d\mu$, of the absolutely continuous part in the Lebesgue decomposition of $F(\lambda)$. The function $f^{k, l}(\lambda)$ for $k \neq l$ is called the **cross spectral density function**. $f^{k, l}(\lambda)$ represents a kind of correlation between the wave of frequency λ included in $X_t^{(k)}$ and the one included in $X_t^{(l)}$.

Let $\mathbf{X}_t = (X_t^{(1)}, X_t^{(2)}, \dots, X_t^{(p)})'$ and $\mathbf{Y}_t = (Y_t^{(1)}, Y_t^{(2)}, \dots, Y_t^{(q)})'$ be two complex-valued weakly stationary processes with $E\mathbf{X}_t = \mathbf{0}$, $E\mathbf{Y}_t = \mathbf{0}$, $E\mathbf{X}_t \bar{\mathbf{X}}_s' = \mathbf{R}_{t-s}^X$, $E\mathbf{Y}_t \bar{\mathbf{Y}}_s' = \mathbf{R}_{t-s}^Y$ and $E\mathbf{X}_t \bar{\mathbf{Y}}_s' = \mathbf{R}_{t-s}^{XY}$. We assume $\mathbf{Y}_t = \sum_{s=-\infty}^{\infty} \mathbf{A}_s \mathbf{X}_{t-s}$, where \mathbf{A}_s is a $q \times p$ matrix whose components are constants depending on s . Put $A(\lambda) = \sum_{s=-\infty}^{\infty} \mathbf{A}_s e^{-2\pi i s \lambda}$. $A(\lambda)$ should exist in the sense of mean square convergence with respect to the spectral distribution function F for \mathbf{X}_t .

The function $A(\lambda)$ is called the **matrix frequency response function**.

As a measure of the strength of association between $X_t^{(k)}$ and $X_t^{(l)}$ at frequency λ , we introduce the quantity $\gamma^{k, l}(\lambda) = |f^{k, l}(\lambda)|^2 / f^{k, k}(\lambda) f^{l, l}(\lambda)$. $\gamma^{k, l}(\lambda)$ is called the **coherence**. Let $X_t^{(k)} = \sum_{s=-\infty}^{\infty} a_s^{k, l} X_{t-s}^{(l)} + \eta_t$, where η_t is a weakly stationary process with mean 0 and uncorrelated with $X_s^{(l)}$, $-\infty < s < \infty$. If $E|\eta_t|^2 = 0$, $\gamma^{k, l}(\lambda) = 1$. If $E|\sum_{s=-\infty}^{\infty} a_s^{k, l} X_{t-s}^{(l)}|^2 = 0$, $\gamma^{k, l}(\lambda) = 0$. Generally, we have $0 \leq \gamma^{k, l}(\lambda) \leq 1$.

For the estimation of $F(\lambda)$, $A(\lambda)$, and $\gamma^{k, l}(\lambda)$, the theories have been similar to those for the estimation of the spectral density of a scalar time series. For example, an estimator of $f(\lambda)$ is given [11] in the form

$$\hat{f}(\lambda) = \sum_{h=-(T-1)}^{T-1} \tilde{\mathbf{R}}_h \mathbf{w}_h e^{-2\pi i h \lambda},$$

where

$$\tilde{\mathbf{R}}_h = \sum_{t=1}^{T-|h|} \mathbf{X}_{t+|h|} \bar{\mathbf{X}}_t' / T$$

and the \mathbf{w}_h are the same as in Section C.

We can define an autoregressive, moving average, or autoregressive moving average process in a similar way as for a scalar time series. The a_k and b_l in Section D should be replaced by $p \times p$ matrices and the associated polynomial equations $A(Z) = 0$ and $B(Z) = 0$ should be understood in the vector sense [11]. There are problems with determining the coefficients uniquely or identifying an ARMA(K, L) model, and these problems have been discussed to some extent.

F. Statistical Inference of the Mean Function

Let X_t be expressed as $X_t = m_t + Y_t$, where m_t is a real-valued deterministic function of t and Y_t is a real-valued weakly stationary process with mean 0 and spectral distribution function $F(\lambda)$. This means that $E X_t = m_t$. We consider the case when $m_t = \sum_{j=1}^M C_j \varphi_t^{(j)}$, where $\mathbf{C} = (C_1, C_2, \dots, C_M)'$ is a vector of unknown coefficients and $\boldsymbol{\varphi}_t = (\varphi_t^{(1)}, \varphi_t^{(2)}, \dots, \varphi_t^{(M)})'$ is a set of known (regression) functions.

Let us construct linear unbiased estimators $\{\tilde{C}_j = \sum_{t=1}^T \gamma_{jt} X_t \mid 1 \leq j \leq M\}$ for the coefficients C_j , where the γ_{jt} are known constants. Put $\boldsymbol{\Phi} = (\boldsymbol{\varphi}_1, \boldsymbol{\varphi}_2, \dots, \boldsymbol{\varphi}_T)'$. Then the least squares estimator of \mathbf{C} is given by $\hat{\mathbf{C}} = (\boldsymbol{\Phi}' \boldsymbol{\Phi})^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Phi}' \mathbf{X}$ when $\boldsymbol{\Phi}' \boldsymbol{\Phi}$ is nonsingular. Let $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$ be the covariance matrix of \mathbf{X} . Then the best linear unbiased estimator is $\hat{\mathbf{C}}^* = (\boldsymbol{\Phi}' \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Phi})^{-1} \boldsymbol{\Phi}' \boldsymbol{\Sigma}^{-1} \mathbf{X}$. We put $\|\boldsymbol{\varphi}^{(j)}\|_T^2 = \sum_{t=1}^T (\varphi_t^{(j)})^2$ and assume that $\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \|\boldsymbol{\varphi}^{(j)}\|_T^2 = \infty$, $\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \|\boldsymbol{\varphi}^{(j)}\|_T^2 / \|\boldsymbol{\varphi}^{(j)}\|_T^2 = 1$ for $1 \leq j \leq M$ and any fixed h and assume the existence of $\psi_h^{(j, k)} = \lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \sum_{t=1}^T \varphi_t^{(j, h)} \varphi_t^{(k)} / \|\boldsymbol{\varphi}^{(j)}\|_T \|\boldsymbol{\varphi}^{(k)}\|_T$ for $1 \leq j, k \leq M$. We also assume

that $F(\lambda)$ is absolutely continuous and $F'(\lambda) = f(\lambda)$ is positive and piecewise continuous. Let ψ_h be the $M \times M$ matrix whose (j, k) -component is $\psi_h^{(j, k)}$. Then ψ_h can be represented by

$$\psi_h = \int_{-1/2}^{1/2} e^{2\pi i h \lambda} dG(\lambda),$$

where $G(\lambda) - G(\mu)$ is a nonnegative definite matrix for $\lambda > \mu$. Assume that $\psi_0 = G(1/2) - G(-1/2)$ is nonsingular and put $H(\lambda) = \psi_0^{-1/2} G(\lambda) \psi_0^{-1/2}$, and for any set S , $H(S) = \int_S H(d\lambda)$. Suppose further that S_1, S_2, \dots, S_q are q sets such that $H(S_j) > 0$, $\sum_{j=1}^q H(S_j) = I$, $H(S_j)H(S_k) = 0$, $j \neq k$, and for any j there is no subset $S'_j \subset S_j$ such that $H(S'_j) > 0$, $H(S_j - S'_j) > 0$ and $H(S'_j)H(S_j - S'_j) = 0$. We have $q \leq M$. It can be shown that the spectrum of the regression can be decomposed into such disjoint sets S_1, \dots, S_q . Then we can show that \hat{C} is asymptotically efficient in the sense that the asymptotic covariance matrix of \hat{C} is equivalent to that of \hat{C}^* if and only if $f(\lambda)$ is constant on each of the elements S_j . Especially, if $\psi_t^{(j)} = t^j e^{2\pi i t \mu_j}$, \hat{C} is asymptotically efficient.

G. Nonstationary Models

It is difficult to develop a statistical theory for a general class of nonstationary time series, but some special types of nonstationary processes have been investigated more or less in detail. Let X_t (t an integer) be a real-valued stochastic process and ∇ be the backward difference operator defined by $\nabla X_t = X_t - X_{t-1}$ and $\nabla^d X_t = \nabla(\nabla^{d-1} X_t)$ for $d \geq 2$. We assume that X_t is defined for $t \geq t_0$ (t_0 a finite integer), and $EX_t^2 < +\infty$. For analyzing a nonstationary time series, Box and Jenkins introduced the following model: For a positive integer d , $Y_t = \nabla^d X_t$, $t \geq t_0 + d$, is stationary and is an autoregressive moving average process of order (K, L) for $t \geq t_0 + d + \max(K, L)$. They called such an X_t an **autoregressive integrated moving average process** of order (K, d, L) and denoted it by $ARIMA(K, d, L)$. The word "integrated" means a kind of summation; in fact, X_t can be expressed as a sum of the weakly stationary process Y_t , i.e.,

$$\begin{aligned} X_t = & X_0 + (\nabla X_0)t + (\nabla^2 X_0) \left(\sum_{s_2=1}^t \sum_{s_1=1}^{s_2} \right) + \dots \\ & + (\nabla^{d-1} X_0) \left(\sum_{s_{d-1}=1}^t \dots \sum_{s_1=1}^{s_{d-1}} \right) \\ & + \sum_{s_d=1}^t \sum_{s_{d-1}=1}^{s_d} \dots \sum_{s_1=1}^{s_{d-1}} Y_{s_1}, \end{aligned}$$

when $t_0 = -d + 1$. Using this model, methods of forecasting and of model identification and estimation can be discussed [13].

Another nonstationary model is based on the concept of evolutionary spectra [14]. In this approach, spectral distribution functions are taken to be time-dependent. Let X_t be a complex-valued stochastic process (t an integer) with $EX_t = 0$ and $R_{t,s} = EX_t \bar{X}_s$. In the following, we write simply \int for $\int_{-1/2}^{1/2}$. We now restrict our attention to the class of X_t for which there exist functions $\{u_t(\lambda)\}$ defined on $[-1/2, 1/2]$ such that $R_{t,s}$ can be expressed as $R_{t,s} = \int u_t(\lambda) \bar{u}_s(\lambda) d\mu(\lambda)$, where $\mu(\lambda)$ is a measure. $u_t(\lambda)$ should satisfy $\int |u_t(\lambda)|^2 d\mu(\lambda) < +\infty$. Then X_t admits a representation of the form $X_t = \int u_t(\lambda) dZ(\lambda)$, where $Z(\lambda)$ is a process with orthogonal increments and $E|dZ(\lambda)|^2 = d\mu(\lambda)$. If $u_t(\lambda)$ is expressed as $u_t(\lambda) = \gamma_t(\lambda) e^{2\pi i \theta(\lambda)t}$ and $\gamma_t(\lambda)$ is of the form $\gamma_t(\lambda) = \int e^{2\pi i t w} d\Gamma_\lambda(w)$ with $|d\Gamma_\lambda(w)|$ having the absolute maximum at $w = 0$, we call $u_t(\lambda)$ an oscillatory function and X_t an oscillatory process. The evolutionary power spectrum $dF_t(\lambda)$ is defined by $dF_t(\lambda) = |\gamma_t(\lambda)|^2 d\mu(\lambda)$.

Other models, such as an autoregressive model whose coefficients vary with time or whose associated polynomial has roots outside the unit circle, have also been discussed.

References

- [1] E. J. Hannan, Time series analysis, Methuen, 1960.
- [2] R. B. Blackman and J. W. Tukey, The measurement of power spectra from the point of view of communications engineering, Dover, 1959.
- [3] D. R. Brillinger, Time series: Data analysis and theory, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1975.
- [4] M. S. Bartlett, An introduction to stochastic processes with special reference to methods and applications, Cambridge Univ. Press, second edition, 1966.
- [5] P. Whittle, Estimation and information in stationary time series, Ark. Mat. 2 (1953), 423-434.
- [6] H. Akaike, Information theory and an extension of the maximum likelihood principle, 2nd Int. Symp. Information Theory, B. N. Petrov and F. Csaki (eds.), Akadémiai Kiadó, 1973, 267-281.
- [7] E. Parzen, Some recent advances in time series modeling, IEEE Trans. Automatic Control, AC-19 (1974), 723-730.
- [8] T. W. Anderson, The statistical analysis of time series, Wiley, 1971.
- [9] P. Whittle, Hypothesis testing in time series analysis, Almqvist and Wiksell, 1951.
- [10] H. B. Mann and A. Wald, On the statistical treatment of linear stochastic difference equations, Econometrica, 11 (1943), 173-220.

- [11] E. J. Hannan, Multiple time series, Wiley, 1970.
- [12] U. Grenander and M. Rosenblatt, Statistical analysis of stationary time series, Wiley, 1957.
- [13] G. E. P. Box and G. M. Jenkins, Time series analysis: Forecasting and control, Holden-Day, revised edition, 1976.
- [14] M. B. Priestley, Evolutionary spectra and nonstationary processes, J. Roy. Statist. Soc., ser. B, 27 (1965), 204–237.

422 (IV.7) Topological Abelian Groups

A. Introduction

A commutative topological group is called a **topological Abelian group**. Throughout this article, except in Section L, all topological groups under consideration are locally compact Hausdorff topological Abelian groups and are simply called groups (\rightarrow 423 Topological Groups).

B. Characters

A **character** of a group is a continuous function $\chi(x)$ ($x \in G$) that takes on as values complex numbers of absolute value 1 and satisfies $\chi(xy) = \chi(x)\chi(y)$. Equivalently, χ is a 1-dimensional and therefore an irreducible * unitary representation of G . Conversely any irreducible unitary representation of G is 1-dimensional. Indeed, for a topological Abelian group, the set of its characters coincides with the set of its irreducible unitary representations. If the product of two characters χ, χ' is defined by $\chi\chi'(x) = \chi(x)\chi'(x)$, then the set of all characters forms the **character group** $C(G)$ of G . With * compact-open topology, $C(G)$ itself becomes a locally compact topological Abelian group.

C. The Duality Theorem

For a fixed element x of G , $\chi(x)$ ($\chi \in C(G)$) is a character of $C(G)$, namely, an element of $CC(G)$. Denote this character of $C(G)$ by $x(\chi)$, and consider the correspondence $G \ni x \rightarrow x(\chi)$. That this correspondence is one-to-one follows from the fact that any locally compact G has * sufficiently many irreducible unitary representations (\rightarrow 437 Unitary Representations) and the fact that if G is an Abelian group, then any irreducible unitary representation of G is a character of G . Furthermore, any character

of $C(G)$ is given as one of the $x(\chi)$; indeed, by this correspondence, we have $G \cong CC(G)$ (**Pontryagin's duality theorem**).

By the duality theorem, each of G and $C(G)$ is isomorphic to the character group of the other. In this sense, G and $C(G)$ are said to be **dual** to each other.

D. Correspondence between Subgroups

Let $G, G' = C(G)$ be groups that are dual to each other. Given a closed subgroup g of G , the set of all χ' such that $\chi'(x) = 1$ for all x in g forms a closed subgroup of G' , usually denoted by (G', g) . The definition of (G, g') is similar. Then $g \leftrightarrow (G', g) = g'$ gives a one-to-one correspondence between the closed subgroups of G and those of G' . If $g_1 \supset g_2$, then g_1/g_2 and $(G', g_2)/(G', g_1)$ are dual to each other. If the group operations of G, G' are written in additive form, with 0 for the identity, then $x(\chi') = 1$ is written as $x(\chi') = 0$. In this sense, (G', g) is called the **annihilator** (or **annulator**) of g .

E. The Structure Theorem

Let \mathfrak{A} be the set of all groups (more precisely, of all locally compact Hausdorff topological Abelian groups). If $G_1, G_2 \in \mathfrak{A}$, then the direct product $G_1 \times G_2 \in \mathfrak{A}$, and if $G \in \mathfrak{A}$ and H is a closed subgroup of G , then $H \in \mathfrak{A}$ and $G/H \in \mathfrak{A}$. In addition, if H is a closed subgroup of a group G such that $H \in \mathfrak{A}$ and $G/H \in \mathfrak{A}$, then $G \in \mathfrak{A}$. In other words, \mathfrak{A} is closed under the operations of forming direct products, closed subgroups, quotient groups, and * extensions by members of \mathfrak{A} . Furthermore, the operation C that assigns to each element of \mathfrak{A} its dual element is a reflexive correspondence of \mathfrak{A} onto \mathfrak{A} , and if $G \supset H$, the annihilator $(C(G), H)$ of H is a closed subgroup of $C(G)$. Also, $C(G/H) \cong (C(G), H)$, $C(H) \cong C(G)/(C(G), H)$. Furthermore, $C(G_1 \times G_2) \cong C(G_1) \times C(G_2)$. Finally, $H = (G, (C(G), H))$ (**reciprocity of annihilators**).

Typical examples of groups in \mathfrak{A} are the additive group \mathbf{R} of real numbers, the additive group \mathbf{Z} of rational integers, the 1-dimensional * torus group $\mathbf{T} = \mathbf{R}/\mathbf{Z}$, and finite Abelian groups \mathbf{F} . The torus group \mathbf{T} is also isomorphic to the multiplicative group $U(1)$ of complex numbers of absolute value 1. The direct product \mathbf{R}^n of n copies of \mathbf{R} is the **vector group** of dimension n , and the direct product \mathbf{T}^n of n copies of \mathbf{T} is the **torus** (or **torus group**) of dimension n (or **n -torus**). Both \mathbf{T}^n and \mathbf{F} are compact, while \mathbf{R}^n and \mathbf{Z}^n are not. We have $C(\mathbf{R}) = \mathbf{R}$, $C(\mathbf{T}) = \mathbf{Z}$, $C(\mathbf{Z}) = \mathbf{T}$. Any finite Abelian group \mathbf{F} is isomorphic to its character group $C(\mathbf{F})$. The direct product of a finite

Topological Abelian Groups

number of copies of \mathbf{R} , \mathbf{T} , \mathbf{Z} , and a finite Abelian group \mathbf{F} , namely, a group of the form $\mathbf{R}^l \times \mathbf{T}^m \times \mathbf{Z}^n \times \mathbf{F}$, is called an **elementary topological Abelian group**.

Any group in \mathfrak{A} is isomorphic to the direct product of a vector group of some dimension and the extension of a compact group by a discrete group (the **structure theorem**). Hence, if the effect of the operation C is explicitly known, then the problem of finding the structure of groups in \mathfrak{A} is reduced to the problem concerning discrete groups alone. For the structure of groups in \mathfrak{A} , the following theorem is known: If $G \in \mathfrak{A}$ is generated by a compact neighborhood of the identity e , then G is isomorphic to the direct product of a compact subgroup K and a group of the form $\mathbf{R}^n \times \mathbf{Z}^m$ (n, m are nonnegative integers). Then any compact subgroup of G is contained in K , which is the unique maximal compact subgroup of G . A group $G \in \mathfrak{A}$ generated by a compact neighborhood of e is the \dagger projective limit of elementary topological Abelian groups. L. S. Pontryagin first proved a structure theorem of this type and then the duality theorem.

F. Compact Elements

An element a of a group $G \in \mathfrak{A}$ is called a **compact element** if the cyclic group $\{a^n | n \in \mathbf{Z}\}$ generated by a is contained in a compact subset of G . The set C_0 of all compact elements of G is a closed subgroup of G , and the quotient group G/C_0 does not contain any compact element other than the identity. In particular, if G is generated by a compact neighborhood of the identity, then C_0 coincides with the maximal compact subgroup K of G . Let C_0 be the set of all compact elements of a group $G \in \mathfrak{A}$. The annihilator $(C(G), C_0)$ is a connected component of the character group $C(G)$ of G . If G is a discrete group, then a compact element of G is an element of G of finite order.

G. Compact Groups and Discrete Groups

Suppose that two groups $G, X \in \mathfrak{A}$ are dual to each other. Then one group is compact if and only if the other group is discrete. By the duality theorem, the properties of a compact Abelian group G can be stated, in principle, through the properties of the discrete Abelian group $C(G)$. The following are a few such examples. Let G be a compact Abelian group. Then its \dagger dimension is equal to the \dagger rank of the discrete Abelian group $C(G)$. A subgroup Y of a discrete Abelian group X is called a **divisible**

subgroup if the quotient group X/Y contains no element of finite order other than the identity. A compact Abelian group G is locally connected if and only if any finite subset of the character group $C(G)$ is contained in some divisible subgroup of $C(G)$ generated by a finite number of elements. Hence if a compact locally connected Abelian group G has an \dagger open basis consisting of a countable number of open sets, then G is of the form $\mathbf{T}^a \times \mathbf{F}$, where \mathbf{F} is a finite Abelian group and \mathbf{T}^a is the direct product of an at most countable number of 1-dimensional torus groups \mathbf{T} .

H. Dual Decomposition into Direct Products

Let G be a compact or discrete Abelian group, and let $\mathfrak{M} = \{H_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$ be a family of closed subgroups of G . Let $\Delta(\mathfrak{M}) = \bigcap_{\alpha \in A} H_\alpha$, and denote by $\Sigma(\mathfrak{M})$ the smallest closed subgroup of G containing $\bigcup_{\alpha \in A} H_\alpha$. Then, with $\Omega = \{(C(G), H_\alpha) | \alpha \in A\}$, the relations $\Delta(\Omega) = (C(G), \Sigma(\mathfrak{M}))$ and $\Sigma(\Omega) = (C(G), \Delta(\mathfrak{M}))$ hold. Furthermore, suppose that G is decomposed into the direct product $G = \prod_{\alpha \in A} H_\alpha$, and for each $\alpha \in A$ put $K_\alpha = \Sigma(\mathfrak{M} - \{H_\alpha\})$, $X_\alpha = (C(G), K_\alpha)$. Then X_α is the character group of H_α , and $C(G)$ can be decomposed into the direct product $C(G) = \prod_{\alpha \in A} X_\alpha$. This decomposition of $C(G)$ into a direct product is called the **dual direct product decomposition** corresponding to the decomposition $G = \prod_{\alpha \in A} H_\alpha$.

I. Orthogonal Group Pairs

Suppose that for two groups G, G' there exists a mapping $(x, x') \rightarrow xx'$ of the Cartesian product $G \times G'$ into the set $U(1)$ of all complex numbers of absolute value 1 such that

$$(x_1 x_2)x' = (x_1 x')(x_2 x'),$$

$$x(x'_1 x'_2) = (xx'_1)(xx'_2).$$

Then G, G' are said to form a **group pair**. Suppose that G, G' form a group pair, and consider xx' to be a function $x(x')$ in x' . If two functions $x_1(x')$ and $x_2(x')$ coincide only when $x_1 = x_2$ and the same is true when the roles of G and G' are interchanged, then G, G' are said to form an **orthogonal group pair**. If G is a compact Abelian group, G' is a discrete Abelian group, and G, G' form an orthogonal group pair, then G, G' are dual to each other.

J. Commutative Lie Groups

An elementary topological Abelian group $\mathbf{R}^l \times \mathbf{T}^m \times \mathbf{Z}^n \times \mathbf{F}$ is a commutative \dagger Lie group. Conversely, any commutative Lie group G

generated by a compact neighborhood of the identity is isomorphic to an elementary topological Abelian group. In particular, any connected commutative Lie group G is isomorphic to $\mathbf{R}^l \times \mathbf{T}^m$ for some l and m . A closed subgroup H of the vector group \mathbf{R}^n of dimension n is isomorphic to $\mathbf{R}^p \times \mathbf{Z}^q$ ($0 \leq p + q \leq n$). More precisely, there exists a basis a_1, \dots, a_n of the vector group \mathbf{R}^n such that $H = \{\sum_{i=1}^p x_i a_i + \sum_{j=p+1}^n n_j a_j \mid x_i \in \mathbf{R}, n_j \in \mathbf{Z}\}$. Hence the quotient groups of \mathbf{R}^n that are \dagger separated topological groups are all isomorphic to groups of the form $\mathbf{R}^l \times \mathbf{T}^m$ ($0 \leq l + m \leq n$). Any closed subgroup of the torus group \mathbf{T}^n of dimension n is isomorphic to a group of the form $\mathbf{T}^p \times \mathbf{F}$ ($0 \leq p \leq n$), where \mathbf{F} is a finite Abelian group. Hence the quotient groups of \mathbf{T}^n that are separated topological groups are all isomorphic to \mathbf{T}^m ($0 \leq m \leq n$). A \dagger regular linear transformation of the linear space \mathbf{R}^n is a continuous automorphism of the vector group \mathbf{R}^n , and in fact, any continuous automorphism of \mathbf{R}^n is given by a regular linear transformation. Indeed, the group of all continuous automorphisms of \mathbf{R}^n is isomorphic to the \dagger general linear group $GL(n, \mathbf{R})$ of degree n . Any continuous automorphism of the torus group $\mathbf{T}^n = \mathbf{R}^n / \mathbf{Z}^n$ of dimension n is given by a regular linear transformation φ of \mathbf{R}^n such that $\varphi(\mathbf{Z}^n) = \mathbf{Z}^n$. Hence the group of continuous automorphisms of \mathbf{T}^n is isomorphic to the multiplicative group of all $n \times n$ matrices, with determinant ± 1 and with entries in the set of rational integers.

K. Kronecker's Approximation Theorem

Let H be a subgroup of a group $G \in \mathfrak{A}$ (not necessarily closed). Then $(G, (C(G), H))$ coincides with the closure \bar{H} of H . In particular, H is \dagger dense in G if and only if the annihilator $(C(G), H)$ consists of the identity alone. Now let $G = \mathbf{R}^n$ and let H be the subgroup of \mathbf{R}^n generated by $\theta = (\theta_1, \dots, \theta_n) \in \mathbf{R}^n$ and the natural \dagger basis $e_1 = (1, 0, \dots, 0), \dots, e_n = (0, \dots, 0, 1)$ of \mathbf{R}^n . Then H is dense in \mathbf{R}^n if and only if $(\mathbf{R}^n, H) = \{0\}$; that is, $\theta_1, \dots, \theta_n, 1$ are linearly independent over the rational number field \mathbf{Q} (**Kronecker's approximation theorem**). This theorem implies that the torus group \mathbf{T}^n of dimension n has a cyclic subgroup and a 1-parameter subgroup that are both dense in \mathbf{T}^n .

L. Linear Topology

Consider the discrete topology in a field Ω . Suppose that an Ω -module G has a topology that satisfies \dagger Hausdorff's separation axiom and is such that a base for the neighborhood

system of the zero element 0 consists of Ω -submodules, and suppose that G together with this topology constitutes a topological Abelian group. Then this topology is called a **linear topology**. If a linear topology is restricted to a Ω -submodule, then it is also a linear topology. If G is of finite rank, then any linear topology is the discrete topology. The discrete topology on G is a linear topology. Let H be a Ω -submodule. Then the subset $V = H + g$ of G obtained by translating H by an element g of G is called a **linear variety** in G . If V is a linear variety, then \bar{V} is also a linear variety. If Ω -modules G, G' have linear topologies, a homomorphism of G into G' is always assumed to be open and continuous with respect to these topologies. A linear variety V in G is said to be **linearly compact** if, for any system $\{V_\alpha\}$ of linear varieties closed in V with the \dagger finite intersection property, we have $\bigcap_\alpha V_\alpha \neq \emptyset$. In this case V is closed in G . If linearly compact Ω -submodules can be chosen as a base for the neighborhood system of the zero element of G , we say that G is **locally linearly compact**. The set $C_\Omega(G)$ of homomorphisms of an Ω -module G with linear topology into Ω is also an Ω -module. For any linearly compact Ω -submodule H of G , let $U(H) = \{\chi \mid \chi(g) = 0, g \in H\}$. Then, with $\{U(H)\}$ as a base for the neighborhood system, a linear topology can be introduced in $C_\Omega(G)$. According as G is discrete, linearly compact, or locally linearly compact, $C_\Omega(G)$ is linearly compact, discrete, or locally linearly compact. Let G, H be Ω -modules each of which has a linear topology, and let $\varphi: G \ni g \rightarrow \varphi_g \in C_\Omega(H)$, $\psi: H \ni h \rightarrow \psi_h \in C_\Omega(G)$ be homomorphisms such that $\varphi_g(h) = \psi_h(g)$. Then if one of φ, ψ is an isomorphism, so is the other. This is an analog of the Pontryagin duality theorem and is called the **duality theorem for Ω -modules**. In particular, a linearly compact Ω -module is the direct sum of 1-dimensional spaces (S. Lefschetz [3]).

References

- [1] L. S. Pontryagin, Topological groups, first edition, Princeton Univ. Press, 1939; second edition, Gordon & Breach, 1966 (translation of the 1954 Russian edition).
- [2] A. Weil, L'intégration dans les groupes topologiques et ses applications, Actualités Sci. Ind., Hermann, 1940.
- [3] S. Lefschetz, Algebraic topology, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1942.
- [4] W. Rudin, Fourier analysis on groups, Interscience, 1962.
- [5] E. Hewitt and K. A. Ross, Abstract harmonic analysis, Springer, I, 1963; II, 1970.

423 (IV.6) Topological Groups

A. Definitions

If a * group G has the structure of a * topological space such that the mapping $(x, y) \rightarrow xy$ (product) of the Cartesian product $G \times G$ into G and the mapping $x \rightarrow x^{-1}$ (inverse) of G into G are both continuous, then G is called a **topological group**. The group G without a topological structure is called the **underlying group** of the topological group G , and the topological space G is called the **underlying topological space** of the topological group G . Let G, G' be topological groups. A mapping f of G into G' is called an **isomorphism** of the topological group G onto the topological group G' if f is a * isomorphism of the underlying group G onto the underlying group G' and also a * homeomorphism of the underlying topological space G onto the underlying topological space G' . Two topological groups are said to be **isomorphic** if there exists an isomorphism of one onto the other.

B. Neighborhood Systems

Let \mathfrak{N} be the * neighborhood system of the identity e of a topological group G . Namely, \mathfrak{N} consists of all subsets of G each of which contains an open set containing the element e . Then \mathfrak{N} satisfies the following six conditions: (i) If $U \in \mathfrak{N}$ and $U \subset V$, then $V \in \mathfrak{N}$. (ii) If $U, V \in \mathfrak{N}$, then $U \cap V \in \mathfrak{N}$. (iii) If $U \in \mathfrak{N}$, then $e \in U$. (iv) For any $U \in \mathfrak{N}$, there exists a $W \in \mathfrak{N}$ such that $WW = \{xy \mid x, y \in W\} \subset U$. (v) If $U \in \mathfrak{N}$, then $U^{-1} \in \mathfrak{N}$. (vi) If $U \in \mathfrak{N}$ and $a \in G$, then $aUa^{-1} \in \mathfrak{N}$. Conversely, if a nonempty family \mathfrak{N} of subsets of a group G satisfies conditions (i)–(vi), then there exists a * topology \mathfrak{D} of G such that \mathfrak{N} is the neighborhood system of e and G is a topological group with this topology. Moreover, such a topology is uniquely determined by \mathfrak{N} . * Left translation $x \rightarrow ax$ and * right translation $x \rightarrow xa$ in a topological group G are homeomorphisms of G onto G ; thus if \mathfrak{N} is the neighborhood system of the identity e , then $a\mathfrak{N} = \mathfrak{N}a$ is the neighborhood system of a , where $a\mathfrak{N} = \{aU \mid U \in \mathfrak{N}\}$.

If the underlying topological space of a topological group G is a * Hausdorff space, G is called a **T_2 -topological group (Hausdorff topological group or separated topological group)**. If the underlying topological space of a topological group G is a * T_0 -topological space, then, as is easily seen, it is a * T_1 -topological space. If it is a T_1 -topological space, then by the fact that the topology may be defined by a

* uniformity, it is a * completely regular space, hence, in particular, a Hausdorff space (\rightarrow Section G). Thus a topological group whose underlying topological space is a T_0 -topological space is a T_2 -topological group.

C. Direct Product of Topological Groups

Consider a family $\{G_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ of topological groups. The Cartesian product $G = \prod_{\alpha \in A} G_\alpha$ of the underlying groups of G_α is a topological group with the * product topology of the underlying topological spaces of G_α . This topological group $G = \prod_{\alpha \in A} G_\alpha$ is called the **direct product** of topological groups G_α ($\alpha \in A$).

D. Subgroups

Let H be a subgroup of the underlying group of a topological group G . Then H is a topological group with the topology of a * topological subspace of G (* relative topology). This topological group H is called a **subgroup** of G . A subgroup that is a closed (open) set is called a **closed (open) subgroup**. Any open subgroup is also a closed subgroup. For any subgroup H of a topological group G , the closure \bar{H} of H is also a subgroup. If H is a normal subgroup, so is \bar{H} . If H is commutative, so is \bar{H} . In a T_2 -topological group G , the * centralizer $C(M) = \{x \in G \mid xm = mx \ (m \in M)\}$ of a subset M of G is a closed subgroup of G . In particular, the * center $C = C(G)$ of a T_2 -topological group is a closed normal subgroup.

E. Quotient Spaces

Given a subgroup H of a topological group G , let $G/H = \{aH \mid a \in G\}$ be the set of * left cosets, and let p be the canonical surjection $p(a) = aH$ of G onto G/H . Consider the * quotient topology on G/H , namely, the strongest topology such that p is a continuous mapping. Since a subset A of G/H is open when $p^{-1}(A)$ is an open set of G , p is also a * open mapping. The set G/H with this topology is called the **left quotient space (or left coset space)** of G by H . The **right quotient space (or right coset space)** $H \backslash G = \{Ha \mid a \in G\}$ is defined similarly. The quotient space G/H is discrete if and only if H is an open subgroup of G . The quotient space is a Hausdorff space if and only if H is a closed subgroup. If G/H and H are both * connected, then G itself is connected. If G/H and H are both * compact, then G is compact. If H is a closed subgroup of G and $G/H, H$ are both * locally compact, then G is locally compact.

Suppose that H is a normal subgroup of a topological group G . Then the quotient group

G/H is a topological group with the topology of the quotient space G/H . This topological group is called the **quotient group** of the topological group G by the normal subgroup H .

F. Connectivity

The \ast connected component G_0 containing the identity e of a topological group G is a closed normal subgroup of G . The connected component that contains an element $a \in G$ is the coset $aG_0 = G_0a$. G_0 is called the **identity component** of G . The quotient group G/G_0 is \ast totally disconnected. A connected topological group G is generated by any neighborhood U of the identity. Namely, any element of G can be expressed as the product of a finite number of elements in U . Totally disconnected (in particular, discrete) normal subgroups of a connected topological group G are contained in the center of G .

G. Uniformity

Let \mathfrak{N}_0 be the neighborhood system of the identity of a topological group G , and let $U_i = \{(x, y) \in G \times G \mid y \in xU_i\}$ for $U_i \in \mathfrak{N}_0$. Then a \ast uniformity having $\{U_i \mid U_i \in \mathfrak{N}_0\}$ as a base is defined on G . This uniformity is called the **left uniformity** of G . Left translation $x \rightarrow ax$ of G is \ast uniformly continuous with respect to the left uniformity. The **right uniformity** is defined similarly by $U_r = \{(x, y) \mid y \in Ux\}$. These two uniformities do not necessarily coincide. The mapping $x \rightarrow x^{-1}$ is a \ast uniform isomorphism of G considered as a uniform space with respect to the left uniformity onto the same group G considered as a uniform space with respect to the right uniformity. A topological group G is thus a \ast uniform space under a uniformity \ast compatible with its topology, and hence it is a completely regular space if the underlying topological space is a T_1 -space.

H. Completeness

If a topological group G is \ast complete with respect to the left uniformity, then it is also complete with respect to the right uniformity, and conversely. In this case the topological group G is said to be **complete**. A locally compact T_2 -topological group is complete. If a T_2 -topological group G is isomorphic to a dense subgroup of a complete T_2 -topological group \hat{G} , then \hat{G} is called the **completion** of G , and G is said to be **completable**. A T_2 -topological group G is not always completable. For a T_2 -topological group G to be completable it is necessary and sufficient that any \ast Cauchy filter

of G considered as a uniform space with respect to the left uniformity is mapped to a Cauchy filter of the same uniform space G under the mapping $x \rightarrow x^{-1}$. Then the completion \hat{G} of G is uniquely determined up to isomorphism. A commutative T_2 -topological group always has a completion \hat{G} , and \hat{G} is also commutative. If each point of a T_2 -topological group G has a \ast totally bounded neighborhood, there exists a completion \hat{G} , and \hat{G} is locally compact.

I. Metrization

If a \ast metric can be introduced in a T_2 -topological group G so that the metric gives the topology of G , then G is said to be **metrizable**. For a T_2 -topological group G to be metrizable it is necessary and sufficient that G satisfy the \ast first axiom of countability. Then the metric can be chosen so that it is **left invariant**, i.e., invariant under left translation. Similarly, it can be chosen so that it is right invariant. In particular, the topology of a compact T_2 -topological group that satisfies the first axiom of countability can be given by a metric that is both left and right invariant.

J. Isomorphism Theorems

Let G and G' be topological groups. If a homomorphism f of the underlying group of G into the underlying group of G' is a continuous mapping of the underlying topological space of G into that of G' , f is called a **continuous homomorphism**. If f is a continuous open mapping, f is called a **strict morphism** (or **open continuous homomorphism**). A continuous homomorphism of a \ast paracompact locally compact topological group onto a locally compact T_2 -topological group is an open continuous homomorphism.

A topological group G' is said to be **homomorphic** to a topological group G if there exists an open continuous homomorphism f of G onto G' . Let N denote the kernel $f^{-1}(e)$ of f . Then the quotient group G/N is isomorphic to G' , with G/N and G' both considered as topological groups (**homomorphism theorem**). Let f be an open continuous homomorphism of a topological group G onto a topological group G' , and let H' be a subgroup of G' . Then $H = f^{-1}(H')$ is a subgroup of G , and the mapping φ defined by $\varphi(gH) = f(g)H'$ is a homeomorphism of the quotient space G/H onto G'/H' . In particular, if H' is a normal subgroup, then H is also a normal subgroup and φ is an isomorphism of the quotient group G/H onto G'/H' as topological groups (**first isomorphism theorem**). Let H and N be subgroups of a topo-

logical group G such that $HN = NH$. Then the canonical mapping $f: h(H \cap N) \rightarrow hN$ of the quotient space $H/H \cap N$ to HN/N is a continuous bijection but not necessarily an open mapping. In particular, if N is a normal subgroup of the group HN , then f is a continuous homomorphism. In addition, if f is an open mapping, the quotient groups $H/H \cap N$ and HN/N are isomorphic as topological groups (**second isomorphism theorem**). For example, f is an open mapping (1) if N is compact or (2) if G is locally compact, HN and N are closed subgroups of G , and H is the union of a countable number of compact subsets. Let H be a subgroup of a topological group G and N be a normal subgroup of G such that $H \supset N$. Then the canonical mapping of the quotient space $(G/N)/(H/N)$ onto G/H is a homeomorphism. In particular, if H is also a normal subgroup, the quotient groups $(G/N)/(H/N)$ and G/H are isomorphic as topological groups (**third isomorphism theorem**).

K. The Projective Limit

Let $\{G_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ be a family of topological groups indexed by a \ast -directed set A , and suppose that if $\alpha \leq \beta$, there exists a continuous homomorphism $f_{\alpha\beta}: G_\beta \rightarrow G_\alpha$ such that $f_{\alpha\gamma} = f_{\alpha\beta} \circ f_{\beta\gamma}$ if $\alpha \leq \beta \leq \gamma$. Then the collection $\{G_\alpha, f_{\alpha\beta}\}$ of the family $\{G_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ of topological groups together with the family $\{f_{\alpha\beta}\}$ of mappings is called a **projective system** of topological groups. Consider the direct product $\prod_{\alpha \in A} G_\alpha$ of topological groups $\{G_\alpha\}$, and denote by G the set of all elements $x = \{x_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ of $\prod G_\alpha$ that satisfy $x_\alpha = f_{\alpha\beta}(x_\beta)$ for $\alpha \leq \beta$. Then G is a subgroup of $\prod G_\alpha$. The topological group G obtained in this way is called the **projective limit** of the projective system $\{G_\alpha, f_{\alpha\beta}\}$ of topological groups and is denoted by $G = \varprojlim G_\alpha$. If each G_α is a T_2 -topological (resp. complete) group, then G is also a T_2 -topological (complete) group.

Now consider another projective system $\{G'_\alpha, f'_{\alpha\beta}\}$ of topological groups indexed by the same A , and consider continuous homomorphisms $u_\alpha: G_\alpha \rightarrow G'_\alpha$ such that $u_\alpha \circ f_{\alpha\beta} = f'_{\alpha\beta} \circ u_\beta$ for $\alpha \leq \beta$. Then there exists a unique continuous homomorphism u of $G = \varprojlim G_\alpha$ into $G' = \varprojlim G'_\alpha$ such that for any $\alpha \in A$, $u_\alpha \circ f_\alpha = f'_\alpha \circ u$ holds, where $f_\alpha(f'_\alpha)$ is the restriction to $G(G')$ of the projection of $\prod G_\alpha$ ($\prod G'_\alpha$) onto $G_\alpha(G'_\alpha)$. The homomorphism u is called the **projective limit** of the family $\{u_\alpha\}$ of continuous homomorphisms and is denoted by $u = \varprojlim u_\alpha$. Let G be a T_2 -topological group, and let $\{H_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ be a decreasing sequence ($H_\alpha \supset H_\beta$ for $\alpha \leq \beta$) of closed normal subgroups of G . Consider the quotient group G/H_α , and let $f_{\alpha\beta}$ be the canonical mapping $gH_\beta \rightarrow gH_\alpha$ of G_β to G_α for $\alpha \leq \beta$.

Then $\{G_\alpha, f_{\alpha\beta}\}$ is a projective system of topological groups. Let f_α be the projection of G onto $G_\alpha = G/H_\alpha$, and let $f = \varprojlim f_\alpha$. Now assume that any neighborhood of the identity of G contains some H_α and that some H_α is complete. Then $f = \varprojlim f_\alpha$ is an isomorphism of G onto $\varprojlim G/H_\alpha$ as topological groups. (For a general discussion of the topological groups already discussed \rightarrow [1, 4].)

L. Locally Compact Groups

For the rest of this article, all topological groups under consideration are assumed to be T_2 -topological groups. The identity component G_0 of a locally compact group G is the intersection of all open subgroups of G . In particular, any neighborhood of the identity of a totally disconnected locally compact group contains an open subgroup. A totally disconnected compact group is a projective limit of finite groups with discrete topology.

A T_1 -topological space L is called a **local Lie group** if it satisfies the following six conditions:

(i) There exist a nonempty subset M of $L \times L$ and a continuous mapping $\mu: M \rightarrow L$, called **multiplication** ($\mu(a, b)$ is written as ab). (ii) If $(a, b), (ab, c), (b, c), (a, bc)$ are all in M , then $(ab)c = a(bc)$. (iii) L contains an element e , called the **identity**, such that $L \times \{e\} \subset M$ and $ae = a$ for all $a \in L$. (iv) There exists a nonempty open subset N of L and a continuous mapping $\nu: N \rightarrow L$ such that $\nu(a) = e$ for all $a \in N$. (v) There exist a neighborhood U of e in L and a homeomorphism f of U into a neighborhood V of the origin in the Euclidean space \mathbb{R}^n . (vi) Let D be the open subset of $V \times V$ defined by $D = \{(x, y) \in V \times V \mid (f^{-1}(x), f^{-1}(y)) \in M, f^{-1}(x), f^{-1}(y) \in U\}$. Then the function $F: D \rightarrow V$ defined by $F(x, y) = f(\mu(f^{-1}(x), f^{-1}(y)))$ is of \ast -class C^ω .

For any neighborhood U of the identity e of a connected locally compact group G , there exist a compact normal subgroup K and a subset L that is a local Lie group under the \ast -induced topology and the group operations of G such that the product LK is a neighborhood of e contained in U . Furthermore, under $(l, k) \rightarrow lk$, LK is homeomorphic to the product space $L \times K$. Any compact subgroup of a connected locally compact group G is contained in a maximal compact subgroup, and maximal compact subgroups of G are \ast -conjugate. For a maximal compact subgroup K of G , there exists a finite number of subgroups H_1, \dots, H_r of G , each of which is isomorphic to the additive group of real numbers such that $G = KH_1 \dots H_r$, and the mapping $(k, h_1, \dots, h_r) \rightarrow kh_1 \dots h_r$ is a homeomorphism of the direct product $K \times H_1 \times \dots \times H_r$ onto G . Any locally compact group has a left-invariant positive

measure and a right-invariant positive measure, which are uniquely determined up to constant multiples (\rightarrow 225 Invariant Measures). Using these measures, the theory of harmonic analysis on the additive group \mathbf{R} of real numbers can be extended to that on G (\rightarrow 69 Compact Groups; 192 Harmonic Analysis; 422 Topological Abelian Groups; 437 Unitary Representations).

M. Locally Euclidean Groups

Suppose that each point of a topological group G has a neighborhood homeomorphic to an open set of a given Euclidean space. Then G is called a **locally Euclidean group**. If the underlying topological space of a topological group has the structure of a * real analytic manifold such that the group operation $(x, y) \rightarrow xy^{-1}$ is a real analytic mapping, then G is called a * **Lie group**. A Lie group is a locally Euclidean group.

N. Hilbert's Fifth Problem

Hilbert's fifth problem asks if every locally Euclidean group is a Lie group (\rightarrow 196 Hilbert). This problem was solved affirmatively in 1952; it was proved that any * locally connected finite-dimensional locally compact group is a Lie group (D. Montgomery and L. Zippin [3]). In connection with this, the relation between Lie groups and general locally compact groups has been studied, and the following results have been obtained: A necessary and sufficient condition for a locally compact group to be a Lie group is that there exist a neighborhood of the identity e that does not contain any subgroup (or any normal subgroup) other than $\{e\}$. A locally compact group has an open subgroup that is the projective limit of Lie groups. Hilbert's fifth problem is closely related to the following problem: Find the conditions for a * topological transformation group operating * effectively on a manifold to be a Lie group (\rightarrow 431 Transformation Groups).

O. Covering Groups

Let \mathfrak{G} be the collection of all * arcwise connected and * locally arcwise connected T_2 -topological groups. Suppose that $G^* \in \mathfrak{G}$ is a * covering space of $G \in \mathfrak{G}$ and the * covering mapping $f: G^* \rightarrow G$ is an open continuous homomorphism, with G^* and G considered as topological groups. Then G^* (or, more precisely, (G^*, f)) is called a **covering group** of G . Then the kernel $f^{-1}(e) = D$ of f is a discrete

Topological Groups

subgroup contained in the center of G^* , and G^*/D and G , considered as topological groups, are isomorphic to each other. Let $\pi_1(G)$ be the * fundamental group of G . The natural homomorphism $f^*: \pi_1(G^*) \rightarrow \pi_1(G)$ induced by f is an injective homomorphism, and if we identify $\pi_1(G^*)$ with the subgroup $f^*(\pi_1(G^*))$ of $\pi_1(G)$, we have $D \cong \pi_1(G)/\pi_1(G^*)$. Conversely, if D is any discrete subgroup contained in the center of $G^* \in \mathfrak{G}$, then G^* is a covering group of $G = G^*/D$. For any covering space (G^*, f) of $G \in \mathfrak{G}$, a multiplication law can be introduced in G^* so that G^* is a topological group belonging to \mathfrak{G} and (G^*, f) is a covering group of G . In particular, any $G \in \mathfrak{G}$ has a * simply connected covering group (\tilde{G}, φ) . Then for any covering group (G^*, f) of G , there exists a homomorphism $f^*: \tilde{G} \rightarrow G^*$, and (\tilde{G}, f^*) is a covering group of G^* . Furthermore, $\varphi = f \circ f^*$. Hence, in particular, any simply connected covering group of G is isomorphic to \tilde{G} , with G and \tilde{G} considered as topological groups. This simply connected covering group (\tilde{G}, φ) is called the **universal covering group**.

Let G and G' be topological groups, and let e and e' be their identities. A homeomorphism f of a neighborhood U of e onto a neighborhood U' of e' is called a **local isomorphism** of G to G' if it satisfies the following two conditions: (i) If a, b, ab are all contained in U , then $f(ab) = f(a)f(b)$. (ii) Let $f^{-1} = g$, then if $a', b', a'b' \in U'$, $g(a'b') = g(a')g(b')$ holds. If there exists a local isomorphism of G to G' , we say that G and G' are **locally isomorphic**. If G^* is a covering group of G , then G^* and G are locally isomorphic. For two topological groups G and G' to be locally isomorphic it is necessary and sufficient that the universal covering groups of G and G' be isomorphic. For two connected Lie groups to be locally isomorphic it is necessary and sufficient that their * Lie algebras be isomorphic.

Let f be a mapping of a neighborhood U of the identity of a topological group G into a group H such that if a, b, ab are all contained in U , then $f(ab) = f(a)f(b)$. Then f is called a **local homomorphism** of G into H and U is called its **domain**. A local homomorphism of a simply connected group $G \in \mathfrak{G}$ into a group H can be extended to a homomorphism of G into H if the domain is connected [2, 4].

P. Topological Rings and Fields

If a ring R has the structure of a topological group such that $(x, y) \rightarrow x + y$ (sum) and $(x, y) \rightarrow xy$ (product) are both continuous mappings of $R \times R$ into R , then R is called a **topological ring**. If a topological ring K is a field (not necessarily commutative) such that $x \rightarrow x^{-1}$

Topological Groups

(inverse element) is a continuous mapping of $K^* = K - \{0\}$ into K^* , then K is called a **topological field**. Let us assume that K is a topological field that is a locally compact Hausdorff space and is not discrete. If K is connected, then K is a \dagger division algebra of finite rank over the field \mathbf{R} of real numbers; hence it is isomorphic to the field \mathbf{R} of real numbers, the field \mathbf{C} of complex numbers, or the \dagger quaternion field \mathbf{H} . If K is not connected, then K is totally disconnected and is isomorphic to a division algebra of finite rank over the $\dagger p$ -adic number field \mathbf{Q}_p or a division algebra of finite rank over the \dagger formal power series field with coefficients in a finite field [4].

For various important classes of topological groups — 69 Compact Groups; 249 Lie Groups; 422 Topological Abelian Groups; 424 Topological Linear Spaces.

References

- [1] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, Topologie générale, ch. 3, *Actualités Sci. Ind.*, 1143c, Hermann, third edition, 1960; English translation, *General topology*, pt. 1, Addison-Wesley, 1966.
- [2] C. Chevalley, *Theory of Lie groups I*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1946.
- [3] D. Montgomery and L. Zippin, *Topological transformation groups*, Interscience, 1955.
- [4] L. S. Pontryagin, *Topological groups*, first edition, Princeton Univ. Press, 1939, second edition, Gordon & Breach, 1966. (Second English edition translated from the second Russian edition, 1954.)

424 (XII.5) Topological Linear Spaces

A. Definition

A \dagger linear space E over the real or complex number field K is said to be a **topological linear space**, **topological vector space**, or **linear topological space** if E is a \dagger topological space and the basic operations $x + y$ and αx ($x, y \in E$, $\alpha \in K$) in the linear space are continuous as mappings of $E \times E$ and $K \times E$, respectively, into E . The coefficient field K may be a general \dagger topological field, although it is usually assumed to be the real number field \mathbf{R} or the complex number field \mathbf{C} , and accordingly E is called a **real topological linear space** or a **complex topological linear space**. Topological linear spaces are generalizations of \dagger normed linear spaces and play an important role in the study

of \dagger function spaces, such as the \dagger space of distributions, that are not \dagger Banach spaces.

Each topological linear space E is equipped with a \dagger uniform topology in which translations of the neighborhoods of zero form a \dagger uniform family of neighborhoods, and the addition $x + y$ and the multiplication αx by a scalar α are uniformly continuous relative to this uniform topology. In particular, if for each $x \neq 0$ there is a neighborhood of the origin that does not contain x , then E satisfies the \dagger separation axiom T_1 and hence is a \dagger completely regular space. The \dagger completion \hat{E} of E is also a topological linear space.

We assume in this article that K is the real or complex number field and E is a topological linear space over K satisfying the axiom of T_1 -spaces. Then E is finite-dimensional if and only if E has a \dagger totally bounded neighborhood of zero. The topology of E is \dagger metrizable if and only if it satisfies the \dagger first countability axiom.

B. Linear Functional

A K -valued function $f(x)$ on E is said to be a **linear functional** if it satisfies (i) $f(x + y) = f(x) + f(y)$ and (ii) $f(\alpha x) = \alpha f(x)$. A linear functional that is continuous relative to the topologies of E and K is said to be a continuous linear functional. (Sometimes continuous linear functionals are simply called linear functionals, while abstract linear functionals are called **algebraic linear functionals**.) The following three statements are equivalent for linear functionals $f(x)$: (i) $f(x)$ is continuous; (ii) the half-space $\{x \in E \mid \operatorname{Re} f(x) > 0\}$ is open; (iii) the hyperplane $\{x \in E \mid f(x) = 0\}$ is closed.

C. The Hahn-Banach Theorem

A linear functional $f(x)$ defined on a linear subspace F of E can be extended to a continuous linear functional on E if and only if there exists an open \dagger convex neighborhood V of the origin in E that is disjoint with $\{x \in F \mid f(x) = 1\}$. Furthermore, if $f(x)$ can be extended, at least one extension $f(x)$ never takes the value 1 on V (**Hahn-Banach theorem**).

D. Dual Spaces

The set E' of all continuous linear functionals on E is called the **dual space** of E . It is often denoted by E^* and is also called the **conjugate space** or **adjoint space**. It forms a linear space when $f + g$ and αf ($f, g \in E'$, $\alpha \in K$) are defined by $(f + g)(x) = f(x) + g(x)$ and $(\alpha f)(x) = \alpha(f(x))$ for $x \in E$.

E. Locally Convex Spaces

A topological linear space is said to be **locally convex** if it has a family of convex sets as a \dagger base of the neighborhood system of 0. It follows from the Hahn-Banach theorem that for each $x \neq 0$ in a locally convex space E there is a continuous linear functional f such that $f(x) \neq 0$. A subset M of E is said to be **circled** if M contains $\alpha M = \{\alpha x \mid x \in M\}$ whenever $|\alpha| \leq 1$. A set that is both circled and convex is called **absolutely convex**. In a locally convex space, a family of absolutely convex and closed sets can be chosen as a base of the neighborhood system of the origin. Let A and B be subsets of E . A is said to **absorb** B if there is an $\alpha > 0$ such that $\alpha A \supset B$. A set V that absorbs every point $x \in E$ is called **absorbing**. Neighborhoods of 0 are absorbing.

F. Seminorms

A real-valued function $p(x)$ on E is said to be a **seminorm** (or **pseudonorm**) if it satisfies (i) $0 \leq p(x) < +\infty$ ($x \in E$); (ii) $p(x+y) \leq p(x) + p(y)$; and (iii) $p(\alpha x) = |\alpha|p(x)$. The relation $V = \{x \mid p(x) \leq 1\}$ gives a one-to-one correspondence between seminorms $p(x)$ and absolutely convex absorbing sets V whose intersection with any line through the origin is closed. In terms of seminorms, the Hahn-Banach theorem states: Let E be a linear space on which a seminorm $p(x)$ is given. If a linear functional $f(x)$ defined on a linear subspace F of E satisfies $|f(x)| \leq p(x)$ on F , then $f(x)$ can be extended to the whole space E in such a way that the inequality holds on E .

The topology of a locally convex space is determined by the family of continuous seminorms on it. Conversely, if there is a family of seminorms $\{p_\lambda(x)\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$) on a linear space E over K that satisfies (iv) $p_\lambda(x) = 0$ for all λ implies $x = 0$, then there exists on E the weakest locally convex topology that renders the seminorms continuous. This topology is called the locally convex topology determined by $\{p_\lambda(x)\}$.

We assume that E is a locally convex space whose topology is determined by the family of seminorms $\{p_\lambda(x)\}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$). Then a \dagger net x_ν of E converges to x if and only if $p_\lambda(x_\nu - x) \rightarrow 0$ for all $\lambda \in \Lambda$. If F is a locally convex space whose topology is determined by the family of seminorms $\{q_\mu(y)\}$, then a necessary and sufficient condition for a linear mapping $u: E \rightarrow F$ to be continuous is that for every $q_\mu(y)$ there exist a finite number of $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_n \in \Lambda$ and a constant C such that $q_\mu(u(x)) \leq C(p_{\lambda_1}(x) + \dots + p_{\lambda_n}(x))$ ($x \in E$).

A set is said to be **bounded** if it is absorbed

by every neighborhood of zero. When the topology of E is determined by the family $\{p_\lambda(x)\}$ of seminorms a set B is bounded if and only if every p_λ is bounded on B . Totally bounded sets are bounded. The unit ball in a normed space is bounded. Conversely, a locally convex space is normable if it has a bounded neighborhood of 0. A locally convex space is called **quasicomplete** if every bounded closed set is complete. Since Cauchy sequences $\{x_n\}$ are totally bounded, all Cauchy sequences converge in a quasicomplete space (i.e., the space is sequentially complete).

G. Pairing of Linear Spaces

Let E and F be linear spaces over the same field K . A K -valued function $B(x, y)$ ($x \in E$, $y \in F$) on $E \times F$ is called a **bilinear functional** or **bilinear form** if for each fixed $y \in F$ (resp. $x \in E$), it is a linear functional of x (resp. y). When a bilinear functional $\langle x, y \rangle$ on $E \times F$ is given so that $\langle x, y \rangle = 0$ for all $y \in F$ (all $x \in E$) implies $x = 0$ ($y = 0$), then E and F are said to form a (separated) **pairing** relative to the **inner product** $\langle x, y \rangle$. A locally convex space E and its dual space E' form a pairing relative to the natural inner product $\langle x, x' \rangle = x'(x)$ ($x \in E$, $x' \in E'$).

H. Weak Topologies

When E and F form a pairing relative to an inner product $\langle x, y \rangle$, the locally convex topology on E determined by the family of seminorms $\{|\langle x, y \rangle| \mid y \in F\}$ is called the **weak topology** (relative to the pairing $\langle E, F \rangle$) and is denoted by $\sigma(E, F)$. A net x_ν in E is said to **converge weakly** if it converges in the weak topology. When E and E' are a locally convex space and its dual space, $\sigma(E, E')$ is called the **weak topology** of E , and $\sigma(E', E)$ the **weak* topology** of E' . The weak topology on a locally convex space E is weaker than the original topology on E . Consequently, a weakly closed set is closed. If the set is convex, the converse holds, and hence a convex closed set is weakly closed. Also, boundedness is preserved if we replace the original topology by the weak topology. Thus a weakly bounded set is bounded.

Let E and F form a pairing relative to $\langle x, y \rangle$, and let A be a subset of E . Then the set A° of points $y \in F$ satisfying $\operatorname{Re} \langle x, y \rangle \geq -1$ for all $x \in A$ is called the **polar** of A (relative to the pairing). If A is absolutely convex, A° is also absolutely convex and is the set of points y such that $|\langle x, y \rangle| \leq 1$ for all $x \in A$. If A is a convex set containing zero, its (weak) closure is equal to the **bipolar** $A^{\circ\circ} = (A^\circ)^\circ$ (**bipolar theorem**). In general, let A be a subset of a

Topological Linear Spaces

topological linear space E . We call the smallest closed convex set containing A the **closed convex hull** of A . If E is locally convex, the bipolar $A^{\circ\circ}$ relative to E' coincides with the closed convex hull of $A \cup \{0\}$.

A subset B of the dual space E' is \ast equicontinuous on E if and only if it is contained in the polar V° of a neighborhood V of 0 in E . Also, V° is weak*-compact in E' (**Banach-Alaoglu theorem**).

I. Barreled Spaces and Bornological Spaces

An absorbing absolutely convex closed set in a locally convex space E is called a **barrel**. In a sequentially complete space (hence in a quasi-complete space also), a barrel absorbs every bounded set. A locally convex space is said to be **barreled** if each barrel is a neighborhood of 0. A locally convex space is said to be **quasi-barreled** (or **evaluable**) if each barrel that absorbs every bounded set is a neighborhood of 0. Furthermore, a locally convex space is said to be **bornological** if each absolutely convex set that absorbs every bounded set is a neighborhood of 0. Bornological spaces are quasi-barreled. However, they are not necessarily barreled. Furthermore, barreled spaces are not necessarily bornological. A metrizable locally convex space, i.e., a space whose topology is determined by a countable number of seminorms, is bornological. A complete metrizable locally convex space is called a **locally convex Fréchet space** (**(F)-space** or simply **Fréchet space**). To distinguish it from Fréchet space as in 37 Banach Spaces, it is sometimes called a **Fréchet space in the sense of Bourbaki**. (F)-spaces are bornological and barreled.

A continuous linear mapping $u: E \rightarrow F$ of one locally convex space into another maps each bounded set of E to a bounded set in F . Conversely, if E is bornological, then each linear mapping that maps every bounded sequence to a bounded set is continuous.

J. The Banach-Steinhaus Theorem

In the dual space of a barreled space E , each (weak*-)bounded set is equicontinuous. Thus if a sequence of continuous linear mappings u_n of E into a locally convex space F converges at each point of E , then u_n converges uniformly on each totally bounded set of E , and the limit linear mapping is continuous (**Banach-Steinhaus theorem**).

K. The S -Topology

Let E and F be paired linear spaces relative to the inner product $\langle x, y \rangle$. When a family S

of (weakly) bounded sets of F generates a dense subspace of F , the family of seminorms $\{\sup_{y \in B} |\langle x, y \rangle| \mid B \in S\}$ determines a locally convex topology on E . This is called the **S -topology** or **topology of uniform convergence on members of S** , because $x_\nu \rightarrow x$ in the S -topology is equivalent to the uniform convergence of $\langle x_\nu, y \rangle \rightarrow \langle x, y \rangle$ on each $B \in S$. The space E with the S -topology is denoted by E_S . The weak topology is the same as the topology of pointwise convergence. The S -topology in which S is the family of all bounded sets in F is called the **strong topology** and is denoted by $\beta(E, F)$. The dual space E' of a locally convex space E is usually regarded as a locally convex space with the strong topology $\beta(E', E)$. It is called the **strong dual space**. The topology of a locally convex space E is that of uniform convergence on equicontinuous sets of E' . The topology of a barreled space E coincides with the strong topology $\beta(E, E')$.

L. Grothendieck's Criterion of Completeness

Let E and F be paired spaces, and let S be a family of absolutely convex bounded sets of F such that: (i) the sets of S generate F ; (ii) if $B_1, B_2 \in S$, then there is a $B_3 \in S$ such that $B_3 \supset B_1$ and $B_3 \supset B_2$. Then E_S is complete if and only if each algebraic linear functional $f(y)$ on F that is weakly continuous on every $B \in S$ is expressed as $f(y) = \langle x, y \rangle$ for some $x \in E$. When E_S is not complete, the space of all linear functionals satisfying this condition gives the completion \hat{E}_S of E_S .

M. Mackey's Theorem

Let E, F , and S satisfy the same conditions as in Section L. Then the dual space of E_S is equal to the union of the weak completions of λB , where $\lambda > 0$ and $B \in S$ (**Mackey's theorem**).

N. The Mackey Topology

When E and F form a pairing, the topology on E of uniform convergence on convex weakly compact sets of F is called the **Mackey topology** and is denoted by $\tau(E, F)$. The dual space of E endowed with a locally convex topology T coincides with F if and only if T is stronger than the weak topology $\sigma(E, F)$ and weaker than the Mackey topology $\tau(E, F)$ (**Mackey-Arens theorem**). A locally convex space is said to be a **Mackey space** if the topology is equal to the Mackey topology $\tau(E, E')$. Every quasi-barreled space is a Mackey space.

O. Reflexivity

Let E be a locally convex space. The dual space E'' of the dual space E' equipped with the strong topology contains the original space E . We call E **semireflexive** if $E'' = E$, and **reflexive** if in addition the topology of E coincides with the strong topology $\beta(E, E')$. E is semireflexive if and only if every bounded weakly closed set of E is weakly compact. E is reflexive if and only if E is semireflexive and (quasi)barreled.

A barreled space in which every bounded closed set is compact is called a **Montel space** or **(M)-space**. (M)-spaces are reflexive, and their strong dual spaces are also (M)-spaces.

Many of the function spaces that appear in applications are (F)-spaces or their dual spaces. For these spaces detailed consequences of the countability axiom are known [7, 8]. A convex set C in the dual space E' of an (F)-space E is weak*-closed if and only if for every neighborhood V of 0 in E , $C \cap V^\circ$ is weak*-closed (**Kreĭn-Shmul'yan theorem**). The strong dual space E' of an (F)-space E is (quasi)barreled if and only if it is bornological. In particular, the dual space of a reflexive (F)-space is bornological.

P. (DF)-Spaces

A locally convex space is called a **(DF)-space** if it satisfies: (i) There is a countable base of bounded sets (i.e., every bounded set is included in one of them); (ii) if the intersection V of a countable number of absolutely convex closed neighborhoods of 0 absorbs every bounded set, then V is also a neighborhood of 0. The dual space of an (F)-space is a (DF)-space, and the dual space of a (DF)-space is an (F)-space. A linear mapping of a (DF)-space E into a locally convex space F is continuous if and only if its restriction to every bounded set of E is continuous. A quasicomplete (DF)-space is complete.

Q. Bilinear Mappings

A bilinear mapping $b(x, y)$ on locally convex spaces E and F ($x \in E, y \in F$) to a locally convex space G is said to be **separately continuous** if for each fixed $y \in F$ ($x \in E$) it is continuous as a function of x (y). The linear mappings obtained from $b(x, y)$ by fixing x (y) are denoted by $b_x(y)$ ($b_y(x)$). We call $b(x, y)$ **hypocontinuous** if for each bounded set B of E and B' of F , $\{b_x(y) | x \in B\}$ and $\{b_y(x) | y \in B'\}$ are equicontinuous. A continuous bilinear mapping is hypocontinuous. However, the converse is

not always true. A separately continuous bilinear mapping is not necessarily hypocontinuous. If both E and F are barreled, however, then every separately continuous mapping is hypocontinuous. If E is an (F)-space and F is metrizable, then every separately continuous bilinear mapping is continuous. Similarly, if both E and F are (DF)-spaces, then every hypocontinuous bilinear mapping is continuous.

R. Tensor Products

It is possible to introduce many topologies in the tensor product $E \otimes F$ of locally convex spaces E and F . The **projective topology** (or **topology π**) is defined to be the strongest topology such that the natural bilinear mapping $E \times F \rightarrow E \otimes F$ is continuous. The dual space of $E \otimes_\pi F$ is identified with the space $B(E, F)$ of all continuous bilinear functionals on $E \times F$. The completion of $E \otimes_\pi F$ is denoted by $E \hat{\otimes} F$. The **topology of biequicontinuous convergence** (or **topology ϵ**) is defined to be the topology of uniform convergence on sets $V^\circ \times U^\circ$, where V and U are neighborhoods of 0 in E and F , respectively, considering the elements of $E \otimes F$ as linear functionals on $E' \otimes F'$ by the natural pairing of $E \otimes F$ and $E' \otimes F'$. The completion of $E \otimes_\epsilon F$ is denoted by $E \hat{\otimes}_\epsilon F$. The dual space of $E \otimes_\epsilon F$ coincides with the subspace $J(E, F)$ of $B(E, F)$ composed of the union of the absolute convex hulls of the products $V^\circ \otimes U^\circ$ of equicontinuous sets. The elements of $J(E, F)$ are called **integral bilinear functionals**.

Closely related to $E \hat{\otimes}_\epsilon F$ is L. Schwartz's ϵ **tensor product** $E \epsilon F$ [12]. (They coincide if E and F are complete and if E or F has the ϵ -approximation property.) $E \epsilon F$ can be regarded as (i) a space of vector-valued functions if E is a space of functions and F is an abstract locally convex space, especially a space of functions of two variables if E and F are, respectively, spaces of functions of one variable, and (ii) a space of operators $G \rightarrow F$ if E is the dual space G' of a locally convex space G .

S. Nuclear Spaces

Let E be a locally convex space, V be an absolutely convex closed neighborhood of the origin, and $p(x)$ be the seminorm corresponding to V . Then we denote by E_V the normed space with norm $p(x)$ obtained from E by identifying the two elements x and y with $p(x - y) = 0$. If $U \subset V$, then a natural linear mapping $\phi_{U,V}: E_U \rightarrow E_V$ is defined.

A locally convex space E is said to be a

nuclear space (resp. **Schwartz space** or simply **(S)-space**) if for each absolutely convex closed neighborhood V of 0 there is another U such that $\varphi_{U,V}$ is a † nuclear operator (resp. † compact operator) as an operator of E_U into the completion of E_V . A nuclear space or (S)-space is an (M)-space if it is quasicomplete and quasibarreled. A locally convex space E is a nuclear space if and only if the topologies π and ε coincide on the tensor product $E \otimes F$ with any locally convex space F . Accordingly, it follows that $B(E, F) = J(E, F)$. This can be regarded as a generalization of Schwartz's **kernel theorem**, which says that every separately continuous bilinear functional on $\mathcal{D}_x \times \mathcal{D}_y$ is represented by an integral with kernel in \mathcal{D}'_{xy} . The theory of topological tensor products and nuclear spaces is due to Grothendieck [9].

A locally convex space E is a nuclear (F)-space if and only if E is isomorphic to a closed subspace of $C^\infty(-\infty, \infty)$ (T. Kōmura and Y. Kōmura, 1966). An example of a nuclear (F)-space without basis is known (B. S. Mityagin and N. M. Zobin, 1974).

T. Gel'fand Triplet

Let H and L be Hilbert spaces. If L is a dense subspace of H and the injection $L \rightarrow H$ is a † Hilbert-Schmidt operator, then $H = H'$ is regarded as a dense subspace of L' and the injection $H' \rightarrow L'$ is a Hilbert-Schmidt operator. In this case, (L, H, L') is called a **Gel'fand triplet** (or a **rigged Hilbert space**).

A subset of H is called a cylindrical set if it is expressed in the form $P_F^{-1}(B)$ by the orthogonal projection P_F onto a finite-dimensional subspace F and a Borel subset B of F . If a finitely additive positive measure μ with $\|\mu\|_1 = 1$ defined on the cylindrical sets of H satisfies (i) μ is countably additive on cylindrical sets for a fixed F and (ii) for any $\varepsilon > 0$ there exists a $\delta > 0$ such that $\|x\| < \delta$ implies $\mu\{y \in H \mid |\langle x, y \rangle| \geq 1\} < \varepsilon$, then μ is the restriction of a countably additive measure $\tilde{\mu}$ defined on the Borel subsets of L' (**Minlos's theorem**, 1959).

Let T be a self-adjoint operator in H . Then T has a natural extension \tilde{T} in L' and almost every continuous spectrum λ of T has an associated eigenvector x_λ in L' : $\tilde{T}x_\lambda = \lambda x_\lambda$, $x_\lambda \in L'$.

U. The Extreme Point Theorem

Let A be a subset of a linear space E . A point $x \in A$ is said to be an **extreme point** if x is an extreme point of any real segment containing x and contained in A . If A is a compact convex subset of a locally convex space E , A is the convex closed hull of (i.e., smallest convex

closed set containing) the set of its extreme points (**Krein-Milman theorem**). In applications it is important to know whether every point of A is represented uniquely as an integral of extreme points. For a metrizable convex compact subset A of a locally convex space E , the following two conditions are equivalent (**Choquet's theorem**): (i) A is a **simplex**, i.e., if we put $\tilde{A} = \{(\lambda x, \lambda) \mid x \in A, \lambda > 0\} \subset E \times \mathbf{R}^1$, the vector space $\tilde{A} - \tilde{A}$ becomes a † lattice with positive cone \tilde{A} ; (ii) for any $x \in A$ there exists a unique positive measure μ on A with $\|\mu\|_1 = 1$ such that $l(x) = \int_A l(y) d\mu(y)$ ($l \in E'$) and the support of μ is contained in the set of extreme points of A .

V. Weakly Compact Set

A subset of a quasicomplete locally convex space is relatively weakly compact if and only if every sequence in the set has a weak accumulation point (**Eberlein's theorem**). If E is a metrizable locally convex space, every weakly compact set of E is weakly sequentially compact (**Shmul'yan's theorem**). If E is a quasicomplete locally convex space, the convex closed hull of any weakly compact subset is weakly compact (**Krein's theorem**). If E is not quasicomplete, this is not necessarily true.

W. Permanence

Each subspace, quotient space, direct product, direct sum, projective limit, and inductive limit (of a family) of locally convex spaces has a unique natural locally convex topology. These spaces, except for quotient spaces and inductive limits, are separated, and a quotient space E/A is separated if and only if the subspace A is closed. The limit of a sequence $E_1 \subset E_2 \subset \dots$ is said to be a **strictly inductive limit** if E_n has the induced topology as a subspace of E_{n+1} . If E is a strictly inductive limit of a sequence E_n such that E_n is closed in E_{n+1} or if E is the inductive limit of a sequence $E_1 \subset E_2 \subset \dots$ such that the mapping $E_n \rightarrow E_{n+1}$ maps a neighborhood of 0 to a relatively weakly compact set, then E is separated and each bounded set of E is the image of a bounded set in some E_n . If $E = \bigcup E_n$ is the strictly inductive limit of the sequence $\{E_n\}$, then the topology of E_n coincides with the relative topology of $E_n \subset E$. The strictly inductive limit of a sequence of (F)-spaces is called an **(LF)-space**.

Any complete locally convex space (resp. any locally convex space) is (resp. a dense linear subspace of) the projective limit of Banach spaces. Every (F)-space E is the projective limit of a sequence of Banach spaces $E_1 \leftarrow E_2 \leftarrow \dots$. In particular, E is said to be a **count-**

ably normed space if the mappings $E \rightarrow E_n$ are one-to-one and $\|x\|_n \leq \|x\|_{n+1}$ for all $x \in E$ with E considered as a subspace E_n . We call E a **countably Hilbertian space** if, in particular, the E_n are * Hilbert spaces. An (F)-space with at least one continuous norm is a nuclear space if and only if it is a countably Hilbertian space such that the mappings $E_{n+1} \rightarrow E_n$ are Hilbert-Schmidt operators or nuclear operators.

A locally convex space is bornological if and only if it is the inductive limit of normed spaces. A locally convex space is said to be **ultrabornological** if it is the inductive limit of Banach spaces, or in particular, if it is quasicomplete and bornological.

Properties of spaces, such as being complete, quasicomplete, semireflexive, or having every bounded closed set compact, are inherited by closed subspaces, direct products, projective limits, direct sums, and strictly inductive limits formed from the original spaces, and properties of spaces, such as being Mackey, quasibarreled, barreled, and bornological, are inherited by quotient spaces, direct sums, inductive limits, and direct products formed from the spaces. (For direct products of high power of bornological spaces, unsolved problems still exist concerning the inheritance of properties.) Quotient spaces of (F)-spaces are (F)-spaces, but quotient spaces of general complete spaces are not necessarily complete. There are examples of a Montel (F)-space whose quotient space is not reflexive and a Montel (DF)-space whose closed subspace is neither a Mackey space nor a (DF)-space. The property of being a Schwartz space or a nuclear space is inherited by the completions, subspaces, quotient spaces of closed subspaces, direct products, projective limits, direct sums of countable families, and inductive limits of countable families formed from such spaces. Tensor products of nuclear spaces are nuclear spaces. Y. Kōmura gave an example of a non-complete space that is quasicomplete, bornological, and nuclear (and hence a Montel space).

X. The Open Mapping Theorem and the Closed Graph Theorem

Let E and F be topological linear spaces. The statement that every continuous linear mapping of E onto F is open is called the **open mapping theorem** (or **homomorphism theorem**), and the statement that every linear mapping of F into E is continuous if its graph is closed in $F \times E$ is called the **closed graph theorem**. These theorems hold if both E and F are complete and metrizable (S. Banach).

A locally convex space is said to be B-

complete (or **fully complete**) if a subspace C of E' is weak*-closed whenever $C \cap V^\circ$ is weak*-closed for every neighborhood V of 0 in E . (F)-spaces and the dual spaces of reflexive (F)-spaces are B-complete. B-complete spaces are complete, and closed subspaces and quotient spaces by closed subspaces of B-complete spaces are B-complete. If E is B-complete and F is barreled, then the open mapping theorem and the closed graph theorem hold (V. Pták).

Both theorems hold also if F is ultrabornological and E is a locally convex space obtained from a family of (F)-spaces after a finite number of operations of taking closed subspaces, quotient spaces by closed spaces, direct products of countable families, projective limits of countable families, direct sums of countable families, and inductive limits of countable families. This was conjectured by Grothendieck and proved by W. Słowikowski (1961) and D. A. Raikov. Later, L. Schwartz, A. Martineau, M. De Wilde, W. Robertson, and M. Nakamura simplified the proof and enlarged the class of spaces E [15].

(LF)-spaces, the dual spaces of Schwartz (F)-spaces, and the space \mathcal{D}' of distributions are examples of spaces E described in the previous paragraph.

Y. Nonlocally Convex Spaces

The space L_p for $0 < p < 1$ shows that nonlocally convex spaces are meaningful in functional analysis. Recently, the Banach-Steinhaus theorem, closed graph theorems, etc. have been investigated for nonlocally convex topological linear spaces [13].

Z. Diagram of Topological Linear Spaces

The spaces in Fig. 1 are all locally convex spaces over the real number field or the complex number field and satisfy the separation axiom T_1 . The notation $A \rightarrow B$ means that spaces with property A have property B . Main properties of dual spaces are listed in Table 1.

References

- [1] N. Bourbaki, *Éléments de mathématique, Espaces vectoriels topologiques*, Actualités Sci. Ind., Hermann, 1189a, 1966; 1229b, 1967; 1230a, 1955.
- [2] A. Grothendieck, *Espaces vectoriels topologiques*, Lecture notes, São Paulo, 1954.
- [3] G. Köthe, *Topologische lineare Räume I*, Springer, second edition, 1966; English translation, *Topological vector spaces I, II*, Springer, 1969, 1979.

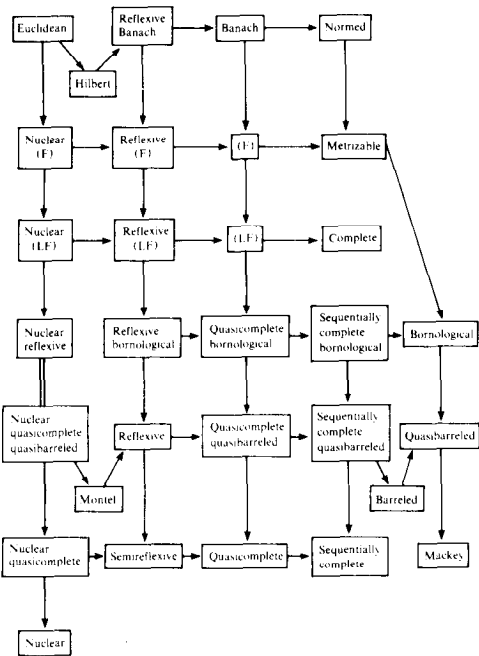


Fig. 1
Topological linear spaces.

Table 1

<i>E</i>	<i>E'</i>
Semireflexive	Barreled
Reflexive	Reflexive
Quasibarreled	Quasicomplete
Bornological	Complete
Reflexive, (F)	Bornological
(F)	(DF)
(DF)	(F)
(M)	(M)
Nuclear, (LF) or (DF)	Nuclear, reflexive
Complete, (S)	Ultrabornological

[4] I. M. Gel'fand et al., Generalized functions. II, Functions and generalized function spaces (with G. E. Shilov), Academic Press, 1968; IV, Applications of harmonic analysis (with N. Ya. Vilenkin), Academic, 1964. (Original in Russian, 1958–1966.)

[5] A. Pietsch, Nukleare lokalkonvexe Räume, Berlin, 1965.

[6] A. P. Robertson and W. Robertson, Topological vector spaces, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1964.

[7] J. Dieudonné and L. Schwartz, La dualité dans les espaces (\mathfrak{F}) et $(\mathfrak{L}\mathfrak{F})$, Ann. Inst. Fourier, 1 (1949), 61–101.

[8] A. Grothendieck, Sur les espaces (F) et (DF), Summa Brasil. Math., 3 (1954), 57–123.

[9] A. Grothendieck, Produits tensoriels topologiques et espaces nucléaires, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc., 1955.

[10] G. Choquet, Le théorème de représentation intégrale dans les ensembles convexes compacts, Ann. Inst. Fourier, 10 (1960), 333–344.

[11] J. L. Kelley, I. Namioka, et al., Linear topological spaces, Van Nostrand, 1963.

[12] L. Schwartz, Théorie des distributions à valeurs vectorielles I, Ann. Inst. Fourier, 7 (1957), 1–141.

[13] N. Adasch, B. Ernst, and D. Keim, Topological vector spaces: The theory without convexity conditions, Lecture notes in math. 639, Springer, 1978.

[14] F. Trèves, Topological vector spaces, distributions and kernels, Academic Press, 1967.

[15] M. De Wilde, Closed graph theorems and webbed spaces, Pitman, 1978.

425 (II.16)
Topological Spaces

A. Introduction

Convergence and continuity, as well as the algebraic operations on real numbers, are fundamental notions in analysis. In an abstract space too, it is possible to provide an additional structure so that convergence and continuity can be defined and a theory analogous to classical analysis can be developed. Such a structure is called a **topological structure** (for a precise definition, → Section B). There are several ways of giving a topology to a space. One method is to axiomatize the notion of convergence (M. Fréchet [1], 1906; → 87 Convergence). However, defining a topology in terms of either a neighborhood system (due to F. Hausdorff [3], 1914), a closure operation (due to C. Kuratowski, *Fund. Math.*, 3 (1922)), or a family of open sets is more common.

B. Definition of a Topology

Let X be a set. A **neighborhood system** for X is a function \mathfrak{U} that assigns to each point x of X , a family $\mathfrak{U}(x)$ of subsets of X subject to the following axioms (U):

- (1) $x \in U$ for each U in $\mathfrak{U}(x)$.
- (2) If $U_1, U_2 \in \mathfrak{U}(x)$, then $U_1 \cap U_2 \in \mathfrak{U}(x)$.
- (3) If $U \in \mathfrak{U}(x)$ and $U \subset V$, then $V \in \mathfrak{U}(x)$.
- (4) For each U in $\mathfrak{U}(x)$, there is a member W of $\mathfrak{U}(x)$ such that $U \in \mathfrak{U}(y)$ for each y in W .

A **system of open sets** for a set X is a family \mathfrak{O} of subsets of X satisfying the following axioms (O):

- (1) $X, \emptyset \in \mathfrak{D}$.
- (2) If $O_1, O_2 \in \mathfrak{D}$, then $O_1 \cap O_2 \in \mathfrak{D}$.
- (3) If $O_\lambda \in \mathfrak{D}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$), then $\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} O_\lambda \in \mathfrak{D}$.

A **system of closed sets** for a space X is a family \mathfrak{F} of subsets of X satisfying the following axioms (F):

- (1) $X, \emptyset \in \mathfrak{F}$.
- (2) If $F_1, F_2 \in \mathfrak{F}$, then $F_1 \cup F_2 \in \mathfrak{F}$.
- (3) If $F_\lambda \in \mathfrak{F}$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$), then $\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} F_\lambda \in \mathfrak{F}$.

A **closure operator** for a space X is a function that assigns to each subset A of X , a subset A^a of X satisfying the following axioms (C):

- (1) $\emptyset^a = \emptyset$.
- (2) $(A \cup B)^a = A^a \cup B^a$.
- (3) $A \subset A^a$.
- (4) $A^a = A^{aa}$.

An **interior operator** for a space X is a function that assigns to each subset A of X a subset A^i of X satisfying the following axioms (I):

- (1) $X^i = X$.
- (2) $(A \cap B)^i = A^i \cap B^i$.
- (3) $A^i \subset A$.
- (4) $A^{ii} = A^i$.

Any one of these five structures for a set X , i.e., a structure satisfying any one of (U), (O), (F), (C), or (I), determines the four other structures in a natural way. For instance, assume that a system of open sets \mathfrak{D} satisfying (O) is given. In this case, each member of \mathfrak{D} is called an **open set**. A subset U of X is called a **neighborhood** of a point x in X provided that there is an open set O such that $x \in O \subset U$. If $\mathfrak{U}(x)$ is the family of all neighborhoods of x , the function $x \rightarrow \mathfrak{U}(x)$ satisfies (U). The complement of an open set in X is called a **closed set**. The family \mathfrak{F} of all closed sets satisfies (F). Given a subset A of X , the intersection A^a of the family of all closed sets containing A is called the **closure** of A , and each point of A^a is called an **adherent point** of A . The closure A^a is the smallest closed set containing A , and the function $A \rightarrow A^a$ satisfies (A). The closure A^a is also denoted by \bar{A} or $\text{Cl } A$. Dually, there is a largest open subset A^i of A . The set A^i (also denoted by A° or $\text{Int } A$) is called the **interior** of A , and each point of A° is called an **interior point** of A . The closure and interior are related by $A^\circ = X - (\overline{X - A})$ and $\bar{A} = X - (X - A)^\circ$. The correspondence $A \rightarrow A^\circ$ satisfies (I). Conversely, open sets can be characterized variously as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} A \text{ is open} &\Leftrightarrow A \in \mathfrak{U}(x) \text{ for each } x \text{ in } A \\ &\Leftrightarrow X - A \in \mathfrak{F} \\ &\Leftrightarrow \overline{(X - A)} = X - A \\ &\Leftrightarrow A^\circ = A. \end{aligned}$$

When a structure satisfying (U), (F), (C), or (I) is given, one of the four characterizations of open sets can be used to define a system of

open sets satisfying (O) and hence the other structure.

A **topological structure** or simply a **topology** for a space X is any of these five structures for X . If two topologies τ_1 and τ_2 for X give rise to identical systems of open sets, then τ_1 and τ_2 are considered to be identical. For this reason "topology" frequently means simply "system of open sets" in the literature. A **topological space** is a set X provided with a topology τ and is denoted by (X, τ) or simply X when there is no ambiguity.

C. Examples

(1) **Discrete Topology.** Let X be a set, and let the system \mathfrak{D} of open sets be the family of all subsets of X . The resulting topology is called the **discrete topology**, and X with the discrete topology is a **discrete topological space**. In this space, $\bar{A} = A^\circ = A$ for each subset A , and A is a neighborhood of each of its points.

(2) **Trivial Topology.** The **trivial** (or **indiscrete**) **topology** for a set X is defined by the system of open sets which consists of X and \emptyset only. If $A \subsetneq X$, then $A^\circ = \emptyset$, and if $A \neq \emptyset$, then $\bar{A} = X$. Each point of X has only one neighborhood, X itself.

(3) **Metric Topology.** Let (X, ρ) be a * metric space, i.e., a set X provided with a * metric ρ . For a positive number ε , the ε -neighborhood of a point x is defined to be the set $U_\varepsilon(x) = \{y \mid y \in X, \rho(x, y) < \varepsilon\}$. Let $\mathfrak{U}(x)$ be the family of all sets V such that $U_\varepsilon(x) \subset V$ for some ε ; then the assignment $x \rightarrow \mathfrak{U}(x)$ satisfies (U) and hence defines a topology. This topology is the **metric topology** for the metric space (X, ρ) .

(4) **Order Topology.** Let X be a set * linearly ordered by \leq . For each point x in X , let $\mathfrak{U}(x)$ be the family of all subsets U such that $x \in \{y \mid a < y < b\} \subset U$ for some a, b . The function $x \rightarrow \mathfrak{U}(x)$ satisfies (U) and defines the **order topology** for the linearly ordered set X .

(5) **Convergence and Topology.** We can define the notion of convergence in a topological space, and conversely we can define a topology using convergence as a primitive notion (\rightarrow 87 Convergence). In particular, for a metric space, the metric topology can be defined in terms of convergent sequences (\rightarrow 273 Metric Spaces).

D. Generalized Topological Spaces

When a space X is equipped with a closure operator that does not satisfy all of (C), the

space is called a **generalized topological space** by some authors. Topological implications of each axiom in (C) have been investigated for such spaces.

E. Local Bases

Let X be a topological space, and let x be a point of X . A collection $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$ of neighborhoods of x is called a **base for the neighborhood system (fundamental system of neighborhoods)** of a point x or **local base at x** if each neighborhood of x contains a member of $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$. Let $\{\mathcal{U}_0(x) | x \in X\}$ be a system of local bases; then the system has the following properties (\mathcal{U}_0):

- (1) For each V in $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$, $x \in V \subset X$.
- (2) If $V_1, V_2 \in \mathcal{U}_0(x)$, then there is a V_3 in $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$ such that $V_3 \subset V_1 \cap V_2$.
- (3) For each V in $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$, there exists a $W \subset V$ in $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$ such that for each y in W , V contains some member of $\mathcal{U}_0(y)$.

Conversely, suppose that $\{\mathcal{U}_0(x) | x \in X\}$ is a system satisfying (\mathcal{U}_0). For each x in X , let $\mathcal{U}(x)$ consist of all subsets V of X such that $V \supset U$ for some U in $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$. Then the system $\{\mathcal{U}(x) | x \in X\}$ satisfies (\mathcal{U}) and therefore defines a topology for X . This topology is called the topology determined by the system $\{\mathcal{U}_0(x) | x \in X\}$.

For instance, in a metric space X , the set of ε -neighborhoods of x ($\varepsilon > 0$) is a local base at x with respect to the metric topology. In an arbitrary topological space, the collection of all open sets containing x , i.e., the **open neighborhoods** of x , is a local base at x .

Two systems satisfying (\mathcal{U}_0) are called **equivalent** if they determine the same topology. For systems $\{\mathcal{U}_0(x) | x \in X\}$ and $\{\mathcal{V}_0(x) | x \in X\}$ to be equivalent it is necessary and sufficient that for each x in X each member of $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$ contain a member of $\mathcal{V}_0(x)$ and each member of $\mathcal{V}_0(x)$ contain a member of $\mathcal{U}_0(x)$.

Sometimes the word "neighborhood" stands for a member of a local base or for an open neighborhood. However, this convention is not used here.

F. Bases and Subbases

A family \mathfrak{D}_0 of open sets of a topological space X is called a **base for the topology (base for the space, or open base)** if each open set is the union of a subfamily of \mathfrak{D}_0 . A base \mathfrak{D}_0 for the topology of a topological space X has the following properties (\mathcal{O}_0):

- (1) $\bigcup \mathfrak{D}_0 = X$.
- (2) If $W_1, W_2 \in \mathfrak{D}_0$ and $x \in W_1 \cap W_2$, then there is a W_3 in \mathfrak{D}_0 such that $x \in W_3 \subset W_1 \cap W_2$.

Conversely, if a family \mathfrak{D}_0 of subsets of a set

X satisfies (\mathcal{O}_0), then \mathfrak{D}_0 is a base for a unique topology. A member of \mathfrak{D}_0 is called a **basic open set**.

A family \mathfrak{D}_{00} of open sets of a topological space X is a **subbase for the topology (or sub-base for the space)** if the family of all finite intersections of members of \mathfrak{D}_{00} is a base for the topology. If \mathfrak{D}_{00} a subbase for the topology of a topological space X , then $\bigcup \mathfrak{D}_{00} = X$. Conversely, if \mathfrak{D}_{00} is a family of subsets of a set X such that $\bigcup \mathfrak{D}_{00} = X$, then the family of all finite intersections of members of \mathfrak{D}_{00} is a base for a unique topology τ . A subset of X is open for τ if and only if it is the union of a family of finite intersections of members of \mathfrak{D}_{00} . The system of open sets relative to τ is said to be **generated** by the family \mathfrak{D}_{00} . Thus any family of sets defines a topology for its union.

A set \mathfrak{F} of subsets of a topological space is called a **network** if for each point x and its neighborhood U there is a member $F \in \mathfrak{F}$ such that $x \in F \subset U$ (A. V. Arkhangel'skii, 1959). If all $F \in \mathfrak{F}$ are required to be open, the network \mathfrak{F} is exactly an open base.

G. Continuous Mappings

A mapping f on a topological space X into a topological space Y is called **continuous** at a point a of X if it satisfies one of the following equivalent conditions:

- (1) For each neighborhood V of $f(a)$, there is a neighborhood U of a such that $f(U) \subset V$. (1')
- For each neighborhood V of $f(a)$, the inverse image $f^{-1}(V)$ is a neighborhood of a .
- (2) For an arbitrary subset A of X such that $a \in \bar{A}$, $f(a) \in \overline{f(A)}$.

Continuity can also be defined in terms of convergence (\rightarrow 87 Convergence).

If f is continuous at each point of X , f is said to be **continuous**. Continuity of f is equivalent to each of the following conditions:

- (1) For each open subset O of Y , the inverse image $f^{-1}(O)$ is open in X .
- (1') The inverse image under f of each member of a subbase for the topology of Y is open in X .
- (2) For each closed subset F of Y , the inverse image $f^{-1}(F)$ is closed.
- (3) For each subset A of X , $f(\bar{A}) \subset \overline{f(A)}$.

The image $f(X)$ of X under a continuous mapping f is called a **continuous image** of X . Let X, Y , and Z be topological spaces, and let $f: X \rightarrow Y$ and $g: Y \rightarrow Z$ be mappings. If f is continuous at a point a of X and g is continuous at $f(a)$, then the composite mapping $g \circ f: X \rightarrow Z$ is continuous at the point a . Hence if f and g are continuous, so is $g \circ f$.

When a continuous mapping $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is

†bijective and f^{-1} is continuous, the mapping f is called a **homeomorphism** (named by H. Poincaré, 1895) or **topological mapping**. Two topological spaces X and Y are **homeomorphic**, $X \approx Y$, if there is a homeomorphism $f: X \rightarrow Y$.

The relation of being homeomorphic is an equivalence relation. A property which, when held by a topological space, is also held by each space homeomorphic to it is a **topological property** or **topological invariant**. The problem of deciding whether or not given spaces are homeomorphic is called the **homeomorphism problem**.

A mapping $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is called **open** (resp. **closed**) if the image under f of each open (resp. closed) subset of X is open (closed) in Y . A continuous bijection that is either open or closed is a homeomorphism.

A continuous surjection $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is called a **quotient mapping** if $U \subset Y$ is open whenever $f^{-1}(U)$ is open (\rightarrow Section L). If moreover $f|f^{-1}(S)$ is quotient for each $S \subset Y$ as a mapping from the subspace (\rightarrow Section J) $f^{-1}(S)$ onto the subspace S , then f is called a **hereditarily quotient mapping**. Open or closed continuous mappings are hereditarily quotient mappings.

H. Comparison of Topologies

When a set X is provided with two topologies τ_1 and τ_2 and the identity mapping: $(X, \tau_1) \rightarrow (X, \tau_2)$ is continuous, the topology τ_1 is said to be **stronger** (**larger** or **finer**) than the topology τ_2 , τ_2 is said to be **weaker** (**smaller** or **coarser**) than τ_1 , and the notation $\tau_1 \geq \tau_2$ or $\tau_2 \leq \tau_1$ is used. Let \mathfrak{O}_i , \mathfrak{F}_i , \mathfrak{U}_i , and a_i be the system of open sets, system of closed sets, neighborhood system, and closure operation for X relative to the topology τ_i ($i = 1, 2$), respectively. Then each of the following is equivalent to the statement $\tau_1 \geq \tau_2$:

- (1) $\mathfrak{O}_1 \supset \mathfrak{O}_2$.
- (2) $\mathfrak{F}_1 \supset \mathfrak{F}_2$.
- (3) For each x in X , $\mathfrak{U}_1(x) \supset \mathfrak{U}_2(x)$.
- (4) $A^{a_1} \subset A^{a_2}$ for each subset A of X .

Let S be the family of all topologies for X . Then S is ordered by the relation \geq . The discrete topology is the strongest topology for X . If $\{\tau_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ is a subfamily of S , then among the topologies stronger than each τ_λ , there is a weakest one $\tau_1 = \sup\{\tau_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$. Similarly, among the topologies weaker than each τ_λ , there is a strongest one $\tau_2 = \inf\{\tau_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$. In fact, let \mathfrak{O}_λ be the family of all open sets relative to τ_λ ; then the system of open sets for τ_1 is generated by $\bigcup_{\lambda \in \Lambda} \mathfrak{O}_\lambda$, and the system of open sets for τ_2 is precisely $\bigcap_{\lambda \in \Lambda} \mathfrak{O}_\lambda$. The family S is therefore a \dagger complete lattice.

I. Induced Topology

Let f be a mapping from a set X into a topological space Y . Then the family $\{f^{-1}(O) | O \text{ is open in } Y\}$ satisfies axioms (O) and defines a topology for X . This topology is called the **topology induced by f** (or simply **induced topology**), and it is characterized as the weakest one among the topologies for X relative to which the mapping f is continuous.

J. Subspaces

Let (X, τ) be a topological space and M be a subset of X . The topology for M induced by the inclusion mapping $f: M \rightarrow X$, i.e., the mapping f defined by $f(x) = x$ for each x in M , is called the **relativization** of τ to M or the **relative topology**. The set M provided with the relative topology is called a **subspace** of the topological space (X, τ) . Topological terms, when applied to a subspace, are frequently preceded by the adjective "relative" to avoid ambiguity. Thus a **relative neighborhood** of a point x in M is a set of the form $M \cap U$, where U is a neighborhood of x in X . A **relatively open** (**relatively closed**) set in M is a set of the form $M \cap A$, where A is open (closed) in X . For a subset A of M , the relative closure of A in M is $M \cap \bar{A}$, where \bar{A} is the closure of A in X . A mapping $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is called an **embedding** if f is a homeomorphism from X to the subspace $f(X)$, and in this case X is said to be **embedded** into Y . A property P is said to hold **locally** on a topological space X if each point x of X has a neighborhood U such that the property P holds on the subspace U . A subset A of X is **locally closed** if for each point x of X , there exists a neighborhood V of x such that $V \cap A$ is relatively closed in V . A subset of X is locally closed if and only if it can be represented as $O \cap F$, where O is open and F is closed in X .

K. Product Spaces

Let X be a set, and for each member λ of an index set Λ , let f_λ be a mapping of X into a topological space X_λ . Then there is a weakest topology for X that makes each f_λ continuous. In fact, this topology is $\sup\{\tau_\lambda\}$, where τ_λ is the topology for X induced by f_λ . In particular, let $\{X_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ be a family of topological spaces, and let X be the Cartesian product $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} X_\lambda$. Then the weakest topology for X such that each projection $\text{pr}_\lambda: X \rightarrow X_\lambda$ is continuous is called the **product topology** or **weak topology**. The Cartesian product $\prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} X_\lambda$ equipped with the product topology is called the **product topological space** or simply the **product space**.

or **direct product** of the family $\{X_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ of topological spaces. If \mathfrak{D} is the family of all open subsets of X_λ , the union $\bigcup_\lambda \text{pr}_\lambda^{-1}(\mathfrak{D}_\lambda)$ is a subbase for the product topology. If $x = \{x_\lambda\}$ is a point of X , then sets of the type $\bigcap_{j=1}^n \text{pr}_j^{-1}(U_j) = \prod_{\lambda \neq \lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_n} X_\lambda \times U_1 \times \dots \times U_n$ form a local base at x for the product topology, where $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_n \in \Lambda$ and U_j is a neighborhood of x_{λ_j} . Each projection $\text{pr}_\lambda: X \rightarrow X_\lambda$ is continuous and open, and a mapping f from a topological space Y into the product space $\prod_\lambda X_\lambda$ is continuous if and only if $\text{pr}_\lambda \circ f: Y \rightarrow X_\lambda$ is continuous for each λ . Given a family $\{f_\lambda\}$ of continuous mappings $f_\lambda: X_\lambda \rightarrow Y_\lambda$, the product mapping $\prod_\lambda f_\lambda: \prod_\lambda X_\lambda \rightarrow \prod_\lambda Y_\lambda$ is continuous with respect to the product topologies.

For the Cartesian product $\prod_\lambda X_\lambda$ of a family $\{X_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ of topological spaces, there is another topology called the **box topology** (or **strong topology**). A base for the box topology is the family of all sets $\prod_\lambda O_\lambda$, where O_λ is open in X_λ for each λ . For a point $x = \{x_\lambda\}$, the family of all sets of the form $\prod_\lambda U_\lambda$ is a local base at x relative to the box topology, where U_λ is a neighborhood of x_λ for each λ . With respect to the box topology, each projection $\text{pr}_\lambda: \prod_\lambda X_\lambda \rightarrow X_\lambda$ is continuous and open, and the product mapping $\prod f_\lambda: \prod_\lambda X_\lambda \rightarrow \prod_\lambda Y_\lambda$ of a family $\{f_\lambda\}$ of continuous mappings $f_\lambda: X_\lambda \rightarrow Y_\lambda$ is continuous. For a finite product of topological spaces, the product topology agrees with the box topology, but for an arbitrary product the product topology is weaker than the box topology. For the Cartesian product of topological spaces the usual topology considered is the product topology rather than the box topology.

L. Quotient Spaces

Let f be a mapping of a topological space X onto a set Y . The **quotient topology** for Y (relative to the mapping f) is the strongest topology for Y such that f is continuous. A subset O of Y is open relative to the quotient topology if and only if $f^{-1}(O)$ is open. Given an equivalence relation \sim on a topological space X , the quotient set $Y = X/\sim$ provided with the quotient topology relative to the projection $\varphi: X \rightarrow Y$ is called the **quotient topological space** (or simply **quotient space**). A mapping f from the quotient space $Y = X/\sim$ into a topological space is continuous if and only if $f \circ \varphi$ is continuous.

A **partition** of a space X is a family $\{A_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ of pairwise disjoint subsets of X such that $\bigcup_\lambda A_\lambda = X$. A partition $\{A_\lambda\}$ of a topological space X determines an equivalence relation \sim on X such that the family $\{A_\lambda\}$ is precisely

the family of all equivalence classes under \sim , and therefore the partition determines the quotient space $Y = X/\sim$. This space is called the **identification space** of X by the given partition. Each member A_λ of the partition can be regarded as a point of Y , and the projection $\varphi: X \rightarrow Y$ satisfies $\varphi(x) = A_\lambda$ whenever $x \in A_\lambda$. A partition $\{A_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ of a topological space is called **upper semicontinuous** if for each A_λ and each open set U containing A_λ , there is an open set V such that $A_\lambda \subset V \subset U$, and V is the union of members of $\{A_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$. A partition $\{A_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ is upper semicontinuous if and only if the projection $\varphi: X \rightarrow Y = \{A_\lambda | \lambda \in \Lambda\}$ is a closed mapping.

M. Topological Sums

Let X be a set, and for each member λ of an index set Λ , let f_λ be a mapping of a topological space X_λ to X . Then the family $\{O \subset X | f_\lambda^{-1}(O) \text{ is open for any } \lambda\}$ satisfies the axioms of the open sets. This topology τ is characterized as the strongest one for X that makes each f_λ continuous. A mapping g on X with τ to a topological space Y is continuous if and only if $g \circ f_\lambda: X_\lambda \rightarrow Y$ is continuous for each $\lambda \in \Lambda$. The simplest is the case where X is the disjoint union of X_λ and f_λ is the inclusion mapping. Then we call the topological space X the **direct sum** or the **topological sum** of $\{X_\lambda\}$ and denote it by $\oplus X_\lambda$ or $\coprod X_\lambda$. More generally let the set X be the union of topological spaces $\{X_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ such that for each λ and $\mu \in \Lambda$ the relative topologies of $X_\lambda \cap X_\mu$ from X_λ and X_μ coincide. Then we call the topology τ the **weak topology** with respect to $\{X_\lambda\}$. If $X_\lambda \cap X_\mu$ is closed (resp. open) in X_μ for any μ , then X_λ is closed (resp. open) in X and the original topology of X_λ coincides with the relative topology. If, moreover, for each subset Γ of Λ , $F = \bigcup_{\lambda \in \Gamma} X_\lambda$ is closed and the weak topology of F with respect to $\{X_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Gamma}$ coincides with the relative topology induced by τ , then X with τ is said to have the **hereditarily weak topology** with respect to $\{X_\lambda\}$ (or to be **dominated** by $\{X_\lambda\}$). A topological space has the hereditarily weak topology with respect to any locally finite closed covering, and every CW-complex (\rightarrow 70 Complexes) has the hereditarily weak topology with respect to the covering of all finite subcomplexes.

When $\{X_n\}$ is an increasing sequence of topological spaces such that each X_n is a subspace of X_{n+1} , then the union $X = \bigcup X_n$ with the weak topology is called the **inductive limit** of $\{X_n\}$ and is denoted by $\varinjlim X_n$. Each X_n may again be regarded as a subspace of X .

N. Baire Spaces

For a subset A of a topological space X , the set $X - \bar{A}$ is called the **exterior** of A , and the set $\bar{A} \cap \overline{X - A}$ is called the **boundary** of A , denoted by $\text{Bd } A$, $\text{Fr } A$, or ∂A . A point belonging to the exterior (boundary) of A is an **exterior point** (**boundary point** or **frontier point**) of A . If the closure of A is X , then A is said to be **dense** in X . When $X - A$ is dense in X , i.e., when the interior of A is empty, A is called a **boundary set** (or **border set**), and if the closure \bar{A} is a boundary set, A is said to be **nowhere dense**. The union of a countable family of nowhere dense sets is called a **set of the first category** (or **meager set**). A set that is not of the first category is called a **set of the second category** (or **nonmeager set**). The complement of a set of the first category is called a **residual set**. In the space \mathbf{R} of real numbers, the set \mathbf{Q} of all rational numbers is of the first category, and the set $\mathbf{R} - \mathbf{Q}$ of all irrational numbers is of the second category. Both \mathbf{Q} and $\mathbf{R} - \mathbf{Q}$ are dense in X and hence are boundary sets. The union of a finite family of nowhere dense sets is nowhere dense, and the union of a countable family of sets of the first category is also of the first category. A subset A of X is nowhere dense in X if and only if for each open set O , $O \cap A$ is not dense in O .

A topological space X is called a **Baire space** (Baire, 1899) if each subset of X of the first category has an empty interior. Each of the following conditions is necessary and sufficient for a space X to be a Baire space:

- (1) Each nonempty open subset of X is of the second category.
- (2) If F_1, F_2, \dots is a sequence of closed subsets of X such that the union $\bigcup_{n=1}^{\infty} F_n$ has an interior point, then at least one F_n has an interior point.
- (3) If O_1, O_2, \dots is a sequence of dense open subsets of X , then the intersection $\bigcap_{n=1}^{\infty} O_n$ is dense in X .

An open subset of a Baire space is a Baire space for the relative topology. A topological space that is homeomorphic to a complete metric space (\rightarrow 436 Uniform Spaces I) is a Baire space (**Baire-Hausdorff theorem**). A locally compact Hausdorff space (\rightarrow Section V) is also a Baire space. The class of Čech-complete completely regular spaces (\rightarrow Section T) includes both of these spaces, but there are also Baire spaces that are not in the class. A subset A of a topological space is said to satisfy **Baire's condition** or to have the **Baire property** if there exist an open set O and sets P_1, P_2 of the first category such that $A = (O \cup P_1) - P_2$. A \aleph_1 -Borel set satisfies Baire's condition.

O. Accumulation Points

A point x is called an **accumulation point**, or a **cluster point** of a subset A of a topological space X if $x \in \overline{A - \{x\}}$. The set of all accumulation points of a set A is called the **derived set** of A and is denoted by A' or A^d . A point x belongs to A' if and only if each neighborhood of x contains a point of A other than x itself. A point belonging to the set $A^s = A - A'$ is called an **isolated point** of A , and a set A consisting of isolated points only, i.e., $A = A^s$, is said to be **discrete**. If each nonempty subset of A contains an isolated point, then A is said to be **scattered**; and if A does not possess an isolated point, i.e., $A \subset A'$, then A is said to be **dense in itself**. The largest subset of A which is dense in itself is called the **kernel** of A . If $A = A'$, then A is called a **perfect set**.

If x is an accumulation point of A , then for each neighborhood U of x , $U \cap (A - \{x\}) \neq \emptyset$. Furthermore, it is possible to classify an accumulation point of A according to the 'cardinality of $U \cap (A - \{x\})$. A point x is called a **condensation point** of a set A if for each neighborhood U of x , the set $U \cap A$ is uncountable. A point x is a **complete accumulation point** of A if for each neighborhood U of x , the set $U \cap A$ has the same cardinality as A .

P. Countability Axioms

A topological space X satisfies the **first countability axiom** if each point x of X has a countable local base (F. Hausdorff [3]). Metric spaces satisfy the first countability axiom. In fact, the family of $(1/n)$ -neighborhoods ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) of a point is a local base of the point. The topology of a topological space that satisfies the first countability axiom is completely determined by convergent sequences. For instance, the closure of a subset A of such a space consists of all limits of sequences in A (\rightarrow 87 Convergence). A topological space X is said to satisfy the **second countability axiom** or to be **perfectly separable** if there is a countable base for the topology. *Euclidean spaces satisfy the second countability axiom. If X contains a countable dense subset, X is said to be **separable**. A space that satisfies the second countability axiom satisfies the first and is also a separable Lindelöf space (\rightarrow Section S). However, the converse is not true. Each of the following properties is independent of the others: separability, the first countability axiom, and the Lindelöf property. If a metric space is separable, then it satisfies the second countability axiom. There are metric spaces that are not separable.

Q. Separation Axioms

Topological spaces that are commonly encountered usually satisfy some of the following separation axioms.

(T_0) **Kolmogorov's axiom.** For each pair of distinct points, there is a neighborhood of one point of the pair that does not contain the other.

(T_1) **The first separation axiom or Fréchet's axiom.** For each pair x, y of distinct points, there are neighborhoods U of x and V of y such that $x \notin V$ and $y \notin U$.

Axiom (T_1) can be restated as follows:

(T_1') For each point x of the space, the singleton $\{x\}$ is closed.

(T_2) **The second separation axiom or Hausdorff's axiom** [3]. For each pair x, y of distinct points of the space X , there exist disjoint neighborhoods of x and y .

Axiom (T_2) is equivalent to the following:

(T_2) In the product space $X \times X$ the diagonal set Δ is closed.

(T_3) **The third separation axiom or Vietoris's axiom** (*Monatsh. Math. Phys.*, 31 (1921)).

Given a point x and a subset A such that $x \notin \bar{A}$, there exist disjoint open sets O_1 and O_2 such that $x \in O_1$ and $A \subset O_2$. (In this case, the sets $\{x\}$ and A are said to be **separated** by open sets.)

Axiom (T_3) can be restated as (T_3') or (T_3''):

(T_3') For each point x of the space, there is a local base at x consisting of closed neighborhoods of x .

(T_3'') An arbitrary closed set and a point not belonging to it can be separated by open sets.

(T_4) **The fourth separation axiom or Tietze's first axiom** (*Math. Ann.*, 88 (1923)). Two disjoint closed sets F_1 and F_2 can be separated by open sets, i.e., there exist disjoint open sets O_1 and O_2 such that $F_1 \subset O_1$ and $F_2 \subset O_2$.

(T_5) **Tietze's second axiom.** Whenever two subsets A_1 and A_2 satisfy $A_1 \cap \bar{A}_2 = \bar{A}_1 \cap A_2 = \emptyset$, A_1 and A_2 can be separated by open sets.

It is easily seen that (T_5) \Rightarrow (T_4), (T_0) and (T_3) \Rightarrow (T_2), (T_4) and (T_1) \Rightarrow (T_3). Axiom (T_4) is equivalent to each of (T_4') and (T_4''):

(T_4') Whenever F_1 and F_2 are disjoint closed subsets, there exists a continuous function f on the space into the interval $[0, 1]$ such that f is identically 0 on F_1 and 1 on F_2 .

(T_4'') Each real-valued continuous function defined on a closed subspace can be extended to a real-valued continuous function on the entire space.

The implications (T_4) \Rightarrow (T_4') and (T_4) \Rightarrow (T_4'') are known as **Uryson's lemma** (*Math. Ann.*, 94 (1925)) and the **Tietze extension theorem** (*J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 145 (1915)), respectively. In addition, there are two more related axioms:

($T_{3\frac{1}{2}}$) **Tikhonov's separation axiom.** For each closed subset F and each point x not in F , there is a real-valued continuous function f on the space such that $f(x) = 0$ and f is identically 1 on F .

(T_6) (N. Vedenisov). For each closed subset F , there is a real-valued continuous function f on the space such that $F = \{x \mid f(x) = 0\}$.

Axioms (T_5) and (T_6) are equivalent to the following (T_5') and (T_6'), respectively:

(T_5') Each subspace satisfies (T_4)

(T_6') X satisfies (T_4) and each closed set is a $^*G_\delta$ -set.

The following implications are valid: ($T_{3\frac{1}{2}}$) \Rightarrow (T_3), (T_6) \Rightarrow (T_5), (T_4) and (T_1) \Rightarrow ($T_{3\frac{1}{2}}$).

Table 1 gives a classification of topological spaces by the separation axioms. Each line represents a special case of the preceding line.

A * metrizable space is perfectly normal, but the converse is false (for metrization theorems \rightarrow 273 Metric Spaces). Among the spaces satisfying the second countability axiom, regular spaces are normal (**Tikhonov's theorem**, *Math. Ann.*, 95 (1925)) and metrizable (**Tikhonov-Uryson theorem**; P. Uryson, *Math. Ann.*, 94 (1925)).

Table 2 shows whether various topological properties are preserved in subspaces, product spaces, and quotient spaces. The topological properties considered are T_1 , T_2 = Hausdorff, T_3 = regular, CR = completely regular, T_4 = normal, T_5 = completely normal, M = metrizable, C_1 = first axiom of countability, C_Π = second axiom of countability, C = compact, S = separable, and L = Lindelöf. Each position is filled with \bigcirc or \times according as the property (say, P) listed at the head of the column is preserved or not in the sort of space listed on the left obtained from space(s) all having property P.

R. Coverings

A family $\mathfrak{M} = \{M_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of subsets of a set X is called a **covering** of a subset A of X if $A \subset \bigcup_\lambda M_\lambda$. If \mathfrak{M} is finite (countable), it is called a **finite covering** (**countable covering**). An **open (closed) covering** is a covering consisting of open (closed) sets.

A family \mathfrak{M} of subsets of a topological space X is said to be **locally finite** if for each point x of X , there is a neighborhood of x which intersects only a finite number of members of \mathfrak{M} . If moreover $\{\bar{M}_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ is disjoint, then \mathfrak{M} is called **discrete**. \mathfrak{M} is called **star-finite** if each member of \mathfrak{M} intersects only a finite number of members of \mathfrak{M} . A **σ -locally finite** or **σ -discrete** family of subsets of X is respectively the union of a countable number of locally finite or discrete families of subsets of X . A covering \mathfrak{M}

Table 1. Separation Axioms

Axioms	Spaces Satisfying the Axioms
(T ₀)	T ₀ -space (Kolmogorov space)
(T ₁)	T ₁ -space (Kuratowski space)
(T ₂)	T ₂ -space (Hausdorff space, separated space)
(T ₀) and (T ₃)	T ₃ -space (regular space)
(T ₁) and (T _{3½})	Completely regular space (Tikhonov space)
(T ₁) and (T ₄)	T ₄ -space (normal space)
(T ₁) and (T ₅)	T ₅ -space (completely normal space, hereditarily normal space)
(T ₁) and (T ₆)	T ₆ -space (perfectly normal space)

Table 2. Topological Properties and Spaces

Space	T ₁	T ₂	T ₃	CR	T ₄	T ₅	M	C ₁	C _{II}	C	S	L
Subspace	○	○	○	○	×	○	○	○	○	×	×	×
Closed subspace	○	○	○	○	○	○	○	○	○	○	×	○
Open subspace	○	○	○	○	×	○	○	○	○	×	○	×
Product	○	○	○	○	×	×	×	×	×	○	×	×
Countable product	○	○	○	○	×	×	○	○	○	○	○	×
Quotient space	×	×	×	×	×	×	×	×	×	○	○	○

is called **point-finite** if each infinite number of members of \mathfrak{M} has an empty intersection. A covering \mathfrak{M} is a **refinement** of a covering \mathfrak{N} (written $\mathfrak{M} < \mathfrak{N}$) if each member of \mathfrak{M} is contained in a member of \mathfrak{N} . The **order** of the covering \mathfrak{M} is the least integer r such that any subfamily of \mathfrak{M} consisting of $r + 1$ members has an empty intersection.

Let \mathfrak{M} be a covering of X , and let A be a subset of X . The **star** of A relative to \mathfrak{M} , denoted by $S(A, \mathfrak{M})$, is the union of all members of \mathfrak{M} whose intersection with A is nonempty. Let \mathfrak{M}^Δ denote the family $\{S(\{x\}, \mathfrak{M})\}_{x \in X}$ and \mathfrak{M}^* the family $\{S(M, \mathfrak{M})\}_{M \in \mathfrak{M}}$. Then \mathfrak{M}^Δ and \mathfrak{M}^* are coverings of X , and $\mathfrak{M} < \mathfrak{M}^\Delta < \mathfrak{M}^* < \mathfrak{M}^{\Delta\Delta}$. A covering \mathfrak{M} is a **star refinement** of a covering \mathfrak{N} if $\mathfrak{M}^* < \mathfrak{N}$, and \mathfrak{M} is a **barycentric refinement** (or **Δ -refinement**) of \mathfrak{N} if $\mathfrak{M}^\Delta < \mathfrak{N}$.

A sequence $\mathfrak{M}_1, \mathfrak{M}_2, \dots$ of open coverings of a topological space is called a **normal sequence** if $\mathfrak{M}_{n+1}^\Delta < \mathfrak{M}_n$ for $n = 1, 2, \dots$, and an open covering \mathfrak{M} is said to be a **normal covering** if there is a normal sequence $\mathfrak{M}_1, \mathfrak{M}_2, \dots$ such that $\mathfrak{M}_1 < \mathfrak{M}$. The **support** (or **carrier**) of a real-valued function f on a topological space X is defined to be the closure of the set $\{x \mid f(x) \neq 0\}$. Let $\{f_x\}_{x \in A}$ be a family of continuous nonnegative real-valued functions on a topological space X , and for each α in A , let C_α be the support of f_α . The family $\{f_x\}_{x \in A}$ is called a **partition of unity** if the family $\{C_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ is locally finite and $\sum_\alpha f_\alpha(x) = 1$ for each x in X . If the covering $\{C_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ is a refinement of a covering \mathfrak{M} , the family $\{f_x\}_{x \in A}$ is called a **partition of unity subordinate to the covering \mathfrak{M}** . A partition of unity subordinate to a covering \mathfrak{M} exists only if \mathfrak{M} is a normal covering (\rightarrow Section X). If ρ is a continuous \dagger pseudometric on a T_1 -space X , then define a covering M_n for

each natural number n by $M_n = \{U(x; 2^{-n})\}_{x \in X}$, where $U(x; \varepsilon) = \{y \mid \rho(x, y) < \varepsilon\}$. Then the sequence $\mathfrak{M}_1, \mathfrak{M}_2, \dots$ is a normal sequence of open coverings. Conversely, given a normal sequence $\mathfrak{M}_1, \mathfrak{M}_2, \dots$ of open coverings of X , there exists a continuous pseudometric ρ such that $\rho(x, y) \leq 2^{-n}$ whenever $x \in S(y, \mathfrak{M}_n)$, and $\rho(x, y) \geq 2^{-n-1}$ whenever $x \notin S(y, \mathfrak{M}_n)$. If in addition for each x the family $\{S(x, \mathfrak{M}_n) \mid n = 1, 2, \dots\}$ is a local base at x , then the metric topology of ρ agrees with the topology of X .

S. Compactness

If each open covering of a topological space X admits a finite open covering as its refinement, the space X is called **compact**; if each open covering of X admits a countable open refinement, X is said to be a **Lindelöf space** (P. Alexandrov and P. Uryson, *Verh. Akad. Wetensch.*, Amsterdam, 19 (1929)); if each open covering of X admits a locally finite open refinement, X is called **paracompact** (J. Dieudonné, *J. Math. Pures Appl.*, 23 (1944)); and if each open covering of X admits a star-finite open refinement, X is said to be **strongly paracompact** (C. H. Dowker, *Amer. J. Math.*, 69 (1947)) or to have the **star-finite property** (K. Morita, *Math. Japonicae*, 1 (1948)). The space X is compact (Lindelöf) if for each open covering \mathfrak{M} of X , there is a finite (countable) subfamily of \mathfrak{M} whose union is X .

The following properties for a topological space X are equivalent: (1) The space X is compact. (2) If a family $\{F_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of closed subsets of X has the **finite intersection property**, i.e., each finite subfamily of $\{F_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ has non-empty intersection, then $\bigcap_\lambda F_\lambda \neq \emptyset$. (3) Each

infinite subset of X has a complete accumulation point. (4) Each \dagger net has a convergent \dagger subnet. (5) Each \dagger universal net and each \dagger ultrafilter converge.

If a subset A of X is compact for the relative topology, A is called a **compact** subset. A subset A of X is said to be **relatively compact** if the closure of A in X is a compact subset. A closed subset of a compact topological space is compact, and a compact subset of a Hausdorff space is closed. A continuous image of a compact space is compact, each continuous mapping of a compact space into a Hausdorff space is a closed mapping, and a continuous bijection of a compact space onto a Hausdorff space is a homeomorphism. The product space of a family $\{X_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of topological spaces is compact if and only if each factor space is compact (**Tikhonov's product theorem**, *Math. Ann.*, 102 (1930)). A compact Hausdorff space is normal. A compact Hausdorff space is metrizable if and only if it satisfies the second countability axiom. A metric space or a \dagger uniform space is compact if and only if it is \dagger totally bounded and \dagger complete. A subset of a Euclidean space is compact if and only if it is closed and bounded. In a discrete space only finite subsets are compact. The cardinality of a compact Hausdorff space with the first countability axiom cannot exceed the power of the continuum (Arkhangel'skii).

There are a number of conditions related to compactness. A topological space is **sequentially compact** if each sequence in X has a convergent subsequence. A space X is **countably compact** (M. Fréchet [1]) if each countable open covering of X contains a finite subfamily that covers X . A space X is **pseudocompact** (E. Hewitt, 1948) if each continuous real-valued function on X is bounded. Some authors use *compact* and *bicompact* for what we call countably compact and compact, respectively. N. Bourbaki [9] uses *compact* and *quasicompact* instead of compact Hausdorff and compact, respectively. A T_1 -space is countably compact if and only if each infinite set possesses an accumulation point. If X is countably compact, then X is pseudocompact, and if X is normal, the converse also holds. If a \dagger complete uniform space is pseudocompact, then it is compact. A space satisfying the second countability axiom is compact if and only if it is sequentially compact. If X is sequentially compact, then X is countably compact, and if X satisfies the first countability axiom, the converse is true.

T. Compactification

A **compactification** of a topological space X consists of a compact space Y and a homeo-

morphism of X onto a dense subspace X_1 of Y . We can always regard X as a dense subspace of a compactification Y . If X is completely regular, then there is a Hausdorff compactification Y such that each bounded real-valued continuous function on X can be extended continuously to Y . Such a compactification is unique up to homeomorphism; it is called the **Stone-Čech compactification** of X (E. Čech, *Ann. Math.*, 38 (1937); M. H. Stone, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 41 (1937)) and is denoted by $\beta(X)$. Let $\{f_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ be the set of all continuous functions on a completely regular space X into the closed interval $I = [0, 1]$. Then a continuous mapping φ of X into a **parallelootope** $I^\Lambda = \prod_\lambda I_\lambda$ ($I_\lambda = I$) is defined by $\varphi(x) = \{f_\lambda(x)\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$, and the mapping φ is a homeomorphism of X onto the subspace $\varphi(X)$ of I^Λ (**Tikhonov's embedding theorem**, *Math. Ann.*, 102 (1930)). The closure $\overline{\varphi(X)}$ of $\varphi(X)$ in I^Λ is the Stone-Čech compactification of X . The natural mapping $\beta(X_1 \times X_2) \rightarrow \beta(X_1) \times \beta(X_2)$ is a homeomorphism if and only if $X_1 \times X_2$ is pseudocompact (I. Glicksberg, 1959).

For a topological space X , let ∞ be a point not in X , and define a topology on the union $X \cup \{\infty\}$ as follows: A subset U of $X \cup \{\infty\}$ is open if and only if either $\infty \notin U$ and U is open in X , or $\infty \in U$ and $X - U$ is a compact closed subset of X . The topological space $X \cup \{\infty\}$ thus obtained is compact, and if X is not already compact, the space $X \cup \{\infty\}$ is a compactification of X called the **one-point compactification** of X (P. S. Aleksandrov, *C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris*, 178 (1924)). The one-point compactification of a Hausdorff space is not necessarily Hausdorff. The one-point compactification of the n -dimensional Euclidean space \mathbf{R}^n is homeomorphic to the n -dimensional sphere S^n .

A completely regular space X is a $\dagger G_\delta$ -set in the Stone-Čech compactification $\beta(X)$ if and only if it is a G_δ -set in any Hausdorff space Y which contains X as a dense subspace. Then X is said to be **Čech-complete**.

U. Absolutely Closed Spaces

A Hausdorff space X is said to be **absolutely closed** (or **H-closed**; P. Aleksandrov and P. Uryson, 1929) if X is closed in each Hausdorff space containing it. A compact Hausdorff space is absolutely closed. A Hausdorff space is absolutely closed if and only if for each open covering $\{N_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of X , there is a finite subfamily of $\{N_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ that covers X . The product space of a family of absolutely closed spaces is absolutely closed. Each Hausdorff space is a dense subset of an absolutely closed space. Similarly, a regular space X is said to be **r-**

closed if X is closed in each regular space containing it (N. Weinberg, 1941).

V. Locally Compact Spaces

A topological space X is said to be **locally compact** if each point of X has a compact neighborhood (P. Aleksandrov and P. Uryson, 1929). A * uniform space X is said to be **uniformly locally compact** if there is a member U of the * uniformity such that $U(x)$ is compact for each x in X (\rightarrow 436 Uniform Spaces). A noncompact space X is locally compact and Hausdorff if and only if the one-point compactification of X is Hausdorff, and this is the case if and only if X is homeomorphic to an open subset of a compact Hausdorff space. A locally compact Hausdorff space is completely regular, and for each point of the space, the family of all of its compact neighborhoods forms a local base at the point. A locally closed, hence open or closed, subset of a locally compact Hausdorff space is also locally compact for the relative topology. If a subspace A of a Hausdorff space X is locally compact, then A is a locally closed subset of X . The Euclidean space \mathbf{R}^n is locally compact, and hence each **locally Euclidean space**, i.e., a space such that each point admits a neighborhood homeomorphic to a Euclidean space, is locally compact. A topological space is called **σ -compact** if it can be expressed as the union of at most countably many compact subsets.

W. Proper (Perfect) Mappings

A mapping f of a topological space X into a topological space Y is said to be **proper** (N. Bourbaki [9]) (or **perfect** [14]) if it is continuous and for each topological space Z , the mapping $f \times 1: X \times Z \rightarrow Y \times Z$ is closed, where $(f \times 1)(x, z) = (f(x), z)$. A continuous mapping $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is proper if and only if it is closed and $f^{-1}(\{y\})$ is compact for each y in Y . Another necessary and sufficient condition is that if $\{x_\alpha\}_\alpha$ is a * net in X such that its image $\{f(x_\alpha)\}$ converges to $y \in Y$, then a subnet of $\{x_\alpha\}$ converges to an $x \in f^{-1}(y)$ in X . A continuous mapping of a compact space into a Hausdorff space is always proper. For a compact Hausdorff space X , a quotient space Y is Hausdorff if and only if the canonical projection $\varphi: X \rightarrow Y$ is proper.

For a continuous mapping f of a locally compact Hausdorff space X into a locally compact Hausdorff space Y , the following three conditions are equivalent: (1) f is proper. (2) For each compact subset K of Y , the inverse image $f^{-1}(K)$ is compact. (3) If $X \cup \{x_\infty\}$

and $Y \cup \{y_\infty\}$ are the one-point compactifications of X and Y , then the extension f_1 of f such that $f_1(x_\infty) = y_\infty$ is continuous.

The composition of two proper mappings is proper and the direct product of an arbitrary number of proper mappings is proper.

X. Paracompact Hausdorff Spaces

A paracompact Hausdorff space (often called simply a paracompact space) is normal. For a Hausdorff space X , the following five conditions are equivalent: (1) X is paracompact. (2) X is **fully normal** (J. W. Tukey [8]), i.e., each open covering of X admits an open barycentric refinement. (3) Each open covering has a partition of unity subordinate to it. (4) Each open covering is refined by a closed covering $\{F_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$ that is **closure-preserving**, i.e., $\bigcup \{F_\beta | \beta \in B\}$ is closed for each $B \subset A$. (5) Each open covering $\{U_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$ has a **cushioned refinement** $\{V_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$, i.e., $\text{Cl}(\bigcup \{V_\beta | \beta \in B\}) \subset \bigcup \{U_\beta | \beta \in B\}$ for each $B \subset A$. The implication (1) \rightarrow (2) is **Dieudonné's theorem**. The implication (2) \rightarrow (1) is **A. H. Stone's theorem** (1948), from which it follows that each metric space is paracompact. The implications (5) \rightarrow (4) \rightarrow (1) is **Michael's theorem** (1959, 1957).

For normal spaces, the following weaker versions of (2) and (3) hold: A T_1 -space X is normal if and only if each finite open covering of X admits a finite open star refinement (or finite open barycentric refinement). For each locally finite open covering of a normal space, there is a partition of unity subordinate to it.

For a regular space X the following three conditions are equivalent: (1) X is paracompact. (2) Each open covering of X is refined by a σ -discrete open covering. (3) Each open covering of X is refined by a σ -locally finite open covering. **Tamano's product theorem**: For a completely regular space X to be paracompact it is necessary and sufficient that $X \times \beta(X)$ be normal (1960).

For a * connected locally compact space X , the following conditions are equivalent: (1) X is paracompact. (2) X is σ -compact. (3) In the one-point compactification $X \cup \{\infty\}$, the point ∞ admits a countable local base. (4) There is a locally finite open covering $\{U_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ of X such that \bar{U}_λ is compact for each λ . (5) X is the union of a sequence $\{U_n\}$ of open sets such that \bar{U}_n is compact and $\bar{U}_n \subset U_{n+1}$ ($n = 1, 2, \dots$). (6) X is strongly paracompact.

Every * F_σ -set of a paracompact Hausdorff space is paracompact (Michael, 1953). When a T_1 -space X has the hereditarily weak topology with respect to a closed covering $\{F_\lambda\}$, then X is paracompact Hausdorff (normal, completely normal or perfectly normal) if and only if each

F_λ is (Morita, 1954; Michael, 1956). In particular, every CW-complex is paracompact and perfectly normal (Morita, 1953).

Y. Normality and Paracompactness of Direct Products

A topological space X is discrete if $X \times Y$ is normal for any normal space Y (M. Atsugi and M. Rudin, 1978). There are a paracompact Lindelöf space X and a separable metric space Y such that the product $X \times Y$ is not normal (Michael, 1963). The following are conditions under which the products are normal or paracompact. Let m be an infinite \aleph -cardinal number. A topological space X is called m -paracompact if every open covering consisting of at most m open sets admits a locally finite open covering as its refinement. When m is countable, it is called **countably paracompact**. If X has an open base of at most m members, m -paracompact means paracompact. The following conditions are equivalent for a topological space X : (1) X is normal and countably paracompact; (2) The product $X \times Y$ is normal and countably paracompact for any compact metric space Y ; (3) $X \times I$ is normal, where $I = [0, 1]$ (C. H. Dowker, 1951). Rudin (1971) constructed an example of a collection-wise normal space (\rightarrow Section AA) that is not countably paracompact. When m is general the following conditions are equivalent: (1) X is normal and m -paracompact; (2) If Y is a compact Hausdorff space with an open base consisting of at most m sets, then $X \times Y$ is normal and m -paracompact; (3) $X \times I^m$ is normal; (4) $X \times \{0, 1\}^m$ is normal (Morita, 1961). In particular, the product $X \times Y$ of a paracompact Hausdorff space X and a compact Hausdorff space Y is paracompact (Dieudonné, 1944).

A topological space X is called a **P-space** if it satisfies the following conditions: Let Ω be an arbitrary set and $\{G(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i) \mid \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i \in \Omega, i = 1, 2, \dots\}$ be a family of open sets such that $G(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i) \subset G(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i, \alpha_{i+1})$. Then there is a family of closed sets $\{F(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i) \mid \alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i \in \Omega, i = 1, 2, \dots\}$ such that $F(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i) \subset G(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i)$ and that if $\bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} G(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i) = X$ for a sequence $\{\alpha_i\}$, then $\bigcup_{i=1}^{\infty} F(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_i) = X$. Perfectly normal spaces, countably compact spaces, Čech-complete paracompact spaces and σ -compact regular spaces are P-spaces. Normal P-spaces are countably paracompact. A Hausdorff space X is a normal (resp. paracompact) P-space if and only if the product $X \times Y$ is normal (resp. paracompact) for any metric space Y (Morita, *Math. Ann.*, 154 1964).

The product $X \times Y$ of locally compact Hausdorff spaces X and Y is a locally compact Hausdorff space. If, in this case, X and Y are paracompact, then so is the product. If the direct product space $\prod_\lambda X_\lambda$ of metric spaces is normal, then X_λ are compact except for at most countably many λ , and hence the product space is paracompact (A. H. Stone, 1948).

A class \mathcal{C} of topological spaces is called **countably productive** if for a sequence X_i of members of \mathcal{C} their product $\prod X_i$ is again a member of \mathcal{C} . The classes of (complete) (separable) metric spaces form such examples. The class of paracompact and Čech-complete spaces is countably productive (Z. Frolík, 1960). A topological space X is called a **p-space** if it is completely regular and there is a sequence \mathfrak{M}_i of families of open sets in the Stone-Čech compactification $\beta(X)$ such that, for each point $x \in X$, $x \in \bigcap S(x, \mathfrak{M}_i) \subset X$ (Arkhangel'skii, 1963). X is called an **M-space** if there is a normal sequence \mathfrak{M}_i of open coverings of X such that if $K_1 \supset K_2 \supset \dots$ is a sequence of nonempty closed sets and $K_i \subset S(x, \mathfrak{M}_i)$, $i = 1, 2, \dots$, for an $x \in X$, then $\bigcap K_i \neq \emptyset$ (Morita, 1963). The class of paracompact p-spaces and that of paracompact Hausdorff M-spaces are the same and are countably productive. For a covering \mathfrak{F} of X and an $x \in X$ we set $C(x, \mathfrak{F}) = \bigcap \{F \mid x \in F \in \mathfrak{F}\}$. X is called a **Σ -space** if X admits a sequence \mathfrak{F}_i of locally finite closed coverings such that if $K_1 \supset K_2 \supset \dots$ is a sequence of nonempty closed sets and $K_i \subset C(x, \mathfrak{F}_i)$, $i = 1, 2, \dots$, for an $x \in X$, then $\bigcap K_i \neq \emptyset$ (K. Nagami, 1969). Σ -spaces are P-spaces. The class of all paracompact Σ -spaces is also countably productive. Among the above classes each one is always wider than its predecessors. Yet the product $X \times Y$ of a paracompact Hausdorff P-space X and a paracompact Hausdorff Σ -space Y is paracompact. Other examples of countably productive classes are the Suslin spaces and the Luzin spaces (\rightarrow Section CC) introduced by Bourbaki (1958), the **stratifiable spaces** by J. G. Ceder (1961) and C. J. R. Borges (1966), the **\aleph_0 -spaces** by Michael (1966) and the **σ -spaces** by A. Okuyama (1967).

Z. Strongly Paracompact Spaces

Regular Lindelöf spaces are strongly paracompact. Conversely, if a connected regular space is strongly paracompact, then it is a Lindelöf space (Morita, 1948). Hence a connected non-separable metric space is not strongly paracompact. Paracompact locally compact Hausdorff spaces and uniformly locally compact Hausdorff spaces are strongly paracompact.

These classes of spaces coincide under suitable \dagger uniform structures.

AA. Collectionwise Normal Spaces

A Hausdorff space X is called a **collectionwise normal space** if for each discrete collection $\{F_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$ of closed sets of X there exists a disjoint collection $\{U_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$ of open sets with $F_\alpha \subset U_\alpha$ ($\alpha \in A$) (R. H. Bing, 1951). If X satisfies an analogous condition for the case where each F_α is a singleton, X is called a **collectionwise Hausdorff space**. Paracompact Hausdorff spaces are collectionwise normal (Bing). Every point-finite open covering of a collectionwise normal space has a locally finite open refinement (Michael, Nagami).

A topological space X is called a **developable space** if it admits a sequence \mathcal{U}_i , $i = 1, 2, \dots$, of open coverings such that, for each point $x \in X$, $\{S(x, \mathcal{U}_i) | i = 1, 2, \dots\}$ forms a base for the neighborhood system of x (R. L. Moore, 1916). A regular developable space is called a **Moore space**. The question of whether or not every normal Moore space is metrizable is known as the **normal Moore space problem** (\rightarrow 273 Metric Spaces K). Collectionwise normal Moore spaces are metrizable (Bing).

BB. Real-Compact Spaces

A completely regular space X is called **real-compact** if X is complete under the smallest \dagger uniformity such that each continuous real-valued function on X is uniformly continuous (\rightarrow 422 Uniform Spaces). This notion was introduced by E. Hewitt (*Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 64 (1948)) under the name of **Q-space**, and independently by L. Nachbin (*Proc. International Congress of Mathematicians*, Cambridge, Mass., 1950).

A Lindelöf space is real-compact. If X_1 and X_2 are real-compact spaces such that the rings $C(X_1)$ and $C(X_2)$ of continuous real-valued functions on X_1 and X_2 are isomorphic, then X_1 and X_2 are homeomorphic (Hewitt). If X is real-compact, then X is homeomorphic to a closed subspace of the product space of copies of the space of real numbers, and conversely.

CC. Images and Inverse Images of Topological Spaces

Each continuous mapping $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is decomposed into the product $i \circ h \circ p$ of continuous mappings $p: X \rightarrow X/\sim$, $h: X/\sim \rightarrow f(X)$ and $i: f(X) \rightarrow Y$, where \sim is the equivalence relation such that $x_1 \sim x_2$ if and only if $f(x_1) = f(x_2)$.

The mapping f is open (resp. closed) if and only if these mappings are all open (resp. closed). Then h is a homeomorphism. The image of a paracompact Hausdorff space under a closed continuous mapping is paracompact (Michael, 1957).

Let $f: X \rightarrow Y$ be a perfect surjection. Then Y is called a **perfect image** of X and X a **perfect inverse image** of Y . If, in this case, one of X and Y satisfies a property such as being compact, locally compact, σ -compact, Lindelöf, or countably compact, then the other also satisfies the property. When X and Y are completely regular, the same is true with regard to Čech completeness. Properties such as regularity, normality, complete normality, perfect normality, and the second countability axiom are preserved in perfect images; but complete regularity and strong paracompactness are not. Perfect images of metric spaces are also metrizable (S. Hanai and Morita, A. H. Stone, 1956). Conversely, perfect inverse images of paracompact spaces are paracompact. If a Hausdorff space is a perfect inverse image of a regular space (resp. k -space; \rightarrow below), then it is a regular space (resp. k -space). Every paracompact Čech-complete space is a perfect inverse image of a \dagger complete metric space (Z. Frolik, 1961). A completely regular space is a paracompact p -space if and only if it is a perfect inverse image of a metric space (Arkhangel'skiĭ, 1963). A mapping $f: X \rightarrow Y$ is called **quasi-perfect** if it is closed and continuous and the inverse image $f^{-1}(y)$ of each point $y \in Y$ is countably compact. A topological space X is an M -space if and only if there is a quasi-perfect mapping from X onto a metric space Y (Morita, 1964). Let $f: X \rightarrow Y$ be a quasi-perfect surjection. If one of X and Y is a Σ -space, then the other is also a Σ -space (Nagami, 1969).

A topological space X is called a **Fréchet-Uryson space** (or a **Fréchet space**) if the closure of an arbitrary set $A \subset X$ is the set of all limits of sequences in A (Arkhangel'skiĭ, 1963). X is called a **sequential space** if $A \subset X$ is closed whenever A contains all the limits of sequences in A (S. P. Franklin, 1965). X is called a **k' -space** if the closure of an arbitrary set A is the set of all points adherent to the intersection $A \cap K$ for a compact set K in X (Arkhangel'skiĭ, 1963). X is called a **k -space** if $A \subset X$ is closed whenever $A \cap K$ is closed in K for any compact set K (\rightarrow Arkhangel'skiĭ, *Trudy Moskov. Mat. Obshch.*, 13 (1965)). Spaces satisfying the first countability axiom are Fréchet-Uryson spaces. The Fréchet-Uryson spaces (resp. sequential spaces) are characterized as the images under hereditarily quotient (resp. quotient) mappings of metric spaces or locally compact metric

spaces. Similarly the k' -spaces (resp. k -spaces) coincide with the images under hereditarily quotient (resp. quotient) mappings of locally compact spaces. The image of a metric space under a closed continuous mapping is called a **Lashnev space**. Any subspace of a Fréchet-Uryson space is a Fréchet-Uryson space. Conversely, a Hausdorff space is a Fréchet-Uryson space if any of its subspaces is a k -space. Čech-complete spaces are k -spaces. A Hausdorff space is called a **Suslin space** (resp. **Luzin space**) if it is the image under a continuous surjection (resp. continuous bijection) of a complete separable metric space (Bourbaki [9]; also \rightarrow 22 Analytic Sets).

In Figs. 1, 2, and 3, the relationships be-

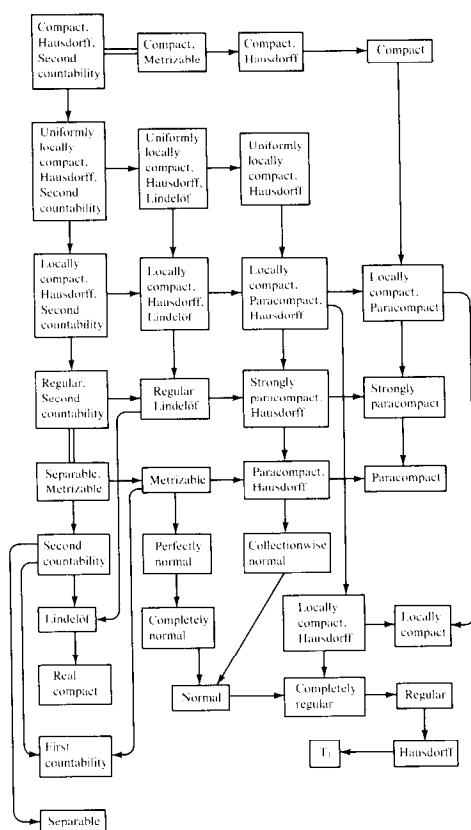


Fig. 1

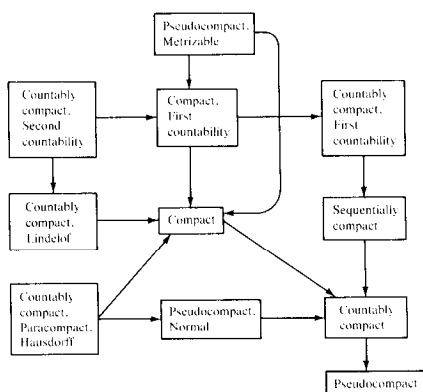


Fig. 2

tween the various properties are indicated by the arrows.

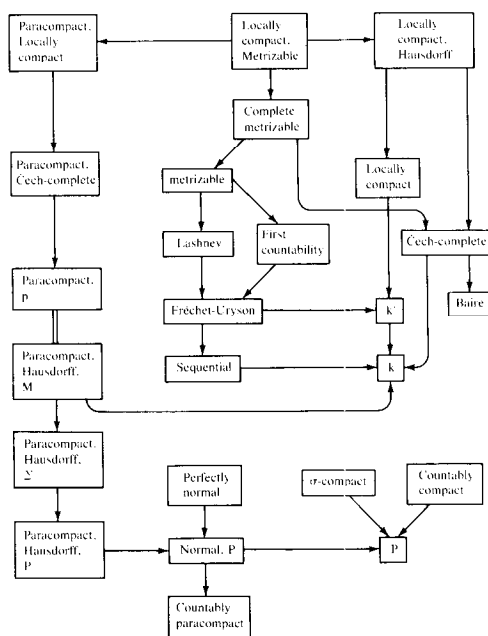


Fig. 3

References

- [1] M. Fréchet, Sur quelques points du calcul fonctionnel, Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo, 22 (1906), 1–74.
- [2] F. Riesz, Stetigkeitsbegriff und abstrakte Mengenlehre, Atti del IV Congr. Intern. Mat. Roma 1908, II, 18–24, Rome, 1909.
- [3] F. Hausdorff, Grundzüge der Mengenlehre, Teubner, 1914.
- [4] M. Fréchet, Les espaces abstraits, Gauthier-Villars, 1928.
- [5] C. Kuratowski, Topologie, I, Monograf. Mat., I, 1933, revised edition, 1948; II, 1950.
- [6] W. Sierpiński, Introduction to general topology, University of Toronto Press, 1934.
- [7] P. S. Aleksandrov (Alexandroff) and H. Hopf, Topologie I, Springer, 1935.
- [8] J. W. Tukey, Convergence and uniformity in topology, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1940.
- [9] N. Bourbaki, Eléments de mathématique, III. Topologie générale, 1940–1949; new edition, 1970–1974; Hermann, English translation, General topology, Addison-Wesley, 1966.
- [10] J. L. Kelley, General topology, Van Nostrand, 1955.
- [11] J. Dugundji, Topology, Allyn and Bacon, 1966.
- [12] J. Nagata, Modern general topology, North-Holland, 1968.
- [13] R. Engelking, General topology, Polish Scientific Publ., 1977.

- [14] P. S. Aleksandrov, Some results in the theory of topological spaces, obtained within the last twenty-five years, *Russian Math. Surveys*, 16, no. 2 (1960), 23–83.
- [15] A. V. Arkhangel'skii, Mappings and spaces, *Russian Math. Surveys*, 21, no. 4 (1966), 115–162.
- [16] Y. Kodama and K. Nagami, *Theory of topological spaces* (in Japanese), Iwanami, 1974.
- [17] L. Steen and J. Seebach, Jr., *Counterexamples in topology*, Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1970.
- [18] L. Gillman and M. Jerison, *Rings of continuous functions*, Van Nostrand, 1960.
- [19] S. A. Gaal, *Point set topology*, Academic Press, 1964.
- [20] E. Čech, *Topological spaces*, Interscience, 1966.
- [21] R. C. Walker, *The Stone-Čech compactification*, Springer, 1974.
- [22] R. A. Alò and H. L. Shapiro, *Normal topological spaces*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1974.
- [23] M. D. Weir, *Hewitt-Nachbin spaces*, North-Holland, 1975.

426 (IX.1) Topology

The term **topology** means a branch of mathematics that deals with topological properties of geometric figures or point sets. A classical result in topology is the Euler relation on polyhedra: Let α_0 , α_1 , and α_2 be the numbers of vertices, edges, and faces of a polyhedron homeomorphic to the 2-dimensional sphere; then $\alpha_0 - \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 = 2$ (*Euler-Poincaré formula for the 2-dimensional case; actually, the formula was known to Descartes). It is one of the earliest results in topology. In 1833, C. F. Gauss used integrals to define the notion of *linking numbers of two closed curves in a space (→ 99 Degree of Mapping). It was in J. B. Listing's classical work *Vorstudien zur Topologie* (1847) that the term *topology* first appeared in print.

In the 19th century, B. Riemann published many works on function theory in which topological methods played an essential role. He solved the homeomorphism problem for compact surfaces (→ 410 Surfaces); his result is basic in the theory of algebraic functions. In the same period, mathematicians began to study topological properties of n -dimensional polyhedra. E. Betti considered the notion of *homology. H. Poincaré, however, was the first to recognize the importance of a topological

approach to analysis in general; he defined the *homology groups of a complex [1]. He obtained the famous *Poincaré duality theorem and defined the *fundamental group. He considered *polyhedra as the basic objects in topology, and deduced topological properties utilizing *complexes obtained from polyhedra by *simplicial decompositions. He thus constructed a branch of topology known as **combinatorial topology**.

In its beginning stages combinatorial topology dealt only with polyhedra. In the late 1920s, however, it became possible to apply combinatorial methods to general *compact spaces. P. S. Alexandrov introduced the concept of approximation of a *compact metric space by an inverse sequence of complexes and the definition of homology groups for these spaces. His idea had a precursor in the notion of *simplicial approximations of continuous mappings, which was introduced by L. E. J. Brouwer in 1911. In 1932, E. Čech defined homology groups for arbitrary spaces utilizing the *inductive limit of the homology groups of polyhedra; and *Čech cohomology groups for arbitrary spaces were also defined. S. Eilenberg established *singular (co)homology theory using *singular chain complexes (1944). The axiomatic approach to (co)homology theory is due to Eilenberg and Steenrod, who gave axioms for (co)homology theory in a most comprehensive way and unified various (co)homology theories (1945) (→ 201 Homology Theory).

The approach using algebraic methods has progressed extensively in connection with the development of homology theory. This branch is called **algebraic topology**. In the 1920s and 1930s, a number of remarkable results in algebraic topology, such as the *Alexander duality theorem, the *Lefschetz fixed-point theorem, and the *Hopf invariant, were obtained. In the late 1930s, W. Hurewicz developed the theory of higher-dimensional *homotopy groups (→ 153 Fixed-Point Theorems, 201 Homology Theory, 202 Homotopy Theory). J. H. C. Whitehead introduced the concept of *CW complexes and proved an algebraic characterization of the homotopy equivalence of CW complexes. N. Steenrod developed *obstruction theory utilizing *squaring operations in the cohomology ring (1947). Subsequently, the theory of *cohomology operations was introduced (→ 64 Cohomology Operations, 305 Obstructions). The theory of *spectral sequences for *fiber spaces was originated by J. Leray (1945) and J.-P. Serre (1951) and was successfully applied to cohomology operations and homotopy theory by H. Cartan and Serre (1954) (→ 148 Fiber Spaces, 200 Homological Algebra). The study of the combinatorial

structures of polyhedra and \dagger piecewise linear mappings has flourished since 1940 in the works of Whitehead, S. S. Cairns, and others. S. Smale and, independently, J. Stallings solved the \dagger generalized Poincaré conjecture in 1960. The \dagger Hauptvermutung in combinatorial topology was solved negatively in 1961 by B. Mazur and J. Milnor. E. C. Zeeman proved the unknottedness of codimension 3 (1962). The recent development of the theory in conjunction with progress in \dagger differential topology is notable. The Hauptvermutung for combinatorial manifolds was solved in 1969 by Kirby, Siebenmann, and Wall. In particular, there exist different combinatorial structures on tori of dimension ≥ 5 , and there are topological manifolds that do not admit any combinatorial structure (\rightarrow 65 Combinatorial Manifolds, 114 Differential Topology, 235 Knot Theory).

The global theory of differentiable manifolds started from the algebraic-topological study of \dagger fiber bundles and \dagger characteristic classes in the 1940s. R. Thom's fundamental theorem of \dagger cobordism (1954) was obtained through extensive use of cohomology operations and homotopy groups. Milnor (1956) showed that the sphere S^7 may have differentiable structures that are essentially distinct from each other by using \dagger Morse theory and the \dagger index theorem of Thom and Hirzebruch. These results led to the creation of a new field, \dagger differential topology (\rightarrow 56 Characteristic Classes, 114 Differential Topology).

Since 1959, A. Grothendieck, M. F. Atiyah, F. Hirzebruch, and J. F. Adams have developed \dagger K-theory, which is a generalized cohomology theory constructed using stable classes of \dagger vector bundles (\rightarrow 237 K-Theory).

\dagger Knot theory, an interesting branch of topology, was one of the classical branches of topology and is now studied in connection with the theory of low-dimensional manifolds (\rightarrow 235 Knot Theory).

On the other hand, G. Cantor established general set theory in the 1870s and introduced such notions as \dagger accumulation points, \dagger open sets, and \dagger closed sets in Euclidean space. The first important generalization of this theory was the concept of \dagger topological space, which was proposed by M. Fréchet and developed by F. Hausdorff at the beginning of the 20th century. The theory subsequently became a new field of study, called **general topology** or **set-theoretic topology**. It deals with the topological properties of point sets in a Euclidean or topological space without reference to polyhedra. There has been a remarkable development of the theory since about 1920, notably by Polish mathematicians S. Janiszewski, W. Sierpiński, S. Mazurkiewicz, C. Kuratow-

ski, and others. The contributions of R. L. Moore, G. T. Whyburn, and K. Menger are also important (\rightarrow 382 Shape Theory, 425 Topological Spaces).

Topology is not only a foundation of various theories, but is also itself one of the most important branches of mathematics. It consists of \dagger homology theory, \dagger homotopy theory, \dagger differential topology, \dagger combinatorial manifolds, \dagger K-theory, \dagger transformation groups, \dagger theory of singularities, \dagger foliations, \dagger dynamical systems, \dagger catastrophe theory, etc. It continues to develop in interaction with other branches of mathematics (\rightarrow 51 Catastrophe Theory, 126 Dynamical Systems, 154 Foliations, 418 Theory of Singularities, 431 Transformation Groups).

References

- [1] H. Poincaré, *Analysis situs*, J. Ecole Polytech., (2) 1 (1895), 1–121. (Oeuvres, Gauthier-Villars, 1953, vol. 6, 193–288.)
- [2] P. S. Aleksandrov and H. Hopf, *Topologie I*, Springer, 1935 (Chelsea, 1965).
- [3] S. Lefschetz, *Algebraic topology*, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1942.
- [4] S. Eilenberg and N. E. Steenrod, *Foundations of algebraic topology*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1952.

427 (IX.12) Topology of Lie Groups and Homogeneous Spaces

A. General Remarks

Among various topological structures of \dagger Lie groups and \dagger homogeneous spaces, the structures of their \dagger (co)homology groups and \dagger homotopy groups are of special interest. Let G/H be a homogeneous space, where G is a Lie group and H is its closed subgroup. Then $(G, G/H, H)$ is a \dagger fiber bundle, where G/H is the base space and H is the fiber. Thus homology and homotopy theory of fiber bundles (\dagger spectral sequences and \dagger homotopy exact sequences) can be applied. The \dagger cellular decomposition of \dagger Stiefel manifolds, \dagger Grassmann manifolds, and \dagger Kähler homogeneous spaces are known. Concerning \dagger symmetric Riemannian spaces, we have various interesting methods, such as the use of invariant differential forms in connection with real cohomology rings and the use of \dagger Morse theory in order to establish relations between the diagrams of symmetric Riemannian spaces G/H and homological properties of their \dagger loop spaces and

some related homogeneous spaces [4, 5]. Lie groups can be regarded as special cases of homogeneous spaces or symmetric spaces, although their group structures are of particular importance. A connected Lie group is homeomorphic to the product of one of its compact subgroups and a Euclidean space (*Cartan-Mal'tsev-Iwasawa theorem). Hence the topological structure of a connected Lie group is essentially determined by the topological structures of its compact subgroups.

B. Homology of Compact Lie Groups

Let G be a connected compact Lie group. Since G is an tH -space whose multiplication is given by its group multiplication h , $H^*(G; k)$ and $H_*(G; k)$ are dual t Hopf algebras for any coefficient field k . Also, $H^*(G; k)$ is isomorphic as a t graded algebra to the tensor product of t elementary Hopf algebras (\rightarrow 203 Hopf Algebras), but no factor of the tensor product is isomorphic to a polynomial ring because G is a finite t polyhedron. In particular, if $k = \mathbf{R}$ (the field of real numbers), then $H^*(G; \mathbf{R}) \cong \bigwedge_{\mathbf{R}}(x_1, \dots, x_l)$ (the exterior (Grassmann) algebra over \mathbf{R} with generators x_1, \dots, x_l of odd degrees). Here we can choose generators x_i such that $h^*(x_i) = 1 \otimes x_i + x_i \otimes 1$, $1 \leq i \leq l$. The x_i that satisfy this property are said to be **primitive**. Since in this case the t comultiplication h^* is commutative, the multiplication h_* is also commutative and the Hopf algebra $H_*(G; \mathbf{R})$ is an exterior algebra generated by elements y_i having the same degree as x_i ($i = 1, \dots, l$). When the characteristic of the coefficient field k is nonzero, h_* need not be commutative.

The dimension of a t maximal torus of a connected compact Lie group G is independent of the choice of the maximal torus and is called the **rank** of G . The rank of G coincides with the number l of generators of $H^*(G; \mathbf{R})$. E. Cartan studied $H^*(G; \mathbf{R})$ by utilizing invariant differential forms. The cohomology theory of Lie algebras originated from the method he used in his study. $H^*(G; \mathbf{R})$ is invariant under t local isomorphisms of groups G . For t classical compact simple Lie groups G , R. Brauer calculated $H^*(G; \mathbf{R})$, while C.-T. Yen and C. Chevalley calculated $H^*(G; \mathbf{R})$ for t exceptional compact simple Lie groups (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 6.IV). The degrees of the generators have group-theoretic meaning. Suppose that the degree of the i th generator is $2m_i - 1$, $1 \leq i \leq l$, and that $m_1 \leq m_2 \leq \dots \leq m_l$. When G is simple, there is a relation $m_i + m_{l-i+1} = \text{constant}$ (Chevalley's duality). We have a proof for this property that does not use classification.

The cohomology groups $H^*(G; \mathbf{Z}_p)$ (where p

is a prime and $\mathbf{Z}_p = \mathbf{Z}/p\mathbf{Z}$) have been determined as graded algebras for all compact simple Lie groups by A. Borel, S. Araki, and P. Baum and W. Browder (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 6.IV).

C. Cohomology of Classifying Spaces

Let (E_G, B_G, G) be a t universal bundle of a connected compact Lie group G and p a prime or zero. Suppose that the integral cohomology of G has no p -torsion (no torsion when $p = 0$). Then $H^*(G; \mathbf{Z}_p) = \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_p}(x'_1, \dots, x'_l)$ ($H^*(G; \mathbf{Z}) = \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}}(x'_1, \dots, x'_l)$ when $p = 0$), an exterior algebra with $\deg x'_i = 2m_i - 1$, $1 \leq i \leq l$, and the generators x'_i can be chosen to be t transgressive in the spectral sequence of the universal bundle. Let y_1, \dots, y_l be their transgression images. Then $\deg y_i = 2m_i$, $1 \leq i \leq l$, and the cohomology of the t classifying space B_G over \mathbf{Z}_p (resp. \mathbf{Z}) is the polynomial algebra with generators y_1, \dots, y_l . Let T be a maximal torus of G . Then $B_T = E_G/T$ is a classifying space of T , the t Weyl group $W = N(T)/T$ of G with respect to T operates on B_T by t right translations, and $H^*(T; \mathbf{Z})$ has no torsion and is an exterior algebra with l generators of degree 1. Thus $H^*(B_T; \mathbf{Z}) = \mathbf{Z}[u_1, \dots, u_l]$, $\deg u_i = 2$. Let I_W be the subalgebra of $H^*(B_T; \mathbf{Z})$ consisting of W -invariant polynomials, and let ρ be the projection of the bundle $(B_T, B_G, G/T)$. Then under the assumption that G has no p -torsion (no torsion), the cohomology mapping ρ^* over $\mathbf{Z}_p(\mathbf{Z})$ is monomorphic, and $\rho^*: H^*(B_G; \mathbf{Z}_p) \cong I_W \otimes \mathbf{Z}_p$ ($H^*(B_G; \mathbf{Z}) \cong I_W$) [1]. In the case of real coefficients, we have $H^*(B_G; \mathbf{R}) \cong I_W \otimes \mathbf{R}$ for all G , and m_1, \dots, m_l are the degrees of generators of the ring I_W of W -invariant polynomials.

Example (1) $G = U(n)$: $l = n$ and G has no torsion. W operates on $H^*(B_T; \mathbf{Z})$ as the group of all permutations of generators u_1, \dots, u_n . Thus generators of I_W are the t elementary symmetric polynomials $\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_n$ of u_1, \dots, u_n . Let c_1, \dots, c_n be the t universal Chern classes; then $\rho^*(c_i) = \sigma_i$ and $H^*(B_{U(n)}; \mathbf{Z}) = \mathbf{Z}[c_1, \dots, c_n]$.

Example (2) $G = SO(n)$: $l = [n/2]$ and G has no p -torsion for $p \neq 2$. W operates on $H^*(B_T; \mathbf{Z})$ as the group generated by the permutations of generators u_1, \dots, u_l and by the transformations $\sigma(u_i) = e_i u_i$, $e_i = \pm 1$, where the number of u_i for which $e_i = -1$ is arbitrary for odd n and even for even n . Thus the generators of I_W are the elementary symmetric polynomials $\sigma'_1, \dots, \sigma'_l$ of u_1^2, \dots, u_l^2 for odd n and $\sigma'_1, \dots, \sigma'_{l-1}$ and $u_1 \dots u_l$ for even n . Let p_1, \dots, p_l be the t universal Pontryagin classes and χ be the t universal Euler-Poincaré class in the case of even n . Then $\rho^*(p_i) = \sigma'_i$ and $\rho^*(\chi) = u_1 \dots u_l$ for integral cohomology. Denote the mod p

Topology of Lie Groups, Homogeneous Spaces

reduction of p_i and χ by \bar{p}_i and $\bar{\chi}$, respectively. Then $H^*(B_{SO(2l+1)}; \mathbb{Z}_p) = \mathbb{Z}_p[\bar{p}_1, \dots, \bar{p}_l]$ and $H^*(B_{SO(2l)}; \mathbb{Z}_p) = \mathbb{Z}_p[\bar{p}_1, \dots, \bar{p}_{l-1}, \bar{\chi}]$ ($p = 0$ or > 2).

Example (3) $G = O(n)$: If we use the subgroup Q consisting of all diagonal matrices instead of T , then we can make a similar argument for \mathbb{Z}_2 -cohomology. Since $Q \cong (\mathbb{Z}_2)^n$, $H^*(B_Q; \mathbb{Z}_2) = \mathbb{Z}_2[v_1, \dots, v_n]$ ($\mathbb{Z}_2[v_1, \dots, v_n]$ is a polynomial ring with $\deg v_i = 1$), and $W_2 = N(Q)/Q$ operates on B_Q by right translations and on $H^*(B_Q; \mathbb{Z}_2)$ as the group of all permutations of v_1, \dots, v_n . Let I_{W_2} be the subalgebra of $H^*(B_Q; \mathbb{Z}_2)$ consisting of all W_2 -invariant polynomials. Then I_{W_2} is a polynomial ring generated by the elementary symmetric polynomials $\sigma_1'', \dots, \sigma_n''$ of v_1, \dots, v_n . The projection $\rho_2: B_Q \rightarrow B_{O(n)}$ induces a monomorphic cohomology mapping ρ_2^* over \mathbb{Z}_2 , and $\rho_2^*: H^*(B_{O(n)}; \mathbb{Z}_2) \cong I_{W_2}$. Let w_1, \dots, w_n be the * universal Stiefel-Whitney classes. Then $\rho_2^*(w_i) = \sigma_i''$ and $H^*(B_{O(n)}; \mathbb{Z}_2) = \mathbb{Z}_2[w_1, \dots, w_n]$ [2].

D. Grassmann Manifolds

The following manifolds are called **Grassmann manifolds**: The manifold $M_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{R})$ consisting of all n -subspaces of \mathbb{R}^{n+m} ; the manifold $\tilde{M}_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{R})$ consisting of all oriented n -subspaces of \mathbb{R}^{n+m} ; and the manifold $M_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{C})$ consisting of all complex n -subspaces of \mathbb{C}^{n+m} . These are expressed as quotient spaces as follows: $M_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{R}) = O(n+m)/O(n) \times O(m)$, $\tilde{M}_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{R}) = SO(n+m)/SO(n) \times SO(m)$, and $M_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{C}) = U(n+m)/U(n) \times U(m)$. They admit cellular decompositions by * Schubert varieties from which their cohomologies can be computed (\rightarrow 56 Characteristic Classes). $M_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{R})$ and $\tilde{M}_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{R})$ have no p -torsion for $p \neq 2$, and $M_{n+m,n}(\mathbb{C})$ has no torsion. These spaces are m -, m -, and $(2m+1)$ -classifying spaces of $O(n)$, $SO(n)$, and $U(n)$, respectively. Hence their cohomologies are isomorphic to those of B_G ($G = O(n)$, $SO(n)$, $U(n)$) in dimensions $< m$, $< m$, and $\leq 2m$, respectively; and they are polynomial rings generated by suitable universal characteristic classes in low dimensions.

E. Cohomologies of Homogeneous Spaces G/U (Rank $G = \text{Rank } U$)

Let G be a compact connected Lie group and U a closed subgroup of G with the same rank as G . Denote the degrees of generators of $H^*(G; \mathbb{R})$ and $H^*(U; \mathbb{R})$ by $2m_1 - 1, \dots, 2m_l - 1$, and $2n_1 - 1, \dots, 2n_l - 1$, respectively. Then the real-coefficient * Poincaré polynomial P_0 of the homogeneous space G/U is given by $P_0(G/U, t) = \prod_i (1 - t^{2m_i}) / (1 - t^{2n_i})$ (G. Hirsch). When G , U , and G/U have no p -torsion, the same formula

is valid for the \mathbb{Z}_p -coefficient Poincaré polynomial [1]. When U is the * centralizer of a torus, G/U has a complex analytic cellular decomposition [3]. Hence G/U has no torsion in this case. This was proved by R. Bott and H. Samelson by utilizing Morse theory [5] (\rightarrow 279 Morse Theory). The case $U = T$ has also been studied.

F. Homotopy Groups of Compact Lie Groups

The * fundamental group $\pi_1(G)$ of a compact Lie group G is Abelian. Furthermore, $\pi_2(G) = 0$. If we apply Morse theory to G , the variational completeness of G can be utilized to show that the loop space ΩG has no torsion and that its odd-dimensional cohomologies vanish [4]. Consequently, when G is non-Abelian and simple, we have $\pi_3(G) \cong \mathbb{Z}$. A * periodicity theorem on * stable homotopy groups of classical groups proved by Bott is used in K -theory (\rightarrow 202 Homotopy Theory; 237 K -Theory). (For explicit forms of homotopy groups \rightarrow Appendix A, Table 6.VI).

Homotopy groups of Stiefel manifolds are used to define characteristic classes by * obstruction cocycles (\rightarrow 147 Fiber Bundles; Appendix A, Table 6.VI).

References

- [1] A. Borel, Sur la cohomologie des espaces fibrés principaux et des espaces homogènes de groupes de Lie compacts, Ann. Math., (2) 57 (1953), 115–207.
- [2] A. Borel, La cohomologie mod 2 de certains espaces homogènes, Comment. Math. Helv., 27 (1953), 165–197.
- [3] A. Borel, Kählerian coset spaces of semi-simple Lie groups, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US, 40 (1954), 1147–1151.
- [4] R. Bott, An application of the Morse theory to the topology of Lie-groups, Bull. Soc. Math. France, 84 (1956), 251–281.
- [5] R. Bott and H. Samelson, Applications of the theory of Morse to symmetric spaces, Amer. J. Math., 80 (1958), 964–1029.

428 (XIII.17) Total Differential Equations

A. Pfaff's Problem

A **total differential equation** is an equation of the form

$$\omega = 0, \quad (1)$$

where ω is a * differential 1-form $\sum_{i=1}^n a_i(x) dx_i$ on a manifold X . A submanifold M of X is called an **integral manifold** of (1) if each vector ξ of the * tangent vector space $T_x(M)$ of M at every point x on M satisfies $\omega(\xi)=0$. We denote the maximal dimension of integral manifolds of (1) by $m(\omega)$. J. F. Pfaff showed that $m(\omega) \geq (n-1)/2$ for any ω . The problem of determining $m(\omega)$ for a given form ω is called **Pfaff's problem**. This problem was solved by G. Frobenius, J. G. Darboux, and others as follows: Form an * alternating matrix

$$(a_{ij})_{1 \leq i, j \leq n} \quad (2)$$

from the coefficients of the * exterior derivative of ω ,

$$d\omega = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{i=1}^n \sum_{j=1}^n a_{ij}(x) dx_i \wedge dx_j,$$

where $a_{ij} = \partial a_j / \partial x_i - \partial a_i / \partial x_j$. Suppose that the rank of (2) is $2t$. Then the rank of the matrix

$$\begin{pmatrix} a_{ij} & -a_i \\ a_j & 0 \end{pmatrix}_{1 \leq i, j \leq n}$$

is $2t$ or $2t+2$. In the former case $m(\omega) = n-t$, and ω can be expressed in the form

$$\sum_{i=1}^t u_{2i-1} du_{2i}$$

by choosing a suitable coordinate system (u_1, \dots, u_n) . In the latter case $m(\omega) = n-t-1$, and ω can be expressed in the form

$$\sum_{i=1}^t u_{2i-1} du_{2i} + du_{2t+1}$$

by choosing a suitable coordinate system (u_1, \dots, u_n) . This theorem is called **Darboux's theorem**.

A 1-form ω is called a **Pfaffian form**, and equation (1) is called a **Pfaffian equation**. A system of equations $\omega_i = 0$ ($1 \leq i \leq s$) for 1-form ω_i is called a **system of Pfaffian equations** or a **system of total differential equations** [6, 12, 26].

B. Systems of Differential Forms and Systems of Partial Differential Equations

Let Ω be a system of differential forms ω_i^p , $0 \leq p \leq n$, $1 \leq i \leq v_p$, on X , where ω_i^p is a p -form on X . A submanifold M of X is called an **integral manifold** of $\Omega=0$ if for each p ($0 \leq p \leq \dim M$), any p -dimensional subspace E_p of $T_x(M)$ satisfies $\omega_i^p(E_p) = 0$ ($1 \leq i \leq v_p$) at every point x on M . Denote the maximal dimension of integral manifolds of $\Omega=0$ by $m(\Omega)$. The problem of determining $m(\Omega)$ for a given system Ω is called the **generalized Pfaff problem**, and will be explained in later sections. By fixing a local coordinate system of X and

dividing it into two systems (x_1, \dots, x_r) and (y_1, \dots, y_m) ($m = n-r$), we can consider the problem of finding an integral manifold of $\Omega=0$ defined by

$$y_\alpha = y_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_r), \quad 1 \leq \alpha \leq m.$$

This problem can be reduced to solving a system of partial differential equations of the first order on the submanifold N with the local coordinate system (x_1, \dots, x_r) .

Consider a system of partial differential equations $\Phi=0$ of order l :

$$\varphi_\lambda(x_i, y_\alpha, p_\beta^{j_1 \dots j_r}) = 0, \quad 1 \leq \lambda \leq s, \quad (3)$$

with $1 \leq i \leq r$, $1 \leq \alpha, \beta \leq m$, $j_1 + \dots + j_r \leq l$, where

$$p_\beta^{j_1 \dots j_r} = \frac{\partial^{j_1 + \dots + j_r} y_\beta}{\partial x_1^{j_1} \dots \partial x_r^{j_r}}. \quad (4)$$

A submanifold defined by $y_\alpha = y_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_r)$, $1 \leq \alpha \leq m$, is called a **solution** of $\Phi=0$ if it satisfies (3) identically. The problem of determining whether a given system $\Phi=0$ has a solution was solved by C. Riquier, who showed that any system can be prolonged either to a passive orthonomic system or to an incompatible system by a finite number of steps. A system of partial differential equations is called a **prolongation** of another system if the former contains the latter and they have the same solution. A **passive orthonomic system** is one whose general solution can be parametrized by an infinite number of arbitrary constants. A solution containing parameters is called a **general solution** if by specifying the parameters we can obtain a solution of the * Cauchy problem for any initial data. A system (3) is said to be **incompatible** if it implies a nontrivial relation $f(x_1, \dots, x_r) = 0$ among the x_i .

The problem of solving a system $\Phi=0$ of partial differential equations can be reduced to that of finding integral manifolds of a system of differential forms Σ as follows: Let J^l be a manifold with the local coordinate system

$$(x_i, y_\alpha, p_\beta^{j_1 \dots j_r}; \quad 1 \leq i \leq r, \quad 1 \leq \alpha, \beta \leq m, \quad j_1 + \dots + j_r \leq l),$$

and Σ be a system of 0-forms φ_λ ($1 \leq \lambda \leq s$) and 1-forms

$$dy_\alpha - \sum_{i=1}^r p_\alpha^i dx_i,$$

$$dp_\beta^{j_1 \dots j_r} - \sum_{k=1}^r p_\beta^{j_1 \dots j_k+1 \dots j_r} dx_k$$

($1 \leq \alpha, \beta \leq m$, $j_1 + \dots + j_r < l$). Then an integral manifold of $\Sigma=0$ of the form

$$y_\alpha = y_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_r), \quad 1 \leq \alpha \leq m,$$

$$p_\beta^{j_1 \dots j_r} = p_\beta^{j_1 \dots j_r}(x_1, \dots, x_r),$$

$$1 \leq \beta \leq m, \quad j_1 + \dots + j_r \leq l,$$

Total Differential Equations

gives a solution $y_\alpha = y_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_r)$, $1 \leq \alpha \leq m$, of $\Phi = 0$, and y_β and $p_\beta^{j_1, \dots, j_r}$ satisfy (4).

Conversely, a solution $y_\alpha = y_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_r)$, $1 \leq \alpha \leq m$, of $\Phi = 0$ gives an integral manifold of $\Sigma = 0$ if we define $p_\beta^{j_1, \dots, j_r}(x_1, \dots, x_r)$ by (4) [23, 24, 26].

C. Systems of Partial Differential Equations of First Order with One Unknown Function

Consider a system of independent * vector fields on N :

$$L_\lambda = \sum_{i=1}^r b_{\lambda i}(x) \frac{\partial}{\partial x_i}, \quad 1 \leq \lambda \leq s.$$

We solve a system of inhomogeneous equations

$$L_\lambda y - f_\lambda(x)y - g_\lambda(x) = 0, \quad 1 \leq \lambda \leq s, \quad (5)$$

for a given system of $f_\lambda(x)$ and $g_\lambda(x)$. The system (5) is called a **complete system** if each of the expressions

$$[L_\lambda, L_\mu]y - (L_\lambda f_\mu - L_\mu f_\lambda)y - (f_\mu g_\lambda - f_\lambda g_\mu) - (L_\lambda g_\mu - L_\mu g_\lambda), \quad 1 \leq \lambda < \mu \leq s, \quad (6)$$

is a linear combination of the left-hand sides of (5), where $[L_\lambda, L_\mu]$ means the * commutator of L_λ and L_μ . This condition is called the **complete integrability condition** for (5). Suppose that the homogeneous system

$$L_\lambda y = 0, \quad 1 \leq \lambda \leq s, \quad (7)$$

is complete. Then it has a system of * functionally independent solutions y_1, \dots, y_{r-s} , and any solution y of (8) is a function of them: $y = \psi(y_1, \dots, y_{r-s})$. If the inhomogeneous system (5) is complete, then the homogeneous system (7) is complete. This notion of a complete system is due to Lagrange and was extended to a system of nonlinear equations by Jacobi as follows (\rightarrow 324 Partial Differential Equations of First Order C).

Consider a system of nonlinear equations

$$F_\lambda(x_1, \dots, x_r, y, p_1, \dots, p_r) = 0, \quad 1 \leq \lambda \leq s, \quad (8)$$

where $p_i = \partial y / \partial x_i$. The system (8) is called an **involutory system** if each of $[F_\lambda, F_\mu]$, $1 \leq \lambda < \mu \leq s$, is a linear combination of F_1, \dots, F_s . Here * Lagrange's bracket $[F, G]$ is defined by

$$[F, G] = \sum_{i=1}^r \frac{\partial F}{\partial p_i} \left(\frac{\partial G}{\partial x_i} + p_i \frac{\partial G}{\partial y} \right) - \sum_{i=1}^r \frac{\partial G}{\partial p_i} \left(\frac{\partial F}{\partial x_i} + p_i \frac{\partial F}{\partial y} \right).$$

Suppose that the system (8) is involutory and F_1, \dots, F_s are functionally independent. Then, in general, we can solve the following * Cauchy problem for an $(r-s)$ -dimensional submani-

fold N_{r-s} of N : Given a function f on N_{r-s} , find a solution y of (8) satisfying $y = f$ on N_{r-s} . We can construct a solution by integrating a system of ordinary differential equations called a * characteristic system of differential equations. Hence the solution of these problems may be carried out in the C^∞ -category (\rightarrow 322 Partial Differential Equations (Methods of Integration) B) [7, 11].

D. Frobenius's Theorem

Let X be a * differentiable manifold of class C^∞ and Ω be a system of independent 1-forms ω_i , $1 \leq i \leq s$, on X . Then the system of Pfaffian equations $\Omega = 0$ is called a **completely integrable system** if at every point x of X ,

$$d\omega_i = \sum_{j=1}^s \theta_{ij} \wedge \omega_j, \quad 1 \leq i \leq s,$$

for 1-forms θ_{ij} on a neighborhood of x . Suppose that $\Omega = 0$ is completely integrable. Then at every point x of X , there exists a local coordinate system $(f_1, \dots, f_s, x_{s+1}, \dots, x_n)$ in a neighborhood U of x for which a tangent vector ξ of X at $z \in U$ satisfies $\omega_i(\xi) = 0$, $1 \leq i \leq s$, if and only if $\xi f_i = 0$, $1 \leq i \leq s$. In this case, each of the df_i is a linear combination of $\omega_1, \dots, \omega_s$, and conversely, each of the ω_i is a linear combination of df_1, \dots, df_s . In general, a function f for which df is a linear combination of $\omega_1, \dots, \omega_s$ is called a **first integral** of $\Omega = 0$.

The theorem of the previous paragraph is called **Frobenius's theorem**, which can be stated in the dual form as follows: Let $D(X)$ be a * subbundle of the * tangent bundle $T(X)$ over X . The mapping $X \ni x \rightarrow D_x(X)$ is called a **distribution** on X . It is said to be an **involutive distribution** if at every point x of X we can find a system of independent vector fields L_i ($1 \leq i \leq s$) on a neighborhood U of x such that the $L_i(z)$ ($1 \leq i \leq s$) form a basis of $D_z(X)$ at every $z \in U$ and satisfy $[L_i, L_j] \equiv 0$ (L_1, \dots, L_s), $1 \leq i < j \leq s$, on U . A connected submanifold M of X is called an **integral manifold** of $D(X)$ if $T_x(M) = D_x(X)$ at every point x of M . Suppose that $D(X)$ gives an involutive distribution on X . Then every point x of X is in a maximal integral manifold M that contains any integral manifold including x as a submanifold.

E. Cartan-Kähler Existence Theorems

Let X be a * real analytic manifold. Denote the * sheaf of rings of differential forms on X by $\Lambda(X)$ and its subsheaf of $\mathcal{O}(X)$ -modules of p -forms on X by $\Lambda_p(X)$, $1 \leq p \leq n$, where $\mathcal{O}(X)$ is the sheaf of rings of 0-forms on X . A subsheaf of ideals Σ is called a **differential ideal** if it is generated by Σ_p , $0 \leq p \leq n$, and contains $d\Sigma$,

where $\Sigma_p = \Sigma \cap \Lambda_p(X)$. Consider a differential ideal Σ on X . Denote the t Grassmann manifold of p -dimensional subspaces of $T_x(X)$ with origin $x \in X$ by $G_p(x)$, and the Grassmann manifold $\bigcup_{x \in X} G_p(x)$ over X by $G_p(X)$. An element E_p of $G_p(X)$ is called a p -dimensional **contact element** with **origin** x . An element E_p of $G_p(X)$ is called an **integral element** of Σ_p if $\omega(E_p) = 0$ at x for any p -form ω in Σ ; furthermore, E_p is called an integral element of Σ if any element E_q contained in E_p , $0 \leq q \leq p$, is an integral element of Σ_q . In particular, 0-dimensional and 1-dimensional integral elements are called **integral points** and **integral vectors**, respectively. It can be proved that an element E_p is an integral element of Σ if and only if it is an integral element of Σ_p . The **polar element** $H(E_p)$ of an integral element E_p with origin x is defined as the subspace of $T_x(X)$ consisting of all vectors that generate with E_p an integral element of Σ . Let $(\Sigma_p)^0$, $0 \leq p \leq n$, be the subsheaf of $\mathcal{O}(X)$ -modules in $\mathcal{O}(G_p(X))$ consisting of all 0-forms

$$\sum_{1 \leq i_1 < \dots < i_p \leq n} a_{i_1 \dots i_p} z_{i_1 \dots i_p}$$

on $G_p(X)$ derived from a p -form

$$\sum_{1 \leq i_1 < \dots < i_p \leq n} a_{i_1 \dots i_p} dx_{i_1} \wedge \dots \wedge dx_{i_p} \in \Sigma_p,$$

where $z_{i_1 \dots i_p}$ is the t Grassmann coordinate of E_p . An integral element E_p^0 is called a **regular integral element** if the following two conditions are satisfied: (i) $(\Sigma_p)^0$ is a regular local equation of $I\Sigma_p$ at E_p^0 , where $I\Sigma_p$ is the set of all integral elements of Σ_p ; (ii) $\dim H(E_p^0) = \text{constant}$ around E_p^0 on $I\Sigma_p$. This definition, due to E. Kähler, is different from that given by E. Cartan [4].

Here, in general, a subsheaf Φ of $\mathcal{O}(X)$ is called a **regular local equation** of $I\Phi$ at an integral point x_0 if there exists a neighborhood U of x_0 and t cross sections ϕ_1, \dots, ϕ_s of Φ on U that satisfy the following two conditions: (i) $d\phi_1, \dots, d\phi_s$ are linearly independent at every x on U ; (ii) a point x of U is an integral point of Φ if and only if $\phi_1(x) = \dots = \phi_s(x) = 0$.

First existence theorem. Suppose that we are given a p -dimensional integral manifold M with a regular integral element $T_x(M)$ at a point x on M . Suppose further that there exists a submanifold F of X containing M such that $\dim F = n - t_{p+1}$, $\dim(T_x(F) \cap H(E_p)) = p + 1$, where $E_p = T_x(M)$ and $t_{p+1} = \dim H(E_p) - p - 1$. Then around x there exists a unique integral manifold N such that $\dim N = p + 1$ and $F \supset N \supset M$.

This theorem is proved by integrating a system of partial differential equations of Cauchy-Kovalevskaya type. E. Cartan [2–4] also tried to obtain an existence theorem by integrating a system of ordinary differential equations.

A chain of integral elements $E_0 \subset E_1 \subset \dots \subset E_r$ is called a **regular chain** if each of E_p ($0 \leq p < r$) is a regular integral element. For a regular chain $E_0 \subset E_1 \subset \dots \subset E_r$, define t_{p+1} by $t_{p+1} = \dim H(E_p) - p - 1$, $0 \leq p < r$, and define s_p by $s_p = t_p - t_{p+1} - 1$ ($0 \leq p < r$), $s_r = t_r$, where $t_0 = \dim I\Sigma_0$. Then we have $s_p \geq 0$ ($0 \leq p \leq r$), $s_0 + \dots + s_r = t_0 - r$, and we can take a local coordinate system $(x_1, \dots, x_r, y_1, \dots, y_m)$, $m = n - r$, around E_0 that satisfies the following four conditions:

- (i) $I\Sigma_0$ is defined by $y_{t_0-r+1} = \dots = y_m = 0$;
- (ii) $H(E_p) = \left\{ \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial}{\partial x_r}, \frac{\partial}{\partial y_{s_0+\dots+s_{p-1}+1}}, \dots, \frac{\partial}{\partial y_{t_0-r}} \right\}$, $0 \leq p < r$;
- (iii) $E_p = \left\{ \frac{\partial}{\partial x_1}, \dots, \frac{\partial}{\partial x_p} \right\}$, $1 \leq p \leq r$;
- (iv) $E_0 = (0, \dots, 0, 0, \dots, 0)$.

The integers s_0, \dots, s_r are called the **characters** of the regular chain $E_0 \subset \dots \subset E_r$.

Second existence theorem. Suppose that a chain of integral elements $E_0 \subset \dots \subset E_r$ is regular, and take a local coordinate system satisfying (i)–(iv). Consider a system of initial data

$$\begin{aligned} &f_1, \dots, f_{s_0}, \\ &f_{s_0+1}(x_1), \dots, f_{s_0+s_1}(x_1), \\ &f_{s_0+s_1+1}(x_1, x_2), \dots, f_{s_0+s_1+s_2}(x_1, x_2), \\ &\dots \\ &f_{s_0+\dots+s_{r-1}+1}(x_1, \dots, x_r), \dots, f_{t_0-r}(x_1, \dots, x_r). \end{aligned}$$

Then if their values and derivatives of the first order are sufficiently small, there exists a unique integral manifold defined by $y_\alpha = y_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_r)$, $y_\beta = 0$, $1 \leq \alpha \leq t_0 - r < \beta \leq m$, such that

$$\begin{aligned} &y_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_p, 0, \dots, 0) = f_\alpha(x_1, \dots, x_p), \\ &s_0 + \dots + s_{p-1} < \alpha \leq s_0 + \dots + s_p, \quad 0 \leq p \leq r. \end{aligned}$$

This theorem is proved by successive application of the first existence theorem. These two theorems are called the **Cartan-Kähler existence theorems**. Σ is said to be **involutive** at an integral element E_r if there exists a regular chain $E_0 \subset \dots \subset E_r$. An integral manifold possessing a tangent space at which Σ is involutive is called an **ordinary integral manifold** or **ordinary solution** of Σ . An integral manifold that does not possess such a tangent space is called a **singular integral manifold** or **singular solution** of Σ .

Cartan's definition of ordinary and regular integral elements is as follows: An integral point E_0^0 is an ordinary integral point if Σ_0 is a regular local equation of $I\Sigma_0$ at E_0^0 . An ordi-

nary integral point E_0^0 is a regular integral point if $\dim H(E_0)$ is constant on $I\Sigma_0$ around E_0^0 . Inductively, an integral element E_p^0 is called an **ordinary integral element** if $(\Sigma_p)^0$ is a regular local equation of $I\Sigma_p$ at E_p^0 and E_p^0 contains a regular integral element E_{p-1}^0 . An ordinary integral element E_p^0 is a regular integral element (in the sense of Cartan) if $\dim H(E_p)$ is constant on $I\Sigma_p$ around E_p^0 . It can be proved that Σ is involutive at an integral element E_r if and only if E_r is an ordinary integral element of Σ . An integral manifold possessing a tangent space that is a regular integral element of Σ is called a **regular integral manifold** or **regular solution** of Σ . Let m_{p+1} be the minimal dimension of $H(E_p)$, where E_p varies over the set of p -dimensional ordinary integral elements, and g be an integer such that $m_p \geq p$ ($1 \leq p \leq g$) and $m_{g+1} = p$. Then this integer g is called the **genus** of Σ . It is the maximal dimension of ordinary integral manifolds of Σ . However, in general, it is not the maximal dimension of integral manifolds of Σ .

D. C. Spencer and others have been trying to obtain an existence theorem in the C^∞ -category analogous to that of Cartan and Kähler. (For a system of linear partial differential equations \rightarrow [2, 4, 11, 13, 25, 27].)

F. Involutive Systems of Partial Differential Equations

To give a definition of an involutive system of partial differential equations, we define an involutive subspace of $\text{Hom}(V, W)$, where V and W are finite-dimensional vector spaces over the real number field \mathbf{R} . Let A be a subspace of $\text{Hom}(V, W)$. For a system of vectors v_1, \dots, v_p in V , $A(v_1, \dots, v_p)$ denotes the subspace of A that annihilates v_1, \dots, v_p . Let g_p be the minimal dimension of $A(v_1, \dots, v_p)$ as (v_1, \dots, v_p) varies, where $0 \leq p \leq r = \dim V$. A basis (v_1, \dots, v_r) of V is called a **generic basis** if it satisfies $g_p = \dim A(v_1, \dots, v_p)$ for each p . There exists a generic basis for any A . Let $W \otimes S^2(V^*)$ be the subspace of $\text{Hom}(V, \text{Hom}(V, W))$ consisting of all elements ξ satisfying $\xi(u)v = \xi(v)u$ for any u and v in V . Then the prolongation pA of A is defined by $pA = \text{Hom}(V, A) \cap W \otimes S^2(V^*)$. For any basis (v_1, \dots, v_r) of V , we have the inequality

$$\dim pA \leq \sum_{p=0}^r \dim A(v_1, \dots, v_p).$$

The subspace A is called an **involutive subspace** of $\text{Hom}(V, W)$ if $\dim pA = \sum_{p=0}^r g_p$. This notion of an involutive subspace was obtained by V. W. Guillemin and S. Sternberg [13].

A triple $(X, N; \pi)$ consisting of two manifolds X, N and a projection π from X onto N is called a **fibered manifold** if the t differential π_*

is surjective at every point of X . Take the set of all mappings f from a domain in N to X satisfying $\pi \circ f = \text{identity}$ for a fibered manifold $(X, N; \pi)$. Then an t -jet $j_x^l(f)$ is an equivalence class under the equivalence relation defined as follows: $j_x^l(f) = j_u^l(g)$ if and only if $x = u$, $f(x) = g(u)$, and

$$\frac{\partial^{i_1+\dots+i_r} f}{\partial x_1^{i_1} \dots \partial x_r^{i_r}}(x) = \frac{\partial^{i_1+\dots+i_r} g}{\partial x_1^{i_1} \dots \partial x_r^{i_r}}(u),$$

$i_1 + \dots + i_r \leq l$, where (x_1, \dots, x_r) is a local coordinate system of N around $x = u$ (\rightarrow 105 Differentiable Manifolds X).

Denote the space of all l -jets of a fibered manifold $(X, N; \pi)$ by $J^l(X, N; \pi)$ or simply J^l . Then a subsheaf of ideals Φ in $\mathcal{O}(J^l)$ is called a **system of partial differential equations of order l** on N . A point z of J^l is called an integral point of Φ if $\varphi(z) = 0$ for all $\varphi \in \Phi$. The set of all integral points of Φ is denoted by $I\Phi$. Let π^l be the natural projection of J^l onto J^{l-1} . Then at a point z of J^l , we can identify $\text{Ker } \pi_*^l$ with $\text{Hom}(T_x(N), \text{Ker } \pi_*^l)$, where $x = \pi \pi^1 \dots \pi^{l-1} z$. The principal part $C_z(\Phi)$ of Φ is defined as the subspace of $\text{Ker } \pi_*^l$ that annihilates Φ . The **prolongation** $p\Phi$ of Φ is defined as the system of order $l+1$ on N generated by Φ and $\partial_k \Phi$, $1 \leq k \leq \dim N$, where ∂_k is the formal derivative with respect to a coordinate x_k of N :

$$(\partial_k \varphi)(j_x^{l+1}(f)) = \frac{\partial}{\partial x_k} \varphi(j_x^l(f)), \quad \varphi \in \mathcal{O}(J^l).$$

Let w be an integral point of $p\Phi$ and z be $\pi^{l+1} w$. Then we have the identity

$$pC_z(\Phi) = C_w(p\Phi).$$

The following definition of an involutive system is due to M. Kuranishi [19]: Φ is involutive at an integral point z if the following two conditions are satisfied: (i) Φ is a regular local equation of $I\Phi$ at z ; (ii) there exists a neighborhood U of z in J^l such that $(\pi^{l+1})^{-1} U \cap I(p\Phi)$ forms a fibered manifold with base $U \cap I\Phi$ and projection π^{l+1} .

A system of partial differential equations is said to be **involutive** (or **involutory**) if it has an integral point at which it is involutive. Fix a system of independent variables (y_1, \dots, y_N) in X . Then a system of differential forms is said to be **involutive** (or **involutory**) if it has an integral element at which it is involutive and $dy_1 \wedge \dots \wedge dy_N \neq 0$. It can be proved that these two definitions of involutive system are equivalent [19, 25].

G. Prolongation Theorems

Cartan gave a method of prolongation by which we can obtain an involutive system from a given system with two independent

variables, if it has a solution. He proposed the following problem: For any $r > 2$, construct a method of prolongation by which we can obtain an involutive system from a given system with r independent variables, if it has a solution. To solve this problem, Kuranishi prolonged a given system Φ successively to $p^t\Phi$, $t = 1, 2, 3, \dots$, and proved the following theorem: Suppose that there exists a sequence of integral points z^t of $p^t\Phi$ with $\pi^{t+1}z^t = z^{t-1}$, $t = 1, 2, 3, \dots$, that satisfies the following two conditions for each t : (i) $p^t\Phi$ is a regular local equation of $I(p^t\Phi)$ at z^t ; (ii) there exists a neighborhood V^t of z^t in $I(p^t\Phi)$ such that $\pi^{t+1}V^t$ contains a neighborhood of z^{t-1} in $I(p^{t-1}\Phi)$ and forms a fibered manifold $(V^t, \pi^{t+1}V^t; \pi^{t+1})$. Then $p^t\Phi$ is involutive at z^t for a sufficiently large integer t .

This prolongation theorem gives a powerful tool to the theory of infinite Lie groups. However, if we consider a system of partial differential equations of general type, there exist examples of systems that cannot be prolonged to an involutive system by this prolongation, although they have a solution. To improve Kuranishi's prolongation theorem, M. Matsuda [22] defined the prolongation of the same order by $p_0\Phi = p\Phi \cap \mathcal{O}(J^l)$ for a system Φ of order l . This is a generalization of the classical method of completion given by Lagrange and Jacobi. Applying this prolongation successively to a given system Φ , we have $\Psi = \bigcup_{\sigma=1}^{\infty} p_0^\sigma\Phi$. Define the p_* -operation by $p_* = \bigcup_{\sigma=1}^{\infty} p_0^\sigma p$. Then applying this prolongation successively to Ψ , we have the following theorem: suppose that there exists a sequence of integral points z^t of $p_*^t\Psi$ with $\pi^{t+1}z^t = z^{t-1}$, $t = 1, 2, 3, \dots$, that satisfies the following two conditions for each t : (i) $p_*^t\Psi$ is a regular local equation of $I(p_*^t\Psi)$ at z^t ; (ii) $\dim pC(p_*^t\Psi)$ is constant around z^t on $I(p_*^t\Psi)$. Then $p_*^t\Psi$ is involutive at z^t for a sufficiently large integer t .

To prove this theorem Matsuda applied the following theorem obtained by V. W. Guillemin, S. Sternberg, and J.-P. Serre [25, appendix]: suppose that we are given a subspace A_0 of $\text{Hom}(V, W)$ and subspaces A_t of $\text{Hom}(V, A_{t-1})$ satisfying $A_t \subset pA_{t-1}$, $t = 1, 2, 3, \dots$. Then A_t is an involutive subspace of $\text{Hom}(V, A_{t-1})$ for a sufficiently large integer t . Thus Cartan's problem was solved affirmatively. To the generalized Pfaff problem these prolongation theorems give another solution, which differs from that obtained by Riquier.

H. Pfaffian Systems in the Complex Domain

Consider a linear system of Pfaffian equations

$$du_i = \sum_{k=1}^n \sum_{j=1}^m a_{ij}^k(x) u_j dx_k, \quad i = 1, \dots, m,$$

where $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$ is a local coordinate of a complex manifold X and a_{ij}^k are meromorphic functions on X . If we put $u = (u_1, \dots, u_m)$ and $A^k(x) = (a_{ij}^k(x))$, $k = 1, \dots, n$, the system is written as

$$du = \left(\sum_{k=1}^n A^k(x) dx_k \right) u. \quad (9)$$

System (9) is completely integrable if and only if

$$\frac{\partial A^j}{\partial x^i} - \frac{\partial A^i}{\partial x^j} = [A^i, A^j], \quad j, l = 1, \dots, n.$$

Suppose that (9) is completely integrable. If the $A^k(x)$ are holomorphic at $x^0 = (x_1^0, \dots, x_n^0) \in X$, there exists for any $u^0 \in \mathbb{C}^m$ one and only one solution of (9) that is holomorphic at x^0 and satisfies $u(x^0) = u^0$. This implies that the solution space of (9) is an m -dimensional vector space; the basis of this space is called a fundamental system of solutions. Therefore any solution is expressible as a linear combination of a fundamental system of solutions and can be continued analytically in a domain where the $A^k(x)$ are holomorphic. A subvariety of X that is the pole set of at least one of the $A^k(x)$ is called a singular locus of (9), and a point on a singular locus is called a singular point.

R. Gérard has given a definition of regular singular points and an analytic expression of a fundamental system of solutions around a regular singular point, and he studied systems of Fuchsian type [8; also 9, 30].

Let $\Omega = \sum_{k=1}^n A^k(x) dx_k$. Then the system (9) can be rewritten as

$$(d - \Omega)u = 0.$$

If we consider a local coordinate (x, u) of a fiber bundle over X , the operator $d - \Omega$ induces a meromorphic linear connection ∇ over X . Starting from this point of view, P. Deligne [5] introduced several important concepts and obtained many results.

The first results for irregular singular points were obtained by Gérard and Y. Sibuya [10], and H. Majima [20] studied irregular singular points of mixed type.

The systems of partial differential equations that are satisfied by the hypergeometric functions of several variables are equivalent to linear systems of Pfaffian equations [1]. This means that such systems of partial differential equations are holonomic systems. M. Kashiwara and T. Kawai [15] studied holonomic systems with regular singularities from the standpoint of microlocal analysis. Special types of holonomic systems were investigated by T. Terada [28] and M. Yoshida [29].

Consider a system of Pfaffian equations

$$\omega_j = 0, \quad j = 1, \dots, r, \quad (10)$$

where $\omega_j = \sum_{k=1}^n a_{jk}(x) dx_k$ and $x = (x_1, \dots, x_n)$. Suppose that a_{jk} are holomorphic in a domain D of C^n and that $d\omega_j \wedge \omega_1 \wedge \dots \wedge \omega_r = 0$ in D . Denote by S the zero set of $\omega_1 \wedge \dots \wedge \omega_r = 0$. A point of S is called a singular point of (10). If the codimension of S is ≥ 1 , then system (10) is completely integrable in $D - S$. The following theorem was proved by B. Malgrange [21]: Let $x^0 \in S$, and suppose that the codimension of S is ≥ 3 around x^0 ; then there exist functions $f_j, j = 1, \dots, r$, and $g_{jk}, j, k = 1, \dots, r$, that are holomorphic at x^0 and satisfy $\omega_j = \sum_{k=1}^r g_{jk} df_k$ and $\det(g_{jk}(x^0)) \neq 0$.

References

- [1] P. Appell and J. Kampé de Fériet, *Fonctions hypergéométriques et hypersphériques*, Gauthier-Villars, 1926.
- [2] E. Cartan, *Sur l'intégration des systèmes d'équations aux différentielles totales*, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., 18 (1901), 241–311.
- [3] E. Cartan, *Leçons sur les invariants intégraux*, Hermann, 1922.
- [4] E. Cartan, *Les systèmes différentielles extérieures et leurs applications géométriques*, Hermann, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1945.
- [5] P. Deligne, *Equations différentielles à points singuliers réguliers*, Lecture notes in math. 163, Springer, 1970.
- [6] A. R. Forsyth, *Theory of differential equations*, pt. I. Exact equations and Pfaff's problem, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1890.
- [7] A. R. Forsyth, *Theory of differential equations*, pt. IV. Partial differential equations, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1906.
- [8] R. Gérard, *Théorie de Fuchs sur une variété analytique complexe*, J. Math. Pures Appl., 47 (1968), 321–404.
- [9] R. Gérard and A. H. M. Levelt, *Sur les connexions à singularités régulières dans le cas de plusieurs variables*, Funkcial. Ekvac., 19 (1976), 149–173.
- [10] R. Gérard and Y. Sibuya, *Etude de certains systèmes de Pfaff avec singularités*, Lecture notes in math. 712, Springer, 1979.
- [11] E. Goursat, *Leçons sur l'intégration des équations aux dérivées partielles du premier ordre*, Hermann, second edition, 1920.
- [12] E. Goursat, *Leçons sur le problème de Pfaff*, Hermann, 1922.
- [13] V. W. Guillemin and S. Sternberg, *An algebraic model of transitive differential geometry*, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 70 (1964), 16–47.
- [14] E. Kähler, *Einführung in die Theorie der Systeme von Differentialgleichungen*, Teubner, 1934.
- [15] M. Kashiwara and T. Kawai, *On holonomic systems of microdifferential equations IV, systems with regular singularities*, Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci., 17 (1981), 813–979.
- [16] M. Kuranishi, *On E. Cartan's prolongation theorem of exterior differential systems*, Amer. J. Math., 79 (1957), 1–47.
- [17] M. Kuranishi, *Lectures on exterior differential systems*, Lecture notes, Tata Inst., 1962.
- [18] M. Kuranishi, *On the local theory of continuous infinite pseudo groups I, II*, Nagoya Math. J., 15 (1959), 225–260; 19 (1961), 55–91.
- [19] M. Kuranishi, *Lectures on involutive systems of partial differential equations*, Publ. Soc. Math. São Paulo, 1967.
- [20] H. Majima, *Asymptotic analysis for integrable connections with irregular singular points*, Lecture notes in math. 1075, Springer, 1984.
- [21] B. Malgrange, *Frobenius avec singularités II, Le cas général*, Inventiones Math., 39 (1976), 67–89.
- [22] M. Matsuda, *Cartan-Kuranishi's prolongation of differential systems combined with that of Lagrange and Jacobi*, Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci., 3 (1967/68), 69–84.
- [23] C. Riquier, *Les systèmes d'équations aux dérivées partielles*, Gauthier-Villars, 1910.
- [24] J. F. Ritt, *Differential algebra*, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 1950.
- [25] I. M. Singer and S. Sternberg, *The infinite groups of Lie and Cartan I. The transitive groups*, J. Analyse Math., 15 (1965), 1–114.
- [26] J. A. Schouten and W. v. d. Kulk, *Pfaff's problem and its generalizations*, Clarendon Press, 1949.
- [27] D. C. Spencer, *Overdetermined systems of linear partial differential equations*, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 75 (1969), 179–239.
- [28] T. Terada, *Problème de Riemann et fonctions automorphes provenant des fonctions hypergéométriques de plusieurs variables*, J. Math. Kyoto Univ., 13 (1973), 557–578.
- [29] M. Yoshida, *Local theory of Fuchsian systems with certain discrete monodromy groups I, II*, Funkcial. Ekvac., 21 (1978), 105–137, 203–221.
- [30] M. Yoshida and K. Takano, *On a linear system of Pfaffian equations with regular singular point*, Funkcial. Ekvac., 19 (1976), 175–189.

429 (XI.6) Transcendental Entire Functions

A. General Remarks

An **entire function** (or **integral function**) $f(z)$ is a complex-valued function of a complex variable

z that is holomorphic in the finite z -plane, $z \neq \infty$. If $f(z)$ has a pole at ∞ , then $f(z)$ is a polynomial in z . A polynomial is called a **rational entire function**. If an entire function is bounded, it is constant († Liouville's theorem). A **transcendental entire function** is an entire function that is not a polynomial, for example, $\exp z$, $\sin z$, $\cos z$. An entire function can be developed in a power series $\sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ with infinite radius of convergence. If $f(z)$ is a transcendental entire function, this is actually an infinite series.

B. The Order of an Entire Function

If a transcendental entire function $f(z)$ has a zero of order m ($m \geq 0$) at $z=0$ and other zeros at $\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n, \dots$ ($0 < |\alpha_1| \leq |\alpha_2| \leq |\alpha_3| \leq \dots \rightarrow \infty$), multiple zeros being repeated, then $f(z)$ can be written in the form

$$f(z) = e^{g(z)} z^m \prod_{k=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{z}{\alpha_k}\right) e^{g_k(z)},$$

where $g(z)$ is an entire function, $g_k(z) = (z/\alpha_k) + (1/2)(z/\alpha_k)^2 + (1/3)(z/\alpha_k)^3 + \dots + (1/p_k)(z/\alpha_k)^{p_k}$, and p_1, p_2, \dots are integers with the property that $\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} |z/\alpha_k|^{p_k+1}$ converges for all z (**Weierstrass's canonical product**).

E. N. Laguerre introduced the concept of the genus of a transcendental entire function $f(z)$. Assume that there exists an integer p for which $\sum_{k=0}^{\infty} |\alpha_k|^{-(p+1)}$ converges, and take the smallest such p . Assume further that in the representation for $f(z)$ in the previous paragraph, when $p_1 = p_2 = \dots = p$, the function $g(z)$ reduces to a polynomial of degree q ; then $\max(p, q)$ is called the **genus** of $f(z)$. For transcendental entire functions, however, the order is more essential than the genus. The **order** ρ of a transcendental entire function $f(z)$ is defined by

$$\rho = \limsup_{r \rightarrow \infty} \log \log M(r) / \log r,$$

where $M(r)$ is the maximum value of $|f(z)|$ on $|z|=r$. By using the coefficients of $f(z) = \sum a_n z^n$, we can write

$$\rho = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} n \log n / \log(1/|a_n|).$$

The entire functions of order 0, which were studied by Valiron and others, have properties similar to polynomials, and the entire functions of order less than $1/2$ satisfy $\lim_{r_n \rightarrow \infty} \min_{|z|=r_n} |f(z)| = \infty$ for some increasing sequence $r_n \uparrow \infty$ (**Wiman's theorem**). Hence entire functions of order less than $1/2$ cannot be bounded in any domain extending to infinity. Among the functions of order greater than $1/2$ there exist functions bounded in a given angular domain $D: \alpha < \arg z < \alpha + \pi/\mu$. If $|f(z)|$

Transcendental Entire Functions

$< \exp r^{\rho}$ ($\rho < \mu$) and $f(z)$ is bounded on the boundary of D , then $f(z)$ is bounded in the angular domain (\rightarrow 272 Meromorphic Functions). In particular, if the order ρ of $f(z)$ is an integer p , then it is equal to the genus, and $g(z)$ reduces to a polynomial of degree $\leq p$ (J. Hadamard). These theorems originated in the study of the zeros of the † Riemann zeta function and constitute the beginning of the theory of entire functions.

There is some difference between the properties of functions of integral order and those of others. Generally, the point z at which $f(z) = w$ is called a **w-point** of $f(z)$. If $\{z_n\}$ consists of w -points different from the origin, the infimum $\rho_1(w)$ of k for which $\sum 1/|z_n|^k$ converges is called the **exponent of convergence** of $f-w$. If the order ρ of an entire function is integral, then $\rho_1(w) = \rho$ for each value w with one possible exception, and if ρ is not integral, then $\rho_1(w) = \rho$ for all w (É. Borel). Therefore any transcendental entire function has an infinite number of w -points for each value w except for at most one value, called an **exceptional value** of $f(z)$ (**Picard's theorem**). In particular, $f(z)$ has no exceptional values if ρ is not integral. For instance, $\sin z$ and $\cos z$ have no exceptional values, while e^z has 0 as an exceptional value. Since transcendental entire functions have no poles, ∞ can be counted as an exceptional value. Then we must change the statement in Picard's theorem to "except for at most two values." Since the theorem was obtained by E. Picard in 1879, problems of this type have been studied intensively (\rightarrow 62 Cluster Sets, 272 Meromorphic Functions).

After Picard proved the theorem by using the inverse of a † modular function, several alternative proofs were given. For instance, there is a proof using the Landau-Schottky theorem and † Bloch's theorem and one using † normal families. Picard's theorem was extended to meromorphic functions and has also been studied for analytic functions defined in more general domains. There are many fully quantitative results, too. For instance, Valiron [3] gave such results by performing some calculations on neighborhoods of points where entire functions attain their maximum absolute values.

Thereafter, the distribution of w -points in a neighborhood of an essential singularity was studied by many people, and in 1925 the Nevanlinna theory of meromorphic functions was established. The core of the theory consists of two fundamental theorems, † Nevanlinna's first and second fundamental theorems (\rightarrow 272 Meromorphic Functions). Concerning composite entire functions $F(z) = f(g(z))$, Pólya proved the following fact: The finiteness of the order of F implies that the order of f should

Transcendental Entire Functions

be zero unless g is a polynomial. This gives the starting point of the factorization theory, on which several people have been working recently. Several theorems in the theory of meromorphic functions can be applied to the theory. One of the fundamental theorems is the following: Let $F(z)$ be an entire function, which admits the factorizations $F(z) = P_m(f_m(z))$ with a polynomial P_m of degree m and an entire function f_m for all integers m . Then $F(z) = A \cos \sqrt{H(z)} + B$ unless $F(z) = A \exp H(z) + B$. Here, H is a nonconstant entire function and A, B are constant, $A \neq 0$.

C. Julia Directions

Applying the theory of †normal families of holomorphic functions, G. Julia proved the existence of Julia directions as a precise form of Picard's theorem [5]. A transcendental entire function $f(z)$ has at least one direction $\arg z = \theta$ such that for any $\varepsilon > 0$, $f(z)$ takes on every (finite) value with one possible exception infinitely often in the angular domain $\theta - \varepsilon < \arg z < \theta + \varepsilon$. This direction $\arg z = \theta$ is called a **Julia direction** of $f(z)$.

D. Asymptotic Values

†Asymptotic values, †asymptotic paths, etc., are defined for entire functions as for meromorphic functions. In relation to †Iversen's theorem and †Gross's theorem for inverse functions and results on †cluster sets, †ordinary singularities of inverse functions hold for entire functions in the same way as for meromorphic functions. Also, as for meromorphic functions, †transcendental singularities of inverse functions are divided into two classes, the †direct and the †indirect transcendental singularities.

The exceptional values in Picard's theorem are asymptotic values of the functions, and ∞ is an asymptotic value of any transcendental entire function. Therefore $f(z) \rightarrow \infty$ along some curve extending to infinity. Between the asymptotic paths corresponding to two distinct asymptotic values, there is always an asymptotic path with asymptotic value ∞ . By †Bloch's theorem, A. Bloch showed that the †Riemann surface of the inverse function of a transcendental entire function contains a disk with arbitrarily large radius. Denjoy conjectured in 1907 that $\mu \leq 2\rho$, where ρ is the order of an entire function and μ is the number of distinct finite asymptotic values of the function, and L. V. Ahlfors gave the first proof (1929). This result contains Wiman's theorem. There are transcendental entire functions with $\mu = 2\rho$. It was shown by W. Gross that among entire functions of infinite order there exists

an entire function having every value as its asymptotic value.

References

- [1] E. C. Titchmarsh, *The theory of functions*, Clarendon Press, second edition, 1939.
- [2] R. P. Boas, *Entire functions*, Academic Press, 1954.
- [3] G. Valiron, *Lectures on the general theory of integral functions*, Librairie de l'Université, Deighton, Bell and Co., 1923 (Chelsea, 1949).
- [4] L. Bieberbach, *Lehrbuch der Funktionentheorie II*, Teubner, 1931 (Johnson Reprint Co., 1969).
- [5] G. Julia, *Sur quelques propriétés nouvelles des fonctions entières ou méromorphes*, Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup., (3) 36 (1919), 93–125.

430 (V.11) Transcendental Numbers

A. History

A complex number α is called a **transcendental number** if α is not †algebraic over the field of rational numbers \mathbb{Q} . C. Hermite showed in 1873 that e is a transcendental number. Following a similar line of thought as that taken by Hermite, C. L. F. Lindemann showed that π is also transcendental (1882). Among the 23 problems posed by D. Hilbert in 1900 (→ 196 Hilbert), the seventh was the problem of establishing the transcendence of certain numbers (e.g., $2^{\sqrt{2}}$). This stimulated fruitful investigations by A. O. Gel'fond, T. Schneider, C. L. Siegel, and others. The theory of transcendental numbers is, however, far from complete. There is no general criterion that can be utilized to characterize transcendental numbers. For example, neither the transcendence nor even the irrationality of the †Euler constant $C = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} (1 + 1/2 + \dots + 1/n - \log n)$ has been established. A survey of the development of the theory of transcendental numbers can be found in [18], in which an extensive list of relevant publications up to 1966 is given.

B. Construction of Transcendental Numbers

Let $\bar{\mathbb{Q}}$ be the field of †algebraic numbers. Suppose that α is an element of $\bar{\mathbb{Q}}$ that satisfies the irreducible equation $f(x) = a_0 x^n + a_1 x^{n-1} + \dots + a_n = 0$, where the a_i are rational integers, $a_0 \neq 0$, and a_0, a_1, \dots, a_n have no common factors. Then we define $H(\alpha)$ to be the maxi-

mum of $|a_i|$ ($i=0, \dots, n$) and call it the **height** of α . J. Liouville proved the following theorem (1844): Let ξ be a real number ($\xi \notin \mathbf{Q}$). If $\inf\{q^n |\xi - p/q| \mid p/q \in \mathbf{Q}\} = 0$ for any positive integer n , then ξ is transcendental.

Transcendental numbers having this property are called **Liouville numbers**. Examples are: (i) $\xi = \sum_{v=1}^{\infty} g^{-v!}$, where g is an integer not smaller than 2. (ii) Suppose that we are given a sequence $\{n_k\}$ of positive integers such that $n_k \rightarrow \infty$ ($k \rightarrow \infty$). Let ξ be the real number expressed as an infinite simple continued fraction $b_0 + 1/b_1 + 1/b_2 + \dots$. Let B_l be the denominator of the l th convergent of the continued fraction. If $b_{n_k+1} \geq B_{n_k}^{n_k-2}$ for $k \geq 1$, then ξ is a Liouville number.

On the other hand, K. Mahler [8, 9] proved the existence of transcendental numbers that are not Liouville numbers. For example, he showed that if $f(x)$ is a nonconstant integral polynomial function mapping the set of positive integers into itself, then a number ξ expressed, e.g., in the decimal system as $0.y_1 y_2 y_3 \dots$ is such a number if we put $y_n = f(n)$, $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$ (In particular, from $f(x) = x$ we get the non-Liouville transcendental number $\xi = 0.123456789101112 \dots$) Mahler proved this result by using Roth's theorem (1955) (\rightarrow 182 Geometry of Numbers). Both Liouville and Mahler utilized the theory of Diophantine approximation to construct transcendental numbers.

On the other hand, Schneider [10–12] and Siegel [3] constructed transcendental numbers using certain functions. Examples are: $\exp \alpha$ ($\alpha \in \mathbf{Q}$, $\alpha \neq 0$); α^β ($\alpha \in \mathbf{Q}$, $\alpha \neq 0, 1$; $\beta \in \mathbf{Q} - \mathbf{Q}$); $J(\tau)$, where J is the modular function and τ is an algebraic number that is not contained in any imaginary quadratic number field; $\wp(2\pi i/\alpha)$, where \wp is the Weierstrass \wp -function, $\alpha \in \overline{\mathbf{Q}}$, and $\alpha \neq 0$; and $B(p, q)$, where B is the Beta function and $p, q \in \mathbf{Q} - \mathbf{Z}$.

Since $e = \exp 1$ and $1 = \exp 2\pi i$, the transcendence of e and π is directly implied by the transcendence of $\exp \alpha$ ($\alpha \in \overline{\mathbf{Q}}$, $\alpha \neq 0$).

C. Classification of Transcendental Numbers

(1) Mahler's classification: Given a complex number ξ and positive integers n and H , we consider the following:

$$w_n(H, \xi) = \min \left\{ \left| \sum_{v=0}^n a_v \xi^v \right| \mid a_v \in \mathbf{Z}, |a_v| \leq H, \sum_{v=0}^n a_v \xi^v \neq 0 \right\},$$

$$w_n(\xi) = w_n = \limsup_{H \rightarrow \infty} (-\log w_n(H, \xi) / \log H),$$

$$w(\xi) = w = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} w_n(\xi) / n,$$

and let μ = the first number n for which w_n is ∞ . Then we have the following four cases:

(i) $w = 0$, $\mu = \infty$; (ii) $0 < w < \infty$, $\mu = \infty$; (iii) $w = \mu = \infty$; (iv) $w = \infty$, $\mu < \infty$, corresponding to which we call ξ an **A-number**, **S-number**, **T-number**, or **U-number**. The set of A-numbers is denoted by **A**, and similarly we have the classes **S**, **T**, and **U**. It is known that **A** = $\overline{\mathbf{Q}}$. If two numbers ξ and η are algebraically dependent over \mathbf{Q} , then they belong to the same class. If ξ belongs to **S**, the quantity $\theta(\xi) = \sup\{w_n(\xi)/n \mid n = 1, 2, \dots\}$ is called the **type** of ξ (in the sense of Mahler). Mahler conjectured that almost all transcendental numbers (except a set of Lebesgue measure zero) are S-numbers of the type 1 or 1/2 according as they belong to **R** or not. Various results were obtained concerning this conjecture (W. J. LeVeque, J. F. Koksma, B. Volkmann) until it was proved by V. G. Sprindzhuk in 1965 [14, 15]. The existence of T-numbers was proved by W. M. Schmidt (1968) [16]. All Liouville numbers are U-numbers [7]. On the other hand, $\log \alpha$ ($\alpha \in \mathbf{Q}$, $\alpha > 0$, $\alpha \neq 1$) and π are transcendental numbers that do not belong to **U**.

(2) Koksma's classification: For a given transcendental number ξ and positive numbers n and H , we consider the following:

$$w_n^*(H, \xi) = \min\{|\xi - \alpha| \mid \alpha \in \overline{\mathbf{Q}},$$

$$H(\alpha) \leq H, [Q(\alpha):\mathbf{Q}] \leq n\},$$

$$w_n^*(\xi) = w_n^* = \limsup_{H \rightarrow \infty} (-\log H w_n^*(H, \xi) / \log H),$$

$$w^*(\xi) = w^* = \limsup_{n \rightarrow \infty} w_n^*(\xi) / n,$$

and let μ^* = the first number n for which w_n^* is ∞ . Then we have the following three cases: (i) $w^* < \infty$, $\mu^* = \infty$; (ii) $w^* = \mu^* = \infty$; (iii) $w^* = \infty$, $\mu^* < \infty$. We call ξ an **S*-number**, **T*-number**, or **U*-number** according as (i), (ii), or (iii) holds and denote the set of S*-numbers by **S***, etc. If ξ belongs to **S***, we call $\theta^*(\xi) = \sup\{w_n^*(\xi)/n \mid n = 1, 2, \dots\}$ the **type** of ξ (in the sense of Koksma). It can be shown that **S** = **S***, **T** = **T***, and **U** = **U***, and that if $\xi \in \mathbf{S}$, then $\theta^*(\xi) \leq \theta(\xi) \leq \theta^*(\xi) + 1$.

D. Algebraic Independence

Concerning the algebraic relations of transcendental numbers, we have the following three principal theorems:

(1) Let $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m$ be elements of $\overline{\mathbf{Q}}$ that are linearly independent over \mathbf{Q} . Then $\exp \alpha_1, \dots, \exp \alpha_m$ are transcendental and algebraically independent over $\overline{\mathbf{Q}}$ (**Lindemann-Weierstrass theorem**).

(2) Let $J_0(x)$ be the Bessel function and α a nonzero algebraic number. Then $J_0(x)$ and $J'_0(x)$ are transcendental and algebraically independent over \mathbf{Q} (Siegel).

(3) Let $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ be nonzero elements of $\bar{\mathbf{Q}}$ such that $\log \alpha_1, \dots, \log \alpha_n$ are linearly independent over \mathbf{Q} . Then $1, \log \alpha_1, \dots, \log \alpha_n$ are linearly independent over $\bar{\mathbf{Q}}$ (A. Baker).

Besides these theorems, various related results have been obtained by A. B. Shidlovskii, Gel'fond, N. I. Fel'dman, and others. A quantitative extension of theorem (3), also by Baker, will be discussed later.

First we give more detailed descriptions of theorems (1) and (2). Let $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m$ be as in theorem (1), $s = [\mathbf{Q}(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m) : \mathbf{Q}]$, $P(X_1, \dots, X_m)$ be an arbitrary polynomial in $\bar{\mathbf{Q}}[X_1, \dots, X_m]$ of degree n , and $H(P)$ be the maximum of the absolute values of the coefficients of the polynomial P . Then there exists a positive number C determined only by the numbers $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_m$ and $n (= \deg P)$ such that

$$|P(e^{\alpha_1}, \dots, e^{\alpha_m})| > CH(P)^{-2s(2^{\frac{2smn+m+n}{m}}-1)}.$$

In particular, if α is a nonzero algebraic number, then $\exp \alpha$ belongs to \mathbf{S} and $\theta(\exp \alpha) \leq 8s^2 + 6s$.

(2') Let α be a nonzero algebraic number, $s = [\mathbf{Q}(\alpha) : \mathbf{Q}]$, $P \in \mathbf{Q}[X_1, X_2]$, $\deg P = n$. Then there exists a positive number C determined only by α and n such that $|P(J_0(\alpha), J'_0(\alpha))| > CH(P)^{-82s^3n^3}$.

Theorems (1) and (2) are actually special cases of a theorem obtained by Siegel. To state this theorem, the following terminology is used: An entire function $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} C_n \cdot z^n/n!$ is called an *E-function* defined over an algebraic number field K of finite degree if the following three conditions are satisfied: (i) $C_n \in K$ ($n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$). (ii) For any positive number ε , $C_n = O(n^{\varepsilon n})$. (iii) Let q_n be the least positive integer such that $C_k q_n$ belongs to the ring \mathfrak{O} of algebraic integers in K ($0 \leq n, 0 \leq k \leq n$). Then for an arbitrary positive number ε , $q_n = O(n^{\varepsilon n})$.

A system $\{f_1(z), \dots, f_m(z)\}$ of *E-functions* defined over K is said to be **normal** if it satisfies the following two conditions: (i) None of the functions $f_i(z)$ is identically zero. (ii) If the functions $w_k = f_k(z)$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$) satisfy a system of homogeneous linear differential equations of the first order, then $w'_k = \sum_{i=1}^m Q_{ki}(z)w_i$, where the $Q_{ki}(z)$ are rational functions of z , with coefficients in the ring \mathfrak{O} . The matrix (Q_{ki}) can be decomposed by rearranging the order of the indices k, l if necessary into the form

$$\begin{pmatrix} W_1 & \cdots & 0 \\ \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ 0 & \cdots & W_r \end{pmatrix},$$

where

$$W_t = \begin{bmatrix} Q_{11,t} & \cdots & Q_{1m_t,t} \\ \vdots & \ddots & \vdots \\ Q_{m_t 1,t} & \cdots & Q_{m_t m_t,t} \end{bmatrix}, \quad 1 \leq t \leq r, \quad \sum_{t=1}^r m_t = m.$$

The decomposition is unique if we choose r as large as possible, in which case we call W_1, \dots, W_r the primitive parts of (Q_{ki}) . The requirement is that the primitive parts W_i are independent in the following sense: If there are numbers $C_{st} \in K$ and polynomial functions $P_{kt}(z) \in K[z]$ such that

$$\sum_{t=1}^r (C_{1t} \cdots C_{m_t t}) W_t \begin{bmatrix} P_{1t}(z) \\ \vdots \\ P_{m_t t}(z) \end{bmatrix} = 0,$$

then $C_{st} = 0$, $P_{kt}(z) = 0$.

Let N be a positive integer. A normal system $\{f_1(z), \dots, f_m(z)\}$ of *E-functions* is said to be of degree N if the system $\{F_{n_1, \dots, n_m}(z) = f_1(z)^{n_1} \cdots f_m(z)^{n_m} \mid n_i \geq 0, \sum_{i=1}^m n_i \leq N\}$ is also a normal system of *E-functions*. Then the theorem obtained by Siegel [4] is: Let N be an arbitrary positive integer and $\{f_1(z), \dots, f_m(z)\}$ be a normal system of *E-functions* of degree N defined over an algebraic number field of finite degree K satisfying the system of differential equations $f'_k(z) = \sum_{i=1}^m Q_{ki}(z)f_i(z)$, where $Q_{ki}(z) \in \mathfrak{O}(z)$, $1 \leq k \leq m$. If α is a nonzero algebraic number that is not a pole of any one of the functions $Q_{ki}(z)$, then $f_1(\alpha), \dots, f_m(\alpha)$ are transcendental numbers that are algebraically independent over the field $\bar{\mathbf{Q}}$.

Theorem (3) at the beginning of this section implies, for example, the following: (i) If $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ and β_1, \dots, β_n all belong to $\bar{\mathbf{Q}}$ and $\gamma = \alpha_1 \log \beta_1 + \dots + \alpha_n \log \beta_n \neq 0$, then γ is transcendental. (ii) If $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n, \beta_0, \beta_1, \dots, \beta_n$ are nonzero algebraic numbers, then $e^{\beta_0 \alpha_1^{\beta_1}} \cdots \alpha_n^{\beta_n}$ is transcendental. (iii) If $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ are algebraic numbers other than 0 and 1, and β_1, \dots, β_n also belong to $\bar{\mathbf{Q}}$, with $1, \beta_1, \dots, \beta_n$ linearly independent over \mathbf{Q} , then $\alpha_1^{\beta_1} \cdots \alpha_n^{\beta_n}$ is transcendental.

Baker [17] also obtained a quantitative extension of theorem (3): Suppose that we are given integers $A \geq 4$, $d \geq 4$ and nonzero algebraic numbers $\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n$ ($n \geq 2$) whose heights and degrees do not exceed A and d , respectively. Suppose further that $0 < \delta \leq 1$, and let $\log \alpha_1, \dots, \log \alpha_n$ be the principal values of the logarithms. If there exist rational integers b_1, \dots, b_n with absolute value at most H such that

$$0 < |b_1 \log \alpha_1 + \dots + b_n \log \alpha_n| < e^{-\delta H},$$

then

$$H < (4^{n^2} \delta^{-1} d^{2n} \log A)^{(2n+1)^2}.$$

This theorem has extensive applications in various problems of number theory, including a wide class of Diophantine problems [19].

A number of new, interesting results on the algebraic independence of values of exponential functions, elliptic functions, and some other special functions have been obtained

recently by D. Masser, G. V. Chudnovskii, M. Waldschmidt, and other writers. In particular, Chudnovskii (1975) obtained the remarkable result that $\Gamma(1/3)$ and $\Gamma(1/4)$ are transcendental numbers. See [20–24].

References

- [1] A. O. Gel'fond, *Transcendental and algebraic numbers*, Dover, 1960. (Original in Russian, 1952.)
- [2] T. Schneider, *Einführung in die transzendenten Zahlen*, Springer, 1957.
- [3] C. L. Siegel, *Über einige Anwendungen diophantischer Approximationen*, Abh. Preuss. Akad. Wiss., 1929 (Gesammelte Abhandlungen, Springer, 1966, vol. 1, 209–266).
- [4] C. L. Siegel, *Transcendental numbers*, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1949.
- [5] N. I. Fel'dman, *Approximation of certain transcendental numbers I*, Amer. Math. Soc. Transl., 59 (1966), 224–245. (Original in Russian, 1951.)
- [6] W. J. LeVeque, *Note on S-numbers*, Proc. Amer. Math. Soc., 4 (1953), 189–190.
- [7] W. J. LeVeque, *On Mahler's U-numbers*, J. London Math. Soc., 28 (1953), 220–229.
- [8] K. Mahler, *Arithmetische Eigenschaften einer Klasse von Dezimalbrüchen*, Proc. Acad. Amsterdam, 40 (1937), 421–428.
- [9] K. Mahler, *Über die Dezimalbruchentwicklung gewisser Irrationalzahlen*, Mathematika B, Zutphen, 6 (1937), 22–36.
- [10] T. Schneider, *Transzendenzuntersuchungen periodischer Funktionen I*, J. Reine Angew. Math., 172 (1935), 65–69.
- [11] T. Schneider, *Arithmetische Untersuchungen elliptischer Integrale*, Math. Ann., 113 (1936), 1–13.
- [12] T. Schneider, *Zur Theorie der Abelschen Funktionen und Integrale*, J. Reine Angew. Math., 183 (1941), 110–128.
- [13] S. Lang, *Introduction to transcendental numbers*, Addison-Wesley, 1966.
- [14] V. G. Sprindzhuk, *A proof of Mahler's conjecture on the measure of the set of S-numbers*, Amer. Math. Soc. Transl., 51 (1966), 215–272. (Original in Russian, 1965.)
- [15] V. G. Sprindzhuk, *Mahler's problem in metric number theory*, Amer. Math. Soc. Transl. Math. Monographs, 1969. (Original in Russian, 1967.)
- [16] W. M. Schmidt, *T-numbers do exist*, Rend. Convegno di Teoria dei Numeri, Roma, 1968.
- [17] A. Baker, *Linear forms in the logarithms of algebraic numbers I, II, III, IV*, Mathematika, 13 (1966), 204–216; 14 (1967), 102–107; 14 (1967), 220–228; 15 (1968), 204–216.
- [18] N. I. Fel'dman and A. B. Shidlovskii, *The development and present state of the theory of transcendental numbers*, Russian Math. Surveys, 22 (1967), 1–79. (Original in Russian, 1967.)
- [19] A. Baker, *Transcendental number theory*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1975.
- [20] D. Masser, *Elliptic functions and transcendence*, Lecture notes in math. 437, Springer, 1975.
- [21] G. V. Chudnovskii, *Algebraic independence of values of exponential and elliptic functions*, Proc. Int. Congr. Math., Helsinki, 1978.
- [22] A. Baker and D. Masser (eds.), *Transcendence theory: Advances and applications*, Academic Press, 1977.
- [23] M. Waldschmidt, *Transcendence methods*, Queen's papers in pure and appl. math. 52, Queen's Univ., 1979.
- [24] M. Waldschmidt, *Nombres transcendants et groupes algébriques*, Astérisque, 69–70 (1980).

431 A

Transformation Groups

431 (IX.19)

Transformation Groups

A. Topological Transformation Groups

Let G be a group, M a set, and f a mapping from $G \times M$ into M . Put $f(g, x) = g(x)$ ($g \in G$, $x \in M$). Then the group G is said to be a **transformation group** of the set M if the following two conditions are satisfied: (i) $e(x) = x$ ($x \in M$), where e is the identity element of G ; and (ii) $(gh)(x) = g(h(x))$ ($x \in M$) for any $g, h \in G$. In this case the mapping $x \rightarrow g(x)$ is a one-to-one mapping of M onto itself.

Let G be a transformation group of M . If G is a topological group, M a topological space, and the mapping $(g, x) \rightarrow g(x)$ a continuous mapping from $G \times M$ into M , then G is called a **topological transformation group** of M . In this case $x \rightarrow g(x)$ is a homeomorphism of M onto itself. The mapping $(g, x) \rightarrow g(x)$ is called an **action** of G on M . The space M , together with a given action of G , is called a **G -space**.

For a point x of M , the set $G(x) = \{g(x) \mid g \in G\}$ is called the **orbit** of G passing through the point x . Defining as equivalent two points x and y of M belonging to the same orbit, we get an equivalence relation in M . The quotient space of M by this equivalence relation, denoted by M/G , is called the **orbit space** of G -space M .

If $G(x) = \{x\}$, then x is called a **fixed point**. The set of all fixed points is denoted by M^G . For a point x of M , the set $G_x = \{g \in G \mid g(x) =$

Transformation Groups

$x\}$ is a subgroup of G called the **isotropy subgroup (stabilizer, stability subgroup)** of G at the point x . A conjugacy class of the subgroup G_x is called an **isotropy type** of the transformation group G on M .

The group G is said to act **nontrivially** (resp. **trivially**) on M if $M \neq M^G$ (resp. $M = M^G$). The group G is said to act **freely** on M if the isotropy subgroup G_x consists only of the identity element for any point x of M .

The group G is said to act **transitively** on M if for any two points x and y of M , there exists an element $g \in G$ such that $g(x) = y$.

Let N be the set of all elements $g \in G$ such that $g(x) = x$ for all points x of M . Then N is a normal subgroup of G . If N consists only of the identity element e , we say that G acts **effectively** on M , and if N is a discrete subgroup of G , we say that G acts **almost effectively** on M . When $N \neq \{e\}$, the quotient topological group G/N acts effectively on M in a natural fashion.

An **equivariant mapping (equivariant map)** (or a **G -mapping, G -map**) $h: X \rightarrow Y$ between G -spaces is a continuous mapping which commutes with the group actions, that is, $h(g(x)) = g(h(x))$ for all $g \in G$ and $x \in X$. An equivariant mapping which is also a homeomorphism is called an equivalence of G -spaces.

For a G -space M , an equivalence class of the G -spaces $G(x)$, $x \in M$, is called an **orbit type** of the G -space M .

B. Cohomological Properties

We consider only * paracompact G -spaces and * Čech cohomology theory in this section. We shall say that a topological space X is **finitistic** if every open covering has a finite-dimensional refinement. The following theorems are useful [1–3].

(1) If G is finite, X a finitistic paracompact G -space, and K a field of characteristic zero or prime to the order of G , then the induced homomorphism $\pi^*: H^*(X/G; K) \rightarrow H^*(X; K)^G$ is an isomorphism. Here, π is a natural projection of X onto X/G . The group G acts naturally on $H^*(X; K)$, and $H^*(X; K)^G$ denotes the fixed-point set of this G -action.

(2) Let X be a finitistic G -space and G cyclic of prime order p . Then, with coefficients in $\mathbb{Z}/p\mathbb{Z}$, we have

$$(a) \text{ for each } n \quad \sum_{i=n}^{\infty} \text{rank } H^i(X^G) \leq \sum_{i=n}^{\infty} \text{rank } H^i(X),$$

$$(b) \quad \chi(X) + (p-1)\chi(X^G) = p\chi(X/G).$$

Here the * Euler-Poincaré characteristics $\chi(\quad)$ are defined in terms of mod p cohomology.

(3) **Smith's theorem:** If G is a p -group (p prime) and if x is a finitistic G -space whose mod p cohomology is isomorphic to the n -

sphere, then the mod p cohomology of the fixed-point set X^G is isomorphic to that of the r -sphere for some $-1 \leq r \leq n$, where (-1) -sphere means the empty set.

(4) Let T^k denote the k -dimensional toral group. Let X be a T^k -space whose rational cohomology is isomorphic to the n -sphere, and assume that there are only a finite number of orbit types and that the orbit spaces of all subtori are finitistic. Let H be a subtorus of T^k . Then by the above theorem the rational cohomology of X^H is isomorphic to that of the $r(H)$ -sphere for some $-1 \leq r(H) \leq n$. Assume further that there is no fixed point of the T^k -action. Then, with H ranging over all subtori of dimension $k-1$, we have

$$n+1 = \sum_H (r(H) + 1).$$

C. Differentiable Transformation Groups

Suppose that the group G is a transformation group of a * differentiable manifold M , G is a * Lie group, and the mapping $(g, x) \rightarrow g(x)$ of $G \times M$ into M is a differentiable mapping. Then G is called a **differentiable transformation group (or Lie transformation group)** of M , and M is called a **differentiable G -manifold**.

The following are basic facts about compact differentiable transformation groups [3, 4]:

(5) **Differentiable slice theorem:** Let G be a compact Lie group acting differentiably on a manifold M . Then, by averaging an arbitrary * Riemannian metric on M , we may have a G -invariant Riemannian metric on M . That is, the mapping $x \rightarrow g(x)$ is an * isometry of this Riemannian manifold M for each $g \in G$. For each point $x \in M$, the orbit $G(x)$ through x is a compact submanifold of M and the mapping $g \mapsto g(x)$ defines a G -equivariant diffeomorphism $G/G_x \cong G(x)$, where G/G_x is the left quotient space by the isotropy subgroup G_x . G_x acts orthogonally on the * tangent space $T_x M$ at x (resp. the * normal vector space N_x of the orbit $G(x)$); we call it the **isotropy representation** (resp. **slice representation**) of G_x at x . Let E be the * normal vector bundle of the orbit $G(x)$. Since G acts naturally on E as a bundle mapping, the bundle E is equivalent to the bundle $(G \times N_x)/G_x$ over G/G_x as a * G -vector bundle, where G_x acts on N_x by means of the slice representation and G_x acts on G by the right translation. We can choose a small positive real number ε such that the * exponential mapping gives an equivariant * diffeomorphism of the ε -disk bundle of E onto an invariant * tubular neighborhood of $G(x)$.

(6) Assume that a compact Lie group G acts differentiably on M with the orbit space $M^* = M/G$ connected. Then there exists a maximum

orbit type G/H for G on M (i.e., H is an isotropy subgroup and H is conjugate to a subgroup of each isotropy group). The union $M_{(H)}$ of the orbits of type G/H is open and dense in M , and its image $M_{(H)}^*$ in M^* is connected.

The maximum orbit type for orbits in M guaranteed by the above theorem is called the **principal orbit type**, and orbits of this type are called **principal orbits**. The corresponding isotropy groups are called **principal isotropy groups**. Let P be a principal orbit and Q any orbit. If $\dim P > \dim Q$, then Q is called a **singular orbit**. If $\dim P = \dim Q$ but P and Q are not equivalent, then Q is called an **exceptional orbit**.

(7) Let G be a compact Lie group and M a compact G -manifold. Then the orbit types are finite in number.

By applying (5) and (6) we have that an isotropy group is principal if and only if its slice representation is trivial.

The situation is quite different in the case of noncompact transformation groups. For example, there exists an analytic action of $G = SL(4, \mathbf{R})$ on an analytic manifold M such that each orbit of G on M is closed and of codimension one and such that, for $x, y \in M$, G_x is not isomorphic to G_y unless x and y lie on the same G -orbit [5].

D. Compact Differentiable Transformation Groups

Many powerful techniques in \dagger differential topology have been applied to the study of differentiable transformation groups. For example, using the techniques of \dagger surgery, we can show that there are infinitely many free differentiable circle actions on \dagger homotopy $(2n+1)$ -spheres ($n \geq 3$) that are differentially inequivalent and distinguished by the rational \dagger Pontryagin classes of the orbit manifolds (W. C. Hsiang [6]). Also, using \dagger Brieskorn varieties, we can construct many examples of differentiable transformation groups on homotopy spheres [3, 4, 7]. Differentiable actions of compact connected Lie groups on homology spheres have been studied systematically (Hsiang and W. Y. Hsiang [4]).

The Atiyah-Singer \dagger index theorem has many applications in the study of transformation groups. The following are notable applications:

(8) Let M be a compact connected \dagger oriented differentiable manifold of dimension $4k$ with a \dagger spin-structure. If a compact connected Lie group G acts differentiably and nontrivially on M , then the \hat{A} -genus $\langle \hat{\mathcal{A}}(M), [M] \rangle$ of M vanishes (where $\hat{\mathcal{A}}(M)$ denotes the $\dagger\hat{A}$ -characteristic class of M) (M. F. Atiyah and F.

Hirzebruch [8], K. Kawakubo [9]). For further developments, see A. Hattori [10].

(9) Let M be a closed oriented manifold with a differentiable circle action. Then each connected component F_k of the fixed point set can be oriented canonically, and we have

$$I(M) = \sum_k I(F_k),$$

where $I(\)$ denotes the \dagger Thom-Hirzebruch index [8, 9].

Let G be a compact Lie group and $G \rightarrow EG \rightarrow BG$ the \dagger universal G -bundle. Then the \dagger singular cohomology $H^*(EG \times_G X)$ is called **equivariant cohomology** for a G -space X and is an $H^*(BG)$ -module. Let $G = U(1)$, M a differentiable $U(1)$ -manifold, $F = M^G$, and $i: F \rightarrow M$ the inclusion mapping. Then the \dagger localization of the induced homomorphism

$$S^{-1}i^*: S^{-1}H^*(EG \times_G M) \rightarrow S^{-1}H^*(BG \times F)$$

is an isomorphism, where S^{-1} denotes the localization with respect to the multiplicative set $S = \{at^k\}$ with a, k ranging over all positive integers and t the generator of $H^2(BG)$. Theorems (8) and (9) can be proved by the above localization isomorphism.

Let M be a differentiable manifold. The upper bound $N(M)$ of the dimension of all the compact Lie groups that acts effectively and differentiably on M is called the **degree of symmetry** of M . It measures, in some crude sense, the symmetry of the differentiable manifold M . The number $N(M)$ depends heavily on the differentiable structure. For example, $N(S^m) = m(m+1)/2$ for the standard m -sphere, but $N(\Sigma^m) < (m+1)^2/16 + 5$ for a \dagger homotopy m -sphere ($m \geq 300$) that does not bound a $\dagger\pi$ -manifold [11]. Also, $N(P_n(\mathbf{C})) = n(n+2)$ for the complex projective n -space $P_n(\mathbf{C})$, but $N(hP_n(\mathbf{C})) < (n+1)(n+2)/2$ for any homotopy complex projective n -space $hP_n(\mathbf{C})$ ($n \geq 13$) other than $P_n(\mathbf{C})$ (T. Watabe [12]).

Let X be a differentiable closed manifold and $h: X \rightarrow P_n(\mathbf{C})$ be an orientation-preserving \dagger homotopy equivalence. There is a conjecture about the total \hat{A} -classes that states: If X admits a nontrivial differentiable circle action, then $\hat{\mathcal{A}}(X) = h^*\hat{\mathcal{A}}(P_n(\mathbf{C}))$ (T. Petrie [13]). It is known that if the action is free outside the fixed-point set, then the conjecture is true (T. Yoshida [14]).

E. Equivariant Bordism

Fix a compact Lie group G ; a compact **oriented G -manifold** (ψ, M) consists of a compact \dagger oriented differentiable manifold M and an orientation-preserving differentiable G -action $\psi: G \times M \rightarrow M$ on M .

Given families $F \supset F'$ of subgroups of G , a compact oriented G -manifold (ψ, M) is (F, F') -free if the following conditions are satisfied: (i) if $x \in M$, then the isotropy group G_x is conjugate to a member of F ; (ii) if $x \in \partial M$, then G_x is conjugate to a member of F' .

If F' is the empty family, then necessarily ∂M is empty and M is closed. In this case we say that (ψ, M) is F -free.

Given (ψ, M) , define $-(\psi, M) = (\psi, -M)$ with the structure precisely the same as (ψ, M) except for \dagger orientation. Also define $\partial(\psi, M) = (\psi, \partial M)$. Note that if (ψ, M) is (F, F') -free, then $(\psi, \partial M)$ is F' -free. Define (ψ, M) and (ψ', M') to be isomorphic if there exists an equivariant orientation-preserving diffeomorphism of M onto M' .

An (F, F') -free compact oriented n -dimensional G -manifold (ψ, M) is said to **bord** if there exists an (F, F') -free compact oriented $(n+1)$ -dimensional G -manifold (Φ, W) together with a regularly embedded compact n -dimensional manifold M_1 in ∂W with M_1 invariant under the G -action Φ such that (Φ, M_1) is isomorphic to (ψ, M) and G_x is conjugate to a member of F' for $x \in \partial W - M_1$. Also, M_1 is required to have its orientation induced by that of W .

We say that (ψ_1, M_1) is **bordant** to (ψ_2, M_2) if the disjoint union $(\psi_1, M_1) + (\psi_2, -M_2)$ bords. Bordism is an equivalence relation on the class of (F, F') -free compact oriented n -dimensional G -manifolds. The bordism classes constitute an Abelian group $\mathbf{O}_n^G(F, F')$ under the operation of disjoint union. If F' is empty, denote the above group by $\mathbf{O}_n^G(F)$. The direct sum

$$\mathbf{O}_*^G(F, F') = \bigoplus_n \mathbf{O}_n^G(F, F')$$

is naturally an Ω -module, where Ω is the \dagger oriented cobordism ring. If F consists of all subgroups of G , then $\mathbf{O}_*^G(F)$ is denoted by \mathbf{O}_*^G .

Suppose now that $F \supset F'$ are fixed families of subgroups of G . Every F' -free G -manifold is also F -free, and so this inclusion induces a homomorphism $\alpha: \mathbf{O}_n^G(F') \rightarrow \mathbf{O}_n^G(F)$. Similarly every F -free G -manifold is also (F, F') -free, inducing a homomorphism $\beta: \mathbf{O}_n^G(F) \rightarrow \mathbf{O}_n^G(F, F')$. Finally, there is a homomorphism $\partial: \mathbf{O}_n^G(F, F') \rightarrow \mathbf{O}_{n-1}^G(F')$ given by $\partial(\psi, M) = (\psi, \partial M)$. Then the following sequence is exact [15]:

$$\dots \xrightarrow{\hat{\alpha}} \mathbf{O}_n^G(F') \xrightarrow{\alpha} \mathbf{O}_n^G(F) \xrightarrow{\beta} \mathbf{O}_n^G(F, F') \xrightarrow{\partial} \mathbf{O}_{n-1}^G(F') \xrightarrow{\hat{\alpha}} \dots$$

A weakly almost complex compact G -manifold (ψ, M) consists of a \dagger weakly almost complex compact manifold M and a differentiable G -action $\psi: G \times M \rightarrow M$ that preserves the weakly almost complex structure on M . $\mathbf{U}_*^G(F, F')$, \mathbf{U}_*^G are defined similarly, and they are \mathbf{U}_* -modules, where \mathbf{U}_* is the \dagger complex

cobordism ring of compact weakly almost complex manifolds.

To study \mathbf{O}_*^G and \mathbf{U}_*^G , (co)bordism theory is introduced (P. E. Conner and E. E. Floyd [16]), which is one of the \dagger generalized (co)-homology theories. Miscellaneous results are known, in particular, for G a cyclic group of prime period. By means of the equivariant \dagger Thom spectrum, equivariant cobordism theory can be developed (T. tom Dieck [17]); this is a multiplicative generalized cohomology theory with Thom classes (\rightarrow 114 Differential Topology; also \rightarrow 201 Homology Theory, 56 Characteristic Classes).

F. Equivariant Homotopy

Let G be a compact Lie group. On the category of closed G -manifolds, we say that two objects M, N are χ -equivalent if $\chi(M^H) = \chi(N^H)$ for all closed subgroups H of G , where $\chi(\)$ is the \dagger Euler-Poincaré characteristic. On the set of equivalence classes $\mathbf{A}(G)$, a ring structure is imposed by disjoint union and the Cartesian product. We call $\mathbf{A}(G)$ the **Burnside ring** of G . If G is finite, $\mathbf{A}(G)$ is naturally isomorphic to the classical Burnside ring of G [18].

Denote by $S(V)$ the unit sphere of an orthogonal G -representation space V . Let V, W be orthogonal G -representation spaces. The equivariant stable homotopy group $[[S(V), S(W)]]$, which is defined as the direct limit of the equivariant homotopy sets $[S(V+U), S(W+U)]_G$ taken over orthogonal G -representation spaces U and suspensions, is denoted by ω_α for $\alpha = V - W \in RO(G)$. The \dagger smash product of representatives induces a bilinear pairing $\omega_\alpha \times \omega_\beta \rightarrow \omega_{\alpha+\beta}$. Then ω_0 is a ring, and ω_α is an ω_0 -module. The ring ω_0 is isomorphic to the Burnside ring of G , and ω_α is a \dagger projective ω_0 -module of rank one. The ω_0 -module ω_α is free if and only if $S(V)$ and $S(W)$ are stably G -homotopy equivalent [18].

Let E be an orthogonal G -vector bundle over a compact G -space X . Denote by $S(E)$ the sphere bundle associated with E . Let E, F be orthogonal G -vector bundles over X . Then E and F have the **same spherical G -fiber homotopy type** if there exist fiber-preserving G -mappings $f: S(E) \rightarrow S(F)$, $f': S(F) \rightarrow S(E)$ and fiber-preserving G -homotopies $h_t: S(E) \rightarrow S(E)$, $h'_t: S(F) \rightarrow S(F)$ such that $h_0 = f' \circ f$, $h_1 = \text{identity}$, $h'_0 = f \circ f'$, $h'_1 = \text{identity}$. Let $KO_G(X)$ be the \dagger equivariant K -group of real G -vector bundles over X . Let $T_G(X)$ be the additive subgroup of $KO_G(X)$ generated by elements of the form $[E] - [F]$, where E and F are orthogonal G -vector bundles having the same spherical G -fiber homotopy type. The factor group $J_G(X) = KO_G(X)/T_G(X)$ and the natural projection

$J_G: KO_G(X) \rightarrow J_G(X)$ are called an **equivariant J -group** and an **equivariant J -homomorphism**, respectively (\rightarrow 237 K -Theory).

In particular, $J_G(\{x_0\})$ is a factor group of the real representation ring $RO(G)$. ^+Adams operations on representation rings are the main tools for studying the group $J_G(\{x_0\})$ [18].

G. Infinitesimal Transformations

Let $f: G \times M \rightarrow M$ be a differentiable action of a Lie group G on a differentiable manifold M . Let X be a ^+left invariant vector field on G . Then we can define a differentiable vector field $f^+(X)$ on M as

$$f^+(X)_q h = \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} (h(f(\exp(-tX), q)) - h(q))/t$$

for each $q \in M$ and any differentiable function h defined on a neighborhood of q . It is easy to see that $f^+(X)_q = 0$ if and only if q is a fixed point of the one-parameter subgroup $\{\exp(tX)\}$. A vector field $f^+(X)$ is called an **infinitesimal transformation** of the differentiable transformation group G .

The set \mathfrak{g} of all infinitesimal transformations of G forms a finite-dimensional ^+Lie algebra (the laws of addition and $^+bracket$ product are defined from those for the vector fields on M). If G acts effectively on M , \mathfrak{g} is isomorphic to the Lie algebra of the Lie group G (\rightarrow 249 Lie Groups). In fact, the correspondence $X \rightarrow f^+(X)$ defines a Lie algebra homomorphism f^+ from the Lie algebra of all left invariant vector fields on G into the Lie algebra of all differentiable vector fields on M [19].

The following fact [20] is useful for the study of noncompact real analytic transformation groups. Let \mathfrak{g} be a real $^+semisimple$ Lie algebra and $\rho: \mathfrak{g} \rightarrow L(M)$ be a Lie algebra homomorphism of \mathfrak{g} into a Lie algebra of real analytic vector fields on a ^+real analytic manifold M . Let p be a point at which the vector fields in the image $\rho(\mathfrak{g})$ have common zero. Then there exists an analytic system of coordinates $(U; u_1, \dots, u_m)$ with origin at p in which all the vector fields in $\rho(\mathfrak{g})$ are linear. Namely, there exists $a_{ij} \in \mathfrak{g}^* = \text{Hom}_{\mathbf{R}}(\mathfrak{g}, \mathbf{R})$ such that

$$\rho(X)_q = - \sum_{i,j} a_{ij}(X) u_j(q) \frac{\partial}{\partial u_i}; \quad X \in \mathfrak{g}, \quad q \in U.$$

The correspondence $X \rightarrow (a_{ij}(X))$ defines a Lie algebra homomorphism of \mathfrak{g} into $\mathfrak{sl}(m, \mathbf{R})$.

For example, we can show that a real analytic $SL(n, \mathbf{R})$ action on the m -sphere is characterized by a certain real analytic vector field on $(m-n+1)$ -sphere ($5 \leq n \leq m \leq 2n-2$) [21]. In particular, there are infinitely many (at least the cardinality of the real numbers) inequivalent

real analytic $SL(n, \mathbf{R})$ actions on the m -sphere ($3 \leq n \leq m$).

Conversely, let \mathfrak{g} be a finite-dimensional Lie algebra of vector fields on M . Although there is not always a differentiable transformation group G that admits \mathfrak{g} as its Lie algebra of infinitesimal transformations, the following local result holds. Let \tilde{G} be the ^+simply connected Lie group corresponding to the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} . Then for each point x of M , there exist a neighborhood \tilde{U} of the identity element e of \tilde{G} , neighborhoods V, W ($V \subset W$) of x , and a differentiable mapping f of $\tilde{U} \times V$ into W with the following properties. Putting $f(g, y) = g(y)$ ($g \in \tilde{U}, y \in V$), we have: (i) For all $y \in V$, $e(y) = y$. (ii) If $g, h \in \tilde{U}$, $y \in V$, then $(gh)(y) = g(h(y))$, provided that $gh \in \tilde{U}$, $h(y) \in V$. (iii) Let X be an arbitrary element of \mathfrak{g} . Put $g_t = \exp(-tX)$, the corresponding one-parameter subgroup of \tilde{G} . If $\varepsilon > 0$ is taken small enough, then we have $g_t \in \tilde{U}$ for $|t| < \varepsilon$ so that $g_t(y)$ ($|t| < \varepsilon, y \in V$) is well defined. Therefore g_t determines a vector field \tilde{X} on V by the formula

$$\tilde{X}_y h = \lim_{t \rightarrow 0} (h(g_t(y)) - h(y))/t.$$

The vector field \tilde{X} coincides with the restriction of X to V . This local proposition is often expressed by the statement that \mathfrak{g} generates a **local Lie group of local transformations**, which is called **Lie's fundamental theorem** on local Lie groups of local transformations.

H. Criteria

It is important to know whether a given transformation group is a topological or a Lie transformation group. The following theorems are useful for this purpose [22, 23]:

(10) Let G be a transformation group of a $^+locally$ compact Hausdorff space M . If we introduce the $^+compact$ -open topology in G , then G is a topological transformation group of M when M is locally connected or M is a $^+uniform$ topological space and G acts $^+equicontinuously$ on M .

(11) Suppose that M is a $^+C^1$ -manifold and G is a topological transformation group of M acting effectively on M . If G is locally compact and the mapping $x \rightarrow g(x)$ of M is of class C^1 for each element g of G , then G is a Lie transformation group of M .

(12) Assume that G is a transformation group of a differentiable manifold M and G acts effectively on M . Let \mathfrak{g} be the set of all vector fields on M defined by one-parameter groups of transformations of M contained in G as subgroups. If \mathfrak{g} is a finite-dimensional Lie algebra, then G has a Lie group structure with respect to which G is a Lie transformation group of M , and then \mathfrak{g} coincides with the Lie

algebra formed by the infinitesimal transformations of G .

By applying theorems (10), (11), and (12) we can show that the following groups are Lie transformation groups: the group of all isometries of a Riemannian manifold; the group of all affine transformations of a differentiable manifold with a linear connection (generally, the group of all transformations of a differentiable manifold that leave invariant a given Cartan connection); the group of all analytic transformations of a compact complex manifold (this group is actually a complex Lie group); and the group of all analytic (holomorphic) transformations of a bounded domain in \mathbb{C}^n .

For related topics — 105 Differentiable Manifolds, 114 Differential Topology, 122 Discontinuous Groups, 153 Fixed-Point Theorems, 427 Topology of Lie Groups and Homogeneous Spaces, etc.

References

- [1] A. Borel et al., Seminar on transformation groups, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1960.
- [2] W. Y. Hsiang, Cohomology theory of topological transformation groups, Erg. math. 85, Springer, 1975.
- [3] G. E. Bredon, Introduction to compact transformation groups, Academic Press, 1972.
- [4] W. C. Hsiang and W. Y. Hsiang, Differentiable actions of compact connected classical groups I, II, III, Amer. J. Math. 89 (1967); Ann. Math., (2) 92 (1970); Ann. Math., (2) 99 (1974).
- [5] R. W. Richardson, Deformations of Lie subgroups and the variation of isotropy subgroups, Acta Math., 129 (1972).
- [6] W. C. Hsiang, A note on free differentiable actions of S^1 and S^3 on homotopy spheres, Ann. Math., (2) 83 (1966).
- [7] F. Hirzebruch and K. H. Mayer, $O(n)$ -Mannigfaltigkeiten, Exotische Sphären und Singularitäten, Lecture notes in math. 57, Springer, 1968.
- [8] M. F. Atiyah and F. Hirzebruch, Spin-manifolds and group actions, Essays on Topology and Related Topics, Memoires dédiés à Georges de Rham, Springer, 1970.
- [9] K. Kawakubo, Equivariant Riemann-Roch theorems, localization and formal group law, Osaka J. Math., 17 (1980).
- [10] A. Hattori, Spin^c-structures and S^1 -actions, Inventiones Math., 48 (1978).
- [11] W. C. Hsiang and W. Y. Hsiang, The degree of symmetry of homotopy spheres, Ann. Math., (2) 89 (1969).
- [12] T. Watabe, On the degree of symmetry of complex quadric and homotopy complex

projective space, Sci. Rep. Niigata Univ., 11 (1974).

- [13] T. Petrie, Smooth S^1 actions on homotopy complex projective spaces and related topics, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 78 (1972).
- [14] T. Yoshida, On smooth semifree S^1 actions on cohomology complex projective spaces, Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci., 11 (1976).
- [15] P. E. Conner and E. E. Floyd, Maps of odd period, Ann. Math., (2) 84 (1966).
- [16] P. E. Conner and E. E. Floyd, Differentiable periodic maps, Erg. Math., 33 (1964).
- [17] T. tom Dieck, Bordism of G -manifolds and integrality theorems, Topology, 9 (1970).
- [18] T. tom Dieck, Transformation groups and representation theory, Lecture notes in math. 766, Springer, 1979.
- [19] R. S. Palais, A global formulation of the Lie theory of transformation groups, Mem. Amer. Math. Soc., 22 (1957).
- [20] V. Guillemin and S. Sternberg, Remarks on a paper of Hermann, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 130 (1968).
- [21] F. Uchida, Real analytic $SL(n, \mathbb{R})$ actions on spheres, Tôhoku Math. J., 33 (1981).
- [22] D. Montgomery and L. Zippin, Topological transformation groups, Interscience, 1955.
- [23] S. Kobayashi, Transformation groups in differential geometry, Erg. math. 70, Springer, 1972.

432 (VI.8) Trigonometry

A. Plane Trigonometry

Fix an orthogonal frame $O-XY$ in a plane, and take a point P on the plane such that the angle POX is α . Denote by (x, y) the coordinates of P , and put $OP = r$ (Fig. 1). We call the six ratios $\sin \alpha = y/r$, $\cos \alpha = x/r$, $\tan \alpha = y/x$, $\cot \alpha = x/y$, $\sec \alpha = r/x$, $\csc \alpha = r/y$ the **sine**, **cosine**, **tangent**, **cotangent**, **secant**, and **cosecant** of α , respectively. These functions of the angle α are called **trigonometric functions** or **circular functions** (\rightarrow 131 Elementary Functions). They are periodic functions with the fundamental period π for the tangent and cotangent, and 2π for the others. The relation $\sin^2 \alpha + \cos^2 \alpha = 1$ and the **addition formulas** $\sin(\alpha \pm \beta) = \sin \alpha \cos \beta \pm \cos \alpha \sin \beta$, $\cos(\alpha \pm \beta) = \cos \alpha \cos \beta \mp \sin \alpha \sin \beta$ follow from the definitions (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 2). Given a plane triangle ABC (Fig. 2), we have the following three properties: (i) $a = b \cos C + c \cos B$ (**the first law of cosines**); (ii) $a^2 = b^2 + c^2 - 2bc \cos A$ (**the second law of cosines**); (iii) $a/\sin A = b/\sin B = c/\sin C = 2R$, where R is the radius of the circle circum-

scribed about $\triangle ABC$ (**laws of sines**) (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 2). Thus we obtain relations among the six quantities $a, b, c, \angle A, \angle B$, and $\angle C$ associated with the triangle ABC . The study of plane figures by means of trigonometric functions is called **plane trigonometry**. For example, if a suitable combination of three of these six quantities (including a side) associated with a triangle is given, then the other three quantities are uniquely determined. The determination of unknown quantities associated with a triangle by means of these laws is called **solving a triangle**.

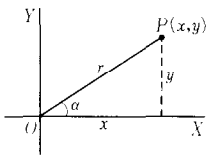


Fig. 1

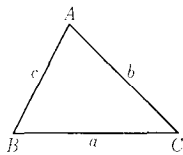


Fig. 2

B. Spherical Trigonometry

The part ABC of a spherical surface bounded by three arcs of great circles is called a **spherical triangle**. Points A, B, C are called the **vertices**; the three arcs a, b, c are called the **sides**; and the angles formed by lines tangent to the sides and intersecting at the vertices are called the **angles** of the spherical triangle (Fig. 3). If we denote the angles by A, B, C , we have the relation $A + B + C - \pi = E > 0$, and E is called the **spherical excess**. Spherical triangles have properties similar to those of plane triangles: $\sin a/\sin A = \sin b/\sin B = \sin c/\sin C$ (**laws of sines**), and $\cos a = \cos b \cos c + \sin b \sin c \cos A$ (**law of cosines**). The study of spherical figures by means of trigonometric functions, called **spherical trigonometry**, is widely used in astronomy, geodesy, and navigation (\rightarrow Appendix A, Table 2).

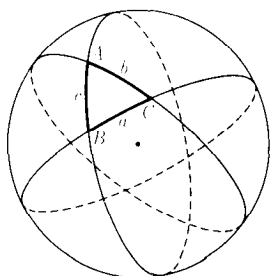


Fig. 3

C. History

Trigonometry originated from practical problems of determining a triangle from three of its elements. The development of spherical trigonometry, which was spurred on by its applications to astronomy, preceded the development of plane trigonometry. In Egypt, Babylon, and China, people had some knowledge of trigonometry, and the founder of trigonometry is believed to have been Hipparchus of Greece (fl. 150 B.C.). In the *Almagest* of Ptolemy (c. 150 A.D.) we find a table for $2 \sin \alpha$ for $\alpha = 0, 30', 1^\circ, 1^\circ 30', \dots$ that is exact to five decimal places, and the addition formulas. The Greeks calculated $2 \sin \alpha$, which is the length of the chord corresponding to the double arc. Indian mathematicians, on the other hand, calculated half of the above quantities, that is, $\sin \alpha$ and $1 - \cos \alpha$ for the arc α . In the book by Aryabhatta (c. 500 A.D.) we find laws of cosines. The Arabs, influenced by Indian mathematicians, expressed geometric computations algebraically, a technique also known to the Greeks. Abûl Wafâ (in the latter half of the 10th century A.D.) gave the correct sines of angles for every $30'$ to 9 decimal places and studied with Al Battani the projection triangle of the sundial, thereby obtaining the concepts of sine, cosine, secant, and cosecant. Later, a table of sines and cosines for every minute was established by the Arabs. Regiomontanus (d. 1476), a German, elaborated on this table. The form he gave to trigonometry has been maintained nearly intact to the present day. Various theorems in trigonometry were established by G. J. Rheticus, J. Napier, J. Kepler, and L. Euler (1748). Euler treated trigonometry as a branch of analysis, generalized it to functions of complex variables, and introduced the abbreviated notations that are still in use (\rightarrow 131 Elementary Functions).

References

- [1] H. Flanders and J. Price, *Trigonometry*, Academic Press, 1975.
- [2] A. Washington and C. Edmond, *Plane trigonometry*, Addison-Wesley, 1977.

433 (XX.12) Turbulence and Chaos

Turbulent flow is the irregular motion of fluids, whereas relatively simple types of flows that are either stationary, slowly varying, or periodic in time are called **laminar flow**. When

a laminar flow is stable against external disturbances, it remains laminar, but if the flow is unstable, it usually changes into either another type of laminar flow or a turbulent flow.

A. Stability and Bifurcation of Flows

The velocity field $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}, t)$, \mathbf{x} being the space coordinates and t the time, of a flow of an incompressible viscous fluid in a bounded domain G is determined by the ^{*}Navier-Stokes equation of motion,

$$\frac{\partial \mathbf{u}}{\partial t} + (\mathbf{u} \cdot \text{grad})\mathbf{u} - \nu \Delta \mathbf{u} + \frac{1}{\rho} \text{grad } p = 0, \quad (1)$$

and the equation of continuity,

$$\text{div } \mathbf{u} = 0, \quad (2)$$

with the prescribed initial and boundary conditions, where Δ denotes the Laplacian, p the pressure, ρ the density, and ν the kinematic viscosity of the fluid. Suitable extensions must be made in the foregoing system of equations if other field variables, such as the temperature in thermal-convection problems, are to be considered.

The stability of a fluid flow is studied by examining the behavior of the solution of equations (1) and (2) against external disturbances, and, in particular, stability against infinitesimal disturbances constitutes the linear stability problem. The stability characteristics of the solution of equations (1) and (2) depend largely upon the value of the ^{*}Reynolds number $R = UL/\nu$, U and L being the representative velocity and length of the flow, respectively. Let a stationary solution of equations (1) and (2) be $\mathbf{u}_0(\mathbf{x}, R)$. If the perturbed flow is given by $\mathbf{u}_0(\mathbf{x}, R) + \mathbf{v}(\mathbf{x}, R)\exp(\sigma t)$, \mathbf{v} being the perturbation velocity, and equation (1) is linearized with respect to \mathbf{v} , we obtain a ^{*}linear eigenvalue problem for σ . The flow is called linearly stable if $\max(\text{Re } \sigma)$ is negative, and linearly unstable if it is positive. For small values of R , a flow is generally stable, but it becomes unstable if R exceeds a critical value R_c , which is called the critical Reynolds number [1].

The instability of a stationary solution gives rise to the ^{*}bifurcation to another solution at a ^{*}bifurcation point R_c of the parameter R . If $\text{Im } \sigma = 0$ for an eigenvalue σ at $R = R_c$, a stationary solution bifurcates from the solution \mathbf{u}_0 at R_c , and if $\text{Im } \sigma \neq 0$, a time-periodic solution bifurcates at R_c . The latter bifurcation is called the Hopf bifurcation. A typical example of stationary bifurcation is the generation of an axially periodic row of Taylor vortices in Couette flow between two rotating coaxial cylinders, which was studied by G. I.

Taylor (1923), with excellent agreement between theory and experiment [2]. Hopf bifurcation is exemplified by the generation of Tollmien-Schlichting waves in the laminar ^{*}boundary layer along a flat plate, which was predicted theoretically by W. Tollmien (1929) and H. Schlichting (1933) and later confirmed experimentally by G. B. Schubauer and H. K. Skramstad (1947) [3].

In either type of bifurcation ($\text{Im } \sigma = 0$ or $\neq 0$) the bifurcation is called supercritical if the bifurcating solution exists only for $R > R_c$, subcritical if it exists only for $R < R_c$, and transcritical if it happens to exist on both sides of R_c . The amplitude of the departure of the bifurcating solution from the unperturbed solution \mathbf{u}_0 tends to zero as $R \rightarrow R_c$. The behavior of the bifurcating solution around the bifurcation point R_c is dealt with systematically by means of bifurcation analysis. In supercritical bifurcation, the bifurcating solution is stable and represents an equilibrium state to which the perturbed flow approaches just as in the cases of Taylor vortices and Tollmien-Schlichting waves. On the other hand, for subcritical bifurcation the bifurcating solution is unstable and gives a critical amplitude of the disturbance above which the linearly stable basic flow ($R < R_c$) becomes unstable. In this case, the instability of the basic flow gives rise to a sudden change of the flow pattern resulting in either a stationary (or time-periodic) or even turbulent flow. The transition to turbulent flow that takes place in Hagen-Poiseuille flow through a circular tube and is linearly stable at all values of R ($R_c = \infty$) may be attributed to this type of bifurcation.

The concept of bifurcation can be extended to the case where the flow \mathbf{u}_0 is nonstationary, but the bifurcation analysis then becomes much more difficult.

B. Onset of Turbulence

The fluctuating flow resulting from an instability does not itself necessarily constitute a turbulent flow. In order that a flow be turbulent, the fluctuations must take on some irregularity. The turbulent flow is usually defined in terms of the long-time behavior of the flow velocity $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}, t)$ at a fixed point \mathbf{x} in space. The flow is expected to be turbulent if the fluctuating velocity

$$\delta \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}, t) = \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}, t) - \lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{T} \int_0^T \mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x}, t) dt \quad (3)$$

satisfies the condition

$$\lim_{\tau \rightarrow \infty} \lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} \frac{1}{T} \int_0^T \delta u_i(\mathbf{x}, t) \delta u_i(\mathbf{x}, t + \tau) dt = 0, \quad (4)$$

where the subscripts label the components. Condition (4) implies that the dynamical system of a fluid has the mixing property. This condition also states that the velocity fluctuation δu_i has a continuous frequency spectrum. In practical situations the frequency spectrum of a turbulent flow may contain both the line and continuous spectra, in which case the flow is said to be partially turbulent.

L. D. Landau (1959) and E. Hopf (1948) proposed a picture of turbulent flow as one composed of a quasiperiodic motion, $\mathbf{u}(t) = \mathbf{f}(\omega_1 t, \omega_2 t, \dots, \omega_n t)$, with a large number of rationally independent frequencies $\omega_1, \dots, \omega_n$ produced by successive supercritical bifurcations of Hopf type. This picture of turbulence is not compatible with the foregoing definition of turbulence, since it does not satisfy the mixing property (4). The fact that the generation of real turbulence is not necessarily preceded by successive supercritical bifurcations casts another limitation on the validity of this picture.

The concept of turbulence is more clearly exhibited with respect to a dynamical system of finite dimension. Although we are without a general proof, it is expected that the Navier-Stokes equation with nonzero viscosity ν can be approximated within any degree of accuracy by a system of finite-dimensional first-order ordinary differential equations

$$\frac{dX}{dt} = F(X). \quad (5)$$

Thus the onset and some general properties of turbulence are understood in the context of the theory of dynamical systems. Turbulence is related to those solutions of equation (5) that tend to a set in the phase space that is neither a fixed point, a closed orbit, nor a torus. A set of such complicated structure is called a nonperiodic attractor or a strange attractor. Historically, the strange attractor originates from the strange Axiom A attractor that was found in a certain class of dynamical systems called the Axiom A systems. However, this term has come to be used in a broader sense, and it now represents a variety of nonperiodic motions exhibited by a system that is not necessarily of Axiom A type. The above-mentioned Landau-Hopf picture of turbulence was criticized by D. Ruelle and F. Takens (1971), who proved for the dynamical system (5) that an arbitrary small perturbation on a quasiperiodic flow on a k -dimensional torus ($k \geq 4$) generically (in the sense of residual sets) produces a flow with a strange Axiom A attractor [4].

There exist a number of examples of first-order ordinary differential equations of relatively low dimension whose solutions exhibit

nonperiodic behavior. An important model system related to turbulence is the Lorenz model (1963) of thermal convection in a horizontal fluid layer. This model is obtained by taking only three components out of an infinite number of spatial Fourier components of the velocity and temperature fields. The model is written as

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{dX}{dt} &= -\sigma X + \sigma Y, \\ \frac{dY}{dt} &= -XZ + rX - Y, \\ \frac{dZ}{dt} &= XY - bZ, \end{aligned} \quad (6)$$

where σ ($> b + 1$) and b are positive constants and r is a parameter proportional to the Rayleigh number. Obviously, equations (6) have a fixed point $X = Y = Z = 0$ representing the state of thermal convection without fluid flow. For $r < 1$, this fixed point is stable, but it becomes unstable for $r > 1$, and a pair of new fixed points $X = Y = \pm \sqrt{b(r-1)}$, $Z = r-1$ emerges supercritically. This corresponds to the onset of stationary convection at $r = 1$. At a still higher value of $r = \sigma(\sigma + b + 3)/(\sigma - b - 1)$, a subcritical Hopf bifurcation occurs with respect to this pair of fixed points, and for a certain range of r above this threshold the solutions with almost any initial conditions exhibit nonperiodic behavior. This corresponds to the generation of turbulence. The property

$$\frac{\partial \dot{X}}{\partial X} + \frac{\partial \dot{Y}}{\partial Y} + \frac{\partial \dot{Z}}{\partial Z} = -(\sigma + b + 1) < 0, \quad (7)$$

where the dots denote time derivatives, shows that each volume element of the phase space shrinks asymptotically to zero as the time increases indefinitely. This property is characteristic of dynamical systems with energy dissipation, in sharp contrast to the measure-preserving character of Hamiltonian systems [5].

For a certain class of ordinary differential equations, the bifurcation to nonperiodic motion corresponds neither to the bifurcation of tori, just as in the Ruelle-Takens theory, nor to subcritical bifurcation, as in the Lorenz model. Such a bifurcation takes place when nonperiodic motion emerges as the consequence of an infinite sequence of supercritical bifurcations at each of which a periodic orbit of period T bifurcates into one of period $2T$. If we denote the n th bifurcation point by r_n , the distance $r_{n+1} - r_n$ between two successive bifurcation points decreases exponentially with increasing n , and eventually the bifurcation points accumulate at a point r_c , beyond which nonperiodic motion is expected to emerge. It is

not yet clear if any of the above three types of bifurcation leading to nonperiodic behavior is actually responsible for the generation of real turbulence.

Some important properties of a dynamical system with a nonperiodic attractor, which may be either a flow or a \dagger diffeomorphism, can be stated as follows:

- (i) The distance between two points in the phase space that are initially close to each other grows exponentially in time, so that the solutions exhibit a sensitive dependence on the initial conditions.
- (ii) The nonperiodic attractor has \dagger Lebesgue measure zero, and such a system is expected to have many other \dagger ergodic \dagger invariant measures.

The irregular behavior of a deterministic dynamical system is also called **chaos**, but this concept is more abstract and general than that of turbulence, and covers phenomena exhibited by systems such as nonlinear electric circuits, chemical reactions, and ecological systems.

C. Statistical Theory of Turbulence

The statistical theory of turbulence deals with the statistical behavior of fully developed turbulence. The turbulent field is sometimes idealized for mathematical simplicity to be homogeneous or isotropic. In **homogeneous turbulence** the statistical laws are invariant under all parallel displacements of the coordinates, whereas in **isotropic turbulence** invariance under rotations and reflections of the coordinates is required in addition.

The instantaneous state of the fluid motion is completely determined by specifying the fluid velocity \mathbf{u} at all space points \mathbf{x} and can be expressed as a phase point in the infinite-dimensional \dagger phase space spanned by these velocities. The phase point moves with time along a path uniquely determined by the solution of the Navier-Stokes equation. In the turbulent state the path is unstable to the initial disturbance and describes an irregular line in the phase space. In this situation the deterministic description is no longer useful and should be replaced by a statistical treatment. Abstractly speaking, turbulence is just a view of fluid motion as the random motion of the phase point $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})$ (\rightarrow 407 Stochastic Processes). The equation for the \dagger characteristic functional of the random velocity $\mathbf{u}(\mathbf{x})$ was first given by E. Hopf (1952). An exact solution obtained by Hopf represents a \dagger normal distribution associated with a white energy spectrum, but so far no general solution has been obtained [6].

Besides the formulation in terms of the

\dagger probability distribution or the characteristic functional, there is another way of describing turbulence by \dagger moments of lower orders. This is the conventional statistical theory originated by G. I. Taylor (1935) and T. von Kármán (1938), which made remarkable progress after World War II. The principal moments in this theory are the **correlation tensor**, whose (i, j) -component is the mean of the product of two velocity components u_i at a point \mathbf{x} and u_j at another point $\mathbf{x} + \mathbf{r}$,

$$B_{ij}(\mathbf{r}) = \langle u_i(\mathbf{x})u_j(\mathbf{x} + \mathbf{r}) \rangle, \quad (8)$$

and its \dagger Fourier transform, or the **energy spectrum tensor**,

$$\Phi_{ij}(\mathbf{k}) = \frac{1}{(2\pi)^3} \int B_{ij}(\mathbf{r}) \exp(-\sqrt{-1} \mathbf{k} \cdot \mathbf{r}) d\mathbf{r}. \quad (9)$$

In isotropic turbulence Φ_{ij} is expressed as

$$\Phi_{ij}(\mathbf{k}) = \frac{1}{4\pi k^2} E(k) \left(\delta_{ij} - \frac{k_i k_j}{k^2} \right), \quad k = |\mathbf{k}|, \quad (10)$$

where $E(k)$ is the **energy spectrum function**, representing the amount of energy included in a spherical shell of radius k in the wave number space. The energy of turbulence \mathcal{E} per unit mass is expressed as

$$\begin{aligned} \mathcal{E} &= \frac{1}{2} \langle |\mathbf{u}|^2 \rangle = \frac{1}{2} B_{ii}(0) = \frac{1}{2} \int \Phi_{ii}(\mathbf{k}) d\mathbf{k} \\ &= \int_0^\infty E(k) dk. \end{aligned} \quad (11)$$

The state of turbulence is characterized by the Reynolds number $R = E_0^{1/2}/(\nu k_0^{1/2})$, where E_0 and k_0 are representative values of $E(k)$ and k , respectively. For weak turbulence of small R , $E(k)$ is governed by a linear equation with the general solution

$$E(k, t) = E(k, 0) \exp(-2\nu k^2 t), \quad (12)$$

$E(k, 0)$ being an arbitrary function. Thus $E(k)$ decays in time due to the viscous dissipation. For strong turbulence of large R , it is difficult to obtain the precise form of $E(k)$, and this is usually done by way of some assumption that allows us to approximate the nonlinear effects [7].

Some of the similarity laws governing the energy spectrum and other statistical functions can be determined rigorously but not necessarily uniquely. For 3-dimensional incompressible turbulence, the energy spectrum satisfies an inviscid similarity law

$$E(k)/E_0 = F_e(k/k_0) \quad (13)$$

in the energy-containing region $k = O(k_0)$ characterized by a wave number k_0 , and a viscous similarity law

$$E(k)/E_0 = R^{-5/4} F_d(k/(R^{3/4} k_0)), \quad (14)$$

in the energy dissipation region $k = O(R^{3/4} k_0)$, where F_e and F_d denote dimensionless functions generally dependent on the initial condition and the time [6].

If an assumption is made to the effect that the statistical state in the energy-dissipation region depends only upon the energy-dissipation rate $\varepsilon = -d\mathcal{E}/dt$ besides the viscosity ν (or R), then (14) becomes Kolmogorov's equilibrium similarity law (1941):

$$E(k) = \varepsilon^{1/4} \nu^{5/4} F(k/(\varepsilon^{1/4} \nu^{-3/4})), \quad (15)$$

where F is a dimensionless function. For extremely large R (or small ν) there exists an inertial subregion between the energy-containing and energy-dissipation regions such that the viscous effect vanishes and (15) takes the form

$$E(k) = K \varepsilon^{2/3} k^{-5/3}, \quad (16)$$

where K is an absolute constant. **Kolmogorov's spectrum** (16) has been observed experimentally several times, and now its consistency with experimental results at large Reynolds numbers is well established [8].

Kolmogorov (1962) and others modified (16) by taking account of the fluctuation of ε due to the **intermittent structure** of the energy-dissipation region as

$$E(k) = K' \varepsilon^{2/3} k^{-5/3} (Lk)^{-\mu/9}, \quad (17)$$

where ε is now the average of the fluctuating ε , μ is the covariance of the log-normal distribution of ε , and L is the length scale of the spatial domain in which the average of ε is taken [8]. A similar modification, with the exponent $-\mu/3$ in place of $-\mu/9$, is obtained using a fractal model of the energy-cascade process. These corrections to $E(k)$, based upon the experimentally estimated μ of 0.3–0.5, are too small to be detected experimentally, but the deviation is expected to appear more clearly in the higher-order moments [8–10]. It should be noted that Kolmogorov's spectrum (16) itself does not contradict the notion of intermittent turbulence and gives one of the possible asymptotic forms in the limit $R \rightarrow \infty$.

The 1-dimensional Burgers model of turbulence satisfies the same similarity laws as (13) and (14), but it has an inviscid spectrum $E(k) \propto k^{-2}$ instead of (16). Two-dimensional incompressible turbulence has no energy-dissipation region, and hence Kolmogorov's theory is not valid for this turbulence. It has an inviscid spectrum $E(k) \propto k^{-3}$, first derived by R. H. Kraichnan (1967), C. E. Leith (1968), and G. K. Batchelor (1969). These inviscid spectra for 1- and 2-dimensional turbulence have been confirmed by numerical simulation [11].

References

- [1] C. C. Lin, The theory of hydrodynamical stability, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1955.
- [2] S. Chandrasekhar, Hydrodynamic and hydromagnetic stability, Clarendon Press, 1961.
- [3] H. L. Dryden, Recent advances in the mechanics of boundary layer flow, Adv. Appl. Mech., 1 (1948), 1–40.
- [4] D. Ruelle and F. Takens, On the nature of turbulence, Comm. Math. Phys., 20 (1971), 167–192.
- [5] E. N. Lorenz, Deterministic nonperiodic flow, J. Atmospheric Sci., 20 (1963), 130–141.
- [6] T. Tatsumi, Theory of homogeneous turbulence, Adv. Appl. Mech., 20 (1980), 39–133.
- [7] G. K. Batchelor, The theory of homogeneous turbulence, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1953.
- [8] A. S. Monin and A. M. Yaglom, Statistical fluid mechanics II, MIT Press, 1975.
- [9] B. Mandelbrot, Fractals and turbulence: Attractors and dispersion, Lecture notes in math. 615, Springer, 1977, 83–93.
- [10] B. Mandelbrot, Intermittent turbulence and fractal dimension: Kurtosis and the spectral exponent $5/3 + B$, Lecture notes in math. 565, Springer, 1977, 121–145.
- [11] T. Tatsumi, Analytical theories and numerical experiments on two-dimensional turbulence, Theor. Appl. Mech., 29 (1979), 375–393.

U

434 (XX.22) Unified Field Theory

A. History

Unified field theory is a branch of theoretical physics that arose from the success of [†]general relativity theory. Its purpose is to discuss in a unified way the fields of gravitation, electromagnetism, and nuclear force from the standpoint of the geometric structure of space and time. Studies have continued since 1918, and many theories of mathematical interest have been published without attaining, however, any conclusive physical theory.

A characteristic feature of relativity theory is that it is based on a completely new concept of space and time. That is, in general relativity theory it is considered that when a gravitational field is generated by matter, the structure of space and time changes, and the flat [†]Minkowski world becomes a 4-dimensional [†]Riemannian manifold (with signature (1, 3)) having nonvanishing curvature. The [†]fundamental tensor g_{ij} of the manifold is interpreted as the gravitational potential, and the basic gravitational equation can be described as a geometric law of the manifold. It is characteristic of general relativity theory that gravitational phenomena are reduced to space-time structure (\rightarrow 359 Relativity). The introduction of the Minkowski world in [†]special relativity theory was a revolutionary advance over the 3-dimensional space of Newtonian mechanics. But the inner structure of the Minkowski world does not reflect gravitational phenomena. The latter shortcoming is overcome by introducing the concept of space-time represented by a Riemannian manifold into general relativity theory.

When a coexisting system of gravitational and electromagnetic fields is discussed in general relativity theory, simultaneous equations (Einstein-Maxwell equations) must be solved for the gravitational potential g_{ij} and the electromagnetic field tensor F_{ij} . Thus the gravitational potential g_{ij} is affected by the existence of an electromagnetic field. As the validity of general relativity began to be accepted, it came to be expected that all physical actions might be attributed to the gravitational and electromagnetic fields. Thus various extensions of general relativity theory have been proposed in order to devise a geometry in which the electromagnetic as well as the gravitational field directly contributes to the space-time structure, and to establish a unified theory of both fields on the basis of the geometry thus obtained. These attempts are illustrated in Fig. 1.

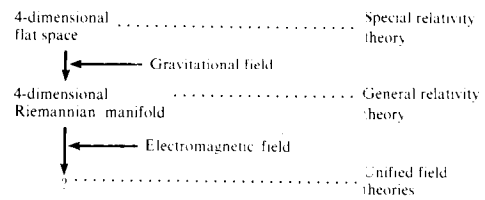


Fig. 1

B. Weyl's Theory

The first unified field theory was proposed by H. Weyl in 1918. In Riemannian geometry, which is the mathematical framework of general relativity theory, the [†]covariant derivative of the [†]fundamental tensor g_{ij} vanishes, i.e.,

$$\nabla_i g_{jk} \equiv \partial g_{jk} / \partial x^i - g_{ja} \Gamma_{ik}^a - g_{ak} \Gamma_{ij}^a = 0, \quad (1)$$

where Γ_{jk}^i is the [†]Christoffel symbol derived from g_{ij} . Conversely, if Γ_{jk}^i is considered as the coefficient of a general [†]affine connection and (1) is solved with respect to Γ_{jk}^i under the condition $\Gamma_{jk}^i = \Gamma_{kj}^i$, then the Christoffel symbol derived from g_{ij} coincides with Γ_{jk}^i . In this sense, (1) means that the space-time manifold has Riemannian structure. On the other hand, Weyl considered a space whose structure is given by an extension of (1),

$$\nabla_i g_{jk} = 2A_i g_{jk}, \quad (2)$$

and developed a unified field theory by regarding A_i as the electromagnetic potential. This theory has mathematical significance in that it motivated the discovery of Cartan's geometry of connection, but it has some unsatisfactory points concerning the derivation of the field equation and the equation of motion for a charged particle.

The scale transformation given by $\bar{g}_{ij} = \rho^2 g_{ij}$ is important in Weyl's theory. If in addition to this transformation, A_i is changed to

$$\bar{A}_i = A_i - \partial \log \rho / \partial x^i, \quad (3)$$

then (2) is left invariant and the space-time structure in Weyl's theory remains unchanged. We call (3) the **gauge transformation**, corresponding to the fact that the electromagnetic potential A_i is determined by the electromagnetic field tensor F_{ij} up to a gradient vector. In the [†]field theories known at present, the gauge transformation is generalized to various fields, and the law of charge conservation is derived from the invariance of field equations under generalized gauge transformation.

C. Further Developments

A unified field theory that appeared after Weyl's is **Kaluza's 5-dimensional theory** (Th.

Kaluza, 1921). This theory has been criticized as being artificial, but it is logically consistent, and therefore many of the later unified field theories are improved or generalized versions of it. The underlying space of Kaluza's theory is a 5-dimensional Riemannian manifold with the fundamental form

$$ds^2 = (dx^4 + A_a dx^a)^2 + g_{ab} dx^a dx^b,$$

where A_i and g_{ij} are functions of x^i alone ($a, b, \dots, i, j = 0, 1, 2, 3$). The field equation and the equation of motion of a particle are derived from the variational principle in general relativity theory. The field equation is equivalent to the Einstein-Maxwell equations. The trajectory of a charged particle is given by a geodesic in the manifold, and its equation is reducible to the Lorentz equation in general relativity.

After the introduction of Kaluza's theory, various unified field theories were proposed, and we give here the underlying manifolds or geometries of some mathematically interesting theories: a manifold with \dagger affine connection admitting absolute parallelism (A. Einstein, 1928); a manifold with \dagger projective connection (O. Veblen, B. Hoffman, 1930 [4]; J. A. Schouten, D. van Dantzig, 1932); **wave geometry** (a theory based on the linearization of the fundamental form; Y. Mimura, 1934 [3]); a nonholonomic geometry (G. Vranceanu, 1936); a manifold with \dagger conformal connection (Hoffman, 1948).

The investigations since 1945 have been motivated by the problem of the representation of matter in general relativity theory. Einstein first represented matter by an energy-momentum tensor T_{ij} of class C^0 , which must be determined by information obtained from outside relativity. Afterward he felt that this point was unsatisfactory and tried to develop a theory on the basis of field variables alone, without introducing such a quantity as T_{ij} . This theory is the so-called **unitary field theory**, and a solution without singularities is required from a physical point of view. His first attempt was to remove singularities from an exterior solution in general relativity by changing the topological structure of the space-time manifold. This idea was then extended to a unified field theory by J. A. Wheeler, and an interpretation was given to mass and charge by applying the theory of \dagger harmonic integrals (1957) [2].

Einstein's second attempt was to propose a **nonsymmetric unified field theory** (1945) [1, Appendix II; 6]. The fundamental quantities in this theory are a nonsymmetric tensor g_{ij} and a nonsymmetric affine connection Γ_{jk}^i . The underlying space of the theory can be considered a direct extension of the Riemannian

manifold, since (1) is contained in the field equations (notice the order of indices in this equation). E. Schrödinger obtained field equations of almost the same form by taking only Γ_{jk}^i as a fundamental quantity (1947) [5].

References

- [1] A. Einstein, The meaning of relativity, Princeton Univ. Press, fifth edition, 1956.
- [2] J. A. Wheeler, Geometrodynamics, Academic Press, 1962.
- [3] Y. Mimura and H. Takeno, Wave geometry, Sci. Rep. Res. Inst. Theoret. Phys. Hiroshima Univ., no. 2 (1962).
- [4] O. Veblen, Projektive Relativitätstheorie, Springer, 1933.
- [5] E. Schrödinger, Space-time structure, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1950.
- [6] A. Einstein, A generalization of the relativistic theory of gravitation, Ann. Math., (2) 46 (1945), 578–584.
- [7] V. Hlavatý, Geometry of Einstein's unified field theory, Noordhoff, 1957.
- [8] M. A. Tonnelat, Einstein's unified field theory, Gordon & Breach, 1966. (Original in French, 1955.)

435 (II.23) Uniform Convergence

A. Uniform Convergence of a Sequence of Real-Valued Functions

A sequence of real-valued functions $\{f_n(x)\}$ defined on a set B is said to be **uniformly convergent** (or to **converge uniformly**) to a function $f(x)$ on the set B if it converges with respect to the \dagger norm $\|\varphi\| = \sup\{|\varphi(x)| \mid x \in B\}$, i.e., $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \|f_n - f\| = 0$ (\rightarrow 87 Convergence). In other words, $\{f_n(x)\}$ converges uniformly to $f(x)$ on B if for every positive constant ε we can select a number N independent of the point x such that $|f_n(x) - f(x)| < \varepsilon$ holds for all $n > N$ and $x \in B$. By the \dagger completeness of the real numbers, a sequence of functions $\{f_n(x)\}$ converges uniformly on B if and only if we can select for every positive constant ε a number N independent of the point x such that $|f_m(x) - f_n(x)| < \varepsilon$ holds for all $m, n > N$ and $x \in B$.

The **uniform convergence** of a series $\sum_n f_n(x)$ or of an infinite product $\prod_n f_n(x)$ is defined by the uniform convergence of the sequence of its partial sums or products. If the series of the absolute values $\sum_n |f_n(x)|$ converges uniformly, then the series $\sum_n f_n(x)$ also converges uniformly. In this case the series $\sum_n f_n(x)$ is said to

be **uniformly absolutely convergent**. A sequence of (nonnegative) constants M_n satisfying $|f_n(x)| \leq M_n$ is called a **dominant** (or **majorant**) of the sequence of functions $\{f_n(x)\}$. A series of functions $\sum_n f_n(x)$ with converging **majorant series** $\sum_n M_n$ is uniformly absolutely convergent (**Weierstrass's criterion for uniform convergence**).

Let $\{\lambda_n(x)\}$ be another sequence of functions on B . The series $\sum_n \lambda_n(x) f_n(x)$ is uniformly convergent if either of the following conditions holds: (i) The series $\sum_n f_n(x)$ converges uniformly and the partial sums of the series $\sum_n |\lambda_n(x) - \lambda_{n+1}(x)|$ are uniformly bounded, i.e., bounded by a constant independent of $x \in B$ and of the number of terms; or (ii) the series $\sum_n |\lambda_n(x) - \lambda_{n+1}(x)|$ converges uniformly, the sequence $\{\lambda_n(x)\}$ converges uniformly to 0, and the partial sums of $\sum_n |f_n(x)|$ are uniformly bounded.

B. Uniform Convergence and Pointwise Convergence

Let $\{f_n(x)\}$ be a sequence of real-valued functions on B , and let $f(x)$ be a real-valued function also defined on B . If the sequence of numbers $\{f_n(x_0)\}$ converges to $f(x_0)$ for every point $x_0 \in B$, we say that $\{f_n(x)\}$ is **pointwise convergent** (or **simply convergent**) to the function $f(x)$. Pointwise convergence is, of course, weaker than uniform convergence. If we represent the function $f(x)$ by the point $\prod_{x \in B} f(x) = [f]$ of the t Cartesian product $\mathbf{R}^B = \prod_{x \in B} \mathbf{R}$, then the pointwise convergence of $\{f_n(x)\}$ to $f(x)$ is equivalent to the convergence of the sequence of points $\{[f_n]\}$ to $[f]$ in the t product topology of \mathbf{R}^B .

When B is a t topological space and every $f_n(x)$ is continuous, the pointwise limit $f(x)$ of the sequence $\{f_n(x)\}$ is not necessarily continuous. However, if the sequence of continuous functions $\{f_n(x)\}$ converges uniformly to $f(x)$, then the limit function $f(x)$ is continuous. On the other hand, the continuity of the limit does not imply that the convergence is uniform. If the set B is t compact and the sequence of continuous functions $\{f_n(x)\}$ is monotone (i.e., $f_n(x) \leq f_{n+1}(x)$ for all n or $f_n(x) \geq f_{n+1}(x)$ for all n) and pointwise convergent to a continuous function $f(x)$, then the convergence is uniform (**Dini's theorem**).

C. Uniform Convergence on a Family of Sets

Let B be a topological space. We say that a sequence of functions $\{f_n(x)\}$ is **uniformly convergent in the wider sense** to the function

$f(x)$, depending on circumstances, in either of the following two cases: (i) Every point $x_0 \in B$ has a neighborhood U on which the sequence $\{f_n(x)\}$ converges uniformly to $f(x)$; or (ii) $\{f_n(x)\}$ converges uniformly to $f(x)$ on every compact subset K in B . If B is t locally compact, the two definitions coincide. The term **uniform convergence on compact sets** is also used for (ii).

In general, given a family \mathcal{P} of subsets in B , we may introduce in the space \mathcal{F} of real-valued functions on B a family of t seminorms $\|f\|_K = \sup\{|f(x)| \mid x \in K\}$ for every set $K \in \mathcal{P}$. Let T be the topology of \mathcal{F} defined by this family of seminorms (\rightarrow 424 Topological Linear Spaces). A sequence $\{f_n(x)\}$ is called **uniformly convergent on \mathcal{P}** if it is convergent with respect to T . In particular, when \mathcal{P} coincides with $\{B\}$, $\{\{x\} \mid x \in B\}$, or the family of all compact sets in B , then uniform convergence on \mathcal{P} coincides with the usual uniform convergence, pointwise convergence, or uniform convergence on compact sets, respectively. If \mathcal{P} is a countable set, the topology T is t metrizable. Most of these definitions and results may be extended to the case of functions whose values are in the complex number field, in a t normed space, or in any t uniform space.

D. Topology of the Space of Mappings

Let X, Y be two topological spaces. Denote by $C(X, Y)$ the space of all continuous mappings $f: X \rightarrow Y$. This space $C(X, Y)$, or a subspace \mathcal{F} of $C(X, Y)$, is called a **mapping space** (or **function space** or **space of continuous mappings**) from X to Y . A natural mapping $\Phi: \mathcal{F} \times X \rightarrow Y$ is defined by $\Phi(f, x) = f(x)$ ($f \in \mathcal{F}, x \in X$). We define a topology in \mathcal{F} as follows: for a compact set K in X and an open set U in Y , put $W(K, U) = \{f \in \mathcal{F} \mid f(K) \in U\}$, and introduce a topology in \mathcal{F} such that the base for the topology consists of intersections of finite numbers of $W(K_i, U_i)$. This topology is called the **compact-open topology** (R. H. Fox, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 51 (1945)). When X is a t locally compact Hausdorff space and Y is a t Hausdorff space, the compact-open topology is the t weakest topology on \mathcal{F} for which the function Φ is continuous. If, in this case, \mathcal{F} is compact with respect to the compact-open topology, then the compact-open topology coincides with the topology of pointwise convergence.

In particular, when Y is a t metric space (or, in general, a t uniform space with the uniformity \mathcal{U}), the compact-open topology in \mathcal{F} coincides with the topology of uniform convergence on compact sets. A family \mathcal{F} is called

equicontinuous at a point $x \in X$ if for every positive number ε (in the case of uniform space, for every $V \in \mathcal{U}$) there exists a neighborhood U of x such that $\rho(f(x), f(p)) < \varepsilon$ ($f(x), f(p) \in V$) for every point $p \in U$ and for every function $f \in \mathcal{F}$ (G. Ascoli, 1883–1884). If X is a * locally compact Hausdorff space, a necessary and sufficient condition for \mathcal{F} to be relatively compact (i.e., for the closure of \mathcal{F} to be compact) with respect to the compact-open topology (i.e., to the topology of uniform convergence on compact sets) is that \mathcal{F} be equicontinuous at every point $x \in X$ and that the set $\{f(x) | f \in \mathcal{F}\}$ be relatively compact in Y for every point $x \in X$ (**Ascoli's theorem**). In particular, when X is a σ -compact locally compact Hausdorff space and Y is the space of real numbers, a family of functions \mathcal{F} that are equicontinuous (at every point $x \in X$) and uniformly bounded is relatively compact. Hence, for any sequence of functions $\{f_n\}$ in \mathcal{F} , we can select a subsequence $\{f_{n(v)}\}$ which converges uniformly on compact sets (**Ascoli-Arzelà theorem**).

E. Normal Families

P. Montel (1912) gave the name **normal family** to the family of functions that is relatively compact with respect to the topology of uniform convergence on compact sets. This terminology is used mainly for the family of complex analytic functions. In that case, it is customary to compactify the range space and consider Y to be the * Riemann sphere. Using this notion, Montel succeeded in giving a unified treatment of various results in the theory of complex functions.

A family of analytic functions \mathcal{F} on a finite-dimensional * complex manifold X is a normal family if it is uniformly bounded on each compact set (**Montel's theorem**). Another criterion is that there are three values on the Riemann sphere which no function $f \in \mathcal{F}$ takes. More generally, three exceptional values not taken by $f \in \mathcal{F}$ may depend on f , if there is a positive lower bound for the distances between these three values on the Riemann sphere. This gives an easy proof of the * Picard theorem stating that every * transcendental meromorphic function $f(z)$ in $|z| < \infty$ must take all values except possibly two values. In fact the family of functions $f_n(z) = f(z/2^n)$, $n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$, in $\{1 < |z| < 2\}$ cannot be normal. Using a similar procedure, G. Julia obtained the results on * Julia's direction.

F. Marty introduced the notion of **spherical derivative** $|f'(z)|/(1 + |f(z)|^2)$ for the analytic or meromorphic function $f(z)$ and proved that

for a family $\mathcal{F} = \{f(z)\}$ of analytic functions to be normal, it is necessary and sufficient that the spherical derivatives of $f \in \mathcal{F}$ be uniformly bounded. This theorem implies Montel's theorem and its various extensions, including, for example, quantitative results concerning * Borel's direction.

A family \mathcal{F} of analytic functions of one variable defined on X is said to form a **quasi-normal family** if there exists a subset P of X consisting only of isolated points such that from any sequence $\{f_n\}$ ($f_n \in \mathcal{F}$) we can select a subsequence $\{f_{n(v)}\}$ converging uniformly on $X - P$. If P is finite and consists of p points, the family \mathcal{F} is called a quasinormal family of order p . For example, the family of at most *p -valent functions is quasinormal of order p .

The theory of normal families of complex analytic functions is not only applied to * value distribution theory, as above, but also used to show the existence of a function that gives the extremal of functionals. The extremal function is usually obtained as a limit of a subsequence of a sequence in a normal family. A typical example of this method is seen in the proof of the * Riemann mapping theorem. This is perhaps the only general method known today in the study of the iteration of * holomorphic functions. By this method, Julia (1919) made an exhaustive study of the iteration of meromorphic functions; there are several other investigations on the iteration of elementary transcendental functions. On the other hand, A. Wintner (*Comm. Math. Helv.*, 23 (1949)) gave the implicit function theorem for analytic functions in a precise form using the theory of normal families of analytic functions of several variables.

References

- [1] N. Bourbaki, *Eléments de mathématique*, III., Topologie générale, ch. 10, Espaces fonctionnels, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1084b, Hermann, second edition, 1967; English translation, *Theory of sets*, Addison-Wesley, 1966.
- [2] J. L. Kelley, *General topology*, Van Nostrand, 1955, ch. 7.
- [3] J. Dieudonné, *Foundations of modern analysis*, Academic Press, 1960, enlarged and corrected printing, 1969.
- For normal families of complex functions,
- [4] P. Montel, *Leçons sur les familles normales de fonctions analytiques et leurs applications*, Gauthier-Villars, 1927.
- [5] G. Valiron, *Familles normales et quasinormales de fonctions méromorphes*, Gauthier-Villars, 1929.

436 (II.22) Uniform Spaces

A. Introduction

There are certain properties defined on * metric spaces but not on general * topological spaces, for example, * completeness or * uniform continuity of functions. Generalizing metric spaces, A. Weil introduced the notion of uniform spaces. This notion can be defined in several ways [3, 4]. The definition in Section B is that of Weil [1] without the * separation axiom for topology.

We denote by Δ_X the **diagonal** $\{(x, x) | x \in X\}$ of the Cartesian product $X \times X$ of a set X with itself. If U and V are subsets of $X \times X$, then the **composite** $V \circ U$ is defined to be the set of all pairs (x, y) such that for some element z of X , the pair (x, z) is in U and the pair (z, y) is in V . The inverse U^{-1} of U is defined to be the set of all pairs (x, y) such that $(y, x) \in U$.

B. Definitions

Let \mathcal{U} be a nonempty family of subsets of $X \times X$ such that (i) if $U \in \mathcal{U}$ and $U \subset V$, then $V \in \mathcal{U}$; (ii) if $U, V \in \mathcal{U}$, then $U \cap V \in \mathcal{U}$; (iii) if $U \in \mathcal{U}$, then $\Delta_X \subset U$; (iv) if $U \in \mathcal{U}$, then $U^{-1} \in \mathcal{U}$; and (v) if $U \in \mathcal{U}$, then $V \circ V \subset U$ for some $V \in \mathcal{U}$. Then we say that a **uniform structure** (or simply a **uniformity**) is defined on X by \mathcal{U} . If a uniformity is defined on X by \mathcal{U} , then the pair (X, \mathcal{U}) or simply the set X itself is called a **uniform space**, and \mathcal{U} is usually called a **uniformity** for X .

A subfamily \mathcal{B} of the uniformity \mathcal{U} is called a **base for the uniformity** \mathcal{U} if every member of \mathcal{U} contains a member of \mathcal{B} . If a family \mathcal{B} of subsets of $X \times X$ is a base for a uniformity \mathcal{U} , then the following propositions hold: (ii') if $U, V \in \mathcal{B}$, then there exists a $W \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $W \subset U \cap V$; (iii') if $U \in \mathcal{B}$, then $\Delta_X \subset U$; (iv') if $U \in \mathcal{B}$, then there exists a $V \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $V \subset U^{-1}$; (v') if $U \in \mathcal{B}$, then there exists a $V \in \mathcal{B}$ such that $V \circ V \subset U$. Conversely, if a family \mathcal{B} of subsets of a Cartesian product $X \times X$ satisfies (ii')–(v'), then the family $\mathcal{U} = \{U | U \subset X \times X, V \subset U \text{ for some } V \in \mathcal{B}\}$ defines a uniformity on X and \mathcal{B} is a base for \mathcal{U} . Given a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) , a member V of \mathcal{U} is said to be **symmetric** if $V = V^{-1}$. The family of all symmetric members of \mathcal{U} is a base for \mathcal{U} .

C. Topology of Uniform Spaces

Given a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) , an element $x \in X$, and $U \in \mathcal{U}$, we put $U(x) = \{y | (x, y) \in U\}$.

Then the family $\mathcal{U}(x) = \{U(x) | U \in \mathcal{U}\}$ forms a neighborhood system of $x \in X$, which gives rise to a topology of X (\rightarrow 425 Topological Spaces). This topology is called the **uniform topology** (or **topology of the uniformity**). When we refer to a topology of a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) , it is understood to be the uniform topology; thus a uniform space is also called a **uniform topological space**. If \mathcal{B} is a base for the uniformity of a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) , then $\mathcal{B}(x) = \{U(x) | U \in \mathcal{B}\}$ is a base for the neighborhood system at each point $x \in X$. Each member of \mathcal{U} is a subset of the topological space $X \times X$, which is supplied with the product topology. The family of all open (closed) symmetric members of \mathcal{U} forms a base for \mathcal{U} . A uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) is a T_1 -topological space if and only if the intersection of all members of \mathcal{U} is the diagonal Δ_X . In this case, the uniformity of (X, \mathcal{U}) is called a **T_1 -uniformity**, and (X, \mathcal{U}) is called a **T_1 -uniform space**. A T_1 -uniform space is always * regular; a fortiori, it is a T_2 -topological space. Hence a T_1 -uniform space is also said to be a **Hausdorff uniform space** (or **separated uniform space**). Moreover, a uniform topology satisfies * Tikhonov's separation axiom; in particular, a T_1 -uniform space is * completely regular.

D. Examples

(1) **Discrete Uniformity.** Let X be a nonempty set, and let $\mathcal{U} = \{U | \Delta_X \subset U \subset X \times X\}$. Then (X, \mathcal{U}) is a T_1 -uniform space and $\mathcal{B} = \{\Delta_X\}$ is a base for \mathcal{U} . This uniformity is called the **discrete uniformity** for X .

(2) **Uniform Family of Neighborhood System.**

A family $\{U_\alpha(x)\}_{x \in A}$ ($x \in X$) of subsets of a set X is called a **uniform neighborhood system** in X if it satisfies the following four requirements: (i) $x \in U_\alpha(x)$ for each $\alpha \in A$ and each $x \in X$; (ii) if x and y are distinct elements of X , then $y \notin U_\alpha(x)$ for some $\alpha \in A$; (iii) if α and β are two elements of A , then there is another element $\gamma \in A$ such that $U_\gamma(x) \subset U_\alpha(x) \cap U_\beta(x)$ for all $x \in X$; (iv) if α is an arbitrary element in A , then there is an element β in A such that $y \in U_\alpha(x)$ whenever $x, y \in U_\beta(z)$ for some z in X . If we denote by $U_\alpha(x \in A)$ the subset of $X \times X$ consisting of all elements (x, y) such that $x \in X$ and $y \in U_\alpha(x)$, then the family $\{U_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$ satisfies all the conditions for a base for a uniformity. In particular, it follows from (ii) that $\bigcap_{\alpha \in A} U_\alpha = \Delta_X$, which is a stronger condition than (iii') in Section B. For instance, if $\{U_\alpha | \alpha \in A\}$ is a base for the neighborhood system at the identity element of a T_1 -topological group G , then we have two uniform neighborhood systems $\{U_\alpha^l(x)\}$ and $\{U_\alpha^r(x)\}$, where $U_\alpha^l(x) = xU_\alpha$ and

$U'_\alpha(x) = U_\alpha x$. Two uniformities derived from these uniform neighborhood systems are called a \dagger left uniformity and a \dagger right uniformity, respectively. Generally, these two uniformities do not coincide (\rightarrow 423 Topological Groups).

(3) Uniform Covering System [4]. A family $\{U_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ of \dagger coverings of a set X is called a **uniform covering system** if the following three conditions are satisfied: (i) if U is a covering of X such that $U < U_\alpha$ for all $\alpha \in A$, then U coincides with the covering $\Delta = \{\{x\}\}_{x \in X}$; (ii) if $\alpha, \beta \in A$, then there is a $\gamma \in A$ such that $U_\gamma < U_\alpha$ and $U_\gamma < U_\beta$; (iii) if $\alpha \in A$, then there is a $\beta \in A$ such that U_β is a $\dagger\Delta$ -refinement of U_α ($(U_\beta)^\Delta < U_\alpha$). For an example of a uniform covering system of X , suppose that we are given a uniform neighborhood system $\{U_\alpha(x)\}_{\alpha \in A}$ ($x \in X$). Let $U_\alpha = \{U_\alpha(x)\}_{x \in X}$ ($\alpha \in A$). Then $\{U_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ is a uniform covering system. On the other hand, for a covering $U = \{U_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$, let $S(x, U)$ be the union of all members of U that contain x . If $\{U_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in A}$ is a uniform covering system and $U_\alpha(x) = S(x, U_\alpha)$, then $\{U_\alpha(x)\}_{\alpha \in A}$ ($x \in X$) is a uniform neighborhood system. Hence defining a uniform covering system of X is equivalent to defining a T_1 -uniformity on X .

(4). In a metric space (x, d) the subsets $U_r = \{(x, y) | d(x, y) < r\}$, $r > 0$, form a base of uniformity. The uniform topology defined by this coincides with the topology defined by the metric.

E. Some Notions on Uniform Spaces

Some of the terminology concerning topological spaces can be restated in the language of uniform structures. A mapping f from a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) into another (X', \mathcal{U}') is said to be **uniformly continuous** if for each member U' in \mathcal{U}' there is a member U in \mathcal{U} such that $(f(x), f(y)) \in U'$ for every $(x, y) \in U$. This condition implies that f is continuous with respect to the uniform topologies of the uniform spaces. Equivalently, the mapping is uniformly continuous with respect to the uniform neighborhood system $\{U_\alpha(x)\}_{\alpha \in A}$ if for any index β there is an index α such that $y \in U_\alpha(x)$ implies $f(y) \in U_\beta(f(x))$. If $f: X \rightarrow X'$ and $g: X' \rightarrow X''$ are uniformly continuous, then the composite $g \circ f: X \rightarrow X''$ is also uniformly continuous. A bijection f of a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) to another (X', \mathcal{U}') is said to be a **uniform isomorphism** if both f and f^{-1} are uniformly continuous; in this case (X, \mathcal{U}) and (X', \mathcal{U}') are said to be **uniformly equivalent**. A uniform isomorphism is a homeomorphism with respect to the uniform topologies, and a uniform equivalence

defines an equivalence relation between uniform spaces.

If \mathcal{U}_1 and \mathcal{U}_2 are uniformities for a set X , we say that the uniformity \mathcal{U}_1 is **stronger** than the uniformity \mathcal{U}_2 and \mathcal{U}_2 is **weaker** than \mathcal{U}_1 if the identity mapping of (X, \mathcal{U}_1) to (X, \mathcal{U}_2) is uniformly continuous. The discrete uniformity is the strongest among the uniformities for a set X . The weakest uniformity for X is defined by the single member $X \times X$; this uniformity is not a T_1 -uniformity unless X is a singleton. Generally, there is no weakest T_1 -uniformity. A uniformity \mathcal{U}_1 for X is stronger than another \mathcal{U}_2 if and only if every member of \mathcal{U}_2 is also a member of \mathcal{U}_1 .

If f is a mapping from a set X into a uniform space (Y, \mathcal{V}) and g is the mapping of $X \times X$ into $Y \times Y$ defined by $g(x, y) = (f(x), f(y))$, then $\mathcal{B} = \{g^{-1}(V) | V \in \mathcal{V}\}$ satisfies conditions (ii')–(v') in Section B for a base for a uniformity. The uniformity \mathcal{U} for X determined by \mathcal{B} is called the **inverse image** of the uniformity \mathcal{V} for Y by f ; \mathcal{U} is the weakest uniformity for X such that f is uniformly continuous. Hence a mapping f from a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) into another (Y, \mathcal{V}) is uniformly continuous if and only if the inverse image of the uniformity \mathcal{V} under f is weaker than the uniformity \mathcal{U} . If A is a subset of a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) , then there is a uniformity \mathcal{V} for A determined as the inverse image of \mathcal{U} by the inclusion mapping of A into X . This uniformity \mathcal{V} for A is called the **relative uniformity** for A induced by \mathcal{U} , or the **relativization** of \mathcal{U} to A , and the uniform space (A, \mathcal{V}) is called a **uniform subspace** of (X, \mathcal{U}) . The uniform topology for (A, \mathcal{V}) is the relative topology for A induced by the uniform topology for (X, \mathcal{U}) .

If $\{(X_\lambda, \mathcal{U}_\lambda)\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$ is a family of uniform spaces, then the **product uniformity** for $X = \prod_{\lambda \in \Lambda} X_\lambda$ is defined to be the weakest uniformity \mathcal{U} such that the projection of X onto each X_λ is uniformly continuous, and (X, \mathcal{U}) is called the **product uniform space** of $\{(X_\lambda, \mathcal{U}_\lambda)\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$. The topology for (X, \mathcal{U}) is the product of the topologies for $(X_\lambda, \mathcal{U}_\lambda)$ ($\lambda \in \Lambda$).

F. Metrization

Each \dagger pseudometric d for a set X generates a uniformity in the following way. For each positive number r , let $V_{d,r} = \{(x, y) \in X \times X | d(x, y) < r\}$. Then the family $\{V_{d,r} | r > 0\}$ satisfies conditions (ii')–(v') in Section B for a base for a uniformity \mathcal{U} . This uniformity is called the **pseudometric uniformity** or **uniformity generated by d** . The uniform topology for (X, \mathcal{U}) is the pseudometric topology. A uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) is said to be **pseudometrizable** (**metrizable**) if there is a pseudometric (metric)

d such that the uniformity \mathcal{U} is identical with the uniformity generated by d . A uniform space is pseudometrizable if and only if its uniformity has a countable base. Consequently, a uniform space is metrizable if and only if its uniformity is a T_1 -uniformity and has a countable base. For a family P of pseudometrics on a set X , let $V_{d,r} = \{(x, y) \in X \times X \mid d(x, y) < r\}$ for $d \in P$ and positive r . The weakest uniformity containing every $V_{d,r}$ ($d \in P, r > 0$) is called the **uniformity generated by P** . This uniformity may also be described as the weakest one such that each pseudometric in P is uniformly continuous on $X \times X$ with respect to the product uniformity.

Each uniformity \mathcal{U} on a set X coincides with the uniformity generated by the family P_X of all pseudometrics that are uniformly continuous on $X \times X$ with respect to the product uniformity of \mathcal{U} with itself. It follows that each uniform space is uniformly isomorphic to a subspace of a product of pseudometric spaces (in which the number of components is equal to the cardinal number of P_X) and that each T_1 -uniform space is uniformly isomorphic to a subspace of a product of metric spaces. A topology τ for a set X is the uniform topology for some uniformity for X if and only if the topological space (X, τ) satisfies Tikhonov's separation axiom; in particular, the uniformity is a T_1 -uniformity if and only if (X, τ) is \ast completely regular.

G. Completeness

If (X, \mathcal{U}) is a uniform space, a subset A of X is called a **small set of order U** ($U \in \mathcal{U}$) if $A \times A \subset U$. A \ast filter on X is called a **Cauchy filter** (with respect to the uniformity \mathcal{U}) if it contains a small set of order U for each U in \mathcal{U} . If a filter on X converges to some point in X , then it is a Cauchy filter. If f is a uniformly continuous mapping from a uniform space X into another X' , then the image of a base for a Cauchy filter on X under f is a base for a Cauchy filter on X' . A point contained in the closure of every set in a Cauchy filter \mathfrak{F} is the limit point of \mathfrak{F} . Hence if a filter converges to x , a Cauchy filter contained in the filter also converges to x .

A \ast net $x(\mathfrak{A}) = \{x_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in \mathfrak{A}}$ (where \mathfrak{A} is a directed set with a preordering \leq) in a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) is called a **Cauchy net** if for each U in \mathcal{U} there is a γ in \mathfrak{A} such that $(x_\alpha, x_\beta) \in U$ for every α and β such that $\gamma \leq \alpha, \gamma \leq \beta$. If \mathfrak{A} is the set \mathbb{N} of all natural numbers, a Cauchy net $\{x_n\}_{n \in \mathbb{N}}$ is called a **Cauchy sequence** (or **fundamental sequence**). Given a Cauchy net $\{x_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in \mathfrak{A}}$, let $A_x = \{x_\beta \mid \beta \geq \alpha\}$. Then $\mathfrak{B} = \{A_\alpha \mid \alpha \in \mathfrak{A}\}$ is a base for a filter, and the filter is a Cauchy filter. On the

other hand, let \mathfrak{B} be a base for a Cauchy filter \mathfrak{F} . For $U, V \in \mathfrak{B}$, we put $U \leq V$ if and only if $U \supset V$. Then \mathfrak{B} is a directed set with respect to \leq . The net $\{x_U\}_{U \in \mathfrak{B}}$, where x_U is an arbitrary point in U , is a Cauchy net. A proposition concerning convergence of a Cauchy filter is always equivalent to a proposition concerning convergence of the corresponding Cauchy net.

A Cauchy filter (or Cauchy net) in a uniform space X does not always converge to a point of X . A uniform space is said to be **complete** (with respect to the uniformity) if every Cauchy filter (or Cauchy net) converges to a point of that space. A complete uniform space is called for brevity a **complete space**. A closed subspace of a complete space is complete with respect to the relative uniformity. A pseudometrizable uniform space is complete if and only if every Cauchy sequence in the space converges to a point. Hence in the case of a metric space, our definition of completeness coincides with the usual one (\rightarrow 273 Metric Spaces).

A mapping f from a uniform space X to another X' is said to be **uniformly continuous on a subset A of X** if the restriction of f to A is uniformly continuous with respect to the relative uniformity for A . If f is a uniformly continuous mapping from a subset A of a uniform space into a complete T_1 -uniform space, then there is a unique uniformly continuous extension \bar{f} of f on the closure \bar{A} .

Each T_1 -uniform space is uniformly equivalent to a dense subspace of a complete T_1 -uniform space; this property is a generalization of the fact that each metric space can be mapped by an isometry onto a dense subset of a complete metric space. A **completion** of a uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) is a pair $(f, (X^*, \mathcal{U}^*))$, where (X^*, \mathcal{U}^*) is a complete space and f is a uniform isomorphism of X onto a dense subspace of X^* . The T_1 -completion of a T_1 -uniform space is unique up to uniform equivalence.

H. Compact Spaces

A uniformity \mathcal{U} for a topological space (X, τ) is said to be **compatible** with the topology τ if the uniform topology for (X, \mathcal{U}) coincides with τ . A topological space (X, τ) is said to be **uniformizable** if there is a uniformity compatible with τ . If (X, τ) is a compact Hausdorff space, then there is a unique uniformity \mathcal{U} compatible with τ ; in fact, \mathcal{U} consists of all neighborhoods of the diagonal Δ_X in $X \times X$; and the compact Hausdorff space is complete with this uniformity. Hence every subspace of a compact Hausdorff space is uniformizable, and every \ast locally compact Hausdorff space is

uniformizable. Any continuous mapping from a compact Hausdorff space to a uniform space is uniformly continuous. A uniform space (X, \mathcal{U}) is said to be **totally bounded** (or **precompact**) if for each $U \in \mathcal{U}$ there is a finite covering consisting of small sets of order U ; a subset of a uniform space is called **totally bounded** if it is totally bounded with respect to the relative uniformity. A uniform space X is said to be **locally totally bounded** if for each point of X there is a base for a neighborhood system consisting of totally bounded open subsets. A uniform space is compact if and only if it is totally bounded and complete. If f is a uniformly continuous mapping from a uniform space X to another, then the image $f(A)$ of a totally bounded subset A of X is totally bounded.

I. Topologically Complete Spaces

A topological space (X, τ) is said to be **topologically complete** (or **Dieudonné complete**) if it admits a uniformity compatible with τ with respect to which X is complete. Each \ast paracompact Hausdorff space is topologically complete. Actually such a space is complete with respect to its strongest uniformity. A Hausdorff space which is homeomorphic to a $\ast G_\delta$ -set in a compact Hausdorff space is said to be **Čech-complete**; A metric space is homeomorphic to a complete metric space if and only if it is Čech-complete. A Hausdorff space X is paracompact and Čech-complete if and only if there is a \ast perfect mapping from X onto a complete metric space.

References

- [1] A. Weil, Sur les espaces à structure uniforme et sur la topologie générale, Actualités Sci. Ind., Hermann, 1938.
- [2] J. W. Tukey, Convergence and uniformity in topology, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1940.
- [3] J. L. Kelley, General topology, Van Nostrand, 1955.
- [4] N. Bourbaki, Éléments de mathématique, III. Topologie générale, ch. 2, Actualités Sci. Ind., 1142d, Hermann, fourth edition 1965; English translation, General topology, Addison-Wesley, 1966.
- [5] J. R. Isbell, Uniform spaces, Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys, 1964.
- [6] H. Nakano, Uniform spaces and transformation groups, Wayne State Univ. Press, 1968.
- [7] R. Engelking, General topology, Polish Scientific Publishers, 1977.

- [8] Z. Frolik, Generalization of the G_δ -property of complete metric spaces, Czech. Math. J., 10 (1960), 359–379.

437 (IV.17) Unitary Representations

A. Definitions

A homomorphism U of a \ast topological group G into the group of \ast unitary operators on a \ast Hilbert space \mathfrak{H} ($\neq \{0\}$) is called a **unitary representation** of G if U is **strongly continuous** in the following sense: For any element $x \in \mathfrak{H}$, the mapping $g \rightarrow U_g x$ is a continuous mapping from G into \mathfrak{H} . The Hilbert space \mathfrak{H} is called the **representation space** of U and is denoted by $\mathfrak{H}(U)$. Two unitary representations U and U' are said to be **equivalent** (**similar** or **isomorphic**), denoted by $U \cong U'$, if there exists a \ast isometry T from $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ onto $\mathfrak{H}(U')$ that satisfies the equality $T \circ U_g = U'_g \circ T$ for every g in G . If the representation space $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ contains no closed subspace other than \mathfrak{H} and $\{0\}$ that is invariant under every U_g , the unitary representation U is said to be **irreducible**. An element x in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ is called a **cyclic vector** if the set of all finite linear combinations of the elements $U_g x (g \in G)$ is dense in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$. A representation U having a cyclic vector is called a **cyclic representation**. Every nonzero element of the representation space of an irreducible representation is a cyclic vector.

Examples. Let G be a \ast topological transformation group acting on a \ast locally compact Hausdorff space X from the right. Suppose that there exists a \ast Radon measure μ that is invariant under the group G . Then a unitary representation R^μ is defined on the Hilbert space $\mathfrak{H} = L^2(X, \mu)$ by the formula $(R_g^\mu f)(x) = f(xg)$ ($f \in \mathfrak{H}, x \in X, g \in G$). The representation R^μ is called the **regular representation** of G on (X, μ) . If G acts on X from the left, then the regular representation L^μ is defined by $(L_g^\mu f)(x) = f(g^{-1}x)$. In particular, when X is the \ast quotient space $H \backslash G$ of a \ast locally compact group G by a closed subgroup H , any two invariant measures μ, μ' (if they exist) coincide up to a constant factor. Hence the regular representation R^μ on (X, μ) and the regular representation $R^{\mu'}$ on (X, μ') are equivalent. In this case, the representation R^μ is called the regular representation on X . When $H = \{e\}$, a locally compact group G has a Radon measure $\mu \neq 0$ that is invariant under every right (left) translation $h \rightarrow hg$ ($h \rightarrow gh$) and is called a right (left) \ast Haar measure on G . So G has the regu-

Unitary Representations

lar representation $R(L)$ on G . $R(L)$ is called the right (left) regular representation of G .

B. Positive Definite Functions and Existence of Representations

A complex-valued continuous function φ on a topological group G is called **positive definite** if the matrix having $\varphi(g_i^{-1}g_j)$ as the (i,j) -component is a † positive semidefinite Hermitian matrix for any finite number of elements g_1, \dots, g_n in G . If U is a unitary representation of G , then the function $\varphi(g) = (U_g x, x)$ is positive definite for every element x in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$. Conversely, any positive definite function $\varphi(g)$ on a topological group G can be expressed as $\varphi(g) = (U_g x, x)$ for some unitary representation U and x in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$. Using this fact and the † Kreĭn-Milman theorem, it can be proved that every locally compact group G has **sufficiently many irreducible unitary representations** in the following sense: For every element g in G other than the identity element e , there exists an irreducible unitary representation U , generally depending on g , that satisfies the inequality $U_g \neq 1$. The groups having sufficiently many finite-dimensional (irreducible) unitary representations are called † maximally almost periodic. If a connected locally compact group G is maximally almost periodic, then G is the direct product of a compact group and a vector group \mathbb{R}^m . On the other hand, any non-compact connected † simple Lie group has no finite-dimensional irreducible unitary representation other than the unit representation $g \rightarrow 1$ (\rightarrow 18 Almost Periodic Functions).

C. Subrepresentations

Let U be a unitary representation of a topological group G . A closed subspace \mathfrak{N} of $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ is called **U -invariant** if \mathfrak{N} is invariant under every U_g ($g \in G$). Let $\mathfrak{N} \neq \{0\}$ be a closed invariant subspace of $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ and V_g be the restriction of U_g on \mathfrak{N} . Then V is a unitary representation of G on the representation space \mathfrak{N} and is called a **subrepresentation** of U . Two unitary representations L and M are called **disjoint** if no subrepresentation of L is equivalent to a subrepresentation of M ; they are called **quasi-equivalent** if no subrepresentation of L is disjoint from M and no subrepresentation of M is disjoint from L .

D. Irreducible Representations

Let U be a unitary representation of G , \mathbf{M} be the † von Neumann algebra generated by $\{U_g | g \in G\}$, and \mathbf{M}' be the † commutant of \mathbf{M} .

Then a closed subspace \mathfrak{N} of $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ is invariant under U if and only if the † projection operator P corresponding to \mathfrak{N} belongs to \mathbf{M}' . Therefore U is irreducible if and only if \mathbf{M}' consists of scalar operators $\{\alpha 1 | \alpha \in \mathbb{C}\}$ (**Schur's lemma**). A representation space of a cyclic or irreducible representation of a † separable topological group is † separable.

E. Factor Representations

A unitary representation U of G is called a **factor representation** if the von Neumann algebra $\mathbf{M} = \{U_g | g \in G\}$ is a † factor, that is, $\mathbf{M} \cap \mathbf{M}' = \{\alpha 1 | \alpha \in \mathbb{C}\}$. Two factor representations are quasi-equivalent if and only if they are not disjoint. U is called a **factor representation of type I, II, or III** if the von Neumann algebra \mathbf{M} is a factor of † type I, II, or III, respectively (\rightarrow 308 Operator Algebras). A topological group G is called a **group of type I** (or **type I group**) if every factor representation of G is of type I. Compact groups, locally compact Abelian groups, connected † nilpotent Lie groups, connected † semisimple Lie groups, and real or complex † linear algebraic groups are examples of groups of type I. There exists a connected solvable Lie group that is not of type I (\rightarrow Section U), but a connected solvable Lie group is of type I if the exponential mapping is surjective (O. Takenouchi). A discrete group G with countably many elements is a type I group if and only if G has an Abelian normal subgroup with finite index (E. Thoma).

F. Representation of Direct Products

Let G_1 and G_2 be topological groups, G the † direct product of G_1 and G_2 ($G = G_1 \times G_2$), and U_i an irreducible unitary representation of G_i ($i = 1, 2$). Then the † tensor product representation $U_1 \otimes U_2: (g_1, g_2) \rightarrow U_{g_1} \otimes U_{g_2}$ is an irreducible unitary representation of G . Conversely, if one of the groups G_1 and G_2 is of type I, then every irreducible unitary representation of G is equivalent to the tensor product $U_1 \otimes U_2$ of some irreducible representations U_i of G_i ($i = 1, 2$).

G. Direct Sums

If the representation space \mathfrak{H} of a unitary representation U is the † direct sum $\bigoplus_{\alpha \in I} \mathfrak{H}(\alpha)$ of mutually orthogonal closed invariant subspaces $\{\mathfrak{H}(\alpha)\}_{\alpha \in I}$, then U is called the **direct sum** of the subrepresentations $U(\alpha)$ induced on $\mathfrak{H}(\alpha)$ by U , and is denoted by $U = \bigoplus_{\alpha \in I} U(\alpha)$. Any unitary representation is the direct sum of cyclic representations. A unitary representa-

tion U is called a **representation without multiplicity** if U cannot be decomposed as a direct sum $U_1 \oplus U_2$ unless U_1 and U_2 are disjoint. If U is the direct sum of $\{U(\alpha)\}_{\alpha \in I}$ and every $U(\alpha)$ is irreducible, then U is said to be **decomposed into the direct sum of irreducible representations**. Decomposition into direct sums of irreducible representations is essentially unique if it exists; that is, if $U = \bigoplus_{\alpha \in I} U(\alpha) = \bigoplus_{\beta \in J} V(\beta)$ are two decompositions of U into direct sums of irreducible representations, then there exists a bijection φ from I onto J such that $U(\alpha)$ is equivalent to $V(\varphi(\alpha))$ for every α in I . A factor representation U of type I can be decomposed as the direct sum $U = \bigoplus_{\alpha \in I} U(\alpha)$ of equivalent irreducible representations $U(\alpha)$. In general, a unitary representation U cannot be decomposed as the direct sum of irreducible representations even if U is not irreducible. Thus it becomes necessary to use direct integrals to obtain an irreducible decomposition.

H. Direct Integrals

Let U be a unitary representation of a group G and (X, μ) be a \ast measure space. Assume that the following two conditions are satisfied by U : (i) There exists a unitary representation $U(x)$ of G corresponding to every element x of X , and $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ is a \ast direct integral (\rightarrow 308 Operator Algebras) of $\mathfrak{H}(U(x))$ ($x \in X$) (written $\mathfrak{H}(U) = \int_X \mathfrak{H}(U(x)) d\mu(x)$); (ii) for every g in G , the operator U_g is a decomposable operator and can be written as $U_g = \int_X U_g(x) d\mu(x)$. Then the unitary representation U is called the **direct integral** of the family $\{U(x)\}_{x \in X}$ of unitary representations and is denoted by $U = \int_X U(x) d\mu(x)$. If every point of X has measure 1, then a direct integral is reduced to a direct sum.

I. Decomposition into Factor Representations

We assume that G is a locally compact group satisfying the \ast second countability axiom, and also that a Hilbert space is separable. Every unitary representation U of G can be decomposed as a direct integral $U = \int_X U(x) d\mu(x)$ in such a way that the center \mathbf{A} of the von Neumann algebra $\mathbf{M}'' = \{U_g | g \in G\}''$ is the set of all \ast diagonalizable operators. In this case almost all the $U(x)$ are factor representations. Such a decomposition of U is essentially unique. There exists a \ast null set N in X such that for every x and x' in $X - N$ ($x \neq x'$), $U(x)$ and $U(x')$ are mutually disjoint factor representations. Hence the space X can be identified with the set G^\ast of all quasi-equivalence classes

of factor representations of G endowed with a suitable structure of a measure space. The space G^\ast is called the **quasidual** of G . The measure μ is determined by U up to \ast equivalence of measures.

J. Duals

A topology is introduced on the set \hat{G} of all equivalence classes of irreducible unitary representations of a locally compact group G in the following way. Let H_n be the n -dimensional Hilbert space $l_2(n)$ and I_n the set of all irreducible unitary representations of G realized on H_n ($1 \leq n \leq \infty$). We topologize I_n in such a way that a \ast net $\{U^\lambda\}_{\lambda \in L}$ in I_n converges to U if and only if $(U_g^\lambda x, y)$ converges uniformly to $(U_g x, y)$ on every compact subset of G for any x and y in H_n . Equivalence between representations in I_n is an open relation. Let \hat{G}_n be the set of all equivalence classes of n -dimensional irreducible unitary representations of G with the topology of a quotient space of I_n and $\hat{G} = \bigcup_n \hat{G}_n$ be the direct sum of topological spaces \hat{G}_n . Then the topological space \hat{G} is called the **dual** of G . \hat{G} is a locally compact \ast Baire space with countable open base, but it does not satisfy the \ast Hausdorff separation axiom in general. If G is a compact Hausdorff topological group, then \hat{G} is discrete. If G is a locally compact Abelian group, then \hat{G} coincides with the \ast character group of G in the sense of Pontryagin. If G is a type I group, then there exists a dense open subset of \hat{G} that is a locally compact Hausdorff space. The $\ast\sigma$ -additive family generated by closed sets in \hat{G} is denoted by \mathfrak{B} . In the following sections, a measure on \hat{G} means a measure defined on \mathfrak{B} .

K. Irreducible Decompositions

In this section G is assumed to be a locally compact group of type I with countable open base. For any equivalence class x in \hat{G} , we choose a representative $U(x) \in x$ with the representation space $H(U(x)) = l_2(n)$ if x is n -dimensional. For any measure μ on \hat{G} , the representation $U^\mu = \int_{\hat{G}} U(x) d\mu(x)$ is a unitary representation without multiplicity. Conversely, any unitary representation of G without multiplicity is equivalent to a U^μ for some measure μ on \hat{G} . Moreover, U^μ is equivalent to U^ν if and only if the two measures μ and ν are equivalent (that is, μ is absolutely continuous with respect to ν , and vice versa). A unitary representation U with multiplicity on a separable Hilbert space \mathfrak{H} can be decomposed as follows: There exists a countable set of measures $\mu_1, \mu_2, \dots, \mu_\infty$ whose supports are mutu-

ally disjoint such that $U \cong \int_G U(x) d\mu_1(x) \oplus 2 \int_G U(x) d\mu_2(x) \oplus \dots \oplus \infty \int_G U(x) d\mu_\infty(x)$. The measures $\mu_1, \mu_2, \dots, \mu_\infty$ are uniquely determined by U up to equivalence of measures. Any unitary representation U on a separable Hilbert space \mathfrak{H} of an arbitrary locally compact group with countable open base (even if not of type I) can be decomposed as a direct integral of irreducible representations. In order to obtain such a decomposition, it is sufficient to decompose \mathfrak{H} as a direct integral in such a way that a maximal Abelian von Neumann subalgebra \mathbf{A} of $\mathbf{M}' = \{U_g | g \in G\}'$ is the set of all diagonalizable operators. In this case, however, a different choice of \mathbf{A} induces in general an essentially different decomposition, and uniqueness of the decomposition does not hold. For a group of type I, the irreducible representations are the "atoms" of representations, as in the case of compact groups. For a group not of type I, it is more natural to take the factor representations for the irreducible representations, quasi-equivalence for the equivalence, and the quasidual for the dual of G . Therefore the theory of unitary representations for a group not of type I has different features from the one for a type I group. The theory of unitary representation for groups not of type I has not yet been successfully developed, but some important results have been obtained (e.g., L. Pukanszky, *Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup.*, 4 (1971)).

Tatsuuma [1] proved a duality theorem for general locally compact groups which is an extension of both Pontryagin's and Tannaka's duality theorems considering the direct integral decomposition of tensor product representations.

L. The Plancherel Formula

Let G be a unimodular locally compact group with countable open base, $R(L)$ be the right (left) regular representation of G , and \mathbf{M}, \mathbf{N} , and \mathbf{P} be the von Neumann algebras generated by $\{R_g\}$, $\{L_g\}$, and $\{R_g, L_g\}$, respectively. Then $\mathbf{M}' = \mathbf{N}$, $\mathbf{N}' = \mathbf{M}$, and $\mathbf{P}' = \mathbf{M} \cap \mathbf{N}$. If we decompose \mathfrak{H} into a direct integral in such a way that \mathbf{P}' is the algebra of all diagonalizable operators, then $\mathbf{M}(x)$ and $\mathbf{N}(x)$ are factors for almost all x . This decomposition of \mathfrak{H} produces a decomposition of the two-sided regular representation $\{R_g, L_g\}$ into irreducible representations and a decomposition of the regular representation $R(L)$ into factor representations. Hence the decomposition is realized as the direct integral over the quasidual G^* of G . Moreover, the factors $\mathbf{M}(x)$ and $\mathbf{N}(x)$ are of type I or II for almost all x in G^* , and there

exists a \dagger trace t in the factor $\mathbf{M}(x)$. For any f and g in $L_1(G) \cap L_2(G)$, the **Plancherel formula**

$$\int_G f(s) \overline{g(s)} ds = \int_{G^*} t(U_g^*(x) U_f(x)) d\mu(x) \quad (1)$$

holds, where $U_f(x) = \int_G f(s) U_s(x) ds$ and U^* is the \dagger adjoint of U . The **inversion formula**

$$h(s) = \int_{G^*} t(U_h(x) U_s^*(x)) d\mu(x) \quad (2)$$

is derived from (1) for a function $h = f * g$ ($f, g \in L_1(G) \cap L_2(G)$). In (1) and (2), because of the impossibility of normalization of the trace t in a factor of type II_∞ , the measure μ cannot in general be determined uniquely. However, if G is a type I group, then (1) and (2) can be rewritten as similar formulas, where the representation $U(x)$ in (1) and (2) is irreducible, the trace t is the usual trace, and the domain of integration is not the quasidual G^* but the dual \hat{G} of G . The revised formula (1) is also called the **Plancherel formula**. In this case the measure μ on \hat{G} in formulas (1) and (2) is uniquely determined by the given Haar measure on G . The measure μ is called the **Plancherel measure** of G . The support \hat{G}_r of the Plancherel measure μ is called the **reduced dual** of G . The Plancherel formula gives the direct integral decomposition of the regular representation into the irreducible representations belonging to \hat{G}_r . Each U in \hat{G}_r is contained in this decomposition, with the multiplicity equal to $\dim \mathfrak{H}(U)$.

M. Square Integrable Representations

An irreducible unitary representation U of a unimodular locally compact group G is said to be **square integrable** when for some element $x \neq 0$, in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$, the function $\varphi(g) = (U_g x, x)$ belongs to $L^2(G, dg)$, where dg is the Haar measure of G . If U is square integrable, then $\varphi_{x,y}(g) = (U_g x, y)$ belongs to $L^2(G, dg)$ for any x and y in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$. Let U and U' be the two square integrable representations of G . Then the following **orthogonality relations** hold:

$$\int_G (U_g x, y) \overline{(U'_g u, v)} dg = \begin{cases} 0 & \text{if } U \text{ is not} \\ & \text{equivalent to } U', \\ d_v^{-1}(x, u) \overline{(v, y)} & \text{if } U = U'. \end{cases} \quad (3)$$

When G is compact, every irreducible unitary representation U is square integrable and finite-dimensional. Moreover, the scalar d_v in (3) is the degree of U if the total measure of G is normalized to 1. In the general case, the scalar d_v in (3) is called the **formal degree** of U and is determined uniquely by the given Haar

measure dg . Let y be an element in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ with norm 1 and V be the subspace $\{\varphi_{x,y} \mid x \in \mathfrak{H}(U)\}$ of $L^2(G)$. Then the linear mapping $T: x \rightarrow \sqrt{d_U} \varphi_{x,y}$ is an isometry of $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ onto V . Hence U is equivalent to a subrepresentation of the right regular representation R of G . Conversely, every irreducible subrepresentation of R is square integrable. Thus a square integrable representation is an irreducible subrepresentation of R ($\cong L$). Therefore, in the irreducible decomposition of R , the square integrable representations appear as discrete direct summands. Hence every square integrable representation U has a positive Plancherel measure $\mu(U)$ that is equal to the formal degree d_U . There exist noncompact groups that have square integrable representations. An example of such a group is $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ (\rightarrow Section X).

N. Representations of $L_1(G)$

Let G be a locally compact group and $L_1(G)$ be the space of all complex-valued integrable functions on G . Then $L_1(G)$ is an algebra over \mathbf{C} , where the convolution

$$(f * g)(s) = \int_G f(st^{-1})g(t)dt$$

is defined to be the product of f and g . Let Δ be the \ast modular function of G . Then the mapping $f(s) \rightarrow f^\ast(s) = \Delta(s^{-1})f(s^{-1})$ is an \ast involution of the algebra $L_1(G)$. Let U be a unitary representation of G , and put $U_f = \int_G U_s f(s)ds$. Then the mapping $f \rightarrow U_f$ gives a **nondegenerate representation** of the Banach algebra $L_1(G)$ with an involution, where nondegenerate means that $\{U_f x \mid f \in L_1(G), x \in \mathfrak{H}(U)\}^\perp$ reduces to $\{0\}$. The mapping $U \rightarrow U'$ gives a bijection between the set of equivalence classes of unitary representations of G and the set of equivalence classes of nondegenerate representations of the Banach algebra $L_1(G)$ with an involution on Hilbert spaces. U is an irreducible (factor) representation if and only if U' is an irreducible (factor) representation. Therefore the study of unitary representations of G reduces to that of representations of $L_1(G)$. If U_f is a \ast compact operator for every f in $L_1(G)$, then U is the discrete direct sum of irreducible representations, and the multiplicity of every irreducible component is finite. (See [2] for Sections A–N.)

O. Induced Representations

Induced representation is the method of constructing a representation of a group G in a canonical way from a representation of a subgroup H of G . It is a fundamental method

of obtaining a unitary representation of G . Let G be a locally compact group satisfying the second countability axiom, L be a unitary representation on a separable Hilbert space $\mathfrak{H}(L)$ of a closed subgroup H of G , and m, n, Δ , and δ be the right Haar measures and the modular functions of the groups G and H , respectively. Then there exists a continuous positive function ρ on G satisfying $\rho(hg) = \delta(h)\Delta(h)^{-1}\rho(g)$ for every h in H and g in G . The \ast quotient measure $\mu = (\rho m)/n$ is a quasi-invariant measure on the coset space $H \backslash G$ (\rightarrow 225 Invariant Measures). Let \mathfrak{H} be the vector space of weakly measurable functions f on G with values in $\mathfrak{H}(L)$ satisfying the following two conditions: (i) $f(hg) = L_h f(g)$ for every h in H and g in G ; and (ii) $\|f\|^2 = \int_{H \backslash G} \|f(g)\|^2 d\mu(\dot{g}) < +\infty$, where \dot{g} represents the coset Hg . By condition (i), the norm $\|f(g)\|$ is constant on a coset $Hg = \dot{g}$ and is a function on $H \backslash G$, so the integral in condition (ii) is well defined. Then \mathfrak{H} is a Hilbert space with the norm defined in (ii). A unitary representation U of G on the Hilbert space \mathfrak{H} is defined by the formula

$$(U_s f)(g) = \sqrt{\rho(gs)/\rho(g)} f(gs).$$

U is called the **unitary representation induced by the representation L of a subgroup H** and is denoted by $U = U^L$ or $\text{Ind}_H^G L$. **Induced representations** have the following properties.

(1) $U^{L_1 \oplus L_2} \cong U^{L_1} \oplus U^{L_2}$ or more generally, $U^{\int U(x)d\mu(x)} \cong \int U^L(x)d\mu(x)$. Therefore if U^L is irreducible, L is also irreducible (the converse does not hold in general).

(2) Let H, K be two subgroups of G such that $H \subset K$, L be a unitary representation of H , and M be the representation of K induced by L . Then two unitary representations U^M and U^L of G are equivalent.

An induced representation U^L is the representation on the space of square integrable sections of the \ast vector bundle with fiber $\mathfrak{H}(L)$ \ast associated with the principal bundle $(G, H \backslash G, H)$ (\rightarrow G. W. Mackey [3], F. Bruhat [4]).

P. Unitary Representations of Special Groups

In the following sections we describe the fundamental results on the unitary representations of certain special groups.

Q. Compact Groups

Irreducible unitary representations of a compact group are always finite-dimensional. Every unitary representation of a compact group is decomposed into the direct sum of irreducible representations. Irreducible unitary representations of a compact connected Lie

Unitary Representations

group are completely classified. The characters of irreducible representations are calculated in an explicit form (\rightarrow 69 Compact Groups; 249 Lie Groups). Every irreducible unitary representation U of a connected compact Lie group G can be extended uniquely to an irreducible holomorphic representation U^C of the complexification G^C of G . U^C is holomorphically induced from a 1-dimensional representation of a Borel subgroup B of G^C (**Borel-Weil theorem**; \rightarrow R. Bott [5]).

R. Abelian Groups

Every irreducible unitary representation of an Abelian group G is 1-dimensional. \dagger Stone's theorem concerning one-parameter groups of unitary operators, $U_t = \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} e^{i\lambda t} dE_\lambda$, gives irreducible decompositions of unitary representations of the additive group \mathbf{R} of real numbers. \dagger Bochner's theorem on \dagger positive definite functions on \mathbf{R} is a restatement of Stone's theorem in terms of positive definite functions. The theory of the \dagger Fourier transform on \mathbf{R} , in particular \dagger Plancherel's theorem, gives the irreducible decomposition of the regular representation of \mathbf{R} . The theorems of Stone, Bochner, and Plancherel have been extended to an arbitrary locally compact Abelian group (\rightarrow 192 Harmonic Analysis).

S. Representations of Lie Groups and Lie Algebras

Let U be a unitary representation of a Lie group G with the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} . An element x in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ is called an **analytic vector** with respect to U if the mapping $g \rightarrow U_g x$ is a real analytic function on G with values in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$. The set of all analytic vectors with respect to U forms a dense subspace $\mathfrak{A} = \mathfrak{A}(U)$ of $\mathfrak{H}(U)$. For any elements X in \mathfrak{g} and x in $\mathfrak{A}(U)$, the derivative at $t=0$ of a real analytic function $U_{\exp tX} x$ is denoted by $V(X)x$. Then $V(X)$ is a linear transformation on \mathfrak{A} , and the mapping $V: X \rightarrow V(X)$ is a representation of \mathfrak{g} on \mathfrak{A} . We call V the **differential representation** of U . The representation V of \mathfrak{g} can be extended uniquely to a representation of the \dagger universal enveloping algebra \mathfrak{B} of \mathfrak{g} . Two unitary representations $U^{(1)}$ and $U^{(2)}$ of a connected Lie group G are equivalent if and only if there exists a bijective bounded linear mapping T from $\mathfrak{H}(U^{(1)})$ onto $\mathfrak{H}(U^{(2)})$ such that T maps $\mathfrak{A}(U^{(1)})$ onto $\mathfrak{A}(U^{(2)})$ and satisfies the equality $(T \circ V^{(1)}(X))x = (V^{(2)}(X) \circ T)x$

for all X in \mathfrak{g} and x in $\mathfrak{A}(U^{(1)})$. Let X_1, \dots, X_n be a basis of \mathfrak{g} and U be a unitary representation of G . Then the element $\Delta = X_1^2 + \dots + X_n^2$

in the universal enveloping algebra \mathfrak{B} of \mathfrak{g} is represented in the differential representation V of U by an \dagger essentially self-adjoint operator $V(\Delta)$. Conversely, if to each element X in \mathfrak{g} there corresponds a (not necessarily bounded) \dagger skew-Hermitian operator $\rho(X)$ that satisfies the following three conditions, then there exists a unique unitary representation U of the simply connected Lie group G with the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} such that the \dagger closure of $V(X)$ coincides with the closure of $\rho(X)$ for every X in \mathfrak{g} : (i) There exists a dense subspace \mathfrak{D} contained in the domain of $\rho(X)\rho(Y)$ for every X and Y in \mathfrak{g} ; (ii) for each X and Y in \mathfrak{g} , a and b in \mathbf{R} , and x in \mathfrak{D} , $\rho(aX + bY)x = a\rho(X)x + b\rho(Y)x$, $\rho([X, Y])x = (\rho(X)\rho(Y) - \rho(Y)\rho(X))x$; (iii) the restriction of $\rho(X_1)^2 + \dots + \rho(X_n)^2$ to \mathfrak{D} is an essentially self-adjoint operator if X_1, \dots, X_n is a basis of \mathfrak{g} (E. Nelson [6]).

T. Nilpotent Lie Groups

For every irreducible unitary representation of a connected nilpotent Lie group G , there is some 1-dimensional unitary representation of some subgroup of G that induces it. Let G be a simply connected nilpotent Lie group, \mathfrak{g} be the Lie algebra of G , and ρ be the contragredient representation of the adjoint representation of G . The representation space of ρ is the dual space \mathfrak{g}^* of \mathfrak{g} . A subalgebra \mathfrak{h} of \mathfrak{g} is called **subordinate** to an element f in \mathfrak{g}^* if f annihilates each bracket $[X, Y]$ for every X and Y in \mathfrak{h} : $(f, [X, Y]) = 0$. When \mathfrak{h} is subordinate to f , a 1-dimensional unitary representation L of the analytic subgroup H of G with the Lie algebra \mathfrak{h} is defined by the formula $\lambda_f(\exp X) = e^{2\pi i(f, X)}$ ($X \in \mathfrak{h}$). Every 1-dimensional unitary representation λ_f of H is defined as in this formula by an element f in \mathfrak{g}^* to which \mathfrak{h} is subordinate. The unitary representation of G induced by such a λ_f is denoted by $U(f, \mathfrak{h})$. The representation $U(f, \mathfrak{h})$ is irreducible if and only if \mathfrak{h} has maximal dimension among the subalgebras subordinate to f . Two irreducible representations $U(f, \mathfrak{h})$ and $U(f', \mathfrak{h}')$ are equivalent if and only if f and f' are conjugate under the group $\rho(G)$. Therefore there exists a bijection between the set of equivalence classes of the irreducible unitary representations of a simply connected nilpotent Lie group G and the set of orbits of $\rho(G)$ on \mathfrak{g}^* (A. A. Kirillov [7]).

U. Solvable Lie Groups

Let G be a simply connected solvable Lie group. If the exponential mapping is bijective, G is called an **exponential group**. All results stated above for nilpotent Lie groups hold for exponential groups except the irreducibility

criterion. In this case the representation $U(f, \mathfrak{h})$ is irreducible if and only if \mathfrak{h} is of maximal dimension among subordinate subalgebras and the orbit $O = \rho(G)f$ contains the affine subspace $f + \mathfrak{h}^\perp = f + \{g | g(\mathfrak{h}) = 0\}$ (Pukanszky condition).

The situation is more complicated for general solvable Lie groups. The isotropy subgroup $G_f = \{g \in G | \rho(g)f = f\}$ at $f \in \mathfrak{g}^*$ is, in general, not connected. A linear form f is called integral if there exists a unitary character η_f of G_f whose differential is the restriction of $2\pi i f$ to \mathfrak{g}_f (the Lie algebra of G_f). Using the notion of "polarization," an irreducible unitary representation of G is constructed from a pair (f, η_f) of an integral form $f \in \mathfrak{g}^*$ and a character η_f . If G is of type I, then every irreducible unitary representation of G is obtained in this way. A simply connected solvable Lie group G is of type I if and only if (i) every $f \in \mathfrak{g}^*$ is integral and (ii) every G -orbit $\rho(G)f$ in \mathfrak{g}^* is locally closed (Auslander and Kostant [8]).

As an example, let α be an irrational real number. Then the following Lie group G is not

$$\text{of type I: } G = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} e^{it} & 0 & z \\ 0 & e^{i\alpha t} & w \\ 0 & 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} \mid t \in \mathbf{R}, z, w \in \mathbf{C} \right\}.$$

V. Semisimple Lie Groups

A connected semisimple Lie group is of type I. The character $\chi = \chi_U$ of an irreducible unitary representation U of G is defined as follows: Let $C_0^\infty(G)$ be the set of all complex-valued C^∞ -functions with compact support on G . Then for any function f in $C_0^\infty(G)$, the operator $U_f = \int_G U_g f(g) dg$ belongs to the \dagger trace class, and the linear form $\chi: f \rightarrow \text{tr } U_f$ is a \dagger distribution in the sense of Schwartz. The distribution χ is called the **character** of an irreducible unitary representation U . A character χ is invariant under any inner automorphism of G and is a simultaneous eigendistribution of the algebra of all two-sided invariant linear differential operators on G . Two irreducible unitary representations of G are equivalent if and only if their characters coincide. The distribution χ is a \dagger locally summable function on G and coincides with a real analytic function on each connected component of the dense open submanifold G' consisting of regular elements in G . In general, χ is not real analytic on all of G (Harish-Chandra [9, III; 10]).

W. Complex Semisimple Lie Groups

There are four series of irreducible representations of a complex semisimple Lie group G .

(1) A **principal series** consists of unitary representations of G induced from 1-

dimensional unitary representations L of a \dagger Borel subgroup B of G . L is uniquely determined by a unitary character $v \in \text{Hom}(A, U(1)) = A^*$ of the \dagger Cartan subgroup A of G contained in B . Hence the representations in the principal series are parametrized by the elements in the character group A^* of the Cartan subgroup A . If we denote U^L by U^v , two representations U^v and $U^{v'}$ ($v, v' \in A^*$) are equivalent if and only if v and v' are conjugate under the \dagger Weyl group W of G with respect to A .

(2) A **degenerate series** consists of unitary representations induced by 1-dimensional unitary representations of a \dagger parabolic subgroup P of G other than B . (A parabolic subgroup P is any subgroup of G containing a Borel subgroup B .)

(3) A **complementary series** consists of irreducible unitary representations U^L induced by nonunitary 1-dimensional representations L of a Borel subgroup B . In this case, condition (ii) in the definition of U^L (\rightarrow Section O) must be changed. When L is a nonunitary representation, then the operator U_g^L is not a unitary operator with respect to the usual L_2 -inner product (ii). However, if L satisfies a certain condition, then U_g^L leaves invariant some positive definite Hermitian form on the space of sufficiently nice functions. Completing this space, we get a unitary representation U^L . The representations thus obtained form the complementary series.

(4) A **complementary degenerate series** consists of irreducible unitary representations induced by nonunitary 1-dimensional representations of a parabolic subgroup $P \neq B$.

Representations belonging to different series are never equivalent. It seems certain that any irreducible unitary representation of a connected complex semisimple Lie group is equivalent to a representation belonging to one of the above four series, but this conjecture has not yet been proved. Moreover, E. M. Stein [11] constructed irreducible unitary representations different from any in the list obtained by I. M. Gel'fand and M. A. Naimark (Neumark) [12]. These representations belong to the complementary degenerate series. The characters of the representations in these four series are computed in explicit form. For example, the character χ_v of the representation U^v in the principal series can be calculated as follows: Let λ be a linear form on a Cartan subalgebra \mathfrak{a} such that $v(\exp H) = e^{\lambda(H)}$ for every H in \mathfrak{a} , let D be the function on A defined by $D(\exp H) = \prod_\alpha |e^{\alpha(H)/2} - e^{-\alpha(H)/2}|^2$, where α runs over all positive roots. Then the character χ_v of a representation U^v in the principal series is given by the formula

$$\chi_v(\exp H) = D(\exp H)^{-1} \sum_{s \in W} e^{s\lambda(H)}.$$

Unitary Representations

In the irreducible decomposition of the regular representation of G , only irreducible representations belonging to the principal series arise. Hence the right-hand side in the Plancherel formula is an integral over the character group A^* of a Cartan subgroup A . Under a suitable normalization of the Haar measures in G and A^* , the Plancherel measure μ of G can be expressed by using the Haar measure dv of A^* :

$$d\mu(v) = w^{-1} \prod_{\alpha} |(\lambda, \alpha) / (\rho, \alpha)|^2 dv,$$

where w is the order of the Weyl group, ρ is the half-sum of all $^+$ positive roots, and α runs over all positive roots (Gel'fand and Naïmark [12]).

X. Real Semisimple Lie Groups

As in the case of a complex semisimple Lie group, a connected real semisimple Lie group G has four series of irreducible unitary representations. However, if G has no parabolic subgroup other than a minimal parabolic subgroup B and G itself, then G has no representation in the degenerate or complementary degenerate series. Examples of such groups are $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ and higher-dimensional $^+$ Lorentz groups. In general, the classification of irreducible unitary representations in the real semisimple case is more complicated than in the complex semisimple case. Irreducible unitary representations arising from the irreducible decomposition of the regular representation are called representations in the **principal series**. The principal series of G are divided into a finite number of subseries corresponding bijectively to the conjugate classes of the $^+$ Cartan subgroups of G .

A connected semisimple Lie group G has a square integrable representation if and only if G has a compact Cartan subgroup H . The set of all square integrable representations of G is called the **discrete series** of irreducible unitary representations. The discrete series is the subseries in the principal series corresponding to a compact Cartan subgroup H . The representations in the discrete series were classified by Harish-Chandra. Let \mathfrak{h} be the Lie algebra of H , P the set of all positive roots in \mathfrak{h} for a fixed linear order, π the polynomial $\prod_{\alpha \in P} H_{\alpha}$, and \mathcal{F} the set of all real-valued linear forms on $\sqrt{-1}\mathfrak{h}$. Moreover, let L be the set of all linear forms λ in \mathcal{F} such that a single-valued character ξ_{λ} of the group H is defined by the formula $\xi_{\lambda}(\exp X) = e^{\lambda(X)}$, and let L' be the set of all λ in L such that $\pi(\lambda) \neq 0$. Then for each λ in L' , there exists a representation $\omega(\lambda)$ of G in the discrete series, and conversely, every representation in the discrete series is equivalent to $\omega(\lambda)$ for some λ in L' . Two representations

$\omega(\lambda_1)$ and $\omega(\lambda_2)$ ($\lambda_1, \lambda_2 \in L'$) are equivalent if and only if there exists an element s in $W_G = N(H)/H$ such that $\lambda_2 = s\lambda_1$, where $N(H)$ is the normalizer of H in G (W_G can act on \mathcal{F} as a linear transformation group in the natural way). The value of the character χ_{λ} on the subgroup H of the representation $\omega(\lambda)$ ($\lambda \in L'$) is given as follows: Let $\varepsilon(\lambda)$ be the signature of $\pi(\lambda) = \prod_{\alpha \in P} \lambda(H_{\alpha})$, and define q and Δ by $q = (\dim G/K)/2$ and $\Delta(\exp H) = \prod_{\alpha \in P} (e^{\alpha(H)/2} - e^{-\alpha(H)/2})$. Then the character χ_{λ} of the representation $\omega(\lambda)$ has the value $(-1)^q \varepsilon(\lambda) \chi_{\lambda}(h) = \Delta(h)^{-1} \sum_{s \in W_G} (\det s) \xi_{s\lambda}(h)$ on a regular element h in H . The formal degree $d(\omega(\lambda))$ of the representation $\omega(\lambda)$ is given by the formula $d(\omega(\lambda)) = C^{-1} [W_G] |\pi(\lambda)|$, where C is a positive constant (not depending on λ) and $[W_G]$ is the order of the finite group W_G (Harish-Chandra [13]). A formula expressing the character χ_{λ} on the whole set of regular elements in G has been given by T. Hirai [14]. The representations in discrete series are realized on L^2 -cohomology spaces of homogeneous holomorphic line bundles over G/H (W. Schmid [15]). They are also realized on the spaces of harmonic spinors on the $^+$ Riemannian symmetric space G/K (M. Atiyah and Schmid [16]). They are also realized on the eigenspaces of a Casimir operator acting on the sections of vector bundles on G/K (R. Hotta, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 23; N. Wallach [17]). An irreducible unitary representation is called **integrable** if at least one of its matrix coefficients belongs to $L^1(G)$. Integrable representations belong to the discrete series. They have been characterized by H. Hecht and Schmid (*Math. Ann.*, 220 (1976)). The theory of the discrete series is easily extended to reductive Lie groups.

The general principal series representations of a connected semisimple Lie group G with finite center are constructed as follows. Let K be a maximal compact subgroup of G . Then there exists a unique involutive automorphism θ of G whose fixed point set coincides with K . θ is called a **Cartan involution** of G . Let H be a θ -stable Cartan subgroup of G . Then H is the direct product of a compact group $T = H \cap K$ and a vector group A . The centralizer $Z(A)$ of A in G is the direct product of a reductive Lie group $M = \theta(M)$ and A . M has a compact Cartan subgroup T . Hence the set \hat{M}_d of the discrete series representations of M is not empty. Let α be an element of the dual space \mathfrak{a}^* of the Lie algebra \mathfrak{a} of A and put $g_{\alpha} = \{X \in \mathfrak{g} | [H, X] = \alpha(H)X (\forall H \in \mathfrak{a})\}$ and $\Delta = \{\alpha \in \mathfrak{a}^* | g_{\alpha} \neq \{0\}\}$. Let Δ^+ be the set of positive elements of Δ in a certain order of \mathfrak{a}^* and put $n = \sum_{\alpha \in \Delta^+} g_{\alpha}$ and $N = \exp n$. Then $P = MAN$ is a closed subgroup of G . P is called a **cuspidal parabolic subgroup** of G . Let $D \in \hat{M}_d$ and $v \in \mathfrak{a}^*$. Then a unitary representation $D \otimes e^{iv}$ of P

is defined by $(D \otimes e^{iv})(man) = D(m)e^{iv(\log a)}$ ($m \in M, a \in A, n \in N$). The unitary representation $\pi_{D,v}$ of G induced by $D \otimes e^{iv}$ is independent of the choice of Δ^+ up to equivalence. Thus $\pi_{D,v}$ depends only on (H, D, v) . The set of representations $\{\pi_{D,v} | D \in \hat{M}_d, v \in \mathfrak{a}^*\}$ is called the **principal H -series**. If v is regular in \mathfrak{a}^* (i.e., $(v, \alpha) \neq 0$ for all $\alpha \in \Delta$), then $\pi_{D,v}$ is irreducible. Every $\pi_{D,v}$ is a finite sum of irreducible representations. The character $\theta_{D,v}$ of $\pi_{D,v}$ is a locally summable function which is supported in the closure of $\bigcup_{g \in G} g(MA)g^{-1}$. If two Cartan subgroups H_1 and H_2 are not conjugate in G , then every H_1 -series representation is disjoint from every H_2 -series representation. Choose a complete system $\{H_1, \dots, H_r\}$ of conjugacy classes of Cartan subgroups of G . Then every H_i can be chosen as θ -stable. The union of the principal H_i -series ($1 \leq i \leq r$) is the principal series of G . The right (or left) regular representation of G is decomposed as the direct integral of the principal series representations. Every complex-valued C^∞ -function on G with compact support has an expansion in terms of the matrix coefficients of the principal series representations. Harish-Chandra [18] proved these theorems and determined explicitly the Plancherel measure by studying the asymptotic behavior of the Eisenstein integral [19, 20].

Y. Spherical Functions

Let G be a locally compact unimodular group and K a compact subgroup of G . The set of all complex-valued continuous functions on G that are invariant under every left translation L_k by elements k in K is denoted by $C(K \backslash G)$. The subset of $C(K \backslash G)$ that consists of all two-sided K -invariant functions is denoted by $C(G, K)$. The subset of $C(G, K)$ consisting of all functions with compact support is denoted by $L = L(G, K)$. L is an algebra over \mathbb{C} if the product of two elements f and g in L is defined by the convolution.

Let λ be an algebra homomorphism from L into \mathbb{C} . Then an element of the eigenspace $F(\lambda) = \{\psi \in C(K, G) | f * \psi = \lambda(f)\psi \ (\forall f \in L)\}$ is called a **spherical function** on $K \backslash G$. If $F(\lambda)$ contains a nonzero element, then $F(\lambda)$ contains a unique two-sided K -invariant element ω normalized by $\omega(e) = 1$, where e is the identity element in G . This function ω is called the **zonal spherical function** associated with λ . In this case, the homomorphism λ is defined by $\lambda(f) = \int_G f(g)\omega(g^{-1})dg$. Hence the eigenspace $F(\lambda)$ is uniquely determined by the zonal spherical function ω . A function $\omega \neq 0$ in $C(G, K)$ is a zonal spherical function on $K \backslash G$ if and only if ω satisfies either of the following two conditions: (i) The mapping $f \mapsto \int f(g)\omega(g^{-1})dg$ is

an algebra homomorphism of L into \mathbb{C} ; (ii) ω satisfies the functional equation

$$\int_K \omega(gkh)dk = \omega(g)\omega(h).$$

When G is a Lie group, every spherical function is a real analytic function on $K \backslash G$.

Z. Expansion by Spherical Functions

In this section, we assume that the algebra L of two-sided K -invariant functions is commutative. In this case there are sufficiently many spherical functions of $K \backslash G$, and two-sided K -invariant functions are expanded by spherical functions. An irreducible unitary representation U of G is called a **spherical representation** with respect to K if the representation space $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ contains a nonzero vector invariant under every U_k , where k runs over K . By the commutativity of L , the K -invariant vectors in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ form a 1-dimensional subspace. Let x be a K -invariant vector in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$ with the norm $\|x\| = 1$. Then $\omega(g) = (U_g x, x)$ is a zonal spherical function on $K \backslash G$, and for every y in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$, the function $\varphi_y(g) = (U_g x, y)$ is a spherical function associated with ω . Moreover, in this case the zonal spherical function ω is a positive definite function on G . Conversely, every positive definite zonal spherical function ω can be expressed as $\omega(g) = (U_g x, x)$ for some spherical representation U and some K -invariant vector x in $\mathfrak{H}(U)$.

The set of all positive definite zonal spherical functions becomes a locally compact space Ω by the topology of compact convergence. The **spherical Fourier transform** \hat{f} of a function f in $L_1(K \backslash G)$ is defined by

$$\hat{f}(\omega) = \int_G f(g)\omega(g^{-1})dg.$$

There exists a unique \dagger Radon measure μ on Ω such that for every f in L , \hat{f} belongs to $L_2(\Omega, \mu)$. Also, the Plancherel formula

$$\int_G f(s)\overline{g(s)}ds = \int_\Omega \hat{f}(\omega)\overline{\hat{g}(\omega)}d\mu(\omega) \quad (4)$$

holds for every f and g in L , and an inversion formula $f(s) = \int_\Omega \hat{f}(\omega)\omega(s)d\mu(\omega)$ holds for a sufficiently nice two-sided K -invariant function f [21]. Identifying a positive definite zonal spherical function with the corresponding spherical representation, we can regard Ω as a subset of the dual \hat{G} of G . The Plancherel formula for two-sided K -invariant functions is obtained from the general Plancherel formula on G by restricting the domain of the integral from \hat{G} to Ω . When G is a Lie group and L is commutative, a spherical function on $K \backslash G$ can be characterized as a simultaneous eigenfunc-

tion of G -invariant linear differential operators on $K \backslash G$.

AA. Spherical Function on Symmetric Spaces

The most important case where the algebra $L = L(G, K)$ is commutative is when $K \backslash G$ is a \dagger weakly symmetric Riemannian space or, in particular, a \dagger symmetric Riemannian space. When $K \backslash G$ is a compact symmetric Riemannian space, a spherical representation with respect to K is the irreducible component of the regular representation T on $K \backslash G$, and a spherical function on $K \backslash G$ is a function that belongs to the irreducible subspaces in $L_2(K \backslash G)$. In particular, if G is a compact connected semisimple Lie group, the highest weights of spherical representations of G with respect to K are explicitly given by using the **Satake diagram** of $K \backslash G$. The Satake diagram of $K \backslash G$ is the \dagger Satake diagram of the noncompact symmetric Riemannian space $K \backslash G_0$ dual to $K \backslash G$ or the Satake diagram of the Lie algebra of G_0 . If a symmetric space is the underlying manifold of a compact Lie group G , then G can be expressed as $G = K \backslash (G \times G)$, where K is the diagonal subgroup of $G \times G$. In this case, a zonal spherical function ω on $G = K \backslash (G \times G)$ is the normalized character of an irreducible unitary representation U of G : $\omega(g) = (\deg U)^{-1} T_r U_g$. The explicit form of ω is given by \dagger Weyl's character formula (\rightarrow 249 Lie Groups).

The zonal spherical functions on a symmetric Riemannian space $K \backslash G$ of noncompact type are obtained in the following way: Let G be a connected semisimple Lie group with finite center, K be a maximal compact subgroup of G , and $G = NA_+K$ be an \dagger Iwasawa decomposition. Then for any g in G there exists a unique element $H(g)$ in the Lie algebra \mathfrak{a}_+ of A_+ such that g belongs to $N \exp H(g)K$. Let \mathfrak{a} be a Cartan subalgebra containing \mathfrak{a}_+ , P be the set of all positive roots in \mathfrak{a} , and $\rho = (\sum_{\alpha \in P} \alpha)/2$. Then for any complex-valued linear form v on \mathfrak{a}_+ , the function

$$\omega_v(g) = \int_K e^{(iv - \rho)(H(kg))} dk$$

is a zonal spherical function on the symmetric Riemannian space $K \backslash G$. Conversely, every zonal spherical function ω on $K \backslash G$ is equal to ω_v for some v . Two zonal spherical functions ω_v and $\omega_{v'}$ coincide if and only if v and v' are conjugate under the operation of the Weyl group $W_0 = N_K(A)/Z_K(A)$ of $K \backslash G$ (Harish-Chandra [22], S. Helgason [23]). If v is real-valued, then ω_v is positive definite. Such a zonal spherical function ω_v is obtained from a spherical representation belonging to the

principal A -series. Let Ω_0 be the set of all zonal spherical functions ω_v associated with the real-valued linear form v . Then the support of the Plancherel measure μ on $K \backslash G$ is contained in Ω_0 . We can choose v as a parameter on the space Ω_0 . Then the right-hand side of the Plancherel formula can be expressed as an integral over the dual space L of \mathfrak{a}_+ . Moreover, the Plancherel measure μ is absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure dv on the Euclidean space L and can be expressed as

$$d\mu(\omega_v) = \omega_0^{-1} |c(v)|^{-2} dv$$

under suitable normalization of μ and dv . The problem of calculating the function $c(v)$ can be reduced to the case of symmetric spaces of rank 1 and can be solved explicitly. Let p_α be the multiplicity of a restricted root α and $I(v)$ be the product

$$I(v) = \prod_{\alpha} B(\tfrac{1}{2}p_\alpha, \tfrac{1}{4}p_\alpha + (v, \alpha)(\alpha, \alpha)^{-1}),$$

where α runs over all positive restricted roots and B is the \dagger beta function. Then $c(v) = I(iv)/I(\rho)$ [20, 24]. Every spherical function f on $K \backslash G$ is expressed as the Poisson integral of its "boundary values" on the Martin boundary $P \backslash G$ of $K \backslash G$, where $P = MA_+N$ is a minimal parabolic subgroup of G . The boundary values of f form a hyperfunction with values in a line bundle over $P \backslash G$ (K. Okamoto et al. [25]).

BB. Spherical Functions and Special Functions

Some important special functions are obtained as the zonal spherical functions on a certain symmetric Riemannian space $M = K \backslash G$ (G is the motion group of M). In particular when M is of rank 1, then the zonal spherical functions are essentially the functions of a single variable. For example, the zonal spherical functions on an n -dimensional Euclidean space can be expressed as

$$\omega_v(r) = 2^m \Gamma(m+1) (vr)^{-m} J_m(vr),$$

where $2m = n - 2$ and J_m is the \dagger Bessel function of the m th order. The zonal spherical function on an $(n-1)$ -dimensional sphere $S^{n-1} = SO(n-1) \backslash SO(n)$ is given by

$$\omega_v(\theta) = \Gamma(v+1) \Gamma(n-2) \Gamma(v+n-2)^{-1} C_v^m(\cos \theta) \\ (v=0, 1, 2, \dots),$$

where $C_v^m(z)$ is the \dagger Gegenbauer polynomial. The zonal spherical functions on an $(n-1)$ -dimensional Lobachevskii space can be expressed as

$$\omega_v(t) = 2^{m-1/2} \Gamma(m+1/2) \sinh^{-m+1/2} t \\ \times \mathfrak{P}_{-1/2-m+v}^{1/2-m}(\cosh t)$$

using a generalized * associated Legendre function \mathfrak{P}_ν^μ . Many properties of special functions can be proved from a group-theoretic point of view. For example, the addition theorem is merely the homomorphism property $U_{gh} = U_g U_h$ expressed in terms of the matrix components of U . The differential equation satisfied by these special functions is derived from the fact that a zonal spherical function ω is an eigenfunction of an invariant differential operator. The integral expression of such a special function can be obtained by constructing a spherical representation U in a certain function space and calculating explicitly the inner product in the expression $\omega(g) = (U_g x, x)$ (N. Ya. Vilenkin [26]).

CC. Generalization of the Theory of Spherical Functions

The theory of spherical functions described in Sections Y–BB can be generalized in several ways. First, spherical functions are related to the trivial representation of K . A generalization is obtained if the trivial representation of K is replaced by an irreducible representation of K . The theory of such zonal spherical functions is useful for representation theory [20]. For example, the Plancherel formula for $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ can be obtained using such spherical functions (R. Takahashi, *Japan. J. Math.*, 31 (1961)). Harish-Chandra's Eisenstein integral is such a spherical function on a general semisimple Lie group G . He used it successfully to obtain the Plancherel measure of G . Another generalization can be obtained by removing the condition that K is compact. In particular, when $K \backslash G$ is a symmetric homogeneous space of a Lie group G , the algebra \mathcal{D} of all G -invariant linear differential operators is commutative if the space $K \backslash G$ has an invariant volume element. In this case, a spherical function on $K \backslash G$ can be defined as a simultaneous eigenfunction of \mathcal{D} . The character of a semisimple Lie group is a zonal spherical function (distribution) in this sense. The spherical functions and harmonic analysis on symmetric homogeneous space have been studied by T. Oshima and others. T. Oshima and J. Sekiguchi [27] proved the Poisson integral theorem (\rightarrow Section AA) for a certain kind of symmetric homogeneous spaces.

The spherical functions and unitary representations of topological groups that are not locally compact are studied in connection with probability theory and physics. For example, the zonal spherical functions of the rotation group of a real Hilbert space are expressed by Hermite polynomials.

DD. Discontinuous Subgroups and Representations

Let G be a connected semisimple Lie group and Γ be a discrete subgroup of G . Then the regular representation T of G on $\Gamma \backslash G$ is defined by $(T_g f)(x) = f(xg)$ ($f \in L^2(\Gamma \backslash G)$). The problem of decomposing the representation T into irreducible components is important in connection with the theory of * automorphic forms and number theory. First assume that the quotient space $\Gamma \backslash G$ is compact. Then for every function f in $L_1(G)$, the operator $T(f)$ is a compact operator. Hence the regular representation T on $\Gamma \backslash G$ can be decomposed into the discrete sum $T = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} T^{(k)}$ of irreducible unitary representations $T^{(k)}$, and the multiplicity of every irreducible component is finite. The irreducible unitary representation U of G is related to the automorphic forms of Γ in the following way: Let x be a nonzero element in the representation space $\mathfrak{H} = \mathfrak{H}(U)$ of U . \mathfrak{H} is topologized into a * locally convex topological vector space \mathfrak{H}_x by the set N_x of * seminorms: $N_x = \{P_C(y) = \max_{g \in C} |(U_g x, y)|\}$, where C runs over all compact subsets in G . The topology \mathcal{T}_x of \mathfrak{H}_x is independent of the choice of x provided that $\dim\{T_k x | k \in K\} < \infty$, where K is a maximal compact subgroup of G . Let \mathfrak{H}^* be the completion of \mathfrak{H}_x with respect to the topology \mathcal{T}_x (the completion is independent of the choice of x). \mathfrak{H}^* contains the original Hilbert space \mathfrak{H} as a subspace. Then the representation U of G on \mathfrak{H} can be extended to a representation U^* of G on the space \mathfrak{H}^* . An element f in \mathfrak{H}^* invariant under U_γ^* for every γ in Γ is called an **automorphic form** of Γ of type U . Then the multiplicity of an irreducible representation U in the regular representation T on $\Gamma \backslash G$ is equal to the dimension of the vector space consisting of all automorphic forms of type U . This theorem is called the **Gel'fand–Pyatetskii–Shapiro reciprocity law** [28]. Let $T = \sum_{k=1}^{\infty} T^{(k)}$ be the irreducible decomposition of T and χ_k be the character of the irreducible unitary representation $T^{(k)}$. Then for a suitable function f on G , the integral operator K_f on $\mathfrak{H}(T) = L^2(T \backslash G)$ with kernel $k_f(x, y) = \sum_{\gamma \in \Gamma} f(x^{-1}\gamma y)$ belongs to the trace class. By calculating the trace of K_f in two ways, the following **trace formula** is obtained:

$$\sum_{k=1}^{\infty} \int_G f(g) \chi_k(g) dg = \sum_{\{\gamma\}} \int_{\mathfrak{D}_\gamma} f(x^{-1}\gamma x) dx,$$

where $\{\gamma\}$ is the conjugate class of γ in Γ and \mathfrak{D}_γ is the quotient space of the centralizer G_γ of γ in G by the centralizer Γ_γ of γ in Γ .

When the groups G and Γ are given explicitly, the right-hand side of the trace formula can be expressed in a more explicit form,

and the trace formula leads to useful consequences. A similar trace formula holds for the unitary representation U^L induced by a finite-dimensional unitary representation L of Γ instead of the regular representation T on $\Gamma \backslash G$. When the quotient space $\Gamma \backslash G$ is not compact, the irreducible decomposition of the regular representation T on $\Gamma \backslash G$ contains not only the discrete direct sum but also the direct integral (continuous spectrum). A. Selberg showed that even in this case, there are explicit examples for which the trace formula holds for the part with discrete spectrum. Also, the part with continuous spectrum can be described by the †generalized Eisenstein series. Analytic properties and the functional equation of the generalized Eisenstein series have been studied by R. Langlands [30]. Recent developments are surveyed in [31].

EE. History

Finite-dimensional unitary representations of a finite group were studied by Frobenius and Schur (1896–1905). In 1925, †Weyl studied the finite-dimensional unitary representation of compact Lie groups. The theory of infinite-dimensional unitary representation was initiated in 1939 by E. P. Wigner in his work on the inhomogeneous Lorentz group, motivated by problems of quantum mechanics.

In 1943, Gel'fand and D. A. Raikov proved the existence of sufficiently many irreducible unitary representations of an arbitrary locally compact group. The first systematic studies of unitary representations appeared in 1947 in the work of V. Bargmann on $SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ [31] and the work of Gel'fand and Neumark on $SL(2, \mathbf{C})$. Gel'fand and Naïmark established the theory of unitary representation for complex semisimple Lie groups [12].

Harish-Chandra proved theorems concerning the unitary representations of a general semisimple Lie group; for instance, he proved that a semisimple Lie group G is of type I [7] and defined the character of a unitary representation of G and proved its basic properties [9, III; 10]. Harish-Chandra also determined the discrete series of G and their characters. Harish-Chandra [18] proved the Plancherel formula for an arbitrary connected semisimple Lie group G with finite center. Hence harmonic analysis of square integrable functions on G is established.

Further studies on harmonic analysis on semisimple Lie groups have been carried out. In particular, Paley-Wiener-type theorems, which determine the Fourier transform image

of the space $C_c^\infty(G)$ of C^∞ -functions with compact support, have been proved for the group $PSL(2, \mathbf{R})$ (L. Ehrenpreis and F. Mautner [33]), complex semisimple Lie groups (Zhelobenko [34]), and two-sided K -invariant functions on general semisimple Lie groups (R. Gangolli [35]). A. W. Knap and E. M. Stein [36] studied the intertwining operators.

Concerning the construction of irreducible representations, G. W. Mackey [3] and Bruhat [4] developed the theory of induced representations of locally compact groups and Lie groups, respectively. B. Kostant [37] (see Blattner's article in [38]) noticed a relation between homogeneous †symplectic manifolds and unitary representations and proposed a method of constructing irreducible unitary representations of a Lie group. Selberg's research [29] revealed a connection between unitary representations (or spherical functions) and the theory of automorphic forms and number theory. A number of papers along these lines have since appeared [31]. In connection with number-theoretic investigations of an †algebraic group defined over an algebraic number field, unitary representations of the †adele group of G or an algebraic group over a †p-adic number field have been studied (\rightarrow [31, 38], Gel'fand, M. I. Grayev, and I. I. Pyatetskii-Shapiro [39], and H. M. Jacquet and R. P. Langlands [40]).

For the algebraic approach to the infinite-dimensional representations of semisimple Lie groups and Lie algebras \rightarrow [41].

For surveys of the theory of unitary representations \rightarrow [2, 19, 20, 31, 38].

References

- [1] N. Tatsuuma, A duality theorem for locally compact groups, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 6 (1967), 187–293.
- [2] J. Dixmier, *Les C^* -algèbres et leurs représentations*, Gauthier-Villars, 1964.
- [3] G. W. Mackey, Induced representations of locally compact groups I, *Ann. Math.*, 55 (1952), 101–139.
- [4] F. Bruhat, Sur les représentations induites des groupes de Lie, *Bull. Soc. Math. France*, 84 (1956), 97–205.
- [5] R. Bott, Homogeneous vector bundles, *Ann. Math.*, 66 (1957), 203–248.
- [6] E. Nelson, Analytic vectors, *Ann. Math.*, 70 (1959), 572–615.
- [7] A. A. Kirillov, Unitary representations of nilpotent Lie groups, *Russian Math. Surveys*, 17, no. 4 (1962), 53–104. (Original in Russian, 1962.)
- [8] L. Auslander and B. Kostant, Polarization

and unitary representations of solvable Lie groups, *Inventiones Math.*, 14 (1971), 255–354.

[9] Harish-Chandra, Representations of a semisimple Lie group on a Banach space I–VI, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 75 (1953), 185–243; 76 (1954), 26–65; 76 (1954), 234–253; *Amer. J. Math.*, 77 (1955), 743–777; 78 (1956), 1–41; 78 (1956), 564–628.

[10] Harish-Chandra, Invariant eigendistributions on a semisimple Lie group, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 119 (1965), 457–508.

[11] E. M. Stein, Analysis in matrix spaces and some new representations of $SL(N, \mathbb{C})$, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 86 (1967), 461–490.

[12] I. M. Gel'fand and M. A. Naimark (Neumark), *Unitäre Darstellungen der klassischen Gruppen*, Akademische Verlag., 1957. (Original in Russian, 1950.)

[13] Harish-Chandra, Discrete series for semisimple Lie groups I, II, *Acta Math.*, 113 (1965), 241–318; 116 (1966), 1–111.

[14] T. Hirai, The characters of the discrete series for semisimple Lie groups, *J. Math. Kyoto Univ.*, 21 (1981), 417–500.

[15] W. Schmid, L^2 -cohomology and the discrete series, *Ann. Math.*, 102 (1976), 375–394.

[16] M. F. Atiyah and W. Schmid, A geometric construction of the discrete series for semisimple Lie groups, *Inventiones Math.*, 42 (1977), 1–62.

[17] N. Wallach, On the Enright-Varadarajan modules: A construction of the discrete series, *Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup.*, 9 (1976), 81–102.

[18] Harish-Chandra, Harmonic analysis on real reductive groups I–III, *J. Functional Anal.*, 19 (1975), 104–204; *Inventiones Math.*, 36 (1976), 1–55; *Ann. Math.*, 104 (1976), 117–201.

[19] J. A. Wolf, M. Cahen, and M. De Wilde (eds.), *Harmonic analysis and representations of semisimple Lie groups*, Reidel, 1980.

[20] G. Warner, *Harmonic analysis on semisimple Lie groups I, II*, Springer, 1972.

[21] H. Yoshizawa, A proof of the Plancherel theorem, *Proc. Japan Acad.*, 30 (1954), 276–281.

[22] Harish-Chandra, Spherical functions on a semisimple Lie group I, II, *Amer. J. Math.*, 80 (1958), 241–310, 553–613.

[23] S. Helgason, *Differential geometry and symmetric spaces*, Academic Press, 1962.

[24] J. Rosenberg, A quick proof of Harish-Chandra's Plancherel theorem for spherical functions on a semisimple Lie groups, *Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 63 (1977), 143–149.

[25] M. Kashiwara, A. Kowata, K. Minemura, K. Okamoto, T. Oshima, and M. Tanaka, *Eigenfunctions of invariant differential*

437 Ref.

Unitary Representations

operators on a symmetric space, *Ann. Math.*, 107 (1978), 1–39.

[26] N. Ya Vilenkin, *Special functions and theory of group representations*, *Amer. Math. Soc. Transl. of Math. Monographs*, 22, 1968. (Original in Russian, 1965.)

[27] T. Oshima and J. Sekiguchi, Eigenspaces of invariant differential operators on an affine symmetric space, *Inventiones Math.*, 57 (1980), 1–81.

[28] I. M. Gel'fand and I. I. Pyatetskii-Shapiro, *Theory of representations and theory of automorphic functions*, *Amer. Math. Soc. Transl.*, (2) 26 (1963), 173–200. (Original in Russian, 1959.)

[29] A. Selberg, Harmonic analysis and discontinuous groups in weakly symmetric Riemannian spaces with applications to Dirichlet series, *J. Indian Math. Soc.*, 20 (1956), 47–87.

[30] R. P. Langlands, On the functional equations satisfied by Eisenstein series, *Lecture notes in math.* 544, Springer, 1976.

[31] *Automorphic forms, representations and L-functions*, *Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symposia in Pure Math.*, 33, 1979.

[32] V. Bargmann, Irreducible unitary representations of the Lorentz group, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 48 (1947), 568–640.

[33] L. Ehrenpreis and F. I. Mautner, Some properties of the Fourier transform on semisimple Lie groups I–III, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 61 (1955), 406–439; *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 84 (1957), 1–55; 90 (1959), 431–484.

[34] D. P. Zhelobenko, Harmonic analysis of functions on semisimple Lie groups I, II, *Amer. Math. Soc. Transl.*, (2) 54 (1966), 177–230. (Original in Russian, 1963, 1969.)

[35] R. Gangolli, On the Plancherel formula and the Paley-Wiener theorem for spherical functions on a semisimple Lie group, *Ann. Math.*, 93 (1971), 150–165.

[36] A. W. Knap and E. M. Stein, Intertwining operators for semisimple groups, *Ann. Math.*, 93 (1971), 489–578.

[37] B. Kostant, Quantization and unitary representations, *Lecture notes in math.* 170, Springer, 1970, 87–207.

[38] *Harmonic analysis on homogeneous spaces*, *Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symposia in Pure Math.*, 26 (1973).

[39] I. M. Gel'fand, M. I. Grayev, and I. I. Pyatetskii-Shapiro, *Representation theory and automorphic functions*, Saunders, 1969. (Original in Russian, 1966.)

[40] H. Jacquet and R. P. Langlands, *Automorphic forms on $GL(2)$* , *Lecture notes in math.* 114, Springer, 1970.

[41] D. A. Vogan, *Representations of real reductive Lie groups*, Birkhäuser, 1981.

438 (XI.5) Univalent and Multivalent Functions

A. General Remarks

A single-valued [†]analytic function $f(z)$ defined in a domain D of the complex plane is said to be **univalent** (or **simple** or **schlicht**) if it is injective, i.e., if $f(z_1) \neq f(z_2)$ for all distinct points z_1, z_2 in D . A multiple-valued function $f(z)$ is also said to be univalent if its distinct function elements always attain distinct values at their centers. The derivative of a univalent function is never zero. The limit function of a [†]uniformly convergent sequence of univalent functions is univalent unless it reduces to a constant. When $f(z)$ is single-valued, the univalent function $w = f(z)$ gives rise to a one-to-one [†]conformal mapping between D and its image $f(D)$.

B. Univalent Functions in the Unit Disk

A systematic theory of the family of functions [†]holomorphic and univalent in the unit disk originates from a **distortion theorem** obtained by P. Koebe (1909) in connection with the uniformization of analytic functions. In general, distortion theorems are theorems for determining bounds of functionals, such as $|f(z)|$, $|f'(z)|$, $\arg f'(z)$, within the family under consideration. In particular, distortion theorems concerning the bounds of the arguments of $f(z)$ and $f'(z)$ are also called **rotation theorems**. Though results were at first qualitative, they were made quantitative subsequently by L. Bieberbach (1916), G. Faber (1916), and others. Any univalent function $f(z)$ holomorphic in the unit disk and normalized by $f(0) = 0$ and $f'(0) = 1$ satisfies the **distortion inequalities**

$$\frac{|z|}{(1+|z|)^2} \leq |f(z)| \leq \frac{|z|}{(1-|z|)^2},$$

$$\frac{1-|z|}{(1+|z|)^3} \leq |f'(z)| \leq \frac{1+|z|}{(1-|z|)^3}.$$

Here the equality holds only if $f(z)$ is of the form $z/(1-\varepsilon z)^2$ ($|\varepsilon| = 1$). In deriving these inequalities, Bieberbach centered his attention on the family of [†]meromorphic functions $g(\zeta) = \zeta + \sum_{v=0}^{\infty} b_v \zeta^{-v}$ univalent in $|\zeta| > 1$. He established the **area theorem** $\sum_{v=1}^{\infty} v|b_v|^2 \leq 1$, which illustrates the fact that the area of the complementary set of the image domain is nonnegative. Bieberbach, R. Nevanlinna (1919–1920), and others constructed a sys-

tematic theory of univalent functions in the unit disk based on this theorem.

After the area theorem, the chief tools in the theory of univalent functions have been Löwner's method, the method of contour integration, the variational method, and the method of the extremal metric. In contrast to the theory of univalent functions based on Bieberbach's area theorem, K. Löwner (1923) introduced a new method. In view of a theorem on the domain kernel (C. Carathéodory, 1912), it suffices to consider an everywhere dense subfamily in order to estimate a continuous functional within the family of univalent functions holomorphic in the unit disk. Löwner used the subfamily of functions mapping the unit disk onto the so-called bounded slit domains. Namely, the range of a member of this subfamily consists of the unit disk slit along a Jordan arc that starts at a periphery point and does not pass through the origin. A mapping function of this nature is determined as the integral $f(z, t_0)$ of **Löwner's differential equation**

$$\frac{\partial f(z, t)}{\partial t} = -f(z, t) \frac{1 + \kappa(t)f(z, t)}{1 - \kappa(t)f(z, t)}, \quad 0 \leq t \leq t_0,$$

with the initial condition $f(z, 0) = z$, where $\kappa(t)$ is a continuous function with absolute value equal to 1. Any univalent function $f(z)$ holomorphic in the unit disk and satisfying $f(0) = 0$, $f'(0) = 1$ has an arbitrarily close approximation by functions of the form $e^{t_0} f(z, t_0)$. By means of this differential equation Löwner proved that $|a_3| \leq 3$ for any univalent function $f(z) = z + \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ ($|z| < 1$) and also derived a decisive estimate concerning a coefficient problem for the inverse function [2].

G. M. Golusin (1935) and I. E. Bazilevich (1936) first noticed that Löwner's method is also a powerful tool for deriving several distortion theorems. They showed that classical distortion theorems can be derived in more detailed form (Golusin, *Mat. Sb.*, 2 (1937), 685); in particular, Golusin (1938) obtained a precise estimate concerning the rotation theorem, i.e.,

$$|\arg f'(z)| \leq \begin{cases} 4 \arcsin |z|, & |z| < 1/\sqrt{2}, \\ \pi + \log(|z|^2/(1-|z|^2)), & 1/\sqrt{2} \leq |z| < 1. \end{cases}$$

Löwner's method was also investigated by A. C. Schaeffer and D. C. Spencer (1945) [8].

The method of contour integration was introduced by H. Grunsky. It starts with some 2-dimensional integral which can be shown to be positive. Transforming it into a boundary integral and using the [†]residue theorem, we obtain an appropriate inequality by means of this integral. By this method Grunsky established the following useful inequality (*Math.*

Z , 45 (1939)). For $g(\zeta) = \zeta + \sum_{v=0}^{\infty} b_v \zeta^{-v}$, which is univalent in $|\zeta| > 1$, let

$$\log \frac{g(z) - g(\zeta)}{z - \zeta} = \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} c_{mn} z^{-m} \zeta^{-n} \quad (|z| > 1, |\zeta| > 1).$$

The coefficients c_{mn} are polynomials in the coefficients b_v of g . Then **Grunsky's inequality** is: For each integer N and for all complex numbers $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_N$,

$$\left| \sum_{m=1}^N \sum_{n=1}^N c_{mn} \lambda_m \lambda_n \right| \leq \sum_{n=1}^N \frac{1}{n} |\lambda_n|^2.$$

It is known that if this inequality holds for an arbitrary integer N and for all complex numbers $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_N$, then $g(\zeta)$ is univalent in $|\zeta| > 1$. There are several generalizations of Grunsky's inequality [13].

The variational method was first developed by M. Schiffer for application to the theory of univalent functions. He first used boundary variations (*Proc. London Math. Soc.*, 44 (1938)) and later interior variations (*Amer. J. Math.*, 65 (1943)). The problem of maximizing a given real-valued functional on a family of univalent functions is called an extremal problem, and a function for which the functional attains its maximum is called an extremal function. The **variational method** is used to uncover characteristic properties of an extremal function by comparing it with nearby functions. Typical results are the qualitative information that the extremal function maps the disk $|z| < 1$ onto the complement of a system of analytic arcs satisfying a differential equation and that the extremal function satisfies a differential equation. Following Schiffer, Schaeffer and Spencer [8] and Golusin (*Math. Sb.*, 19 (1946)) gave variants of the method of interior variations.

H. Grötzsch (1928–1934) treated the theory of univalent functions in a unified manner by the method of the ^{*}extremal metric. The idea of this method is to estimate the length of curves and the area of some region swept out by them together with an application of ^{*}Schwarz's inequality (\rightarrow 143 Extremal Length). After Grötzsch, the method of the extremal metric has been used by many authors. In particular, O. Teichmüller, in connection with this method, formulated the principle that the solution of a certain type of extremal problem is in general associated with a ^{*}quadratic differential, although he did not prove any general result realizing this principle in concrete form. J. A. Jenkins gave a concrete expression of the Teichmüller principle; namely, he established the general coefficient theorem and showed that this theorem contains as special cases a great many of the known results on univalent functions [11].

Univalence criteria have been given by various authors. In particular, Z. Nehari (*Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 55 (1949)) proved that if $|\{f(z), z\}| \leq 2(1 - |z|^2)^{-2}$ in $|z| < 1$, then $f(z)$ is univalent in $|z| < 1$, and E. Hille (*Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 55 (1949)) proved that 2 is the best possible constant in the above inequality. Here, $\{f(z), z\}$ denotes the ^{*}Schwarzian derivative of $f(z)$ with respect to z :

$$\{f(z), z\} = \left(\frac{f''(z)}{f'(z)} \right)' - \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{f''(z)}{f'(z)} \right)^2.$$

C. Coefficient Problems

In several distortion theorems **Koebe's extremal function** $z/(1 - \varepsilon z)^2 = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} n \varepsilon^{n-1} z^n$ ($|\varepsilon| = 1$) is extensively utilized. Concerning this, Bieberbach stated the following conjecture. If $f(z) = z + \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ is holomorphic and univalent in $|z| < 1$, then $|a_n| \leq n$ ($n = 2, 3, \dots$), with equality holding only for Koebe's extremal function $z/(1 - \varepsilon z)^2$ ($|\varepsilon| = 1$). This conjecture was solved affirmatively by L. de Branges in 1985 after enormous effort by many mathematicians, as described below.

Bieberbach (1916, [1]) proved $|a_2| \leq 2$ as a corollary to the area theorem. This result can be proved easily by most of the methods. In 1923 Löwner [2] proved $|a_3| \leq 3$, introducing his own method. Schaeffer and Spencer gave a proof of $|a_3| \leq 3$ by the variational method (*Duke Math. J.*, 10 (1943)). Furthermore, Jenkins used the method of the extremal metric to prove a coefficient inequality that implies $|a_3| \leq 3$ (*Analytic Functions*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1960). The problem of the fourth coefficient remained open until 1955, when P. R. Garabedian and Schiffer [3] proved $|a_4| \leq 4$ by the variational method. Their proof was extremely complicated. Subsequently, Z. Charzyński and Schiffer gave an alternative brief proof of $|a_4| \leq 4$ by using the Grunsky inequality (*Arch. Rational Mech. Anal.*, 5 (1960)). M. Ozawa (1969, [4]) and R. N. Pederson (1968, [5]) also used the Grunsky inequality to prove $|a_6| \leq 6$. In 1972, Pederson and Schiffer [6] proved $|a_5| \leq 5$. They applied the Garabedian-Schiffer inequality, a generalization of the Grunsky inequality which Garabedian and Schiffer had derived by the variational method.

On the other hand, W. K. Hayman [7] showed that for each fixed $f(z) = z + \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} a_n z^n$,

$$\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \frac{|a_n|}{n} = \alpha \leq 1,$$

with the equality holding only for Koebe's extremal function $z/(1 - \varepsilon z)^2$ ($|\varepsilon| = 1$). Further, it was shown that Koebe's extremal function $z/(1 - z)^2$ gives a local maximum for the n th

coefficient in the sense that $\operatorname{Re}\{a_n\} \leq n$ whenever $|a_2 - 2| < \delta_n$ for some $\delta_n > 0$ (Garabedian, G. G. Ross, and Schiffer, *J. Math. Mech.*, 14 (1964); E. Bombieri, *Inventiones Math.*, 4 (1967); Garabedian and Schiffer, *Arch. Rational Math. Anal.*, 26 (1967)).

In the most general form, the coefficient problem is to determine the region occupied by the points (a_2, \dots, a_n) for all functions $f(z) = z + \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ univalent in $|z| < 1$. Schaeffer and Spencer [8] found explicitly the region for (a_2, a_3) .

For the coefficients of functions $g(\zeta) = \zeta + \sum_{v=0}^{\infty} b_v \zeta^{-v}$ univalent in $|\zeta| > 1$, the following results are known: $|b_1| \leq 1$ (Bieberbach [1]), $|b_2| \leq 2/3$ (Schiffer, *Bull. Soc. Math. France*, 66 (1938); Golusin, *Mat. Sb.*, 3 (1938)), $|b_3| \leq 1/2 + e^{-6}$ (Garabedian and Schiffer, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 61 (1955)).

D. Other Classes of Univalent Functions

We have discussed the general family of functions univalent in the unit disk. There are also several results on distortion theorems and coefficient problems for subfamilies determined by conditions such as that the images are bounded, *starlike with respect to the origin, or *convex. For instance, if $f(z) = z + \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} a_n z^n$ is holomorphic and univalent in $|z| < 1$ and its image is starlike with respect to the origin, then $|a_n| \leq n$ ($n = 2, 3, \dots$). If the image of $f(z)$ is convex, then $f(z)$ satisfies $|a_n| \leq 1$ ($n = 2, 3, \dots$) and the distortion inequalities

$$\frac{|z|}{1+|z|} \leq |f(z)| \leq \frac{|z|}{1-|z|},$$

$$\frac{1}{(1+|z|)^2} \leq |f'(z)| \leq \frac{1}{(1-|z|)^2}.$$

Here the equality sign appears at z_0 ($0 < |z_0| < 1$) if and only if $f(z)$ is of the form $z/(1+\varepsilon z)$ with $\varepsilon = \pm |z_0|/z_0$.

On the other hand, problems on conformal mappings of multiply connected domains involve essential difficulties in comparison with the simply connected case. Although Bieberbach's method is unsuitable for multiply connected domains, Löwner's method, the method of contour integration, the variational method, and the method of the extremal metric remain useful (\rightarrow 77 Conformal Mappings).

E. Multivalent Functions

Multivalent functions are a natural generalization of univalent functions. There are several results that generalize classical results on univalent functions.

A function $f(z)$ that attains every value at most p times and some values exactly p times in a domain D is said to be **p -valent** in D and is called a **multivalent function** provided that $p > 1$. In order for $f(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} a_n z^n$, holomorphic in $|z| \leq 1$, to be p -valent there, it is sufficient that it satisfies

$$p-1 < \operatorname{Re}(zf'(z)/f(z)) < p+1$$

on $|z| = 1$. Hence it suffices to have

$$|a_p| - \sum_{n=2}^p n|a_{p+1-n}| > \sum_{n=2}^{\infty} n|a_{p-1+n}|.$$

If $f(z) = (1 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots)/z^p$ is holomorphic and p -valent in $0 < |z| \leq 1$, then

$$\frac{d}{dr} \int_0^{2\pi} F(|f(re^{i\theta})|) d\theta \leq 0$$

for any increasing function $F(\rho)$ in $\rho \geq 0$. In particular, if $F(\rho) = \rho^2$, this becomes an area theorem from which follow coefficient estimates, etc., for p -valent functions.

Various subfamilies and generalized families of multivalent functions have been considered. Let $f(z)$ be p -valent in D , and $c_0 + c_1 z + \dots + c_{p-1} z^{p-1} + c_p f(z)$ be at most p -valent in D for any constants c_0, c_1, \dots, c_p . Then $f(z)$ is said to be **absolutely p -valent** in D . If a function $f(z)$ holomorphic in a convex domain K satisfies $\operatorname{Re}(e^{i\alpha} f^{(p)}(z)) > 0$ for a real constant α , then $f(z)$ is absolutely p -valent in K . If $f(z)$ is absolutely p -valent in D , then

$$\left(\sum_{k=0}^{p-1} b_k z^k + b_p f(z) \right) \left/ \left(\sum_{k=0}^{p-1} c_k z^k + c_p f(z) \right) \right.$$

is at most p -valent in D for any constants b_k and c_k .

If $f(z)$ is p -valent in the common part of a domain D and the disk centered at each point of D with a fixed radius ρ , then $f(z)$ is said to be **locally p -valent** in D , and ρ is called its **modulus**. A necessary and sufficient condition for $f(z)$, holomorphic in D , to be at most locally p -valent is that $f'(z), \dots, f^{(p)}(z)$ not vanish simultaneously. In order for $f(z)$, holomorphic in D , to be **locally absolutely p -valent** it is necessary and sufficient that $f^{(p)}(z) \neq 0$. Let the number of $\operatorname{Re}^{i\varphi}$ -points of $f(z)$ in D be $n(D, \operatorname{Re}^{i\varphi})$. If $f(z)$ satisfies

$$\frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} n(D, \operatorname{Re}^{i\varphi}) d\varphi \leq p,$$

for any $R > 0$, it is said to be **circumferentially mean p -valent** in D . If $f(z)$ satisfies

$$\int_0^R \int_0^{2\pi} n(D, \operatorname{Re}^{i\varphi}) R dR d\varphi \leq p\pi R^2,$$

it is said to be **areally mean p -valent** in D . If $f(z)^q$ with $q > 1$ is areally mean p -valent in D , then $f(z)$ is areally mean p/q -valent in D . For

$f(z) = (1 + a_1 z + a_2 z^2 + \dots)/z^\lambda$ holomorphic and areally mean λ -valent in $0 < |z| \leq 1$, the following area theorem holds:

$$\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (n-1) |a_n|^2 \leq \lambda.$$

Let E be a set containing at least three points. If $f(z)$ in D attains every value of E at most p times and a certain value of E exactly p times (it may attain values outside E more than p times), then $f(z)$ is said to be **quasi- p -valent** in D . If $w = f(z)$ is p -valent in D and $g(w)$ is quasi- q -valent in $f(D)$, then $g(f(z))$ is at most quasi- pq -valent in D .

The first success in obtaining sharp inequalities for multivalent functions was attained by Hayman. In his work, an essential role was played by the method of 'symmetrization'. For instance, he obtained the following result. If $f(z) = z^p + a_{p+1} z^{p+1} + \dots$ is holomorphic and circumferentially mean p -valent in $|z| < 1$, then $|a_{p+1}| \leq 2p$, and for $|z| = r$, $0 < r < 1$,

$$\frac{r^p}{(1+r)^{2p}} \leq |f(z)| \leq \frac{r^p}{(1-r)^{2p}},$$

$$|f'(z)| \leq \frac{p(1+r)}{r(1-r)} |f(z)| \leq \frac{pr^{p-1}(1+r)}{(1-r)^{2p+1}}.$$

References

- [1] L. Bieberbach, Über die Koeffizienten derjenigen Potenzreihen, welche eine schlichte Abbildung des Einheitskreises vermitteln, S.-B. Preuss., Akad. Wiss., (1916), 940–955.
- [2] K. Löwner, Untersuchungen über schlichte konforme Abbildungen des Einheitskreises I, Math. Ann., 89 (1923), 103–121.
- [3] P. R. Garabedian and M. Schiffer, A proof of the Bieberbach conjecture for the fourth coefficient, J. Rational Mech. Anal., 4 (1955), 427–465.
- [4] M. Ozawa, On the Bieberbach conjecture for the sixth coefficient, Kôdai Math. Sem. Rep., 21 (1969), 97–128.
- [5] R. N. Pederson, A proof of the Bieberbach conjecture for the sixth coefficient, Arch. Rational Mech. Anal., 31 (1968–69), 331–351.
- [6] R. N. Pederson and M. Schiffer, A proof of the Bieberbach conjecture for the fifth coefficient, Arch. Rational Mech. Anal., 45 (1972), 161–193.
- [7] W. K. Hayman, The asymptotic behavior of p -valent functions, Proc. London Math. Soc., (3) 5 (1955), 257–284.
- [8] A. C. Schaeffer and D. C. Spencer, Coefficient regions for schlicht functions, Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ., 35 (1950).
- [9] G. M. Golusin, Geometric theory of functions of a complex variable, Amer. Math. Soc.

Transl. of Math. Monographs, 26 (1969).

(Original in Russian, 1952.)

[10] W. K. Hayman, Multivalent functions, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1958.

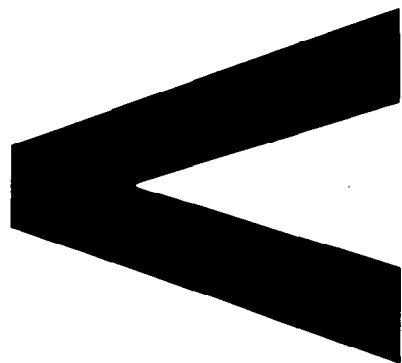
[11] J. A. Jenkins, Univalent functions and conformal mapping, Springer, second edition, 1965.

[12] L. V. Ahlfors, Conformal invariants: Topics in geometric function theory, McGraw-Hill, 1973.

[13] C. Pommerenke, Univalent functions (with a chapter on quadratic differentials by G. Jensen), Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1975.

[14] G. Schober, Univalent functions—Selected topics, Lecture notes in math. 478, Springer, 1975.

[15] P. L. Duren, Coefficients of univalent functions, Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 83 (1977), 891–911.



439 (III.19) Valuations

A. Introduction

There are two related kinds of valuations, additive (\rightarrow Section B) and multiplicative (\rightarrow Section C). The notion of valuations, originally defined on (commutative) \dagger fields, has been extended to more general cases (\rightarrow Section K); however, we first consider the case of fields.

B. Additive Valuations

In this article, we mean by an **ordered additive group** a **totally ordered additive group**, namely, a commutative group whose operation is addition, which is a \dagger totally ordered set satisfying the condition that $a \geq b$ and $c \geq d$ imply $a + c \geq b + d$ and $-a \leq -b$. Suppose that we are given a field K , an ordered additive group G , and an element ∞ defined to be greater than any element of G . Then a mapping $v: K \rightarrow G \cup \{\infty\}$ is called an **additive valuation** (or simply a **valuation**) of the field K if v satisfies the following three conditions: (i) $v(a) = \infty$ if and only if $a = 0$; (ii) $v(ab) = v(a) + v(b)$ for all $a, b \neq 0$; and (iii) $v(a + b) \geq \min\{v(a), v(b)\}$.

The set $\{v(a) | a \in K - \{0\}\}$ is a submodule of G and is called the **value group** of v , while the set $R_v = \{a \in K | v(a) \geq 0\}$ is a subring of K and is called the **valuation ring** of v . The ring R_v has only one \dagger maximal ideal $\{a | v(a) > 0\}$, called the **valuation ideal** of v (or of R_v), and the \dagger residue class field of R_v modulo the maximal ideal is called the **residue class field** of the valuation v . We have $v(a) \leq v(b)$ if and only if $aR_v \supset bR_v$. Two valuations v and v' of the field K are said to be **equivalent** when $v(a) \leq v(b)$ if and only if $v'(a) \leq v'(b)$; hence v and v' are equivalent if and only if $R_v = R_{v'}$. The **rank** of v is defined to be the \dagger Krull dimension of the valuation ring R_v , and the **rational rank** of v to be the maximum (or supremum) of the numbers of linearly independent elements in the value group. An **extension** (or **prolongation**) of v in a field K' containing K is a valuation v' of K' whose restriction on K is v ; such an extension exists for any given v and K' . Sometimes a valuation of rank 1 is called a **special valuation** (or **exponential valuation**), and a valuation of a general rank is called a **generalized valuation**. On the other hand, if k is a subfield of K such that $v(a) = 0$ for every nonzero element a of k , then v is called a **valuation over the subfield k** .

C. Multiplicative Valuations

A **multiplicative valuation** (or **valuation**) of a field K is a mapping $w: K \rightarrow \Gamma \cup \{0\}$ that satis-

fies the following three conditions, where Γ is the multiplicative group of positive real numbers: (i) $w(a) = 0$ if and only if $a = 0$; (ii) $w(ab) = w(a)w(b)$; and (iii) $w(a + b) \leq C(w(a) + w(b))$, where C is a constant (independent of the choice of a and b , but dependent on the choice of w).

The **value group** of w is defined to be $\{w(a) | a \in K - \{0\}\}$. Extensions of a valuation and equivalence of valuations are defined as in the case of additive valuations. Thus w' is equivalent to w if and only if there is a positive r such that for all $a \in K$, $w(a) = w'(a)^r$. In each equivalence class of valuations of a field, there exists a valuation for which the constant C in condition (iii) can be taken to be 1. A valuation w is said to be a **valuation over a subfield k** if $w(a) = 1$ for any nonzero element a of k .

We call w an **Archimedean valuation** if for any elements $a, b \in K$, $a \neq 0$, there exists a natural number n such that $w(na) > w(b)$; otherwise, w is said to be a **non-Archimedean valuation**. If w is an Archimedean valuation of a field K , then there is an injection σ from K into the complex number field \mathbb{C} such that w is equivalent to the valuation w' defined by $w'(a) = |\sigma(a)|$. If w is a non-Archimedean valuation of a field K , then $w(a + b) \leq \max\{w(a), w(b)\}$. Hence in this case we get an additive valuation v of K when we define $v(a) = -\log w(a)$ ($a \in K$), and either v is of rank 1 or $v(K) = \{1, 0\}$ (in the latter case, v is called **trivial**). Conversely, every additive valuation of rank 1 of K is equivalent to an additive valuation obtained in this way from a non-Archimedean valuation. (This is why an additive valuation of rank 1 is called an exponential valuation.) Therefore a non-Archimedean valuation determines a valuation ring and valuation ideal in a natural manner. Thus we can identify a non-Archimedean valuation with an additive valuation of rank 1.

D. Topology Defined by a Valuation

Let w be a multiplicative valuation of a field K . When the \dagger distance between two elements a, b of K is defined by $w(a - b)$, K becomes a \dagger topological field. (Although this distance may not make K into a \dagger metric space, there exists a valuation w' equivalent to the valuation w such that K becomes a metric space with respect to the distance $w'(a - b)$ between a and b ($a, b \in K$)). If K is \dagger complete under the topology, then we say that K is **complete** with respect to w and w is **complete** on K . On the other hand, suppose that w' is an extension of w in a field K' containing K . If w' is complete and K is \dagger dense in K' under the topology defined by w' , then we say that the valuation w' is a **completion** of w and that the field K' is a

completion of K with respect to w . For any w , a completion exists and is unique up to isomorphism. When w is a non-Archimedean valuation, the valuation ring of the completion of w is called the **completion** of the valuation ring of w .

When v is an additive valuation of a field K , we can introduce a topology on K by taking the set of all nonzero ideals of the valuation ring R_v of v as a base for the neighborhood system of zero. Important cases are given by valuations of rank 1, which are the same as those given by non-Archimedean valuations.

If w is a complete non-Archimedean valuation of a field K , then the valuation ring R_w of w is a Hensel ring, which implies that if K' is a finite algebraic extension of K such that $[K':K] = n$, then w is uniquely extendable to a valuation w' of K' and $w'(a)^n = w(N(a))$, where N is the norm $N_{K'/K}$.

E. Discrete Valuations

For a non-Archimedean valuation (or an additive valuation of rank 1) w , if the valuation ideal of w is a nonzero principal ideal generated by an element p , then we say that p is a **prime element** for w , w is a **discrete valuation**, and the valuation ring for w is a **discrete valuation ring**. The condition on the valuation ideal of w holds if and only if the value group of w is a discrete subgroup of the (multiplicative) group Γ of positive real numbers: In the terminology of additive valuations, a valuation w is discrete if and only if it is equivalent to a valuation w' whose value group is the additive group of integers. Such a valuation w' is called a **normalized valuation** (or **normal valuation**). However, we usually mean normalization of a discrete non-Archimedean valuation as in Section H. Sometimes an additive valuation whose value group is isomorphic to the direct sum of a finite number of copies of \mathbb{Z} (the additive group of integers) with a natural lexicographic order is called a discrete valuation. Concerning a complete discrete valuation w , it is known that if the valuation ring of w contains a field, then it is isomorphic to the ring of formal power series in one variable over a field (for other cases \rightarrow 449 Witt Vectors A).

F. Examples

(1) **Trivial valuations** of a field K are the additive valuation v of K such that $v(a) = 0$ for all $a \in K - \{0\}$ and the multiplicative valuation w of K such that $w(a) = 1$ for all $a \in K - \{0\}$.

(2) If K is isomorphic to a subfield of the complex number field, then we get an Archi-

medean valuation using the absolute value, and as stated in Section C, every Archimedean valuation of K is equivalent to a valuation obtained in this way.

(3) Let \mathfrak{p} be a prime ideal of a Dedekind domain R , $\pi \in \mathfrak{p}$ be such that $\pi \notin \mathfrak{p}^2$, and K be the field of quotients of R . Then each nonzero element α of K can be expressed in the form $\pi^r ab^{-1}$ ($r \in \mathbb{Z}$; $a, b \in R$; $a, b \notin \mathfrak{p}$), where r , the **degree** of α with respect to \mathfrak{p} , is uniquely determined by α . Hence, letting c be a constant greater than 1, we obtain a non-Archimedean valuation w defined by $w(\alpha) = c^{-r}$. This valuation w is called a **\mathfrak{p} -adic valuation**. We also get an additive valuation v defined by $v(\alpha) = r$, called a **\mathfrak{p} -adic exponential valuation**. The completion $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ of K with respect to v is called the **\mathfrak{p} -adic extension** of K . If K is a finite algebraic number field, the $K_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is called a **\mathfrak{p} -adic number field**. If \mathfrak{p} is generated by an element p , then “ \mathfrak{p} -adic” is replaced by “ p -adic.” For instance, given a rational prime number p , we have a **p -adic valuation** of the rational number field \mathbb{Q} , and we obtain the p -adic extension \mathbb{Q}_p of \mathbb{Q} , which is called the **p -adic number field**. Every nonzero element α of \mathbb{Q}_p can be written as a uniquely determined expansion $\sum_{n=r}^{\infty} a_n p^n$ ($a_r \neq 0, r \in \mathbb{Z}, a_n \in \mathbb{Z}, 0 \leq a_n < p$). Then we obtain a valuation v of \mathbb{Q}_p defined by $v(\alpha) = r$. This valuation v is a discrete additive valuation, and \mathbb{Q}_p is complete with respect to v . The valuation ring of v is usually denoted by \mathbb{Z}_p , which is called the **ring of p -adic integers**. Each element of \mathbb{Q}_p (\mathbb{Z}_p) is called a **p -adic number** (**p -adic integer**).

(4) Consider the field of power series $k((t))$ in one variable t over a field k . For $0 \neq \alpha \in k((t))$, we define $v(\alpha) = r$ if $\alpha = \sum_{n=r}^{\infty} a_n t^n$ ($a_n \in k, a_r \neq 0$). Then v is a discrete valuation of $k((t))$, and $k((t))$ is complete with respect to this valuation.

(5) Let v be an additive valuation of a field K with the valuation ring R_v and the valuation ideal \mathfrak{m}_v . Let v' be an additive valuation of the field R_v/\mathfrak{m}_v with the valuation ring $R_{v'}$. Then $R'' = \{a \in R_v \mid (a \bmod \mathfrak{m}_v) \in R_{v'}\}$ is a valuation ring of K . A valuation v'' whose valuation ring coincides with R'' is called the **composite** of v and v' .

G. The Approximation Theorem and the Independence Theorem

The **approximation theorem** states: Let w_1, \dots, w_n be mutually nonequivalent and nontrivial multiplicative valuations of a field K . Then for any given n elements a_1, \dots, a_n of K and a positive number ε , there exists an element a of K such that $w_i(a - a_i) < \varepsilon$ ($i = 1, 2, \dots, n$).

From this follows the **independence theorem**: Let e_1, \dots, e_n be real numbers, and let w_i and K be as in the approximation theorem. If $\prod_i w_i(a)^{e_i} = 1$ for all $a \in K - \{0\}$, then $e_1 = \dots = e_n = 0$.

Similar theorems hold for additive valuations. The following independence theorem is basic: Let v_1, \dots, v_n be additive valuations of a field K , R_1, \dots, R_n their valuation rings, and $\mathfrak{m}_1, \dots, \mathfrak{m}_n$ their maximal ideals. Let $D = \bigcap_i R_i$, $\mathfrak{p}_i = \mathfrak{m}_i \cap D$, and consider the rings of quotients $D_{\mathfrak{p}_i}$. Then $D_{\mathfrak{p}_i} = R_i$. If $R_i \not\subseteq R_j$ (for $i \neq j$), then D has exactly n maximal ideals $\mathfrak{p}_1, \dots, \mathfrak{p}_n$.

H. Prime Divisors

Let K be an \dagger algebraic number field (algebraic function field of one variable over a field k). An equivalence class of nontrivial multiplicative valuations (over k) is called a **prime divisor** (**prime spot**) of K .

If K is an algebraic number field of degree n , there are exactly n mutually distinct injections $\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_n$ of K into the complex number field \mathbb{C} . We may assume that $\sigma_i(K)$ is contained in the real number field if and only if $i \leq r_1$ and $\sigma_{n-i+1}(a)$ and $\sigma_{r_1+i}(a)$ are conjugate complex numbers ($n - r_1 \geq i > 0$, $a \in K$). For $i \leq r_1$, let $v_i(a) = |\sigma_i(a)|$, and for $1 \leq i \leq (n - r_1)/2$, let $v_{r_1+i}(a) = |\sigma_{r_1+i}(a)|^2$. Then $v_1, \dots, v_{r_1+r_2}$ ($r_2 = (n - r_1)/2$) is a maximal set of mutually non-equivalent Archimedean valuations of K . Equivalence classes of v_1, \dots, v_{r_1} are called **real (infinite) prime divisors**, and those of $v_{r_1+1}, \dots, v_{r_1+r_2}$ are called **imaginary (infinite) prime divisors**; all of them are called **infinite prime divisors**. An equivalence class of non-Archimedean valuations of K is called a **finite prime divisor**.

An Archimedean valuation of K is said to be **normal** if it is one of the valuations v_i . If v is non-Archimedean, then v is a p -adic valuation, where \mathfrak{p} is a prime ideal of the principal order \mathfrak{o} of K (\rightarrow Section F, example (3)). Hence if a is an element of K , there exists a constant c ($c > 1$) such that $v(a) = c^{-r}$, where r is the degree of a with respect to \mathfrak{p} . In particular, if c is the norm of \mathfrak{p} (i.e., c is the cardinality of the set $\mathfrak{o}/\mathfrak{p}$), then the valuation v is called **normal**. Any finite prime divisor is represented by a normal valuation. Then we have the **product formula** $\prod_w w(a) = 1$ for all $a \in K - \{0\}$, where w ranges over all normal valuations of K .

For a function field, a **normal valuation** is defined similarly, using e^f instead of the norm of \mathfrak{p} , where e is a fixed real number greater than 1 and f is the degree of the residue class field of the valuation over k . In this case we also have the product formula.

I. Extending Valuations to an Algebraic Extension of Finite Degree

Assume that a field K' is a finite algebraic extension of a field K . Let v be an additive valuation of K and v' be an extension of v to K' . We denote the valuation rings, valuation ideals, and value groups of v and v' by $R_v, R_{v'}$, $\mathfrak{m}_v, \mathfrak{m}_{v'}$, and G, G' , respectively. Then the degree of the extension $f_{v'} = [R_{v'}/\mathfrak{m}_{v'} : R_v/\mathfrak{m}_v]$ is called the **degree** of v' over v . The group index $e_{v'} = [G' : G]$ is called the **ramification index** of v' over v . If v' ranges over all extensions of v in K' , then the sum $\sum f_{v'} e_{v'}$ is not greater than $[K' : K]$ and the equality holds when v is a discrete valuation and either K' is \dagger separable over K or v is complete.

J. Places

Let k, K , and L be fields, and suppose that $k \subset K$. Let f be a mapping of K onto $L \cup \{\infty\}$ such that $f(ab) = f(a)f(b)$ and $f(a+b) = f(a) + f(b)$, whenever the right member is meaningful, and such that the restriction of f to k is an injection. Here ∞ is an element adjoined to L and satisfying $\infty + a = a + \infty = \infty$, $\infty a = a\infty = \infty$ (for any nonzero element a of K), $1/\infty = 0$, and $1/0 = \infty$. Then f is called a **place** of K over k . In this case $R = \{x \in K \mid f(x) \neq \infty\}$ is a valuation ring of K containing k . Let \mathfrak{m} be the maximal ideal of R . Then f can be identified with the mapping $g: K \rightarrow R/\mathfrak{m} \cup \{\infty\}$ defined as follows: If $a \in R$, then $g(a) = (a \bmod \mathfrak{m})$; otherwise, $g(a) = \infty$. Places of K over k can be classified in a natural way, and there exists a one-to-one correspondence between the set of classes of places of K over k and the set of equivalence classes of additive valuations over k . When K is an \dagger algebraic function field, we usually consider the case where k is the \dagger ground field. Then if $a_1, \dots, a_n \in R$, $(a_1, \dots, a_n) \rightarrow (g(a_1), \dots, g(a_n))$ gives a \dagger specialization of points over k . Conversely, if $a_i, b_j \in K$ are such that $(a_1, \dots, a_n) \rightarrow (b_1, \dots, b_n)$ is a specialization over k , then there is a place f of K over k such that (b_1, \dots, b_n) is isomorphic to $(f(a_1), \dots, f(a_n))$ (usually there are infinitely many such f 's).

K. Pseudovaluations

A **pseudovaluation** φ of a ring A (not necessarily commutative) is a mapping of A into the set of nonnegative real numbers satisfying the following four conditions: (i) $\varphi(a) = 0$ if and only if $a = 0$; (ii) $\varphi(ab) \leq \varphi(a)\varphi(b)$; (iii) $\varphi(a+b) \leq \varphi(a) + \varphi(b)$; and (iv) $\varphi(-a) = \varphi(a)$. These conditions are weaker than those for multiplicative valuations, but with them a topology

can be introduced into A as in Section D, with respect to which A becomes a topological ring.

L. History

The theory of valuations was originated by K. Hensel when he introduced p -adic numbers and applied them to number theory [1]. J. Kürschák (*J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 142 (1913)) first treated the theory of multiplicative valuations axiomatically; it was then developed remarkably by A. Ostrowski (*Acta Math.*, 41 (1918)). However, in their theory condition (iii) (\rightarrow Section C) was given only in the case $C = 1$, thus excluding the normal valuation of an imaginary prime divisor in an algebraic number field. A valuation with general C was introduced by E. Artin [3]. The theory of additive valuations was originated by W. Krull (*J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 167 (1932)), although the concept of exponential valuations existed before. The theory of valuations is used to simplify \dagger class field theory and the theory of algebraic function fields in one variable. For these purposes, the notion of multiplicative valuations is sufficient (\rightarrow 9 Algebraic Curves; 59 Class Field Theory). The idea is also used in the theory of normal rings and in algebraic geometry, for both of which the concept of additive valuations is also necessary. Pseudovaluations were used by M. Deuring (*Erg. Math.*, Springer, 1935) in the arithmetic of algebras.

References

- [1] K. Hensel, *Theorie der algebraischen Zahlen*, Teubner, 1908.
 - [2] O. F. G. Schilling, *The theory of valuations*, Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys, 1950.
 - [3] E. Artin, *Algebraic numbers and algebraic functions*, Gordon & Breach, 1967.
 - [4] O. Zariski and P. Samuel, *Commutative algebra II*, Van Nostrand, 1960.
- Also \rightarrow references to 67 Commutative Rings.

440 (X.35) Variational Inequalities

A. Introduction

Variational inequalities arise when we consider extremal problems of functionals under **unilateral constraints**. Some problems in physics and engineering are studied by formulating them as elliptic, parabolic, and hyperbolic variational inequalities [1–8].

B. Stationary Variational Inequality

Let D be a bounded domain in m -dimensional Euclidean space and $f \in L_2(D)$ be a given real-valued function. Consider the variational problem of minimizing the following functional J with the argument function v :

$$J[v] = \int_D |\text{grad } v|^2 dx - 2 \int_D f v dx.$$

Here, we suppose the set of admissible functions to be the closed convex subset

$$K = \{v \in H_0^1(D) \mid v \leq 0 \text{ a.e. in } D\}$$

of the Hilbert space $H_0^1(D)$ (\rightarrow 168 Function Spaces). It can be shown by choosing a minimizing sequence that there exists a minimum value of J which is realized by a unique $u \in K$. Since the stationary function u belongs to $H_0^1(D)$, it can be shown that the boundary condition $u|_{\partial D} = 0$ is satisfied in the sense that the \dagger trace $\gamma_0 u \in H^{1/2}(\partial D)$ (\rightarrow 224 Interpolation of Operators) of u on ∂D vanishes a.e. on ∂D . In view of the fact that $J[u] \leq J[v]$ is valid for any $v \in K$, it can be verified that the **stationary variational inequality**

$$\left. \begin{aligned} -\Delta u - f &\leq 0 \\ u &\leq 0 \\ (-\Delta u - f) \cdot u &= 0 \end{aligned} \right\} \quad (1)$$

is satisfied in D in the sense of differentiation of distributions (\rightarrow 125 Distributions and Hyperfunctions). The problem (1) is a **Dirichlet problem with obstacle**. Moreover, we can prove the regularity of $u \in H^2(D)$ under an assumption of suitable smoothness for ∂D by establishing the boundedness of the solutions u_ε in $H^2(D)$ of the **penalized problems** associated with (1):

$$-\Delta u_\varepsilon + \frac{1}{\varepsilon} u_\varepsilon^+ = f \quad (\varepsilon > 0),$$

$$u_\varepsilon|_{\partial D} = 0.$$

Here we note that the u_ε are the stationary functions of the ordinary variational problems of minimization in $H_0^1(D)$ of the functionals

$$J_\varepsilon[v] = \int_D |\text{grad } v|^2 dx - 2 \int_D f v dx + \frac{1}{\varepsilon} \int_D |v^+|^2 dx$$

with the **penalty term** (the third term of the right-hand side of the equality above). We have thus found that the stationary variational inequality (1) is the Euler equation of a conditional problem of variation (\rightarrow 46 Calculus of Variations).

C. Variational Inequality of Evolution

Let $\psi \in H^1(D)$ be a given function on D such that $\psi|_{\partial D} \geq 0$ and $\Delta \psi \in L_2(D)$. The **variational**

inequality of evolution

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} - \Delta u \leq 0,$$

$$u \leq \psi,$$

$$\left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} - \Delta u \right) \cdot (u - \psi) = 0 \quad (t > 0, x \in D),$$

$$u(0, x) = a(x) \quad (x \in D),$$

$$u(t, x)|_{\partial D} = 0 \quad (t > 0)$$

can be formulated as an abstract Cauchy problem (\rightarrow 286 Nonlinear Functional Analysis X)

$$\frac{du}{dt} \in Au \quad (t > 0),$$

$$u(+0) = a$$

in a Hilbert space with a multivalued operator $A = -\partial\varphi$, where $\partial\varphi$ is the subdifferential of the following lower semicontinuous proper convex function on the Hilbert space $L_2(D)$:

$$\varphi(v) = \begin{cases} \frac{1}{2} \int_D |\text{grad } v|^2 dx & \text{if } v \in H_0^1(D) \text{ and } v \leq \psi, \\ +\infty & \text{otherwise.} \end{cases}$$

Thus the solution u is given by the vector-valued function

$$u(t) = e^{tA} a.$$

Here e^{tA} is the \dagger nonlinear semigroup generated by A (\rightarrow 88 Convex Analysis, 378 Semigroups of Operators and Evolution Equations).

D. Optimal Stopping Time Problem and Variational Inequalities

Let $\{X_t\}_{t \geq 0}$ be an m -dimensional Brownian motion (\rightarrow 45 Brownian Motion) and consider the problem of finding a \dagger stopping time σ that minimizes

$$J_x[\sigma] = E_x \left(\int_0^\sigma f(X_t) dt \right) \quad (x \in \mathbf{R}^m)$$

under the restriction that $0 \leq \sigma \leq \sigma_{\partial D}$, where $\sigma_{\partial D}$ is the \dagger hitting time for the boundary ∂D . Let us define

$$u(x) = \min_{\sigma} J_x[\sigma].$$

Then the \dagger principle of optimality in dynamic programming gives the stationary variational inequality (1) with Δ replaced by $\frac{1}{2}\Delta$, and we can show by the \dagger Dynkin formula that an optimal stopping time $\hat{\sigma}$ is the hitting time for the set $\{x \in \bar{\Omega} | u(x) = 0\}$ (\rightarrow 127 Dynamic Programming). We can systematically discuss problems in mathematical programming and

operations research by introducing quasivariational inequalities, which are slight generalizations of variational inequalities (\rightarrow 227 Inventory Control, 408 Stochastic Programming). The above-mentioned facts are applicable to general \dagger diffusion processes described by \dagger stochastic differential equations (\rightarrow 115 Diffusion Processes, 406 Stochastic Differential Equations). We have thus found the relation

free boundary problem \leftrightarrow variational inequality
 $\swarrow \quad \searrow$
 optimal stopping time problem

(\rightarrow 405 Stochastic Control and Stochastic Filtering).

E. Numerical Solution of Variational Inequalities

Since the solution u of the variational inequality (1) is the stationary function for the variational problem, we can apply to the evaluation of the function u numerical methods based on the direct method of the calculus of variations (\rightarrow 300 Numerical Methods). The \dagger finite element method, which can be regarded as a type of Ritz-Galerkin method, is extensively employed to calculate numerical solutions. In view of the unilateral constraint $u \leq 0$, iteration methods, such as the Gauss-Seidel iteration method, are used with modifications. An algorithm of relaxation with projection is proposed in [3] (\rightarrow 304 Numerical Solution of Partial Differential Equations).

References

- [1] H. Brézis, Problèmes unilatéraux, J. Math. Pures Appl., 51 (1972), 1–168.
- [2] V. Barbu, Nonlinear semigroups and differential equations in Banach spaces, Noordhoff, 1976.
- [3] J.-L. Lions, Sur quelques questions d'analyse, de mécanique et de contrôle optimal, Les Presses de l'Université de Montréal, 1976.
- [4] J.-L. Lions and G. Stampacchia, Variational inequalities, Comm. Pure Appl. Math., 20 (1967), 493–519.
- [5] C. Baiocchi, Su un problema di frontiera libera connesso a questioni di idraulica, Ann. Mat. Pura Appl. 92 (1972), 107–127.
- [6] G. Duvaut and J.-L. Lions, Les inéquations en mécanique et en physique, Dunod, 1972; English translation, Springer, 1975.
- [7] A. Friedman and D. Kinderlehrer, A one phase Stefan problem, Indiana Univ. Math. J., 24 (1975), 1005–1035.
- [8] R. Glowinski, J.-L. Lions, and R. Trémo-lières, Analyse numérique des inéquations variationnelles I, II, Dunod, 1976; English translation, North-Holland, 1981.

441 (XX.3) Variational Principles

A. General Remarks

Among the principles that appear in physics are those expressed not in terms of differential forms but in terms of variational forms. These principles, describing the conditions under which certain quantities attain extremal values, are generally called **variational principles**. Besides Hamilton's principle in classical mechanics (\rightarrow Section B) and Fermat's principle in geometric optics (\rightarrow Section C), examples are found in \dagger electromagnetism, \dagger relativity theory, \dagger quantum mechanics, \dagger field theory, etc. Independence of the choice of coordinate system is an important characteristic of variational principles. Originally these principles had theological and metaphysical connotations, but a variational principle is now regarded simply as a postulate that precedes a theory and furnishes its foundation. Thus a variational principle is considered to be the supreme form of a law of physics.

B. Mechanics

In 1744 P. L. Maupertuis published an almost theological thesis, dealing with the **principle of least action**. This was the beginning of the search for a single, universal principle of mechanics, contributions to which were made successively by L. Euler, C. F. Gauss, W. R. Hamilton, H. R. Hertz, and others.

Let $\{q_r\}$ be the \dagger generalized coordinates of a system of particles, and consider the integral of a function $L(q_r, \dot{q}_r, t)$ taken from time t_0 to t_1 . If we compare the values of the integral taken along any arbitrary path starting from a fixed point P_0 in the coordinate space at time t_0 and arriving at another fixed point P_1 at time t_1 , then the actual motion $q_r(t)$ (which obeys the laws of mechanics) is given by the condition that the integral is an \dagger extremum (\dagger stationary value), that is, $\delta \int_{t_0}^{t_1} L dt = 0$, provided that the function L is properly chosen. This is **Hamilton's principle**, and L is the \dagger Lagrangian function. In \dagger Newtonian mechanics, the \dagger kinetic energy T of a system of particles is expressed as a \dagger quadratic form in \dot{q}_r . Furthermore, if the forces acting on the particles can be given by $-\text{grad } V$, where the potential V does not depend explicitly on \dot{q}_r , we can choose $L = T - V$. Also, for a charged particle in \dagger special relativity, we can take $L = -m_0 c^2 (1 - v^2/c^2)^{1/2} - e\phi + e(\mathbf{v} \cdot \mathbf{A})$, where m_0 is the rest mass of the particle, e is the charge, \mathbf{v} is the velocity (with v its magnitude), c is the speed of light in

vacuum, and ϕ and \mathbf{A} are the scalar and vector potentials of the electromagnetic field, respectively.

In general relativity theory, the motion of a particle can be derived from the variational principle $\delta \int ds = 0$ (ds is the Riemannian line element). Hence, geometrically, the particle moves along a \dagger geodesic curve in 4-dimensional space-time.

C. Geometric Optics

The path of a light ray between two points P_0 and P_1 (subject to reflection and refraction) is such that the time of transit along the path among all neighboring virtual paths is an extremum (stationary value). This is called **Fermat's principle**. If the index of refraction is n , Fermat's principle can be expressed as $\delta \int_{P_0}^{P_1} n ds = 0$ (ds is the Euclidean line element). The laws of reflection and refraction of light, as well as the law of rectilinear propagation of light in homogeneous media, can be derived from this principle.

D. Field Theory

Not only the equations of motion of a system of particles, but also various field equations (\dagger Maxwell's equations of the electromagnetic field, \dagger Dirac's equation of the electron field, the meson field equation, the gravitational field equation, etc.) can be derived from variational principles in terms of appropriate Lagrangian functions. In \dagger field theory the essential virtue of the variational principle appears in the fact that the properties of various possible fields as well as conservation laws can be systematically discussed by assuming relativistic invariance and gauge invariance of the Lagrangian functions adopted. In particular, for an electromagnetic field in vacuum, the Lagrangian function density is $L = (\mathbf{H}^2 - \mathbf{E}^2)/2$, and the integration is carried out over a certain 4-dimensional domain.

E. Quantum Mechanics

If H is the \dagger Hamiltonian operator for any quantum-mechanical system, the eigenfunction ψ can be determined by the variational principle

$$\delta \int \bar{\psi} H \psi d\tau = 0, \quad \text{with} \quad \int \bar{\psi} \psi d\tau = 1,$$

where $\bar{\psi}$ is the complex conjugate of ψ and $d\tau$ is the volume element. Based on this variational principle, the \dagger direct method of the calculus of variations is often employed for

an approximate numerical calculation of the energy eigenvalues and eigenfunctions. In particular, by restricting the functional form of ψ to the product of one-body wave functions, we can obtain Hartree's equation. A further suitable symmetrization of ψ leads to Fock's equation.

F. Statistical Mechanics

Let φ be a statistical-mechanical state of a system, and let $S(\varphi)$ and $E(\varphi)$ be the state's entropy and energy (mean entropy and mean energy for an infinitely extended system); T is the thermodynamical temperature, and $f(\varphi) = E(\varphi) - TS(\varphi)$ is the free energy. Then the equilibrium state for $T \geq 0$ is determined as the state φ that gives the minimum value of $f(\varphi)$ (maximum for $T < 0$).

References

- [1] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics*, Interscience, I, 1953; II, 1962.
 - [2] B. L. Moiseiwitsch, *Variational principles*, Interscience, 1966.
 - [3] R. Weinstock, *Calculus of variations, with applications to physics and engineering*, McGraw-Hill, 1952.
- Also \rightarrow references to 46 Calculus of Variations.

442 (VI.12) Vectors

A. Definitions

The **vector** concept originated in physics from such well-known notions as velocity, acceleration, and force. These physical quantities are supplied with length and direction; they can be added or multiplied by scalars. In the Euclidean space E^n (or, in general, an \dagger affine space), a vector \mathbf{a} is represented by an **oriented segment** \overrightarrow{pq} . Two oriented segments $\overrightarrow{p_1q_1}$ and $\overrightarrow{p_2q_2}$ are considered to represent the same vector \mathbf{a} if and only if the following two conditions are satisfied: (1) The four points p_1, q_1, p_2, q_2 lie in the same plane π . (2) p_1q_1 / p_2q_2 and p_1q_2 / q_1q_2 . Hence a vector in E^n is an equivalence class of oriented segments \overrightarrow{pq} , where the equivalence relation $\overrightarrow{p_1q_1} \sim \overrightarrow{p_2q_2}$ is defined by the two conditions just given. Hereafter, we denote the vector by $[\overrightarrow{pq}]$, or simply \overrightarrow{pq} . The points p and q are called the **initial point** and **terminal point** of the vector \overrightarrow{pq} .

Given a vector $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{pq}$ and a real number λ , we define the **scalar multiple** $\lambda\mathbf{a}$ as the vector \overrightarrow{pr} , where r is the point on the straight line containing both p and q such that the ratio $[\overrightarrow{pr} : \overrightarrow{pq}]$ is equal to λ (if $p = q$, then we put $r = p$). The operation $(\lambda, \mathbf{a}) \rightarrow \lambda\mathbf{a}$ is called **scalar multiplication**. Given two vectors $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{pq}$ and $\mathbf{b} = \overrightarrow{qr}$, the vector $\mathbf{c} = \overrightarrow{pr}$ is called the **sum** of \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b} and is denoted by $\mathbf{c} = \mathbf{a} + \mathbf{b}$. The vector $\overrightarrow{pp} = \mathbf{0}$ is called the **zero vector**. If $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{pq}$, we put $-\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{qp}$.

Scalar multiplication and addition of vectors satisfy the following seven conditions: (1) $\mathbf{a} + \mathbf{b} = \mathbf{b} + \mathbf{a}$ (commutative law); (2) $\mathbf{a} + (\mathbf{b} + \mathbf{c}) = (\mathbf{a} + \mathbf{b}) + \mathbf{c}$ (associative law); (3) $\mathbf{a} + \mathbf{0} = \mathbf{a}$; (4) for each \mathbf{a} there is $-\mathbf{a}$ such that $\mathbf{a} + (-\mathbf{a}) = \mathbf{0}$; (5) $\lambda(\mathbf{a} + \mathbf{b}) = \lambda\mathbf{a} + \lambda\mathbf{b}$, $(\lambda + \mu)\mathbf{a} = \lambda\mathbf{a} + \mu\mathbf{a}$ (distributive laws); (6) $\lambda(\mu\mathbf{a}) = (\lambda\mu)\mathbf{a}$ (associative law for scalar multiplication); and (7) $1\mathbf{a} = \mathbf{a}$. Hence the set V of all vectors in E^n forms a \dagger real linear space. Sometimes, a set satisfying (1)–(7), that is, by definition, a linear space, is called a vector space, and its elements are called vectors.

The pair consisting of a vector \overrightarrow{pq} and a specific initial point p of \overrightarrow{pq} is sometimes called a **fixed vector**. An illustration of this is given by the force vector with its initial point being where the force is applied. By contrast, a vector \overrightarrow{pq} is sometimes called a **free vector**. If we fix the origin o in E^n , then for any point p in E^n , the vector \overrightarrow{op} is called the **position vector** of p .

If two vectors $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{op}$ and $\mathbf{b} = \overrightarrow{oq}$ are \dagger linearly dependent, they are sometimes said to be **collinear**. If three vectors $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{op}$, $\mathbf{b} = \overrightarrow{oq}$, and $\mathbf{c} = \overrightarrow{or}$ are linearly dependent, they are sometimes said to be **coplanar**.

If a set of vectors $\mathbf{e}_1, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n$ forms a \dagger basis of a vector space V , then the vectors \mathbf{e}_i are called **fundamental vectors** in V . Each vector $\mathbf{a} \in V$ is uniquely expressed as $\mathbf{a} = \sum \alpha_i \mathbf{e}_i$ ($\alpha_i \in \mathbb{R}$). We call $(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_n)$ the **components** of the vector \mathbf{a} with respect to the fundamental vectors $\mathbf{e}_1, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n$.

B. Inner Product

In the Euclidean space E^n , the length of the line segment \overrightarrow{pq} is called the **absolute value** (or **magnitude**) of the vector $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{pq}$ and is denoted by $|\mathbf{a}|$. A vector of length one is called a **unit vector**. For two vectors $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{op}$ and $\mathbf{b} = \overrightarrow{oq}$, the value $(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = |\mathbf{a}||\mathbf{b}|\cos\theta$ is called the **inner product** (or **scalar product**) of \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b} , where θ is the angle $\angle poq$. Instead of (\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) , the notations $\mathbf{a} \cdot \mathbf{b}$, or \mathbf{ab} are also used. If neither vector \mathbf{a} nor vector \mathbf{b} is equal to $\mathbf{0}$, then $(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}) = 0$ implies $\angle poq = \pi/2$, that is, the orthogonality of the two vectors \overrightarrow{op} and \overrightarrow{oq} . If we take an

*orthonormal basis $(\mathbf{e}_1, \dots, \mathbf{e}_n)$ in E^n (i.e., a set of fundamental vectors with $|\mathbf{e}_i| = 1$, $(\mathbf{e}_i, \mathbf{e}_j) = 0$ ($i \neq j$)), the inner product of vectors $\mathbf{a} = \sum \alpha_i \mathbf{e}_i$, $\mathbf{b} = \sum \beta_i \mathbf{e}_i$ is equal to $\sum_{i=1}^n \alpha_i \beta_i$. The inner product has the following three properties (i) $(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x}) \geq 0$ and is zero if and only if $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{0}$; (ii) $(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) = (\mathbf{y}, \mathbf{x})$; (iii) $(\mathbf{x}_1 + \mathbf{x}_2, \mathbf{y}) = (\mathbf{x}_1, \mathbf{y}) + (\mathbf{x}_2, \mathbf{y})$, $(\alpha \mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) = \alpha(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y})$ ($\alpha \in \mathbf{R}$). Similar linearity holds for \mathbf{y} .

Generally, an \mathbf{R} -valued *bilinear form (\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{y}) on a linear space V satisfying the previous three conditions is also called an inner product. If a linear space V is equipped with an inner product, the space is called an **inner product space** (\rightarrow 256 Linear Spaces H; 197 Hilbert Spaces). If V is an inner product space, the absolute value $|\mathbf{x}|$ of $\mathbf{x} \in V$ is defined to be $\sqrt{(\mathbf{x}, \mathbf{x})}$.

C. Vector Product

In the 3-dimensional Euclidean space E^3 , we take an orthonormal basis $\mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \mathbf{e}_3$. Let \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b} be vectors in E^3 whose components with respect to $\mathbf{e}_1, \mathbf{e}_2, \mathbf{e}_3$ are $(\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \alpha_3)$, $(\beta_1, \beta_2, \beta_3)$. The vector

$$\begin{vmatrix} \alpha_2 & \alpha_3 \\ \beta_2 & \beta_3 \end{vmatrix} \mathbf{e}_1 + \begin{vmatrix} \alpha_3 & \alpha_1 \\ \beta_3 & \beta_1 \end{vmatrix} \mathbf{e}_2 + \begin{vmatrix} \alpha_1 & \alpha_2 \\ \beta_1 & \beta_2 \end{vmatrix} \mathbf{e}_3,$$

which is symbolically written as

$$\begin{vmatrix} \mathbf{e}_1 & \mathbf{e}_2 & \mathbf{e}_3 \\ \alpha_1 & \alpha_2 & \alpha_3 \\ \beta_1 & \beta_2 & \beta_3 \end{vmatrix},$$

is called the **exterior product** or **vector product** of \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b} and is denoted by $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]$ or $\mathbf{a} \times \mathbf{b}$.

The vector $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]$ is determined uniquely up to its sign by \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b} and is independent of the choice of the orthonormal basis.

Suppose that we have $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{op}$, $\mathbf{b} = \overrightarrow{oq}$. Then $|[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]| = |\mathbf{a}| \cdot |\mathbf{b}| \sin \theta$, where $\theta = \angle poq$. Also $|[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]|$ is equal to the area of the parallelogram determined by \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b} . To illustrate the orientation of $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]$, we sometimes use the idea of a turning screw. That is, the direction of a right-handed screw advancing while turning at o from p to q (within the angle less than 180°) coincides with the direction of $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]$ (Fig. 1). The exterior product has the following three properties: (1) $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}] = -[\mathbf{b}, \mathbf{a}]$ (antisymmetric law); (2) $[\lambda \mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}] = \lambda [\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]$ (associative law for

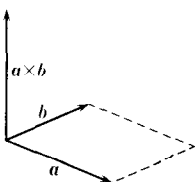


Fig. 1

scalar multiplication); (3) $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b} + \mathbf{c}] = [\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}] + [\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c}]$ (distributive law). The vector product does not satisfy the associative law, but it does satisfy the *Jacobi identity $[\mathbf{a}, [\mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]] + [\mathbf{b}, [\mathbf{c}, \mathbf{a}]] + [\mathbf{c}, [\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]] = \mathbf{0}$. The vector $[\mathbf{a}, [\mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]]$ is sometimes called the **vector triple product**, and for this we have **Lagrange's formula** $[\mathbf{a}, [\mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]] = (\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{c})\mathbf{b} - (\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b})\mathbf{c}$.

Let $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}$ be vectors in E^3 whose components with respect to an orthonormal fundamental basis are $(\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \alpha_3)$, $(\beta_1, \beta_2, \beta_3)$, and $(\gamma_1, \gamma_2, \gamma_3)$. Then $(\mathbf{a}, [\mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]) = (\mathbf{b}, [\mathbf{c}, \mathbf{a}]) = (\mathbf{c}, [\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}]) = [\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]$, and the common value is equal to the determinant of the 3×3 matrix

$$\begin{vmatrix} \alpha_1 & \alpha_2 & \alpha_3 \\ \beta_1 & \beta_2 & \beta_3 \\ \gamma_1 & \gamma_2 & \gamma_3 \end{vmatrix}.$$

The value denoted by $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]$ is called the **scalar triple product** of $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}$ and is equal to the volume of the parallelotope whose three edges are $\mathbf{a} = \overrightarrow{op}$, $\mathbf{b} = \overrightarrow{oq}$, and $\mathbf{c} = \overrightarrow{or}$ with common initial point o . The triple $\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}$ is called a right-hand system or a left-hand system according as $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}]$ is positive or negative. We have $[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}, \mathbf{c}] = 0$ if and only if \mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b} and \mathbf{c} are coplanar. (For the *exterior product of vectors in E^n and the concept of * p -vectors \rightarrow 256 Linear Spaces O.)

D. Vector Fields

In this section we consider the case of a 3-dimensional Euclidean space E^3 (for the general case \rightarrow 105 Differentiable Manifolds). A scalar-valued or a vector-valued function defined on a set D in E^3 is called a **scalar field** or a **vector field**, respectively. The continuity or the differentiability of a vector field is defined by the continuity or the differentiability of its components.

For a differentiable scalar field $f(x, y, z)$, the vector field with the components $(\partial f / \partial x, \partial f / \partial y, \partial f / \partial z)$ is called the **gradient** of f and is denoted by **grad** f . For a differentiable vector field $\mathbf{V}(x, y, z)$ whose components are $(u(x, y, z), v(x, y, z), w(x, y, z))$, the vector field with components

$$\left(\frac{\partial w}{\partial y} - \frac{\partial v}{\partial z}, \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} - \frac{\partial w}{\partial x}, \frac{\partial v}{\partial x} - \frac{\partial u}{\partial y} \right)$$

is called the **rotation** (or **curl**) of \mathbf{V} and is denoted by **rot** \mathbf{V} (or **curl** \mathbf{V}). Also, for a differentiable vector field \mathbf{V} , the scalar field defined by $\partial u / \partial x + \partial v / \partial y + \partial w / \partial z$ is called the **divergence** of \mathbf{V} and is denoted by **div** \mathbf{V} . Utilizing the vector operator ∇ having differential operators $(\partial / \partial x, \partial / \partial y, \partial / \partial z)$ as its components, we may write simply **grad** $f = \nabla f$, **div** $\mathbf{V} = (\nabla, \mathbf{V})$, **rot** $\mathbf{V} =$

$[\nabla, \nabla]$. The symbol ∇ is called **nabla**, **atled** (inverse of delta), or **Hamiltonian**.

A vector field \mathbf{V} with $\text{rot } \mathbf{V} = 0$ is said to be **irrotational**, (**lamellar**, or **without vortex**). A vector field \mathbf{V} with $\text{div } \mathbf{V} = 0$ is said to be **solenoidal** (or **without source**). Thus $\text{grad } f$ is irrotational and $\text{rot } \mathbf{V}$ is solenoidal. In a small neighborhood or in a \dagger simply-connected domain, an irrotational field is a gradient, a solenoidal field is a rotation, and an arbitrary vector field \mathbf{V} is the sum of these two kinds of vector fields: $\mathbf{V} = \text{grad } \varphi + \text{rot } \mathbf{u}$ (**Helmholtz theorem**); the function φ is called the **scalar potential** of \mathbf{V} , and the vector field \mathbf{u} is called the **vector potential** of \mathbf{V} . Furthermore, the operator $\nabla^2 = \nabla \nabla = \text{div grad} = \partial^2/\partial x^2 + \partial^2/\partial y^2 + \partial^2/\partial z^2$ is called the **Laplace operator** (or **Laplacian**) and is denoted by Δ . A function that satisfies $\Delta \varphi = 0$ is called a \dagger harmonic function. Locally, an irrotational and solenoidal vector field is the gradient of a harmonic function. If \mathbf{A} is a vector field whose components are $(\varphi_1, \varphi_2, \varphi_3)$ (i.e., $\mathbf{A}(\mathbf{v}) = (\varphi_1(\mathbf{v}), \varphi_2(\mathbf{v}), \varphi_3(\mathbf{v}))$), we can let Δ operate on \mathbf{A} by setting $\Delta \mathbf{A} = (\Delta \varphi_1, \Delta \varphi_2, \Delta \varphi_3)$. We then have $\Delta \mathbf{A} = \nabla^2 \mathbf{A} = \text{grad div } \mathbf{A} - \text{rot rot } \mathbf{A}$.

Suppose that we are given a vector field \mathbf{V} and a curve C such that the vector $\mathbf{V}(p)$ is tangent to the curve at each point $p \in C$. The curve C is the \dagger integral curve of the vector field \mathbf{V} and is called the **vector line** of the vector field \mathbf{V} . The set of all vector lines intersecting with a given closed curve C is called a **vector tube**. Given a closed curve C and a vector field \mathbf{V} , the \dagger curvilinear integral $\int_C (\mathbf{V}, d\mathbf{s})$ (where $d\mathbf{s}$ is the line element of C) is called the **circulation** (of \mathbf{V}) along the closed curve C . A vector field is irrotational if its circulation along every closed curve vanishes; the converse is true in a simply connected domain. Further, let v_n be the \dagger normal component of a vector field \mathbf{V} with respect to a surface S , and let dS be the volume element of the surface. We put $\mathbf{n} dS = d\mathbf{S}$, where \mathbf{n} is the unit normal vector in the positive direction of the surface S . Then the \dagger surface integral $\int_S v_n dS = \int_S (\mathbf{V}, d\mathbf{S})$ is called the **vector flux** through the surface S . A vector field whose vector flux vanishes for every closed surface is solenoidal. (For the corresponding formulas \rightarrow 94 Curvilinear Integrals and Surface Integrals. For generalizations to higher-dimensional manifolds \rightarrow 105 Differentiable Manifolds; 194 Harmonic Integrals; Appendix A, Table 3.)

References

[1] H. Weyl, *Raum, Zeit, Materie*, Springer, fifth edition, 1923; English translation, *Space, time, matter*, Dover, 1952.

[2] S. Banach, *Mechanics*, Warsaw, 1951.

[3] H. Flanders, *Differential forms, with applications to the physical sciences*, Academic Press, 1963.

[4] H. K. Nickerson, D. C. Spencer, and N. E. Steenrod, *Advanced calculus*, Van Nostrand, 1959.

443 (XII.8) Vector-Valued Integrals

A. General Remarks

Integrals whose values are elements (or subsets) of \dagger topological linear spaces are generally called **vector-valued integrals** or **vector integrals**. As in the scalar case, there are vector-valued integrals of Riemann type (\rightarrow 37 Banach Spaces K) and of Lebesgue type. In this article we consider only the latter. There are cases where integrands are vector-valued, where measures are vector-valued, and where both are vector-valued. The methods of integration are also divided into the strong type, in which the integrals are defined by means of the original topology of the topological linear space X , and the weak type, in which they are reduced to numerical integrals by applying continuous linear functionals on X . Combining these we can define many kinds of integrals.

Historically, D. Hilbert's \dagger spectral resolution is the first example of vector-valued integrals, but the general theory of vector-valued integrals started only after S. Bochner [1] defined in 1933 an integral of strong type for functions with values in a Banach space with respect to numerical measures. Then G. Birkhoff [2] defined a more general integral by replacing absolutely convergent sums with unconditionally convergent sums. At approximately the same time, N. Dunford introduced integrals equivalent to these. Later, R. S. Phillips (*Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 47 (1940)) generalized the definition to the case where values of functions are in a \dagger locally convex topological linear space, and C. E. Rickart (*Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 52 (1942)) to the case where functions take subsets of a locally convex topological linear space as their values. The theory of integrals of weak type for functions with values in a Banach space and numerical measures was constructed by I. M. Gel'fand [3], Dunford [4], B. J. Pettis [5], and others (1936–1938). N. Bourbaki [6] dealt with the case where integrands take values in a locally convex topological linear space. As for integrals of numerical functions by vector-valued

measures, a representative of strong type integrals is the integral of R. G. Bartle, Dunford, and J. T. Schwartz [7] (1955). Weak type integrals have been discussed by Bourbaki [6], D. R. Lewis (*Pacific J. Math.*, 33 (1970)), and I. Kluvānek (*Studia Math.*, 37 (1970)). The bilinear integral of Bartle (*Studia Math.*, 15 (1956)) is typical of integrals in the case where both integrands and measures are vector-valued. For interrelations of these integrals — the papers by Pettis and Bartle cited above and T. H. Hildebrandt's report in the *Bulletin of the American Mathematical Society*, 59 (1953).

Since the earliest investigations [1–3] the main aim of the theory of vector-valued integrals has been to obtain integral representations of vector-valued (set) functions and various linear operators [8]. However, there is the fundamental difficulty of the nonvalidity of the Radon-Nikodým theorem. Whatever definition of integrals we take, the theorem does not hold for vector-valued set functions unconditionally. Many works sought conditions for functions, operators, or spaces such that the conclusion of the theorem would be restored; the works of Dunford and Pettis [9] and Phillips (*Amer. J. Math.*, 65 (1943)) marked a summit of these attempts. Later, after A. Grothendieck's investigations (1953–1956), this problem began to be studied again, beginning in the late 1960s, by many mathematicians (→ J. Diestel and J. J. Uhl, Jr., *Rocky Mountain J. Math.*, 6 (1976); [10]).

Recently, integrals of multivalued vector-valued functions have also been employed in mathematical statistics, economics, control theory, and many other fields. Some contributions are, besides Rickart cited above, G. B. Price (*Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 47 (1940)), H. Kudo (*Sci. Rep. Ochanomizu Univ.*, 4 (1953)), H. Richter (*Math. Ann.*, 150 (1963)), R. J. Aumann [11], G. Debreu [12], and M. Hukuhara (*Funkcial. Ekvac.*, 10 (1967)). Furthermore, C. Castaing and M. Varadier [13] have defined weak type integrals of multivalued functions and introduced many results concerning them. In the following we shall give explanations of typical vector-valued integrals with values in a Banach space only.

B. Measurable Vector-Valued Functions

Let $x(s)$ be a function defined on a $^*\sigma$ -finite measure space (S, \mathfrak{S}, μ) with values in a Banach space X . This is called a **simple function** or **finite-valued function** if there exists a partition of S into a finite number of mutually disjoint measurable sets A_1, A_2, \dots, A_n in each of which $x(s)$ takes a constant value c_j . Then

$x(s)$ can be written as $\sum_{j=1}^n c_j \chi_{A_j}(s)$, where $\chi_{A_j}(s)$ is the * characteristic function of A_j . A function $x(s)$ is said to be **measurable** or **strongly measurable** if it is the strong limit of a sequence of simple functions almost everywhere, that is, $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \|x_n(s) - x(s)\| = 0$ a.e. Then the numerical function $\|x(s)\|$ is measurable. If μ is a * Radon measure on a compact Hausdorff space S , then the measurable functions can be characterized by * Luzin's property (→ 270 Measure Theory I).

A function $x(s)$ is said to be **scalarly measurable** or **weakly measurable** if the numerical function $\langle x(s), x' \rangle$ is measurable for any * continuous linear functional $x' \in X'$. A function $x(s)$ is measurable if and only if it is scalarly measurable and there are a * null set $E_0 \subset S$ and a * separable closed subspace $Y \subset X$ such that $x(s) \in Y$ whenever $s \notin E_0$ (**Pettis measurability theorem**).

C. Bochner Integrals

A measurable vector-valued function $x(s)$ is said to be **Bochner integrable** if the norm $\|x(s)\|$ is * integrable. If $x(s)$ is a Bochner integrable simple function $\sum c_j \chi_{A_j}(s)$, then its Bochner integral is defined by

$$\int_S x(s) d\mu = \sum \mu(A_j) c_j.$$

For a general Bochner integrable function $x(s)$ there exists a sequence of simple functions satisfying the following conditions: (i) $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \|x_n(s) - x(s)\| = 0$ a.e. (ii) $\lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \int_S \|x_n(s) - x(s)\| d\mu = 0$. Then $\int_S x_n(s) d\mu$ converges strongly and its limit does not depend on the choice of the sequence $\{x_n(s)\}$. We call the limit the **Bochner integral** of $x(s)$ and denote it by $\int_S x(s) d\mu$ or by $(Bn) \int_S x(s) d\mu$ to distinguish it from other kinds of integrals. A Bochner integrable function on S is Bochner integrable on every measurable subset of S . The Bochner integral has the basic properties of Lebesgue integrals, such as linearity, * complete additivity, and * absolute continuity, with absolute values replaced by norms. * Lebesgue's convergence theorem and * Fubini's theorem also hold. However, the Radon-Nikodým theorem does not hold in general (→ Section H). Let T be a * closed linear operator from X to another Banach space Y . If both $x(s)$ and $Tx(s)$ are Bochner integrable, then the integral of $x(s)$ belongs to the domain of T and

$$T\left(\int_S x(s) d\mu\right) = \int_S Tx(s) d\mu.$$

If, in particular, T is bounded, then the assumption is always satisfied. If μ is the * Le-

besgue measure on the Euclidean space \mathbf{R}^n , then Lebesgue's differentiability theorem holds for the Bochner integrals regarded as a set function on the regular closed sets (\rightarrow 380 Set Functions D).

D. Unconditionally Convergent Series

Let $\sum_{j=1}^{\infty} x_j$ be a series of elements x_j of a Banach space X . It is said to be **absolutely convergent** if $\sum \|x_j\| < \infty$. It is called **unconditionally convergent** if for any rearrangement α the resulting series $\sum x_{\alpha(j)}$ converges strongly. Then the sum does not depend on α . Clearly, an absolutely convergent series is unconditionally convergent. If X is the number space or is finite-dimensional, then the converse holds. However, if X is infinite-dimensional, there is always an unconditionally convergent series which is not absolutely convergent (**Dvoretzky-Rogers theorem**).

A series $\sum x_j$ is unconditionally convergent if and only if each subseries converges weakly (**Orlicz-Pettis theorem**). If $\sum x_j$ is an unconditionally convergent series, then $\sum \langle x_j, x' \rangle$ converges absolutely for any continuous linear functional $x' \in X'$. If X is a Banach space containing no closed linear subspace isomorphic to the * sequence space c_0 , then conversely a series $\sum x_j$ converges unconditionally whenever $\sum |\langle x_j, x' \rangle| < \infty$ for any $x' \in X'$ (**Bessaga-Pelczyński theorem**). A Banach space that is * sequentially complete relative to the weak topology, such as a * reflexive Banach space, and a separable Banach space that is the dual of another Banach space, such as l_1 and the * Hardy space $H_1(\mathbf{R}^n)$, satisfy the assumption, while c_0 , l_{∞} , and $L_{\infty}(\Omega)$ for an infinitely divisible Ω do not. The totality of absolutely convergent series (resp. unconditionally convergent series) in X is identified with the * topological tensor product $l_1 \hat{\otimes} X$ (resp. $l_1 \hat{\otimes} X$) (Grothendieck).

E. Birkhoff Integrals

We say that a series $\sum B_j$ of subsets of X converges unconditionally if for any $x_j \in B_j$ the series $\sum x_j$ converges unconditionally. Then $\sum B_j$ denotes the set of such sums. A vector-valued function $x(s)$ is said to be **Birkhoff integrable** if there is a countable partition $\Delta: S = \bigcup_{j=1}^{\infty} A_j$ ($A_j \in \mathfrak{S}$, $A_j \cap A_k = \emptyset$ ($j \neq k$), $\mu(A_j) < \infty$) such that the set $x(A_j)$ of values on A_j are bounded and $\sum \mu(A_j)x(A_j)$ converges unconditionally and if the sum converges to an element of X as the partition is subdivided. The limit is called the **Birkhoff integral** of $x(s)$ and is denoted by $(Bk) \int_S x(s) d\mu$ or simply by

$\int_S x(s) d\mu$. A Birkhoff integrable function is Birkhoff integrable on any measurable set. The Birkhoff integral has, as a set function, complete additivity and absolute continuity in μ . It is linear in the integrand but Fubini's theorem and the Radon-Nikodým theorem do not hold. A Bochner integrable function is Birkhoff integrable, and the integrals coincide. The converse does not hold.

F. Gel'fand-Pettis Integrals

A scalarly measurable function $x(s)$ is said to be **scalarly integrable** or **weakly integrable** if for each $x' \in X'$, $\langle x(s), x' \rangle$ is integrable. Then the linear functional x^* on X' defined by

$$\int_S \langle x(s), x' \rangle d\mu = \langle x', x^* \rangle$$

is called the **scalar integral** of $x(s)$. Gel'fand [3] and Dunford [4] proved that x^* belongs to the bidual X'' . Hence scalarly integrable functions are often called **Dunford integrable** and the integrals x^* the **Dunford integrals**. More generally, Gel'fand [3] showed that if $x'(s)$ is a function with values in the dual X' of a Banach space X such that $\langle x, x'(s) \rangle$ is integrable for any $x \in X$, then there is an $x' \in X'$ satisfying

$$\int_S \langle x, x'(s) \rangle d\mu = \langle x, x' \rangle.$$

This element is sometimes called the **Gel'fand integral** of $x'(s)$. A scalarly integrable function $x(s)$ is scalarly integrable on any measurable subset A . If the scalar integral is always in X , i.e., for each A there is an $x_A \in X$ such that

$$\int_A \langle x, x'(s) \rangle d\mu = \langle x_A, x' \rangle, x' \in X',$$

then $x(s)$ is said to be **Pettis integrable** or **Gel'fand-Pettis integrable** and x_A is called the **Pettis integral** or **Gel'fand-Pettis integral** on A and is denoted by $(P) \int_A x(s) d\mu$ or simply by $\int_A x(s) d\mu$. The Pettis integral has complete additivity and absolute continuity as a set function, similarly to the Birkhoff integral. Again, Fubini's theorem and the Radon-Nikodým theorem do not hold. The scalar integral on measurable sets of a scalarly integrable function $x(s)$ is completely additive and absolutely continuous with respect to the * weak* topology of X'' as the dual to X' . It is completely additive or absolutely continuous in the norm topology if and only if $x(s)$ is Pettis integrable (Pettis [5]; [10]). If $x(s)$ is Pettis integrable and $f(s)$ is a numerical function in $L_{\infty}(S)$, then the product $f(s)x(s)$ is Pettis integrable. Birkhoff integrable functions are Pettis integrable, and the integrals coin-

cide. Conversely, if a measurable function is Pettis integrable, then it is Birkhoff integrable. When X satisfies the Bessaga-Pelczyński condition (\rightarrow Section D), a measurable scalarly integrable function is Pettis integrable.

G. Vector Measures

Let Φ be a set function defined on a completely additive class \mathfrak{E} of subsets of the space S and with values in a Banach space X . It is called a **finitely additive vector measure** (resp. a **completely additive vector measure** or simply a **vector measure**) if $\Phi(A_1 \cup A_2) = \Phi(A_1) + \Phi(A_2)$ whenever A_1 and $A_2 \in \mathfrak{E}$ are disjoint (resp. $\Phi(\bigcup_{j=1}^{\infty} A_j) = \sum_{j=1}^{\infty} \Phi(A_j)$ in the norm topology for all $A_j \in \mathfrak{E}$ such that $A_j \cap A_k = \emptyset$ ($j \neq k$)). We remark that the latter sum always converges unconditionally. A set function Φ is completely additive if and only if $\langle \Phi(A), x' \rangle$ is completely additive for all $x' \in X'$ (**Pettis complete additivity theorem**).

Let Φ be a finitely additive vector measure and E be a measurable set. The **total variation** of Φ on E and the **semivariation** of Φ on E are defined by

$$V(\Phi)(E) = \sup \sum_{j=1}^n \|\Phi(A_j)\| \quad (1)$$

and

$$\|\Phi\|(E) = \sup \left\| \sum_{j=1}^n \alpha_j \Phi(A_j) \right\|, \quad (2)$$

respectively, where the suprema are taken over all finite partitions of $E: E = \bigcup A_j$ ($A_j \in \mathfrak{E}$, $A_j \cap A_k = \emptyset$ ($j \neq k$)) and all numbers α_j with $|\alpha_j| \leq 1$. If $V(\Phi)(S) < \infty$, then Φ is called a **measure of bounded variation**. $\|\Phi\|(S) < \infty$ if and only if $\sup \{\|\Phi(A)\| \mid A \in \mathfrak{E}\} < \infty$. Then Φ is said to be **bounded**. The function $V(\Phi)(E)$ of E is finitely additive but $\|\Phi\|(E)$ is only subadditive: $\|\Phi\|(A \cup B) \leq \|\Phi\|(A) + \|\Phi\|(B)$. If Φ is a vector measure of bounded variation, then $V(\Phi)$ is a positive measure. Every vector measure is bounded. A completely additive vector measure on a \dagger finitely additive class \mathfrak{Q} can uniquely be extended to a vector measure on the completely additive class \mathfrak{E} generated by \mathfrak{Q} (Klůvák).

Let μ be a positive measure and Φ be a vector measure. Then we have $\Phi(A) \rightarrow 0$ as $\mu(A) \rightarrow 0$ if and only if Φ vanishes on every A with $\mu(A) = 0$. Then Φ is said to be **absolutely continuous** with respect to μ . For every vector measure Φ there is a measure μ such that $\|\Phi\|(A) \rightarrow 0$ as $\mu(A) \rightarrow 0$ and that $0 \leq \mu(A) \leq \|\Phi\|(A)$ (Bartle, Dunford, and Schwartz). As a set function, the Bochner integral is a vector measure of bounded variation and the Pettis integral is a bounded vector measure. Both

are absolutely continuous with respect to the integrating measure. Let X be $L_p(0, 1)$ for $1 \leq p \leq \infty$, and define $\Phi(E)$ for a Lebesgue measurable set E to be the characteristic function of E . If $p = 1$, Φ is a vector measure of bounded variation. If $1 < p < \infty$, Φ is a bounded vector measure, but it is not of bounded variation on any set E with $\mu(E) > 0$. If $p = \infty$, then Φ is no longer completely additive. These vector measures are absolutely continuous with respect to the Lebesgue measure, but they cannot be represented as the Bochner integral or the Pettis integral.

Let Φ be a vector measure on \mathfrak{E} . An \mathfrak{E} -measurable numerical function $f(s)$ is said to be Φ -integrable if there exists a sequence of simple functions $f_n(s)$ such that $f_n(s) \rightarrow f(s)$ a.e. and that for each $E \in \mathfrak{E}$, $\int_E f_n(s) d\Phi$ converges in the norm of X . Then the limit is independent of the choice of f_n . It is called the **Bartle-Dunford-Schwartz integral** and is denoted by $\int_E f(s) d\Phi$. Lebesgue's convergence theorem holds for this integral. If Φ is absolutely continuous with respect to the measure μ , then every $f \in L_\infty(\mu)$ is Φ -integrable, and the operator that maps f to $\int_S f d\Phi$ is continuous with respect to the weak* topology in $L_\infty(\mu)$ and the weak topology of X . Hence it is a \dagger weakly compact operator. In particular, the range of a vector measure is relatively compact in the weak topology [7]. If Φ is the vector measure of the Pettis integral of a vector-valued function $x(s)$, then the above integral is equal to the Pettis integral of $f(s)x(s)$.

A vector measure Φ is said to be **nonatomic** if for each set A with $\Phi(A) \neq 0$ there is a subset B of A such that $\Phi(B) \neq 0$ and $\Phi(A \setminus B) \neq 0$. If X is finite-dimensional, then the range of a nonatomic vector measure is a compact convex set (**Lyapunov convexity theorem**). This has been generalized to the infinite-dimensional case in many ways, but the conclusion does not hold in the original form (\rightarrow Klůvák and G. Knowles [15]; [10]).

H. The Radon-Nikodým Theorem

As the above examples show, the \dagger Radon-Nikodým theorem does not hold for vector measures in the original form. From 1967 to 1971, M. Metivier, M. A. Rieffel, and S. Moedomo and Uhl improved the classical result of Phillips (1943) and proved the following theorem.

Radon-Nikodým theorem for vector measures. The following conditions are equivalent for μ -absolutely continuous vector measures Φ defined on a finite measure space (S, \mathfrak{E}, μ) : (i) There is a Pettis integrable measurable func-

tion $x(s)$ such that

$$\Phi(A) = (P) \int_A x(s) d\mu.$$

(ii) For each $\varepsilon > 0$ there is an $E \in \mathfrak{S}$ such that $\mu(S \setminus E) < \varepsilon$ and such that $\{\Phi(A)/\mu(A) \mid A \in \mathfrak{S}, A \subset E\}$ is relatively compact. (iii) For each $E \in \mathfrak{S}$ with $\mu(E) > 0$ there is a subset F of E with $\mu(F) > 0$ such that $\{\Phi(A)/\mu(A) \mid A \in \mathfrak{S}, A \subset F\}$ is relatively weakly compact. Then Φ is of bounded variation if and only if $x(s)$ is Bochner integrable.

On the other hand, since Birkhoff and Gel'fand it has been known that for special Banach spaces X every μ -absolutely continuous vector measure of bounded variation with values in X can be represented as a Bochner integral with respect to μ . Such spaces are said to have the **Radon-Nikodým property**. Separable dual spaces (Gel'fand, Pettis; Dunford and Pettis), reflexive spaces (Gel'fand, Pettis, Phillips), and $l_1(\Omega)$, Ω arbitrary, etc., have the Radon-Nikodým property, while $L_\infty(0, 1)$ (Bochner), c_0 (J. A. Clarkson), $L_1(\Omega)$ on a nonatomic Ω (Clarkson, Gel'fand), and $C(\Omega)$ on an infinite compact Hausdorff space Ω , etc., do not. Gel'fand proved that $L_1(0, 1)$ (and c_0) is not a dual by means of this fact. From 1967 to 1974, Rieffel, H. B. Maynard, R. E. Huff, and W. J. Davis and R. P. Phelps succeeded in characterizing geometrically the Banach spaces with the Radon-Nikodým property. We know today that the following conditions for Banach spaces X are equivalent [10]: (i) X has the Radon-Nikodým property. (ii) Every separable closed linear subspace of X has the Radon-Nikodým property. (iii) Every function $f: [0, 1] \rightarrow X$ of bounded variation is (strongly or weakly) differentiable a.e. (iv) For any finite measure space (S, \mathfrak{S}, μ) and bounded linear operator $T: L_1(S) \rightarrow X$, there is an essentially bounded measurable function $x(s)$ with values in X such that

$$Tf = \int_S f(s)x(s) d\mu, \quad f \in L_1(S).$$

(v) Each nonvoid bounded closed convex set K in X is the \dagger closed convex hull of the set of its strongly exposed points, where a point $x_0 \in K$ is called a **strongly exposed point** of K if there is an $x' \in X'$ such that $\langle x_0, x' \rangle > \langle x, x' \rangle$ for all $x \in K \setminus \{x_0\}$ and that any sequence $x_n \in K$ with $\lim \langle x_n, x' \rangle = \langle x_0, x' \rangle$ converges to x_0 strongly.

A Banach space X is said to have the **Kreĭn-Mil'man property** if each bounded closed convex set in X is the closed convex hull of its \dagger extreme points. A Banach space X with the Radon-Nikodým property has the Kreĭn-Mil'man property (J. Lindenstrauss). If X is a dual space, then the converse holds (Huff and P. D. Morris). A Banach space with the Kreĭn-

Mil'man property clearly has no closed linear space isomorphic to c_0 , but there are Banach spaces that do not contain c_0 and do not have the Kreĭn-Mil'man property. The dual X' of a Banach space X has the Radon-Nikodým property if and only if the dual of every separable closed linear subspace of X is separable (Uhl, C. Stegall).

I. Integrals of Multivalued Vector Functions

Let $\Gamma(s)$ be a multivalued function defined on a σ -finite complete measure space (S, \mathfrak{S}, μ) with values that are nonempty closed subsets of a separable Banach space X . The inverse image of a subset E of X under $\Gamma(s)$ is, by definition, the set of all s such that $\Gamma(s) \cap E \neq \emptyset$. $\Gamma(s)$ is said to be **measurable** or **strongly measurable** if the inverse image of each open set in X under $\Gamma(s)$ belongs to \mathfrak{S} . Let $\mathfrak{B}(X)$ be the \dagger Borel field of X , and $\mathfrak{S} \times \mathfrak{B}(X)$ be the product completely additive class, that is, the smallest completely additive class containing all direct products $A \times B$ of $A \in \mathfrak{S}$ and $B \in \mathfrak{B}(X)$. Then the measurability of $\Gamma(s)$ is equivalent to each of the following: (i) The graph $\{(s, x) \mid x \in \Gamma(s), s \in \mathfrak{S}\}$ of $\Gamma(s)$ belongs to $\mathfrak{S} \times \mathfrak{B}(X)$. (ii) The inverse image of every Borel set in X under $\Gamma(s)$ belongs to \mathfrak{S} . (iii) For each $x \in X$, the distance $d(x, \Gamma(s)) = \inf\{\|x - y\| \mid y \in \Gamma(s)\}$ between x and $\Gamma(s)$ is measurable as a function on S .

A measurable function $x(s)$ on S with values in X is called a **measurable selection** of $\Gamma(s)$ if $x(s)$ is in $\Gamma(s)$ for all s . (X being separable, we need not discriminate between strong and weak measurability.) The measurability of $\Gamma(s)$ is also equivalent to the following important statement on the existence of measurable selections of $\Gamma(s)$: (iv) There are a countable number of measurable selections $\{x_n(s)\}$ of $\Gamma(s)$ such that the closure of the set $\{x_n(s) \mid n = 1, 2, \dots\}$ coincides with $\Gamma(s)$ for all $s \in S$. $\Gamma(s)$ is said to be **scalarly measurable** or **weakly measurable** if the support function $\delta'(x', \Gamma(s)) = \sup\{\langle x, x' \rangle \mid x \in \Gamma(s)\}$ is measurable on S for all $x' \in X'$. The strong measurability of $\Gamma(s)$ clearly implies the weak one. If the values of $\Gamma(s)$ are nonempty weakly compact convex sets, then the measurabilities are equivalent. Hereafter we shall assume that $\Gamma(s)$ takes the values in the weakly compact convex sets. If the support function $\delta'(x', \Gamma(s))$ is integrable on S for all $x' \in X'$, then $\Gamma(s)$ is said to be **scalarly integrable**. Then the **scalar integral** of $\Gamma(s)$ is defined to be the set in X'' of all scalar integrals of its measurable selections, i.e.,

$$\int_S \Gamma(s) d\mu = \left\{ \int_S x(s) d\mu \mid x(s) \text{ is a measurable selection of } \Gamma(s) \right\}.$$

If $\|\Gamma(s)\| = \sup\{\|x\| \mid x \in \Gamma(s)\}$ is integrable, then every measurable selection is Bochner integrable and the integral $\int_S \Gamma(s) d\mu$ becomes a nonempty weakly compact convex set in X . When the values of $\Gamma(s)$ are nonempty compact convex sets, there is another method, by G. Debreu, of defining the integral. Let \mathcal{Q} be the class of all nonempty compact convex sets in X and δ be the Hausdorff metric, i.e., for K_1 and $K_2 \in \mathcal{Q}$ define $\delta(K_1, K_2) = \max[\sup\{d(x, K_2) \mid x \in K_1\}, \sup\{d(x, K_1) \mid x \in K_2\}]$. Further, for $K_1, K_2 \in \mathcal{Q}$ and $\alpha \geq 0$ define the sum and the nonnegative scalar multiple by $K_1 + K_2 = \{x_1 + x_2 \mid x_1 \in K_1, x_2 \in K_2\}$ and $\alpha \cdot K_1 = \{\alpha x \mid x \in K_1\}$, respectively. Then \mathcal{Q} endowed with the Hausdorff metric and the above addition and scalar multiplication is isometrically embedded in a closed convex cone in a separable Banach space Y by the Rådström embedding theorem (*Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 3 (1952)). Let φ be this isometry. Then the (strong) measurability and the (strong) integrability of $\Gamma(s)$ are defined by the measurability and the Bochner integrability of the Y -valued function $\varphi(\Gamma(s))$, respectively, and its (strong) integral as the inverse image of the Bochner integral of $\varphi(\Gamma(s))$ under φ :

$$\int_S \Gamma(s) d\mu = \varphi^{-1} \left(\int_S \varphi(\Gamma(s)) d\mu \right).$$

This definition of integral for strongly measurable $\Gamma(s)$ is shown to be compatible with that mentioned before. It is clear by the definition that the integral value in this case is a nonempty compact convex set and that most properties of Bochner integrals also hold for this integral.

References

- [1] S. Bochner, Integration von Funktionen, deren Werte die Elemente eines Vektorraumes sind, *Fund. Math.*, 20 (1933), 262–276.
- [2] G. Birkhoff, Integration of functions with values in a Banach space, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 38 (1935), 357–378.
- [3] I. Gel'fand, Abstrakte Funktionen und lineare Operatoren, *Mat. Sb.*, 4 (46) (1938), 235–286.
- [4] N. Dunford, Uniformity in linear spaces, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 44 (1938), 305–356.
- [5] B. J. Pettis, On integration in vector spaces, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 44 (1938), 277–304.
- [6] N. Bourbaki, *Éléments de mathématique*, Intégration, Hermann, ch. 6, 1959.
- [7] R. G. Bartle, N. Dunford, and J. Schwartz, Weak compactness and vector measures, *Canad. J. Math.*, 7 (1955), 289–305.

444 Ref.

Viète, François

- [8] N. Dunford and J. T. Schwartz, *Linear operators I*, Interscience, 1958.
- [9] N. Dunford and B. J. Pettis, Linear operations on summable functions, *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 47 (1940), 323–392.
- [10] J. Diestel and J. J. Uhl, Jr., *Vector measures*, *Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys* 13 (1977).
- [11] R. J. Aumann, Integrals of set-valued functions, *J. Math. Anal. Appl.*, 12 (1965), 1–22.
- [12] G. Debreu, Integration of correspondences, *Proc. Fifth Berkeley Symp. Math. Statist. Probab.*, II, pt. I (1967), 351–372.
- [13] C. Castaing and M. Valadier, *Convex analysis and measurable multifunctions*, Springer, 1977.
- [14] N. Dinculeanu, *Vector measures*, Pergamon, 1967.
- [15] I. Kluvánek and G. Knowles, *Vector measures and control systems*, North-Holland, 1975.

444 (XXI.42)

Viète, François

François Viète (1540–December 13, 1603) was born in Fontenay-le-Comte, Poitou, in western France. He served under Henri IV, first as a lawyer and later as a political advisor. His mathematics was done in his leisure time. He used symbols for known variables for the first time and established the methodology and principles of symbolic algebra. He also systematized the algebra of the time and used it as a method of discovery. He is often called the father of algebra. He improved the methods of solving equations of the third and fourth degrees obtained by G. Cardano and L. Ferrari. Realizing that solving the algebraic equation of the 45th degree proposed by the Belgian mathematician A. van Roomen can be reduced to searching for $\sin(\alpha/45)$ knowing $\sin \alpha$, he was able to solve it almost immediately. However, he would not acknowledge negative roots and refused to add terms of different degrees because of his belief in the Greek principle of homogeneity of magnitudes. He also contributed to trigonometry and represented the number π as an infinite product.

References

- [1] Francisci Vietae, *Opera mathematica*, F. van Schooten (ed.), Leyden, 1646 (Georg Olms, 1970).
- [2] Jacob Klain, *Die griechische Logistik und die Entstehung der Algebra I, II, Quellen und*

Studien zur Gesch. Math., (B) 3 (1934), 18–105; (B) 3 (1936), 122–235.

445 (XXI.43) Von Neumann, John

John von Neumann (December 28, 1903–February 8, 1957) was born in Budapest, Hungary, the son of a banker. By the time he graduated from the university there in 1921, he had already published a paper with M. Fekete. He was later influenced by H. Weyl and E. Schmidt at the universities of Zürich and Berlin, respectively, and he became a lecturer at the universities of Berlin and Hamburg. He moved to the United States in 1930 and in 1933 became professor at the Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton. In 1954 he was appointed a member of the US Atomic Energy Commission. The fields in which he was first interested were ^{*}set theory, theory of ^{*}functions of real variables, and ^{*}foundations of mathematics. He made important contributions to the axiomatization of set theory. At the same time, however, he was deeply interested in theoretical physics, especially in the mathematical foundations of quantum mechanics. From this field, he was led into research on the theory of ^{*}Hilbert spaces, and he obtained basic results in the theory of ^{*}operator rings of Hilbert spaces. To extend the theory of operator rings, he introduced ^{*}continuous geometry. Among his many famous works are the theory of ^{*}almost periodic functions on a group and the solving of ^{*}Hilbert's fifth problem for compact groups. In his later years, he contributed to ^{*}game theory and to the design of computers, thus playing a major role in all fields of applied mathematics.

References

- [1] J. von Neumann, Collected works I–VI, Pergamon, 1961–1963.
- [2] J. von Neumann, 1903–1957, J. C. Oxtoby, B. J. Pettis, and G. B. Price (eds.), Bull. Amer. Math. Soc., 64 (1958), 1–129.
- [3] J. von Neumann, Mathematische Grundlagen der Quantenmechanik, Springer, 1932.
- [4] J. von Neumann, Functional operators I, II, Ann. Math. Studies, Princeton Univ. Press, 1950.
- [5] J. von Neumann, Continuous geometry, Princeton Univ. Press, 1960.
- [6] J. von Neumann and O. Morgenstern, Theory of games and economic behavior, Princeton Univ. Press, third edition, 1953.

W

446 (XX.13) Wave Propagation

A disturbance originating at a point in a medium and propagating at a finite speed in the medium is called a **wave**. For example, a sound wave propagates a change of density or stress in a gas, liquid, or solid. A wave in an elastic solid body is called an elastic wave.

Surface waves appear near the surface of a medium, such as water or the earth. When electromagnetic disturbances are propagated in a gas, liquid, or solid or in a vacuum, they are called **electromagnetic waves**. Light is a kind of electromagnetic wave. According to [†]general relativity theory, gravitational action can also be propagated as a wave.

It many cases waves can be described by the **wave equation**:

$$\frac{\partial^2 \psi}{\partial t^2} = c^2 \left(\frac{\partial^2 \psi}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 \psi}{\partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^2 \psi}{\partial z^2} \right).$$

Here t is time, x, y, z are the Cartesian coordinates of points in the space, c is the propagation velocity, and ψ represents the state of the medium.

If we take a closed surface surrounding the origin of the coordinate system, the state $\psi(0, t)$ at the origin at time t can be determined by the state at the points on the closed surface at time $t - r/c$, with r the distance of the point from the origin. More precisely, we have

$$\psi(0, t) = \frac{1}{4\pi} \int \left(\psi \frac{\partial}{\partial n} \left(\frac{1}{r} \right) - \frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial n} - \frac{1}{cr} \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial t} \frac{\partial r}{\partial n} \right)_{t-r/c} df.$$

Here n is the inward normal at any point of the closed surface, and the integral is taken over the surface, while the value of the integrand is taken at time $t - r/c$. This relation is a mathematical representation of **Huygens's principle**, which is valid for the 3-dimensional case but does not hold for the 2-dimensional case (\rightarrow 325 Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type).

A **plane wave** propagating in the direction of a unit vector \mathbf{n} can be represented by $\psi = F(t - \mathbf{n} \cdot \mathbf{r}/c)$, where F is an arbitrary function and $\mathbf{r}(x, y, z)$ is the position vector. The simplest case is given by a **sine wave** (**sinusoidal wave**): $\psi = A \sin(\omega t - \mathbf{k} \cdot \mathbf{r} + \delta)$. Here A (**amplitude**) and δ (**phase constant**) are arbitrary constants, \mathbf{k} is in the direction of wave propagation and satisfies the relation $|\mathbf{k}|c = \omega$. ω is the **angular frequency**, $\omega/2\pi$ the **frequency**, \mathbf{k} the **wave number vector**, $|\mathbf{k}|$ the **wave number**, $2\pi/\omega$

the **period**, and $2\pi/|\mathbf{k}|$ the **wavelength**. The velocity with which the crest of the wave advances is equal to $\omega/|\mathbf{k}| = c$ and is called the **phase velocity**.

A **spherical wave** radiating from the origin can generally be represented by

$$\psi = \sum_n \varphi_n \left(\frac{d}{r dr} \right)^n \frac{1}{r} F \left(t - \frac{r}{c} \right),$$

where φ_n is the [†]solid harmonic of order n .

Waves are not restricted to those governed by the wave equation. In general, ψ is not a scalar, but has several components (e.g., ψ may be a vector), which satisfy a set of simultaneous differential equations of various kinds. Usually they have solutions in the form of sinusoidal waves, but the phase velocity $c = \omega/|\mathbf{k}|$ is generally a function of the wavelength λ . Such a wave, called a **dispersive wave**, has a propagation velocity (velocity of propagation of the disturbance through the medium) that is not equal to the phase velocity. A disturbance of finite extent that can be approximately represented by a plane wave is propagated with a velocity $c - \lambda dc/d\lambda$, called the **group velocity**. Often there exists a definite relationship between the amplitude vector \mathbf{A} (and the corresponding phase constant δ) and wave number vector \mathbf{k} , in which case the wave is said to be **polarized**. In particular, when \mathbf{A} and \mathbf{k} are parallel (perpendicular), the wave is called a **longitudinal** (**transverse**) **wave**. Usually equations governing the wave are linear, and therefore superposition of two solutions gives a new solution ([†]principle of superposition). Superposition of two sinusoidal waves traveling in opposite directions gives rise to a wave whose crests do not move (e.g., $\psi = A \sin \omega t \sin \mathbf{k} \cdot \mathbf{r}$). Such a wave is called a **stationary wave**. Since the energy of a wave is proportional to the square of ψ , the energy of the resultant wave formed by superposition of two waves is not equal to the sum of the energies of the component waves. This phenomenon is called **interference**. When a wave reaches an obstacle it propagates into the shadow region of the obstacle, where there is formed a special distribution of energy dependent on the shape and size of the obstacle. This phenomenon is called **diffraction**.

For aerial sound waves and water waves, if the amplitude is so large that the wave equation is no longer valid, we are faced with [†]nonlinear problems. For instance, **shock waves** appear in the air when surfaces of discontinuity of density and pressure exist. They appear in explosions and for bodies traveling at high speeds. Concerning wave mechanics dealing with atomic phenomena \rightarrow 351 Quantum Mechanics.

References

- [1] H. Lamb, *Hydrodynamics*, Cambridge Univ. Press, sixth edition, 1932.
- [2] Lord Rayleigh, *The theory of sound*, Macmillan, second revised edition, I, 1937; II, 1929.
- [3] M. Born and E. Wolf, *Principles of optics*, Pergamon, fourth edition, 1970.
- [4] F. S. Crawford, Jr., *Waves*, Berkeley physics course III, McGraw-Hill, 1968.
- [5] C. A. Coulson, *Waves; A mathematical theory of the common type of wave motion*, Oliver & Boyd, seventh edition, 1955.
- [6] L. Brillouin, *Wave propagation and group velocity*, Academic Press, 1960.
- [7] I. Tolstoy, *Wave propagation*, McGraw-Hill, 1973.
- [8] J. D. Achenbach, *Wave propagation in elastic solids*, North-Holland, 1973.
- [9] K. F. Graff, *Wave motion in elastic solids*, Ohio State Univ. Press, 1975.
- [10] J. Lighthill, *Waves in fluids*, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1978.
- [11] R. Courant and D. Hilbert, *Methods of mathematical physics II*, Interscience, 1962.

447 (XXI.44) Weierstrass, Karl

Karl Weierstrass (October 31, 1815–February 19, 1897) was born into a Catholic family in Ostenfelde, in Westfalen, Germany. From 1834 to 1838 he studied law at the University of Bonn. In 1839 he moved to Münster, where he came under the influence of C. Gudermann, who was then studying the theory of elliptic functions. From this time until 1855, he taught in a parochial junior high school; during this period he published an important paper on the theory of analytic functions. Invited to the University of Berlin in 1856, he worked there with L. Kronecker and E. E. Kummer. In 1864, he was appointed to a full professorship, which he held until his death.

His foundation of the theory of analytic functions of a complex variable at about the same time as Riemann is his most fundamental work. In contrast to Riemann, who utilized geometric and physical intuition, Weierstrass stressed the importance of rigorous analytic formulation. Aside from the theory of analytic functions, he contributed to the theory of functions of real variables by giving examples of continuous functions that were nowhere differentiable. With his theory of \dagger minimal surfaces, he also contributed to geometry. His lectures at the University of Berlin drew many

448 Ref. Weyl, Hermann

listeners, and in his later years he was a respected authority in the mathematical world.

References

- [1] K. Weierstrass, *Mathematische Werke I–VII*, Mayer & Miller, 1894–1927.
- [2] F. Klein, *Vorlesungen über die Entwicklung der Mathematik im 19. Jahrhundert I*, Springer, 1926 (Chelsea, 1956).

448 (XXI.45) Weyl, Hermann

Hermann Weyl (November 9, 1885–December 8, 1955) was born in Elmshorn in the state of Schleswig-Holstein in Germany. Entering the University of Göttingen in 1904, he also audited courses for a time at the University of Munich. In 1908, he obtained his doctorate from the University of Göttingen with a paper on the theory of integral equations, and by 1910 he was a lecturer at the same university. In 1913, he became a professor at the Federal Technological Institute at Zürich; in 1928–1929, a visiting professor at Princeton University; in 1930, a professor at the University of Göttingen; and in 1933, a professor at the Institute for Advanced Study at Princeton. He retired from his professorship there in 1951, when he became professor emeritus. He died in Zürich in 1955.

Weyl contributed fresh and fundamental works covering all aspects of mathematics and theoretical physics. Among the most notable are results on problems in \dagger integral equations, \dagger Riemann surfaces, the theory of \dagger Diophantine approximation, the representation of groups, in particular compact groups and \dagger semisimple Lie groups (whose structure he elucidated), the space-time problem, the introduction of \dagger affine connections in differential geometry, \dagger quantum mechanics, and the foundations of mathematics. In his later years, with his son Joachim he studied meromorphic functions. In addition to his many mathematical works he left works in philosophy, history, and criticism.

References

- [1] H. Weyl, *Gesammelte Abhandlungen I–IV*, Springer, 1968.
- [2] H. Weyl, *Die Idee der Riemannschen Fläche*, Teubner, 1913, revised edition, 1955; English translation, *The concept of a Riemann surface*, Addison-Wesley, 1964.

- [3] H. Weyl, *Raum, Zeit, Materie*, Springer, 1918, fifth edition, 1923; English translation, *Space, time, matter*, Dover, 1952.
 [4] H. Weyl, *Das Kontinuum*, Veit, 1918.
 [5] H. Weyl, *Gruppentheorie und Quantenmechanik*, Hirzel, 1928.
 [6] H. Weyl, *Classical groups*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1939, revised edition, 1946.
 [7] H. Weyl and F. J. Weyl, *Meromorphic functions and analytic curves*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1943.
 [8] H. Weyl, *Philosophie der Mathematik und Naturwissenschaften*, Oldenbourg, 1926; English translation, *Philosophy of mathematics and natural science*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1949.
 [9] H. Weyl, *Symmetry*, Princeton Univ. Press, 1952.

449 (III.18) Witt Vectors

A. General Remarks

Let Γ be an \dagger integral domain of characteristic 0, and p a fixed prime number. For each infinite-dimensional vector $x = (x_0, x_1, \dots)$ with components in Γ , we define its **ghost components** $x^{(0)}, x^{(1)}, \dots$ by $x^{(0)} = x_0, x^{(n)} = x_0^{p^n} + px_1^{p^{n-1}} + \dots + p^n x_n$. We define the sum of the vectors x and $y = (y_0, y_1, \dots)$ to be the vector with ghost components $x^{(0)} + y^{(0)}, x^{(1)} + y^{(1)}, \dots$, and their product to be the vector with ghost components $x^{(0)}y^{(0)}, x^{(1)}y^{(1)}, \dots$. The sum and product are uniquely determined vectors with components in Γ . Writing their first two terms explicitly, we have

$$x + y = \left[x_0 + y_0, x_1 + y_1 - \sum_{v=1}^{p-1} \frac{1}{p} \binom{p}{v} x_0^v y_0^{p-v}, \dots \right],$$

$$xy = (x_0 y_0, x_1 y_0^p + y_1 x_0^p + p x_1 y_1, \dots).$$

In general, it can be proved that the n th components $\sigma_n(x, y)$ and $\pi_n(x, y)$ of the sum and product are polynomials in $x_0, y_0, x_1, y_1, \dots, x_n, y_n$ whose coefficients are rational integers. With these operations of addition and multiplication, the set of these vectors forms a \dagger commutative ring, of which the zero element is $(0, 0, \dots)$ and the unity element is $(1, 0, \dots)$. Let k be a field of characteristic p . For vectors (ξ_0, ξ_1, \dots) , and (η_0, η_1, \dots) with components in k , we define their sum and product by $(\xi_0, \xi_1, \dots) + (\eta_0, \eta_1, \dots) = (\dots, \sigma_n(\xi, \eta), \dots)$ and $(\xi_0, \xi_1, \dots)(\eta_0, \eta_1, \dots) = (\dots, \pi_n(\xi, \eta), \dots)$. Since the coefficients of σ_n and π_n are rational in-

tegers, these operations are well defined. With these operations, the set of such vectors becomes an integral domain $W(k)$ of characteristic 0. Elements of $W(k)$ are called **Witt vectors** over k .

If we put $V(\xi_0, \xi_1, \dots) = (0, \xi_0, \xi_1, \dots)$ and $(\xi_0, \xi_1, \dots)^p = (\xi_0^p, \xi_1^p, \dots)$, we get the formula $p\xi = V\xi^p$. (Note that this ξ^p is not the p th power of ξ in $W(k)$ in the usual sense.) Therefore, if we put $|\xi| = p^{-n}$ for a vector ξ whose first nonzero component is ξ_n , then this absolute value $|\cdot|$ gives a \dagger valuation of $W(k)$. In particular, when k is a \dagger perfect field, denoting the vector $(\xi_0, 0, \dots)$ by $\{\xi_0\}$ we get $(\xi_0, \xi_1, \dots) = \sum p^i \{\xi_i p^{-i}\}$, and $W(k)$ is a \dagger complete valuation ring with respect to this valuation. Therefore the \dagger field of quotients of $W(k)$ is a complete valuation field of which p is a prime element and k is the \dagger residue class field. Conversely, let K be a field of characteristic 0 that is complete under a \dagger discrete valuation v , \mathfrak{o} be the valuation ring of v , and k be the residue class field of v . Assume that k is a perfect field of characteristic p . If p is a prime element of \mathfrak{o} , then $\mathfrak{o} = W(k)$. If $v(p) = v(\pi^e)$ ($e > 1$) with a prime element π of \mathfrak{o} , we have $\mathfrak{o} = W(k)[\pi]$, and π is a root of an \dagger Eisenstein polynomial $X^e + a_1 X^{e-1} + \dots + a_e$ ($a_i \in pW(k)$, $a_e \notin p^2 W(k)$). In this way we can determine explicitly the structure of a \dagger p -adic number field (\rightarrow 257 Local Fields).

B. Applications to Abelian p -Extensions and Cyclic Algebras of Characteristic p

Next we consider $W_n(k) = W(k)/V^n W(k)$. The elements of $W_n(k)$ can be viewed as the n -dimensional vectors $(\xi_0, \dots, \xi_{n-1})$, but their laws of composition are defined as in the previous section. They are called **Witt vectors of length n** . We define an operator \wp by $\wp\xi = \xi^p - \xi$. Using it, we can generalize the theory of \dagger Artin-Schreier extensions (\rightarrow 172 Galois Theory) to the case of Abelian extensions of exponent p^n over a field of characteristic p . Indeed, let k be a field of characteristic p and $\xi = (\xi_0, \dots, \xi_{n-1})$ an element of $W(k)$. If $\eta = (\eta_0, \dots, \eta_{n-1})$ is a root of the vector equation $\wp X - \xi = 0$, then the other roots are of the form $\eta + \alpha(\alpha = (\alpha_0, \dots, \alpha_{n-1}), \alpha_i \in \mathbb{F}_p)$. In particular, if $\xi_0 \notin \wp k = \{\alpha^p - \alpha \mid \alpha \in k\}$, the field $K = k(\eta_0, \dots, \eta_{n-1})$ is a cyclic extension of degree p^n over k , and conversely, every cyclic extension of k of degree p^n is obtained in this way. Let $(1/\wp)\xi$ denote the set of all roots of $\wp X - \xi = 0$. Then more generally, any finite Abelian extension of exponent p^n of k can be obtained as $K = k((1/\wp)\xi \mid \xi \in H)$ with a suitable finite subgroup $H/\wp W_n(k)$ of $W_n(k)/\wp W_n(k)$, and

the Galois group of K/k is isomorphic to $H/\varphi W_n(k)$.

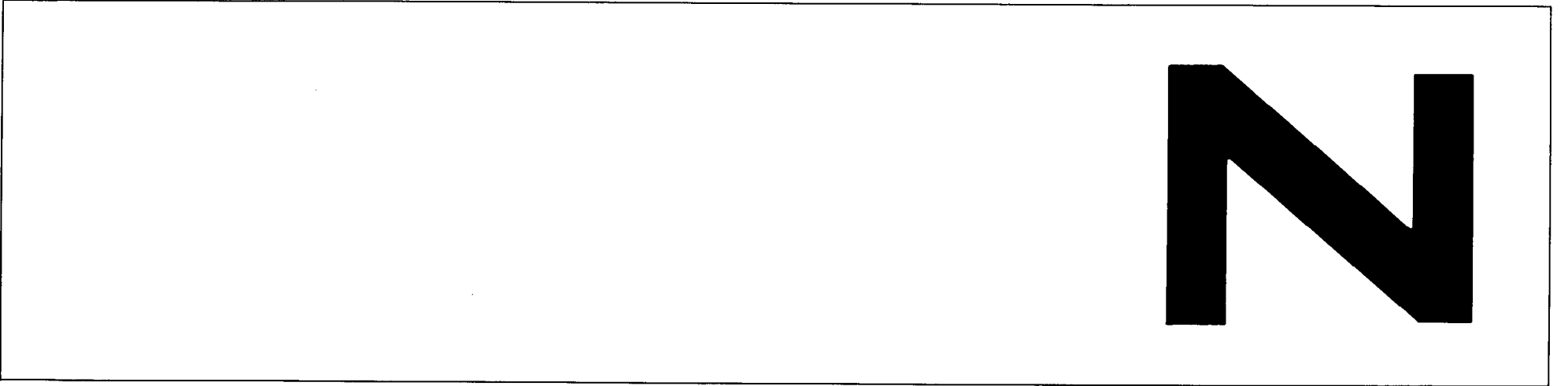
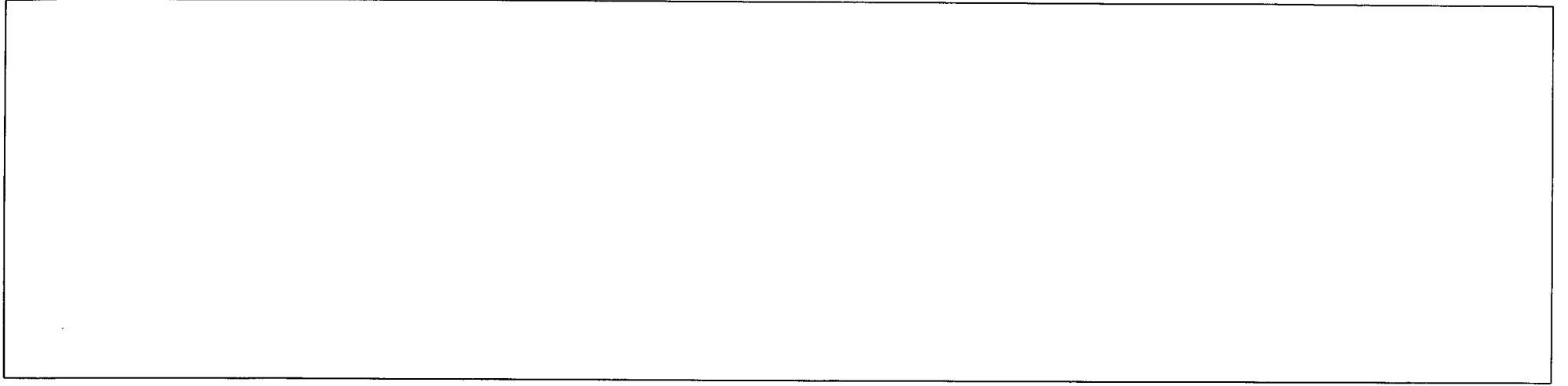
Moreover, for a \dagger cyclic extension $K = k((1/\varphi)\beta)$ of exponent p^n over k and for $\alpha \in k (\alpha \neq 0)$, we can define a \dagger cyclic algebra $(\alpha, \beta]$ generated by an element u over K by the fundamental relations $u^{p^n} = \alpha$, $\varphi\theta = \beta$, $u\theta u^{-1} = \theta + (1, 0, \dots, 0)$ (where $\theta = (\theta_0, \dots, \theta_{n-1})$, $u\theta u^{-1} = (u\theta_0 u^{-1}, \dots, u\theta_{n-1} u^{-1})$), and $(\alpha, \beta]$ is a central simple algebra over k .

Using these results, we can develop the structure theory of the \dagger Brauer group of exponent p^n of a \dagger field of power series in one variable with coefficients in a finite field F_q (of a \dagger field of algebraic functions in one variable over F_q) exactly as in the case of a p -adic field (of an algebraic number field) (E. Witt [1]; \rightarrow 29 Associative Algebras G).

On the other hand, $W_n(k)$ is a commutative \dagger algebraic group over k and is important in the theories of algebraic groups and \dagger formal groups (\rightarrow 13 Algebraic Groups).

References

- [1] E. Witt, Zyklische Körper und Algebren der Charakteristik p vom Grad p^n , J. Reine Angew. Math., 176 (1937), 126–140.
- [2] H. Hasse, Zahlentheorie, Akademie-Verlag., 1949.
- [3] N. Jacobson, Lectures in abstract algebra III, Van Nostrand, 1964.



450 (V.19) Zeta Functions

A. Introduction

Since the 19th century, many special functions called ζ -functions (zeta functions) have been defined and investigated. The four main problems concerning ζ -functions are: (1) Methods of defining ζ -functions. (2) Investigation of the properties of ζ -functions. Generally, ζ -functions have the following four properties in common: (i) They are meromorphic on the whole complex plane; (ii) they have † Dirichlet series expansions; (iii) they have Euler product expansions; and (iv) they satisfy certain functional equations. Also, it is an important problem to find the poles, residues, and zeros of ζ -functions. (3) Application to number theory, in particular to the theory of decomposition of prime ideals in finite extensions of algebraic number fields (\rightarrow 59 Class Field Theory). (4) Study of the relations between different ζ -functions.

Most of the functions called ζ -functions or L -functions have the four properties of problem (2). The following is a classification of the important types of ζ -functions that are already known, which will be discussed later in this article:

(1) The ζ - and L -functions of algebraic number fields: the Riemann ζ -function, Dirichlet L -functions (study of these functions gave impetus to the theory of ζ -functions), Dedekind ζ -functions, Hecke L -functions, Hecke L -functions with † Grössencharakteren, Artin L -functions, and Weil L -functions. (2) The p -adic L -functions related to the works of H. W. Leopoldt, T. Kubota, K. Iwasawa, etc. (3) The ζ -functions of quadratic forms: Epstein ζ -functions, ζ -functions of indefinite quadratic forms (C. L. Siegel), etc. (4) The ζ - and L -functions of algebras: Hey ζ -functions and the ζ -functions given by R. Godement, T. Tamagawa, etc. (5) The ζ -functions associated with Hecke operators, related to the work of E. Hecke, M. Eichler, G. Shimura, H. Jacquet, R. P. Langlands, etc. (6) The congruence ζ - and L -functions attached to algebraic varieties defined over finite fields (E. Artin, A. Weil, A. Grothendieck, P. Deligne), ζ - and L -functions of schemes. (7) Hasse ζ -functions attached to the algebraic varieties defined over algebraic number fields. (8) The ζ -functions attached to discontinuous groups: Selberg ζ -functions, the Eisenstein series defined by A. Selberg, Godement, and I. M. Gel'fand, etc. (9) Y. Ihara's ζ -function related to non-Abelian class field theory over a function field over a finite field.

(10) ζ -functions associated with prehomogeneous vector spaces (M. Sato, T. Shintani).

B. The Riemann ζ -Function

Consider the series

$$\zeta(s) = 1 + \frac{1}{2^s} + \frac{1}{3^s} + \dots + \frac{1}{n^s} + \dots,$$

which converges for all real numbers $s > 1$. It was already recognized by L. Euler that $\zeta(s)$ can also be expressed by a convergent infinite product $\prod_p (1 - p^{-s})^{-1}$, where p runs over all prime numbers (*Werke*, ser. I, vol. VII, ch. XV, § 274). This expansion is called **Euler's infinite product expansion** or simply the **Euler product**. However, Riemann was the first to treat $\zeta(s)$ successfully as a function of a complex variable s (1859) [R1]; for this reason, it is called the **Riemann ζ -function**. As can be seen from its Euler product expansion, $\zeta(s)$ is holomorphic and has no zeros in the domain $\text{Re } s > 1$. Riemann proved, moreover, that it has an analytic continuation to the whole complex plane, is meromorphic everywhere, and has a unique pole $s = 1$. The functions $(s-1)\zeta(s)$ and $\zeta(s) - 1/(s-1)$ are † integral functions of s . This can be seen by considering the integral expression

$$\begin{aligned} \pi^{-s/2} \Gamma\left(\frac{s}{2}\right) \zeta(s) &= \int_0^{\infty} x^{s/2-1} \left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} e^{-n^2 \pi x} \right) dx \\ &= -\frac{1}{s} - \frac{1}{1-s} + \int_1^{\infty} (x^{(1-s)/2-1} + x^{(s/2-1)}) \\ &\quad \times \left(\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} e^{-n^2 \pi x} \right) dx. \end{aligned}$$

From this last formula, we also obtain an equality

$$\zeta(s) = \zeta(1-s),$$

where

$$\zeta(s) = \pi^{-s/2} \Gamma(s/2) \zeta(s).$$

This equality is called the **functional equation** for the ζ -function. The residue of $\zeta(s)$ at $s = 1$ is 1, and around $s = 1$,

$$\zeta(s) = \frac{1}{s-1} + C + O(|s-1|),$$

where C is † Euler's constant. This is called the **Kronecker limit formula** for $\zeta(s)$.

The function $\zeta(s)$ has no zeros in $\text{Re } s \geq 1$, and its only zeros in $\text{Re } s \leq 0$ are simple zeros at $s = -2, -4, \dots, -2n, \dots$. But $\zeta(s)$ has infinitely many zeros in $0 < \text{Re } s < 1$, which are called the nontrivial zeros. B. Riemann conject-

tured that all nontrivial zeros lie on the line $\text{Re } s = 1/2$ (1859). This is called the **Riemann hypothesis**, which has been neither proved nor disproved (\rightarrow Section I).

If $N(T)$ denotes the number of zeros of $\zeta(s)$ in the rectangle $0 < \text{Re } s < 1$, $0 < \text{Im } s < T$, we have an asymptotic formula

$$N(T) = \frac{1}{2\pi} T \log T - \frac{1 + \log 2\pi}{2\pi} T + O(\log T)$$

(H. von Mangoldt, 1905). Also, $\zeta(s)$ has the following infinite product expansion:

$$(s-1)\zeta(s) = \frac{1}{2} e^{bs} \frac{1}{\Gamma\left(\frac{s}{2} + 1\right)} \prod_{\rho} \left(1 - \frac{s}{\rho}\right) e^{s/\rho},$$

where b is a constant and ρ runs over all nontrivial zeros of $\zeta(s)$ (J. Hadamard, 1893).

Hadamard and C. de La Vallée-Poussin proved the \dagger prime number theorem, almost simultaneously, by using some properties of $\zeta(s)$ (\rightarrow 123 Distribution of Prime Numbers B).

The following **approximate functional equation** is important in investigating the values of $\zeta(s)$:

$$\zeta(s) = \sum_{n \leq x} \frac{1}{n^s} + \varphi(s) \sum_{n < y} \frac{1}{n^{1-s}} + O(x^{-\sigma}) + O(y^{\sigma-1} |t|^{(1/2)-\sigma}),$$

where φ is \dagger Euler's function, and $\zeta(s) = \varphi(s)\zeta(1-s)$, $s = \sigma + it$, $2\pi xy = |t|$, and the approximation is uniform for $-h \leq \sigma \leq h$, $x > k$, $y > k$ with h and k positive constants (G. H. Hardy and J. E. Littlewood, 1921).

Euler obtained the values of $\zeta(s)$ for positive even integers s :

$$\zeta(2m) = \frac{2^{2m-1} \pi^{2m} B_{2m}}{(2m)!}$$

($m = 1, 2, 3, \dots$, and the B_{2m} are \dagger Bernoulli numbers). The values of $\zeta(s)$ for positive odd integers s , however, have not been expressed in such a simple form. The values of $\zeta(s)$ for negative integers s are given by $\zeta(0) = B_1(0)$

$$= -\frac{1}{2}, \zeta(1-n) = -\frac{B_n(0)}{n}, n = 2, 3, \dots, \text{ where}$$

the $B_n(x)$ are \dagger Bernoulli polynomials.

As a slight generalization of $\zeta(s)$, A. Hurwitz (1862) considered

$$\zeta(s, a) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{(n+a)^s}, \quad 0 < a \leq 1.$$

This is called the **Hurwitz ζ -function**. Thus $\zeta(s, 1) = \zeta(s)$, and $\zeta(s, 1/2) = (2^s - 1)\zeta(s)$. This function $\zeta(s, a)$ can also be continued analytically to the whole complex plane and satisfies a certain functional equation. But in general it has no Euler product expansion.

C. Dirichlet L -Functions

Let m be a positive integer, and classify all rational integers modulo m . The set of all classes coprime to m forms a multiplicative Abelian group of order $h = \varphi(m)$. Let χ be a \dagger character of this group. Call (n) the residue class of $n \bmod m$, and put $\chi(n) = \chi((n))$ when $(n, m) = 1$ and $\chi(n) = 0$ when $(n, m) \neq 1$. Now, the function of a complex variable s defined by

$$L(s, \chi) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\chi(n)}{n^s}$$

is called a **Dirichlet L -function**. This function converges absolutely for $\text{Re } s > 1$ and has an Euler product expansion

$$L(s, \chi) = \prod_p \frac{1}{1 - \chi(p)p^{-s}}.$$

If there exist a divisor f of m ($f \neq m$) and a character χ^0 modulo f such that $\chi(n) = \chi^0(n)$ for all n with $(n, m) = 1$, we call χ a **nonprimitive character**. Otherwise, χ is called a **primitive character**. If χ is nonprimitive, there exists such a unique primitive χ^0 . In this situation, the divisor f of m associated with χ^0 is called the **conductor** of χ (and of χ^0). We have

$$L(s, \chi) = L(s, \chi^0) \prod_{p|m} (1 - \chi^0(p)p^{-s}).$$

Let χ be primitive. If the conductor $f = 1$, then χ is a trivial character ($\chi = 1$), and $L(s)$ is equal to the Riemann ζ -function $\zeta(s)$. On the other hand, if $f > 1$, then $L(s)$ is an entire function of s . In particular, if χ is a nontrivial primitive character, $L(1) = L(1, \chi)$ is finite and nonzero. P. G. L. Dirichlet proved the theorem of existence of prime numbers in arithmetic progressions using this fact (\rightarrow 123 Distribution of Prime Numbers D).

$L(s, \chi)$ has a functional equation similar to that of $\zeta(s)$; namely, if χ is a primitive character with conductor f and we put

$$\xi(s, \chi) = (f/\pi)^{s/2} \Gamma((s+a)/2) L(s, \chi),$$

where $a = 0$ for $\chi(-1) = 1$ and $a = 1$ for $\chi(-1) = -1$, then we have

$$\xi(s, \chi) = W(\chi) \xi(1-s, \bar{\chi}),$$

where

$$W(\chi) = (-i)^a f^{-1/2} \tau(\chi), \quad \tau(\chi) = \sum_{n \bmod f} \chi(n) \zeta_f^n$$

($\zeta_f = \exp(2\pi i/f)$). The latter sum is called the **Gaussian sum**. Note that $|W(\chi)| = 1$.

The values of $L(s)$ for negative integers s are given by $L(1-m, \chi) = -B_{\chi, m}/m$ ($m = 1, 2, 3, \dots$), where the $B_{\chi, m}$ are defined by

$$\sum_{\mu=1}^f \frac{\chi(\mu) t e^{\mu t}}{e^{f t} - 1} = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} B_{\chi, m} t^m.$$

Moreover, if $\chi(-1) = -1$, we have

$$L(1, \chi) = \frac{\pi}{i} \frac{\tau(\chi)}{f} \sum_{x=1}^f (-\chi(\overline{x}) \cdot x) \\ = \pi i \tau(\chi) B_{\overline{x}, 1},$$

and if $\chi(-1) = 1$, $\chi \neq 1$, we have

$$L(1, \chi) = 2 \frac{\tau(\chi)}{f} \sum_{x=1}^{f/2} (-\chi(x) \log |1 - \zeta_f^x|).$$

In certain cases, the functional equation can be utilized to obtain the values of $L(m, \chi)$ from those of $L(1 - m, \chi)$. Actually, if $\chi(-1) = 1$, $m = 2n = 2, 4, 6, \dots$, we have

$$L(2n, \chi) = \frac{(-1)^n}{(2n)!} \left(\frac{2\pi}{f} \right)^{2n} \tau(\chi) (-B_{\chi, 2n}),$$

and if $\chi(-1) = -1$, $m = 2n + 1 = 3, 5, 7, \dots$, we have

$$L(2n + 1, \chi) \\ = (-i) \frac{(-1)^n}{(2n + 1)!} \left(\frac{2\pi}{f} \right)^{2n+1} \tau(\chi) (-B_{\chi, 2n+1}).$$

Dirichlet L -functions are important not only in the arithmetic of rational number fields but also in the arithmetic of quadratic or cyclotomic fields.

D. ζ -Functions of Algebraic Number Fields (Dedekind ζ -Functions)

The Riemann ζ -function can be generalized to ζ -functions of algebraic number fields (\rightarrow 14 Algebraic Number Fields). Let k be an algebraic number field of degree n , and let \mathfrak{a} run over all integral ideals of k . Consider the sequence $\zeta_k(s) = \sum_{\mathfrak{a}} N(\mathfrak{a})^{-s}$. This sequence converges for $\text{Re } s > 1$ and has an Euler product expansion $\zeta_k(s) = \prod_{\mathfrak{p}} (1 - N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s})^{-1}$, where \mathfrak{p} runs over all prime ideals of k . This function, which is continued analytically to the whole complex plane as a meromorphic function, is called a **Dedekind ζ -function**. Its only pole is a simple pole at $s = 1$, with the residue $h_k \kappa_k$. Here h_k is the class number of k , and $\kappa_k = 2^{r_1 + r_2} \pi^{r_2} R / (w |d|^{1/2})$, where r_1 ($2r_2$) is the number of isomorphisms of k into the real (complex) number field, w is the number of roots of unity in k , d is the discriminant of k , and R is the regulator of k (R. Dedekind, 1877) [D1].

The function $\zeta_k(s)$ has no zeros in $\text{Re } s \geq 1$, while in $\text{Re } s \leq 0$ it has zeros of order r_2 at $-1, -3, -5, \dots$, zeros of order $r_1 + r_2$ at $-2, -4, -6, \dots$, and a zero of order $r_1 + r_2 - 1$ at $s = 0$. All other zeros lie in the open strip $0 < \text{Re } s < 1$, which actually contains infinitely many zeros. It is conjectured that all these zeros lie on the line $\text{Re } s = 1/2$ (the Riemann hypothesis for Dedekind ζ -functions). To obtain a generali-

zation of the functional equation for the Riemann $\zeta(s)$ to the case of $\zeta_k(s)$, we put

$$\Xi_k(s) = \left(\frac{\sqrt{|d|}}{2^{r_2} \pi^{n/2}} \right)^s \Gamma\left(\frac{s}{2}\right)^{r_1} \Gamma(s)^{r_2} \zeta_k(s).$$

Then $\Xi_k(s) = \Xi_k(1 - s)$ (Hecke, 1917). If K is a Galois extension of k , then $\zeta_K(s)/\zeta_k(s)$ is an integral function (H. Aramata, 1933; R. Brauer, 1947).

E. Hecke L -Functions

As a generalization of Dirichlet L -functions to algebraic number fields, Hecke (1917) defined the following L -function $L_k(s, \chi)$: Let k be an algebraic number field of finite degree, and let $\mathfrak{m} = \mathfrak{m} \prod_{\infty}$ be an integral divisor (\mathfrak{m} the finite part, \prod_{∞} the infinite part). Consider the ideal class group of k modulo \mathfrak{m} and its character χ (here we put $\chi(\mathfrak{a}) = 0$ for $(\mathfrak{a}, \mathfrak{m}) \neq 1$). Then the L -functions are defined by

$$L_k(s, \chi) = \sum_{\mathfrak{a}} \chi(\mathfrak{a}) / N(\mathfrak{a})^s$$

[H2], where \mathfrak{a} runs over all integral ideals of k . $L_k(s, \chi)$ is called a **Hecke L -function**. It converges for $\text{Re } s > 1$ and has an Euler product expansion

$$L_k(s, \chi) = \prod_{\mathfrak{p}} \frac{1}{1 - \chi(\mathfrak{p}) N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s}}.$$

Here \mathfrak{p} runs over all prime ideals of k . If there is a divisor $\tilde{\mathfrak{f}} | \mathfrak{m}$ ($\tilde{\mathfrak{f}} \neq \mathfrak{m}$) and a character χ^0 modulo $\tilde{\mathfrak{f}}$ such that $\chi^0(\mathfrak{a}) = \chi(\mathfrak{a})$ for all \mathfrak{a} with $(\mathfrak{a}, \mathfrak{m}) = 1$, then χ is called **nonprimitive**; otherwise, χ is called a **primitive character**. In general, there exist unique such $\tilde{\mathfrak{f}}$ and χ^0 . In this situation, $\tilde{\mathfrak{f}}$ is called the **conductor** of χ . If χ is primitive and the conductor $\tilde{\mathfrak{f}}$ is (1) , then χ is a trivial character and $L_k(s, \chi)$ coincides with $\zeta_k(s)$. If χ is primitive and $\chi \neq 1$, then $L_k(s, \chi)$ is an integral function of s , and $L_k(1, \chi) \neq 0$. Utilizing this fact, it can be proved that there exist infinitely many prime ideals in each class of the ideal class group modulo an integral divisor \mathfrak{m} of k .

Let χ be a primitive character with the conductor $\tilde{\mathfrak{f}}$, d be the discriminant of k , $\sigma_1, \dots, \sigma_{r_1}$ be all distinct isomorphisms of k into the real number field \mathbf{R} , and \mathfrak{f} be the finite part of $\tilde{\mathfrak{f}}$. Then if ξ is an integer of k such that $\xi \equiv 1 \pmod{\mathfrak{f}}$, we have

$$\chi((\xi)) = (\text{sgn } \xi^{\sigma_1})^{a_1} \cdots (\text{sgn } \xi^{\sigma_{r_1}})^{a_{r_1}},$$

where a_m ($m = 1, \dots, r_1$) is either 0 or 1, depending on χ . By putting

$$\xi_k(s, \chi) = \left(\frac{\sqrt{|d|} N(\mathfrak{f})}{2^{r_2} \pi^{n/2}} \right)^s \cdot \prod_{m=1}^{r_1} \Gamma\left(\frac{s + a_m}{2}\right) \Gamma(s)^{r_2} \cdot L_k(s, \chi),$$

we have the following functional equation for the Hecke L -function:

$$\zeta_k(s, \chi) = W(\chi) \zeta_k(1-s, \bar{\chi}),$$

where $W(\chi)$ is a complex number with absolute value 1 and the exact value of $W(\chi)$ is given as a Gaussian sum. Just as some properties concerning the distribution of prime numbers can be proved using the Riemann ζ -function and Dirichlet L -functions, some properties concerning the distribution of prime ideals can be proved using the Hecke L -functions (\rightarrow 123 Distribution of Prime Numbers F).

T. Takagi used Hecke L -functions in founding his \dagger class field theory. In the other direction, this theory implies $L(1, \chi) \neq 0$ ($\chi \neq 1$).

Let K be a \dagger class field over k that corresponds to an ideal class group H of k with index h . By using class field theory, we obtain $\zeta_K(s) = \prod_{\chi} L_k(s, \chi)$, where the product is over all characters χ of ideal class groups of k , such that $\chi(H) = 1$. This formula can be regarded as an alternative formulation of the decomposition theorem of class field theory (\rightarrow 59 Class Field Theory). By taking the residues of both sides of the formula at $s = 1$, we obtain $h_K \kappa_K = h_k \kappa_k \prod_{\chi \neq 1} L_k(1, \chi)$.

In particular, if $k = \mathbf{Q}$ (the rational number field) and K is a quadratic number field $\mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{d})$ (d is the discriminant of K), then we have

$$\zeta_K(s) = \zeta(s) \cdot L(s), \quad L(s) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{d}{n}\right) n^{-s},$$

where (d/n) is the \dagger Kronecker symbol, and we put $(d/n) = 0$ when $(n, d) \neq 1$. From this, we obtain the class number formula for quadratic number fields (\rightarrow 347 Quadratic Fields). A similar method is used for computation of class numbers of cyclotomic fields K (\rightarrow 14 Algebraic Number Fields L).

In general, the computation of the relative class number h_K/h_k when K/k is an Abelian extension is reduced to the evaluation of $L(1, \chi)$. This computation has been made successfully for the following cases (besides for the examples in the previous paragraph): k is imaginary quadratic and K is the absolute class field of k or the class field corresponding to \dagger ray $S(m)$; k is totally real and K is a totally imaginary quadratic extension of k . H. M. Stark and T. Shintani made conjectures about the values of $L(1, \chi)$ [S25, S19].

Let $L(s, \chi)$ be a Hecke L -function for the character χ . Then it follows from the functional equation that the values of $L(s, \chi)$ at $s = 0, -1, -2, -3, \dots$ are zero if k is not totally real. Furthermore, if k is a totally real finite algebraic number field, then these values of $L(s, \chi)$ are algebraic numbers (C. L. Siegel, H. Klingen, T. Shintani).

F. Hecke L -Functions with Grössencharakteren

E. Hecke (1918, 1920) extended the notion of characters by introducing the \dagger Grössencharakter χ and defined L -functions with such characters:

$$L_k(s, \chi) = \sum_{\mathfrak{a}} \frac{\chi(\mathfrak{a})}{N(\mathfrak{a})^s}.$$

He also proved the existence of their Euler product expansions and showed that they satisfy certain functional equations [H3]. Moreover, by estimating the sum $\sum_{N(\mathfrak{p}) < x} \chi(\mathfrak{p})$, he obtained some results on the distribution of prime ideals.

Later, Iwasawa and J. Tate independently gave clearer definitions of the Grössencharakter χ and $L_k(s, \chi)$ by using harmonic analysis on the adèle and idele groups of k (\rightarrow 6 Adeles and Ideles) [L3].

Let \mathbf{J}_k be the idele group of k , \mathbf{P}_k be the group of \dagger principal ideles, and $\mathbf{C}_k = \mathbf{J}_k/\mathbf{P}_k$ be the idele class group. Then a Grössencharakter is a continuous character χ of \mathbf{C}_k , and χ induces a character of \mathbf{J}_k , which is also denoted by χ . Let $\mathbf{J}_k = \mathbf{J}_{\infty} \times \mathbf{J}_0$ be the decomposition of \mathbf{J}_k into the infinite part \mathbf{J}_{∞} and the finite part \mathbf{J}_0 . Let \mathbf{U}_0 be the unit group of \mathbf{J}_0 , and for each integral ideal \mathfrak{m} of k , put $\mathbf{U}_{\mathfrak{m},0} = \{u \in \mathbf{U}_0 \mid u \equiv 1 \pmod{\mathfrak{m}}\}$, so that $\{\mathbf{U}_{\mathfrak{m},0}\}$ forms a base for the neighborhood system of 1 in \mathbf{J}_0 . Put $\mathbf{J}_{\mathfrak{m},0} = \{a \in \mathbf{J}_0 \mid a_{\mathfrak{p}} = 1 \text{ for all } \mathfrak{p} \mid \mathfrak{m}\}$, and with each $a \in \mathbf{J}_{\mathfrak{m},0}$, associate an ideal $\tilde{a} = \prod_{\mathfrak{p}} \mathfrak{p}^{v_{\mathfrak{p}}(a)}$, where $a = (a_{\mathfrak{p}})$ and the ideal in $k_{\mathfrak{p}}$ generated by $a_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is equal to $\mathfrak{p}^{v_{\mathfrak{p}}(a)}$. Then the mapping $a \rightarrow \tilde{a}$ gives a homomorphism of $\mathbf{J}_{\mathfrak{m},0}$ into the group $G(\mathfrak{m}) = \{\tilde{a} \mid (a, \mathfrak{m}) = 1\}$, and its kernel is contained in $\mathbf{U}_{\mathfrak{m},0}$. Since χ is continuous, $\chi(\mathbf{U}_{\mathfrak{m},0}) = 1$ for some \mathfrak{m} . The greatest common divisor \mathfrak{f} of all such ideals \mathfrak{m} is called the **conductor** of χ . For each $a \in \mathbf{J}_{\mathfrak{f},0}$, $\chi(a)$ depends only on the ideal \tilde{a} ($\in G(\mathfrak{f})$); hence by putting $\chi(a) = \tilde{\chi}(\tilde{a})$, we obtain a character $\tilde{\chi}$ of $G(\mathfrak{f})$. Now put $L_k(s, \chi) = \sum \tilde{\chi}(\tilde{a})/N(\tilde{a})^s$, where the sum is over all integral ideals $\tilde{a} \in G(\mathfrak{f})$. This is called a **Hecke L -function with Grössencharakter** χ . For $\chi \neq 1$, it is an entire function. On the other hand, if we restrict χ to $\mathbf{J}_{\infty} = \mathbf{R}^{*r_1} \times \mathbf{C}^{*r_2}$, then for $u = (a_1, \dots, a_{r_1}, a_{r_1+1}, \dots, a_{r_1+r_2}) \in \mathbf{J}_{\infty}$, we have

$$\chi(u) = \prod_{j=1}^{r_1+r_2} |a_j|^{\lambda_j \sqrt{-1}} \cdot \prod_{j=1}^{r_1} (\operatorname{sgn} a_j)^{e_j} \cdot \prod_{l=r_1+1}^{r_1+r_2} \left(\frac{a_l}{|a_l|}\right)^{e_l},$$

where $e_j = 0$ or 1 , $e_l \in \mathbf{Z}$, $\lambda_j \in \mathbf{R}$. The numbers e_j , e_l , λ_j are determined uniquely by χ . Putting

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta_k(s, \chi) &= \left(\frac{\sqrt{|d|N(\mathfrak{f})}}{2^{r_2} \pi^{n/2}}\right)^s \cdot \prod_{j=1}^{r_1} \Gamma\left(\frac{s + e_j + \lambda_j \sqrt{-1}}{2}\right) \\ &\quad \times \prod_{l=r_1+1}^{r_1+r_2} \Gamma\left(s + \frac{|e_l| + \lambda_l \sqrt{-1}}{2}\right) \cdot L(s, \chi), \end{aligned}$$

we have a functional equation

$$\xi_k(s, \chi) = W(\chi) \xi_k(1-s, \bar{\chi}),$$

where $W(\chi)$ is a complex number with absolute value 1.

We can express $\xi_k(s, \chi)$ by an integral form on \mathbf{J}_k as

$$\xi_k(s, \chi) = c \int_{\mathbf{J}_k} \varphi(r) \chi(r) V(r)^s d^*r,$$

where $V(r)$ is the total volume of the idele r , c is a constant that depends on the Haar measure d^*r of \mathbf{J}_k , and $\varphi(r)$ is defined by

$$\varphi(r) = \prod_p \varphi_p(x_p), \quad r = (\dots x_p \dots),$$

$$\begin{aligned} \varphi_{p_{x,i}}(x) &= x^{e_i} e^{-\pi x^2}, \quad i \leq r_1, \quad k_{p_{x,i}} = \mathbf{R}, \\ &= \frac{1}{2\pi} \bar{x}^{e_i} e^{-2\pi|x|^2}, \quad e_i \geq 0, \\ &= \frac{1}{2\pi} x^{-e_i} e^{-2\pi|x|^2}, \quad e_i < 0, \end{aligned} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} i > r_1, \quad k_{p_{x,i}} = \mathbf{C}, \end{array} \right.$$

$$\begin{aligned} \varphi_p(x) &= e^{2\pi i \lambda(x)}, \quad x \in (\mathfrak{bf})_p^{-1}, \\ &= 0, \quad x \notin (\mathfrak{bf})_p^{-1} \end{aligned} \left\{ \begin{array}{l} p \text{ finite.} \end{array} \right.$$

Hence $(\mathfrak{bf})_p^{-1}$ is the p -component (\rightarrow 6 Adeles and Ideles B) of the ideal $(\mathfrak{bf})^{-1}$ (\mathfrak{b} is the different of k/\mathbf{Q}) and $\lambda(x)$ is an additive character of k_p defined as follows. \mathbf{Q}_p is the p -adic field, \mathbf{Z}_p is the ring of p -adic integers, λ_0 is the mapping $\mathbf{Q}_p \rightarrow \mathbf{Q}_p/\mathbf{Z}_p \subset \mathbf{Q}/\mathbf{Z} \subset \mathbf{R}/\mathbf{Z}$, and $\lambda = \lambda_0 \circ \text{Tr}_{k_p/\mathbf{Q}_p}$. By putting $\chi(r) = \prod_p \chi_p(x_p)$, $r = (\dots x_p \dots)$, we have

$$\xi_k(s, \chi) = c \prod_p \int_{k_p} \varphi_p(x) \chi_p(x) V_p(x)^{-s} d^*x,$$

where p runs over all prime divisors of k , finite or infinite. Moreover, with a constant C_p , we have

$$\begin{aligned} &\int_{k_{p_{x,i}}} \varphi_{p_{x,i}}(x) \chi_{p_{x,i}}(x) V_{p_{x,i}}(x)^{-s} d^*x \\ &= C_{p_{x,i}} \cdot \pi^{-(s + \sqrt{-1} \lambda_i + e_i)/2} \\ &\quad \times \Gamma((s + \sqrt{-1} \lambda_i + e_i)/2), \quad k_{p_{x,i}} = \mathbf{R}, \\ &= C_{p_{x,i}} \cdot (2\pi)^{-(s + \sqrt{-1} \lambda_i + |e_i|)/2} \\ &\quad \times \Gamma(s + (\sqrt{-1} \lambda_i + |e_i|)/2), \quad k_{p_{x,i}} = \mathbf{C}, \\ &\int_{k_p} \varphi(x) \chi_p(x) V_p(x)^{-s} d^*x \\ &= C_p N(\mathfrak{bf})^{s-1/2} \tilde{\chi}(\mathfrak{bf}^{-1}) \frac{1}{1 - \tilde{\chi}(\mathfrak{p})/N(\mathfrak{p})^s}, \\ &= C_p N((\mathfrak{bf})_p)^s \tau_p(\chi_p) \cdot \mu(U_{\mathfrak{f},p}), \quad p \nmid \mathfrak{f}. \end{aligned}$$

Here $\tau_p(\chi_p)$ is a constant called the **local Gaussian sum**, and $\mu(U_{\mathfrak{f},p})$ is the volume of $\{u \in k_p \mid u \equiv 1 \pmod{\mathfrak{f}}\}$. These integrals over k_p are the Γ -factors and Euler factors of $\xi_k(s, \chi)$, according as p is infinite or finite. The func-

tional equation is obtained by applying the * Poisson summation formula for $\varphi(x)$ and its * Fourier transform on the adèle group $\mathbf{A}_k (\rightarrow$ 6. Adeles and Ideles).

Let \mathbf{D}_k be the connected component of 1 in \mathbf{C}_k . If $\chi(\mathbf{D}_k) = 1$, the corresponding $\tilde{\chi}$ is a character of an ideal class group of k with a conductor \mathfrak{f} . Conversely, all such characters can be obtained in this manner.

As stated in Section E, the Hecke L -functions with characters (of ideal class groups) can be used to describe the decomposition law of prime divisors in class field theory. However, for L -functions with Grössencharakter, such arithmetic implications have not been found yet, except that in the case of Grössencharakter of A_0 type, Y. Taniyama discovered, following the suggestion of A. Weil, that the L -function has a deep connection with the arithmetic of a certain infinite Abelian extension of k [T2, W7]. In particular, when $L(s, \chi)$ is a factor of the * Hasse ζ -function of an Abelian variety A with * complex multiplication, it describes the arithmetic of the field generated by the coordinates of the division points of A .

G. Artin L -Functions

Let K be a finite Galois extension of an algebraic number field k (of degree n), $G = G(K/k)$ be its Galois group, $\sigma \rightarrow A(\sigma)$ be a matrix representation (characteristic 0) of G , and χ be its character. Let \mathfrak{p} be a prime ideal of k , and define $L_p(s, \chi)$ by

$$\log L_p(s, \chi) = \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{\chi(\mathfrak{p}^m)}{mN(\mathfrak{p}^m)^s}, \quad \text{Re } s > 1,$$

with $\chi(\mathfrak{p}^m) = (1/e) \sum_{\tau \in T} \chi(\sigma^m \tau)$, where T is the * inertia group of \mathfrak{p} , $|T| = e$, and σ is a * Frobenius automorphism of \mathfrak{p} . Then we have

$$L_p(s, \chi) = \det(E - A_p \cdot N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s})^{-1},$$

$$A_p = \frac{1}{e} \sum_{\tau \in T} A(\sigma \tau).$$

In particular, if $T = \{1\}$ (i.e., \mathfrak{p} is * unramified in K/k), then

$$L_p(s, \chi) = \det(E - A(\sigma) \cdot N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s})^{-1}.$$

Now put

$$L(s, \chi, K/k) = \prod_p L_p(s, \chi), \quad \text{Re } s > 1,$$

and call $L(s, \chi, K/k)$ an **Artin L -function** [A2].

(1) The most important property of $L(s, \chi, K/k)$ is that if K/k is an Abelian extension and χ is a linear character, it follows from class field theory that $\chi(\mathfrak{p})$ is the character of the ideal class group of k (modulo the conductor of K/k) and that the Artin L -function equals

a Hecke L -function. This equality is equivalent to Artin's reciprocity law, and in fact Artin obtained his reciprocity law after he conjectured the equality.

(2) If $K' \supset K \supset k$ and K'/k is a Galois extension, then $L(s, \chi, K/k) = L(s, \chi, K'/k)$.

(3) If $K \supset \Omega \supset k$ and ψ is a character of $G(K/\Omega)$, then $L(s, \psi, K/\Omega) = L(s, \chi_\psi, K/k)$, where χ_ψ is the character of $G(K/k)$ induced from ψ .

(4) If $\chi_1 = 1$, then $L(s, \chi_1, K/k) = \zeta_k(s)$.

(5) $L(s, \chi_1 + \chi_2, K/k) = L(s, \chi_1, K/k) \cdot L(s, \chi_2, K/k)$.

Conversely, the Artin L -function $L(s, \chi, K/k)$ is characterized by properties (1)–(5).

(6) If χ_R is the regular representation of G , then $L(s, \chi_R, K/k) = \zeta_K(s)$; hence

$$\zeta_K(s) = \zeta_k(s) \prod_{\chi \neq 1} L(s, \chi, K/k)^{d(1)},$$

where χ runs over all irreducible characters $\neq 1$ of G .

(7) Every character of a finite group G can be expressed as $\chi = \sum m_i \chi_{\psi_i}$ ($m_i \in \mathbb{Z}$), where each χ_{ψ_i} is an induced character from a certain linear character ψ_i of an elementary subgroup of G (**Brauer's theorem**). (Here an elementary subgroup is a subgroup that is the direct product of a cyclic group and a p -group for some prime p .) Hence (3) and (5) imply that an Artin L -function is the product of integral powers (positive or negative) of Hecke L -functions $L_{\Omega_i}(s, \psi_i)$:

$$L(s, \chi, K/k) = \prod_i L_{\Omega_i}(s, \psi_i)^{m_i}.$$

Hence an Artin L -function is a univalent meromorphic function defined over the whole complex plane. Artin made the still open conjecture that if χ is irreducible and $\chi \neq 1$, then $L(s, \chi, K/k)$ is an entire function (**Artin's conjecture**).

This conjecture holds obviously if all m_i are nonnegative. Except for such a case, Artin's conjecture had no affirmative examples until 1974, when Deligne and Serre [D9] proved that each "new cusp form" of weight 1 gives rise to an entire Artin L -function $L(s, \chi, K/k)$ with $\chi(1) = 2$ and $\chi(\rho) = 0$ (ρ is the complex conjugation); by this method, some nontrivial examples were computed by J. Tate and J. Buhler (*Lecture notes in math.* 654 (1978)). Then R. P. Langlands [L5] constructed nontrivial examples of Artin's conjecture for certain 2-dimensional representations

$$\text{Gal}(K/k) \ni \sigma \mapsto A(\sigma) \in \text{GL}(2, \mathbb{C})$$

by using ideas of H. Saito and T. Shintani [S1, S20]. This method works for all representations for which the image of the $A(\sigma)$ in $\text{PGL}(2, \mathbb{C})$ is the tetrahedral group. It also works for some octahedral cases, but a new idea is needed in the icosahedral case.

(8) Let $\mathfrak{p}_{x,i}$ ($i = 1, \dots, r_1 + r_2$) be the infinite primes of k . Put

$$\gamma(s, \chi, \mathfrak{p}_{x,i}, K/k) = (\Gamma(s/2) \Gamma((s+1)/2))^{x(1)}$$

for complex $\mathfrak{p}_{x,i}$,

$$= \Gamma(s/2)^{(x(1) + \chi(\sigma))/2} \Gamma((s+1)/2)^{(x(1) - \chi(\sigma))/2}$$

for real $\mathfrak{p}_{x,i}$,

where $\sigma \in G$ is the complex conjugation determined by a prime factor of $\mathfrak{p}_{x,i}$ in K . Next we introduce the notion of the **conductor** \mathfrak{f}_χ with the **group character** χ defined by Artin (*J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 164 (1931)). First, for any subset $m \subset G$, we put $\chi(m) = \sum_{g \in m} \chi(g)$; then \mathfrak{f}_χ is given by

$$\mathfrak{f}_\chi = \mathfrak{f}(\chi, K/k) = \prod_{\mathfrak{p}} \mathfrak{p}^{f(\mathfrak{p})},$$

where

$$f(\mathfrak{p}) = \frac{1}{e} [\{e\chi(1) - \chi(T)\} + \{p^{e_1}\chi(1) - \chi(V_1)\} + \{p^{e_2}\chi(1) - \chi(V_2)\} + \dots],$$

and where V_1, V_2, \dots , are the higher ramification groups of prime factors of \mathfrak{p} in K (in lower numbering) and $p^{e_i} = |V_i|$ (\rightarrow 14 Algebraic Number Fields I).

Now put

$$\xi(s, \chi, K/k) = \left(\frac{|d|^{x(1)} N_k(\mathfrak{f}_\chi)}{\pi^{n x(1)}} \right)^{s/2} \times \prod_{\mathfrak{p}_{x,i}} \gamma(s, \chi, \mathfrak{p}_{x,i}, K/k) \cdot L(s, \chi, K/k).$$

Then the functional equation is written

$$\xi(1-s, \bar{\chi}, K/k) = W(\chi) \xi(s, \chi, K/k), \quad |W(\chi)| = 1.$$

The known proof of this functional equation depends on (7) and the functional equations of Hecke L -functions discussed in Section E. As for the constants $W(\chi)$, there are significant results by B. Dwork, Langlands, and Deligne [D6].

(9) There are some applications to the theory of the distribution of prime ideals.

H. Weil L -Functions

Weil defined a new L -function that is a generalization of both Artin L -functions and Hecke L -functions with Grössencharakter [W5]. Let K be a finite Galois extension of an algebraic number field k , let C_K be the idele class group K_A^\times / K^\times of K , and let $\alpha_{K,k} \in H^2(\text{Gal}(K/k), C_K)$ be the canonical cohomology class of class field theory. Then this $\alpha_{K,k}$ determines an extension $W_{K,k}$ of $\text{Gal}(K/k)$ by $C_K: 1 \rightarrow C_K \rightarrow W_{K,k} \rightarrow \text{Gal}(K/k) \rightarrow 1$ (exact), and

the transfer induces an isomorphism $W_{K/k}^{ab} \simeq C_k$, where ab denotes the topological commutator quotient. If L is a Galois extension of k containing K , then there is a canonical homomorphism $W_{L/k} \rightarrow W_{K/k}$. Hence we define the **Weil group** W_k for \bar{k}/k as the \dagger projective limit group $\text{proj}_K \lim W_{K/k}$ of the $W_{K/k}$. It is obvious that we have a surjective homomorphism $\varphi: W_k \rightarrow \text{Gal}(\bar{k}/k)$ and an isomorphism $r_k: C_k \rightarrow W_k^{ab}$, where W_k^{ab} is the maximal Abelian Hausdorff quotient of W_k . For $w \in W_k$, let $\|w\|$ be the adelic norm of $r_k^{-1}(w)$.

If k_v is a \dagger local field, then we define the Weil group W_{k_v} for \bar{k}_v/k_v by replacing the idele class group C_k with the multiplicative group K_w^\times in the above definition, where K_w denotes a Galois extension of k_v . If k_v is the completion of a finite algebraic number field k at a place v , then we have natural homomorphisms $k_v^\times \rightarrow C_k$ and $\text{Gal}(\bar{k}_v/k_v) \rightarrow \text{Gal}(\bar{k}/k)$. Accordingly, we have a homomorphism $W_{k_v} \rightarrow W_k$ that commutes with these homomorphisms.

Let W_k be the Weil group of an algebraic number field k , and let $\rho: W_k \rightarrow GL(V)$ be a continuous representation of W_k on a complex vector space V . Let $v = \mathfrak{p}$ be a finite prime of k , and let ρ_v be the representation of W_{k_v} induced from ρ . Let Φ be an element of W_{k_v} such that $\varphi(\Phi)$ is the inverse Frobenius element of \mathfrak{p} in $\text{Gal}(\bar{k}_v/k_v)$, and let I be the subgroup of W_{k_v} consisting of elements w such that $\varphi(w)$ belongs to the \dagger inertia group of \mathfrak{p} in $\text{Gal}(\bar{k}_v/k_v)$. Let V^I be the subspace of elements in V fixed by $\rho_v(I)$, let $N_{\mathfrak{p}}$ be the norm of \mathfrak{p} , and let

$$L_{\mathfrak{p}}(V, s) = \det(1 - (N_{\mathfrak{p}})^{-s} \rho_v(\Phi) | V^I)^{-1}.$$

We can define $L_v(V, s)$ for each Archimedean prime v also, and let

$$L(V, s) = \prod_v L_v(V, s).$$

Then this product converges for s in some right half-plane and defines a function $L(V, s)$. We call $L(V, s)$ the **Weil L -function** for the representation $\rho: W_k \rightarrow GL(V)$. This function $L(V, s)$ can be extended to a meromorphic function on the complex plane and satisfies the functional equation

$$L(V, s) = \varepsilon(V, s) L(V^*, 1 - s)$$

(T. Tamagawa), where V^* is the dual of V , and $\varepsilon(V, s)$ is an exponential function of s of the form ab^s [T6].

P. Deligne generalized these results in the following manner: Let W'_k be a \dagger group scheme over \mathbb{Q} which is the \dagger semidirect product of W_k by the additive group G_a , on which W_k acts by the rule $wxw^{-1} = \|w\|x$. We can define the notion of representations of W'_k and the L -functions of them in the natural manner [T6].

I. The Riemann Hypothesis

As mentioned in Section B, the Riemann hypothesis asserts that all zeros of the Riemann ζ -function in $0 < \text{Re } s < 1$ lie on the line $\text{Re } s = 1/2$. In his celebrated paper [R1], Riemann gave six conjectures (including this), and assuming these conjectures, proved the \dagger prime number theorem:

$$\pi(x) \sim \frac{x}{\log x} \sim \text{Li}(x) = \int_2^x \frac{dx}{\log x}, \quad x \rightarrow \infty.$$

Here $\pi(x)$ denotes the number of prime numbers smaller than x . Among his six conjectures, all except the Riemann hypothesis have been proved (a detailed discussion is given in [L1]). The prime number theorem was proved independently by Hadamard and de La Vallée-Poussin without using the Riemann hypothesis (— Section B; 123 Distribution of Prime Numbers B).

R. S. Lehman showed that there are exactly 2,500,000 zeros of $\zeta(\sigma + it)$ for which $0 < t < 170,571.35$, all of which lie on the critical line $\sigma = 1/2$ and are simple (*Math. Comp.*, 20 (1966)). Later R. P. Brent extended this computation up to 75,000,000 first zeros (1979).

Hardy proved that there are infinitely many zeros of $\zeta(s)$ on the line $\text{Re } s = 1/2$ (1914). Furthermore, A. Selberg [S6] proved that if $N_0(T)$ is the number of zeros of $\zeta(s)$ on the line with $0 < \text{Im } s < T$, then $N_0(T) > AT \log T$ (A is a positive constant) (1942). Thus if $N(T)$ is the number of zeros of $\zeta(s)$ in the rectangle $0 < \text{Re } s < 1$, $0 < \text{Im } s < T$, then $\liminf_{T \rightarrow \infty} N_0(T)/N(T) > 0$. N. Levinson proved $\liminf_{T \rightarrow \infty} N_0(T)/N(T) > 1/3$ (*Advances in Math.*, 13 (1974)). If $N_{\varepsilon}(T)$ is the number of zeros of $\zeta(s)$ in $1/2 - \varepsilon < \text{Re } s < 1/2 + \varepsilon$, $0 < \text{Im } s < T$, then $\lim_{T \rightarrow \infty} N_{\varepsilon}(T)/N(T) = 1$ for any positive number ε (H. Bohr and E. Landau, 1914). Bohr studied the distribution of the values of $\zeta(s)$ in detail and initiated the theory of \dagger almost periodic functions (1925).

D. Hilbert remarked in his lecture at the Paris Congress that the Riemann hypothesis is equivalent to

$$\pi(x) = \text{Li}(x) + O(\sqrt{x} \log x), \quad x \rightarrow \infty$$

(H. von Koch, 1901). It is also equivalent to

$$\sum_{n=1}^N \mu(n) = O(N^{1/2+\varepsilon}), \quad N \rightarrow \infty,$$

for any $\varepsilon > 0$, where $\mu(n)$ is the Möbius function. Assuming the Riemann hypothesis, we get

$$N(T) = \frac{1}{2\pi} T \log T - \frac{1 + \log 2\pi}{2\pi} T + o(\log T)$$

(Littlewood, 1924).

The computation of the zeros of the ζ -functions and the L -functions of general algebraic number fields is more difficult, but conjectures similar to the Riemann hypothesis have been proposed.

Weil showed that a necessary and sufficient condition for the validity of the Riemann hypothesis for all Hecke L -functions $L(s, \chi)$ is that a certain \dagger distribution on the idele group \mathbf{J}_K be positive definite [W1 (1952b)].

It is not known whether the general ζ - and L -functions of algebraic number fields have any zeros in the interval $(0, 1)$ on the real axis (see the works of A. Selberg and S. Chowla). Similar problems are considered for the various ζ -functions given in Sections P, Q, and T.

J. p -Adic L -Functions

Let χ be a \dagger primitive Dirichlet character with conductor f , and let $L(s, \chi)$ be the \dagger Dirichlet L -function for χ . Then the values $L(1-n, \chi)$ of $L(s, \chi)$ at nonpositive integers $1-n$ ($n=1, 2, \dots$) are algebraic numbers (\rightarrow Section E). Let p be a prime number, let \mathbf{Q}_p be the $\dagger p$ -adic number field, and let \mathbf{C}_p be the completion of the algebraic closure $\bar{\mathbf{Q}}_p$ of \mathbf{Q}_p . It is known that \mathbf{C}_p is also algebraically closed. Since $\mathbf{Q} \subset \mathbf{Q}_p$, we fix an embedding $\bar{\mathbf{Q}} \subset \bar{\mathbf{Q}}_p$ and consider $\{L(1-n, \chi)\}_{n=1}^\infty$ as a sequence in \mathbf{C}_p .

Let $| \cdot |_p$ be the extension to \mathbf{C}_p of the standard p -adic valuation of \mathbf{Q}_p . Let q be p or 4 according as $p \neq 2$ or $p=2$, and let ω be the primitive Dirichlet character with conductor q satisfying $\omega(n) \equiv n \pmod{q}$ for any integer n prime to p . Then T. Kubota and H. W. Leopoldt proved that there exists a unique function $L_p(s, \chi)$ satisfying the conditions [K5]:

- (1) $L_p(s, \chi) = \frac{a_{-1}}{s-1} + \sum_{n=0}^\infty a_n(s-1)^n$ ($a_n \in \mathbf{C}_p$);
- (2) $a_{-1} = 0$ if $\chi \neq 1$ and the series $\sum_{n=0}^\infty a_n(s-1)^n$ converges for $|s-1|_p < |q^{-1}p^{1/(p-1)}|_p$;
- (3) $L_p(1-n, \chi) = (1 - \chi\omega^{-n}p^{1-n})L(1-n, \chi\omega^{-n})$ holds for $n=1, 2, 3, \dots$.

The function $L_p(s, \chi)$ satisfying these three conditions is called the **p -adic L -function** for the character χ . It is easy to see that $L_p(s, \chi)$ is identically zero if $\chi(-1) = -1$, but $L_p(s, \chi)$ is nontrivial if $\chi(-1) = 1$.

Let B_n be the Bernoulli number. Then B_n satisfies the conditions: (1) B_n/n is p -integral if $(p-1) \nmid n$ (von Staudt) and (2) $(1/n)B_n \equiv (1/(n+p-1))B_{n+p-1} \pmod{p}$ holds in this case (Kummer). The generalization of these results for the generalized Bernoulli number $B_{\chi, n}$ was obtained by Leopoldt. Since $L(1-n, \chi) = -(1/n)B_{\chi, n}$, such p -integrabilities and congruences can be naturally interpreted and

generalized in terms of the p -adic L -functions $L(s, \chi)$.

We assume $\chi(-1) = 1$. Then $L_p(0, \chi) = (1 - \chi\omega^{-1}(p))L(0, \chi\omega^{-1})$ and $\chi\omega^{-1}(-1) = -1$. Hence we can express the first factor h_N^- of the class number of a cyclotomic field $\mathbf{Q}(\exp(2\pi i/N))$ as a product of some $L_p(0, \chi)$'s. By using this fact, K. Iwasawa proved [I7] that the p -part $p^{e_n^-}$ of the \dagger first factor $h_{Np^n}^-$ ($N \in \mathbf{N}$) satisfies

$$e_n^- = \lambda n + \mu p^n + v \quad (\lambda, \mu, v \in \mathbf{Z}; \lambda, \mu \geq 0)$$

for any sufficiently large n . Here Iwasawa conjectured $\mu = 0$, which was proved by B. Ferrero and L. Washington [F1]. Also, we can obtain some congruences involving the first factor h_N^- of $\mathbf{Q}(\exp(2\pi i/N))$ from this formula.

Let χ be a nontrivial primitive Dirichlet character with conductor f , let

$$\tau(\chi) = \sum_{a=1}^f \chi(a) e^{2\pi i a/f}$$

be the \dagger Gaussian sum for χ , and let \log_p be the p -adic logarithmic function. Then Leopoldt [L6] calculated the value $L(1, \chi)$ and obtained

$$L_p(1, \chi) = - \left(1 - \frac{\chi(p)}{p} \right) \frac{\tau(\chi)}{f} \sum_{a=1}^f \chi(a) \log_p(1 - e^{-2\pi i a/f}).$$

As an application of this formula, Leopoldt obtained a p -adic \dagger class number formula for the maximal real subfield $F = \mathbf{Q}(\cos(2\pi/N))$ of $\mathbf{Q}(\exp(2\pi i/N))$: Let $\zeta_p(s, F)$ be the product of the $L_p(s, \chi)$ for all primitive Dirichlet characters χ such that (1) $\chi(-1) = 1$ and (2) the conductor of χ is a divisor of N . We define the **p -adic regulator R_p** by replacing the usual log by the p -adic logarithmic function \log_p . Let h be the class number of F , $m = [F:\mathbf{Q}]$, and let d be the discriminant of F . Then the residue of $\zeta_p(s, F)$ at $s=1$ is

$$\prod_{\chi} \left(1 - \frac{\chi(p)}{p} \right) \frac{2^{m-1} h R_p}{\sqrt{d}}.$$

Hence $\zeta_p(s, F)$ has a simple pole at $s=1$ if and only if $R_p \neq 0$. In general, for any totally real finite algebraic number field F , Leopoldt conjectured that the p -adic regulator R_p of F is not zero (**Leopoldt's conjecture**). This conjecture was proved by J. Ax and A. Brumer for the case when F is an Abelian extension of \mathbf{Q} [A4, B7].

By making use of the Stickelberger element, Iwasawa gave another proof of the existence of the p -adic L -function [I7]. In particular, he obtained the following result: Let χ be a primitive Dirichlet character with conductor f . Then there exists a primitive Dirichlet character θ such that the p -part of the conductor of θ is

either 1 or q and such that the conductor and the order of $\chi\theta^{-1}$ are both powers of p . Let \mathfrak{o}_θ be the ring generated over the ring \mathbf{Z}_p of p -adic integers by the values of θ . Then there exists a unique element $f(x, \theta)$ of the quotient field of $\mathfrak{o}_\theta[[x]]$ depending only on θ and satisfying

$$L_p(s, \chi) = 2f(\zeta(1 + q_0)^s - 1, \theta),$$

where q_0 is the least common multiple of q and the conductor of θ , and $\zeta = \chi(1 + q_0)^{-1}$. Furthermore, Iwasawa proved that $f(x, \theta)$ belongs to $\mathfrak{o}_\theta[[x]]$ if θ is not trivial.

Let $P = \mathbf{Q}(\exp(2\pi i/q))$ and, for any $n \geq 1$, let $P_n = \mathbf{Q}(\exp(2\pi i/q^n))$. Let $P_\infty = \bigcup_{n \geq 1} P_n$. Then P_∞ is a Galois extension of \mathbf{Q} satisfying $\text{Gal}(P_\infty/\mathbf{Q}) \cong \mathbf{Z}_p^\times$ (the multiplicative group of p -adic units), and P is the subfield of P_∞/\mathbf{Q} corresponding to the subgroup $1 + q\mathbf{Z}_p$ of \mathbf{Z}_p^\times .

Let ψ be a \mathbf{C}_p -valued primitive Dirichlet character such that (1) $\psi(-1) = -1$ and (2) the p -part of the conductor f_ψ of ψ is either 1 or q . Let K_ψ be the cyclic extension of \mathbf{Q} corresponding to ψ by class field theory. Let $K = K_\psi \cdot P$, $K_n = K \cdot P_n$ and $K_\infty = K \cdot P_\infty$. Let A_n be the p -primary part of the ideal class group of K_n , let $A_n \rightarrow A_m$ ($n \geq m$) be the mapping induced by the \dagger relative norm N_{K_n/K_m} , and let $X_K = \varprojlim A_n$. Since each A_n is a finite p -group, X_K is a \mathbf{Z}_p -module. Let $V_K = X_K \otimes_{\mathbf{Z}_p} \mathbf{C}_p$, and let $V_\psi = \{v \in V_K \mid \delta(v) = \psi(\delta)v \text{ for all } \delta \in \text{Gal}(K/\mathbf{Q})\}$.

Let q_0 be the least common multiple of f_ψ and q , and let γ_0 be the element of $\text{Gal}(K_\infty/K)$ that corresponds to

$$1 + q_0 \in 1 + q\mathbf{Z}_p = \text{Gal}(P_\infty/P)$$

by the restriction mapping $\text{Gal}(K_\infty/K) \hookrightarrow \text{Gal}(P_\infty/P)$. Let $f_\psi(x)$ be the characteristic polynomial of $\gamma_0 - 1$ acting on V_ψ . Hence $f_\psi(x)$ is an element of $\mathfrak{o}_\psi[[x]]$.

We assume that $\omega\psi^{-1}$ is not trivial. Let $f(x, \omega\psi^{-1})$ be as before. Then $f(x, \omega\psi^{-1})$ is an element of $\mathfrak{o}_\psi[[x]]$. Iwasawa conjectured that $f_\psi(x)$ and $f(x, \omega\psi^{-1})$ coincide up to a unit of $\mathfrak{o}_\psi[[x]]$ (**Iwasawa's main conjecture**). This conjecture was proved recently by B. Mazur and A. Wiles in the case where ψ is a power of ω .

Let F be a totally real finite algebraic number field, let K be a totally real Abelian extension of F , and let χ be a character of $\text{Gal}(K/F)$. Let $L(s, \chi)$ be the \dagger Artin L -function for χ . Then we can construct the p -adic analog $L_p(s, \chi)$ of $L(s, \chi)$ (J.-P. Serre, J. Coates, W. Sinnott, P. Deligne, K. Ribet, P. Cassou-Nogués). But, at present, we have no formula for $L_p(1, \chi)$. Coates generalized Iwasawa's main conjecture to this case, but it has not yet been proven.

p -adic L -functions have been defined in some other cases (e.g. \rightarrow [K3, M1, M3]).

K. ζ -Functions of Quadratic Forms

Dirichlet defined a Dirichlet series associated with a binary quadratic form and also considered a sum of such Dirichlet series extended over all classes of binary quadratic forms with a given discriminant D , which is actually equivalent to the Dedekind ζ -function of a quadratic field. Dirichlet obtained a formula for the class numbers of binary quadratic forms. The formula is interpreted nowadays as a formula for the class numbers of quadratic fields in the narrow sense.

According as the binary quadratic form is definite or indefinite, we apply different methods to obtain its class number.

Epstein ζ -functions: P. Epstein generalized the definition of the ζ -function of a positive definite binary quadratic form to the case of n variables (*Math. Ann.*, 56 (1903), 63 (1907)). Let V be a real vector space of dimension m with a positive definite quadratic form Q . Let M be a \dagger lattice in V , and put

$$\zeta_Q(s, M) = \sum_{\substack{x \in M \\ x \neq 0}} \frac{1}{Q(x)^s}, \quad \text{Re } s > \frac{m}{2}.$$

This series is absolutely convergent in $\text{Re } s > m/2$, and

$$\lim_{s \rightarrow m/2} \left(s - \frac{m}{2}\right) \zeta_Q(s, M) = D(M)^{-1/2} \pi^{m/2} \Gamma\left(\frac{m}{2}\right)^{-1},$$

$$D(M) = \det|Q(x_i, x_j)|,$$

where x_1, \dots, x_m is a basis of M and $Q(x, y) = (Q(x+y) - Q(x) - Q(y))/2$. If the $Q(x)$ ($x \in M, x \neq 0$) are all positive integers, we can write

$$\zeta_Q(s, M) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a(n)}{n^s},$$

where $a(n)$ is the number of distinct $x \in M$ with $Q(x) = n$. In general, let x_1, \dots, x_m be a basis of the lattice M and x_1^*, \dots, x_m^* be its dual basis ($Q(x_i, x_j^*) = \delta_{ij}$). Call $M^* = \sum_i x_i^* \mathbf{Z}$ the **dual lattice** of M . If we consider the ϑ -series (\dagger theta series)

$$\vartheta_Q(u, M) = \sum_{x \in M} \exp(-\pi u Q(x)) \quad (\text{Re } u > 0),$$

then

$$\vartheta_Q(u, M) = (u^{-m/2} D(M)^{-1/2}) \vartheta_Q(u^{-1}, M^*).$$

With $\zeta_Q(s, M) = \pi^{-s} \Gamma(s) \zeta_Q(s, M)$, the displayed equality leads to the functional equation

$$\zeta_Q(s, M) = D(M)^{-1/2} \cdot \zeta_Q\left(\frac{m}{2} - s, M^*\right).$$

In general, $\zeta_Q(s, M)$ has no Euler product expansion.

Consider the case where $M = \sum \mathbf{Z}x_i$ ($x_i =$

$(0, \dots, 0, 1, 0, \dots, 0)$, $Q(x) = \sum_{i=1}^m u_i^2$, for $x = (u_1, \dots, u_m)$. If we put $\zeta_m(s) = \zeta_Q(s, M)$, $L(s) = \sum_{n=1}^\infty (-4/n)n^{-s}$, then we have

$$\begin{aligned}\zeta_1(s) &= 2\zeta(2s), \\ \zeta_2(s) &= 4\zeta(s) \cdot L(s) = 4 \\ &\quad \times (\text{the Dedekind } \zeta\text{-function of } \mathbf{Q}(\sqrt{-1})), \\ \zeta_4(s) &= 8(1 - 2^{2-2s})\zeta(s)\zeta(s-1), \\ \zeta_6(s) &= -4(\zeta(s)L(s-2) - 4\zeta(s-2)L(s)), \\ \zeta_8(s) &= 16(1 - 2^{1-s} + 2^{4-2s})\zeta(s)\zeta(s-3), \\ \zeta_{10}(s) &= (4/5)(\zeta(s)L(s-4) + 4^2\zeta(s-4)L(s)) \\ &\quad - 2 \sum_{\substack{\mu \in \mathbf{Z}[\sqrt{-1}] \\ \mu \neq 0}} \frac{\mu^4}{(\mu\bar{\mu})^s}, \\ \zeta_{12}(s) &= c_1 2^{-s}\zeta(s)\zeta(s-5)(2^6 - 2^{6-s}) \\ &\quad + c_2 \varphi\{\sqrt{\Delta(\tau)}\},\end{aligned}$$

where $\varphi\{\sqrt{\Delta(\tau)}\}$ is the Dirichlet series corresponding to $\sqrt{\Delta(\tau)}$ by the * Mellin transform and $\Delta(\tau) = z \{\prod_{n=1}^\infty (1 - z^n)\}^{24}$ with $z = e^{2\pi i \tau}$. $\zeta_m(s)$ has zeros on the line $\text{Re } s = \sigma = m/4$, given explicitly for $m = 4, 8$ as follows:

$$\begin{aligned}m=4: \quad s &= 1 + l\pi i / \log 2, \quad l = 1, 2, \dots, \\ m=8: \quad s &= 2 + (i/\log 2)(2l\pi \pm \arctan \sqrt{15}), \\ &\quad l = 0, \pm 1, \dots\end{aligned}$$

Regarding the Epstein ζ -function of binary quadratic forms

$$\zeta_Q(s) = \sum_{m,n} Q(m, n)^{-s},$$

with

$$\begin{aligned}Q(x, y) &= ax^2 + bxy + cy^2, \\ a, b, c &\in \mathbf{R}, a > 0, c > 0, \Delta = 4ac - b^2 > 0,\end{aligned}$$

we have the Chowla-Selberg formula (1949):

$$\begin{aligned}\zeta_Q(s) &= \left(2\zeta(2s)a^{-s} + \frac{2^{2s}a^{s-1}\sqrt{\pi}}{\Gamma(s)\Delta^{s-1/2}} \right. \\ &\quad \times \zeta(2s-1)\Gamma\left(s-\frac{1}{2}\right) \Bigg) \\ &\quad + \left(\frac{\pi^s 2^{s+3/2}}{a^{1/2}\Gamma(s)\Delta^{s/2-1/4}} \right. \\ &\quad \times \sum_{n=1}^\infty n^{s-1/2} \sigma_{1-2s}(n) \cos \frac{n\pi b}{a} \Bigg) \\ &\quad \times \int_0^\infty \varphi^{s-3/2} \exp \left\{ -\frac{\pi n \Delta^{1/2}}{2a} (\varphi + \varphi^{-1}) \right\} d\varphi,\end{aligned}$$

where $\sigma_k(n) = \sum_{d|n} d^k$ and $\zeta(s)$ is the Riemann ζ -function. By using this formula, we can give another proof of the following result of H. Heilbronn: Let $h(-\Delta)$ be the class number of the imaginary quadratic field with discriminant $-\Delta$. Then $h(-\Delta) \rightarrow \infty$ ($\Delta \rightarrow \infty$).

The following generalization of this result was obtained by C. L. Siegel [S22]: Let k be a fixed finite algebraic number field. Let K be a finite Galois extension of k , and let $d = d(K)$, $h = h(K)$, and $R = R(K)$ be the discriminant of K , the class number of K , and the regulator of K , respectively. We assume that K runs over extensions of k such that $[K:k]/\log d \rightarrow 0$; then we have

$$\log(hR) \sim \log \sqrt{|d|}.$$

Siegel ζ -functions of indefinite quadratic forms: Siegel defined and investigated some ζ -functions attached to nondegenerate indefinite quadratic forms, which are also meromorphic on the whole complex plane and satisfy certain functional equations [S24].

The case of quadratic forms with irrational algebraic coefficients was treated by Tamagawa and K. G. Ramanathan.

L. ζ -Functions of Algebras

K. Hey defined the ζ -function of a * simple algebra A over the rational number field \mathbf{Q} (M. Deuring [D10]) (\rightarrow 27 Arithmetic of Associative Algebras). Consider an arbitrary * maximal order \mathfrak{o} of A , and let

$$\zeta_A(s) = \sum_{\mathfrak{a}} \frac{1}{N(\mathfrak{a})^s}, \quad \text{Re } s > 1,$$

with the summation taken over all left integral ideals \mathfrak{a} of \mathfrak{o} . Then ζ_A is independent of the choice of a maximal order \mathfrak{o} . Let k be the * center of A , and put $[A:k] = n^2$. First, ζ_A is decomposed into Euler's infinite product expansion $\zeta_A(s) = \prod_{\mathfrak{p}} Z_{\mathfrak{p}}(s)$ (\mathfrak{p} runs over the prime ideals of k). For \mathfrak{p} not dividing the discriminant \mathfrak{d} of A , $Z_{\mathfrak{p}}(s)$ coincides with the \mathfrak{p} -component of $\prod_{j=0}^{n-1} \zeta_k(ns-j)$. Hence $\zeta_A(s)$ coincides with $\prod_{j=0}^{n-1} \zeta_k(ns-j)$ up to a product of \mathfrak{p} -factors for $\mathfrak{p} | \mathfrak{d}$ which are explicit rational functions of $N(\mathfrak{p})^{-ns}$.

Moreover, if A is the total matrix algebra of degree r over the division algebra \mathfrak{D} , then we have $\zeta_A(s) = \prod_{j=0}^{r-1} \zeta_{\mathfrak{D}}(rs-j)$, and $\zeta_{\mathfrak{D}}(s)$ satisfies a functional equation similar to that of $\zeta_k(s)$ (Hey). Also, $\zeta_A(s)$ is meromorphic over the whole complex plane, and at $s = 1, (n-1)/n, \dots, 1/n$, it has poles of order 1. Using analytic methods, M. Zorn (1931) showed that the simple algebra A with center k such that $A_{\mathfrak{p}}$ is a matrix algebra over $k_{\mathfrak{p}}$ for every finite or infinite prime divisor \mathfrak{p} of k is itself a matrix algebra over k (\rightarrow 27 Arithmetic of Associative Algebras D). A purely algebraic proof of this was given by Brauer, H. Hasse, and E. Noether. G. Fujisaki (1958) gave another proof using the Iwasawa-Tate method. As a direct

application of the ζ -function, the computation of the residue at $s=1$ of ζ_A leads to the formula containing the class number of maximal order \mathfrak{D} .

Godement defined the ζ -function of fairly general algebras [G1], and Tamagawa investigated in detail the explicit ζ -functions of division algebras, deriving their functional equations [T1].

Let $\tilde{A} = \prod_p A_p$ be the adèle ring of A , and let $G = \prod_p G_p$ be the idele group (of A). We take a maximal order \mathfrak{D}_p of A_p and a maximal compact subgroup U_p of G_p . Let ω_p be a \dagger zonal spherical function of G_p with respect to U_p ; that is, ω_p is a function in G_p and satisfies

$$\omega_p(ugv) = \omega_p(g) \quad (u, v \in U_p), \quad \omega_p(1) = 1,$$

$$\int_{U_p} \omega_p(guh) du = \omega_p(g) \omega_p(h).$$

In addition, we define the weight function φ_p on A_p by

$$\varphi_p(x) = \begin{cases} \text{the characteristic function of } \mathfrak{D}_p \\ \text{when } p \text{ is finite,} \\ \exp(-\pi T_p(xx^*)) \\ \text{when } p \text{ is infinite,} \end{cases}$$

where T_p is the \dagger reduced trace of A_p/\mathbf{R} and $*$ is a positive \dagger involution. Tamagawa gave an explicit form of the local ζ -function with the character ω_p defined by

$$\zeta_p(s, \omega_p) = \int_{G_p} \varphi_p(g) \omega_p(g^{-1}) |N_p(g)|_p^s dg,$$

where N_p is the \dagger reduced norm of A_p/k_p , and $|\cdot|_p$ is the valuation of k_p . Then $\omega = \prod_p \omega_p$ is the zonal spherical function of G with respect to $\prod U_p = U$. In particular, if ω is a positive definite zonal spherical function belonging to the spectrum of the discrete subgroup $\Gamma = A^* = \{\text{all the invertible elements of } A\}$ of G , then the **Tamagawa ζ -function** with character ω is given by

$$\zeta(s, \omega) = \prod_p \zeta_p(s, \omega_p) = \int_G \varphi(g) \omega(g^{-1}) \|g\|^s dg,$$

where $\varphi(g) = \prod \varphi_p(g_p)$ and $\|\cdot\|$ is the volume of the element g of G . When A is a division algebra, $\zeta(s, \omega)$ is analytically continued to a meromorphic function over the whole complex plane and satisfies the functional equation. The Tamagawa ζ -function may also be considered as one type of ζ -function of the Hecke operator. When A is an indefinite quaternion algebra over a totally real algebraic number field Φ , the groups of units of various orders of A operate discontinuously on the product of complex upper half-planes. Thus the spaces of holomorphic forms are naturally associated with A . The investigation of ζ -functions asso-

ciated with these holomorphic automorphic forms was initiated by M. Eichler and extended by G. Shimura, H. Shimizu, and others. Eichler investigated the case $\Phi = \mathbf{Q}$, and Shimura and Shimizu investigated the case for an arbitrary totally real field Φ by defining general holomorphic automorphic forms, Hecke operators, and corresponding ζ -functions. The functional equations of these ζ -functions were proved by Shimizu. Shimizu generalized Eichler's work and found relations among ζ -functions of orders of various quaternion algebras belonging to different discriminants and levels [S10]. For the related results, see, e.g., the work of K. Doi and H. Naganuma [D12].

M. ζ -Functions Defined by Hecke Operators

The ζ -functions of algebraic number fields, algebras, or quadratic forms, and the L -functions are all defined by Dirichlet series, are analytically continued to univalent functions on the complex plane, and satisfy functional equations. One problem is to characterize the functions having such properties.

(1) H. Hamburger (1921–1922) characterized the Riemann ζ -function (up to constant multiples) by the following three properties: (i) It can be expanded as $\zeta(s) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n/n^s$ ($\text{Re } s \gg 0$); (ii) it is holomorphic on the complex plane except as $s=1$, and $(s-1)\zeta(s)$ is an entire function of finite \dagger genus; (iii) $G(s) = G(1-s)$, where $G(s) = \pi^{-s/2} \Gamma(s/2) \zeta(s)$.

(2) E. Hecke's theory [H4]: Fixing $\lambda > 0$, $k > 0$, $\gamma = \pm 1$, and putting

$$R(s) = (2\pi/\lambda)^{-s} \Gamma(s) \varphi(s)$$

for an analytic function $\varphi(s)$, we make the following three assumptions: (i) $(s-k)\varphi(s)$ is an entire function of finite genus; (ii) $R(s) = \gamma R(k-s)$; (iii) $\varphi(s)$ can be expanded as $\varphi(s) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n/n^s$ ($\text{Re } s > \sigma_0$). Then we call $\varphi(s)$ a function belonging to the sign (λ, k, γ) .

The functions $\zeta(2s)$, $L(2s)$, and $L(2s-1)$ satisfy assumptions (i)–(iii), where L may be either a Dirichlet L -function, an L -function with Grössencharakter of an imaginary quadratic field, or an L -function with class character of a real quadratic form whose Γ -factors are of the form $\Gamma(s/2)\Gamma((s+1)/2) \sim \Gamma(s)$. If $\varphi(s)$ belongs to the sign (λ, k, γ) , then $n^{-s}\varphi(s)$ belongs to the sign $(n\lambda, k, \gamma)$. To each Dirichlet series $\varphi(s) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n/n^s$ with the sign (λ, k, γ) , we attach the series $f(\tau) = a_0 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n e^{2\pi i n \tau / \lambda}$, where

$$\begin{aligned} a_0 &= \gamma (2\pi/\lambda)^{-k} \Gamma(k) \text{Res}_{s=k}(\varphi(s)) \\ &= \gamma \text{Res}_{s=k}(R(s)). \end{aligned}$$

This correspondence $\varphi(s) \rightarrow f(\tau)$ may also be

realized by the †Mellin transform

$$R(s) = \int_0^\infty \left(\sum_{n=1}^\infty a_n e^{-2\pi n y / \lambda} \right) y^{s-1} dy \\ = \int_0^\infty (f(iy) - a_0) y^{s-1} dy,$$

$$f(iy) - a_0 = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{\text{Re } s = \sigma_0} R(s) y^{-s} ds.$$

In this case, (i) $f(\tau)$ is holomorphic in the upper half-plane and $f(\tau + \lambda) = f(\tau)$, (ii) $f(-1/\tau)/(-i\tau)^k = \gamma f(\tau)$, and (iii) $f(x + iy) = O(y^{\text{const}})$ ($y \rightarrow +0$) uniformly for all x .

Conversely, the Dirichlet series $\varphi(s) = \sum_{n=1}^\infty a_n n^{-s}$ formed by the transformation in the previous paragraph from $f(\tau)$ satisfying (i)–(iii) belongs to the sign (λ, k, γ) . We also say that the function $f(\tau)$ belongs to the sign (λ, k, γ) .

If k is an even integer, then the functions $f(\tau)$ belonging to $(1, k, (-1)^{k/2})$ are the †modular forms of level 1 and weight k . A necessary and sufficient condition for a function $\varphi(s)$ belonging to $(1, k, (-1)^{k/2})$ to have an Euler product is that the corresponding modular form $f(\tau)$ be a simultaneous eigenfunction of the ring formed by the †Hecke operators T_n ($n = 1, 2, \dots$). In this case, the coefficient a_n of $\varphi(s) = \sum a_n n^{-s}$ coincides with the eigenvalue of T_n . Namely, if $f|T_n = t_n f$, we have $\varphi(s) = a_1 (\sum_{n=1}^\infty t_n n^{-s})$, and this is decomposed into the Euler product $\varphi(s) = a_1 \prod_p (1 - t_p p^{-s} + p^{k-1-2s})^{-1}$. We call $\varphi(s)/a_1$ a **ζ-function defined by Hecke operators** (Hecke [H5]). For example, $\zeta(s) \cdot \zeta(s-k+1)$ and the Ramanujan function

$$\sum_{n=1}^\infty \tau(n) n^{-s} = \prod_p (1 - \tau(p) p^{-s} + p^{1-2s})^{-1}$$

are ζ-functions defined by Hecke operators. Hecke applied the theory of Hecke operators to study the group $\Gamma(N)$ [H5]; the situation is more complicated than the case of $\Gamma(1) = SL(2, \mathbf{Z})$. The space of automorphic forms of weight k belonging to the †congruence subgroup

$$\Gamma_0(N) = \left\{ \begin{pmatrix} a & b \\ c & d \end{pmatrix} \in SL(2, \mathbf{Z}) \mid c \equiv 0 \pmod{N} \right\}$$

is denoted by $\mathfrak{M}_k(\Gamma_0(N))$. The essential part of $\mathfrak{M}_k(\Gamma_0(N))$ is spanned by the functions $f(\tau) = \sum a_n e^{2\pi i n \tau}$ satisfying the conditions: (1) $\varphi(s) = \sum a_n n^{-s}$ has the Euler product expansion

$$\varphi(s) = \prod_{p|N} (1 - a_p p^{-s})^{-1} \\ \times \prod_{p \nmid N} (1 - a_p p^{-s} + p^{k-1-2s})^{-1}.$$

(2) The functional equation $R(s) = \gamma R(k-s)$ holds, where $R(s) = (2\pi/\sqrt{N})^{-s} \Gamma(s) \varphi(s)$. (3) When χ is an arbitrary primitive character of \mathbf{Z} such that the conductor f is coprime to N ,

then

$$R(s, \chi) = (2\pi/\sqrt{N})^{-s} \Gamma(s) \sum a_n \chi(n) n^{-s}$$

extends to an entire function satisfying the functional equation $R(s, \chi) = \omega R(k-s, \bar{\chi})$ ($|\omega| = 1$) (Shimura). Conversely, (2) and (3) characterize the Dirichlet series $\varphi(s)$ corresponding to $f(\tau) \in \mathfrak{M}_k(\Gamma_0(N))$ (Weil [W1 (1967a)]).

Considering the correspondence $f(\tau) = \sum a_n q^n \rightarrow \varphi(s) = \sum a_n n^{-s}$ not as a Mellin transformation but rather as a correspondence effected through Hecke operators, we can derive the ζ-function defined by Hecke operators. When the Hecke operator T_n is defined with respect to a discontinuous group Γ and we have a representation space \mathfrak{M} of the Hecke operator ring \mathcal{H} , we denote the matrix of the operation of $T_n \in \mathcal{H}$ on \mathfrak{M} by $(T_n) = (T_n)_{\mathfrak{M}}$ and call the matrix-valued function $\Sigma_n(T_n)_{\mathfrak{M}} n^{-s}$ the ζ-function defined by Hecke operators. The equation $\varphi(s) = \sum a_n n^{-s}$ is a specific instance of the correspondence in the first sentence, where $\Gamma = \Gamma(N)$, $\mathfrak{M} \subset \mathfrak{M}_k(\Gamma_0(N))$, $\dim \mathfrak{M} = 1$. One advantage of this definition is that it may be applied whenever the concept of Hecke operators can be defined with respect to the group Γ (for instance, even for the Fuchsian group without a †cusp). Thus when Γ is a Fuchsian group given by the unit group of a quaternion algebra Φ over the rational number field \mathbf{Q} and \mathfrak{M} is the space of automorphic forms with respect to Γ , the ζ-function $\Sigma(T_n)_{\mathfrak{M}} n^{-s}$ is defined (Eichler). Moreover, by using its integral expression over the idele group \mathbf{J}_Φ of Φ , we can obtain its functional equation following the Iwasawa-Tate method (Shimura). Furthermore, by algebrogeometric consideration of T_n , it can be shown that

$$\zeta(s) \zeta(s-1) \det(\Sigma(T_n)_{\mathfrak{E}_2} n^{-s}) \\ = \zeta(s) \zeta(s-1) \text{dct} \left(\prod_p (1 - (T_p)_{\mathfrak{E}_2} p^{-s} \right. \\ \left. + (R_p)_{\mathfrak{E}_2} p^{1-2s})^{-1} \right)$$

coincides (up to a trivial factor) with the Hasse ζ-function of some model of the Riemann surface defined by Γ when \mathfrak{M} is the space \mathfrak{E}_2 of all †cusp forms of weight 2 (Eichler [E1], Shimura [S12]).

The algebrogeometric meaning of $\det(\Sigma(T_n)_{\mathfrak{E}_k} n^{-s})$, when \mathfrak{M} is the space \mathfrak{E}_k of all cusp forms of weight k , has been made clear for the case where Γ is obtained from $\Gamma_0(N)$, $\Gamma(N)$, and the quaternion algebra (M. Kuga, M. Sato, Shimura, Y. Ihara). From these facts, it becomes possible to express $(T_p)_{\mathfrak{E}_k}$, the decomposition of the prime number p in some type of Galois extension (Shimura [S14], Kuga), in terms of Hecke operators. These works gave the first examples of non-Abelian class field

theory. Note that this type of ζ -function may be regarded as the analog (or generalization) of L -functions of algebraic number fields, as can be seen from the comparison in Table 1.

Table 1

Algebraic number field	k	Ideal group	Character χ	$\sum \chi(n)n^{-s}$
	\updownarrow	\updownarrow	\updownarrow	\updownarrow
Algebraic group	G	Hecke ring	Representation space \mathfrak{M}	$\sum (T_n)_{\mathfrak{M}} n^{-s}$

As for special values of ζ -functions defined by Hecke operators, the following fact is known: Let $f(\tau) = \sum a_n q^n \in \mathfrak{M}_k(SL(2, \mathbb{Z}))$ be a common eigenfunction of the Hecke operators, and let $\varphi(s) = \sum a_n n^{-s}$ be the corresponding Dirichlet series. Let K_f be the field generated over the rational number field \mathbb{Q} by the coefficients a_n of f . Then, for any two integers m and m' satisfying $0 < m, m' < k$ and $m \equiv m' \pmod{2}$, the ratio $(R(m):R(m'))$ of the special values of

$$R(s) = \frac{\Gamma(s)}{(2\pi)^s} \varphi(s) = \int_0^\infty (f(iy) - a_0) y^{s-1} dy$$

at m and m' belongs to the field K_f .

G. Shimura discovered this fact for Ramanujan's function $\Delta(\tau)$ (*J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 11 (1959)), and then Yu. I. Manin generalized it to the above case and, by constructing a p -adic analog of $\varphi(s)$ from it, pointed out the importance of such results [M1]. R. M. Damerell also used such results to study special values of Hecke's L -function with Grössencharakter of an imaginary quadratic field (*Acta Arith.*, 17 (1970), 19 (1971)). Furthermore, Shimura generalized these results to congruence subgroups of $SL(2, \mathbb{Z})$ (*Comm. Pure Appl. Math.*, 29 (1976)), and to Hilbert modular groups (*Ann. Math.*, 102 (1975)). The connection between special values of ζ -functions and the periods of integrals has been studied further by Shimura, Deligne, and others.

In addition, in connection with nonholomorphic automorphic forms H. Maass considered L -functions of real quadratic fields (with class characters) having $\Gamma(s/2)^2$ or $\Gamma((s+1)/2)^2$ as Γ -factors. Furthermore, T. Kubota studied the relation of ζ -functions $\zeta_k(s)$ of an arbitrary algebraic field k or ζ -functions of simple rings to (nonanalytic) automorphic forms of several variables and considered the reciprocity law for the Gaussian sum from a new viewpoint.

N. L -Functions of Automorphic Representations (I)

R. P. Langlands reconstructed the theory of * Hecke operators from the viewpoint of repre-

sentation theory and defined very general L -functions. He proposed many conjectures about them in [L4], and he and H. Jacquet proved most of them in [J1] for the case $G = GL_2$.

First Langlands defined the L -group ${}^L G$ for any connected reductive algebraic group G defined over a field k in the following manner [B6].

There is a canonical bijection between isomorphism classes of connected * reductive algebraic groups defined over a fixed algebraically closed field \bar{k} and isomorphism classes of * root systems. It is defined by associating to G the root data $\Psi(G) = (X^*(T), \Phi, X_*(T), \Phi^v)$, where T is a * maximal torus of G , $X_*(T)$ ($X^*(T)$) the group of characters (* 1-parameter subgroups) of T , Φ (Φ^v) the set of roots (coroots) of G with respect to T .

Since the choice of a * Borel subgroup B of G containing T is equivalent to that of a basis Δ of Φ , the aforementioned bijection yields one between isomorphism classes of triples (G, B, T) and isomorphism classes of based root data $\Psi_0(G) = (X^*(T), \Delta, X_*(T), \Delta^v)$. There is a split exact sequence

$$1 \rightarrow \text{Int } G \rightarrow \text{Aut } G \rightarrow \text{Aut } \Psi_0(G) \rightarrow 1.$$

and this mapping induces a canonical bijection $\text{Aut } \Psi_0(G) \cong \text{Aut}(G, B, T, \{x_\alpha\}_{\alpha \in \Delta})$ if $x_\alpha \in G_\alpha$ ($\alpha \in \Delta$) are fixed.

Let G be a connected reductive algebraic group defined over \bar{k} . Let T be a maximal torus of G , and let B be a Borel subgroup of G containing T . Let $\Psi_0(G) = (X^*(T), \Delta, X_*(T), \Delta^v)$ be as before. Then there is a connected reductive algebraic group ${}^L G^0$ over \mathbb{C} such that $\Psi_0(G)^v = (X_*(T), \Delta^v, X^*(T), \Delta)$ corresponds to the triple $({}^L G^0, {}^L B^0, {}^L T^0)$, where ${}^L B^0$ and ${}^L T^0$ are a Borel subgroup of ${}^L G^0$ and the maximal torus of ${}^L B^0$. For example, (1) if $G = GL_n$, then ${}^L G^0 = GL_n(\mathbb{C})$; (2) if $G = Sp_{2n}$, then ${}^L G^0 = SO_{2n+1}(\mathbb{C})$.

We assume that \bar{k} is the algebraic closure of k and G is defined over k . Then $\gamma \in \text{Gal}(\bar{k}/k)$ induces an automorphism of the \bar{k} -group $G \times_k \bar{k}$. Hence γ defines an element of $\text{Aut}({}^L G^0, {}^L B^0, {}^L T^0)$ because it is a holomorphic image of $\text{Aut } \Psi_0(G \times_k \bar{k}) = \text{Aut } \Psi_0(G \times_k \bar{k})^v$. Hence we can define the * semidirect product ${}^L G = {}^L G^0 \rtimes \text{Gal}(\bar{k}/k)$, and call it the L -group of G .

Let k be a * local field, and let G be a connected reductive algebraic group defined over k . We identify G with the group of its k -rational points. Let W_k be the Weil-Deligne group of k (\rightarrow Section H), and let $\Phi(G)$ be the set of homomorphisms $\varphi: W_k \rightarrow {}^L G$ over $\text{Gal}(\bar{k}/k)$. Let $\Pi(G)$ be the set of infinitesimal equivalence classes of irreducible **admissible** representations of G . If k is a non-Archimedean field, then

$\Pi(G)$ is the set consisting of equivalence classes of irreducible representations $\pi: G \rightarrow \text{Aut } V$ on complex vector spaces V such that the space V^K of vectors invariant by K is finite dimensional for every compact open subgroup K of G and such that $V = \bigcup V^K$, where K runs over the compact open subgroups of G . If k is an Archimedean field, then $\Pi(G)$ is the set consisting of equivalence classes of representations π of the pair (\mathfrak{g}, K) of the Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} of G and a maximal compact subgroup K satisfying similar conditions [B6]. Then Langlands conjectured that we can parametrize $\Pi(G)$ by $\Phi(G)$ as $\Pi(G) = \bigcup_{\varphi \in \Phi(G)} \Pi(G)_{\varphi}$. Let $\pi \in \Pi(G)_{\varphi}$ ($\varphi \in \Phi(G)$), and let r be a representation of ${}^L G$. Then we can define the L -function $L(s, \pi, r)$ and the ε -factor $\varepsilon(s, \pi, r)$ of π by

$$L(s, \pi, r) = L(s, r \circ \varphi), \quad \varepsilon(s, \pi, r) = \varepsilon(s, r \circ \varphi, \psi),$$

where the right-hand sides are those of the Weil-Deligne group (\rightarrow Section H) and ψ is a nontrivial character of k .

Let G be a connected reductive group over a global field k (i.e., an algebraic number field of finite degree or an algebraic function field of one variable over a finite field), let π be an irreducible admissible representation of G_A , where G_A is the group of rational points of G over the a -adele ring k_A of k , and let r be a finite-dimensional representation of ${}^L G$. Let ψ be a nontrivial character of k_A which is trivial on k . For any place v of k , let r_v be the representation of the L -group of $G_v = G \times_k k_v$ induced by r , and let ψ_v be the additive character of k_v associated with ψ . It is known that π is decomposed into the tensor product $\bigotimes \pi_v$ of $\pi_v \in \Pi(G(k_v))$ [B6]. Hence we put

$$L(s, \pi, r) = \prod_v L(s, \pi_v, r_v),$$

$$\varepsilon(s, \pi, r) = \prod_v \varepsilon(s, \pi_v, r_v).$$

The local factor $L(s, \pi_v, r_v)$ is in fact defined if v is Archimedean, or G is a a -torus, or φ is unramified (i.e., G_v is quasisplit and splits over an unramified extension of k_v , and $G(\mathfrak{o}_v)$ is a special maximal compact subgroup of $G(k_v)$, and π_v is of class one with respect to $G(\mathfrak{o}_v)$, where \mathfrak{o}_v is the integer ring of k_v). It follows that the right-hand side $\prod L(s, \pi_v, r_v)$ is defined up to a finite number of non-Archimedean places v . Furthermore, Langlands proved that $\prod \varepsilon(s, \pi_v, r_v)$ is in fact a finite product, and the infinite product $\prod L(s, \pi_v, r_v)$ converges in some right half-plane if π is automorphic (i.e., if π is a subquotient of the right regular representation of G_A in $G_k \backslash G_A$). It is conjectured that $L(s, \pi, r)$ admits a meromorphic continuation to the whole complex plane and satisfies a functional equation

$$L(s, \pi, r) = \varepsilon(s, \pi, r) L(1-s, \tilde{\pi}, \tilde{r})$$

if π is automorphic, where $\tilde{\pi}$ is the a -contragredient representation of π . Furthermore, if $G = GL_n$ and r is the standard representation of GL_n , then we can construct $L(s, \pi, r)$ and $\varepsilon(s, \pi, r)$ by generalizing the Iwasawa-Tate method. We can also show in this case that $L(s, \pi, r)$ is entire if π is cuspidal. The conjectures are studied in some other cases [B6].

O. L -Functions of Automorphic Representations (II)

A. Weil generalized the theory of a -Hecke operators and the corresponding L -functions to the case of a -automorphic forms (for holomorphic and nonholomorphic cases together) of GL_2 over a global field [W9]. Then H. Jacquet and Langlands developed a theory from the viewpoint of a -representation theory [J1, J2]. They attached L -functions not to automorphic forms but to a -automorphic representations of $GL_2(k)$.

Let k be a non-Archimedean local field, and let \mathfrak{o}_k be the maximal order of k . Let \mathcal{H}_k be the space of functions on $G_k = GL_2(k)$ that are locally constant and compactly supported. Then \mathcal{H}_k becomes an algebra with the convolution product

$$(f_1 * f_2)(h) = \int_{G_k} f_1(g) f_2(g^{-1}h) dg,$$

where dg is the a -Haar measure of G_k that assigns 1 to the maximal compact subgroup $K_k = GL_2(\mathfrak{o}_k)$. Let π be a representation of \mathcal{H}_k on a complex vector space V . Then we say that π is **admissible** if and only if π satisfies the following two conditions: (1) For every v in V , there is an f in \mathcal{H}_k so that $\pi(f)v = v$; (2) Let σ_i ($i = 1, \dots, r$) be a family of inequivalent irreducible finite-dimensional representations of K_k , and let

$$\xi(g) = \sum_{i=1}^r \dim(\sigma_i)^{-1} \text{tr } \sigma_i(g^{-1}).$$

Then ξ is an idempotent of \mathcal{H}_k . We call such a ξ an **elementary idempotent** of \mathcal{H}_k . Then for every elementary idempotent ξ of \mathcal{H}_k , the operator $\pi(\xi)$ has a finite-dimensional range. If π is an admissible representation of $GL_2(k)$ (\rightarrow Section N), then

$$\pi(f) = \int_{G_k} f(g) \pi(g) dg \quad (f \in \mathcal{H}_k)$$

gives an admissible representation of \mathcal{H}_k in this sense. Furthermore, any admissible representation of \mathcal{H}_k can be obtained from an admissible representation of $GL_2(k)$.

Let k be the real number field. Let \mathcal{H}_1 be the

space of infinitely differentiable compactly supported functions on $G_k (= GL_2(k))$ that are $K_k (= O(2, k))$ finite on both sides, let \mathcal{H}_2 be the space of functions on K_k that are finite sums of matrix elements of irreducible representations of K_k , and let $\mathcal{H}_k = \mathcal{H}_1 \oplus \mathcal{H}_2$. Then \mathcal{H}_1 , \mathcal{H}_2 , and \mathcal{H}_k become algebras with the convolution product. Let π be a representation of \mathcal{H}_k on a complex vector space V . Then π is **admissible** if and only if the following three conditions are satisfied: (1) Every vector v in V is of the form $v = \sum_{i=1}^r \pi(f_i)v_i$ with $f_i \in \mathcal{H}_1$ and $v_i \in V$; (2) for every elementary idempotent $\xi(g) = \sum_{i=1}^r \dim(\sigma_i)^{-1} \text{tr } \sigma_i(g^{-1})$, where the σ_i are a family of inequivalent irreducible representations of K_k , the range of $\pi(\xi)$ is finite-dimensional; (3) for every elementary idempotent ξ of \mathcal{H}_k and for every vector v in $\pi(\xi)V$, the mapping $f \mapsto \pi(f)v$ of $\xi\mathcal{H}_1\xi$ into the finite-dimensional space $\pi(\xi)V$ is continuous. We can define the Hecke algebra \mathcal{H}_k and the notion of admissible representations also in the case $k = \mathbb{C}$. In these cases, an admissible representation of \mathcal{H}_k comes from a representation of the universal enveloping algebra of $GL_2(k)$ but may not come from a representation of $GL_2(k)$. It is known that for any local field k , the \dagger character of each irreducible representation is a locally integrable function.

Let k be a global field, $G_k = GL_2(k)$, and let $G_A = GL_2(k_A)$ be the group of rational points of G_k over the adèle ring k_A of k . For any place v of k , let k_v be the completion of k at v , let $G_v = GL_2(k_v)$, and let K_v be the standard maximal compact subgroup of G_v . Let \mathcal{H}_v be the Hecke algebra \mathcal{H}_{K_v} of G_v , and let ε_v be the normalized Haar measure of K_v . Then ε_v is an elementary idempotent of \mathcal{H}_v . Let $\mathcal{H} = \bigotimes_{\varepsilon_v} \mathcal{H}_v$ be the restricted tensor product of the local Hecke algebra \mathcal{H}_v with respect to the family $\{\varepsilon_v\}$. We call \mathcal{H} the **global Hecke algebra** of G_A .

Let π be a representation of \mathcal{H} on a complex vector space V . We define the notion of admissibility of π as before. Then we can show that, for any irreducible admissible representation π of \mathcal{H} and for any place v of k , there exists an irreducible admissible representation π_v of \mathcal{H}_v on a complex vector space V_v such that (1) for almost all v , $\dim V_v^{K_v} = 1$ and (2) π is equivalent to the restricted tensor product $\bigotimes \pi_v$ of the π_v with respect to a family of nonzero $x_v \in V_v^{K_v}$. Furthermore, the factors $\{\pi_v\}$ are unique up to equivalence.

Let k be a local field, let ψ be a nontrivial character of k , and let \mathcal{H}_k be the Hecke algebra of $G_k = GL_2(k)$. Let π be an infinite-dimensional admissible irreducible representation of \mathcal{H}_k . Then there is exactly one space $W(\pi, \psi)$ of continuous functions on G_k with the following three properties: (1) If W is in

$W(\pi, \psi)$, then for all g in G_k and for all x in k ,

$$W\left(\begin{pmatrix} 1 & x \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} g\right) = \psi(x)W(g);$$

(2) $W(\pi, \psi)$ is invariant under the right translations of \mathcal{H}_k , and the representation on $W(\pi, \psi)$ is equivalent to π ; (3) if k is Archimedean and if W is in $W(\pi, \psi)$, then there is a positive number N such that

$$W\left(\begin{pmatrix} t & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix}\right) = O(|t|^N)$$

as $|t| \rightarrow \infty$. We call $W(\pi, \psi)$ the **Whittaker model** of π . The Whittaker model exists in the global case if and only if each factor π_v of $\pi = \bigotimes \pi_v$ is infinite-dimensional.

Let k be a local field, and let π be as before. Then the L -function $L(s, \pi)$ and the ε -factor $\varepsilon(s, \pi, \psi)$ are defined in the following manner: Let ω be the quasicharacter of k^\times (i.e., the continuous homomorphism $k^\times \rightarrow \mathbb{C}^\times$) defined by

$$\pi\left(\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & a \end{pmatrix}\right) = \omega(a)id_V.$$

Then the \dagger contragredient representation $\tilde{\pi}$ of π is equivalent to $\omega^{-1} \otimes \pi$. For any g in G_k and W in $W(\pi, \psi)$, let

$$\Psi(g, s, W) = \int_{k^\times} W\left(\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} g\right) |a|^{s-1/2} d^\times a,$$

$$\tilde{\Psi}(g, s, W) = \int_{k^\times} W\left(\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} g\right) |a|^{s-1/2} \omega^{-1}(a) d^\times a.$$

Then there is a real number s_0 such that these integrals converge for $\text{Re}(s) > s_0$ for any $g \in G_k$ and $W \in W(\pi, \psi)$. If k is a non-Archimedean local field with \mathbb{F}_q as its residue field, then there is a unique factor $L(s, \pi)$ such that $L(s, \pi)^{-1}$ is a polynomial of q^{-s} with constant term 1,

$$\Phi(g, s, W) = \Psi(g, s, W)/L(s, \pi)$$

is a holomorphic function of s for all g and W , and there is at least one W in $W(\pi, \psi)$ so that $\Phi(e, s, W) = a^s$ with a positive constant a . If k is an Archimedean local field, then we can define the gamma factor $L(s, \pi)$ in the same manner. Furthermore, for any local field k , if

$$\tilde{\Phi}(g, s, W) = \tilde{\Psi}(g, s, W)/L(s, \tilde{\pi}),$$

then there is a unique factor $\varepsilon(s, \psi, \pi)$ which, as a function of s , is an exponential such that

$$\tilde{\Phi}\left(\begin{pmatrix} 0 & 1 \\ -1 & 0 \end{pmatrix} g, 1-s, W\right) = \varepsilon(s, \pi, \psi)\Phi(g, s, W)$$

for all $g \in G_k$ and $W \in W(\pi, \psi)$.

Let π and π' be two infinite-dimensional irreducible admissible representations of G_k . Then π and π' are equivalent if and only if the

quasicharacters ω and ω' are equal and

$$\frac{L(1-s, \chi^{-1} \otimes \tilde{\pi}) \varepsilon(s, \chi \otimes \pi, \psi)}{L(s, \chi \otimes \pi)} = \frac{L(1-s, \chi^{-1} \otimes \tilde{\pi}') \varepsilon(s, \chi \otimes \pi', \psi)}{L(s, \chi \otimes \pi')}$$

holds for any quasicharacter χ . In particular, the set $\{L(s, \chi \otimes \pi) \text{ and } \varepsilon(s, \chi \otimes \pi, \psi) \text{ for all } \chi\}$ characterizes the representation π .

Let k be a global field, $G_k = GL_2(k)$, $G_A = GL_2(k_A)$, and let $K_A = \prod K_v$ be the standard maximal compact subgroup of G_A . Then the \dagger global Hecke algebra \mathcal{H} acts on the space of continuous functions on $G_k \backslash G_A$ by the right translations. Let φ be a continuous function on $G_k \backslash G_A$. Then φ is an **automorphic form** if and only if (1) φ is K_A -finite on the right, (2) for every \dagger elementary idempotent ξ in \mathcal{H} , the space $(\xi \mathcal{H})\varphi$ is finite-dimensional, and (3) φ is slowly increasing if k is an algebraic number field. An automorphic form φ is a **cusp form** if and only if

$$\int_{k \backslash k_A} \varphi \left(\begin{pmatrix} 1 & x \\ 0 & 1 \end{pmatrix} g \right) dx = 0$$

for all g in G_A . Let \mathcal{A} be the space of automorphic forms on $G_k \backslash G_A$, and let \mathcal{A}_0 be the space of cusp forms on $G_k \backslash G_A$. They are \mathcal{H} -modules. Let $\psi = \prod \psi_v$ be a nontrivial character of $k \backslash k_A$, and let π be an irreducible admissible representation $\pi = \otimes_v \pi_v$ of the global Hecke algebra $\mathcal{H} = \otimes_v \mathcal{H}_v$. If π is a \dagger constituent of the \mathcal{H} -module \mathcal{A} , then we can define the local factors $L(s, \pi_v)$ and $\varepsilon(s, \pi_v, \psi_v)$ for all v , although π_v may not be infinite-dimensional. Further, the infinite products

$$L(s, \pi) = \prod L(s, \pi_v) \text{ and } L(s, \tilde{\pi}) = \prod L(s, \tilde{\pi}_v)$$

converge absolutely in a right half-plane, and the functions $L(s, \pi)$ and $L(s, \tilde{\pi})$ can be analytically continued to the whole complex plane as meromorphic functions of s . If π is a constituent of \mathcal{A}_0 , then all π_v are infinite-dimensional, $L(s, \pi)$ and $L(s, \tilde{\pi})$ are entire functions, and π is contained in \mathcal{A}_0 with multiplicity one. If k is an algebraic number field, then they have only a finite number of poles and are bounded at infinity in any vertical strip of finite width. If k is an algebraic function field of one variable with field of constant F_q , then they are rational functions of q^{-s} . In either case, $\varepsilon(s, \pi_v, \psi_v) = 1$ for almost all v , and hence

$$\varepsilon(s, \pi) = \prod \varepsilon(s, \pi_v, \psi_v)$$

is well defined. Furthermore, the functional equation

$$L(s, \pi) = \varepsilon(s, \pi) L(1-s, \tilde{\pi})$$

is satisfied.

As for the condition for π being a constituent of \mathcal{A}_0 , we have the following: Let $\pi = \otimes \pi_v$ be an irreducible admissible representation of \mathcal{H} . Then π is a constituent of \mathcal{A}_0 if and only if (1) for every v , π_v is infinite-dimensional; (2) the quasicharacter η defined by

$$\pi \left(\begin{pmatrix} a & 0 \\ 0 & a \end{pmatrix} \right) = \eta(a) id.$$

is trivial on k^\times ; (3) π satisfies a certain condition so that, for any quasicharacter ω of $k^\times \backslash k_A^\times$, $L(s, \omega \otimes \pi) = \prod L(s, \omega_v \otimes \pi_v)$ and $L(s, \omega^{-1} \otimes \tilde{\pi}_v) = \prod L(s, \omega_v^{-1} \otimes \tilde{\pi}_v)$ converge on a right half-plane; and (4) for any quasicharacter ω of $k^\times \backslash k_A^\times$, $L(s, \omega \otimes \pi)$ and $L(s, \omega^{-1} \otimes \tilde{\pi})$ are entire functions of s which are bounded in vertical strips and satisfy the functional equation

$$L(s, \omega \otimes \pi) = \varepsilon(s, \omega \otimes \pi) L(1-s, \omega^{-1} \otimes \tilde{\pi}).$$

P. Congruence ζ -Functions of Algebraic Function Fields of One Variable or of Algebraic Curves

Let K be an \dagger algebraic function field of one variable over $k = F_q$ (finite field with q elements). The ζ -function of the algebraic function field K/k , denoted by $\zeta_K(s)$, is defined by the infinite sum $\sum_{\mathfrak{A}} N(\mathfrak{A})^{-s}$, where the summation is over all integral divisors \mathfrak{A} of K/k and where the norm $N(\mathfrak{A})$ equals $q^{\deg(\mathfrak{A})}$. Equivalently, $\zeta_K(s)$ is defined by the infinite product $\prod_p (1 - N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s})^{-1}$, where \mathfrak{p} runs over all prime divisors of K/k . By the change of variable $u = q^{-s}$, $\zeta_K(s) = Z_K(u)$ becomes a formal power series in u . $\zeta_K(s)$ and $Z_K(u)$ are sometimes called the **congruence ζ -functions** of K/k .

The fundamental theorem states that (i) (Rationality) $Z_K(u)$ is a rational function of u of the form $Z_K(u) = P(u)/(1-u)(1-qu)$, where $P(u) \in \mathbb{Z}[u]$ is a polynomial of degree $2g$, g being the genus of K ; (ii) (Functional equation) $Z_K(u)$ satisfies the functional equation

$$Z_K(1/u) = q^{g-1} u^{2-2g} Z_K(u/q);$$

and (iii) if $P(u)$ is decomposed into linear factors in $\mathbb{C}[u]$: $P(u) = \prod_{i=1}^{2g} (1 - \alpha_i u)$, then all the reciprocal roots α_i are complex numbers of absolute value \sqrt{q} . Statement (iii) is the analog of the **Riemann hypothesis** because it is equivalent to saying that all the zeros of $\zeta_K(s) = Z_K(q^{-s})$ lie on the line $\operatorname{Re} s = 1/2$.

The congruence ζ -function was introduced by E. Artin [A1 (1924)] as an analog of the Riemann or Dedekind ζ -functions. Of its fundamental properties, the rationality (i) and the functional equation (ii) were proven by

F. K. Schmidt (1931), using the [†]Riemann-Roch theorem for the function field K/k . The Riemann hypothesis (iii) was verified first in the elliptic case ($g=1$) by H. Hasse [H1] and then in the general case by A. Weil [W2 (1948)]. For the proof of (iii), it was essential to consider the geometry of algebraic curves that correspond to given function fields.

Let C be a nonsingular complete curve over k with function field K . Then $Z_K(u)$ coincides with the ζ -function of C/k , denoted by $Z(u, C)$, which is defined by the formal power series $\exp(\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} N_m u^m/m)$. Here N_m is the number of rational points of C over the extension k_m of k of degree m . The rationality of $Z_K(u)$ is then equivalent to the formula

$$N_m = 1 + q^m - \sum_{i=1}^{2g} \alpha_i^m \quad (m \in \mathbf{N}),$$

and the Riemann hypothesis for $Z_K(u)$ is equivalent to the estimate

$$(*) \quad |N_m - 1 - q^m| \leq 2g q^{m/2} \quad (m \in \mathbf{N}).$$

Now if F is the q th power morphism of C to itself (the **Frobenius morphism** of C relative to k), then an important observation is that N_m is the number of fixed points of the m th iterate F^m of F . In other words, N_m is equal to the intersection number of the graph of F^m with the diagonal on the surface $C \times C$, and is related to the "trace" of the Frobenius correspondence. Then (*) follows from [†]Castelnuovo's lemma in the theory of correspondences on a curve. This is Weil's proof of the Riemann hypothesis in [W2]; compare the proof by A. Mattuck and J. Tate (*Abh. Math. Sem. Hamburg* 22 (1958)) and A. Grothendieck (*J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 200 (1958)) using the Riemann-Roch theorem for an algebraic surface.

On the other hand, let J be the [†]Jacobian variety of C over k . For each prime number l different from the characteristic of k , let $M_l(x)$ denote the [†] l -adic representation of an endomorphism α of J obtained from its action on points of J of order l^n ($n=1, 2, \dots$). Letting π be the endomorphism of J induced from F (which is the same as the Frobenius morphism of J), we have $P(u) = \det(1 - M_l(\pi)u)$, i.e., the numerator of the ζ -function coincides with the characteristic polynomial of $M_l(\pi)$. In this setting, the Riemann hypothesis is a consequence of the positivity of the Rosati antiautomorphism [E1]. This is the second proof given by Weil [W2], and applies to arbitrary Abelian varieties.

Recently E. Bombieri, inspired by Stepanov's idea, gave an elementary proof of (*) using only the Riemann-Roch theorem for a curve (*Sém. Bourbaki*, no. 430 (1973)).

Q. ζ -Functions of Algebraic Varieties over Finite Fields

Let V be an algebraic variety over the finite field with q elements \mathbf{F}_q , and let N_m be the number of \mathbf{F}_q^m -rational points of V . Then the ζ -function of V over \mathbf{F}_q is the formal power series in $\mathbf{Z}[[u]]$ defined by

$$Z(u, V) = \exp\left(\sum_{m=1}^{\infty} N_m u^m/m\right);$$

alternatively it can be defined by the infinite product $\prod_P (1 - u^{\deg P})^{-1}$, where P runs over the set of prime divisors of V and $\deg P$ is the degree of the residue field of P over \mathbf{F}_q (in other words, P runs over prime rational 0-cycles of V over \mathbf{F}_q).

Weil Conjecture. In 1949, the following properties of the ζ -function were conjectured by Weil [W3]. Let V be an n -dimensional complete nonsingular (absolutely irreducible) variety over \mathbf{F}_q . Then (1) $Z(u, V)$ is a rational function of u . (2) $Z(u, V)$ satisfies the functional equation

$$Z((q^n u)^{-1}, V) = \pm q^{n\chi/2} u^{\chi} Z(u, V),$$

where the integer χ is the intersection number (the degree of $\Delta_V \cdot \Delta_V$) of the diagonal subvariety Δ_V with itself in the product $V \times V$, which is called the Euler-Poincaré characteristic of V . (3) Moreover, we have

$$Z(u, V) = \frac{P_1(u) \cdot P_3(u) \cdot \dots \cdot P_{2n-1}(u)}{P_0(u) \cdot P_2(u) \cdot \dots \cdot P_{2n}(u)},$$

where $P_h(u) = \prod_{j=1}^{B_h} (1 - \alpha_j^{(h)} u)$ is a polynomial with \mathbf{Z} -coefficients such that $\alpha_j^{(h)}$ are algebraic integers of absolute value $q^{h/2}$ ($0 \leq h \leq 2n$); the latter statement is the **Riemann hypothesis for V/\mathbf{F}_q** . (4) When V is the reduction mod p of a complete nonsingular variety V^* of characteristic 0, then the degree B_h of $P_h(u)$ is the h th Betti number of V^* considered as a complex manifold.

This conjecture, called the **Weil conjecture**, has been completely proven. To give a brief history, first B. Dwork [D13] proved the rationality of the ζ -function for any (not necessarily complete or nonsingular) variety over \mathbf{F}_q . Then A. Grothendieck [A3, G2, G3] developed the l -adic étale cohomology theory with M. Artin and others, and proved the above statements (1)–(4) (except for the Riemann hypothesis) with $P_h(u)$ replaced by some $P_{h,l}(u) \in \mathbf{Q}_l[[u]]$; and S. Lubkin [L7] obtained similar results for liftable varieties. Finally Deligne [D4] proved the Riemann hypothesis and the independence of l of $P_{h,l}(u)$. More details will be given below. Before the final solution for the general case was obtained, the

conjecture had been verified for some special types of varieties. For curves and Abelian varieties, its truth was previously shown by Weil (\rightarrow Section P). In the paper [W3] in which he proposed the above conjecture, Weil verified it for Fermat hypersurfaces, i.e., those defined by the equation $a_0 x_0^m + \dots + a_{n+1} x_{n+1}^m = 0$ ($a_i \in \mathbb{F}_q^\times$); in this case, the ζ -function is of the form $P(u)^{(-1)^{n+1}} / \prod_{j=0}^n (1 - q^j u)$ with a polynomial $P(u)$ that can be explicitly described in terms of Jacobi sums. Dwork [D14] studied by p -adic analysis the case of hypersurfaces in a projective space, verifying the conjecture for them except for the Riemann hypothesis. Further nontrivial examples were provided by *K3 surfaces (Deligne [D2], Pyatetskii-Shapiro, Shafarevich [P1]) and cubic 3-folds (E. Bombieri, H. Swinnerton-Dyer [B5]); in these cases the proof of the Riemann hypothesis was reduced to that of certain Abelian varieties naturally attached to these varieties. It can be said that the Weil conjecture has greatly influenced the development of algebraic geometry, as regards both the foundations and the methods of proof of the conjecture itself; see the expositions by N. Katz [K2] or B. Mazur [M2].

Weil Cohomology, l -Adic Cohomology. The Weil conjecture suggested the possibility of a good cohomology theory for algebraic varieties over a field of arbitrary characteristic. We first formulate the desired properties of a good cohomology (S. Kleiman [K4]). Let \bar{k} be an algebraically closed field and K a field of characteristic 0, which is called the coefficient field. A contravariant functor $V \rightarrow H^*(V)$ from the category of complete connected smooth varieties over \bar{k} to the category of augmented \mathbb{Z}^+ -graded finite-dimensional anticommutative K -algebras (cup product as multiplication) is called a **Weil cohomology** with coefficients in K if it has the following three properties. (1) **Poincaré duality:** If $n = \dim V$, then a canonical isomorphism $H^{2n}(V) \cong K$ exists and the cup product $H^j(V) \times H^{2n-j}(V) \rightarrow H^{2n}(V) \cong K$ induces a perfect pairing. (2) **Künneth formula:** For any V_1 and V_2 the mapping $H^*(V_1) \otimes H^*(V_2) \rightarrow H^*(V_1 \times V_2)$ defined by $a \otimes b \rightarrow \text{Proj}_1^*(a) \cdot \text{Proj}_2^*(b)$ is an isomorphism. (3) **Good relation with algebraic cycles:** Let $C^j(V)$ be the group of algebraic cycles of codimension j on V . There exists a fundamental-class homomorphism **FUND**: $C^j(V) \rightarrow H^{2j}(V)$ for all j , which is functorial in V , compatible with products via Künneth's formula, has compatibility of the intersection with the cup product, and maps 0-cycle $\in C^0(V)$ to its degree as an element of $K \cong H^{2n}(V)$. If a Weil cohomology theory H exists for the V 's over \bar{k} , we can

prove the **Lefschetz fixed-point formula**:

$$\begin{aligned} & ((\text{graph of } F) \cdot (\text{diagonal}))_{V \times V} \\ &= \sum_{j=0}^{2n} (-1)^j \text{tr}(F^* | H^j(V)) \end{aligned}$$

for a morphism $F: V \rightarrow V$.

If $\bar{k} = \mathbb{C}$ (the field of complex numbers), the classical cohomology $V \rightarrow H^*(V^{an}, \mathbb{Q})$, where V^{an} denotes the complex manifold associated with V , gives a Weil cohomology. If \bar{k} is an arbitrary algebraically closed field and if l is a prime number different from the characteristic of \bar{k} , then the principal results in the theory of the étale cohomology state that the l -adic cohomology $V \rightarrow H_{\text{ét}}^*(V, \mathbb{Q}_l)$ is a Weil cohomology with coefficient field \mathbb{Q}_l (the field of l -adic numbers) [A3, D5, G3, M4]. In defining this, Grothendieck introduced a new concept of topology, which is now called Grothendieck topology. In the étale topology of a variety V , for example, any étale covering of a Zariski open subset is regarded as an "open set." With respect to the étale topology, the cohomology group $H^*(V, \mathbb{Z}/n)$ of V with coefficients in \mathbb{Z}/n is defined in the usual manner and is a finite \mathbb{Z}/n -module. If l is a prime number as above, $\varprojlim_v H^*(V, \mathbb{Z}/l^v)$ is a module over $\mathbb{Z}_l = \varprojlim_v \mathbb{Z}/l^v$ of finite rank, and

$$H_{\text{ét}}^*(V, \mathbb{Q}_l) = (\varprojlim_v H^*(V, \mathbb{Z}/l^v)) \otimes_{\mathbb{Z}_l} \mathbb{Q}_l$$

defines the l -adic cohomology group, giving rise to a Weil cohomology.

For the characteristic p of k , p -adic étale cohomology does not give Weil cohomology; but the crystalline cohomology (Grothendieck and P. Berthelot [B2, B3]) takes the place of p -adic cohomology and is almost a Weil cohomology: in this theory the fundamental class is defined only for smooth subvarieties.

Now fix a Weil cohomology for $\bar{k} = \bar{\mathbb{F}}_q$, an algebraic closure of a finite field \mathbb{F}_q . Given an algebraic variety V over \mathbb{F}_q , let $\bar{V} = V \otimes \bar{k}$ denote the base extension of V to \bar{k} ; then \mathbb{F}_q^m -rational points of V can be identified with the fixed points of the m th iterate of the Frobenius morphism F of V relative to \mathbb{F}_q . Then the Lefschetz fixed-point formula implies the rationality of $Z(u, V)$; more precisely, letting $P_j(u) = \det(1 - uF^* | H^j(\bar{V}))$ be the characteristic polynomial of the automorphism F^* of $H^j(\bar{V})$ induced by F , we have

$$Z(u, V) = \prod_{j=0}^{2n} P_j(u)^{(-1)^{j+1}}.$$

The functional equation of the ζ -function then follows from the Poincaré duality. This proves (1), (2), and a part of (3) in the statement of the Weil conjecture. Further, in the case of l -adic cohomology, (4) means that $\deg P_j(u) =$

$\dim_{\mathbf{Q}_l} H^j(\bar{V}, \mathbf{Q}_l)$ is equal to the j th Betti number of a lifting of V to characteristic 0; this follows from the comparison theorem of M. Artin for the l -adic cohomology and the classical cohomology, combined with the invariance of l -adic cohomology under specialization.

Proof of the Riemann Hypothesis. In 1974, Deligne [D4, I] completed the proof of the Weil conjecture for projective nonsingular varieties by proving that, given such a V over \mathbf{F}_q , any eigenvalue of F^* on $H_{\text{ét}}^j(\bar{V}, \mathbf{Q}_l)$ is an algebraic integer, all the conjugates of which are of absolute value $q^{j/2}$. (This implies that $P(u) = \det(1 - uF^* | H_{\text{ét}}^j(\bar{V}, \mathbf{Q}_l))$ is in $\mathbf{Z}[u]$ and is independent of l .) The proof is done by induction on $n = \dim V$; by the general results in l -adic cohomology (the weak Lefschetz theorem on a hyperplane section, the Poincaré duality, and the Künneth formula), the proof is reduced to the assertion that (*) any eigenvalue α of F^* on $H_{\text{ét}}^n(\bar{V}, \mathbf{Q}_l)$ is an algebraic integer such that $|\alpha'| \leq q^{(n+1)/2}$ for all conjugates α' of α . The main ingredients in proving (*) are (1) Grothendieck's theory of L -functions, based on the étale cohomology with compact support and with coefficients in a \mathbf{Q}_l -sheaf [G2, G3]; (2) the theory of Lefschetz pencils (Deligne and Katz [D7]), and the Kajdan-Margulis theorem on the monodromy of a Lefschetz pencil (J. L. Verdier, *Sém. Bourbaki*, no. 423 (1972)); and (3) Rankin's methods to estimate the coefficients of modular forms, as adapted to the Grothendieck's L -series. By means of these geometric and arithmetic techniques, Deligne achieved the proof of the Riemann hypothesis for projective nonsingular varieties. For the generalization to complete varieties, see Deligne [D4, II].

Applications of the (Verified) Weil Conjecture.

(1) The Ramanujan conjecture (\rightarrow 32 Automorphic Functions D): The connection of this conjecture and the Weil conjecture for certain fiber varieties over a modular curve was observed by M. Sato and partially verified by Y. Ihara [I1] and then established by Deligne [D3]. The Weil conjecture as proven above implies the truth of the Ramanujan conjecture and its generalization by H. Petersson.

(2) Estimation of trigonometric sums: Let q be the power of a prime number p . Then

$$\left| \sum_{(x_1, \dots, x_n) \in \mathbf{F}_q^n} \exp \frac{2\pi i}{p} \operatorname{tr}_{\mathbf{F}_q/\mathbf{F}_p}(F(x_1, \dots, x_n)) \right| \leq (d-1)^n q^{n/2},$$

where $F(X_1, \dots, X_n) \in \mathbf{F}_q[X_1, \dots, X_n]$ is a polynomial of degree d that is not divisible by p , and the homogeneous part of the highest degree of F defines a smooth irreducible

hypersurface in \mathbf{P}^{n-1} . This is a generalization of the Weil estimation of the Kloosterman sum ([D4, W1 (1948c)]; \rightarrow 4 Additive Number Theory D).

(3) The **hard Lefschetz theorem**: Let $L \in H^2(V)$ be the class of a hyperplane section of an n -dimensional projective nonsingular variety V over an algebraically closed field. Then the cup product by $L^i: H^{n-i}(V) \rightarrow H^{n+i}(V)$ is an isomorphism for all $i \leq n$. Deligne [D4, II] proved this for l -adic cohomology, from which N. Katz and W. Messing [K1] deduced its validity in any Weil cohomology or in the crystalline cohomology.

Also some geometric properties of an algebraic variety V are reflected in the properties of $Z(u, V)$. The ζ -function $Z(u, A)$ of an Abelian variety A determines the isogeny class of A [T4]. For any algebraic integer α , every conjugate of which has absolute value $q^{1/2}$, there exists an Abelian variety A/\mathbf{F}_q such that α is a root of $\det(1 - uF^* | H^1(A)) = 0$ [H6]. J. Tate [T3] conjectured that the rank of the space cohomology classes of algebraic cycles of codimension r is equal to the order of the pole at $u = 1/q^r$ of $Z(u, V)$. This conjecture is still open but has been verified in certain nontrivial cases, e.g., (1) products of curves and Abelian varieties, $r = 1$ (Tate [T4]), (2) Fermat hypersurfaces of dimension $2r$ with some condition on the degree and the characteristic (Tate [T3], T. Shioda, *Proc. Japan Acad.* 55 (1979)), and (3) elliptic $K3$ surfaces, $r = 1$ (M. Artin and Swinnerton-Dyer, *Inventiones Math.* 20 (1973)).

R. ζ - and L -Functions of Schemes

Let X be a \ast scheme of finite type over \mathbf{Z} , and let $|X|$ denote the set of closed points of X ; for each $x \in |X|$, the residue field $k(x)$ is finite, and its cardinality is called the norm $N(x)$ of x . The ζ -function of a scheme X is defined by the product $\zeta(s, X) = \prod_{x \in |X|} (1 - N(x)^{-s})^{-1}$. This converges absolutely for $\operatorname{Re} s > \dim X$, and it is conjectured to have an analytic continuation in the entire s -plane (Serre [S7]). It reduces to the Riemann (resp. Dedekind) ζ -function if $X = \operatorname{Spec}(\mathbf{Z})$ (resp. $\operatorname{Spec}(\mathfrak{o})$, \mathfrak{o} being the ring of integers of an algebraic number field), and to the ζ -function $Z(q^{-s}, X)$ (\rightarrow Section Q) if X is a variety over a finite field \mathbf{F}_q . The case of varieties defined over an algebraic number field is discussed in Section S.

Let G be a finite group of automorphisms of a scheme X , and assume that the quotient $Y = X/G$ exists (e.g., X is quasiprojective). For an element x in $|X|$, let y be its image in $|Y|$, and let $D(x) = \{g \in G | g(x) = x\}$, the decomposition group of x over y . The natural mapping $D(x) \rightarrow \operatorname{Gal}(k(x)/k(y))$ is surjective, and its

kernel $I(x)$ is called the inertia group at x . An element of $D(x)$ is called a Frobenius element at x if its image in $\text{Gal}(k(x)/k(y))$ corresponds to the $N(y)$ th-power automorphism of $k(x)$. Now let R be a representation of G with character χ . The **Artin L -function** $L(s, X, \chi)$ is defined by

$$L(s, X, \chi) = \exp \left(\sum_{y \in |Y|} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \chi(y^n) N(y)^{-ns}/n \right) \\ = \prod_{y \in |Y|} \det(1 - R(F_y) N(y)^{-s})^{-1},$$

where $\chi(y^n)$ denotes the mean value of χ on the n th power of Frobenius elements F_x at x (any point of $|X|$ over y), and similarly $R(F_y)$ denotes the mean value of $R(F_x)$; it converges absolutely for $\text{Re } s > \dim X$. Again this is reduced to the usual Artin L -function (\rightarrow Section G) if X is the spectrum of the ring of integers of an algebraic number field. The Artin L -functions of a scheme have many formal properties analogous to those of Artin L -functions of a number field (Serre [S7]).

Let us consider the case where X is an algebraic variety over a finite field F_q and elements of G are automorphisms of X over F_2 ; in this case, $L(s, X, \chi)$ is a formal power series in $u = q^{-s}$, which is called a congruence Artin L -function. For the case where X is a complete nonsingular algebraic curve and χ is an irreducible character of G different from the trivial one, Weil [W2] proved that $L(s, X, \chi)$ is a polynomial in $u = q^{-s}$; thus the analog of \dagger Artin's conjecture holds here. More generally, for any algebraic variety X over F_q , Grothendieck [G2, G3] proved the rationality of L -functions together with the alternating product expression by polynomials in u , as in the case of ζ -functions, by the methods of l -adic cohomology. Actually, Grothendieck treated a more general type of L -function associated with l -adic sheaves on X , which also play an important role in Deligne's proof of the Riemann hypothesis (\rightarrow Section Q).

S. Hasse ζ -Functions

For a nonsingular complete algebraic variety V defined over a finite algebraic number field K , let V_p be the reduction of V modulo a prime ideal p of K , K_p be the residue field of p , and $Z(u, V_p)$ be the ζ -function of V_p over K_p . The ζ -function $\zeta(s, V)$ of the complex variable s , determined by the infinite product (excluding the finite number of p 's where V_p is not defined),

$$\zeta(s, V) = \prod_p Z(N(p)^{-s}, V_p),$$

is called the **Hasse ζ -function** of V over the algebraic number field K . For this function,

we have **Hasse's conjecture** [W4]: $\zeta(s, V)$ is a meromorphic function over the whole complex plane of s and satisfies the functional equation of ordinary type. Sometimes it is more natural to consider

$$\zeta_j(s, V) = \prod_p P_j(N(p)^{-s}, V_p)^{-1} \quad (0 \leq j \leq 2 \dim V),$$

where $P_j(u, V_p)$ is the j th factor of $Z(u, V_p)$, and we have a similar conjecture for them. For the definition of $\zeta_j(s, V)$ taking into account the factors for bad primes and the precise form of the conjectural functional equation, see Serre [S8]. Note that $\zeta_j(s, V)$ converges absolutely for $\text{Re } s > j/2 + 1$ as a consequence of the Weil conjecture.

Hasse's conjecture remains unsolved for the general case, but has been verified when V is one of the following varieties:

(I_a) Algebraic curves defined by the equation $y^e = \gamma x^f + \delta$ and Fermat hypersurfaces (Weil [W6]).

(I_b) Elliptic curves with complex multiplication (Deuring [D11]).

(I_c) Abelian varieties with complex multiplication (Taniyama [T2], Shimura and Taniyama [S11], Shimura, H. Yoshida).

(I_d) Singular K3 surfaces, i.e., K3 surfaces with 20 Picard numbers (Shafarevich and Pyatetskii-Shapiro [P1], Deligne [D2], T. Shioda and H. Inose [S21]).

(II_a) Algebraic curves that are suitable models of the elliptic modular function fields (Eichler [E1], Shimura [S12]).

(II_b) Algebraic curves that are suitable models of the automorphic function fields obtained from a quaternion algebra (Shimura [S13, S15]).

(II_c) Certain fiber varieties of which the base is a curve of type (II_a) or (II_b) and the fibers are Abelian varieties (Kuga and Shimura [K6], Ihara [I1], Deligne [D3]).

(II_d) Certain Shimura varieties of higher dimension (Langlands and others; \rightarrow [B6]).

In these cases, $\zeta(s, V)$ can be expressed by known functions, i.e., by Hecke L -functions with Grössencharakteren of algebraic number fields in cases (I) or by Dirichlet series corresponding to modular forms in cases (II). This fact has an essential meaning for the arithmetic properties of these functions. For example, the extended \dagger Ramanujan conjecture concerning the Hecke operator of the automorphic form reduces to Weil's conjecture on varieties related to those in cases II. Moreover, for (II_a)–(II_c) the essential point is the congruence relation $\hat{T}_p = \Pi + \Pi^*$ (Kronecker, Eichler [E1], Shimura). In particular, for (II_b) this formula is related to the problem of constructing class fields over totally imaginary quadratic extensions of a totally real field F utilizing special

values of automorphic functions and class fields over F . Actually, the formula is equivalent to the reciprocity law for class fields (Shimura).

One of the facts that makes the Hasse ζ -function important is that it describes the decomposition law of prime ideals of algebraic number fields when V is an algebraic curve or an Abelian variety (Weil, Shimura [S14], Taniyama [T2], T. Honda [H6]). In that case, its Hasse ζ -function has the following arithmetic meaning.

Let C be a complete, nonsingular algebraic curve defined over an algebraic number field K , and let J be the Jacobian variety of C defined over K . For a prime number l , fix an l -adic coordinate system Σ_l on J , and let $K(J, l^\infty)$ be the extension field of K obtained by adjoining to K all the coordinates of the l^n th division points ($n = 1, 2, \dots$) of J . Then $K(J, l^\infty)/K$ is an infinite Galois extension of K . The corresponding Galois group $G(J, l^\infty)$ has the l -adic representation $\sigma \rightarrow M_l^*(\sigma)$ by the l -adic coordinates Σ_l . Almost all prime ideals \mathfrak{p} of K are unramified in $K(J, l^\infty)/K$. Thus when we take an arbitrary prime factor \mathfrak{P} of \mathfrak{p} in $K(J, l^\infty)$, the Frobenius substitution of \mathfrak{P} ,

$$\sigma_{\mathfrak{P}} = \left[\frac{K(J, l^\infty)/K}{\mathfrak{P}} \right],$$

is uniquely determined. Furthermore, the characteristic polynomial $\det(1 - M_l^*(\sigma_{\mathfrak{P}})u)$ is determined only by \mathfrak{p} and does not depend on the choice of the prime factor \mathfrak{P} ; we denote this polynomial by $P_p(u, C)$. In this case, for almost all \mathfrak{p} , $P_p(u, C)$ is a polynomial with rational integral coefficients independent of l ; namely, the numerator of the ζ -function of the reduction of $C \bmod p$. Thus

$$\zeta_1(s, C) = \prod_{\mathfrak{p}}' P_p(N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s}, C)^{-1} \\ \sim \prod_{\mathfrak{p}}' \det(1 - M_l^*(\sigma_{\mathfrak{P}})N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s})^{-1}.$$

Here the product $\prod' \det(1 - M_l^*(\sigma_{\mathfrak{P}})N(\mathfrak{p})^{-s})^{-1}$ has the same expression as the Artin L -function if we ignore the fact that M_l^* is the l -adic representation and $K(J, l^\infty)$ is the infinite extension. Thus if we can describe $\zeta(s, C)$ explicitly, then the decomposition process of the prime ideal for intermediate fields between $K(J, l^\infty)$ and K can be made fairly clear. In fact, this is the case for examples $(I_a) - (I_c)$ and $(II_a) - (II_c)$, from which the relations between the arithmetic of the field of division points $K(J, l^\infty)/K$ and the eigenvalues of the Hecke operator have been obtained. Thus for curves and Abelian varieties, $\zeta(s, V)$ is related to the arithmetic of some number fields; but it is not known whether similar arithmetical relations exist for other kinds of varieties except in a few cases.

Tate's Conjecture. For a projective nonsingular variety V over a finite algebraic number field K , let $\mathfrak{A}^r(\bar{V})$ denote the group of algebraic cycles of codimension r on $\bar{V} = V \otimes_K \mathbb{C}$ modulo homological equivalence and let $\mathfrak{A}^r(V)$ be the subgroup of $\mathfrak{A}^r(\bar{V})$ generated by algebraic cycles rational over K . Then Tate [T3] conjectured that the rank of $\mathfrak{A}^r(V)$ is equal to the order of the pole of $\zeta_{2r}(s, V)$ at $s = r + 1$. This conjecture is closely connected with **Hodge's conjecture** that the space of rational cohomology classes of type (r, r) on \bar{V} is spanned by $\mathfrak{A}^r(\bar{V})$; in fact, the equivalence of these conjectures is known for Abelian varieties of \dagger CM type (H. Pohlmann, *Ann. Math.*, 88 (1968)) and for Fermat hypersurfaces of dimension $2r$ (Tate [T3], Weil [W6]). Thus, when $r = 1$, Tate's conjecture for these varieties holds by Lefschetz's theorem, and when $r > 1$, it holds in certain cases where the Hodge conjecture is verified (Shioda, *Math. Ann.*, 245 (1979); Z. Ran, *Compositio Math.*, 42 (1981)). Further examples are given by K3 surfaces with large Picard numbers (Shioda and Inose [S21]; T. Oda, *Proc. Japan Acad.*, 56 (1980)).

L -Functions of Elliptic Curves. Let E be an elliptic curve (with a rational point) over the rational number field \mathbb{Q} , and let N be its conductor; a prime number p divides N if and only if E has bad reduction $\bmod p$ (Tate [T5]). The L -function of E over \mathbb{Q} is defined as follows:

$$L(s, E) = \prod_{p|N} (1 - \varepsilon_p p^{-s})^{-1} \prod_{p \nmid N} (1 - a_p p^{-s} + p^{1-2s})^{-1},$$

where $\varepsilon_p = 0$ or ± 1 and $1 - a_p u + pu^2 = P_1(u, E \bmod p)$. There are many interesting results and conjectures concerning $L(s, E)$ [T5]:

(1) Functional equation. Let

$$\xi(s, E) = N^{s/2} (2\pi)^{-s} \Gamma(s) L(s, E).$$

Then it is conjectured that $\xi(s, E)$ is holomorphic in the entire s -plane and satisfies the functional equation $\xi(s, E) = \pm \xi(2-s, E)$. This is true if E has complex multiplication (Deuring) or E is a certain modular curve (Eichler, Shimura).

(2) **Taniyama-Weil conjecture.** Weil [W1 (1967a)] conjectured that, if $L(s, E) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n n^{-s}$, then $f(\tau) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n e^{2\pi i n \tau}$ is a cusp form of weight 2 for the congruence subgroup $\Gamma_0(N)$ which is an eigenfunction for Hecke operators; moreover E is isogenous to a factor of the Jacobian variety of the modular curve for $\Gamma_0(N)$ in such a way that $f(\tau) d\tau$ corresponds to the differential of the first kind on E . If this conjecture is true, then the statements in (1) follow.

(3) **Birch–Swinnerton-Dyer conjecture.** Assuming analytic continuation of $L(s, E)$, B. Birch and H. Swinnerton-Dyer [B4] conjectured that the order of the zero of $L(s, E)$ at $s = 1$ is equal to the rank r of the group $E(\mathbf{Q})$ of rational points of E which is finitely generated by the Mordell-Weil theorem. They verified this for many examples, especially for curves of the type $y^2 = x^3 - ax$. J. Coates and A. Wiles (*Inventiones Math.*, 39 (1977)) proved that if E has complex multiplication and if $r > 0$ then $L(s, E)$ vanishes at $s = 1$. This conjecture has a refinement which extends also to Abelian varieties over a global field (Tate, *Sém. Bourbaki*, no. 306 (1966)).

(4) **Sato's conjecture.** Let

$$1 - a_p u + pu^2 = (1 - \pi_p u)(1 - \bar{\pi}_p u),$$

with $\pi_p = \sqrt{p} e^{i\theta_p}$ ($0 < \theta_p < \pi$). When E has complex multiplication, the distribution of θ_p for half of p is uniform in the interval $[0, \pi]$, and θ_p is $\pi/2$ for the remaining half of p . Suppose that E does not have complex multiplication. Then Sato conjectured that

$$\lim_{x \rightarrow \infty} \frac{(\text{the number of prime numbers } p \text{ less than } x \text{ such that } \theta_p \in [\alpha, \beta])}{(\text{the number of prime numbers less than } x)} = \frac{2}{\pi} \int_{\alpha}^{\beta} \sin^2 \theta \, d\theta \quad (0 < \alpha < \beta < \pi)$$

(Tate [T3]).

H. Yoshida [Y1] posed an analog of Sato's conjecture for elliptic curves defined over function fields with finite constant fields and proved it in certain cases.

(5) **Formal groups.** Letting $L(s, E) = \sum a_n n^{-s}$ as before, set $f(x) = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n x^n / n$. Honda [H6] showed that $f^{-1}(f(x) + f(y))$ is a * formal (Lie) group with coefficients in \mathbf{Z} and that this group is isomorphic over \mathbf{Z} to a formal group obtained by power series expansion of the group law of E with respect to suitable * local uniformizing coordinates at the origin. Such an interpretation of the ζ -function also applies to other cases in which ζ -functions of * group varieties may be characterized as Dirichlet series whose coefficients give a normal form of the group law; e.g., the case of algebraic tori (T. Ibukiyama, *J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo*, (IA) 21 (1974)).

T. Selberg ζ -Functions and ζ -Functions Associated with Discontinuous Groups

Let $\Gamma \subset SL(2, \mathbf{R})$ be a * Fuchsian group operating on the complex upper half-plane $H = \{z = x + iy \mid y > 0\}$. When the two eigenvalues of an element $\gamma \in \Gamma$ are distinct real numbers ξ_1 ,

ξ_2 ($\xi_1 \xi_2 = 1, \xi_1 < \xi_2$), we call γ * hyperbolic. Then the number ξ_2^2 is denoted by $N(\gamma)$ and is called the norm of γ . When γ is hyperbolic, γ^n ($n = 1, 2, 3, \dots$) is also hyperbolic. When $\pm \gamma$ is not a positive power of other hyperbolic elements, γ is called a primitive hyperbolic element. The elements conjugate to primitive hyperbolic elements are also primitive hyperbolic elements and have the same norm as γ . Let P_1, P_2, \dots be the conjugacy classes of primitive hyperbolic elements of Γ , and let $\gamma_i \in P_i$ be their representatives. Suppose that a matrix representation $\gamma \rightarrow M(\gamma)$ of Γ is given. Then the analytic function given by

$$Z_{\Gamma}(s, M) = \prod_i \prod_{n=0}^{\infty} \det(I - M(\gamma_i) N(\gamma_i)^{-s-n})$$

is called the **Selberg ζ -function** (Selberg [S5]). When $\Gamma \backslash H$ is compact and Γ is torsion-free, then $Z_{\Gamma}(s, M)$ has the following properties.

(1) It can be analytically continued to the whole complex plane of s and gives an * integral function of genus at most 2.

(2) It has zeros of order $(2n+1)(2g-2)v$ at $-n$ ($n = 0, 1, 2, 3, \dots$). Here g is the genus of the Riemann surface $\Gamma \backslash H$ and v is the degree of the representation M . All other zeros lie on the line $\text{Re } s = 1/2$, except for a finite number that lie on the interval $(0, 1)$ of the real axis.

(3) It satisfies the functional equation

$$Z_{\Gamma}(1-s, M) = Z_{\Gamma}(s, M) \exp \left(-v A(\Gamma \backslash H) \times \int_0^{s-1/2} v \tan(\pi v) dv \right),$$

where

$$A(\Gamma \backslash H) = \iint_{\Gamma \backslash H} \frac{dx dy}{y^2} = 2\pi(2g-2), \quad x + iy \in H.$$

Property (2) shows that the Riemann hypothesis is almost valid for $Z_{\Gamma}(s, M)$. The proof is based on the following fact concerning the eigenvalue problem for the variety $\Gamma \backslash H$: The eigenvalue λ of the equation

$$y^2(\partial^2/\partial x^2 + \partial^2/\partial y^2)u + \lambda u = 0, \quad u \in L^2(\Gamma \backslash H)$$

cannot be a negative number.

Using this function, T. Yamada (1965) investigated the unit distribution of real quadratic fields.

Selberg ζ -functions are defined similarly when $\Gamma \backslash G$ has finite volume but is noncompact. In this case, however, the decomposition of $L_2(\Gamma \backslash G)$ into irreducible representation spaces has a continuous spectrum; hence the properties of the Selberg ζ -function of Γ are quite different from the case when $\Gamma \backslash G$ is compact. Selberg defined the **generalized Eisenstein series** to give the eigenfunctions of this continuous spectrum explicitly. When $\Gamma =$

$SL(2, \mathbf{Z})$, the series is given by $\sum_{(c,d)=1} \frac{y^s}{|c\tau+d|^{2s}}$.

This type of generalized Eisenstein series is also defined for the general semisimple algebraic group G and its arithmetic subgroup. It has been studied by Selberg, Godement, Gelfand, Harish-Chandra, Langlands, D. Zagier, and others.

U. Ihara ζ -Functions

Let k_p be a p -adic field, \mathfrak{o}_p the ring of integers in k_p , and $G = PSL_2(\mathbf{R}) \times PSL_2(k_p)$. Suppose that Γ is a subgroup of G such that (1) Γ is discrete, (2) $\Gamma \backslash G$ is compact, (3) Γ has no torsion element except the identity, (4) $\Gamma_{\mathbf{R}}$ (the projection of Γ in $PSL_2(\mathbf{R})$) is dense in $PSL_2(\mathbf{R})$, and (5) Γ_p (the projection of Γ in $PSL_2(k_p)$) is dense in $PSL_2(k_p)$. Then $\Gamma \cong \Gamma_{\mathbf{R}} \cong \Gamma_p$. Let $X = \{x + iy | y > 0\}$ be the upper half-plane, and let Γ act on X via $\Gamma_{\mathbf{R}}$. The action of Γ on X is not discontinuous, but the subgroup $\Gamma_0 = \{\gamma \in \Gamma | \text{projection of } \gamma \text{ to } \Gamma_p \in PSL_2(\mathfrak{o}_p)\}$ operates on X properly discontinuously. For each $z \in X$, define $\Gamma_z = \{\gamma \in \Gamma | \gamma(z) = z\}$. Then Γ_z is isomorphic to \mathbf{Z} or $\{1\}$. Let $\tilde{\mathbf{P}}(\Gamma) = \{z \in X | \Gamma_z \cong \mathbf{Z}\}$. The group Γ acts on $\tilde{\mathbf{P}}(\Gamma)$, since Γ_z and $\Gamma_{\gamma z}$ are conjugate in Γ . Let $\mathbf{P}(\Gamma) = \tilde{\mathbf{P}}(\Gamma)/\Gamma$. Suppose that $P \in \mathbf{P}(\Gamma)$ is represented by $z \in X$. Choose a generator γ of Γ_z and project γ to Γ_p . Then γ is equivalent to a diagonal matrix $\begin{pmatrix} \lambda & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda^{-1} \end{pmatrix}$ with $\lambda \in k_p$. We denote the valuation of k_p by ord_p and consider $|\text{ord}_p(\lambda)|$. This value depends only on P and we denote it by $\deg(P)$. The **Ihara ζ -function** of Γ is defined by

$$Z_{\Gamma}(u) = \prod_{P \in \mathbf{P}(\Gamma)} (1 - u^{\deg(P)})^{-1}.$$

Ihara proved that

$$Z_{\Gamma}(u) = \frac{\prod_{i=1}^g (1 - \pi_i u)(1 - \pi_i' u)}{(1 - u)(1 - q^2 u)} (1 - u)^H,$$

where q is the number of elements in the residue class field of p , and g is the genus of the Riemann surface $\Gamma_0 \backslash X$ and $H = (g - 1)q(q - 1)$. Similar results hold even if Γ has torsion elements and the quotient $\Gamma \backslash G$ is only assumed to have finite volume.

Aside from the factor $(1 - u)^H$, this looks like Weil's formula for the congruence ζ -function of an algebraic curve defined over \mathbf{F}_{q^2} . Ihara conjectured that the first factor of $Z_{\Gamma}(u)$ is always the congruence ζ -function of some algebraic curve over \mathbf{F}_{q^2} , and furthermore that Γ could be regarded as the fundamental group of a certain Galois covering of this curve which describes the decomposition law of

prime divisors in this covering [12, 13, 14]. He verified the conjecture in the case $\Gamma = PGL_2(\mathbf{Z}[1/p])$ by using the moduli of elliptic curves. Related results have been obtained by Shimura, Ihara, Y. Morita, and others.

V. ζ -Functions Associated with Prehomogeneous Vector Spaces

M. Sato posed a notion of prehomogeneous vector spaces and defined ζ -functions associated with them. Sato's program has been carried on by himself and T. Shintani [S2, S3, S17, S18]. Let G be a linear algebraic group, V a finite-dimensional linear space of dimension n , and ρ a rational representation $G \rightarrow GL(V)$, where G , V , and ρ are defined over \mathbf{Q} . The triple (G, ρ, V) is called a **prehomogeneous vector space** if there exists a proper algebraic subset S of $V_{\mathbf{C}}$ such that $V_{\mathbf{C}} - S$ is a single $G_{\mathbf{C}}$ -orbit. The algebraic set S is called the set of singular points of V . We also assume that G is reductive and S is an irreducible hypersurface of V . Let V^* be the dual vector space of V , and ρ^* the dual (contragredient) representation of G . Then (G, ρ^*, V^*) is again a prehomogeneous vector space, and we denote its set of singular points by S^* . There are homogeneous polynomials P and Q of the same degree d on V and V^* , respectively, such that $S = \{x \in X | P(x) = 0\}$ and $S^* = \{x^* \in V^* | Q(x^*) = 0\}$. P and Q are relative invariants of G , i.e., $P(\rho(g)x) = \chi(g)P(x)$ and $Q(\rho^*(g)x^*) = \chi(g)^{-1}Q(x^*)$ (for $g \in G$, $x \in V$, and $x^* \in V^*$) hold with a rational character χ of G . Put $G^1 = \ker \chi = \{g \in G | \chi(g) = 1\}$. Denote by $G_{\mathbf{R}}^+$ the connected component of 1 of the Lie group $G_{\mathbf{R}}$. Let $V_{\mathbf{R}} - S = V_1 \cup \dots \cup V_l$, $V_{\mathbf{R}}^* - S^* = V_1^* \cup \dots \cup V_l^*$ be the decompositions of $V_{\mathbf{R}} - S$ and $V_{\mathbf{R}}^* - S^*$ into their topologically connected components. Then V_i and V_j^* are $G_{\mathbf{R}}^+$ -orbits. We further assume that $V_{\mathbf{R}} \cap S$ decomposes into the union of a finite number of $G_{\mathbf{R}}^1$ -orbits. Set $\Gamma = G_{\mathbf{R}}^+ \cap G_{\mathbf{Z}}^1$, and take Γ -invariant lattices L and L^* in $V_{\mathbf{Q}}$ and $V_{\mathbf{Q}}^*$, respectively. Consider the following functions in s :

$$\Phi_i(f, s) = \int_{V_i} f(x) |P(x)|^s dx,$$

$$\Phi_j^*(f, s) = \int_{V_j^*} f^*(x^*) |Q(x^*)|^s dx^*,$$

and

$$Z_i(f, L, s) = \int_{G_{\mathbf{R}}^+/\Gamma} \chi(g)^s \sum_{x \in L \cap V_i} f(\rho(g)x) dg,$$

$$Z_i^*(f^*, L^*, s)$$

$$= \int_{G_{\mathbf{R}}^+/\Gamma} \chi(g)^{-s} \sum_{x^* \in L^* \cap V_j^*} f^*(\rho^*(g)x^*) dg,$$

where f and f^* are rapidly decreasing functions on V_R and V_R^* , respectively, dx and dx^* are Haar measures of V_R and V_R^* , respectively, and dg is a Haar measure of G . Then the ratios

$$\frac{Z_i(f, L, s)}{\Phi_i(f, s - n/d)} = \xi_i(s, L),$$

$$\frac{Z_j^*(f^*, L^*, s)}{\Phi_j^*(f^*, s - n/d)} = \xi_j^*(s, L^*)$$

are independent of the choice of f and f^* and are Dirichlet series in s . These Dirichlet series $\xi_i(s, L)$ and $\xi_j^*(s, L^*)$ are called **ξ -functions associated with the prehomogeneous space**.

Considering Fourier transforms of $|P(x)|^s$ and $|Q(x^*)|^s$, we obtain functional equations for ξ_i and ξ_j^* under some additional (but mild) conditions on (G, ρ, V) as follows. The Dirichlet series ξ_i and ξ_j^* are analytically continuable to meromorphic functions on the whole s -plane, and they satisfy

$$\begin{aligned} v(L^*)\xi_j^*(n/d - s, L^*) \\ = \gamma(s - n/d)(2\pi)^{-ds}|b_0|^s \exp(\pi d\sqrt{-1}s/2) \\ \times \sum_{j=1}^l u_{ij}(s)\xi_i(s, L), \end{aligned}$$

with a Γ -factor $\gamma(s) = \prod_{i=1}^d \Gamma(s - c_i + 1)$.

Here $u_{ij}(s)$ ($1 \leq i, j \leq l$) are polynomials in $\exp(-\pi\sqrt{-1}s)$ with degree $\leq d$, and b_0 and c_i are constants depending only on (G, ρ, V) .

Epstein's ζ -functions and Siegel's Dirichlet series associated with indefinite quadratic forms are examples of the above-defined ζ -functions. Shintani defined such ζ -functions related to integral binary cubic forms and obtained asymptotic formulas concerning the class numbers of irreducible integral binary cubic forms with discriminant n , which are improvements on the results of Davenport [S17].

Recently M. Sato studied ζ -functions of prehomogeneous vector spaces without assuming the conditions that G is reductive and S is irreducible. In this case, ζ -functions of several complex variables are obtained. For examples and classification of prehomogeneous vector spaces \rightarrow [S4].

References

- [A1] E. Artin, Collected papers, S. Lang and J. T. Tate (eds.), Addison-Wesley, 1965.
 [A2] E. Artin, Zur Theorie der L -Reihen mit allgemeinen Gruppencharakteren, Abh. Math. Sem. Univ. Hamburg, 8 (1930), 292–306 [A1, 165–179].

- [A3] M. Artin, A. Grothendieck, and J. L. Verdier, Théorie des topos et cohomologie étale des schémas (SGA 4), Lecture notes in math. 269, 270, 305, Springer, 1972–1973.
 [A4] J. Ax, On the units of an algebraic number fields, Illinois J. Math., 9 (1965), 584–589.
 [B1] P. Bayer and J. Neukirch, On values of zeta functions and l -adic Euler characteristics, Inventiones Math., 50 (1978), 35–64.
 [B2] P. Berthelot, Cohomologie cristalline des schéma de caractéristique $p > 0$, Lecture notes in math. 407, Springer, 1974.
 [B3] P. Berthelot and A. Ogus, Notes on crystalline cohomology, Math. notes 21, Princeton Univ. Press, 1978.
 [B4] B. Birch and H. Swinnerton-Dyer, Notes on elliptic curves II, J. Reine Angew. Math., 218 (1965), 79–108.
 [B5] E. Bombieri and H. P. F. Swinnerton-Dyer, On the local zeta function of a cubic threefold, Ann. Scuola Norm. Sup. Pisa, (3) 21 (1967), 1–29.
 [B6] A. Borel and W. Casselman (eds.), Automorphic forms, representations, and L -functions, Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math., 33 (pts. 1 and 2) (1979).
 [B7] A. Brumer, On the units of algebraic number fields, Mathematika, 14 (1967), 121–124.
 [C1] K. Chandrasekharan, Lectures on the Riemann zeta-function, Tata Inst., 1953.
 [C2] S. Chowla and A. Selberg, On Epstein's zeta function I, Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US, 35 (1949), 371–374.
 [C3] J. Coates, p -adic L -functions and Iwasawa's theory, Algebraic Number Fields (L -functions and Galois Properties), A. Fröhlich (ed.), Academic Press, 1977.
 [D1] R. Dedekind, Über die Theorie der ganzen algebraischen Zahlen, Dirichlet's Vorlesungen über Zahlentheorie, Supplement XI, fourth edition, 1894, secs. 184, 185, 186 (Gesammelte mathematische Werke III, Braunschweig, 1932, 297–314; Chelsea, 1968).
 [D2] P. Deligne, La conjecture de Weil pour les surfaces $K3$, Inventiones Math., 75 (1972), 206–226.
 [D3] P. Deligne, Formes modulaires et représentations l -adiques, Sémin. Bourbaki, exp. 355, Lecture notes in math. 349, Springer, 1973.
 [D4] P. Deligne, La conjecture de Weil, I, II, Publ. Math. Inst. HES, 43 (1974), 273–307; 52 (1980), 137–252.
 [D5] P. Deligne, Cohomologie étale (SGA 4 $\frac{1}{2}$), Lecture notes in math. 569, Springer, 1977.
 [D6] P. Deligne, Les constantes des équations fonctionnelles des fonctions L , Lecture notes in math. 349, Springer, 1973.
 [D7] P. Deligne and N. Katz, Groupes de monodromie en géométrie algébrique (SGA

- 7II), Lecture notes in math. 340, Springer, 1973.
- [D8] P. Deligne and K. Ribet, Values of Abelian L -functions at negative integers over totally real fields, *Inventiones Math.*, 59 (1980), 227–286.
- [D9] P. Deligne and J.-P. Serre, Formes modulaires de poids 1, *Ann. Sci. École Norm. Sup. (4)*, 7 (1974), 507–530.
- [D10] M. Deuring, *Algebren*, Erg. Math., Springer, second edition, 1968.
- [D11] M. Deuring, Die Zetafunktionen einer algebraischen Kurve vom Geschlechte Eins I, II, III, IV, *Nachr. Akad. Wiss. Göttingen* (1953), 85–94; (1955), 13–42; (1956), 37–76; (1957), 55–80.
- [D12] K. Doi and H. Naganuma, On the functional equation of certain Dirichlet series, *Inventiones Math.*, 9 (1969–1970), 1–14.
- [D13] B. Dwork, On the rationality of the zeta-function of an algebraic variety, *Amer. J. Math.*, 82 (1960), 631–648.
- [D14] B. Dwork, On the zeta function of a hypersurface I, II, III, *Publ. Math. Inst. HES*, 1962, 5–68; *Ann. Math.*, (2) 80 (1964), 227–299; (2) 83 (1966), 457–519.
- [E1] M. Eichler, *Einführung in die Theorie der algebraischen Zahlen und Funktionen*, Birkhäuser, 1963; English translation, Introduction to the theory of algebraic numbers and functions, Academic Press, 1966.
- [F1] B. Ferrero and L. C. Washington, The Iwasawa invariant μ_p vanishes for Abelian number fields, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 109 (1979), 377–395.
- [G1] R. Godement, Les fonctions ζ des algèbres simples I, II, *Sém. Bourbaki*, exp. 171, 176, 1958–1959.
- [G2] A. Grothendieck, Formule de Lefschetz et rationalité des fonction L , *Sém. Bourbaki*, exp. 379, 1964–1965 (Benjamin, 1966).
- [G3] A. Grothendieck, Cohomologie l -adique et fonctions L (SGA 5), Lecture notes in math. 589, Springer, 1977.
- [H1] H. Hasse, Zur Theorie der abstrakten elliptischen Funktionenkörper I, II, III, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 175 (1936), 55–62, 69–88, 193–208.
- [H2] E. Hecke, *Mathematische Werke*, Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht, 1959.
- [H3] E. Hecke, Eine neue Art von Zetafunktionen und ihre Beziehung zur Verteilung der Primzahlen I, II, *Math. Z.*, 1 (1918), 357–376; 6 (1920), 11–51 [H2, 215–234, 249–289].
- [H4] E. Hecke, Über die Bestimmung Dirichletscher Reihen durch ihre Funktionalgleichung, *Math. Ann.*, 112 (1936), 664–699 [H2, 591–626].
- [H5] E. Hecke, Über Modulformen und die Dirichletschen Reihen mit Eulerscher Produktentwicklung I, II, *Math. Ann.*, 114 (1937), 1–28; 316–351 [H2, 644–671, 672–707].
- [H6] T. Honda, Formal groups and zeta functions, *Osaka J. Math.*, 5 (1968), 199–213.
- [H7] T. Honda, Isogeny classes of Abelian varieties over finite fields, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 20 (1968), 83–95.
- [I1] Y. Ihara, Hecke polynomials as congruence ζ functions in elliptic modular case (To validate Sato's identity), *Ann. Math.*, (2) 85 (1967), 267–295.
- [I2] Y. Ihara, On congruence monodromy problems, I, II, Lecture notes, Univ. of Tokyo, 1968–1969.
- [I3] Y. Ihara, Non-Abelian class fields over function fields in special cases, *Actes Congr. Intern. Math.*, 1970, Nice, Gauthier-Villars, p. 381–389.
- [I4] Y. Ihara, Congruence relations and Shimura curves, *Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math.*, 33 (1979), pt. 2, 291–311.
- [I5] K. Iwasawa, On Γ -extensions of algebraic number fields, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 65 (1959), 183–226.
- [I6] K. Iwasawa, On p -adic L -functions, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 89 (1969), 198–205.
- [I7] K. Iwasawa, Lectures on p -adic L -functions, *Ann. math. studies* 74, Princeton Univ. Press, 1972.
- [J1] H. Jacquet and R. P. Langlands, Automorphic forms on $GL(2)$, Lecture notes in math. 114, Springer, 1970.
- [J2] H. Jacquet, Automorphic forms on $GL(2)$, II, Lecture notes in math. 278, Springer, 1972.
- [K1] N. Katz and W. Messing, Some consequences of the Riemann hypothesis for varieties over finite fields, *Inventiones Math.*, 23 (1974), 73–77.
- [K2] N. Katz, An overview of Deligne's proof of the Riemann hypothesis for varieties over finite fields, *Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math.*, 28 (1976), 275–305.
- [K3] N. Katz, p -adic L -functions for CM-fields, *Inventiones Math.*, 49 (1978), 199–297.
- [K4] S. Kleiman, Algebraic cycles and the Weil conjectures, *Dix exposés sur la cohomologies des schémas*, North-Holland, 1968, 359–386.
- [K5] T. Kubota and H. W. Leopoldt, Eine p -adische Theorie der Zetawerte, *J. Reine Angew. Math.*, 214/215 (1964), 328–339.
- [K6] M. Kuga and G. Shimura, On the zeta function of a fiber variety whose fibers are Abelian varieties, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 82 (1965), 478–539.
- [L1] E. G. H. Landau, *Handbuch der Lehre von der Verteilung der Primzahlen I, II*, Teubner, 1909 (Chelsea, 1953).
- [L2] S. Lang, Sur les séries L d'une variété algébrique, *Bull. Soc. Math. France*, 84 (1956), 385–407.

- [L3] S. Lang, Algebraic number theory, Addison-Wesley, 1970.
- [L4] R. P. Langlands, Problems in the theory of automorphic forms, Lecture notes in math. 170, Springer, 1970, 18–86.
- [L5] R. P. Langlands, Base change for $GL(2)$, Ann. math. studies 96, Princeton Univ. Press, 1980.
- [L6] H. W. Leopoldt, Eine p -adische Theorie der Zetawerte II, J. Reine Angew. Math., 274/275 (1975), 224–239.
- [L7] S. Lubkin, A p -adic proof of the Weil conjecture, Ann. Math., (2) 87 (1968), 105–194; (2) (1968), 195–225.
- [M1] Yu. I. Manin, Periods of parabolic forms and p -adic Hecke series, Math. USSR-Sb., 21 (1973), 371–393.
- [M2] B. Mazur, Eigenvalues of Frobenius acting on algebraic varieties over finite fields, Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math., 29 (1975).
- [M3] B. Mazur and H. Swinnerton-Dyer, On the p -adic L -series of an elliptic curve, Inventiones Math., 25 (1974), 1–61.
- [M4] J. S. Milne, Etale cohomology, Princeton series in mathematics 33, Princeton Univ. Press, 1980.
- [P1] I. I. Pyatetskii-Shapiro and I. R. Shafarevich, The arithmetic of $K3$ surfaces, Proc. Steklov Inst. Math., 132 (1973), 45–57.
- [P2] K. Prachar, Primzahlverteilung, Springer, 1957.
- [R1] B. Riemann, Über die Anzahl der Primzahlen unter einer gegebenen Grösse, Gesammelte mathematische Werke, 1859, 145–153 (Dover, 1953).
- [S1] H. Saito, Automorphic forms and algebraic extensions of number fields, Lectures in math. 8, Kinokuniya, Tokyo, 1975.
- [S2] M. Sato, Theory of prehomogeneous vector spaces (notes by T. Shintani) (in Japanese), Sûgaku no Ayumi, 15 (1970), 85–157.
- [S3] M. Sato and T. Shintani, On zeta functions associated with prehomogeneous vector spaces, Ann. Math., (2) 100 (1974), 131–170.
- [S4] M. Sato and T. Kimura, A classification of irreducible prehomogeneous vector spaces and their invariants, Nagoya Math. J., 65 (1977), 1–155.
- [S5] A. Selberg, Harmonic analysis and discontinuous groups on weakly symmetric Riemannian spaces with applications to Dirichlet series, J. Indian Math. Soc., 20 (1956), 47–87.
- [S6] A. Selberg, On the zeros of Riemann's zeta-function, Skr. Norske Vid. Akad. Oslo, no. 10 (1942), 1–59.
- [S7] J.-P. Serre, Zeta and L functions, Arithmetical Algebraic Geometry, Harper & Row, 1965, 82–92.
- [S8] J.-P. Serre, Facteurs locaux des fonctions zêta des variétés algébriques (Définitions et conjectures), Sém. Delange-Pisot-Poitou, 11 (1969/70), no. 19.
- [S9] J.-P. Serre, Formes modulaires et fonctions zêta p -adiques, Lecture notes in math. 317, Springer, 1973, 319–338.
- [S10] H. Shimizu, On zeta functions of quaternion algebras, Ann. Math., (2) 81 (1965), 166–193.
- [S11] G. Shimura and Y. Taniyama, Complex multiplication of Abelian varieties and its applications to number theory, Publ. Math. Soc. Japan, no. 6, 1961.
- [S12] G. Shimura, Introduction to the arithmetic theory of automorphic functions, Publ. Math. Soc. Japan, no. 11, 1971.
- [S13] G. Shimura, On the zeta-functions of the algebraic curves uniformized by certain automorphic functions, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 13 (1961), 275–331.
- [S14] G. Shimura, A reciprocity law in non-solvable extensions, J. Reine Angew. Math., 221 (1966), 209–220.
- [S15] G. Shimura, Construction of class fields and zeta functions of algebraic curves, Ann. Math., (2) 85 (1967), 58–159.
- [S16] G. Shimura, On canonical models of arithmetic quotients of bounded symmetric domains, I, II, Ann. Math., (2) 91 (1970) 144–222; 92 (1970), 528–549.
- [S17] T. Shintani, On Dirichlet series whose coefficients are class numbers of integral binary cubic forms, J. Math. Soc. Japan, 24 (1972), 132–188.
- [S18] T. Shintani, On zeta functions associated with the vector space of quadratic forms, J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo, (IA) 22 (1975), 25–65.
- [S19] T. Shintani, On a Kronecker limit formula for real quadratic fields, J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo, (IA) 24 (1977), 167–199.
- [S20] T. Shintani, On liftings of holomorphic automorphic forms, Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math., 33 (1979), pt. 2, 97–110.
- [S21] T. Shioda and H. Inose, On singular $K3$ surfaces, Complex Analysis and Algebraic Geometry, Iwanami and Cambridge Univ. Press, 1977, 119–136.
- [S22] C. L. Siegel, Gesammelte Abhandlungen I, II, III, IV, Springer, 1966, 1979.
- [S23] C. L. Siegel, Über die Classenzahl quadratischer Zahlkörper, Acta Arith., 1 (1935), 83–86 [S22, I. 406–409].
- [S24] C. L. Siegel, Über die Zetafunktionen indefiniter quadratischer Formen I, II, Math. Z., 43 (1938), 682–708; 44 (1939), 398–426 [S22, II, 41–67, 68–96].
- [S25] H. M. Stark, L -functions at $s = 1$, II, III, Advances in Math., 17 (1975), 60–92; 22 (1976), 64–84.
- [T1] T. Tamagawa, On the ζ -functions of a

- division algebra, *Ann. Math.*, (2) 77 (1963), 387–405.
- [T2] Y. Taniyama, *L*-functions of number fields and zeta functions of Abelian varieties, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 9 (1957), 330–366.
- [T3] J. Tate, Algebraic cycles and poles of zeta functions, *Arithmetical Algebraic Geometry*, Harper & Row, 1965, 93–110.
- [T4] J. Tate, Endomorphisms of Abelian varieties over finite fields, *Inventiones Math.*, 2 (1966), 134–144.
- [T5] J. Tate, The arithmetic of elliptic curves, *Inventiones Math.*, 23 (1974), 179–206.
- [T6] J. Tate, Number theoretic background, *Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math.*, 33 (1979), pt. 2, 3–26.
- [T7] T. Tatzuwa, On the Hecke-Landau *L*-series, *Nagoya Math. J.*, 16 (1960), 11–20.
- [T8] E. C. Titchmarsh, *The theory of the Riemann zeta-function*, Clarendon Press, 1951.
- [W1] A. Weil, *Collected papers, I–III*, Springer, 1980.
- [W2] A. Weil, *Courbes algébriques et variétés abéliennes*, Hermann, 1971 (orig., 1948).
- [W3] A. Weil, Numbers of solutions of equations in finite fields, *Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 55 (1949), 497–508 [W1, I, 399–400].
- [W4] A. Weil, Number theory and algebraic geometry, *Proc. Intern. Congr. Math.*, 1950, Cambridge, vol. 2, 90–100 [W1, I, 442–449].
- [W5] A. Weil, Sur la théorie du corps de classes, *J. Math. Soc. Japan*, 3 (1951), 1–35 [W1, I, 483–517].
- [W6] A. Weil, Jacobi sums as “Größencharaktere,” *Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.*, 73 (1952), 487–495 [W1, II, 63–71].
- [W7] A. Weil, On a certain type of characters of the idele-class group of an algebraic number field, *Proc. Intern. Symposium on Algebraic Number Theory*, Tokyo-Nikko, 1955, 1–7 [W1, II, 255–261].
- [W8] A. Weil, *Basic number theory*, Springer, 1967.
- [W9] A. Weil, *Dirichlet series and automorphic forms*, *Lecture notes in math.* 189, Springer, 1971.
- [Y1] H. Yoshida, On an analogue of the Sato conjecture, *Inventiones Math.*, 19 (1973), 261–277.

Appendix A

Tables of Formulas

1	Algebraic Equations
2	Trigonometry
3	Vector Analysis and Coordinate Systems
4	Differential Geometry
5	Lie Algebras, Symmetric Riemannian Spaces, and Singularities
6	Algebraic Topology
7	Knot Theory
8	Inequalities
9	Differential and Integral Calculus
10	Series
11	Fourier Analysis
12	Laplace Transforms and Operational Calculus
13	Conformal Mappings
14	Ordinary Differential Equations
15	Total and Partial Differential Equations
16	Elliptic Integrals and Elliptic Functions
17	Gamma Functions and Related Functions
18	Hypergeometric Functions and Spherical Functions
19	Functions of Confluent Type and Bessel Functions
20	Systems of Orthogonal Functions
21	Interpolation
22	Distribution of Typical Random Variables
23	Statistical Estimation and Statistical Hypothesis Testing

1. Algebraic Equations (→ 10 Algebraic Equations)

(I) Quadratic Equation $ax^2 + bx + c = 0$ ($a \neq 0$)

The roots are

$$x = \frac{-b \pm \sqrt{b^2 - 4ac}}{2a} = \frac{-b' \pm \sqrt{b'^2 - ac}}{a} \quad (b \equiv 2b').$$

The discriminant is $b^2 - 4ac$.

(II) Cubic Equation $ax^3 + bx^2 + cx + d = 0$ ($a \neq 0$)

By the translation $\xi = x + b/3a$, the equation is transformed into $\xi^3 + 3p\xi + q = 0$, where

$$p \equiv (3ac - b^2)/9a^2, \quad q \equiv (2b^3 - 9abc + 27a^2d)/27a^3.$$

Its discriminant is $-27(q^2 + 4p^3)$. The roots of the latter equation are

$$\xi = \sqrt[3]{\alpha} + \sqrt[3]{\beta}, \quad \omega \sqrt[3]{\alpha} + \omega^2 \sqrt[3]{\beta}, \quad \omega^2 \sqrt[3]{\alpha} + \omega \sqrt[3]{\beta},$$

where

$$\omega = e^{2\pi i/3} = \frac{-1 + \sqrt{3}i}{2}, \quad \left. \begin{matrix} \alpha \\ \beta \end{matrix} \right\} = \frac{-q \pm \sqrt{q^2 + 4p^3}}{2} \quad (\text{Cardano's formula}).$$

Casus irreducibilis (the case when $q^2 + 4p^3 < 0$). Putting $\alpha \equiv re^{i\theta}$ ($\beta = \bar{\alpha}$), the roots are

$$\xi = 2\sqrt[3]{r} \cos(\theta/3), \quad 2\sqrt[3]{r} \cos[(\theta + 2\pi)/3], \quad 2\sqrt[3]{r} \cos[(\theta + 4\pi)/3].$$

(III) Quartic Equation (Biquadratic Equation) $ax^4 + bx^3 + cx^2 + dx + e = 0$ ($a \neq 0$)

By the translation $\xi = x + b/4a$, the equation is transformed into

$$\xi^4 + p\xi^2 + q\xi + r = 0.$$

The cubic resolvent of the latter is $t^3 - pt^2 - 4rt + (4pr - q^2) = 0$. If t_0 is one of the roots of the cubic resolvent, the roots ξ of the above equation are the solutions of two quadratic equations

$$\xi^2 \pm \sqrt{t_0 - p} [\xi - q/2(t_0 - p)] + t_0/2 = 0 \quad (\text{Ferrari's formula}).$$

2. Trigonometry

(I) Trigonometric Functions (→ 432 Trigonometry)

(1) In Fig. 1, $OA = OB = OP = 1$, and

$$MP = \sin \theta, \quad OM = \cos \theta, \quad AT = \tan \theta,$$

$$BL = \cot \theta, \quad OT = \sec \theta, \quad OL = \operatorname{cosec} \theta.$$

(2) $\sin^2 \theta + \cos^2 \theta = 1$,

$$\tan \theta = \sin \theta / \cos \theta, \quad \cot \theta = 1 / \tan \theta, \quad \sec \theta = 1 / \cos \theta,$$

$$\operatorname{cosec} \theta = 1 / \sin \theta, \quad 1 + \tan^2 \theta = \sec^2 \theta, \quad 1 + \cot^2 \theta = \operatorname{cosec}^2 \theta.$$

(3)

	θ	$-\theta$	$\pi/2 \pm \theta$	$\pi \pm \theta$	$n\pi \pm \theta$
sin	s	$-s$	c	$\mp s$	$\pm (-1)^n s$
cos	c	c	$\mp s$	$-c$	$(-1)^n c$
tan	t	$-t$	$\mp 1/t$	$\pm t$	$\pm t$

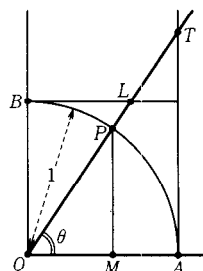


Fig. 1

(4)	α	0°	15°	18°	22.5°	30°	36°	45°	
	\curvearrowright	0	$\pi/12$	$\pi/10$	$\pi/8$	$\pi/6$	$\pi/5$	$\pi/4$	
	$\sin \alpha$	0	$\frac{\sqrt{3}-1}{2\sqrt{2}}$	$\frac{\sqrt{5}-1}{4}$	$\frac{\sqrt{2-\sqrt{2}}}{2}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{\sqrt{10-2\sqrt{5}}}{4}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}$	$\cos \alpha$
	$\cos \alpha$	1	$\frac{\sqrt{3}+1}{2\sqrt{2}}$	$\frac{\sqrt{10+2\sqrt{5}}}{4}$	$\frac{\sqrt{2+\sqrt{2}}}{2}$	$\frac{\sqrt{3}}{2}$	$\frac{\sqrt{5}+1}{4}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}$	$\sin \alpha$
		$\pi/2$	$5\pi/12$	$2\pi/5$	$3\pi/8$	$\pi/3$	$3\pi/10$	$\pi/4$	α
		90°	75°	72°	67.5°	60°	54°	45°	

(5) Addition Formulas

$$\sin(\alpha \pm \beta) = \sin \alpha \cos \beta \pm \cos \alpha \sin \beta, \quad \cos(\alpha \pm \beta) = \cos \alpha \cos \beta \mp \sin \alpha \sin \beta,$$

$$\tan(\alpha \pm \beta) = (\tan \alpha \pm \tan \beta) / (1 \mp \tan \alpha \tan \beta).$$

(6) $\sin 2\alpha = 2 \sin \alpha \cos \alpha, \quad \cos 2\alpha = \cos^2 \alpha - \sin^2 \alpha = 2 \cos^2 \alpha - 1 = 1 - 2 \sin^2 \alpha,$

$$\tan 2\alpha = 2 \tan \alpha / (1 - \tan^2 \alpha).$$

$$\sin 3\alpha = 3 \sin \alpha - 4 \sin^3 \alpha, \quad \cos 3\alpha = 4 \cos^3 \alpha - 3 \cos \alpha,$$

$$\tan 3\alpha = (3 \tan \alpha - \tan^3 \alpha) / (1 - 3 \tan^2 \alpha).$$

$$\sin n\alpha = \sum_{i=0}^{[(n-1)/2]} \binom{n}{2i+1} (-1)^i \sin^{2i+1} \alpha \cos^{n-(2i+1)} \alpha,$$

$$\cos n\alpha = \sum_{i=0}^{[n/2]} \binom{n}{2i} (-1)^i \sin^{2i} \alpha \cos^{n-2i} \alpha.$$

(7) $\sin^2(\alpha/2) = (1 - \cos \alpha)/2, \quad \cos^2(\alpha/2) = (1 + \cos \alpha)/2,$

$$\tan^2(\alpha/2) = (1 - \cos \alpha) / (1 + \cos \alpha).$$

(8) $2 \sin \alpha \cos \beta = \sin(\alpha + \beta) + \sin(\alpha - \beta), \quad 2 \cos \alpha \sin \beta = \sin(\alpha + \beta) - \sin(\alpha - \beta),$

$$2 \cos \alpha \cos \beta = \cos(\alpha + \beta) + \cos(\alpha - \beta), \quad -2 \sin \alpha \sin \beta = \cos(\alpha + \beta) - \cos(\alpha - \beta).$$

$$\sin \alpha + \sin \beta = 2 \sin[(\alpha + \beta)/2] \cos[(\alpha - \beta)/2],$$

$$\sin \alpha - \sin \beta = 2 \cos[(\alpha + \beta)/2] \sin[(\alpha - \beta)/2],$$

$$\cos \alpha + \cos \beta = 2 \cos[(\alpha + \beta)/2] \cos[(\alpha - \beta)/2],$$

$$\cos \alpha - \cos \beta = -2 \sin[(\alpha + \beta)/2] \sin[(\alpha - \beta)/2].$$

(II) Plane Triangles

As shown in Fig. 2, we denote the interior angles of a triangle ABC by α, β, γ ; the corresponding side lengths by a, b, c ; the area by S ; the radii of inscribed, circumscribed, and escribed circles by r, R, r_A , respectively; the perpendicular line from the vertex A to the side BC by AH ; the midpoint of the side BC by M ; bisector of the angle A by AD ; and the lengths of AH, AM, AD by h_A, m_A, f_A , respectively. Similar notations are used for B and C . Put $s \equiv (a + b + c)/2$. The symbol ... means similar formulas by the cyclic permutation of the letters A, B, C , and corresponding quantities.

$$\frac{a}{\sin \alpha} = \frac{b}{\sin \beta} = \frac{c}{\sin \gamma} = 2R \quad (\text{law of sines}).$$

$$a = b \cos \gamma + c \cos \beta, \quad \dots \quad (\text{the first law of cosines}).$$

$$a^2 = b^2 + c^2 - 2bc \cos \alpha, \quad \dots \quad (\text{the second law of cosines}).$$

$$\sin^2(\alpha/2) = (s-b)(s-c)/bc, \quad \dots; \quad \cos^2(\alpha/2) = s(s-a)/bc, \quad \dots.$$

$$(b+c)\sin(\alpha/2) = a \cos[(\beta-\gamma)/2], \quad \dots; \quad (b-c)\cos(\alpha/2) = \alpha \sin[(\beta-\gamma)/2], \quad \dots.$$

$$\frac{a+b}{a-b} = \frac{\tan[(\alpha+\beta)/2]}{\tan[(\alpha-\beta)/2]}, \quad \dots \quad (\text{Napier's rule}).$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 S &= ah_A/2 = (1/2)bc \sin \alpha = (1/2)a^2 \sin \beta \sin \gamma / \sin \alpha = abc/4R = 2R^2 \sin \alpha \sin \beta \sin \gamma \\
 &= rs = r_A(s-a) = \sqrt{rr_A r_B r_C} \\
 &= \sqrt{s(s-a)(s-b)(s-c)} \quad (\text{Heron's formula}). \\
 r &= (s-a) \tan(\alpha/2) = 4R \sin(\alpha/2) \sin(\beta/2) \sin(\gamma/2). \\
 r_A &= s \tan(\alpha/2) = (s-b) \cot(\gamma/2) = 4R \sin(\alpha/2) \cos(\beta/2) \cos(\gamma/2). \\
 1/r &= (1/h_A) + (1/h_B) + (1/h_C). \\
 m_A^2 &= (2b^2 + 2c^2 - a^2)/4 = (b^2 + c^2 + 2bc \cos \alpha)/4. \\
 f_A &= 2bc \cos(\alpha/2)/(b+c) = 2\sqrt{bcs(s-a)}/(b+c). \\
 f_A f_B f_C &= 8abcrs^2/(b+c)(c+a)(a+b).
 \end{aligned}$$

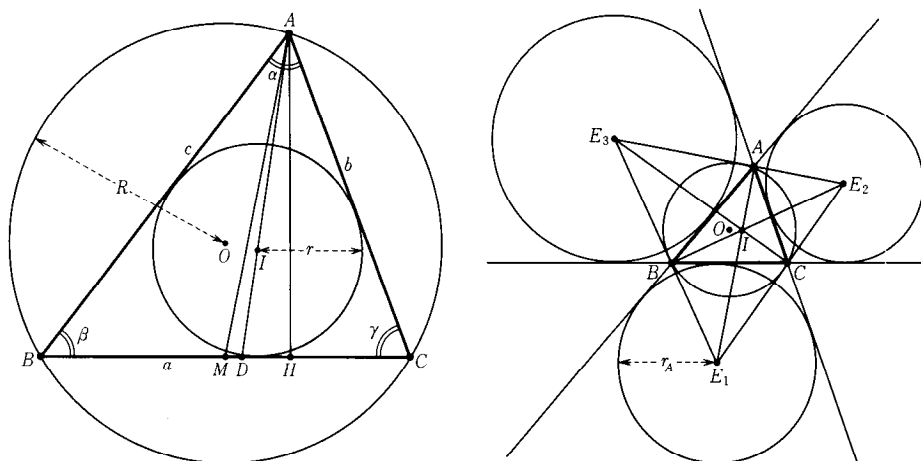


Fig. 2

(III) Spherical Triangles

We denote the interior angles of a spherical triangle by α, β, γ ; the corresponding sides by a, b, c ; the area by S ; and the radius of the supporting sphere by ρ . We have

$$\sin a : \sin b : \sin c = \sin \alpha : \sin \beta : \sin \gamma \quad (\text{law of sines}).$$

$$\cos a = \cos b \cos c + \sin b \sin c \cos \alpha, \quad \dots; \quad \cos \alpha = -\cos \beta \cos \gamma + \sin \beta \sin \gamma \cos a, \quad \dots$$

(law of cosines).

$$\sin a \cos \beta = \cos b \sin c - \sin b \cos c \cos \alpha, \quad \dots \quad (\text{law of sines and cosines}).$$

$$\cot a \sin b = \cos b \cos \gamma + \cot \alpha \sin \gamma, \quad \dots \quad (\text{law of cotangents}).$$

$$\tan[(a+b)/2]/\tan[(a-b)/2] = \tan[(\alpha+\beta)/2]/\tan[(\alpha-\beta)/2], \quad \dots \quad (\text{law of tangents}).$$

$$\tan[(\alpha+\beta)/2] \tan(\gamma/2) = \cos[(a-b)/2]/\cos[(a+b)/2], \quad \dots;$$

$$\tan[(\alpha-\beta)/2] \tan(\gamma/2) = \sin[(a-b)/2]/\sin[(a+b)/2], \quad \dots;$$

$$\tan[(a+b)/2] \cot(c/2) = \cos[(\alpha-\beta)/2]/\cos[(\alpha+\beta)/2], \quad \dots;$$

$$\tan[(a-b)/2] \cot(c/2) = \sin[(\alpha-\beta)/2]/\sin[(\alpha+\beta)/2], \quad \dots \quad (\text{Napier's analogies}).$$

$$S = (\alpha + \beta + \gamma - \pi)\rho^2 = 2\rho^2 \arccos \frac{\cos^2(a/2R) + \cos^2(b/2R) + \cos^2(c/2R)}{2 \cos(a/2R) \cos(b/2R) \cos(c/2R)} \quad (\text{Heron's formula}).$$

For a right triangle ($\gamma = \pi/2$), we have Napier's rule of circular parts: taking the subscripts modulo 5 in Fig. 3,

$$\sin \theta_i = \tan \theta_{i+1} \tan \theta_{i-1} = \cos \theta_{i+2} \cos \theta_{i-2}.$$

For example, we have

$$\cos c = \cos a \cos b = \cot \alpha \cot \beta,$$

$$\cos \beta = \tan a \cot c = \cos b \sin \alpha,$$

$$\sin a = \tan b \cot \beta = \sin c \sin \alpha.$$

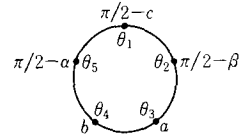


Fig. 3

3. Vector Analysis and Coordinate Systems

We denote a 3-dimensional vector by $\mathbf{A} \equiv (A_x, A_y, A_z) = A_x \mathbf{i} + A_y \mathbf{j} + A_z \mathbf{k}$, $|\mathbf{A}| = \sqrt{A_x^2 + A_y^2 + A_z^2}$.

(I) Vector Algebra (\rightarrow 442 Vectors)

Scalar product $\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{B} \equiv \mathbf{AB} \equiv (\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}) = A_x B_x + A_y B_y + A_z B_z = |\mathbf{A}| |\mathbf{B}| \cos \theta$
(where θ is the angle between \mathbf{A} and \mathbf{B}).

Vector product

$$\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B} \equiv [\mathbf{A}, \mathbf{B}] = (A_y B_z - A_z B_y) \mathbf{i} + (A_z B_x - A_x B_z) \mathbf{j} + (A_x B_y - A_y B_x) \mathbf{k} = \begin{vmatrix} \mathbf{i} & \mathbf{j} & \mathbf{k} \\ A_x & A_y & A_z \\ B_x & B_y & B_z \end{vmatrix}.$$

$$|\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}| = |\mathbf{A}| |\mathbf{B}| \sin \theta.$$

$$\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{B} = \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{A}. \quad \mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{A} \equiv A^2 = |\mathbf{A}|^2. \quad \mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{A} = 0. \quad \mathbf{A} \cdot (\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) = 0. \quad (\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B})^2 = |\mathbf{A}|^2 |\mathbf{B}|^2 - (\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{B})^2.$$

$$\mathbf{A} \times (\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{C}) = (\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{C}) \mathbf{B} - (\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{B}) \mathbf{C}. \quad \mathbf{A} \times (\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{C}) + \mathbf{B} \times (\mathbf{C} \times \mathbf{A}) + \mathbf{C} \times (\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) = 0.$$

$$(\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) \cdot (\mathbf{C} \times \mathbf{D}) = \mathbf{A} \cdot \{\mathbf{B} \times (\mathbf{C} \times \mathbf{D})\} = (\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{C})(\mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{D}) - (\mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{C})(\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{D}).$$

$$\text{Scalar triple product} \quad [\mathbf{ABC}] \equiv \mathbf{A} \cdot (\mathbf{B} \times \mathbf{C}) = \mathbf{B} \cdot (\mathbf{C} \times \mathbf{A}) = \mathbf{C} \cdot (\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) = \begin{vmatrix} A_x & A_y & A_z \\ B_x & B_y & B_z \\ C_x & C_y & C_z \end{vmatrix}.$$

$$[\mathbf{BCD}]\mathbf{A} + [\mathbf{ACD}]\mathbf{B} + [\mathbf{ABD}]\mathbf{C} = [\mathbf{ABC}]\mathbf{D}. \quad [\mathbf{ABC}][\mathbf{EFG}] = \begin{vmatrix} \mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{E} & \mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{F} & \mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{G} \\ \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{E} & \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{F} & \mathbf{B} \cdot \mathbf{G} \\ \mathbf{C} \cdot \mathbf{E} & \mathbf{C} \cdot \mathbf{F} & \mathbf{C} \cdot \mathbf{G} \end{vmatrix}.$$

(II) Differentiation of a Vector Field (\rightarrow 442 Vectors)

$$\nabla \equiv \mathbf{i} \frac{\partial}{\partial x} + \mathbf{j} \frac{\partial}{\partial y} + \mathbf{k} \frac{\partial}{\partial z} \quad (\text{Nabla}),$$

$$\text{grad } \varphi \equiv \nabla \varphi = \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial x} \mathbf{i} + \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial y} \mathbf{j} + \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial z} \mathbf{k} \quad (\text{gradient of } \varphi),$$

$$\text{rot } \mathbf{A} \equiv \nabla \times \mathbf{A} = \left(\frac{\partial A_z}{\partial y} - \frac{\partial A_y}{\partial z} \right) \mathbf{i} + \left(\frac{\partial A_x}{\partial z} - \frac{\partial A_z}{\partial x} \right) \mathbf{j} + \left(\frac{\partial A_y}{\partial x} - \frac{\partial A_x}{\partial y} \right) \mathbf{k} \quad (\text{rotation of } \mathbf{A}),$$

$$\text{div } \mathbf{A} \equiv \nabla \cdot \mathbf{A} = \frac{\partial A_x}{\partial x} + \frac{\partial A_y}{\partial y} + \frac{\partial A_z}{\partial z} \quad (\text{divergence of } \mathbf{A}),$$

$$\Delta \varphi \equiv \nabla^2 \varphi \equiv \text{div grad } \varphi = \frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial y^2} + \frac{\partial^2 \varphi}{\partial z^2} \quad (\text{Laplacian of } \varphi).$$

$$\text{grad}(\varphi \psi) = \varphi \text{ grad } \psi + \psi \text{ grad } \varphi,$$

$$\text{grad}(\mathbf{A} \cdot \mathbf{B}) = (\mathbf{B} \cdot \text{grad}) \mathbf{A} + (\mathbf{A} \cdot \text{grad}) \mathbf{B} + \mathbf{A} \times \text{rot } \mathbf{B} + \mathbf{B} \times \text{rot } \mathbf{A},$$

$$\text{rot}(\varphi \mathbf{A}) = \varphi \text{ rot } \mathbf{A} - \mathbf{A} \times \text{grad } \varphi, \quad \text{rot}(\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) = (\mathbf{B} \cdot \text{grad}) \mathbf{A} - (\mathbf{A} \cdot \text{grad}) \mathbf{B} + \mathbf{A} \text{ div } \mathbf{B} - \mathbf{B} \text{ div } \mathbf{A},$$

$$\text{div}(\varphi \mathbf{A}) = \varphi \text{ div } \mathbf{A} + \mathbf{A} \cdot \text{grad } \varphi, \quad \text{div}(\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{B}) = \mathbf{B} \cdot \text{rot } \mathbf{A} - \mathbf{A} \cdot \text{rot } \mathbf{B}.$$

$$\text{rot grad } \varphi = 0, \quad \text{div rot } \mathbf{A} = 0. \quad \Delta \mathbf{A} = \text{grad div } \mathbf{A} - \text{rot rot } \mathbf{A}.$$

$$\Delta(f \circ \varphi) = (df/d\varphi) \Delta \varphi + (d^2 f/d\varphi^2) (\text{grad } \varphi)^2, \quad \Delta(\varphi \psi) = \varphi \Delta \psi + \psi \Delta \varphi + 2(\text{grad } \varphi \cdot \text{grad } \psi).$$

(III) Integration of a Vector Field (→ 94 Curvilinear Integrals and Surface Integrals, 442 Vectors)

Let D be a 3-dimensional domain, B its boundary, dV the volume element of D , dS the surface element of B , and $d\mathbf{S} = \mathbf{n} dS$, where \mathbf{n} is the outer normal vector of the surface B . We have

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Gauss's formula} \quad & \iiint_D \operatorname{div} \mathbf{A} dV = \iint_B d\mathbf{S} \cdot \mathbf{A} = \iint_B (\mathbf{n} \cdot \mathbf{A}) dS, \\ & \iiint_D \operatorname{rot} \mathbf{A} dV = \iint_B d\mathbf{S} \times \mathbf{A} = \iint_B (\mathbf{n} \times \mathbf{A}) dS, \\ & \iiint_D \operatorname{grad} \varphi dV = \iint_B \varphi d\mathbf{S}; \\ \text{Green's formula} \quad & \iint_B \varphi \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial n} dS = \iiint_D (\varphi \Delta \psi + \operatorname{grad} \varphi \cdot \operatorname{grad} \psi) dV, \\ & \iint_B \left(\varphi \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial n} - \psi \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial n} \right) dS = \iiint_D (\varphi \Delta \psi - \psi \Delta \varphi) dV, \\ & 4\pi \varphi(x_0) = - \iiint_D \frac{\Delta \varphi}{r} dV + \iint_B \left\{ \frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial n} - \varphi \frac{\partial}{\partial n} \left(\frac{1}{r} \right) \right\} dS, \end{aligned}$$

where r is the distance from the point x_0 .

Let B be a bordered surface with a boundary curve Γ , ds the line element of Γ , dS the surface element of B , and $ds = \mathbf{t} ds$, $d\mathbf{S} = \mathbf{n} dS$, for \mathbf{t} the unit tangent vector of Γ and under the proper choice of the positive direction for the surface normal \mathbf{n} . We have

$$\text{Stokes's formula} \quad \iint_B d\mathbf{S} \cdot \operatorname{rot} \mathbf{A} = \oint_{\Gamma} \mathbf{A} \cdot d\mathbf{s} = \oint_{\Gamma} (\mathbf{t} \cdot \mathbf{A}) ds, \quad \iint_B d\mathbf{S} \times \operatorname{grad} \varphi = \oint_{\Gamma} \varphi d\mathbf{s}.$$

If the domain D is simply connected, and the vector field \mathbf{V} tends sufficiently rapidly to 0 near the boundary of D and at infinity, we have

$$\text{Helmholtz's theorem} \quad \mathbf{V} = \operatorname{grad} \varphi + \operatorname{rot} \mathbf{A}, \quad \varphi = - \iiint_D \frac{\operatorname{div} \mathbf{V}}{4\pi r} dV, \quad \mathbf{A} = \iiint_D \frac{\operatorname{rot} \mathbf{V}}{4\pi r} dV.$$

(IV) Moving Coordinate System

Denote differentiation with respect to the rest and the moving systems by d/dt , d^*/dt , respectively. Let the relative velocity of the systems be \mathbf{v} . Then we have

$$\frac{d\varphi}{dt} = \frac{d^*\varphi}{dt} - \mathbf{v} \cdot \operatorname{grad} \varphi, \quad \frac{d\mathbf{A}}{dt} = \frac{d^*\mathbf{A}}{dt} - [\mathbf{v} \cdot \operatorname{grad} \mathbf{A} - (\mathbf{A} \cdot \operatorname{grad}) \mathbf{v}].$$

With respect to rotating coordinates we have

$$\begin{aligned} \mathbf{v} &= \mathbf{w} \times \mathbf{r}, \\ \frac{d\mathbf{A}}{dt} &= \frac{d^*\mathbf{A}}{dt} + [\mathbf{w} + \mathbf{A} - ((\mathbf{w} \times \mathbf{r}) \cdot \operatorname{grad}) \mathbf{A}] \end{aligned}$$

When the domain of integration is also a function of t ,

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{d}{dt} \int \mathbf{A} \cdot d\mathbf{s} &= \int \left\{ \frac{\partial \mathbf{A}}{\partial t} + \operatorname{grad} (\mathbf{v} \cdot \mathbf{A}) - \mathbf{v} \times \operatorname{rot} \mathbf{A} \right\} \cdot d\mathbf{s}, \\ \frac{d}{dt} \iint \mathbf{A} \cdot d\mathbf{S} &= \iint \left\{ \frac{\partial \mathbf{A}}{\partial t} + \operatorname{rot} (\mathbf{A} \times \mathbf{v}) + \mathbf{v} \operatorname{div} \mathbf{A} \right\} \cdot d\mathbf{S}, \\ \frac{d}{dt} \iiint \varphi dV &= \iiint \left\{ \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t} + (\mathbf{v} \cdot \operatorname{grad} \varphi) + \varphi \operatorname{div} \mathbf{v} \right\} dV = \iiint \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial t} dV + \iint \varphi \mathbf{v} \cdot d\mathbf{S}. \end{aligned}$$

(V) Curvilinear Coordinates (→ 90 Coordinates)

Let (x_1, \dots, x_n) be rectangular coordinates in an n -dimensional Euclidean space. If

$$x_j = \varphi_j(u_1, \dots, u_n) \quad (j = 1, \dots, n), \quad J \equiv \det(\partial \varphi_j / \partial u_k) \neq 0,$$

the system (u_1, \dots, u_n) may be taken as a coordinate system of an n -dimensional space, and the

original space is a Riemannian manifold with the first fundamental form

$$g_{jk} = \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial \varphi_i}{\partial u_j} \frac{\partial \varphi_i}{\partial u_k} \quad (j, k = 1, \dots, n),$$

$$g \equiv \det(g_{jk}) = J^2.$$

When the metric is of the diagonal form $g_{jk} = g_j^2 \delta_{jk}$, the coordinate system (u_1, \dots, u_n) is called an orthogonal curvilinear coordinate system or an isothermal curvilinear coordinate system. In such a case we have $J = g_1 \dots g_n$, and the line element is given by $ds^2 = \sum_{j=1}^n g_j^2 du_j^2$.

For a scalar f and a vector $\xi = (\xi_1, \dots, \xi_n)$, we have

$$(\text{grad} f)_j = \frac{1}{g_j} \frac{\partial f}{\partial u_j} \quad (j = 1, \dots, n), \quad \Delta f = \frac{1}{J} \sum_{j=1}^n \frac{\partial}{\partial u_j} \left(\frac{J}{g_j^2} \frac{\partial f}{\partial u_j} \right),$$

$$\text{div} \xi = \frac{1}{J} \sum_{j=1}^n \frac{\partial}{\partial u_j} \left(\frac{J}{g_j} \xi_j \right), \quad (\text{rot} \xi)_{jk} = \frac{1}{g_j g_k} \left[\frac{\partial (g_k \xi_k)}{\partial u_j} - \frac{\partial (g_j \xi_j)}{\partial u_k} \right] \quad (j, k = 1, \dots, n).$$

When $n=2$, the rot may be considered a scalar, $\text{rot} \xi = (\text{rot} \xi)_{12}$, and when $n=3$, the rot may be considered a vector, with components

$$\text{rot} \xi = ((\text{rot} \xi)_{23}, (\text{rot} \xi)_{31}, (\text{rot} \xi)_{12}).$$

The following are examples of orthogonal coordinates.

(1) Planar Curvilinear Coordinates. In the present Section (1), we put

$$x_1 = x, \quad x_2 = y, \quad u_1 = u, \quad u_2 = v, \quad g_1 = p, \quad g_2 = q.$$

$$ds^2 = p^2 dx^2 + q^2 dy^2, \quad J \equiv \partial(x, y) / \partial(u, v) = \sqrt{pq}.$$

Planar orthogonal curvilinear coordinates may be represented in the form $x + iy = F(U + iV)$, F being a complex analytic function, by suitable choice of the functions $U = U(u)$, $V = V(v)$.

(i) Polar Coordinates (r, θ) (Fig. 4).

$$x = r \cos \theta, \quad y = r \sin \theta; \quad x + iy = \exp(\log r + i\theta).$$

$$r = \sqrt{x^2 + y^2}, \quad \theta = \arctan(y/x).$$

$$p = 1, \quad q = r, \quad J = r, \quad ds^2 = dr^2 + r^2 d\theta^2.$$

$$\Delta f = \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial r^2} + \frac{1}{r} \frac{\partial f}{\partial r} + \frac{1}{r^2} \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial \theta^2}.$$

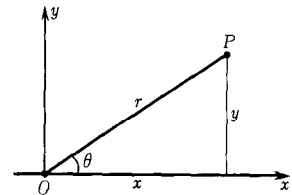


Fig. 4

(ii) Elliptic Coordinates (μ, ν) (Fig. 5). Among the family of confocal conics

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2 + \rho} + \frac{y^2}{b^2 + \rho} = 1 \quad (a > b),$$

there are two values of ρ for which the curve passes through a given point $P(x, y)$. Denote the two values of ρ by μ and ν , where $\mu > -b^2 > \nu > -a^2$. The curve corresponding to $\rho = \mu$ or $\rho = \nu$ is an ellipse or a hyperbola, respectively. Then we have the relations

$$x^2 = (\mu + a^2)(\nu + a^2)/(a^2 - b^2), \quad y^2 = (\mu + b^2)(\nu + b^2)/(b^2 - a^2).$$

Let the common foci be $(\pm c, 0)$ ($c^2 = a^2 - b^2$). Then we have

$$r_1 = \sqrt{(x - c)^2 + y^2}, \quad r_2 = \sqrt{(x + c)^2 + y^2}$$

where r_1, r_2 are the distances from the two foci as in Fig. 5, and

$$4(a^2 + \mu) = (r_1 + r_2)^2, \quad 4(a^2 + \nu) = (r_1 - r_2)^2.$$

$$p = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{\frac{\mu - \nu}{(\mu + a^2)(\mu + b^2)}}, \quad q = \frac{1}{2} \sqrt{\frac{\nu - \mu}{(\nu + a^2)(\nu + b^2)}}$$

(iii) Parabolic Coordinates (α, β) (Fig. 6). Among the family of parabolas $y^2 = 4\rho(x + \rho)$ with the focus at the origin and having the x -axis as the principal axis, there are two values of ρ for which the curve passes through a given point $P(x, y)$. Denote the two values of ρ by α, β ($\alpha > 0 > \beta$). We have $x = -(\alpha + \beta)$, $y = \sqrt{-4\alpha\beta}$.

(iv) Equilateral (or Rectangular) Hyperbolic Coordinates (u, v) (Fig. 7). This is a system that

replaces $x/2$, $y/2$ in (iii) by $-y$ and x , respectively, with $\sqrt{\alpha}=u$, $\sqrt{-\beta}=v$. The relations are

$$x=uv, \quad y=(u^2-v^2)/2; \quad x+iy=i(u-iv)^2/2, \quad u^2, v^2=\sqrt{x^2+y^2} \pm y, \quad p=q=\sqrt{u^2+v^2}.$$

The curves $x=\text{constant}$ or $y=\text{constant}$ are equilateral hyperbolas.

(v) Bipolar Coordinates (ξ, η) (Fig. 8). These coordinates represent a point $P(x, y)$ on a plane as the intersection of the family of circles passing through two fixed points $(\pm a, 0)$ and the family of loci on which the ratio of distances from the same two fixed points $(\pm a, 0)$ is constant. The latter is the set of Apollonius' circles. The relations are

$$x = \frac{a \sinh \xi}{\cosh \xi + \cos \eta}, \quad y = \frac{a \sin \eta}{\cosh \xi + \cos \eta} \quad (-\infty < \xi < \infty, 0 \leq \eta \leq 2\pi).$$

$$p = q = \frac{a}{\cosh \xi + \cos \eta}.$$

(2) Curvilinear Coordinates in 3-Dimensional Space. In the present Section (2), we put $x_1 = x$, $x_2 = y$, $x_3 = z$.

(i) Circular Cylindrical Coordinates (Cylindrical Coordinates) (ρ, φ, z) (Fig. 9).

$$x = \rho \cos \varphi, \quad y = \rho \sin \varphi, \quad z = z.$$

$$ds^2 = d\rho^2 + \rho^2 d\varphi^2 + dz^2, \quad J = \rho. \quad \Delta f = \frac{1}{\rho} \frac{\partial}{\partial \rho} \left(\rho \frac{\partial f}{\partial \rho} \right) + \frac{1}{\rho^2} \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial \varphi^2} + \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial z^2}.$$

(ii) Polar Coordinates (Spherical Coordinates) (Fig. 9).

$$x = r \sin \theta \cos \varphi, \quad y = r \sin \theta \sin \varphi, \quad z = r \cos \theta.$$

$$r = \sqrt{x^2 + y^2 + z^2}, \quad \varphi = \arctan(y/x), \quad \theta = \arctan(\sqrt{x^2 + y^2}/z).$$

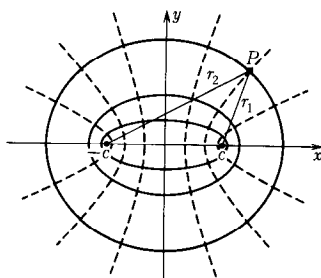


Fig. 5

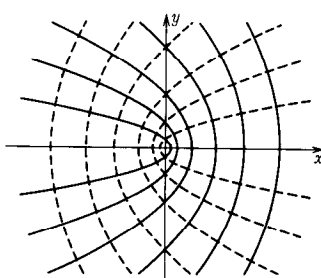


Fig. 6

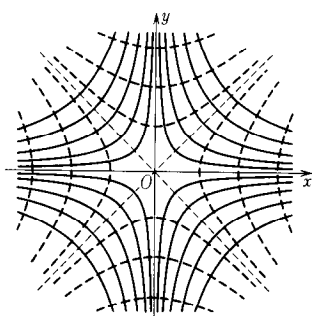


Fig. 7

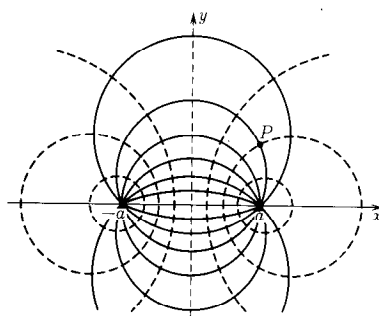


Fig. 8

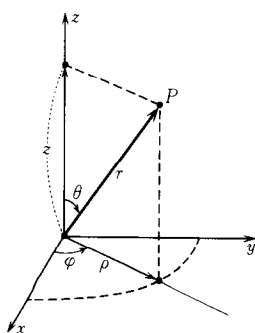


Fig. 9

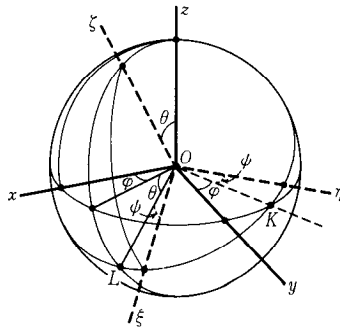


Fig. 10

The angles φ and θ are called azimuth and zenith angle, respectively. We further have

$$ds^2 = dr^2 + r^2 d\theta^2 + r^2 \sin^2 \theta d\varphi^2, \quad J = r^2 \sin \theta.$$
$$\Delta f = \frac{1}{r^2} \frac{\partial}{\partial r} \left(r^2 \frac{\partial f}{\partial r} \right) + \frac{1}{r^2 \sin \theta} \frac{\partial}{\partial \theta} \left(\sin \theta \frac{\partial f}{\partial \theta} \right) + \frac{1}{r^2 \sin^2 \theta} \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial \varphi^2}.$$

(iii) Euler's Angles (Fig. 10). Let (x, y, z) and (ξ, η, ζ) be two linear orthogonal coordinate systems with common origin O . Denote the angle between the z -axis and the ζ -axis by θ ; the angle between the zx -plane and the $z\zeta$ -plane by φ ; and the angle between the η -axis and the intersection OK of the xy -plane and the $\xi\eta$ -plane (or the angle between the ξ -axis and the intersection OL of the $z\zeta$ -plane and the $\xi\eta$ -plane) by ψ . The angles θ , φ , and ψ are called Euler's angles. The direction cosines of one coordinate axis with respect to the other coordinate system are as follows:

	x	y	z
ξ	$\cos \varphi \cos \theta \cos \psi - \sin \varphi \sin \psi$	$\sin \varphi \cos \theta \cos \psi + \cos \varphi \sin \psi$	$-\sin \theta \cos \psi$
η	$-\cos \varphi \cos \theta \sin \psi - \sin \varphi \cos \psi$	$-\sin \varphi \cos \theta \sin \psi + \cos \varphi \cos \psi$	$\sin \theta \sin \psi$
ζ	$\cos \varphi \sin \theta$	$\sin \varphi \sin \theta$	$\cos \theta$

(iv) Rotational (or Revolutinal) Coordinates (u, v, ρ) . Let (u, v) be curvilinear coordinates (Section (1)) on the $z\rho$ -plane. The rotational coordinates (u, v, ρ) are given by the combination of $x = \rho \cos \varphi$, $y = \rho \sin \varphi$ with the coordinates on the $z\rho$ -plane. We have

$$ds^2 = \rho^2 du^2 + q^2 dv^2 + \rho^2 d\varphi^2,$$

where p, q are the corresponding values for the coordinates (u, v) .

(v) Generalized Cylindrical Coordinates (u, v, z) . These are a combination of curvilinear coordinates (u, v) on the xy -plane with z . We have

$$ds^2 = p^2 du^2 + q^2 dv^2 + dz^2.$$

For various selections of (u, v) we have coordinates as follows:

(u, v)	Rotational Coordinate System	Generalized Cylindrical Coordinate System
Linear rectangular coordinates	Circular cylindrical coordinates	Linear rectangular coordinates
Polar coordinates ((1)(i))	Spherical coordinates	Circular cylindrical coordinates
Elliptic coordinates ((1)(ii))	Spheroidal coordinates ⁽¹⁾	Elliptic cylindrical coordinates
Parabolic coordinates ((1)(iii))	Rotational parabolic coordinates ⁽²⁾	Parabolic cylindrical coordinates
Equilateral hyperbolic coordinates ((1)(iv))	Rotational hyperbolic coordinates	Hyperbolic cylindrical coordinates
Bipolar coordinates ((1)(v))	Toroidal coordinates ⁽³⁾ Bipolar coordinates ⁽⁴⁾	Bipolar cylindrical coordinates

Notes

- (1) When the ρ -axis is a minor or major axis, we have prolate or oblate spheroidal coordinates, respectively.
- (2) We take the z -axis as the common principal axis of the parabolas.
- (3) Where the line passing through two fixed points is the ρ -axis.
- (4) Where the line passing through two fixed points is the z -axis.

(vi) Ellipsoidal Coordinates (λ, μ, ν) (Fig. 11). Among the family of confocal quadrics

$$\frac{x^2}{a^2 + \rho} + \frac{y^2}{b^2 + \rho} + \frac{z^2}{c^2 + \rho} = 1 \quad (a > b > c > 0),$$

there are three values of ρ for which the surface passes through a given point $P(x,y,z)$. Denote the three values of ρ by λ, μ, ν , where $\lambda > -c^2 > \mu > -b^2 > \nu > -a^2$. The surfaces corresponding to $\rho=\lambda, \rho=\mu$, and $\rho=\nu$ are an ellipsoid, a hyperboloid of one sheet, and a hyperboloid of two sheets, respectively. We have

$$x^2 = \frac{h(a)}{(a^2 - b^2)(a^2 - c^2)}, \quad y^2 = \frac{h(b)}{(b^2 - c^2)(b^2 - a^2)},$$
$$z^2 = \frac{h(c)}{(c^2 - a^2)(c^2 - b^2)}; \quad h(\alpha) \equiv (\lambda + \alpha^2)(\mu + \alpha^2)(\nu + \alpha^2).$$
$$g_1 = \frac{\sqrt{(\lambda - \mu)(\lambda - \nu)}}{2\rho(\lambda)}, \quad g_2 = \frac{\sqrt{(\mu - \nu)(\mu - \lambda)}}{2\rho(\mu)},$$
$$g_3 = \frac{\sqrt{(\nu - \lambda)(\nu - \mu)}}{2\rho(\nu)}; \quad \rho(t) \equiv \sqrt{(t + a^2)(t + b^2)(t + c^2)}.$$

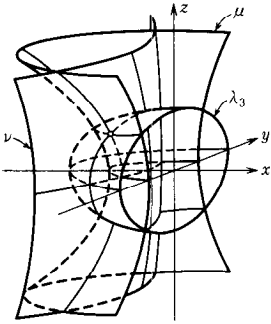


Fig. 11

4. Differential Geometry

(I) Classical Differential Geometry (→ 111 Differential Geometry of Curves and Surfaces)

(1) Plane Curves (Fig. 12). At a point $P(x_0,y_0)$ on a curve $y=f(x)$, the equation of the tangent line is $y-y_0=f'(x_0)(x-x_0)$,

$PT = |y_0\sqrt{1+y_0'^2} / y_0'|,$

and the tangential shadow $TM=y_0/y_0'$. The equation of the normal line is $f'(x_0)(y-y_0)+(x-x_0)=0$,

$PN = |y_0\sqrt{1+y_0'^2} |,$

and the normal shadow $MN=y_0y_0'$. The slope of the tangent is $\tan \alpha = f'(x_0)=y_0'$. The curvature at P is

$\kappa = 1/PQ = f''(x_0)/[1+f'(x_0)^2]^{3/2}$

The coordinates of the center of curvature Q are

$(x_0-f'(x_0)[1+f'(x_0)^2]/f''(x_0), \quad f(x_0)+[1+f'(x_0)^2]/f''(x_0)).$

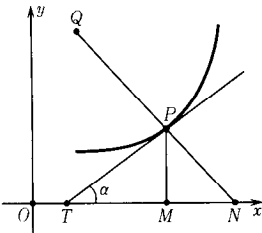


Fig. 12

(2) Space Curves $x_i = x_i(t)$ ($i = 1, 2, 3$), or $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}(t)$. The line element of a curve $\mathbf{x} = \mathbf{x}(t)$ is

$ds = \sqrt{(dx_1)^2 + (dx_2)^2 + (dx_3)^2} = \sqrt{\sum_{\alpha=1}^3 \dot{x}_\alpha^2} \, dt \quad \left(\cdot = \frac{d}{dt} \right).$

The curvature is

$\kappa = \sqrt{\sum \ddot{x}_\alpha^2 - \dot{s}^2 / s^2}$

For $t=s$ (arc length), the curvature is $\kappa = \sqrt{(\sum x_\alpha''^2)}$, and the torsion is $\tau = [\det(x'_\alpha, x''_\alpha, x'''_\alpha)]_{\alpha=1,2,3} / \kappa^2$, where $' = d/ds$. When we denote Frenet's frame by (ξ, η, ζ) , we have $\xi = \mathbf{x}'$, $\eta = \xi' / \kappa$, $\zeta = \xi \times \eta$ (vector product).

The Frenet-Serret formulas are

$$\xi' = \kappa\eta, \quad \eta' = -\kappa\xi + \tau\xi, \quad \xi' = -\tau\eta.$$

(3) Surface in 3-Dimensional Space $x_\alpha = x_\alpha(u_1, u_2)$ ($\alpha = 1, 2, 3$). The first fundamental form of the surface is

$$g_{jk} = \sum_{\alpha=1}^3 \frac{\partial x_\alpha}{\partial u_j} \frac{\partial x_\alpha}{\partial u_k} \quad (j, k = 1, 2). \quad g = \det(g_{jk}) > 0.$$

Let (g^{jk}) be the inverse matrix of (g_{jk}) . The tangent plane at the point $x_\alpha^{(0)}$ is given by

$$\det(x_\alpha - x_\alpha^{(0)}, (\partial x_\alpha / \partial u_1)^{(0)}, (\partial x_\alpha / \partial u_2)^{(0)}) = 0.$$

The normal line at the point $x_\alpha^{(0)}$ is given by $x_\alpha - x_\alpha^{(0)} = t\nu_\alpha^{(0)}$, where t is a parameter, and ν_α is the unit normal vector, given by

$$\nu_\alpha = \frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \frac{\partial(x_\beta, x_\gamma)}{\partial(u_1, u_2)} \quad (\delta_{\alpha\beta\gamma}^{123} = +1).$$

The second fundamental form is

$$h_{jk} \equiv \sum_{\alpha=1}^3 \nu_\alpha \frac{\partial^2 x_\alpha}{\partial u_j \partial u_k} = - \sum_{\alpha=1}^3 \frac{\partial \nu_\alpha}{\partial u_j} \frac{\partial x_\alpha}{\partial u_k}. \quad h \equiv \det(h_{jk}).$$

The principal radii of curvature R_1, R_2 are the roots of the quadratic equation

$$\frac{1}{R^2} - \sum_{j,k} g^{jk} h_{jk} \frac{1}{R} + \frac{h}{g} = 0.$$

The mean curvature (or Germain's curvature) is

$$H \equiv \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{1}{R_1} + \frac{1}{R_2} \right) = \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j,k} g^{jk} h_{jk},$$

and $H=0$ is the condition for the given surface to be a minimal surface. The Gaussian curvature (or total curvature) is

$$K \equiv \frac{1}{R_1 R_2} = \frac{h}{g},$$

and $K=0$ is the condition for the surface to be developable.

We use the notations of Riemannian geometry, with g_{jk} the fundamental tensor:

$$\frac{\partial^2 x_\alpha}{\partial u_j \partial u_k} = \sum_{a=1}^3 \left\{ \begin{matrix} a \\ jk \end{matrix} \right\} \frac{\partial x_\alpha}{\partial u_a} + h_{jk} \nu_\alpha \quad (\text{Gauss's formula}).$$

$$R_{ijkl} = h_{ji} h_{ik} - h_{jk} h_{il} \quad (\text{Gauss's equation}). \quad h_{jk;l} = h_{jl;k} \quad (\text{Codazzi-Mainardi equation}).$$

$$K = \frac{R_{1212}}{g} = \frac{R}{2} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \left[\frac{\partial}{\partial u_2} \left(\frac{\sqrt{g}}{g_{11}} \left\{ \begin{matrix} 2 \\ 11 \end{matrix} \right\} \right) - \frac{\partial}{\partial u_1} \left(\frac{\sqrt{g}}{g_{11}} \left\{ \begin{matrix} 2 \\ 12 \end{matrix} \right\} \right) \right]$$

$$= \frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \left[\frac{\partial}{\partial u_1} \left(\frac{\sqrt{g}}{g_{22}} \left\{ \begin{matrix} 1 \\ 22 \end{matrix} \right\} \right) - \frac{\partial}{\partial u_2} \left(\frac{\sqrt{g}}{g_{22}} \left\{ \begin{matrix} 1 \\ 12 \end{matrix} \right\} \right) \right].$$

$$\frac{\partial \nu_\alpha}{\partial u_j} = - \sum_{k,l} h_{jk} g^{kl} \frac{\partial x_\alpha}{\partial u_l} \quad (\text{Weingarten's formula}).$$

The third fundamental form is given by

$$l_{jk} \equiv \sum_{\alpha=1}^3 \frac{\partial \nu_\alpha}{\partial u_j} \frac{\partial \nu_\alpha}{\partial u_k} = \sum_{s,t} g^{st} h_{js} h_{kt} = 2Hh_{jk} - Kg_{jk}. \quad \det(l_{jk}) = K^2 g = Kh.$$

(4) Geodesic Curvature. Let $C: u_i = u_i(s)$ be a curve on a surface S and ρ be the curvature of C at a point P . Let θ be the angle between the osculating plane of C and the plane tangent to S . The geodesic curvature ρ_g of C at P is given by

$$\rho_g = \rho \cos \theta = \sqrt{g} \det \left(\frac{du_i}{ds}, \frac{d^2 u_i}{ds^2} + \sum_{j,k} \left\{ \begin{matrix} i \\ jk \end{matrix} \right\} \frac{du_j}{ds} \frac{du_k}{ds} \right)_{i=1,2}$$

$\rho_g = 0$ is the condition for C to be a geodesic. Let D be a simply connected domain on the surface S , whose boundary Γ consists of n smooth curves. Let θ_α be the outer angle at the intersection of two consecutive curves ($\alpha = 1, \dots, n$). Then we have the Gauss-Bonnet formula:

$$\int_{\Gamma} \rho_g ds + \iint_D K dS = 2\pi - \sum_{\alpha=1}^n \theta_\alpha.$$

(II) Riemannian Geometry, Tensor Calculus (→ 417 Tensor Calculus)

In the present section, we use Einstein's convention (omission of the summation symbol).

(1) Numerical Tensor.

$$\text{Kronecker's } \delta \quad \delta_{jk}, \quad \delta^{jk}, \quad \delta_k^j = \begin{cases} 1 & (j=k) \\ 0 & (j \neq k). \end{cases}$$

$$\delta_{k_1 \dots k_p}^{j_1 \dots j_p} = \det(\delta_{k_\nu}^{j_\mu})_{\mu, \nu=1, \dots, p} = \begin{cases} 0 & (\{j_\mu\} \neq \{k_\nu\}), \\ +1 & (\{j_\mu\} = \{k_\nu\} \text{ and } (j_\mu) \text{ is an even permutation of } (k_\nu)), \\ -1 & (\{j_\mu\} = \{k_\nu\} \text{ and } (j_\mu) \text{ is an odd permutation of } (k_\nu)). \end{cases}$$

$$\text{Eddington's } \varepsilon \quad \varepsilon_{j_1 \dots j_n} = \delta_{j_1 \dots j_n}^{1 \dots n}, \quad \varepsilon^{j_1 \dots j_n} = \delta_{1 \dots n}^{j_1 \dots j_n}.$$

$$\delta_{k_1 \dots k_p j_{p+1} \dots j_n}^{j_1 \dots j_p j_{p+1} \dots j_n} = (n-p)! \delta_{k_1 \dots k_p}^{j_1 \dots j_p}, \quad \det(a_\nu^\mu)_{\mu, \nu=1, \dots, n} = \varepsilon^{j_1 \dots j_n} a_{j_1}^1 a_{j_2}^2 \dots a_{j_n}^n = \varepsilon_{j_1 \dots j_n} a_1^{j_1} a_2^{j_2} \dots a_n^{j_n}.$$

(2) Fundamental Objects in Riemannian Geometry. Let g_{jk} be the fundamental tensor, and (g^{jk}) be the inverse matrix of (g_{jk}) . We put $g \equiv \det(g_{jk})$.

The Christoffel symbol is

$$\left\{ \begin{matrix} i \\ jk \end{matrix} \right\} = \frac{1}{2} g^{ia} \left[\frac{\partial g_{aj}}{\partial x^k} + \frac{\partial g_{ak}}{\partial x^j} - \frac{\partial g_{jk}}{\partial x^a} \right] = \left\{ \begin{matrix} i \\ kj \end{matrix} \right\}, \quad \left\{ \begin{matrix} a \\ ak \end{matrix} \right\} = \frac{\partial \log \sqrt{g}}{\partial x^k},$$

which has the transformation rule

$$\left\{ \begin{matrix} \bar{i} \\ \bar{j} \bar{k} \end{matrix} \right\} = \frac{\partial \bar{x}^i}{\partial x^j} \left(\frac{\partial x^j}{\partial \bar{x}^{\bar{j}}} \frac{\partial x^k}{\partial \bar{x}^{\bar{k}}} \left\{ \begin{matrix} i \\ jk \end{matrix} \right\} + \frac{\partial^2 x^i}{\partial \bar{x}^{\bar{j}} \partial \bar{x}^{\bar{k}}} \right)$$

under a coordinate transformation.

A geometrical object Γ_{jk}^i with a similar transformation rule is called the coefficient of the affine connection. The torsion tensor is

$$S_{jk}^i \equiv \Gamma_{jk}^i - \Gamma_{kj}^i.$$

The equation of a geodesic is

$$\frac{d^2 x^i}{ds^2} + \left\{ \begin{matrix} i \\ jk \end{matrix} \right\} \frac{dx^j}{ds} \frac{dx^k}{ds} = 0.$$

The covariant derivative of a tensor of weight W with respect to a coefficient of affine connection Γ_{jk}^i is given by

$$T_{k_1 \dots k_q l}^{j_1 \dots j_p} \equiv \partial T_{k_1 \dots k_q}^{j_1 \dots j_p} / \partial x^l + \sum_{\nu=1}^p T_{k_1 \dots k_q}^{j_1 \dots j_{\nu-1} a j_{\nu+1} \dots j_p} \Gamma_{al}^{j_\nu} - \sum_{\mu=1}^q T_{k_1 \dots k_{\mu-1} a k_{\mu+1} \dots k_q}^{j_1 \dots j_p} \Gamma_{lk_\mu}^a - W T_{k_1 \dots k_q}^{j_1 \dots j_p} \Gamma_{al}^a.$$

For the Christoffel symbol, we denote the covariant derivative by $;/l$. Then we have the following formulas:

$$g_{jk;l} = 0, \quad g^{jk};_l = 0, \quad \delta_{k;l}^j = 0, \quad \sqrt{g} \varepsilon_{j_1 \dots j_n l} = 0, \quad (1/\sqrt{g}) \varepsilon^{j_1 \dots j_n}_l = 0.$$

For a scalar f $\text{grad } f = (f_{;j})$,

for a covariant vector v_j $\text{rot } v = (v_{j;k} - v_{k;j}) = (\partial v_j / \partial x^k - \partial v_k / \partial x^j)$,

and for a contravariant vector v^j $\text{div } v = v^j_{;j} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \frac{\partial (\sqrt{g} v^j)}{\partial x^j}$.

Beltrami's differential operator of the first kind is

$$\Delta_1 f \equiv g^{jk} f_{;j} f_{;k}.$$

Beltrami's differential operator of the second kind is

$$\Delta_2 f = \operatorname{div} \operatorname{grad} f = \frac{1}{\sqrt{g}} \frac{\partial (\sqrt{g} g^{jk} (\partial f / \partial x^k))}{\partial x^j}.$$

For a domain D with sufficiently smooth boundary Γ , we denote the directional derivative along the inner normal by $\partial / \partial n$, the volume element by dV , and the surface element on Γ by dS . Then we have Green's formulas,

$$\int_D (\Delta_1(\varphi\psi) + \psi\Delta_2\varphi) dV = - \int_{\Gamma} \psi \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial n} dS, \quad \int_D (\varphi\Delta_2\psi - \psi\Delta_2\varphi) dV = \int_{\Gamma} \left(\psi \frac{\partial \varphi}{\partial n} - \varphi \frac{\partial \psi}{\partial n} \right) dS.$$

We denote the curvature tensor with respect to the coefficients of a general affine connection Γ_{jk}^i by B_{jkl}^i , and by R_{jkl}^i when $\Gamma_{jk}^i = \left\{ \begin{smallmatrix} i \\ jk \end{smallmatrix} \right\}$. We have the following formulas:

$$B_{jkl}^i \equiv \frac{\partial \Gamma_{jl}^i}{\partial x^k} - \frac{\partial \Gamma_{jk}^i}{\partial x^l} + \Gamma_{jl}^a \Gamma_{ak}^i - \Gamma_{jk}^a \Gamma_{al}^i;$$

$$R_{ijkl} \equiv g_{ai} R_{jkl}^a = -R_{ijlk} = R_{klij} = \frac{1}{2} \left[\frac{\partial^2 g_{ik}}{\partial x^j \partial x^l} + \frac{\partial^2 g_{jl}}{\partial x^i \partial x^k} - \frac{\partial^2 g_{jk}}{\partial x^i \partial x^l} - \frac{\partial^2 g_{il}}{\partial x^j \partial x^k} \right]$$

$$+ g_{ab} \left(\left\{ \begin{smallmatrix} b \\ ik \end{smallmatrix} \right\} \left\{ \begin{smallmatrix} a \\ jl \end{smallmatrix} \right\} - \left\{ \begin{smallmatrix} b \\ il \end{smallmatrix} \right\} \left\{ \begin{smallmatrix} a \\ jk \end{smallmatrix} \right\} \right);$$

$$\text{Bianchi's first identity} \quad R_{jkl}^i + R_{klj}^i + R_{ljk}^i = 0,$$

$$- (B_{jkl}^i + B_{klj}^i + B_{ljk}^i) = 2(S_{jk|l}^i + S_{kl|j}^i + S_{lj|k}^i) + 4(S_{ja}^i S_{kl}^a + S_{ka}^i S_{lj}^a + S_{la}^i S_{jk}^a);$$

$$\text{Bianchi's second identity} \quad R_{jkl;m}^i + R_{jlm;k}^i + R_{jmk;l}^i = 0,$$

$$B_{jkl|m}^i + B_{jlm|k}^i + B_{jmk|l}^i = -2(B_{jma}^i S_{kl}^a + B_{jka}^i S_{lm}^a + B_{jla}^i S_{mk}^a);$$

$$\text{Ricci's tensor} \quad R_{jk} \equiv -R_{jki}^i = R_{kj};$$

$$\text{scalar curvature} \quad R \equiv g^{jk} R_{jk};$$

$$\text{Ricci's formula} \quad T_{k_1 \dots k_q | s | t}^{j_1 \dots j_p} - T_{k_1 \dots k_q | t | s}^{j_1 \dots j_p}$$

$$= - \sum_{\nu=1}^p T_{k_1 \dots k_{\nu-1} a_{\nu}^{j_{\nu}+1} \dots j_p}^{j_1 \dots j_{\nu-1}} B_{ast}^{j_{\nu}} + \sum_{\mu=1}^q T_{k_1 \dots k_{\mu-1} a_{\mu}^{j_{\mu}+1} \dots j_p}^{j_1 \dots j_{\mu-1}} B_{k_{\mu} st}^{j_{\mu}} + 2 T_{k_1 \dots j_p}^{j_1 \dots j_p} S_{st}^{j_p} + W T_{k_1 \dots k_q}^{j_1 \dots j_p} B_{ast}^{j_p},$$

where S and B are the torsion and curvature tensors given above, respectively, and W is the weight of the tensor T .

(3) Special Riemannian Spaces (\rightarrow 364 Riemannian Manifolds). In the present Section (3), n means the dimension of the space.

(i) Space of Constant Curvature $R_{jkl}^i = \rho(g_{jl}\delta_k^i - g_{jk}\delta_l^i)$; $\rho = R/n(n-1)$,

(ii) Einstein Space $R_{jk} = \rho g_{jk}$, $\rho = R/n$, for $n \geq 3$, where R is a constant.

(iii) Locally Symmetric Riemannian Space $R_{jkl;m}^i = 0$.

(iv) Projectively Flat Space. Weyl's projective curvature tensor is defined by

$$W_{jkl}^i \equiv R_{jkl}^i + \frac{1}{n-1} (R_{jk}\delta_l^i - R_{jl}\delta_k^i).$$

The condition for the space to be projectively flat is given by $W_{jkl}^i = 0$, $R_{jk;l} = R_{jl;k}$.

If $n \geq 3$, the latter condition follows from the former condition, and the space reduces to a space of constant curvature. If $n = 2$, the former condition $W = 0$ always holds.

(v) Conircularly Flat Space $Z_{jkl}^i \equiv R_{jkl}^i + \frac{R}{n(n-1)} (g_{jk}\delta_l^i - g_{jl}\delta_k^i) = 0$. This space reduces to a space of constant curvature.

(vi) Conformally Flat Space. Weyl's conformal curvature tensor is defined by

$$C_{jkl}^i \equiv R_{jkl}^i + \frac{1}{n-2} (R_{jk}\delta_l^i - R_{jl}\delta_k^i + g_{jk}R_l^i - g_{jl}R_k^i) - \frac{R(g_{jk}\delta_l^i - g_{jl}\delta_k^i)}{(n-1)(n-2)},$$

$$\Pi_{jk} \equiv -\frac{R_{jk}}{(n-2)} + \frac{Rg_{jk}}{2(n-1)(n-2)}.$$

The condition for the space to be conformally flat is given by $C_{jkl}^i = 0$, $\Pi_{jk;l} = \Pi_{jl;k}$.

If $n \geq 4$, the latter condition follows from the former condition, and if $n = 3$, the former condition $C = 0$ always holds.

5. Lie Algebras, Symmetric Riemannian Spaces, and Singularities

(I) The Classification of Complex Simple Lie Algebras and Compact Real Simple Lie Algebras
(→ 248 Lie Algebras)

(1) Lie Algebra. The unitary restriction of a noncommutative finite-dimensional complex simple Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} is a compact real simple Lie algebra \mathfrak{g}_u , and \mathfrak{g} is given by the complexification $\mathfrak{g}_u^{\mathbb{C}}$ of \mathfrak{g}_u . There exists a bijective correspondence between the classifications of these two kinds of Lie algebras. Using Dynkin diagrams, the classification is done as in Fig. 14 (→ 248 Lie Algebras). The system of fundamental roots $\{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_l\}$ of a simple Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} is in one-to-one correspondence with the vertices of a Dynkin diagram shown by simple circles in Fig. 14. The number of simple circles coincides with the rank l of \mathfrak{g} . The double circle in Fig. 14 means -1 times the highest root θ . Sometimes we mean by the term “Dynkin diagram” the diagram without the double circle and the lines issuing from it. Here we call the diagram with double circle representing $-\theta$ the extended Dynkin diagram. Corresponding to the value of the inner product with respect to the Killing form $-2(\alpha_i, \alpha_j)/(\alpha_j, \alpha_j)$ ($i \neq j$) (which must be 0, 1, 2, or 3), we connect two vertices representing α_i and α_j as in Fig. 13. When the value is 0, we do not connect α_i and α_j . In Fig. 13, the left circle corresponds to α_i and the right circle to α_j .

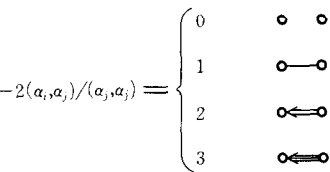


Fig. 13

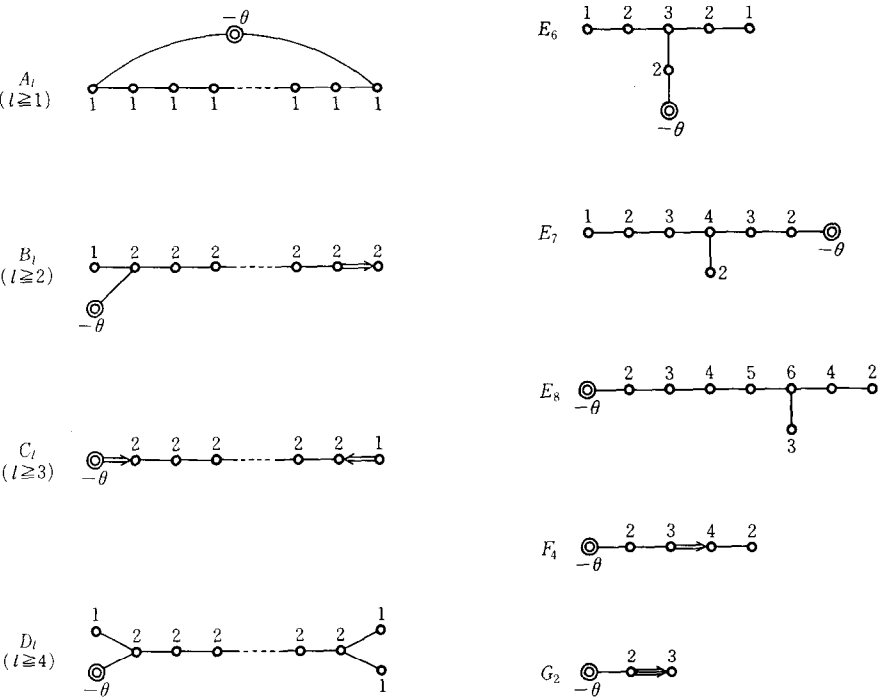


Fig. 14 We have relations $B_1 = C_1 = A_1$, $C_2 = B_2$, and $D_3 = A_3$. ($D_2 = A_1 + A_1$, which is not simple.) In this figure, the number at each vertex means the coefficient m_i in $\theta = \sum m_i \alpha_i$.

From Fig. 14, we have the following information.
(i) The quotient group of the automorphism group $A(\mathfrak{g})$ of \mathfrak{g} with respect to the inner automorphism group $I(\mathfrak{g})$ is isomorphic to the automorphism group of the corresponding Dynkin diagram. The order of the latter group is 2 for A_l ($l \geq 2$) since the diagram is symmetric. It is also 2 for D_l ($l \geq 5$) and for E_6 , and it is 6 ($=3!$) for D_4 . For all other cases, the order is 1.

- (ii) The order of the center of the simply connected Lie group associated with \mathfrak{g} is equal to the index of the subgroup consisting of elements stabilizing $-\theta$ in the group of automorphisms of the extended Dynkin diagram of \mathfrak{g} (S. Murakami). This index is equal to the order of the fundamental group of the adjoint group of \mathfrak{g} and the number of connected Lie groups, whose Lie algebra is \mathfrak{g} .
- (iii) Any parabolic Lie subalgebra of \mathfrak{g} is isomorphic to a subalgebra generated by the root vector X_α (and elements of the Cartan subalgebra) such that $\alpha = \sum n_i \alpha_i$, where $\{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_l\}$ is a system of fundamental roots, $n_i \geq 0$ ($i = 1, \dots, l$) or $n_i \leq 0$ ($i = 1, \dots, l$), and $n_j = 0$ for α_j belonging to a fixed subset S of $\{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_l\}$.

Hence, isomorphism classes of parabolic Lie subalgebras are in one-to-one correspondence with the set of subsets S of $\{\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_l\}$.

- (iv) Maximal Lie subalgebra \mathfrak{f} of \mathfrak{g} with the same rank l as \mathfrak{g} . The Lie subalgebra \mathfrak{f} is classified by the following rule. First we remove a vertex α_i from the Dynkin diagram. If the number m_i attached to the vertex is 1, \mathfrak{f} is given by the product of the simple Lie algebra corresponding to the Dynkin diagram after removing the vertex α_i and a one-dimensional Lie subalgebra. If $m_i > 1$, \mathfrak{f} is given by the diagram after removing α_i from the extended Dynkin diagram.

(2) Lie Groups. The classical complex simple Lie groups of rank n represented by A, B, C, D (in Cartan's symbolism) are the complex special linear group $SL(n+1, \mathbb{C})$, the complex special orthogonal group $SO(2n+1, \mathbb{C})$, the complex symplectic group $Sp(n, \mathbb{C})$, and the complex special orthogonal group $SO(2n, \mathbb{C})$, respectively. The classical compact simple Lie groups of rank n represented by A, B, C, D are the special unitary group $SU(n+1)$, the special orthogonal group $SO(2n+1)$, the unitary-symplectic group $Sp(n)$, and the special orthogonal group $SO(2n)$, respectively (\rightarrow 60 Classical Groups).

Cartan's Symbol	Complex Form	Compact Form	Dimension	Rank
A_n	$SL(n+1, \mathbb{C})$	$SU(n+1)$	$(n+1)^2 - 1$	n
B_n	$SO(2n+1, \mathbb{C})$	$SO(2n+1)$	$2n^2 + n$	n
C_n	$Sp(n, \mathbb{C})$	$Sp(n)$	$2n^2 + n$	n
D_n	$SO(2n, \mathbb{C})$	$SO(2n)$	$2n^2 - n$	n
G_2	$\text{Aut } \mathbb{C}^c$	$\text{Aut } \mathbb{C}$	14	2
F_4	$\text{Aut } \mathfrak{H}^c$	$\text{Aut } \mathfrak{H}$	52	4
E_6			78	6
E_7			133	7
E_8			248	8

Here \mathbb{C} is the Cayley algebra over \mathbb{R} , \mathbb{C}^c is the complexification of \mathbb{C} , \mathfrak{H} is the Jordan algebra of Hermitian matrices of order 3 over \mathbb{C} , \mathfrak{H}^c is the complexification of \mathfrak{H} , and $\text{Aut } A$ is the automorphism group of A .

(II) Classification of Noncompact Real Simple Lie Algebras

Classical Cases

Cartan's Symbol	Noncompact Real Simple Lie Algebra \mathfrak{g}	Maximal Compact Lie Algebra of \mathfrak{g}
AI	$\mathfrak{sl}(p+1; \mathbb{R})$	$\mathfrak{su}(p+1)$
AII	$\mathfrak{sl}(n; \mathbb{H})$	$\mathfrak{sp}(n)$
AIII	$\mathfrak{su}(p, q; \mathbb{C})$	$\mathfrak{su}(p) + \mathfrak{su}(q)$
BI	$\mathfrak{so}(p, q; \mathbb{R})$	$\mathfrak{so}(p) + \mathfrak{so}(q) \quad (p+q=2m+1)$
BII	$\mathfrak{so}(1, n-1; \mathbb{R})$	$\mathfrak{so}(n-1) \quad (n=2m+1)$
CI	$\mathfrak{sp}(p; \mathbb{R})$	$\mathfrak{u}(p)$
CII	$\mathfrak{u}(p, q; \mathbb{H})$	$\mathfrak{sp}(p) + \mathfrak{sp}(q)$
DI	$\mathfrak{so}(p, q; \mathbb{R})$	$\mathfrak{so}(p) + \mathfrak{so}(q) \quad (p+q=2m)$
DII	$\mathfrak{so}(1, n-1; \mathbb{R})$	$\mathfrak{so}(n-1) \quad (n=2m)$
DIII	$\mathfrak{so}(p; \mathbb{H})$	$\mathfrak{u}(2p)$

Here the field F is the real field \mathbf{R} , the complex field \mathbf{C} , or the quaternion field \mathbf{H} ($\mathbf{R} \subset \mathbf{C} \subset \mathbf{H}$). \mathbf{H} is an algebra over \mathbf{R} . For a quaternion $x = x_0 + x_1i + x_2j + x_3k$ ($x_0, x_1, x_2, x_3 \in \mathbf{R}$), we put

$$\bar{x} = x_0 - x_1i - x_2j - x_3k,$$
$$x^* = x_0 + x_1i - x_2j + x_3k.$$

Then $\mathfrak{gl}(n; F) = \{\text{set of all square matrices over } F \text{ of order } n\}$,

$$\mathfrak{sl}(n; F) = \{A \in \mathfrak{gl}(n; F) \mid \text{tr } A = 0\},$$
$$\mathfrak{so}(p, q; F) = \{A \in \mathfrak{gl}(p + q; F) \mid A^* I_{p, q} + I_{p, q} A = 0\},$$

where $I_{p, q}$ is the symmetric transformation of the Euclidean space \mathbf{R}^{p+q} with respect to \mathbf{R}^p , i.e.,

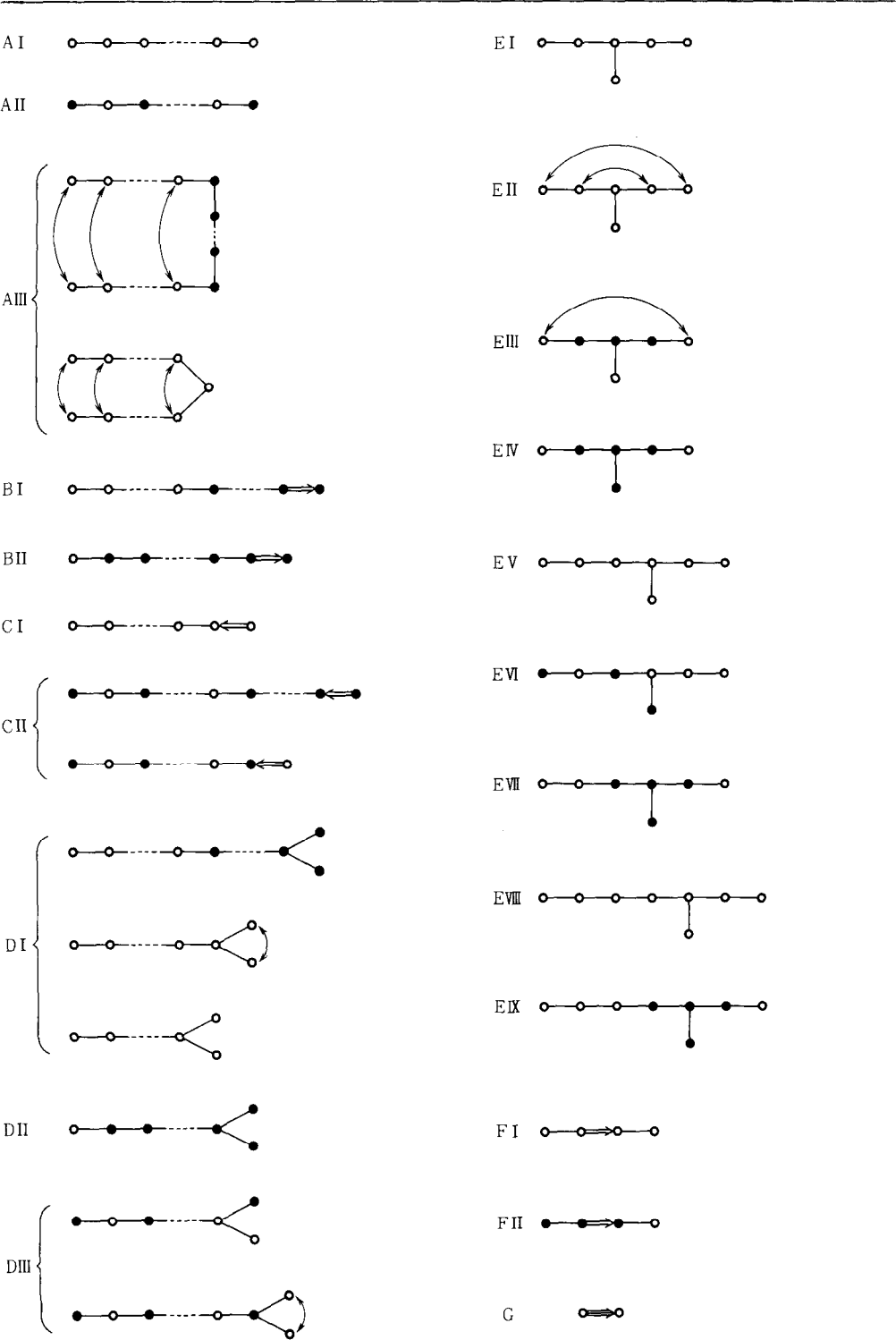


Fig. 15

$I_{p,q}$ is the diagonal sum of the unit matrix I_p of order p and $-I_q$. We have

$$\begin{aligned}\mathfrak{so}(n; F) &= \mathfrak{so}(n, 0; F), \\ \mathfrak{u}(p, q; F) &= \{A \in \mathfrak{gl}(p+q; F) \mid {}^t \bar{A} I_{p,q} + I_{p,q} A = 0\}, \\ \mathfrak{u}(n; F) &= \mathfrak{u}(n, 0; F), \\ \mathfrak{sp}(n; F) &= \{A \in \mathfrak{gl}(2n; F) \mid {}^t \bar{A} J + J A = 0\},\end{aligned}$$

where J is the matrix of an alternating form $\sum_{i=1}^n (x_i y_{i+n} - x_{i+n} y_i)$ of order $2n$.

A noncompact real simple Lie algebra \mathfrak{g} is classified by the relation of the complex conjugation operator σ with respect to the complexification \mathfrak{g}^c of \mathfrak{g} . The results are given by Satake's diagram (Fig. 15).

In the diagram, the fundamental root corresponding to a black circle is multiplied by -1 under σ for a suitable choice of Cartan subalgebra, and the arc with an arrow means that two elements corresponding to both ends of the arc are mutually transformed by a special transformation p such that $\sigma = pw$ ($w \in W$).

(III) Classification of Irreducible Symmetric Riemannian Spaces (\rightarrow 412 Symmetric Riemannian Spaces and Real Forms)

A simply connected irreducible symmetric Riemannian space $M = G/K$ is either a space in the following table or a simply connected compact simple Lie group mentioned in (I). The noncompact forms uniquely corresponding to the compact symmetric Riemannian space are in one-to-one correspondence with the noncompact real simple Lie algebras mentioned in (II).

Cartan's Symbol	$G/K = M$	Dimension	Rank
AI	$SU(n)/SO(n) \quad (n \geq 2)$	$(n-1)(n+2)/2$	$n-1$
AII	$SU(2n)/Sp(n) \quad (n \geq 1)$	$(n-1)(2n+1)$	$n-1$
AIII	$U(p+q)/U(p) \times U(q) \quad (p \geq q \geq 1)$	$2pq$	q
BDI	$SO(p+q)/SO(p) \times SO(q) \quad (p \geq q \geq 2, p+q \neq 4)$	pq	q
BDII	$SO(n+1)/SO(n) \quad (n \geq 2)$	n	1
DIII	$SO(2l)/U(l) \quad (l \geq 4)$	$l(l-1)$	$[l/2]$
CI	$Sp(n)/U(n) \quad (n \geq 3)$	$n(n+1)$	n
CII	$Sp(p+q)/Sp(p) \times Sp(q) \quad (p \geq q \geq 1)$	$4pq$	q
EI	$E_6/Sp(4)$	42	6
EII	$E_6/SU(2) \cdot SU(6)$	40	4
EIII	$E_6/Spin(10) \cdot SO(2)$	32	2
EIV	E_6/F_4	26	2
EV	$E_7/SU(8)$	70	7
EVI	$E_7/Spin(12) \cdot SU(2)$	64	4
EVII	$E_7/E_6 \cdot SO(2)$	54	3
EVIII	$E_8/Spin(16)$	128	8
EIX	$E_8/E_7 \cdot SU(2)$	112	4
FI	$F_4/Sp(3) \cdot SU(2)$	28	4
FII	$F_4/Spin(9)$	16	1
G	$G_2/SO(4)$	8	2

Notes

The group $G = U(p+q)$ in AIII is not effective, unless it is replaced by $SU(p+q)$. To be precise, $K = Sp(4)$ in EI should be replaced by its quotient group factored by a subgroup of order 2 of its center. K in EII is not a direct product of simple groups; the order of its fundamental group $\pi_1(K)$ is 2. To be precise, K in EV or EVIII should be replaced by its quotient group factored by a subgroup of order 2 of its center. The K 's in EII, EIII, EVI, EVII, EIX, and FI are not direct products. The fundamental group $\pi_1(K)$ of K is the infinite cyclic group \mathbf{Z} for EIII, EVII; for all other cases, the order of $\pi_1(K)$ is 2.

In EIII, EVII, the groups E_6, E_7 are adjoint groups of compact simple Lie algebras. In other cases, E_6 and E_7 (E_8, F_4 and G_2 also) are simply connected Lie groups.

The compact symmetric Riemannian space M is a complex Grassmann manifold for AIII, a real Grassmann manifold for BDI, a sphere for BDII, a quaternion Grassmann manifold for CII, and a Cayley projective plane for FII.

(IV) Isomorphic Relations among Classical Lie Algebras

The isomorphic relations among the classical Lie algebras over \mathbf{R} or \mathbf{C} are all given in the following table. In the table, we denote, for example, the real form of type AI of the complex Lie algebra with rank 3 by $A_3\mathbf{I}$ in Cartan's symbolism. When there are nonisomorphic real forms of the same type and same rank (e.g., in the case of $D_3\mathbf{I}$) we distinguish them by the rank of the corresponding symmetric Riemannian space and denote them by, e.g., $D_3\mathbf{I}_p$, where p is the index of total isotropy of the sesquilinear form which is invariant under the corresponding Lie algebra.

Cartan's Symbol	Isomorphisms among Classical Lie Algebras
$A_1 = B_1 = C_1$ $B_2 = C_2$ $A_3 = D_3$ $A_1\mathbf{I} = A_1\mathbf{III} = B_1\mathbf{I} = C_1\mathbf{I}$ $B_2\mathbf{I}_2 = C_2\mathbf{I}$ $B_2\mathbf{I}_1 = C_2\mathbf{II}$ $A_3\mathbf{I} = D_3\mathbf{I}_3$ $A_3\mathbf{II} = D_3\mathbf{I}_1$ $A_3\mathbf{III}_2 = D_3\mathbf{I}_2$ $A_3\mathbf{III}_1 = D_3\mathbf{III}$ $D_4\mathbf{I}_2 = D_4\mathbf{III}$ $D_2 = A_1 \times A_1^*$ $D_2\mathbf{I}_2 = A_1\mathbf{I} \times A_1\mathbf{I}$ $D_2\mathbf{III} = A_1 \times A_1\mathbf{I}^*$ $D_2\mathbf{I}_1 = A_1^*$	$\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(3, \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{sp}(1, \mathbf{C}); \mathfrak{su}(2) \cong \mathfrak{so}(3) \cong \mathfrak{sp}(1)$ $\mathfrak{so}(5, \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{sp}(2, \mathbf{C}); \mathfrak{so}(5) \cong \mathfrak{sp}(2)$ $\mathfrak{sl}(4, \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(6, \mathbf{C}); \mathfrak{su}(4) \cong \mathfrak{so}(6)$ $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{su}(1, 1; \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(2, 1; \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{sp}(1; \mathbf{R})$ $\mathfrak{so}(3, 2; \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{sp}(2, \mathbf{R})$ $\mathfrak{so}(4, 1; \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{u}(1, 1; \mathbf{H})$ $\mathfrak{sl}(4, \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(3, 3; \mathbf{R})$ $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{H}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(5, 1; \mathbf{R})$ $\mathfrak{su}(2, 2; \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(4, 2; \mathbf{R})$ $\mathfrak{su}(3, 1; \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(3; \mathbf{H})$ $\mathfrak{so}(6, 2; \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{so}(4, \mathbf{H})$ $\mathfrak{so}(4, \mathbf{C}) \cong \mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{C}) \times \mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{C}); \mathfrak{so}(4) \cong \mathfrak{su}(2) \times \mathfrak{su}(2)$ $\mathfrak{so}(2, 2; \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{R}) \times \mathfrak{sl}(2; \mathbf{R})$ $\mathfrak{so}(2; \mathbf{H}) \cong \mathfrak{su}(2) \times \mathfrak{sl}(2; \mathbf{R})$ $\mathfrak{so}(3, 1; \mathbf{R}) \cong \mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{C})$

Note

(*) In these 3 cases, there are isomorphisms given by the replacement of $\mathfrak{sl}(2, \mathbf{C})$ or $\mathfrak{su}(2)$ by isomorphic Lie algebras of type B_1 or type C_1 due to the isomorphism $A_1 \cong B_1 \cong C_1$.

(V) Lists of Normal Forms of Singularities with Modulus Number $m=0, 1$, and 2 (→ 418 Theory of Singularities)

Letters A, \dots, Z stand here for stable equivalence classes of function germs (or families of function germs).

(1) Simple Singularities ($m=0$). There are 2 infinite series A, D , and 3 “exceptional” singularities E_6, E_7, E_8 :

Notation	Normal form	Restrictions
A_n	$x^{n+1} + y^2 + z^2$	$n \geq 1$
D_n	$x^{n-1} + xy^2 + z^2$	$n \geq 4$
E_6	$x^4 + y^3 + z^2$	
E_7	$x^3y + y^3 + z^2$	
E_8	$x^5 + y^3 + z^2$	

(2) Unimodular Singularities ($m=1$). There are 3 families of parabolic singularities, one series of hyperbolic singularities (with 3 subscripts), and 14 families of exceptional singularities.

The parabolic singularities

Notation	Normal form	Restrictions
$P_8 = \tilde{E}_6$	$x^3 + y^3 + z^3 + axyz$	$a^3 + 27 \neq 0$
$X_9 = \tilde{E}_7$	$x^4 + y^4 + z^2 + axyz$	$a^4 - 64 \neq 0$
$J_{10} = \tilde{E}_8$	$x^6 + y^3 + z^2 + axyz$	$a^6 - 432 \neq 0$

The hyperbolic singularities

Notation	Normal form	Restrictions
T_{pqr}	$x^p + y^q + z^r + axyz$	$a \neq 0, \frac{1}{p} + \frac{1}{q} + \frac{1}{r} < 1$

The 14 exceptional families

Notation	Normal form	Gabrielov numbers	Dolgachëv numbers	Notation	Normal form	Gabrielov numbers	Dolgachëv numbers
K_{12}	$x^3 + y^7 + z^2 + axy^5$	2 3 7	2 3 7	W_{13}	$x^4 + xy^4 + z^2 + ay^6$	2 5 6	3 4 4
K_{13}	$x^3 + xy^5 + z^2 + ay^8$	2 3 8	2 4 5	Q_{10}	$x^3 + y^4 + yz^2 + axy^3$	3 3 4	2 3 9
K_{14}	$x^3 + y^8 + z^2 + axy^6$	2 3 9	3 3 4	Q_{11}	$x^3 + y^2z + xz^3 + az^5$	3 3 5	2 4 7
Z_{11}	$x^3y + y^5 + z^2 + axy^4$	2 4 5	2 3 8	Q_{12}	$x^3 + y^5 + yz^2 + axy^4$	3 3 6	3 3 6
Z_{12}	$x^3y + xy^4 + z^2 + ax^2y^3$	2 4 6	2 4 6	S_{11}	$x^4 + y^2z + xz^2 + ax^3z$	3 4 4	2 5 6
Z_{13}	$x^3y + y^6 + z^2 + axy^5$	2 4 7	3 3 5	S_{12}	$x^2y + y^2z + xz^3 + az^5$	3 4 5	3 4 5
W_{12}	$x^4 + y^5 + z^2 + ax^2y^3$	2 5 5	2 5 5	U_{12}	$x^3 + y^3 + z^4 + axyz^2$	4 4 4	4 4 4

(3) Bimodular Singularities ($m = 2$). There are 8 infinite series and 14 exceptional families. In all the formulas, $\mathfrak{a} = a_0 + a_1y$.

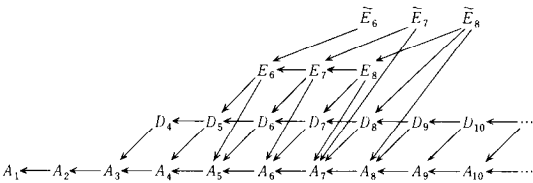
The 8 infinite series of bimodular singularities

Notation	Normal form	Restriction	Milnor number
$J_{3,0}$	$x^3 + bx^2y^3 + y^9 + z^2 + cxy^7$	$4b^3 + 27 \neq 0$	16
$J_{3,p}$	$x^3 + x^2y^3 + z^2 + ay^{9+p}$	$p > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$16 + p$
$Z_{1,0}$	$y(x^3 + dx^2y^2 + cxy^5 + y^6) + z^2$	$4d^3 + 27 \neq 0$	15
$Z_{1,p}$	$y(x^3 + x^2y^2 + ay^{6+p}) + z^2$	$p > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$15 + p$
$W_{1,0}$	$x^4 + ax^2y^3 + y^6 + z^2$	$a_0^2 \neq 4$	15
$W_{1,p}$	$x^4 + x^2y^3 + ay^{6+p} + z^2$	$p > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$15 + p$
$W_{1,2q-1}^\#$	$(x^2 + y^3)^2 + axy^{4+q} + z^2$	$q > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$15 + 2q - 1$
$W_{1,2q}^\#$	$(x^2 + y^3)^2 + ax^2y^{3+q} + z^2$	$q > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$15 + 2q$
$Q_{2,0}$	$x^3 + yz^2 + ax^2y^2 + xy^4$	$a_0^2 \neq 4$	14
$Q_{2,p}$	$x^3 + yz^2 + x^2y^2 + az^{6+p}$	$p > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$14 + p$
$S_{1,0}$	$x^2z + yz^2 + y^5 + azy^3$	$a_0^2 \neq 4$	14
$S_{1,p}$	$x^2z + yz^2 + x^2y^2 + ay^{5+p}$	$p > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$14 + p$
$S_{1,2q-1}^\#$	$x^2z + yz^2 + zy^3 + axy^{2+q}$	$q > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$14 + 2q - 1$
$S_{1,2q}^\#$	$x^2z + yz^2 + zy^3 + ax^2y^{2+q}$	$q > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$14 + 2q$
$U_{1,0}$	$x^3 + xz^2 + xy^3 + ay^3z$	$a_0(a_0^2 + 1) \neq 0$	14
$U_{1,2q-1}$	$x^3 + xz^2 + xy^3 + ay^{1+q}z^2$	$q > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$14 + 2q - 1$
$U_{1,2q}$	$x^3 + xz^2 + xy^3 + ay^{3+q}z$	$q > 0, a_0 \neq 0$	$14 + 2q$

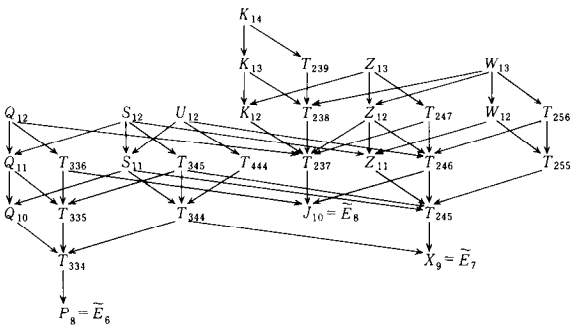
The 14 exceptional families

Notation	Normal form	Notation	Normal form
E_{18}	$x^3 + y^{10} + z^2 + axy^7$	W_{18}	$x^4 + y^7 + z^2 + ax^2y^4$
E_{19}	$x^3 + xy^7 + z^2 + ay^{11}$	Q_{16}	$x^3 + yz^2 + y^7 + z^2 + axy^5$
E_{20}	$x^3 + y^{11} + z^2 + axy^8$	Q_{17}	$x^3 + yz^2 + xy^5 + z^2 + ay^8$
Z_{17}	$x^3y + y^8 + z^2 + axy^6$	Q_{18}	$x^3 + yz^2 + y^8 + z^2 + axy^6$
Z_{18}	$x^3y + xy^6 + z^2 + ay^9$	S_{16}	$x^2z + yz^2 + xy^4 + z^2 + ay^6$
Z_{19}	$x^3y + y^9 + z^2 + axy^7$	S_{17}	$x^2z + yz^2 + y^6 + z^2 + azy^4$
W_{17}	$x^4 + xy^5 + z^2 + ay^7$	U_{16}	$x^3 + xz^2 + y^5 + z^2 + ax^2y^2$

Adjacency relations between simple and simply elliptic singularities



Adjacency relations among unimodular singularities



References

[1] V. I. Arnol'd, Singularity theory, Lecture note ser. 53, London Math. Soc., 1981.

[2] E. Breiskorn, Die Hierarchie der 1-modularen Singularitäten, Manuscripta Math., 27 (1979), 183–219.

[3] K. Saito, Einfach elliptische Singularitäten, Inventiones Math., 23 (1974), 289–325.

6. Topology

(I) *h*-Cobordism Groups of Homotopy Spheres and Groups of Differentiable Structures on Combinatorial Spheres

(1) The Structure of the *h*-Cobordism Group θ_n of *n*-Dimensional Homotopy Spheres. In the following table, values of θ_n have the following meanings: 0 means that the group consists only of the identity element, an integer *l* means that the group is isomorphic to the cyclic group of order *l*, 2^{*l*} means that the group is the direct sum of *l* groups of order 2, + means the direct sum, and ? means that the structure of the group is unknown.

<i>n</i>	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18
$\theta_n \cong$	0	0	?	0	0	0	28	2	4+2	6	992	0	3	2	8128+2	2	4+2 ²	8+2

(2) The Group Γ_n of Differentiable Structures on the *n*-Dimensional Combinatorial Sphere.

$$\Gamma_n \cong \theta_n \quad (n \neq 3), \quad \Gamma_3 = 0.$$

(II) Adem’s Formula Concerning Steenrod Operators *Sq* and \mathcal{P} (→ 64 Cohomology Operations)

For the cohomology operators *Sq* and \mathcal{P} , we have

$$Sq^a Sq^b = \sum_{c=0}^{\lfloor a/2 \rfloor} \binom{b-c-1}{a-2c} Sq^{a+b-c} Sq^c \quad (a < 2b).$$

$$\begin{aligned}\mathcal{P}^a \mathcal{P}^b &= \sum_{c=0}^{\lfloor a/p \rfloor} (-1)^{a+c} \binom{(b-c)(p-1)-1}{a-pc} \mathcal{P}^{a+b-c} \mathcal{P}^c \quad (a < pb), \\ \mathcal{P}^a \delta \mathcal{P}^b &= \sum_{c=0}^{\lfloor a/p \rfloor} (-1)^{a+c} \binom{(b-c)(p-1)}{a-pc} \delta \mathcal{P}^{a+b-c} \mathcal{P}^c \\ &\quad + \sum_{c=0}^{\lfloor (a-1)/p \rfloor} (-1)^{a+c-1} \binom{(b-c)(p-1)-1}{a-pc-1} \mathcal{P}^{a+b-c} \delta \mathcal{P}^c \quad (a \leq pb).\end{aligned}$$

Several simple cases of the formula above are as follows.

$$\begin{aligned}Sq^1 Sq^{2n} &= Sq^{2n+1}, & Sq^1 Sq^{2n+1} &= 0, \\ Sq^2 Sq^{4n} &= Sq^{4n+2} + Sq^{4n+1} Sq^1, & Sq^2 Sq^{4n+1} &= Sq^{4n+2} Sq^1, \\ Sq^2 Sq^{4n+2} &= Sq^{4n+3} Sq^1, & Sq^2 Sq^{4n+3} &= Sq^{4n+5} + Sq^{4n+4} Sq^1, \\ Sq^4 Sq^{8n} &= Sq^{8n+4} + Sq^{8n+3} Sq^1 + Sq^{8n+2} Sq^2, & Sq^4 Sq^{8n+1} &= Sq^{8n+4} Sq^1 + Sq^{8n+3} Sq^2, \\ Sq^4 Sq^{8n+2} &= Sq^{8n+4} Sq^2, & Sq^4 Sq^{8n+3} &= Sq^{8n+5} Sq^2, \\ Sq^4 Sq^{8n+4} &= Sq^{8n+7} Sq^1 + Sq^{8n+6} Sq^2, & Sq^4 Sq^{8n+5} &= Sq^{8n+9} + Sq^{8n+8} Sq^1 + Sq^{8n+7} Sq^2, \\ Sq^4 Sq^{8n+6} &= Sq^{8n+10} + Sq^{8n+8} Sq^2, & Sq^4 Sq^{8n+7} &= Sq^{8n+11} + Sq^{8n+9} Sq^2, \\ \mathcal{P}^1 \mathcal{P}^n &= (n+1) \mathcal{P}^{n+1}, \\ \mathcal{P}^1 \delta \mathcal{P}^n &= n \cdot \delta \mathcal{P}^{n+1} + \mathcal{P}^{n+1} \delta.\end{aligned}$$

(III) Cohomology Ring $H^*(\pi, n; \mathbf{Z}_p)$ of Eilenberg-MacLane Complex ($\rightarrow 70$ Complexes)

\mathbf{Z} means the set of integers, and $\mathbf{Z}_p = \mathbf{Z}/p\mathbf{Z}$, where p is a prime number.

(1) The case $p=2$, $\pi = \mathbf{Z}$ or \mathbf{Z}_{2^f} ($f \geq 1$). The degree of a finite sequence $I = (i_r, i_{r-1}, \dots, i_1)$ of positive integers is defined by $d(I) = i_1 + i_2 + \dots + i_r$. If such a sequence satisfies $i_{k+1} \geq 2i_k$ ($k = 1, \dots, r-1$), it is called admissible, and we define its excess by

$$e(I) = (i_r - 2i_{r-1}) + \dots + (i_2 - 2i_1) + i_1 = 2i_r - d(I).$$

Further, we put $Sq^I = Sq^{i_r} Sq^{i_{r-1}} \dots Sq^{i_1}$. Then we have $H^*(\mathbf{Z}_{2^f}, n; \mathbf{Z}_2) = \mathbf{Z}_2[Sq^I u_n | I \text{ is admissible, } e(I) < n]$, $H^*(\mathbf{Z}, n; \mathbf{Z}_2) = \mathbf{Z}_2[Sq^I u_n | I \text{ is admissible, } e(I) < n, i_1 > 1]$.

Here, $u_n \in H^n(\pi, n; \mathbf{Z}_2)$ is the fundamental cohomology class. $I = \emptyset$ (empty) is also admissible, and for this case we put $n(I) = e(I) = 0$, $Sq^I = 1$. Due to the Künneth theorem, we have

$$H^*(\pi + \pi', n; \mathbf{Z}_p) = H^*(\pi, n; \mathbf{Z}_p) \otimes H^*(\pi', n; \mathbf{Z}_p)$$

if π is finitely generated. In particular, we have

$$\begin{aligned}H^*(\mathbf{Z}_2, 1; \mathbf{Z}_2) &= \mathbf{Z}_2[u_1], \\ H^*(\mathbf{Z}_2, 2; \mathbf{Z}_2) &= \mathbf{Z}_2[u_2, Sq^1 u_2, Sq^2 Sq^1 u_2, \dots, Sq^{2^r} Sq^{2^r-1} \dots Sq^1 u_2, \dots], \\ H^*(\mathbf{Z}_2, 3; \mathbf{Z}_2) &= \mathbf{Z}_2[u_3, Sq^{2^r} Sq^{2^r-1} \dots Sq^1 u_3, Sq^{(2^r+1)2^r} Sq^{(2^r+1)2^r-1} \dots \\ &\quad Sq^{2^r+1} Sq^{2^r-1} \dots Sq^1 u_3 | r \geq 0, \quad s \geq 0].\end{aligned}$$

(2) The case $p \neq 2$, $\pi = \mathbf{Z}$ or \mathbf{Z}_{p^f} ($f \geq 1$). We define the degree of a finite sequence $I = (i_r, i_{r-1}, \dots, i_1, i_0)$ of nonnegative integers by $d(I) = i_r + \dots + i_1 + i_0$. The sequence I is called admissible if it satisfies the following conditions:

$$\begin{aligned}i_k &= 2\lambda_k(p-1) + \epsilon_k \quad (\lambda_k \text{ is a nonnegative integer, } \epsilon_k = 0 \text{ or } 1 \ (0 \leq k \leq r)), \text{ and} \\ i_0 &= 0 \text{ or } 1, \quad i_1 \geq 2p-2, \quad i_{k+1} \geq pi_k \quad (1 \leq k \leq r-1).\end{aligned}$$

We define its excess by $e(I) = pi_r - (p-1)d(I)$. Further, we put $\mathcal{P}^I = \delta^{\epsilon_r} \mathcal{P}^{\lambda_r} \dots \delta^{\epsilon_1} \mathcal{P}^{\lambda_1} \delta^{\epsilon_0}$, and assume that $u_n \in H^n(\pi, n; \mathbf{Z})$ is the fundamental cohomology class. Then we have

$$\begin{aligned}H^*(\mathbf{Z}_{p^f}, n; \mathbf{Z}_p) &= \mathbf{Z}_p[\mathcal{P}^I u_n | I \text{ is admissible, } e(I) < n(p-1), n+d(I) \text{ is even}] \\ &\quad \otimes \wedge_{\mathbf{Z}_p} (\mathcal{P}^I u_n | I \text{ is admissible, } e(I) < n(p-1), n+d(I) \text{ is odd}).\end{aligned}$$

$H^*(\mathbf{Z}, n; \mathbf{Z})$ is given by the above formula when the admissible sequence is I with $i_0 = 0$.

(IV) Cohomology Ring of Compact Connected Lie Groups (\rightarrow 427 Topology of Lie Groups and Homogeneous Spaces)

(1) General Remarks. Let G be a compact connected Lie group with rank l and dimension n . We have $H^*(G; \mathbf{R}) \cong \bigwedge_{\mathbf{R}}(x_1, \dots, x_l)$, where $\bigwedge_K(x_1, \dots, x_l)$ means the exterior algebra over K of a linear space $V = Kx_1 + \dots + Kx_l$ with the basis $\{x_1, \dots, x_l\}$ over K . We define a new degree in $\bigwedge_K(x_1, \dots, x_l)$ by putting $\deg x_i = m_i$ (m_i is odd) ($1 \leq i \leq l$), where $m_1 + \dots + m_l = n$. The \cong means isomorphism as graded rings.

(2) Classical Compact Simple Lie Groups. We set $\deg x_i = i$.

$$H^*(U(n); \mathbf{R}) \cong \bigwedge_{\mathbf{R}}(x_1, x_3, \dots, x_{2n-1}),$$

$$H^*(SU(n); \mathbf{R}) \cong \bigwedge_{\mathbf{R}}(x_3, x_5, \dots, x_{2n-1}),$$

$$H^*(Sp(n); \mathbf{R}) \cong \bigwedge_{\mathbf{R}}(x_3, x_7, \dots, x_{4n-1}),$$

$$H^*(SO(n); \mathbf{Z}_2) \cong (\text{Having } x_1, x_2, \dots, x_{n-1} \text{ as a simple system of generators})$$

$$\cong \mathbf{Z}_2[x_1, x_3, \dots, x_{2n'-1}] / (x_i^{2^{s(i)}} \mid i = 1, \dots, n')$$

$$(n' = \lfloor n/2 \rfloor, s(i) \text{ is the least integer satisfying } 2^{s(i)}(2i-1) \geq n)$$

$$H^*(SO(2n); K) \cong \bigwedge_K(x_3, x_7, \dots, x_{4n-5}, x_{2n-1}),$$

$$H^*(SO(2n-1); K) \cong \bigwedge_K(x_3, x_7, \dots, x_{4n-5}), \text{ where } K \text{ is a commutative field whose characteristic is not 2.}$$

$$\text{For } SO(n), Sq^a(x_i) = \binom{i}{a} x_{i+a}. \text{ For } SU(n), p^a(x_{2i-1}) = \binom{i-1}{a} x_{2i-1+2a(p-1)}.$$

$$\text{For } Sp(n), \mathcal{P}^a(x_{4i-1}) = (-1)^{a(p-1)/2} \binom{2i-1}{a} x_{4i-1+2a(p-1)}.$$

(3) Exceptional Compact Simple Lie Groups. n and m_i ($1 \leq i \leq l$) given in (1) are as follows.

$$G_2: \quad n = 14, \quad m_i = 3, \quad 11.$$

$$F_4: \quad n = 52, \quad m_i = 3, \quad 11, \quad 15, \quad 23.$$

$$E_6: \quad n = 78, \quad m_i = 3, \quad 9, \quad 11, \quad 15, \quad 17, \quad 23.$$

$$E_7: \quad n = 133, \quad m_i = 3, \quad 11, \quad 15, \quad 19, \quad 23, \quad 27, \quad 35.$$

$$E_8: \quad n = 248, \quad m_i = 3, \quad 15, \quad 23, \quad 27, \quad 35, \quad 39, \quad 47, \quad 59.$$

(4) p -Torsion Groups of Exceptional Groups. The p -torsion groups of exceptional Lie groups are unit groups except when $p=2$ for G_2 ; $p=2, 3$ for F_4, E_6, E_7 ; and $p=2, 3, 5$ for E_8 . The cohomology ring of \mathbf{Z}_p as a coefficient group in these exceptional cases is given as follows. Here we put $\deg x_i = i$.

$$H^*(G_2; \mathbf{Z}_2) = \mathbf{Z}_2[x_3] / (x_3^4) \otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_2}(Sq^2x_3);$$

$$H^*(F_4; \mathbf{Z}_2) = \mathbf{Z}_2[x_3] / (x_3^4) \otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_2}(Sq^2x_3, x_{15}, Sq^8x_{15}),$$

$$H^*(F_4; \mathbf{Z}_3) = \mathbf{Z}_3[\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3] / ((\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3)^3) \otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_3}(x_3, \mathcal{P}^1x_3, x_{11}, \mathcal{P}^1x_{11});$$

$$H^*(E_6; \mathbf{Z}_2) = \mathbf{Z}_2[x_3] / (x_3^4) \otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_2}(Sq^2x_3, Sq^4Sq^2x_3, x_{15}, Sq^8Sq^4Sq^2x_3, Sq^8x_{15}),$$

$$H^*(E_6; \mathbf{Z}_3) = \mathbf{Z}_3[\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3] / ((\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3)^3) \otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_3}(x_3, \mathcal{P}^1x_3, x_9, x_{11}, \mathcal{P}^1x_{11}, x_{17});$$

$$H^*(E_7; \mathbf{Z}_2) = \mathbf{Z}_2[x_3, Sq^2x_3, Sq^4Sq^2x_3] / (x_3^4, (Sq^2x_3)^4, (Sq^4Sq^2x_3)^4)$$

$$\otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_2}(x_{15}, Sq^8Sq^4Sq^2x_3, Sq^8x_{15}, Sq^4Sq^8x_{15}),$$

$$H^*(E_7; \mathbf{Z}_3) = \mathbf{Z}_3[\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3] / ((\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3)^3) \otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_3}(x_3, \mathcal{P}^1x_3, x_{11}, \mathcal{P}^1x_{11}, \mathcal{P}^3\mathcal{P}^1x_3, x_{27}, x_{35});$$

$$H^*(E_8; \mathbf{Z}_2) = \mathbf{Z}_2[x_3, Sq^2x_3, Sq^4Sq^2x_3, x_{15}] / (x_3^{16}, (Sq^2x_3)^8, (Sq^4Sq^2x_3)^4, x_{15}^4)$$

$$\otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_2}(Sq^8Sq^4Sq^2x_3, Sq^8x_{15}, Sq^4Sq^8x_{15}, Sq^2Sq^4Sq^8x_{15}),$$

$$H^*(E_8; \mathbf{Z}_3) = \mathbf{Z}_3[\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3, \delta \mathcal{P}^3\mathcal{P}^1x_3] / ((\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3)^3, (\delta \mathcal{P}^3\mathcal{P}^1x_3)^3)$$

$$\otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_3}(x_3, \mathcal{P}^1x_3, x_{15}, \mathcal{P}^3\mathcal{P}^1x_3, \mathcal{P}^3x_{15}, x_{35}, x_{39}, x_{47}),$$

$$H^*(E_8; \mathbf{Z}_5) = \mathbf{Z}_5[\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3] / ((\delta \mathcal{P}^1x_3)^5) \otimes \bigwedge_{\mathbf{Z}_5}(x_3, \mathcal{P}^1x_3, x_{15}, \mathcal{P}^1x_{15}, x_{27}, x_{35}, x_{39}, x_{47}).$$

(V) Cohomology Rings of Classifying Spaces (→ 56 Characteristic Classes, 427 Topology of Lie Groups and Homogeneous Spaces C)

(1) Let $H^*(G; K) = \bigwedge_K(x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n)$. Then the $\deg x_i$ are odd and the x_i may be assumed to be transgressive. y_i being its image, the following formula holds:

$$H^*(BG; K) = K[y_1, y_2, \dots, y_n] \quad (\text{Borel's theorem}).$$

(2) $H^*(BU(n)) = H^*(BGL(n, \mathbb{C})) = \mathbb{Z}[c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n],$

$$H^*(BSU(n)) = H^*(BSL(n, \mathbb{C})) = \mathbb{Z}[c_2, \dots, c_n],$$

$$H^*(BSp(n)) = \mathbb{Z}[q_1, q_2, \dots, q_n],$$

$$H^*(BO(n); K_2) = H^*(BGL(n, \mathbb{R}); \mathbb{Z}_2) = K_2[w_1, w_2, \dots, w_n],$$

$$H^*(BSO(n); K_2) = H^*(BSL(n, \mathbb{R}); \mathbb{Z}_2) = K_2[w_2, \dots, w_n],$$

$$H^*(BSO(2m+1); K) = K[p_1, p_2, \dots, p_m],$$

$$H^*(BSO(2m); K) = K[p_1, p_2, \dots, p_{m-1}, \chi].$$

Here, K denotes a field of characteristic $\neq 2$, and K_2 is the field of characteristic 2. The c_i denote the i th Chern classes and the q_i the i th symplectic Pontryagin classes, the w_i the i th Stiefel-Whitney classes. Moreover, the p_i denote the i th Pontryagin classes, and χ the Euler class. Their degrees are given as follows: $\deg c_i = 2i$, $\deg q_i = \deg p_i = 4i$, $\deg w_i = i$, and $\deg \chi = 2m$.

(3) Wu's Formula. Let $H^2(BSO(n); \mathbb{Z}_2) = \mathbb{Z}_2[w_2, \dots, w_n]$ and $H^*(BU(n), \mathbb{Z}_2) = \mathbb{Z}_2[c_1, c_2, \dots, c_n]$. We have

$$Sq^j w_i = \sum_{0 \leq t \leq j} \binom{i-j+t-1}{t} w_{j-t} w_{i+t} \quad (w_0 = 1),$$

$$Sq^{2j} c_i = \sum_{0 \leq t \leq j} \binom{i-j+t-1}{t} c_{j-t} c_{i+t} \quad (c_0 = 1).$$

Here the symbol $\binom{a}{b}$ denotes the binomial coefficient for $a \geq b$; $\binom{a}{b} = 1$, and $\binom{a}{b} = 0$ otherwise.

(VI) Homotopy Groups of Spheres (→ 202 Homotopy Theory)

Table of the $(n+k)$ th Homotopy Group $\pi_{n+k}(S^n)$ of the n -Dimensional Sphere S^n . The table represents Abelian groups. 0 stands for the unit group; integer l the cyclic group of order l ; ∞ the infinite cyclic group; 2^l the direct sum of l groups of order 2; and $+$ means the direct sum.

$n \backslash k$	<0	0	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12	13
1	0	∞	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
2	0	∞	∞	2	2	12	2	2	3	15	2	2^2	$12+2$	$84+2^2$	2^2
3	0	∞	2	2	12	2	2	3	15	2	2^2	$12+2$	$84+2^2$	2^2	6
4	0	∞	2	2	$\infty+12$	2^2	2^2	$24+3$	15	2	2^3	$120+12+2$	$84+2^5$	2^6	$24+6+2$
5	0	∞	2	2	24	2	2	2	30	2	2^3	$72+2$	$504+2^2$	2^3	$6+2$
6	0	∞	2	2	24	0	∞	2	60	$24+2$	2^3	$72+2$	$504+4$	240	6
7	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	120	2^3	2^4	$24+2$	$504+2$	0	6
8	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	$\infty+120$	2^4	2^5	$24+24+2$	$504+2$	0	$6+2$
9	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	240	2^3	2^4	$24+2$	$504+2$	0	6
10	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	240	2^2	$\infty+2^3$	$12+2$	504	12	6
11	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	240	2^2	2^3	$6+2$	504	2	$6+2$
12	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	240	2^2	2^3	6	$\infty+504$	2^2	$6+2$
13	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	240	2^2	2^3	6	504	2	6
14	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	240	2^2	2^3	6	504	0	$\infty+3$
>15	0	∞	2	2	24	0	0	2	240	2^2	2^3	6	504	0	3

Table of the $(n+k)$ th Homotopy Group $\pi_{n+k}(S^n)$ of the n -Dimensional Sphere S^n (Continued)

$n \backslash k$	14	15	16	17	18	19	20	21	22
1	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
2	6	30	30	$6+2$	$12+2^2$	$12+2^2$	$132+2$	2^2	2
3	30	30	$6+2$	$12+2^2$	$12+2^2$	$132+2$	2^2	2	210
4	$2520+6+2$	30	$6+6+2$	$24+12+4+2^2$	$120+12+2^5$	$132+2^5$	2^6	$24+2^2$	$9240+6+2$
5	$6+2$	$30+2$	2^2	$4+2^2$	$24+2^2$	$264+2$	$6+2^2$	$6+2$	$90+2^2$
6	$12+2$	$60+2$	$504+2^2$	2^4	$24+6+2$	$1056+8$	$480+12$	6	$180+2^2$
7	$24+4$	$120+2^3$	2^4	2^4	$24+2$	$264+2$	24	$6+2$	$72+2^3$
8	$240+24+4$	$120+2^5$	2^7	$6+2^4$	$504+24+2$	$264+2$	$24+3$	$12+2^3$	$1440+24+2^4$
9	$16+4$	$240+2^3$	2^4	2^4	$24+2$	$264+2$	24	$6+2^2$	$144+2^3$
10	$16+2$	$240+2^2$	$240+2$	2^3	$24+2^2$	$264+6$	$504+24$	$6+2^2$	$144+6+2$
11	$16+2$	$240+2$	2	2^3	$8+4+2$	$264+2^3$	$24+2^2$	2^4	$48+2^2$
12	$48+4+2$	$240+2$	2	2^4	$480+4+4+2$	$264+2^5$	$24+2^5$	$6+2^4$	$2016+12+2^2$
13	$16+2$	$480+2$	2	2^4	$8+8+2$	$264+2^3$	$24+2^3$	$4+2^3$	$16+2^2$
14	$8+2$	$480+2$	$24+2$	2^4	$8+8+2$	$264+4+2$	$240+24$	$4+2^2$	$16+2^2$
15	$4+2$	$480+2$	2^3	2^5	$8+8+2$	$264+2^2$	2^4	2^3	$16+2^3$
16	$2+2$	$\infty+480+2$	2^4	2^6	$24+8+8+2$	$264+2^2$	2^4	2^4	$240+16+2^3$
17	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^3	2^5	$8+8+2$	$264+2^2$	24	2^3	$16+2^3$
18	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^2	$\infty+2^4$	$8+4+2$	$264+2$	$24+12$	2^3	$16+2^2$
19	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^2	2^4	$8+2^2$	$264+2$	$24+2$	2^4	$16+2^2$
20	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^2	2^4	$8+2$	$\infty+264+2$	$24+2^2$	2^4	$16+2^2$
21	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^2	2^4	$8+2$	$264+2$	$24+2$	2^3	$8+2^2$
22	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^2	2^4	$8+2$	$264+2$	24	$\infty+2^2$	$4+2^2$
23	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^2	2^4	$8+2$	$264+2$	24	2^2	2^3
>24	$2+2$	$480+2$	2^2	2^4	$8+2$	$264+2$	24	2^2	2^2

Remarks

(1) When $n > k+1$ (below the broken line in the table), $\pi_{n+k}(S^n)$ is independent of n and is isomorphic with the k th stable homotopy group G_k .

(2) Let $\iota_n \in \pi_n(S^n)$ be the identity on S^n ; $\eta_2 \in \pi_3(S^2)$, $\nu_4 \in \pi_7(S^4)$, $\sigma_8 \in \pi_{15}(S^8)$ be the Hopf mapping $S^3 \rightarrow S^2$, $S^7 \rightarrow S^4$, $S^{15} \rightarrow S^8$ (induced mapping in the homotopy class), respectively; and $[\iota_{2m}, \iota_{2m}] \in \pi_{4m-1}(S^{2m})$ ($m \neq 1, 2, 4$) be the Whitehead product of ι_{2m} . These objects generate infinite cyclic groups which are direct factors of $\pi_{n+k}(S^n)$ corresponding to the original mappings.

(3) $\eta_{n+2} = E^n \eta_2$, $\nu_{n+4} = E^n \nu_4$, $\sigma_{n+8} = E^n \sigma_8$ ($n \geq 1$) (E is the suspension) are the generator for $\pi_{n+k}(S^n)$, which contains the mappings.

(4) The orders of the following compositions are $2:gs_{n+7}$

$$\eta_n \circ \eta_{n+1} (n \geq 2), \quad \nu_n \circ \nu_{n+3} (n \geq 5), \quad \sigma_n \circ \sigma_{n+7} (n \geq 16), \quad \eta_n \circ \nu_{n+1} (n = 3, 4),$$

$$\nu_n \circ \eta_{n+3} (n = 4, 5), \quad \eta_n \circ \sigma_{n+1} (n \geq 7), \quad \sigma_n \circ \eta_{n+7} (n \geq 8), \quad \nu_{10} \circ \sigma_{13}, \quad \sigma_{11} \circ \nu_{18},$$

$$\eta_n \circ \eta_{n+1} \circ \eta_{n+2} (n \geq 2), \quad \nu_n \circ \nu_{n+3} \circ \nu_{n+6} (n \geq 4), \quad \sigma_n \circ \sigma_{n+7} \circ \sigma_{n+14} (n \geq 9).$$

(VII) The Homotopy Groups $\pi_k(G)$ of Compact Connected Lie Groups G

Here the group G is one of the following:

$$SO(n) (n \geq 2), \quad Spin(n) (n \geq 3), \quad U(n) (n \geq 1), \quad SU(n) (n \geq 2),$$

$$Sp(n) (n \geq 1), \quad G_2, \quad F_4, \quad E_6, \quad E_7, \quad E_8.$$

(1) The Fundamental Group $\pi_1(G)$.

$$\pi_1(G) \cong \begin{cases} \infty & (G = U(n) (n \geq 1), \quad SO(2)), \\ 2 & (G = SO(n) (n \geq 3)), \\ 0 & (\text{for all other groups } G). \end{cases}$$

(2) Isomorphic Relations ($k \geq 2$).

$$\pi_k(U(n)) \cong \pi_k(SU(n)) (n \geq 2),$$

(4) Stable Homotopy Groups. For sufficiently large n for fixed k , the homotopy groups for classical compact simple Lie groups $G = Sp(n)$, $SU(n)$, $SO(n)$ become stable. We denote them by the following notations. Here we assume $k \geq 2$.

$$\begin{aligned}\pi_k(Sp) &= \pi_k(Sp(n)) & (n \geq (k-1)/4), \\ \pi_k(U) &= \pi_k(U(n)) \cong \pi_k(SU(n)) & (n \geq (k+1)/2), \\ \pi_k(O) &= \pi_k(SO(n)) & (n \geq k+2).\end{aligned}$$

Bott periodicity theorem

$$\pi_k(Sp) \cong \begin{cases} \infty & (k \equiv 3, 7 \pmod{8}), \\ 2 & (k \equiv 4, 5 \pmod{8}), \\ 0 & (k \equiv 0, 1, 2, 6 \pmod{8}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_k(O) \cong \begin{cases} \infty & (k \equiv 3, 7 \pmod{8}), \\ 2 & (k \equiv 0, 1 \pmod{8}), \\ 0 & (k \equiv 2, 4, 5, 6 \pmod{8}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_k(U) \cong \begin{cases} \infty & (k \equiv 1 \pmod{2}), \\ 0 & (k \equiv 0 \pmod{2}). \end{cases}$$

(5) Metastable Homotopy Groups.

(a, b) means the greatest common divisor of two integers a and b .

$$\pi_{2n}(SU(n)) \cong n!.$$

$$\pi_{2n+1}(SU(n)) \cong \begin{cases} 2 & (n \text{ even}), \\ 0 & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{2n+2}(SU(n)) \cong \begin{cases} (n+1)! + 2 & (n \text{ even}, \geq 4), \\ (n+1)!/2 & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{2n+3}(SU(n)) \cong \begin{cases} (24, n) & (n \text{ even}), \\ (24, n+3)/2 & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{2n+4}(SU(n)) \cong \begin{cases} (n+2)!(24, n)/48 & (n \text{ even}, \geq 4), \\ (n+2)!(24, n+3)/24 & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{2n+5}(SU(n)) \cong \pi_{2n+5}(U(n+1)).$$

$$\pi_{2n+6}(SU(n)) \cong \begin{cases} \pi_{2n+6}(U(n+1)) & (n \equiv 2, 3 \pmod{4}, n \geq 3), \\ \pi_{2n+6}(U(n+1)) + 2 & (n \equiv 0, 1 \pmod{4}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{4n+2}(Sp(n)) \cong \begin{cases} (2n+1)! & (n \text{ even}), \\ 2(2n+1)! & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{4n+3}(Sp(n)) \cong 2.$$

$$\pi_{4n+4}(Sp(n)) \cong \begin{cases} 2+2 & (n \text{ even}), \\ 2 & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{4n+5}(Sp(n)) \cong \begin{cases} (24, n+2) + 2 & (n \text{ even}), \\ (24, n+2) & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{4n+6}(Sp(n)) \cong \begin{cases} (2n+3)!(24, n+2)/12 & (n \text{ even}), \\ (2n+3)!(24, n+2)/24 & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\pi_{4n+7}(Sp(n)) \cong 2.$$

$$\pi_{4n+8}(Sp(n)) \cong 2+2.$$

The homotopy groups $\pi_{n+i}(SO(n))$ for $n \geq 16$, $3 \geq i \geq -1$ are determined by the isomorphism

$$\pi_{n+i}(SO(n)) \cong \pi_{n+i}(O) + \pi_{n+i+1}(V_{i+3+n, i+3}(\mathbf{R}))$$

and the homotopy groups of $V_{m+n, m}(\mathbf{R})$ given below.

(6) Homotopy Groups of Real Stiefel Manifolds $V_{m+n, m}(\mathbf{R}) = O(m+n)/I_m \times O(n)$.

$$\pi_{n+k}(V_{n+1, 1}) \cong \pi_{n+k}(S^n).$$

$$\pi_{n-k}(V_{m+n, m}) \cong 0 \quad (k \geq 1).$$

$$\pi_n(V_{m+n, m}) \cong \begin{cases} 2 & (n=2s-1, m \geq 2), \\ \infty & (n=2s). \end{cases}$$

$\pi_{n+k}(V_{m+n, m})$ ($k=1, 2, 3, 4, 5$) are given in the following table.

	m	1	2	3	4	5	6	$8s-1$	$8s$	$8s+1$	$8s+2$	$8s+3$	$8s+4$	$8s+5$	$8s+6$
π_{n+1}	2	0	∞^2	2	$2+\infty$	2	$2+\infty$	2	$2+\infty$	2	$2+\infty$	2	$2+\infty$	2	$2+\infty$
	≥ 3	0	∞	0	2^2	2	4	0	2^2	2	4	0	2^2	2	4
π_{n+2}	2	∞	2^2	4	2^2	4	2^2	4	2^2	4	2^2	4	2^2	4	2^2
	3	∞^2	2	$2+\infty$	2^2	$4+\infty$	2	$2+\infty$	2^2	$4+\infty$	2	$2+\infty$	2^2	$4+\infty$	2
	≥ 4	∞	0	2	2^2	8	0	2	2^2	8	0	2	2^2	8	0
π_{n+3}	2	2	2^2	2	$\infty+12+2$	2^2	$24+2$	2^2	$24+2$	2^2	$24+4$	2^2	$24+2$	2^2	$24+2$
	3	2^2	2	2	$\infty+12+4$	2^3	$12+2$	2^2	$24+4$	2^3	$12+2$	2^2	$24+4$	2^3	$12+2$
	4	2	∞	2	∞^2+12+4	2^2	$12+\infty$	2^2	$24+4+\infty$	2^2	$12+\infty$	2^2	$24+4+\infty$	2^2	$12+\infty$
	≥ 5	0	0	2	$12+4+\infty$	2	12	2	$24+8$	2	12	2^2	$4+48$	2	12
π_{n+4}	2	2	12^2	$\infty+2$	2^2+24	2^2	24	2	24	2	24	2	24	2	24
	3	2^2	0	$\infty+4$	2^4	2^3	2	4	2^2	2^2	2	4	2^2	2^2	2
	4	2	0	$4+\infty$	2^5	2^2	2	8	2^3	2	2	8	2^3	2	2
	5	∞	0	$4+\infty^2$	2^4	$2+\infty$	2	$8+\infty$	2^2	∞	2	$8+\infty$	2^2	∞	2
	≥ 6	0	0	$4+\infty$	2^3	2	0	8	2	0	2	16	2	0	0
π_{n+5}	2	12	2^2	2	2^3	0	∞	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
	3	12^2	∞	$2+24$	2^4	24	$\infty+2$	24	2	24	2	24	2	24	2
	4	0	∞	2^3	2^5	2	$\infty+4$	2^2	2^2	2	4	2^2	2^2	2	4

(VIII) Immersion and Embedding of Projective Spaces (\rightarrow 114 Differential Topology)

We denote immersion by \subset , and embedding by \subseteq . $\mathbf{P}^n(A)$ is an n -dimensional real or complex projective space where $A = \mathbf{R}$ or \mathbf{C} , $k\{\mathbf{P}^n(A)\}$ is the integer k such that $\mathbf{P}^n(A) \subset \mathbf{R}^k$ and $\mathbf{P}^n(A) \not\subset \mathbf{R}^{k-1}$, and $\tilde{k}\{\mathbf{P}^n(A)\}$ is the integer k such that $\mathbf{P}^n(A) \subseteq \mathbf{R}^k$ and $\mathbf{P}^n(A) \not\subseteq \mathbf{R}^{k-1}$.

In the table, for example, numbers 9–11 in the row $k\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{R})\}$ for $n=6$ mean $\mathbf{P}^6(\mathbf{R}) \not\subset \mathbf{R}^8$, $\mathbf{P}^6(\mathbf{R}) \subset \mathbf{R}^{11}$.

n	1	2	3	4	5	6	7	8	9	10	11	12
$k\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{R})\}$	2	4	5	8	9	9~11	9~12	16	17	17~19	...	...
$\tilde{k}\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{R})\}$	2	3	4	7	7	7	8	15	15	16	16	17~19
$k\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{C})\}$	3	7	9	15	17	22	22~25	31	33	38	38~41	...
$\tilde{k}\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{C})\}$	3	7	8~9	15	16~17	22	22~25	31	32~33	38	38~41	...

	2^r	2^r+1	2^r+2	2^r+3	2^r+2^s ($r > s > 0$)
$k\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{R})\}$	$2n$	$2n-1$	$2n-3 \sim 2n-1$	...	...
$\tilde{k}\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{R})\}$	$2n-1$	$2n-3$	$2n-4$	$2n-6$	...
$k\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{C})\}$	$4n-1$	$4n-3$	$4n-2$	...	$4n-2$
$\tilde{k}\{\mathbf{P}^n(\mathbf{C})\}$	$4n-1$	$4n-4 \sim 4n-3$	$4n-2$	...	$4n-2$

7. Knot Theory (→ 235 Knot Theory)

Let k be a projection on a plane of a knot K . We color the domains separated by k , white and black alternatively. The outermost (unbounded) domain determined by k is colored white. In Fig. 16, hatching means black. Take a point (a black point in Fig. 16) in each black domain. The self-intersections of k are represented by white points (Fig. 16). Through each white point we draw a line segment connecting the black points in the black regions meeting at the white point. In Fig. 16, we show this as a broken line. We assign the signature $+$ if the torsion of K at the intersection of k has the orientation of a right-hand screw (as in Fig. 17, left), and the signature $-$ if the orientation is opposite (as in Fig. 17, right). The picture of the line segments with signatures is called the graph corresponding to the projection k of the knot K . Given such a graph, we can reconstruct the original knot K .

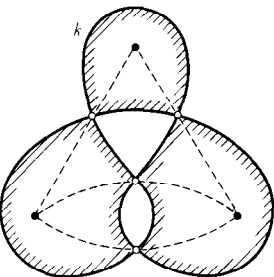


Fig. 16

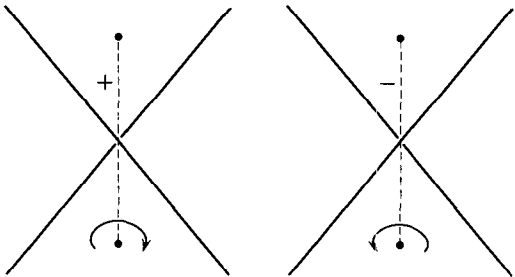


Fig. 17

Fig. 18 shows the classification table of knots for which the numbers of intersections of k are 3 to 8 when we minimize the intersections. The projection of k is described by a solid line, and the graph by broken lines. We omit the signatures since for each graph from 3_1 to 8_{18} they are all $+$ or all $-$. Such knots are called alternating knots.

8. Inequalities (→ 88 Convex Analysis, 211 Inequalities)

- (1) $|a + b| \leq |a| + |b|,$
 $|a - b| \geq ||a| - |b||.$
For real a_v , we have $\sum a_v^2 \geq 0$, and the equality holds only if all $a_v = 0$.
- (2) $n! < n^n < (n!)^2 \quad (n \geq 3).$
 $e^n \geq n^n / n!.$

- $n^{1/n} < 3^{1/3} \quad (n \neq 3).$
- (3) $2/\pi < (\sin x)/x < 1 \quad (0 < x < \pi/2)$ (Jordan's inequality).
- (4) Denote the elementary symmetric polynomials of positive numbers $a_1, \dots, a_n > 0$ by S_r ($r = 1, \dots, n$). Then

$$S_1 / \binom{n}{1} \geq \left[S_2 / \binom{n}{2} \right]^{1/2} \geq \dots \geq \left[S_r / \binom{n}{r} \right]^{1/r} \geq \dots \geq \left[S_n / \binom{n}{n} \right]^{1/n}.$$

If at least one equality holds, then $a_1 = \dots = a_n$. In particular, from the two external terms, we have the following inequalities concerning mean values:

$$\frac{1}{n} \sum_{v=1}^n a_v \geq \left(\prod_{v=1}^n a_v \right)^{1/n} \geq n / \sum_{v=1}^n \frac{1}{a_v}.$$

For weighted means, we have

$$\sum_{v=1}^n \lambda_v a_v \geq \prod_{v=1}^n a_v^{\lambda_v} \quad \left(\sum \lambda_v = 1, \lambda_v > 0 \right).$$

- (5) When $a_v > 0, b_v > 0, p > 1, q > 1, (1/p) + (1/q) = 1$,

$$\left[\sum_{v=1}^n (a_v)^p \right]^{1/p} \left[\sum_{v=1}^n (b_v)^q \right]^{1/q} \geq \sum_{v=1}^n a_v b_v \quad (\text{H\"older's inequality}).$$

The equality holds only if $(a_v)^p = c(b_v)^q$ (c is a constant).

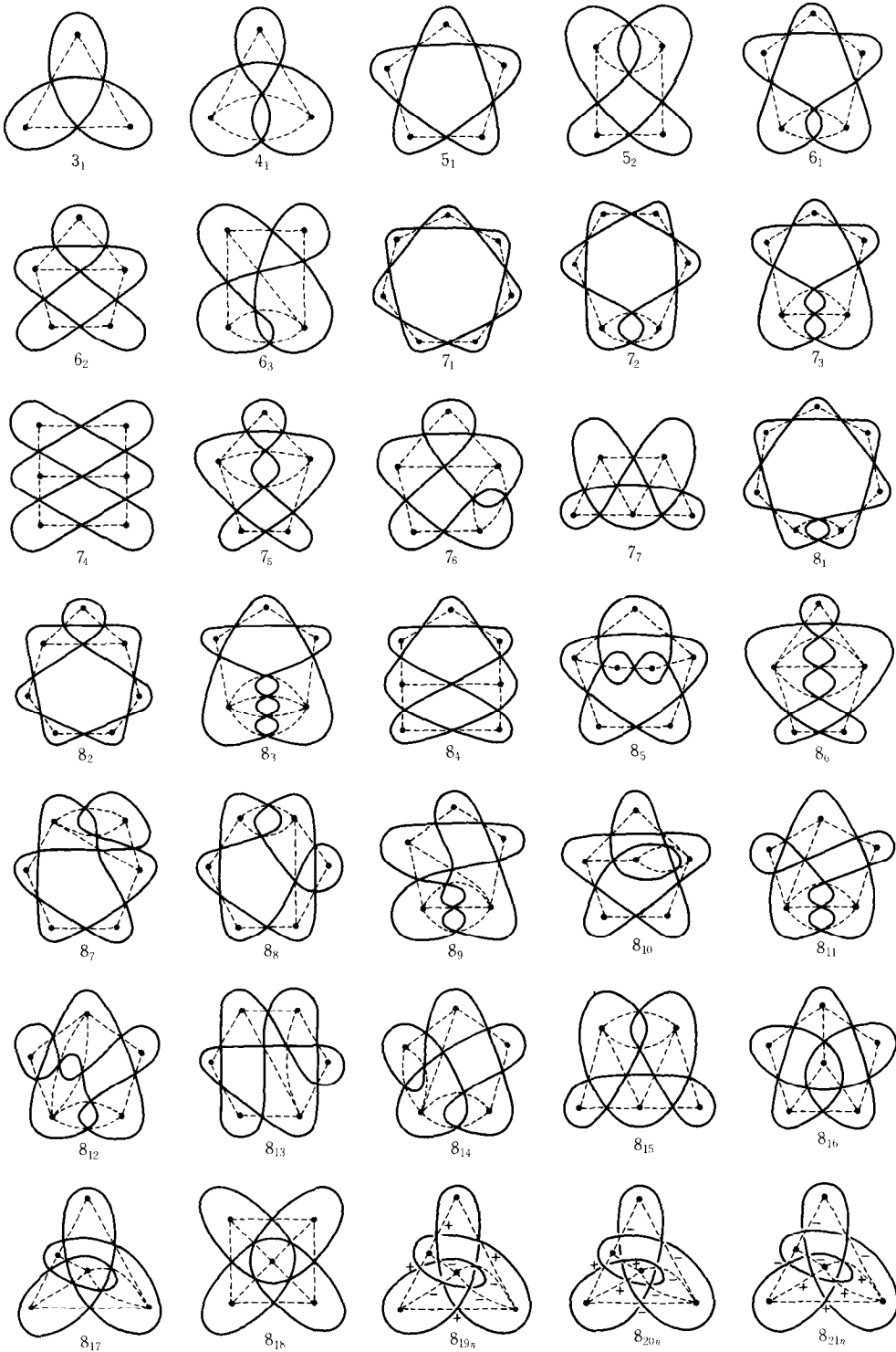


Fig. 18
Classification table of knots. The signatures from 3_1 to 8_{18} are all $+$ or all $-$.

When $p=q=2$, the inequality is called Cauchy's inequality, the Cauchy-Schwarz inequality, or Bunyakovskii's inequality. As special cases, we have

$$\left(\sum_{\nu=1}^n a_{\nu} \right) \left(\sum_{\nu=1}^n \frac{1}{a_{\nu}} \right) \geq n^2 \quad (a_{\nu} > 0),$$

$$\left(\sum_{\nu=1}^n a_{\nu} \right)^2 \leq n \left(\sum_{\nu=1}^n a_{\nu}^2 \right) \quad (a_{\nu} > 0).$$

When $0 < p < 1$, we have an inequality by reversing the inequality sign in Hölder's inequality.

(6) When $a_\nu > 0$, $b_\nu > 0$, $p > 0$, and $\{a_\nu\}$ and $\{b_\nu\}$ are not proportional, we have

$$\left[\sum_{\nu=1}^n (a_\nu + b_\nu)^p \right]^{1/p} \leq \left[\sum_{\nu=1}^n (a_\nu)^p \right]^{1/p} + \left[\sum_{\nu=1}^n (b_\nu)^p \right]^{1/p} \quad (p \geq 1) \quad (\text{Minkowski's inequality}).$$

The integral inequality corresponding to (5) or (6) has the same name.

(7) If $a_{\mu\nu} > 0$, $\sum_{\mu=1}^n a_{\mu\nu} = \sum_{\nu=1}^n a_{\mu\nu} = 1$, $b_\nu > 0$,

$$\prod_{\nu=1}^n b_\nu \leq \prod_{\mu=1}^n \left(\sum_{\nu=1}^n a_{\mu\nu} b_\nu \right).$$

In particular, for the determinant $\Delta = \det(a_{\mu\nu})$,

$$|\Delta|^2 \leq \prod_{\nu=1}^n \left(\sum_{\mu=1}^n |a_{\mu\nu}|^2 \right).$$

The equality in this holds only if all rows are mutually orthogonal. If all $|a_{\mu\nu}| \leq M$, we have

$$|\Delta| \leq n^{n/2} M^n \quad (\text{Hadamard's estimation}).$$

(8) Suppose that a function $f(x)$ is continuous, strictly monotone increasing in $x \geq 0$, and $f(0) = 0$. Denote the inverse function of f by f^{-1} . For $a, b > 0$, we have

$$ab \leq \int_0^a f(x) dx + \int_0^b f^{-1}(x) dx \quad (\text{Young's inequality}),$$

and the equality holds only if $b = f(a)$.

In particular, for $f(x) = x^{p-1}$ ($p > 1$), we have

$$\frac{a^p}{p} + \frac{b^q}{q} \geq ab,$$

where $(1/p) + (1/q) = 1$.

(9) If $p, q > 1$, $(1/p) + (1/q) = 1$, $a_\mu \geq 0$, $b_\nu \geq 0$,

$$\sum_{\mu, \nu=0}^{\infty} \frac{a_\mu b_\nu}{\mu + \nu + 1} \leq \frac{\pi}{\sin(\pi/p)} \left[\sum_{\mu=0}^{\infty} (a_\mu)^p \right]^{1/p} \left[\sum_{\nu=0}^{\infty} (b_\nu)^q \right]^{1/q} \quad (\text{Hilbert's inequality}),$$

and the equality holds only when the right-hand side vanishes.

(10) For a continuous function $f(x) \geq 0$ ($0 \leq x < \infty$), we put

$$F(x) = \int_0^x f(t) dt,$$

and assume that $p > 1$. Then

$$\int_0^\infty \left[\frac{F(x)}{x} \right]^p dx \leq \left(\frac{p}{p-1} \right)^p \int_0^\infty [f(x)]^p dx \quad (\text{Hardy's inequality}),$$

and the equality holds only if $f(x)$ is identically 0.

Further, if $f(x) > 0$,

$$\int_0^\infty \exp \left[\frac{1}{x} \int_0^x \log f(t) dt \right] dx < e \int_0^\infty f(x) dx \quad (\text{Carleman's inequality}).$$

(11) Let $a \leq x < \xi \leq b$, $p > 1$, and

$$\sup_{\xi} \frac{1}{\xi - x} \int_x^{\xi} f(t) dt = \theta(x).$$

Then

$$\int_a^b [\theta(x)]^p dx \leq 2 \left(\frac{p}{p-1} \right)^p \int_a^b |f(x)|^p dx \quad (\text{Hardy-Littlewood supremum theorem}).$$

(12) If $f(x)$ is piecewise smooth in $0 \leq x \leq \pi$ and $f(0) = f(\pi) = 0$,

$$\int_0^\pi [f'(x)]^2 dx \geq \int_0^\pi [f(x)]^2 dx \quad (\text{Wirtinger's inequality}),$$

and the equality holds only if $f(x)$ is a constant multiple of $\sin x$.

9. Differential and Integral Calculus

(I) Derivatives and Primitive Functions (→ 106 Differential Calculus, 216 Integral Calculus)

$F(x) \equiv \int f(x) dx$	$f(x) \equiv F'(x)$
$\alpha\varphi + \beta\psi$ (α, β constants)	$\alpha\varphi' + \beta\psi'$
$\varphi \cdot \psi$	$\varphi'\psi + \varphi\psi'$
φ/ψ ($\psi \neq 0$)	$(\varphi'\psi - \varphi\psi')/\psi^2$
$\log|\varphi|$ ($\varphi \neq 0$)	φ'/φ (logarithmic differentiation)
$\Phi(\varphi)$ (composite)	$(d\Phi/d\varphi) \cdot \varphi'$
c (constant)	0
x^n	nx^{n-1}
$x^{n+1}/(n+1)$	x^n ($n \neq -1$)
$\log|x|$	$1/x$
$\log_a|x|$	$(\log_a e)/x$
$x(\log x - 1)$	$\log x$
$\exp x = e^x$	$\exp x = e^x$
a^x ($a > 0$)	$a^x \log a$
x^x	$x^x(1 + \log x)$
$(x-1)e^x$	xe^x
$\sin x$	$\cos x$
$\cos x$	$-\sin x$
$\tan x$	$\sec^2 x$
$\cot x$	$-\operatorname{cosec}^2 x$
$\sec x$	$\sec x \tan x$
$\operatorname{cosec} x$	$-\operatorname{cosec} x \cot x$
$\sinh x = (e^x - e^{-x})/2$	$\cosh x$
$\cosh x = (e^x + e^{-x})/2$	$\sinh x$
$\tanh x = \sinh x / \cosh x$	$\operatorname{sech}^2 x$
$\coth x = \cosh x / \sinh x$	$-\operatorname{cosech}^2 x$
$\operatorname{sech} x = 1 / \cosh x$	$-\operatorname{sech} x \tanh x$
$\operatorname{cosech} x = 1 / \sinh x$	$-\operatorname{cosech} x \coth x$
$\arcsin x$ ($|F| < \pi/2$)	$1/\sqrt{1-x^2}$
$\arccos x$ ($0 < F < \pi$)	$-1/\sqrt{1-x^2}$
$\arctan x$ ($|F| < \pi/2$)	$1/(1+x^2)$
$\operatorname{arccot} x$ ($|F| < \pi/2$)	$-1/(1+x^2)$
$\operatorname{arcsec} x$ ($0 < F < \pi$)	$1/|x|\sqrt{x^2-1}$
$\operatorname{arc cosec} x$ ($|F| < \pi/2$)	$-1/|x|\sqrt{x^2-1}$
$\operatorname{arsinh} x = \log(x + \sqrt{x^2+1})$	$1/\sqrt{x^2+1}$
$\operatorname{arcosh} x = \log(x + \sqrt{x^2-1})$	$1/\sqrt{x^2-1}$
$\frac{1}{2} \log \left| \frac{1+x}{1-x} \right| = \begin{cases} \operatorname{artanh} x & (|x| < 1) \\ \operatorname{arcoth} x & (|x| > 1) \end{cases}$	$\frac{1}{1-x^2}$
$\operatorname{arsech} x$	$-1/x\sqrt{1-x^2}$
$\operatorname{arc cosech} x$	$-1/|x|\sqrt{1+x^2}$

$F(x) \equiv \int f(x) dx$	$f(x) \equiv F'(x)$
$\frac{1}{2a} \log \left| \frac{a-x}{a+x} \right| \quad (a > 0)$	$\frac{1}{x^2 - a^2}$
$(1/a) \arctan(x/a)$	$1/(x^2 + a^2)$
$(x\sqrt{1-x^2} + \arcsin x)/2$	$\sqrt{1-x^2}$
$[x\sqrt{x^2 \pm 1} \pm \log(x + \sqrt{x^2 \pm 1})]/2$	$\sqrt{x^2 \pm 1}$
$-\log |\cos x|$	$\tan x$
$\log |\sin x|$	$\cot x$
$\log |\tan x|$	$1/\sin x \cos x$
$\log |\tan[(\pi/4) + (x/2)]|$	$\sec x$
$\log |\tan(x/2)|$	$\operatorname{cosec} x$
$(x/2) - (1/4)\sin 2x$	$\sin^2 x$
$\sin x - x \cos x$	$x \sin x$
$\cos x + x \sin x$	$x \cos x$
$\frac{n \sin mx \sin nx + m \cos mx \cos nx}{n^2 - m^2} \quad (n^2 \neq m^2)$	$\sin mx \cos nx$
$e^{bx} \frac{b \sin ax - a \cos ax}{a^2 + b^2}$	$e^{bx} \sin ax$
$e^{bx} \frac{b \cos ax + a \sin ax}{a^2 + b^2}$	$e^{bx} \cos ax$
$x \arcsin x + \sqrt{1-x^2}$	$\arcsin x$
$x \arctan x - (1/2)\log(1+x^2)$	$\arctan x$
$\det(\varphi_{jk})_{j,k=1,\dots,n}$	$\sum \det(\varphi_{j1} \dots \varphi_{j\nu-1} \varphi'_{j\nu} \varphi_{j\nu+1} \dots \varphi_{jn})_{j=1,\dots,n}$

(II) Recurrence Formulas for Indefinite Integrals

(1) $I_m \equiv \int \frac{dx}{(1+x^2)^m} \quad (m \text{ is a positive integer}).$

$$I_m = \frac{1}{2m-2} \frac{x}{(1+x^2)^{m-1}} + \frac{2m-3}{2m-2} I_{m-1} \quad (m \geq 2); \quad I_1 = \arctan x.$$

(2) $I_m \equiv \int \frac{x^m}{\sqrt{ax^2+bx+c}} dx \quad (m \text{ is an integer}, a \neq 0).$

The case $m < 0$ is reduced to the case $m \geq 0$ by the change of variable $1/x = t$.

$$I_m = \frac{1}{ma} x^{m-1} \sqrt{ax^2+bx+c} - \frac{(2m-1)b}{2ma} I_{m-1} - \frac{(m-1)c}{ma} I_{m-2} \quad (m \geq 1);$$

$$I_0 = \begin{cases} (1/\sqrt{a}) \log |2ax+b+2\sqrt{a} \sqrt{ax^2+bx+c}| & (a > 0), \\ \frac{-1}{\sqrt{-a}} \arcsin \frac{2ax+b}{\sqrt{b^2-4ac}} & (a < 0); \end{cases}$$

In this case, for the integrand to be a real function it is necessary that $b^2 - 4ac > 0$.

(3) $I_m \equiv \int x^m e^x dx \quad (m \text{ is an integer}).$

$$I_m = x^m e^x - m I_{m-1}; \quad I_0 = e^x, \quad I_{-1} = \operatorname{Ei} x,$$

where Ei is the exponential integral function (\rightarrow Table 19.II.3, this Appendix).

$$\begin{aligned}
 (4) \quad I_{m,n} &\equiv \int x^m (\log x)^n dx \quad (m, n \text{ are integers, } n \geq 0). \\
 I_{m,n} &= \frac{x^{m+1}}{m+1} (\log x)^n - \frac{n}{m+1} I_{m,n-1}; \quad I_{m,0} = \frac{x^{m+1}}{m+1} \quad (m \neq -1), \quad I_{-1,n} = (\log x)^{n+1} / (n+1). \\
 (5) \quad I_m &\equiv \int x^m \sin x dx, \quad J_m \equiv \int x^m \cos x dx \quad (m \text{ is a nonnegative integer}). \\
 I_m &= -x^m \cos x + m J_{m-1} = x^{m-1} (m \sin x - x \cos x) - m(m-1) I_{m-2}, \\
 J_m &= x^m \sin x - m I_{m-1} = x^{m-1} (x \sin x + m \cos x) - m(m-1) J_{m-2}; \\
 I_0 &= -\cos x, \\
 J_0 &= \sin x, \\
 (6) \quad I_{m,n} &\equiv \int \sin^m x \cdot \cos^n x dx \quad (m, n \text{ are integers}). \\
 I_{m,n} &= \frac{\sin^{m+1} x \cos^{n-1} x}{m+n} + \frac{n-1}{m+n} I_{m,n-2} \quad \left. \begin{aligned} & \\ & \end{aligned} \right\} (m+n \neq 0), \\
 I_{m,n} &= \frac{-\sin^{m-1} x \cos^{n+1} x}{m+n} + \frac{m-1}{m+n} I_{m-2,n} \quad \left. \begin{aligned} & \\ & \end{aligned} \right\} \\
 I_{m,n} &= \frac{-\sin^{m+1} x \cos^{n+1} x}{n+1} + \frac{m+n+2}{n+1} I_{m,n+2} \quad (n \neq -1), \\
 I_{m,n} &= \frac{\sin^{m+1} x \cos^{n+1} x}{m+1} + \frac{m+n+2}{m+1} I_{m+2,n} \quad (m \neq -1); \\
 I_{1,1} &= (\sin^2 x)/2, \quad I_{1,0} = -\cos x, \quad I_{1,-1} = -\log |\cos x|, \quad I_{0,1} = \sin x, \quad I_{0,0} = x, \\
 I_{0,-1} &= \log |\tan[(x/2) + (\pi/4)]|, \quad I_{-1,1} = \log |\sin x|, \\
 I_{-1,0} &= \log |\tan(x/2)|, \quad I_{-1,-1} = \log |\tan x|. \\
 I_{m,-m} &\equiv \int \tan^m x dx = \frac{\tan^{m-1} x}{m-1} - I_{m-2,-(m-2)} \quad (m \neq 1).
 \end{aligned}$$

(III) Derivatives of Higher Order

$f(x)$	$f^{(n)}(x)$
$\varphi \cdot \psi$	$\sum_{\nu=0}^n \binom{n}{\nu} \varphi^{(\nu)} \psi^{(n-\nu)} \quad (\text{Leibniz's formula})$
x^k	$\prod_{\nu=0}^{n-1} (k-\nu) x^{k-n}$
$(x+a)^n$	$n!$
$\exp x$	$\exp x$
$a^x \quad (a > 0)$	$a^x (\log a)^n$
$\log x$	$(-1)^{n-1} (n-1)! / x^n$
$\sin x$	$\sin[x + (n\pi/2)]$
$\cos x$	$\cos[x + (n\pi/2)]$
$e^{ax} \cos bx$	$r^n e^{ax} \cos(bx + n\theta) \quad (\text{where } a = r \cos \theta, b = r \sin \theta)$
$\arcsin x$	$\frac{1}{2^{n-1}} \sum_{\nu=0}^{n-1} (-1)^\nu \binom{n-1}{\nu} (2\nu-1)!! (2n-2\nu-3)!! (1+x)^{-(1/2)-\nu} (1-x)^{(1/2)-n+\nu}$ (where $(2\nu-1)!! \equiv 1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \cdot \dots \cdot (2\nu-1)$, $(-1)!! \equiv 1$)
$\arctan x$	$(-1)^{n-1} (n-1)! \sin^n \theta \sin n\theta \quad (\text{where } x = \cot \theta)$

$$\left(\frac{1}{f}\right)' = -\frac{f'}{f^2}, \quad \left(\frac{1}{f}\right)'' = \frac{2f'^2 - ff''}{f^3}, \quad \left(\frac{1}{f}\right)''' = \frac{6ff'f'' - 6f'^3 - f^2 f'''}{f^4}.$$

Higher-order derivatives of a composite function $g(t) \equiv f(x_1(t), \dots, x_n(t))$

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{dg}{dt} &= \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i} \frac{dx_i}{dt}, \quad \frac{d^2g}{dt^2} = \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i} \frac{d^2x_i}{dt^2} + \sum_{i,j=1}^n \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} \frac{dx_i}{dt} \frac{dx_j}{dt}, \\ \frac{d^3g}{dt^3} &= \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial f}{\partial x_i} \frac{d^3x_i}{dt^3} + 2 \sum_{i,j=1}^n \frac{\partial^2 f}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} \frac{d^2x_i}{dt^2} \frac{dx_j}{dt} + \sum_{i,j,k=1}^n \frac{\partial^3 f}{\partial x_i \partial x_j \partial x_k} \frac{dx_i}{dt} \frac{dx_j}{dt} \frac{dx_k}{dt}. \end{aligned}$$

For a function $z = z(x_1, \dots, x_n)$ determined implicitly by $F(z; x_1, \dots, x_n) = 0$, we have

$$\frac{\partial z}{\partial x_i} = -\frac{F_{x_i}}{F_z}, \quad \frac{\partial^2 z}{\partial x_i \partial x_j} = -\frac{F_{x_i x_j}}{F_z} + \frac{F_{x_i} F_{x_j z} + F_{x_j} F_{x_i z}}{F_z^2} - \frac{F_{x_i} F_{x_j} F_{zz}}{F_z^3}.$$

Schwarzian derivative:

$$\begin{aligned} \{y; x\} &\equiv \left(\frac{d^3 y}{dx^3} \right) / \left(\frac{dy}{dx} \right) - \frac{3}{2} \left[\left(\frac{d^2 y}{dx^2} \right) / \left(\frac{dy}{dx} \right) \right]^2, \quad \{y; x\} = 0 \Leftrightarrow y = (ax + b)/(cx + d), \\ \{y; x\} &= \left(\frac{dz}{dx} \right)^2 [\{y; z\} - \{x; z\}] = - \left(\frac{dy}{dx} \right)^2 \{x; y\}, \quad \{(ay + b)/(cy + d); x\} = \{y; x\}. \end{aligned}$$

(IV) The Taylor Expansion and Remainder

If $f(x)$ is n times continuously differentiable in the interval $[a, b]$ (i.e., of class C^n),

$$f(b) = \sum_{\nu=0}^{n-1} \frac{(b-a)^\nu}{\nu!} f^{(\nu)}(a) + R_n \quad (\text{Taylor's formula}).$$

R_n is called the remainder, and is represented as follows:

$$\begin{aligned} R_n &= \frac{1}{(n-1)!} \int_a^b (b-x)^{n-1} f^{(n)}(x) dx = \frac{(b-a)^p (b-\xi)^{n-p}}{(n-1)!p} f^{(n)}(\xi) \\ &= \frac{(b-a)^n}{(n-1)!p} (1-\theta)^{n-p} f^{(n)}(a+\theta(b-a)) \quad (n \geq p > 0, \quad 0 < \theta < 1, \quad a < \xi < b, \quad \xi = a + \theta(b-a)) \\ &\quad (\text{Roche-Schlömilch remainder}); \\ &= \frac{1}{n!} (b-a)^n f^{(n)}(\xi) \quad (\text{Lagrange's remainder}); \\ &= \frac{1}{(n-1)!} (b-a)(b-\xi)^{n-1} f^{(n)}(\xi) \quad (\text{Cauchy's remainder}). \end{aligned}$$

If $f(x, y)$ is m times continuously differentiable in a neighborhood of a point (x_0, y_0) ,

$$\begin{aligned} f(x_0 + h, y_0 + k) &= \sum_{\lambda=0}^{m-1} \frac{1}{\lambda!} \left(h \frac{\partial}{\partial x} + k \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \right)^\lambda f(x_0, y_0) + R_m \\ &= \sum_{0 \leq \mu + \nu \leq m-1; \mu, \nu \geq 0} \frac{1}{\mu! \nu!} h^\mu k^\nu \frac{\partial^{\mu+\nu} f(x_0, y_0)}{\partial x^\mu \partial y^\nu} + R_m, \end{aligned}$$

$$R_m = \frac{1}{m!} \left(h \frac{\partial}{\partial x} + k \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \right)^m f(x_0 + \theta h, y_0 + \theta k) \quad (0 < \theta < 1).$$

If all partial derivatives up to order $m-1$ are totally differentiable,

$$\begin{aligned} f(x_1 + h_1, \dots, x_n + h_n) &= \sum_{\nu=0}^{m-1} \frac{1}{\nu!} \left(\sum_{\mu=1}^n h_\mu \frac{\partial}{\partial x_\mu} \right)^\nu f(x_1, \dots, x_n) + R_m \\ &= \sum \frac{1}{\nu_1! \dots \nu_n!} h_1^{\nu_1} \dots h_n^{\nu_n} \frac{\partial^{\nu_1 + \dots + \nu_n} f(x_1, \dots, x_n)}{\partial x_1^{\nu_1} \dots \partial x_n^{\nu_n}} + R_m, \end{aligned}$$

where the Σ means the sum for ν_1, \dots, ν_n in the domain $0 \leq \nu_1 + \dots + \nu_n \leq m-1$; $\nu_1, \dots, \nu_n \geq 0$.

The remainder R_m is expressed as

$$R_m = \frac{1}{m!} \left(\sum_{\mu=1}^n h_\mu \frac{\partial}{\partial x_\mu} \right)^m f(x_1 + \theta h_1, \dots, x_n + \theta h_n) \quad (0 < \theta < 1).$$

(V) Definite Integrals [4]

In the following formulas, we assume that m, n are positive integers. δ_{mn} is Kronecker's delta ($\delta_{mn} = 0$ or 1 for $m \neq n$ or $m = n$), Γ is the gamma function, B is the beta function, and C is the Euler constant.

For simplicity, we put

$$m!! \equiv \begin{cases} 1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \cdot \dots \cdot (m-2) \cdot m = 2^{(m+1)/2} \Gamma[(m/2) + 1] / \sqrt{\pi} = m! / 2^{(m-1)/2} [(m-1)/2]! & (m \text{ is odd}), \\ 2 \cdot 4 \cdot 6 \cdot \dots \cdot (m-2) \cdot m = 2^{m/2} \Gamma[(m/2) + 1] = 2^{m/2} (m/2)! & (m \text{ is even}). \end{cases}$$

In an n -dimensional real space, the volume of the domain

$$|x_1|^p + \dots + |x_n|^p \leq 1 \quad (p > 0) \quad \text{is} \quad \frac{2^n [\Gamma(1/p)]^n}{p^{n-1} n \Gamma(n/p)}.$$

For $p=2$, this is the volume of the unit hypersphere, which is

$$\frac{\pi^{n/2}}{\Gamma[(n/2) + 1]} = \begin{cases} (2\pi)^{n/2} / n!! & (n \text{ is even}), \\ 2(2\pi)^{(n-1)/2} / n!! & (n \text{ is odd}). \end{cases}$$

The surface area of the $(n-1)$ -dimensional unit hypersphere

$$|x_1|^2 + \dots + |x_n|^2 = 1 \quad \text{is} \quad \frac{2\pi^{n/2}}{\Gamma(n/2)} = \begin{cases} (2\pi)^{n/2} / (n-2)!! & (n \text{ is even}), \\ 2(2\pi)^{(n-1)/2} / (n-2)!! & (n \text{ is odd}). \end{cases}$$

$$\int_0^\infty x^{p-1} e^{-x} dx = \int_0^1 \left(\log \frac{1}{x} \right)^{p-1} dx \equiv \Gamma(p).$$

$$\int_0^1 x^p \left(\log \frac{1}{x} \right)^q dx = \frac{\Gamma(q+1)}{(p+1)^{q+1}} \quad (\operatorname{Re} p, \operatorname{Re} q > -1).$$

$$\int_0^1 x^{p-1} (1-x)^{q-1} dx = \int_0^\infty \frac{x^{p-1}}{(1+x)^{p+q}} dx \equiv B(p, q) = \frac{\Gamma(p)\Gamma(q)}{\Gamma(p+q)}.$$

$$\int_0^\infty \frac{x^a}{(1+x^c)^{1+b}} dx = \frac{1}{c} \frac{\Gamma[(a+1)/c] \Gamma[b - \{(a-c+1)/c\}]}{\Gamma(1+b)} \quad \left(\operatorname{Re} c > 0; \operatorname{Re} a, \operatorname{Re} b > -1; \operatorname{Re} b > \operatorname{Re} \frac{a-c+1}{c} \right).$$

$$\int_0^a \frac{(a-x)^{p-1} (x-b)^{q-1}}{|x-c|^{p+q}} dx = \frac{(a-b)^{p+q-1}}{|a-c|^q |b-c|^p} B(p, q) \quad (0 < c < b < a \text{ or } 0 < b < a < c; \operatorname{Re} p, \operatorname{Re} q > 0).$$

$$\int_{-\infty}^\infty \frac{1}{(1+x^2)^{n+1}} dx = \frac{\pi(2n)!}{2^{2n}(n!)^2} = \pi \frac{(2n-1)!!}{(2n)!!}.$$

$$\int_{-\infty}^\infty \frac{x^{2m}}{1+x^{2n}} dx = \frac{\pi}{n \sin[(2m+1)\pi/2n]} \quad (2m+1 < 2n).$$

$$\int_0^\infty \frac{x^{a-1}}{1+x} dx = \Gamma(a)\Gamma(1-a) = \frac{\pi}{\sin a\pi} \quad (0 < a < 1).$$

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-a^2 x^2} dx = \frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{2|a|}. \quad \int_0^\infty x^p e^{-x^2} dx = \frac{1}{2} \Gamma\left(\frac{p+1}{2}\right) = \begin{cases} (2n-1)!! \sqrt{\pi} / 2^{n+1} & (p=2n), \\ n! / 2 & (p=2n+1). \end{cases}$$

$$\int_0^\infty (e^{-a^2/x^2} - e^{-b^2/x^2}) dx = (b-a)\sqrt{\pi} \quad (a, b \geq 0). \quad \int_0^\infty e^{-[x-(1/x)]^2} dx = \frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{2}.$$

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-x^2 - (a^2/x^2)} dx = \frac{e^{-2a\sqrt{\pi}}}{2} \quad (a \geq 0). \quad \int_0^\infty \frac{1}{e^{ax} + e^{-ax}} dx = \frac{\pi}{4a}.$$

$$\int_0^\infty \frac{x}{e^{ax} - e^{-ax}} dx = \frac{\pi^2}{8a^2} \quad (a > 0).$$

$$\int_0^\infty \frac{x}{e^x - e^{-x}} dx = \int_0^1 \frac{\log(1/x)}{1-x^2} dx = \frac{\pi^2}{8}.$$

$$\begin{aligned} \int_0^\infty \frac{x}{e^x+1} dx &= \int_0^1 \frac{\log(1/x)}{1+x} dx = \frac{\pi^2}{12}, \quad \int_0^\infty \frac{x}{e^x-1} dx = \int_0^1 \frac{\log(1/x)}{1-x} dx = \frac{\pi^2}{6}. \\ \int_0^\infty \log\left(\frac{e^x+1}{e^x-1}\right) dx &= \int_0^1 \log\left(\frac{1+x}{1-x}\right) \frac{1}{x} dx = \frac{\pi^2}{4}. \\ \int_0^1 \frac{\log x}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} dx &= \int_0^{\pi/2} \log \sin x dx = -\frac{\pi}{2} \log 2. \\ \int_0^1 \frac{\log(1+x)}{1+x^2} dx &= \frac{\pi}{8} \log 2, \quad \int_0^1 \frac{\log x}{1+x^2} dx = -\int_1^\infty \frac{\log x}{1+x^2} dx = \sum_{n=0}^\infty \frac{(-1)^{n-1}}{(2n+1)^2} = -0.91596\dots \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{(\log x)^2}{1+x+x^2} dx &= \frac{16\pi^3}{81\sqrt{3}}, \quad \int_0^1 \frac{x^p-x^q}{\log x} dx = \log \frac{p+1}{q+1} \quad (p, q > -1). \\ \int_0^1 \log|\log x| dx &= \int_0^\infty e^{-t} \log t dt = -C = -0.57721\dots \\ \int_0^\pi \sin mx \sin nx dx &= \int_0^\pi \cos mx \cos nx dx = \delta_{mn} \frac{\pi}{2}. \\ \int_0^\pi \sin mx \cos nx dx &= \begin{cases} [1-(-1)^{m+n}] \frac{m}{m^2-n^2} & (m \neq n); \\ 0 & (m = n). \end{cases} \\ \int_0^{\pi/2} \sin^p x \cos^q x dx &= \frac{1}{2} B\left(\frac{p+1}{2}, \frac{q+1}{2}\right) \quad (\operatorname{Re} p, \operatorname{Re} q > -\frac{1}{2}); \\ &= \begin{cases} (\pi/2)(p-1)!!(q-1)!!/(p+q)!! & (p, q \text{ are even positive integers}), \\ (p-1)!!(q-1)!!/(p+q)!! & (p, q \text{ are positive integers not both even}). \end{cases} \\ \int_0^{\pi/2} \sin^p x dx = \int_0^{\pi/2} \cos^p x dx &= \frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{2} \frac{\Gamma[(p+1)/2]}{\Gamma[(p/2)+1]} \quad (\operatorname{Re} p > -1); \\ &= \begin{cases} (\pi/2)(2n-1)!!/(2n)!! & (p=2n), \\ (2n)!!/(2n+1)!! & (p=2n+1). \end{cases} \\ \int_{-\infty}^\infty \sin(x^2) dx = \int_{-\infty}^\infty \cos(x^2) dx &= \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin x}{\sqrt{x}} dx = \int_0^\infty \frac{\cos x}{\sqrt{x}} dx = \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}} \quad (\text{Fresnel integral}). \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin ax}{x} dx = \frac{\pi}{2} \quad (a > 0), \quad \int_0^\infty \frac{\tan x}{x} dx &= \frac{\pi}{2} \\ &\quad \left(\text{take Cauchy's principal value at } x = \left(n + \frac{1}{2}\right)\pi\right). \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin^{2n+1} x}{x} dx &= \frac{\pi}{2} \frac{(2n-1)!!}{(2n)!!}, \quad \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin^2 x}{x^2} dx = \frac{\pi}{2}, \quad \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin(x^2)}{x} dx = \frac{\pi}{4}. \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin qx}{x^p} dx &= \frac{\pi q^{p-1}}{2\Gamma(p)\sin(p\pi/2)} \quad (0 < p < 2). \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{\cos px}{1+x^2} dx &= \frac{\pi}{2} e^{-|p|}, \quad \int_0^\infty \frac{\cos^2 ax}{1+x^2} dx = \frac{\pi}{4} (1+e^{-2a}) \quad (a > 0). \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin ax}{x(1+x^2)} dx &= \frac{\pi}{2} (1-e^{-a}) \quad (a > 0), \quad \int_0^\infty \frac{x \sin ax}{1+x^2} dx = \frac{\pi}{2} e^{-a} \quad (a > 0). \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin^{2m+1} x \cos^{2n} x}{x} dx &= \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin^{2m+1} x \cos^{2n-1} x}{x} dx = \frac{\pi}{2} \frac{(2m-1)!!(2n-1)!!}{(2m+2n)!!}. \\ \int_0^\infty \frac{\sin ax \cos bx}{x} dx &= \begin{cases} \pi/2 & (a > b > 0), \\ \pi/4 & (a = b > 0), \\ 0 & (b > a > 0) \end{cases} \quad (\text{Dirichlet's discontinuous factor}). \\ \int_0^{2\pi} \frac{1}{1+a \cos x} dx &= \frac{2\pi}{\sqrt{1-a^2}} \quad (|a| < 1), \quad \int_0^{\pi/2} \frac{1}{a^2 \cos^2 x + b^2 \sin^2 x} dx = \frac{\pi}{2ab} \quad (ab \neq 0). \\ \int_0^\pi \frac{x \sin x}{1+\cos^2 x} dx &= \frac{\pi^2}{4}. \end{aligned}$$

$$\int_0^\pi \frac{\cos nx}{1-2a \cos x + a^2} dx = \begin{cases} \pi a^n / (1-a^2) & (|a| < 1), \\ \pi / a^n (a^2-1) & (|a| > 1). \end{cases}$$

References

- [1] B. O. Peirce, A short table of integrals, Ginn, Boston, second revised edition, 1910.
 [2] D. Bierens de Haan, Nouvelles tables d'intégrales définies, Leiden, 1867.
 There are several mistakes in this table. For the errata, see
 [3] C. F. Lindmann, Examen des nouvelles tables de M. Bierens de Haan, Handlingar Svenska Vetenskaps-Akad., 1891.
 [4] E. W. Sheldon, Critical revision of de Haan's tables of definite integrals, Amer. J. Math., 34 (1912), 39-114.

10. Series (→ 379 Series)

(I) Finite Series

- (1) $S_k \equiv 1^k + 2^k + \dots + n^k$ (k is an integer). For $k \geq 0$, we have

$$S_k = \frac{B_{k+1}(n+1) - B_{k+1}(1)}{k+1} = \sum_{i=0}^k (-1)^i \binom{k+1}{i} \frac{B_{2i}(n+1)^{k+1-i}}{k+1},$$

where B_l is a Bernoulli number and $B_l(x)$ is a Bernoulli polynomial. In particular,

$$S_0 = n, \quad S_1 = n(n+1)/2, \quad S_2 = n(n+1)(2n+1)/6, \quad S_3 = n^2(n+1)^2/4,$$

$$S_4 = n(n+1)(2n+1)(3n^2+3n-1)/30.$$

For $k < 0$ and $k = -l$,

$$\begin{aligned} S_{-l} &= c_l - \left[(-1)^l / (l-1)! \right] \left[d^l \log \Gamma(x) / dx^l \right]_{x=n+1} \\ &= c_l - \frac{1}{(l-1)(n+1)^{l-1}} - \frac{1}{2(n+1)^l} + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} (-1)^i \frac{B_{2(i+1)}}{(i+1)!} \frac{(l+i-1)!}{(l-1)!} \frac{1}{(n+1)^{l+i}}. \end{aligned}$$

For $l=1$, the second term in the latter formula is replaced by $\log[1/(n+1)]$. Here Γ is the gamma function, and the constants c_l are

$$c_l = \begin{cases} C & (\text{Euler constant}) \quad (l=1), \\ \zeta(l) & (\zeta \text{ is the Riemann zeta function}) \quad (l \geq 2). \end{cases}$$

$$(2) \quad \sum_{i=1}^n i(i+1)\dots(i+m-1) \equiv \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{(i+m-1)!}{(i-1)!} = \frac{1}{m+1} \frac{(n+m)!}{(n-1)!},$$

$$\sum_{i=1}^n \frac{(i-1)!}{(i+m-1)!} = \frac{1}{m-1} \left[\frac{1}{(m-1)!} - \frac{n!}{(n+m-1)!} \right] \quad (m \geq 2),$$

$$\sum_{i=1}^n i! i = (n+1)! - 1, \quad \sum_{i=1}^n i \binom{n}{i} = n2^{n-1},$$

$$\sum_{i=m}^n \binom{i}{m} \binom{n+s-i-1}{n-i} = \binom{n+s}{m+s} \quad (m \leq n),$$

$$\sum_{i=0}^n \binom{n}{i} \binom{m}{r-i} = \binom{n+m}{r}.$$

$$\sum_{i=1}^n a^i = \begin{cases} a(a^n-1)/(a-1) & (a \neq 1) \\ n & (a = 1) \end{cases} \quad (\text{geometric progression})$$

$$\sum_{j=0}^n (a+jd) = (n+1)a + \frac{n(n+1)}{2} d = \frac{n+1}{2} (a+a+nd) \quad (\text{arithmetic progression})$$

$$\sum_{j=0}^n \sin(\alpha+j\beta) = \sin\left(\alpha + \frac{n}{2}\beta\right) \sin \frac{(n+1)\beta}{2} \bigg/ \sin \frac{\beta}{2},$$

$$\sum_{j=0}^n \cos(\alpha + j\beta) = \cos\left(\alpha + \frac{n}{2}\beta\right) \sin \frac{(n+1)\beta}{2} / \sin \frac{\beta}{2},$$

$$\sum_{j=0}^n \operatorname{cosec} 2^j \alpha = \cot(\alpha/2) - \cot 2^n \alpha.$$

(II) Convergence Criteria for Positive Series $\sum a_n$

In the present Section II, we assume that $a_n \geq 0$.

Cauchy's criterion: The series converges when $\limsup \sqrt[n]{a_n} < 1$ and it diverges when $\limsup \sqrt[n]{a_n} > 1$.

d'Alembert's criterion: The series converges when $\limsup a_{n+1}/a_n < 1$ and diverges when $\liminf a_{n+1}/a_n > 1$.

Raabe's criterion: The series converges when $\liminf n[(a_n/a_{n+1}) - 1] > 1$ and diverges when $\limsup n[(a_n/a_{n+1}) - 1] < 1$.

Kummer's criterion: For a positive divergent series $\sum(1/b_n)$, the series $\sum a_n$ converges when $\liminf [(b_n a_n/a_{n+1}) - b_{n+1}] > 0$ and diverges when $\limsup [(b_n a_n/a_{n+1}) - b_{n+1}] < 0$ diverges.

Gauss's criterion: Suppose $a_n/a_{n+1} = 1 + (k/n) + (\theta_n/n^2)$, where $\lambda > 1$ and $\{\theta_n\}$ is bounded. Then the series $\sum a_n$ converges when $k > 1$; and diverges when $k \leq 1$.

Schlömilch's criterion: For a decreasing positive sequence $a_v \downarrow 0$, let n_v be an increasing sequence of positive integers and suppose that $(n_{v+2} - n_{v+1})/(n_{v+1} - n_v)$ is bounded. Then the two series $\sum a_n$ and $\sum (n_{v+1} - n_v) a_{n_v}$ converge or diverge simultaneously.

Logarithmic criterion: For a positive integer k , we put

$$\log_k x \equiv \log(\log_{k-1} x), \quad \log_1 x = \log x.$$

Then for sufficiently large n we have

The first logarithmic criterion: If

$$a_n - 1/(n \log_1 n \dots \log_{k-1} n (\log_k n)^p) \begin{cases} \leq 0, & p > 1 \\ \geq 0, & p \leq 1 \end{cases} \begin{cases} \text{then } \sum a_n \text{ converges,} \\ \text{then } \sum a_n \text{ diverges.} \end{cases}$$

The second logarithmic criterion: If

$$\frac{a_{n+1}}{a_n} - \frac{n}{n+1} \frac{\log_1 n}{\log_1(n+1)} \dots \frac{\log_{k-1} n}{\log_{k-1}(n+1)} \left(\frac{\log_k n}{\log_k(n+1)} \right)^p \begin{cases} \leq 0, & p > 1 \\ \geq 0, & p \leq 1 \end{cases} \begin{cases} \text{then } \sum a_n \text{ converges,} \\ \text{then } \sum a_n \text{ diverges.} \end{cases}$$

(III) Infinite Series

$$\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{i-1}}{i} = \log 2, \quad \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{i-1}}{2i-1} = \frac{\pi}{4} \quad (\text{Leibniz's formula}),$$

$$\sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{i-1}}{2i(2i+1)(2i+2)} = \frac{\pi-3}{4},$$

$$\sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{(2i)!}{2^{2i}(i!)^2} \frac{1}{2i+1} = \frac{\pi}{2}, \quad \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \left(\frac{1}{i} - \log\left(1 + \frac{1}{i}\right) \right) = C \quad (C \text{ is Euler's constant}).$$

Putting

$$\zeta(n) = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{i^n}, \quad \alpha(n) = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{(2i-1)^n}, \quad \beta(n) = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{i-1}}{i^n}, \quad \varepsilon(n) = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{i-1}}{(2i-1)^n},$$

we have

$$\zeta(2n) = \frac{(2\pi)^{2n}}{2(2n)!} B_{2n}, \quad \alpha(2n) = \frac{(2^{2n}-1)\pi^{2n}}{2(2n)!} B_{2n},$$

$$\beta(2n) = \frac{(2^{2n-1}-1)\pi^{2n}}{(2n)!} B_{2n}, \quad \varepsilon(2n+1) = \frac{\pi^{2n+1}}{2^{2n+2}(2n)!} E_{2n}.$$

where B_n is a Bernoulli number, and E_n is an Euler number.

$$\zeta(2) = \pi^2/6, \quad \zeta(4) = \pi^4/90, \quad \zeta(6) = \pi^6/945.$$

$$\alpha(2) = \pi^2/8, \quad \alpha(4) = \pi^4/96, \quad \alpha(6) = \pi^6/960.$$

$$\beta(2) = \pi^2/12, \quad \beta(4) = 7\pi^4/720, \quad \beta(6) = 31\pi^6/30240.$$

$$\varepsilon(1) = \pi/4, \quad \varepsilon(2) = 0.915965594177219 \ 015054603514932\dots \quad (\text{Catalan's constant}),$$

$$\varepsilon(3) = \pi^3/32, \quad \varepsilon(5) = 5\pi^5/1536, \quad \varepsilon(7) = 61\pi^7/92160.$$

(IV) Power Series (\rightarrow 339 Power Series)

(1) Binomial Series $(1+x)^\alpha = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \binom{\alpha}{i} x^i$. This converges always in $|x| < 1$. If $\alpha > 0$, it converges in $-1 \leq x \leq 1$, and if $-1 < \alpha < 0$, it converges in $-1 < x \leq 1$. When α is 0 or a positive integer, it reduces to a polynomial and converges in $|x| < \infty$.

$$\frac{1}{1+x} = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} (-1)^i x^i \quad (|x| < 1),$$

$$\sqrt{1+x} = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{i-1}(2i)!}{(2i-1)2^{2i}(i!)^2} x^i \quad (|x| < 1), \quad \frac{1}{\sqrt{1+x}} = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^i(2i)!}{2^{2i}(i!)^2} x^i \quad (|x| < 1).$$

(2) Elementary Transcendental Functions (\rightarrow 131 Elementary Functions).

$$e^x \equiv \exp x = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{x^i}{i!} = \lim_{n \rightarrow \infty} \left(1 + \frac{x}{n}\right)^n, \quad a^x = \exp(x \log a) \quad (|x| < \infty).$$

$$\log(1+x) = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{i-1}}{i} x^i \quad (-1 < x \leq 1), \quad \log x = 2 \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{2i+1} \left(\frac{x-1}{x+1}\right)^{2i+1} \quad (0 < x < \infty).$$

$$\sin x = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^i}{(2i+1)!} x^{2i+1}, \quad \cos x = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^i}{(2i)!} x^{2i} \quad (|x| < \infty).$$

$$\tan x = \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{2^{2i}(2^{2i}-1)B_{2i}}{(2i)!} x^{2i-1} \quad \left(|x| < \frac{\pi}{2}\right) \quad (B_i \text{ is a Bernoulli number}),$$

$$\cot x = \frac{1}{x} - \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{2^{2i}B_{2i}}{(2i)!} x^{2i-1} \quad \left(0 < |x| < \frac{\pi}{2}\right),$$

$$\sec x = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{E_{2i}}{(2i)!} x^{2i} \quad \left(|x| < \frac{\pi}{2}\right) \quad (E_i \text{ is an Euler number}),$$

$$\operatorname{cosec} x = \frac{1}{x} + \sum_{i=1}^{\infty} \frac{(2^{2i}-2)B_{2i}}{(2i)!} x^{2i-1} \quad (0 < |x| < \pi).$$

$$\arcsin x = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{(2i)!}{2^{2i}(i!)^2} \frac{x^{2i+1}}{2i+1} \quad (|x| \leq 1), \quad \arctan x = \sum_{i=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^i}{2i+1} x^{2i+1} \quad (|x| \leq 1).$$

(V) Partial Fractions for Elementary Functions

$$\begin{aligned}\tan x &= \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{8x}{(2n+1)^2\pi^2 - 4x^2}, \quad \cot x = \frac{1}{x} + 2x \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{x^2 - n^2\pi^2}, \\ \sec x &= 4 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^n(2n-1)\pi}{(2n-1)^2\pi^2 - 4x^2}, \quad \operatorname{cosec} x = \frac{1}{x} + 2x \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^n}{x^2 - n^2\pi^2}, \\ \sec^2 x &= \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{1}{[x + \{(2n+1)\pi/2\}]^2}, \quad \operatorname{cosec}^2 x = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{1}{(x + n\pi)^2}.\end{aligned}$$

(VI) Infinite Products (\rightarrow 379 Series F)

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{4n^2}{4n^2 - 1} = \frac{\pi}{2} \quad (\text{Wallis formula}), \quad \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(1 + \frac{x}{a+n}\right) e^{-x/n} = e^{-Cx} \frac{\Gamma(1+a)}{\Gamma(1+a+x)}$$

(C is Euler's constant).

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{x}{2n-1}\right) \left(1 + \frac{x}{2n}\right) = \sqrt{\pi} / \Gamma\left(1 + \frac{x}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{1}{2} - \frac{x}{2}\right).$$

$$\prod_p 1/(1-p^{-s}) = \zeta(s) \quad (p \text{ ranges over all prime numbers, } s > 1),$$

$$\prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{x^2}{n^2\pi^2}\right) = \frac{\sin x}{x}, \quad \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \cos \frac{x}{2^n} = \frac{\sin x}{x}, \quad \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{4x^2}{(2n-1)^2\pi^2}\right) = \cos x.$$

$$\text{For } |q| < 1, \text{ putting } q_1 \equiv \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 + q^{2n}), \quad q_2 \equiv \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 + q^{2n-1}), \quad q_3 \equiv \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - q^{2n-1}),$$

$$q_4 \equiv \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - q^{2n}) \quad \text{we have} \quad q_1 q_2 q_3 = 1.$$

Further, putting $q = e^{i\pi\tau}$, we have the following formulas concerning ϑ -functions (\rightarrow 134 Elliptic Functions):

$$\vartheta_4(0, \tau) = q_4 q_3^2, \quad \vartheta_2(0, \tau) = 2q^{1/4} q_4 q_1^2, \quad \vartheta_3(0, \tau) = q_4 q_2^2, \quad \vartheta_1'(0, \tau) = 2\pi q^{1/4} q_4^3.$$

11. Fourier Analysis

(I) Fourier Series (\rightarrow 159 Fourier Series)

$$\begin{aligned}(1) \text{ Fourier coefficients} \quad a_0 &= \frac{1}{a} \int_0^a f(x) dx, \quad a_n = \frac{2}{a} \int_0^a f(x) \cos \frac{n\pi x}{a} dx \\ b_n &= \frac{2}{a} \int_0^a f(x) \sin \frac{n\pi x}{a} dx.\end{aligned}$$

$$\text{Fourier cosine series} \quad a_0 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n \cos \frac{n\pi x}{a} = \begin{cases} f(x) & (0 < x < a), \\ f(-x) & (-a < x < 0). \end{cases}$$

$$\text{Fourier sine series} \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} b_n \sin \frac{n\pi x}{a} = \begin{cases} f(x) & (0 < x < a), \\ -f(-x) & (-a < x < 0). \end{cases}$$

The next table shows the Fourier coefficients of the functions $F(x)$ directly in the following manner from a given function $f(x)$ on the interval $[0, a]$. For x in $[-a, 0]$ and when the cosine series $\{a_n\}$ is in question, we set $f(x) = f(-x)$, and when the sine series $\{b_n\}$ is in question we set $f(x) = -f(-x)$. Thus $f(x)$ is extended in two ways to functions on $[-a, a]$. The functions $F(x)$ are the periodic continuations of such functions. We remark that the sum of the Fourier series given by the Fourier coefficients in the right hand side has, in general, some singularities (discontinuity of the function or its higher derivatives, for example) at the points given by the integral multiples of a . We assume that μ is not an integer.

$f(x)$	a_0	$a_n \quad (n=1, 2, \dots)$	$b_n \quad (n=1, 2, \dots)$
1	1	0	$[1 + (-1)^{n+1}]2a/n\pi$
x	$\frac{a}{2}$	$[1 + (-1)^{n+1}]\frac{-2a}{n^2\pi^2}$	$(-1)^{n+1}\frac{2a}{n\pi}$
x^2	$\frac{a^2}{3}$	$(-1)^n\frac{4a^2}{n^2\pi^2}$	$(-1)^{n-1}\frac{2a^2}{n\pi} - [1 + (-1)^{n+1}]\frac{4a^2}{n^3\pi^3}$
e^{kx}	$\frac{e^{ka} - 1}{ka}$	$\frac{2ka[(-1)^n e^{ka} - 1]}{k^2a^2 + n^2\pi^2}$	$\frac{2n\pi[1 - (-1)^n]e^{ka}}{k^2a^2 + n^2\pi^2}$
$\cos \frac{\mu\pi x}{a}$	$\frac{\sin \mu\pi}{\mu\pi}$	$(-1)^n \frac{2}{\pi} \frac{\mu \sin \mu\pi}{\mu^2 - n^2}$	$\frac{2}{\pi} \frac{[(-1)^n \cos \mu\pi - 1]}{\mu^2 - n^2}$
$\sin \frac{\mu\pi x}{a}$	$\frac{1 - \cos \mu\pi}{\mu\pi}$	$\frac{2}{\pi} \frac{\mu[1 - (-1)^n \cos \mu\pi]}{\mu^2 - n^2}$	$(-1)^n \frac{2}{\pi} \frac{n \sin \mu\pi}{\mu^2 - n^2}$
$\frac{1 - \lambda^2}{1 - 2\lambda \cos(\pi x/a) + \lambda^2}$	1	$2\lambda^n \quad (|\lambda| < 1)$	
$\frac{\lambda \sin(\pi x/a)}{1 - 2\lambda \cos(\pi x/a) + \lambda^2}$			$\lambda^n \quad (|\lambda| < 1)$
$B_{2m}(x/2a)$	0	$(-1)^{m+1}2(2m)!/(2n\pi)^{2m}$	
$B_{2m+1}(x/a)$			$(-1)^{m+1}2(2m+1)!/(2n\pi)^{2m+1}$
$\log \sin(\pi x/2a)$	$-\log 2$	$-1/n$	
$(1/2)\cot(\pi x/2a)$			$1^{(1)}$

Note

(1) The Fourier series does not converge in the sense of Cauchy, but it is summable, for example, by the Cesàro summation of the first order.

$$\begin{aligned}
 (2) \quad & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^{n-1} \frac{\cos nx}{n} = \log\left(2 \cos \frac{x}{2}\right) \quad (-\pi < x < \pi), \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\sin nx}{n} = \frac{1}{2}(\pi - x) \quad (0 < x < 2\pi). \\
 & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\cos(2n-1)x}{2n-1} = \frac{1}{2} \log \left| \cot \frac{x}{2} \right| \quad (0 < x < 2\pi, \quad x \neq \pi), \\
 & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\sin(2n-1)x}{2n-1} = \begin{cases} \pi/4 & (0 < x < \pi), \\ -\pi/4 & (\pi < x < 2\pi). \end{cases} \\
 & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\cos nx}{n^2} = \frac{1}{4}(x - \pi)^2 - \frac{\pi^2}{12} \quad (0 \leq x \leq 2\pi), \\
 & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\sin nx}{n^2} = -x \log 2 - \int_0^x \log\left(\sin \frac{t}{2}\right) dt \quad (0 \leq x < 2\pi). \\
 & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a^n}{n!} \cos nx = e^{a \cos x} \cos(a \sin x) - 1, \quad \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{a^n}{n!} \sin nx = e^{a \cos x} \sin(a \sin x). \\
 & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^{n-1} \frac{\cos nx}{n^2 - a^2} = \frac{\pi \cos ax}{2a \sin a\pi} - \frac{1}{2a^2} \quad (-\pi \leq x \leq \pi), \\
 & \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^{n-1} \frac{n \sin nx}{n^2 - a^2} = \frac{\pi \sin ax}{2 \sin a\pi} \quad (-\pi < x < \pi).
 \end{aligned}$$

In the final two formulas, we assume that a is not an integer.

(II) Fourier Transforms (\rightarrow 160 Fourier Transform)

The Fourier transform $\mathcal{F}[f]$ and the inverse Fourier transform $\mathcal{F}^{-1}[g]$ for integrable functions f and g are defined as

$$\mathcal{F}[f(x)] = \mathcal{F}[f](\xi) = (2\pi)^{-n/2} \int_{\mathbb{R}^n} f(x) e^{-ix\xi} dx,$$
$$\mathcal{F}[g(\xi)] = \mathcal{F}[g](x) = (2\pi)^{-n/2} \int_{\mathbb{R}^n} g(\xi) e^{ix\xi} d\xi, \quad x\xi = x_1\xi_1 + x_2\xi_2 + \dots + x_n\xi_n.$$

In some textbooks the factor $(2\pi)^{-n/2}$ is deleted or the symbols i and $-i$ are switched when defining \mathcal{F} and \mathcal{F} . However, conversion of the formulas above to ones due to other definitions is straightforward. These transforms are also defined for some nonintegrable functions, or even more generally for tempered distributions. The Fourier transform \mathcal{F} and the inverse Fourier transform \mathcal{F} defined on the space of tempered distributions $\mathcal{S}' = \mathcal{S}'(\mathbb{R}^n)$ are linear homeomorphic mappings from \mathcal{S}' to itself. Useful formulas of these transforms are given in the table below, where $\alpha = (\alpha_1, \alpha_2, \dots, \alpha_n)$ ($\alpha_j = 0, 1, 2, \dots$), $|\alpha| = \alpha_1 + \alpha_2 + \dots + \alpha_n$, C is Euler's constant, $\lambda \in \mathbb{C}$, and $\mathbb{Z}_+ = \{m \in \mathbb{Z} | m \geq 0\}$.

Case 1. $n = 1$. First we explain the meaning of the symbols appearing in the table:

$$x_+ = \max(x, 0) \quad (\text{the positive part of } x),$$
$$x_- = \max(-x, 0) \quad (\text{the negative part of } x),$$
$$x_+^\lambda \text{ and } x_-^\lambda \text{ are understood in the sense of finite parts } (\rightarrow 125 \text{ Distributions and Hyperfunctions}),$$
$$(x + i\varepsilon)^\lambda = \exp[\lambda \operatorname{Log}(x + i\varepsilon)] \quad (\varepsilon \neq 0; \operatorname{Log} \text{ is the principal value of log})$$
$$= (x^2 + \varepsilon^2)^{\lambda/2} \exp[i\lambda \operatorname{Arg}(x + i\varepsilon)] \quad (-\pi < \operatorname{Arg} z \leq \pi),$$
$$(x \pm i0)^\lambda = \lim_{\varepsilon \downarrow 0} (x \pm i\varepsilon)^\lambda \quad (\text{limit in the sense of distributions}).$$

Then the following formula holds:

$$(x \pm i0)^\lambda = x_+^\lambda + e^{\pm i\lambda\pi} x_-^\lambda$$
$$\operatorname{Pf} x^m = x_+^m + (-1)^m x_-^m \quad (m \in \mathbb{Z}) \quad (\operatorname{Pf} \text{ is the finite part}).$$

In the special case $m = -1$, $\operatorname{Pf} x^{-1}$ coincides with Cauchy's principal value $\text{p.v.} x^{-1}$.

$T \in \mathcal{S}'$	$\mathcal{F}[T] \in \mathcal{S}'$
$\delta(x)$	$\sqrt{2\pi}$
$P(x)$ (polynomial)	$\sqrt{2\pi} P(i d/d\xi) \delta(\xi)$
p.v. $1/x$	$\sqrt{\pi/2} i \operatorname{sgn} \xi$
$\operatorname{Pf} x^{-m}$	$\sqrt{\pi/2} [(-i)^m / (m-1)!] \xi^{m-1} \operatorname{sgn} \xi \quad (m \in \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{Z})$
x_+^λ	$\frac{\Gamma(\lambda+1)}{\sqrt{2\pi}} [e^{-i\pi(\lambda+1)/2} \xi_+^{-\lambda-1} + e^{i\pi(\lambda+1)/2} \xi_-^{-\lambda-1}]$ $\left[\frac{\Gamma(\lambda+1)}{\sqrt{2\pi}} e^{-i\pi(\lambda+1)/2} (\xi + i0)^{-\lambda-1} \right] \quad (\lambda \notin \mathbb{Z})$
x_+^m	$(i^m / \sqrt{2\pi}) [\pi \delta^{(m)} - i(-1)^m m! \operatorname{Pf} \xi^{-m-1}] \quad (m \in \mathbb{Z}_+)$
x_+^{-m}	$\frac{(-i)^{m-1}}{\sqrt{2\pi(m-1)!}} \left[\left(\sum_{j=1}^{m-1} \frac{1}{j} - C \right) \xi^{m-1} - \frac{i\pi}{2} \xi^{m-1} \operatorname{sgn} \xi - \xi^{m-1} \log|\xi| \right] \quad (m \in \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{Z})$
x_-^λ	$\frac{\Gamma(\lambda+1)}{\sqrt{2\pi}} [e^{i\pi(\lambda+1)/2} \xi_+^{-\lambda-1} + e^{-i\pi(\lambda+1)/2} \xi_-^{-\lambda-1}]$ $\left[\frac{\Gamma(\lambda+1)}{\sqrt{2\pi}} e^{i\pi(\lambda+1)/2} (\xi - i0)^{-\lambda-1} \right] \quad (\lambda \notin \mathbb{Z})$
x_-^m	$\frac{(-i)^m}{\sqrt{2\pi}} [\pi \delta^{(m)} + i(-1)^m m! \operatorname{Pf} \xi^{-m-1}] \quad (m \in \mathbb{Z}_+)$
x_-^{-m}	$\frac{i^{m-1}}{\sqrt{2\pi(m-1)!}} \left[\left(\sum_{j=1}^{m-1} \frac{1}{j} - C \right) \xi^{m-1} + \frac{i\pi}{2} \xi^{m-1} \operatorname{sgn} \xi - \xi^{m-1} \log|\xi| \right] \quad (m \in \mathbb{N}, \mathbb{Z})$
$(x + i0)^\lambda$	$[\sqrt{2\pi} e^{i\pi\lambda/2} / \Gamma(-\lambda)] \xi_+^{-\lambda-1} \quad (\lambda \notin \mathbb{Z}_+)$
$(x - i0)^\lambda$	$[\sqrt{2\pi} e^{-i\pi\lambda/2} / \Gamma(-\lambda)] \xi_-^{-\lambda-1} \quad (\lambda \notin \mathbb{Z}_+)$
$(x \pm i0)^m = x^m$	$\sqrt{2\pi} i^m \delta^{(m)} \quad (m \in \mathbb{Z}_+)$
$x^{-1} \log|x|$	$\sqrt{\pi/2} i \operatorname{sgn} \xi \cdot (C + \log|\xi|)$
$e^{-x^2/\alpha}$	$\sqrt{a/2} e^{-a\xi^2/4} \quad (a > 0)$
$\begin{cases} e^{-ax} & (x > 0) \\ 0 & (x \leq 0) \end{cases}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \frac{1}{a + i\xi} \quad (a > 0)$

$T (\in \mathcal{S}')$	$\mathcal{F}[T] (\in \mathcal{S}')$
$e^{-a|x|}$	$\frac{\sqrt{a + \sqrt{a^2 + \xi^2}}}{\sqrt{a^2 + \xi^2}} \quad (a > 0)$
$\sqrt{|x|}$	$\frac{\sqrt{2}}{\pi} \frac{ab}{\sqrt{\xi^2 + b^2}} K_1(a\sqrt{\xi^2 + b^2}) \quad (a > 0, b > 0)$
$e^{-b\sqrt{x^2 + a^2}}$	$-\frac{\sqrt{2\pi}}{|\xi|} (e^{-a|\xi|} - e^{-b|\xi|}) \quad (a \geq 0, b \geq 0)$
$\log \frac{x^2 + a^2}{x^2 + b^2}$	$-\sqrt{\pi/2} i \operatorname{sgn} a \cdot (e^{-|a||\xi|/\xi}) \quad (a \in \mathbf{R}, a \neq 0)$
$\arctan(x/a)$	$-\frac{i}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \Gamma(v) \cos \frac{v\pi}{2} \left(\frac{1}{|\xi - a|^v} - \frac{1}{|\xi + a|^v} \right) \quad (v \notin \mathbf{Z})$
$\frac{\sin ax}{|x|^{1-v}}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \Gamma(v) \cos \frac{v\pi}{2} \left(\frac{1}{|\xi - a|^v} - \frac{1}{|\xi + a|^v} \right) \quad (v \notin \mathbf{Z})$
$\frac{\cos ax}{|x|^{1-v}}$	$\begin{cases} \sqrt{\pi/2} & (|\xi| < |a|) \\ 0 & (|\xi| > |a|) \end{cases}$
$\frac{\sin ax}{x}$	$\begin{cases} \frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \Gamma((1/2) - v) \left( \frac{|\xi|}{2a} \right)^v J_{-v}(a|\xi|) & (\operatorname{Re} v < 1/2, a > 0) \\ -\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}} \Gamma((1/2) - v) \left( \frac{|\xi|}{2a} \right)^v N_v(a|\xi|) & (-1/2 < \operatorname{Re} v < 1/2, a > 0) \end{cases}$
$\frac{1}{(x^2 + a^2)^{v+(1/2)}}$	$\frac{\sqrt{2}}{\Gamma(v + (1/2))} \left( \frac{|\xi|}{2a} \right)^v K_v(a|\xi|) \quad (\operatorname{Re} v > -1/2, a > 0)$

Case 2. $n > 1$. Let $r = \sqrt{x_1^2 + x_2^2 + \dots + x_n^2}$ and $\rho = \sqrt{\xi_1^2 + \xi_2^2 + \dots + \xi_n^2}$, where $x = (x_i) \in \mathbf{R}^n$ and $\xi = (\xi_i) \in \mathbf{R}^n$. If $f \in L_1(\mathbf{R}^n)$ depends only on r , then $\mathcal{F}[f]$ depends only on ρ and is expressed as

$$\mathcal{F}[f](\rho) = \rho^{-(n-2)/2} \int_0^\infty f(r) r^{n/2} J_{(n-2)/2}(r\rho) dr.$$

The constant C in the table stands for Euler's number.

$T (\in \mathcal{S}')$	$\mathcal{F}[T] (\in \mathcal{S}')$
$\delta(x)$	$(2\pi)^{n/2}$
$P(x)$ (polynomial)	$(2\pi)^{n/2} P(i\partial/\partial \xi) \delta(\xi)$
$\operatorname{Pf} r^\lambda$	$\frac{2^{(n/2)+\lambda} \Gamma((n+\lambda)/2)}{\Gamma(-\lambda/2)} \operatorname{Pf} \rho^{-n-\lambda} \quad (\lambda \notin 2\mathbf{Z}_+, \lambda \neq -n-2\mathbf{Z}_+)$
r^{2m}	$(2\pi)^{n/2} (-\Delta)^m \delta(\xi) \quad (m \in \mathbf{Z}_+)$
$\operatorname{Pf} r^{-n-2m}$	$\frac{(-1)^m \rho^{2m}}{2^{(n/2)+2m} \Gamma((n/2)+m)m!} \left[2 \log \frac{2}{\rho} - C + \sum_{j=1}^m \frac{1}{j} + \frac{\Gamma'((n/2)+m)}{\Gamma((n/2)+m)} \right] \quad (m \in \mathbf{Z}_+)$
$(1+r^2)^\lambda$	$\frac{\rho^{-(n/2)+\lambda} K_{(n/2)+\lambda}(\rho)}{2^{-\lambda-1} \Gamma(-\lambda)} \quad (\lambda \notin \mathbf{Z}_+)$
$(1+r^2)^m$	$(2\pi)^{n/2} (1-\Delta)^m \delta(\xi) \quad (m \in \mathbf{Z}_+)$
$\operatorname{Pf} r^\lambda \log \lambda$	$\frac{2^{(n/2)+\lambda} \Gamma((n+\lambda)/2)}{\Gamma(-\lambda/2)} \operatorname{Pf} \rho^{-n-\lambda} \left[\log \frac{2}{\rho} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{\Gamma'((n+\lambda)/2)}{\Gamma((n+\lambda)/2)} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{\Gamma'(-\lambda/2)}{\Gamma(-\lambda/2)} \right] \quad (\lambda \notin 2\mathbf{Z}_+, \lambda \neq -n-2\mathbf{Z}_+)$
$r^{2m} \log r$	$(-1)^{m-1} 2^{(n/2)+2m-1} m! \Gamma((n/2)+m) \operatorname{Pf} \rho^{-n-2m} + (2\pi)^{n/2} \left[\log 2 - \frac{1}{2} C + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^m \frac{1}{j} + \frac{\Gamma'((n/2)+m)}{\Gamma((n/2)+m)} \right] (-\Delta)^m \delta(\xi) \quad (m \in \mathbf{Z}_+)$
$\operatorname{Pf} r^{-n-2m} \log r$	$\frac{(-1)^m}{2^{(n/2)+2m} \Gamma((n/2)+m)m!} \rho^{2m} \left[\left\{ \log \frac{2}{\rho} - \frac{1}{2} C + \frac{1}{2} \sum_{j=1}^m \frac{1}{j} + \frac{1}{2} \frac{\Gamma'((n/2)+m)}{\Gamma((n/2)+m)} \right\}^2 + \frac{\pi^2}{24} + \frac{1}{4} \sum_{j=1}^m \frac{1}{j^2} - \frac{1}{4} \frac{\Gamma''((n/2)+m)}{\Gamma((n/2)+m)} + \frac{\Gamma'((n/2)+m)^2}{\Gamma((n/2)+m)^2} \right] \quad (m \in \mathbf{Z}_+)$
e^{-ar}	$\frac{\sqrt{2^n}}{\sqrt{\pi}} \Gamma\left(\frac{n+1}{2}\right) \frac{a}{(a^2 + \rho^2)^{(n+1)/2}} \quad (a > 0)$

The Fourier transform mentioned above is a transformation in the family of complex-valued functions or distributions. Similar transformations in the family of real-valued functions are frequently used in applications:

Fourier cosine transform $f_c(u) = \int_0^\infty F(t) \cos ut \, dt.$

Inverse transform $\frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^\infty f_c(u) \cos ut \, du = \begin{cases} F(t) & (t > 0), \\ F(-t) & (t < 0). \end{cases}$

Fourier sine transform $f_s(u) = \int_0^\infty F(t) \sin ut \, dt.$

Inverse transform $\frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^\infty f_s(u) \sin ut \, du = \begin{cases} F(t) & (t > 0), \\ -F(-t) & (t < 0). \end{cases}$

The Fourier transform can be expressed in terms of these transforms. For example (in \mathbb{R}^1),

$$\mathcal{F}[f](u) = \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_0^\infty [f(t) + f(-t)] \cos ut \, dt - \frac{i}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_0^\infty [f(t) - f(-t)] \sin ut \, dt.$$

$F(t)$	$f_c(u)$	$f_s(u)$
$\begin{cases} 1 & (0 < t < a) \\ 0 & (a < t) \end{cases}$	$\frac{\sin au}{u}$	$\frac{1 - \cos au}{u}$
t^{-1}	(diverges)	$(\pi/2) \operatorname{sgn} u$
$t^{\alpha-1} \quad (0 < \alpha < 1)$	$\Gamma(\alpha) \cos(\pi\alpha/2) u^{-\alpha}$	$\Gamma(\alpha) \sin(\pi\alpha/2) u^{-\alpha}$
$1/(a^2 + t^2)$	$\pi e^{-a|u|}/2a$	$[e^{-au} \operatorname{Ei}(au) - e^{au} \operatorname{Ei}(-au)]/a^{(2)}$
e^{-at}	$a/(a^2 + u^2)$	$u/(a^2 + u^2)$
$e^{-\lambda t^2} \quad (\operatorname{Re} \lambda > 0)$	$\sqrt{\pi/4\lambda} e^{-u^2/4\lambda}$	$e^{-u^2/4\lambda} \varphi(u/2\sqrt{\lambda})/\sqrt{\lambda} \quad (3)$
$e^{-\lambda t^2}$		$\sqrt{\pi/4\lambda} (u/4\lambda) e^{-u^2/4\lambda}$
$\frac{\sin at}{t} \quad (a > 0)$	$\begin{cases} \pi/2 & (0 < u < a) \\ 0 & (a < u) \end{cases}$	$\frac{1}{2} \log \left| \frac{a+u}{a-u} \right|$
$\tanh(\pi t/2)$		$\operatorname{cosech} u$
$\operatorname{sech}(\pi t/2)$	$\operatorname{sech} u$	
$J_\nu(t) \quad (\operatorname{Re} \nu > -1)$	$\begin{cases} \frac{\cos(\nu \arcsin u)}{\sqrt{1-u^2}} \\ -\frac{(u - \sqrt{u^2-1})^\nu}{\sqrt{u^2-1}} \sin \frac{\nu\pi}{2} \end{cases}$	$\begin{cases} \frac{\sin(\nu \arcsin u)}{\sqrt{1-u^2}} & (0 < u < 1) \\ \frac{(u - \sqrt{u^2-1})^\nu}{\sqrt{u^2-1}} \cos \frac{\nu\pi}{2} & (1 < u) \end{cases}$
$J_0(at)$	$\begin{cases} 1/\sqrt{a^2 - u^2} \\ 0 \end{cases}$	$\begin{cases} 0 & (0 \leq u < a) \\ 1/\sqrt{u^2 - a^2} & (a < u) \end{cases}$
$N_0(t)$	$\begin{cases} 0 \\ -\frac{1}{\sqrt{u^2-1}} \end{cases}$	$\begin{cases} \frac{2}{\pi} \frac{\arcsin u}{\sqrt{1-u^2}} & (0 < u < 1) \\ \frac{2}{\pi} \frac{\log(u - \sqrt{u^2-1})}{\sqrt{u^2-1}} & (1 < u) \end{cases}$
$K_0(t)$	$\pi/2 \sqrt{1+u^2}$	$(\operatorname{arc sinh} u)/\sqrt{1+u^2}$

Notes

(2) Ei is the exponential integral function (\rightarrow Table 19.II.3, this Appendix).

(3) We put $\varphi(x) = \int_0^x e^{t^2} dt$.

12. Laplace Transforms and Operational Calculus

(I) Laplace Transforms (\rightarrow 240 Laplace Transform)

Laplace transform $V(p) = \int_0^\infty e^{-pt} F(t) dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} p > 0).$

Inverse transform (Bromwich integral) $\frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{c-i\infty}^{c+i\infty} e^{pt} V(p) dp = \begin{cases} F(t) & (t > 0), \\ 0 & (t < 0). \end{cases}$

$F(t)$	$V(p)$	$F(t)$	$V(p)$
1	$1/p$	$J_\nu(t) \quad (\operatorname{Re} \nu > -1)$	$\frac{(\sqrt{1+p^2}-p)^\nu}{\sqrt{1+p^2}}$
$1(t-a)=\begin{cases} 0 & (0 \leq t < a) \\ 1 & (a \leq t) \end{cases}$	e^{-ap}/p	$\frac{1}{t}J_\nu(at) \quad (\operatorname{Re} \nu > 0)$	$\frac{(\sqrt{a^2+p^2}-p)^\nu}{\nu a^\nu}$
$[x/a]$ (integral part)	$1/p(e^{ap}-1)$		
$t^{\alpha-1} \quad (\operatorname{Re} \alpha > 0)$	$\Gamma(\alpha)/p^\alpha$	$t^\nu J_\nu(at) \left(\operatorname{Re} \nu > -\frac{1}{2} \right)$	$\frac{(2a)^\nu \Gamma[\nu+(1/2)]}{\sqrt{\pi} (p^2+a^2)^{\nu+(1/2)}}$
e^{-at}	$1/(p+a)$		
$e^{-at}t^{\alpha-1} \quad (\operatorname{Re} \alpha > 0, \ a > 0)$	$(p+a)^{-\alpha}\Gamma(\alpha)$	$t^{\nu/2}J_\nu(x\sqrt{t}) \quad (\operatorname{Re} \nu > -1)$	$\frac{x^\nu}{2^\nu p^{\nu+1}}e^{-x^2/4p}$
$e^{-at}F(t) \ (a > 0)$	$V(p+a)$		
$(1-e^{-t})/t$	$\log(1+p^{-1})$	$J_0(t)$	$(1+p^2)^{-1/2}$
$(\pi t)^{-1/2}e^{-x^2/4t}$	$p^{-1/2}e^{-x\sqrt{p}} \ (x > 0)$	$J_0(x\sqrt{t})$	$e^{-x^2/4p}/p$
$\log t$	$-(\log p + C)/p^{(1)}$	$N_0(t)$	$\frac{2}{\pi} \frac{\log(\sqrt{1+p^2}-p)}{\sqrt{1+p^2}}$
$\sin at$	$a/(p^2+a^2)$	$L_n(t)^{(2)}$	$\frac{1}{p} \left(\frac{p-1}{p} \right)^n$
$\cos at$	$p/(p^2+a^2)$		
$\sin(x\sqrt{t})$	$\frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{2} \frac{x}{p^{3/2}} e^{-x^2/4p}$	$t^\alpha L_n^{(\alpha)}(t)$	$\frac{\Gamma(\alpha+n+1)}{n!} \frac{1}{p^{\alpha+1}} \left(\frac{p-1}{p} \right)^n$
$t^{-1/2} \cos(x\sqrt{t})$	$\sqrt{\pi/p} e^{-x^2/4p}$	$H_{2n+1}(\sqrt{t})^{(3)}$	$\sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}} \frac{(2n+1)!!}{p^{n+(3/2)}} \frac{(1-p)^n}{p^{n+(3/2)}}^{(4)}$
$t^{-1} \sin xt$	$\arctan(x/p)$		
$x^{-1}(1-\cos ax)$	$\frac{1}{2} \log[1+(a^2/p^2)]$	$\frac{H_{2n}(\sqrt{t})}{\sqrt{t}}$	$\sqrt{\pi} (2n-1)!! \frac{(1-p)^n}{p^{n+(1/2)}}$
$\sinh at$	$a/(p^2-a^2)$		
$\cosh at$	$p/(p^2-a^2)$		

- Notes
- (1) C is Euler's constant.
 - (2) $L_n(t)$ is a Laguerre polynomial.
 - (3) $H_n(t)$ is a Hermite polynomial.
 - (4) $(2n+1)!! = (2n+1)(2n-1)(2n-3)\dots 5 \cdot 3 \cdot 1$.

(II) Operational Calculus (→ 306 Operational Calculus)

Heaviside function (unit function) $1(t) = \begin{cases} 0 & (t < 0) \\ 1 & (t \geq 0). \end{cases}$

Dirac delta function (unit impulse function) $\delta(t) = \lim_{\epsilon \rightarrow 0} \frac{1}{2\epsilon} [1(t+\epsilon) - 1(t-\epsilon)].$

When an operator $\Omega(p)$ operates on $1(t)$ and the result is $A(t)$ we write $\Omega(p)1(t) = A(t)$.
In the following table (i) of general formulas, we assume the relations $\Omega_i(p)1(t) = A_i(t)$ ($i = 1, 2$).

Carson's integral $\Omega(p) = p \int_0^\infty e^{-pt} A(t) dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} p > 0).$

Laplace transform $V(p) = \frac{\Omega(p)}{p} = \int_0^\infty e^{-pt} A(t) dt.$

(i) General Formulas		(ii) Examples	
$\Omega(p)$	$A(t)$	$\Omega(p)=pV(p)$	$A(t)$
$\Omega_1(p)+\Omega_2(p)$	$A_1(t)+A_2(t)$	p	$\delta(t)$
$a\Omega_1(p)$	$aA_1(t)$	$1/p^n \ (n=0,1,2,\dots)$	$(t^n/n!)\mathbf{1}(t)$
$p\Omega_1(p)$	$A_1(0)\delta(t)+A_1'(t)$	$p/(p+a)$	$(e^{-at})\mathbf{1}(t)$
		$p^2/(p^2+a^2)$	$(\cos at)\mathbf{1}(t)$
$\frac{1}{p}\Omega_1(p)$	$\int_0^t A_1(\tau) d\tau$	$ap/(p^2+a^2)$	$(\sin at)\mathbf{1}(t)$
$\Omega_1(ap)$	$A_1(t/a)$		
$[p/(p+a)]\Omega_1(p+a)$	$e^{-at}A_1(t) \ (\operatorname{Re} a \geq 0)$	$a_0+\frac{a_1}{p}+\frac{a_2}{p^2}+\dots$	$\left(a_0+a_1\frac{t}{1!}+a_2\frac{t^2}{2!}+\dots\right)\mathbf{1}(t)$
$\frac{1}{p}\Omega_1(p)\Omega_2(p)$	$\int_0^t A_1(\tau)A_2(t-\tau) d\tau$ $=\int_0^t A_1(t-\tau)A_2(\tau) d\tau$	$\sum_{k=1}^n \frac{B_k}{p-p_k}$	$\sum_{k=1}^n \frac{B_k}{p_k} (e^{p_k t}-1)\mathbf{1}(t)$ $=\Omega(0)\mathbf{1}(t)+\sum_{k=1}^n \frac{B_k}{p_k} e^{p_k t}$

13. Conformal Mappings (→ 77 Conformal Mappings)

Original Domain	Image Domain	Mapping Function
$|z|<1$ (unit disk)	$|w|<1$	$w=\varepsilon \frac{z-z_0}{1-\bar{z}_0 z}, \quad |z_0|<1, \quad |\varepsilon|=1 \quad (\text{general form})$
$\operatorname{Im} z>0$ (upper half-plane)	$|w|<1$	$w=\varepsilon \frac{z-z_0}{z-\bar{z}_0}, \quad \operatorname{Im} z_0>0, \quad |\varepsilon|=1 \quad (\text{general form})$
$\operatorname{Im} z>0$ (upper half-plane)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0$	$w=\frac{az+b}{cz+d}, \quad a,b,c,d \text{ are real; } ad-bc>0$ (general form)
$0<\arg z<\alpha$ (angular domain)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0$	$w=z^{\pi/\alpha}$
$|z|<1, \operatorname{Im} z>0$ (upper semidisk)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0$	$w=\left(\frac{1+z}{1-z}\right)^2$
$0<\arg z<\alpha,$ $|z|<1$ (fan shape)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0$	$w=\left(\frac{1+z^{\pi/\alpha}}{1-z^{\pi/\alpha}}\right)^2$
$\alpha<\arg \frac{z-p}{z-q}<\beta$ (circular triangle)	$0<\arg w<\gamma$	$w=\left(e^{-i\alpha}\frac{z-p}{z-q}\right)^{\frac{\gamma}{\beta-\alpha}}$
$0<\operatorname{Im} z<\eta$ (parallel strip)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0$	$w=e^{\pi z/\eta}$
$\operatorname{Re} z<0,$ $0<\operatorname{Im} z<\eta$ (semiparallel strip)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0, \quad |w|<1$	$w=e^{\pi z/\eta}$
$y^2>4c^2(x+c^2),$ $z=x+iy, \quad c>0$ (exterior of a parabola)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0$	$w=\sqrt{z}-ic$
$y^2<4c^2(x+c^2),$ $z=x+iy, \quad c>0$ (interior of a parabola)	$\operatorname{Im} w>0$	$w=i \sec \frac{\pi \sqrt{z}}{2ic}$

Original Domain	Image Domain	Mapping Function
$\frac{x^2}{[c + (1/c)]^2} + \frac{y^2}{[c - (1/c)]^2} > 1,$ $z = x + iy, \quad c > 1$ (exterior of an ellipse)	$|w| > c$	$w = \frac{z + \sqrt{z^2 - 4}}{2}, \quad z = w + \frac{1}{w}$
$\frac{x^2}{\cos^2 \alpha} - \frac{y^2}{\sin^2 \alpha} < 4,$ $z = x + iy,$ $0 < \alpha < \pi/2$ (exterior of a hyperbola)	$\operatorname{Im} w > 0$	$w = \left(e^{-i\alpha} \frac{z + \sqrt{z^2 - 4}}{2} \right)^{\pi(\pi - 2\alpha)}$
$\frac{x^2}{\cos^2 \alpha} - \frac{y^2}{\sin^2 \alpha} > 4,$ $x > 0,$ $z = x + iy,$ $0 < \alpha < \pi/2$ (right-hand side interior of a hyperbola)	$\operatorname{Im} w > 0$	$w = \frac{1}{2i} \left[\left(\frac{z + \sqrt{z^2 - 4}}{2} \right)^{\frac{\pi}{2\alpha}} + \left(\frac{z - \sqrt{z^2 - 4}}{2} \right)^{\frac{\pi}{2\alpha}} \right]$
$|z| < 1$	Slit domain with boundary $|\operatorname{Re} w| \leq 2, \operatorname{Im} w = 0$	$w = z + \frac{1}{z}$
$|z| < 1$	Slit domain with boundary $|w| \geq 1/4, \arg w = \lambda$	$w = \frac{z}{(1 + e^{-i\lambda} z)^2}$
$|z| < 1$	Slit domain with boundary $|w| \geq 1/4^{1/p}$ $\arg w = \lambda + (2j\pi/p),$ $j = 0, \dots, p-1$	$w = \frac{z}{(1 + e^{-i\lambda} z^p)^{2/p}}$
$-\pi/2 < \operatorname{Re} z < \pi/2$ (parallel strip)	Slit domain with boundary $|\operatorname{Re} w| \geq 1, \operatorname{Im} w = 0$	$w = \sin z$
$-\pi < \operatorname{Im} z < \pi$ (parallel strip)	Slit domain with boundary $\operatorname{Re} w \leq -1, \operatorname{Im} w = \pm \pi$	$w = z + e^z$
Arbitrary circle or half plane	Interior of an n -gon	$w = c \int^z \prod_{j=1}^n (t - z_j)^{\alpha_j - 1} dt + c' \quad (c \neq 0,$ <p>c' are constants), where the inverse image of the vertex with the inner angle $\alpha_j \pi$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$) is $z = z_j$. When $z_n = \infty$, we omit the factor $(t - z_n)^{\alpha_n - 1}$ (Schwarz-Christoffel transformation)</p>
Arbitrary circle or half-plane	Exterior of an n -gon	$w = c \int^z (t - p)^{-2} \prod_{j=1}^n (t - z_j)^{1 - \alpha_j} dt + c'$ <p>($c \neq 0$, c' are constants), where the inverse image of the vertex with the inner angle $\alpha_j \pi$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$) is $z = z_j$, and the inverse image of ∞ is $z = p$</p>
$\operatorname{Im} z > 0$	Interior of an equilateral triangle	$w = \int_0^z \frac{1}{\sqrt[3]{t^2(1-t)^2}} dt$
$\operatorname{Im} z > 0$	Interior of an isosceles right triangle	$w = \int_0^z \frac{1}{\sqrt[5]{t^2(1-t)^3}} dt$

Original Domain	Image Domain	Mapping Function
$\text{Im } z > 0$	Interior of a right triangle with one angle $\pi/6$	$w = \int_0^z \frac{1}{\sqrt[6]{t^3(1-t)^4}} dt$
$|z| < 1$	Interior of a regular n -gon	$w = \int_0^z (1-t^n)^{-2/n} dt$
$0 < \text{Re } z < \omega_1,$ $0 < \text{Im } z < \omega_3/i$ (rectangle)	$\text{Im } w > 0$	$w = \wp(z|2\omega_1, 2\omega_3)$ (\wp is the Weierstrass \wp -function)
$-K < \text{Re } z < K,$ $0 < \text{Im } z < K'$ (rectangle) ⁽¹⁾	$\text{Im } w > 0$	$w = \text{sn}(z, k),$ $z = \int_0^w \frac{1}{\sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k^2t^2)}} dt$ (sn is Jacobi's sn function)
$v < |z| < 1$ $\text{Im } z < 0$ (upper half-ring domain)	$\log q < \text{Re } w < 0,$ $0 < \text{Im } w < \pi$ (rectangle)	$w = \log z$
$|z| < 1$	$\frac{u^2}{A^2} + \frac{v^2}{B^2} < 1,$ $w = u + v, \quad A > B > 0;$ (interior of an ellipse)	$w = \sqrt{A^2 - B^2} \sin \left(\frac{\pi}{2K} \int_0^{2z/k(1+z^2)} \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k^2t^2)}} \right),$ $\frac{1}{\pi} \log \frac{A+B}{A-B} = \frac{K'}{K}$
$\text{Im } z > 0$	interior of a circular polygon	$\{w; z\} \equiv \frac{w'''}{w'} - \frac{3}{2} \left(\frac{w''}{w'} \right)^2 = R(z)$ ($R(z)$ is a rational function)
$|z| < 1$	Interior of an equilateral circular triangle with inner angle $\pi/k, 1 < k < \infty$	$z = \int_0^1 t^{-\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2k}} (1-t)^{-\frac{1}{6} + \frac{1}{2k}} (1-z^3t)^{-\frac{5}{6} + \frac{1}{2k}} dt$ $w = \frac{\int_0^1 t^{-\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2k}} (1-t)^{-\frac{5}{6} + \frac{1}{2k}} (1-z^3t)^{-\frac{1}{6} + \frac{1}{2k}} dt}{\int_0^1 t^{-\frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{2k}} (1-t)^{-\frac{5}{6} + \frac{1}{2k}} (1-z^3t)^{-\frac{1}{6} + \frac{1}{2k}} dt}$ The vertices are the images of $z = 1, e^{2\pi i/3},$ and $e^{4\pi i/3},$ and $\left[\frac{dw}{dz} \right]_{z=0} = \frac{\Gamma[(5/6) + (1/2k)]\Gamma(2/3)}{\Gamma[(1/6) + (1/2k)]\Gamma(4/3)}$
$\text{Im } z > 0$	Interior of a circular triangle with inner angles $\pi\alpha, \pi\beta, \pi\gamma,$ $\alpha + \beta + \gamma < 1$ ⁽²⁾	$w = \frac{\int_0^1 t^{-\frac{1+\alpha+\beta+\gamma}{2}} (1-t)^{-\frac{1+\alpha-\beta-\gamma}{2}} (1-zt)^{-\frac{1-\alpha+\beta-\gamma}{2}} dt}{\int_0^1 t^{-\frac{1+\alpha+\beta+\gamma}{2}} (1-t)^{-\frac{1-\alpha-\beta+\gamma}{2}} (1-t+zt)^{-\frac{1-\alpha+\beta-\gamma}{2}} dt}$
$|\tau| > 1,$ $-1/2 < \text{Re } \tau < 0$	$\text{Im } J > 0$	$J = J(\tau), \tau = \omega_3/\omega_1, J = g_2^3/(g_2^3 - 27g_3^2)$ (the absolute invariant of the elliptic modular function); $J(e^{2\pi i/3}) = 0, J(i) = 1, J(\infty) = \infty$ $\lambda = \lambda(\tau), \tau = \omega_3/\omega_1, \lambda = (e_2 - e_3)/(e_1 - e_3);$
$|\tau + 1/2| < 1/2,$ $-1 < \text{Re } \tau < 0$	$\text{Im } \lambda < 0$	$J(\tau) \equiv \frac{4}{27} \frac{[\lambda(\tau)^2 - \lambda(\tau) + 1]^2}{\lambda(\tau)^2 [\lambda(\tau) - 1]^2},$ $\lambda(-1) = \infty, \lambda(0) = 1, \lambda(\infty) = 0$

Notes

(1) K, K', k' are the usual notations in the in the theory of elliptic integrals:

$$K \equiv \int_0^1 \frac{1}{\sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k^2t^2)}} dt, \quad K' = \int_0^1 \frac{1}{\sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k'^2t^2)}} dt, \quad k^2 + k'^2 = 1.$$

(2) When $\alpha + \beta + \gamma = 1$, the circular triangle is mapped into the ordinary linear triangle by a suitable linear transformation, and we can apply the Schwarz-Christoffel transformation. When $\alpha + \beta + \gamma > 1$, we have a similar mapping function replacing the integral representations of hypergeometric functions in the formula by the corresponding integral representations of the hypergeometric functions converging at α, β , and γ .

14. Ordinary Differential Equations

(I) Solution by Quadrature

a, b, c, \dots are integral constants.

(1) Solution of the First-Order Differential Equations (\rightarrow 313 Ordinary Differential Equations).

(i) Separated type $dy/dx = X(x)Y(y)$. The general solution is

$$\int^y \frac{dy}{Y(y)} = \int^x X(x) dx + c.$$

(ii) Homogeneous ordinary differential equation $dy/dx = f(y/x)$. Putting $y = ux$, we have $du/dx = [f(u) - u]/x$, and the equation reduces to type (i). The general solution is

$$x = c \exp \left[\int^u \frac{du}{f(u) - u} \right] \quad \left(u = \frac{y}{x} \right).$$

(iii) Linear ordinary differential equation of the first order. $dy/dx + p(x)y + q(x) = 0$. The general solution is

$$y = \left[c - \int q(x)P(x) dx \right] / P(x),$$

where

$$P(x) \equiv \exp \left[\int p(x) dx \right].$$

(iv) Bernoulli's differential equation $dy/dx + p(x)y + q(x)y^\alpha = 0$ ($\alpha \neq 0, 1$). Putting $z = y^{1-\alpha}$, the equation is transformed into

$$dz/dx + (1-\alpha)p(x)z + (1-\alpha)q(x) = 0,$$

which reduces to (iii).

(v) Riccati's differential equation $dy/dx + ay^2 = bx^m$. If $m = -2, 4k/(1-2k)$ (k an integer), this is solved by quadrature. In general, it is reduced to Bessel's differential equation by $ay = u'/u$.

(vi) Generalized Riccati differential equation $dy/dx + p(x)y^2 + q(x)y + r(x) = 0$. If we know one, two, or three special solutions $y = y_i(x)$, the general solution is represented as follows. When $y_1(x)$ is one known special solution,

$$y = y_1(x) + P(x) / \left[\int p(x)P(x) dx + c \right],$$

where

$$P(x) \equiv \exp \left[- \int \{ q(x) + 2p(x)y_1(x) \} dx \right].$$

When $y_1(x), y_2(x)$ are the known solutions,

$$\frac{y - y_1(x)}{y - y_2(x)} = c \exp \left[\int p(x) \{ y_2(x) - y_1(x) \} dx \right].$$

When $y_1(x), y_2(x), y_3(x)$ are known solutions,

$$\frac{y - y_1(x)}{y - y_2(x)} = c \frac{y_3(x) - y_1(x)}{y_3(x) - y_2(x)}.$$

(vii) Exact differential equation $P(x,y)dx + Q(x,y)dy = 0$. If the left-hand side is an exact differential form, the condition is $\partial P/\partial y = \partial Q/\partial x$. The general solution is

$$\int P dx + \int \left(Q - \frac{\partial}{\partial y} \int P dx \right) dy = c.$$

(viii) Integrating factors. A function $M(x,y)$ is called an integrating factor of a differential equation $P(x,y)dx + Q(x,y)dy = 0$, if $M(x,y)[P(x,y)dx + Q(x,y)dy]$ is an exact differential form $d\varphi(x,y)$. If we know an integrating factor, the general solution is given by $\varphi(x,y) = c$. If we know two independent integrating factors M and N , the general solution is given by $M/N = c$.

(ix) Clairaut's differential equation $y = xp + f(p)$ ($p = dy/dx$). The general solution is the family of straight lines $y = cx + f(c)$, and the singular solution is the envelope of this family, which is given by eliminating p from the original equation and $x + f'(p) = 0$.

(x) Lagrange's differential equation $y = x\varphi(p) + \psi(p)$ ($p \equiv dy/dx$). Differentiation with respect to x reduces the equation to a linear differential equation $[\varphi(p) - p](dx/dp) + \varphi'(p)x + \psi'(p) = 0$

with respect to x, p (see (iii)). The general solution of the original equation is given by eliminating p from the original equation and the solution of the latter linear equation. The parameter p may represent the solution. If the equation $p = \varphi(p)$ has a solution $p = p_0$, we have a solution $y = p_0x + \psi(p_0)$ (straight line). This solution is sometimes the singular solution.

(xi) Singular solutions. The singular solution of $f(x, y, p) = 0$ is included in the equation resulting from eliminating p from $f = 0$ and $\partial f / \partial p = 0$, though the eliminant may contain various curves that are not the singular solutions.

(xii) System of differential equations.

$$\text{eq. (1)} \quad dx : dy : dz = P : Q : R.$$

A function $M(x, y, z)$ is called a Jacobi's last multiplier for eq. (1) if M is a solution of a partial differential equation $(\partial MP / \partial x) + (\partial MQ / \partial y) + (\partial MR / \partial z) = 0$. If we know two independent last multipliers M and N , then $M/N = c$ is a solution of eq. (1). If we know a last multiplier M and a solution $f = a$ of eq. (1), we may find another solution of (1) as follows: solving $f = a$ with respect to z and inserting the solution into eq. (1), we see that $M(Qdx - Pdy)/f_z$ is an exact differential form $dG(x, y, a)$ in three variables x, y , and a . Then $G(x, y, f(x, y, z)) = b$ is another solution of eq. (1).

(2) Solutions of Higher-Order Ordinary Differential Equations. The following (i)–(iv) are several examples of depression.

(i) $f(x, y^{(k)}, y^{(k+1)}, \dots, y^{(n)}) = 0$ ($0 < k \leq n$). Set $y^{(k)} = z$; the equation reduces to one of the $(n - k)$ th order in z .

(ii) $f(y, y', y'', \dots, y^{(n)}) = 0$. This is reduced to $(n - 1)$ st order if we consider $y' = p$ as a variable dependent on y .

(iii) $y'' = f(y)$. The general solution is given by

$$x = a \pm \int \left[2 \int f(y) dy + b \right]^{-1/2} dy.$$

We have a similar formula for $y^{(n)} = f(y^{(n-2)})$.

(iv) Homogeneous ordinary differential equation of higher order. If the left-hand side of $F(x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)}) = 0$ satisfies the homogeneity relation $F(x, \rho y, \rho y', \dots, \rho y^{(n)}) = \rho^\alpha F(x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)})$, the equation is reduced to one of the $(n - 1)$ st order in u by $u = y'/y$.

If F satisfies $F(\rho x, \rho^t y, \rho^{t-1} y', \dots, \rho^{t-n} y^{(n)}) = \rho^\alpha F(x, y, y', \dots, y^{(n)})$, then $u = y/x^t$, $t = \log x$ reduces the equation to one of type (ii) not containing t .

(v) Euler's linear ordinary differential equation.

$$p_n(x)x^n y^{(n)} + p_{n-1}(x)x^{n-1} y^{(n-1)} + \dots + p_1(x)xy' + p_0(x)y = q(x)$$

is reduced to a linear equation by $t = \log x$.

(vi) Linear ordinary differential equations of higher order (exact equations). A necessary and sufficient condition that $L[y] \equiv \sum_{j=0}^n p_j(x)y^{(j)} = X(x)$ is an exact differential form is $\sum_{j=0}^n (-1)^j p_j^{(j)} = 0$, and then the first integral of the equation is given by

$$\sum_{j=0}^{n-1} \sum_{k=0}^{n-j-1} (-1)^k p_{k+j+1}^{(k)} y^{(j)} = \int X(x) dx + c.$$

(vii) Linear ordinary differential equation of higher order (depression).

$$L[y] \equiv \sum_{j=0}^n p_j(x)y^{(j)} = X(x).$$

If we know mutually independent special solutions $y_1(x), \dots, y_m(x)$ for the homogeneous linear ordinary differential equation $L[y] = 0$, the equation is reduced to the $(n - m)$ th linear ordinary differential equation with respect to z by a transformation $z = A(y)$, where $A(y) = 0$ is the m th linear ordinary differential equation with solutions $y_1(x), \dots, y_m(x)$. For example, if $m = 1$, the equation is reduced to the $(n - 1)$ st linear ordinary differential equation with respect to z by the transformation

$$y(x) = y_1(x) \int z(x) dx.$$

Also, if $n = m = 2$, the general solution is

$$y = c_1 y_1 + c_2 y_2 - y_1 \int T y_2 dx + y_2 \int T y_1 dx,$$

where $T(x) \equiv X(x)/[y_1(x)y_2'(x) - y_2(x)y_1'(x)]$. The denominator of the last expression is the Wronskian of y_1 and y_2 .

(viii) Regular singularity. For a linear ordinary differential equation of higher order,

$$\text{eq. (1)} \quad x^n y^{(n)} + x^{n-1} p_1(x) y^{(n-1)} + \dots + p_n(x) y = 0,$$

the point $x=0$ is its regular singularity if $p_1(x), \dots, p_n(x)$ are analytic at $x=0$.

We put $p_0=1$ and

$$\sum_{\nu=0}^{\infty} f_{\nu}(\rho) x^{\nu} \equiv \sum_{j=0}^n p_{n-j}(x) \rho(\rho-1) \dots (\rho-j+1).$$

If ρ is a root of the characteristic equation $f_0(\rho)=0$ and $\rho+1, \rho+2, \dots$ are not roots, we can determine the coefficients c_{ν} uniquely from

$$\text{eq. (2)} \quad \sum_{\nu=0}^m c_{\nu} f_{m-\nu}(\rho+\nu) = 0 \quad (m=1, 2, \dots),$$

starting from a fixed value $c_0 (\neq 0)$, and the series $y = x^{\rho} \sum_{\nu=0}^{\infty} c_{\nu} x^{\nu}$ converges and represents a solution of eq. (1). If the differences of all pairs of roots of the determining equation are not integers, we have n linearly independent solutions of eq. (1) applying the process for each characteristic root.

If there are roots whose differences are integers (including multiple roots), we denote such a system of roots by ρ_1, \dots, ρ_l . We arrange them in increasing order, and denote the multiplicities of the roots by e_1, \dots, e_l , respectively. Put $q_k = \rho_k - \rho_1$ ($k=1, 2, \dots, l$; $0 = q_1 < q_2 < \dots < q_l$). Take $N \geq q_l$ and a constant $c (\neq 0)$. Let λ be a parameter, and starting from $c_0 = c_0(\lambda) \equiv c \prod_{k=1}^N f_0(\lambda + k)$, we determine $c_{\nu} = c_{\nu}(\lambda)$ uniquely by the relation (2). Putting

$$m_k \equiv e_k + e_{k+1} + \dots + e_l \quad (k=1, \dots, l) \quad \text{for } h \text{ in } m_{k+1} \leq h \leq m_k - 1,$$

the series

$$\text{eq. (3)} \quad y = \left[\frac{\partial}{\partial \lambda} x^{\lambda} \sum_{\nu=0}^{\infty} c_{\nu}(\lambda) x^{\nu} \right]_{\lambda=\rho_k} = x^{\rho_k} \sum_{\nu=0}^{\infty} x^{\nu} \left[\sum_{j=0}^h \binom{h}{j} c_{\nu}^{(j)}(\rho_k) (\log x)^{h-j} \right]$$

converges and gives e_k independent solutions of eq. (1). Hence for $k=1, \dots, l$, we may have $\sum_{k=1}^l e_k = m_1$ mutually independent solutions of (1). Applying this process to every characteristic root, we have finally n independent solutions of (1) (Frobenius method).

In the practical computation of the solution, since it is known to have the expression (3), we often determine its coefficients successively by the method of undetermined coefficients.

(3) Solution of Linear Ordinary Differential Equations with Constant Coefficient (\rightarrow 252 Linear Ordinary Differential Equations). Let α_i, α_{jk} be constants. We consider the following linear ordinary differential equation of higher order (eq. (1)) and system of linear ordinary differential equations (eq. (2)).

$$\text{eq. (1)} \quad \sum_{i=0}^n \alpha_i y^{(i)} = X(x).$$

$$\text{eq. (2)} \quad y_j' = \sum_{k=1}^n \alpha_{jk} y_k + X_j(x) \quad (j=1, \dots, n).$$

(i) The general solution of the homogeneous equation (cofactor) is given by the following formulas:

$$\text{for eq. (1)} \quad y = x^j \exp \lambda_k x \quad (j=0, 1, \dots, e_k - 1; k=1, \dots, m),$$

$$\text{for eq. (2)} \quad y_j(x) = \sum_{k=1}^m p_{jk}(x) \exp \lambda_k x \quad (j=1, \dots, n),$$

where $\lambda_1, \dots, \lambda_m$ are the roots of the characteristic equation of eq. (1) or eq. (2) given by

$$\text{eq. (1')} \quad \sum_{i=0}^n \alpha_i \lambda^i = 0,$$

$$\text{eq. (2')} \quad \det(\alpha_{jk} - \lambda \delta_{jk}) = 0,$$

respectively. We denote the multiplicities of the roots by e_1, \dots, e_m ($e_1 + \dots + e_m = n$); $p_{jk}(x)$ is a polynomial of degree at most $e_k - 1$ containing e_k arbitrary constants.

If all the coefficients in the original equation are real, and the root $\lambda_k = \mu_k + i\nu_k$ is imaginary, then $\bar{\lambda}_k = \mu_k - i\nu_k$ is also a root with the same multiplicity. Then we may replace $\exp \lambda_k x$ and $\exp \bar{\lambda}_k x$ by $\exp \mu_k x \cos \nu_k x$ and $\exp \mu_k x \sin \nu_k x$, and in this way we can represent the solution using real functions.

(ii) Inhomogeneous equation. The solution of an inhomogeneous linear ordinary differential equation is given by the method of variation of parameters or by the method described in Section (2)(vii).

We explain the method of variation of parameters for eq. (2). First we use (i) to find a fundamental system of n independent solutions $y_j = \varphi_{jk}(x)$ ($k = 1, \dots, n$) by (i). Inserting $y_j = \sum_{k=1}^n c_k(x) \varphi_{jk}(x)$ into eq. (2), we have a system of linear equations in the $c'_k(x)$. Solving for the $c'_k(x)$ and integrating, we have $c_k(x)$.

Special forms of $X(x)$ or $X_j(x)$ determine the form of the solutions, and the parameters may be found by the method of undetermined coefficients. The following table shows some examples of special solutions for eq. (1). In the table, α, k, a, b, c , are constants, p_r, q_r are polynomials of degree r , and I_a is the operator defined by

$$I_a \cdot F = \frac{1}{a} \left[\sin ax \int \cos ax \cdot F(x) dx - \cos ax \int \sin ax \cdot F(x) dx \right] \quad (a \neq 0).$$

$X(x)$	Condition	Special Solution
$p_r(x)$	$\lambda = 0$ is an m -tuple root of $(1')$	$x^m q_r(x)$
$ke^{\alpha x}$	$\lambda = \alpha$ is an m -tuple root of $(1')$	$cx^m e^{\alpha x}$
$e^{\alpha x} p_r(x)$	$\lambda = \alpha$ is an m -tuple root of $(1')$	$x^m q_r(x) e^{\alpha x}$
$\left. \begin{matrix} \cos(ax+b) \\ \sin(ax+b) \end{matrix} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{matrix} (1') \equiv \varphi(\lambda^2) + \lambda \psi(\lambda^2), \text{ and} \\ \varphi(-a^2) + a^2 \psi(-a^2) \neq 0 \end{matrix} \right\}$	$c_1 \cos(ax+b) + c_2 \sin(ax+b)$
$\left. \begin{matrix} \cos(ax+b) \\ \sin(ax+b) \end{matrix} \right\}$	$\left\{ \begin{matrix} (1') = g(\lambda)/f(\lambda^2) \text{ and } f(\lambda^2) \\ \text{is divisible by } (\lambda^2 + a^2)^m \\ \text{(but not by } (\lambda^2 + a^2)^{m+1}) \end{matrix} \right\}$	$c(I_a)^m \left\{ \begin{matrix} \cos(ax+b) \\ \sin(ax+b) \end{matrix} \right\}$

(II) Riemann's P -Function and Special Functions (\rightarrow 253 Linear Ordinary Differential Equations (Global Theory))

(1) Some Examples Expressed by Elementary Functions. A, B are integral constants.

$$P \left\{ \begin{matrix} a & b & c \\ 0 & \mu & -\mu \\ 1 & \mu' & -\mu' \end{matrix} \middle| x \right\} = \begin{cases} A \left(\frac{x-b}{x-c} \right)^\mu + B \left(\frac{x-b}{x-c} \right)^{\mu'} & (\mu \neq \mu'), \\ \left(\frac{x-b}{x-c} \right)^\mu \left[A + B \log \left(\frac{x-b}{x-c} \right) \right] & (\mu = \mu'). \end{cases}$$

$$P \left\{ \begin{matrix} a & b & c \\ \lambda & \mu & \nu \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{matrix} \middle| x \right\} = A + B \int (x-a)^{\lambda-1} (x-b)^{\mu-1} (x-c)^{\nu-1} dx \quad (\lambda + \mu + \nu = 1).$$

These are for finite a, b, c . If $c = \infty$, $x - c$ should be replaced by 1.

$$P \left\{ \begin{matrix} \infty & 0 \\ \alpha & 0 & 0 \\ \alpha' & 0 & 1 \end{matrix} \middle| x \right\} = \begin{cases} Ae^{\alpha x} + Be^{\alpha' x} & (\alpha \neq \alpha'), \\ e^{\alpha x} (Ax + B) & (\alpha = \alpha'). \end{cases}$$

$$P \left\{ \begin{matrix} \infty & 0 \\ \alpha & 1-\sigma & \sigma \\ 0 & 0 & 0 \end{matrix} \middle| x \right\} = A + B \int e^{\alpha x} x^{\sigma-1} dx \quad (\alpha \neq 0).$$

$$P \left\{ \begin{matrix} \infty & 0 \\ \alpha & -\sigma & \sigma \\ \alpha' & 1-\sigma' & \sigma' \end{matrix} \middle| x \right\} = x^\sigma e^{\alpha x} \left[A + B \int e^{(\alpha'-\alpha)x} x^{\sigma'-\sigma-1} dx \right] \quad (\alpha \neq \alpha').$$

Riemann's P -function is reduced to Gauss's hypergeometric function with parameters $\alpha = \lambda + \mu + \nu$, $\beta = \lambda + \mu + \nu'$, $\gamma = 1 + \lambda + \lambda'$ by transforming a, b, c to 0, 1, ∞ by a suitable linear transformation and by putting $z = x^{-\lambda}(x-1)^{-\mu}y$.

(2) Representation of Special Functions by Riemann's P -function.

(i) Gauss's hypergeometric differential equation $x(1-x)y'' + [\gamma - (\alpha + \beta + 1)x]y' - \alpha\beta y = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{matrix} 0 & 1 & \infty \\ 0 & 0 & \alpha \\ 1-\gamma & \gamma-\alpha-\beta & \beta \end{matrix} \middle| x \right\}.$$

A special solution is $F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; x)$ (\rightarrow 206 Hypergeometric Functions).

(ii) Confluent hypergeometric differential equation $xy'' - (x - \mu)y' - \lambda y = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} \infty & 0 \\ 0 & \lambda & 0 \\ 1 & \mu - \lambda & 1 - \mu \end{array} \begin{array}{c} x \\ x \\ x \end{array} \right\}.$$

A special solution is

$${}_1F_1(\lambda, \mu; x) \equiv \sum_{k=0}^{\infty} \frac{\Gamma(\lambda + k)}{\Gamma(\lambda)} \frac{\Gamma(\mu)}{\Gamma(\mu + k)} \frac{x^k}{k!}.$$

(iii) Whittaker's differential equation $y'' + \left[-\frac{1}{4} + \frac{k}{x} + \frac{(1/4) - n^2}{x^2} \right] y = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} \infty & 0 \\ 1/2 & k & 1/2 + n \\ -1/2 & -k & 1/2 - n \end{array} \begin{array}{c} x \\ x \\ x \end{array} \right\}.$$

Special solutions are $M_{k,n}(x), W_{k,n}(x)$.

(iv) Bessel's differential equation $x^2y'' + xy' + (x^2 - \nu^2)y = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} \infty & 0 \\ i & 1/2 & \nu \\ -i & 1/2 & -\nu \end{array} \begin{array}{c} x \\ x \\ x \end{array} \right\}.$$

Special solutions are $J_\nu(x), N_\nu(x)$ (\rightarrow 39 Bessel Functions). When $m = 0, 1, 2, \dots, J_{m-1/2}(x) = (-1)^m 2^{m+1/2} \pi^{-1/2} x^{m-1/2} d^m(\cos x)/dx^m$.

(v) Hermite's differential equation (parabolic cylindrical equation) $y'' - 2xy' + 2ny = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} \infty & 0 \\ 0 & -n/2 & 0 \\ 1 & (n+1)/2 & 1/2 \end{array} \begin{array}{c} x^2 \\ x^2 \\ x^2 \end{array} \right\}.$$

When $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, the Hermite polynomial $H_n(x) = (-1)^n 2^{-n/2} e^{x^2} d^n(e^{-x^2})/dx^n$ is the solution.

(vi) Laguerre's differential equation $xy'' + (l - x + 1)y' + ny = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} \infty & 0 \\ 0 & -n & 0 \\ 1 & l + n + 1 & -l \end{array} \begin{array}{c} x \\ x \\ x \end{array} \right\}.$$

When $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, the Laguerre polynomial $L_n^l(x) = (1/n!) x^{-l} e^x d^n(x^{n+l} e^{-x})/dx^n$ is the solution.

(vii) Jacobi's differential equation $x(1-x)y'' + [q - (p+1)x]y' + n(n+p)y = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} 0 & 1 & \infty \\ 1-q & q-p & p+n \\ 0 & 0 & -n \end{array} \begin{array}{c} x \\ x \\ x \end{array} \right\}.$$

When $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, the Jacobi polynomial

$$G_n(p, q; x) = \frac{\Gamma(q)x^{1-q}(1-x)^{q-p}}{\Gamma(n+q)} \frac{d^n[x^{q+n-1}(1-x)^{p+n-q}]}{dx^n}$$

is the solution.

(viii) Legendre's differential equation $(1-x^2)y'' - 2xy' + n(n+1)y = 0$.

$$y = P \left\{ \begin{array}{ccc} 1 & -1 & \infty \\ 0 & 0 & n+1 \\ 0 & 0 & -n \end{array} \begin{array}{c} x \\ x \\ x \end{array} \right\}.$$

When $n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$, the general solution is

$$\frac{d^n}{dx^n} \left[A(x^2-1)^n + B(x^2-1)^n \int \frac{dx}{(x^2-1)^{n+1}} \right].$$

The Legendre polynomial $P_n(x) = [d^n\{(x^2-1)^n\}/dx^n]/2^n n!$ is a special solution.

(3) Solution by Cylindrical Functions of Ordinary Linear Differential Equations of the Second Order. We denote cylindrical functions by $C_\nu(x)$ (\rightarrow 39 Bessel Functions).

Equation	Solution
$y'' + \frac{1-2\alpha}{x}y' + \left[(\beta\gamma x^{\gamma-1})^2 + \frac{\alpha^2 - \nu^2\gamma^2}{x^2} \right]y = 0$	$y = x^\alpha C_\nu(\beta x^\gamma)$
$y'' + \left[\frac{1-2\alpha}{x} - 2\beta\gamma ix^{\gamma-1} \right]y' + \left[\frac{\alpha^2 - \nu^2\gamma^2}{x^2} - \beta\gamma(\gamma - 2\alpha)ix^{\gamma-2} \right]y = 0$	$y = x^\alpha \exp(i\beta x^\gamma) C_\nu(\beta x^\gamma)$
$y'' + \left[\frac{1}{x} - 2u(x) \right]y' + \left[1 - \frac{\nu^2}{x^2} + u(x)^2 - u'(x) - \frac{u(x)}{x} \right]y = 0$	$y = \exp \left[\int u(x) dx \right] C_\nu(x)$
$y'' + \alpha^2 \nu^2 x^{2\nu-2}y = 0$	$y = \sqrt{x} C_{1/2\nu}(\alpha x^\nu)$
$y'' + (e^{2x} - \nu^2)y = 0$	$y = C_\nu(e^x)$
$x^2 y'' + xy' + (\beta^2 x^2 - \nu^2)y = 0$	$y = C_\nu(\beta x)$
$x^2 y'' + xy' - (x^2 + \nu^2)y = 0$	$y = C_\nu(ix)$ (modified Bessel function)

(III) Transformation Groups and Invariants

Let $U \equiv \xi \frac{\partial}{\partial x} + \eta \frac{\partial}{\partial y}$ be the infinitesimal transformation of a given continuous transformation group of two variables, and $U' \equiv \xi \frac{\partial}{\partial x} + \eta \frac{\partial}{\partial y} + \zeta \frac{\partial}{\partial p}$ be that of its extended group.

We have

$$\zeta = \frac{\partial \eta}{\partial x} + p \left(\frac{\partial \eta}{\partial y} - \frac{\partial \xi}{\partial x} \right) - p^2 \frac{d\xi}{dx}.$$

We put

$$p \equiv \frac{dy}{dx}, \quad r \equiv \frac{d^2y}{dx^2}.$$

Let α, β and γ be invariants of the 0th, first, and second order, respectively. The general form of the differential equation of the first or of the second order invariant under U is given by $\Phi(\alpha, \beta) = 0$ (or $\beta = F(\alpha)$), and $\Psi(\alpha, \beta, \gamma) = 0$ (or $\gamma = G(\alpha, \beta)$), respectively, where F, Φ, Ψ, G denote arbitrary functions of the corresponding variables.

Group With Infinitesimal Transformation U			Invariants			Note
ξ	η	ζ	0th	1st	2nd	
0	1	0	x	p	r	(1)
1	0	0	y	p	r	(1)
$-y$	x	$1 + p^2$	$x^2 + y^2$	$(y - xp)/(x + yp)$	$r/(1 + p^2)^{3/2}$	(2)
0	y	p	x	p/y	r/y	(3)
x	0	$-p$	y	xp	x^2r	(3)
x	y	0	y/x	p	xr	(4)
x	$-y$	$-2p$	xy	x^2p	x^3r	
μx	νy	$(\nu - \mu)p$	y^μ/x^ν	$x^{1-\nu/\mu}p$ or px/y	$r\mu/x^{\nu-\mu-1}$	
μ	ν	0	$\nu x - \mu y$	p	r	
0	$h(x)$	$h'(x)$	x	$h(x)p - h'(x)y$	$h(x)r - h''(x)y$	(5)
$k(y)$	0	$-k'(y)p^2$	y	$\frac{1}{p} - \frac{k'(y)}{k(y)}x$	$\frac{r}{p^3} + \frac{k''(y)}{k'(y)p}$	
0	$k(y)$	$k'(y)p$	x	$\frac{p}{k(y)}$	$\frac{r}{k(y)} - \frac{k'(y)p^2}{[k(y)]^2}$	(6)
$h(x)$	0	$-h'(x)p$	y	$h(x)p$	$(h(x))^2r + h(x)h'(x)p$	

Group With Infinitesimal Transformation U			Invariants			Note
ξ	η	ζ	0th	1st	2nd	
0	$h(x)k(y)$	$h'(x)k(y) + h(x)k'(y)p$	x	$\frac{p}{k(y)} - \frac{h'(x)}{h(x)} \int^y \frac{dy}{k(y)}$	—	(7)
$xh(x)$	$yh(x)$	$h'(x)(y - xp)$	$\frac{y}{x}$	$\left(p - \frac{y}{x}\right)h(x)$	$\left(\frac{x^2r}{xp - y} - 1\right)h(x) + h'(x)$	
y	x	$1 - p^2$	$x^2 - y^2$	$\frac{1 - p}{1 + p} \frac{x + y}{x - y}$ or $(x - yp)/(1 + p)(x - y)$	$\frac{r}{(1 - p^2)^{3/2}}$	

Notes

- (1) Parallel translation.
- (2) Rotation.
- (3) Affine transformation.
- (4) Similar transformation; the equation is a homogeneous differential equation.
- (5) Linear differential equation.
- (6) Separated variable type.
- (7) When $k(y) = y^n$, the equation is Bernoulli's differential equation.

Reference

[1] A. R. Forsyth, A treatise on differential equations, Macmillan, fourth edition, 1914.

15. Total and Partial Differential Equations

(I) Total Differential Equations (→ 428 Total Differential Equations)

Suppose we are given a system of total differential equations

$$dz_j = \sum_{k=1}^n P_{jk}(x; z) dx_k \quad (j = 1, 2, \dots, m).$$

A condition for complete integrability is given by

$$\frac{\partial P_{jk}(x; z)}{\partial x_i} + \sum_i \frac{\partial P_{jk}(x; z)}{\partial z_i} P_{il}(x; z) = \frac{\partial P_{jl}(x; z)}{\partial x_k} + \sum_i \frac{\partial P_{jl}(x; z)}{\partial z_i} P_{ik}(x; z).$$

Under this condition, the solution with the initial condition $(x_1^0, \dots, x_n^0; z_1^0, \dots, z_m^0)$ is obtained as follows: First, solve the system of differential equations $dz_j/dx_1 = P_{j1}(x_1, x_2^0, \dots, x_n^0; z)$ in x_1 with the initial condition $z_j(x_1^0) = z_j^0$, and denote the solution by $z_j = \varphi_j(x_1)$. Next, considering x_1 as a parameter, solve the system of differential equations $dz_j/dx_2 = P_{j2}(x_1, x_2, x_3^0, \dots, x_n^0; z)$ in x_2 with the initial condition $z_j(x_2^0) = \varphi_j(x_1)$, and denote the solution by $z_j = \varphi_j(x_1, x_2)$. Repeat the process, until we finally have $z_j = \varphi_j(x_1, \dots, x_n)$, which is the solution of the original equation. Or, if we have m independent first integrals $f_j(x; z) = c_j$ of the equation $dz_j/dx_1 = P_{j1}(x; z)$, we may transform the equation into $du_j = \sum_{k=1}^n Q_{jk}(x; u) dx_k$ by the transformation $u_j = f_j(x; z)$. Since the $Q_{jk}(x; u)$ do not involve x_1 and the equation is a completely integrable total differential equation, we have reduced the number of variables. We obtain the general solution by repeating this process n times.

For

$$P(x, y, z) dx + Q(x, y, z) dy + R(x, y, z) dz = 0$$

($n=3, m=1$), the complete integrability condition is

$$P\left(\frac{\partial Q}{\partial z} - \frac{\partial R}{\partial y}\right) + Q\left(\frac{\partial R}{\partial x} - \frac{\partial P}{\partial z}\right) + R\left(\frac{\partial P}{\partial y} - \frac{\partial Q}{\partial x}\right) = 0.$$

(II) Solution of Partial Differential Equations of First Order (→ 322 Partial Differential Equations (Methods of Integration), 324 Partial Differential Equations of First Order)

Let z be a function of x and y , and

$$p \equiv \partial z / \partial x, \quad q \equiv \partial z / \partial y, \quad r \equiv \partial^2 z / \partial x^2, \quad s \equiv \partial^2 z / \partial x \partial y, \quad t \equiv \partial^2 z / \partial y^2.$$

We consider a partial differential equation of the first order $F(x, y, z, p, q) = 0$.

(1) The Lagrange-Charpit Method. We consider the auxiliary equation

$$\frac{dx}{F_p} = \frac{dy}{F_q} = \frac{dz}{pF_p + qF_q} = \frac{-dp}{F_x + pF_z} = \frac{-dq}{F_y + qF_z},$$

which is a system of ordinary differential equations. Let $G(x, y, z, p, q) = a$ be the solution of the auxiliary equation. Using this together with the original equation $F = 0$, we obtain $p = P(x, y, z, a)$, $q = Q(x, y, z, a)$, and the complete solution by integrating $dz = P dx + Q dy$. If we know another solution of the auxiliary equation $H(x, y, z, p, q) = b$ independent of $G = a$, we have the complete solution $z = \Phi(x, y, a, b)$ by eliminating p and q from $F = 0$, $G = a$, and $H = b$.

(2) Solution of Various Standard Forms of Partial Differential Equations of the First Order. The integration constants are a, b .

(i) $f(p, q) = 0$. The complete solution is $z = ax + \varphi(a)y + b$, where the function $t = \varphi(a)$ is defined by $f(t, a) = 0$.

(ii) $f(px, q) = 0$, $f(x, qy) = 0$, $f(p/z, q/z) = 0$. These equations reduce to (i) if $x = e^x$, $y = e^y$, $z = e^z$, respectively.

(iii) $f(x, p, q) = 0$. If we can solve for $p = F(x, q)$, the complete solution is $z = \int F(x, a) dx + ay + b$. A similar procedure applies to $f(y, p, q) = 0$.

(iv) $f(z, p, q) = 0$. Solve $f(z, t, at) = 0$ for $t = F(z, a)$. The complete solution is then given by $x + ay + b = \int dz / F(z, a)$. If we eliminate a and b from the complete solution $\Phi(x, y, z, a, b) = 0$ and $\partial \Phi / \partial a = \partial \Phi / \partial b = 0$, we have the singular solution of the original equation.

(v) Separated variable type $f(x, p) = g(y, q)$. Solve the two ordinary differential equations $f(x, p) = a$ and $g(y, q) = a$ for the solutions $p = P(x, a)$ and $q = Q(y, a)$, respectively. Then the complete solution is $z = \int P(x, a) dx + \int Q(y, a) dy + b$.

(vi) Lagrange's partial differential equation $Pp + Qq = R$. Here P, Q, R are functions of x, y , and z . Denote the solutions of the system of differential equations $dx : dy : dz = P : Q : R$ by $u(x, y, z) = a$, $v(x, y, z) = b$. Then the general solution is $\Phi(u, v) = 0$, where Φ is an arbitrary function. A similar method is applicable to

$$\sum_{j=1}^n P_j(x_1, \dots, x_n) \frac{\partial z}{\partial x_j} = R(x_1, \dots, x_n).$$

If we have n independent solutions $u_j(x) = a_j$ of a system of n differential equations $dx_j / P_j = dz / R$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$), the general solution is given by $\Phi(u_1, \dots, u_n) = 0$.

(vii) Clairaut's partial differential equation $z = px + qy + f(p, q)$. The complete solution is given by the family of planes $z = ax + by + f(a, b)$. The singular solution as the envelope of the family of planes is given by eliminating p and q from the original equation and $x = -\partial f / \partial p$ and $y = -\partial f / \partial q$.

(III) Solutions of Partial Differential Equations of Second Order (→ 322 Partial Differential Equations (Methods of Integration))

(1) Quadrature. Here φ and ψ are arbitrary functions.

(i) $r = f(x)$. The general solution is $z = \iint f(x) dx dx + \varphi(y)x + \psi(y)$. A similar rule applies to $t = f(y)$.

(ii) $s = f(x, y)$. The general solution is $z = \iiint f(x, y) dx dy + \varphi(x) + \psi(y)$.

(iii) Wave equation. $r - t = 0$. The general solution is $z = \varphi(x + y) + \psi(x - y)$.

(iv) Laplace's differential equation. $r + t = 0$. Let $x + iy = \zeta$ and φ, ψ be complex analytic functions of ζ . The general solution is $z = \varphi(\zeta) + \psi(\bar{\zeta})$, and a real solution is $z = \varphi(\zeta) + \bar{\varphi}(\bar{\zeta})$.

(v) $r + Mp = N$, where M and N are functions of x and y . The general solution is given by $z = \int [\int L(x, y) N(x, y) dx + \varphi(y)] / L(x, y) dx + \psi(y)$, $L(x, y) = \exp \int [M(x, y) dx]$. In the integration, y is considered a constant.

A similar method is applicable to $s + Mp = N$, $s + Mq = N$, and $t + Mq = N$.

(vi) Monge-Ampère partial differential equation. $Rr + Ss + Tt + U(rt - s^2) = V$, where R, S, T, U, V are functions of x, y, z, p, q .

First, in the case $U=0$, we take auxiliary equations

$$\text{eq. (1)} \quad R dy^2 + T dx^2 - S dx dy = 0,$$

$$\text{eq. (2)} \quad R dp dy + T dq dx = V dx dy.$$

Equation (1) is decomposed into two linear differential forms $X_i dx + Y_i dy = 0$ ($i=1, 2$). The combination with (2) gives a solution $u_i(x, y, z, p, q) = a_i$, $v_i(x, y, z, p, q) = b_i$ ($i=1, 2$), and we have intermediate integrals $F_i(u_i, v_i) = 0$ ($i=1, 2$) for an arbitrary function F_i . We have the solution of the original equation by solving the intermediate integrals. If $S^2 \neq 4RT$, two intermediate integrals are distinct, and hence we can solve them in the form $p = P(x, y, z)$, $q = Q(x, y, z)$, and then we may integrate $dz = P dx + Q dy$.

Next, in the case $U \neq 0$, let λ_1 and λ_2 be the solutions of $U^2 \lambda^2 + US \lambda + TR + UV = 0$. We have two auxiliary equations

$$\begin{cases} \lambda_1 U dy + T dx + U dp = 0, \\ \lambda_2 U dx + R dy + U dq = 0, \end{cases} \quad \text{or} \quad \begin{cases} \lambda_2 U dy + T dx + U dp = 0, \\ \lambda_1 U dx + R dy + U dq = 0, \end{cases}$$

and from the solutions $u_i = a_i$, $v_i = b_i$ ($i=1, 2$), we have intermediate integrals $F_i(u_i, v_i) = 0$ ($i=1, 2$). If $4(TR + UV) \neq S^2$, $\lambda_1 \neq \lambda_2$, we have two different intermediate integrals $F_i = 0$. Solving the simultaneous equations $F_i = 0$ in $p = P(x, y, z)$, $q = Q(x, y, z)$, we may also find the solution by integrating $dz = P dx + Q dy$.

(vii) Poisson's differential equation. $P = (rt - s^2)^n Q$, where $P = P(p, q, r, s, t)$ is homogeneous with respect to r, s, t and we assume that $Q = Q(x, y, z)$ satisfies $\partial Q / \partial z \neq \infty$ for x, y, z when $rt = s^2$. The equation $P(p, \varphi(p), r, r\varphi'(p), r\{\varphi'(p)\}^2) = 0$ is then an ordinary differential equation in φ as a function of p . We first solve this for φ , and then solve a partial differential equation of the first order $q = \varphi(p)$ by the method (II)(2)(i).

(2) Intermediate Integrals. Let $f(x, y, z, p, q, r, s, t)$ be polynomials with respect to r, s, t . Suppose that $f(x, y, z, p, q, r, s, t) = 0$ has the first integral $u(x, y, z, p, q) = 0$. We insert

$$r = -\left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} + p \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} + s \frac{\partial u}{\partial q}\right) / \frac{\partial u}{\partial p}, \quad t = -\left(\frac{\partial u}{\partial y} + q \frac{\partial u}{\partial z} + s \frac{\partial u}{\partial p}\right) / \frac{\partial u}{\partial q}$$

into the original equation, and replace all the coefficients that are polynomials of s by 0. We thus obtain a system of differential equations in u . If u and v are two independent solutions of this system, an intermediate integral of the original equation is given in the form $\Phi(u, v) = 0$.

(3) Initial Value Problem for a Hyperbolic Partial Differential Equation $L[u] \equiv u_{xy} + au_x + bu_y + cu = h$.

$$\begin{aligned} u(\xi, \eta) = & [(uR)_A + (uR)_B] / 2 + \iint_{\Delta} R(x, y; \xi, \eta) h(x, y) dx dy \\ & + \int_A^B \left[\frac{1}{2} \left(u \frac{\partial R}{\partial n'} - R \frac{\partial u}{\partial n'} \right) - \{a \cos(n, x) + b \cos(n, y)\} uR \right] ds, \end{aligned}$$

where Δ is the hatched region in Fig. 19, and the conormal n' is the mirror image of the normal n with respect to $x = y$.

$$u(\xi, \eta) = (uR)_C + \int_C^A R(u_y + au) dy + \int_C^B R(u_x + bu) dx + \iint_{\square} R(x, y; \xi, \eta) h(x, y) dx dy$$

(characteristic initial value problem).

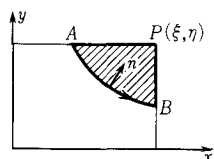


Fig. 19

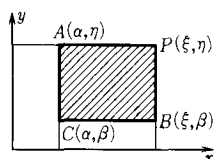


Fig. 20

Here \square is the hatched rectangular region in Fig. 20. $R(x, y; \xi, \eta)$ is the Riemann function; it satisfies

$$M[R(x, y; \xi, \eta)] = 0,$$

$$R_x - bR = 0 \quad (\text{on } x = \xi),$$

$$R_y - aR = 0 \quad (\text{on } y = \eta),$$

$$R(\xi, \eta; \xi, \eta) = 1.$$

Example (i). $u_{xy} = h(x, y)$. $R(x, y; \xi, \eta) = 1$.

$$u(\xi, \eta) = \frac{1}{2} [u_A + u_B] + \frac{1}{2} \int_A^B [u_y \cos(n, x) + u_x \cos(n, y)] ds + \iint_{\Delta} h(x, y) dx dy.$$

Example (ii). Telegraph equation $u_{xy} + cu = 0$ ($c > 0$). $R(x, y; \xi, \eta) = J_0(2\sqrt{c(x-\xi)(y-\eta)})$.

Example (iii). $u_{xy} + \frac{n}{x+y}(u_x + u_y) = 0$ ($n = \text{a constant} > 0$).

$$R(x, y; \xi, \eta) = \left(\frac{x+y}{\xi+\eta}\right)^n F\left(1-n, n; 1; -\frac{(x-\xi)(y-\eta)}{(x+y)(\xi+\eta)}\right).$$

(IV) Contact Transformations (→ 82 Contact Transformations)

We consider a transformation $(x_1, \dots, x_n; z) \rightarrow (X_1, \dots, X_n; Z)$. We put $p_j \equiv \partial z / \partial x_j$, $P_j \equiv \partial Z / \partial X_j$ ($j = 1, \dots, n$). The transformation is called a contact transformation if there exists a function $\rho(x, z, p) \neq 0$ satisfying $dZ - \sum P_j dX_j = \rho(x, z, p)(dz - \sum p_j dx_j)$.

A transformation given by $(2n+1)$ equations $\Omega = 0$, $\partial \Omega / \partial X_j + P_j \partial \Omega / \partial Z = 0$, $\partial \Omega / \partial x_j + p_j \partial \Omega / \partial z = 0$ generated by a generating function $\Omega(x, z, X, Z)$ is a contact transformation.

Generating Function	ρ	Transformation	Name
$\sum x_j X_j + z + Z$	-1	$X_j = -p_j, \quad P_j = -x_j,$ $Z = \sum p_j x_j - z$	Legendre's transformation
$\sum X_j^2 + Z^2 - \sum x_j X_j - zZ$	$Z/(2Z-z)$	$X_j = -p_j Z,$ $p_j = -(2X_j - x_j)/(2Z - z)$	Pedal transformation
$\sum (X_j - x_j)^2 + (Z - z)^2 - a^2$	1	$X_j = x_j - ap_j(1 + \sum p_j^2)^{-1/2},$ $P_j = p_j,$ $Z = z_j + a(1 + \sum p_j^2)^{-1/2}$	Similarity
$\sum (X_j - x_j)^2 - Z^2 - z^2$	$-\frac{1}{\sqrt{\sum p_j^2 - 1}}$	$X_j = x_j - p_j z,$ $P_j = -p_j(\sum p_j^2 - 1)^{-1/2},$ $Z = z(\sum p_j^2 - 1)^{1/2}$	

(V) Fundamental Solutions (→ 320 Partial Differential Equations H)

A function (or a generalized function such as a distribution) T satisfying $LT = \delta$ (δ is the Dirac delta function) for a linear differential operator L is called the fundamental (or elementary) solution of L . In the following table, we put

$$\Delta \equiv \sum_{i=1}^n \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i^2}, \quad \square \equiv \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_n^2} - \sum_{i=1}^{n-1} \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i^2}, \quad r^2 \equiv \sum_{i=1}^n x_i^2, \quad \mathbf{1}(x) = \begin{cases} 1 & (x > 0) \\ 0 & (x \leq 0) \end{cases} \quad (\text{Heaviside function}).$$

J_ν is the Bessel function of the first kind; K_ν and I_ν are the modified Bessel functions. (→Table 19.IV, this Appendix.)

$$s = \begin{cases} \sqrt{x_n^2 - x_1^2 - \dots - x_{n-1}^2} & (\text{if } x_n > 0 \text{ and the quantity under the radical sign is positive}), \\ 0 & (\text{otherwise}). \end{cases}$$

(For Pf (finite part) → 125 Distributions and Hyperfunctions.)

Operator	Fundamental Solution
d/dx	$\mathbf{1}(x)$
$\frac{d^m}{dx^m}$	$\begin{cases} x^{m-1}/(m-1)! & (x > 0) \\ 0 & (x \leq 0) \end{cases}$
$\partial^n / \partial x_1 \partial x_2 \dots \partial x_n$	$\mathbf{1}(x_1)\mathbf{1}(x_2)\dots\mathbf{1}(x_n)$
$\frac{\partial}{\partial x} + i \frac{\partial}{\partial y}$	$\frac{1}{2\pi} \frac{1}{x+iy} \quad (i \equiv \sqrt{-1})$

Operator	Fundamental Solution
Δ	$\begin{cases} -\left[\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)/2(n-2)\pi^{n/2}\right]\frac{1}{r^{n-2}} & (n \geq 3) \\ (1/2\pi)\log r & (n=2) \end{cases}$
Δ^m	$\begin{cases} \left[\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)/2^m(m-1)!\pi^{n/2}\prod_{k=1}^m(2k-n)\right]\frac{1}{r^{n-2m}} & \begin{matrix} n-2m \text{ is a positive integer} \\ \text{or a negative odd integer} \end{matrix} \\ \left[\Gamma\left(\frac{n}{2}\right)/2^m(m-1)!\pi^{n/2}\prod_{\substack{k=1 \\ k \neq m-h}}^m(2k-n)\right]\frac{\log r}{r^{n-2m}} & \begin{matrix} n-2m = -2h, \\ h=0, 1, 2, \dots \end{matrix} \end{cases}$
$\left(1 - \frac{\Delta}{4\pi^2}\right)^m$	$\frac{2\pi^m}{(m-1)!}r^{m-(n/2)}K_{(n/2)-m}(2\pi r)$
\square^m	$(\text{Pf } s^{2m-n})/\pi^{(n/2)-1}2^{2m-1}(m-1)!\Gamma[m+1-(n/2)]$
$(\square - \lambda)^m$ (λ is real and $\neq 0$)	$\frac{|\lambda|^{(n/4)-(m/2)}}{\pi^{(n/2)-1}(m-1)!2^{m-1+(n/2)}}\text{Pf } s^{m-(n/2)}\begin{cases} I_{m-(n/2)}(\sqrt{\lambda}s) & (\lambda > 0) \\ J_{m-(n/2)}(\sqrt{|\lambda|}s) & (\lambda < 0) \end{cases}$
$\left(\frac{\partial}{\partial x_n} - \sum_{i=1}^{n-1}\frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_i^2}\right)^m$	$\begin{cases} \frac{x_n^{m-1}}{(m-1)!}\left(\frac{1}{2\sqrt{\pi x_n}}\right)^{n-1}\exp\left(-\sum_{i=1}^{n-1}x_i^2/4x_n\right) & (x_n > 0) \\ 0 & (x_n \leq 0) \end{cases}$

(VI) Solution of Boundary Value Problems (\rightarrow 188 Green's Functions, 323 Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type, 327 Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type)

$$L[u] = Au_{xx} + 2Bu_{xy} + Cu_{yy} + Du_x + Eu_y + Fu,$$

$$M[v] = (Av)_{xx} + 2(Bv)_{xy} + (Cv)_{yy} - (Dv)_x - (Ev)_y + Fv.$$

$$\text{Green's formula} \quad \int \int_D \{vL[u] - uM[v]\} dx dy = \int_C \left\{ P \left(u \frac{\partial v}{\partial n'} - v \frac{\partial u}{\partial n'} \right) + Quv \right\} ds.$$

$$\text{eq. (1)} \quad \begin{cases} A \cos(n, x) + B \cos(n, y) = P \cos(n', x), \\ B \cos(n, x) + C \cos(n, y) = P \cos(n', y). \end{cases}$$

$$Q = (A_x + B_y - D)\cos(n, x) + (B_x + C_y - E)\cos(n, y).$$

The integration contour C is the boundary of the domain D (Fig. 21), n is the inner normal of C , and n' , called the conormal, is given by (1).

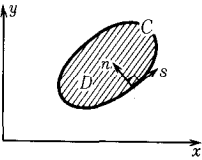


Fig. 21

(1) Elliptic Partial Differential Equation $L[u] \equiv u_{xx} + u_{yy} + au_x + bu_y + cu = h$.

$$u(\xi, \eta) = - \int_C u(s) \frac{\partial G}{\partial n} ds + \int \int_D G(x, y; \xi, \eta) h(x, y) dx dy.$$

Here $G(x, y; \xi, \eta)$ is Green's function, which satisfies $M(G(x, y; \xi, \eta)) = 0$ in the interior of D except at $(x, y) \neq (\xi, \eta)$, and

$$G(x, y; \xi, \eta) = -(1/2\pi)\log\sqrt{(x-\xi)^2 + (y-\eta)^2} + \text{a regular function},$$

$$G(x, y; \xi, \eta) = 0 \quad ((x, y) \in C).$$

(2) Laplace's Differential Equation in the 2-Dimensional Case $\frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial x^2} + \frac{\partial^2 u}{\partial y^2} = 0$.

$$u(x, y) \equiv \tilde{u}(r, \varphi) = \operatorname{Re} f(z) \quad (z \equiv x + iy = re^{i\theta}).$$

(i) Interior of a disk ($r \leq 1$).

$$f(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \tilde{u}(1, \varphi) \frac{e^{i\varphi} + z}{e^{i\varphi} - z} d\varphi, \quad \tilde{u}(r, \theta) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_0^{2\pi} \tilde{u}(1, \varphi) \frac{1 - r^2}{1 - 2r \cos(\theta - \varphi) + r^2} d\varphi$$

(Poisson's integration formula).

(ii) Annulus ($0 < q \leq r \leq 1$).

$$f(z) = \frac{\omega_1}{\pi^2 i} \left\{ \int_0^{2\pi} \tilde{u}(1, \varphi) \zeta_1(w) d\varphi - \int_0^{2\pi} \tilde{u}(q, \varphi) \zeta_3(w) d\varphi - a \log z \right\}$$

(Villat's integration formula).

$$w = \frac{\omega_1}{\pi} (i \log z + \varphi), \quad a = \left(\frac{1}{2\omega_3} - \frac{\eta_1}{\pi i} \right) \int_0^{2\pi} \{ \tilde{u}(1, \varphi) - \tilde{u}(q, \varphi) \} d\varphi, \quad \frac{\omega_3}{\omega_1} = -\frac{i}{\pi} \log q.$$

Here ζ_1 and ζ_3 are the Weierstrass ζ -functions (\rightarrow 134 Elliptic Functions) with the fundamental periods $2\omega_1$ and $2\omega_3$.

(iii) Half-plane ($y \geq 0$). $f(z) = \frac{i}{\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{u(t, 0)}{z - t} dt, \quad u(x, y) = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{u(t, 0)y}{(x - t)^2 + y^2} dt.$

(3) Laplace's Differential Equation in the 3-Dimensional Case.

(i) Interior of a sphere ($r \leq 1$).

$$\tilde{u}(r, \varphi, \theta) = \frac{1}{4\pi} \int_0^\pi \int_0^{2\pi} \tilde{u}(1, \Phi, \Theta) \frac{1 - r^2}{(1 - 2r \cos \gamma + r^2)^{3/2}} \sin \Theta d\Theta d\Phi,$$

where

$$\cos \gamma = \cos \Theta \cos \theta + \sin \Theta \sin \theta \cos(\Phi - \varphi).$$

(ii) Half-space ($z \geq 0$).

$$u(x, y, z) = \frac{z}{2\pi} \int \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{u(\xi, \eta, 0)}{\{(x - \xi)^2 + (y - \eta)^2 + z^2\}^{3/2}} d\xi d\eta.$$

(4) Equation of Oscillation (Helmholtz Differential Equation) $\Delta u + k^2 u = 0$. Let u_n be the normalized eigenfunction with the same boundary condition for the eigenvalue k_n . Green's function is

$$G(P, Q) = \sum \frac{u_n(P) u_n^*(Q)}{k^2 - k_n^2}$$

Domain	Boundary Condition	Eigenvalue	Eigenfunction
rectangle $0 < x < a, \quad 0 < y < b$	$u = 0$	$k_{nm} = \pi \sqrt{\frac{n^2}{a^2} + \frac{m^2}{b^2}}$ ($n, m = 1, 2, \dots$)	$\sin n\pi \frac{x}{a} \sin m\pi \frac{y}{b}$
circle $0 < r < a$	$u = 0$	k_{nm} is the root of $J_m(kx) = 0$	$J_m(k_{nm}r) e^{\pm im\varphi}$
annulus $b < r < a$	$u = 0$	k_{nm} is the root of $J_m(ka)N_m(kb) - J_m(kb)N_m(ka) = 0$	$\left\{ \frac{J_m(k_{nm}r)}{J_m(k_{nm}a)} - \frac{N_m(k_{nm}r)}{N_m(k_{nm}a)} \right\} e^{\pm im\varphi}$
fan shape $0 < r < a, \quad 0 < \varphi < \alpha$	$u = 0$	k_{nm} is the root of $J_\mu(ka) = 0$ ($\mu = m\pi/\alpha$)	$J_\mu(k_{nm}r) \sin \mu\varphi$
rectangular parallelepiped $0 < x < a, \quad 0 < y < b, \quad 0 < z < c$	$\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} = 0$	$k_{nml} = \pi \sqrt{\frac{n^2}{a^2} + \frac{m^2}{b^2} + \frac{l^2}{c^2}}$	$\cos n\pi \frac{x}{a} \cos m\pi \frac{y}{b} \cos l\pi \frac{z}{c}$
sphere $0 < r < a$	$\frac{\partial u}{\partial n} = 0$	k_{nl} is the root of $\psi'_n(ka) = 0$, where $\psi_n(\rho) \equiv \sqrt{\pi/2} J_{n+(1/2)}(\rho)$	$\psi_n(k_{nl}r) P_n^m(\cos \theta) e^{\pm im\varphi}$

(5) Heat Equation. $\frac{\partial u}{\partial t} = \kappa \Delta u \left(\Delta = \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_1^2} + \dots + \frac{\partial^2}{\partial x_m^2}; \kappa \text{ is a positive constant} \right)$. Boundary condi-

tion: $hu - k \partial u / \partial n = \varphi$, where h and k are nonnegative constants with $h + k = 1$, and φ is a given function.

$$u(P, t) = \int_V G(P, Q, t) u(Q, 0) dV_Q + \kappa \int_0^t d\tau \int_S \left\{ \frac{\partial G(P, Q, t - \tau)}{\partial n_Q} + G(P, Q, t - \tau) \right\} \varphi(Q, \tau) dS_Q.$$

Here V is the domain, and S is its boundary. $G(P, Q, t)$ is the elementary solution that satisfies $\partial G / \partial t = \kappa \Delta G$ in V and $k \partial G / \partial n = hG$ on S , and further in the neighborhood of $P = Q$, $t = 0$, it has the form $G(P, Q, t) = (4\pi\kappa t)^{-m/2} e^{-R^2/4\kappa t} + \text{terms of lower degree}$ ($R = \overline{PQ}$).

(i) $-\infty < x < \infty$, $G = U(x - \xi, t)$, where $U(x, t) = e^{-x^2/4\kappa t} / \sqrt{4\pi\kappa t}$ (similar in the following case (ii)).

(ii) $0 \leq x < \infty$. $u(0, t) = 0$: $G = U(x - \xi, t) - U(x + \xi, t)$.

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x} = hu: \quad G = U(x - \xi, t) + U(x + \xi, t) - 2he^{h\xi} \int_{-\infty}^{-\xi} e^{h\eta} U(x - \eta, t) d\eta.$$

(iii) $0 \leq x \leq l$. $u(0, t) = u(l, t) = 0$: $G = \vartheta\left(\frac{x - \xi}{2l} \middle| \tau\right) - \vartheta\left(\frac{x + \xi}{2l} \middle| \tau\right)$.

$$\frac{\partial u}{\partial x}(0, t) = \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}(l, t) = 0: \quad G = \vartheta\left(\frac{x - \xi}{2l} \middle| \tau\right) + \vartheta\left(\frac{x + \xi}{2l} \middle| \tau\right).$$

$$u(0, t) = \frac{\partial u}{\partial x}(l, t) = 0: \quad G = \vartheta\left(\frac{x - \xi}{4l} \middle| \tau\right) - \vartheta\left(\frac{x + \xi}{4l} \middle| \tau\right) + \vartheta\left(\frac{x + \xi - 2l}{4l} \middle| \tau\right) - \vartheta\left(\frac{x - \xi - 2l}{4l} \middle| \tau\right).$$

Here ϑ is the elliptic theta function: $\vartheta(x|\tau) = \vartheta_3(x, \tau) \equiv 1 + 2 \sum e^{i\pi n^2 \tau} \cos 2\pi n x$.

(iv) $0 \leq x < \infty$, $0 \leq y < \infty$. $u(x, 0, t) = u(0, y, t) = 0$:

$$G = (e^{-(x-\xi)^2/4\kappa t} - e^{-(x+\xi)^2/4\kappa t})(e^{-(y-\eta)^2/4\kappa t} - e^{-(y+\eta)^2/4\kappa t}) / 4\pi\kappa t.$$

(v) $0 \leq x \leq a$, $0 \leq y \leq b$. $u = 0$ on the boundary:

$$G = \frac{4}{ab} \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \exp\left\{-\kappa\pi^2 t \left(\frac{m^2}{a^2} + \frac{n^2}{b^2}\right)\right\} \sin \frac{m\pi x}{a} \sin \frac{m\pi \xi}{a} \sin \frac{n\pi y}{b} \sin \frac{n\pi \eta}{b}.$$

(vi) $0 \leq x \leq a$, $0 \leq y \leq b$, $0 \leq z \leq c$. $u = 0$ on the boundary:

$$G = \frac{8}{abc} \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \exp\left\{-\kappa\pi^2 t \left(\frac{l^2}{a^2} + \frac{m^2}{b^2} + \frac{n^2}{c^2}\right)\right\} \times \sin \frac{l\pi x}{a} \sin \frac{l\pi \xi}{a} \sin \frac{m\pi y}{b} \sin \frac{m\pi \eta}{b} \sin \frac{n\pi z}{c} \sin \frac{n\pi \zeta}{c}.$$

(vii) $0 \leq r < \infty$. Spherically symmetric. $|x| = r$, $|\xi| = r'$:

$$G = (e^{-(r-r')^2/4\kappa t} - e^{-(r+r')^2/4\kappa t}) / 8\pi r r' (\pi\kappa t)^{1/2}.$$

(viii) $0 \leq r \leq a$. Spherically symmetric. $u = 0$ on the boundary:

$$G = \frac{1}{2\pi a r r'} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} e^{-\kappa n^2 \pi^2 t / a^2} \sin \frac{n\pi r}{a} \sin \frac{n\pi r'}{a}.$$

(ix) $a \leq r < \infty$. Spherically symmetric. $k \partial u / \partial r - hu = 0$ on the boundary:

$$G = \frac{1}{8\pi r r' (\pi\kappa t)^{1/2}} \left[e^{-(r-r')^2/4\kappa t} + e^{-(r+r'-2a)^2/4\kappa t} - \frac{ah+k}{ak} (4\pi\kappa t)^{1/2} \times \exp\left\{\kappa t \left(\frac{ah+k}{ak}\right)^2 + (r+r'-2a) \frac{ah+k}{ak}\right\} \times \operatorname{erfc}\left\{\frac{r+r'-2a}{2\sqrt{\kappa t}} + \frac{ah+k}{ak} \sqrt{\kappa t}\right\} \right] \left(\operatorname{erfc} x \equiv \int_x^{\infty} e^{-t^2} dt\right).$$

(x) $0 \leq r < \infty$. Axially symmetric: $G = e^{-(r^2+r'^2)/4\kappa t} I_0(rr'/2\kappa t) / 4\pi\kappa t$.

(xi) $0 \leq r \leq a$. Axially symmetric. $k \frac{\partial u}{\partial r} - hu = 0$ on the boundary:

$$G = \frac{1}{\pi a^2} \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{J_0(r\alpha_n) J_0(r'\alpha_n)}{\{J_0(\alpha_n)\}^2 + \{J_1(\alpha_n)\}^2} e^{-\kappa \alpha_n^2 t / a^2},$$

where α_n is given by $k\alpha_n J_1(\alpha_n) - hJ_0(\alpha_n) = 0$.

16. Elliptic Integrals and Elliptic Functions

(I) Elliptic Integrals (→ 134 Elliptic Functions)

(1) Legendre-Jacobi Standard Form.

Elliptic integral of the first kind

$$F(k, \varphi) \equiv \int_0^\varphi \frac{d\psi}{\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \psi}} = \int_0^{\sin \varphi} \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k^2 t^2)}} \quad (k \text{ is the modulus}).$$

Elliptic integral of the second kind

$$E(k, \varphi) \equiv \int_0^\varphi \sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \psi} \, d\psi = \int_0^{\sin \varphi} \sqrt{\frac{1-k^2 t^2}{1-t^2}} \, dt.$$

Elliptic integral of the third kind

$$\Pi(\varphi, n, k) = \int_0^\varphi \frac{d\psi}{(1+n \sin^2 \psi) \sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \psi}} = \int_0^{\sin \varphi} \frac{dt}{(1+nt^2) \sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k^2 t^2)}}.$$

When $\varphi = \pi/2$, elliptic integrals of the first and the second kinds are called complete elliptic integrals:

$$K(k) \equiv F\left(k, \frac{\pi}{2}\right) = \int_0^{\pi/2} \frac{d\psi}{\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \psi}} = \int_0^1 \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k^2 t^2)}} = \frac{\pi}{2} F\left(\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}; 1; k^2\right),$$

$$E(k) \equiv E\left(k, \frac{\pi}{2}\right) = \int_0^{\pi/2} \sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \psi} \, d\psi = \int_0^1 \sqrt{\frac{1-k^2 t^2}{1-t^2}} \, dt = \frac{\pi}{2} F\left(-\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}; 1; k^2\right),$$

where F is the hypergeometric function.

$$K(k') = K(\sqrt{1-k^2}) \equiv K'(k), \quad E(k') = E(\sqrt{1-k^2}) \equiv E'(k) \quad (k'^2 = 1-k^2; k' \text{ is the complementary modulus}).$$

$$EK' + E'K - KK' = \frac{\pi}{2} \quad (\text{Legendre's relation}). \quad K\left(\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}\right) = \frac{\Gamma(1/4)^2}{4\sqrt{\pi}}.$$

$$\frac{\partial F}{\partial k} = \frac{1}{k^2} \left(\frac{E - k'^2 F}{k} - \frac{\sin \varphi \cos \varphi}{\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \varphi}} \right), \quad \frac{\partial E}{\partial k} = \frac{E - F}{k}.$$

(2) Change of Variables.

$$\tan(\psi - \varphi) = k' \tan \varphi: \quad F\left(\frac{1-k'}{1+k'}, \psi\right) = (1+k')F(k, \varphi),$$

$$E\left(\frac{1-k'}{1+k'}, \psi\right) = \frac{2}{1+k'} [E(k, \varphi) + k' F(k, \varphi)] - \frac{1-k'}{1+k'} \sin \psi.$$

$$\sin \chi = \frac{(1+k) \sin \varphi}{1+k \sin^2 \varphi}: \quad F\left(\frac{2\sqrt{k}}{1+k}, \chi\right) = (1+k)F(k, \varphi),$$

$$E\left(\frac{2\sqrt{k}}{1+k}, \chi\right) = \frac{1}{1+k} \left[2E(k, \varphi) - k'^2 F(k, \varphi) + 2k \frac{\sin \varphi \cos \varphi}{1+k \sin^2 \varphi} \sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \varphi} \right].$$

k_1	$\sin \varphi_1$	$\cos \varphi_1$	$F(k_1, \varphi_1)$	$E(k_1, \varphi_1)$
$i \frac{k}{k'}$	$k' \frac{\sin \varphi}{\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \varphi}}$	$\frac{\cos \varphi}{\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \varphi}}$	$k' F(k, \varphi)$	$\frac{1}{k'} \left[E(k, \varphi) - k^2 \frac{\sin \varphi \cos \varphi}{\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \varphi}} \right]$
k'	$-i \tan \varphi$	$\frac{1}{\cos \varphi}$	$-i F(k, \varphi)$	$i [E(k, \varphi) - F(k, \varphi) - \sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \varphi} \tan \varphi]$
$\frac{1}{k}$	$k \sin \varphi$	$\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \varphi}$	$k F(k, \varphi)$	$\frac{1}{k} [E(k, \varphi) - k'^2 F(k, \varphi)]$

(3) Transformation into Standard Form.
(i) The following are reducible to elliptic integrals of the first kind (we assume $a > b > 0$ for parameters).

$AF(k, \varphi)$	A	k	φ
$\int_1^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{t^3-1}}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt[4]{3}}$	$\frac{\sqrt{3}-1}{2\sqrt{2}}$	$\arccos \frac{\sqrt{3}+1-x}{\sqrt{3}-1+x}$
$\int_1^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{1-t^3}}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt[4]{3}}$	$\frac{\sqrt{3}+1}{2\sqrt{2}}$	$\arccos \frac{\sqrt{3}-1+x}{\sqrt{3}+1-x}$
$\int_0^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{1+t^4}}$	$\frac{1}{2}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt{2}}$	$\arccos \frac{1-x^2}{1+x^2}$
$\int_0^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(a^2-t^2)(b^2-t^2)}}$	$\frac{1}{a}$	$\frac{b}{a}$	$\arcsin \frac{x}{b}$
$\int_b^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(a^2-t^2)(t^2-b^2)}}$	$\frac{1}{a}$	$\sqrt{1-(b/a)^2}$	$\arcsin \sqrt{\frac{1-(b/x)^2}{1-(b/a)^2}}$
$\int_a^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(t^2-a^2)(t^2-b^2)}}$	$\frac{1}{a}$	$\frac{b}{a}$	$\arcsin \sqrt{\frac{1-(a/x)^2}{1-(b/x)^2}}$
$\int_0^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(a^2+t^2)(b^2+t^2)}}$	$\frac{1}{a}$	$\sqrt{1-(b/a)^2}$	$\arctan \frac{x}{b}$
$\int_0^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(a^2-t^2)(b^2+t^2)}}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt{a^2+b^2}}$	$\frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2+b^2}}$	$\arcsin \sqrt{\frac{1+(b/a)^2}{1+(b/x)^2}}$
$\int_b^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(a^2+t^2)(t^2-b^2)}}$	$\frac{1}{\sqrt{a^2+b^2}}$	$\frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2+b^2}}$	$\arccos \frac{b}{x}$

(ii) The following are reducible to elliptic integrals of the second kind (we assume $a > b > 0$ for parameters).

$AE(k, \varphi)$	A	k	φ
$\int_0^x \sqrt{\frac{a^2 - t^2}{b^2 - t^2}} dt$	a	$\frac{b}{a}$	$\arcsin \frac{x}{b}$
$\int_x^a \sqrt{\frac{b^2 + t^2}{a^2 - t^2}} dt$	$\sqrt{a^2 + b^2}$	$\frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2 + b^2}}$	$\arccos \frac{x}{a}$
$\int_b^x \frac{1}{t^2} \sqrt{\frac{t^2 + a^2}{t^2 - b^2}} dt$	$\frac{\sqrt{a^2 + b^2}}{b^2}$	$\frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2 + b^2}}$	$\arccos \frac{b}{x}$
$\int_\infty^x t^2 \sqrt{\frac{t^2 + a^2}{t^2 - b^2}} dt$	$\sqrt{a^2 + b^2}$	$\frac{a}{\sqrt{a^2 + b^2}}$	$\arcsin \sqrt{\frac{1 + (b/a)^2}{1 + (x/a)^2}}$
$\int_0^x \sqrt{\frac{a^2 + t^2}{(b^2 + t^2)^3}} dt$	$\frac{a}{b^2}$	$\frac{\sqrt{a^2 - b^2}}{a}$	$\arctan \frac{x}{b}$
$\int_b^x \frac{dt}{t^2 \sqrt{(t^2 - b^2)(a^2 - t^2)}}$	$\frac{1}{ab^2}$	$\frac{\sqrt{a^2 - b^2}}{a}$	$\arcsin \sqrt{\frac{1 - (b/x)^2}{1 - (b/a)^2}}$

(II) Elliptic Theta Functions

(1) For $\text{Im } \tau > 0$, we put $q \equiv e^{i\pi\tau}$ and define

$$\begin{aligned}\vartheta_0(u, \tau) &\equiv \vartheta_4(u, \tau) \equiv 1 + 2 \sum_{n=1}^\infty (-1)^n q^{n^2} \cos 2n\pi u, \\ \vartheta_1(u, \tau) &\equiv 2 \sum_{n=0}^\infty (-1)^n q^{[n+(1/2)]^2} \sin(2n+1)\pi u, \\ \vartheta_2(u, \tau) &\equiv 2 \sum_{n=0}^\infty q^{[n+(1/2)]^2} \cos(2n+1)\pi u, \\ \vartheta_3(u, \tau) &\equiv 1 + 2 \sum_{n=1}^\infty q^{n^2} \cos 2n\pi u.\end{aligned}$$

Each of the four functions ϑ_j ($j=0, 1, 2, 3$) as a function of two variables u and τ satisfies the following partial differential equation

$$\frac{\partial^2 \vartheta(u, \tau)}{\partial u^2} = 4\pi i \frac{\partial \vartheta(u, \tau)}{\partial \tau}.$$

(2) Mutual Relations.

$$\begin{aligned}\vartheta_0^4(u) + \vartheta_2^4(u) &= \vartheta_1^4(u) + \vartheta_3^4(u), & \vartheta_0^2(u) &= k\vartheta_1^2(u) + k'\vartheta_3^2(u), \\ \vartheta_2^2(u) &= -k'\vartheta_1^2(u) + k\vartheta_3^2(u), & \vartheta_1^2(u) &= k\vartheta_0^2(u) - k'\vartheta_2^2(u),\end{aligned}$$

where k is the modulus such that $iK'(k)/K(k) = \tau$, and k' is the corresponding complementary modulus.

$$k = \vartheta_2^2(0)/\vartheta_3^2(0), \quad k' = \vartheta_0^2(0)/\vartheta_3^2(0).$$

$$\vartheta_1'(0) = \pi\vartheta_2(0)\vartheta_3(0)\vartheta_0(0), \quad \frac{\vartheta_1'''(0)}{\vartheta_1'(0)} = \frac{\vartheta_2''(0)}{\vartheta_0(0)} + \frac{\vartheta_3''(0)}{\vartheta_3(0)} + \frac{\vartheta_0''(0)}{\vartheta_0(0)}.$$

(3) Pseudoperiodicity. In the following table, the only variables in ϑ are u and τ . m and n are integers.

Increment of u	ϑ_0	ϑ_1	ϑ_2	ϑ_3	Exponential Factor
$m + n\tau$	$(-1)^n \vartheta_0$	$(-1)^{m+n} \vartheta_1$	$(-1)^m \vartheta_2$	ϑ_3	$\exp\left[-\frac{n\pi i}{2} \times (2u + n\tau)\right]$
$m - \frac{1}{2} + n\tau$	ϑ_3	$(-1)^{m+1} \vartheta_2$	$(-1)^{m+n} \vartheta_1$	$(-1)^n \vartheta_0$	
$m + \left(n + \frac{1}{2}\right)\tau$	$(-1)^n i \vartheta_1$	$(-1)^{m+n} i \vartheta_0$	$(-1)^m \vartheta_3$	ϑ_2	$\exp\left[-\left(n + \frac{1}{2}\right)\pi i \times \left\{2u + \left(n + \frac{1}{2}\right)\tau\right\}\right]$
$m - \frac{1}{2} + \left(n + \frac{1}{2}\right)\tau$	ϑ_2	ϑ_3	$(-1)^{m+n} i \vartheta_0$	$(-1)^n i \vartheta_1$	
Zeros $u =$	m $+ \left(n + \frac{1}{2}\right)\tau$	$m + n\tau$	$m + \frac{1}{2}$ $+ n\tau$	$m + \frac{1}{2}$ $+ \left(n + \frac{1}{2}\right)\tau$	

(4) Expansion into Infinite Products. We put $Q_0 \equiv \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - q^{2n})$. Then we have

$$\begin{aligned}\vartheta_0(u) &= Q_0 \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - 2q^{2n-1} \cos 2\pi u + q^{4n-2}), \\ \vartheta_1(u) &= 2Q_0 q^{1/4} \sin \pi u \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 - 2q^{2n} \cos 2\pi u + q^{4n}), \\ \vartheta_2(u) &= 2Q_0 q^{1/4} \cos \pi u \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 + 2q^{2n} \cos 2\pi u + q^{4n}), \\ \vartheta_3(u) &= Q_0 \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} (1 + 2q^{2n-1} \cos 2\pi u + q^{4n-2}).\end{aligned}$$

(III) Jacobi's Elliptic Functions

(1) We express the modulus k and the complementary modulus as follows.

$$k = \frac{\vartheta_2^2(0)}{\vartheta_3^2(0)}, \quad k' = \frac{\vartheta_0^2(0)}{\vartheta_3^2(0)}, \quad k^2 + k'^2 = 1.$$

Then we have

$$K(k) = K = \frac{\pi}{2} \vartheta_3^2(0), \quad K'(k) = K' = -i\tau K.$$

The relation between q and k is

$$\begin{aligned}q &= e^{i\pi\tau} = e^{-\pi(K'/K)}, \\ q^{1/4} &= \left(\frac{k}{4}\right)^{1/2} \left[1 + 2\left(\frac{k}{4}\right)^2 + 15\left(\frac{k}{4}\right)^4 + 150\left(\frac{k}{4}\right)^6 + 1707\left(\frac{k}{4}\right)^8 + \dots\right], \\ q &= \frac{1}{2}L + \frac{2}{2^5}L^5 + \frac{15}{2^9}L^9 + \frac{150}{2^{13}}L^{13} + \frac{1707}{2^{17}}L^{17} + \dots, \quad \text{where } L = \frac{1 - \sqrt[4]{1-k^2}}{1 + \sqrt[4]{1-k^2}}.\end{aligned}$$

(2) Functions sn, cn, dn; Addition Theorem.

$$\begin{aligned}\operatorname{sn}(u, k) &\equiv \frac{1}{\sqrt{k}} \frac{\vartheta_1(u/2K)}{\vartheta_0(u/2K)}, \quad \operatorname{cn}(u, k) \equiv \sqrt{\frac{k'}{k}} \frac{\vartheta_2(u/2K)}{\vartheta_0(u/2K)}, \quad \operatorname{dn}(u, k) \equiv \sqrt{k'} \frac{\vartheta_3(u/2K)}{\vartheta_0(u/2K)}, \\ \operatorname{sn}^2 u + \operatorname{cn}^2 u &= 1, \quad \operatorname{dn}^2 u + k^2 \operatorname{sn}^2 u = 1, \\ \operatorname{sn}(u+v) &= \frac{\operatorname{sn} u \operatorname{cn} v \operatorname{dn} v + \operatorname{sn} v \operatorname{cn} u \operatorname{dn} u}{1 - k^2 \operatorname{sn}^2 u \operatorname{sn}^2 v}, \quad \operatorname{cn}(u+v) = \frac{\operatorname{cn} u \operatorname{cn} v - \operatorname{sn} u \operatorname{dn} u \operatorname{sn} v \operatorname{dn} v}{1 - k^2 \operatorname{sn}^2 u \operatorname{sn}^2 v}, \\ \operatorname{dn}(u+v) &= \frac{\operatorname{dn} u \operatorname{dn} v - k^2 \operatorname{sn} u \operatorname{cn} u \operatorname{sn} v \operatorname{cn} v}{1 - k^2 \operatorname{sn}^2 u \operatorname{sn}^2 v}, \\ \frac{d \operatorname{sn} u}{du} &= \operatorname{cn} u \operatorname{dn} u, \quad \frac{d \operatorname{cn} u}{du} = -\operatorname{sn} u \operatorname{dn} u, \quad \frac{d \operatorname{dn} u}{du} = -k^2 \operatorname{sn} u \operatorname{cn} u.\end{aligned}$$

(3) Periodicity. In the next table, m and n are integers.

Increment of u	$\operatorname{sn} u$	$\operatorname{cn} u$	$\operatorname{dn} u$
$2mK + 2niK'$	$(-1)^m \operatorname{sn} u$	$(-1)^{m+n} \operatorname{cn} u$	$(-1)^n \operatorname{dn} u$
$(2m-1)K + 2niK'$	$(-1)^{m+1} \frac{\operatorname{cn} u}{\operatorname{dn} u}$	$(-1)^{m+n} k' \frac{\operatorname{sn} u}{\operatorname{dn} u}$	$(-1)^n k' \frac{1}{\operatorname{dn} u}$
$2mK + (2n+1)iK'$	$(-1)^m k^{-1} \frac{1}{\operatorname{sn} u}$	$(-1)^{m+n+1} k^{-1} \frac{\operatorname{dn} u}{\operatorname{sn} u}$	$i(-1)^{n+1} \frac{\operatorname{cn} u}{\operatorname{sn} u}$
$(2m-1)K + (2n+1)iK'$	$(-1)^{m+1} k^{-1} \frac{\operatorname{dn} u}{\operatorname{cn} u}$	$(-1)^{m+n} i k' k^{-1} \frac{1}{\operatorname{cn} u}$	$(-1)^n i k' \frac{\operatorname{sn} u}{\operatorname{cn} u}$
Zeros $u =$	$2nK + 2miK'$	$(2n+1)K + 2miK'$	$(2n+1)K + (2m+1)iK'$
Poles $u =$	$2nK + (2m+1)iK'$	$2nK + (2m+1)iK'$	$2nK + (2m+1)iK'$
Fundamental periods	$4K, 2iK'$	$4K, 2K + 2iK'$	$2K, 4iK'$

(4) Change of Variables. In the next table, the second column, for example, means the relation $\operatorname{sn}(ku, 1/k) = k \operatorname{sn}(u, k)$.

u	k	sn	cn	dn
ku	$1/k$	$k \operatorname{sn}$	dn	cn
iu	k'	$i \frac{\operatorname{sn}}{\operatorname{cn}}$	$\frac{1}{\operatorname{cn}}$	$\frac{\operatorname{dn}}{\operatorname{cn}}$
$k'u$	$i \frac{k}{k'}$	$k' \frac{\operatorname{sn}}{\operatorname{dn}}$	$\frac{\operatorname{cn}}{\operatorname{dn}}$	$\frac{1}{\operatorname{dn}}$
iku	$i \frac{k'}{k}$	$ik \frac{\operatorname{sn}}{\operatorname{dn}}$	$\frac{1}{\operatorname{dn}}$	$\frac{\operatorname{cn}}{\operatorname{dn}}$
$ik'u$	$\frac{1}{k'}$	$ik' \frac{\operatorname{sn}}{\operatorname{cn}}$	$\frac{\operatorname{dn}}{\operatorname{cn}}$	$\frac{1}{\operatorname{cn}}$
$(1+k)u$	$\frac{2\sqrt{k}}{1+k}$	$\frac{(1+k)\operatorname{sn}}{1+k\operatorname{sn}^2}$	$\frac{\operatorname{cn} \operatorname{dn}}{1+k\operatorname{sn}^2}$	$\frac{1-k\operatorname{sn}^2}{1+k\operatorname{sn}^2}$ (Gauss's transformation)
$(1+k')u$	$\frac{1-k'}{1+k'}$	$(1+k') \frac{\operatorname{sn} \operatorname{cn}}{\operatorname{dn}}$	$\frac{1-(1+k')\operatorname{sn}^2}{\operatorname{dn}}$	$\frac{1-(1-k')\operatorname{sn}^2}{\operatorname{dn}}$ (Landen's transformation)
$\frac{(1+k')^2 u}{2}$	$\left(\frac{1-\sqrt{k'}}{1+\sqrt{k'}} \right)^2$	$\frac{1+\sqrt{k'}}{1-\sqrt{k'}} \frac{k^2 \operatorname{sn} \operatorname{cn}}{(1+\operatorname{dn})(k'+\operatorname{dn})}$	$\frac{\operatorname{dn}-\sqrt{k'}}{1-\sqrt{k'}} \times$	$\frac{\sqrt{2(1+k')}}{1+\sqrt{k'}} \frac{\operatorname{dn}+\sqrt{k'}}{\sqrt{(1+\operatorname{dn})(k'+\operatorname{dn})}}$
$\sqrt{\frac{2(1+k')}{(1+\operatorname{dn})(k'+\operatorname{dn})}}$				

Jacobi's transformation. $\operatorname{sn}(iu, k) = i \frac{\operatorname{sn}(u, k')}{\operatorname{cn}(u, k')}, \quad \operatorname{cn}(iu, k) = \frac{1}{\operatorname{cn}(u, k')},$

$\operatorname{dn}(iu, k) = \frac{\operatorname{dn}(u, k')}{\operatorname{cn}(u, k')}.$

(5) Amplitude.
The inverse function $\varphi = \operatorname{am}(u, k)$ of $u(k, \varphi) \equiv F(k, \varphi) = \int_0^\varphi \frac{d\psi}{\sqrt{1-k^2 \sin^2 \psi}}$
is called the amplitude.

$$\operatorname{sn}(u, k) = \sin \varphi = \sin \operatorname{am}(u, k), \quad \operatorname{cn}(u, k) = \cos \varphi = \cos \operatorname{am}(u, k),$$

$$\operatorname{dn}(u, k) = \sqrt{1 - k^2 \sin^2 \varphi} = \sqrt{1 - k^2 \operatorname{sn}^2(u, k)}.$$

$$u(k, x) = \int_0^x \frac{dt}{\sqrt{(1-t^2)(1-k^2 t^2)}}, \quad x = \operatorname{sn}(u, k).$$

$$\operatorname{am}(u, k) = \frac{\pi u}{2K} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{2q^n}{n(1+q^{2n})} \sin\left(n\pi \frac{u}{2K}\right) \quad (q = e^{i\pi\tau} = e^{-\pi(K'/K)}).$$

$$\operatorname{am}(\theta, 1) = \operatorname{gd} \theta \quad (\text{Gudermann function}).$$

(IV) Weierstrass's Elliptic Functions

(1) Weierstrass's \wp -function. For the fundamental periods $2\omega_1, 2\omega_3$, we have

$$\begin{aligned} \wp(u) &\equiv \frac{1}{u^2} + \sum'_{n,m} \left[\frac{1}{(u - 2n\omega_1 - 2m\omega_3)^2} - \frac{1}{(2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3)^2} \right] \\ &= \frac{1}{u^2} + \frac{g_2}{20} u^2 + \frac{g_3}{28} u^4 + \frac{g_2^2}{1200} u^6 + \frac{3g_2 g_3}{6160} u^8 + \dots \\ g_2 &\equiv 60 \sum'_{n,m} \frac{1}{(2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3)^4}, \quad g_3 \equiv 140 \sum'_{n,m} \frac{1}{(2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3)^6}, \end{aligned}$$

where \sum' means the sum over all integers except $m = n = 0$.

$\wp(-u) = \wp(u)$. Putting $\omega_2 \equiv -(\omega_1 + \omega_3)$, $e_j \equiv \wp(\omega_j)$ ($j = 1, 2, 3$) we have

$$e_1 + e_2 + e_3 = 0, \quad e_1 e_2 + e_2 e_3 + e_3 e_1 = -g_2/4, \quad e_1 e_2 e_3 = g_3/4.$$

$$\wp'(u) \equiv d\wp/du = -2 \sum'_{m,n} \frac{1}{(u - 2n\omega_1 - 2m\omega_3)^3}.$$

$$\wp'^2(u) = 4[\wp(u) - e_1][\wp(u) - e_2][\wp(u) - e_3] = 4\wp^3(u) - g_2\wp(u) - g_3.$$

Addition theorem

$$\begin{aligned} \wp(u+v) &= -\wp(u) - \wp(v) + \frac{1}{4} \left[\frac{\wp'(u) - \wp'(v)}{\wp(u) - \wp(v)} \right]^2, \\ \wp(u + \omega_j) &= e_j + \frac{(e_j - e_k)(e_j - e_l)}{\wp(u) - e_j} \quad (j, k, l) = (1, 2, 3). \end{aligned}$$

Using theta functions corresponding to $\tau = \omega_3/\omega_1$,

$$\begin{aligned} \wp(u) &= -\frac{\eta_1}{\omega_1} - \frac{d^2 \log \vartheta_1(u/2\omega_1)}{du^2} \quad \left(\eta_1 = \zeta(\omega_1) = -\frac{1}{12\omega_1} \frac{\vartheta_1'''(0)}{\vartheta_1'(0)} \right), \\ \wp'(u) &= -\frac{1}{4\omega_1^3} \frac{\vartheta_1'^3(0) \vartheta_2(u/2\omega_1) \vartheta_3(u/2\omega_1) \vartheta_0(u/2\omega_1)}{\vartheta_2(0) \vartheta_0(0) \vartheta_1^3(u/2\omega_1)}. \end{aligned}$$

The relations to Jacobi's elliptic functions are

$$q \equiv \exp(i\pi\omega_3/\omega_1).$$

$$\wp\left(\frac{u}{\sqrt{e_1 - e_3}}\right) = e_1 + (e_1 - e_3) \frac{\operatorname{cn}^2 u}{\operatorname{sn}^2 u} = e_2 + (e_1 - e_3) \frac{\operatorname{dn}^2 u}{\operatorname{sn}^2 u} = e_3 + (e_1 - e_3) \frac{1}{\operatorname{sn}^2 u},$$

$$\text{where the modulus is } k = \sqrt{\frac{e_2 - e_3}{e_1 - e_3}}, \quad K(k) = \omega_1 \sqrt{e_1 - e_3}.$$

(2) ζ -function.

$$\begin{aligned} \zeta(u) &\equiv \frac{1}{u} + \sum'_{n,m} \left[\frac{1}{u - 2n\omega_1 - 2m\omega_3} + \frac{u}{(2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3)^2} + \frac{1}{2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3} \right] \\ &= \frac{1}{u} - \frac{g_2}{60} u^3 - \frac{g_3}{140} u^5 - \frac{g_2^2}{8400} u^7 - \frac{g_2 g_3}{18480} u^9 - \dots \\ &= (\zeta_1/\omega_1)u + d \log \vartheta_1(u/2\omega_1)/du. \\ \zeta'(u) &= -\wp(u). \end{aligned}$$

Gamma Functions and Related Functions

Pseudoperiodicity. Putting $\eta_j \equiv \zeta(\omega_j)$ ($j=1, 2, 3$) we have

$$\zeta(u + 2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3) = \zeta(u) + 2n\eta_1 + 2m\eta_3 \quad (n, m = 0, \pm 1, \pm 2, \dots),$$

$$\eta_1 = -\frac{1}{12\omega_1} \frac{\vartheta_1'''(0)}{\vartheta_1'(0)}, \quad \eta_1 + \eta_2 + \eta_3 = 0,$$

$$\eta_1\omega_3 - \eta_3\omega_1 = \eta_2\omega_1 - \eta_1\omega_2 = \eta_3\omega_2 - \eta_2\omega_3 = \pi i/2 \text{ (Legendre's relation).}$$

Addition theorem $\zeta(u+v) = \zeta(u) + \zeta(v) + \frac{1}{2} \frac{\zeta''(u) - \zeta''(v)}{\zeta'(u) - \zeta'(v)}$.

(3) σ -function.

$$\sigma(u) \equiv \prod'_{n,m} \left(1 - \frac{u}{2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3}\right) \exp \left[\frac{u}{2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3} + \frac{1}{2} \left(\frac{u}{2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3} \right)^2 \right] \quad \begin{matrix} n, m = 0, \pm 1, \\ \pm 2, \dots, \\ (n, m) \neq (0, 0) \end{matrix}$$

$$= u - \frac{g_2}{2^4 \cdot 3 \cdot 5} u^5 - \frac{g_3}{2^3 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \cdot 7} u^7 - \frac{g_2^2}{2^9 \cdot 3^2 \cdot 5 \cdot 7} u^9 - \dots$$

$$= 2\omega_1 \left(\exp \frac{\eta_1 u^2}{2\omega_1} \right) \frac{\vartheta_1(u/2\omega_1)}{\vartheta_1'(0)}.$$

$$\zeta(u) = \sigma'(u)/\sigma(u), \quad \sigma(-u) = -\sigma(u).$$

Pseudoperiodicity. $\sigma(u + 2n\omega_1 + 2m\omega_3) = (-1)^{n+m} [\exp(2n\eta_1 + 2m\eta_3)(u + n\omega_1 + m\omega_3)] \sigma(u)$.

(4) Cosigma functions $\sigma_1, \sigma_2, \sigma_3$.

$$\sigma_j(u) \equiv -e^{\eta_j u} \frac{\sigma(u + \omega_j)}{\sigma(u)} = \left(\exp \frac{\eta_1 u^2}{2\omega_1} \right) \frac{\vartheta_{j+1}(u/2\omega_1)}{\vartheta_{j+1}(0)} \quad (j=1, 2, 3; \vartheta_4 \equiv \vartheta_0).$$

$$\wp(u) - e_j = \left[\frac{\sigma_j(u)}{\sigma(u)} \right]^2, \quad \wp'(2u) = -\frac{2\sigma_1(u)\sigma_2(u)\sigma_3(u)}{\sigma^3(u)} = -\frac{\sigma(2u)}{\sigma^4(u)}.$$

$$\operatorname{sn} u = \alpha \frac{\sigma(u/\alpha)}{\sigma_3(u/\alpha)}, \quad \operatorname{cn} u = \frac{\sigma_1(u/\alpha)}{\sigma_3(u/\alpha)}, \quad \operatorname{dn} u = \frac{\sigma_2(u/\alpha)}{\sigma_3(u/\alpha)}, \quad \text{where } \alpha = \sqrt{e_1 - e_3} = \frac{K}{\omega_1}.$$

References

- [1] W. F. Magnus, F. Oberhettinger, and R. P. Soni, Formulas and theorems for the special functions of mathematical physics, Springer, third enlarged edition, 1966.
- [2] Y. L. Luke, The special functions and their approximations I, II, Academic Press, 1969.
- [3] A. Erdelyi, Higher transcendental functions I, II, III (Bateman manuscript project) McGraw-Hill, 1953, 1955.

In particular, for hypergeometric functions of two variables see

- [4] P. Appell, Sur les fonctions hypergéométriques de plusieurs variables, Mémor. Sci. Math., Gauthier-Villars, 1925.

Also \rightarrow references to 39 Bessel Functions, 134 Elliptic Functions, 174 Gamma Function, 389 Special Functions.

17. Gamma Functions and Related Functions**(I) Gamma Functions and Beta Functions (\rightarrow 174 Gamma Function)**

In this Section (I), C means Euler's constant, B_n means a Bernoulli number, ζ means the Riemann zeta function.

(1) Gamma function. $\Gamma(z) \equiv \int_0^\infty e^{-t} t^{z-1} dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 0)$

$$= \frac{1}{e^{2\pi iz} - 1} \int_\infty^{(0+)} e^{-t} t^{z-1} dt.$$

In the last integral, the integration contour goes once around the positive real axis in the positive direction.

$$\Gamma(n+1) = n! \quad (n=0, 1, 2, \dots), \quad \Gamma(1/2) = \sqrt{\pi}.$$

$$\Gamma(z+1) = z\Gamma(z), \quad \Gamma(z)\Gamma(1-z) = \frac{\pi}{\sin \pi z}, \quad \prod_{j=0}^{n-1} \Gamma\left(z + \frac{j}{n}\right) = (2\pi)^{(n-1)/2} n^{(1/2)-nz} \Gamma(nz),$$

$$\frac{1}{\Gamma(z)} = ze^{Cz} \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(1 + \frac{z}{n}\right) e^{-z/n}, \quad \log \Gamma(1+z) = -\frac{1}{2} \log \frac{\sin \pi z}{\pi z} - Cz - \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{\zeta(2n+1)}{2n+1} z^{2n+1} \quad (|z| < 1).$$

$$\left| \frac{\Gamma(x+iy)}{\Gamma(x)} \right|^2 = \prod_{n=0}^{\infty} 1 / \left(1 + \frac{y^2}{(x+n)^2} \right) \quad (x, y \text{ are real and } x > 0).$$

Asymptotic expansion (Stirling formula).

$$\begin{aligned} \Gamma(z) &\approx e^{-z} z^{z-1} \sqrt{2\pi z} \exp \left[\sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{n-1} B_{2n} z^{1-2n}}{2n(2n-1)} \right] \quad (|\arg z| < \pi) \\ &= e^{-z} z^{z-(1/2)} \sqrt{2\pi} \left[1 + \frac{1}{12z} + \frac{1}{288z^2} - \frac{139}{51840z^3} - \frac{571}{2488320z^4} + O(z^{-5}) \right]. \end{aligned}$$

(2) Beta Function. $B(x, y) \equiv \int_0^1 t^{x-1} (1-t)^{y-1} dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} x, \operatorname{Re} y > 0)$
 $= \Gamma(x)\Gamma(y)/\Gamma(x+y).$

(3) Incomplete Gamma Function.

$$\gamma(v, x) \equiv \int_0^x t^{v-1} e^{-t} dt = \Gamma(v) - x^{(v-1)/2} e^{-x/2} W_{(v-1)/2, v/2}(x) \quad (\operatorname{Re} v > 0).$$

(4) Incomplete Beta Function. $B_\alpha(x, y) \equiv \int_0^\alpha t^{x-1} (1-t)^{y-1} dt \quad (0 < \alpha \leq 1).$

(5) Polygamma Functions. $\psi(z) \equiv \frac{d}{dz} \log \Gamma(z)$

$$= \frac{\Gamma'(z)}{\Gamma(z)} = \int_0^\infty \left[\frac{e^{-t}}{t} - \frac{e^{-zt}}{1-e^{-t}} \right] dt = -C + \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \left(\frac{1}{n+1} - \frac{1}{z+n} \right).$$

$$\psi'(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{(z+n)^2}, \quad \psi^{(k)}(z) = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^{k+1} k!}{(z+n)^{k+1}} \quad (k=1, 2, \dots).$$

(II) Combinatorial Problems (→ 330 Permutations and Combinations)

Factorial $n! = n(n-1)(n-2)\dots 3 \cdot 2 \cdot 1, \quad 0! = 1.$

Binomial coefficient $\binom{\alpha}{r} = \frac{\alpha(\alpha-1)\dots(\alpha-r+1)}{r!}.$

(1) Number of Permutations of n Elements Taken r at a Time.

$${}_n P_r = n(n-1)\dots(n-r+1) = n!/(n-r)!.$$

Number of combinations of n elements taken r at a time

$${}_n C_r = \frac{{}_n P_r}{r!} = \frac{n!}{r!(n-r)!} = \binom{n}{r}.$$

$${}_n C_r = {}_n C_{n-r}, \quad {}_n C_r = {}_{n-1} C_r + {}_{n-1} C_{r-1}.$$

Number of multiple permutations ${}_n \Pi_r = n^r.$

Number of multiple combinations ${}_n H_r = {}_{n+r-1} C_r = \frac{(n+r-1)!}{r!(n-1)!}.$

Number of circular permutations ${}_n P_r / r.$

(2) Binomial Theorem. $(a+b)^n = \sum_{r=0}^n \binom{n}{r} a^{n-r} b^r.$

Multinomial theorem $(a_1 + \dots + a_m)^n = \sum \frac{n!}{p_1! \dots p_m!} a_1^{p_1} \dots a_m^{p_m}.$

The latter summation runs over all nonnegative integers satisfying $p_1 + \dots + p_m = n.$

References

See references to Table 16, this Appendix.

18. Hypergeometric Functions and Spherical Functions

(I) Hypergeometric Function (\rightarrow 206 Hypergeometric Functions)

(1) Hypergeometric Function. $F(a, b; c; z) \equiv \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\Gamma(a+n)}{\Gamma(a)} \frac{\Gamma(b+n)}{\Gamma(b)} \frac{\Gamma(c)}{\Gamma(c+n)} \frac{z^n}{n!}.$

The fundamental system of solutions of the hypergeometric differential equation

$$z(1-z) \frac{d^2 u}{dz^2} + [c - (a+b+1)z] \frac{du}{dz} - abu = 0 \text{ at } z=0 \text{ is given by}$$

$$u_1 = F(a, b; c; z), \quad u_2 = z^{1-c} F(a-c+1, b-c+1; 2-c; z) \quad (c \neq 0, -1, -2, \dots).$$

$$F(a, b; c; z) = F(b, a; c; z). \quad dF/dz = (ab/c) F(a+1, b+1; c+1; z).$$

$$F(a, b; c; 1) = \frac{\Gamma(c)\Gamma(c-a-b)}{\Gamma(c-a)\Gamma(c-b)} \quad (\operatorname{Re}(a+b-c) < 0).$$

$$F(a, b; c; z) = \frac{\Gamma(c)}{\Gamma(b)\Gamma(c-b)} \int_0^1 t^{b-1} (1-t)^{c-b-1} (1-tz)^{-a} dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} c > \operatorname{Re} b > 0, \quad |z| < 1),$$

$$F(a, b; c; z) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \frac{\Gamma(c)}{\Gamma(a)\Gamma(b)} \int_{-\infty}^{\infty} \frac{\Gamma(a+s)\Gamma(b+s)\Gamma(-s)}{\Gamma(c+s)} (-z)^s ds.$$

(2) Transformations of the Hypergeometric Function.

$$\begin{aligned} F(a, b; c; z) &= (1-z)^{-a} F\left(a, c-b; c; \frac{z}{z-1}\right) \\ &= (1-z)^{c-a-b} F(c-a, c-b; c; z) \\ &= (1-z)^{-a} \frac{\Gamma(c)\Gamma(b-a)}{\Gamma(b)\Gamma(c-a)} F\left(a, c-b; a-b+1; \frac{1}{1-z}\right) \\ &\quad + (1-z)^{-b} \frac{\Gamma(c)\Gamma(a-b)}{\Gamma(a)\Gamma(c-b)} F\left(b, c-a; b-a+1; \frac{1}{1-z}\right) \\ &= \frac{\Gamma(c)\Gamma(c-a-b)}{\Gamma(c-a)\Gamma(c-b)} F(a, b; a+b-c+1; 1-z) \\ &\quad + (1-z)^{c-a-b} \frac{\Gamma(c)\Gamma(a+b-c)}{\Gamma(a)\Gamma(b)} F(c-a, c-b; c-a-b+1; 1-z) \\ &= \frac{\Gamma(c)\Gamma(b-a)}{\Gamma(b)\Gamma(c-a)} (-z)^{-a} F\left(a, 1-c+a; 1-b+a; \frac{1}{z}\right) \\ &\quad + \frac{\Gamma(c)\Gamma(a-b)}{\Gamma(a)\Gamma(c-b)} (-z)^{-b} F\left(b, 1-c+b; 1-a+b; \frac{1}{z}\right). \end{aligned}$$

(3) Riemann's Differential Equation (\rightarrow Table 14.II, this Appendix).

$$\frac{d^2u}{dz^2} + \left[\frac{1-\alpha-\alpha'}{z-a} + \frac{1-\beta-\beta'}{z-b} + \frac{1-\gamma-\gamma'}{z-c} \right] \frac{du}{dz} + \left[\frac{\alpha\alpha'(a-b)(a-c)}{z-a} + \frac{\beta\beta'(b-c)(b-a)}{z-b} + \frac{\gamma\gamma'(c-a)(c-b)}{z-c} \right] \frac{u}{(z-a)(z-b)(z-c)} = 0.$$

Here we have $\alpha + \alpha' + \beta + \beta' + \gamma + \gamma' = 1$ (Fuchsian relation). The solution of this equation is given by Riemann's P -function

$$u = P \left\{ \begin{matrix} a & b & c \\ \alpha & \beta & \gamma & z \\ \alpha' & \beta' & \gamma' \end{matrix} \right\} = \left(\frac{z-a}{z-b} \right)^\alpha \left(\frac{z-c}{z-b} \right)^\gamma F \left(\alpha + \beta + \gamma, \alpha + \beta' + \gamma; 1 + \alpha - \alpha'; \frac{(c-b)(z-a)}{(c-a)(z-b)} \right) \\ (\alpha - \alpha', \beta - \beta', \gamma - \gamma' \neq \text{integer}).$$

We have 24 representations of the above function by interchanging the parameters $a, b, c; \alpha, \alpha'; \beta, \beta'; \gamma, \gamma'$ in the right-hand side.

(4) Barnes's Extended Hypergeometric Function.

$${}_pF_q(\alpha_1, \dots, \alpha_p; \beta_1, \dots, \beta_q; z) \equiv \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\alpha_1)_n \dots (\alpha_p)_n}{(\beta_1)_n \dots (\beta_q)_n} \frac{z^n}{n!}, \quad \text{where } (\alpha)_n = \alpha(\alpha+1) \dots (\alpha+n-1) \\ = \Gamma(\alpha+n)/\Gamma(\alpha). \quad F(a, b; c; z) = {}_2F_1(a, b; c; z). \quad {}_0F_0(x) = e^x, \quad {}_1F_0(\alpha; x) = (1-x)^{-\alpha}.$$

(5) Appell's Hypergeometric Functions of Two Variables.

$$F_1(\alpha; \beta, \beta'; \gamma; x, y) = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\alpha)_{m+n} (\beta)_m (\beta')_n}{m! n! (\gamma)_{m+n}} x^m y^n, \\ F_2(\alpha; \beta, \beta'; \gamma, \gamma'; x, y) = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\alpha)_{m+n} (\beta)_m (\beta')_n}{m! n! (\gamma)_m (\gamma')_n} x^m y^n, \\ F_3(\alpha, \alpha'; \beta, \beta'; \gamma; x, y) = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\alpha)_m (\alpha')_n (\beta)_m (\beta')_n}{m! n! (\gamma)_{m+n}} x^m y^n, \\ F_4(\alpha; \beta; \gamma, \gamma'; x, y) = \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(\alpha)_{m+n} (\beta)_{m+n}}{m! n! (\gamma)_m (\gamma')_n} x^m y^n.$$

(6) Representation of Various Special Functions by Hypergeometric Functions.

$$(1-x)^{\nu} = F(-\nu, b; b; x), \quad e^{-nx} = \left(\frac{\operatorname{sech} x}{2} \right)^n (\tanh x) F\left(1 + \frac{n}{2}, \frac{1+n}{2}; 1+n; \operatorname{sech}^2 x\right).$$

$$\log(1+x) = xF(1, 1; 2; -x), \quad \frac{1}{2} \log \frac{1+x}{1-x} = xF\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1; \frac{3}{2}; x^2\right),$$

$$\sin nx = n(\sin x) F\left(\frac{1+n}{2}, \frac{1-n}{2}; \frac{3}{2}; \sin^2 x\right),$$

$$\cos nx = F\left(\frac{n}{2}, -\frac{n}{2}; \frac{1}{2}; \sin^2 x\right) = (\cos x) F\left(\frac{1+n}{2}, \frac{1-n}{2}; \frac{1}{2}; \sin^2 x\right),$$

$$\arcsin x = xF\left(\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}; \frac{3}{2}; x^2\right), \quad \arctan x = xF\left(\frac{1}{2}, 1; \frac{3}{2}; -x^2\right).$$

$$P_{2n}(x) = (-1)^n \frac{(2n-1)!!}{(2n)!!} F\left(-n, n + \frac{1}{2}; \frac{1}{2}; x^2\right),$$

$$P_{2n+1}(x) = (-1)^n \frac{(2n+1)!!}{(2n)!!} x F\left(-n, n + \frac{3}{2}; \frac{3}{2}; x^2\right) \quad (\text{spherical function}),$$

where

$$n = 0, 1, 2, \dots; \quad m!! = \begin{cases} m(m-2)\dots 4\cdot 2 & (m \text{ even}), \\ m(m-2)\dots 3\cdot 1 & (m \text{ odd}), \end{cases} \quad 0!! = (-1)!! = 1.$$

$$K(x) = \frac{\pi}{2} F\left(\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}; 1; x^2\right), \quad E(x) = \frac{\pi}{2} F\left(-\frac{1}{2}, \frac{1}{2}; 1; x^2\right) \quad (\text{complete elliptic integral}).$$

$$J_\nu(x) = \frac{x}{2\Gamma(\nu+1)} {}_0F_1\left(\nu+1; -\frac{x^2}{4}\right) = \frac{x^\nu e^{-ix}}{2^\nu \Gamma(\nu+1)} {}_1F_1\left(\nu+\frac{1}{2}; 2\nu+1; 2ix\right).$$

$$e^x = \lim_{b \rightarrow \infty} F(a, b; a; x/b) = {}_1F_1(a; a; x) = {}_0F_0(x).$$

(II) Legendre Function (→ 393 Spherical Functions)

(1) Legendre Functions. The generalized spherical function corresponding to the rotation group of 3-dimensional space is the solution of the following differential equation.

$$(1-z^2) \frac{d^2 u}{dz^2} - 2z \frac{du}{dz} + \left[\nu(\nu+1) - \frac{\mu^2}{1-z^2} \right] u = 0.$$

When $\mu = 0$, the equation is Legendre's differential equation, and the fundamental system of solutions is given by the following two kind of functions.

$$\text{Legendre function of the first kind} \quad \mathfrak{P}_\nu(z) \equiv P_\nu(z) = {}_2F_1\left(-\nu, \nu+1; 1; \frac{1-z}{2}\right).$$

Legendre function of the second kind

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z) \equiv \frac{\Gamma(\nu+1)\sqrt{\pi}}{2^{\nu+1}\Gamma[\nu+(3/2)]} z^{-\nu-1} {}_2F_1\left(\frac{\nu+2}{2}, \frac{\nu+1}{2}; \nu+\frac{3}{2}; \frac{1}{z^2}\right).$$

$$\begin{aligned} Q_\nu(x) &\equiv \frac{1}{2} [\mathfrak{Q}_\nu(x+i0) + \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(x-i0)] \\ &= \pi \frac{(\cos \nu\pi) P_\nu(x) - P_\nu(-x)}{2 \sin \nu\pi} \quad (\nu \neq \text{integer}; -1 < x < 1). \end{aligned}$$

Recurrence formulas:

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu(z) = \mathfrak{P}_{-\nu-1}(z), \quad \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z) - \mathfrak{Q}_{-\nu-1}(z) = \pi(\cot \nu\pi) \mathfrak{P}_\nu(z) \quad (\nu \neq \text{integer}).$$

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu(-z) = e^{\pm \nu \pi i} \mathfrak{P}_\nu(z) - (2/\pi)(\sin \nu\pi) \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z), \quad \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(-z) = -e^{\pm \nu \pi i} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z) \quad (\pm = \text{sgn}(\text{Im } z)).$$

$$(z^2-1) d\mathfrak{P}_\nu(z)/dz = (\nu+1)[\mathfrak{P}_{\nu+1}(z) - z\mathfrak{P}_\nu(z)],$$

$$(2\nu+1)z\mathfrak{P}_\nu(z) = (\nu+1)\mathfrak{P}_{\nu+1}(z) + \nu\mathfrak{P}_{\nu-1}(z),$$

$$(z^2-1) d\mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z)/dz = (\nu+1)[\mathfrak{Q}_{\nu+1}(z) - z\mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z)],$$

$$(2\nu+1)z\mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z) = (\nu+1)\mathfrak{Q}_{\nu+1}(z) + \nu\mathfrak{Q}_{\nu-1}(z).$$

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{P}_\nu(z) &= \pi^{-1/2} 2^{-\nu-1} \tan \nu\pi \frac{\Gamma(\nu+1)}{\Gamma[\nu+(3/2)]} z^{-\nu-1} {}_2F_1\left(\frac{\nu}{2}+1, \frac{\nu+1}{2}; \nu+\frac{3}{2}; \frac{1}{z^2}\right) \\ &+ \pi^{-1/2} 2^\nu \frac{\Gamma[\nu+(1/2)]}{\Gamma(\nu+1)} z^\nu {}_2F_1\left(\frac{1-\nu}{2}, -\frac{\nu}{2}; \frac{1}{2}-\nu; \frac{1}{z^2}\right). \end{aligned}$$

$$P_\nu(\cos \theta) = \frac{\sin \nu\pi}{\pi} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n \left(\frac{1}{\nu-n} - \frac{1}{\nu+n+1} \right) P_n(\cos \theta) \quad (\nu \neq \text{integer}; 0 \leq \theta < \pi).$$

$$\text{Estimation:} \quad |P_\nu(\cos \theta)| \leq \frac{2}{\sqrt{\nu\pi} \sin \theta}, \quad |Q_\nu(\cos \theta)| \leq \frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{\sqrt{\nu} \sin \theta} \quad (0 < \theta < \pi; \nu > 1).$$

$$P_\nu(1) = 1, \quad P_\nu(0) = -\frac{\sin \nu\pi}{2\pi^{3/2}} \Gamma\left(\frac{\nu+1}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{-\nu}{2}\right),$$

$$Q_\nu(0) = \frac{1}{4\sqrt{\pi}} (1 - \cos \nu\pi) \Gamma\left(\frac{\nu+1}{2}\right) \Gamma\left(\frac{-\nu}{2}\right).$$

(2) The Case $\nu = n$ ($= 0, 1, 2, \dots$). In the following, the symbol !! means

$$m!! \equiv \begin{cases} m(m-2)\dots 4\cdot 2 & (m \text{ even}), \\ m(m-2)\dots 5\cdot 3\cdot 1 & (m \text{ odd}). \end{cases}$$

The function P_n is a polynomial of degree n (Legendre polynomial) and is represented as follows:

$$\begin{aligned}
 P_n(z) &\equiv \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dz^n} (z^2 - 1)^n \\
 &= \frac{(2n)!}{2^n (n!)^2} z^n {}_2F_1\left(-\frac{n}{2}, \frac{1-n}{2}; \frac{1}{2} - n; \frac{1}{z^2}\right) \\
 &= \frac{(2n-1)!!}{n!} \left[z^n - \frac{n(n-1)}{(2n-1)} z^{n-2} + \frac{n(n-1)(n-2)(n-3)}{2 \cdot 4 \cdot (2n-1)(2n-3)} z^{n-4} + \dots \right]. \\
 P_{2m}(z) &= \sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^{m-j} \frac{(2m+2j-1)!!}{(2j)!(2m-2j)!!} z^{2j}, \\
 P_{2m+1}(z) &= \sum_{j=0}^m (-1)^{m-j} \frac{(2m+2j+1)!!}{(2j+1)!(2m-2j)!!} z^{2j+1}. \\
 P_n(\cos \theta) &= \frac{(2n)!}{2^{2n} (n!)^2} e^{\mp i n \theta} {}_2F_1\left(\frac{1}{2}, -n; \frac{1}{2} - n; e^{\pm 2i\theta}\right) \\
 &= \frac{2(2n-1)!!}{(2n)!!} \left[\cos n\theta + \frac{1}{1} \frac{n}{(2n-1)} \cos(n-2)\theta + \frac{1 \cdot 3}{1 \cdot 2} \frac{n(n-1)}{(2n-1)(2n-3)} \cos(n-4)\theta \right. \\
 &\quad \left. + \frac{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5}{1 \cdot 2 \cdot 3} \frac{n(n-1)(n-2)}{(2n-1)(2n-3)(2n-5)} \cos(n-6)\theta + \dots \right] \\
 &\quad + \begin{cases} \left[\frac{(n-1)!!}{n!!} \right]^2 & (n \text{ even}), \\ 0 & (n \text{ odd}). \end{cases} \\
 &= \frac{4}{\pi} \frac{(2n)!!}{(2n+1)!!} \left[\sin(n+1)\theta + \frac{1 \cdot (n+1)}{1 \cdot (2n+3)} \sin(n+3)\theta \right. \\
 &\quad \left. + \frac{1 \cdot 3 \cdot (n+1)(n+2)}{1 \cdot 2 \cdot (2n+3)(2n+5)} \sin(n+5)\theta + \dots (\text{ad infinitum}) \right] \quad (0 < \theta < \pi).
 \end{aligned}$$

Laplace-Mehler integral representation

$$\begin{aligned}
 P_n(\cos \theta) &= \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi (\cos \theta + i \sin \theta \cos \varphi)^n d\varphi \\
 &= \frac{\sqrt{2}}{\pi} \int_0^\theta \frac{\cos[n + (1/2)]\varphi}{\sqrt{\cos \varphi - \cos \theta}} d\varphi = \frac{\sqrt{2}}{\pi} \int_\theta^\pi \frac{\sin[n + (1/2)]\varphi}{\sqrt{\cos \theta - \cos \varphi}} d\varphi.
 \end{aligned}$$

$$P_n(x) = \frac{(-1)^n}{n!} r^{n+1} \frac{\partial^n}{\partial z^n} \left(\frac{1}{r} \right) \quad \left(x = \frac{z}{r}, r = \sqrt{z^2 + \rho^2} \right).$$

$$P_n(1) = 1, \quad P_n(-1) = (-1)^n, \quad P_{2n+1}(0) = 0,$$

$$P_{2n}(0) = (-1)^n \frac{(2n)!}{2^{2n} (n!)^2} = \frac{(-1)^n (2n-1)!!}{(2n)!!}.$$

Recurrence formulas: $nP_n(z) - (2n-1)zP_{n-1}(z) + (n-1)P_{n-2}(z) = 0$,

$$(z^2 - 1) \frac{dP_n}{dz} = n(zP_n - P_{n-1}) = \frac{n(n+1)}{2n+1} (P_{n+1} - P_{n-1}) = (n+1)(P_{n+1} - zP_n).$$

$$\begin{aligned}
 \mathfrak{D}_n(z) &= \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dz^n} \left[(z^2 - 1)^n \log \frac{z+1}{z-1} \right] - \frac{1}{2} P_n(z) \log \frac{z+1}{z-1} \\
 &= 2^n n! \int_z^\infty \dots \int_z^\infty \frac{(dz)^{n+1}}{(z^2 - 1)^{n+1}} \\
 &= 2^n \int_z^\infty \frac{(t-z)^n}{(t^2 - 1)^{n+1}} dt \\
 &= (-1)^n \frac{1}{(2n-1)!!} \frac{d^n}{dz^n} \left[(z^2 - 1)^n \int_z^\infty \frac{dt}{(t^2 - 1)^{n+1}} \right] \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 1).
 \end{aligned}$$

$$Q_n(\cos \theta) = \frac{2 \cdot (2n)!!}{(2n+1)!!} \left[\cos(n+1)\theta + \frac{1 \cdot (n+1)}{1 \cdot (2n+3)} \cos(n+3)\theta \right. \\ \left. + \frac{1 \cdot 3 \cdot (n+1)(n+2)}{1 \cdot 2 \cdot (2n+3)(2n+5)} \cos(n+5)\theta + \dots \right] \quad (0 < \theta < \pi).$$

$$Q_n(x) = \frac{1}{2^n n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} \left[(x^2 - 1)^n \log \frac{1+x}{1-x} \right] - \frac{1}{2} P_n(x) \log \frac{1+x}{1-x} \\ = \frac{1}{2} P_n(x) \log \frac{1+x}{1-x} - \sum_{j=1}^n \frac{1}{j} P_{j-1}(x) P_{n-j}(x).$$

$$Q_0(x) = \frac{1}{2} \log \frac{1+x}{1-x}, \quad Q_1(x) = \frac{x}{2} \log \frac{1+x}{1-x} - 1, \quad Q_2(x) = \frac{1}{4} (3x^2 - 1) \log \frac{1+x}{1-x} - \frac{3}{2} x.$$

(3) Generating Functions.

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-2hz+h^2}} = \begin{cases} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} h^n P_n(z) & (|h| < \min|z \pm \sqrt{z^2-1}|), \\ \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{1}{h^{n+1}} P_n(z) & (|h| > \max|z \pm \sqrt{z^2-1}|). \end{cases}$$

(If $-1 \leq z \leq 1$, the right-hand side is equal to 1.)

$$\frac{1}{z-t} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (2n+1) \mathfrak{P}_n(t) \mathfrak{Q}_n(z) \quad (|t + \sqrt{t^2-1}| < |z + \sqrt{z^2-1}|).$$

$$\frac{1}{\sqrt{1-2tz+z^2}} \log \frac{z-t+\sqrt{1-2tz+z^2}}{\sqrt{z^2-1}} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} t^n \mathfrak{Q}_n(z) \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 1, |t| < 1).$$

$$r = \sqrt{x^2 + y^2 + z^2}, \quad \cos \theta = z/r, \quad x, y \text{ real},$$

$$\frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{2} + \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \left[\frac{1}{\sqrt{(2m\pi+z)^2 + x^2 + y^2}} + \frac{1}{\sqrt{(2m\pi-z)^2 + x^2 + y^2}} \right]$$

(Here the square root of a complex number is taken so that its real part is positive.)

$$= \begin{cases} 1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} e^{-nz} J_0(n\sqrt{x^2+y^2}) & (\operatorname{Re} z > 0), \\ \frac{1}{r} + \frac{1}{2} + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^n B_{2n}}{(2n)!} r^{2n-1} P_{2n-1}(\cos \theta) & (0 < \theta < 2\pi; z \text{ real}). \end{cases}$$

(4) Integrals of Legendre Polynomials.

$$\text{Orthogonal relations: } \int_{-1}^{+1} P_n(z) P_m(z) dz = \delta_{nm} \frac{2}{2n+1}.$$

$$\int_{-1}^{+1} z^k P_n(z) dz = 0 \quad (k=0, 1, \dots, n-1).$$

$$\int_0^1 z^\lambda P_n(z) dz = \begin{cases} \frac{\lambda(\lambda-2)\dots(\lambda-n+2)}{(\lambda+n+1)(\lambda+n-1)\dots(\lambda+1)} & (n \text{ even}), \\ \frac{(\lambda-1)(\lambda-3)\dots(\lambda-n+2)}{(\lambda+n+1)(\lambda+n-1)\dots(\lambda+2)} & (n \text{ odd}) \end{cases} \quad (\operatorname{Re} \lambda > -1).$$

$$\int_0^\pi P_n(\cos \theta) \sin m\theta d\theta = \begin{cases} \frac{2(m-n+1)(m-n+3)\dots(m+n-1)}{(m-n)(m-n+2)\dots(m+n)} & (m > n; m+n \text{ is odd}), \\ 0 & (\text{otherwise}). \end{cases}$$

(5) Conical Function (Kegelfunktion). This is the Legendre function corresponding to the case $\nu = -(1/2) + i\lambda$ (λ is a real parameter),

$$P_{-(1/2)+i\lambda}(\cos \theta) = 1 + \frac{4\lambda^2 + 1^2}{2^2} \sin^2 \frac{\theta}{2} + \frac{(4\lambda^2 + 1^2)(4\lambda^2 + 3^2)}{2^2 \cdot 4^2} \sin^4 \frac{\theta}{2} + \dots$$

$$P_{-(1/2)+i\lambda}(x) \equiv P_{-(1/2)-i\lambda}(x).$$

(III) Associated Legendre Functions (\rightarrow 393 Spherical Functions)

(1) Associated Legendre Functions. The fundamental system of solutions of the differential equation in (II) (1) is given by the following two kind of functions when $\mu \neq 0$.

Associated Legendre function of the first kind:

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z) \equiv \frac{1}{\Gamma(1-\mu)} \left(\frac{z+1}{z-1} \right)^{\mu/2} {}_2F_1 \left(-\nu, \nu+1; 1-\mu; \frac{1-z}{2} \right),$$

where we take the branch satisfying $\arg[(z+1)/(z-1)]^{\mu/2} = 0$ for $z > 1$ in the expression raised to the $(\mu/2)$ th power.

Associated Legendre function of the second kind:

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z) \equiv \frac{e^{i\mu\pi}}{2^{\nu+1}} \frac{\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)\sqrt{\pi}}{\Gamma[\nu+(3/2)]} (z^2-1)^{\mu/2} z^{-\nu-\mu-1} {}_2F_1 \left(\frac{\nu+\mu+2}{2}, \frac{\nu+\mu+1}{2}; \nu+\frac{3}{2}; \frac{1}{z^2} \right),$$

where we take the branch satisfying $\arg(z^2-1)^{\mu/2} = 0$ for $z > 1$ in $(z^2-1)^{\mu/2}$, and $\arg z^{-\nu-\mu-1} = 0$ for $z > 0$ in $z^{-\nu-\mu-1}$, respectively.

$$\begin{aligned} P_\nu^\mu(x) &\equiv e^{i\mu\pi/2} \mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(x+i0) = e^{i\mu\pi/2} \mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(x-i0) \\ &= \frac{1}{\Gamma(1-\mu)} \left(\frac{1+x}{1-x} \right)^{\mu/2} {}_2F_1 \left(-\nu, \nu+1; 1-\mu; \frac{1-x}{2} \right) \quad (-1 \leq x \leq 1). \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} Q_\nu^\mu(x) &\equiv e^{-i\mu\pi} \left[e^{-i\mu\pi/2} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(x+i0) + e^{i\mu\pi/2} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(x-i0) \right] / 2 \\ &= \frac{\pi}{2 \sin \mu\pi} \left[P_\nu^\mu(x) \cos \mu\pi - \frac{\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)}{\Gamma(\nu-\mu+1)} P_\nu^{-\mu}(x) \right] \quad (-1 \leq x \leq 1). \end{aligned}$$

Integral representations:

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^{-\mu}(z) = \frac{(z^2-1)^{\mu/2}}{2\mu\sqrt{\pi}\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)]} \int_{-1}^{+1} \frac{(1-t^2)^{\mu-1/2}}{(z+t\sqrt{z^2-1})^{\mu-\nu}} dt \quad \left(\operatorname{Re} \mu > -\frac{1}{2}, |\arg(z \pm 1)| < \pi \right).$$

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{P}_\nu^{-\mu}(z) &= \frac{(z^2-1)^{\mu-2}}{2^\nu \Gamma(\mu-\nu) \Gamma(\nu+1)} \int_0^\infty \frac{(\sinh t)^{2\nu+1}}{(z + \cosh t)^{\mu+\nu+1}} dt \\ &\quad (\operatorname{Re} z > -1, |\arg(z \pm 1)| < \pi, \operatorname{Re} \nu > -1, \operatorname{Re}(\mu-\nu) > 0). \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{P}_\nu^{-\mu}(z) &= \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \frac{\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)](z^2-1)^{\mu-2}}{\Gamma(\mu+\nu+1)\Gamma(\mu-\nu)} \int_0^\infty \frac{\cosh[\nu+(1/2)]t}{(z + \cosh t)^{\mu+(1/2)}} dt \\ &\quad (\operatorname{Re} z > -1, |\arg(z \pm 1)| < \pi, \operatorname{Re}(\mu+\nu) > -1, \operatorname{Re}(\mu-\nu) > 0). \end{aligned}$$

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(\cosh \alpha) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \frac{(\sinh \alpha)^\mu}{\Gamma[-\mu+(1/2)]} \int_0^\alpha \frac{\cosh[\{\nu+(1/2)\}t] dt}{(\cosh \alpha - \cosh t)^{\mu+(1/2)}} \quad \left(\alpha > 0, \operatorname{Re} \mu < \frac{1}{2} \right).$$

$$P_\nu^\mu(\cos \theta) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} \frac{(\sin \theta)^\mu}{\Gamma[-\mu+(1/2)]} \int_0^\theta \frac{\cos[\{\nu+(1/2)\}\varphi] d\varphi}{(\cos \theta - \cos \varphi)^{\mu+(1/2)}} \quad \left(0 < \theta < \pi, \operatorname{Re} \mu < \frac{1}{2} \right).$$

$$\begin{aligned} P_\nu^{-\mu}(\cos \theta) &= \frac{\Gamma(2\mu+1)2^{-\mu}(\sin \theta)^\mu}{\Gamma(\mu+1)\Gamma(\mu+\nu+1)\Gamma(\mu-\nu)} \int_0^\infty \frac{t^{\mu+\nu} dt}{(1+2t\cos \theta+t^2)^{\mu+(1/2)}} \\ &\quad (\operatorname{Re}(\mu+\nu) > -1, \operatorname{Re}(\mu-\nu) > 0). \end{aligned}$$

$$P_\nu^{-\mu}(\cos \theta) = \frac{1}{\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)} \int_0^\infty e^{-t\cos \theta} J_\mu(t \sin \theta) t^\nu dt \quad \left(0 < \theta < \frac{\pi}{2}, \operatorname{Re}(\mu+\nu) > -1 \right).$$

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z) &= \frac{e^{i\mu\pi}}{2^{\nu+1}} \frac{\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)}{\Gamma(\nu+1)} (z^2-1)^{\mu/2} \int_{-1}^{+1} (1-t)^\nu (z-1)^{-\nu-\mu-1} dt \\ &\quad (\operatorname{Re}(\nu+\mu) > -1, \operatorname{Re} \nu > -1, |\arg(z \pm 1)| < \pi). \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(\cosh \alpha) &= \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}} \frac{e^{i\mu\pi} (\sinh \alpha)^\mu}{\Gamma[-\mu+(1/2)]} \int_\alpha^\infty \frac{e^{-[\nu+(1/2)]t} dt}{(\cosh t - \cosh \alpha)^{\mu+(1/2)}} \\ &\quad (\alpha > 0, \operatorname{Re} \mu < 1/2, \operatorname{Re}(\nu+\mu) > -1). \end{aligned}$$

Recurrence formulas:

$$(z^2 - 1)d\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z)/dz = (\nu - \mu + 1)\mathfrak{P}_{\nu+1}^\mu(z) - (\nu + 1)z\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z),$$

$$(2\nu + 1)z\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z) = (\nu - \mu + 1)\mathfrak{P}_{\nu+1}^\mu(z) + (\nu + \mu)\mathfrak{P}_{\nu-1}^\mu(z),$$

$$\mathfrak{P}_{\nu-1}^\mu(z) = \mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z),$$

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu^{-\mu}(z) = e^{-2i\mu\pi} \frac{\Gamma(\nu - \mu + 1)}{\Gamma(\nu + \mu + 1)} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z),$$

$$(1 - x^2)dP_\nu^\mu(x)/dx = (\nu + 1)xP_{\nu+1}^\mu(x) - (\nu - \mu + 1)P_{\nu+1}^\mu(x).$$

The case when μ is an integer $m(m=0, 1, 2, \dots)$ and ν is also an integer n :

$$P_n^{m+2}(x) + 2(m+1)x(1-x^2)^{-1/2}P_n^{m+1}(x) + (n-m)(n+m+1)P_n^m(x) = 0.$$

$$(2n+1)xP_n^m(x) - (n-m+1)P_{n+1}^m(x) - (n+m)P_{n-1}^m(x) = 0 \quad (0 \leq m \leq n-2),$$

$$(x^2 - 1)dP_n^m(x)/dx - (n-m+1)P_{n+1}^m(x) + (n+1)xP_n^m(x) = 0,$$

$$P_{n-1}^m(x) - P_{n+1}^m(x) = (2n+1)\sqrt{1-x^2}P_n^{m-1}(x).$$

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^{-\mu}(z) = \frac{\Gamma(\nu - \mu + 1)}{\Gamma(\nu + \mu + 1)} \left[\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z) - \frac{2}{\pi} e^{-i\mu\pi} (\sin \mu\pi) \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z) \right],$$

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z) \sin[(\nu + \mu)\pi] - \mathfrak{Q}_{\nu-1}^\mu(z) \sin[(\nu - \mu)\pi] = \pi e^{i\mu\pi} (\cos \nu\pi) \mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z),$$

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(-z) = e^{\mp i\mu\pi} \mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z) - (2/\pi) [\sin(\nu + \mu)\pi] e^{-i\mu\pi} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z) \quad (\mp = -\operatorname{sgn}(\operatorname{Im} z)),$$

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(-z) = -e^{\pm i\mu\pi} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z) \quad (\pm = \operatorname{sgn}(\operatorname{Im} z)).$$

$$e^{-i\mu\pi} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(\cosh \alpha) = \frac{\pi \Gamma(1 + \mu + \nu)}{\sqrt{2\pi} \sinh \alpha} \mathfrak{P}_{-\mu-1/2}^{\nu-1/2}(\coth \alpha) \quad (\operatorname{Re} \cosh \alpha > 0).$$

$$e^{-i\mu\pi} \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(x \pm i0) = e^{\pm i\mu\pi/2} [Q_\nu^\mu(x) \mp (i\pi/2)P_\nu^\mu(x)].$$

$$Q_{\nu-1}^\mu(x) = \frac{\sin(\nu + \mu)\pi}{\sin(\nu - \mu)\pi} Q_\nu^\mu(x) - \frac{\pi \cos \nu\pi \cos \mu\pi}{\sin(\nu - \mu)\pi} P_\nu^\mu(x),$$

$$P_\nu^{-\mu}(x) = \frac{\Gamma(\nu - \mu + 1)}{\Gamma(\nu + \mu + 1)} \left[\cos \mu\pi P_\nu^\mu(x) - \frac{2}{\pi} \sin \mu\pi Q_\nu^\mu(x) \right],$$

$$P_\nu^\mu(-x) = [\cos(\nu + \mu)\pi] P_\nu^\mu(x) - (2/\pi) [\sin(\nu + \mu)\pi] Q_\nu^\mu(x),$$

$$Q_\nu^\mu(-x) = -[\cos(\nu + \mu)\pi] Q_\nu^\mu(x) + (\pi/2) [\sin(\nu + \mu)\pi] P_\nu^\mu(x).$$

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^m(z) = \frac{\Gamma(1 + \nu + m)(z^2 - 1)^{m/2}}{\Gamma(1 + \nu - m)m!2^m} {}_2F_1\left(m - \nu, m + \nu + 1; m + 1; \frac{1-z}{2}\right) = (z^2 - 1)^{m/2} \frac{d^m \mathfrak{P}_\nu(z)}{dz^m},$$

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^{-m}(z) = (z^2 - 1)^{-m/2} \int_1^z \dots \int_1^z P_\nu(z)(dz)^m.$$

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu^m(z) = (z^2 - 1)^{m/2} \frac{d^m \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z)}{dx^m}, \quad \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^{-m}(z) = (-1)^m (z^2 - 1)^{-m/2} \int_z^\infty \dots \int_z^\infty \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(z)(dz)^m.$$

$$\begin{aligned} P_\nu^m(x) &= (-1)^m \frac{\Gamma(1 + \nu + m)(1 - x^2)^{m/2}}{\Gamma(1 + \nu - m)m!2^m} {}_2F_1\left(m - \nu, m + \nu + 1; m + 1; \frac{1-x}{2}\right) \\ &= (-1)^m (1 - x^2)^{m/2} \frac{d^m P_\nu(x)}{dx^m}, \end{aligned}$$

$$P_\nu^{-m}(x) = (1 - x^2)^{-m/2} \int_x^1 \dots \int_x^1 P_\nu(x)(dx)^m = (-1)^m \frac{\Gamma(\nu - m + 1)}{\Gamma(\nu + m + 1)} P_\nu^m(x).$$

$$Q_\nu^m(x) = (-1)^m (1 - x^2)^{m/2} \frac{d^m Q_\nu(x)}{dx^m}, \quad Q_\nu^{-m}(x) = (-1)^m \frac{\Gamma(\nu - m + 1)}{\Gamma(\nu + m + 1)} Q_\nu^m(x).$$

The values at the origin are

$$P_\nu^\mu(0) = \frac{\sqrt{\pi} 2^\mu}{\Gamma[(\nu - \mu)/2 + 1] \Gamma[(\nu - \mu + 1)/2]},$$

$$\frac{dP_\nu^\mu(0)}{dx} = \frac{2^{\mu+1} \sin[\pi(\nu+\mu)/2] \Gamma[(\nu+\mu+2)/2]}{\Gamma[(\nu-\mu+1)/2] \sqrt{\pi}} = \frac{\sqrt{\pi} 2^{\mu+1}}{\Gamma[(\nu-\mu+1)/2] \Gamma[(\nu-\mu)/2]},$$

$$Q_\nu^\mu(0) = -2^{\mu-1} \sqrt{\pi} \sin\left(\frac{\nu+\mu}{2}\pi\right) \frac{\Gamma[(\nu+\mu+1)/2]}{\Gamma[(\nu-\mu+2)/2]},$$

$$\frac{dQ_\nu^\mu(0)}{dx} = 2^\mu \sqrt{\pi} \cos\left(\frac{\nu+\mu}{2}\pi\right) \frac{\Gamma[(\nu+\mu+2)/2]}{\Gamma[(\nu-\mu+1)/2]}.$$

(2) Generating Functions.

$$(\cos\theta + i \sin\theta \sin\varphi)^n = P_n(\cos\theta) + 2 \sum_{m=1}^n (-i)^m \frac{n!}{(n+m)!} (\cos m\varphi) P_n^m(\cos\theta).$$

$$P_\nu^{-\mu}(\cos\theta) = \frac{\sin\nu\pi}{\pi} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n \left(\frac{1}{\nu-n} - \frac{1}{\nu+n+1} \right) P_n^{-\mu}(\cos\theta) \quad (0 < \theta < \pi, \mu \geq 0).$$

(3) Orthogonal Relations.

$$\int_{-1}^{+1} P_n^m(x) P_n^m(x) dx = \frac{2}{2n+1} \frac{(n+m)!}{(n-m)!} \delta_{nn'}.$$

$$\int_0^{2\pi} d\varphi \int_0^\pi \sin\theta e^{\pm i(m-m')\varphi} P_n^m(\cos\theta) P_n^{m'}(\cos\theta) d\theta = \frac{4\pi}{2n+1} \frac{(n+m)!}{(n-m)!} \delta_{nn'} \delta_{mm'}.$$

(4) Addition Theorems.

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu(z\xi - \sqrt{z^2-1} \sqrt{\xi^2-1} \cos\varphi) = \mathfrak{P}_\nu(z) \mathfrak{P}_\nu(\xi) + 2 \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} (-1)^m \mathfrak{P}_\nu^m(z) \mathfrak{P}_\nu^{-m}(\xi) \cos m\varphi$$

(Re $z > 0$, Re $\xi > 0$, $|\arg(z-1)| < \pi$, $|\arg(\xi-1)| < \pi$).

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu(tt' - \sqrt{t^2-1} \sqrt{t'^2-1} \cos\varphi) = \mathfrak{Q}_\nu(t) \mathfrak{P}_\nu(t') + 2 \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} (-1)^m \mathfrak{Q}_\nu^m(t) \mathfrak{P}_\nu^{-m}(t') \cos m\varphi$$

(t, t' real, $1 < t' < t$, $\nu \neq$ negative integer, φ real).

$$P_\nu(\cos\theta \cos\theta' + \sin\theta \sin\theta' \cos\varphi) = P_\nu(\cos\theta) P_\nu(\cos\theta') + 2 \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} (-1)^m P_\nu^{-m}(\cos\theta') P_\nu^m(\cos\theta) \cos m\varphi$$

$$= P_\nu(\cos\theta) P_\nu(\cos\theta') + 2 \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} \frac{\Gamma(\nu-m+1)}{\Gamma(\nu+m+1)} P_\nu^m(\cos\theta) P_\nu^m(\cos\theta') \cos m\varphi$$

($0 \leq \theta < \pi$, $0 \leq \theta' < \pi$, $\theta + \theta' < \pi$, φ real).

$$Q_\nu(\cos\theta \cos\theta' + \sin\theta \sin\theta' \cos\varphi) = P_\nu(\cos\theta') Q_\nu(\cos\theta) + 2 \sum_{m=1}^{\infty} (-1)^m P_\nu^{-m}(\cos\theta') Q_\nu^m(\cos\theta) \cos m\varphi$$

($0 < \theta' < \pi/2$, $0 < \theta < \pi$, $\theta + \theta' < \pi$, φ real).

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu(\tau\tau' + \sqrt{\tau^2+1} \sqrt{\tau'^2+1} \cosh\alpha) = \sum_{m=n+1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{(m-n-1)!(m+n)!} \mathfrak{Q}_n^m(i\tau) \mathfrak{Q}_n^m(i\tau') e^{-m\alpha}$$

($\tau, \tau', \alpha > 0$).

(5) Asymptotic Expansions.

$$\mathfrak{P}_\nu^\mu(z) = \left[\frac{2^\nu \Gamma[\nu+(1/2)]}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma(\nu-\mu+1)} z^\nu + \frac{2^{-\nu-1} \Gamma[-\nu-(1/2)]}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma(-\mu-\nu)} z^{-\nu-1} \right] [1 + O(z^{-2})]$$

($\nu + (1/2) \neq$ integer, $|\arg z| < \pi$, $|z| \gg 1$).

$$\mathfrak{Q}_\nu^\mu(z) = \frac{\sqrt{\pi} e^{i\mu\pi}}{2^{\nu+1}} \frac{\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)}{\Gamma[\nu+(3/2)]} z^{-\nu-1} [1 + O(z^{-2})]$$

($\nu + (1/2) \neq$ negative integer, $|\arg z| < \pi$, $|z| \gg 1$).

$$P_\nu^\mu(\cos\theta) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{\pi}} \frac{\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)}{\Gamma[\nu+(3/2)]} \frac{\cos[\{\nu+(1/2)\}\theta - (\pi/4) + (\mu\pi/2)]}{\sqrt{2} \sin\theta} [1 + O(\nu^{-1})]$$

($\varepsilon \leq \theta \leq \pi - \varepsilon$, $\varepsilon > 0$, $|\nu| \gg 1/\varepsilon$).

$$P_\nu^\mu(\cos\theta) = \frac{2\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)}{\sqrt{\pi}\Gamma[\nu+(3/2)]} \times \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}+\mu+l)\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}-\mu+l)\Gamma(\nu+\frac{3}{2})}{\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}+\mu)\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}-\mu)\Gamma(\nu+l+\frac{3}{2})l!} \frac{\cos\left[\left(\nu+\frac{2l+1}{2}\right)\theta - \frac{(2l+1)\pi}{4} + \frac{\mu\pi}{2}\right]}{(2\sin\theta)^{l+(1/2)}},$$

$$Q_\nu^\mu(\cos\theta) = \sqrt{\pi} \frac{\Gamma(\nu+\mu+1)}{\Gamma[\nu+(3/2)]} \times \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} (-1)^l \frac{\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}+\mu+l)\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}-\mu+l)\Gamma(\nu+\frac{3}{2})}{\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}+\mu)\Gamma(\frac{1}{2}-\mu)\Gamma(\nu+l+\frac{3}{2})l!} \frac{\cos\left[\left(\nu+\frac{2l+1}{2}\right)\theta + \frac{(2l+1)\pi}{4} + \frac{\mu\pi}{2}\right]}{(2\sin\theta)^{l+(1/2)}}.$$

(In the final two formulas the series converges when $\nu+\mu \neq$ negative integer, $\nu+(1/2) \neq$ negative integer, $\pi/6 < \theta < 5\pi/6$.)

$$\left[\left(\nu+\frac{1}{2}\right)\cos\frac{\theta}{2}\right]^\mu P_\nu^{-\mu}(\cos\theta) = J_\mu(\eta) + \sin^2\frac{\theta}{2} \left[\frac{J_{\mu+1}(\eta)}{2\eta} - J_{\mu+2}(\eta) + \frac{\eta}{6} J_{\mu+3}(\eta) \right] + O\left(\sin^4\frac{\theta}{2}\right) \\ (\eta = (2\nu+1)\sin(\theta/2)).$$

(6) Estimation. When $\nu \geq 1$, $\nu-\mu+1 > 0$, $\mu \geq 0$,

$$|P_\nu^{\pm\mu}(\cos\theta)| < \frac{\Gamma(\nu\pm\mu+1)}{\Gamma(\nu+1)} \left(\frac{8}{\nu\pi\sin\theta}\right)^{1/2} \frac{1}{(\sin\theta)^\mu},$$

$$|Q_\nu^{\pm\mu}(\cos\theta)| < \frac{\Gamma(\nu\pm\mu+1)}{\Gamma(\nu+1)} \left(\frac{2\pi}{\nu\sin\theta}\right)^{1/2} \frac{1}{(\sin\theta)^\mu},$$

$$|P_\nu^{\pm m}(\cos\theta)| < \frac{\Gamma(\nu\pm m+1)}{\Gamma(\nu+1)} \left(\frac{4}{\nu\pi\sin\theta}\right)^{1/2} \frac{1}{(\sin\theta)^m},$$

$$|Q_\nu^{\pm m}(\cos\theta)| < \frac{\Gamma(\nu\pm m+1)}{\Gamma(\nu+1)} \left(\frac{4}{\nu\sin\theta}\right)^{1/2} \frac{1}{(\sin\theta)^m}.$$

(7) Torus Functions. These are solutions of the differential equation

$$\frac{d^2u}{d\eta^2} + \coth\eta \frac{du}{d\eta} - \left(n^2 - \frac{1}{4} + \frac{m^2}{\sinh^2\eta}\right)u = 0.$$

The fundamental system of solutions is given by

$$\mathfrak{P}_{n-(1/2)}^m(\cosh\eta), \quad \mathfrak{Q}_{n-(1/2)}^m(\cosh\eta).$$

The asymptotic expansion when $m=0$ is

$$\mathfrak{P}_{n-(1/2)}(\cosh\eta) = \frac{(n-1)!e^{n-(1/2)\eta}}{\Gamma[n+(1/2)]\sqrt{\pi}} \left[\frac{2\Gamma^2[n+(1/2)]}{\pi n!(n-1)!} (\log 4 + \eta) e^{-2\eta} {}_2F_1\left(\frac{1}{2}, n+\frac{1}{2}; n+1; e^{-2\eta}\right) + A + B \right].$$

Here

$$A = 1 + \frac{(1/2)[n-(1/2)]}{1 \cdot (n-1)} e^{-2\eta} + \frac{(1/2)(3/2)[n-(1/2)][n-(3/2)]}{1 \cdot 2 \cdot (n-1)(n-2)} e^{-4\eta} + \dots \\ + \frac{(2n-3)!!(2n-1)!!}{[(2n-2)!!]^2} e^{-2(n-1)\eta},$$

$$B = \frac{\Gamma[n+(1/2)]}{\pi^{3/2}(n-1)!} \sum_{l=1}^{\infty} \frac{\Gamma[l+(1/2)]\Gamma[n+l+(1/2)]}{(n+l)!l!} (u_{n+l} + u_l - v_{l-(1/2)} - v_{n+l-(1/2)}) e^{-2(l+n)\eta},$$

where

$$u_r \equiv 1 + \frac{1}{2} + \dots + \frac{1}{r}, \quad v_{r-(1/2)} \equiv \frac{2}{1} + \frac{2}{3} + \frac{2}{5} + \dots + \frac{2}{2r-1} = 2u_{2r} - u_r.$$

References

See references to Table 16, this Appendix.

19. Functions of Confluent Type and Bessel Functions

(I) Hypergeometric Function of Confluent Type (\rightarrow 167 Functions of Confluent Type)

(1) Kummer Functions.

$$\begin{aligned} v(z) = {}_1F_1(a; c; z) &\equiv \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{\Gamma(a+n)}{\Gamma(a)} \frac{\Gamma(c)}{\Gamma(c+n)} \frac{z^n}{n!} \\ &= \frac{\Gamma(c)}{\Gamma(a)\Gamma(c-a)} z^{1-c} \int_0^z e^t t^{a-1} (z-t)^{c-a-1} dt \quad (0 < \operatorname{Re} a < \operatorname{Re} c) \\ &= \frac{\Gamma(c)2^{1-c}}{\Gamma(a)\Gamma(c-a)} e^{z/2} \int_{-1}^{+1} e^{zt/2} (1-t)^{c-a-1} (1+t)^{a-1} dt \quad (0 < \operatorname{Re} a < \operatorname{Re} c). \end{aligned}$$

The fundamental system of solutions of the confluent hypergeometric differential equation (Kummer's differential equation)

$$z \frac{d^2 v}{dz^2} + (c-z) \frac{dv}{dz} - av = 0,$$

when $c \neq 0, -1, -2, \dots$, is given by

$$\begin{aligned} \vartheta_1(z) &\equiv {}_1F_1(a; c; z), \quad \vartheta_2(z) \equiv z^{1-c} {}_1F_1(a-c+1; 2-c; z), \\ d_1 F_1(a; c; z)/dz &= (a/c) {}_1F_1(a+1; c+1; z), \\ {}_1F_1(a; c; z) &= e^z {}_1F_1(c-a; c; -z), \\ a {}_1F_1(a+1; c+1; z) &= (a-c) {}_1F_1(a; c+1; z) + c {}_1F_1(a; c; z), \\ a {}_1F_1(a+1; c; z) &= (z+2a-c) {}_1F_1(a; c; z) + (c-a) {}_1F_1(a-1; c; z). \end{aligned}$$

Putting $(a)_n = a(a+1)\dots(a+n-1) = \Gamma(a+n)/\Gamma(a)$ we have

$$\lim_{c \rightarrow -n} \frac{1}{\Gamma(c)} {}_1F_1(a; c; z) = \frac{z^{n+1} (a)_{n+1}}{(n+1)!} {}_1F_1(a+n+1; n+2; z) \quad (n=0, 1, 2, \dots).$$

Asymptotic expansion:

$$\begin{aligned} \vartheta_1 &\approx A_1 z^{-a} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(a)_n (a-c+1)_n}{n!} (-z)^{-n} + B_1 e^{z z^{a-c}} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(c-a)_n (1-a)_n}{n!} z^n, \\ \vartheta_2 &\approx A_2 z^{-a} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(a)_n (a-c+1)_n}{n!} (-z)^{-n} + B_2 e^{z z^{a-c}} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(c-a)_n (1-a)_n}{n!} z^n \end{aligned}$$

$$(|z| \gg |a|, |z| \gg |c|, -3\pi/2 < \arg z < \pi/2, c \neq \text{integer}),$$

where

$$\begin{aligned} A_1 &= e^{-i\pi a} \Gamma(c)/\Gamma(c-a), & B_1 &= \Gamma(c)/\Gamma(a), \\ A_2 &= e^{-i\pi(a-c+1)} \Gamma(2-c)/\Gamma(1-a), & B_2 &= \Gamma(2-c)/\Gamma(a-c+1). \end{aligned}$$

(2) The fundamental system of solutions at $z=0$ of the hypergeometric differential equation of confluent type

$$\frac{d^2 u}{dz^2} + \frac{du}{dz} + \left[\frac{\kappa}{z} + \frac{(1/4) - \mu^2}{z^2} \right] u = 0$$

is given by

$$z^{(1/2) \pm \mu} e^{-z} {}_1F_1[(1/2) \pm \mu - \kappa; \pm 2\mu + 1; z].$$

(II) Whittaker Functions (\rightarrow 167 Functions of Confluent Type)

(1) A pair of linearly independent solutions of Whittaker's differential equation

$$\frac{d^2 W}{dz^2} + \left[-\frac{1}{4} + \frac{\kappa}{z} + \frac{(1/4) - \mu^2}{z^2} \right] W = 0$$

is given by $M_{\kappa, \pm\mu}(z) = z^{\pm\mu+(1/2)} e^{-z/2} {}_1F_1[\pm\mu-\kappa+(1/2); \pm 2\mu+1; z]$.

Whittaker functions:

$$W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) \equiv \frac{\Gamma(-2\mu)}{\Gamma[(1/2)-\mu-\kappa]} M_{\kappa, \mu}(z) + \frac{\Gamma(2\mu)}{\Gamma[(1/2)+\mu-\kappa]} M_{\kappa, -\mu}(z) = W_{\kappa, -\mu}(z).$$

When 2μ is an integer, the above definition of $W_{\kappa, \mu}(z)$ loses meaning, but by taking the limit with respect to μ we can define it in terms of the following integrals.

$$\begin{aligned} W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) &= \frac{z^{\mu+(1/2)} e^{-z/2}}{\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)-\kappa]} \int_0^\infty e^{-z\tau} \tau^{\mu-\kappa-(1/2)} (1+\tau)^{\mu+\kappa-(1/2)} d\tau \\ &= \frac{z^\kappa e^{-z/2}}{\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)-\kappa]} \int_0^\infty t^{\mu-\kappa-(1/2)} e^{-t} \left(1+\frac{t}{z}\right)^{\mu+\kappa-(1/2)} dt \\ &(\operatorname{Re}[\mu+(1/2)-\kappa] > 0, \quad |\arg z| < \pi). \end{aligned}$$

$$W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) = \frac{e^{-z/2}}{2\pi i} \int_{-i\infty}^{+i\infty} \frac{\Gamma(s-\kappa)\Gamma[-s-\mu+(1/2)]\Gamma[-s+\mu+(1/2)]}{\Gamma[-\kappa+\mu+(1/2)]\Gamma[-\kappa-\mu+(1/2)]} z^s ds.$$

$$M_{l+\mu+(1/2), \mu}(z) = (-1)^l z^{\mu+(1/2)} e^{-z/2} (2\mu+1) {}_1F_1(-l; 2\mu+1; z) \quad (l=0, 1, 2, \dots).$$

$$M_{\kappa, \mu}(z) = e^{-i\pi[\mu+(1/2)]} M_{-\kappa, \mu}(e^{i\pi}z).$$

$$\begin{aligned} M_{\kappa, \mu}(z) &= \frac{\Gamma(2\mu+1)}{\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)-\kappa]} e^{i\pi\kappa} W_{-\kappa, \mu}(e^{i\pi}z) + \frac{\Gamma(2\mu+1)}{\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)+\kappa]} e^{i\pi[\kappa-\mu-(1/2)]} W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) \\ &(-3\pi/2 < \arg z < \pi/2, \quad 2\mu \neq -1, -2, \dots). \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} M_{\kappa, \mu}(z) &= \frac{\Gamma(2\mu+1)}{\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)-\kappa]} e^{-i\pi\kappa} W_{-\kappa, \mu}(e^{-i\pi}z) + \frac{\Gamma(2\mu+1)}{\Gamma[\mu+(1/2)+\kappa]} e^{-i\pi[\kappa-\mu-(1/2)]} W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) \\ &(-\pi/2 < \arg z < 3\pi/2, \quad 2\mu \neq -1, -2, \dots). \end{aligned}$$

$$\begin{aligned} W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) &= z^{1/2} W_{\kappa-(1/2), \mu-(1/2)}(z) + [(1/2)-\kappa+\mu] W_{\kappa-1, \mu}(z) \\ &= z^{1/2} W_{\kappa-(1/2), \mu+(1/2)}(z) + [(1/2)-\kappa-\mu] W_{\kappa-1, \mu}(z). \end{aligned}$$

$$z dW_{\kappa, \mu}(z)/dz = [\kappa - (z/2)] W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) - [\mu^2 - \{\kappa - (1/2)\}^2] W_{\kappa-1, \mu}(z).$$

When κ is sufficiently large we have

$$\begin{aligned} M_{\kappa, \mu}(z) &\sim \pi^{-1/2} \Gamma(2\mu+1) \kappa^{-\mu-(1/4)} z^{1/4} \cos[2(z\kappa)^{1/2} - \mu\pi - (\pi/4)], \\ W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) &\sim -(4z/\kappa)^{1/4} \exp(-\kappa + \kappa \log \kappa) \sin[2(z\kappa)^{1/2} - \pi\kappa - (\pi/4)], \\ W_{-\kappa, \mu}(z) &\sim (z/4\kappa)^{1/4} \exp(\kappa - \kappa \log \kappa - 2(z\kappa)^{1/2}). \end{aligned}$$

Asymptotic expansion:

$$\begin{aligned} W_{\kappa, \mu}(z) &\approx e^{-z/2} z^\kappa \\ &\times \left(1 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{[\mu^2 - \{\kappa - (1/2)\}^2][\mu^2 - \{\kappa - (3/2)\}^2] \dots [\mu^2 - \{\kappa - n + (1/2)\}^2]}{n! z^n} \right). \end{aligned}$$

(2) Representation of Various Special Functions by Whittaker Functions.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{(i) Probability integral (error function)} \quad \operatorname{erf} x &\equiv \Phi(x) \equiv \frac{2}{\sqrt{\pi}} \int_0^x e^{-t^2} dt \\ &= 1 - \pi^{-1/2} x^{-1/2} e^{-x^2/2} W_{-1/4, 1/4}(x^2) \end{aligned}$$

$$= \frac{2x}{\sqrt{\pi}} {}_1F_1\left(\frac{1}{2}; \frac{3}{2}; -x^2\right) = \frac{2}{\sqrt{\pi}} \left(x - \frac{x^3}{1!3} + \frac{x^5}{2!5} - \frac{x^7}{3!7} \pm \dots\right).$$

Asymptotic expansion:

$$\begin{aligned} \frac{\sqrt{\pi}}{2} [1 - \Phi(x)] &\approx \frac{e^{-x^2}}{2x} \left(1 - \frac{1}{2x^2} + \frac{1 \cdot 3}{(2x^2)^2} - \frac{1 \cdot 3 \cdot 5}{(2x^2)^3} \pm \dots \right). \\ \frac{1}{1+i} \Phi\left(x \frac{1+i}{2} \sqrt{\pi}\right) &= C(x) - iS(x), \end{aligned}$$

where $C(x)$, $S(x)$ are the following Fresnel integrals.

$$C(x) \equiv \int_0^x \cos \frac{\pi}{2} t^2 dt = \frac{1}{2} + \frac{1}{\pi x} \sin \frac{\pi}{2} x^2 + O\left(\frac{1}{x^2}\right),$$

$$S(x) \equiv \int_0^x \sin \frac{\pi}{2} t^2 dt = \frac{1}{2} - \frac{1}{\pi x} \cos \frac{\pi}{2} x^2 + O\left(\frac{1}{x^2}\right).$$

(ii) Logarithmic integral

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Li } z &\equiv \int_0^z \frac{dt}{\log t} \quad (\text{When } z > 1, \text{ take Cauchy's principal value at } t = 1.) \\ &= -(\log 1/z)^{-1/2} z^{1/2} W_{-1/2, 0}(-\log z). \end{aligned}$$

$\text{Li } z$ is sometimes written as $\text{li } z$.

(3) Exponential Integral

$$\text{Ei } x \equiv \int_{-\infty}^x \frac{e^t}{t} dt \quad (\text{When } x > 0, \text{ take the Cauchy's principal value at } t = 0 \text{ while integrating.})$$

$$= C + \log|x| + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{x^n}{n \cdot n!} \quad (x \text{ real, } \neq 0)$$

$$= e^x \sum_{n=1}^N \frac{(n-1)!}{t^n} + N! \sum_{\substack{n=0 \\ n \neq N}}^{\infty} \frac{t^{n-N}}{n!(n-N)} - \left(1 + \frac{1}{2} + \cdots + \frac{1}{N}\right) + C + \log|x|.$$

$$\text{Cosine integral} \quad \text{Ci } x \equiv - \int_x^{\infty} \frac{\cos t}{t} dt = C + \log x - \int_0^x \frac{1 - \cos t}{t} dt.$$

$$\text{Sine integral} \quad \text{Si } x \equiv \int_0^x \frac{\sin t}{t} dt,$$

$$\text{si } x \equiv - \int_x^{\infty} \frac{\sin t}{t} dt = \text{Si } x - \frac{\pi}{2}.$$

$$\text{Asymptotic expansion} \quad \text{Ei } ix = \text{Ci } x + i \text{Si } x \approx e^{ix} \left(\frac{1}{ix} + \frac{1!}{(ix)^2} + \frac{2!}{(ix)^3} + \frac{3!}{(ix)^4} + \cdots \right).$$

(III) Bessel Functions (→ 39 Bessel Functions)

(1) Cylindrical Functions. A cylindrical function Z_ν is a solution of Bessel's differential equation

$$\frac{d^2 Z_\nu}{dz^2} + \frac{1}{z} \frac{dZ_\nu}{dz} + \left(1 - \frac{\nu^2}{z^2}\right) Z_\nu = 0.$$

Recurrence formulas:

$$Z_{\nu-1}(z) + Z_{\nu+1}(z) = (2\nu/z) Z_\nu(z), \quad Z_{\nu-1}(z) - Z_{\nu+1}(z) = 2dZ_\nu(z)/dz.$$

$$\int z^{\nu+1} Z_\nu(z) dz = z^{\nu+1} Z_{\nu+1}(z), \quad \int z^{-\nu} Z_{\nu+1}(z) dz = -z^{-\nu} Z_\nu(z).$$

As special solutions, we have the following three kinds of functions.

(i) Bessel function (Bessel function of the first kind).

$$J_\nu(z) \equiv \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^\nu \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^l}{l! \Gamma(\nu + l + 1)} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^{2l} = \frac{M_{0,\nu}(2iz)}{(2iz)^{1/2} 2^\nu i^\nu \Gamma(\nu + 1)} \quad (|\arg z| < \pi).$$

$$J_\nu(e^{im\pi} z) = e^{im\nu\pi} J_\nu(z).$$

$$J_{-n}(z) = (-1)^n J_n(z).$$

$$J_{n+(1/2)}(z) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi}} z^{n+(1/2)} \left(-\frac{1}{z} \frac{d}{dz}\right)^n \left(\frac{\sin z}{z}\right) \quad (n=0, 1, 2, \dots).$$

(ii) Neumann function (Bessel function of the second kind).

$$N_\nu(z) \equiv \frac{1}{\sin \nu\pi} [(\cos \nu\pi) J_\nu(z) - J_{-\nu}(z)] \quad (\nu \neq \text{integer}; |\arg z| < \pi),$$

$$\begin{aligned} N_n(z) &\equiv \frac{2}{\pi} J_n(z) \left(C + \log \frac{z}{2}\right) - \frac{1}{\pi} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^n \sum_{l=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^l}{l!(n+l)!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^{2l} [\varphi(l) + \varphi(l+n)] \\ &\quad - \frac{1}{\pi} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^{-n} \sum_{l=0}^{n-1} \frac{(n-l-1)!}{l!} \left(\frac{z}{2}\right)^{2l} \quad \left(\varphi(l) \equiv \sum_{m=1}^l \frac{1}{m}\right), \end{aligned}$$

$$N_{-n}(z) \equiv (-1)^n N_n(z) \quad (n=0, 1, 2, \dots; \quad |\arg z| < \pi).$$

$$N_\nu(e^{im\pi}z) = e^{-im\nu\pi} N_\nu(z) + 2i(\sin m\nu\pi \cot \nu\pi) J_\nu(z).$$

$$N_{n+(1/2)}(z) = (-1)^{n+1} J_{-[n+(1/2)]}(z).$$

(iii) Hankel function (Bessel function of the third kind).

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(z) \equiv J_\nu(z) + iN_\nu(z),$$

$$H_\nu^{(2)}(z) \equiv J_\nu(z) - iN_\nu(z).$$

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(iz/2) = -2ie^{-i\nu\pi/2} (\pi z)^{-1/2} W_{0,\nu}(z).$$

$$H_{-\nu}^{(1)}(z) = e^{i\nu\pi} H_\nu^{(1)}(z), \quad H_{-\nu}^{(2)}(z) = e^{-i\nu\pi} H_\nu^{(2)}(z), \quad \overline{H_\nu^{(2)}(x)} = H_\nu^{(1)}(x) \quad (x, \nu \text{ real}).$$

(2) Integral Representation.

$$\begin{aligned} \text{Hansen-Bessel formula} \quad J_n(z) &= \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\pi}^{+\pi} e^{iz \cos t} e^{in[t-(\pi/2)]} dt \\ &= \frac{i^{-n}}{\pi} \int_0^\pi e^{iz \cos t} \cos nt \, dt \\ &= \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi \cos(z \sin t - nt) dt \quad (n=0, 1, 2, \dots). \end{aligned}$$

$$\text{Mehler's formula} \quad J_0(x) = \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^\infty \sin(x \cosh t) dt,$$

$$N_0(x) = -\frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^\infty \cos(x \cosh t) dt \quad (x > 0).$$

$$\text{Poisson's formula} \quad J_\nu(z) = \frac{2(z/2)^\nu}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma[\nu + (1/2)]} \int_0^{\pi/2} \cos(z \cos t) \sin^{2\nu} t \, dt \quad \left(\operatorname{Re} \nu > -\frac{1}{2}\right),$$

$$\begin{aligned} N_\nu(z) &= \frac{2(z/2)^\nu}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma[\nu + (1/2)]} \left[\int_0^{\pi/2} \sin(z \sin t) \cos^{2\nu} t \, dt - \int_0^\infty e^{-z \sinh t} \cosh^{2\nu} t \, dt \right] \\ &\quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 0, \operatorname{Re} \nu > -1/2). \end{aligned}$$

$$\text{Schläfli's formula} \quad J_\nu(z) = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi \cos(z \sin t - \nu t) dt - \frac{\sin \nu\pi}{\pi} \int_0^\infty e^{-z \sinh t} e^{-\nu t} dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 0),$$

$$N_\nu(z) = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi \sin(z \sin t - \nu t) dt - \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\infty e^{-z \sinh t} [e^{\nu t} + (\cos \nu\pi) e^{-\nu t}] dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 0).$$

$$J_\nu(z) = \frac{z^\nu}{2\pi i} \int_{c-i\infty}^{c+i\infty} \exp\left[\frac{1}{2}\left(t - \frac{z^2}{t}\right)\right] t^{-\nu-1} dt \quad (c > 0, \quad |\arg z| < \pi, \operatorname{Re} \nu > -1).$$

$$J_\nu(x) = \frac{2(x/2)^{-\nu}}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma[(1/2) - \nu]} \int_1^\infty \frac{\sin xt}{(t^2 - 1)^{\nu+(1/2)}} dt,$$

$$N_\nu(x) = -\frac{2(x/2)^{-\nu}}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma[(1/2) - \nu]} \int_1^\infty \frac{\cos xt}{(t^2 - 1)^{\nu+(1/2)}} dt \quad \left(x > 0, \quad -\frac{1}{2} < \operatorname{Re} \nu < \frac{1}{2}\right).$$

$$J_\nu(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{-\infty}^{(0+)} e^{z[t-(1/t)]/2} t^{-\nu-1} dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 0).$$

(The contour goes once around the negative real axis in the positive direction.)

$$\text{Sommerfeld's formula} \quad J_\nu(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi} \int_{-\eta+i\infty}^{2\pi-\eta+i\infty} e^{iz \cos t} e^{i\nu[t-(\pi/2)]} dt,$$

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(z) = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{-\eta+i\infty}^{\eta-i\infty} e^{iz \cos t} e^{i\nu[t-(\pi/2)]} dt,$$

$$H_\nu^{(2)}(z) = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_{\eta-i\infty}^{2\pi-\eta+i\infty} e^{iz \cos t} e^{i\nu[t-(\pi/2)]} dt \quad (-\eta < \arg z < \pi - \eta, \quad 0 < \eta < \pi).$$

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(z) = -\frac{2i}{\pi} e^{-i\nu\pi/2} \int_0^\infty e^{iz \cosh t} \cosh \nu t \, dt \quad (0 < \arg z < \pi; \text{ when } \nu = 0, \text{ it holds also at } z = 0).$$

$$\begin{aligned} H_\nu^{(1)}(z) &= -\frac{2ie^{-i\nu\pi} (z/2)^\nu}{\sqrt{\pi} \Gamma[\nu + (1/2)]} \int_0^\infty e^{iz \cosh t} \sin^{2\nu} t \, dt \\ &\quad (0 < \arg z < \pi, \operatorname{Re} \nu > -1/2; \text{ when } z = 0, -1/2 < \operatorname{Re} \nu < 1/2). \end{aligned}$$

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(z) = -i \frac{e^{-i\nu\pi/2}}{\pi} \int_0^\infty e^{iz[t-(1/t)/2]} t^{-\nu-1} dt \quad (0 < \arg z < \pi; \text{ when } \arg z = 0, -1 < \operatorname{Re} \nu < 1).$$

(3) Generating Function.

$$\exp\left[\frac{z(t-t^{-1})}{2}\right] = J_0(z) + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} [t^n + (-t)^{-n}] J_n(z),$$

$$\exp(iz \cos \theta) = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} i^n J_n(z) e^{in\theta} = J_0(z) + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} i^n J_n(z) \cos n\theta.$$

$$\int J_\nu(z) dz = 2 \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} J_{\nu+2n+1}(z).$$

$$\text{Kapteyn's series} \quad \frac{1}{1-z} = 1 + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} J_n(nz),$$

$$\frac{1}{2} \frac{z^2}{1-z^2} = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} J_{2n}(2nz) \quad \left(\left| \frac{z \exp \sqrt{1-z^2}}{1+\sqrt{1-z^2}} \right| < 1 \right).$$

Schlömilch's series. Supposing that $f(x)$ is twice continuously differentiable with respect to the real variable x in $0 \leq x \leq \pi$, we have

$$f(x) = \frac{1}{2} a_0 + \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} a_n J_0(nx) \quad (0 < x < \pi),$$

$$\text{where} \quad a_0 \equiv 2f(0) + \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^\pi du \int_0^{\pi/2} f'(u \sin \varphi) d\varphi,$$

$$a_n \equiv \frac{2}{\pi} \int_0^\pi du \int_0^{\pi/2} u f'(u \sin \varphi) \cos n\varphi d\varphi.$$

$$1 = J_0(z) + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} J_{2n}(z) = [J_0(z)]^2 + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} [J_n(z)]^2.$$

(4) Addition Theorem. For the cylindrical function Z_ν , we have

$$e^{i\nu\psi} Z_\nu(kR) = \sum_{n=-\infty}^{\infty} J_n(k\rho) Z_{\nu+n}(kr) e^{in\varphi}$$

$$(R = \sqrt{r^2 + \rho^2 - 2r\rho \cos \varphi}, \quad 0 < \psi < \frac{\pi}{2}, \quad e^{2i\psi} = \frac{r - \rho e^{-i\varphi}}{r - \rho e^{i\varphi}}, \quad 0 < \rho < r,$$

k is an arbitrary complex number),

$$\frac{Z_\nu(kR)}{R^\nu} = 2^\nu k^{-\nu} \Gamma(\nu) \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} (\nu+m) \frac{J_{\nu+m}(k\rho)}{\rho^\nu} \frac{Z_{\nu+m}(kr)}{r^\nu} C_m^{(\nu)}(\cos \varphi)$$

($\nu \neq$ negative integer).

$$\frac{\exp[(-1)^{i+1} ikR]}{R} = \frac{\pi}{2} \frac{(-1)^{i+1} i}{\sqrt{r\rho}} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} (2m+1) J_{m+(1/2)}(k\rho) H_{m+(1/2)}^{(i)}(kr) P_m(\cos \varphi)$$

($i=1, 2$).

$$\begin{aligned} e^{ik\rho \cos \varphi} &= \left(\frac{\pi}{2k\rho} \right)^{1/2} \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} i^m (2m+1) J_{m+(1/2)}(k\rho) P_m(\cos \varphi) \\ &= 2^\nu \Gamma(\nu) \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} (\nu+m) i^m J_{\nu+m}(k\rho) (k\rho)^{-\nu} C_m^{(\nu)}(\cos \varphi) \quad (\nu \neq 0, -1, -2, \dots), \end{aligned}$$

where P_m is a Legendre polynomial, and $C_m^{(\nu)}$ is a Gegenbauer polynomial.

(5) Infinite Products and Partial Fractions. Let $j_{\nu,n}$ be the zeros of $z^{-\nu} J_\nu(z)$ in ascending order with respect to the real part. We have

$$J_\nu(z) = \frac{(z/2)^\nu}{\Gamma(\nu+1)} \prod_{n=1}^{\infty} \left(1 - \frac{z^2}{j_{\nu,n}^2} \right) \quad (\nu \neq -1, -2, -3, \dots).$$

Note that if ν is real and greater than -1 , all zeros are real.

Kneser-Sommerfeld formula

$$\frac{\pi J_\nu(xz)}{4J_\nu(z)}[J_\nu(z)N_\nu(Xz) - N_\nu(z)J_\nu(Xz)] = \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{J_\nu(j_{\nu,n}x)J_\nu(j_{\nu,n}X)}{(z^2 - j_{\nu,n}^2)J_{\nu,n}'^2(j_{\nu,n})}$$

($0 < x < X < 1$, $\operatorname{Re} z > 0$).

(6) Definite Integrals.

$$\int_0^{\pi/2} J_\nu(z \cos \theta) \cos \theta d\theta = \frac{1}{2z} \int_0^{2z} J_{2\nu}(t) dt, \quad \int_0^z J_\mu(t) dt = \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^\pi \frac{\sin(z \sin \theta)}{\sin \theta} \cos \mu \theta d\theta.$$

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-at} J_\nu(bt) t^{\mu-1} dt = \frac{(b/2a)^\nu \Gamma(\mu + \nu)}{a^\mu \Gamma(\nu + 1)} {}_2F_1\left(\frac{\mu + \nu}{2}, \frac{\mu + \nu + 1}{2}; \nu + 1; -\frac{b^2}{a^2}\right)$$

($\operatorname{Re}(a + ib) > 0$, $\operatorname{Re}(a - ib) > 0$, $\operatorname{Re}(\mu + \nu) > 0$).

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-at} J_\nu(bt) t^\nu dt = \frac{(2x)^\nu \Gamma[\nu + (1/2)]}{(a^2 + b^2)^{\nu + (1/2)} \sqrt{\pi}} \quad \left(\operatorname{Re} \nu > -\frac{1}{2}, \operatorname{Re} a > |\operatorname{Im} b|\right).$$

$$\int_0^\infty e^{-at} J_\nu(bt) \frac{dt}{t} = \frac{(\sqrt{a^2 + b^2} - a)^\nu}{\nu b^\nu} \quad (\operatorname{Re} \nu > 0, \operatorname{Re} a > |\operatorname{Im} b|).$$

Sommerfeld's formula

$$\int_0^\infty J_0(\tau r) e^{-|x|\sqrt{\tau^2 - k^2}} \frac{\tau d\tau}{\sqrt{\tau^2 - k^2}} = \frac{e^{ik\sqrt{r^2 + x^2}}}{\sqrt{r^2 + x^2}}$$

(r, x real; $-\pi/2 \leq \arg \sqrt{\tau^2 - k^2} < \pi/2$, $0 \leq \arg k < \pi$).

Weyrich's formula

$$\frac{i}{2} \int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} e^{i\tau x} H_0^{(1)}(r\sqrt{k^2 - \tau^2}) d\tau = \frac{e^{ik\sqrt{r^2 + x^2}}}{\sqrt{r^2 + x^2}}$$

(r, x real; $0 \leq \arg \sqrt{k^2 - \tau^2} < \pi$, $0 \leq \arg k < \pi$).

Weber-Sonine formula

$$\int_0^\infty J_\nu(at) e^{-p^2 t^2} t^{\mu-1} dt = \frac{(a/2p)^\nu \Gamma[(\nu + \mu)/2]}{2p^\mu \Gamma(\nu + 1)} {}_1F_1\left(\frac{\nu + \mu}{2}; \nu + 1; -\frac{a^2}{4p^2}\right)$$

($\operatorname{Re}(\mu + \nu) > 0$, $|\arg p| < \pi/4$, $a > 0$),

$$\int_0^\infty J_\nu(at) e^{-p^2 t^2} t^{\nu+1} dt = \frac{a^\nu}{(2p^2)^{\nu+1}} e^{-a^2/4p^2} \quad (\operatorname{Re} \nu > -1, |\arg p| < \pi/4).$$

Sonine-Schafheitlin formula

$$\int_0^\infty J_\mu(at) J_\nu(bt) t^{-\lambda} dt = \frac{a^\mu \Gamma[(\mu + \nu - \lambda + 1)/2]}{2^\lambda b^{\mu - \lambda + 1} \Gamma[(-\mu + \nu + \lambda + 1)/2] \Gamma(\mu + 1)}$$

$$\times {}_2F_1\left(\frac{\mu + \nu - \lambda + 1}{2}, \frac{\mu - \nu - \lambda + 1}{2}; \mu + 1; \frac{a^2}{b^2}\right)$$

($\operatorname{Re}(\mu + \nu - \lambda + 1) > 0$, $\operatorname{Re} \lambda > -1$, $0 < a < b$).

(7) Asymptotic Expansion.

(i) Hankel's asymptotic representation. We put

$$(\nu, m) \equiv \frac{[4\nu^2 - 1^2][4\nu^2 - 3^2] \dots [4\nu^2 - (2m-1)^2]}{2^{2m} m!} \quad (m = 1, 2, 3, \dots); \quad (\nu, 0) \equiv 1.$$

For $|z| \gg |\nu|$, $|z| \gg 1$,

$$J_\nu(z) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi z}} \cos\left(z - \frac{\nu\pi}{2} - \frac{\pi}{4}\right) \left[\sum_{m=0}^{M-1} (-1)^m \frac{(\nu, 2m)}{(2z)^{2m}} + O(|z|^{-2M}) \right]$$

$$- \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi z}} \sin\left(z - \frac{\nu\pi}{2} - \frac{\pi}{4}\right) \left[\sum_{m=0}^{M-1} (-1)^m \frac{(\nu, 2m+1)}{(2z)^{2m+1}} + O(|z|^{-2M-1}) \right]$$

($-\pi < \arg z < \pi$),

$$N_\nu(z) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi z}} \sin\left(z - \frac{\nu\pi}{2} - \frac{\pi}{4}\right) \left[\sum_{m=0}^{M-1} (-1)^m \frac{(\nu, 2m)}{(2z)^{2m}} + O(|z|^{-2M}) \right] \\ + \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi z}} \cos\left(z - \frac{\nu\pi}{2} - \frac{\pi}{4}\right) \left[\sum_{m=0}^{M-1} (-1)^m \frac{(\nu, 2m+1)}{(2z)^{2m+1}} + O(|z|^{-2M-1}) \right] \quad (-\pi < \arg z < \pi),$$

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(z) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi z}} \exp\left[i\left(z - \frac{\nu\pi}{2} - \frac{\pi}{4}\right)\right] \left[\sum_{m=0}^{M-1} \frac{(\nu, m)}{(-2iz)^m} + O(|z|^{-M}) \right] \quad (-\pi < \arg z < 2\pi),$$

$$H_\nu^{(2)}(z) = \sqrt{\frac{2}{\pi z}} \exp\left[-i\left(z - \frac{\nu\pi}{2} - \frac{\pi}{4}\right)\right] \left[\sum_{m=0}^{M-1} \frac{(\nu, m)}{(2iz)^m} + O(|z|^{-M}) \right] \quad (-2\pi < \arg z < \pi).$$

(ii) Debye's asymptotic representation.

$$\nu \doteq x, \quad 1 - (\nu/x) > \varepsilon, \quad \nu/x = \sin \alpha, \quad \text{when } 1 - (\nu/x) > (3/x)\nu^{1/2},$$

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(x) \sim \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi}} \exp\left[ix\left\{\cos \alpha + \left(\alpha - \frac{\pi}{2}\right)\sin \alpha\right\}\right] \\ \times \left[\frac{e^{i\pi/4}}{X} + \left(\frac{1}{8} + \frac{5}{24}\tan^2 \alpha\right) \frac{3e^{3\pi i/4}}{2X^3} \right. \\ \left. + \left(\frac{3}{128} + \frac{77}{576}\tan^2 \alpha + \frac{385}{3456}\tan^4 \alpha\right) \frac{3 \cdot 5e^{5\pi i/4}}{2^2 X^5} + \dots \right] \\ (X = [-x \cos(\alpha/2)]^{1/2}).$$

$$\nu \doteq x, \quad (\nu/x) - 1 > \varepsilon, \quad \nu/x = \cosh \sigma, \quad \text{when } |\nu^2 - x^2|^{1/2} \gg 1, \quad |\nu^2 - x^2|^{3/2} \nu^{-2} \gg 1$$

$$H_\nu^{(1)}(x) \sim \frac{1}{\sqrt{\pi}} \exp[x(\sigma \cosh \sigma - \sinh \sigma)] \\ \times \left[\frac{1}{X} + \left(\frac{1}{8} - \frac{5}{24}\coth^2 \sigma\right) \frac{3}{2X^3} + \left(\frac{3}{128} - \frac{77}{576}\coth^2 \sigma + \frac{385}{3456}\coth^4 \sigma\right) \frac{3 \cdot 5}{2^2 X^5} + \dots \right] \\ (X = [-x \sinh(\sigma/2)]^{1/2}).$$

When $\nu \doteq x$, $|x - \nu| \ll x^{1/3}$, $x \gg 1$, $x - \nu = \delta$,

$$H_\nu^{(2)}(x) \sim \frac{6^{1/3} e^{i\pi/3}}{3^{1/2} \pi} \left[\frac{\Gamma(1/3)}{x^{1/3}} - 6^{1/3} e^{i\pi/3} \delta \frac{\Gamma(2/3)}{x^{2/3}} + \left(\frac{2}{5} \delta - \delta^3\right) \frac{\Gamma(4/3)}{x^{4/3}} \right. \\ \left. + \left(\frac{3}{140} - \frac{\delta^2}{4} + \frac{\delta^4}{4}\right) 6^{1/3} e^{i\pi/3} \frac{\Gamma(5/3)}{x^{5/3}} + \dots \right]$$

(iii) Watson-Nicholson formula. When $x, \nu > 0$, $w = [(x/\nu)^2 - 1]^{1/2}$,

$$H_\nu^{(i)}(x) = 3^{-1/2} w \exp\{(-1)^i + {}^1 i\{(\pi/6) + \nu(w - (w^3/3) - \arctan w)\}\} H_{1/3}^{(i)}(\nu w^3/3) + O|\nu^{-1}| \\ (i = 1, 2).$$

(IV) Functions Related to Bessel Functions

(1) Modified Bessel Functions.

$$I_\nu(z) \equiv e^{-i\nu\pi/2} J_\nu(e^{i\pi/2} z) \\ = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(z/2)^{\nu+2n}}{n! \Gamma(\nu+n+1)},$$

$$K_\nu(z) \equiv \frac{i\pi}{2} e^{i\nu\pi/2} H_\nu^{(1)}(e^{i\pi/2} z) = -\frac{i\pi}{2} e^{-i\nu\pi/2} H_\nu^{(2)}(e^{-i\pi/2} z) \\ = \frac{\pi}{2} \frac{I_{-\nu}(z) - I_\nu(z)}{\sin \nu\pi} = \left(\frac{\pi}{2z}\right)^{1/2} W_{0,\nu}(2z).$$

Recurrence formulas:

$$I_{\nu-1}(z) - I_{\nu+1}(z) = (2\nu/z)I_{\nu}(z),$$

$$I_{\nu-1}(z) + I_{\nu+1}(z) = 2I'_{\nu}(z).$$

$$K_{\nu-1}(z) - K_{\nu+1}(z) = -(2\nu/z)K_{\nu}(z),$$

$$K_{\nu-1}(z) + K_{\nu+1}(z) = -2K'_{\nu}(z),$$

$$K_{-\nu}(z) = K_{\nu}(z).$$

Airy's integral:
$$\int_0^{\infty} \cos(t^3 - tx) dt = \frac{\pi}{3} \sqrt{\frac{x}{3}} \left[J_{1/3} \left(\frac{2x\sqrt{x}}{3\sqrt{3}} \right) + J_{-1/3} \left(\frac{2x\sqrt{x}}{3\sqrt{3}} \right) \right],$$

$$\int_0^{\infty} \cos(t^3 + tx) dt = \frac{1}{3} \sqrt{x} K_{1/3} \left(\frac{2x\sqrt{x}}{3\sqrt{3}} \right) \quad (x > 0).$$

H. Weber's formula:
$$\frac{1}{2p^2} e^{-(a^2+b^2)/4p^2} I_{\nu} \left(\frac{ab}{2p^2} \right) = \int_0^{\infty} e^{-p^2 t^2} J_{\nu}(at) J_{\nu}(bt) t dt$$

($\operatorname{Re} \nu > -1$, $|\arg p| < \pi/4$; $a, b > 0$).

Watson's formula:
$$J_{\mu}(z) N_{\nu}(z) - J_{\nu}(z) N_{\mu}(z) = \frac{4 \sin(\mu - \nu) \pi}{\pi^2} \int_0^{\infty} K_{\nu - \mu}(2z \sinh t) e^{(\mu + \nu)t} dt$$

($\operatorname{Re} z > 0$, $\operatorname{Re}(\mu - \nu) < 1$),

$$J_{\nu}(z) \frac{\partial N_{\nu}(z)}{\partial \nu} - N_{\nu}(z) \frac{\partial J_{\nu}(z)}{\partial \nu} = -\frac{4}{\pi} \int_0^{\infty} K_0(2z \sinh t) e^{-2\nu t} dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 0).$$

Nicholson's formula:
$$J_{\nu}^2(z) + N_{\nu}^2(z) = \frac{8}{\pi^2} \int_0^{\infty} K_0(2z \sinh t) \cosh 2\nu t dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} z > 0).$$

Dixon-Ferrar formula:
$$J_{\nu}^2(z) + N_{\nu}^2(z) = \frac{8 \cos \nu \pi}{\pi^2} \int_0^{\infty} K_{2\nu}(2z \sinh t) dt$$

($\operatorname{Re} z > 0$; $-\frac{1}{2} < \operatorname{Re} \nu < \frac{1}{2}$).

(2) Kelvin Functions.
$$\begin{aligned} \operatorname{ber}_{\nu}(z) \pm i \operatorname{bei}_{\nu}(z) &\equiv J_{\nu}(e^{\pm 3\pi i/4} z), \\ \operatorname{her}_{\nu}(z) \pm i \operatorname{hei}_{\nu}(z) &\equiv H_{\nu}^{(1)}(e^{\pm 3\pi i/4} z), \\ \operatorname{ker}_{\nu}(z) &\equiv -(\pi/2) \operatorname{hei}_{\nu}(z), \\ \operatorname{kei}_{\nu}(z) &\equiv (\pi/2) \operatorname{her}_{\nu}(z). \end{aligned}$$

When ν is an integer n ,
$$\begin{aligned} \operatorname{ber}_n(x) - i \operatorname{bei}_n(x) &= (-1)^n J_n(\sqrt{i} x), \\ \operatorname{her}_n(x) - i \operatorname{hei}_n(x) &= (-1)^{n+1} H_n^{(1)}(\sqrt{i} x) \quad (x \text{ real}). \end{aligned}$$

(3) Struve Function.
$$\begin{aligned} H_{\nu}(x) &\equiv \frac{2(z/2)^{\nu}}{\Gamma[\nu + (1/2)] \sqrt{\pi}} \int_0^{\pi/2} \sin(z \cos \theta) \sin^{2\nu} \theta d\theta \\ &= \sum_{m=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-1)^m (z/2)^{\nu+2m+1}}{\Gamma[m + (3/2)] \Gamma[\nu + m + (3/2)]}. \end{aligned}$$

Anger function:
$$J_{\nu}(z) \equiv \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^{\pi} \cos(\nu \theta - z \sin \theta) d\theta.$$

H. F. Weber function:
$$E_{\nu}(z) \equiv \frac{1}{\pi} \int_0^{\pi} \sin(\nu \theta - z \sin \theta) d\theta.$$

Putting $\nabla_{\nu} \equiv z^2 \frac{d^2}{dz^2} + z \frac{d}{dz} + z^2 - \nu^2$,

$$\nabla_{\nu} H_{\nu}(z) = \frac{4(z/2)^{\nu+1}}{\Gamma[\nu + (1/2)] \sqrt{\pi}}, \quad \nabla_{\nu} J_{\nu}(z) = \frac{(z - \nu) \sin \nu \pi}{\pi},$$

$$\nabla_{\nu} E_{\nu}(z) = -\frac{z + \nu}{\pi} - \frac{(z - \nu) \cos \nu \pi}{\pi}.$$

When ν is an integer n , $J_n(z) = J_n(z)$.

$$\int_0^z J_0(t) dt = zJ_0(z) + \frac{\pi z}{2} [J_1(z)H_0(z) - J_0(z)H_1(z)],$$

$$\int_0^z N_0(t) dt = zN_0(z) + \frac{\pi z}{2} [N_1(z)H_0(z) - N_0(z)H_1(z)].$$

(4) Neumann Polynomials. $O_n(t) = \sum_{j=0}^{\lfloor n/2 \rfloor} \frac{n(n-j-1)!}{j!(t/2)^{n-2j+1}} \quad (n \text{ is a positive integer}),$

$$O_0(t) = 1/t.$$

$$\frac{1}{t-z} \equiv 1 + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} O_n(t)J_n(z) \quad (|t| > |z|).$$

Schl fli polynomials: $S_n(t) \equiv \frac{2}{n} \left[tO_n(t) - \cos^2 \frac{n\pi}{2} \right] \quad (n \text{ is a positive integer}),$

$$S_0(t) \equiv 0.$$

$$\nabla_n S_n(x) = 2n + 2(x-n)\sin^2(n\pi/2) \quad (\nabla_n \text{ is the same operator defined in (3)}).$$

Lommel polynomials: $R_{m,\nu}(z) \equiv \frac{\Gamma(\nu+m)}{\Gamma(\nu)(z/2)^m} {}_2F_3\left(\frac{1-m}{2}, \frac{-m}{2}; \nu, -m, 1-\nu-m; -z^2\right)$
 $= (\pi z/2 \sin \nu\pi) [J_{\nu+m}(z)J_{-\nu+1}(z) + (-1)^m J_{-\nu-m}(z)J_{\nu-1}(z)]$
(m is a nonnegative integer).

References

See references to Table 16, this Appendix.

20. Systems of Orthogonal Functions (→ 317 Orthogonal Functions)

$$\int_a^b p_n(x)p_m(x)\varphi(x)dx = \delta_{nm}A_n$$

Name	Notation $p_n(x)$	Interval (a, b)	Weight $\varphi(x)$	Norm A_n
Legendre	$P_n(x)$	$(-1, +1)$	1	$2/(2n+1)$
Gegenbauer	$C_n^\nu(x)$	$(-1, +1)$	$(1-x^2)^{\nu-(1/2)}$	$2\pi\Gamma(2\nu+n)/2^{2\nu}(n+\nu)n![\Gamma(\nu)]^2$
Chebyshev	$T_n(x)$	$(-1, +1)$	$(1-x^2)^{-1/2}$	$\pi(n=0); \pi/2 (n \geq 1)$
Hermite	$H_n(x)$	$(-\infty, +\infty)$	e^{-x^2}	$\sqrt{\pi} \cdot n!$
Jacobi	$G_n(\alpha, \gamma; x)$	$(0, 1)$	$x^{\gamma-1}(1-x)^{\alpha-\gamma}$	$\frac{n![\Gamma(\gamma)]^2\Gamma(\alpha+n-\gamma+1)}{(\alpha+2n)\Gamma(\alpha+n)\Gamma(\gamma+n)}$
Laguerre	$L_n^\alpha(x)$	$(0, \infty)$	$x^\alpha e^{-x}$	$\Gamma(\alpha+n+1)/n!$

For Legendre polynomials $P_n(x) \rightarrow$ Table 18.II, this Appendix.

(I) Gegenbauer Polynomials (Gegenbauer Functions)

$$C_n^\nu(t) \equiv \frac{\Gamma(n+2\nu)}{n!\Gamma(2\nu)} {}_2F_1\left(n+2\nu, -n; \nu+\frac{1}{2}; \frac{1-t}{2}\right) \\ = \frac{\Gamma(2\nu+n)\Gamma[\nu+(1/2)]}{\Gamma(2\nu)n!} \left[\frac{1}{4}(t^2-1)\right]^{(1/4)-(\nu/2)} \mathfrak{P}_{n+\nu-(1/2)}^{(1/2)-\nu}(t).$$

$$\text{Generating function} \quad (1-2\alpha t + \alpha^2)^{-\nu} \equiv \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} C_n^{\nu}(t) \alpha^n, \quad C_{n-l}^{l+(1/2)}(x) = \frac{1}{(2l-1)!!} \frac{d^l P_n(t)}{dt^l}.$$

$$\text{Orthogonal relation} \quad \int_0^{\pi} (\sin^{2\nu} \theta) C_m^{\nu}(\cos \theta) C_n^{\nu}(\cos \theta) d\theta = \frac{\pi \Gamma(2\nu + n)}{2^{2\nu-1} (\nu + n) n! [\Gamma(\nu)]^2} \delta_{nm}.$$

(II) Chebyshev (Tschebyscheff) Polynomials

(1) Chebyshev Polynomial (Chebyshev Function of the First Kind)

$$\begin{aligned} T_n(x) &\equiv \cos(n \arccos x) \\ &= (1/2) \left[(x + i\sqrt{1-x^2})^n + (x - i\sqrt{1-x^2})^n \right] \\ &= F(n, -n; 1/2; (1-x)/2) \\ &= \sum_{j=0}^{[n/2]} (-1)^j \binom{n}{2j} x^{n-2j} (1-x^2)^j \\ &= \frac{(-1)^n (1-x^2)^{1/2}}{(2n-1)!!} \frac{d^n (1-x^2)^{n-(1/2)}}{dx^n}, \end{aligned}$$

Chebyshev function of the second kind

$$\begin{aligned} U_n(x) &\equiv \sin(n \arccos x) \\ &= (1/2i) \left[(x + i\sqrt{1-x^2})^n - (x - i\sqrt{1-x^2})^n \right] \\ &= \frac{(-1)^{n-1} n}{(2n-1)!!} \frac{d^{n-1} (1-x^2)^{n-(1/2)}}{dx^{n-1}}. \end{aligned}$$

$T_n(x)$, $U_n(x)$ are mutually linearly independent solutions of Chebyshev's differential equation $(1-x^2)y'' - xy' + n^2y = 0$. Recurrence relations are

$$T_{n+1}(x) - 2xT_n(x) + T_{n-1}(x) = 0, \quad U_{n+1}(x) - 2xU_n(x) + U_{n-1}(x) = 0.$$

Generating function:

$$\frac{1-t^2}{1-2tx+t^2} = T_0(x) + 2 \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} T_n(x) t^n, \quad \frac{1}{1-2tx+t^2} = \frac{1}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} U_{n+1}(x) t^n.$$

Orthogonal relation:

$$\int_{-1}^{+1} \frac{T_m(x) T_n(x)}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} dx = \begin{cases} 0 & (m \neq n), \\ \pi/2 & (m = n \neq 0), \\ \pi & (m = n = 0); \end{cases} \quad \int_{-1}^{+1} \frac{U_m(x) U_n(x)}{\sqrt{1-x^2}} dx = \begin{cases} \frac{\pi}{2} & (m = n \neq 0), \\ 0 & (\text{otherwise}). \end{cases}$$

Orthogonality in finite sums. Let u_0, u_1, \dots, u_k be the zeros of $T_{k+1}(x)$. All zeros are real and situated in the interval $(-1, 1)$. Then we have

$$\sum_{i=0}^k T_m(u_i) T_n(u_i) = \begin{cases} 0 & (m \neq n, \text{ or } m = n = k+1), \\ (k+1)/2 & (1 \leq m = n \leq k), \\ k+1 & (m = n = 0). \end{cases}$$

Let $p_n(x)$ be the best approximation of x^n in $-1 \leq x \leq 1$ by polynomials of degree at most $n-1$. Then we have $x^n - p_n(x) = 2^{-n+1} T_n(x)$.

(2) Expansions by $T_n(x)$.

$$e^{ax} = I_0(a) + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} I_n(a) T_n(x),$$

$$\sin ax = 2 \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} (-1)^n J_{2n+1}(a) T_{2n+1}(x),$$

$$\cos ax = J_0(a) + 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^n J_{2n}(a) T_{2n}(x),$$

$$\log(1 + x \sin 2\alpha) = 2 \log \cos \alpha - 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} \frac{1}{n} (-\tan \alpha)^n T_n(x),$$

$$\arctan x = 2 \sum_{n=1}^{\infty} (-1)^n \frac{(\sqrt{2}-1)^{2n+1}}{2n+1} T_{2n+1}(x).$$

(III) Parabolic Cylinder Functions (Weber Functions) (\rightarrow 167 Functions of Confluent Type)

Parabolic cylinder functions:

$$\begin{aligned} D_\nu(z) &\equiv 2^{(1/4)+(\nu/2)} z^{-1/2} W_{(1/4)+(\nu/2), -1/4}(z^2/2) \\ &= \sqrt{\pi} 2^{(1/4)+(\nu/2)} z^{-1/2} \left[\frac{M_{(1/4)+(\nu/2), -1/4}(z^2/2)}{\Gamma[(1-\nu)/2]} + \frac{M_{(1/4)-(\nu/2), -1/4}(z^2/2)}{\Gamma(-\nu/2)} \right] \\ &= 2^{\nu/2} e^{-z^2/4} \sqrt{\pi} \left[\frac{1}{\Gamma[(1-\nu)/2]} {}_1F_1\left(\frac{-\nu}{2}; \frac{1}{2}; \frac{z^2}{2}\right) - \frac{\sqrt{2} z}{\Gamma(-\nu/2)} {}_1F_1\left(\frac{1-\nu}{2}; \frac{3}{2}; \frac{z^2}{2}\right) \right]. \end{aligned}$$

The solutions of Weber's differential equation

$$\frac{d^2 u}{dz^2} + \left(\nu + \frac{1}{2} - \frac{z^2}{4} \right) u = 0$$

are given by

$$D_\nu(z), D_\nu(-z), D_{-\nu-1}(iz), D_{-\nu-1}(-iz),$$

and the following relations hold among them.

$$\begin{aligned} D_\nu(z) &= [\Gamma(\nu+1)/\sqrt{2\pi}] [e^{i\nu\pi/2} D_{-\nu-1}(iz) + e^{-i\nu\pi/2} D_{-\nu-1}(-iz)] \\ &= e^{-i\nu\pi} D_\nu(-z) + [\sqrt{2\pi}/\Gamma(-\nu)] e^{-i(\nu+1)\pi/2} D_{-\nu-1}(iz) \\ &= e^{i\nu\pi} D_\nu(-z) + [\sqrt{2\pi}/\Gamma(-\nu)] e^{i(\nu+1)\pi/2} D_{-\nu-1}(-iz). \end{aligned}$$

Integral representation:

$$D_\nu(z) = \frac{e^{-z^2/4}}{\Gamma(-\nu)} \int_0^\infty e^{-zt - (t^2/2)} t^{-\nu-1} dt \quad (\operatorname{Re} \nu < 0).$$

$$e^{-(z^2/4) - zt - (t^2/2)} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} \frac{(-t)^n}{n!} D_n(z) = \frac{1}{2\pi i} \int_{c-i\infty}^{c+i\infty} t^\nu \Gamma(-\nu) D_\nu(z) d\nu \quad (c < 0, |\arg t| < \pi/4).$$

Recurrence formula:

$$D_{\nu+1}(z) - z D_\nu(z) + \nu D_{\nu-1}(z) = 0, \quad dD_\nu(z)/dz + (1/2)z D_\nu(z) - \nu D_{\nu-1}(z) = 0.$$

$$D_\nu(0) = \frac{2^{\nu/2} \sqrt{\pi}}{\Gamma[(1-\nu)/2]}, \quad D'_\nu(0) = -\frac{2^{(\nu+1)/2} \sqrt{\pi}}{\Gamma(-\nu/2)}.$$

Asymptotic expansion:

$$D_\nu(z) \approx e^{-z^2/4} z^\nu \left(1 - \frac{\nu(\nu-1)}{2z^2} + \frac{\nu(\nu-1)(\nu-2)(\nu-3)}{2 \cdot 4z^4} \mp \dots \right) \quad (|\arg z| < \frac{3}{4}\pi).$$

$$D_{-1}(z) = e^{z^2/4} \sqrt{\frac{\pi}{2}} \left[1 - \operatorname{erf}\left(\frac{z}{\sqrt{2}}\right) \right], \quad \operatorname{erf}(x) \equiv \frac{2}{\sqrt{\pi}} \int_0^x e^{-t^2} dt \quad (\text{error function}).$$

(IV) Hermite Polynomials

For the parabolic cylinder functions, when ν is an integer n , we have

$$D_n(z) = (-1)^n e^{z^2/4} d^n(e^{-z^2/2})/dz^n = e^{-z^2/4} H_n(z/\sqrt{2}),$$

where $H_n(x)$ is the Hermite polynomial

$$H_n(x) \equiv 2^{-n/2} (-1)^n e^{x^2/2} d^n (e^{-x^2}) / dx^n = e^{x^2/2} D_n (\sqrt{2} x).$$

A Hermite polynomial is more often defined by the following function $\text{He}_n(x)$ (e.g., in W.F. Magnus, F. Oberhettinger, and R. P. Soni [1]).

$$\text{He}_n(x) \equiv (-1)^n e^{x^2/2} d^n (e^{-x^2/2}) / dx^n = e^{x^2/4} D_n (x) = H_n(x/\sqrt{2}).$$

The function $y = H_n(x)$ is a solution of Hermite's differential equation

$$y'' - 2xy' + 2ny = 0.$$

$H_n(x)$ is a polynomial in x of degree n , and is an even or odd function according to whether n is even or odd.

$$H_{2n}(x) = (-1)^n (2n-1)!! {}_1F_1(-n; 1/2; x^2),$$

$$H_{2n+1}(x) = (-1)^n (2n+1)!! \sqrt{2} x {}_1F_1(-n; 3/2; x^2).$$

Recurrence formula:

$$H_{n+1}(x) = \sqrt{2} x H_n(x) - n H_{n-1}(x) = \sqrt{2} x H_n(x) - H'_n(x) / \sqrt{2},$$

$$H'_n(x) = \sqrt{2} n H_{n-1}(x).$$

$$H_{2n}(0) = \frac{(-1)^n (2n)!}{2^n n!} = (-1)^n (2n-1)!!, \quad H_{2n+1}(0) = 0.$$

Generating function:

$$e^{\sqrt{2} ix - (t^2/2)} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} H_n(x) t^n / n!.$$

Orthogonal relation:

$$\int_{-\infty}^{+\infty} H_n(x) H_m(x) e^{-x^2} dx = \delta_{nm} n! \sqrt{\pi}.$$

(V) Jacobi Polynomials

$$G_n(\alpha, \gamma; x) \equiv F(-n, \alpha+n; \gamma; x)$$

$$= x^{1-\gamma} (1-x)^{\gamma-\alpha} \frac{\Gamma(\gamma+n)}{\Gamma(\gamma)} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} [x^{\gamma+n-1} (1-x)^{\alpha+n-\gamma}].$$

These satisfy Jacobi's differential equation $x(1-x)y'' + [\gamma - (\alpha+1)x]y' + n(\alpha+n)y = 0$.

Orthogonal relation:

$$\int_0^1 x^{\gamma-1} (1-x)^{\alpha-\gamma} G_m(\alpha, \gamma; x) G_n(\alpha, \gamma; x) dx = \frac{n! \Gamma(\alpha+n-\gamma+1) \Gamma(\gamma)^2}{(\alpha+2n) \Gamma(\alpha+n) \Gamma(\gamma+n)} \delta_{mn}$$

$$(\text{Re } \gamma > 0, \quad \text{Re}(\alpha - \gamma) > -1).$$

Representation of other functions:

$$P_n(x) = G\left(1, 1; \frac{1-x}{2}\right), \quad T_n(x) = G\left(0, \frac{1}{2}; \frac{1-x}{2}\right),$$

$$C_n^\nu(x) = (-1)^n \frac{\Gamma(2\nu+n)}{\Gamma(2\nu) \cdot n!} G_n\left(2\nu, \nu + \frac{1}{2}; \frac{1+x}{2}\right).$$

(VI) Laguerre Functions**(1) Laguerre Functions.**

$$L_v^{(\alpha)}(z) \equiv \frac{\Gamma(\alpha + v + 1)}{\Gamma(\alpha + 1)\Gamma(v + 1)} z^{-(\alpha+1)/2} e^{z/2} M_{[(\alpha+1)/2]+v, \alpha/2}(z) \\ = \frac{\Gamma(\alpha + v + 1)}{\Gamma(\alpha + 1)\Gamma(v + 1)} {}_1F_1(-v; \alpha + 1; z),$$

These satisfy Laguerre's differential equation

$$z d^2 [L_v^{(\alpha)}(z)] / dz^2 + (\alpha + 1 - z) d [L_v^{(\alpha)}(z)] / dz + \nu L_v^{(\alpha)}(z) = 0.$$

(2) Laguerre Polynomials. When ν is an integer n ($n = 0, 1, 2, \dots$), the function $L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)$ reduces to a polynomial of degree n as follows.

Laguerre polynomials:

$$L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = \frac{e^x x^{-\alpha}}{n!} \frac{d^n}{dx^n} (e^{-x} x^{n+\alpha}) = \sum_{j=0}^n \binom{n+\alpha}{n-j} \frac{(-x)^j}{j!}. \\ L_n^{(0)}(x) = 1, \quad L_0^{(m)}(x) = 1, \quad L_{n+m}^{(-m)}(x) = \frac{(-1)^m n!}{(n+m)!} x^m L_n^{(m)}(x) \quad (m = 0, 1, 2, \dots).$$

Recurrence formulas:

$$n L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) = (-x + 2n + \alpha - 1) L_{n-1}^{(\alpha)}(x) - (n + \alpha - 1) L_{n-2}^{(\alpha)}(x), \\ x d [L_n^{(\alpha)}(x)] / dx = n L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) - (n + \alpha) L_{n-1}^{(\alpha)}(x) \quad (n = 2, 3, \dots).$$

Generating function:

$$\frac{e^{-xt/(1-t)}}{(1-t)^{\alpha+1}} = \sum_{n=0}^{\infty} L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) t^n \quad (|t| < 1).$$

Orthogonal relations:

$$\int_0^{\infty} e^{-x} x^{\alpha} L_m^{(\alpha)}(x) L_n^{(\alpha)}(x) dx = \delta_{mn} \Gamma(\alpha + n + 1) / n! = \delta_{mn} \Gamma(1 + \alpha) \binom{n + \alpha}{n}. \\ H_{2n}(x) = (-2)^n n! L_n^{(-1/2)}(x^2), \quad H_{2n+1}(x) = (-2)^n n! \sqrt{2} x L_n^{(1/2)}(x^2).$$

(3) Sonine Polynomials.

$$S_n^{(\alpha)}(x) \equiv \frac{(-1)^n}{\Gamma(\alpha + n + 1)} L_n^{(\alpha)}(x).$$

(VII) Orthogonal Polynomials

$$P_{n,m}(x) = \sum_{k=0}^n (-1)^k \binom{n}{k} \binom{n+k}{k} \frac{x(x-1)\dots(x-k+1)}{m(m-1)\dots(m-k+1)}$$

(where n, m are positive integers and $n \leq m$).

We have the same polynomials if we replace x^k in $P_n(1-2x)$ by

$$x(x-1)\dots(x-k+1) / m(m-1)\dots(m-k+1) \quad (k = 0, 1, \dots, n).$$

Orthogonality in finite sums:

$$\sum_{k=0}^m P_{n,m}(k) P_{l,m}(k) = \delta_{nl} \frac{(m+n+1)!(m-n)!}{(2n+1)(m!)^2}.$$

Chebyshev's q functions:

$$q_n(m, x) = \frac{(-1)^n (m-1)!}{2^n (m-n-1)!} P_{n,m-1}(x), \quad \xi_{n,m}(x) = [2^n (n!)^2 / (2n)!] q_n(m, x-1).$$

For given data y_k at m points $x_k = x_1 + (k-1)h$ ($k = 1, \dots, m$) that are equally spaced with step h , the least square approximation among the polynomials $Q(x)$ of degree n ($n < m$), i.e., the polynomial that minimizes the square sum of the residues $S = \sum_{k=1}^m [y_k - Q(x_k)]^2$ is given by the

following formula (→ 19 Analog Computation):

$$Q(x)=\sum_{k=0}^n\frac{B_k}{S_k}\xi_{k,m}\left(\frac{x-x_1}{h}+1\right),\quad S=\sum_{k=1}^m(y_k)^2-\sum_{k=0}^m\frac{B_k^2}{S_k},$$
$$B_k=\sum_{i=1}^m y_i\xi_{k,m}(i),\quad S_k=\sum_{i=1}^m [\xi_{k,m}(i)]^2.$$

References

See references to Table 16, this Appendix.

21. Interpolation (→ 223 Interpolation)

(1) Lagrange’s Interpolation Polynomial.

$$f(x)=\sum_{s=0}^n f(x_s)\frac{(x-x_0)(x-x_1)\dots(x-x_{s-1})(x-x_{s+1})\dots(x-x_n)}{(x_s-x_0)(x_s-x_1)\dots(x_s-x_{s-1})(x_s-x_{s+1})\dots(x_s-x_n)}.$$

Aitken’s interpolation scheme. The interpolation polynomial $f(x)$ corresponding to the value $y_s=f(x_s)$ ($s=0,1,\dots,n$) is given inductively by the following procedure. The order of x_0,x_1,\dots,x_s is quite arbitrary.

$$p_{s,0}(x)=y_s\quad (s=0,1,\dots,n),$$
$$p_{s,k+1}(x)=\left[(x_s-x)p_{k,k}(x)-(x_k-x)p_{s,k}(x)\right]/(x_s-x_k)\quad (s=k+1,k+2,\dots,n),$$
$$f(x)\equiv p_{n,n}(x).$$

(2) Interpolation for Equally Spaced Points. When the points x_k lie in the order of their subscripts at a uniform distance h ($x_s=x_0+sh$), we make the following difference table ($\Delta x=h$). Forward difference:

$$\Delta_i\equiv\Delta_i^1\equiv f_{i+1}-f_i=f(x_{i+1})-f(x_i),\quad \Delta_i^s\equiv\Delta_{i+1}^{s-1}-\Delta_i^{s-1}.$$

Variable	Value of Function	Difference				
		(1st)	(2nd)	(3rd)	(4th)	...
...
$x_0-2\Delta x$	f_{-2}	...	...	...	...	...
$x_0-\Delta x$	f_{-1}	Δ_{-2}	Δ_{-2}^2	...	...	...
x_0	f_0	Δ_{-1}	Δ_{-1}^2	Δ_{-2}^3	Δ_{-2}^4	...
$x_0+\Delta x$	f_1	Δ_0	Δ_0^2	Δ_{-1}^3	Δ_{-1}^4	...
$x_0+2\Delta x$	f_2	Δ_1	Δ_1^2	Δ_0^3	...	...
$x_0+3\Delta x$	f_3	Δ_2	...	...	...	...
...

Backward difference:

$$\bar{\Delta}_i^s\equiv\bar{\Delta}_i^{s-1}-\bar{\Delta}_{i-1}^{s-1}=\Delta_{s-i}^s.$$

Central difference:

$$\delta_i^s=\delta_{i+(1/2)}^{s-1}-\delta_{i-(1/2)}^{s-1},\quad \delta_{i+(s/2)}^s=\Delta_i^s.$$

Newton interpolation formula (forward type):

$$f(x_0+u\Delta x)=f(x_0)+\frac{u}{1!}\Delta_0+\frac{u(u-1)}{2!}\Delta_0^2+\frac{u(u-1)(u-2)}{3!}\Delta_0^3$$
$$+\frac{u(u-1)(u-2)(u-3)}{4!}\Delta_0^4+\dots$$

Gauss’s interpolation formula (forward type):

$$f(x_0+u\Delta x)=f(x_0)+\frac{u}{1!}\Delta_0+\frac{u(u-1)}{2!}\Delta_{-1}^2+\frac{u(u-1)(u+1)}{3!}\Delta_{-1}^3$$
$$+\frac{u(u-1)(u+1)(u-2)}{4!}\Delta_{-2}^4+\dots$$

Stirling's interpolation formula:

$$f(x_0 + u\Delta x) = f(x_0) + \frac{u}{1!} \frac{\Delta_{-1} + \Delta_0}{2} + \frac{u^2}{2!} \Delta_{-1}^2 + \frac{u(u^2-1)}{3!} \frac{\Delta_{-2}^2 + \Delta_{-1}^2}{2} + \frac{u^2(u^2-1)}{4!} \Delta_{-2}^4 + \dots$$

Bessel's interpolation formula:

$$f\left(\frac{x_0 + x_1}{2} + v\Delta x\right) = \frac{f(x_0) + f(x_1)}{2} + \frac{v}{1!} \Delta_0 + \frac{1}{2!} \left(v^2 - \frac{1}{4}\right) \frac{\Delta_{-1}^2 + \Delta_0^2}{2} + \frac{v}{3!} \left(v^2 - \frac{1}{4}\right) \Delta_{-1}^3 + \frac{1}{4!} \left(v^2 - \frac{1}{4}\right) \left(v^2 - \frac{9}{4}\right) \frac{\Delta_{-2}^4 + \Delta_{-1}^4}{2} + \dots$$

Everett's interpolation formula:

$$f(x_0 + u\Delta x) = f(x_1 - \xi\Delta x) = \xi f(x_0) + \frac{\xi(\xi^2-1)}{3!} \Delta_{-1}^2 + \frac{\xi(\xi^2-1)(\xi^2-4)}{5!} \Delta_{-2}^4 + \dots \\ + uf(x_1) + \frac{u(u^2-1)}{3!} \Delta_0^2 + \frac{u(u^2-1)(u^2-4)}{5!} \Delta_{-1}^4 + \dots \quad (\xi = 1-u)$$

(3) Interpolation for Functions of Two Variables. Let $x_m = x_0 + m\Delta x$, $y_n = y_0 + n\Delta y$ (m and n are integers). We define the finite differences as follows:

$$\Delta_x(x_0, y_0) \equiv f(x_1, y_0) - f(x_0, y_0),$$

$$\Delta_y(x_0, y_0) \equiv f(x_0, y_1) - f(x_0, y_0),$$

$$\Delta_x^2(x_0, y_0) \equiv \Delta_x(x_1, y_0) - \Delta_x(x_0, y_0) \equiv \delta_x^2(x_1, y_0),$$

$$\Delta_{xy}(x_0, y_0) \equiv \Delta_y(x_1, y_0) - \Delta_y(x_0, y_0) = \Delta_x(x_0, y_1) - \Delta_x(x_0, y_0),$$

$$\Delta_y^2(x_0, y_0) \equiv \Delta_y(x_0, y_1) - \Delta_y(x_0, y_0) \equiv \delta_y^2(x_0, y_1), \quad \dots$$

Newton's formula:

$$f(x_0 + u\Delta x, y_0 + v\Delta y) = f(x_0, y_0) + (u\Delta_x + v\Delta_y)(x_0, y_0) \\ + (1/2!)[u(u-1)\Delta_x^2 + 2uv\Delta_{xy} + v(v-1)\Delta_y^2](x_0, y_0) + \dots$$

Everett's formula. Putting $s \equiv 1-u$, $t \equiv 1-v$ we have

$$f(x_0 + u\Delta x, y_0 + v\Delta y) = sf(x_0, y_0) + sf(x_0, y_1) + uf(x_1, y_0) + uf(x_1, y_1) \\ - (1/6)[us(1+s)\{t\delta_x^2(x_0, y_0) + v\delta_x^2(x_0, y_1)\} + us(1+u)\{t\delta_x^2(x_1, y_0) + v\delta_x^2(x_1, y_1)\} \\ + vt(1+t)\{s\delta_y^2(x_0, y_0) + u\delta_y^2(x_1, y_0)\} + vt(1+v)\{s\delta_y^2(x_0, y_1) + u\delta_y^2(x_1, y_1)\}] + \dots$$

References

- [1] F. J. Thompson, Table of the coefficients of Everett's central-difference interpolation formula, Tracts for computers, no. V, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1921.
- [2] M. Lindow, Numerische Infinitesimalrechnung, Dummler, Berlin, 1928.
- [3] H. T. Davis, Tables of the higher mathematical functions I, Principia Press, Bloomington, 1933.
- [4] K. Hayashi and S. Moriguti, Table of higher transcendental functions (in Japanese), Iwanami, second revised edition, 1967.

22. Distribution of Typical Random Variables

(→ 341 Probability Measures, 374 Sampling Distributions)

In the following table, Nos. 1–13 are 1-dimensional continuous distributions, and Nos. 20–21 are k -dimensional continuous distributions, for which the distribution density is the one with respect to Lebesgue measure. Nos. 14–19 are 1-dimensional discrete distributions, and Nos. 22–24 are k -dimensional discrete distributions, where the density function $P(x)$ means the probability at the point x .

The characteristic function, average, and variance are given only for those represented in a simple form.

App. A, Table 22
Distribution of Typical Random Variables

No.	Name	Symbol	Density Function	Domains
1	Normal	$N(\mu, \sigma^2)$	$\frac{1}{(2\pi\sigma^2)^{1/2}} \exp\left[-\frac{(x-\mu)^2}{2\sigma^2}\right]$	$-\infty < x < \infty$
2	Logarithmic normal		$\frac{1}{(2\pi\sigma^2)^{1/2}} \frac{1}{y} \exp\left[-\frac{(\log y - \mu)^2}{2\sigma^2}\right]$	$0 < y < \infty$
3	Gamma	$\Gamma(p, \sigma)$	$[\Gamma(p)]^{-1} \sigma^{-p} x^{p-1} e^{-x/\sigma}$	$0 < x < \infty$
4	Exponential	$e(\mu, \sigma)$	$(1/\sigma) \exp(-(x-\mu)/\sigma)$	$\mu < x < \infty$
5	Two-sided exponential		$(1/2\sigma) e^{-|x|/\sigma}$	$-\infty < x < \infty$
6	Chi square	$\chi^2(n)$	$2^{-n/2} [\Gamma(n/2)]^{-1} x^{(n/2)-1} e^{-x/2}$	$0 < x < \infty$
7	Beta	$B(p, q)$	$[B(p, q)]^{-1} x^{p-1} (1-x)^{q-1}$	$0 < x < 1$
8	F	$F(m, n)$	$2 K_F x^{(m/2)-1} [1 + (mx/n)]^{-(m+n)/2}$, $K_F \equiv [B(m/2, n/2)]^{-1} (m/n)^{m/2}$	$0 < x < \infty$
9	z	$z(m, n)$	$K_F e^{mz} [1 + (me^{2z}/n)]^{-(m+n)/2}$, $K_F \equiv [B(m/2, n/2)]^{-1} (m/n)^{m/2}$	$-\infty < z < \infty$
10	t	$t(n)$	$[\sqrt{n} B(n/2, 1/2)]^{-1} [1 + (t^2/n)]^{-(n+1)/2}$	$-\infty < t < \infty$
11	Cauchy	$C(\mu, \sigma)$	$(\pi\sigma)^{-1} \left[1 + \frac{(x-\mu)^2}{\sigma^2}\right]^{-1}$	$-\infty < x < \infty$
12	One-side stable for exponent 1/2		$c(2\pi)^{-1/2} x^{-3/2} \exp(-c^2/2x)$	$0 < x < \infty$
13	Uniform rectangular	$U(\alpha, \beta)$	$1/(\beta - \alpha)$	$\alpha < x < \beta$
14	Binomial	$Bin(n, p)$	$\binom{n}{x} p^x q^{n-x}$	$x = 0, 1, 2, \dots, n$
15	Poisson	$P(\lambda)$	$e^{-\lambda} \lambda^x / x!$	$x = 0, 1, 2, \dots$
16	Hypergeometric	$H(N, n, p)$	$\binom{Np}{x} \binom{Nq}{n-x} / \binom{N}{n}$	x integer $0 < x < Np$, $0 < n - x < Nq$
17	Negative binomial	$NB(m, p)$	$\Gamma(m+x) [\Gamma(m)x!]^{-1} p^m q^x$	$x = 0, 1, 2, \dots$
18	Geometric	$G(p)$	$p q^x$	$x = 0, 1, 2, \dots$
19	Logarithmic		$K_L q^x / x$, $K_L \equiv -1/\log p$	$x = 1, 2, 3, \dots$
20	Multidimensional normal	$N(\mu, \Sigma)$	$(2\pi)^{-k/2} |\Sigma|^{-1/2}$ $\times \exp[-(x-\mu)\Sigma^{-1}(x-\mu)'/2]$, $x = (x_1, \dots, x_k)$, $\mu = (\mu_1, \dots, \mu_k)$, $\Sigma = (\sigma_{ij})$	$-\infty < x_1, \dots, x_k$ $< \infty$
21	Dirichlet		$\frac{\Gamma(p_1 + \dots + p_{k+1})}{\Gamma(p_1) \dots \Gamma(p_{k+1})} x_1^{p_1-1} \dots x_{k+1}^{p_{k+1}-1}$ $x_{k+1} = 1 - (x_1 + \dots + x_k)$	$x_1, \dots, x_k > 0$, $x_1 + \dots + x_k < 1$
22	Multinomial	$M(n, (p_i))$	$n! (x_1! \dots x_{k+1}!)^{-1} p_1^{x_1} \dots p_{k+1}^{x_{k+1}}$, $x_{k+1} = n - (x_1 + \dots + x_k)$	x_1, \dots, x_k $= 0, 1, \dots, n$, $x_1 + \dots + x_k \leq n$
23	Multidimensional hypergeometric	$H(N, n, (p_i))$	$\binom{Np_1}{x_1} \dots \binom{Np_{k+1}}{x_{k+1}} / \binom{N}{n}$, $x_{k+1} = n - (x_1 + \dots + x_k)$	x_1, \dots, x_k integers $0 < x_i < Np_i$ $(i = 1, \dots, k+1)$
24	Negative polynomial		$\frac{\Gamma(m+x_1+\dots+x_k)}{\Gamma(m)x_1! \dots x_k!} p_0^m p_1^{x_1} \dots p_k^{x_k}$	x_1, \dots, x_k $= 0, 1, 2, \dots$

App. A, Table 22
Distribution of Typical Random Variables

Conditions for Parameters	Characteristic Function	Mean	Variance	No.
$-\infty < \mu < \infty, \sigma > 0$	$\exp\left(i\mu t - \frac{\sigma^2 t^2}{2}\right)$	μ	σ^2	1
$-\infty < \mu < \infty, \sigma > 0$		$e^{\mu + (\sigma^2/2)}$	$e^{2\mu}(e^{2\sigma^2} - e^{\sigma^2})$	2
$p, \sigma > 0$	$(1 - i\sigma t)^{-p}$	σp	$\sigma^2 p$	3
$-\infty < \mu < \infty, \sigma > 0$	$e^{i\mu t}(1 - i\sigma t)^{-1}$	$\mu + \sigma$	σ^2	4
$\sigma > 0$	$(1 + \sigma^2 t^2)^{-1}$	0	$2\sigma^2$	5
n positive integer	$(1 - 2it)^{-n/2}$	n	$2n$	6
$p, q > 0$		$\frac{p}{p+q}$	$\frac{pq}{(p+q)^2(p+q+1)}$	7
m, n positive integers		$\frac{n}{n-2} (n > 2)$	$\frac{2n^2(m+n-2)}{m(n-2)^2(n-4)} (n > 4)$	8
m, n positive integers				9
n positive integer		0 ($n > 1$)	$n/(n-2) (n > 2)$	10
$-\infty < \mu < \infty, \sigma > 0$	$\exp(i\mu t - \sigma|t|)$	none	none	11
$0 < c < \infty$	$\exp[-c|t|^{1/2}(1 - it/|t|)]$	none	none	12
$-\infty < \alpha < \beta < \infty$	$(e^{i\beta t} - e^{i\alpha t})/it(\beta - \alpha)$	$(\alpha + \beta)/2$	$(\beta - \alpha)^2/12$	13
$p + q = 1, p, q > 0, n$ positive integer	$(pe^{it} + q)^n$	np	npq	14
$\lambda > 0$	$\exp[-\lambda(1 - e^{it})]$	λ	λ	15
$p + q = 1, p, q > 0, N, Np, n$ positive integers $N > n$	$(Nq)^{[n]}(N^{[n]})^{-1} \times F(-n, -Np; Nq - n + 1; e^{it}),$ $m^{[n]} \equiv m!/(m-n)!$	np	$\frac{npq(N-n)}{N-1}$	16
$p + q = 1, p, q > 0, m > 0$	$\frac{p^m}{(1 - qe^{it})^m}$	$\frac{mq}{p}$	$\frac{mq}{p^2}$	17
$p + q = 1, p, q > 0$	$\frac{p}{1 - qe^{it}}$	$\frac{q}{p}$	$\frac{q}{p^2}$	18
$p + q = 1, p, q > 0$	$-K_L \log(1 - qe^{it})$	$K_L q/p$	$K_L q(1 - K_L q)/p^2$	19
$-\infty < \mu_1, \dots, \mu_k < \infty, \Sigma$ symmetric positive definite quadratic form	$\exp\left(i\mu' t' - \frac{t \Sigma t'}{2}\right),$ $t = (t_1, \dots, t_k)$	$E(x_i) = \mu_i$	$V(x_i) = \sigma_{ii},$ $\text{Cov}(x_i, x_j) = \sigma_{ij}$	20
$v_1, \dots, v_{k+1} > 0$		$E(x_i) = \frac{v_i}{v_1 + \dots + v_{k+1}}$	$V(x_i) = C v_i(v_1 + \dots + v_{k+1} - v_i),$ $\text{Cov}(x_i, x_j) = -C v_i v_j,$ $C \equiv (v_1 + \dots + v_{k+1})^{-2} \times (v_1 + \dots + v_{k+1} + 1)^{-1}$	21
$p_1 + \dots + p_{k+1} = 1, p_1, \dots, p_{k+1} > 0, n$ positive integer	$(p_1 e^{it_1} + \dots + p_k e^{it_k} + p_{k+1})^n$	$E(x_i) = np_i$	$V(x_i) = np_i(1 - p_i),$ $\text{Cov}(x_i, x_j) = -np_i p_j$	22
$p_1 + \dots + p_{k+1} = 1, p_1, \dots, p_{k+1} > 0, N, Np_1, \dots, Np_k, n$ positive integers		$E(x_i) = np_i$	$V(x_i) = C np_i(1 - p_i),$ $\text{Cov}(x_i, x_j) = -C np_i p_j,$ $C \equiv \frac{N-n}{N-1}$	23
$p_0 + p_1 + \dots + p_k = 1, p_0, p_1, \dots, p_k > 0, m > 0$	$p_0^m(1 - p_1 e^{it_1} - \dots - p_k e^{it_k})^m$	$E(x_i) = \frac{mp_i}{p_0}$	$V(x_i) = mp_i(p_0 + p_i)/p_0^2,$ $\text{Cov}(x_i, x_j) = mp_i p_j/p_0^2$	24

- Remarks
- 1. Reproducing property with respect to μ, σ^2 .
 - 2. $X = \log Y: N(\mu, \sigma^2)$.
 - 3. Reproducing property with respect to p .
 - 4. $e(0, \sigma) = \Gamma(1, \sigma)$.
 - 6. n is the number of degrees of freedom; reproducing property with respect to n .
 - 8. m and n are the numbers of degrees of freedom.
 - 9. $e^{2z} = F(m, n)$.
 - 10. n is the number of degrees of freedom.
 - 11. $C(0, 1) = t(1)$; reproducing property with respect to μ and σ .
 - 14. Reproducing property with respect to n .
 - 15. Reproducing property with respect to λ .
 - 17. Reproducing property with respect to m .
 - 18. $G(p) = NB(1, p)$.
 - 20. Generalization of normal distribution; reproducing property with respect to μ and Σ .
 - 22. Generalization of binomial distribution; reproducing property with respect to n .
 - 23. Generalization of hypergeometric distribution.
 - 24. Generalization of negative binomial distribution; reproducing property with respect to m .

23. Statistical Estimation and Statistical Hypothesis Testing

Listed below are some frequently used and well-investigated statistical procedures. (Concerning main probability distributions — 398 Statistical Decision Functions, 399 Statistical Estimation, 400 Statistical Hypothesis Testing). The following notations and conventions are adopted, unless otherwise stated.

Immediately after the heading number, the distribution is indicated by the symbol as defined in Table 22, this Appendix. It is to be understood that a random sample (x_1, x_2, \dots, x_n) is observed from this distribution. Where two distributions are involved, samples (x_1, \dots, x_{n_1}) and (y_1, \dots, y_{n_2}) are understood to be observed from the respective distributions.

Next, a necessary and sufficient statistic based on the sample is marked with * when it is complete, and # otherwise. Then appears the sampling distribution of this statistic. For those statistics consisting of several independent components, the distribution of these are shown. Greek lowercase letters except α and χ denote unknown parameters. Italic lowercase letters denote constants, each taking arbitrary real values. Italic capital letters denote constants whose values are specified in each procedure; repeated occurrences of the same letter under the same heading number specify a certain common real value.

Problems of point estimation, interval estimation, and hypothesis testing are presented, with corresponding estimators, confidence intervals, and tests (critical regions) as their solutions. All the confidence intervals here are those constructed from UMP unbiased tests, having $1 - \alpha$ as confidence levels. Alternative hypotheses are understood to be the negations of corresponding null hypotheses. Significance levels of all the tests are α . The following symbols are attached to each procedure to describe its properties.

For estimators:

- UMV: uniformly minimum variance unbiased.
- ML: maximum likelihood.
- AD: admissibility with respect to quadratic loss function.
- IAD: inadmissibility with respect to quadratic loss function.

For tests:

- UMP: uniformly most powerful.
- UMPU: uniformly most powerful unbiased.
- UMPI(): uniformly most powerful invariant with respect to the product of transformation groups shown in ().
- LR: likelihood ratio.
- O: group of orthogonal transformations.
- L: group of shift transformations.
- S: group of change of scales.
- AD: admissibility with respect to simple loss function.

IAD: inadmissibility with respect to simple loss function. (Note that UMPU implies AD.)

The following symbols denote $100(1 - \alpha)\%$ points of respective distributions, α being sufficiently small.

$u(\alpha)$: standard normal distribution.

$t_f(\alpha)$: t -distribution with f degrees of freedom.

$\chi_f^2(\alpha)$: χ^2 distribution with f degrees of freedom.

$F_{f_1}^{f_2}(\alpha)$: F -distribution with (f_1, f_2) degrees of freedom.

(1) $N(\mu, b^2)$. $\sum x_i^*$. $N(n\mu, nb^2)$.

Point estimation of μ . $\bar{x} = \frac{1}{n} \sum x_i$: UMV, ML, AD.

Interval estimation of μ . $\left(\bar{x} \pm u(\alpha/2) \frac{b}{\sqrt{n}} \right)$.

Hypothesis $[\mu \leq k]$. $\bar{x} > k + u(\alpha) \frac{b}{\sqrt{n}}$: UMP, LR.

Hypothesis $[h \leq \mu \leq l]$. $\bar{x} < h - C$ or $\bar{x} > l + C$: UMPU, LR.

(2) $N(a, \sigma^2)$. $\sum (x_i - a)^{2*}$. $\sigma^2 \chi_n^2$. ($\sigma^2 \chi_n^2$ is the σ^2 -multiplication of a random variable obeying the $\chi^2(n)$ distribution. We use similar notations in the following.)

Point estimation of σ^2 . $\frac{\sum (x_i - a)^2}{n}$: UMV, ML, IAD.

Interval estimation of σ^2 . $(A \sum (x_i - a)^2, B \sum (x_i - a)^2)$.

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 \leq k]$. $\sum (x_i - a)^2 > \chi_n^2(\alpha)k$: UMP, LR.

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 = k]$. $\sum (x_i - a)^2 < Ak$ or $\sum (x_i - a)^2 > Bk$: UMPU.

(3) $N(\mu, \sigma^2)$. $\left(\frac{\sum x_i}{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2} \right)^*$. $\left(\frac{N(n\mu, n\sigma^2)}{\sigma^2 \chi_{n-1}^2} \right)$.

Point estimation of μ . \bar{x} : UMV, ML, AD.

Interval estimation of μ . $\left[\bar{x} \pm t_{n-1}(\alpha/2) \frac{\sqrt{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}}{\sqrt{n(n-1)}} \right]$.

Hypothesis $[\mu \leq k]$. $\frac{\bar{x} - k}{\sqrt{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}} > \frac{t_{n-1}(\alpha)}{\sqrt{n(n-1)}}$: UMPU, LR.

Hypothesis $[\mu = k]$. $\frac{|\bar{x} - k|}{\sqrt{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}} > \frac{t_{n-1}(\alpha/2)}{\sqrt{n(n-1)}}$: UMPU, LR, UMPI(S, O) for $k=0$.

Point estimation of σ^2 . $\frac{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}{n-1}$: UMV, IAD. $\frac{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}{n}$: ML, IAD.

Point estimation of σ . $\frac{\Gamma[(n-1)/2]}{\sqrt{2} \Gamma(n/2)} \sqrt{\frac{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}{n-1}}$: UMV, IAD.

Interval estimation of σ^2 . $(A \sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2, B \sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2)$.

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 \leq k]$. $\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2 > \chi_{n-1}^2(\alpha)k$: UMP, LR.

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 = k]$. $\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2 < Ak$ or $\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2 > Bk$: UMPU.

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 \geq k]$. $\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2 < \chi_{n-1}^2(1-\alpha)k$: UMPU, UMPI(L).

Hypothesis $\left[\frac{\mu}{\sigma} \leq k \right]$. $\frac{\bar{x}}{\sqrt{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}} > E$: UMPI(S), AD.

(4) $\text{Bin}(N, \theta)$. $\sum x_i^*$. $\text{Bin}(Nn, \theta)$.

Point estimation of θ . $\frac{\bar{x}}{N}$: UMV, ML, AD.

Hypothesis $[\theta \leq k]$. $\bar{x} > A$: UMP.

Hypothesis $[h \leq \theta \leq l]$. $\bar{x} < B$ or $\bar{x} > C$: UMPU.

(5) $H(N, m, \theta)$ ($n=1$). x^* .

Point estimation of θ . $\frac{Nx}{m}$: UMV, AD.

Hypothesis $[\theta \leq k]$. $x > A$: UMP.

- (6) $NB(N, \theta)$. $\sum x_i^*$. $NB(Nn, \theta)$.
Point estimation of θ . $\frac{Nn-1}{Nn+\sum x_i-1}$ (1 when the denominator is 0): UMV, AD.

$$\frac{Nn}{Nn+\sum x_i}: \text{ML}.$$

Hypothesis $[\theta \leq k]$. $\sum x_i < A$: UMP.

Hypothesis $[h \leq \theta \leq l]$. $\sum x_i < B$ or $\sum x_i > C$: UMPU.

- (7) $P(\lambda)$. $\sum x_i^*$. $P(n\lambda)$.
Point estimation of λ . \bar{x} : UMV, ML, AD.
Hypothesis $[\lambda \leq k]$. $\bar{x} > A$: UMP.
Hypothesis $[h \leq \lambda \leq l]$. $\bar{x} < B$ or $\bar{x} > C$: UMPU.

- (8) $G(\theta)$. $\sum x_i^*$. $NB(n, \theta)$.
For the point estimation of θ and hypothesis testing \rightarrow (6).

- (9) $U[0, \theta]$. $\max x_i^*$.
Point estimation of θ . $\max x_i$: ML, IAD. $\frac{n+1}{n} \max x_i$: UMV, IAD.
Hypothesis $[\theta \leq k]$. $\max x_i > (1-\alpha)^{1/n}k$: UMP.
Hypothesis $[\theta = k]$. $\max x_i < k\alpha^{1/n}$ or $\max x_i > k$: UMP.

- (10) $U[\xi, \eta]$. $(\min x_i, \max x_i)^*$.
Point estimation of ξ . $\frac{n \min x_i - \max x_i}{n-1}$: UMV, IAD. $\min x_i$: ML, IAD.
Point estimation of $\frac{\xi + \eta}{2}$. $\frac{\min x_i + \max x_i}{2}$: UMV, AD.
Hypothesis $[\eta - \xi \leq k]$. $\max x_i - \min x_i > k\alpha^{1/n}$: UMP.

- (11) $U\left[\theta - \frac{1}{2}, \theta + \frac{1}{2}\right]$. $(\min x_i, \max x_i)^*$.
Point estimation of θ . $\frac{\min x_i + \max x_i}{2}$: ML, AD.
Hypothesis $[\theta \leq k]$. $\min x_i > k + \frac{1}{2} - \alpha^{1/n}$ or $\max x_i > k + \frac{1}{2}$: UMP.

- (12) $e(\mu, \sigma)$. $\left(\frac{\sum x_i}{\min x_i}\right)^* \cdot \left(\frac{\Gamma(n, \sigma) + n\mu}{e(\mu, \sigma/n)}\right)$.
Point estimation of σ . $\frac{\sum x_i - n \min x_i}{n-1}$: UMV, IAD. $\bar{x} - \min x_i$: ML, IAD.
Point estimation of μ . $\frac{n}{n-1} \min x_i - \frac{1}{n-1} \bar{x}$: UMV, IAD. $\min x_i$: ML, IAD.
Hypothesis $[\sigma \leq k, \mu = h]$. $\sum x_i < h$ or $\sum x_i > k \log \alpha^{-1/n} + h$: UMP.
Hypothesis $[h \leq \sigma \leq l]$. $\sum x_i - n \min x_i < A$ or $\sum x_i - n \min x_i > B$: UMPU.
Hypothesis $[\mu = k]$. $\frac{n \min x_i - k}{\sum x_i - n \min x_i} < 0$ or $\frac{n \min x_i - k}{\sum x_i - n \min x_i} > C$: UMPU.

- (13) $\Gamma(p, \sigma)$. $\sum x_i^*$. $\Gamma(np, \sigma)$.
Point estimation of σ . $\frac{\bar{x}}{p}$: UMV, ML, IAD.
Interval estimation of σ . $(C \sum x_i, D \sum x_i)$.
Hypothesis $[\sigma \leq k]$. $\sum x_i > A$: UMP.
Hypothesis $[\sigma = k]$. $\sum x_i < Ck$ or $\sum x_i > Dk$: UMPU.

- (14) $N(\mu_1, a^2)$. $\left(\frac{\sum x_i}{\sum y_i}\right)^* \cdot \left(\frac{N(n_1 \mu_1, n_1 a^2)}{N(n_2 \mu_2, n_2 b^2)}\right)$.

Point estimation of $\mu_1 - \mu_2$. $\bar{x} - \bar{y}$: UMV, ML, AD.

Interval estimation of $\mu_1 - \mu_2$. $\left(\bar{x} - \bar{y} \pm u(\alpha/2) \sqrt{\frac{a^2}{n_1} + \frac{b^2}{n_2}}\right)$.

Hypothesis $[\mu_1 - \mu_2 \leq k]$. $\bar{x} - \bar{y} > k + u(\alpha) \sqrt{\frac{a^2}{n_1} + \frac{b^2}{n_2}}$: UMP, LR.

Hypothesis $[\mu_1 - \mu_2 = k]$. $|\bar{x} - \bar{y} - k| > u(\alpha/2) \sqrt{\frac{a^2}{n_1} + \frac{b^2}{n_2}}$: UMPU, UMPI(L), LR.

$$(15) \begin{matrix} N(\mu_1, \sigma^2) \\ N(\mu_2, \sigma^2) \end{matrix} \cdot \begin{bmatrix} \sum x_i \\ \sum y_i \\ s^2 = \sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2 + \sum (y_i - \bar{y})^2 \end{bmatrix}^* \cdot \begin{bmatrix} N(n_1 \mu_1, n_1 \sigma^2) \\ N(n_2 \mu_2, n_2 \sigma^2) \\ \sigma^2 \chi_{n_1+n_2-2}^2 \end{bmatrix}.$$

Point estimation of $\mu_1 - \mu_2$. $\bar{x} - \bar{y}$: UMV, ML, AD.

Interval estimation of $\mu_1 - \mu_2$. $\left(\bar{x} - \bar{y} \pm t_{n_1+n_2-2}(\alpha/2) \sqrt{\frac{1}{n_1} + \frac{1}{n_2}} \sqrt{\frac{s^2}{n_1+n_2-2}} \right)$.

Hypothesis $[\mu_1 - \mu_2 \leq k]$. $t = \frac{(\bar{x} - \bar{y} - k) \sqrt{n_1 n_2} \sqrt{n_1 + n_2 - 2}}{\sqrt{n_1 + n_2} \sqrt{s^2}} > t_{n_1+n_2-2}(\alpha)$: UMPU,

UMPI(L), LR.

Hypothesis $[\mu_1 - \mu_2 = k]$. $|t| > t_{n_1+n_2-2}(\alpha)$: UMPU, UMPI(L), LR.

Point estimation of σ^2 . $\frac{s^2}{n_1+n_2-2}$: UMV, IAD. $\frac{s^2}{n_1+n_2}$: ML, IAD.

Interval estimation of σ^2 . (As^2, Bs^2) .

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 \leq k]$. $s^2 > \chi_{n_1+n_2-2}^2(\alpha)k$: UMP, LR.

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 = k]$. $s^2 < Ak$ or $s^2 > Bk$: UMPU.

Hypothesis $[\sigma^2 \geq k]$. $s^2 > \chi_{n_1+n_2-2}^2(1-\alpha)k$: UMPU, UMPI(L), LR.

$$(16) \begin{matrix} N(\mu_1, \sigma_1^2) \\ N(\mu_2, \sigma_2^2) \end{matrix} \cdot \begin{bmatrix} \sum x_i, \sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2 \\ \sum y_i, \sum (y_i - \bar{y})^2 \end{bmatrix}^*.$$

Interval estimation of $\frac{\sigma_1^2}{\sigma_2^2}$. $\left[A \frac{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}{\sum (y_i - \bar{y})^2}, B \frac{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}{\sum (y_i - \bar{y})^2} \right]$.

Hypothesis $\left[\frac{\sigma_1^2}{\sigma_2^2} \leq k \right]$. $\frac{(n_2-1) \sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2}{(n_1-1) \sum (y_i - \bar{y})^2} > F_{n_2-1}^{n_1-1}(\alpha)k$: UMPU, UMPI(L, S), LR.

$$(17) N(\mu_1, \mu_2, \sigma_1^2, \sigma_2^2, \rho) \cdot \begin{bmatrix} \sum x_i, \sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2, \sum (x_i - \bar{x})(y_i - \bar{y}) \\ \sum y_i, \sum (y_i - \bar{y})^2 \end{bmatrix}^*.$$

Point estimation of ρ . $r = \frac{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})(y_i - \bar{y})}{\sqrt{\sum (x_i - \bar{x})^2 \sum (y_i - \bar{y})^2}}$: ML.

Hypothesis $[\rho = 0]$. $|r| > \frac{t_{n-1}(\alpha/2)}{\sqrt{t_{n-1}(\alpha/2)^2 + n - 2}}$: UMPU, LR.

Appendix B
Numerical Tables

1	Prime Numbers and Primitive Roots
2	Indices Modulo p
3	Bernoulli Numbers and Euler Numbers
4	Class Numbers of Algebraic Number Fields
5	Characters of Finite Groups; Crystallographic Groups
6	Miscellaneous Constants
7	Coefficients of Polynomial Approximations

1. Prime Numbers and Primitive Roots (→ 297 Number Theory,
Elementary

In the following table, p is a prime number and r is a corresponding primitive root.

p	r	p	r	p	r	p	r	p	r	p	r	p	r
2		79	3	191	19	311	17	439	17	577	5	709	2
3	2	83	2	193	5	313	17	443	2	587	2	719	11
5	2	89	3	197	2	317	2	449	3	593	3	727	5
7	3	97	5	199	3	331	3	457	13	599	7	733	7
11	2	101	2	211	2	337	19	461	2	601	7	739	3
13	2	103	5	223	3	347	2	463	3	607	3	743	5
17	3	107	2	227	2	349	2	467	2	613	2	751	3
19	2	109	11	229	7	353	3	479	13	617	3	757	2
23	5	113	3	233	3	359	7	487	3	619	2	761	7
29	2	127	3	239	7	367	11	491	2	631	3	769	11
31	3	131	2	241	7	373	2	499	7	641	3	773	2
37	2	137	3	251	11	379	2	503	5	643	11	787	2
41	7	139	2	257	3	383	5	509	2	647	5	797	2
43	3	149	2	263	5	389	2	521	3	653	2	809	3
47	5	151	7	269	2	397	5	523	2	659	2	811	3
53	2	157	5	271	43	401	3	541	2	661	2	821	2
59	2	163	2	277	5	409	29	547	2	673	5	823	3
61	2	167	5	281	3	419	2	557	2	677	2	827	2
67	2	173	2	283	3	421	2	563	2	683	5	829	2
71	7	179	2	293	2	431	7	569	3	691	3	839	11
73	5	181	2	307	5	433	5	571	3	701	2	853	2

†Mersenne numbers. A prime number of the form $2^p - 1$ is called a Mersenne number. There exist 27 such p 's less than 44500: $p=2, 3, 5, 7, 13, 17, 19, 31, 61, 89, 107, 127, 521, 607, 1279, 2203, 2281, 3217, 4253, 4423, 9689, 9941, 11213, 19937, 21701, 23209, 44497$. The even perfect numbers are the numbers of the form $2^{p-1}(2^p - 1)$, where $2^p - 1$ is a Mersenne number.

2. Indices Modulo p (→ 297 Number Theory, Elementary)

Let r be a primitive root corresponding to a prime number p . The index $l = \text{Ind}_r a$ of a with respect to the basis r is the integer l in $0 \leq l < p - 1$ satisfying $r^l \equiv a \pmod{p}$. $a \equiv b \pmod{p}$ is equivalent to $\text{Ind}_r a \equiv \text{Ind}_r b \pmod{p-1}$. The index satisfies the following congruence relations with respect to $\text{mod}(p - 1)$: $\text{Ind}_r ab \equiv \text{Ind}_r a + \text{Ind}_r b$, $\text{Ind}_r a^n \equiv n \text{Ind}_r a$, $\text{Ind}_r a \equiv \text{Ind}_r r \text{Ind}_r a$.

App. B, Table 2
Indices Modulo p

We can solve congruence equations using these relations. The following is a table of indices.

p	$p-1$	r	2	3	5	7	11	13	17	19	23	29	31	37	41	43	47
2	1		—														
3	2	2	1	—													
5	4	2	1	3	—												
7	2·3	3	2	1	5	—											
11	2·5	2	1	8	4	7	—										
13	2 ² ·3	2	1	4	9	11	7	—									
17	2 ⁴	3	14	1	5	11	7	4	—								
19	2·3 ²	2	1	13	16	6	12	5	10	—							
23	2·11	5	2	16	1	19	9	14	7	15	—						
29	2 ² ·7	2	1	5	22	12	25	18	21	9	20	—					
31	2·3·5	3	24	1	20	28	23	11	7	4	27	9	—				
37	2 ² ·3 ²	2	1	26	23	32	30	11	7	35	15	21	9	—			
41	2 ³ ·5	7	14	25	18	1	37	9	7	31	4	33	12	8	—		
43	2·3·7	3	27	1	25	35	30	32	38	19	16	41	34	7	6	—	
47	2·23	5	18	20	1	32	7	11	16	45	5	35	3	42	15	13	—
53	2 ² ·13	2	1	17	47	14	6	24	10	37	39	46	33	30	45	22	44
59	2·29	2	1	50	6	18	25	45	40	38	15	28	49	55	14	33	23
61	2 ² ·3·5	2	1	6	22	49	15	40	47	26	57	35	59	39	54	43	20
67	2·3·11	2	1	39	15	23	59	19	64	10	28	44	47	22	53	9	50
71	2·5·7	7	6	26	28	1	31	39	49	16	15	68	11	20	25	48	9
73	2 ³ ·3 ²	5	8	6	1	33	55	59	21	62	46	35	11	64	4	51	31
79	2·3·13	3	4	1	62	53	68	34	21	32	26	11	56	19	75	49	59
83	2·41	2	1	72	27	8	24	77	56	47	60	12	38	20	40	71	23
89	2 ³ ·11	3	16	1	70	81	84	23	6	35	57	59	31	11	21	29	54
97	2 ⁵ ·3	5	34	70	1	31	86	25	89	81	77	13	46	91	85	4	84
101	2 ² ·5 ²	2	1	69	24	9	13	66	30	96	86	91	84	56	45	42	58
103	2·3·17	5	44	39	1	4	61	72	70	80	24	86	57	93	50	77	85
107	2·53	2	1	70	47	43	22	14	29	78	62	32	27	38	40	59	66
109	2 ² ·3 ³	11	15	80	92	20	1	101	87	105	3	98	34	43	63	42	103
113	2 ⁴ ·7	3	12	1	83	8	74	22	5	99	41	89	50	67	94	47	31
127	2·3 ² ·7	3	72	1	87	115	68	94	38	84	121	113	46	98	80	71	60
131	2·5·13	2	1	72	46	96	56	18	43	35	23	51	29	41	126	124	105
137	2 ³ ·17	3	10	1	75	42	122	25	38	46	125	91	73	102	119	97	19
139	2·3·23	2	1	41	86	50	76	64	107	61	27	94	56	80	32	115	98
149	2 ² ·37	2	1	87	104	142	109	53	124	84	95	120	132	72	41	93	138
151	2·3·5 ²	7	10	93	136	1	82	23	124	120	145	42	34	148	3	74	128
157	2 ² ·3·13	5	141	82	1	147	28	26	40	124	135	129	62	116	21	113	92
163	2·3 ⁴	2	1	101	15	73	47	51	57	125	9	107	69	33	160	38	28
167	2·83	5	40	94	1	118	28	103	53	58	99	150	90	61	97	87	132
173	2 ² ·43	2	1	27	39	95	23	130	73	33	20	144	102	162	138	84	64
179	2·89	2	1	108	138	171	15	114	166	54	135	118	62	149	155	80	36
181	2 ² ·3 ² ·5	2	1	56	156	15	62	164	175	135	53	48	99	26	83	20	13
191	2·5·19	19	44	116	50	171	85	112	98	1	134	33	175	15	165	8	123
193	2 ⁶ ·3	5	34	84	1	104	183	141	31	145	162	123	82	5	151	24	29
197	2 ² ·7 ²	2	1	181	89	146	29	25	159	154	120	36	141	192	110	78	66
199	2·3 ² ·11	3	106	1	138	142	189	172	123	55	118	70	164	11	167	88	76
211	2·3·5·7	2	1	43	132	139	162	144	199	154	21	179	115	118	17	80	124
223	2·3·37	3	180	1	89	210	107	147	144	172	163	128	82	152	204	118	50
227	2·113	2	1	46	11	154	28	61	99	178	34	8	197	77	131	150	218
229	2 ² ·3·19	7	111	68	214	1	42	195	24	52	131	191	175	164	73	12	193

(table continued on following page)

<i>p</i>	<i>p</i> −1	<i>r</i>	2	3	5	7	11	13	17	19	23	29	31	37	41	43	47
233	2 ³ ·29	3	72	1	165	222	197	158	103	136	112	132	182	8	85	25	139
239	2·7·17	7	66	74	138	1	4	43	52	155	63	160	188	31	99	15	113
241	2 ⁴ ·3·5	7	190	182	138	1	25	47	111	85	57	154	151	73	6	219	114
251	2·5 ³	11	135	6	80	218	1	162	184	233	134	203	226	187	64	77	85
257	2 ⁸	3	48	1	55	85	196	106	120	125	28	94	242	219	19	207	61
263	2·131	5	190	50	1	79	166	62	126	43	156	221	136	170	17	154	65
269	2 ² ·67	2	1	109	208	19	230	142	105	223	176	187	259	56	200	254	32
271	2·3 ³ ·5	43	266	153	220	98	92	15	16	261	75	45	222	182	156	1	213
277	2 ² ·3·23	5	147	188	1	22	7	222	103	252	208	74	47	87	126	55	218
281	2 ³ ·5·7	3	204	1	186	182	253	9	166	221	197	172	62	135	23	132	75

3. Bernoulli Numbers and Euler Numbers

(→ 177 Generating Functions)

B_n are Bernoulli numbers; *E_n* are Euler numbers.

<i>n</i>	Numerator of <i>B_n</i>	Denominator of <i>B_n</i>	<i>B_n</i>	<i>E_n</i>
2	1	6	0.16667	1
4	1	30	0.03333	5
6	1	42	0.02381	61
8	1	30	0.03333	1385
10	5	66	0.07576	50521
12	691	2730	0.25311	2702765
14	7	6	1.16667	199360981
16	3617	510	7.09216	19391512145
18	43867	798	54.97118	2404879675441
20	174611	330	529.12424	370371188237525
22	854513	138	6192.12319	6.934887×10 ¹⁶
24	236364091	2730	86580.25311	1.551453×10 ¹⁹
26	8553103	6	1425517.16667	4.087073×10 ²¹
28	23749461029	870	27298231.06782	1.252260×10 ²⁴
30	8615841276005	14322	601580873.90064	4.415439×10 ²⁶

4. Class Numbers of Algebraic Number Fields

(I) Class Numbers of Real Quadratic Field (→ 347 Quadratic Fields)

Let $k = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{m})$, where m is a positive integer without square factor ($1 < m \leq 501$). h is the class number (in the wider sense) of k . The $-$ sign in the row of $N(\epsilon)$ means that the norm $N(\epsilon)$ of the fundamental unit is -1 . When $N(\epsilon) = +1$, the class number in the narrow sense is $2h$, and when $N(\epsilon) = -1$, the class number in the narrow sense is also h .

<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N</i> (ϵ)	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N</i> (ϵ)	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N</i> (ϵ)	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N</i> (ϵ)	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N</i> (ϵ)	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N</i> (ϵ)
2	1	−	85	2	−	170	4	−	253	1		335	2		421	1	−
3	1		86	1		173	1	−	254	3		337	1	−	422	1	
5	1	−	87	2		174	2		255	4		339	2		426	2	
6	1		89	1	−	177	1		257	3	−	341	1		427	6	
7	1		91	2		178	2		258	2		345	2		429	2	
10	2	−	93	1		179	1		259	2		346	6	−	430	2	
11	1		94	1		181	1	−	262	1		347	1		431	1	
13	1	−	95	2		182	2		263	1		349	1	−	433	1	−
14	1		97	1	−	183	2		265	2	−	353	1	−	434	4	

<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N(ε)</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N(ε)</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N(ε)</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N(ε)</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N(ε)</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>N(ε)</i>
15	2		101	1	—	185	2	—	266	2		354	2		435	4	
17	1	—	102	2		186	2		267	2		355	2		437	1	
19	1		103	1		187	2		269	1	—	357	2		438	4	
21	1		105	2		190	2		271	1		358	1		439	5	
22	1		106	2	—	191	1		273	2		359	3		442	8	—
23	1		107	1		193	1	—	274	4	—	362	2	—	443	3	
26	2	—	109	1	—	194	2		277	1	—	365	2	—	445	4	—
29	1	—	110	2		195	4		278	1		366	2		446	1	
30	2		111	2		197	1	—	281	1	—	367	1		447	2	
31	1		113	1	—	199	1		282	2		370	4	—	449	1	—
33	1		114	2		201	1		283	1		371	2		451	2	
34	2		115	2		202	2	—	285	2		373	1	—	453	1	
35	2		118	1		203	2		286	2		374	2		454	1	
37	1	—	119	2		205	2		287	2		377	2		455	4	
38	1		122	2	—	206	1		290	4	—	379	1		457	1	—
39	2		123	2		209	1		291	4		381	1		458	2	—
41	1	—	127	1		210	4		293	1	—	382	1		461	1	—
42	2		129	1		211	1		295	2		383	1		462	4	
43	1		130	4	—	213	1		298	2	—	385	2		463	1	
46	1		131	1		214	1		299	2		386	2		465	2	
47	1		133	1		215	2		301	1		389	1	—	466	2	
51	2		134	1		217	1		302	1		390	4		467	1	
53	1	—	137	1	—	218	2	—	303	2		391	2		469	3	
55	2		138	2		219	4		305	2		393	1		470	2	
57	1		139	1		221	2		307	1		394	2	—	471	2	
58	2	—	141	1		222	2		309	1		395	2		473	3	
59	1		142	3		223	3		310	2		397	1	—	474	2	
61	1	—	143	2		226	8	—	311	1		398	1		478	1	
62	1		145	4	—	227	1		313	1	—	399	8		479	1	
65	2	—	146	2		229	3	—	314	2	—	401	5	—	481	2	—
66	2		149	1	—	230	2		317	1	—	402	2		482	2	
67	1		151	1		231	4		318	2		403	2		483	4	
69	1		154	2		233	1	—	319	2		406	2		485	2	—
70	2		155	2		235	6		321	3		407	2		487	1	
71	1		157	1	—	237	1		322	4		409	1	—	489	1	
73	1	—	158	1		238	2		323	4		410	4		491	1	
74	2	—	159	2		239	1		326	3		411	2		493	2	—
77	1		161	1		241	1	—	327	2		413	1		494	2	
78	2		163	1		246	2		329	1		415	2		497	1	
79	3		165	2		247	2		330	4		417	1		498	2	
82	4	—	166	1		249	1		331	1		418	2		499	5	
83	1		167	1		251	1		334	1		419	1		501	1	

One can find a table of fundamental units and representatives of ideal classes for $0 < m < 2025$ in E. L. Ince, *Cycles of reduced ideals in quadratic fields*, Royal Society, London, 1968.

(II) Class Numbers of Imaginary Quadratic Fields (→ 347 Quadratic Fields)

Let $k = \mathbb{Q}(\sqrt{-m})$, where m is a positive integer without square factor ($1 \leq m \leq 509$). h is the class number of k . In the present case, there is no distinction between the class numbers in the wider and narrow senses.

<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>
1	1	65	8	129	12	193	4	255	12	319	10	389	22	447	14
2	1	66	8	130	4	194	20	257	16	321	20	390	16	449	20
3	1	67	1	131	5	195	4	258	8	322	8	391	14	451	6
5	2	69	8	133	4	197	10	259	4	323	4	393	12	453	12
6	2	70	4	134	14	199	9	262	6	326	22	394	10	454	14
7	1	71	7	137	8	201	12	263	13	327	12	395	8	455	20
10	2	73	4	138	8	202	6	265	8	329	24	397	6	457	8
11	1	74	10	139	3	203	4	266	20	330	8	398	20	458	26

<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>	<i>m</i>	<i>h</i>
13	2	77	8	141	8	205	8	267	2	331	3	399	16	461	30
14	4	78	4	142	4	206	20	269	22	334	12	401	20	462	8
15	2	79	5	143	10	209	20	271	11	335	18	402	16	463	7
17	4	82	4	145	8	210	8	273	8	337	8	403	2	465	16
19	1	83	3	146	16	211	3	274	12	339	6	406	16	466	8
21	4	85	4	149	14	213	8	277	6	341	28	407	16	467	7
22	2	86	10	151	7	214	6	278	14	345	8	409	16	469	16
23	3	87	6	154	8	215	14	281	20	346	10	410	16	470	20
26	6	89	12	155	4	217	8	282	8	347	5	411	6	471	16
29	6	91	2	157	6	218	10	283	3	349	14	413	20	473	12
30	4	93	4	158	8	219	4	285	16	353	16	415	10	474	20
31	3	94	8	159	10	221	16	286	12	354	16	417	12	478	8
33	4	95	8	161	16	222	12	287	14	355	4	418	8	479	25
34	4	97	4	163	1	223	7	290	20	357	8	419	9	481	16
35	2	101	14	165	8	226	8	291	4	358	6	421	10	482	20
37	2	102	4	166	10	227	5	293	18	359	19	422	10	483	4
38	6	103	5	167	11	229	10	295	8	362	18	426	24	485	20
39	4	105	8	170	12	230	20	298	6	365	20	427	2	487	7
41	8	106	6	173	14	231	12	299	8	366	12	429	16	489	20
42	4	107	3	174	12	233	12	301	8	367	9	430	12	491	9
43	1	109	6	177	4	235	2	302	12	370	12	431	21	493	12
46	4	110	12	178	8	237	12	303	10	371	8	433	12	494	28
47	5	111	8	179	5	238	8	305	16	373	10	434	24	497	24
51	2	113	8	181	10	239	15	307	3	374	28	435	4	498	8
53	6	114	8	182	12	241	12	309	12	377	16	437	20	499	3
55	4	115	2	183	8	246	12	310	8	379	3	438	8	501	16
57	4	118	6	185	16	247	6	311	19	381	20	439	15	502	14
58	2	119	10	186	12	249	12	313	8	382	8	442	8	503	21
59	3	122	10	187	2	251	7	314	26	383	17	443	5	505	8
61	6	123	2	190	4	253	4	317	10	385	8	445	8	506	28
62	8	127	5	191	13	254	16	318	12	386	20	446	32	509	30

There are only 9 instances of m for which $h=1$, and only 18 instances of m for which $h=2$ (Baker, Stark). All these cases are in this table.

One can find a table of structures of the ideal class groups and representatives of ideal classes for $m < 24000$ in H. Wada, *A table of ideal class groups of imaginary quadratic fields*, Proc. Japan Acad., 46 (1970), 401–403.

(III) Class Numbers of Cyclotomic Fields

Cyclotomic field $k = \mathbb{Q}(e^{2\pi i/l})$ ($1 < l < 100$; l prime). h_1 is the first factor of the class number of k (\rightarrow 14 Algebraic Number Fields).

<i>l</i>	<i>h</i> ₁	<i>l</i>	<i>h</i> ₁	<i>l</i>	<i>h</i> ₁	<i>l</i>	<i>h</i> ₁	<i>l</i>	<i>h</i> ₁	<i>l</i>	<i>h</i> ₁
3	1	13	1	29	2 ³	43	211	61	41·1861	79	5·53·377911
5	1	17	1	31	3 ²	47	5·139	67	67·12739	83	3·279405653
7	1	19	1	37	37	53	4889	71	7 ² ·79241	89	113·118401449
11	1	23	3	41	11 ²	59	3·59·233	73	89·134353	97	577·3457·206209

$h_1 > 1$ for $l > 19$ (Uchida).

5. Characters of Finite Groups; Crystallographic Groups

(I) Symmetric Groups S_n , Alternating Groups A_n ($3 \leq n \leq 7$), and Mathieu Groups M_n ($n = 11, 12, 22, 23, 24$)

(1) In each table, the first column gives the representation of the conjugate class as we represent a permutation by the product of cyclic permutations. For example, $(3)(2)^2$ means the conjugate class containing $(123)(45)(67)$.

- (2) The second column gives the order of the centralizer of the elements of the conjugate class.
 (3) In the table of S_n , the first row gives the type of Young diagram corresponding to each irreducible character. For example, $[3, 2^2, 1]$ means $T(3, 2, 2, 1)$.
 (4) In the table of A_n , when we restrict the self-conjugate character of S_n (the character with *) to A_n , it is decomposed into two mutually algebraically conjugate irreducible characters, and therefore we show only one of them. The other irreducible character of A_n is given by the restriction to A_n of the character of S_n that is not self-conjugate.
 (5) In the table of M_n , each character with a bar over the degree is one of the two mutually algebraically conjugate characters.

$$\begin{aligned} \varepsilon_1^\pm &= (-1 \pm \sqrt{-3})/2, & \varepsilon_2^\pm &= (1 \pm \sqrt{5})/2, & \varepsilon_3^\pm &= (-1 \pm \sqrt{-7})/2 \\ \varepsilon_4^\pm &= (-1 \pm \sqrt{-11})/2, & \varepsilon_5^\pm &= (-1 \pm \sqrt{-15})/2, & \varepsilon_6^\pm &= (-1 \pm \sqrt{-23})/2 \end{aligned}$$

S_3	[3]	[2, 1]*	[1 ³]
(1) 6	1	2	1
(2) 2	1	0	-1
(3) 3	1	-1	1

A_3	[2, 1]*
(1) 3	1
(3) 3	ε_1^+
(3) 3	ε_1^-

S_4	[4]	[3, 1]	[2 ²]*	[2, 1 ²]	[1 ⁴]
(1) 24	1	3	2	3	1
(2) 4	1	1	0	-1	-1
(3) 3	1	0	-1	0	1
(4) 4	1	-1	0	1	-1
(2) ² 8	1	-1	2	-1	1

A_4	[2 ²]*
(1) 12	1
(3) 3	ε_1^+
(3) 3	ε_1^-
(2) ² 4	1

S_5	[5]	[4, 1]	[3, 2]	[3, 1 ²]*	[2 ² , 1]	[2, 1 ³]	[1 ⁵]
(1) 120	1	4	5	6	5	4	1
(2) 12	1	2	1	0	-1	-2	-1
(3) 6	1	1	-1	0	-1	1	1
(4) 4	1	0	-1	0	1	0	-1
(2) ² 8	1	0	1	-2	1	0	1
(3)(2) 6	1	-1	1	0	-1	1	-1
(5) 5	1	-1	0	1	0	-1	1

A_5	[3, 1 ²]*
(1) 60	3
(3) 3	0
(2) ² 4	-1
(5) 5	ε_2^+
(5) 5	ε_2^-

S_6	[6]	[5, 1]	[4, 2]	[4, 1 ²]	[3 ²]	[3, 2, 1]*	[2 ³]	[3, 1 ³]	[2 ² , 1 ²]	[2, 1 ⁴]	[1 ⁶]
(1) 720	1	5	9	10	5	16	5	10	9	5	1
(2) 48	1	3	3	2	1	0	-1	-2	-3	-3	-1
(3) 18	1	2	0	1	-1	-2	-1	1	0	2	1
(4) 8	1	1	-1	0	-1	0	1	0	1	-1	-1
(2) ² 16	1	1	1	-2	1	0	1	-2	1	1	1
(3)(2) 6	1	0	0	-1	1	0	-1	1	0	0	-1
(5) 5	1	0	-1	0	0	1	0	0	-1	0	1
(6) 6	1	-1	0	1	0	0	0	-1	0	1	-1
(4)(2) 8	1	-1	1	0	-1	0	-1	0	1	-1	1
(2) ³ 48	1	-1	3	-2	-3	0	3	2	-3	1	-1
(3) ² 18	1	-1	0	1	2	-2	2	1	0	-1	1

A_6		$[3, 2, 1]^*$
(1)	360	8
(3)	9	-1
(2) ²	8	0
(5)	5	ϵ_2^+
(5)	5	ϵ_2^-
(4)(2)	4	0
(3) ²	9	-1

S_7	[7]	[6, 1]	[5, 2]	[5, 1 ²]	[4, 3]	[4, 2, 1]	[3 ² , 1]	[4, 1 ³]*	[3, 2 ²]	[3, 2, 1 ²]	[2 ³ , 1]	[3, 1 ⁴]	[2 ² , 1 ³]	[2, 1 ⁵]	[1 ⁷]	
(1)	5040	1	6	14	15	14	35	21	20	21	35	14	15	14	6	1
(2)	240	1	4	6	5	4	5	1	0	-1	-5	-4	-5	-6	-4	-1
(3)	72	1	3	2	3	-1	-1	-3	2	-3	-1	-1	3	2	3	1
(4)	24	1	2	0	1	-2	-1	-1	0	1	1	2	-1	0	-2	-1
(2) ²	48	1	2	2	-1	2	-1	1	-4	1	-1	2	-1	2	2	1
(3)(2)	12	1	1	0	-1	1	-1	1	0	-1	1	-1	1	0	-1	-1
(5)	10	1	1	-1	0	-1	0	1	0	1	0	-1	0	-1	1	1
(6)	6	1	0	-1	0	0	1	0	0	0	-1	0	0	1	0	-1
(4)(2)	8	1	0	0	-1	0	1	-1	0	-1	1	0	-1	0	0	1
(2) ³	48	1	0	2	-3	0	1	-3	0	3	-1	0	3	-2	0	-1
(3) ²	18	1	0	-1	0	2	-1	0	2	0	-1	2	0	-1	0	1
(5)(2)	10	1	-1	1	0	-1	0	1	0	-1	0	1	0	-1	1	-1
(3)(2) ²	24	1	-1	2	-1	-1	-1	1	2	1	-1	-1	-1	2	-1	1
(4)(3)	12	1	-1	0	1	1	-1	-1	0	1	1	-1	-1	0	1	-1
(7)	7	1	-1	0	1	0	0	0	-1	0	0	0	1	0	-1	1

A_7		$[4, 13]*$
(1)	2520	10
(3)	36	1
(2) ²	24	-2
(5)	5	0
(4)(2)	4	0
(3) ²	9	1
(3)(2) ²	12	1
(7)	7	ϵ_3^+
(7)	7	ϵ_3^-

M_{11}	(1)	g	1	10	11	55	45	44	$\overline{16}$	$\overline{10}$
	(2) ⁴	48	1	2	3	-1	-3	4	0	-2
	(4) ²	8	1	2	-1	-1	1	0	0	0
	(3) ³	18	1	1	2	1	0	-1	-2	1
	(5) ²	5	1	0	1	0	0	-1	1	0
	(8)(2)	8	1	0	-1	1	-1	0	0	$\pm i\sqrt{2}$
	(8)(2)	8	1	0	-1	1	-1	0	0	$\mp i\sqrt{2}$
	(6)(3)(2)	6	1	-1	0	-1	0	1	0	1
	(11)	11	1	-1	0	0	1	0	ϵ_4^+	-1
	(11)	11	1	-1	0	0	1	0	ϵ_4^-	-1

$g = 11 \cdot 10 \cdot 9 \cdot 8 = 7920.$

M_{12}	(1)	g	1	11	11	55	55	55	45	54	66	99	120	144	176	$\overline{16}$
	(2) ⁴	192	1	3	3	-1	-1	7	-3	6	2	3	-8	0	0	0
	(4) ²	32	1	3	-1	3	-1	-1	1	2	-2	-1	0	0	0	0
	(3) ³	54	1	2	2	1	1	1	0	0	3	0	3	0	-4	-2
	(5) ²	10	1	1	1	0	0	0	0	-1	1	-1	0	-1	1	1
	(8)(2)	8	1	1	-1	-1	1	-1	-1	0	0	1	0	0	0	0
	(6)(3)(2)	6	1	0	0	-1	-1	1	0	0	-1	0	1	0	0	0
	(11)	11	1	0	0	0	0	0	1	-1	0	0	-1	1	0	ϵ_4^+
	(11)	11	1	0	0	0	0	0	1	-1	0	0	-1	1	0	ϵ_4^-
	(2) ⁶	240	1	-1	-1	-5	-5	-5	5	6	6	-1	0	4	-4	4
	(10)(2)	10	1	-1	-1	0	0	0	0	1	1	-1	0	-1	1	-1
	(4) ² (2) ²	32	1	-1	3	-1	3	-1	1	2	-2	-1	0	0	0	0
	(3) ⁴	36	1	-1	-1	1	1	1	3	0	0	3	0	-3	-1	1
	(6) ²	12	1	-1	-1	1	1	1	-1	0	0	-1	0	1	-1	1
	(8)(4)	8	1	-1	1	1	-1	-1	-1	0	0	1	0	0	0	0

$g = 12 \cdot 11 \cdot 10 \cdot 9 \cdot 8 = 95040.$

	g	23·21	23·55	23·88	23·99	23·144	23·11·21	23·7·36	77·72	11·35·27
(1) ²⁴	g									
(2) ⁸	21·2 ¹⁰	35	49	8	21	48	49	-28	-56	-21
(3) ⁶	27·40	6	5	-1	0	0	-15	-9	9	0
(5) ⁴	60	-2	0	-1	-3	-3	3	1	-1	0
(4) ⁴ (2) ²	128	3	1	0	1	0	-3	4	0	-1
(7) ³	42	0	-2	1	2	1	0	0	0	0
(7) ³	42	0	-2	1	2	1	0	0	0	0
(8) ² (4)(2)	16	-1	1	0	-1	0	-1	0	0	1
(6) ² (3) ² (2) ²	24	2	1	-1	0	0	1	-1	1	0
(11) ²	11	-1	0	0	0	1	0	-1	0	0
(15)(5)(3)	15	1	0	-1	0	0	0	1	-1	0
(15)(5)(3)	15	1	0	-1	0	0	0	1	-1	0
(14)(7)(2)	14	0	0	1	0	-1	0	0	0	0
(14)(7)(2)	14	0	0	1	0	-1	0	0	0	0
(23)	23	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	-1
(23)	23	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	1	-1
(12) ²	12	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0	0
(6) ⁴	24	0	0	0	2	-2	0	0	0	0
(4) ⁶	96	3	-3	0	-3	0	-3	0	0	3
(3) ⁸	7·72	0	8	8	6	-6	0	0	0	0
(2) ¹²	15·2 ⁹	3	-15	24	-19	16	9	36	24	-45
(10) ² (2) ²	20	-2	0	-1	1	1	-1	1	-1	0
(21)(3)	21	0	1	1	-1	1	0	0	0	0
(21)(3)	21	0	1	1	-1	1	0	0	0	0
(4) ⁴ (2) ⁴	3·2 ⁷	3	-7	8	-3	0	1	-4	-8	3
(12)(6)(4)(2)	12	0	-1	-1	0	0	1	-1	1	0

$$g = 24 \cdot 23 \cdot 22 \cdot 21 \cdot 20 \cdot 48 = 244823040.$$

(II) General Linear Groups $GL(2, q)$, Unitary Groups $U(2, q)$, and Special Linear Groups $SL(2, q)$
(q is a power of a prime) (\rightarrow 151 Finite Groups I)

(1) The notations are as follows. $\varepsilon = \exp[2\pi\sqrt{-1}/(q-1)]$, $\eta = \exp[2\pi\sqrt{-1}/(q^2-1)]$, $\sigma = \exp[2\pi\sqrt{-1}/(q+1)]$, ρ is the generator of the multiplicative group of $GF(q) - \{0\}$, ω is the generator of the multiplicative group of $GF(q^2) - \{0\}$, $\omega^{q-1} = \alpha$, B is an element of $GL(2, q)$ with order q^2-1 , and $B_1 = B^{q-1}$.

(2) The first column gives a representative of the conjugate class.

General Linear Group $GL(2, q)$.

	$X_n(1)$	$X_n(q)$	$Y_{m,n}$	Z_n
$\begin{pmatrix} \rho^a & \\ & \rho^a \end{pmatrix}$	ε^{2na}	$q\varepsilon^{2na}$	$(q+1)\varepsilon^{(m+n)a}$	$(q-1)\eta^{na(q+1)}$
$\begin{pmatrix} \rho^a & \\ 1 & \rho^a \end{pmatrix}$	ε^{2na}	0	$\varepsilon^{(m+n)a}$	$-\eta^{na(q+1)}$
$\begin{pmatrix} \rho^a & \\ & \rho^b \end{pmatrix}$	$\varepsilon^{n(a+b)}$	$\varepsilon^{n(a+b)}$	$\varepsilon^{ma+nb} + \varepsilon^{mb+na}$	0
B^c	ε^{nc}	$-\varepsilon^{nc}$	0	$-(\eta^{nc} + \eta^{ncq})$

(1) $1 \leq a \leq q-1$, $1 \leq b \leq q-1$, $a \not\equiv b \pmod{q-1}$, $1 \leq c < q^2-1$, $c \not\equiv 0 \pmod{q+1}$.

(2) We assume that $1 \leq n \leq q-1$, for $X_n(1), X_n(q)$, $1 \leq m < n \leq q-1$, for $Y_{m,n}$, $1 \leq n < q^2-1$ for Z_n , $n \not\equiv 0 \pmod{q+1}$. Here, $Z_n = Z_{n'}$ when $n \equiv n'q \pmod{q^2-1}$.

Unitary Group $U(2, q)$.

	$X'_n(1)$	$X'_n(q)$	$Y'_{m,n}$	Z'_n
$\begin{pmatrix} \alpha^s & \\ & \alpha^s \end{pmatrix}$	σ^{2ns}	$q\sigma^{2ns}$	$(q-1)\sigma^{(m+n)s}$	$(q+1)\sigma^{ns}$
$\begin{pmatrix} \alpha^s & \\ 1 & \alpha^s \end{pmatrix}$	σ^{2ns}	0	$-\sigma^{(m+n)s}$	σ^{ns}
$\begin{pmatrix} \alpha^s & \\ & \alpha^t \end{pmatrix}$	$\sigma^{n(s+t)}$	$-\sigma^{n(s+t)}$	$-(\sigma^{ms+nt} + \sigma^{mt+ns})$	0
$\begin{pmatrix} \omega^u & \\ & \omega^{-uq} \end{pmatrix}$	σ^{-nu}	σ^{-nu}	0	$\eta^{nu} + \eta^{-nuq}$

- (1) $\begin{pmatrix} \alpha^s & \\ & 1 \end{pmatrix}, \begin{pmatrix} \omega^u & \\ & \omega^{-uq} \end{pmatrix}$ are the canonical forms of an element of $U(2, q)$ in $GL(2, q^2)$.
(2) $1 \leq s \leq q+1, 1 \leq t \leq q+1, s \not\equiv t \pmod{q+1}, 1 \leq u < q^2-1, u \not\equiv 0 \pmod{q-1}$. When $u \equiv -u'q \pmod{q^2-1}$ u, u' gives the same conjugate class.
(3) The ranges are $1 \leq n \leq q+1$ for $X'_n(1), X'_n(q), 1 \leq m < n \leq q+1$ for $Y'_{m,n}, 1 \leq n < q^2-1$ for $Z'_n, n \not\equiv 0 \pmod{q-1}$. When $n' \equiv -nq \pmod{q^2-1}$, we have $Z'_n = Z'_{n'}$.

Special Linear Group $SL(2, 2^n)$ (the case when $q = 2^n$).

	Y_n			Z_m
$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & \\ & 1 \end{pmatrix}$	1	q	$q+1$	$q-1$
$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & \\ & 1 \end{pmatrix}$	1	0	1	-1
$\begin{pmatrix} \rho^a & \\ & \rho^{-a} \end{pmatrix}$	1	1	$\varepsilon^{na} + \varepsilon^{-na}$	0
B_1^c	1	-1	0	$-(\sigma^{mc} + \sigma^{-mc})$

- (1) $1 \leq a \leq (q-2)/2, 1 \leq c \leq q/2$.
(2) $1 \leq n \leq (q-2)/2, 1 \leq m \leq q/2$.

Special Linear Group $SL(2, q)$ ($q =$ power of an odd prime number, $e = (q-1)/2, e' = (q+1)/2$).

	Y_n			Z_m	
$\begin{pmatrix} 1 & \\ & 1 \end{pmatrix}$	1	q	$q+1$	$q-1$	$\frac{q+1}{2}, \frac{q-1}{2}$
$Z = \begin{pmatrix} -1 & \\ & -1 \end{pmatrix}$	1	q	$(-1)^n(q+1)$	$(-1)^m(q-1)$	$(-1)^e \frac{q+1}{2}, (-1)^{e'} \frac{q-1}{2}$
$P_1 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \\ & 1 \end{pmatrix}$	1	0	1	-1	μ^\pm, λ^\pm
$P_2 = \begin{pmatrix} 1 & \\ \beta & 1 \end{pmatrix}$	1	0	1	-1	μ^\mp, λ^\mp
$P_1 Z$	1	0	$(-1)^n$	$-(-1)^m$	$(-1)^e \mu^\pm, (-1)^{e'} \lambda^\pm$
$P_2 Z$	1	0	$(-1)^n$	$-(-1)^m$	$(-1)^e \mu^\mp, (-1)^{e'} \lambda^\mp$
$\begin{pmatrix} \rho^a & \\ & \rho^{-a} \end{pmatrix}$	1	1	$\varepsilon^{na} + \varepsilon^{-na}$	0	$(-1)^a, 0$
B_1^c	1	-1	0	$-(\sigma^{mc} + \sigma^{-mc})$	0, $-(-1)^c$

- (1) $1 \leq a \leq (q-3)/2, 1 \leq c \leq (q-1)/2, 1 \leq n \leq (q-3)/2, 1 \leq m \leq (q-1)/2$,
 $\lambda^\pm = \{-1 \pm [(-1)^e q]^{1/2}\}/2, \mu^\pm = \{1 \pm [(-1)^e q]^{1/2}\}/2$.
(2) The last two columns mean two characters (with the same signs), respectively.

(III) Ree group $Re(q)$, Suzuki Group $Sz(q)$, and Janko Group J .

Ree group $Re(q)$ ($q = 3^{2n+1} = 3m^2$).

The order of $Re(q)$ is $q^3(q^3+1)(q-1)$, $q_0 = q^2 - q + 1, m_+ = q + 3m + 1, m_- = q - 3m + 1$.

		A				B	C	X_μ	
1	1	1	q_0	q^3	qq_0	$(q-1)mm_+/2$	$(q-1)mm_-/2$	$m(q^2-1)$	q^3+1
J	2	1	-1	q	$-q$	$-(q-1)/2$	$(q-1)/2$	0	$q+1$
X	3	1	$-(q-1)$	0	q	$-(q+m)/2$	$(q-m)/2$	$-m$	1
Y	9	1	1	0	0	m	m	$-m$	1
T	3	1	1	0	0	α	α	2α	1
T^{-1}	3	1	1	0	0	$\bar{\alpha}$	$\bar{\alpha}$	$2\bar{\alpha}$	1
YT	9	1	1	0	0	β	β	$-\beta$	1
YT^{-1}	9	1	1	0	0	$\bar{\beta}$	$\bar{\beta}$	$-\bar{\beta}$	1
JT	6	1	-1	0	0	γ	$-\gamma$	0	1
JT^{-1}	6	1	-1	0	0	$\bar{\gamma}$	$-\bar{\gamma}$	0	1
R^a	1	1	1	1	1	0	0	0	$\rho^{\mu a} + \rho^{-\mu a}$
S^b	1	3	-1	-3	1	1	-1	0	0
JR^a	1	-1	1	-1	0	0	0	0	$\rho^{\mu a} + \rho^{-\mu a}$
JS^b	1	-1	-1	1	1	-1	-1	0	0
V^s	1	0	-1	0	-1	0	0	-1	0
W^t	1	0	-1	0	0	1	1	1	0

		X'_μ	Y_ν	Y'_λ	Z_κ	Z'_τ
1	1	q^3+1	$(q-1)q_0$	$(q-1)q_0$	$(q^2-1)m_+$	$(q^2-1)m_-$
J	2	$-(q+1)$	$3(q-1)$	$-(q-1)$	0	0
X	3	1	$2q-1$	$2q-1$	$-m_+$	$-m_-$
Y	9	1	-1	-1	-1	-1
T	3	1	-1	-1	$-3m-1$	$3m-1$
T^{-1}	3	1	-1	-1	$-3m-1$	$3m-1$
YT	9	1	-1	-1	-1	-1
YT^{-1}	9	1	-1	-1	-1	-1
JT	6	-1	-3	1	0	0
JT^{-1}	6	-1	-3	1	0	0
R^a		$\rho^{\mu a} + \rho^{-\mu a}$	0	0	0	0
S^b		0	$\sigma(\nu b)$	$\sigma'(\lambda b)$	0	0
JR^a		$-(\rho^{\mu a} + \rho^{-\mu a})$	0	0	0	0
JS^b		0	$\sigma(\nu b)$	$\sigma'(\lambda b)$	0	0
V^s		0	0	0	$-\sum_{i=0}^2 (v^{\kappa s q^i} + v^{-\kappa s q^i})$	0
W^t		0	0	0	0	$-\sum_{i=0}^2 (w^{\tau t q^i} + w^{-\tau t q^i})$

(1) The first column gives a representative of conjugate class, and the second column gives its order. The orders of R, S, V, W are $(q-1)/2, (q+1)/4, m_-, m_+$, respectively. R, S, T are commutative with J .

(2) $R^a \sim R^{-a}, V^s \sim V^{sq} \sim V^{sq^2} \sim V^{-s} \sim V^{-sq} \sim V^{-sq^2}, W^t \sim W^{tq} \sim W^{tq^2} \sim W^{-t} \sim W^{-tq} \sim W^{-tq^2}$. Here we fix an integer δ satisfying $\delta^3 \equiv 1 \pmod{(q+1)/4}, (\delta-1, (q+1)/4) = 1$.

$$S^b \sim S^{b\delta} \sim S^{b\delta^2} \sim S^{-b} \sim S^{-b\delta} \sim S^{-b\delta^2}, \quad JR^a \sim JR^{-a}, \quad JS^b \sim JS^{-b},$$

where $A \sim B$ means that A and B are mutually conjugate.

$$(3) \rho = \exp[4\pi\sqrt{-1}/(q-1)], \quad v = \exp(2\pi\sqrt{-1}/m_-), \quad w = \exp(2\pi\sqrt{-1}/m_+), \\ \sigma = \exp[8\pi\sqrt{-1}/(q+1)].$$

$$(4) 1 \leq \mu \leq (q-3)/4, 1 \leq \lambda \leq (q-3)/8.$$

Here ν is considered mod $(q+1)/4$ and

$$Y_\nu = Y_{\nu\delta} = Y_{\nu\delta^2} = Y_{-\nu} = Y_{-\nu\delta} = Y_{-\nu\delta^2},$$

κ is considered mod m_- and

$$Z_\kappa = Z_{\kappa q} = Z_{\kappa q^2} = Z_{-\kappa} = Z_{-\kappa q} = Z_{-\kappa q^2},$$

τ is considered mod m_+ and

$$Z'_\tau = Z'_{\tau q} = Z'_{\tau q^2} = Z'_{-\tau} = Z'_{-\tau q} = Z'_{-\tau q^2}.$$

$$(5) \sigma(\nu b) = -\sum_{i=0}^2 (\sigma^{\nu b \delta^i} + \sigma^{-\nu b \delta^i}), \quad \sigma'(\lambda b) = \sum_{i=0}^1 (\sigma^{\lambda b \delta^i} + \sigma^{-\lambda b \delta^i}) - (\sigma^{\lambda b \delta^2} + \sigma^{-\lambda b \delta^2}).$$

$$(6) \alpha = \frac{-m + m\sqrt{-q}}{2}, \beta = \frac{-m - \sqrt{-q}}{2}, \gamma = \frac{1 - \sqrt{-q}}{2}. \quad \text{We show one of the two mutually complex conjugate characters, for the characters } A, B, C.$$

Suzuki group $Sz(q)$. The order of $Sz(q)$ is $q^2(q^2+1)(q-1)$ ($q=2^{2n+1}, 2q=r^2$).

		X_α	Y_β	Z_γ		
1	1	q^2	q^2+1	$(q-r+1)(q-1)$	$(q+r+1)(q-1)$	$r(q-1)/2$
σ	1	0	1	$r-1$	$-r-1$	$-r/2$
ρ	1	0	1	-1	-1	$r\sqrt{-1}/2$
ρ^{-1}	1	0	1	-1	-1	$-r\sqrt{-1}/2$
π_0^i	1	1	$\varepsilon_0^{ai} + \varepsilon_0^{-ai}$	0	0	0
π_1^j	1	-1	0	$-(\varepsilon_1^{bj} + \varepsilon_1^{\beta j q} + \varepsilon_1^{-\beta j} + \varepsilon_1^{-\beta j q})$	0	1
π_2^k	1	-1	0	0	$-(\varepsilon_2^{\gamma k} + \varepsilon_2^{\gamma k q} + \varepsilon_2^{-\gamma k} + \varepsilon_2^{-\gamma k q})$	-1

(1) The first column gives a representative of the conjugate class.

(2) π_0, π_1, π_2 are the elements of order $q-1, q+r+1, q-r+1$, respectively.

(3) $\varepsilon_0, \varepsilon_1, \varepsilon_2$ are the primitive $q-1, q+r+1, q-r+1$ roots of 1, respectively.

(4) π_0^i and π_0^{-i} are mutually conjugate elements, and hence X_α and $X_{-\alpha}$ give the same character. i, α run over the representatives of mod $q-1$, and $i, \alpha \not\equiv 0 \pmod{q-1}$.

- (5) $\pi_1^j, \pi_1^{-j}, \pi_1^{jq}, \pi_1^{-jq}$ are mutually conjugate, and hence $Y_\beta, Y_{-\beta}, Y_{\beta q}, Y_{-\beta q}$ give the same character. j, β run over the representatives of $\text{mod } q+r+1$, and $j, \beta \not\equiv 0 \pmod{q+r+1}$.
(6) $\pi_2^k, \pi_2^{-k}, \pi_2^{kq}, \pi_2^{-kq}$ are mutually conjugate, and hence $Z_\gamma, Z_{-\gamma}, Z_{\gamma q}, Z_{-\gamma q}$ give the same character. k, γ run over the representatives of $\text{mod } q-r+1$, and $k, \gamma \not\equiv 0 \pmod{q-r+1}$.

Janko Group J .

1	1	77	133	209	133	77	77	133	76	76	56	56	120	120	120
2	1	5	5	1	-3	-3	-3	-3	4	-4	0	0	0	0	0
3	1	-1	1	-1	-2	2	2	-2	1	1	2	2	0	0	0
5	1	2	-2	-1	ϵ^+	$-\epsilon^+$	$-\epsilon^-$	ϵ^-	1	1	$2\epsilon^-$	$2\epsilon^+$	0	0	0
5	1	2	-2	-1	ϵ^-	$-\epsilon^-$	$-\epsilon^+$	ϵ^+	1	1	$2\epsilon^+$	$2\epsilon^-$	0	0	0
6	1	-1	-1	1	0	0	0	0	1	-1	0	0	0	0	0
7	1	0	0	-1	0	0	0	0	-1	-1	0	0	1	1	1
10	1	0	0	1	$-\epsilon^+$	$-\epsilon^+$	$-\epsilon^-$	$-\epsilon^-$	-1	1	0	0	0	0	0
10	1	0	0	1	$-\epsilon^-$	$-\epsilon^-$	$-\epsilon^+$	$-\epsilon^+$	-1	1	0	0	0	0	0
11	1	0	1	0	1	0	0	1	-1	-1	1	1	-1	-1	-1
15	1	-1	1	-1	ϵ^+	$-\epsilon^+$	$-\epsilon^-$	ϵ^-	1	1	$-\epsilon^-$	$-\epsilon^+$	0	0	0
15	1	-1	1	-1	ϵ^-	$-\epsilon^-$	$-\epsilon^+$	ϵ^+	1	1	$-\epsilon^+$	$-\epsilon^-$	0	0	0
19	1	1	0	0	0	1	1	0	0	0	-1	-1	λ_1	λ_2	λ_3
19	1	1	0	0	0	1	1	0	0	0	-1	-1	λ_2	λ_3	λ_1
19	1	1	0	0	0	1	1	0	0	0	-1	-1	λ_3	λ_1	λ_2

- (1) The order of J is $8 \cdot 3 \cdot 5 \cdot 7 \cdot 11 \cdot 19 = 175560$.
(2) The first column gives the order of the elements of each conjugate class.
(3) $\rho = \exp(2\pi\sqrt{-1}/19)$, $\lambda_1 = \rho + \rho^7 + \rho^8 + \rho^{11} + \rho^{12} + \rho^{18}$, $\lambda_2 = \rho^2 + \rho^{14} + \rho^{16} + \rho^3 + \rho^5 + \rho^{17}$, $\lambda_3 = \rho^4 + \rho^9 + \rho^{13} + \rho^6 + \rho^{10} + \rho^{15}$, $\epsilon^\pm = (1 \pm \sqrt{5})/2$.

References

For S_n ($2 \leq n \leq 10$), A_n ($3 \leq n \leq 9$):
[1] D. E. Littlewood, The theory of group characters, second edition, Oxford Univ. Press, 1950.
For S_n ($n = 11, 12, 13$):
[2] M. Zia-ud-Din, Proc. London Math. Soc., 39(1935), 200–204, 42 (1937), 340–355.
For S_{14} :
[3] K. Kondô, Table of characters of the symmetric group of degree 14, Proc. Phys. Math. Soc. Japan, 22 (1940), 585–593.
For M_n ($n = 12, 24$):
[4] G. Frobenius, Über die Charaktere der mehrfach transitive Gruppen, S. B. Preuss. Akad. Wiss., 1904, 558–571.
For M_n ($n = 11, 22, 23$):
[5] N. Burgoyne and P. Fong, The Schur multipliers of the Mathieu groups, Nagoya Math. J., 27 (1966), 733–745.
For $GL(2, q)$, $SL(2, q)$:
[6] I. Schur, Untersuchungen über die Darstellung der endlichen Gruppen durch gebrochene lineare Substitutionen, J. Reine Angew. Math., 132 (1907), 85–137.
[7] H. E. Jordan, Group characters of various types of linear groups, Amer. J. Math., 29 (1907), 387–405.
For $GL(3, q)$, $GL(4, q)$, $GL(n, q)$:
[8] R. Steinberg, The representations of $GL(3, q)$, $GL(4, q)$, $PGL(3, q)$ and $PGL(4, q)$, Canad. J. Math. 3 (1951), 225–235.
[9] J. A. Green, The characters of the finite general linear groups, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 80 (1955), 402–447.
For $U(2, q)$, $U(3, q)$:
[10] V. Ennola, On the characters of the finite unitary groups, Ann. Acad. Sci. Fenn., 323 (1963), 1–34.
For $Sz(q)$, $Re(q)$, J :
[11] M. Suzuki, On a class of doubly transitive groups, Ann. of Math., (2) 75 (1962), 105–145.
[12] H. N. Ward, On Ree’s series of simple groups, Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 121 (1966), 62–89.
[13] Z. Janko, A new finite simple group with Abelian Sylow 2-subgroups and its characterization, J. Algebra, 3 (1966), 147–186.

For other Lie-type groups:
[14] B. Srinivasan, The characters of the finite symplectic group $Sp(4, q)$. Trans. Amer. Math. Soc., 131 (1968), 488–525.
[15] H. Enomoto, The characters of the finite symplectic group $Sp(4, q)$, $q = 2^f$, Osaka J. Math., 9 (1972), 75–94.
[16] G. I. Lehrer, The characters of the finite special linear groups, J. Algebra, 26 (1973), 564–583.
[17] P. Deligne and G. Lusztig, Representations of reductive groups over finite fields, Ann. of Math., (2) 103 (1976), 103–161.
For sporadic groups:
[18] M. Hall, Jr. and D. Wales, The simple groups of order 604, 800, J. Algebra, 9 (1968), 417–450.
[19] J. S. Frame, Computation of characters of the Higman-Sims group and its automorphism group, J. Algebra, 20 (1972), 320–349.
[20] D. Fendel, A characterization of Conway’s group 3, J. Algebra, 24 (1973), 159–196.
[21] D. Wright, The irreducible characters of the simple group of M. Suzuki of order 448, 345, 497, 600, J. Algebra, 29 (1974), 303–323.

(IV) Three-Dimensional Crystal Classes (→ 92 Crystallographic Groups)

Crystal System Bravais Types	Geometric Crystal Classes			Arithmetic Crystal Classes	Number of Space Groups ⁽²⁾
	Schoenflies Notation	International Notation ⁽¹⁾			
		Short	Full		
Triclinic <i>P</i>	C_1 $S_2(C_i)$	1 $\bar{1}$	1 $\bar{1}$	(<i>P</i> , 1) (<i>P</i> , $\bar{1}$)	1 2
Monoclinic <i>P</i> , <i>C</i>	C_2 C_{1h} C_{2h}	2 <i>m</i> 2/ <i>m</i>	2 <i>m</i> $\frac{2}{m}$	(<i>P</i> , 2) (<i>C</i> , 2) (<i>P</i> , <i>m</i>) (<i>C</i> , <i>m</i>) (<i>P</i> , 2/ <i>m</i>) (<i>C</i> , 2/ <i>m</i>)	3–5 6–9 10–15
Orthorhombic <i>P</i> , <i>C</i> , <i>F</i> , <i>I</i>	$D_2(V)$ C_{2v} $D_{2h}(V_h)$	222 <i>mm</i> 2 <i>mmm</i>	222 <i>mm</i> 2 $\frac{2}{m} \frac{2}{m} \frac{2}{m}$	(<i>P</i> , 222) (<i>C</i> , 222) (<i>F</i> , 222) (<i>I</i> , 222) (<i>P</i> , <i>mm</i> 2) (<i>C</i> , <i>mm</i> 2) (<i>A</i> , <i>mm</i> 2) (<i>F</i> , <i>mm</i> 2) (<i>I</i> , <i>mm</i> 2) (<i>P</i> , <i>mmm</i>) (<i>C</i> , <i>mmm</i>) (<i>F</i> , <i>mmm</i>) (<i>I</i> , <i>mmm</i>)	16–24 25–46 47–74
Tetragonal <i>P</i> , <i>I</i>	C_4 S_4 C_{4h} D_4 C_{4v} $D_{2d}(V_d)$ D_{4h}	4 $\bar{4}$ 4/ <i>m</i> 422 4 <i>mm</i> $\bar{4}2m$ 4/ <i>mmm</i>	4 $\bar{4}$ $\frac{4}{m}$ 422 4 <i>mm</i> $\bar{4}2m$ $\frac{4}{m} \frac{2}{m} \frac{2}{m}$	(<i>P</i> , 4) ⁽³⁾ (<i>I</i> , 4) (<i>P</i> , $\bar{4}$) (<i>I</i> , $\bar{4}$) (<i>P</i> , 4/ <i>m</i>) (<i>I</i> , 4/ <i>m</i>) (<i>P</i> , 422) ⁽⁴⁾ (<i>I</i> , 422) (<i>P</i> , 4 <i>mm</i>) (<i>I</i> , 4 <i>mm</i>) (<i>P</i> , $\bar{4}2m$) (<i>P</i> , $\bar{4}m2$) (<i>I</i> , $\bar{4}m2$) (<i>I</i> , $\bar{4}2m$) (<i>P</i> , 4/ <i>mmm</i>) (<i>I</i> , 4/ <i>mmm</i>)	75–80 81–82 83–88 89–98 99–110 111–122 123–142
Trigonal <i>P</i> , <i>R</i>	C_3 $S_6(C_{3i})$ D_3 C_{3v} D_{3d}	3 $\bar{3}$ 32 3 <i>m</i> $\bar{3}m$	3 $\bar{3}$ 32 3 <i>m</i> $\bar{3} \frac{2}{m}$	(<i>P</i> , 3) ⁽⁵⁾ (<i>R</i> , 3) (<i>P</i> , $\bar{3}$) (<i>R</i> , $\bar{3}$) (<i>P</i> , 312) ⁽⁶⁾ (<i>P</i> , 321) ⁽⁷⁾ (<i>R</i> , 32) (<i>P</i> , 3 <i>m</i> 1) (<i>P</i> , 31 <i>m</i>) (<i>R</i> , 3 <i>m</i>) (<i>P</i> , $\bar{3}1m$) (<i>P</i> , $\bar{3}m1$) (<i>R</i> , $\bar{3}m$)	143–146 147–148 149–155 156–161 162–167
Hexagonal <i>P</i>	C_6 C_{3h} C_{6h} D_6	6 $\bar{6}$ 6/ <i>m</i> 622	6 $\bar{6}$ $\frac{6}{m}$ 622	(<i>P</i> , 6) ⁽⁸⁾ (<i>P</i> , $\bar{6}$) (<i>P</i> , 6/ <i>m</i>) (<i>P</i> , 622) ⁽⁹⁾	168–173 –174 175–176 177–182

Crystal System Bravais Types	Geometric Crystal Classes			Arithmetic Crystal Classes	Number of Space Groups ⁽²⁾
	Schoenflies Notation	International Notation ⁽¹⁾			
		Short	Full		
Hexagonal <i>P</i> (cont.)	C_{6v}	$6mm$	$6mm$	$(P, 6mm)$	183–186
	D_{3h}	$\bar{6}m2$	$\bar{6}m2$	$(P, \bar{6}m2) (P, \bar{6}2m)$	187–190
	D_{6h}	$6/mmm$	$\frac{6}{m} \frac{2}{m} \frac{2}{m}$	$(P, 6/mmm)$	191–194
Cubic	T	23	23	$(P, 23) (F, 23) (I, 23)$	195–199
P, F, I	T_h	$m\bar{3}$	$\frac{2}{m} \bar{3}$	$(P, m\bar{3}) (F, m\bar{3}) (I, m\bar{3})$	200–206
	O	432	432	$(P, 432)^{(10)} (F, 432) (I, 432)$	207–214
	T_d	$\bar{4}3m$	$\bar{4}3m$	$(P, \bar{4}3m) (F, \bar{4}3m) (I, \bar{4}3m)$	215–220
	O_h	$m\bar{3}m$	$\frac{4}{m} \bar{3} \frac{2}{m}$	$(P, m\bar{3}m) (F, m\bar{3}m) (I, m\bar{3}m)$	221–230

Notes

- (1) The notation is based upon *International tables for X-ray crystallography* I, Kynoch, 1969. In each crystal system, the lowest class is a holohedry.
- (2) These correspond to the consecutive numbers of space groups in the book cited in (1).
- (3)–(10) Enantiomorphic pairs arise from these classes: two pairs for (4), (8), (9), and one pair for the others.
- For the shapes of Bravais lattices → 92 Crystallographic Groups E, Fig. 3.

6. Miscellaneous Constants

$\sqrt{2} = 1.41421\ 35623\ 73095,$ $\sqrt{10} = 3.16227\ 76601\ 68379.$
 $\sqrt[3]{2} = 1.25992\ 10498\ 94873,$ $\sqrt[3]{100} = 4.64158\ 88336\ 12779.$
 $\log_{10}2 = 0.30102\ 99956\ 63981 = 1/3.32192\ 80948\ 87364.$

(I) Base of Natural Logarithm *e* (1000 decimals)

e = 2.71828 18284 59045 23536 02874 71352 66249 77572 47093 69995 95749 66967 62772 40766 30353 54759
45713 82178 52516 64274 27466 39193 20030 59921 81741 35966 29043 57290 03342 95260 59563 07381
32328 62794 34907 63233 82988 07531 95251 01901 15738 34187 93070 21540 89149 93488 41675 09244
76146 06680 82264 80016 84774 11853 74234 54424 37107 53907 77449 92069 55170 27618 38606 26133
13845 83000 75204 49338 26560 29760 67371 13200 70932 87091 27443 74704 72306 96977 20931 01416
92836 81902 55151 08657 46377 21112 52389 78442 50569 53696 77078 54499 69967 94686 44549 05987
93163 68892 30098 79312 77361 78215 42499 92295 76351 48220 82698 95193 66803 31825 28869 39849
64651 05820 93923 98294 88793 32036 25094 43117 30123 81970 68416 14039 70198 37679 32068 32823
76464 80429 53118 02328 78250 98194 55815 30175 67173 61332 06981 12509 96181 88159 30416 90351
59888 85193 45807 27386 67385 89422 87922 84998 92086 80582 57492 79610 48419 84443 63463 24496
84875 60233 62482 70419 78623 20900 21609 90235 30436 99418 49164 31409 34317 38143 64054 62531
52096 18369 08887 07016 76839 64243 78140 59271 45635 49061 30310 72085 10383 75051 01157 47704
17189 86106 87396 96552 12671 54688 95703 50354.

e (in octal) = 2.55760 52130 50535 5.
 $1/e = 0.36787\ 94411\ 71442,$ $e^2 = 7.38905\ 60989\ 30650 = 1/0.13533\ 52832\ 36613,$
 $\sqrt{e} = 1.64872\ 12707\ 00128 = 1/0.60653\ 06597\ 12633.$
 $\log_e 10 = 2.30258\ 50929\ 94046 = 1/0.43429\ 44819\ 03252,$
 $\log_e 2 = 0.69314\ 71805\ 59945 = 1/1.44269\ 50408\ 88964.$

(II) The Number π (1000 decimals) (→ 328 Pi(π))

$\pi=3.14159\ 26535\ 89793\ 23846\ 26433\ 83279\ 50288\ 41971\ 69399\ 37510\ 58209\ 74944\ 59230\ 78164\ 06286\ 20899$
86280 34825 34211 70679 82148 08651 32823 06647 09384 46095 50582 23172 53594 08128 48111 74502
84102 70193 85211 05559 64462 29489 54930 38196 44288 10975 66593 34461 28475 64823 37867 83165
27120 19091 45648 56692 34603 48610 45432 66482 13393 60726 02491 41273 72458 70066 06315 58817
48815 20920 96282 92540 91715 36436 78925 90360 01133 05305 48820 46652 13841 46951 94151 16094
33057 27036 57595 91953 09218 61173 81932 61179 31051 18548 07446 23799 62749 56735 18857 52724
89122 79381 83011 94912 98336 73362 44065 66430 86021 39494 63952 24737 19070 21798 60943 70277
05392 17176 29317 67523 84674 81846 76694 05132 00056 81271 45263 56082 77857 71342 75778 96091
73637 17872 14684 40901 22495 34301 46549 58537 10507 92279 68925 89235 42019 95611 21290 21960
86403 44181 59813 62977 47713 09960 51870 72113 49999 99837 29780 49951 05973 17328 16096 31859
50244 59455 34690 83026 42522 30825 33446 85035 26193 11881 71010 00313 78387 52886 58753 32083
81420 61717 76691 47303 59825 34904 28755 46873 11595 62863 88235 37875 93751 95778 18577 80532
17122 68066 13001 92787 66111 95909 21642 01989.

π (in octal) = 3.11037 55242 10264 3.
 $1/\pi=0.31830\ 98861\ 83791,$ $\pi^2=9.86960\ 44010\ 89359=1/0.10132\ 11836\ 42338,$
 $\sqrt{\pi}=1.77245\ 38509\ 05516=1/0.56418\ 95835\ 47756,$
 $\sqrt{2\pi}=2.50662\ 82746\ 31001=1/0.39894\ 22804\ 01433,$
 $\sqrt{\pi}/2=1.25331\ 41373\ 15500=1/0.79788\ 45608\ 02865,$
 $\sqrt[3]{\pi}=1.46459\ 18875\ 61523=1/0.68278\ 40632\ 55296.$
 $\log_{10}\pi=0.49714\ 98726\ 94134,$ $\log_e\pi=1.14472\ 98858\ 49400.$

(III) Radian rad

1 rad = 57°.29577 95130 82321 = 3437'.74677 07849 393 = 20626 4".80624 70964.
1° = 0.01745 32925 19943 rad, 1' = 0.00029 08882 08666 rad, 1" = 0.00000 48481 36811 rad.

(IV) Euler's Constant C (100 decimals) (→ 174 Gamma Function)

$C=0.57721\ 56649\ 01532\ 86060\ 65120\ 90082\ 40243\ 10421\ 59335\ 93992$
35988 05767 23488 48677 26777 66467 09369 47063 29174 67495.

$e^C=1.78107\ 24179\ 90197\ 98522.$

$$S_n=\sum_{i=1}^n\frac{1}{i}.$$

n	S_n	n	S_n	n	S_n	n	S_n
3	1.83333 333	6	2.45000 000	15	3.31822 899	100	5.18737 752
4	2.08333 333	8	2.71785 714	20	3.59773 966	500	6.79282 343
5	2.28333 333	10	2.92896 825	50	4.79920 534	1000	7.48547 086

7. Coefficients of Polynomial Approximations

In this table, we give some typical examples of approximation formulas for computation of functions on a digital computer (→ 19 Analog Computation, 336 Polynomial Approximation).

(I) Exponential Function

- (1) Putting $\frac{x}{\log 2}+1=q+y+\frac{1}{2}\left(q\text{ is an integer, }-\frac{1}{2} \leq y<\frac{1}{2}\right)$, we have
 $e^x=2^{qv(y)}, v(y) \doteq \sum a_i y^i$, which gives an approximation by a polynomial of the 7th degree, where the maximal error is 3×10^{-11} .
 $a_0=0.70710\ 67811\ 6,$ $a_1=0.49012\ 90717\ 2,$ $a_2=0.16986\ 57957\ 2,$ $a_3=0.03924\ 73321\ 5,$
 $a_4=0.00680\ 09712,$ $a_5=0.00094\ 28173,$ $a_6=0.00010\ 93869,$ $a_7=0.00001\ 0826.$
- (2) An approximation by a polynomial of the 11th degree: $e^x \doteq \sum a_i x^i$ ($-1 \leq x \leq 0$).
Maximal error 1×10^{-12} .
 $a_0=0.99999\ 99999\ 990,$ $a_1=0.99999\ 99999\ 995,$ $a_2=0.50000\ 00000\ 747,$
 $a_3=0.16666\ 66666\ 812,$ $a_4=0.04166\ 66657\ 960,$ $a_5=0.00833\ 33332\ 174,$
 $a_6=0.00138\ 88925\ 998,$ $a_7=0.00019\ 84130\ 955,$ $a_8=0.00002\ 47944\ 428,$
 $a_9=0.00000\ 27550\ 711,$ $a_{10}=0.00000\ 02819\ 019,$ $a_{11}=0.00000\ 00255\ 791.$

$$(3) \quad e^x \approx 1 + \frac{x}{-\frac{x}{2} + \frac{k_0 + k_1 x^2 + k_2 x^4}{1 + k_3 x^2}} \quad (-\log \sqrt{2} \leq x \leq \log \sqrt{2}).$$

Maximal error 1.4×10^{-14} .

$$k_0 = 1.00000 \ 00000 \ 00327 \ 1, \quad k_1 = 0.10713 \ 50664 \ 56464 \ 2,$$

$$k_2 = 0.00059 \ 45898 \ 69018 \ 8, \quad k_3 = 0.02380 \ 17331 \ 57418 \ 6.$$

(II) Logarithmic Function

(1) An approximation by a polynomial of the 11th degree: $\log(1+x) \approx \sum a_i x^i$ ($0 \leq x \leq 1$).

Maximal error 1.1×10^{-10} .

$$a_0 = 0.00000 \ 00001 \ 10, \quad a_1 = 0.99999 \ 99654 \ 98, \quad a_2 = -0.49999 \ 82537 \ 98,$$

$$a_3 = 0.33329 \ 85059 \ 64, \quad a_4 = -0.24963 \ 72428 \ 65, \quad a_5 = 0.19773 \ 31015 \ 60,$$

$$a_6 = -0.15744 \ 88954 \ 13, \quad a_7 = 0.11712 \ 91156 \ 18, \quad a_8 = -0.07364 \ 03719 \ 14,$$

$$a_9 = 0.03469 \ 74937 \ 56, \quad a_{10} = -0.01046 \ 82295 \ 69, \quad a_{11} = 0.00148 \ 19917 \ 22.$$

(2) For $1 \leq x \leq 2$, and putting $y = \frac{x - \sqrt{2}}{x + \sqrt{2}} (3 + 2\sqrt{2})$ ($-1 \leq y \leq 1$), then $\log x \approx \log \sqrt{2} +$

$\sum a_i y^{2i+1}$ gives an approximation by a polynomial of the 11th degree ($0 \leq i \leq 5$), where the maximal error is 9.2×10^{-15} .

$$a_0 = 0.34314 \ 57505 \ 07610 \ 6, \quad a_1 = 0.00336 \ 70892 \ 56222 \ 5, \quad a_2 = 0.00005 \ 94707 \ 04347 \ 4,$$

$$a_3 = 0.00000 \ 12504 \ 99776 \ 2, \quad a_4 = 0.00000 \ 00285 \ 68292 \ 8, \quad a_5 = 0.00000 \ 00007 \ 43713 \ 9.$$

(III) Trigonometric Functions

(1) We put $\frac{x}{2\pi} = p + \frac{q}{2} + \frac{r}{4} + \frac{z}{8}$ (p is an integer; $q=0, 1$; $r=0, 1$; $-1 \leq z < 1$), and $s = \sin \frac{\pi z}{4}$, $c = \cos \frac{\pi z}{4}$.

If $r=0$, $\sin x = (-1)^q s$, $\cos x = (-1)^q c$,

If $r=1$, $\sin x = (-1)^q c$, $\cos x = -(-1)^q s$.

Here s and c are computed by the following approximation formulas. Putting $-z^2/2 = y$, $s(y) = \sin(\pi z/4) \approx \sum a_i y^i$, $c(y) = \cos(\pi z/4) \approx \sum b_i y^i$ gives an approximation by a polynomial of the 5th degree, where the maximal errors are $s: 2 \times 10^{-15}$, $c: 2 \times 10^{-13}$.

$$a_0 = 0.78539 \ 81633 \ 97426, \quad a_1 = 0.16149 \ 10243 \ 75338, \quad a_2 = 0.00996 \ 15782 \ 61200,$$

$$a_3 = 0.00029 \ 26094 \ 99152, \quad a_4 = 0.00000 \ 50133 \ 389, \quad a_5 = 0.00000 \ 00555 \ 1357,$$

$$b_0 = 0.99999 \ 99999 \ 999, \quad b_1 = 0.61685 \ 02750 \ 601, \quad b_2 = 0.06341 \ 73767 \ 885,$$

$$b_3 = 0.00260 \ 79335 \ 007, \quad b_4 = 0.00005 \ 74476 \ 09, \quad b_5 = 0.00000 \ 07765 \ 93.$$

(2) $\frac{\sin(\pi x/2)}{x} \approx \sum (-1)^i a_i x^{2i}$ ($-1 \leq x \leq 1$). This gives an approximation by a polynomial of 10th degree ($0 \leq i \leq 5$), where the maximal error is 2.67×10^{-11} .

$$a_0 = 1.57079 \ 63267 \ 682, \quad a_1 = 0.64596 \ 40955 \ 820, \quad a_2 = 0.07969 \ 26037 \ 435,$$

$$a_3 = 0.00468 \ 16578 \ 837, \quad a_4 = 0.00016 \ 02547 \ 767, \quad a_5 = 0.00000 \ 34318 \ 696.$$

(3) $\tan \frac{\pi x}{4} \approx x \left(k_0 + \frac{x^2}{|k_1|} + \dots + \frac{x^2}{|k_4|} \right)$ (continued fraction) ($-1 \leq x \leq 1$).

Maximal error 9.8×10^{-12} .

$$k_0 = 0.78539 \ 81634 \ 9907, \quad k_1 = 6.19229 \ 46807 \ 1350, \quad k_2 = -0.65449 \ 83095 \ 2316,$$

$$k_3 = 520.24599 \ 06398 \ 9939, \quad k_4 = -0.07797 \ 95098 \ 7751.$$

(IV) Inverse Trigonometric Functions

(1) An approximation by a polynomial of the 21st degree ($0 \leq i \leq 10$):

$$\arcsin x \approx \sum a_i x^{2i+1} \quad (|x| \leq 1/\sqrt{2}).$$

Maximal error 10^{-10} .

$$a_0 = 1.00000 \ 00005 \ 3, \quad a_1 = 0.16666 \ 65754 \ 5, \quad a_2 = 0.07500 \ 46066 \ 5, \quad a_3 = 0.04453 \ 58425 \ 7,$$

$$a_4 = 0.03175 \ 26509 \ 6, \quad a_5 = 0.01176 \ 58281 \ 9, \quad a_6 = 0.06921 \ 26185 \ 7, \quad a_7 = -0.14821 \ 09628 \ 8,$$

$$a_8 = 0.32889 \ 76635 \ 2, \quad a_9 = -0.35020 \ 41201 \ 5, \quad a_{10} = 0.19740 \ 50325 \ 0.$$

- (2) Putting $x = w + u$ ($w = \frac{1}{8}, \frac{3}{8}, \frac{5}{8}, \frac{7}{8}$; $-\frac{1}{8} \leq u \leq \frac{1}{8}$), $v = \frac{x-w}{1+xw}$ ($|v| \leq \frac{1}{2}$)

$$\arctan x = \arctan w + t(v), \quad t(v) = \arctan v.$$

The values of $\arctan w$:

$$\arctan(1/8) = 0.12435\,49945\,46711, \quad \arctan(3/8) = 0.35877\,06702\,70611,$$

$$\arctan(5/8) = 0.55859\,93153\,43560, \quad \arctan(7/8) = 0.71882\,99996\,21623.$$

$t(v)$ is computed by an approximation by a polynomial of the 9th degree ($0 \leq i \leq 4$), where

$$t(v) = \arctan v \approx \sum (-1)^i a_i v^{2i+1}.$$

Maximal error 1.6×10^{-13} .

$$a_0 = 0.99999\,99999\,9992, \quad a_1 = 0.33333\,33328\,220, \quad a_2 = 0.19999\,97377\,6,$$

$$a_3 = 0.14280\,9976, \quad a_4 = 0.10763\,60.$$

- (3) $\arctan x \approx x \left(k_0 + \frac{x^2}{|k_1|} + \dots + \frac{x^2}{|k_6|} \right)$ (continued fraction) ($-1 \leq x \leq 1$).

Maximal error 3.6×10^{-10} .

$$k_0 = 0.99999\,99936\,2, \quad k_1 = -3.00000\,30869\,4, \quad k_2 = -0.55556\,97728\,4,$$

$$k_3 = -15.77401\,81127\,3,$$

$$k_4 = -0.16190\,80978\,0, \quad k_5 = -44.57191\,79508\,8, \quad k_6 = -0.10810\,67493\,1.$$

(V) Gamma Function

An approximation by a polynomial of the 8th degree:

$$\Gamma(2+x) \approx \sum a_i x^i \quad (-1/2 \leq x \leq 1/2).$$

Maximal error 7.6×10^{-8} .

$$a_0 = 0.99999\,9926, \quad a_1 = 0.42278\,4604, \quad a_2 = 0.41184\,9671, \quad a_3 = 0.08156\,52323,$$

$$a_4 = 0.07406\,48982, \quad a_5 = -0.00012\,51376\,7, \quad a_6 = 0.01229\,95771, \quad a_7 = -0.00349\,61289,$$

$$a_8 = 0.00213\,85778.$$

(VI) Normal Distribution

- (1) $\frac{2}{\sqrt{\pi}} \int_x^\infty e^{-t^2} dt \approx \frac{1}{(1 + \sum a_i x^{i+1})^{16}}$ ($0 \leq x < \infty$). This gives an approximation by a polynomial of the 6th degree.

Maximal error 2.8×10^{-7} .

$$a_0 = 0.07052\,30784, \quad a_1 = 0.04228\,20123, \quad a_2 = 0.00927\,05272,$$

$$a_3 = 0.00015\,20143, \quad a_4 = 0.00027\,65672, \quad a_5 = 0.00004\,30638.$$

- (2) $P(x) \equiv \frac{1}{\sqrt{2\pi}} \int_x^\infty e^{-t^2/2} dt,$

$$4P(x)(1-P(x)) \approx \left[\exp\left(-\frac{2x^2}{\pi}\right) \right] \left[1 + x^4 \left(a_0 + \frac{a_1}{x^2 + a_2} \right) \right] \quad (0 \leq x < \infty).$$

Maximal error 2×10^{-5} .

$$a_0 = 0.0055, \quad a_1 = 0.0551, \quad a_2 = 14.4.$$

- (3) The inverse function of (2)

$$x \approx \left[y \left(a_0 + \frac{a_1}{y + a_2} \right) \right]^{1/2}, \quad y = -\log[4P(x)(1-P(x))] \quad (0 \leq y < \infty).$$

Maximal error 4.9×10^{-4} .

$$a_0 = 2.06117\,86, \quad a_1 = -5.72622\,04, \quad a_2 = 11.64059\,5.$$

Statistical Tables for Reference

Statistical Tables

- [1] J. A. Greenwood and H. O. Hartley, Guide to tables in mathematical statistics, Princeton Univ. Press, 1962.
- [2] Research Group for Statistical Sciences (T. Kitagawa and M. Masuyama, eds.) New statistical tables (Japanese), explanation p. 264, table p. 214, Kawade, 1952.
- [3] R. A. Fisher and F. Yates, Statistical tables for biological, agricultural and medical research, explanation p. 30, table p. 137, Oliver & Boyd, third edition, 1948.
- [4] E. S. Pearson and H. O. Hartley, Biometrika tables for statisticians, explanation p. 104, table p. 154, Cambridge Univ. Press, third edition, 1970.
- [5] K. Pearson, Tables for statisticians and biometricians I, 1930, explanation p. 83, table p. 143; II, 1931, explanation p. 250, table p. 262, Cambridge Univ. Press.
- [6] Statistical tables JSA-1972 (Japanese), table p. 454, explanation p. 260, Japanese Standards Association, 1972.

Tables of Special Statistical Values

- [8] Harvard Univ., Tables of the cumulative binomial probability distribution, Harvard, 1955,

$$\sum_{i=r}^n \binom{n}{i} p^i q^{n-i}; 5 \text{ dec.},$$

$$p = 0.01(0.01)0.50,$$

$$n = 1(1)50(2)100(10)200(20)500(50)1000.$$

- [9] National Bureau of Standards, NBS applied mathematical series, no. 6, Tables of the binomial probability distribution, 1950, $\binom{n}{i} p^i q^{n-i}$ and the partial sum: 7 dec., $p = 0.01(0.01)0.50$, $n = 2(1)49$.

- [10] T. Kitagawa, Table of Poisson distribution (Japanese), Baihûkan, 1951, $e^{-m} m^i / i!$: 7-8 dec., $m = 0.001(0.001)1.000(0.01)10.00$.

- [11] G. J. Lieberman and D. B. Owen, Tables of the hypergeometric probability distribution, Stanford, 1961, $\binom{k}{x} \binom{N-k}{n-x} / \binom{N}{n}$: 6 dec., $N = 2(1)50(10)100(100)2000$, $n = 1(1)(N/2)$, $k = 1(1)n$.

- [12] National Bureau of Standards, NBS no. 23, Tables of normal probability functions, 1942,

$$\varphi(x) = (1/\sqrt{2\pi}) \exp(-\frac{1}{2}x^2),$$

$$\Phi(x) = \int_{-\infty}^x \varphi(x) dx; 15 \text{ dec.},$$

$$x = 0(0.00001)1.0000(0.001)8.285.$$

- [13] K. Pearson, Tables of the incomplete beta-functions, Cambridge, second edition, 1968, $I_x(p, q)$: 8 dec., $p, q = 0.5(0.5)11(1)50$.

- [14] K. Pearson, Tables of the incomplete gamma-function, Cambridge, 1922, revised edition, 1951,

$$I(u, p) = \int_0^{u\sqrt{p+1}} (1/e^v)(v^p/\Gamma(p+1)) dv:$$

$$7 \text{ dec.}, p = 0.0(0.1)5.0(0.2)50.0, u = 0.1(0.1)20.0; \\ p = -1.0(0.05)0.0, u = 0.1(0.1)51.3.$$

- [15] N. V. Smirnov, Tables for the distribution and density function of the t -distribution, Pergamon, 1961, 6 dec., $f = 1(1)35$, $t = 0(0.01)3.00(0.02)4.50(0.05)6.50$.

- [16] G. J. Resnikoff and G. J. Lieberman, Tables of the non-central t -distribution, Stanford, 1957.

- [17] F. N. David, Tables of the ordinates and probability integral of the distribution of the correlation coefficient in small samples, Cambridge, 1938.

- [18] D. B. Owen, The bivariate normal probability distribution, Sandia Corp., 1957,

$$T(h, a): 6 \text{ dec.}, a = 0.000(0.025)1.000, \infty, h = 0.00(0.01)3.50(0.05)4.75, T(h, a)$$

$$= \int_0^h \int_0^{ax} \frac{1}{2\pi} \exp\left(-\frac{x^2+y^2}{2}\right) dy dx.$$

- [19] National Bureau of Standards, NBS no. 50, Tables of the bivariate normal distribution function and related functions, 1959, $L(h, k, r)$

$$= \int_h^\infty \int_k^\infty \frac{1}{2\pi\sqrt{1-r^2}}$$

$$\times \exp\left[-\frac{x^2+y^2-2rxy}{2(1-r^2)}\right] dy dx; 6 \text{ dec.},$$

$$r = \pm 0.00(0.05)0.95(0.01)0.99,$$

$$h, k = 0.0(0.1)4.0.$$

Tables of Allocation

- [20] T. Kitagawa and M. Midome, Table of allocation of elements for experimental design (Japanese), Baihûkan, 1953.

- [21] R. C. Bose, W. H. Clatworthy, and S. S. Shrikhande, Tables of partially balanced designs with two associate classes, North Carolina Agric. Expt. Station Tech. Bull., 1954 (table of PBIBD).

Numerical Tables for Reference

General Tables

- [1] M. Boll, *Tables numériques universelles*, Dunod, 1947.
- [2] P. Barlow, *Barlow's tables*, Robinson, 1814, third edition, 1930.
- [3] W. Shibagaki, 0.01% table of elementary functions (Japanese), Kyôritu, 1952.
- [4] K. Hayashi, *Table of higher functions* (Japanese), Iwanami, second edition, 1967.
- [5] E. Jahnke and F. Emde, *Funktionentafeln mit Formeln und Kurven*, Teubner, second edition 1933 (English translation: *Tables of functions with formulae and curves*, Dover, fourth edition, 1945).
- [6] Y. Yoshida and M. Yoshida, *Mathematical tables* (Japanese), Baihûkan, 1958.
- [7] M. Abramowitz and I. A. Stegun (eds.), *Handbook of mathematical functions with formulas, graphs and mathematical tables*, National Bureau of Standards, 1964 (Dover, 1965).
- [8] A. Fletcher et al. (eds.), *Index of mathematical tables I, II*, Scientific Computing Service, Addison-Wesley, second edition, 1962.

Multiplication Table

- [9] A. L. Crelle, *Rechentafeln welche alles Mutiplicieren und Dividiren mit Zahlen unter 1000 ersparen, bei grösseren Zahlen aber die Rechnung erleichtern und sicherer machen*, W. de Gruyter, new edition 1944.

Table of Prime Numbers

- [10] D. N. Lehmer, *List of prime numbers from 1 to 10,006,721*, Carnegie Institution of Washington, 1914.

Series of Tables of Functions

- [11] British Association for the Advancement of Science, *Mathematical tables*, vol. 2, Emden functions, 1932; vol. 6, Bessel functions, pt. 1, 1937; vol. 8, Number-divisor tables, 1940; vol. 9, Tables of powers giving integral powers of integrals, 1940; vol. 10, Bessel functions, pt. 2, 1952.
- [12] Harvard University, Computation Laboratory, *Annals*, vol. 2, Tables of the modified Hankel functions of order one-third and their derivatives, 1945; vol. 3, Tables of the Bessel functions of the first kind of orders

zero and one, 1947; vol. 14, Orders seventy-nine through one hundred thirty-five, 1951; vol. 18, Tables of generalized sine- and cosine-integral functions, pt. 1, 1949; vol. 19, pt. 2, 1949; vol. 20, Tables of inverse hyperbolic functions, 1949; vol. 21, Tables of the generalized exponential-integral functions, 1949.

- [13] National Bureau of Standards, Applied Mathematics Series (AMS), AMS 1, Tables of the Bessel functions $Y_0(x)$, $Y_1(x)$, $K_0(x)$, $K_1(x)$, $0 \leq x \leq 1$, 1948; AMS 5, Tables of sines and cosines to fifteen decimal places at hundredths of a degree, 1949; AMS 11, Table of arctangents of rational numbers, 1951; AMS 14, Tables of the exponential function e^x (including e^{-x}), 1951; AMS 16, Tables of $n!$ and $\Gamma(n + \frac{1}{2})$ for the first thousand values of n , 1951; AMS 23, Tables of normal probability functions, 1953; AMS 25, Tables of the Bessel functions $Y_0(x)$, $Y_1(x)$, $K_0(x)$, $K_1(x)$, $0 \leq x \leq 1$, 1952; AMS 26, Tables of $\text{Arctan } x$, 1953; Tables of 10^x , 1953; AMS 32, Table of sine and cosine integrals for arguments from 10 to 100, 1954; AMS 34, Table of the gamma function for complex arguments, 1954; AMS 36, Tables of circular and hyperbolic sines and cosines for radian arguments, 1953; AMS 40, Table of secants and cosecants to nine significant figures at hundredths of a degree, 1954; AMS 41, Tables of the error function and its derivative, 1954; AMS 43, Tables of sines and cosines for radian arguments, 1955; AMS 45, Table of hyperbolic sines and cosines, 1955; AMS 46, Table of the descending exponential, 1955.

Tables of Special Functions

- [14] Akademiya Nauk SSSR, Tables of the exponential integral functions, 1954.
- [15] J. Brownlee, Table of $\log \Gamma(x)$, *Tracts for computers*, no. 9, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1923.
- [16] L. Dolansky and M. P. Dolansky, Table of $\log_2(1/p)$, $p \cdot \log_2(1/p)$ and $p \cdot \log_2(1/p) + (1-p) \log_2(1/(1-p))$, M.I.T. Research Lab. of Electronics tech. report 227, 1952.
- [17] L. M. Milne-Thomson, *Die elliptischen Funktionen von Jacobi*, Springer, 1931; English translation: *Jacobian elliptic function tables*, Dover, 1950.
- [18] H. T. Davis, Tables of the higher mathematical functions, Principia Press, vol. 1, Gamma function, 1933; vol. 2, Polygamma functions, 1935; vol. 3, Arithmetical tables, 1962.
- [19] R. G. Selfridge and J. E. Maxfield, A table of the incomplete elliptic integral of the third kind, Dover, 1958.

- [20] W. Shibagaki, 0.01% table of modified Bessel functions and the method of numerical computation for them (Japanese), Baihûkan, 1955.
- [21] W. Shibagaki, Theory and application of gamma function, Appendix. Table of gamma function of complex variable effective up to 6 decimals (Japanese), Iwanami, 1952.
- [22] L. J. Slater, A short table of the Laguerre polynomials, Proc. IEE, monograph no. 103c, 1955, 46–50.
- [23] G. N. Watson, A treatise on the theory of Bessel functions, Appendix, Cambridge Univ. Press, 1922, second edition, 1958.
See also Statistical Tables for Reference.

Tables of Approximation Formulas of Functions

- [24] S. Hitotumatu, Approximation formula (Japanese) Takeuti, 1963.
- [25] T. Uno (ed.), Approximation formulas of functions for computers 1–3, Joint research work for mathematical sciences, pt. IV, section 5, 1961–1963 (Japanese, mimeographed).
- [26] Z. Yamauti, S. Moriguti, and S. Hitotumatu (eds.), Numerical methods for electronic computers (Japanese), Baihûkan, I, 1965; II, 1967.
- [27] C. Hastings (ed.), Approximations for digital computers, Princeton, 1955.
- [28] A. J. W. Duijvestijn and A. J. Dekkers, Chebyshev approximations of some transcendental functions for use in digital computing, Philips Research Reports, 16 (1961), 145–174.
- [29] L. A. Lyusternik, O. A. Chervonenkis, and A. P. Yanpol'skiĭ, Mathematical analysis: functions, limits, series, continued fractions, Pergamon, 1965. (Original in Russian, 1963.)
- [30] J. F. Hart et al. (eds.), Computer approximations, Wiley, 1968.

Journals

Abh. Akad. Wiss. Göttingen

Abhandlungen der Akademie der Wissenschaften in Göttingen (Göttingen)

Abh. Bayer. Akad. Wiss. Math.-Nat. Kl.

Abhandlungen der Bayerischen Akademie der Wissenschaften. Mathematisch-Naturwissenschaftliche Klasse (Munich)

Abh. Math. Sem. Univ. Hamburg

Abhandlungen aus dem Mathematischen Seminar der Universität Hamburg (Hamburg)

Acta Arith.

Acta Arithmetica, Polska Akademia Nauk, Instytut Matematyczny (Warsaw)

Acta Informat.

Acta Informatica (Berlin)

Acta Math.

Acta Mathematica (Uppsala)

Acta Math. Acad. Sci. Hungar.

Acta Mathematica Academiae Scientiarum Hungaricae (Budapest)

Acta Math. Sinica

Acta Mathematica Sinica (Peking). Chinese Math. Acta is its English translation

Acta Sci. Math. Szeged.

Acta Universitatis Szegediensis, Acta Scientiarum Mathematicarum (Szeged)

Actualités Sci. Ind.

Actualités Scientifiques et Industrielles (Paris)

Advances in Math.

Advances in Mathematics (New York)

Aequationes Math.

Aequationes Mathematicae (Basel-Waterloo)

Algebra and Logic

Algebra and Logic (New York). Translation of Algebra i Logika

Algebra i Logika

Akademiya Nauk SSSR Sibirskoe Otdelenie. Institut Matematiki. Algebra i Logika (Novosibirsk). Translated as Algebra and Logic

Algebra Universalis

Algebra Universalis (Basel)

Amer. J. Math.

American Journal of Mathematics (Baltimore)

Amer. Math. Monthly

The American Mathematical Monthly (Menasha)

Amer. Math. Soc. Colloq. Publ.

American Mathematical Society Colloquium Publications (Providence)

Amer. Math. Soc. Math. Surveys

American Mathematical Society Mathematical Surveys (Providence)

Amer. Math. Soc. Proc. Symp. Pure Math.

American Mathematical Society Proceedings of Symposia in Pure Mathematics (Providence)

Amer. Math. Soc. Transl.

American Mathematical Society Translations (Providence)

Amer. Math. Soc. Transl. Math. Monographs

American Mathematical Society Translations of Mathematical Monographs (Providence)

Ann. Acad. Sci. Fenn.

Suomalaisen Tiedeakatemian Toimituksia, Annales Academiae Scientiarum Fennicae. Series A. I. Mathematica (Helsinki)

Ann. der Phys.

Annalen der Physik (Leipzig)

Ann. Fac. Sci. Univ. Toulouse

Annales de la Faculté des Sciences de l'Université de Toulouse pour les Sciences Mathématiques et les Sciences Physiques (Toulouse)

Ann. Inst. Fourier

Annales de l'Institut Fourier, Université de Grenoble (Grenoble)

Ann. Inst. H. Poincaré

Annales de l'Institut Henri Poincaré (Paris)

Ann. Inst. Statist. Math.

Annals of the Institute of Statistical Mathematics (Tokyo)

Ann. Mat. Pura Appl.

Annali di Matematica Pura ed Applicata (Bologna)

Ann. Math. Statist.

The Annals of Mathematical Statistics (Baltimore)

Ann. Math.

Annals of Mathematics (Princeton)

Ann. Physique

Annales de Physique (Paris)

Ann. Probability

The Annals of Probability (San Francisco)

Ann. Polon. Math.

Annales Polonici Mathematici. Polska Akademia Nauk (Warsaw)

Ann. Roumaines Math.

Annales Roumaines de Mathématiques. Journal de l'Institut Mathématique Roumain (Bucharest)

Ann. Sci. Ecole Norm. Sup.

Annales Scientifiques de l'Ecole Normale Supérieure (Paris)

Ann. Scuola Norm. Sup. Pisa
Annali della Scuola Normale Superiore di
Pisa, Scienze Fisiche e Matematiche (Pisa)

Ann. Statist.
The Annals of Statistics (San Francisco)

Arch. History Exact Sci.
Archive for History of Exact Sciences
(Berlin-New York)

Arch. Math.
Archiv der Mathematik (Basel-Stuttgart)

Arch. Rational Mech. Anal.
Archive for Rational Mechanics and Analysis
(Berlin)

Ark. Mat.
Arkiv för Matematik (Stockholm)

Ark. Mat. Astr. Fys.
Arkiv för Matematik, Astronomi och Fysik
(Uppsala)

Astérique
Astérique. La Société Mathématique de
France (Paris)

Atti Accad. Naz. Lincei, Mem.
Atti della Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei,
Memorie (Rome)

Atti Accad. Naz. Lincei, Rend.
Atti della Accademia Nazionale dei Lincei,
Rendiconti (Rome)

Automat. Control Comput. Sci.
Automatic Control and Computer Sciences
(New York). Translation of *Avtomatika i
Vychislitel'naya Tekhnika*. Akademiya Nauk
Latvijskoj SSR (Riga)

Bell System Tech. J.
The Bell System Technical Journal (New
York)

Biometrika
Biometrika, A Journal for the Statistical
Study of Biological Problems (London)

Bol. Soc. Mat. São Paulo
Boletim da Sociedade de Matemática de São
Paulo (São Paulo)

Bull. Acad. Pol. Sci.
Bulletin de l'Académie Polonaise des Sciences
(Warsaw)

Bull. Amer. Math. Soc.
Bulletin of the American Mathematical
Society (Providence)

Bull. Calcutta Math. Soc.
Bulletin of the Calcutta Mathematical Society
(Calcutta)

Bull. Math. Statist.
Bulletin of Mathematical Statistics (Fukuoka,
Japan)

Bull. Nat. Res. Council
Bulletin of the National Research Council
(Washington)

Bull. Sci. Math.
Bulletin des Sciences Mathématiques (Paris)

Bull. Soc. Math. Belg.
Bulletin de la Société Mathématique de
Belgique (Brussels)

Bull. Soc. Math. France
Bulletin de la Société Mathématique de
France (Paris)

Bull. Soc. Roy. Sci. Liège
Bulletin de la Société Royale des Sciences de
Liège (Liège)

C. R. Acad. Sci. Paris
Comptes Rendus Hebdomadaires des Séances
de l'Académie des Sciences (Paris)

Canad. J. Math.
Canadian Journal of Mathematics (Toronto)

Časopis Pěst. Mat.
Časopis pro Pěstování Matematiky, Čes-
koslovenská Akademie Věd (Prague)

Colloq. Math.
Colloquium Mathematicum (Warsaw)

Comm. ACM
Communications of the Association for
Computing Machinery (New York)

Comm. Math. Phys.
Communications in Mathematical Physics
(Berlin)

Comm. Pure Appl. Math.
Communications on Pure and Applied
Mathematics (New York)

Comment. Math. Helv.
Commentarii Mathematici Helvetici (Zurich)

Compositio Math.
Compositio Mathematica (Groningen)

Comput. J.
The Computer Journal (London)

Crelles J.
= J. Reine Angew. Math.

CWI Newslett.
Centrum voor Wiskunde en Informatica.
Newsletter (Amsterdam)

Cybernetics
Cybernetics (New York). Translation of
Kibernetika (Kiev)

Czech. Math. J.
Czechoslovak Mathematical Journal (Prague)

Deutsche Math.
Deutsche Mathematik (Berlin)

- Differentsial'nye Uravneniya
Differentsial'nye Uravneniya (Minsk). Translated as Differential Equations
- Differential Equations
Differential Equations (New York). Translation of Differentsial'nye Uravneniya
- Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR
Doklady Akademii Nauk SSSR (Moscow). Soviet Math. Dokl. is the English translation of its mathematics section
- Duke Math. J.
Duke Mathematical Journal (Durham)
- Econometrica
Econometrica, Journal of the Econometric Society (Chicago)
- Edinburgh Math. Notes
The Edinburgh Mathematical Notes (Edinburgh)
- Enseignement Math.
L'Enseignement Mathématique (Geneva)
- Enzykl. Math.
Enzyklopädie der Mathematischen Wissenschaften mit Einschluss ihrer Anwendungen (Berlin)
- Erg. Angew. Math.
Ergebnisse der Angewandte Mathematik (Berlin-New York)
- Erg. Math.
Ergebnisse der Mathematik und ihrer Grenzgebiete (Berlin-New York)
- Fund. Math.
Fundamenta Mathematicae (Warsaw)
- Funkcial. Ekvac.
Fako de l'Funkcialaj Ekvacioj Japana Matematika Societo. Funkcialaj Ekvacioj (Serio Internacia) (Kobe, Japan)
- Functional Anal. Appl.
Functional Analysis and its Applications (New York). Translation of Funktsional. Anal. Prilozhen.
- Funktsional. Anal. Prilozhen.
Funktsional'nyi Analiz i ego Prilozheniya. Akademiya Nauk SSSR (Moscow). Translated as Functional Anal. Appl.
- General Topology and Appl.
General Topology and its Applications (Amsterdam)
- Hiroshima Math. J.
Hiroshima Mathematical Journal. Hiroshima Univ. (Hiroshima, Japan)
- Hokkaido Math. J.
Hokkaido Mathematical Journal. Hokkaido Univ. (Sapporo, Japan)
- IBM J. Res. Develop.
IBM Journal of Research and Development (Armonk, N.Y.)
- Illinois J. Math.
Illinois Journal of Mathematics (Urbana)
- Indag. Math.
Indagationes Mathematicae = Nederl. Akad. Wetensch. Proc.
- Indian J. Math.
Indian Journal of Mathematics (Allahabad)
- Indiana Univ. Math. J.
Indiana University Mathematics Journal (Bloomington)
- Information and Control
Information and Control (New York)
- Inventiones Math.
Inventiones Mathematicae (Berlin)
- Izv. Akad. Nauk SSSR
Izvestiya Akademii Nauk SSSR (Moscow). Math. USSR-Izv. is the English translation of its mathematics section
- J. Algebra
Journal of Algebra (New York)
- J. Analyse Math.
Journal d'Analyse Mathématiques (Jerusalem)
- J. Appl. Math. Mech.
Journal of Applied Mathematics and Mechanics (New York). Translation of Prikl. Mat. Mekh.
- J. Approximation Theory
Journal of Approximation Theory (New York)
- J. Assoc. Comput. Mach. (J. ACM)
Journal of the Association for Computing Machinery (New York)
- J. Austral. Math. Soc.
The Journal of the Australian Mathematical Society (Sydney)
- J. Combinatorial Theory
Journal of Combinatorial Theory. Series A and Series B (New York)
- J. Comput. System Sci.
Journal of Computer and System Sciences (New York)
- J. Differential Equations
Journal of Differential Equations (New York)
- J. Differential Geometry
Journal of Differential Geometry (Bethlehem, Pa.)
- J. Ecole Polytech.
Journal de l'Ecole Polytechnique (Paris)
- J. Fac. Sci. Hokkaido Univ.
Journal of the Faculty of Science, Hokkaido University. Series I. Mathematics (Sapporo, Japan)

J. Fac. Sci. Univ. Tokyo
Journal of the Faculty of Science, University of Tokyo. Section I. (Tokyo)

J. Franklin Inst.
Journal of the Franklin Institute (Philadelphia)

J. Functional Anal.
Journal of Functional Analysis (New York)

J. Indian Math. Soc.
The Journal of the Indian Mathematical Society (Madras)

J. Inst. Elec. Engrs.
Journal of the Institution of Electrical Engineers (London)

J. Inst. Polytech. Osaka City Univ.
Journal of the Institute of Polytechnics, Osaka City University. Series A. Mathematics (Osaka)

J. London Math. Soc.
The Journal of the London Mathematical Society (London)

J. Math. Anal. Appl.
Journal of Mathematical Analysis and Applications (New York)

J. Math. and Phys.
Journal of Mathematics and Physics (Cambridge, Massachusetts, for issues prior to 1975; for 1975 and later, New York)

J. Math. Econom.
Journal of Mathematical Economics (Amsterdam)

J. Math. Kyoto Univ.
Journal of Mathematics of Kyoto University (Kyoto)

J. Math. Mech.
Journal of Mathematics and Mechanics (Bloomington)

J. Math. Pures Appl.
Journal de Mathématiques Pures et Appliquées (Paris)

J. Math. Soc. Japan
Journal of the Mathematical Society of Japan (Tokyo)

J. Mathematical Phys.
Journal of Mathematical Physics (New York)

J. Multivariate Anal.
Journal of Multivariate Analysis (New York)

J. Number Theory
Journal of Number Theory (New York)

J. Operations Res. Soc. Japan
Journal of the Operations Research Society of Japan (Tokyo)

J. Optimization Theory Appl.
Journal of Optimization Theory and Applications (New York)

J. Phys. Soc. Japan
Journal of the Physical Society of Japan (Tokyo)

J. Pure Appl. Algebra
Journal of Pure and Applied Algebra (Amsterdam)

J. Rational Mech. Anal.
Journal of Rational Mechanics and Analysis (Bloomington)

J. Reine Angew. Math.
Journal für die Reine und Angewandte Mathematik (Berlin). = Crelles J.

J. Res. Nat. Bur. Standards
Journal of Research of the National Bureau of Standards. Section B. Mathematics and Mathematical Physics (Washington)

J. Sci. Hiroshima Univ.
Journal of Science of Hiroshima University. Series A (Mathematics, Physics, Chemistry); Series A-I. (Mathematics) (Hiroshima)

J. Soviet Math.
Journal of Soviet Mathematics (New York). Translation of (1) Itogi Nauki—Seriya Matematika (Progress in Science—Mathematical Series); (2) Problemy Matematicheskogo Analiza (Problems in Mathematical Analysis); (3) Zap. Nauchn. Sem. Leningrad. Otdel. Mat. Inst. Steklov.

J. Symbolic Logic
The Journal of Symbolic Logic (New Brunswick)

Japan. J. Math.
Japanese Journal of Mathematics (Tokyo)

Jber. Deutsch. Math. Verein. (Jber. D.M.V.)
Jahresbericht der Deutschen Mathematiker Vereinigung (Stuttgart)

Kibernetika (Kiev)
Otdelenie Matematiki, Mekhaniki i Kibernetiki Akademii Nauk Ukrainsoi SSR. Kibernetika (Kiev). Translated as Cybernetics

Kôdai Math. Sem. Rep.
Kôdai Mathematical Seminar Reports (Tokyo)

Linear Algebra and Appl.
Linear Algebra and Its Applications (New York)

Linear and Multilinear Algebra.
Linear and Multilinear Algebra (New York)

Mat. Sb.
Matematicheskii Sbornik (Recueil Mathématique). Akademiya Nauk SSSR (Moscow). Translated as Math. USSR-Sb.

- Mat. Tidsskr. A
Matematisk Tidsskrift. A (Copenhagen)
- Mat. Zametki
Matematicheskii Zametki.
Akademiya Nauk SSSR (Moscow). Translated
as Math. Notes
- Math. Ann.
Mathematische Annalen (Berlin-Göttingen-
Heidelberg)
- Math. Comp.
Mathematics of Computation (Providence).
Formerly Math. Tables Aids Comput.
- Math. J. Okayama Univ.
Mathematical Journal of Okayama University
(Okayama, Japan)
- Math. Japonicae
Mathematica Japonicae (Osaka)
- Math. Nachr.
Mathematische Nachrichten (Berlin)
- Math. Notes
Mathematical Notes of the Academy of
Sciences of the USSR (New York). Trans-
lation of Mat. Zametki
- Math. Rev.
Mathematical Reviews (Ann Arbor)
- Math. Scand.
Mathematica Scandinavica (Copenhagen)
- Math. Student
The Mathematical Student (Madras)
- Math. Tables Aids Comput. (MTAC)
Mathematical Tables and Other Aids to
Computation (Washington). Name changed
to Mathematics of Computation in 1960
(vol. 14ff.)
- Math. USSR-Izv.
Mathematics of the USSR-Izvestiya (Provi-
dence). Translation of Izv. Akad. Nauk SSSR
- Math. USSR-Sb.
Mathematics of the USSR-Sbornik (Provi-
dence). Translation of Mat. Sb.
- Math. Z.
Mathematische Zeitschrift (Berlin-Göttingen-
Heidelberg)
- Mathematika
Mathematika, A Journal of Pure and Applied
Mathematics (London)
- Meed. Lunds Univ. Mat. Sem.
Meddelanden från Lunds Universitet
Matematiska Seminarium = Communications
du Séminaire Mathématique de l'Université
de Lund (Lund)
- Mem. Amer. Math. Soc.
Memoirs of the American Mathematical
Society (Providence)
- Mem. Coll. Sci. Univ. Kyôto
Memoirs of the College of Science, University
of Kyôto. Series A (Kyoto)
- Mem. Fac. Sci. Kyushu Univ.
Memoirs of the Faculty of Science, Kyushu
University. Series A. Mathematics (Fukuoka,
Japan)
- Mémor. Sci. Math.
Mémorial des Sciences Mathématiques (Paris)
- Michigan Math. J.
The Michigan Mathematical Journal (Ann
Arbor)
- Mitt. Math. Ges. Hamburg
Mitteilungen der Mathematischen
Gesellschaft in Hamburg (Hamburg)
- Monatsh. Math. Phys.
Monatshefte für Mathematik und Physik
(Vienna)
- Monatsh. Math.
Monatshefte für Mathematik (Vienna)
- Monograf. Mat.
Monografia Matematyczne (Warsaw)
- Moscow Univ. Math. Bull.
Moscow University Mathematics Bulletin
(New York). Translation of the mathematics
section of Vestnik Moskov. Univ., Ser. I, Mat.
Mekh.
- Nachr. Akad. Wiss. Göttingen
Nachrichten der Akademie der Wissenschaften
in Göttingen. Math.-Phys. Kl. (Göttingen)
- Nagoya Math. J.
Nagoya Mathematical Journal (Nagoya)
- Nederl. Akad. Wetensch. Proc.
Koninklijke Nederlandse Akademie van
Wetenschappen, Proceedings. Series A.
Mathematical Sciences (Amsterdam) = Indag.
Math., Proc. Acad. Amsterdam
- Nieuw Arch. Wisk.
Nieuw Archief voor Wiskunde (Groningen)
- Numerische Math.
Numerische Mathematik (Berlin-Göttingen-
Heidelberg)
- Nuovo Cimento
Il Nuovo Cimento (Bologna)
- Osaka J. Math.
Osaka Journal of Mathematics (Osaka)
- Osaka Math. J.
Osaka Mathematical Journal (Osaka)
- Pacific J. Math.
Pacific Journal of Mathematics (Berkeley)
- Philos. Trans. Roy. Soc. London
Philosophical Transactions of the Royal
Society of London. Series A (London)

- Phys. Rev.
The Physical Review (New York)
- Portugal. Math.
Portugaliae Mathematica (Lisbon)
- Prikl. Mat. Mekh.
Adademiya Nauk SSSR. Otdelenie Tekhnicheskikh Nauk. Institut Mekhaniki Prikladnaya Matematika i Mekhanika (Moscow). Translated as J. Appl. Mat. Mech.
- Proc. Acad. Amsterdam
= Nederl. Akad. Wetensch. Proc.
- Proc. Amer. Math. Soc.
Proceedings of the American Mathematical Society (Providence)
- Proc. Cambridge Philos. Soc.
Proceedings of the Cambridge Philosophical Society (Cambridge)
- Proc. Imp. Acad. Tokyo
Proceedings of the Imperial Academy (Tokyo)
- Proc. Japan Acad.
Proceedings of the Japan Academy (Tokyo)
- Proc. London Math. Soc.
Proceedings of the London Mathematical Society (London)
- Proc. Nat. Acad. Sci. US
Proceedings of the National Academy of Sciences of the United States of America (Washington)
- Proc. Phys.-Math. Soc. Japan
Proceedings of the Physico-Mathematical Society of Japan (Tokyo)
- Proc. Roy. Soc. London
Proceedings of the Royal Society of London. Series A (London)
- Proc. Steklov Inst. Math.
Proceedings of the Steklov Institute of Mathematics (Providence). Translation of Trudy Mat. Inst. Steklov.
- Prog. Theoret. Phys.
Progress of Theoretical Physics (Kyoto)
- Publ. Inst. Math.
Publications de l'Institut Mathématique (Belgrade)
- Publ. Inst. Math. Univ. Strasbourg
Publications de l'Institut de Mathématiques de l'Université de Strasbourg (Strasbourg)
- Publ. Math. Inst. HES
Publications Mathématiques de l'Institut des Hautes Etudes Scientifiques (Paris)
- Publ. Res. Inst. Math. Sci.
Publications of the Research Institute for Mathematical Sciences (Kyoto)
- Quart. Appl. Math.
Quarterly of Applied Mathematics (Providence)
- Quart. J. Math.
The Quarterly Journal of Mathematics, Oxford. Second Series (Oxford)
- Quart. J. Mech. Appl. Math.
The Quarterly Journal of Mechanics and Applied Mathematics (Oxford)
- Rend. Circ. Mat. Palermo
Rendiconti del Circolo Matematico de Palermo (Palermo)
- Rend. Sem. Mat. Univ. Padova
Rendiconti del Seminario Matematico dell'Università di Padova (Padua)
- Rev. Mat. Hisp. Amer.
Revista Matemática Hispano-Americana (Madrid)
- Rev. Mod. Phys.
Reviews of Modern Physics (New York)
- Rev. Un. Mat. Argentina
Revista de la Unión Matemática Argentina (Buenos Aires)
- Rev. Univ. Tucumán
Revista Universidad Nacional de Tucumán, Facultad de Ciencias Exactas y Tecnología. Serie A. Matemáticas y Física Teórica (Tucumán)
- Roczniki Polsk. Towar. Mat.
Roczniki Polskiego Towarzystwa Matematycznego. Serja I. Prace Matematyczne (Krakow)
- Rozprawy Mat.
Rozprawy Matematyczne, Polska Akademia Nauk, Instytut Matematyczny (Warsaw)
- Russian Math. Surveys.
Russian Mathematical Surveys (London). Translation of Uspekhi Mat. Nauk
- Sammul. Göschel
Sammulung Göschel (Leipzig)
- Sankhyā
Sankhyā, The Indian Journal of Statistics. Series A and Series B (Calcutta)
- S.-B. Berlin. Math. Ges.
Sitzungsberichte der Berliner Mathematischen Gesellschaft (Berlin)
- S.-B. Deutsch. Akad. Wiss. Berlin
Sitzungsberichte der Deutschen Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin, Mathematisch-Naturwissenschaftliche Klasse (Berlin)
- S.-B. Heidelberger Akad. Wiss.
Sitzungsberichte der Heidelberger Akademie der Wissenschaften, Mathematisch-Naturwissenschaftliche Klasse (Heidelberg)

- S.-B. Math.-Nat. Kl. Bayer. Akad. Wiss.
Sitzungsberichte der Mathematisch-Naturwissenschaftlichen Klasse der Bayerischen Akademie der Wissenschaften zu München (Munich)
- S.-B. Öster. Akad. Wiss.
Sitzungsberichte der Österreichische Akademie der Wissenschaften (Vienna)
- S.-B. Phys.-Med. Soz. Erlangen
Sitzungsberichte der Physikalisch-Medizinischen Sozietät zu Erlangen (Erlangen)
- S.-B. Preuss. Akad. Wiss.
Sitzungsberichte der Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften. Physikalisch-Mathematische Klasse (Berlin)
- Schr. Math. Inst. u. Inst. Angew. Math. Univ. Berlin
Schriften des Mathematischen Instituts und des Instituts für Angewandte Mathematik der Universität Berlin (Berlin)
- Schr. Math. Inst. Univ. Münster
Schriftenreihe des Mathematischen Instituts der Universität Münster (Münster)
- Sci. Papers Coll. Gen. Ed. Univ. Tokyo
Scientific Papers of the College of General Education, University of Tokyo (Tokyo)
- Sci. Rep. Tokyo Kyoiku Daigaku
Science Reports of the Tokyo Kyoiku Daigaku. Section A (Tokyo)
- Scripta Math.
Scripta Mathematica. A Quarterly Journal devoted to the Philosophy, History, and Expository Treatment of Mathematics (New York)
- Sém. Bourbaki
Séminaire Bourbaki (Paris)
- SIAM J. Appl. Math.
SIAM Journal of Applied Mathematics. A Publication of the Society for Industrial and Applied Mathematics (Philadelphia)
- SIAM J. Comput.
SIAM Journal on Computing (Philadelphia)
- SIAM J. Control
SIAM Journal on Control (Philadelphia)
- SIAM J. Math. Anal.
SIAM Journal on Mathematical Analysis (Philadelphia)
- SIAM J. Numer. Anal.
SIAM Journal on Numerical Analysis (Philadelphia)
- SIAM Rev.
SIAM Review (Philadelphia)
- Siberian Math. J.
Siberian Mathematical Journal (New York).
Translation of Sibirsk. Mat. Zh.
- Sibirsk. Mat. Zh.
Akademiya Nauk SSSR. Sibirskoe Otdelenie. Sibirskii Matematicheskii Zhurnal (Moscow).
Translated as Siberian Math. J.
- Skr. Norske Vid. Akad. Oslo
Skrifter Utgitt av det Norske Videnskaps-Akademi Oslo. Matematisk-Naturvidenskapelig Klasse (Oslo)
- Soviet Math. Dokl.
Soviet Mathematics, Doklady (Providence).
Translation of mathematical section of Dokl. Akad. Nauk SSSR
- SRI J.
Stanford Research Institute Journal (Menlo Park)
- Studia Math.
Studia Mathematica. (Wrocław)
- Sûbutu-kaisi
Nihon Sûgaku-buturi-gakkai Kaisi (Tokyo)
- Sûgaku
Sûgaku, Mathematical Society of Japan (Tokyo)
- Summa Brasil. Math.
Summa Brasiliensis Mathematicae (Rio de Janeiro)
- Tensor
Tensor (Chigasaki, Japan)
- Teor. Veroyatnost. i Primenen.
Teoriya Veroyatnostei i ee Primenenie. Akademiya Nauk SSSR (Moscow). Translated as Theor. Prob. Appl.
- Theor. Prob. Appl.
Theory of Probability and Its Applications. Society for Industrial and Applied Mathematics. English translation of Teor. Veroyatnost. i Primenen. (Philadelphia)
- Tôhoku Math. J.
The Tôhoku Mathematical Journal (Sendai, Japan)
- Tôhoku-rihô
Tôhoku Teikokudaigaku Rikahôkoku (Sendai, Japan)
- Topology
Topology. An International Journal of Mathematics (Oxford)
- Trans. Amer. Math. Soc.
Transactions of the American Mathematical Society (Providence)
- Trans. Moscow Math. Soc.
Transactions of the Moscow Mathematical Society (Providence). Translation of Trudy Moskov. Mat. Obshch.
- Trudy Mat. Inst. Steklov.
Trudy Matematicheskogo Instituta im. V. A.

Steklova. Akademiya Nauk SSSR (Moscow-Leningrad). Translated as Proc. Steklov Inst. Math.

Trudy Moskov. Obshch.

Trudy Moskovskogo Matematicheskogo Obshchestva (Moscow). Translated as Trans. Moscow Math. Soc.

Tsukuba J. Math.

Tsukuba Journal of Mathematics. Univ. Tsukuba (Ibaraki, Japan)

Ukrain. Mat. Zh.

Akademiya Nauk Ukrainskoï SSR. Institut Matematiki. Ukrainskii Matematicheskii Zhurnal (Kiev). Translated as Ukrainian Math. J.

Ukrainian Math. J.

Ukrainian Mathematical Journal (New York). Translation of Ukrain. Mat. Zh.

Uspekhi Mat. Nauk

Uspekhi Matematicheskikh Nauk (Moscow-Leningrad). Translated as Russian Math. Surveys

Vestnik Moskov. Univ.

Vestnik Moskovskogo Universiteta. I, Matematika i Mekhanika (Moscow). Mathematical section translated as Moscow Univ. Math. Bull.

Vierteljschr. Naturf. Ges. Zürich

Vierteljahrsschritte der Naturforschenden Gesellschaft in Zürich (Zurich)

Z. Angew. Math. Mech. (Z.A.M.M.)

Zeitschrift für Angewandte Mathematik und Mechanik, Ingenieurwissenschaftliche Forschungsarbeiten (Berlin)

Z. Angew. Math. Phys. (Z.A.M.P.)

Zeitschrift für Angewandte Mathematik und Physik (Basel)

Z. Wahrscheinlichkeitstheorie

Zeitschrift für Wahrscheinlichkeitstheorie und Verwandte Gebiete (Berlin)

Zbl. Angew. Math.

Zentralblatt für Angewandte Mathematik (Berlin)

Zbl. Math.

Zentralblatt für Mathematik und ihre Grenzgebiete (Berlin-Göttingen-Heidelberg)

Zh. Èksper. Teoret. Fiz.

Zhurnal Èksperimental'noi i Teoreticheskoi Fiziki (Moscow)

Publishers

Academic Press

Academic Press Inc., New York-London

Addison-Wesley

Addison-Wesley Publishing Company, Inc.,
Reading (Massachusetts)-Menlo Park (California)-London-Don Mills (Ontario)

Akadémiai Kiadó

A kiadásért felös: az Adadémiai Kiadó igazatőja (Publishing House of the Hungarian Academy of Sciences), Budapest

Akademie-Verlag

Berlin

Akademische Verlag.

Akademische Verlagsgesellschaft, Leipzig

Allen

W. H. Allen & Co. Ltd., London

Allen & Unwin

Allen & Unwin, Inc., Winchester (Massachusetts)

Allyn & Bacon

Allyn & Bacon, Inc., Newton (Massachusetts)

Almqvist and Wiksell

Almqvist och Wiksell Förlag, Stockholm

Asakura

Asakura-syoten, Tokyo

Aschelhoug

H. Aschelhoug and Company, Oslo

Baihûkan

Tokyo

Benjamin

W. A. Benjamin, Inc., New York-London

Birkhäuser

Birkhäuser Verlag, Basel-Stuttgart

Blackie

Blackie & Son Ltd., London-Glasgow

Cambridge Univ. Press

Cambridge University Press, London-New York

Chapman & Hall

Chapman & Hall Ltd., London

Chelsea

Chelsea Publishing Company, New York

Clarendon Press

Oxford University Press, Oxford

Cremona

Edizioni Cremonese, Rome

de Gruyter

Walter de Gruyter and Company, Berlin

Dekker

Marcel Dekker, Inc., New York

Deutscher Verlag der Wiss.

Deutscher Verlag der Wissenschaften, Berlin

Dover

Dover Publications, Inc., New York

Dunod

Dunod, Editeur, Paris

Elsevier

Elsevier Publishing Company, Amsterdam-London-New York

Fizmatgiz

Gosudarstvennoe Izdatel'stvo Fiziko-Matematicheskoi Literatury, Moscow

Gauthier-Villars

Gauthier-Villars & C^{ie}, Editeur, Paris

Ginn

Ginn and Company, Waltham (Massachusetts)-Toronto-London

Gordon & Breach

Gordon & Breach, Science Publishers Ltd., London

Goztekhizdat

Gosudarstvennoe Izdatel'stvo Tekhniko-Teoreticheskoi Literatury, Moscow

Griffin

Charles Griffin and Company Ltd., London

Hafner

Hafner Publishing Company, New York

Harper & Row

Harper & Row Publishers, New York-Evanston-London

Hermann

Hermann & C^{ie}, Paris

Hirokawa

Hirokawa-syoten, Tokyo

Hirzel

Verlag von S. Hirzel, Leipzig

Holden-Day

Holden-Day, Inc., San Francisco-London-Amsterdam

Holt, Rinehart and Winston

Holt, Rinehart and Winston, Inc., New York-Chicago-San Francisco-Toronto-London

Interscience

Interscience Publishers, Inc., New York-London

Iwanami

Iwanami Shoten, Tokyo

Kawade

Kawade-syobô, Tokyo

Kinokoniya

Kinokoniya Company, Tokyo

Kyôritu
 Kyôritu-syuppan, Tokyo

 Lippincott
 J. B. Lippincott Company, Philadelphia

 Longman
 Longman Group, Ltd., Harlow (Essex)

 Longmans, Green
 Longmans, Green and Company, Ltd.,
 London-New York-Toronto-Bombay-
 Calcutta-Madras

 Macmillan
 The Macmillan Company, New York-London

 Maki
 Maki-syoten, Tokyo

 Maruzen
 Maruzen Company Ltd., Tokyo

 Masson
 Masson et C^{ie}, Paris

 Math-Sci Press
 Math-Sci Press, Brookline (Massachusetts)

 McGraw-Hill
 McGraw-Hill Book Company, Inc., New
 York-London-Toronto

 Methuen
 Methuen and Company Ltd., London

 MIT Press
 The MIT Press, Cambridge (Massachusetts)-
 London

 Nauka
 Izdatel'stvo Nauka, Moscow

 Noordhoff
 P. Noordhoff Ltd., Groningen

 North-Holland
 North-Holland Publishing Company,
 Amsterdam

 Oldenbourg
 Verlag von R. Oldenbourg, Munich-Vienna

 Oliver & Boyd
 Oliver & Boyd Ltd., Edinburgh-London

 Oxford Univ. Press
 Oxford University Press, London-New York

 Pergamon
 Pergamon Press, Oxford-London-Edinburgh-
 New York-Paris-Frankfurt

 Polish Scientific Publishers
 Państwowe Wydawnictwo Naukowe, Warsaw

 Prentice-Hall
 Prentice-Hall, Inc., Englewood Cliffs (New
 Jersey)

 Princeton Univ. Press
 Princeton University Press, Princeton

Random House
 Random House, Inc., New York

 Sibundô
 Tokyo

 Springer
 Springer-Verlag, Berlin (-Göttingen)-
 Heidelberg-New York

 Teubner
 B. G. Teubner Verlagsgesellschaft, Leipzig-
 Stuttgart

 Tôkai
 Tôkai-syobô, Tokyo

 Tokyo-tosyo
 Tokyo

 Tokyo Univ. Press
 Tokyo University Press, Tokyo

 Ungar
 Frederick Ungar Publishing Company, New
 York

 Univ. of Tokyo Press
 University of Tokyo Press, Tokyo

 Utida-rôkakuho
 Tokyo

 Van Nostrand
 D. Van Nostrand Company, Inc., Toronto-
 New York-London

 Vandenhoeck & Ruprecht
 Göttingen

 Veit
 Verlag von Veit & Company, Leipzig

 Vieweg
 Friedr Vieweg und Sohn Verlagsgesellschaft
 mbH, Wiesbaden

 Wiley
 Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York-London

 Wiley-Interscience
 Wiley & Sons, Inc., New York-London

 Zanichelli
 Nicola Zanichelli Editore, Bologna

Special Notation

This list contains the notation commonly and frequently used throughout this work. The symbol * means that the same notation is used with more than one meaning. For more detailed definitions or further properties of the notation, see the articles cited.

Notation	Example	Definition	Article and Section
I. Logic			
\forall	$\forall xF(x)$	Universal quantifier (for all x , $F(x)$ holds)	411B, C
\exists	$\exists xF(x)$	Existential quantifier (there exists an x such that $F(x)$ holds)	411B, C
$\wedge, \&$	$A \wedge B, A \& B$	Conjunction, logical product (A and B)	411B*
\vee	$A \vee B$	Disjunction, logical sum (A or B)	411B*
\neg	$\neg A$	Negation (not A)	411B
$\rightarrow, \supset, \Rightarrow$	$A \rightarrow B, A \Rightarrow B$	Implication (A implies B)	411B*
$\leftrightarrow, \Leftrightarrow, \rightleftharpoons$	$A \leftrightarrow B$	Equivalence (A and B are logically equivalent)	411B
II. Sets			
\in	$x \in X$	Membership (element x is a member of the set X)	381A
\notin	$x \notin X$	Nonmembership (element x is not a member of the set X)	381A
\subset	$A \subset B$	Inclusion (A is a subset of B)	381A
$\not\subset$	$A \not\subset B$	Noninclusion (A is not a subset of B)	381A
\subseteq	$A \subseteq B$	Proper inclusion (A is a proper subset of B)	381A
\emptyset		Empty set	381A
\cup, \bigcup	$A \cup B, \bigcup A_\lambda$	Union, join	381B, D*
\cap, \bigcap	$A \cap B, \bigcap A_\lambda$	Intersection, meet	381B, D*
$^c, C$	$A^c, C(A)$	Complement (of a set A)	381B
$-, \setminus$	$A - B, A \setminus B$	Difference ($A - B = A \cap B^c$)	381B
\times	$A \times B$	Cartesian product (of A and B)	381B*
R, \sim	$xRy, x \sim y$	Equivalence relation (for two elements x, y)	135A*
$/$	A/R	Quotient set (set of equivalence classes of A with respect to an equivalence relation R)	135B*
\prod	$\prod_\lambda A_\lambda$	Cartesian product (of the A_λ)	381E
Σ, \amalg	$\Sigma A_\lambda, \amalg A_\lambda$	Direct sum (of the A_λ)	381E
\mathfrak{B}	$\mathfrak{B}(A)$	Power set (set of all subsets of A)	381E
	B^A	Set of all mappings from A to B	381C
$\{|\}$	$\{x|P(x)\}$	Set of all elements x with the property $P(x)$	381A

Notation	Example	Definition	Article and Section
$\{ \quad \}$	$\{a_\lambda\}_{\lambda \in \Lambda}$	Family with index set Λ	165D
	$\{a_n\}$	Sequence (of numbers, points, functions, or sets)	165D
$\bar{\quad}, | \quad |, \\#$	$\bar{X}, |X|, \\#X$	Cardinal number (of the set X)	49A*
\aleph	\aleph_β	Aleph (transfinite cardinal)	49E
\rightarrow	$f: X \rightarrow Y$	Mapping (f from X to Y)	381C*
\mapsto	$f: X \mapsto Y$	Mapping (where $f(X) = Y$, but not in the present volumes)	381C
$1, \text{id}$	$1_A, \text{id}_A$	Identity mapping (identity function)	381C
c, χ	$c_X(x), \chi_X(x)$	Characteristic function (representing function)	381C
$|$	$f|A$	Restriction (of a mapping f to A)	381C*
\circ	$g \circ f$	Composite (of mappings f and g)	381C
$\limsup, \overline{\lim}$	$\limsup A_n$	Superior limit (of the sequence of sets A_n)	270C*
$\liminf, \underline{\lim}$	$\liminf A_n$	Inferior limit (of the sequence of sets A_n)	270C*
\lim	$\lim A_n$	Limit (of the sequence of sets A_n)	270C*
\varinjlim	$\varinjlim A_\lambda$	Inductive limit (of A_λ)	210B
\varprojlim	$\varprojlim A_\lambda$	Projective limit (of A_λ)	210B
III. Order			
(\quad , \quad)	(a, b)	Open interval $\{x|a < x < b\}$	355C*
$[\quad , \quad]$	$[a, b]$	Closed interval $\{x|a \leq x \leq b\}$	355C*
$(\quad , \quad]$	$(a, b]$	Half-open-interval $\{x|a < x \leq b\}$	355C
$[\quad , \quad)$	$[a, b)$	Half-open interval $\{x|a \leq x < b\}$	355C
\max	$\max A$	Maximum (of A)	311B
\min	$\min A$	Minimum (of A)	311B
\sup	$\sup A$	Supremum, least upper bound (of A)	311B
\inf	$\inf A$	Infimum, greatest lower bound (of A)	311B
\ll	$a \ll b$	Very large (b is very large compared to a)	
\cup, \vee	$a \cup b, a \vee b$	Join of a, b in an ordered set	243A*
\cap, \wedge	$a \cap b, a \wedge b$	Meet of a, b in an ordered set	243A*
IV. Algebra			
mod	$a \equiv b \pmod{n}$	Modulo (a and b are congruent modulo n)	297G
$|$	$a|b$	Divisibility (a divides b)	297A*
\nmid	$a \nmid b$	Nondivisibility (a does not divide b)	297A
$\det, | \quad |$	$\det A, |A|$	Determinant (of a square matrix A)	103A*

Notation	Example	Definition	Article and Section
tr, Sp	$\text{tr } A, \text{Sp } A$	Trace (of a square matrix A)	269F
$'^{\text{T}}, '$	$'A; A^{\text{T}}, A^{\text{T}}, A'$	Transpose (of a matrix A)	269B
I	I_n	Unit matrix (of degree n)	269A
E_{ij}		Matrix unit (matrix whose (i,j) -component is 1 and all others are 0)	269B
\otimes	$A \otimes B$	Kronecker product (of two matrices A and B)	269C*
\cong	$M \cong N$	Isomorphism (of two algebraic systems M and N)	256B
$/$	M/N	Quotient space (of an algebraic system M by N)	256F*
\dim	$\dim M$	Dimension (of a linear space, etc.)	256C
Im	$\text{Im } f$	Image (of a mapping f)	277E*
Ker	$\text{Ker } f$	Kernel (of a mapping f)	277E
Coim	$\text{Coim } f$	Coimage (of a mapping f)	277E
Coker	$\text{Coker } f$	Cokernel (of a mapping f)	277E
δ_{ij}, δ_i^j		Kronecker delta ($\delta_{ii} = 1$ and $\delta_{ij} = 0$ for $i \neq j$)	269A
$(\ , \), \cdot$	$(\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}), \mathbf{a} \cdot \mathbf{b}$	Inner product (of two vectors \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b})	442B*
$[\ , \], \times$	$[\mathbf{a}, \mathbf{b}], \mathbf{a} \times \mathbf{b}$	Vector product (of two 3-dimensional vectors \mathbf{a} and \mathbf{b})	442C*
\otimes	$M \otimes N$	Tensor product (of two modules M and N)	277J, 256I*
Hom	$\text{Hom}(M, N)$	Set of all homomorphisms (from M to N)	277B
Hom_A	$\text{Hom}_A(M, N)$	Set of all A -homomorphisms (of an A -module M to an A -module N)	277E
Tor	$\text{Tor}_n(M, N)$	Torsion product (of M, N)	200D
Ext	$\text{Ext}^n(M, N)$	Extension (of M, N)	200G
\wedge, \wedge^p	$\wedge M, \wedge^p M$	Exterior algebra (of a linear space M), p th exterior product (of M)	256O
V. Algebraic Systems			
\mathbf{N}		Set of all natural numbers	294A
\mathbf{Z}		Set of all rational integers	294A
\mathbf{Z}_m		$\mathbf{Z}/m\mathbf{Z}$ (set of all residue classes modulo m)	297G*
\mathbf{Q}		Set of all rational numbers	294A
\mathbf{R}		Set of all real numbers	294A
\mathbf{C}		Set of all complex numbers	294A
\mathbf{H}		Set of all quaternions	29B
$GF(q), \mathbf{F}_q$		Finite field (with q elements)	149M

Notation	Example	Definition	Article and Section
\mathbf{Q}_p		p -adic number field (p is a prime)	439F
\mathbf{Z}_p		Ring of p -adic integers	439F
$[\]$	$k[x_1, \dots, x_n]$	Polynomial ring (of variables x_1, \dots, x_n with coefficients in k)	369A
$(\)$	$k(x_1, \dots, x_n)$	Field extension (of k by x_1, \dots, x_n)	149D
$[[\]], \{ \ }$	$k[[x_1, \dots, x_n]]$	Formal power series ring (with coefficients in k). Note: The symbols \mathbf{N} , \mathbf{Z} , \mathbf{Q} , \mathbf{R} , \mathbf{C} , and \mathbf{H} stand for sets, each with its own natural mathematical structure	370A
VI. Groups			
GL	$GL(V), GL(n, K)$	General linear group (over V , or over K of degree n)	60B
SL	$SL(n, K)$	Special linear group (over K of degree n)	60B
PSL	$PSL(n, K)$	Projective special linear group (over K of degree n)	60B
U	$U(n)$	Unitary group (of degree n)	60F
SU	$SU(n)$	Special unitary group (of degree n)	60F
O	$O(n)$	Orthogonal group (of degree n)	60I
SO	$SO(n)$	Special orthogonal group, rotation group (of degree n)	60I
$Spin$	$Spin(n)$	Spinor group (of degree n)	61D
Sp	$Sp(n)$	Symplectic group (of degree n)	60L
[For $PGL(n, K), LF(n, K), PU(n), Sp(n), PSp(n, K) \rightarrow$ 60 Classical Groups]			
VII. Topology (Convergence)			
\rightarrow	$a_n \rightarrow a$	Convergence (sequence a_n converges to a)	87B, E*
\downarrow, \searrow	$a_n \downarrow a, a_n \searrow a$	Convergence monotonically decreasing	87B
\uparrow, \nearrow	$a_n \uparrow a, a_n \nearrow a$	Convergence monotonically increasing	87B
\lim	$\lim a_n$	Limit (of a sequence a_n)	87B, E*
$\limsup, \overline{\lim}$	$\limsup a_n, \overline{\lim} a_n$	Superior limit (of a sequence a_n)	87C*
$\liminf, \underline{\lim}$	$\liminf a_n, \underline{\lim} a_n$	Inferior limit (of a sequence a_n)	87C*
$^a, \bar{}, Cl$	$E^a, \bar{E}, Cl E$	Closure (of a set E)	425B
$^i, \circ, \text{Int}$	$E^i, E^\circ, \text{Int } E$	Interior (of a set E)	425B
ρ, d	$\rho(x, y), d(x, y)$	Distance (between two points x and y)	273B*
$\| \ \|$	$\|x\|$	Norm (of x)	37B
l.i.m.	$\text{l.i.m. } f_n$	Limit in the mean (of a sequence f_n)	168B

Notation	Example	Definition	Article and Section
s-lim	s-lim x_n	Strong limit (of a sequence x_n)	37B
w-lim	w-lim x_n	Weak limit (of a sequence x_n)	37E
\simeq	$f \simeq g$	Homotopy (of two mappings f and g)	202B
\approx	$X \approx Y$	Homeomorphism (of two topological spaces X and Y)	425G

VIII. Geometry and Algebraic Topology

E^n		Euclidean space (of dimension n)	140
P^n		Projective space (of dimension n)	343B
S^n		Spherical surface (of dimension n)	140
T^n		Torus (of dimension n)	422E
H^n	$H^n(X, A)$	n -dimensional cohomology group (of X with coefficients in A)	201H
H_n	$H_n(X, A)$	n -dimensional homology group (of X with coefficients in A)	201G
	$H_n(C)$	(of chain complex C)	201B
π_n	$\pi_n(X)$	n -dimensional homotopy group (of X)	202J, 170
∂	∂C	Boundary (of C)	201B
δ	δf	Coboundary (of f)	201H*
Sq	$Sq^i x$	Streenrod square (of x)	64B
\mathscr{P}	$\mathscr{P}_p^r(x)$	Steenrod p th power (of x)	64B
\smile	$z_1 \smile z_2$	Cup product (of z_1 and z_2)	201I
\frown	$z_1 \frown z_2$	Cap product (of z_1 and z_2)	201K
\wedge	$\omega \wedge \eta$	Exterior product (of two differential forms ω and η)	105Q*
d	$d\omega$	Exterior derivative (of a differential form ω)	105Q
grad	grad φ	Gradient (of a function φ)	442D
rot	rot \mathbf{u}	Rotation (of a vector \mathbf{u})	442D
div	div \mathbf{u}	Divergence (of a vector \mathbf{u})	442D
Δ	$\Delta\varphi$	Laplacian (of a function φ)	323A
\square	$\square\varphi$	d'Alembertian (of a function φ)	130A
D	$D\varphi$	Differential operator	112A*
$\frac{D(u_1, \dots, u_n)}{D(x_1, \dots, x_n)}, \left| \frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j} \right|, \det \left( \frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j} \right)$		Jacobian determinant (of (u_1, \dots, u_n) with respect to (x_1, \dots, x_n))	208B
$\frac{\partial(u_1, \dots, u_n)}{\partial(x_1, \dots, x_n)}, \left(\frac{\partial u_i}{\partial x_j} \right)$		Jacobian matrix (of (u_1, \dots, u_n) with respect to (x_1, \dots, x_n))	208B

IX. Function Spaces

C	$C(\Omega)$	Space of continuous functions (on Ω)	168B(1)
-----	-------------	--	---------

Notation	Example	Definition	Article and Section
L_p	$L_p(\Omega), L_p(a, b)$	Space of functions such that $|f|^p$ is integrable on Ω	168B(2)
C^l	$C^l(L)(1 \leq l \leq \infty)$	Space of functions of class C^l	168B(9)
\mathcal{D}	$\mathcal{D}(\Omega)$	Space of C^∞ functions with compact support	168B(13)
\mathcal{E}	$\mathcal{E}(\Omega)$	Space of C^∞ functions	168B(13)
[For $\mathcal{A}(\Omega), A(\Omega), A_p(\Omega), \mathcal{B}(\Omega)(=D_{L^2}(\Omega)), BMO(\mathbf{R}^n), BV(\Omega), c, C, C_0(\Omega), C_\infty(\Omega), C_0^l(\Omega), \mathcal{D}_{L^p}(\Omega), \mathcal{D}_{(M^p)}(\Omega), \mathcal{D}_{(M^p)}(\Omega), \mathcal{E}_{(M^p)}(\Omega), \mathcal{E}_{(M^p)}(\Omega), H_p(\mathbf{R}^n), H^l(\Omega), H_0^l(\Omega), \Lambda^S(\mathbf{R}^n), \bigcap \lambda(\alpha^{(k)}), \sum \lambda^\times(\alpha^{(k)}), l_p, L_{(p,q)}(\Omega), m, M(\Omega), \mathcal{O}(\Omega), \mathcal{O}_p(\Omega), \mathcal{S}, s, S(\Omega), W_p^l(\Omega) \rightarrow 168$ Function Spaces. For $\mathcal{B}(\Omega)$ (Space of Sato hyperfunctions), $\mathcal{D}'(\Omega), \mathcal{E}'(\Omega), \mathcal{O}_c, \mathcal{O}_M, \mathcal{S}'(\mathbf{R}^n) \rightarrow 125$ Distributions and Hyperfunctions]			
X. Functions			
$| \cdot |$	$|z|$	Absolute value (of a complex number z)	74B*
Re	$\operatorname{Re} z$	Real part (of a complex number z)	74A
Im	$\operatorname{Im} z$	Imaginary part (of a complex number z)	74A*
$-$	\bar{z}	Complex conjugate (of a complex number z)	74A
arg	$\arg z$	Argument (of a complex number z)	74C
$[\]$	$[\alpha]$	Gauss symbol (greatest integer not exceeding a real number α)	83A
O	$f(x) = O(g(x))$	Landau's notation ($f(x)/g(x)$ is bounded for $x \rightarrow \alpha$)	87G
o	$f(x) = o(g(x))$	Landau's notation ($f(x)/g(x)$ tends to 0 for $x \rightarrow \alpha$)	87G
\sim	$f(x) \sim g(x)$	Infinite or infinitesimal of the same order (for $x \rightarrow \alpha$)	87G*
D	$D(T)$	Domain (of an operator T)	251A
R	$R(T)$	Range (of an operator T)	251A
supp	$\operatorname{supp} f$	Support (of a function f)	168B(1)
p.v.	$\text{p.v.} \int_a^b f(x) dx$	Cauchy's principal value (of an integral)	216D
Pf	$\operatorname{Pf} \int f(x) dx$	Finite part (of an integral)	125C
δ	$\delta(x), \delta_x$	Dirac's delta function (measure or distribution)	125C*
exp	$\exp x$	Exponential function ($\exp x = e^x$)	113D, 269H
log, Log	$\log x, \operatorname{Log} x$	Natural logarithmic function and its principal value, respectively	131D, G
$\sin x, \cos x, \tan x, \sec x, \operatorname{cosec} x, \cotan x$		Trigonometric functions	131E
$\arcsin x, \arccos x, \arctan x$		Inverse trigonometric functions	131E
$\operatorname{Arcsin} x, \operatorname{Arccos} x, \operatorname{Arctan} x$		Principal value of inverse trigonometric functions	131E

Notation	Example	Definition	Article and Section
$\sinh x, \cosh x, \tanh x$		Hyperbolic functions	131F
$\binom{n}{r}, C$	$\binom{n}{r}, {}_nC_r$	Binomial coefficient, combination	330
P	${}_nP_r$	Permutation	330
$!$	$n!$	Factorial (of n)	330
φ	$\varphi(n)$	Euler function	295C*
μ	$\mu(n)$	Möbius function	295C
ζ	$\zeta(z)$	Riemann zeta function	450B*
J_v	$J_v(z)$	Bessel function of the first kind	39B
Γ	$\Gamma(x)$	Gamma function	174A
B	$B(x, y)$	Beta function	174C
F	$F(\alpha, \beta, \gamma; z)$	Gauss's hypergeometric function	206A
P	$P \left\{ \begin{matrix} a & b & c \\ \lambda & \mu & \nu \\ \lambda' & \mu' & \nu' \end{matrix} \right\} x$	Riemann's P function	253B
Li	$\text{Li}(x)$	Logarithmic integral	167D
XI. Probability			
P, Pr	$P(E), \text{Pr}(e)$	Probability (of an event)	342B*
E	$E(X)$	Mean or expectation (of a random variable X)	342C
V, σ^2	$V(X), \sigma^2(X)$	Variance (of a random variable X)	342C
ρ	$\rho(X, Y)$	Correlation coefficient (of two random variables X and Y)	342C*
$P(|)$	$P(E|F)$	Conditional probability (of an event E under the condition F)	342E
$E(|)$	$E(X|Y)$	Conditional mean (of a random variable X under the condition Y)	342E
N	$N(m, \sigma^2)$	One-dimensional normal distribution (with mean m and variance σ^2)	Appendix A, Table 22
	$N(\boldsymbol{\mu}, \boldsymbol{\Sigma})$	Multidimensional normal distribution (with mean vector $\boldsymbol{\mu}$ and variance matrix $\boldsymbol{\Sigma}$)	Appendix A, Table 22
P	$P(\lambda)$	Poisson distribution (with parameter λ)	Appendix A, Table 22*

Systematic List of Articles

I

Logic and Foundations

1. Foundations of Mathematics	Art. 156
2. Axiom Systems	35
3. Paradoxes	319
4. Symbolic Logic	411
5. Axiomatic Set Theory	33
6. Model Theory	276
7. Nonstandard Analysis	293
8. Gödel Numbers	185
9. Recursive Functions	356
10. Decision Problem	97
11. Constructive Ordinal Numbers	81
12. Analytic Sets	22

II

Sets, General Topology, and Categories

1. Sets	381
2. Relations	358
3. Equivalence Relations	135
4. Functions	165
5. Axiom of Choice and Equivalents	34
6. Cardinal Numbers	49
7. Structures	409
8. Permutations and Combinations	330
9. Numbers	294
10. Real Numbers	355
11. Complex Numbers	74
12. Ordering	311
13. Ordinal Numbers	312
14. Lattices	243
15. Boolean Algebras	42
16. Topological Spaces	425
17. Metric Spaces	273
18. Plane Domains	333
19. Convergence	87
20. Connectedness	79
21. Dimension Theory	117
22. Uniform Spaces	436
23. Uniform Convergence	435
24. Categories and Functors	52
25. Inductive Limits and Projective Limits	210
26. Sheaves	383

III

Algebra

1. Algebra	8
2. Matrices	269
3. Determinants	103
4. Polynomials	337
5. Algebraic Equations	10
6. Fields	149
7. Galois Theory	172
8. Linear Spaces	256
9. Rings	368
10. Associative Algebras	29
11. Commutative Rings	67
12. Noetherian Rings	284
13. Rings of Polynomials	369
14. Rings of Power Series	370

15. Quadratic Forms	Art. 348
16. Clifford Algebras	61
17. Differential Rings	113
18. Witt Vectors	449
19. Valuations	439
20. Adeles and Ideles	6
21. Cayley Algebras	54
22. Jordan Algebras	231
23. Modules	277
24. Homological Algebra	200
25. Hopf Algebras	203
Appendix A, Table 1. Algebraic Equations	

IV

Group Theory

1. Groups	190
2. Abelian Groups	2
3. Free Groups	161
4. Finite Groups	151
5. Classical Groups	60
6. Topological Groups	423
7. Topological Abelian Groups	422
8. Compact Groups	69
9. Lie Groups	249
10. Lie Algebras	248
11. Algebraic Groups	13
12. Homogeneous Spaces	199
13. Symmetric Riemannian Spaces and Real Forms	412
14. Discontinuous Groups	122
15. Crystallographic Groups	92
16. Representations	362
17. Unitary Representations	437
18. Invariants and Covariants	226
Appendix A, Table 5. Lie Algebras, Symmetric Riemannian Spaces, and Singularities	
Appendix B, Table 5. Characters of Finite Groups and Crystallographic Groups	

V

Number Theory

1. Number Theory	296
2. Number Theory, Elementary	297
3. Continued Fractions	83
4. Number-Theoretic Functions	295
5. Additive Number Theory	4
6. Partitions of Numbers	328
7. Distribution of Prime Numbers	123
8. Lattice-Point Problems	242
9. Diophantine Equations	118
10. Geometry of Numbers	182
11. Transcendental Numbers	430
12. Quadratic Fields	347
13. Algebraic Number Fields	14
14. Class Field Theory	59
15. Complex Multiplication	73
16. Fermat's Problem	145
17. Local Fields	257
18. Arithmetic of Associative Algebras	27
19. Zeta Functions	450
Appendix B, Table 1. Prime Numbers and Primitive Roots	
Appendix B, Table 2. Indices Modulo p	

Appendix B, Table 4. Class Numbers of Algebraic Number Fields

VI

Euclidean and Projective Geometry

1. Geometry Art. 181
2. Foundations of Geometry 155
3. Euclidean Geometry 139
4. Euclidean Spaces 140
5. Geometric Construction 179
6. Regular Polyhedra 357
7. π (π) 332
8. Trigonometry 432
9. Conic Sections 78
10. Quadric Surfaces 350
11. Convex Sets 89
12. Vectors 442
13. Coordinates 90
14. Projective Geometry 343
15. Affine Geometry 7
16. Non-Euclidean Geometry 285
17. Conformal Geometry 76
18. Erlangen Program 137
19. Continuous Geometry 85
20. Curves 93
21. Surfaces 410
22. Four-Color Problem 157

Appendix A, Table 2. Trigonometry

Appendix A, Table 3. Vector Analysis and Coordinate Systems

VII

Differential Geometry

1. Differential Geometry 109
2. Differentiable Manifolds 105
3. Riemannian Manifolds 364
4. Connections 80
5. Tensor Calculus 417
6. Geodesics 178
7. Symmetric Spaces 413
8. G-Structures 191
9. Complex Manifolds 72
10. Kähler Manifolds 232
11. Harmonic Integrals 194
12. Differential Geometry of Curves and Surfaces 111
13. Riemannian Submanifolds 365
14. Minimal Submanifolds 275
15. Harmonic Mappings 195
16. Morse Theory 279
17. Differential Geometry in Specific Spaces 110
18. Finsler Spaces 152
19. Integral Geometry 218
20. Siegel Domains 384
21. Spectral Geometry 391
22. Pseudoconformal Geometry 344
23. Global Analysis 183

Appendix A, Table 4. Differential Geometry

VIII

Algebraic Geometry

1. Algebraic Geometry 12
2. Algebraic Curves 9

3. Algebraic Surfaces Art. 15
4. Algebraic Varieties 16
5. Abelian Varieties 3
6. Riemann-Roch Theorems 366

IX

Topology

1. Topology 426
 2. Fundamental Groups 170
 3. Covering Spaces 91
 4. Degree of Mapping 99
 5. Complexes 70
 6. Homology Theory 201
 7. Fixed-Point Theorems 153
 8. Cohomology Operations 64
 9. Homotopy Theory 202
 10. Fiber Spaces 148
 11. Obstructions 305
 12. Topology of Lie Groups and Homogeneous Spaces 427
 13. Fiber Bundles 147
 14. Characteristic Classes 56
 15. K -Theory 237
 16. Knot Theory 235
 17. Combinatorial Manifolds 65
 18. Differential Topology 114
 19. Transformation Groups 431
 20. Theory of Singularities 418
 21. Foliations 154
 22. Dynamical Systems 126
 23. Shape Theory 382
 24. Catastrophe Theory 51
- Appendix A, Table 5. Lie Algebra, Symmetric Riemannian Spaces, and Singularities
- Appendix A, Table 6. Topology
- Appendix A, Table 7. Knot Theory

X

Analysis

1. Analysis 20
2. Continuous Functions 84
3. Inequalities 211
4. Convex Analysis 88
5. Functions of Bounded Variation 166
6. Differential Calculus 106
7. Implicit Functions 208
8. Elementary Functions 131
9. C^∞ -Functions and Quasi-Analytic Functions 58
10. Integral Calculus 216
11. Curvilinear Integrals and Surface Integrals 94
12. Measure Theory 270
13. Integration Theory 221
14. Invariant Measures 225
15. Set Functions 380
16. Length and Area 246
17. Denjoy Integrals 100
18. Series 379
19. Asymptotic Series 30
20. Polynomial Approximation 336
21. Orthogonal Functions 317
22. Fourier Series 159

- 23. Fourier Transform Art. 160
- 24. Harmonic Analysis 192
- 25. Almost Periodic Functions 18
- 26. Laplace Transform 240
- 27. Integral Transforms 220
- 28. Potential Theory 338
- 29. Harmonic Functions and Subharmonic Functions 193
- 30. Dirichlet Problem 120
- 31. Capacity 48
- 32. Calculus of Variations 46
- 33. Plateau's Problem 334
- 34. Isoperimetric Problems 228
- 35. Variational Inequalities 440

Appendix A, Table 8. Inequalities

Appendix A, Table 9. Differential and Integral Calculus

Appendix A, Table 10. Series

Appendix A, Table 11. Fourier Analysis

Appendix A, Table 12. Laplace Transforms and Operational Calculus

Appendix A, Table 20. Systems of Orthogonal Functions

XI

Complex Analysis

- 1. Holomorphic Functions 198
 - 2. Power Series 339
 - 3. Dirichlet Series 121
 - 4. Bounded Functions 43
 - 5. Univalent and Multivalent Functions 438
 - 6. Transcendental Entire Functions 429
 - 7. Meromorphic Functions 272
 - 8. Distribution of Values of Functions of a Complex Variable 124
 - 9. Cluster Sets 62
 - 10. Algebraic Functions 11
 - 11. Algebroidal Functions 17
 - 12. Riemann Surfaces 367
 - 13. Ideal Boundaries 207
 - 14. Conformal Mappings 77
 - 15. Quasiconformal Mappings 352
 - 16. Teichmüller Spaces 416
 - 17. Kleinian Groups 234
 - 18. Extremal Length 143
 - 19. Function-Theoretic Null Sets 169
 - 20. Analytic Functions of Several Complex Variables 21
 - 21. Analytic Spaces 23
 - 22. Automorphic Functions 32
- Appendix A, Table 13. Conformal Mappings

XII

Functional Analysis

- 1. Functional Analysis 162
- 2. Hilbert Spaces 197
- 3. Banach Spaces 37
- 4. Ordered Linear Spaces 310
- 5. Topological Linear Spaces 424
- 6. Function Spaces 168
- 7. Distributions and Hyperfunctions 125
- 8. Vector-Valued Integrals 443
- 9. Linear Operators 251

- 10. Compact and Nuclear Operators Art. 68
- 11. Interpolation of Operators 224
- 12. Spectral Analysis of Operators 390
- 13. Perturbation of Linear Operators 331
- 14. Semigroups of Operators and Evolution Equations 378
- 15. Differential Operators 112
- 16. Microlocal Analysis 274
- 17. Banach Algebras 36
- 18. Function Algebras 164
- 19. Operator Algebras 308
- 20. Operational Calculus 306
- 21. Nonlinear Functional Analysis 286

XIII

Differential, Integral, and Functional Equations

- 1. Differential Equations 107
- 2. Ordinary Differential Equations 313
- 3. Ordinary Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems) 316
- 4. Ordinary Differential Equations (Boundary Value Problems) 315
- 5. Ordinary Differential Equations (Asymptotic Behavior of Solutions) 314
- 6. Linear Ordinary Differential Equations 252
- 7. Linear Ordinary Differential Equations (Local Theory) 254
- 8. Linear Ordinary Differential Equations (Global Theory) 253
- 9. Nonlinear Ordinary Differential Equations (Local Theory) 289
- 10. Nonlinear Ordinary Differential Equations (Global Theory) 288
- 11. Nonlinear Oscillation 290
- 12. Nonlinear Problems 291
- 13. Stability 394
- 14. Integral Invariants 219
- 15. Difference Equations 104
- 16. Functional-Differential Equations 163
- 17. Total Differential Equations 428
- 18. Contact Transformations 82
- 19. Partial Differential Equations 320
- 20. Partial Differential Equations (Methods of Integration) 322
- 21. Partial Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems) 321
- 22. Partial Differential Equations of First Order 324
- 23. Monge-Ampère Equations 278
- 24. Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type 323
- 25. Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type 325
- 26. Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type 327
- 27. Partial Differential Equations of Mixed Type 326
- 28. Green's Functions 188
- 29. Green's Operators 189
- 30. Integral Equations 217
- 31. Integrodifferential Equations 222
- 32. Special Functional Equations 388
- 33. Pseudodifferential Operators 345

Appendix A, Table 14. Ordinary Differential Equations

Appendix A, Table 15. Total and Partial Differential Equations

XIV

Special Functions

1. Special Functions Art. 389
2. Generating Functions 177
3. Elliptic Functions 134
4. Gamma Function 174
5. Hypergeometric Functions 206
6. Spherical Functions 393
7. Functions of Confluent Type 167
8. Bessel Functions 39
9. Ellipsoidal Harmonics 133
10. Mathieu Functions 268

Appendix A, Table 16. Elliptic Integrals and Elliptic Functions

Appendix A, Table 17. Gamma Function and Related Functions

Appendix A, Table 18. Hypergeometric Functions and Spherical Functions

Appendix A, Table 19. Functions of Confluent Type and Bessel Functions

Appendix B, Table 3. Bernoulli Numbers and Euler Numbers

XV

Numerical Analysis

1. Numerical Methods 300
 2. Interpolation 223
 3. Error Analysis 138
 4. Numerical Solution of Linear Equations 302
 5. Numerical Solution of Algebraic Equations 301
 6. Numerical Computation of Eigenvalues 298
 7. Numerical Integration 299
 8. Numerical Solution of Ordinary Differential Equations 303
 9. Numerical Solution of Partial Differential Equations 304
 10. Analog Computation 19
 11. Evaluation of Functions 142
- Appendix A, Table 21. Interpolation
- Appendix B, Table 6. Miscellaneous Constants

XVI

Computer Science and Combinatorics

1. Automata 31
2. Computers 75
3. Coding Theory 63
4. Cybernetics 95
5. Random Numbers 354
6. Simulation 385
7. Data Processing 96
8. Mathematical Models in Biology 263
9. Complexity of Computations 71
10. Combinatorics 66
11. Latin Squares 241
12. Graph Theory 186

XVII

Probability Theory

1. Probability Theory Art. 342
2. Probability Measures 341
3. Limit Theorems in Probability Theory 250
4. Stochastic Processes 407
5. Markov Processes 261
6. Markov Chains 260
7. Brownian Motion 45
8. Diffusion Processes 115
9. Additive Processes 5
10. Branching Processes 44
11. Martingales 262
12. Stationary Processes 395
13. Gaussian Processes 176
14. Stochastic Differential Equations 406
15. Ergodic Theory 136
16. Stochastic Control and Stochastic Filtering 405
17. Probabilistic Methods in Statistical Mechanics 340

XVIII

Statistics

1. Statistical Data Analysis 397
 2. Statistical Inference 401
 3. Statistic 396
 4. Sampling Distributions 374
 5. Statistical Models 403
 6. Statistical Decision Functions 398
 7. Statistical Estimation 399
 8. Statistical Hypothesis Testing 400
 9. Multivariate Analysis 280
 10. Robust and Nonparametric Methods 371
 11. Time Series Analysis 421
 12. Design of Experiments 102
 13. Sample Survey 373
 14. Statistical Quality Control 404
 15. Econometrics 128
 16. Biometrics 40
 17. Psychometrics 346
 18. Insurance Mathematics 214
- Appendix A, Table 22. Distribution of Typical Random Variables
- Appendix A, Table 23. Statistical Estimation and Statistical Hypothesis Testing

XIX

Mathematical Programming and Operations Research

1. Mathematical Programming 264
2. Linear Programming 255
3. Quadratic Programming 349
4. Nonlinear Programming 292
5. Network Flow Problems 281
6. Integer Programming 215
7. Stochastic Programming 408
8. Dynamic Programming 127
9. Game Theory 173
10. Differential Games 108
11. Control Theory 86

- 12. Information Theory Art. 213
- 13. Operations Research 307
- 14. Inventory Control 227
- 15. Scheduling and Production Planning
376

XX**Mechanics and Theoretical Physics**

- 1. Systems of Units 414
- 2. Dimensional Analysis 116
- 3. Variational Principles 441
- 4. Mechanics 271
- 5. Spherical Astronomy 392
- 6. Celestial Mechanics 55
- 7. Orbit Determination 309
- 8. Three-Body Problem 420
- 9. Hydrodynamics 205
- 10. Hydrodynamical Equations 204
- 11. Magnetohydrodynamics 259
- 12. Turbulence and Chaos 433
- 13. Wave Propagation 446
- 14. Oscillations 318
- 15. Geometric Optics 180
- 16. Electromagnetism 130
- 17. Networks 282
- 18. Thermodynamics 419
- 19. Statistical Mechanics 402
- 20. Boltzmann Equation 41
- 21. Relativity 359
- 22. Unified Field Theory 434
- 23. Quantum Mechanics 351
- 24. Lorentz Group 258
- 25. Racah Algebra 353
- 26. Scattering Theory 375
- 27. Second Quantization 377
- 28. Field Theory 150
- 29. S-Matrices 386
- 30. Feynman Integrals 146
- 31. Elementary Particles 132
- 32. Renormalization Group 361
- 33. Nonlinear Lattice Dynamics 287
- 34. Solitons 387
- 35. Approximation Methods in Physics
25
- 36. Inequalities in Physics 212

XXI**History of Mathematics**

- 1. Ancient Mathematics 24
- 2. Greek Mathematics 187
- 3. Roman and Medieval Mathematics
372
- 4. Arab Mathematics 26
- 5. Indian Mathematics 209
- 6. Chinese Mathematics 57
- 7. Japanese Mathematics (Wasan) 230
- 8. Renaissance Mathematics 360
- 9. Mathematics in the 17th Century 265
- 10. Mathematics in the 18th Century 266
- 11. Mathematics in the 19th Century 267
- 12. Abel, Niels Henrik 1
- 13. Artin, Emil 28

- 14. Bernoulli Family Art. 38
- 15. Cantor, Georg 47
- 16. Cartan, Elie 50
- 17. Cauchy, Augustin Louis 53
- 18. Dedekind, Julius Wilhelm Richard 98
- 19. Descartes, René 101
- 20. Dirichlet, Peter Gustav Lejeune 119
- 21. Einstein, Albert 129
- 22. Euler, Leonhard 141
- 23. Fermat, Pierre de 144
- 24. Fourier, Jean Baptiste Joseph 158
- 25. Galois, Evariste 171
- 26. Gauss, Carl Friedrich 175
- 27. Gödel, Kurt 184
- 28. Hilbert, David 196
- 29. Jacobi, Carl Gustav Jacob 229
- 30. Klein, Felix 233
- 31. Kronecker, Leopold 236
- 32. Lagrange, Joseph Louis 238
- 33. Laplace, Pierre Simon 239
- 34. Lebesgue, Henri Léon 244
- 35. Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm 245
- 36. Lie, Marius Sophus 247
- 37. Newton, Isaac 283
- 38. Pascal, Blaise 329
- 39. Poincaré, Henri 335
- 40. Riemann, Georg Friedrich Bernhard
363
- 41. Takagi, Teiji 415
- 42. Viète, François 444
- 43. Von Neumann, John 445
- 44. Weierstrass, Karl 447
- 45. Weyl, Hermann 448

Alphabetical List of Articles

1. Abel, Niels Henrik
2. Abelian Groups
3. Abelian Varieties
4. Additive Number Theory
5. Additive Processes
6. Adeles and Ideles
7. Affine Geometry
8. Algebra
9. Algebraic Curves
10. Algebraic Equations
11. Algebraic Functions
12. Algebraic Geometry
13. Algebraic Groups
14. Algebraic Number Fields
15. Algebraic Surfaces
16. Algebraic Varieties
17. Algebroidal Functions
18. Almost Periodic Functions
19. Analog Computation
20. Analysis
21. Analytic Functions of Several Complex Variables
22. Analytic Sets
23. Analytic Spaces
24. Ancient Mathematics
25. Approximation Methods in Physics
26. Arab Mathematics
27. Arithmetic of Associative Algebras
28. Artin, Emil
29. Associative Algebras
30. Asymptotic Series
31. Automata
32. Automorphic Functions
33. Axiomatic Set Theory
34. Axiom of Choice and Equivalents
35. Axiom Systems
36. Banach Algebras
37. Banach Spaces
38. Bernoulli Family
39. Bessel Functions
40. Biometrics
41. Boltzmann Equation
42. Boolean Algebras
43. Bounded Functions
44. Branching Processes
45. Brownian Motion
46. Calculus of Variations
47. Cantor, Georg
48. Capacity
49. Cardinal Numbers
50. Cartan, Elie
51. Catastrophe Theory
52. Categories and Functors
53. Cauchy, Augustin Louis
54. Cayley Algebras
55. Celestial Mechanics
56. Characteristic Classes
57. Chinese Mathematics
58. C^∞ -Functions and Quasi-Analytic Functions
59. Class Field Theory
60. Classical Groups
61. Clifford Algebras
62. Cluster Sets
63. Coding Theory
64. Cohomology Operations
65. Combinatorial Manifolds
66. Combinatorics
67. Commutative Rings
68. Compact and Nuclear Operators
69. Compact Groups
70. Complexes
71. Complexity of Computations
72. Complex Manifolds
73. Complex Multiplication
74. Complex Numbers
75. Computers
76. Conformal Geometry
77. Conformal Mappings
78. Conic Sections
79. Connectedness
80. Connections
81. Constructive Ordinal Numbers
82. Contact Transformations
83. Continued Fractions
84. Continuous Functions
85. Continuous Geometry
86. Control Theory
87. Convergence
88. Convex Analysis
89. Convex Sets
90. Coordinates
91. Covering Spaces
92. Crystallographic Groups
93. Curves
94. Curvilinear Integrals and Surface Integrals
95. Cybernetics
96. Data Processing
97. Decision Problem
98. Dedekind, Julius Wilhelm Richard
99. Degree of Mapping
100. Denjoy Integrals
101. Descartes, René
102. Design of Experiments
103. Determinants
104. Difference Equations
105. Differentiable Manifolds
106. Differential Calculus
107. Differential Equations
108. Differential Games
109. Differential Geometry
110. Differential Geometry in Specific Spaces
111. Differential Geometry of Curves and Surfaces
112. Differential Operators
113. Differential Rings
114. Differential Topology
115. Diffusion Processes
116. Dimensional Analysis

117. Dimensional Theory
118. Diophantine Equations
119. Dirichlet, Peter Gustav Lejeune
120. Dirichlet Problem
121. Dirichlet Series
122. Discontinuous Groups
123. Distribution of Prime Numbers
124. Distribution of Values of Functions of a Complex Variable
125. Distributions and Hyperfunctions
126. Dynamical Systems
127. Dynamic Programming
128. Econometrics
129. Einstein, Albert
130. Electromagnetism
131. Elementary Functions
132. Elementary Particles
133. Ellipsoidal Harmonics
134. Elliptic Functions
135. Equivalence Relations
136. Ergodic Theory
137. Erlangen Program
138. Error Analysis
139. Euclidean Geometry
140. Euclidean Spaces
141. Euler, Leonhard
142. Evaluation of Functions
143. Extremal Length
144. Fermat, Pierre de
145. Fermat's Problem
146. Feynman Integrals
147. Fiber Bundles
148. Fiber Spaces
149. Fields
150. Field Theory
151. Finite Groups
152. Finsler Spaces
153. Fixed-Point Theorems
154. Foliations
155. Foundations of Geometry
156. Foundations of Mathematics
157. Four-Color Problem
158. Fourier, Jean Baptiste Joseph
159. Fourier Series
160. Fourier Transform
161. Free Groups
162. Functional Analysis
163. Functional-Differential Equations
164. Function Algebras
165. Functions
166. Functions of Bounded Variation
167. Functions of Confluent Type
168. Function Spaces
169. Function-Theoretic Null Sets
170. Fundamental Groups
171. Galois, Evariste
172. Galois Theory
173. Game Theory
174. Gamma Function
175. Gauss, Carl Friedrich
176. Gaussian Processes
177. Generating Functions
178. Geodesics
179. Geometric Construction
180. Geometric Optics
181. Geometry
182. Geometry of Numbers
183. Global Analysis
184. Gödel, Kurt
185. Gödel Numbers
186. Graph Theory
187. Greek Mathematics
188. Green's Functions
189. Green's Operator
190. Groups
191. G-Structures
192. Harmonic Analysis
193. Harmonic Functions and Subharmonic Functions
194. Harmonic Integrals
195. Harmonic Mappings
196. Hilbert, David
197. Hilbert Spaces
198. Holomorphic Functions
199. Homogeneous Spaces
200. Homological Algebra
201. Homology Theory
202. Homotopy Theory
203. Hopf Algebras
204. Hydrodynamical Equations
205. Hydrodynamics
206. Hypergeometric Functions
207. Ideal Boundaries
208. Implicit Functions
209. Indian Mathematics
210. Inductive Limits and Projective Limits
211. Inequalities
212. Inequalities in Physics
213. Information Theory
214. Insurance Mathematics
215. Integer Programming
216. Integral Calculus
217. Integral Equations
218. Integral Geometry
219. Integral Invariants
220. Integral Transforms
221. Integration Theory
222. Integrodifferential Equations
223. Interpolation
224. Interpolation of Operators
225. Invariant Measures
226. Invariants and Covariants
227. Inventory Control
228. Isoperimetric Problems
229. Jacobi, Carl Gustav Jacob
230. Japanese Mathematics (Wasan)
231. Jordan Algebras
232. Kähler Manifolds
233. Klein, Felix
234. Kleinian Groups
235. Knot Theory
236. Kronecker, Leopold

237. *K*-Theory
238. Lagrange, Joseph Louis
239. Laplace, Pierre Simon
240. Laplace Transform
241. Latin Squares
242. Lattice-Point Problems
243. Lattices
244. Lebesgue, Henri Léon
245. Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm
246. Length and Area
247. Lie, Marius Sophus
248. Lie Algebras
249. Lie Groups
250. Limit Theorems in Probability Theory
251. Linear Operators
252. Linear Ordinary Differential Equations
253. Linear Ordinary Differential Equations (Global Theory)
254. Linear Ordinary Differential Equations (Local Theory)
255. Linear Programming
256. Linear Spaces
257. Local Fields
258. Lorentz Group
259. Magnetohydrodynamics
260. Markov Chains
261. Markov Processes
262. Martingales
263. Mathematical Models in Biology
264. Mathematical Programming
265. Mathematics in the 17th Century
266. Mathematics in the 18th Century
267. Mathematics in the 19th Century
268. Mathieu Functions
269. Matrices
270. Measure Theory
271. Mechanics
272. Meromorphic Functions
273. Metric Spaces
274. Microlocal Analysis
275. Minimal Submanifolds
276. Model Theory
277. Modules
278. Monge-Ampère Equations
279. Morse Theory
280. Multivariate Analysis
281. Network Flow Problems
282. Networks
283. Newton, Isaac
284. Noetherian Rings
285. Non-Euclidean Geometry
286. Nonlinear Functional Analysis
287. Nonlinear Lattice Dynamics
288. Nonlinear Ordinary Differential Equations (Global Theory)
289. Nonlinear Ordinary Differential Equations (Local Theory)
290. Nonlinear Oscillation
291. Nonlinear Problems
292. Nonlinear Programming
293. Nonstandard Analysis
294. Numbers
295. Number-Theoretic Functions
296. Number Theory
297. Number Theory, Elementary
298. Numerical Computation of Eigenvalues
299. Numerical Integration
300. Numerical Methods
301. Numerical Solution of Algebraic Equations
302. Numerical Solution of Linear Equations
303. Numerical Solution of Ordinary Differential Equations
304. Numerical Solution of Partial Differential Equations
305. Obstructions
306. Operational Calculus
307. Operations Research
308. Operator Algebras
309. Orbit Determination
310. Ordered Linear Spaces
311. Ordering
312. Ordinal Numbers
313. Ordinary Differential Equations
314. Ordinary Differential Equations (Asymptotic Behavior of Solutions)
315. Ordinary Differential Equations (Boundary Value Problems)
316. Ordinary Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems)
317. Orthogonal Functions
318. Oscillations
319. Paradoxes
320. Partial Differential Equations
321. Partial Differential Equations (Initial Value Problems)
322. Partial Differential Equations (Methods of Integration)
323. Partial Differential Equations of Elliptic Type
324. Partial Differential Equations of First Order
325. Partial Differential Equations of Hyperbolic Type
326. Partial Differential Equations of Mixed Type
327. Partial Differential Equations of Parabolic Type
328. Partitions of Numbers
329. Pascal, Blaise
330. Permutations and Combinations
331. Perturbation of Linear Operators
332. Pi (π)
333. Plane Domains
334. Plateau's Problem
335. Poincaré, Henri
336. Polynomial Approximation
337. Polynomials
338. Potential Theory
339. Power Series
340. Probabilistic Methods in Statistical Mechanics
341. Probability Measures
342. Probability Theory
343. Projective Geometry
344. Pseudoconformal Geometry

345. Pseudodifferential Operators
346. Psychometrics
347. Quadratic Fields
348. Quadratic Forms
349. Quadratic Programming
350. Quadric Surfaces
351. Quantum Mechanics
352. Quasiconformal Mappings
353. Racah Algebra
354. Random Numbers
355. Real Numbers
356. Recursive Functions
357. Regular Polyhedra
358. Relations
359. Relativity
360. Renaissance Mathematics
361. Renormalization Group
362. Representations
363. Riemann, Georg Friedrich Bernhard
364. Riemannian Manifolds
365. Riemannian Submanifolds
366. Riemann-Roch Theorems
367. Riemann Surfaces
368. Rings
369. Rings of Polynomials
370. Rings of Power Series
371. Robust and Nonparametric Methods
372. Roman and Medieval Mathematics
373. Sample Survey
374. Sampling Distributions
375. Scattering Theory
376. Scheduling and Production Planning
377. Second Quantization
378. Semigroups of Operators and Evolution Equations
379. Series
380. Set Functions
381. Sets
382. Shape Theory
383. Sheaves
384. Siegel Domains
385. Simulation
386. S-Matrices
387. Solitons
388. Special Functional Equations
389. Special Functions
390. Spectral Analysis of Operators
391. Spectral Geometry
392. Spherical Astronomy
393. Spherical Functions
394. Stability
395. Stationary Processes
396. Statistic
397. Statistical Data Analysis
398. Statistical Decision Functions
399. Statistical Estimation
400. Statistical Hypothesis Testing
401. Statistical Inference
402. Statistical Mechanics
403. Statistical Models
404. Statistical Quality Control
405. Stochastic Control and Stochastic Filtering
406. Stochastic Differential Equations
407. Stochastic Processes
408. Stochastic Programming
409. Structures
410. Surfaces
411. Symbolic Logic
412. Symmetric Riemannian Spaces and Real Forms
413. Symmetric Spaces
414. Systems of Units
415. Takagi, Teiji
416. Teichmüller Spaces
417. Tensor Calculus
418. Theory of Singularities
419. Thermodynamics
420. Three-Body Problem
421. Time Series Analysis
422. Topological Abelian Groups
423. Topological Groups
424. Topological Linear Spaces
425. Topological Spaces
426. Topology
427. Topology of Lie Groups and Homogeneous Spaces
428. Total Differential Equations
429. Transcendental Entire Functions
430. Transcendental Numbers
431. Transformation Groups
432. Trigonometry
433. Turbulence and Chaos
434. Unified Field Theory
435. Uniform Convergence
436. S-Matrices.
437. Unitary Representations
438. Univalent and Multivalent Functions
439. Valuations
440. Variational Inequalities
441. Variational Principles
442. Vectors
443. Vector-Valued Integrals
444. Viète, François
445. Von Neumann, John
446. Wave Propagation
447. Weierstrass, Karl
448. Weyl, Hermann
449. Witt Vectors
450. Zeta Functions

Contributors to the Second Edition

Abe Eiichi
Akahira Masafumi
Akaike Hirotugu
Akaza Touru
Amari Shun-ichi
Ando Tsuyoshi
Araki Huzihiro
Araki Shôrô
Arimoto Suguru
Asai Akira
Fujiï'e Tatuo
Fujiki Akira
Fujisaki Genjiro
Fujita Hiroshi
Fujiwara Daisuke
Fujiwara Masahiko
Fukushima Masatoshi
Furuya Shigeru
Hamada Yûsaku
Hasumi Morisuke
Hattori Akio
Hayashi Kiyoshi
Hida Takeyuki
Hijikata Hiroaki
Hirose Ken
Hitotumatu Sin
Huzii Mituaki
Ibaraki Toshihide
Ihara Shin-ichiro
Iitaka Shigeru
Ikawa Mitsuru
Ikebe Teruo
Ikebe Yasuhiko
Ikeda Nobuyuki
Inagaki Nobuo
Inoue Atsushi
Iri Masao
Itaya Nobutoshi
Itô Kiyosi
Itô Seizô
Ito Yuji
Itoh Mitsuhiro
Iwahori Nobuyoshi
Iyanaga Shôkichi
Kadoya Norihiko
Kageyama Sampei
Kamae Teturo
Kancko Akira
Kaneyuki Soji
Kasahara Kôji
Kataoka Shinji
Kato Junji
Kato Mitsuyoshi
Kawai Takahiro
Kawasaki Tetsuro
Kimura Tosihusa
Kishi Masanori

Kobayashi Shoshichi
Kodama Yukihiro
Komatsu Hikosaburo
Kômura Yukio
Kondo Takeshi
Konishi Yoshio
Konno Hiroshi
Kotani Shinichi
Kubota Yoshihisa
Kumano-go Hajime
Kunita Hiroshi
Kuramoto Yuki
Kuroda Shige-Toshi
Kuroda Tadashi
Kusama Tokitake
Kusano Takaši
Kusunoki Yukio
Mabuchi Toshiki
Maeda Shûichiro
Maeda Yoshiaki
Maehara Shôji
Makabe Hajime
Maruyama Masaki
Matsumoto Kikuji
Matsumoto Yukio
Matsumura Mutsuhide
Mitsui Takayoshi
Mizohata Sigeru
Mizutani Tadayoshi
Mori Masatake
Morimoto Akihiko
Morimura Hidenori
Morita Shigeyuki
Morita Yasuo
Motohashi Nobuyoshi
Murasugi Kunio
Nagami Keio
Nagata Masayoshi
Nakagawa Hisao
Nakamura Tokushi
Nakaoka Minoru
Namba Kanji
Namba Makoto
Namikawa Yukihiro
Naruki Isao
Niïro Fumio
Nishikawa Seiki
Nishimura Junichi
Nishitani Kensaku
Nisio Makiko
Noguchi Hiroshi
Nozaki Akihiro
Ôaku Toshinori
Obata Morio
Ochiai Takushiro
Ogiue Koichi
Ohta Masami
Ohya Yujiro
Oikawa Kôtarô
Oka Mutsuo
Okabe Yasunori

Okuno Tadakazu
 Omori Hideki
 Oshima Toshio
 Ozawa Mitsuru
 Saito Kyoji
 Saito Masahiko
 Saito Tosiya
 Sakai Fumio
 Sakawa Yoshiyuki
 Sato Fumitaka
 Sato Ken-iti
 Sawashima Ikuko
 Shibata Katsuyuki
 Shibata Keiichi
 Shiga Koji
 Shiga Tokuzo
 Shikata Yoshihiro
 Shimada Nobuo
 Shimakura Norio
 Shimizu Ryoichi
 Shioda Tetsuji
 Shiohama Katsuhiko
 Shiraiwa Kenichi
 Shiratani Katsumi
 Sibuya Masaaki
 Sugie Toru
 Sugiura Mitsuo
 Sugiura Shigeaki
 Suita Nobuyuki
 Sumihiro Hideyasu
 Suzuki Masuo
 Suzuki Mitsuo
 Takahashi Tsuneo
 Takakuwa Shoichiro
 Takami Hideo
 Takasu Toru
 Takeuchi Kei
 Takeuchi Masaru
 Takeuti Gaishi
 Tamura Itiro
 Tanabe Kunio
 Tanaka Hiroshi
 Tanaka Masatsugu
 Tanaka Shunichi
 Tanno Shukichi
 Tatsumi Tomomasa
 Terada Toshiaki
 Toda Hideo
 Toda Hiroshi
 Toda Morikazu
 Toda Nobushige
 Tomiyama Jun
 Totoki Haruo
 Tugé Tosiya
 Uchida Fuichi
 Uchiyama Saburô
 Ueno Kenji
 Ukai Seiji
 Ura Shoji
 Ushijima Teruo
 Wakabayashi Isao

Washizu Kyuichiro
 Watanabe Kimio
 Watanabe Shinzo
 Watanabe Takesi
 Yamaguchi Masaya
 Yamamoto Koichi
 Yamamoto Sumiyasu
 Yamamoto Tetsuro
 Yamazaki Masao
 Yamazaki Tadashi
 Yanagawa Takashi
 Yanagiwara Hiroshi
 Yanai Haruo
 Yano Tamaki
 Yokonuma Takeo
 Yoshikawa Atsushi
 Yoshida Junzo
 Yosida Kôzaku

Contributors to the First Edition

Aizawa Sadakazu
Akao Kazuo
Akizuki Yasuo
Amemiya Ayao
Anzai Hirotada
Aoki Kiyoshi
Araki Huzihiro
Araki Shôrô
Arima Akito
Asaka Tetsuichi
Asano Keizo
Asatani Teruo
Azumaya Gorô
Fujinaka Megumu
Fujita Hiroshi
Fujiwara Daisuke
Fukuda Takeo
Fukutomi Setsuo
Furuya Shigeru
Goto Morikuni
Gotô Motinori
Gotô Yûzo
Hagihara Yusuke
Harada Manabu
Hasimoto Hidenori
Hattori Akio
Hattori Akira
Hayashi Chikio
Hayashi Keiichi
Hayashi Tsuyoshi
Hida Takeyuki
Hidaka Koji
Hirakawa Junkô
Hirano Tomoharu
Hirasawa Yoshikazu
Hirayama Akira
Hirose Ken
Hisatake Masao
Hitotumatu Sin
Hokari Shisanji
Homma Kiyomi
Homma Tatsuo
Honbu Hitoshi
Hong Imsik
Hosokawa Fujitsugu
Hukuhara Masuo
Husimi Kozi
Huzii Mituaki
Ichida Asajiro
Ihara Shin-ichiro
Ihara Yasutaka
Iitaka Shigeru
Ikawa Mitsuru
Ikeda Mineo
Ikeda Nobuyuki
Ikehara Shikao
Imai Isao

Inaba Eiji
Inagaki Takeshi
Inoue Masao
Inui Teturo
Iri Masao
Irie Shoji
Ise Mikio
Iseki Kaneshiroo
Ishida Yasushi
Ishii Goro
Isizu Takehiko
Itô Juniti
Itô Kiyosi
Itô Noboru
Itô Seizô
Itô Teiiti
Ito Tsutomu
Itoh Makoto
Iwahashi Ryôsuke
Iwahori Nagayoshi
Iwamura Tsurane
Iwano Masahiro
Iwasawa Kenkichi
Iwata Giiti
Iyanaga Shôkichi
Izumi Shin-ichi
Kaburaki Masaki
Kamae Keiko
Kametani Shunji
Kanbe Tsunekazu
Kanitani Jôyô
Kasahara Koji
Katase Kiyoshi
Kato Tosio
Katuura Sutezo
Kawada Yukiyo
Kawaguchi Akitsugu
Kawai Saburo
Kawakami Riiti
Kawata Tatuo
Kihara Taro
Kimura Motoo
Kimura Tosihusa
Kinoshita Shin'ichi
Kitagawa Toshio
Kiyasu Zen'ichi
Koba Ziro
Kobayashi Mikio
Kobori Akira
Koda Akira
Kodaira Kuniyuko
Koga Yukiyo
Komatsu Hikosaburo
Komatsu Atuo
Komatsu Yûsaku
Kondo Jiro
Kondo Kazuo
Kondô Motokiti
Kondô Ryôji
Kondo Takeshi
Kondo Yôitsu

Kôta Osamu
 Kotake Takesi
 Kotani Masao
 Kozai Yoshihide
 Kubo Izumi
 Kubo Ryogo
 Kubota Tadahiko
 Kudo Akio
 Kudô Hirokichi
 Kudo Tatsuji
 Kuga Michio
 Kunisawa Kiyonori
 Kunita Hiroshi
 Kunugi Kinjiro
 Kuranishi Masatake
 Kuroda Shige-Toshi
 Kuroda Sigekatsu
 Kuroda Sige-Nobu
 Kusama Tokitake
 Kusano Takasi
 Kusunoki Yukio
 Maehara Shôji
 Maruyama Gisiro
 Mashio Shinji
 Masuda Kyûya
 Masuyama Motosaburo
 Matsukuma Ryozaï
 Matsumoto Kikuji
 Matsumoto Makoto
 Matsumoto Toshizô
 Matsumura Hideyuki
 Matsumura Mutsuhide
 Matsushima Yozo
 Matsuyama Noboru
 Matuda Tizuko
 Matusita Kameo
 Matuzaka Kazuo
 Mikami Masao
 Mimura Yukio
 Minagawa Takizo
 Mita Hiroo
 Mitome Michio
 Mitsui Takayoshi
 Miyake Kazuo
 Miyasawa Koichi
 Miyashita Totaro
 Miyazawa Hironari
 Miyazima Tatuoki
 Mizohata Sigeru
 Mizuno Katsuhiko
 Mogi Isamu
 Mori Shigeo
 Moriguti Sigeiti
 Morimoto Haruki
 Morimoto Seigo
 Morimura Hidenori
 Morishima Taro
 Morita Kiiti
 Morita Yuzo
 Moriya Mikao
 Moriya Tomijiro

Motohashi Nobuyoshi
 Motoo Minoru
 Murakami Shingo
 Muramatsu Tosinobu
 Murata Tamotsu
 Nabeya Seiji
 Nagano Tadashi
 Nagao Hiroshi
 Nagashima Takashi
 Nagata Jun-iti
 Nagata Masayoshi
 Nagumo Mitio
 Nakai Mitsuru
 Nakai Yoshikazu
 Nakamori Kanji
 Nakamura Koshiro
 Nakamura Masahiro
 Nakamura Tokushi
 Nakanishi Shizu
 Nakano Shigeo
 Nakaoka Minoru
 Nakayama Tadasi
 Nakayama Takashi
 Namikawa Yukihiko
 Nanba Kanji
 Narita Masao
 Narumi Seimatsu
 Niino Fumio
 Nikaido Hukukane
 Nishi Mico
 Nishimura Toshio
 Noguchi Hiroshi
 Nomizu Katsumi
 Nomoto Hisao
 Nomura Yukichi
 Nonaka Toshio
 Noshiro Kiyoshi
 Nozaki Akihiro
 Nozaki Yasuo
 Ochiai Kiichiro
 Ogasawara Tôjirô
 Ogawa Junjiro
 Ogawara Masami
 Ogino Shusaku
 Ôhasi Saburo
 Ohtsuka Makoto
 Oikawa Kotaro
 Ôishi Kiyoshi
 Oka Syoten
 Okamoto Kiyosato
 Okamoto Masashi
 Okubo Kenjiro
 Okubo Tanjiro
 Okugawa Kôtarô
 Ônari Setsuo
 Ono Akimasa
 Ono Katuzi
 Ono Shigeru
 Ono Takashi
 Onoyama Takuji
 Oshida Isao

Oshima Nobunori
 Osima Masaru
 Otsuki Tominosuke
 Ozaki Shigeo
 Ozawa Mitsuru
 Ozeki Hideki
 Saito Kinichiro
 Saito Tosiya
 Saito Yoshihiro
 Sakai Eiichi
 Sakai Takuzo
 Sakamoto Heihachi
 Sakata Shôichi
 Sasaki Shigeo
 Satake Ichiro
 Sato Ken-iti
 Sato Ryoichiro
 Sato Tokui
 Sato Yumiko
 Sawashima Ikuko
 Seimiya Toshio
 Seki Setsuya
 Shibagaki Wasao
 Shiga Kôji
 Shimada Nobuo
 Shimizu Hideo
 Shimizu Tatsujiro
 Shimura Goro
 Shintani Takuro
 Shizuma Ryoji
 Shoda Kenjiro
 Shono Shigekata
 Sibuya Masaaki
 Simauti Takakazu
 Sirao Tunekiti
 Sucoka Seiichi
 Suetuna Zyoiti
 Sugawara Masahiro
 Sugawara Masao
 Sugiura Mitsuo
 Sugiura Nariaki
 Sugiyama Shohei
 Suita Nobuyuki
 Sumitomo Takeshi
 Sunouchi Genichiro
 Suzuki Michio
 Suzuki Yoshindo
 Takada Masaru
 Takagi Teiji
 Takagi Yutaka
 Takahashi Hidetoshi
 Takahashi Tsunero
 Takenouchi Osamu
 Takenouchi Tadao
 Takeuchi Kei
 Takeuti Gaisi
 Takizawa Seizi
 Tamagawa Tsuneo
 Tamura Itiro
 Tamura Jirô
 Tanaka Chuji

Tanaka Hiroshi
 Tanaka Hisao
 Tanaka Minoru
 Tanaka Sen-ichiro
 Tannaka Tadao
 Tatsumi Tomomasa
 Tatuzawa Tikao
 Terasaka Hidetaka
 Toda Hideo
 Toda Hiroshi
 Toda Morikazu
 Tôki Yukinari
 Tomotika Susumu
 Totoki Haruo
 Toyama Hiraku
 Tsuboi Chuji
 Tsuchikura Tamotsu
 Tsuji Masatsugu
 Tsujioka Kunio
 Tsukamoto Yôtarô
 Tsuzuku Toshio
 Tugué Tosiyuki
 Tumura Yosiro
 Uchiyama Saburo
 Uchiyama Tatsuo
 Udagawa Masatomô
 Ueno Kenji
 Ueno Tadashi
 Ugaeri Tadashi
 Umegaki Hisaharu
 Umezawa Hiroomi
 Umezawa Toshio
 Uno Toshio
 Ura Shoji
 Ura Taro
 Urabe Minoru
 Wada Yasaku
 Washimi Shinichi
 Washio Yasutoshi
 Washizu Kyuichiro
 Watanabe Hiroshi
 Watanabe Hisao
 Watanabe Masaru
 Watanabe Shinzo
 Yamada Isamu
 Yamaguti Masaya
 Yamamoto Koichi
 Yamanaka Takesi
 Yamanoshita Tsuneyo
 Yamanouti Takahiko
 Yamashita Hideo
 Yamauti Ziro
 Yamazaki Keijiro
 Yanagihara Kichiji
 Yano Kentaro
 Yano Shigeki
 Yoneda Nobuo
 Yoshizawa Hisaaki
 Yosida Kôsaku
 Yosida Setuzô
 Yosida Yôiti

Translators (for the First Edition)

Adachi Masahisa
Aizawa Sadakazu
Akizuki Yasuo
Akô Kiyoshi
Araki Shôrô
Arima Akito
Asano Keizo
Azumaya Goro
Chiba Katsuhiko
Fujisawa Takehisa
Fujita Hiroshi
Fukada Ichiro
Fukuyama Masaru
Furuya Shigeru
Hashimoto Yasuko
Hasimoto Hidenori
Hasumi Morisuke
Hattori Akio
Hattori Akira
Hayashi Kazumichi
Hida Takeyuki
Hinata Shigeru
Hirasawa Yoshikazu
Hirose Ken
Hitotumatu Sin
Honda Taira
Hong Imsik
Hosoi Tsutomu
Hukuhara Masuo
Ihara Shin-ichiro
Ihara Yasutaka
Ikeda Mineo
Ikeda Nobuyuki
Imai Isao
Inoue Masao
Iri Masao
Ishii Goro
Itô Seizô
Ito Yuji
Iwahashi Ryôsuke
Iwahori Nagayoshi
Iwarmura Tsurane
Iwano Masahiro
Iwata Giichi
Iyanaga Kenichi
Iyanaga Shôkichi
Kametani Shunji
Kasahara Koji
Kato Junji
Kawada Yukiyo
Kawano Sanehiko
Kimura Tosihusa
Kitagawa Toshio
Kobori Akira
Kodaira Kunihiko
Komatsu Hikosaburo
Komatu Atuo

Komatu Yûsaku
Kondo Ryôji
Kondo Takeshi
Kozai Yoshihide
Kubo Ryogo
Kubota Tomio
Kudo Akio
Kudo Hirokichi
Kumano-go Hitoshi
Kunisawa Kiyonori
Kunita Hiroshi
Kurita Minoru
Kuroda Shige-Toshi
Kusama Tokitake
Kusano Takaši
Maruyama Gisiro
Matsuda Michihiko
Matsumoto Kikuji
Matsumoto Makoto
Matsumura Hideyuki
Matsushima Yozo
Mimura Yukio
Miyazawa Hironari
Mizohata Sigeru
Mori Toshio
Morimoto Haruki
Morimura Hidenori
Morita Kiiti
Morita Yasuo
Motoo Minoru
Murakami Shingo
Muramatsu Tosinobu
Murase Ichiro
Nagao Hiroshi
Nagasawa Masao
Nagata Masayoshi
Nakai Mitsuru
Nakai Yoshikazu
Nakamura Tokushi
Nakanishi Shizu
Nakano Shigeo
Nakaoka Minoru
Namikawa Yukihiko
Namioka Isaac
Nanba Kanji
Niuro Fumio
Nikaido Hukukane
Nishi Mieo
Nishijima Kazuhiko
Nishimiya Han
Noguchi Hiroshi
Nonaka Toshio
Noshiro Kiyoshi
Nozaki Akihiro
Ôbayashi Tadao
Ogino Shusaku
Ohtsuka Makoto
Oikawa Kotaro
Okamoto Masashi
Okubo Kenjiro
Okugawa Kôtarô

Ono Katuzi
Ono Shigeru
Osima Masaru
Ozawa Mitsuru
Ozeki Hideki
Saito Tosiya
Sakai Shoichiro
Sakamoto Minoru
Sasaki Shigeo
Satake Ichiro
Sato Kenkichi
Sawashima Ikuko
Shibuya Masaaki
Shiga Kôji
Shimada Nobuo
Shintani Takuro
Shioda Tetsuji
Shiraiwa Kenichi
Shiratani Katsumi
Shizuma Ryoji
Simauti Takakazu
Sugawara Masahiro
Sugiura Mitsuo
Sugiyama Shohei
Suita Nobuyuki
Sumitomo Takeshi
Sunouchi Genichiro
Suzuki Michio
Takahashi Moto-o
Takahashi Reiji
Takahashi Tsunero
Takami Hideo
Takaoka Seiki
Takenouchi Osamu
Takeuchi Kei
Takeuti Gaisi
Tamura Itiro
Tanaka Hiroshi
Tanaka Hisao
Tanaka Minoru
Tatsumi Tomomasa
Tatuzawa Tikao
Terasaka Hidetaka
Toda Hideo
Toda Hiroshi
Tsuka-da Nobutaka
Tsukamoto Yôtarô
Tugué Tosiya
Uchiyama Saburo
Uesu Tadahiro
Umegaki Hisaharu
Umezawa Toshio
Uno Toshio
Ura Shoji
Ura Taro
Urabe Minoru
Uzawa Hirobumi
Wada Junzo
Watanabe Hiroshi
Watanabe Hisao
Watanabe Shinzo

Watanabe Takesi
Yamaguti Masaya
Yamamoto Koichi
Yamanaka Takesi
Yamazaki Keijiro
Yano Kentaro
Yano Shigeki
Yoshizawa Taro
Yosida Kôzaku
Yosida Setuzô

Name Index

Note. Citation is to article and section, not to page.
r = references; STR = Statistical Tables for Reference
(to be found after App. B); NTR = Numerical Tables
for Reference. * means that the article is not divided
into sections.

A

Abadie, Jean M. (1919–) 292.r
Abe, Eiichi (1927–) 13.R
Abe, Kinetsu (1941–) 365.L
Abel, Niels Henrik (1802–29) 1 2.A, B, C 3.A, B, G,
J, L, M 8 10.D 11.B, C, E 20 21.B 52.B, N 60.L
73.A 121.D 136.B 172.A, B, G, H 190.A, H, Q
201.R 202.N 217.A, L 240.G 267 308.E 339.B
367.H 379.D, F, K, N 383.B 388.D 422.A, E
Abers, Ernest S. 132.r
Aberth, Oliver George (1929–) 301.F
Abhyankar, Shreeram Shankar (1930–) 15.B 16.L
23.r
Abikoff, William (1944–) 234.E
Abraham, C. T. 96.F
Abraham, Ralph H. (1936–) 126.J, r 183 271.r 316.r
420.r
Abramov, Leonid Mikhailovich (1931–) 136.E
Abramowitz, Milton J. NTR
Abrikosov, Aleksei Alekseevich (1928–) 402.r
Abûl Wafâ (940–98) 432.C
Achenbach, J. D. 446.r
Ackermann, Wilhelm (1896–1962) 97.*, r 156.E, r
356.B 411.J, r
Ackoff, Russell Lincoln (1919–) 307.A
Aczél, János D. (1924–) 388.r
Adams, Douglas Payne 19.r
Adams, John Couch (1819–92) 303.E
Adams, John Frank (1930–) 64.C 200.r 202.S, T, V
237.A, E, I 249.r 426
Adamson, Iain Thomas 200.M
Addison, John West, Jr. (1930–) 22.D, F, G, H 81.r
356.H, r
Adem, José (1921–) 64.B, C 305.A App. A, Table
6.II
Adler, Mark 387.C
Adler, Roy L. (1931–) 126.K 136.E, H
Adler, Stephen L. (1939–) 132.C, r
Ado, Igor Dmitrievich 248.F, r
Adriaan, Anthonisz (c. 1543–1620) 332
Agmon, Shmuel (1922–) 112.F, H, Q 323.H, r
375.B, C
Agnesi, Maria Gaetana (1718–99) 93.H
Aguilar, Joseph 331.F
Ahern, Patrick Robert (1936–) 164.K
Ahlberg, John Harold (1927–) 223.r
Ahlfors, Lars Valerian (1907–) 17.D 21.N 43.G, K
74.r 77.E, F, r 122.I 124.B, r 143.A 169.E 198.r
234.D, E, r 272.I, J, L 352.A, B, C, F 367.B, G, I, r
416 429.D 438.r
Aho, Alfred V. 31.r 71.r 75.r 186.r
Aida, Yasuaki (1747–1817) 230
Airy, Sir George Biddell (1801–92) 325.L App. A,
Table 19.IV
Aitken, Alexander Craig (1895–1967) 223.B App.
A, Table 21
Aizawa, Sadakazu (1934–) 286.X
Aizenman, Michael (1945–) 136.G 340.r 402.G
Akahira, Masafumi (1945–) 128.r 399.K, O 400.r
Akahori, Takao (1949–) 72.r

Akaike, Hirotugu (1927–) 421.D
Akaza, Tohru (1927–83) 234.r
Akbar-Zadeh, Hassan (1927–) 152.C
Akcoglu, Mustafa A. (1934–) 136.B
Akemann, Charles A. (1941–) 36.K
Akhiezer, Naum Ilich (1901–80) 197.r 251.r 336.r
390.r
Akizuki, Yasuo (1902–84) 8 59.H 284.F, G 368.F
Alaoglu, Leonidas (1914–) 37.E 424.H
Albanese, Giacomo (1890–1947) 16.P 232.C
al-Battānī, Mohamed ibn Gabis ibn Sinan, Abu
Abdallah (858?–929) 26 432.C
Albert, Abraham Adrian (1905–72) 29.F, r 149.r
231.r
Albertus Magnus (1193?–1280) 372
Alcuin (735–804) 372
Aleksandrov, Aleksandr Danilovich (1912–) 111.r
178.A 255.D 365.H 425.r
Aleksandrov (Alexandroff), Pavel Sergeevich (1896–
1982) 22.I 65.r 93.r 99.r 117.A, E, F, r 201.A, r
207.C 273.K 425.S–V, r 426. *, r
Alekseev, Vladimir Mikhailovich (1932–80) 420.r
Alekseevskii, Dmitrii Vladimirovich (1940–) 364.r
Alexander, Herbert James (1940–) 344.F
Alexander, James Waddell (1888–1971) 65.G
201.A, J, M, O, P 235.A, C, D, E 426
Alexits, György (1899–1978) 317.r
Alfsen, Erik Magnus (1930–) 351.L
Alfvén, Hannes (1908–) 259. *, r
Alinhac, Serge (1948–) 345.A
al-Khwarizmi (Alkwarizmi), Mohammed ibn Musa
(c. 780–c. 850) 26
Allard, William Kenneth (1941–) 275.G
Allendoerfer, Carl Bennett (1911–74) 109 365.E
Almgren, Frederick Justin, Jr. (1933–) 275.A, F, G,
r 334.F
Altman, Allen B. 16.r
Amari, Shun-ichi (1936–) 399.O
Ambrose, Warren (1914–) 136.D
Amemiya, Ichiro (1923–) 72.r
Amitsur, Shimshon A. (1921–) 200.P
Ampère, André-Marie (1775–1836) 82.A 107.B
278.A
Amrein, Werner O. 375.B, r
Ananda-Rau, K. 121.D
Andersen, Erik Sparre (1919–) 260.J
Anderson, Brian D. O. 86.r
Anderson, Joel H. (1935–) 36.J
Anderson, Richard Louis (1915–) 19.r
Anderson, Robert Murdoch (1951–) 293.D, r
Anderson, Theodore Wilbur (1918–) 280.r 374.r
421.D
Andersson, Karl Gustav (1943–) 274.I
Ando, Tsuyoshi (1932–) 310.H
Ando, Y. 304.r
Andreotti, Aldo (1924–80) 32.F 72.r
Andrews, David F. 371.H
Andrews, Frank C. 419.r
Andrianov, Anatolii N. (1936–) 32.F
Andronov, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich (1901–52)
126.A, I, r 290.r 318.r
Anger, Carl Theodor (1803–58) 39.G App. A,
Table 19.IV
Anikin, S. A. 146.A
Anosov, Dmitrii Viktorovich (1936–) 126.A, J
136.G
Antiphon (fl. 430? B.C.) 187
Antoine, Louis August (1888–1971) 65.G
Anzai, Hirotada (1919–55) 136.E
Apéry, Roger (1916–) 182.G

Apollonius (of Perga)

- Apollonius (of Perga) (262–c. 200 B.C.) 179.A 181
187 App. A, Table 3.V
- Apostol, T. M. 106.r 216.r
- Appel, Kenneth I. (1932–) 157.A 186.r
- Appell, Paul-Emile (1855–1930) 11.r 206.D, r
393.E, r 428.r App. A, Table 18.I App. A,
Table 20.r
- Arakelov, S. Yu. 9.r 118.E
- Arakelyan, Norair Unanovich 164.J
- Araki, Huzihiro (1932–) 150.D, E 212.B, r 308.I, r
351.L 377.r 402.G
- Araki, Shōrō (1930–) 427.B
- Aramata, Hideo (1905–47) 450.D
- Aramovich, I. 198.r
- Arbib, Michael Anthony (1940–) 75.r 95.r
- Arbuthnot, John (1667–1735) 371.A
- Archibald, Raymond Clare (1875–1955) 187.r
- Archimedes (c. 287–212 B.C.) 20 78.F 93.H 149.N
155.B, D 187 243.G 310.C 332 355.B 439.C
- Archytas (of Taras) (c. 430–c. 365 B.C.) 187
- Arens, Richard Friedrich (1919–) 36.M 424.N
- Arf, Cahit (1910–) 114.J
- Argand, Jean Robert (1768–1822) 74.C
- Arima, Reiko (→ Sakamoto, Reiko)
- Arima, Yoriyuki (1714–83) 230
- Arimoto, Suguru (1936–) 213.E, F, r
- Aristotle (384–322 B.C.) 187
- Ariyama, Masataka (1929–) 446.r
- Arkhangel'skiĭ, Aleksandr Vladimirovich (1938–)
273.K, r 425.F, S, Y, CC, r
- Arnauld, Antoine (1612–94) 265
- Arnoff, E. Leonard (1922–) 307.A
- Arnold, Leslie K. 136.C
- Arnol'd, Vladimir Igorevich (1937–) 82.r 126.A, L,
M, r 136.r 196 219.r 271.r 402.r 418.E 420.G App.
A, Table 5, r
- Aronszajn, Nachman (1907–80) 112.H 188.r 273.K
323.J 338.E
- Arraut, José Luis (1938–) 126.H
- Arrow, Kenneth Joseph (1921–) 227.r 292.E, r
- Arsevin, Vasilii Yakovlevich 22.C, F, r
- Artin, Emil (1898–1962) 4.A 6.E, F, r 7.r 8 14.F,
K, O, R, S, U, r 28 29.r 59.A, C, F, H, r 60.r 65.G
118.F 123.F 149.N 151.I 155.G 172.F, r 174.r 196
198.B, r 200.N 235.F 257.H, r 277.I 284.A, G 295.E
343.r 368.F, r 439.L, r 450.A, G, P, R
- Artin, Michael (1934–) 15.r 16.U, W, r 126.K 210.r
418.C 450.Q, r
- Arveson, William B. (1934–) 36.r 308.r
- Āryabhata (Ārya-Bhatta) (c. 476–c. 550) 209 332
432.C
- Arzelà, Cesare (1847–1912) 168.B 216.B 435.D
- Asada, Kenji (1946–) 274.r 345.B
- Asano, Keizo (1910–) 8 29.I
- Asano, Kiyoshi (1938–) 41.D
- Aschbacher, Michael George (1944–) 151.J
- Ascher, Edgar 92.r
- Ascoli, Giulio (1843–96) 168.B 435.D
- Ash, Avner Dolnick (1949–) 16.r
- Assmus, Edward F., Jr. (1931–) 200.K
- Athreya, Krishna B. 44.C
- Atiyah, Michael Francis (1929–) 16.r 20 68.F 80.G,
r 109 114.E 147.O 153.C 183 237.A, H, r 323.K
325.J 345.A 366.A–D, r 390.I, J 391.L, N, r 426
431.D 437.X
- Atkin, Arthur O. L. (1935–) 328
- Atsugi, Masahiko (1922–) 425.Y
- Aubin, Jean-Pierre 286.X
- Aubin, Thierry Emilien (1942–) 183.r 232.C
364.H, r
- Audley, Robert John (1928–) 346.r
- Auerbach, Herman (1902–42) 270.J
- Aumann, Robert John (1930–) 173.D, E, r 443.A
- Auslander, Joseph (1930–) 126.D
- Auslander, Louis (1928–) 105.r 136.G 152.C 279.C
437.U
- Auslander, Maurice (1926–) 29.K 200.K, L 284.G
- Avery, J. 377.r
- Avez, André 126.r 136.r 402.r
- Ax, James B. 14.D 118.B, F 276.E, r 450.J
- Ayoub, Raymond George (1923–) 4.r 123.r 295.r
328.r
- Azencott, Robert Guy (1943–) 136.G
- Azima, Naonobu (1739–98) 230
- Aziz, Abdul Kadir 303.r
- Azra, Jean-Pierre (1935–) 171.r
- Azumaya Goro (1920–) 8.*, r 29.I, K. r 67.D 172.r
200.L 362.r 368.r

B

- Babbage, Charles (1792–1871) 75.A
- Bachelier, Louis (1870–1946) 45.A
- Bachet de Méziriac, Claude Gaspar (1581–1638)
296.A
- Bachmann, Paul Gustav Heinrich (1837–1920)
297.I
- Bacon, Francis (1561–1626) 401.E
- Baer, Reinhold (1902–79) 2.F 122.B 200.I, K
- Bagemihl, Frederick (1920–) 62.C–E
- Bahadur, Raghu Raj (1924–) 396.r 398.r 399.N, r
400.K, r
- Bahmann, H. 97.B
- Bailey, Norman T. J. 40.r
- Baillon, Jean-Bernard (1951–) 286.Y
- Baily, Walter Lewis, Jr. (1930–) 16.Z 32.F, H 122.r
194.r
- Baiocchi, Claudio 440.r
- Baire, René Louis (1874–1932) 20 21 C, L 84.D, r
126.H 273.B, J 425.N
- Bairstow, L. 301.E
- Baker, Alan (1939–) 118.D 182.G, r 196 347.E
430.D, r
- Baker, George Allen, Jr. (1932–) 142.r
- Baker, Henry Frederick (1866–1956) 9.r 15.r 78.r
350.r
- Baker, Kenneth R. 376.r
- Bakhshāli (c. 3rd century) 209
- Balaban, Tadeusz 325.K
- Balakrishnan, A. V. (1922–) 378.D
- Balas, Egon 215.C, r
- Baldwin, John T. (1944–) 276.F
- Balian, Roger 386.r
- Ball, W. W. Rouse 157.r
- Banach, Stefan (1892–1945) 20 23.G 36.A, F 37.A,
B, E, F, H, I, O, r 105.Z 162 168.r 246.G 286.K, Z
310.F, I 424.C, H, J, X 442.r
- Banerjee, Kali S. (1914–) 102.r
- Bang, Thøger Sophus Vilhelm (1917–) 58.F
- Banica (Bănică), Constantin (1942–) 23.r
- Baouendi, M. Salah (1937–) 323.N 345.A
- Barankin, Edward William (1920–) 396.r 399.D, r
- Barban, Mark Borisovich (1935–) 123.E
- Barbey, Klaus 164.r
- Barbosa, João Lucas Marquês 275.B
- Barbu, Viorel (1941–) 88.r 440.r
- Barden, Dennis 65.C
- Bardos, Claude Williams (1940–) 204.E
- Bargmann, Valentine (1908–) 258.r 437.EE
- Bar-Hillel, Yehoshua (1915–75) 96.r

- Bari, Nina Karlovna (1901–61) 159.J
 Barlow, Peter (1776–1862) NTR
 Barlow, William (1845–1934) 92.F
 Barnes, Ernest William (1874–1953) 206.C App. A, Table 18.I
 Barr, Michael (1937–) 200.r
 Barrow, Isaac (1630–77) 265 283
 Barth, Wolf Paul (1942–) 16.r
 Bartle, Robert Gardner (1927–) 68.M 443.A, G
 Bartlett, Maurice Stevenson (1910–) 40.r 44.r 280.J 407.r 421.C, r
 Barwise, Jon 356.r
 Bashforth, F. 303.E
 Bass, Hyman (1932–) 122.F 200.r 237, J, r
 Bass, Robert Wauchope (1930–) 289.D
 Bastin, J. 351.r
 Batchelder, Paul M. 104.r
 Batchelor, George Keith (1920–) 205.r 433.C, r
 Bateman, Paul Trevier (1919–) 4.D 348.K
 Bauer, Friedrich Ludwig (1924–) 302.r
 Bauer, Heinz (1928–) 193.U
 Baum, Paul Frank (1936–) 366.E 427.B
 Bayer, Pilar 450.r
 Bayes, Thomas (1702–61) 342.A, F 396.J 398.B 399.F 401.B, E 403.G 405.I
 Bazilevich, Ivan Evgen'evich 438.B
 Beale, E. M. L. 292.r 349.r
 Beals, Richard William (1938–) 320.r 345.A, B
 Beardon, Alan Frank (1940–) 234.r
 Beatley, Ralph 139.r
 Beauville, Arnaud (1947–) 15.r
 Bebutov, M. 126.E
 Becchi, C. M. 150.G
 Beck, James V. 200.Q, r
 Beckenbach, Edwin Ford (1906–82) 211.r
 Becker, Oskar Joachim (1889–1964) 156.r 187.r
 Beckmann, Petr (1924–) 332
 Bede Venerabilis (673–735) 372
 Beer, Stafford (1926–) 95.r
 Beeson, H. 275.C
 Beez, R. 365.E
 Behnke, Heinrich (1898–1979) 21.H, Q 23.E 198.r 367.B, G, I, r
 Behrends, Ralph Eugene (1926–) 132.r
 Behrens, W. V. 400.G
 Belardinelli, Giuseppe 206.r
 Belavin, A. A. 80.r
 Belinfante, Frederik J. 150.B
 Bell, Eric Temple (1883–1960) 177.D
 Bell, James Frederick (1914–) 33.r
 Bell, John Stewart (1928–) 351.L
 Bell, Steve 344.D
 Bellissard, Jean Vincent (1946–) 351.L
 Bellman, Richard (Ernest) (1920–84) 86.A, F 127.A, D, E, G, r 163.B 211.r 291.r 314.r 394.r 405.B, r
 Belov, Nikolaï Vasil'evich (1891–) 92.r
 Beltrami, Eugenio (1835–1900) 109 194.B 285.A 352.B App. A, Table 4.II
 Belyaev, Yurii Konstantinovich (1932–) 176.G
 Bendat, Julius S. (1923–) 212.r
 Bender, Helmut (1942–) 151.J
 Benders, J. F. 215.r
 Bendikson (Bendixson), Ivar Otto (1861–1936) 107.A 126.I
 Bengel, Günter (1939–) 112.D
 Bénilan, Philippe (1940–) 162
 Bensoussan, Alain (1940–) 405.r
 Bérard-Bergery, Lionel (1945–) 364.r
 Berens, Hubert (1936–) 224.E, r 378.r
 Berezin, Feliks Aleksandrovich (1931–80) 377.r
 Berg, Christian (1944–) 338.r
 Berg, Ira David (1931–) 331.E 390.I
 Berge, Claude (1926–) 186.r 281.r 282.r
 Berger, Charles A. (1937–) 251.K, L
 Berger, James Orvis (1950–) 398.r
 Berger, M. (1926–) 109.*, r, 178.A, C 391.B, C, r
 Berger, Melvyn (1939–) 286.r
 Berger, Toby (1940–) 213.E
 Bergh, Jöran (1941–) 224.r
 Bergman, Stefan (1895–1977) 21.Q 77.r 188.G, r 326.C
 Berkovitz, Leonard D. (1924–) 86.F 108.A, B
 Berlekamp, Elwyn R. (1940–) 63.r
 Bernays, Paul Isaak (1888–1977) 33.A, C, r 97.* 156.r 411.J, r
 Bernoulli family 20 38 107.A 266
 Bernoulli, Daniel (1700–82) 20 38 205.B 301.J 342.A 396.B
 Bernoulli, Jakob (1654–1705) 38 46.A 93.H 136.D–F 177.B 250.A 342.A 379.I App. A, Table 14.I App. B, Table 3.I
 Bernoulli, Jakob (1759–89) 38
 Bernoulli, Johann (1667–1748) 38 46.A 93.H 163.B 165.A
 Bernoulli, Johann (1710–90) 38
 Bernoulli, Johann (1744–1807) 38
 Bernoulli, Nikolaus (1687–1759) 38
 Bernoulli, Nikolaus (1695–1726) 38
 Bernshtein, I. N. 125.EE 154.G 418.H, r
 Bernshtein, Sergei Natanovich (1880–1968) 49.B 58.E 196 240.E 255.D 261.A 275.A, F 323.I 334.C 336.A, C, F
 Bernshtein, Vladimir 121.r
 Bernstein, Allen R. 276.E, r 293.D
 Bernstein, Felix (1878–1956) 228.A
 Berry, G. G. 319.B
 Berry, L. Gérard (1948–) 40.D
 Bers, Lipman (1914–) 21.r 23.r 111.r 122.I, r 204.G 234.D, r 275.A 320.r 326.r 327.r 352.B–E, r 367.r 416.*, r
 Berstel, Jean (1941–) 31.r
 Berthelot, Pierre (1943–) 16.r 366.r 450.Q
 Bertini, Eugenio (1846–1933) 15.C
 Bertrand, Joseph Louis François (1822–1900) 111.F 123.A
 Berwald, L. (1883–?) 152.C
 Bertziss, Alfs T. 96.r
 Besikovich (Besicovitch), Abram Samoilovich (1891–1970) 18.A, C 246.K
 Besov, Oleg Vladimirovich (1933–) 168.B, r
 Bessaga, Czesław (1932–) 286.D 443.D
 Besse, Arthur L. 109.r 178.r
 Besse, J. 198.N
 Bessel, Friedrich Wilhelm (1784–1846) 39.A, B, D, G 197.C 223.C App. A, Tables 14.II, 19.III, IV, 21.III, IV
 Besson, Gerard (1955–) 391.F
 Betti, Enrico (1823–92) 105.A 200.K 201.A, B 426
 Beurling, Arne (Karl-August) (1905–) 62.B, E 125.A, U 143.A 164.G, I 169.E 192.Q 251.L 338.Q, r 352.C
 Bézout, Étienne (1739–83) 9.B 12.B
 Bhāskara (1114–85?) 209 296.A
 Bhatia, Nam Parshad (1932–) 86.r 126.r
 Bhattacharya, Rabindra Nath (1937–) 374.F, r
 Bhattacharyya, A. 399.D, r
 Bianchi, Luigi (1856–1928) 80.J 365.J 417.B
 Bickel, Peter John (1940–) 371.r
 Bidal, Pierre 194.F
 Bieberbach, Ludwig (1886–1982) 43.r 77.E 89.C

Biedenbarn, Lawrence C.

- 92.F, r 107.r 179.B, r 198.r 254.r 288.r 339. 429.r 438.B, C
- Biedenbarn, Lawrence C. (1922–) 353.r
- Biezeno, Cornelis Benjamin (1888–1975) 19.r
- Biggeri, Carlos 121.C
- Biggs, Norman Linstead (1941–) 157.r
- Billera, Louis J. (1943–) 173.E
- Billingsley, Patrick P. (1925–) 45.r 136.r 250.r 341.r 374.r
- Binet, Jacques Philippe Marie (1786–1856) 174.A 295.A
- Bing, Rudolf H. (1914–86) 65.F, G 79.D 273.K 382.D 425.AA
- Birch, Bryan John (1931–) 4.E 118.C–E 450.S
- Birkeland, R. 206.D
- Birkhoff, Garrett (1911–) 8.r 87.r 103.r 183.r 243.r 248.J 310.A 311.r 343.r 443.A, E, H
- Birkhoff, George David (1884–1944) 30.r 107.A 109 111.I 126.A, F 136.A, B 139.r 153.B, D 157.A 162 253.C 254.D 279.A 286.D 420.F
- Birman, Joan S. (1922–) 235.r
- Birman, Mikhail Shlemovich (1928–) 331.E
- Birnbaum, Allan (1923–76) 399.C, r 400.r
- Birtel, Frank Thomas (1932–) 164.r
- Bisconcini, Giulio 420.C
- Bishop, Errett A. (1928–83) 164.D–F, J, K 367.r
- Bishop, Richard L. (1931–) 105.r 178.r 417.r
- Bishop, Yvonne M. M. 280.r 403.r
- Bitsadze, Andrei Vasil'evich (1916–) 326.r
- Bjerknes, Carl Anton (1825–1903) 1.r
- Björck, Åke (1934–) 302.r
- Björck, Göran (1930–) 125.r
- Björk, Jan-Erik 112.r 125.EE 274.r
- Bjorken, James Daniel (1934–) 132.r 146.A, C 150.r
- Blackman, R. B. 421.r
- Blackwell, David (Harold) (1919–) 22.H 398.r 399.C
- Blahut, Richard E. (1937–) 213.r
- Blair, David E. (1940–) 110.E 364.G
- Blakers, Albert Laurence (1917–) 202.M
- Blanchard, André (1928–) 72.r
- Blanc-Lapierre, André Joseph (1915–) 395.r
- Bland, Robert G. (1948–) 255.C
- Blaschke, Wilhelm (1885–1962) 43.F 76.r 89.C, r 109.*, r 110.C, r 111.r 178.G 218.A, C, H 228.r
- Blatt, John Markus 353.r
- Blattner, Robert James (1931–) 437.W, EE
- Bleaney, B. I. 130.r
- Bleuler, Konrad (1912–) 150.G
- Bloch, André (1893–1948) 21.N, O 77.F 272.L 429.D
- Bloch, Felix (1905–) 353.r 402.H
- Bloch, Spencer 16.R
- Block, Henry David (1920–78) 420.C
- Bloxham, M. J. D. 386.C
- Blum, Julius Rubin (1922–82) 136.E
- Blum, Manuel 71.D, r
- Blumenthal, Ludwig Otto (1876–1944) 32.G 122.E
- Blumenthal, Robert McCallum (1931–) 5.r 261.B, r
- Boas, Ralph Philip, Jr. (1912–) 58.r 220.D 240.K 429.r
- Bôcher, Maxime (1867–1918) 107.A 167.E 193.D
- Bochner, Salomon (1899–1982) 5.r 18.A, r 21.Q, r 36.L 80.r 109.*, r 125.A 160.C, r 164.G 192.B, O 194.G 261.F 327.r 341.C, J, r 367.F 378.D 443.A, C, H
- Bodewig, Ewald 298.r
- Boerner, Hermann (1906–82) 362.r
- Boetius, Anicius Manlius Torquatus Severinus (c. 480–524) 372
- Bogolyubov, Nikolai Nikolaevich (1909–) 125.W 136.H 146.A 150.r 212.B 290.A, D 361.r 402.J
- Böhme, Reinhold (1944–) 275.C
- Bohnenblust, (Henri) Frederic (1906–) 28 310.A, G
- Bohr, Harald (1887–1951) 18.A, B, H, r 69.B 121.B, C 123.r 450.I
- Bohr, Niels Henrik David (1885–1962) 351.A
- Bokshtein (Bockstein), Meer Feliksovich (1913–) 64.B 117.F
- Bol, Gerrit (1906–) 110.r
- Boll, Marcel (1886–) NTR
- Bolley, Pierre (1943–) 323.N
- Boltyanskii, Vladimir Grigor'evich (1925–) 86.r 89.r 117.F 127.G
- Boltzmann, Ludwig (1844–1906) 41.A, B, r 136.A 402.B, H, r 403.B, r
- Bolyai, János (Johann) (1802–60) 35 A 181 267 285.A
- Bolza, Oskar (1857–1942) 46.r
- Bolzano, Bernard (1781–1848) 140 273.F
- Bombieri, Enrico (1940–) 15.r 72.K 118.B 123.D, E, r 151.J 275.F 438.C 450.P, Q
- Bompiani, Enrico (1889–1975) 110.B
- Bonnesen, Tommy (1873–) 89.r 228.A
- Bonnet, Ossian Pierre (1819–92) 109 111.H 275.A, C 364.D App. A, Table 4.I
- Bonsall, Frank Featherstone (1920–) 310.H
- Bony, Jean-Michel (1942–) 274.r
- Book, D. L. 304.r
- Boole, George (1815–64) 33.E 42.A–D, r 104.r 156.B 243.E 267 379.J 411.A, r
- Boone, William Werner (1920–83) 97.*, r 161.B
- Boothby, William M. (1918–) 110.E
- Borchardt, Carl Wilhelm (1817–80) 229.r
- Borchers, Hans-Jürgen (1926–) 150.E
- Borel, Armand (1923–) 12.B 13.A, G, r 16.Z 32.H, r 56.r 73.r 122.F, G, r 147.K 148.E, r 199.r 203.A 248.O 249.J, V, r 366.D 383.r 384.D 427.B, r 431.r 437.Q 450.r App. A, Table 6.V
- Borel, Emile (1871–1956) 20 21.O 22.A, G 58.D 83.B 124.B 156.C 198.Q, r 261.D 270.B, C, G, J 272.E, F 273.F 339.D 342.A, B 379.O 429.B
- Borevich, Zenon Ivanovich (1922–) 14.r 297.r 347.r
- Borges, Carlos J. Rego (1939–) 273.K 425.Y
- Borisovich, Yurii Grigor'evich (1930–) 286.r
- Born, Max (1882–1970) 402.J 446.r
- Borovkov, Aleksandr Alekseevich (1931–) 260.H
- Borsuk, Karol (1905–82) 79.C, r 153.B 202.B, I 382. A, C
- Bortolotti, Ettore (1866–1947) 417.E
- Bose, Raj Chandra (1901–) 63.D 241.B STR
- Bose, Satyendra Nath (1894–1974) 132.A, C 351.H 377.B 402.E
- Bott, Raoul (1923–) 105.r 109 153.C 154.F–H 178.G 202.V, r 237.D, H, r 248.r 272.L 279.D 325.J 345.A 366.r 391.N, r 413.r 427.E, r 437.Q App. A, Table 6.VII
- Bouligand, Georges (1889–?) 120.D
- Bouquet, Jean-Claude (1819–85) 107.A 111.F 288.B 289.B
- Bourbaki, Nicolas 8 13.r 20.r 22.r 34.r 35.r 60.r 61.r 67.r 74.r 84.r 87.r 88.r 103.r 105.r 106.r 122.r 131.r 135.r 149.r 162 168.C 172.r 187.r 216.r 221.r 225.r 248.r 249.r 256.r 265.r 266.r 267.r 270.r 277.r 284.r 310.I 311.r 312.r 337.r 348.r 355.r 360.r 362.r 368.r 379.r 381.r 409.r 423.r 424.I, r 425.S, W, Y, CC, r 435.r 436.r 443.A
- Bourgin, David G. 201.r
- Bourgne, Robert 171.r
- Bourguignon, Jean-Pierre (1947–) 80.r 364.r

Bourion, Georges 339.E
 Boussinesq, Joseph (1842–1929) 387.B, F
 BOUTROUX, Pierre Léon (1880–1922) 265.r 288.B, C, r
 Bowen, Rufus (1947–78) 126.A, J, K, r 136.C, G, r 234.r
 Bowman, Frank (1891–1983) 39.r
 Box, George E. P. (1919–) 102.r 128.r 301.L 371.A 421.G, r
 Boyle, James M. 298.r
 Bradley, G. J. 92.r
 Bradley, Ralph Allan (1923–) 346.C
 Brahmagupta (598–660) 118.A 209
 Bram, Joseph (1926–) 291.r
 Brams, Steven John (1940–) 173.r
 Brandt, Heinrich (1886–1954) 190.P 241.C
 Branges, Louis de (1932–) 176.K 438.C
 Bratteli, Ola (1946–) 36.H, K, r 308.r 402.G, r
 Brauer, Richard Dagobert (1901–77) 14.E 27.D, E 29.E, F, K 118.C 151.J, r 362.G, I, r 427.B 450.D, G, L
 Braun, Hel (1914–) 32.H 122.E 231.r
 Brauner, Karl 418.r
 Bravais, Auguste (1811–63) 92.B, F App. B, Table 5.IV
 Bredikhin, Boris Maksimovich (1920–) 123.E
 Bredon, Glen E. (1932–) 383.r 431.r
 Breiman, Leo (1928–) 260.r 342.r
 Bretol, Marcel (1903–) 120.C, E, r 193.J, L, N, U 207.C 338.G, H
 Bremermann, Hans-Joachim (1926–) 21.D, I
 Bremmer, Hendricus (1904–) 240.r
 Brent, Richard Peirce (1946–) 123.B 142.A 450.I
 Breuer, Manfred 390.J
 Brewster, Sir David (1781–1868) 283.r
 Brézis, David 88.E
 Brézis, Haïm (1944–) 88.E 162.*, r 286.C, X 440.r
 Brianchon, Charles Julien (1785–1864) 78.K 343.E
 Brieskorn, Egbert (1936–) 16.r 418.C, D, r App. A, Table 5.r
 Bringham, E. Oran (1940–) 142.r
 Brill, Alexander Wilhelm von (1842–1935) 9.E, r 11.B, r 12.B
 Brillinger, David Ross (1937–) 421.r
 Brillouin, Léon Nicolas (1889–1969) 25.B 446.r
 Brin, Matthew G. 136.G
 Briot, Charles Auguste Albert (1817–82) 107.A 288.B 289.B
 Broadbent, S. R. 340.r
 Bröcker, Theodor 51.r
 Broderick, Norma 92.r
 Brodskii, Mikhail Samoilovich (1913–) 251.r 390.H
 Brody, Robert 21.O
 Bromwich, Thomas John l'Anson (1875–1929) 240.D 322.D 379.r App. A, Table 12.I
 Bronshtein, M. D. 325.I
 Bros, Jacques (1934–) 150.D 274.D, I 386.B, C
 Brosilow, C. B. 303.r
 Brouncker, Lord William (1620–84) 332
 Brouwer, Dirk (1902–66) 55.r
 Brouwer, Luitzen Egbertus Jan (1881–1966) 65.G 79.D 99.A 117.A, D, r 153.B 156.A, C 202.B 305.A 426
 Browder, Andrew (1931–) 164.r
 Browder, Felix Earl (1927–) 112.F, Q 286.C, X, r 323.H
 Browder, William (1934–) 114.J, L, r 427.B
 Brown, Edgar H., Jr. (1926–) 202.T
 Brown, Harold 92.F
 Brown, Lawrence David (1940–) 396.r

Brown, Lawrence G. (1943–) 36.J 390.J, r
 Brown, Leon 43.G
 Brown, Morton (1931–) 65.G
 Brown, Robert (1773–1858) 5.D 45.A–C, F, I 176.C, I 250.F 406.B, G
 Brown, Robert Freeman (1935–) 153.r
 Brown, Scott W. (1937–) 251.L
 Brownlee, John (1868–1927) NTR
 Bruck, Richard Hubert (1914–) 190.P, r 241.D
 Bruhat, François (1929–) 13.K, Q, R 437.O, EE
 Brumer, Armand 182.r 450.J
 Brun, Viggo (1885–1978) 4.A, C 123.D, E
 Brune, O. 282.r
 Brunel, Antoine 136.C
 Brunn 89.E
 Brunovský, Pavol 126.M
 Bruns, Heinrich (1848–1919) 126.A 420.A
 Brunschvicg, Léon (1869–1944) 329.r
 Bruter, Claude Paul (1937–) 281.r
 Buchholz, Herbert (1895–1971) 167.r
 Buchner, Michael Anthony (1947–) 126.L
 Buchsbaum, David Alvin (1929–) 284.G
 Buck, R. Creighton (1920–) 43.F, r 106.r
 Bückner, Hans 217.r
 Bucur, Ion (1930–76) 52.r
 Bucy, Richard S. (1935–) 86.E 95.r 405.G, r
 Buerger, Martin J. 92.r
 Buffon, Georges Louis Leclerc, Comte de (1707–88) 218.A 342.A 385.C
 Buhler, Joe P. 450.G
 Bühlmann, Hans (1930–) 214.r
 Bulirsch, Roland (1932–) 303.F
 Bülow, Rolf 92.F
 Bunimovich, Leonid Abramovich 136.G
 Bunyakovskii, Viktor Yakovlevich (1804–89) 211.C App. A, Table 8
 Burali-Forti, Cesare (1861–1931) 319.B
 Burchnall, Joseph Langley (1892–1975) 387.C
 Burckhardt, Johann Jakob 92.F
 Burd, Vladimir Shepselevich (1938–) 290.r
 Burgess, David Albert (1935–) 295.E
 Burghlea, Dan (1943–) 105.r 183
 Bürgi, Joost (1552–1632) 265
 Burgoyne, N. 150.D App. B, Table 5.r
 Burkholder, Donald L. (1927–) 168.B 262.B
 Burkill, John Charles (1900–) 100.A
 Burns, Daniel Matthew, Jr. (1946–) 344.C–E
 Burnside, William Snow (1852–1927) 151.D, H, J, r 161.C 190.Q, r 267 431.F
 Busemann, Herbert (1905–) 178.F, H, r
 Bush, Robert R. 96.r 346.G
 Bush, Vannevar (1890–1974) 19.E
 Bustab, A. 4.A, C 123.E
 Butkovskii, A. G. 86.r
 Butzer, Paul L. (1928–) 224.E, r 378.r
 Byrne, George D. 303.r

C

Cabannes, Henri (1923–) 259.r
 Caflisch, Russel E. 41.D, E
 Caianiello, Eduardo R. (1921–) 291.F, r
 Cairns, Stewart Scott (1904–82) 114.A, C 426
 Calabi, Eugenio (1923–) 122.F 232.C 275.H 365.G, L
 Calderón, Alberto-Pedro (1920–) 36.M 217.J, r 224.A, F 251.O 274.B, I 321.F 323.J 345.A
 Calkin, John Williams (1909–) 36.J 390.I
 Callan, Curtis G. (1942–) 132.C 361.B, r
 Callen, Herbert Bernard (1919–) 419.r

- Campanato, Sergio (1930–) 168.B
Campbell, George Ashley (1870–?) 220.r 249.R
Camus, Jacques (1942–) 323.N
Cannon, James W. (1943–) 65.A, C, F
Cannonito, Frank Benjamin (1926–) 97.r
Cantelli, Francesco Paolo (1875–) 342.B 374.E
Cantor, Georg (1845–1918) 20.33.A 34.r 47.r
49.D, r 79.D 93.D 98.r 117.A 156.A 159.J 267
273.F 294.A, E, r 312.A, C 355.r 381.F, r 426
Cantor, Moritz Benedikt (1829–1920) 20.r 26.r 38.r
187.r 209.r 265.r 266.r 296.r 360.r 372.r
Cantwell, John C. 154.H
Cappell, Sylvain E. (1946–) 65.D 114.K, r
Carathéodory, Constantin(e) (1873–1950) 20.r
21.O, Q 43.J, K, r 46.r 74.r 77.C, r 82.r 136.A, C
180.r 198.r 246.G 255.D, E 270.E 316.F 320.r 321.r
324.r 333.B, C, r 334.E 438.B
Cardano, Giròlamo (1501–76) 8.10.D 294.A, r
360.*, r 444 App. A, Table I
Cardoso da Silva, Fernando Antonio Figueiredo
(1939–) 320.r
Carleman, Torsten (1892–1949) 20.30.A 41.D 43.H
58.F 68.L 112.N 125.A 160.r 164.J 168.B 217.J, r
240.K 321.F 323.J, M 336.I App. A, Table 8
Carleson, Fritz (1888–1952) 121.C
Carleson, Lennart A. E. (1928–) 43.F, G, r 48.r
77.E 124.C 159.H 164.I 168.B 169.r 352.F
Carlson, Bille Chandler (1924–) 389.r
Carlson, James A. 21.N
Carmeli, Moshe (1933–) 359.r
Carnahan, Brice (1933–) 304.r
Carnot, Lazare Nicholas Marguerite (1753–1823)
181.266
Carrell, James Baldwin (1940–) 226.r
Carrol, J. B. 346.E, r
Carroll, Robert Wayne (1930–) 378.r
Carson, John R. App. A, Table 12.II
Cartan, Elie (1869–1951) 13.H 21.P 50.80.A, M, N
90.r 105.r 109.*, r 110.B, r 111.r 137.*, r 147.A
152.C 178.A, B 183.191.E, H, I 218.D, E 219.B,
r 248.F, I, K, N, W, r 249.E, I, R, S, V, r 285.r
344.A–C, F 362.I 364.F 365.B, I 384.A 412.*,
r 413.F, r 417.r 427.B 428.E, G 434.B 437.X
App. A, Table 5.I
Cartan, Henri (1904–) 3.r 17.C, r 20.*, r 21.E, H,
I, L, O, Q, r 23.B, E, r 28.r 32.r 36.L 50.52.r 58.D
64.B 70.F, r 72.E 80.r 87.r 94.r 105.r 124.B, r 192.r
198.r 200.I, r 201.J 208.r 210.r 225.r 272.J 277.r
338.E, L, M, P 383.J, r 426
Carter, Roger William (1934–) 151.D, r
Cartier, Pierre Emil (1932–) 9.E 12.B 16.E 203.H
Cartwright, Mary L. 62.E
Case, James H. 108.C
Casimir, 248.J
Casorati, Felice (1835–90) 104.D 198.D
Cassandro, M. 402.G
Casselman, William Allen (1941–) 450.r
Cassels, John William Scott (1922–) 14.r 59.r 118.r
182.r 257.r
Cassini, Jean Dominique (1625–1712) 93.H
Casson, Andrew J. 114.K
Cassou-Noguès, Pierrette (1945–) 450.J
Castaing, Charles (1932–) 443.A
Castelnuovo, Guido (1865–1952) 3.E 9.H, r 12.B, r
15.B, E, G, H
Castillon, Giovanni Francesco Mauro Melchior
Salvemini de (1708–91) 179.A
Catalan, Eugène Charles (1814–94) App. A,
Table 10.III
Cauchy, Augustin Louis (1789–1857) 4.D 5.F 20
21.C 53.87.C 100.E 107.A, B 164.J 165.A, r 190.Q
198.A, B, E, F, Q 211.C 216.D, E 267.273.J 274.G
284.B 286.X, Z 294.E 296.301.G 316.A, C, G
320.B, D, I 321.A, B 339.A 341.D 344.A 379.A,
B, F, K 388.B 436.G App. A, Tables 8, 9, 10.II
Cauer, D. (1889–1918) 179.B
Cauer, Wilhelm (1900–45) 282.r
Cavalieri, (Francesco) Bonaventura (1598–1647)
20.265
Cayley, Arthur (1821–95) 12.B 54.105.A 137.151.H
157.A 190.Q 226.G 251.I 267.269.F, J 285.A
Cazenave, Thierry 286.Y
Čebyšev → Chebyshev
Čech, Edouard (1893–1960) 110.B, r 117.E 201.A,
M, P 207.C 383.F 425.T, r 426.436.I
Ceder, Jack G. (1933–) 425.Y
Cerf, Jean (1928–) 114.I
Cesari, Lamberto (1910–) 246.r 290.r 314.D, r
394.r
Cesáro, Ernesto (1859–1906) 297.D 379.K, M
Ceva, Giovanni (1647?–1734?) 7.A
Chaber, Józef 273.K
Chacon, Rafael Van Severen (1931–) 136.B, H 162
Chadan, Khosrow (1930–) 375.r
Chaikin, S. E. → Khaikin, S. E.
Chaitin, Gregory J. 71.r 354.D
Chakravarti, Indra-Mohan (1928–) 102.I
Chandler, Colston 274.D, I 386.C
Chandrasekhar, S. 433.r
Chandrasekharan, Komaravolu (1920–) 121.r 123.r
160.r 379.r 450.r
Chang Chen-Chung (1927–) 276.r 293.r
Chang, J. J. 346.E, r
Chang Sun-Yang (1948–) 164.I
Chaplygin, Sergei Alekseevich (1869–1942) 326.B
Chapman, D. G. (1920–) 399.D
Chapman, Sydney (1888–1970) 41.E 260.A 261.A
379.M 402.H, r
Chapman, Thomas A. (1940–) 65.C 382.B, D
Charnes, Abraham (1917–) 255.D, E 408.r
Charpit, Paul (?–1774) 82.C 320.D 322.B App. A,
Table 15.II
Charzyński, Zygmunt (1914–) 438.C
Chase, A. B. 24.r
Chase, Stephen Urban (1932–) 29.r 172.A, K
Chasles, Michel (1793–1880) 12.B 78.J 267.350.C
Châtelet, François (1912–) 118.D
Chaudhuri, Jyoti 63.D
Chaundy, T. 387.C
Chauvenet, William (1820–70) 392.r
Chazarain, Jacques (1942–) 274.r 325.H, M 345.B
378.F
Chazy, Jean (1882–1955) 288.D 420.D
Chebotarev, Nikolai Grigor'evich (1894–1947)
14.S 172.r
Chebyshev, Pafnutii L'vovich (1821–94) 19.G
123.A 223.A 299.A 317.D 336.B, H, J 342.C
App. A, Tables 20.II, VII
Cheeger, Jeff (1943–) 178.B, r 391.D, M, r
Chen Bang-Yen (1943–) 365.F, H, O, r 417.r
Chen Jing-Run (1933–) 4.C, r 123.E 242.A
Chen, T.-C. 142.C, r
Cheney, Elliott Ward (1929–) 142.r
Cheng, J. H. 365.L
Cheng Shiu-Yuen (1948–) 275.H 391.F, H
Ch'êng Ta-Wei (fl. 1592) 57.C
Chern Shiing-Shen (1911–) 21. N, P 50.r 56.C, F, r
80.r 90.r 109.*, r 110.E 111.r 147.A, N 152.C
218.D, E, r 237.B 272.L 275.A, E 279.C 344.B
365.B, H, L, O, r

Chernoff, Herman (1923–) 371.A, C, H, r 374.r 400.K
 Chervonenkis, O. A. NTR
 Cherwell, Lord (Lindemann, Frederick Alexander) 291.F
 Cheung, Fan-Bill 386.r
 Chevalier, Alfred 171
 Chevalier, Jacques 329.r
 Chevalley, Claude (1909–84) 6.A 11.r 12.B 13.B, F, I, N, r 27.r 50.r 59.A, r 60.L, r 61.r 69.D 105.r 118.B, F 125.M 151.I 200.O 248.Q, r 249.U, V, r 256.r 258.r 277.r 284.G 368.r 409.r 423.r 427.B
 Chew, Geoffrey Foucar (1924–) 132.r 386.C, r
 Chien, Robert Tienwen (1931–) 282.r
 Ch'in Chiu-Shao (fl. 1250) 57.B
 Ching Wai-Mee 308.F
 Chisini, Oscar 9.r
 Chittenden, Edward Wilson (1895–1977) 273.K
 Choi Man-Duen (1945–) 36.J 308.r
 Cholesky 298.G, 302.B, D
 Chomsky, Noam (1928–) 31.D 75.E
 Choong, K. Y. 332
 Choquet, Gustave (1915–) 20.r 48.F, H, r 89.r 120.E 139.r 164.C 193.J, N, r 207.C 255.E 338.C, D, H, I, L–O 407.B 424.U, r
 Chow Wei-Liang (1911–) 3.B 12.B 13.F 16.H, R, S 72.F, H
 Chowlá, Sarvandaman D. (1907–) 123.D 450.I, K, r
 Chretien, Max (1924–) 150.r
 Christian, Ulrich Hans Richard Otto (1932–) 32.F, H
 Christoffel, Elwin Bruno (1829–1900) 77.D 80.L 109 111.H 317.D 417.D App. A, Tables 4.II, 13.II
 Chu Hsin 126.N
 Chu Lan Jen (1913–) 133.r
 Chu Shih-Chieh (fl. 1300) 57.B
 Chudakov, Nikolai Grigor'evich (1904–) 4.C
 Chudnovskii, Grigoriĭ V. 430.D, r
 Chung Kai Lai (1917–) 45.r 260.J 342.B
 Church, Alonzo (1903–) 22.G 31.B 75.D 81.A, r 97.*, r 354.r 356.A, C, E, G, r
 Churchman, C. West (1913–) 307.A
 Ciarlet, Phillipe G. (1938–) 300.r 304.r
 Ciesielski, Zbigniew (1934–) 176.G
 Clagett, Marshall (1916–) 187.r 372.r
 Clairaut, Alexis Claude (1713–65) 20 107.A 165.A App. A, Tables 14.I, 15.II
 Clancey, Kevin F. 251.r
 Clark, Charles Edgar (1935–) 376.r
 Clarke, Douglas Albert 356.H, r
 Clarkson, James Andrew (1906–) 443.H
 Clatworthy, Willard H. STR
 Clausius, Rudolf Julius Emmanuel (1822–88) 419.A
 Clebsch, Rudolf Friedrich Alfred (1833–72) 11.B 226.G 353.B
 Clemence, Gerald Maurice (1908–) 55.r 392.r
 Clemens, Charles Herbert (1939–) 16.J
 Clenshaw, Charles William (1926–) 299.A
 Clifford, Alfred H. (1908–) 190.r 243.G
 Clifford, William Kingdon (1845–79) 9.C 61.A, D 275.F
 Clough, Ray William, Jr. (1920–) 304.r
 Coates, John H. (1945–) 118.D 182.r 450.J, r
 Cochran, William Gemmel (1909–80) 102.r 373.r 374.B
 Codazzi, Delfino (1824–73) 111.H 365.C 417.F App. A, Table 4.I
 Coddington, Earl Alexander (1925–) 107.r 252.r 253.r 254.r 314.r 315.r 316.r 394.r

Coffman, Charles V. 246.J
 Cohen, Eckford (1920–) 121.A
 Cohen, Irvin Sol (1917–) 284.A, D, G
 Cohen, Jacob Willem (1923–) 227.r
 Cohen, Marshall M. (1937–) 91.r
 Cohen, Paul Joseph (1934–) 22.F 33.D, r 49.D 192.P, Q
 Cohen, S. G. 353.r
 Cohn, Paul Moritz (1924–) 249.r
 Cohn, Richard M. (1919–) 104.r
 Cohn-Vossen, Stefan (1902–36) 109 111.I 178.F, H 357.r 365.E 410.r
 Coifman, Ronald R. 168.B 251.r
 Cole, B. 164.D
 Cole, J. D. 25.r
 Coleman, Sidney Richard (1937–) 146.C
 Colin de Verdière, Yves (1945–) 391.J
 Collatz, Lothar Otto (1910–) 217.r 298.r
 Collingwood, Edward Foyle (1900–70) 62.C, D, r
 Collins, P. D. B. 386.r
 Combes, Jean-Michel Christian (1941–) 331.F
 Combescur, Édouard (c. 1819 (24?)–?) 111.F
 Commichau, Michael 72.r
 Condon, Edward U. 353.r
 Conforto, Fabio (1909–54) 3.r
 Conley, Charles Cameron (1933–84) 126.E
 Conlon, Laurence William (1933–) 154.H
 Conner, Pierre Euclide, Jr. (1932–) 237.r 431.E, r
 Connes, Alain (1947–) 136.F 308.H, I, r 351.L
 Constantine, Alan Graham 374.r
 Constantinescu, Corneliu (1929–) 193.U 207.C, D, r 367.E, G, r
 Conti, Roberto (1923–) 290.r
 Conway, John Horton 151.I 235.A
 Conway, Richard W. 376.r
 Cook, Joseph M. (1924–) 375.A
 Cook, Roger John (1947–) 118.D
 Cook, Stephen Arthur (1939–) 71.E, r
 Cooke, George Erskine (1932–) 201.r
 Cooke, Kenneth Lloyd (1925–) 163.B
 Cooke, Richard G. 379.r
 Cooley, James William (1926–) 142.D, r 304.r
 Cooper, William (1935–) 255.D, E 408.r
 Copernicus, Nicolaus (1473–1543) 360
 Coppel, William Andrew 314.r
 Corbató, Fernando J. 133.r
 Cordes, Heinz O. (1925–) 345.A
 Coriolis, Gaspard Gustav de (1792–1843) 271.D
 Cornea, Aurel (1933–) 193.U 207.C, D, r 367.E, G, r
 Cornish, Edmund Alfred (1909–73) 374.F
 Cornu, Marie Alfred (1841–1902) 93.H 167.D
 Corwin, Lawrence Jay (1943–) 132.r
 Coster, Joseph 386.C
 Cotes, Roger (1682–1716) 299.A
 Cottle, Richard Warren (1934–) 292.D
 Coulson, Charles Alfred (1910–74) 446.r
 Courant, Richard (1888–1972) 20.*, r 46.r 77.E, r 82.r 106.r 107.r 112.r 120.r 134.r 188.r 189.r 197.r 198.r 204.G 205.r 216.r 217.r 222.r 275.A, C, r 300.r 304.C, F, r 317.r 320.r 321.G, r 322.r 323.E, r 324.r 325.M, r 327.r 334.C, D 389.r 391.H 441.r 446.r
 Cousin, Pierre (1867–1933) 20 21.K, Q
 Cowen, Michael J. (1945–) 124.r
 Cowling, Thomas George (1906–) 259.r 402.r
 Cox, David Roxbee (1924–) 40.r 403.r
 Cox, Gertrude Mary (1900–78) 102.r
 Coxeter, Harold Scott Macdonald (1907–) 13.R 92.r 122.H 151.r 161.r 248.S 285.r 357.r

Cracknell, Arthur P.

Cracknell, Arthur P. 92.r
 Cramer, Gabriel (1704–52) 179.A 269.M 302.A
 Cramér, Harald (1893–1985) 123.r 214.C 242.A
 250.r 341.E, r 374.r 395.r 399.D, M, r 400.r
 Crandall, Michael G. (1940–) 162 286.T, X, r
 Crandall, Stephen Harry (1920–) 298.r
 Crapper, Gordon David (1935–) 205.F
 Crawford, Frank Stevens (1923–) 446.r
 Crelle, August Leopold (1780–1855) 1 NTR
 Cremona, Antonio Luigi Gaudenzio Giuseppe
 (1830–1903) 16.I
 Crittenden, Richard J. (1930–) 413.r
 Crofton, Morgan William (1826–1915) 218.B
 Cronin, Jane (Smiley) (1922–) 153.r
 Crout, Prescott D. 302.B
 Crow, James Franklin (1916–) 115.D 263.r
 Crowell, Richard Henry (1928–) 235.r
 Cryer, Colin W. 303.G
 Csiszár, Imre 213.r
 Čuda, Karel (1947–) 293.E, r
 Curtis, Charles Whittlesey (1926–) 29.r 92.r 151.r
 277.r 362.r
 Curtis, E. 70.r
 Curtis, John H. 299.A
 Cutkosky, Richard Edwin (1928–) 146.A, C 386.C
 Cutland, Nigel John (1944–) 293.r
 Czuber, Emanuel (1851–1925) 19.B

D

Dade, Everett C. (1937–) 92.F
 Dahlquist, Germund (1925–) 303.G
 Dakin, R. J. 215.r
 d'Alembert, Jean le Rond (1717–83) 20 107.B
 130.A 205.C 239 252.F 325.D App. A, Table 10.II
 Damerell, Robert Mark (1942–) 450.M
 Daniell, Percy John (1889–1946) 310.I
 Danilevskii, A. M. 298.D
 Danilov, V. I. 16.Z
 Dankner, Alan (1945–) 126.J
 Dantzig, George Bernard (1914–) 255.C, E, r 264.r
 292.D 408.r
 Darboux, Jean Gaston (1842–1917) 50 109.*, r
 110.B 126.L 158.r 216.A 275.A 317.D 320.C 428.A
 Darmon, Georges 374.H
 Darwin, Charles Robert (1809–82) 40.B
 Dashen, Roger Frederick (1938–) 132.r
 Date, Eturo (1950–) 287.C
 D'Atri, Joseph Eugene (1938–) 364.r 384.E
 Datta, Bibhutibhusan 209.r
 Davenport, Harold (1907–69) 4.E 118.D 192.P
 David, Florence Nightingale (1909–) STR
 David, Herbert Aron (1925–) 346.r 374.r
 Davidenko, Dmitrii Fëdorovich (1922–) 301.M
 Davie, Alexander M. 164.J
 Davies, Laurie 374.r
 Davis, Burgess J. (1944–) 262.B
 Davis, Chandler (1926–) 212.r
 Davis, Harold T. App. A, Table 21.r NTR
 Davis, Martin (David) (1928–) 22.H 31.r 97.*, r
 173.O 293.r 356.H
 Davis, Philip J. (1923–) 223.r 299.r
 Davis, William Jay (1939–) 68.M 443.H
 Davisson, Lee D. (1936–) 213.E
 Day, Mahlon Marsh (1913–) 37.r 310.r
 Daykin, David Edward 332.r
 De Alfaro, Vittorio (1933–) 132.r 375.r
 de Baggis, F. S. 126.A
 Debiard, Amédée 115.r
 Debreu, Gerard (1921–) 173.E 443.A, I

Debye, Peter Joseph William (1884–1966) 25.C, r
 30.C 39.E App. A, Table 19.III
 Dedekind, Julius Wilhelm Richard (1851–1916)
 11.B, r 12.B 14.C–E, J, U 47.49.F, r 67.K 98
 156.A, r 172.A, r 243.F 267 284.G 294.A, E, r
 328 347. H 355.A, r 363.r 379.D 450.A, D, K
 De Giorgi, Ennio 275.F 323.L
 de Haan, David Bierens (1822–95) App. A,
 Table 9.r
 Dehn, Max (1878–1952) 65.E 155.F 196
 Dejon, Bruno F. (1930–) 301.G, r
 Dekkers, A. J. NTR
 Delaunay, Charles Eugène (1816–72) 93.H
 de la Vallée-Poussin, Charles Jean (1866–1962)
 20.r 48.A, B 123.B 379.S 437.r 450.B, I
 Deleanu, Aristide (1932–) 52.r
 Delens, Paul Clément (1889–) 110.r
 de l'Hôpital, Guillaume François Antoine (1661–
 1704) 20
 Deligne, Pierre (1944–) 9.r 12.B 16.V, r 32.D 118.B
 418.r 428.H 450.A, G, H, J, M, Q, S, r App. B,
 Table 5
 Dellacherie, Claude (1943–) 22.r 261.r 262.r 407.B, r
 Deltheil, Robert 218.r
 Demazure, Michel (1937–) 13.r 16.I, Z, r
 de Miatello, I. D. 384.E
 Deming, William Edwards (1900–) 280.J 373.F, r
 Democritus (c. 460–c. 370 B.C.) 187
 de Moivre, Abraham (1667–1754) 74.C 250.A
 342.A
 De Morgan, Augustus (1806–71) 42.A 156.B 157.A
 381.B 411.A, r
 Dénes, József (1932–) 241.r
 Denjoy, Arnaud (1884–1974) 58.F 79 D 100.A, D
 126.I 154.D, H, r 159.I 168.B 429.D
 Denker, Manfred (1944–) 136.H
 Deny, Jacques (1916–) 338.M–P, r
 de Oliveira, Mário Moreria Carvalho 126.J
 De Paris, Jean-Claude 321.G
 de Possel, René (1905–) 77.E 367.F
 Deprit, André Albert (1926–) 420.G
 Deprit-Bartholomé, Andrée 420.G
 de Rham, Georges-William (1903–) 12.B, 105.R,
 V, r, 109.*, r 114.L 125.A, R 194.F, r 201.A, H, I
 237.H 249.V 274.G, 364.E, r, 417.r
 Desargues, Gérard (1593–1662) 155.E 181 265 329
 343.C
 Descartes, René (1596–1650) 7.C 10.E 20 93.H 101
 180.A 181 265 426
 Deser, Stanley (1931–) 150.r
 De-Shalit, Amos (1926–) 353.r
 Desoer, Charles A. (1926–) 86.D
 d'Espagnat, Bernard (1921–) 351.r
 DeTurck, Dennis M. 364.r
 Deuring, Max Friedrich (1907–84) 27.r 29.r 73.A,
 r 123.D 257.r 439.L 450.S, r
 Deutsch, Robert William (1924–) 55.r
 de Vries, G. 387.B
 De Wilde, Marc (1940–) 424.X, r
 DeWitt, Bryce Seligman (1923–) 359.r
 DeWitt (DeWitt-Morette), Cécile (1922–) 150.r
 359.r
 DiCastro, C. 361.r
 Dickinson, Bradley W. (1948–) 86.D
 Dickson, Leonard Eugene (1874–1954) 4.E 10.r
 54.r 60.K 118.A 151.I, r 296.r 297.r
 Didenko, Viktor Pavlovich 326.r
 Dido (Didon, Belus Elissa) 228.A
 Dienes, Paul (1882–1952) 339.r
 Diestel, Joseph (1943–) 37.r 443.A

- Dieudonné, Jean (1906–) 10.r 12.r 13.C 20.r 60.K,
r 139.r 151.r 183.r 200.r 203.r 226.r 321.r 355.r
389.r 424.r 425.S, X, Y 435.r 436.I
- Dijkstra, Edsger Wybe (1930–) 281.C
- Dikii, Leonid Aleksandrovich 387.C
- Diller, Justus (1936–) 155.r
- Dilworth, Robert Palmer (1914–) 281.E
- Dinaburg, E. I. 126.K
- Dinculeanu, Nicolae (1925–) 443.r
- Dinghas, Alexander (1908–74) 124.r 198.r
- Dini, Ulisse (1845–1918) 39.D 111.I 159.B 314.D
435.B
- Dimits, E. A. 281.r
- Dinkelbach, Werner 264.r
- Dinostratus (fl. 350? B.C.) 187
- Diocles (200 B.C.) 93.H
- Diophantus (c. 246–c. 330 or c. 1st century) 118.A
182.F 187 296.A
- Dippolito, Paul Randall (1948–) 154.D
- Dirac, Paul Adrien Maurice (1902–84) 125.C
132.A 150.A 270.D 297.r 351.G, r 359.C 377.B, C, r
App. A, Table 12.II
- Dirichlet, Peter Gustav Lejeune (1805–59) 14.D, U
84.D 98 119.r 120.A, F 121.A 123.D 159.B 160.B
164.B, 165.A, r 182.A 193.F 234.C 242.A 261.C 267
295.D 296.A, B 323.C, E 334.C 338.Q 341.D 347.E,
H, r 348.M 379.C, D 440.B 450.A, C, K App. A,
Table 9.V
- Dixmier, Jacques (1924–) 18.I 36.r 68.I 308.F, r
351.C 437.r
- Dixon, A. C. (1865–1936) App. A, Table 19.IV
- Dmitriev, N. A. 44.r
- Dobrushin, Roland L'vovich (1929–) 250.r 340.B,
r 402.G 407.B
- d'Ocagne, Maurice (1862–1938) 19.D, r
- do Carmo, Manfredo Perdigão 111.r 275.A, B
365.G, r
- Doetsch, Gustav (1892–1977) 43.E 208.r 240.r
379.M
- Doi, Koji (1934–) 450.L
- Doig, Alison G. 215.D
- Dolansky, Ladislav NTR
- Dolbeault, Pierre (1924–) 72.D
- Dolbeault-Lemoine, Simone 365.E
- Dold, Albrecht E. (1928–) 70.F, r 201.r
- Dolgachëv, Igor V. App. A, Table 5.V
- Dollard, John Day (1937–) 375.B
- Domb, Cyril 361.r 402.r
- Donaldson, Simon K. 114.K, r
- Dongarra, Jack J. (1950–) 298.r
- Donin, Iosif Failovich (1945–) 72.G
- Donnelly, Harold Gerard (1951–) 391.N
- Donoghue, William F., Jr. 212.r
- Donsker, Monroe David (1924–) 250.E 340.r
- Doob, Joseph Leo (1910–) 5.r 45.r 62.E 86.E 115.r
136.B 162 193.T 207.C 250.r 260.J 261.A, F, r
262.A, B, D 341.r 342.r 395.r 406.A 407.A, r
- Doolittle, M. H. 302.B
- Doplicher, Sergio (1940–) 150.E
- Dorfmeister, Josef F. (1946–) 384.r
- Dörge, Karl (1898–1975) 337.F
- Dorn, William Schroeder (1928–) 349.r
- Dornhoff, Larry 362.r
- Douady, Adrien (1935–) 23.G 72.G
- Douglas, Jesse (1897–1965) 77.E 109 152.C 275.A,
C 334.C, D, F, r
- Douglas, R. G. (1938–) 36.J, r 164.I 251.r 390.J, r
- Douglis, Avron (1918–) 112.H 323.H
- Dowker, Clifford Hugh (1912–82) 117.E 201.M
425.S, Y
- Drach, Jules (1871–1941) 107.A
- Drake, Frank Robert (1936–) 33.r
- Draper, Norman Richard (1931–) 102.r
- Drasin, David (1940–) 272.K, r
- Dreitlein, Joseph F. (1934–) 132.r
- Drell, Sidney David (1926–) 132.r 150.r
- Dreyfus, Stuart Ernest (1931–) 127.r
- Driver, Rodney D. (1932–) 163.B
- Dryden, H. L. 433.r
- Dubinsky, Ed (1935–) 168.B
- de Bois-Reymond, Paul David Gustave (1831–89)
159.H 379.D
- Dubreil, Paul 243.r
- Dubreil-Jacotin, Marie-Louise 243.r
- Dubrovín, B. A. 387.r
- Dubyago, Alexander Dmitrievich (1903–59) 309.r
- Dudley, Richard Mansfield (1938–) 176.G
- Duffin, Richard J. 264.r
- Duffing, G. 290.C
- Dufresnoy, Jacques 17.C 124.B
- Dugundji, James (1919–85) 425.r
- Duhem, Pierre Maurice Marie (1861–1916) 419.B
- Duijvestijn, A. J. W. (1927–) NTR
- Duistermaat, Johannes Jisse (1942–) 274.B, I
345.B, r 391.J
- Dulac, M. H. 289.C, D, r
- Dunford, Nelson (1906–) 37.r 68.M 112.I, O 136.B,
r 162.*, r 168.r 240.r 251.G, r 310.r 315.r 331.r
378.B, r 390.K, r 443.A, F–H, r
- Dupin, Pierre Charles François (1784–1873) 111.H
- Durand, E. 301.F
- Durand, William Frederick (1859–1958) 222.r
- Duren, Peter Larkin (1935–) 43.r 438.r
- Dürer, Albrecht (1471–1528) 360
- Durfee, Alan H. (1943–) 154.B 418.r
- Duschek, Adalbert (1895–1957) 111.r
- Du Val, Patrick (1903–) 418.C
- Duvaut, Georges (1934–) 440.r
- Dvoretzky, Aryeh (1916–) 45.r 443.D
- Dwork, Bernard M. (1923–) 450.G, Q
- Dwyer, Paul Summer (1901–) 298.r
- Dydak, Jerzy 382.A, C
- Dye, Henry Abel (1926–) 136.F, r
- Dyer, S. Eldon, Jr. (1929–) 237.r
- Dym, Harry (1938–) 176.K
- Dynkin, Evgenii Borisovich (1924–) 115.A, r 248.S,
r 250.r 261.A, C 270.B App. A, Table 5.I
- Dyson, Freeman John (1923–) 132.C 146.A 150.A
182.G 212.B 402.G
- Dzyaloshinskii, Igor Ekhiel'vich (1931–) 402.r
- E
- Easton, William B. 33.F, r
- Eberlein, Ernst 136.H
- Eberlein, Patrick Barry (1944–) 178.r
- Eberlein, William Frederick (1917–) 37.G 162 424.V
- Ebin, David G. (1942–) 178.B 183.r
- Eckmann, Beno (1917–) 200.I
- Eddington, Sir Arthur Stanley (1882–1944) 109
App. A, Table 4.II
- Eden, Richard John (1922–) 146.A, C, r 386.C, r
- Edgeworth, Francis Ysidro (1845–1926) 374.F
- Edmond, C. 432.r
- Edmonds, Alan Robert (1922–) 353.r
- Edrei, Albert (1914–) 17.D 272.K, r
- Edwards, Harold M. (1936–) 123.r
- Edwards, Robert Duncan (1942–) 65.A, C, F 154.H
- Eells, James (1926–) 105.r 114.B 183.*, r 194.r
195.E, r

Effros, Edward George

- Effros, Edward George (1935–) 36.H, J 308.r
 Efron, Bradley (1938–) 399.O
 Egorov, Dmitrii Fëdorovich (1869–1931) 270.J
 Egorov, Ivan Petrovich (1915–) 364.F
 Egorov, Yurii Vladimirovich (1938–) 112.D 274.C, I 345.A, B
 Ehrenfest, Paul (1880–1933) 260.A 402.r
 Ehrenfest, Tatiana Alekseevna Afanaseva 260.A 402.r
 Ehrenpreis, Leon (1930–) 112.B, C, R 125.S 320.H 437.EE
 Ehresmann, Charles (1905–79) 80.A, r 90.r 109 154.A, r
 Ehrlich, Louis W. (1927–) 301.F
 Ehrlich, Paul Ewing (1948–) 301.r 364.r
 Eichler, Martin Maximilian Emil (1912–) 11.B, r 13.P 27.D, r 32.D, H, r 60.r 61.r 348.r 450.A, L, M, S
 Eicken, W. 75.r
 Èidel'man, Samuil Davidovich (1921–) 112.B 327.H
 Eilenberg, Samuel (1913–) 31.r 52.r 70.E–G, r 75.r 91.r 200.K, M, O, r 201.A, C, E, G, J, Q 202.B, T 210.r 277.r 305.A 426.*, r
 Einstein, Albert (1879–1955) 45.A 109 129 132.A 137 150.A 256.J 285.A 351.A 359.A, B, D, r 364.D, I 434.C, r App. A, Table 4.II
 Eisenberg, Edmund (?–1965) 292.D
 Eisenhart, Luther Pfahler (1876–1965) 109.*, r 111.r 417.r
 Eisenstein, Ferdinand Gotthold Max (1823–52) 14.O 32.C, F 296.A 337.F 339.E 450.T
 Ejiri, Norio (1953–) 275.A 364.F 365.G 391.C
 Elias, Peter (1923–) 213.F
 Eliasson, Halldór Ingimar (1939–) 364.H
 Elliott, George Arthur (1945–) 36.H, K, r
 Elliott, Peter D. T. A. 295.r
 Ellis, George F. R. (1939–) 359.r
 El'sgol'ts, Lev Ernestovich (1909–67) 163.r
 Elworth, Kenneth David (1940–) 183 286.D 406.r
 Emch, Gerald Gustav (1936–) 351.r
 Emde, Fritz 389.r NTR
 Emden, Robert (1862–1940) 291.F
 Endo Shizuo (1933–) 200.K
 Eneström, Gustav (1852–1923) 10.E
 Enflo, Per (1944–) 37.G, L
 Engel, Friedrich (1861–1941) 247.r 248.F 249.r
 Engelking, Ryszard 117.r 273.r 425.r 436.r
 Enneper, A. 275.A, B
 Ennola, Veikko Olavi (1932–) App. B. Table 5.r
 Enoki Ichiro (1956–) 72.K
 Enomoto Hikoe (1945–) App. B, Table 5
 Enright, Wayne H. 303.r
 Enriques, Federigo (1871–1946) 9.r 12.B, r 15.B, E, G, H, r 72.K
 Enskog, David (1884–1947) 41.E 217.N 402.H
 Enss, Volker (1942–) 375.D
 Epstein, David Bernard Alper (1937–) 154.H
 Epstein, Henri (1932–) 125.W 150.D 212.B 386.B, r
 Epstein, Paul Sophus (1883–) 450.A, K
 Eratosthenes (275–194 B.C.) 187 297.B
 Erbacher, Joseph A. 365.H
 Erdélyi, Artur (1908–77) 25.r 30.r 220.r 254.r 389.r App. A, Table 20.r
 Erdős Paul (1913–) 4.A 45.r 123.C, r 241.E 250.r 295.E 328 336.E 342.B
 Erlang, A. K. 260.H 307.C
 Ernst, B. 359.E
 Ernst, Bruno (1947–) 424.r
 Escobal, Pedro Ramon 309.r
 Eskin, Grigorii Il'ich (1936–) 274.C, I 345.B
 Estermann, Theodor 4.C, D 123.D
 Estes, William Kaye 346.G
 Ethier, Stewart N. 263.r
 Euclid (Eukleides) (c. 303–c. 275 B.C.) 13.R 24.C 35.A 67.L 70.B 93.A 139.A, B, E 140 150.F 155.A 179.A 180.A 181 187 285.A, C 296.A 297.A, B 332 337.D 364.B 412.H 423.M 425.V
 Eudoxus (c. 408–c. 355 B.C.) 20 187
 Euler, Leonhard (1707–83) 4.C 16.E 20 38 46.A, B 56.B, F 65.A 83.A 90.C 93.C 107.A, B 126.A 131.D, G 141 145 165.A, r 174.A, C 177.C, D 181 186.A, F 201.B, F, N 204.E 205.A, B 240.A 241.B 266 271.E, F 275.A 294.A 295.C, E 296.A 297.D, H 303.D, E 320.D 332 379.I–K 419.B 420.B 432.C 441.B 450.B App. A, Tables 3.V, 14.I App. B, Tables 3.I, 6.IV
 Evans, Griffith Conrad (1887–1973) 48.E 120.D 338.H
 Evens, Leonard (1933–) 200.M
 Everett, J. D. 223.C App. A, Table 21
 Ewens, Warren J. 263.r
- F**
- Faber, Georg (1877–) 228.B 336.I 391.D 438.B
 Fabry, Eugène (1856–1944) 339.D
 Faddeev, Dmitrii Konstantinovich (1907–) 112.P 302.r
 Faddeev, Lyudvig Dmitrievich (1934–) 132.C 150.G 375.F 387.G
 Faddeeva, Vera Nikolaevna (1906–) 302.r
 Fagnano, Giulio Carlo (1682–1766) 20
 Falb, Peter L. (1936–) 86.D
 Fälthammar, Carl-Gunne (1931–) 259.r
 Faltings, Gerd (1954–) 118.E 145
 Fan Ky (1914–) 153.D
 Fannes, Marcus Marie-Paul (1950–) 402.G
 Fano, Gino (1871–1952) 12.B 137.r
 Fano, Robert Mario (1917–) 130.r 213.F
 Fano, Ugo (1912–) 353.r
 Fantappiè, Luigi 125.A
 Faraday, Michael (1791–1867) 150.A
 Farey, J. 4.B
 Farkas, Julius (1847–1930) 255.B, E
 Farquhar, Ian E. 402.r
 Farrell, O. J. 164.J
 Farrell, Roger Hamlin (1929–) 398.r
 Fary, Istvan (1922–?) 111.r 365.O
 Fathi, Albert 126.N
 Fatou, Pierre (1878–1929) 21.Q 43.D 221.C 272.D 339.D
 Fattorini, Hector O. 378.D
 Favard, Jean (1902–) 336.C
 Fazar, W. 376.r
 Federer, Herbert (1920–) 246.r 275.A, G, r 334.F
 Fedorov, Evgraf Stepanovich (1853–1919) 92.F 122.H
 Fedorov, Vyatseslav Vasil'evich 102.r
 Feferman, Solomon (1928–) 81.A
 Fefferman, Charles L. (1949–) 21.P, Q 168.B, r 224.E 262.B 320.r 344.D, F 345.A, B
 Feinberg, Stephen E. 403.r
 Feinstein, Amiel 213.F
 Feit, Walter (1930–) 151.D, J, r 362.r
 Fejér, Lipót (Leopold) (1880–1959) 43.J 77.B 159.C 255.D
 Fekete, Mihály (Michael) (1886–1957) 48.D 445
 Feldblum 179.B
 Feldman, Jacob (1928–) 136.F

Fel'dman, Naum Il'ich 118.D 430.D, r
 Fell, James Michael Gardner (1923–) 308.M
 Feller, William (1906–70) 112.J 115.A, r 250.r 260.J
 261.A, B 263.r 341.r 342.r 378.B
 Fenchel, Werner (1905–) 89.r 109 111.F 365.O
 Fendel, D. App. B, Table 5
 Fenstad, Jens Erik 356.F, r
 Fermat, Pierre de (1601–65) 4.D 20 109 144 145
 180.A 265 296.A 297.F, G 329 342.A 441.C
 Fermi, Enrico (1901–54) 132, 287.A, r 351.H 377.B
 402.E
 Fernique, Xavier 176.G
 Ferrar, William Leonard (1893–) App. A, Table
 19. IV
 Ferrari, Ludovico (1522–65) 8 10.D 360 444
 App. A, Table I
 Ferrero, Bruce 14.L 450.J
 Ferrers, N. M. 393.C
 Ferus, Dirk 365.E, J, N, O, r
 Feshbach, Herman (1917–) 25.r
 Fet, Abram Il'ich (1924–) 279.G
 Feynman, Richard Phillips (1918–) 132.C 146.A, B
 150.A, F 351.F 361.A
 Fibonacci (Leonardo da Pisa, Leonardo Pisano)
 (c. 1174–c. 1250) 295.A 372
 Fiedler, Wilhelm 350.r
 Fienberg, Stephen Elliott (1942–) 280.r
 Fierz, Markus Edoward (1912–) 150.A
 Fife, Paul C. 95.r 263.D
 Figiel, Tadeusz 68.K, M
 Figueira, Mário Sequeira Rodrigues 286.Y
 Filippov, Aleksei Fedorovich (1923–) 22.r
 Fillmore, Peter Arthur (1936–) 36.J 390.J, r
 Finn, Robert (1922–) 204.D, r 275.A, D
 Finney, David John (1917–) 40.r
 Finney, Ross L. 201.r
 Finsler, Paul (1894–1970) 109 152.A 286.L
 Fischer, Arthur Elliot 364.H
 Fischer, Bernd (1936–) 151.I, J
 Fischer, Ernst (1875–1956) 168.B 317.A
 Fischer, Gerd 23.r
 Fischer-Colbrie, Doris Helga (1949–) 275.F
 Fisher, Michael Ellis (1931–) 361.r
 Fisher, Ronald Aylmer (1890–1962) 19.r 40.B
 102.A, E, r 263.E 371.A, C 374.B, F 397.r 399.D,
 K, N, O, r 400.G 401.B, C, F, G, r 403.A, F, r STR
 Fisher, Stephen D. 43.G 77.E
 Fix, George Joseph (1939–) 300.r 304.r
 Flammer, Carson (1919–) 133.r
 Flanders, Harley (1925–) 94.r 432.r 442.r
 Flaschka, Hermann (1945–) 287.B, r
 Fleissner, William G. 273.K
 Fleming, Wendell Helms (1928–) 108.A 275.A, G
 334.F 405.r
 Flon, L. 75.r
 Floquet, G. 107.A 252.J 268.B
 Floyd, Edwin E. (1924–) 237.r 431.E, r
 Focken, C. M. 116.r
 Föder, Géza (1927–77) 33.r
 Fodor, Jerry A. 96.r
 Fogarty, John 226.r
 Fogels, E. 123.D, F
 Foguel, Shaul R. 136.C
 Foias, Ciprian (1933–) 251.N
 Fok (Fock), Vladimir Aleksandrovich (1898–1974)
 105.C 377.A, r
 Fokker, Adriaan Daniël 115.A 402.I
 Fomin, Sergei Vasil'evich (1917–75) 2.F 46.r
 136.G
 Fong, Paul 151.J App. B, Table 5.r

Name Index

Frobenius, Ferdinand Georg

Ford, Lester R. (1896–1971) 234.C, r 281.r 282.r
 Ford, Walter Burton (1874–1971) 30.r
 Forelli, Frank (1932–) 164.G, H, K
 Forrester, Jay Wright (1918–) 385.B, r
 Forst, Gunner 338.r
 Forster, Otto F. (1937–) 72.r
 Forsyth, Andrew Russell (1858–1942) 289.B 428.r
 App. A, Table 14.r
 Forsythe, George Elmer (1917–72) 302.r 304.r
 Fort, Marion Kirkland, Jr. (1921–) 65.r
 Fort, T. 104.r
 Fortet, Robert Marie (1912–) 395.r
 Fortuin, C. M. 212.A
 Foster, Ronald Martin (1896–) 220.r
 Fotiadi, Dimitri 146.A, C
 Fourier, Jean-Baptiste-Joseph (1768–1830) 10.E
 18.B 20 36.L 39.D 125.O, P, BB 142.D 158 159.A
 160.A–D 176.I 192.B, D, F, K, O 197.C 220.B
 255.E 266 267 274.C 317.A 327.B 345.B 437.Z
 App. A, Tables 11. I, II
 Fowler, Kenneth Arthur (1916–) 151.J
 Fowler, Ralph Howard (1889–1944) 402.r
 Fox, Ralph Hunter (1913–73) 65.G 235.A, C, G, r
 382.A
 Fraenkel, Abraham Adolf (1891–1965) 33.A, B, D,
 r 47.r 381.r
 Frame, J. S. App. B, Table 5
 Francis, J. G. F. 298.F
 Frank, Philipp (1884–1966) 129.r
 Frankel, Theodore T. (1929–) 364.D
 Franklin, Philip (1898–1965) 157.A, E
 Franklin, Stanley P. (1931–) 425.CC
 Franks, John M. (1943–) 126.J, K
 Franz, Wolfgang (1905–) 91.r 337.F
 Fraser, Donald Alexander Stuart (1925–) 396.r
 401.r
 Frautschi, Steven Clark (1933–) 386.r
 Fréchet, René Maurice (1878–1973) 37.O 87.K, r
 117.H 246.A, I 273.A, r 286.E, K 424.I 425.Q, S,
 CC, r 426
 Fredholm, Erik Ivar (1866–1927) 20 68.A, E, F, K,
 L 120.A 162 217.A, E, F, r 222.A 251.D 286.E
 339.D
 Freedman, David A. (1938–) 250.r
 Freedman, Michael Hartley (1951–) 114.K, r
 Frege, Friedrich Ludwig Gottlob (1848–1925)
 156.B 411.A, r
 Freitag, Eberhard (1942–) 32.F
 Frenet, Jean-Frédéric (1816–1900) 110.A 111.D
 App. A, Table 4.I
 Fresnel, Augustin Jean (1788–1827) 167.D App. A,
 Tables 9.V, 19.II
 Freudenthal, Hans (1905–) 162 178.F 202.A, U, r
 248.r 249.r 265 310.A, D
 Freyd, Peter John (1936–) 52.r 200.r
 Fricke, Robert (1861–1930) 32.r 73.r 122.r 233.r
 234.r
 Friedberg, Richard Michael (1935–) 356.D
 Friedman, Avner (1932–) 108.A, B 115.D 286.r
 320.r 322.r 327.r 406.r 440.r
 Friedman, James W. 173.E
 Friedman, Lawrence 307.r
 Friedman, Nathaniel A. (1938–) 136.E, r
 Friedrichs, Kurt Otto (1901–83) 112.D, I, S 125.A
 162 204.G 205.r 252.r 300.r 304.F 323.H, r 325.G,
 r 326.D 331.A 345.A 351.K 375.A
 Fristedt, Bert (1937–) 5.r
 Frobenius, Ferdinand Georg (1849–1917) 1.r 2.B
 3.A, D, N 14.K 29.H 107.A 145 151.H 154.B
 190.Q, r 191.B 257.D 267 269.I, N 280.F 286.H

297.I 310.H 362.E, G 390.B 428.A, D 437.EE
 450.P App. A, Table 14.I
 Fröhlich, Albrecht (1916–) 14.r 59.r
 Fröhlich, Jürg M. (1946–) 402.G
 Froissart, Marcel (1934–) 146.A 386.B
 Frolik, Zdeněk (1933–) 425.Y, CC 436.r
 Fronsdal, Christian (1931–) 132.r
 Frostman, Otto Albin (1907–77) 48.A, G 120.D
 338.C, r
 Froude, William (1810–79) 116.B
 Fu, James Chuan (1937–) 399.M
 Fubini, Guido (1879–1943) 109 110.B, r 221.E
 270.L
 Fubini, Sergio Piero (1928–) 132.r
 Fuchs, Immanuel Lazarus (1833–1902) 32.B 107.A
 119.r 122.C 178.F 234.B 288.B App. A, Table 18.I
 Fuchs, Ladislav 2.r
 Fuchs, Maximilian Ernst Richard (1873–) 253.A, E
 288.D
 Fuchs, Wolfgang Heinrich (1915–) 17.D 272.K, r
 Fueter, Karl Rudolf (1880–1950) 73.r
 Fuglede, Bent (1925–) 48.H 143.B 338.E
 Fujii, Hiroshi (1940–) 304.D
 Fuji'i'e, Tatuo (1930–) 143.r
 Fujiki, Akira (1947–) 23.G 72.H 232.C
 Fujikoshi, Yasunori (1942–) 280.r
 Fujimagari, Tetsuo (1943–) 44.E
 Fujimoto, Hirotaka (1937–) 21.M, N
 Fujisaki, Genjiro (1930–) 6.F 450.L
 Fujisaki, Masatoshi (1943–) 86.E 405.r
 Fujisawa, Rikitarō (1861–1933) 267
 Fujishige Satoru (1947–) 66.r 281.r
 Fujita, Hiroshi (1928–) 204.B–D 304.r 378.J
 Fujita, Takao (1949–) 9.r 15.H 72.I
 Fujiwara, Daisuke (1939–) 323.H 345.B
 Fujiwara, Masahiko (1943–) 118.C, D
 Fujiwara, Matsusaburō (1881–1946) 89.E 230.*, r
 240.B App. A, Table 9.r
 Fukamiya, Masanori (1912–) 162
 Fuks, Boris Abramovich (1907–75) 21.r 198.r
 Fuks, Dmitrii Borisovich 105.AA, r 154.G
 Fukushima Masatoshi (1935–) 115.C 261.r
 Fulkerson, Delbert Ray (1924–76) 376.r
 Fuller, Francis Brock 126.G, N
 Fulton, William (1939–) 9.r 16.I 366.E, r 418.r
 Funk, Paul 46.r 109
 Furlan, Giuseppe (1935–) 132.r
 Fürstenberg, Hillel 136.C, H
 Furtwängler, Philipp (1869–1940) 14.L, O, R 59.A,
 D, F 145

G

Gaal, S. A. 425.r
 Gabriel, Pierre (1933–) 13.r 52.r
 Gabriellov, A. M. App. A, Table 5.V
 Gackstatter, Fritz (1941–) 275.E
 Gagliardo, Emilio 224.A
 Gaier, D. 77.r
 Gaifman, Haim (1934–) 33.r
 Galambos, János (1940–) 374.r
 Galanter, Eugene H. 96.r
 Gale, David (1921–) 22.H
 Galerkin, Boris Grigor'evich (1871–1945) 303.I
 304.B
 Galilei, Galileo (1564–1642) 78.F 107.A 126.A 265
 271.A 359.C 360
 Gallager, Robert G. 63.r 213.E, F
 Gallagher, Patrick Ximenes (1935–) 123.E
 Gallavotti, Giovanni 136.G

Gallot, Sylvestre (1948–) 364.G
 Galois, Évariste (1811–32) 8 83.C 137 149.M 151.D
 171.*, r 172.A, B, G, H 190.Q 200.N 267
 Galton, Francis (1822–1911) 40.B 44.B, C, r 401.E
 Galvin, Fred (1936–) 33.F
 Gambier, Bertrand Olivier (1879–1954) 288.C
 Gamelin, Theodore Williams (1939–) 36.r 43.r
 164.G, H, J, K, r 169.r
 Gamkrelidze, Revaz Valerianovich 86.r
 Gandy, Robin Oliver 81.A 356.r
 Gangolli, Ramesh A. (1935–) 5.r 437.EE
 Gantmakher, Feliks Ruvimovich (1908–64) 103.r
 248.r
 Garabedian, Paul Roesel (1927–) 77.E 107.r 438.C
 Garbow, Burton S. 298.r
 Garcia, August 136.B
 Gårding, Lars (1919–) 112.G, N 189.B, r 321.G
 323.H 325.F, J, r 345.A
 Gardner, Clifford S. (1924–) 387.B, D
 Garfinkel, Robert S. (1939–) 215.r
 Garland, Howard (1937–) 122.G
 Garnett, John B. (1940–) 164.F, J 169.E, r
 Garnier, René (1887–) 253.E 288.C, D 334.C
 Garnir, Henri (1921–85) 189.r
 Garsia, Adriano M. (1928–) 262.r
 Garside, F. A. 235.F
 Garside, G. R. 301.N
 Gaschütz, Wolfgang (1920–) 151.D
 Gass, S. I. 255.r
 Gastwirth, Joseph L. (1938–) 371.H
 Gâteaux, R. 286.E
 Gauduchon, Paul (1945–) 109.r 391.r
 Gauss, Carl Friedrich (1777–1855) 3.A 10.E 11.B
 14.U, r 16.V 73.A 74.A, C, r 77.B 83.A 94.F 99.C
 107.A 109 111.F–H 118.A 120.A 123.A 136.C
 149.I 174.A 175 176.A–C, F, H 179.A 180.B 193.D
 206.A 223.C 242.A 253.B 267 275.C 279.C 285.A
 294.A 295.D 296.A, B 297.I 299.A 302.B, C 309.C,
 r 327.D 337.D 338.J 341.D 347.H 357.A 364.D, H
 365.C 401.E 403 407.D 417.F 426 441.B 450.C
 App. A, Tables 3.III, 4.I, 10, 14.II, 16.III, 21
 Gaveau, Bernard (1950–) 115.r
 Gear, Charles William (1935–) 303.E, G, r
 Gegenbauer, Leopold (1849–1903) 317.D 393.E
 App. A, Table 20.I
 Gel'fand, Izrail' Moiseevich (1913–) 32.r 36.E, G, L
 46.r 82.r 105.AA, r 112.O, r 125.A, Q, S 136.G
 154.G 160.r 162.*, r 168.B 183.r 192.G 218.F, G
 256.r 258.r 287.C 308.D 341.r 375.G 387.C, D
 395.r 407.C 424.T, r 437.W, EE, r 443.A, F, H
 450.A, T
 Gel'fond, Aleksandr Osipovich (1906–68) 182.G
 196 295.r 430.A, D, r
 Gell-Mann, Murray (1929–) 132.A, D, r 150.C
 361.r
 Gentzen, Gerhard (1909–45) 156.E 411.J, r
 Geöcze, Zoard de 246.D, E
 Geoffrion, Arthur M. 215.D, r
 Georgescu, V. 375.B
 Gérard, Raymond (1932–) 428.H, r
 Gerbert (Silvester II) (940?–1003) 372
 Gerhardt, Carl Immanuel (1816–99) 245.r
 Germain, Sophie (1776–1831) 111.H 145 App. A,
 Table 4.I
 Gerstner, Franz Joseph von (1789–1823) 205.F
 Getoor, Ronald Kay (1929–) 5.r 261.r 262.r
 Gevrey, Maurice-Joseph (1884–1957) 58.G, r
 125.U 168.B 325.I 327.C
 Ghosh, Javanta Kumar (1937–) 374.F 396.r 399.O
 Ghosh, Sakti P. 96.r

- Ghouila-Houri, Alain 281.r 282.r
 Giacaglia, Giorgio Eugenio Oscare 290.r
 Gibbs, Josiah Willard (1839–1903) 136.A, C 159.D
 340.B 402.B, D, G 419.B, C, r
 Gierer, Alfred (1929–) 263.D
 Giesecker, David (1943–) 16.Y 72.K
 Giga Yoshikazu (1955–) 204.C
 Gikhman, Iosif Il'ich (1918–?) 406.r
 Gilbert, Edgar N. (1923–) 63.B
 Gilford, Dorothy Morrow (1919–) 227.r
 Gilkey, Peter Belden (1946–) 391.N, r
 Gill, Stanley Jensen (1929–) 303.D
 Gillies, Donald Bruce (1928–75) 114.D 173.D
 Gillman, Leonard (1917–) 425.r
 Gindikin, Semen Grigor'evich (1937–) 384.C, r
 Gini, Corrado 397.E
 Ginibre, Jean (1938–) 212.A, r 375.F
 Giraud, Georges 323.C, F
 Giraud, Jean (1936–) 200.M
 Giri, Narayan C. (1928–) 280.r
 Girsanov, Igor Vladimirovich (1934–) 115.D 136.D
 406.B
 Girshick, M. A. 398.r 399.F, r
 Giusti, Enrico (1940–) 275.F
 Givens, James Wallace, Jr. (1910–) 298.D
 Glaeser, Georges (1918–) 58.C, r
 Glaser, V. 150.D 386.B
 Glashow, Sheldon Lee (1932–) 132.D
 Glauber, Roy J. 340.C
 Glauberman, George Isaac (1941–) 151.J, r
 Glauert, Hermann (1892–1934) 205.B, D
 Glazman, Izrail' Markovich (1916–68) 197.r 251.r
 390.r
 Gleason, Andrew Mattei (1921–) 164.F 196 351.L
 Gleser, Leon Jay (1939–) 399.M
 Glezerman, M. 201.r
 Glicksberg, Irving Leonard (1925–83) 86.r 425.T
 Glimm, James Gilbert (1934–) 36.H 150.F, r
 204.G, r 308.L
 Glivenko, Valerii Ivanovich (1896–1940) 374.E
 411.F, J, r
 Glowinski, Roland (1937–) 440.r
 Gluck, Herman R. (1937–) 183.r
 Gnanadesikan, Ramanathan 280.r
 Gnedenko, Boris Vladimirovich (1912–) 250.r
 341.G 374.G
 Godbillon, Claude 154.G, r 201.r
 Gödel, Kurt (1906–78) 22.H 31.B 33.A, C, D, F, r
 49.D 97.* 156.E, r 184 185.A, C, r 276.D 356.A–C, r
 411.J, r
 Godement, Roger (1921–) 36.L 103.r 192.r 200.r
 201.r 256.r 277.r 337.r 368.r 383.E, r 450.A, L, T
 Godwin, A. N. 51.r
 Gokhberg (Gohberg), Izrail' Tsudikovich (1928–)
 68.A, J, r 251.r 390.H, r
 Goldbach, Christian (1690–1764) 4.C
 Gol'dberg, Anatolii Asirovich (1930–) 17.C 272.K, r
 Goldberg, Richard R. 160.r
 Goldberg, Samuel I. (1923–) 105.r 110.E 194.r
 364.F 417.r
 Golden, Sidney (1917–) 212.B
 Goldman, Oscar (1925–) 29.K 200.L
 Goldschmidt, David M. 151.J
 Gol'dsheid (Goldseid), I. J. 340.r
 Goldstein, Sheldon (1947–) 136.G
 Goldstein, Sydney (1903–) 205.r 268.C
 Goldstine, Herman Heine (1913–) 75.r 138.r
 Goldstone, Jeffrey (1933–) 132.C
 Golod, Evgenii Solomonovich (1934–) 59.F 161.C
 Golub, Gene Howard (1932–) 302.r
 Goluzin, Gennadii Mikhailovich (1906–52) 48.r
 77.r 438.B, C, r
 Gomory, Ralph E. (1929–) 215.B, C, r
 González-Acuña, Francisco 235.E
 Good, Irving John (1916–) 403.G, r
 Goodier, James Norman (1905–) 271.r
 Goodman, Timothy N. T. (1947–) 126.K 136.H
 Goodner, Dwight Benjamin (1913–) 37.M
 Goodwyn, L. Wayne 126.K 136.H
 Göpel, Gustav Adolph (1812–47) 3.A
 Goppa, V. D. 63.E
 Gordan, Paul Albert (1837–1912) 11.B 226.G
 255.E 353.B
 Gordon, Marilyn K. 303.r
 Gordon, Walter (1893–1940) 351.G 377.C 387.A
 Gorenstein, Daniel (1923–) 151.J, r 200.K
 Gor'kov, Lev Petrovich (1929–) 402.r
 Gorny, A. 58.D
 Gorry, G. Anthony 215.r
 Gottschalk, W. D. 126.r
 Goulaouic, Charles (?–1983) 323.N
 Goursat, Edouard Jean-Baptiste (1858–1936) 11.r
 20.r 46.r 92.F 94.F 193.O 198.B 217.F, r 278.r
 320.r 321.r 322.r 324.r 428.r
 Govorov, Nikolai Vasil'evich (1928–) 272.K
 Grad, Harold (1923–) 41.B
 Graeffe (Gräffe), Carl Heinrich (1799–1873) 301.N
 Graeb, Werner 256.r
 Graev, Mark Iosifovich (1922–) 125.r 162.r 183.r
 218.r 437.r
 Graff, Karl F. 446.r
 Gragg, William Bryant (1936–) 303.F
 Graham, Ronald Lewis (1935–) 376.r
 Gram, Jørgen Pedersen (1850–1916) 103.G 208.E
 226.E 302.E 317.A
 Grammel, Richard (1889–) 19.r
 Granoff, Barry (1938–) 325.L
 Grant, J. A. 301.L
 Grashof, Franz (1826–93) 116.B
 Grassmann, Hermann Günther (1809–77) 90.B
 105.A 147.I 199.B 256.O 267
 Grau, Albert A. (1918–) 301.E
 Grauert, Hans (1930–) 20 21.I, L, Q, r 23.E–G, r
 32.F 72.E, G, H, J, r 118.E 147.r 178.F 194.F 232.r
 418.B
 Graunt, John (1620–74) 40.A 401.E
 Gray, Andrew 39.r
 Gray, John Walker (1931–) 110.E
 Gray, Robert M. (1943–) 213.E, F
 Graybill, Franklin Arno (1921–) 403.r
 Green, Albert E. 271.r
 Green, George (1793–1841) 45.D 94.F 105.W
 120.A 188.A 189.A, B 193.D, J, N 252.K 315.B
 327.D App. A, Tables 3.III, 4.II, 15.VI
 Green, H. E. 291.F
 Green, Herbert Sydney (1920–) 402.J, r
 Green, James Alexander (1926–) App. B, Table 5.r
 Green, Leon W. (1925–) 136.G 178.G
 Green, Mark L. (1947–) 21.N
 Green, Melville S. 361.r 402.r
 Greenberg, Bernard G. (1919–85) 374.r
 Greenberg, Leon (1931–) 234.D, r
 Greenberg, Marvin Jay (1935–) 93.r 118.r 201.r
 Greene, John M. (1928–) 387.B
 Greene, Robert Everist (1943–) 178.r 365.B
 Greenwood, J. Arthur STR
 Gregory, James (1638–75) 332
 Gregory, R. T. 301.r
 Grenander, Ulf (1923–) 395.r 421.r
 Griess, Robert Louis, Jr. (1945–) 151.I

Griffiths, Phillip A. (1938–) 9.E, r 16.J, r 21.N 72.G 124.r 218.E 272.L
Griffiths, Robert Budington (1937) 212.A
Grigelionis, Bronyus Igno (1935–) 262.r
Grillenberger, Christian (1941–) 136.r
Grisvard, Pierre (1940–) 224.E
Grobman, David Matveevich (1922–) 126.G
Gromoll, Detlef (1938–) 109.r 178.r 279.G
Gromov, Mikhael L. 154.F 178.r 364.H
Gross, Oliver Alfred (1919–) 86.r
Gross, W. (?–1918) 62.E 246.G 272.I 429.D
Grothendieck, Alexander (1928–) 3.N, r 12.B, r 13.B, r 16.E, U, Y, AA, r 29.K 52.r 68.A, K, M, N, r 125.r 168.B, r 200.I, r 203.H 210.r 237.A, B, J 325.J 366.A, D, r 383.E, r 424.L, S, X, r 426 443.A, D 450
Grötschel, Martin 215.C
Grötzsch, Herbert (1902–) 352.A, C 438.B
Grove, Karsten 178.r
Groves, G. W. 92.r
Grünbaum, Branko (1929–) 16.r 89.r
Grünbaum, F. Alberto 41.C
Grunsky, Helmut (1904–86) 77.E, F, r 226.r 438.B
Grünwald, Géza (1910–42) 336.E
Grushin, Viktor Vasil'evich (1938–) 323.K, N 345.A
Guckenheimer, John M. (1945–) 126.K, N
Guderley, Karl Gottfried (1910–) 205.r
Gudermann, Christoph (1798–1852) 131.F 447 App. A, Tables 16, 16.III
Guerra, Francesco (1942–) 150.F
Guest, Philip George (1920–) 19.r
Gugenheim, Victor K. A. M. (1923–) 65.D
Guggenheim, Edward Armand (1901–) 419.r
Guignard, Monique M. 292.B
Guilford, Joy Paul (1897–) 346.r
Guillemin, Victor W. (1937–) 105.r 191.r 274.I, r 325.L 391.J, N 428.F, G 431.r
Guiraud, Jean-Pierre 41.D
Gulliver, Robert D., II (1945–) 275.C 334.F
Gumbel, Emil J. (1891–) 374.r
Gundlach, Karl-Bernhard (1926–) 32.G
Gundy, Richard Floyd (1933–) 168.B 262.B
Gunning, Robert Clifford (1931–) 21.r 23.r 367.G, r
Gunson, Jack 386.C
Gupta, Suraj Narayan (1924–) 150.G
Guthrie, Francis 157.A
Guthrie, Frederick 157.A
Guttman, Louis 346.r
Györy, Kálmán (1940–) 118.D
Gysin, Werner 114.G 148.E 201.O

H

Haag, Rudolf (1922–) 150.C–E 351.K 402.G
Haar, Alfred (1885–1933) 142.B, r 225.C, r 255.E 317.C 321.C 323.E 334.C 336.B
Haberman, Shelby J. 280.r
Haboush, William J. (1942–) 16.W
Hadamard, Jacques Salomon (1865–1963) 20.r 43.E 46.A 58.F, r 109 111.I 121.C 123.B 124.B 125.A 126.J 159.J 178.A, B 208.D 272.E 320.r 321.A, G 323.B 325.B, r 339.A, D 357.r 429.B 450.B, I App. A, Table 8
Hadley, George F. 227.r
Haefliger, André (1929–) 105.r 114.D 154.A, C–H
Haff, L. R. 280.D, r
Hagihara Yusuke (1897–1979) 133.r 420.r
Hagis, Peter H., Jr. (1926–) 297.D

Hahn, Frank John (1929–) 136.G
Hahn, Hans (1879–1934) 37.F 93.D 160.F 390.G 424.C
Hájek, Jaroslav (1926–74) 371.r 399.N, r
Hajian, Arshag B. (1930–) 136.C, F
Hajós, György (Georg) (1912–72) 2.B
Haken, Hermann 95
Haken, Wolfgang R. G. (1928–) 157.A, D 186.r 235.A
Halanay, Aristide (1924–) 163.r 394.r
Halász, Gábor (1941–) 123.E
Halberstam, Heini (1926–) 123.r
Hale, Jack Kenneth (1928–) 163.B, H, r 286.r 290.r
Hall, G. 303.r
Hall, Marshall, Jr. (1910–) 29.H 66.r 151.I, r 161.C, r 190.r 241.C App. B, Table 5
Hall, Philip (1904–82) 151.B, D–F 190.G
Hall, William Jackson (1929–) 396.r
Hallen, E. G. 130.r
Hällström, Gunnar af 124.C
Halmos, Paul Richard (1916–) 42.r 136.E, H 197.r 225.r 251.r 256.r 270.r 276.E 381.r 390.r
Halphen, Georges Henri (1844–89) 110.B 134.r
Hamachi, Toshihiro (1942–) 136.F, r
Hamada, Noboru (1940–) 96.r
Hamada, Yūsaku (1931–) 321.G
Hamburger, Hans (1889–1956) 240.K 450.M
Hamel, George (1877–1954) 270.J 388.B
Hamilton, Richard S. (1943–) 195.E 352.C
Hamilton, William Rowan (1805–65) 20 29.B 108.B 126.A, L 151.B 186.F 219.C 267 269.F 271.F 294.F, r 324.E 351.D 441.B 442.D
Hamm, Helmut A. 418.I
Hammersley, John Michael (1920–) 340.r 385.r
Hammerstein, H. 217.M
Hamming, Richard W. (1915–) 63.B, C 136.E 223.r
Hampel, Frank R. 371.A, I, r 431.r
Hanai, Sitiro (1908–) 273.K 425.CC
Hanania, Mary I. 346.r
Hancock, H. 134.r
Handel, Michael (1949–) 126.J
Handelman, David E. (1950–) 36.H
Handscorn, David Christopher (1933–) 385.r
Haneke, Wolfgang 123.C
Hankel, Hermann (1839–73) 39.B 174.A 220.B App. A, Table 19.III
Hanks, R. 224.E
Hannan, Edward James (1921–) 421.r
Hanner, Olof (Olaf) (1922–) 79.r
Hano, Jun-ichi (1926–) 364.F 365.L
Hansen, Frank (1950–) 212.C
Hansen, Johan Peder (1951–) 16.I
Hansen, Peter Andreas (1795–1874) App. A, Table 19.III
Hanson, David Lee (1935–) 136.E
Hanson, Richard J. (1938–) 302.r
Happel, H. 420.r
Hara, Kōkiti (1918–) 329.r
Harada, Koichiro (1941–) 151.I, J
Harada, Manabu (1931–) 200.K
Harari, Haim (1940–) 132.r
Harary, Frank (1921–) 186.r
Hardorp, Detlef 154.H
Hardt, Robert Miller (1945–) 275.C
Hardy, Godfrey Harold (1877–1947) 4.C, D, r 20.r 43.E, F 83.r 88.r 106.r 121.r 123.C, r 159.G, H, r 164.G 168.B 211.r 216.r 220.B 224.E 242.A, B, r 295.r 317.B 328.*, r 339.B, C 379.F, M. S, r 450.B, I App. A, Table 8

- Harish-Chandra (1923–83) 13.r 32.r 122.F, G
249.V 308.M 437.V, X, AA, CC, EE 450.T
- Harle, Carlos Edgard 365.E
- Harman, Harry Horace (1913–76) 346.F, r
- Harnack, Carl Gustav Axel (1851–88) 100.E 193.I
- Harris, Joseph 9.F, r 16.r
- Harris, Theodore Edward (1919–) 44.A 260.J
340.C
- Harris, William Ashton (1930–) 289.E
- Hart, J. F. 142.r NTR
- Hartley, Herman Otto (1912–80) STR
- Hartley, Richard Ian 235.E
- Hartman, Philip (1915–) 107.r 126.G 195.E 252.r
254.r 313.r 314.r 315.r 316.r 365.J
- Hartmanis, Juris (1928–) 71.r 75.r
- Hartogs, Friedrich (1874–1943) 20 21.C, F, H, Q
- Hartshorne, Robin (1938–) 9.r 16.R, r 343.r
- Harvey, F. Reese (1941–) 112.C, D 125.Y, Z
- Harvey, William James (1941–) 234.r
- Hasegawa, Hiroshi (1782–1838) 230
- Hashimoto, Isao (1941–) 280.r
- Hashimoto, Takeshi (1952–) 213.E
- Hashimoto, Tsuyoshi (1948–) 173.E
- Hasse, Helmut (1898–1979) 9.E 12.B 14.E, L, O–R,
U, r 27.D, E 29.G 59.A, G, H, r 73.A 113 118.C, F
149.r 242.B 257.F, H, r 295.r 297.I 347.r 348.D, G
449.r 450.A, L, P, S
- Hastings, Cecil (1920–) 142.r NTR
- Hastings, D. W. 40.D
- Hasumi, Morisuke (1932–) 125.BB 164.K
- Hatakeyama, Yoji (1932–) 110.E, r
- Hattori, Akio (1929–) 237.H 431.D
- Hattori, Akira (1927–86) 200.K, M
- Haupt, Otto (1887–) 268.E
- Hausdorff, Felix (1868–1942) 79.A 117.G 169.D
224.E 234.E 240.K 246.K 249.R 273.J 317.B 381.r
388.r 423.B 425.A, N, P, Q, AA 426 436.C 443.I
- Hawking, Stephen W. (1942–) 359.r
- Hayashi, Chihiro (1911–) 290.r
- Hayashi, Chikio (1918–) 346.E
- Hayashi, Kazumichi (1925) 207.C, r
- Hayashi, Keiichi (1879–1957) NTR
- Hayashi, Mikihiro (1948–) 164.K
- Hayashi, Tsuruichi (1873–1935) 230 267
- Hayman, Walter Kurt (1926–) 17.D 124.r 193.r
272.K, r 391.D 438.C, E
- Haynal, A. 33.F, r
- Heath, David Clay (1942–) 173.E
- Heath, Sir Thomas Little (1861–1940) 181.r 187.r
- Heath-Brown, David Rodney 118.D 123.C, E
- Heaviside, Oliver (1850–1925) 125.E 306.A, B
App. A, Table 12.II
- Heawood, P. J. (1861–1955) 157.A, E
- Hecht, Henryk (1946–) 437.X
- Hecke, Erich (1887–1947) 6.D 11.B 14.r 29.C
32.C, D, H, r 73.B 123.F, r 348.L, r 450.A, D–F,
M, O
- Hector, Gilbert Joseph (1941–) 154.H
- Hedlund, Gustav Arnold (1904–) 126.A, r 136.G
- Heegaard, Poul (1871–1948) 65.C 247.r
- Heesch, Heinrich (1906–) 92.F 157.A, D
- Heiberg, Johan Ludvig (1854–1928) 181.r 187.r
- Heilbronn, Hans Arnold (1908–75) 123.D 347.E
450.K
- Heine, Heinrich Eduard (1821–81) 206.C 273.F
393.C
- Heins, Maurice Haskell (1915–) 77.F 164.K 198.r
207.C 367.E, G, r
- Heintze, Ernst 178.r
- Heinz, Erhard (1924–) 323.J
- Heisenberg, Werner Karl (1901–76) 150.A 351.C,
D 386.C
- Heitsch, James Lawrence (1946–) 154.G
- Held, A. 359.r
- Held, Dieter (1936–) 151.I
- Helgason, Sigurdur (1927–) 109.r 199.r 218.G 225.r
248.r 249.r 412.r 413.r 417.r 437.Y, AA, EE
- Hellerstein, Simon (1931–) 272.K, r
- Hellinger, Ernst D. (1883–1950) 197.r 217.r 390.G
- Helly, Eduard (1884–1943) 89.B 94.B
- Helmholtz, Hermann von (1821–94) 139.A 188.D
205.B 419.C 442.D App. A, Tables 3, 15.VI
- Helms, Lester L. 120.r 193.r
- Helson, Henry (1927–) 164.G, H, r 192.P–R, r
251.r
- Hemmingsen, Erik (1917–) 117.E
- Hempel, John Paul (1935–) 65.E
- Henderson, David William (1939–) 117.I
- Henkin → Khenkin
- Henkin, Leon (Albert) (1921–) 276.D
- Hénon, Michel 287.B, r
- Henrici, Peter K. (1923–) 138.r 300.r 301.r 303.r
- Henry, Charles 144.r
- Henry, N. F. M. 92.r
- Hensel, Kurt (1861–1941) 11.r 12.B 14.U 118.C
236.r 370.C 439.L
- Henstock, Ralph (1923–) 100.r
- Hepp, Klaus (1936–) 146.A 150.r
- Herbrand, Jacques (1908–31) 14.K 59.A, E, H, r
156.E, r 200.N 356.A, E
- Herglotz, Gustav (1881–1953) 43.I 192.B 325.J
- Hering, Christoph H. 151.J
- Herman, Michael-Robert (1942–) 126.I, N 154.G
- Hermann, Carl Heinrich (1898–1961) 92.F
- Hermes, Hans (1912–) 31.r 97.r 356.r
- Hermite, Charles (1822–1901) 14.B 60.O 107.A
131.D 167.C 176.I 182.A 199.A 217.H 223.E 232.A
251.E, O 256.Q 269.I 299.A 317.D 344.F 348.F
412.E, G 430.A App. A, Tables 14.II, 20.IV
- Herodotus (c. 484–c. 425 B.C.) 181
- Heron (between 150 B.C. and A.D. 200) 187 App. A,
Tables 2.II, III
- Hersch, Joseph (1925–) 143.A 391.E
- Hertz, Heinrich Rudolf (1857–94) 441.B
- Hertzog, David (1932–) 151.I
- Hervé, Michel André (1921–) 23.r 62.B
- Herz, Carl Samuel (1930–) 206.E, r
- Herzberger, Maximilian Jacob (1899–1981) 180.r
- Hesse, Ludwig Otto (1811–74) 9.B 139.H 226.D
279.B, E, F
- Hessel, Johann Friedrich Christian (1796–1872)
92.F
- Hessenberg, Gerhard 155.r
- Hessenberg, K. (1874–1925) 298.D
- Hestenes, Magnus R. 302.D
- Heun, Karl 303.D
- Hewitt, Edwin (1920–) 192.P, r 342.G 422.r 425.S,
BB
- Hey, Käte 27.F 450.A, L
- Heyting, Arend (1898–1980) 156.r 411.J, r
- Hicks, Noel J. (1929–79) 111.r
- Hida, Takeyuki (1927–) 176.r
- Higgs, Peter Ware (1929–) 132.D
- Higman, Donald Gordon 151.I
- Higman, Graham (1917–) 97.*, r 151.A, F, I, r
190.M
- Higuchi, Teiichi (1933–) 23.r
- Higuchi, Yasunari (1949–) 340.G, r
- Hijikata, Hiroaki (1936–) 13.O, P, R
- Hikita, Teruo (1947–) 75.r

Hilb, Emil

- Hilb, Emil (1882–1929) 253.r
 Hilbert, David (1862–1943) 4.A 9.F 11.B 14.J–L, R, U 15.H 16.E, S 20.*, r 32.G 35.A, r 41.E 46.A, C, E, r 59.A 68.A, C, I, L 73.B 77.B, E 82.r 92.F 93.J 105.Z 107.A, r 111.I 112.D, r 120.A 126.I 150.G 155.A–C, F, G, H 156.A, C, D, r 160.D 162 172.J 179.B 181 188.r 189.r 196.A, B 197.A, B, r 217.H–J, r 220.E 222.r 226.G, r 253.D 267 284.A 285.A, 286.K 304.r 317.r 320.r 321.r 322.r 323.E, I, r 324.r 325.M 327.r 337.F 347.G, H, r 356.A 357.r 364.I 365.J 369.D, F 375.F 377.D 382.B 389.r 402.H 410.r 411.J, r 423.N 424.W 430.A 441.r 443.A 446.r App. A, Table 8
 Hildebrandt, Stefan O. W. (1936–) 195.E 275.B 334.F
 Hildebrandt, Theophil Henry (1888–1980) 310.r 443.A
 Hildreth, C. 349.r
 Hilferly, M. M. 374.F
 Hilfinger, P. N. 75.r
 Hill, Edward Lee (1904–) 150.B
 Hill, George William (1838–1914) 107.A 268.B, E
 Hill, Rodney (1921–) 271.r
 Hille, Einar (1894–1980) 106.r 107.r 115.A 136.B 160.E 162 198.r 216.r 251.r 252.r 253.r 254.r 286.X, r 288.r 289.r 313.r 315.r 316.r 336.r 378.B, D, r 438.B
 Hillier, Frederick S. 215.r
 Hilton, Peter John (1923–) 70.r 201.r 202.P, U
 Hinčin → Khinchin
 Hinman, Peter G. (1937–) 22.F, r 356.r
 Hinohara, Yukitoshi (1930–) 200.K
 Hipparchus (190?–125? B.C.) 187 432.C
 Hippias (late 5th century B.C.) 187
 Hippocrates (of Chios) (470?–430? B.C.) 187
 Hirai, Takeshi (1936–) 437.W
 Hirano, Sugayasu (1930–) 301.G
 Hirashita, Yukio (1946–) 164.C
 Hirayama, Akira (1904–) 230.r
 Hironaka, Heisuke (1931–) 12.B 16.L, Z 21.L 23.D 72.H 232.C 418.B
 Hirose, Hideo (1908–81) 230.r
 Hirota, Ryogo (1932–) 387.D
 Hirsch, Guy Charles (1915–) 201.J 427.E
 Hirsch, Morris William (1933–) 114.C, D, J, r 126.J, r 279.C
 Hirschfeld, Joram 276.r
 Hirschman, Isidore I. (1922–) 220.r
 Hirzebruch, Friedrich Ernst Peter (1927–) 12.B 15.D, G, H 20 32.F 56.G, r 72.K, r 109 114.A 147.r 237.A 366.A, B, D, r 383.r 418.r 426 431.D, r
 Hitchcock, Frank Lauren (1875–1957) 301.E
 Hitchin, Nigel James (1946–) 80.r 364.r
 Hitchins, G. D. 301.L
 Hitotumatu, Sin (1926–) 186.r 301.D 389.r NTR
 Hitsuda, Masuyuki (1938–) 176.H
 Hlavatý, Václav (1894–?) 434.r
 Hlawka, Edmund (1916–) 182.D
 Ho, B. L. 86.D
 Hobson, Ernest William (1856–1933) 133.r 393.C, r
 Hochschild, Gerhard Paul (1915–) 6.E 13.r 59.H 200.K–M, O, Q, 249.r
 Hochster, Melvin (1943–) 16.Z
 Hocking, John Gilbert (1920–) 79.r 201.r
 Hocquenghem, Alexis (1908–) 63.D
 Hodge, Sir William Vallance Douglas (1903–75) 12.B 15.D 16.V, r 20 109.*, r 194.B, r 232.A, B, D 343.r
 Hodges, Joseph Lawson (1922–) 371.A, H 399.E, H, N, P, r
 Hodgkin, Alan Lloyd (1914–) 291.F
 Hodozi, Yosi (1820–68) 230
 Hocffding, Wassily (1914–) 371.A 374.I 400.r
 Hoffman, Banesh H. (1906–) 359.D 434.C
 Hoffman, David Allen (1944–) 275.r 365.H
 Hoffman, Kenneth Myron (1930–) 43.r 164.F, G, I, r
 Hoffmann-Jørgensen, Jørgen (1942–) 22.r
 Hogg, Robert Vincent, Jr. (1924–) 371.r
 Hölder, Otto (1859–1937) 84.A 104.F 168.B 190.G 211.C 277.I 288.D 379.M App. A, Table 8
 Holland, Paul W. (1940–) 280.r 403.r
 Holley, Richard Andrews (1943–) 44.E 340.r
 Holm, Per (1934–) 418.r
 Holmgren, Erik Albert (1872–) 125.DD 321.F 327.C
 Holmstedt, Tord 224.C
 Homma, Tatsuo (1926–) 65.E 235.A
 Honda, Taira (1932–75) 3.C 450.Q, S, r
 Hong Imsik (1916–) 228.B, r
 Hong Sing Leng 365.N
 Hood, William Clarence (1921–) 128.r
 Hooke, Robert (1635–1703) 271.G
 Hooker, Percy Francis 214.r
 Hooley, Christopher (1928–) 123.E, r 295.E
 Hopcroft, John E. (1939–) 31.r 71.r 75.r 186.r
 Hopf, Eberhard (1902–83) 111.I 126.A, M 136.B 162.B, C, G, r 204.B, C, r 222.C 234.r 270.E 286.U, X 433.B, C
 Hopf, Heinz (1894–1971) 65.r 72.K 93.r 99.r 109 111.I, r 126.G 147.E 153.B 178.A 201.r 202.A, B, I, Q, S, U, V, r 203.A, C, D, H 249.V 305.A 365.H 425.r 426.*, r
 Hopkins, Charles 368.F
 Horikawa, Eiji (1947–) 72.K, r
 Hörmander, Lars Valter (1931–) 20 21.I, r 107.r 112.B–D, H, K, L, R, r 115.D 125.A 164.K 189.C 274.D, I 286.J 320.I 321.r 323.M 325.H 345.A, B
 Horn, Jacob (1867–1946) 107.A 206.D 314.A
 Horner, William George (1786–1837) 301.C
 Horowitz, Ellis (1944–) 71.r
 Horrocks, Geoffrey (1932–) 16.r
 Hosokawa Fujitsugu (1930–) 235.D
 Hotelling, Harold (1895–1973) 280.B 374.C
 Hotta, Ryoshi (1941–) 437.X
 Householder, Alston Scott (1904–) 298.D 301.r 302.E
 Houseman, E. E. 19.r
 Howard, Ronald Arthur (1934–) 127.E
 Howarth, Leslie (1911–) 205.r
 Hrbáček, Karel 33.r 293.E, r
 Hsiang Wu-Chung (1935–) 114.J, K 431.D, r
 Hsiang Wu-Yi (1937–) 275.F 365.K 431.D, r
 Hsiung Chuan-Chih (1916–) 364.F 365.H
 Hsü Kwang-Ch'i (1562–1633) 57.C
 Hu Sze-Tsen (1914–) 79.r 91.r 148.r 201.r 277.r
 Hu Te Chiang 281.r
 Hua Loo-Keng (Hua Luo K'ang) (1910–85) 4.A, E, r 122.E 242.A, r 295.E
 Huang, Kerson (1928–) 402.r
 Huber, Peter J. 371.A, H, J, r 399.H, P, r
 Huber-Dyson, Verena 362.r
 Hudson, John F. P. 65.C, D
 Huff, Robert E. (1942–) 443.H
 Hugenholtz, Nicholaas Marinus (1924–) 308.H
 Hugoniot, Pierre Henri (1851–87) 51.E 204.G 205.B
 Hukuhara, Masuo (1905–) 30.C, r 88.A 254.D 288.B, r 289.B–D 314.A, C, D 315.C 316.E 388.B 443.A

Hull, Thomas Edward (1922–) 206.r 303.r
 Humbert, Georges (1859–1921) 83.D
 Humphreys, James E. (1939–) 13.r 248.r
 Hunt, Gilbert Agnew (1916–) 5.H 162 176.G 260.J,
 r 261.A, B 338.N, O 400.F 407.B
 Hunt, Richard A. 159.H 168.B, r 224.E
 Huntley, H. E. 116.r
 Huppert, Bertram 151.D, r
 Hurewicz, Witold (1904–56) 117.A, C, r 136.B
 148.D 202.A, B, N, r 426
 Hurley, Andrew Crowther (1926–) 92.F
 Hurst, Charles A. (1923–) 212.A 402.r
 Hurwicz, Leonid 255.D, E, r 292.E, F, r
 Hurwitz, Adolf (1859–1919) 3.K 9.I 10.E 11.D
 83.B 134.r 198.r 339.D 367.B 450.B, r
 Husemoller, Dale H. (1933–) 15.r 56.r 147.r
 Huxley, Andrew Fielding (1917–) 291.F
 Huxley, Martin Neil (1944–) 123.E, r
 Huygens, Christiaan (1629–95) 93.H 245 265
 325.B, D 446
 Huzita, Sadasuke (1734–1807) 230
 Hwa, Rudolph C. (1931–) 146.r
 Hypatia (370?–418) 187

I

Iagolnitzer, Daniel (1940–) 146.C 274.D, I 386.C, r
 Ibragimov, Il'dar Abdulovich (1932–) 176.r 250.r
 Ibuki, Kimio (1918–) 75.D
 Ibukiyama, Tomoyoshi (1948–) 450.S
 Ichihara, Kanji (1948–) 115.D
 Igari, Satoru (1936–) 224.E
 Igusa, Jun-ichi (1924–) 3.r 9.J 12.B 15.E, F 16.Z, r
 32.F 118.C, D
 Ihara, Yasutaka (1938–) 59.A, r 450.A, M, Q, S, U
 Itaka, Shigeru (1942–) 72.I, r
 Iizuka, Kenzo (1923–) 362.I
 Ikawa, Mitsuru (1942–) 325.K 345.A
 Ikebe, Teruo (1930–) 112.E, P 375.B, C
 Ikebe, Yasuhiko (1934–) 298.r
 Ikeda, Akira (1947–) 391.C
 Ikeda, Hideto (1948–) 96.r
 Ikeda, Masatoshi (1926–) 200.K, L
 Ikeda, Nobuyuki (1929–) 44.r 45.r 115.r 250.r 262.r
 399.r 406.F, r
 Ikeda, Tsutomu (1950–) 304.D
 Ikehara, Shikao (1904–84) 123.B 160.G
 Il'in, Arlen Mikhailovich (1932–) 327.r
 Illusie, Luc (1940–) 366.r
 Im Hof, Hans-Christoph 178.r
 Imai, Kazuo (1952–) 41.D
 Imanishi, Hideki (1942–) 154.H
 Inaba, Eizi (1911–) 337.F
 Inaba, Takashi (1951–) 154.D
 Inagaki, Nobuo (1942–) 399.N
 Ince, Edward Lindsay (1891–1941) 107.r 252.r
 254.r 268.C, D 288.r 289.r
 Infeld, Leopold (1898–1968) 206.r 359.D
 Ingham, Albert Edward (1900–) 123.C, r 242.A
 Inose, Hiroshi (1951–79) 16.r 450.S
 Inoue, Masahisa (1946–) 72.K
 Inoue, Masao (1915–) 338.r
 Iochem, Bruno 351.L
 Ionescu-Tulcea, Alexandra 136.B, C
 Iooss, Gérard (1944–) 126.M
 Ipsen, D. C. 116.r
 Iri, Masao (1933–) 66.r 186.r 281.r 299.B 301.F
 303.E, r
 Irie Seiiti (1911–) 62.E

Irwin, Michael C. 65.D 126.G, r
 Isaacs, Rufus Philip (1914–81) 108.A
 Isbell, John Rolfe (1930–) 436.r
 Iseki, Kanesiroo (1920–) 328
 Iseki, Shō (1926–) 328
 Iseki, Tomotoki (fl. 1690) 230
 Ishida, Masanori (1952–) 16.Z
 Ishihara, Shigeru (1922–) 110.r 364.F 365.H
 Ishihara, Tōru (1942) 195.r
 Isii, Keiiti (1932–) 255.D 399.r
 Ising, Ernest (1900–) 340.B, C
 Iskovskikh, Vitalii Alekseevich 16.J
 Ismagilov, R. S. 183.r
 Isozaki, Hiroshi (1950–) 375.B
 Israel, Robert B. (1951–) 402.r
 Israel, Werner (1931–) 359.r
 Iss'sa, Hej 367.G
 Itaya, Nobutoshi (1933–) 204.F
 Itō, Kiyosi (1915–) 5.E, r 45.G, r 115.A, C 176.I, r
 261.A, r 395.C, r 406.A–D, G, r 407.A, C, r
 Itō, Masayuki (1940–) 338.O
 Ito, Noboru (1925–) 151.H, J
 Itō, Seizō (1927–) 204.B 270.r 327.r
 Ito, Shunji (1943–) 126.K 136.C, r
 Ito, Takashi (1926–) 192.r
 Itō, Teiiti (1898–) 92.F
 Ito, Yoshifumi (1940–) 125.BB
 Ito, Yuji (1935–) 136.C, F
 Itoh, Mitsuhiro (1947–) 80.r
 Itoh, Takehiro (1943–) 275.A 365.G
 Iversen, F. 62.E 272.I
 Ivory, Sir James (1765–1842) 350.E
 Ivrii, V. Ya. 325.H
 Iwahori, Nagayoshi (1926–) 13.R, r 249.r 442.r
 Iwamura, Tsurane (1919–) 85.A, r
 Iwaniec, Henryk 123.C, E
 Iwano, Masahiro (1931–) 254.D 289.D, E
 Iwasawa, Kenkichi (1917–) 6.D, F 14.L 32.r 243.G
 248.F, V 249.S, T, V, r 257.H 384.C 450.A, F, J, L,
 N, r
 Iyanaga, Shōkichi (1906–) 6.r 7.r 14.Q, r 59.D, E, r
 60.r 149.r 161.r 200.r 277.r 294.r 343.r 362.r 368.r
 409.r
 Izumi, Shin-ichi (1904–) 121.r 160.B, F 310.r

J

Jackiw, Roman Wildmir (1939–) 80.r
 Jackson, Dunham (1888–1946) 336.C, E, r
 Jackson, John David (1925–) 130.r
 Jackson, Kenneth R. 303.r
 Jacob, Maurice R. 132.r 386.r
 Jacobi, Carl Gustav Jacob (1804–51) 3.A, G, L 4.D
 9.E, F 11.B, C 20.46.C 105. 107.B 108.B 126.A 134.A,
 C, I, J, r 178.A 182.H 202.P 208.B 229 248.A 267
 271.F 296.A 297.I 298.B 302.C 317.D 324.D, E
 348.K 390.G 420.A, F 428.C App. A, Tables 14.I,
 II, 16.I, III, 20.V
 Jacobowitz, Howard (1944–) 286.J 344.B
 Jacobs, Konrad (1928–) 136.H, r
 Jacobson, Florence D. 231.r
 Jacobson, Nathan (1910–) 27.r 29.r 54.r 67.D 149.r
 172.A, K, r 231.r 248.r 256.r 368.H, r 499.r
 Jacod, Jean M. (1944–) 262.r
 Jacquet, Hervé Michel (1933–) 32.r 437.r 450.A,
 N, O
 Jaekel, Louis A. 371.H, J, r
 Jaffe, Arthur Michael (1937–) 150.C, F, r
 Jaglom → Yaglom

Jahnke, Paul Rudolf Eugene

Jahnke, Paul Rudolf Eugene (1863–1921) 389.r
 NTR
 James, Alan Treleven (1924–) 102.r 374.r
 James, Ioan M. (1928–) 202.Q, U
 James, Ralph Duncan (1909–79) 100.A, r
 James, Robert Clarke (1918–) 37.G
 James, W. 280.D, r 398.r 399.G
 Jancel, Raymond (1926–) 402.r
 Janes, F. T. 403.C
 Janet, Maurice (1888–) 365.B
 Janiszewski, Zygmund (1888–1920) 426
 Janko, Zvonimir (1932–) 151.I, J App. B,
 Table 5.III
 Janner, Aloysio 92.r
 Jans, James Patrick (1927–) 368.r
 Janzen, O. 246.G
 Jarratt, Peter (1935–) 301.N
 Jauch, Josef-Maria (1914–74) 375.A, r
 Jayne, J. E. 22.r
 Jech, Thomas (1944–) 22.r 33.F, r
 Jeffreys, B. S. 25.r
 Jeffreys, Harold (1891–) 25.B, r
 Jelinek, Fredrick (1932–) 213.E, r
 Jenkins, Gwilym M. 128.r 421.D, G, r
 Jenkins, Howard B. 275.A, D
 Jenkins, James Allister (1923–) 77.F 143.r 438.B, C
 Jensen, Johann Ludwig Wilhelm Waldemar (1859–
 1925) 88.A 121.A 164.K 198.F
 Jensen, K. L. 145
 Jensen, Ronald B. 33.F, r 356.r
 Jentsch, Robert 339.E
 Jerison, Meyer (1922–) 425.r
 Jessen, Raymond J. (1910–) 373.r
 Jeulin, Thierry 406.r
 Jewett, Robert Israel (1937–) 136.H
 Jimbo, Michio (1951–) 253.E 387.C
 Jimbo, Toshiya (1941–) 164.r
 Jiřina, Miloslav 44.E
 Joffe, Anatole 44.C
 John, Fritz (1910–) 112.B 168.B 218.F 262.B 274.F
 292.B 300.r 304.r 320.r 321.r 323.r 324.r 325.r 327.r
 John, Peter W. M. (1923–) 102.r
 Johns, M. Vernon, Jr. (1925–) 371.H, r
 Johnson, Norman Lloyd (1917–) 374.r
 Johnson, Wells 14.L
 Johnson, William B. (1944–) 68.K, M
 Johnston, John (1923–) 128.r
 Jolley, Leonard Benjamin William (1886–) 379.r
 Joly, Jean-René Benoît (1938–) 118.r
 Jona-Lasinio, Giovanni 361.r
 Jonckheere, A. R. 346.r
 Jones, B. W. 347.r 348.r
 Jones, Floyd Burton (1910–) 273.K
 Jones, John D. S. 80.r
 Jones, William (1675–1749) 332
 Jordan, C. W. 214.r
 Jordan, Camille (1838–1922) 20.r 79.A 92.A, F
 93.A, B, F, K 104.r 151.H 159.B 166.B 190.G, Q, r
 267 269.G 270.D, G 277.I 302.B 310.B 333.A
 362.K 380.C App. A, Table 8
 Jordan, Ernst Pascual (1902–) 150.A 231.B 351.L
 377.B
 Jordan, Herbert E. App. B, Table 5.r
 Jöreskog, Karl G. (1935–) 403.r
 Joseph, Peter D. 405.r
 Jost, Res Wilhelm (1918–) 150.r 386.B
 Joule, James Prescott (1818–89) 130.B
 Julia, Gaston Maurice (1893–1978) 21.Q, r 43.K
 124.B 198.r 272.F 429.C 435.E
 Jung, Heinrich Wilhelm Ewald (1876–1953) 15.r

Jurečková, Jana (1940–) 371.J, r
 Jurkat, Wolfgang (Bernhard) (1929–) 123.D
 Jutila, Matti Ilmari (1943–) 123.E
 Juzvinskiĭ → Yuzvinskiĭ

K

Kac, I. S. → Kats
 Kac, Mark (1914–84) 41.C 115.C 150.F 250.r 261.r
 287.C 295.E 340.r 341.r 351.F 391.C, r
 Kaczmarz, Stefan (1895–1939) 317.r
 Kadanoff, Leo Philip (1937–) 361.r
 Kadison, Richard Vincent (1925–) 36.G, K 308.r
 Kadomtsev, Boris Borisovich (1928–) 387.F
 Kagan, Abram Meerovich (1936–) 374.H
 Kahan, William M. 302.r
 Kahane, Jean-Pierre (1926–) 159.H, r 192.Q, r
 Kähler, Erich (1906–) 109 191.I 199.A 232.A 365.L
 428.E, r
 Kailath, Thomas (1935–) 86.D, r
 Kainen, Paul C. 157.r
 Kaiser, Henry F. 346.F, r
 Kakeshita Shin-ichi (1934–) 371.A
 Takeya, Sôichi (1886–1947) 10.E 89.E
 Kakutani, Shizuo (1911–) 37.N 136.B–D, F 153.D
 162 286.D 310.A, G 352.A 367.D 398.G
 Kalashnikov, Anatolii Sergeevich (1934–) 327.r
 Kall, Peter 408.r
 Källén, Anders Olof Gunnar (1926–68) 150.D
 Kallianpur, Gopinath (1925–) 86.r 250.r 405.r
 Kalman, Rudolf Emil (1930–) 86.A, C–F 95
 405.G, r
 Kalmár, László (1905–76) 97.*
 Kaluza, Theodor, Jr. (1910–) 434.C
 Kamae, Teturo (1941–) 136.H 354.r
 Kambayashi, Tatsuji (1933–) 15.r
 Kamber, Franz W. (1936–) 154.G, H, r
 Kamenskii, Georgii Aleksandrovich (1925–) 163.r
 Kametani, Shunji (1910–) 62.E 124.C
 Kamke, Erich (1890–1961) 316.r
 Kampé de Fériet, Joseph (1893–1982) 206.D
 393.E, r 428.r
 Kan, Daniel M. 70.E
 Kanamori, Akihiro (1948–) 33.r
 Kaneda, Eiji (1948–) 365.E
 Kaneko, Akira (1945–) 162
 Kanel', Yakob Isaakovich (1932) 204.F, r
 Kaneyuki, Soji (1936–) 384.r
 Kanitani, Jōyō (1893–) 110.B, r
 Kannan, Rangachary (1946–) 290.r
 Kano, Tadayoshi (1941–) 286.Z
 Kantor, William M. 151.J
 Kantorovich, Leonid Vital'evich (1912–86) 46.r
 162 217.r 255.E 304.r 310.A
 Kaplan, Wilfred (1915–) 106.r 216.r 313.r
 Kaplansky, Irving (1917–) 2.E, r 107.r 113.r 200.K
 241.E 248.r 308.C, r
 Kapteyn, Willem (1849–?) 39.D App. A, Table 19.III
 Karacuba, Anatolii Alekseevich (1937–) 4.E
 Karhunen, Kari (1915–) 395.r
 Kariya, Takeaki (1944–) 280.r
 Karlin, Samuel (1923–) 222.r 227.r 260.J 263.E
 310.H 336.r 374.r 399.G, r 400.r
 Karp, Carol (1926–72) 356.r
 Karrass, Abe 161.r
 Karzanov, A. V. 281.r
 Kas, Arnold S. 15.H 16.R
 Kasahara, Kenkiti (1935–) 21.M
 Kasahara, Kōji (1932–) 325.H
 Kasai, Takumi (1946–) 71.r

Kasch, Friedrich (1921–) 29.H
 Kashiwara, Masaki (1947–) 68.F 125.DD, EE,
 146.A, C 162 274.I 386.C 418.H 428.H 437.r
 Kasteleyn, P. W. (1924–) 212.A
 Kastler, Daniel (1926–) 150.E 351.K 402.G
 Kataoka, Kiyōmi (1951–) 125.DD, r
 Kataoka, Shinji (1925–) 408.r
 Katětov, Miroslav 117.A, D, E
 Kato, Junji (1935–) 163.r
 Kato, Kazuhisa (1946–) 126.J
 Kato, Masahide (1947–) 72.K
 Kato, Mitsuyoshi (1942–) 65.D 147.Q 418.r
 Kato, Tosio (1917–) 68.r 162 204.B, C, E 289.E
 304.r 331.A, B, E, r 345.A 351.D 375.A–C
 378.D, E, H–J 390.r
 Katok, Anatolii Borisovich (1944–) 126.N 136.E,
 F, H, r
 Kats, Izrail' Samoïlovich (1926–) 115.r
 Katsurada, Yoshie (1911–80) 365.H
 Katz, Jerrold J. 96.r
 Katz, Nicholas M. (1943–) 16.r 450.J, Q, r
 Katsnelson, Yitzhak (1934–) 136.E 159.H, I 192.r
 Kaufman, Sol (1928–) 399.N, r
 Kaul, Helmut (1936–) 195.E
 Kaup, Wilhelm 384.r
 Kawada, Yukiyo (1916–) 59.H
 Kawaguchi, Akitsugu (1902–84) 152.C
 Kawai, Sōichi (1937–) 72.r
 Kawai, Takahiro (1945–) 125.BB, DD, r 146.A, C
 162 274.I 386.C 428.H
 Kawai, Toru (1945–) 293.E, r
 Kawakami, Hiroshi (1941–) 126.N
 Kawakubo, Katsuo (1942–) 431.D
 Kawamata, Yujiro (1952–) 15.r 21.N 72.I, r 232.D
 Kawashima, Shuichi (1953–) 41.r
 Kawata, Tatsuo (1911–) 374.H 395.r
 Kazama, Hideaki (1945–) 21.L
 Kazarinoff, Nicholas D. (1929–) 211.r
 Kazdan, Jerry L. (1937–) 364.H, r
 Kazhdan, David A. 122.G 391.N
 Kazhikov, A. V. 204.F
 Kechris, Alexander S. (1946–) 22.C, H, r
 Keedwell, Anthony Donald (1928–) 241.r
 Keesling, James Edgar (1942–) 382.C
 Keim, Dieter 424.r
 Keisler, H. Jerome (1936–) 33.r 276.E, r 293.D, r
 Keldysh, Mstislav Vsevolodovich (1911–78) 336.F
 Keller, Herbert Bishop (1925–) 303.r
 Keller, Joseph Bishop (1923–) 274.C, r
 Kelley, D. G. 212.A
 Kelley, John Ernst, Jr. (1937–) 376.r
 Kelley, John Leroy (1916–) 37.M 87.r 381.r 424.r
 425.r 435.r 436.r
 Kellogg, Oliver Dimon (1878–1932) 120.B, D, r
 153.D 193.r 286.D
 Kelly, Anthony 92.r
 Kelvin, Lord (Thomson, William) (1824–1907)
 19.B 39.G 120.A 193.B App. A, Table 19.IV
 Kemeny, John George (1926–) 260.J
 Kempe, Alfred Bray 157.A, D
 Kempf, George R. (1944–) 9.r 16.r
 Kempisty, Stefan (1892–1940) 100.A, r
 Kempthorne, Oscar (1919–) 102.r
 Kendall, David G. (1918–) 44.A 218.r 260.H, J
 Kendall, Maurice George (1907–83) 102.r 280.r
 346.r 371.K 397.r 400.r
 Kenmotsu Katsuei (1942–) 275.F
 Kennedy, P. B. 193.r
 Kepler, Johannes (1571–1630) 20 78.D 126.A 265
 271.B 309.B 432.C

Name Index

Knapowski, Stanisław

Kerékjártó, Szerkeszti Béla (1898–1946) 207.C
 410.r
 Kerner, Immo O. 301.F
 Kerr, Roy Patrick (1934–) 359.E
 Kervaire, Michel André (1927–) 65.C 114.A, B,
 I–K 235.G
 Kerzman, Norberto Luis Maria (1943–) 164.K
 Kesten, Harry (1931–) 5.G 44.r 340.r
 Khachiyan, L. G. 71.D 255.C
 Khaikin, Semen Emanuilovich 290.r 318.r
 Khas'minskii, Rafail Zalmanovich (1931–) 115.D
 Khatri, Chinubhai Ghelabhai (1931–) 280.r
 Khavinson, Semëon Yakovlevich (1927–) 77.E
 Khayyām, Omar (c. 1040–c. 1123(24?)) 26
 Khenkin (Henkin), Gennadii Markovich (1942–)
 164.K 344.F
 Khinchin (Hinčin), Aleksandr Yakovlevich (1894–
 1959) 4.A 45.r 83.r 100.A 115.D 213.F 250.C
 307.C 332.r 341.G 342.D 395.B 402.r
 Khovanskii, Aleksei Nikolaevich (1916–) 83.r
 Kiefer, Jack Carl (1924–81) 399.D
 Kikuchi, Fumio (1945–) 304.r
 Kikuti, Dairoku (1855–1917) 230 267
 Killing, Wilhelm Karl Joseph (1847–1923) 50
 248.B 279.C 364.F
 Kim Wan Hee (1926–) 282.r
 Kimura, Motoo (1924–) 115.D 263.E
 Kimura, Tatsuo (1947–) 450.V
 Kimura, Toshihisa (1929–) 30.r 288.B–D 289.r
 Kinderlehrer, David S. (1941–) 105.r
 Kingman, John Frank Charles (1939–) 136.B, r
 Kinnersley, William 205.F
 Kinney, John R. 115.A
 Kino, Akiko (1934–83) 81.D 356.G
 Kinoshita, Shin'ichi (1925–) 235.A, C, H
 Kinoshita, Toichiro (1925–) 146.B
 Kirby, Robin Cromwell (1938–) 65.A, C 70.C
 114.J–L
 Kirchhoff, Gustav Robert (1824–87) 255.D 282.B
 Kirillov, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich (1936–) 437.T
 Kirkwood, John Gamble (1907–59) 402.J
 Kiselev, Andrei Alekseevich 204.C
 Kishi, Masanori (1932–) 48.H 338.I, J, M
 Kishimoto, Akitaka (1947–) 36.K 402.G
 Kister, James Milton (1930–) 147.r
 Kitada, Hitoshi (1948–) 375.B
 Kitagawa, Tosio (1909–) STR
 Kizner, William 301.D
 Klainerman, Sergiu 286.J
 Klee, Victor La Rue, Jr. (1925–) 89.r 286.D
 Kleene, Stephen Cole (1909–) 22.G 31.B, C, r
 81.A, r 97.r 156.r 185.r 276.r 319.r 356.A, C–H, r
 411.r
 Kleiman, Steven L. (1942–) 9.E, r 16.E, r 450.r
 Klein, Felix (1849–1925) 1.r 7.E 11.B 32.r 53.r 83.D
 90.B, r 109 119.r 122.C, r 137.*, r 139.A, r 151.G
 167.E 171.r 175.r 181 190.Q 196.r 206.r 229.r 233
 234.A, D, r 267.*, r 285.A, C, r 343.F 363.r 410.B
 447.r
 Klein, Jacob 444.r
 Klein, Oskar Benjamin (1895–1977) 212.B 351.G
 377.C
 Klema, Virginia C. 298.r
 Klingenberg, Helmut P. (1927–) 32.H 450.E
 Klingenberg, Wilhelm P. (1924–) 109.*, r 111.r
 178.C, r 279.G
 Kloosterman, Hendrik D. (1900–) 4.D 32.C, G
 Klotz, Tilla 365.H
 Kluvánek, Igor (1931–) 443.A, G
 Knapowski, Stanisław (1931–67) 123.D

Knapp, Anthony William

- Knapp, Anthony William (1941–) 260.r 437.EE
 Knaster, Bronisław (1893–1980) 79.D
 Kneser, Hellmuth (1898–1973) 198.r
 Kneser, Julius Carl Christian Adolf (1862–1930)
 107.A 314.A 316.E App. A, Table 19.III
 Kneser, Martin L. (1928–) 13.O–Q 60.K 391.C
 Knopp, Konrad (1882–1957) 208.C 339.C 379.I,
 M, r
 Knopp, Marvin Isadore (1933–) 328.r
 Knorr, Knut R. K. (1940–) 72.r
 Knowles, Greg 443.G
 Knudsen, Finn Faye (1942–) 16.r
 Knus, Max-Albert (1942–) 29.r
 Knuth, Donald Ervin (1938–) 71.r 96.r 354.r
 Knutson, Donald 16.r
 Kobayashi, Osamu (1955–) 364.H
 Kobayashi, Shoshichi (1932–) 21.N, O, Q, r 80.r
 105.r 109.r 275.A 364.r 365.K, O, r 412.r 413.r
 417.r 431.r
 Kobayashi, Zen-ichi (1906–) 367.D
 Koch, John A. 157.A 186.r
 Kochen, Simon Bernard (1934–) 118.F 276.E, r
 Köcher, Max (1924–) 32.F 231.r
 Kodaira, Kunihiko (1915–) 12.B, r 15.B, E, F
 16.V, r 20.21.N 72.F, G, I–K 109 112.I, O 147.O
 194.r 232.D, r 366.A, r
 Kodama, Akio (1949–) 384.F
 Kodama, Laura Ketchum 164.K
 Kodama, Yukihiko (1929–) 117.F 273.r 382.D 425.r
 Koebe, Paul (1882–1945) 77.B, E 193.D, E 196
 438.B, C
 Kogut, John Benjamin (1945–) 361.r
 Kohn, Joseph John (1932–) 112.H 274.I 345.A
 Koiso, Norihito (1951–) 364.r
 Koizumi, Shoji (1923–) 3.N
 Kojima, Tetsuzo (1886–1921) 121.B 240.B 379.L
 Koksma, Jurjen Ferdinand (1904–) 182.r 430.C
 Kolbin, Vyacheslav Viktorovich (1941–) 408.r
 Kolchin, Ellis Robert (1916–) 13.F 113 172.A
 Kolesov, Yurii Serafimovich (1939–) 290.r
 Kolmogorov, Andrei Nikolaevich (1903–) 20 44.r
 45.F 58.D 71.r 100.A 115.A, D 126.A, L 136.E
 159.H 196 201.A, M, P 205.E 213.E 214.C 250.F, r
 260.A, F 261.A 341.G, I, r 342.A, D, G 354.D
 371.F 374.E 407.A, r 425.Q 426 433.C
 Komatsu, Hikosaburo (1935–) 68.F 107.r 112.D, R
 162 168.B 224.C, E 254.D 378.D, I
 Komatu, Atuo (1909–) 305.A 425.U
 Komatu, Yūsaku (1914–) 77.E App. A, Table 14.r
 Kōmura, Takako (1930–) 168.B 378.F 424.S
 Kōmura, Yukio (1931–) 162 168.B 286.X 378.F
 424.S, W
 Kondo, Kazuo (1911–) 282.r
 Kondō, Motokiti (1906–80) 22.C, F
 Konheim, Alan G. 126.K 136.H
 König, Dénes (1884–1944) 33.F
 König, Heinz J. (1929–) 164.G, r
 Königs, G. 44.B
 Konishi, Yoshio (1947–) 286.X, Y
 Konno, Hiroshi (1940–) 264.r
 Kōno, Norio (1940–) 176.G 437.CC
 Koopman, Bernard Osgood (1900–81) 420.F
 Koopmans, Tjalling Charles (1910–85) 128.r
 255.E 376
 Koosis, Paul J. 164.r
 Korányi, Adam (1932–) 413.r
 Korn, Granino Arthur (1922–) 19.r
 Korn, T(h)eresa Mikhailovich 19.r
 Körner, Otto Herman (1934–) 4.F
 Korobov, Nikolaï Mikhailovich (1917–) 4.E
 Korolyuk, Vladimir Semenovich (1925–) 250.r
 Kortanek, Kenneth O. (1936–) 255.D, E
 Korteweg, Diederik Johannes (1848–1941) 387.B
 Kortum, Ludwig Hermann (1836–1904) 179.B
 Koshiba, Zen'ichiro (1926–) 304.F
 Kostant, Bertram (1928–) 248.Z 287.r 387.C
 437.U, EE
 Kostrikin, Aleksei Ivanovich (1929–) 161.C
 Koszul, Jean Louis (1921–) 200.J 412.r 413.r
 Kotake, Takeshi (1932–) 112.D 321.G
 Kotani, Shinichi (1946–) 176.F
 Köthe, Gottfried (1905–) 29.I 125.Y 168.B, r 424.r
 Kotz, Samuel (1930–) 374.r
 Kovalevskaya (Kowalewskaja), Sof'ya Vasil'evna
 (1850–91) 107.B 267 286.Z 320.I 321.A, B
 Kowalewski, Gerhard (1876–1950) 103.r
 Kowata, Atsutaka (1947–) 437.r
 Kra, Irwin (1937–) 122.r 234.r
 Krahn, E. 228.B 391.D
 Kraichnan, Robert H. 433.C
 Krakus, Bronislav 178.r
 Kramers, Hendrik Anthony (1894–1952) 25.B
 Krasinkiewicz, Józef (1944–) 382.C
 Krasner, Marc (1912–85) 145
 Krasnosel'skii, Mark Aleksandrovich (1920–) 251.r
 286.r 290.r
 Krasovskii, Nikolaï Nikolaevich (1924–) 163.B
 Kraus, Fritz (1903–1980) 212.r
 Krazzer, Karl Adolf Joseph (1858–1926) 3.r
 Krée, Paul (1933–) 224.C
 Kreider, Donald Lester (1931–) 81.*, r
 Krein, Mark Grigor'evich (1907–) 37.E 68.A, J, r
 89.r 115.r 162 176.K 251.I, r 310.H 390.H, r 424.O,
 U, V 443.H
 Krein, Selim Grigor'evich (1917–) 162 224.A 378.r
 Kreisel, Georg (1923–) 356.H
 Kreiss, Heinz-Otto (1930–) 304.F 325.K
 Krelle, Wilhelm 292.r
 Krenzel, Ulrich (1937–) 136.B, F, r
 Krichever, I. M. 387.F
 Krieger, Wolfgang 136.E, F, H, r 308.I
 Kripke, A. 411.F
 Kripke, Saul 356.G, r
 Krogh, Fred T. (1937–) 303.r
 Krohn, Kenneth 31.r
 Kronecker, Leopold (1823–91) 2.B 10.B 14.L, U
 15.C 47 73.A, r 136.G 156.C 190.Q 192.R 201.H
 236.A, r 267 269.C 347.D 422.K 450.B, S App. A,
 Table 4
 Krull, Wolfgang (1899–1970) 12.B 67.D, E, J, r
 172.A, I 190.L 277.I 284.A, F, G 439.L
 Kruskal, Joseph Bernard (1928–) 346.E, r
 Kruskall, Martin David (1925–) 359.F 387.B
 Kruskal, William Henry (1919–) 371.D
 Krylov, Nikolaï Mitrofanovich (1879–1955) 290.A
 Krylov, N. S. 402.r
 Krylov, Nikolaï Vladimirovich (1941–) 115.r 136.H
 405.r
 Krylov, Vladimir Ivanovich (1902–) 46.r 217.r
 299.r 304.r
 Krzyżański, Mirosław 325.r
 Kshirsagar, Anant M. (1931–) 280.r
 Kubilius, Jonas P. (1921–) 295.r
 Kublanovskaya, Vera Nikolaevna (1920–) 298.F
 Kubo, Izumi (1939–) 136.F, G 395.r
 Kubo, Ryogo (1920–) 308.H 402.K
 Kubota, Tadahiko (1885–1952) 89.C
 Kubota, Tomio (1930–) 14.U 59.H 257.H 450.A,
 J, M
 Kudō, Hirokichi (1916–) 399.r 443.A

Kudryavtsev, Valerii Borisovich (1936–) 75.D
 Kuga, Ken'ichi (1956–) 114.K
 Kuga, Michio (1928–) 450.M, S
 Kugo, Taichiro (1949–) 150.G
 Kuhn, Harry Waldo (1874–) 108.r 173.B, r 255.r
 292.A, B
 Kuiper, Nicolaas H. (1920–) 105.r 114.B 126.G
 183.*, r 286.D 364.F 365.B, O
 Kuipers, Lauwerens 182.r 354.r
 Kulikov, Leonid Yakovlevich 2.D
 Kulk, W. V. D. 428.r
 Kulkarni, Ravi S. (1942–) 72.r
 Kullback, Solomon (1907–) 213.D, 398.G 403.C, r
 Kumano-go, Hitoshi (1935–82) 112.L 274.r 323.r
 345.A, B
 Kummer, Ernst Eduard (1810–93) 14.L, N, O, U
 15.H 145 167.A 172.F 206.A 236 267 379.I 450.J
 App. A, Tables 10.II, 19.I
 Kunen, Kenneth (1943–) 33.r
 Kunieda, Motoji (1879–1954) 121.B 240.B
 Kunita, Hiroshi (1937–) 86.r 115.D 260.J 261.r
 406.B, r
 Künneht, Hermann (1892–1975) 200.E, H 201.J
 450.Q
 Kuntzmann, Jean (1912–) 71.r 75.r
 Kunugui, Kinjiro (1903–75) 22.C, F 62.B, E, r
 100.A, r
 Künzi, Hans Paul (1924–) 292.F, r
 Kuo Yung-Huai 25.B
 Kupka, Ivan Adolf-Karl (1937–) 126.r
 Kupradze, Viktor Dmitrievich (1903–85) 188.r
 Kuramochi, Zenjiro (1920–) 207.C, D 367.E, G
 Kuranishi, Masatake (1926–) 72.G 249.D, V 286.J
 428.F, G, r
 Kurata, Masahiro (1943–) 126.J
 Kuratowski, Kazimierz (Casimir) (1896–1980)
 22.D, G, r 79.D, r 186.H 425.A, Q, r 426
 Kuroda, Shige Toshi (1932–) 331.E 375.C
 Kuroda, Sigekatu (1905–72) 411.J, r
 Kuroda, Tadashi (1926–) 367.E
 Kurosh, Aleksandr Gennadievich (1908–71) 2.E, r
 29.J 103.r 161.A, r 190.r 337.r
 Kurosu, Kōnosuke (1893–1970) 240.B
 Kürschák, József (1864–1933) 439.L
 Kurth, Rudolf (1917–) 116.r
 Kurusima, Yoshihiro (?–1757) 230
 Kusaka, Makoto (1764–1839) 230
 Kushner, Harold Joseph (1933–) 86.E 405.r
 Kushnirenko, Anatolii Georgievich 418.r
 Kusunoki, Yukio (1925–) 143.r 207.C, D, r 367.G, I
 Kutta, Wilhelm Martin (1867–1944) 301.D 303.D
 Kuwabara, Ruishi (1951–) 391.N
 Kuyk, Willem (1934–) 32.r

L

Lacey, Howard Elton (1937–) 37.r
 Lachlan, Alistair H. 276.F
 Lacroix, Sylvestre François (1765–1843) 181
 Ladyzhenskaya, Ol'ga Aleksandrovna (1922–)
 204.B–D, r 286.r 323.P
 Lafontaine, Jacques (1944–) 364.H
 Lagrange, Joseph Louis (1736–1813) 4.D 20 46.A,
 B 82.A 83.C, D 105.A 106.E, L 107.A, B 109 126.A,
 E, L 150.B 151.B 172.A, F 190.Q 205.A 223.A 238
 252.D, K 266 271.F 274.C 275.A 296.A 301.C
 322.B 324.D 336.G 342.A 420.B, D 428.C 442.C
 App. A, Tables 9.IV, 14.I, 15, 21.II
 Laguerre, Edmond Nicolas (1834–86) 76.B 137
 299.A 317.D 429.B App. A, Tables 14.II, 26.VI

Lainiotis, Dimitri G. 86.r
 Lakshmikantham, Vangipuram (1924–) 163.r
 Laksov, Dan (1940–) 9.E
 Lamb, Sir Horace (1849–1934) 205.r 446.r
 Lambert, Jack D. 303.r
 Lambert, Johann Heinrich (1728–77) 83.A, E 332
 339.C
 Lambert, Robert Joe (1921–) 303.r
 Lamé, Gabriel (1795–1870) 133.B, C 145 167.E
 Lamperti, John Williams (1932–) 44.E 342.r
 Lance, E. Christopher (1941–) 308.F
 Lanczos, Cornelius (1893–1974) 298.D, E 301.J, N
 302.r
 Land, A. H. 215.D
 Landau, Edmund Georg Herman (1877–1938)
 4.A, r 43.J, K, r 77.F 87.G, r 106.r 107.A 121.C–E
 123.B, F, r 131.r 160.G 216.r 240.B 242.A, r 294.r
 295.D 297.r 339.r 347.r 450.I, r
 Landau, Lev Davidovich (1908–68) 130.r 146.A,
 C, r 150.r 205.r 259.r 402.r 433.B
 Landau, Yoan D. 86.r
 Landen, John (1719–90) 134.B App. A, Table
 16.III
 Landkof, Naum Samoilovich (1915–) 338.r
 Landsberg, Georg (1865–1912) 11.r
 Landshoff, Peter Vincent (1937–) 146.r 386.r
 Lane, Jonathan Homer (1819–80) 291.F
 Landford, Oscar Erasmus, III (1940–) 126.K
 150.C 340.B, F 402.G
 Lang, Serge (1927–) 3.M, r 6.r 12.B 14.r 28.r 105.r
 118.D, F, r 134.r 172.r 182.r 198.r 200.r 256.r
 277.r 337.r 368.r 430.r 450.r
 Langevin, Paul (1872–1946) 45.I 402.K
 Langhaar, Henry L. 116.r
 Langlands, Robert Phelan (1936–) 32.H, r
 437.DD, r 450.A, G, N, O, S, T
 Lapidus, Leon (1910–75) 303.r
 Laplace, Pierre Simon (1749–1827) 30.B 103.D
 107.B 126.A 192.F 194.B 239 240.A 250.A 266
 306.A 323.A 342.A, r 401.E 442.D App. A, Tables
 12.I, 18.II
 Lappo-Danilevskii, Ivan Aleksandrovich 253.r
 LaSalle, Joseph Pierre (1916–83) 86.F
 Lascoux, Jean 146.A, C
 Lashnev, Nikolai Serafimovich 425.CC
 Lashof, Richard Kenneth (1922–) 279.C 365.O
 Lasker, Emanuel (1868–1941) 12.B
 Latter, Robert H. (1946–) 168.B
 Laufer, Henry B. (1945–) 418.r
 Laugwitz, Detlef (1932–) 111.r
 Laurent, Pierre Alphonse (1813–54) 198.D 339.A
 Laurent-Duhamel, Marie Jeanne (1797–1872)
 322.D
 Lauricella, G. 206.D
 Lavine, Richard B. (1938–) 375.C
 Lavita, James A. 375.r
 Lavrent'ev, Mikhail Alekseevich (1900–80) 336.F
 352.A, D, E 436.I
 Lavrik, Aleksandr Fëdorovich (1927–) 123.E
 Lawler, Eugene L. (1933–) 66.r 281.r 376.r
 Lawley, Derrick Norman 280.B, G, r 346.F, r
 Lawson, Charles L. 302.r
 Lawson, Herbert Blaine, Jr. (1942–) 80.r 154.r
 178.r 275.F, r 364.H 365.K
 Lax, Peter David (1926–) 112.J, P, S 204.r 274.r
 304.F 321.G 325.H 345.A, r 375.H 387.C, r
 Lazard, Daniel (1941–) 200.K
 Lazard, Michel Paul (1924–) 122.F
 Lazarov, Connor (1938–) 154.H
 Leadbetter, Malcolm Ross (1931–) 395.r

Lebesgue, Henri Léon

- Lebesgue, Henri Léon (1875–1941) 20.r 22.A 84.D 93.F 94.C, r 117.B, D, r 120.A, B, D 136.A, E 156.C 159.A–C, J 160.A 166.C 168.B 179.r 221.A–C 244 246.C 270.D, E, G, J, L, r 273.F 379.S 380.C, D, r 388.B
- Lebowitz, A. 134.r
- Lebowitz, Joel Louis (1930–) 136.G
- LeCam, Lucien (Marie) (1924–) 341.r 398.r 399.K, M, N, r
- Ledger, Arthur Johnson (1926–) 364.r
- Lê Dũng Tráng (1947–) 418.I
- Lee, Benjamin W. (1935–77) 132.r
- Lee, E. Bruce (1932–) 86.r
- Lee Tsung Dao (1926–) 359.C
- Lee, Y. W. 95.r
- Leech, John 151.I
- Leela, S. 163.r
- Lefébvre, Henri (1905–) 101.r
- Lefschetz, Solomon (1884–1972) 3.A 12.B 15.B 16.P, U, V 79.r 93.r 126.A, r 146.r 153.B, C, r 170.r 201.A, E, O, r 210.r 290.r 291.r 394.r 410.r 418.F, I 422.r 426.*, r 450.Q
- Legendre, Adrien Marie (1752–1833) 4.D 46.C 82.A 83.B 107.A 109 123.A 134.A, F 145 174.A 266 296.A, B 297.H, I 342.A 393.A–C 419.C App. A, Tables 14.II, 15.IV, 16.I, IV, 18.II, III
- Lehman, R. Sherman (1930–) 385.r 450.I
- Lehmann, Erich Leo (1917–) 371.A, C, H, r 396.r 399.C, E, H, P, r 400.B, r
- Lehmann, Harry Paul (1924–) 150.D
- Lehmer, Derrick Henry (1905–) 145 301.K 354.B
- Lehmer, Derrick Norman (1867–1938) 123.r NTR
- Lehmer, Emma (1906–) 145
- Lehner, Joseph (1912–) 32.r
- Lehrer, G. I. App. B, Table 5
- Lehto, Olli (1925–) 62.C 352.C
- Leibenzon (Leibenson), Zinovii Lazarevich (1931) 192.Q
- Leibler, Richard Arthur (1914–) 398.G
- Leibniz, Gottfried Wilhelm, Freiherr von (1646–1716) 20 38 75.A 106.D 107.A 156.B 165.A 245 265 283 293.A 332 379.C App. A, Tables 9, 10.III
- Leith, Cecil Eldon, Jr. (1923–) 433.C
- Leja, Franciszek (François) (1885–1979) 48.D
- Lelong, Pierre (1912–) 21.r
- Lelong-Ferrand, Jacqueline (1918–) 364.r
- Lemaire, Luc R. (1950–) 195.E, r
- Lenstra, J. K. 376.r
- Leon, Jeffrey S. 151.I
- Leonardo da Vinci (1452–1519) 360
- Leonardo Pisano → Fibonacci
- Leontief, Wassily W. (1906–) 255.E
- Leontovich, A. M. 420.G
- Leopoldt, Heinrich Wolfgang (1927–) 14.D, U 450.A, J
- Leray, Jean (1906–) 20 112.B 125.A 146.A 148.A, E 200.J 201.J 204.B, D, r 240.r 286.C, D 321.G 323.D 325.I, J, r 383.J, r 426
- Lerner, R. G. 414.r
- LeRoy, Edouard (1870–1954) 379.S
- Lesley, Frank David 275.C
- Lettenmeyer, Fritz (1891–1953) 254.D 289.D 314.A
- Levelt, Antonius H. M. 428.r
- LeVeque, William Judson (1923–) 118.r 295.r 296.r 297.r 430.r
- Levi, Eugenio Elia (1883–1917) 13.Q 21.F, I, Q 112.D 188.r 248.F 274.G 282 321.G 323.B 325.H 344.A
- Levi, Friedrich Wilhelm (1888–1966) 2.E 122.B
- Levi-Civita, Tullio (1873–1941) 80.A, K 109.*, r 364.B 420.F
- Levin, Viktor Isosifovich (1909–) 198.r 211.r
- Levine, Jerome Paul (1937–) 114.D 235.G
- Levinson, Norman (1912–75) 107.r 123.B 160.G 252.r 253.r 254.r 314.C, r 315.r 316.r 394.r 450
- Levitán, Boris Moiseevich (1914–) 112.O 287.C 315.r 375.G 387.D
- Lévy, Azriel (1934–) 22.F 33.F, r 356.G
- Lévy, Paul (1886–1971) 5.B, E, r 45.A, E, G, I, r 115.r 159.I 176.A, E, F 192.N 260.J 261.A 262.A 341.E–G 342.D 406.F 407.A, B
- Lewin, L. 167.r
- Lewis, Daniel Ralph (1944–) 443.A
- Lewis, Donald J. (1926–) 4.E 118.D, F
- Lewis, Richard M. 127.G
- Lewy, Hans (1904–) 112.C 274.G, I 275.B 300.r 304.F 320.I 323.I 334.F
- Li Chih (1192–1279) 57.B
- Li, Peter Wai-Kwong (1952–) 391.D, N
- Li Tien-Yien (1945–) 126.N 303.G
- Li Yen (1892–1963) 57.r
- Liao San Dao (1920–) 126.J
- Lichnérowicz, André (1915–) 80.r 152.C 359.r 364.F, H, r 391.D
- Lichtenstein, Leon (1878–) 217.r 222.r
- Lickorish, William Bernard Raymond 114.L 154.B
- Lie, Marius Sophus (1842–99) 13.C, F 76.B, C 105.O, Q 107.B 109.O, Q 137 139.B 183 190.Q 247 248.A, B, F, H, P, S, T, V, r 249.A–D, G, H, L, M, V, r 267 286.K 313.D 406.G 431.C, G 437.U
- Lieb, Elliott Hershel (1932–) 212.B, r 402.r
- Lieb, Ingo (1939–) 164.K
- Lieberman, David Ira (1941–) 16.R 23.G
- Lieberman, Gerald J. (1925–) STR
- Liebmann, Karl Otto Heinrich (1874–1939) 111.I 365.J
- Liénard, Alfred 290.C
- Liepmann, Hans Wolfgang (1914–) 205.r
- Lifshits, Evgenii Mikhaïlovich (1915–) 130.r 150.r 205.r 259.r 402.r
- Liggett, Thomas Milton (1944–) 162 286.X 340.r
- Lighthill, Michael James (1924–) 25.B, r 160.r 205.r 446.r
- Ligocka, Ewa (1947–) 344.D
- Lill 19.B
- Lin, C. C. 433.r
- Lin Jiguan 108.B
- Lin Shu 63.r
- Lind, Douglas A. (1946–) 136.E
- Lindeberg, J. W. 250.B
- Lindelöf, Ernst Leonhard (1870–1946) 43.C, H 123.C 425.S
- Lindemann, Carl Louis Ferdinand von (1852–1939) 179.A 332 430.A, D
- Lindenstrauss, Joram (1936–) 37.M, N, r 168.r 443.H
- Lindley, Dennis Viktor (1923–) 401.r
- Lindow, M. App. A, Table 21.r
- Linfoot, Edward Hubert (1905–82) 347.E
- Linnik, Yuriï Vladimirovich (1915–72) 4.A, C, E 123.D, E 136.H 250.r 341.E 374.H
- Lionnet, Eugène (1805–84) 297.D
- Lions, Jaques-Louis (1928–) 86.r 112.E, F 204.B 224.A, E, F, r 286.C 320.r 322.r 323.r 327.r 378.F, I, r 405.r 440.r
- Liouville, Joseph (1809–82) 107.A 112.I 126.L 131.A 134.E 171 182.G 219.A 252.C 272.A 315.B 402.C 430.B
- Lippmann, Bernard Abram (1914–) 375.C

Lipschitz, Rudolf Otto Sigismund (1832–1903)
84.A 107.A 159.B 168.B 279.C 286.B 316.D 406.D
Liptser, Roberg Shevilevich (1936–) 86.E 405.r
Listing, Johann Benedikt (1808–82) 426
Little, C. N. 235.A
Little, John A. 365.N
Little, John Dutton Conant (1928–) 133.r
Littlewood, Dudley Ernest (1903–79) App. B,
Table 5.r
Littlewood, John Edensor (1885–1977) 4.C, D
43.E, r 88.r 123.B, C 159.G 168.B 192.D, P 211.r
224 242.B, r 317.B 339.B, C 379.S 450.B, I App. A,
Table 8
Liu Chung Laung (1934–) 66.r
Liu Hui (fl. 260) 57.A 332
Liulevicius, Arunas L. (1934–) 202.S
Livesay, George Roger (1924–) 442.L
Livingood, John 328
Livshits, Mikhail Samulovich (1917–) 68.J
Lobachevskii, Nikolai Ivanovich (1793–1856) 35.A
181 267 285.A
Loday, Jean-Louis (1946–) 237.r
Loeb, Peter Albert (1937–) 293.D, r
Loève, Michel (1907–79) 341.r 342.r
Loewy, Alfred (1873–1935) 190.P
Löfström, Jörgen (1937–) 224.r
Logunov, Anatolii Alekseevich (1926–) 150.r
Lohwater, Arthur John (1922–82) 62.r
Łojasiewicz, Stanisław (1926–) 16.r 58.E
Lommel, Eugen Cornelius Joseph von (1837–99)
39.C App. A, Table 19.IV
Lomonosov, V. I. 251.L
Longley-Cook, Laurence H. 214.r
Longo, Giuseppe (1941–) 213.r
Lonsdale, Dame Kathleen Yardley (1903–71) 92.r
Looman, H. 198.A
Looman, M. 100.A
Loomis, Herschel H., Jr. 75.D, r
Loomis, Lynn H. (1915–) 36.r 126.r 192.r 225.r
Loos, Ottman 412.r
Lopatiniskii, Yaroslav Borisovich (1906–81) 323.H
325.K
López de Medrano, Santiago 114.r
Lorentz, George G. (1910–) 168.B
Lorentz, Hendrik Antoon (1853–1928) 60.J 150.B
258.A 359.B 391.I 402.H
Lorenz, Edward N. 126.N 433.B, r
Lorenz, Max O. 397.E
Lorenzen, Paul Peter Wilhelm (1915–) 243.G
Loria, Gino (1862–1954) 93.r
Łoś, Jerzy Maria (1920–) 276.F 293.C
Loschmidt, Joseph (1821–95) 41.A
Losik, Mark Vol'fovich (1935–) 105.r
Lotz, Heinrich P. 310.H
Louveau, Alain 22.G
Lovász, László (1948–) 186.r
Love, Augustus Edward Hough (1863–1940) 271.G
Love, Clyde Elton (1882–) 107.A
Low, Francis Eugene (1921–) 150.C 361.r
Lowdenslager, David B. (1930–) 164.G, H
Löwenheim, Leopold (1878–1940) 97.B 156.E, r
276.D
Löwner, Karl (Loewner, Charles) (1893–1968)
212.r 438.B, C
Lozinskii, Sergei Mikhailovich (1914–) 314.D
Lü Yinian 17.D
Lubański, J. K. 258.D
Lubin, Jonathan (1936–) 257.r
Lubkin, Saul (1939–) 450.Q
Lucas, William F. (1933–) 173.D, E, r

Luce, Robert Duncan (1925–) 96.r 173.C 346.G
Lüders, Gerhart Claus Friedrich (1920–) 150.D
386.B
Ludwig, Donald A. (1933–) 321.G 325.L, r 345.r
Luenberger, David G. (1937–) 86.E 264.r
Lukacs, Eugène (1906–) 341.r
Łukaszewicz, Jan (1878–1956) 411.L
Luke, Yudell L. 389.r App. A, Table 16 NTR
Lumer, Günter (1929–) 164.F, G
Lundberg, Filip 214.C
Luneburg, Rudolf Karl (1903–49) 180.A, r 325.L
Lunts, G. 198.r
Lüroth, Jakob (1844–1910) 16.J
Lustzig, G. App. B, Table 5
Luther, Herbert A. 304.r
Lutz, Elizabeth (1914–) 118.D, E
Luxemburg, Wilhelmus Anthonius Josephus
(1929–) 293.r
Luzin (Lusin), Nikolaï Nikolaevich (1883–1950)
22.A, C, F, G, I, r 100.A 156.C 159.I 270.J 425.CC
Lyapin, Evgenii Sergeevich (1914–) 190.r
Lyapunov, Aleksandr Mikhailovich (1857–1918)
107.A 120.A 126.A, F 163.G 250.B 286.V 314.A
394.A, C, r 398.C 443.G
Lyapunov, Aleksei Andreevich (1911–73) 22.r
Lyndon, Roger Conant (1917–) 97.r 200.M
Lyons, Richard Neil (1945–) 151.I
Lyusternik, Lazar' Aronovich (1899–1981) 279.G
286.Q, r NTR

M

Maak, Wilhelm (1912–) 18.r
Maass, Hans (1911–) 32.F, G, r 450.M
Macaulay, Francis Sowerby (1862–1937) 12.B
284.D
Mach, Ernst (1838–1916) 116.B 205.B 271.A
Machin, John (1680–1751) 332
Machover, Maurice (1931–) 356.G
Mack, C. 301.N
Mackay, Alan L. 92.F
MacKenzie, Robert E. (1920–) 279.C
Mackey, George Whitelaw (1916–) 36.G 424.M, N
437.EE
MacLane, Saunders (1909–) 8.r 52.r 70.F, r 91.r
103.r 200.M, r 201.G 202.T 277.r 305.A
Maclaurin, Colin (1698–1746) 20 266 379.J
MacMahon, Major Percy Alexander (1854–1929)
328 330.r
MacPherson, Robert Duncan (1944–) 366.E, r
MacRobert, Thomas Murray 393.r
Madansky, Albert 408.r
Maeda, Fumitomo (1897–1965) 162
Maeda, Fumi-Yuki (1935–) 207.D, r
Maeda, Yoshiaki (1948–) 364.G
Maehara, Shōji (1927–) 411.J, r
Magness, Enrico (1923–) 112.E 323.r
Magidor, Menachem 33.r
Magnus, Wilhelm (1907–) 161.B, r 389.r App. A,
Table 20.IV
Mahalanobis, Prasanta Chandra (1893–1972)
280.E
Mahler, Kurt (1903–) 182.r 430.B, C
Mahlo, P. 33.r
Mainardi, Gaspare (1800–79) 111.H App. A, Table
4.I
Maitra, Ashok P. 22.E 396.r
Majima, Hideyuki (1952–) 428.H
Makarov, Vitalii Sergeevich (1936–) 122.G
Malcolm, Donald G. 376.r

Malfatti, Gian Francesco

- Malfatti, Gian Francesco (1731–1807) 179.A
 Malgrange, Bernard (1928–) 58.C, E 68.F 112.B, C, R 125.W 320.H 418.r 428.H
 Malliavin, Paul (1925–) 115.D, r 192.M 406.E, r
 Malmquist, Johannes (1882–1952) 254.D 288.B, C, r 289.B–D 314.A
 Mal'tsev, Anatoliĭ Ivanovich (1909–67) 29.F 249.S 276.D
 Malus, Étienne Louis (1775–1812) 180.A
 Mandelbaum, Richard (1946–) 114.r
 Mandelbrojt, Szolem (1899–1983) 58.F 134.C, r 339.A, r
 Mandelbrot, Benoit B. (1924–) 246.K 433.r
 Mandelstam, Stanley (1928–) 132.C
 Mañé, Ricardo 126.J
 Mangasarian, Olvi L. (1934–) 292.D, r
 Mangoldt, Hans Carl Friedrich von (1854–1925) 123.B 450.B
 Manin, V. G. 80.r
 Manin, Yuriĭ Ivanovich (1937–) 16.J, V 80.r 118.E 387.r 450.J, M
 Mann, Henry Berthold (1905–) 4.A 371.A, C 421.r
 Mann, Larry N. (1934–) 364.F
 Manna, Zohar (1939–) 75.r
 Mannheim, Amédée (1831–1906) 111.F
 Manning, Anthony Kevin (1946–) 51.r 126.J, K
 Mansfield, Richard B. (1941–) 22.F
 Maranda, Jean-Marie A. (?–1971) 362.K
 Marchand, Jean-Paul 375.r
 Marchenko, Vladimir Aleksandrovich (1922–) 287.C 387.D
 Marchuk, Gurii Ivanovich (1925–) 304.r
 Marcinkiewicz, Józef (1910–) 159.H 224.A, E 336.E
 Marden, Morris (1905–) 10.r
 Mardešić, Sibe (1927–) 382.A
 Margulis, Gregorii A. (1946–) 122.G
 Marion, Jerry Baskerville (1929–) 271.r
 Markov, Andreĭ Andreevich (1856–1922) 5.H 44.D, E 126.F, J 127.E 136.B, D, G 150.F 176.F 182.G 260.A, H, J 261.A, B 336.C 340.C 379.I 403.E 405.C 406.D 407.B
 Markov, Andreĭ Andreevich (1903–) 31.B 161.B 356.r
 Markus, Lawrence J. (1922–) 86.r 126.A, H, L, r 291.r
 Markwald, Werner 81.A, r
 Marotto, Frederick Robert (1950–) 126.J
 Marsden, Jerrold E. (1942–) 126.r 183.r 271.r 286.r 316.r 364.H 420.r
 Marshall, Donald E. 164.I
 Marsten, Roy Earl (1942–) 215.r
 Martin, André (1931–) 150.D 386.B, r
 Martin, Donald A. 22.D, F, H, r 33.F, r
 Martin, Harold C. 304.r
 Martin, Paul C. 308.H
 Martin, Robert S. 207.C, D 260.I
 Martin, William Ted (1911–) 21.r
 Martineau, André (1930–72) 125.W, Y, r 162 168.B 424.X
 Martinet, Jean 110.E
 Martin-Löf, Per (1942–) 354.r
 Martio, Olli Tapani (1941–) 352.F
 Marty, F. (?–1939) 272.H 435.E
 Maruyama Gisiro (1916–86) 115.D 136.D, E 250.r 260.J 395.r
 Maruyama, Masaki (1944–) 16.Y
 Maruyama, Toru (1949–) 443.A
 Masani, Pesi R. (1919–) 395.r
 Mascheroni, Lorenzo (1750–1800) 179.B
 Maschke, Heinrich (1853–1908) 362.G
 Maschler, Michael (1927–) 173.D
 Maskit, Bernard (1935–) 122.I 234.D, r 416.r
 Masley, John M. (1947–) 14.L
 Maslov, Viktor Pavlovich (1930–) 30.r 274.C, I 345.r
 Massau, Junius (1852–1909) 19.B
 Masser, David W. 134.r 430.D, r
 Massey, William S. (1920–) 91.r 170.r 201.r 202.M, P 410.r
 Masuda, Kazuo (1946–) 72.r
 Masuda, Kyûya (1937–) 378.I, J
 Masuyama, Motosaburo (1912–) STR
 Matano, Hiroshi (1952–) 263.C 303.G, r
 Mather, John Norman (1942–) 51.C–E 126.J 154.E, r 286.J 418.r
 Mathews, George Ballard (1861–1922) 39.r
 Mathieu, Émile Léonard (1835–90) 151.H 268.A–D
 Matiyasevich, Yuriĭ Vladimirovich 97.*, r 118.A 196
 Matsuda, Michihiko (1938–) 428.G
 Matsumoto, Hideya (1939–) 13.R 122.F
 Matsumoto, Kazuo (1922–) 411.J
 Matsumoto, Kikuji (1931–) 62.B 124.C, r
 Matsumoto, Shigenori (1947–) 126.M
 Matsumoto, Yukio (1944–) 65.D 114.K
 Matsumura, Akitaka (1951–) 41.r 204.F
 Matsumura, Hideyuki (1930–) 284.r
 Matsusaka, Teruhisa (1926–) 12.B 16.P, W, r
 Matsushima, Yozo (1921–83) 32.r 122.F 199.r 249.r 384.r
 Matsushita, Shin-ichi (1922–) 338.L
 Matsuyama, Noboru (1916–) 310.r
 Mattis, Daniel Charles 402.r
 Mattuck, Arthur Paul (1930–) 118.E 450.P
 Matuda, Tizuko (1923–) 30.r 288.B, r 289.r
 Matumoto, Takao (1946–) 65.C 114.K
 Matunaga Yosisuke (1692?–1747) 230 332
 Matuzaka, Kazuo (1927–) 7.r 343.r
 Matveev, Vladimir Borisovich 387.r
 Maunder, Charles Richard Francis 201.r
 Maupertuis, Pierre Louis Moreau de (1698–1759) 180.A 441.B
 Maurer, Ludwig (1859–?) 249.R
 Maurus (c. 780–c. 856) 372
 Mautner, Friedrich Ignaz (1921–) 136.G 308.G 437.EE
 Mawhin, Jean 290.r
 Maxfield, John E. (1927–) NTR
 Maxwell, Albert Ernest 280.r 346.F, r
 Maxwell, George (1946–) 92.r
 Maxwell, James Clerk (1831–79) 51.F 130.A 150.A 180.A 393.D 402.B, H 419.B
 Maxwell, William L. (1934–) 376.r
 May, J. Peter (1939–) 70.r
 May, Kenneth Ownsworth (1915–77) 157.r
 May, Robert McCredie (1936–) 126.N 263.D, r
 Mayer, Dieter H. 402.G, r
 Mayer, Karl Heinz (1936–) 431.r
 Mayer, Walter 111.r 201.C, E, L
 Maynard, Hugh B. 443.H
 Mazet, Edmond 109.r 115.r 391.r
 Mazur, Barry C. (1937–) 16.r 37.C 65.C, G 114.C 126.K 426 450.J, r
 Mazur, Stanisław (1905–81) 36.E
 Mazurkiewicz, Stefan (1888–1945) 22.C 93.D 426
 McAndrew, Michael H. 126.K 136.H
 McAuley, Van A. 301.E
 McBride, Elna Browning 177.r
 McCarthy, John (1927–) 31.C

McCoy, Barry Malcolm (1940–) 402.r
 McCoy, Neal Henry (1905–) 368.r
 McCracken, Marsden 126.r
 McDuff, Dusa Waddington (1945–) 308.F
 McGregor, James 263.E
 McKay, John 151.I
 McKean, Henry P., Jr. (1930–) 41.C 45.I, r 115.A, r 176.F, K 260.J 261.A, r 323.M 340.F 387.E, r 391.B, C, K, r 406.r 407.B
 McLachlan, Norman William (1888–) 268.r
 McLaughlin, Jack (1923–) 151.I
 McMillan, Brockway (1915–) 136.E 213.D
 McShane, Edward James (1904–) 310.I, r
 Meeks, William Hamilton, III 235.E 275.C, D
 Mehler, Ferdinand Gustav (1835–95) App. A, Tables 18.II, 19.III
 Mehra, Raman K. 86.r
 Meinardus, Günter (1926–) 328
 Meinhardt, Hans 263.D
 Meixner, Josef (1908–) 268.r 389.r
 Melin, Anders (1943–) 345.A
 Mellin, Robert Hjalmar (1854–1933) 206.D 220.C
 Melrose, Richard B. (1949–) 325.M
 Menaechmus (375–325 B.C.) 187
 Mendelson, Elliot (1931–) 33.D, r 319.r
 Menelaus (of Alexandria) (fl. 98?) 7.A 187
 Menger, Karl (1902–) 93.D 117.A, B, D, r 426
 Menikoff, Arthur S. (1947–) 325.H
 Men'shov, Dmitrii Evgen'evich (1892–) 77.A 159.J 198.A, r 317.B
 Méray, Hugues Charles Robert (1835–1911) 267
 Mercer, J. 217.H
 Mergelyan, Sergei Nikitovich (1928–) 164.J 336.F 367.G
 Merluzzi, P. 303.r
 Merman, G. A. 420.D
 Mersenne, Marin (1588–1647) 297.E App. B, Table 1
 Mertens, Franz Carl Josef (1840–1927) 123.A 379.F
 Meschkowski, Herbert (1909–) 188.r
 Meshalkin, Lev Dmitrievich (1934–) 136.E
 Messiah, Albert M. L. (1921–) 351.r
 Messing, William (1945–) 450.Q
 Métivier, Michel (1931–) 443.H
 Meusnier, Jean Baptiste Marie Charles (1754–93) 109 111.H 275.A 334.B
 Meyer, Franz (1856–1934) 267
 Meyer, Kenneth R. (1937–) 126.K, I, M
 Meyer, Paul-André (1934–) 261.r 262.D, r 406.r 407.B, r
 Meyer, Wolfgang T. (1936–) 109.r 178.r 279.G, r
 Meyer, Yves 251.r
 Michael, Ernest Arthur (1925–) 425.X, Y, AA, CC
 Michel, René 178.r 304.r
 Michelson, Albert Abraham (1852–1931) 359.A
 Migdal, A. A. 361.C
 Mikami, Yoshio (1875–1950) 230.r
 Mikhailov, A. V. 387.G
 Mikhlin, Solomon Grigor'evich (1908–) 46.r 217.r
 Mikusiński, Jan G. (1913–) 306.A, B
 Miles, G. 136.E
 Milgram, Arthur N. (1912–) 112.J
 Milgram, R. James (1939–) 65.r
 Miller, Charles F., III (1941–) 97.r
 Miller, David Charles (1918–) 291.F
 Miller, K. S. 104.r
 Miller, Louis W. 376.r 389.r
 Millett, Kenneth Cary (1941–) 154.H
 Mills, Robert L. (1927–) 80.Q, r 150.G

Name Index

Moldestad, Johan

Mil'man, David Pinkhusovich (1913–) 37.G 424.U 443.H
 Milne, James Stuart (1942–) 450.r
 Milne, William Edmund (1890–) 303.E
 Milne-Thomson, Louis Melville (1891–1974) 104.r NTR
 Milnor, John Willard (1931–) 56.F, r 65.C, E 70.C 99.r 109.r 111.r 114.A–C, F–K, r 126.N 147.H, P 154.H 178.F 237.J, r 365.O 391.C 418.D, r 426 App. A, Table 5.V
 Mimura, Masayasu (1941–) 263.D
 Mimura, Yositaka (1898–1965) 434.C, r
 Mimura, Yukio (1904–84) 162
 Minakshisundaram, Subbaramiah (1913–68) 121.r 323.M 379.r 391.B, r
 Minemura, Katsuhiko (1945–) 437.r
 Minkowski, Hermann (1864–1909) 14.B, D, U 89.D, E 118.C 122.E, F 182.A, C–E, r 196 211.C 255.B 258.A 296.A 348.D, G, K 359.B App. A, Table 8
 Minlos, Robert Adol'fovich (1931–) 258.r 341.J 424.T
 Minorsky, Nicholas (1885–) 163.B
 Minsky, Marvin C. 385.r
 Minsky, M. L. 75.r
 Minty, George James (1929–) 281.r 286.C
 Miranda, Carlo (1912–82) 323.r
 Mirimanov, D. 145
 Mishchenko, Evgenii Frolovich (1922–) 86.r
 Mishkis, Anatolii Dmitrievich 163.B
 Misiurewicz, Michał (1948–) 126.K
 Misner, Charles William (1932–) 359.r
 Mitchell, Andrew Ronald 223.r
 Mitchell, Benjamin Evans (1920–) 52.N, r 200.I
 Mitome, Michiwo (1909–76) STR
 Mitropol'skii, Yurii Alekseevich (1917–) 290.D, F
 Mitsui, Takayoshi (1929–) 4.F, r 123.F 328
 Mittag-Leffler, Gustav Magnus (1846–1927) 47 267 272.A
 Mityagin, Boris Samuilovich (1937–) 424.S
 Miura, Robert Mitsuru (1938–) 387.B
 Miwa, Megumu (1934–) 118.E
 Miwa, Tetsuji (1949–) 112.R 253.E 387.C
 Miyadera, Isao (1925–) 162 378.B
 Miyajima, Kimio (1948–) 72.G
 Miyajima, Shizuo (1948–) 310.H
 Miyakawa, Tetsuro (1948–) 204.C
 Miyake, Katsuya (1941–) 16.Z
 Miyakoda, Tsuyako (1947–) 301.C
 Miyanishi, Masayoshi (1940–) 15.H, r
 Miyaoka, Yoichi (1949–) 72.K, r
 Miyata, Takehiko (1939–83) 226.r
 Miyoshi, Tetsuhiko (1938–) 304.r
 Mizohata, Sigeru (1924–) 112.B, D, P 274. B, G, I 320.I, r 321.F, G, r 323.M 325.G, H 345.A
 Mizukami, Masumi (1951–) 16.r
 Mizumoto, Hisao (1929–) 367.I
 Mizutani, Akira (1946–) 304.r
 Mizutani, Tadayoshi (1945–) 154.G
 Möbius, August Ferdinand (1790–1868) 66.C 74.E 76.A 267 295.C 410.B
 Moedomo, S. 443.H
 Mohr, Georg (1640–97) 179.B
 Moise, Edwin Evariste (1918–) 65.C 70.C 79.D 93.r 139.r 410.r
 Moiseiwitsch, Benjamin Lawrence (1927–) 441.r
 Moïshezon, Boris Gershevich (1937–) 16.E, U, W 72.r
 Molchanov, Stanislav Alekseevich 115.D 340.r
 Moldestad, Johan (1946–) 356.F, r

Moler, Cleve B. (1939–) 298.r 302.r
 Monge, Gaspard (1746–1818) 107.B 109 158 181
 255.E 266 267 278.A 324.F
 Monin, Andrei Sergeevich 433.r
 Montel, Paul Antoine Aristide (1876–1975) 272.F
 424.O 435.E, r
 Montgomery, Deane (1909–) 196 249.V, r 423.N
 431.r
 Montgomery, Hugh L. (1944–) 14.L 123.E, r
 Montucla, Jean Étienne (1725–99) 187.r
 Mook, Dent T. 290.r
 Moon, Philip Burton (1907–) 130.r
 Moore, Calvin C. (1936–) 122.F
 Moore, Eliakim Hastings (1862–1932) 87.H, K, r
 Moore, John Colemar (1923–) 147.r 200.r 203.r
 Moore, John Douglas 365.J
 Moore, Robert Lee (1882–1974) 65.F 273.K
 425.AA 426
 Moran, Patrick Alfred Pierce (1917–) 218.r
 Morawetz, Cathleen Synge (1923–) 112.S 345.A
 Mordell, Louis Joel (1888–1972) 118.A, E
 Morera, Giacinto (1856–1909) 198.A
 Morf, Martin (1944–) 86.r
 Morgan, Frank 275.C
 Morgenstern, Oskar (1902–77) 173.A, D 376.r
 Mori, Akira (1924–55) 352.B, C 367.E
 Mori, Hiroshi (1944–) 275.F
 Mori, Mitsuya (1927–) 59.H
 Mori, Shigefumi (1951–) 16.R, r 364.r
 Mori, Shin'ichi (1913–) 207.C, r
 Mori, Shinziro (1893–1979) 284.G
 Moriguti, Sigeiti (1916–) 299.B 389.r NTR
 Morimoto, Akihiko (1927–) 110.E 126.J 344.C
 Morimoto, Haruki (1930–) 399.r
 Morimoto, Hiroko (1941–) 224.F
 Morimoto, Mituo (1942–) 125.BB, DD 162
 Morimune, Kimio (1946–) 128.C
 Morishima, Taro (1903–) 145.*
 Morita, Kiiti (1915–) 8 117.A, C, E, r 273.K 425.S,
 X–Z, CC
 Morita, Masato (1927–) 353.r
 Morita, Reiko (1934–) 353.r
 Morita, Shigeyuki (1946–) 154.G
 Morita, Yasuo (1945–) 450.U
 Moriya, Mikao (1906–82) 59.G, H
 Morlet, Claude 147.Q
 Morley, Edward Williams (1838–1923) 359.A
 Morley, Michael 276.F, r
 Morrey, Charles Bradfield, Jr. (1907–84) 46.r 78.r
 112.D 125.A 194.F, r 195 246.C 275.A, C, r 323.r
 334.D 350.r 352.B
 Morris, Peter D. 443.H
 Morrow, James 72.K
 Morse, Harold Marston (1892–1977) 109 114.A,
 F 126.J 178.A 275.B 279.A–F 286.N, Q, r 418.F
 Morse, Philip McCord (1903–) 25.r 133.r 227.r
 Morton, Keith W. (1930–) 304.r
 Moschovakis, Yiannis Nicholas (1938–) 22.D, F,
 H, r 33.r 356.G, r
 Moser, Jürgen (Kurt) (1928–) 21.P 55.r 126.A, L, r
 136.r 286.J, r 323.L 344.B 420.C, G
 Moser, William O. J. (1927–) 92.r 122.r 151.r 161.r
 Mosher, Robert E. 64.r 70.r
 Mosteller, (Charles) Frederick (1916–) 346.C, G
 Mostow, George Daniel (1923–) 13.r 32.r 122.F, G
 249.r
 Mostowski, Andrzej (1913–75) 33.D, r 356.C, H
 Motohashi, Yoichi (1944–) 123.E
 Motoo, Minoru (1927–) 44.E 115.C, D, r 261.r
 Moulin, M. 375.F

Moulton, Forest Ray (1872–1952) 55.r 303.E
 Moussu, Robert (1941–) 154.H
 Moyal, José E. 44.r
 Muchnik, Al'bert Aramovich (1934–) 356.D
 Mugibayashi, Nobumichi (1926–) 125.BB
 Muhly, Paul Scott (1944–) 164.H
 Muirhead, Robb John (1946–) 280.r
 Mukherjee, Bishwa Nath 346.r
 Müller, Claus Ernst Friedrich (1920–) 323.J 393.r
 Muller, David Eugene (1924–) 301.C
 Müller, Werner (1949–) 391.M
 Müller-Breslau, Heinrich Franz Bernhard (1851–
 1925) 19.r
 Mullikin, Thomas Wilson (1928–) 44 r
 Mullis, Clifford T. (1943–) 86.D
 Mumford, David Bryant (1937–) 3.A, N, r 9.J, r
 12.B 15.E, F, r 16.R, W, Y, Z, r 32.r 72.G 226.r
 418.D
 Munkres, James Raymond (1930–) 70.r 105.r
 114.C, r
 Müntz, C. H. 336.A
 Münzner, Hans-Friedrich 365.I
 Murakami, Shingo (1927–) 32.r 122.F 384.r App. A,
 Table 5.I
 Muramatu, Toshinobu (1933–) 168.B 224.E
 251.O
 Murasugi, Kunio (1929–) 235.A, E, r
 Murata, Hiroshi (1945–) 75.r
 Murray, Francis Joseph (1911–) 136.F 308.F
 Murre, Jacob P. (1929–) 16.W
 Murthy, M. Pavaman 237.r
 Muskhelishvili, Nikolai Ivanovich (1891–1976)
 217.r 222.r 253.r
 Muto, Yosio (1912–) 364.F, r
 Mutou, Hideo (1953–) 391.E
 Mycielski, Jan (1932–) 22.H 33.F, r
 Myers, Sumner Byron (1910–55) 152.C 178.B
 Myrberg, Pekka Juhana (1892–1976) 367.E

N

Nachbin, Leopoldo (1922–) 21.r 37.M 425.BB
 Nagaev, Sergei Viktorovich (1932–) 250.r
 Nagamati, Sigeaki (1945–) 125.BB
 Nagami, Keiô (1925–) 117.A, C, r 273.K, r 425.Y,
 AA, CC, r
 Nagano, Tadashi (1930–) 191.r 275.F 279.C 344.C
 364.F 365.F, K
 Naganuma, Hidehisa (1941–) 450.L
 Nagao, Hiroshi (1925–) 151.H 200.L 362.I
 Nagasawa, Masao (1933–) 44.r
 Nagase, Michihiro (1944–) 251.O
 Nagata, Jun-iti (1925–) 117.C 273.K, r 425.r
 Nagata, Masayoshi (1927–) 8 12.B 13.I 15.r 16.D,
 T, V, AA, r 67.I, r 196 226.G, r 277.r 284.E, G
 369.r 370.r
 Nagell, Trygve (1895–) 118.D
 Nagumo, Mitio (1905–) 162 286.Z, r 316.E, r
 323.D
 Naïm, Linda 120.E 207.C
 Naïmark (Neumark), Mark Aronovich (1909–78)
 36.G, r 107.r 112.r 192.r 252.r 258.r 308.D 315.r
 437.W, EE
 Naitô, Hiroo (1950–) 365.F, N
 Nakada, Hitoshi (1951–) 136.C
 Nakagami, Yoshiomi (1940–) 308.r
 Nakagawa, Hisao (1933–) 365.L
 Nakai, Mitsuru (1933–) 169.r 207.C, D
 Nakai, Yoshikazu (1920–) 15.C, F 16.E, r
 Nakajima, Kazufumi (1948–) 384.r

- Nakamura, Iku (1947–) 72.K
 Nakamura, Kenjiro (1947–79) 310.r
 Nakamura, Michiko (1937–) 424.X
 Nakamura, Tokushi (1930–) 70.F, r
 Nakane, Genkei (1662–1733) 230
 Nakanishi, Noboru (1932–) 146.A C
 Nakanishi, Shizu (1924–) 100.A, r
 Nakano, Hidegorô (1909–74) 162 310.A 436.r
 Nakano, Shigeo (1923–) 21.L 72.H 147.O 232.r
 Nakano, Tadao (1926–) 132.A
 Nakao, Shintaro (1946–) 340.r
 Nakaoka, Minoru (1925–) 70.F, r 153.B 202.P 305.A
 Nakayama, Mikio (1947–) 173.E
 Nakayama, Tadaki (1912–64) 6.E 8 29.H, I 59.H 67.D 172.A 200.K–N 243.G
 Nakazi, Takahiko (1944–) 164.G
 Namba, Kanji (1939–) 33.r
 Namba, Makoto (1943–) 9.E 72.r
 Nambu, Yoichiro (1921–) 132.C
 Namikawa, Yukihiko (1945–) 16.Z
 Namioaka, Isaac (1928–) 310.r 424.r
 Napier, John (1550–1617) 131.D 265 432.C
 App A, Tables 2.II, III
 Narasimhan, Mudumbai S. (1932–) 112.D
 Narasimhan, Raghavan (1937–) 23.r 367.G
 Naruki, Isao (1944–) 21.P, Q 344.D
 Nash, John Forbes, Jr. (1928–) 173.A, C, r 204.F 286.J 323.L 327.G, r 365.B
 Navier, Louis Marie Henri (1785–1836) 204.B, C, F 205.C
 Nayfeh, Ali Hasan (1933–) 25.r 290.r
 Necăs, Jindřich (1929–) 304.r
 Nedoma, Jiří 213.F
 Ne'eman, Yuval (1925–) 132.D, r
 Nehari, Zeev (1915–78) 77.r 367.G 438.B
 Nelson, Joseph Edward (1932–) 115.D 150.F 176.F 293.E, r 341.r 437.S
 Nemytskiĭ, Viktor Vladimirovich (1900–) 126.E, r 394.r
 Nernst, Hermann Walter (1864–1941) 419.A
 Néron, André (1922–) 3. M, N, r 15.D 16.P
 Nersesyan, A. A. 164.J
 Nesbitt, Cecil James (1912–) 29.r 362.r 368.r
 Netto, Eugen (1846–1919) 177.r 330.r
 Neubüser, Joachim E. F. G. (1932–) 92.F
 Neugebauer, Otto (Eduard) (1899–) 24.r
 Neuhoﬀ, David L. 213.E, F
 Neukirch, Jürgen (1937–) 450.r
 Neumann, Bernhard Hermann (1909–) 161.C 190.M
 Neumann, Carl (Karl) Gottfried (1832–1925) 39.B 120.A 188.H 193.F 217.D 323.F App. A, Tables 19.III, IV
 Neustadt, L. W. 292.r
 Neuwirth, Lee P. (1933–) 235.r
 Nevanlinna, Frithiof (1894–1977) 272.K
 Nevanlinna, Rolf Herman (1895–1980) 21.N 43.r 109 124.B 164.G 198.r 272.B, D, E, K, r 367.E, I, r 429.B 438.B
 Neveu, Jacques (1932–) 136.C
 Neville, Charles William (1941–) 164.K
 Newcomb, Robert Wayne (1933–) 282.r
 Newcomb, Simon (1835–1909) 392.r
 Newell, Allen 385.r
 Newhauser, George L. 215.r
 Newhouse, Sheldon E. (1942–) 126.J, L, M
 Newlander, August, Jr. 72.r
 Newman, Charles Michael (1946–) 212.r
 Newman, Donald J. 328
 Newman, Maxwell Herman Alexander (1897–1984) 65.C, F 93.r 333.r
 Newton, Sir Isaac (1642–1727) 20 48.B, F, H 107.A 126.A 205.C 223.C 254.D 265 271.A–C 283 299.A 301.D 336.G 337.I 338.A 418.D
 App. A, Table 21
 Newton, Roger Gerhard (1924–) 375.G, r
 Ney, Peter E. (1930–) 44.C
 Neyman, Jerzy (1894–1981) 373.A, r 396.F 400.B, D 401.B, C, F, G, r
 Nicholson, John William (1881–1955) App. A, Tables 19.III, IV
 Nickel, Karl L. E. (1924–) 222.r 301.G
 Nickerson, Helen Kelsall (1918–) 94.r 442.r
 Nicolaenko, Basil 41.D
 Nicolaus Cusanus (1401–64) 360
 Nicolescu, Miron (1903–75) 193.r
 Nicomachus (50–150?) 187
 Nicomedes (fl. 250? B.C.) 93.H
 Niederreiter, Harald G. (1944–) 182.r 354.r
 Nielsen, Niels (1865–1931) 167.r 174.r
 Niino, Kiyoshi (1941–) 17.C
 Niino, Fumio (1923–) 310.H
 Nijenhuis, Albert (1926–) 72.B
 Nikaidô, Hukukane (1923–) 89.r
 Nikodým, Otto Martin (1878–) 270.L 323.E 380.C 443.H
 Nikolai, Paul John (1931–) 151.H
 Nikol'skiĭ, Nikolai Kapitonovich (1940–) 251.r
 Nikol'skiĭ, Sergei Mikhailovich (1905–) 168.B
 Nilson, Edwin Norman (1917–) 223.r
 Ninomiya, Nobuyuki (1924–) 338.C, D, J–M
 Nirenberg, Louis (1925–) 72.r 112.D, F, H 164.K 168.B 262.B 274.I 286.Z, r 304.F 320.I 323.H, r 345.A, B 365.J
 Nishi, Mieo (1924–) 12.B
 Nishida, Goro (1943–) 202.U
 Nishida, Takaaki (1942–) 41.D, E, r 204.F 263.D 286.Z
 Nishijima, Kazuhiko (1926–) 132.A 150.r
 Nishikawa, Seiki (1948–) 195.r
 Nishimori, Toshiyuki (1947–) 154.G, H
 Nishimura, Toshio (1926–) 156.E
 Nishina, Yoshio (1890–1951) 351.G
 Nishino, Toshio (1932–) 21.L, Q
 Nishiura, Yasumasa (1950–) 263.r
 Nisio, Makiko (1931–) 45.r 260.J 405.r
 Nitecki, Zbigniew 126.r
 Nitsche, Johannes C. C. (1925–) 275.C, r 334.F, r
 Niven, Ivan (1915–) 118.r
 Nöbeling, Georg 117.D 246.r
 Noether, Amalie Emmy (1882–1935) 8 12.B 16.D, X 27.D, E 29.F 150.B 277.I 284.A, D, G 368.F 450.L
 Noether, Max (1844–1921) 9.E, F, r 11.B, r 12.B 15.B, D 16.I 366.C
 Nogi, Tatsuo (1941–) 304.F
 Nohl, Craig R. 80.r
 Nomizu, Katsumi (1924–) 105.r 199.r 365.H, N, r 412.r 413.r 417.r
 Nordin, Clas 323.M
 Norguet, François (1932–) 21.I
 Norkin, Sim Borisovich (1918–) 163.r
 Nörlund (Nørlund), Niels Erik (1885–1981) 104.B, r 379.J, Q
 Northcott, Douglas Geoffrey 67.I 200.r 277.r 284.r
 Norton, Richard E. (1928–) 146.C
 Norton, Simon Phillips (1952–) 151.I
 Noshiro, Kiyoshi (1906–76) 62.B, C, E
 Nourein, Abdel Wahab M. 301.F

Novikov, Pëtr Sergeevich

- Novikov, Pëtr Sergeevich (1901–75) 22.D, F, H
97.*, r 161.B
Novikov, Sergeĭ Petrovich (1937–) 56.F 114.J
126.N 154.B, D 387.C, r
Nozaki, Akihiro (1936–) 31.r 75.D, r
Nusselt, Ernst Kraft Wilhelm (1882–1957) 116.B
Nyikos, Peter J. 273.K
Nyquist, Harry (1889–1976) 86.A 402.K

O

- Obata, Morio (1926–) 364.F, G, r 391.D
Oberhettinger, Fritz (1911–) 220.r 389.r App.A,
Table 20.IV
Ochan, Yuriĭ Semënovich (1913–) 100.r
Ochiai, Takushiro (1943–) 21.N, O 191.r 384.r
Oda, Tadao (1940–) 16.Z, r 72.K
Oda, Takayuki (1950–) 450.S
Odqvist, Folke K. G. 188.r
Oenopides (c. 5th century B.C.) 187
Ogasawara, Tōjiro (1910–78) 162
Ogg, Andrew P. (1934–) 32.r
Ogiue, Koichi (1941–) 110.E 365.L, r
Ogus, Arthur E. (1946–) 450.r
Oğuztöreli, Mehmet Namik (1923–) 163.r 222.r
Ôharu, Shinnosuke (1941–) 162 286.X
Ohm, Georg Simon (1787–1854) 130.B 259
Ohnishi, Masao (1923–) 411.J
Ohtsuka, Makoto (1922–) 62.C, r 77 120.A 143.B
193.r 207.C, r 246.A 338.C, D, M, r
Ohya, Yujiro (1935–) 325.H, I 345.A
Oikawa, Kôtarô (1928–) 48.r 77.E, r 367.r
Ojanguren, Manuel (1940–) 29.r
Ojima, Izumi (1949–) 150.G
Oka, Kiyoshi (1901–78) 20 21.E, H, I, K, Q 23.D
72.E 147.O 383.J
Oka, Yukimasa (1942–) 136.F
Okabe, Yasunori (1943–) 176.F
Okada, Norio (1947–) 173.E
Okada, Yoshitomo (1892–1957) 379.P
Okamoto, Kazuo (1948) 253.E
Okamoto, Kiyosato (1935–) 437.AA
Okamoto, Masashi (1923–) 280.r
Okamoto, Shûichi (1951–) 306.A
Okamura, Hiroshi (1905–48) 94.r 216.B 246.F
316.D, r
Okano, Hatsuo (1932–) 100.r
Okonek, C. 16.r
Okubo, Kenjiro (1934–) 253.C
Okugawa, Kôtarô (1913–) 113
Okumura, Masafumi (1936–) 110.E
Okuyama, Akihiro (1933–) 273.K 425.Y
Oleinik, Ol'ga Arsen'evna (1925–) 112.D 323.r
325.H 327.r
Olive, David Ian (1937–) 146.r 386.C, r
Olivieri, E. 402.G
Olkin, Ingram (1924–) 280.r
Olmsted, John M. H. (1911–) 106.r 216.r
Olum, Paul (1918–) 91.r 305.A, r
Olver, Frank W. J. 30.r
O'Meara, Onorato Timothy (1928–) 348.r
Omnes, Roland Lucian (1931–) 150.r
Omori, Hideki (1938–) 178.E 183 286.r
Omura, Jim K. (1940–) 213.E
O'Nan, Michael E. 151.H, I
O'Neil, Richard 224.E
O'Neill, Barrett (1924–) 111.r 178.r 365.B, G
O'Neill, Bernard V., Jr. 164.F
Ono, Harumi (1932–) 301.F
Ono, Katuzi (1909–) 156.E, r
Ono, Takashi (1928–) 13.P
Onsager, Lars (1903–76) 340.B 402.K
Oono, Yosiro (1920–) 282.r
Oort, Frans (1935–) 9.J
Oppenheim, Alexander 220.B 242.A
Ord, J. Keith 374.r
Ordeshook, Peter C. 173.r
Ore, Oystein (1899–1968) 157.r 190.L
Oresme, Nicole (c. 1320/30–82) 372
Orey, Steven (1928–) 260.J
Orihara, Masae (1915–) 310.r
Orlicz, Władysław (1903–) 168.B 443.D
Ornstein, Donald S. (1934–) 5.G 136.B, C, E–G, r
162 213.E, F
Ornstein, Leonard Salomon (1880–1941) 45.I
Ortega, James McDonogh (1932–) 301.r
Orzech, Morris (1942–) 29.r
Oseen, William (1879–) 205.C
Oseledets, Valerĭi Iustinovich (1940–) 136.B
Osgood, William Fogg (1864–1943) 3.r 11.r 21.H, r
107.A
Oshima, Toshio (1948) 274.r 437.CC, r
Osikawa, Motosige (1939–) 136.F
Osima, Masaru (1912–) 109.r 275.A–E, r 334.F, r
365.H 391.D
Osterwalder, Konrad (1942–) 150.F
Ostrogradskii, Mikhail Vasil'evich (1801–62) 94.F
Ostrowski, Alexander (1893–) 14.F 58.F 88.A r
106.r 121.C 205.r 216.r 272.F 301.r 339.E 388.B
439.L
Oswatitsch, Klaus (1910–) 207.C
Ôtsuki, Nobukazu (1942–) 136.r
Otsuki, Tominosuke (1917–) 275.A, F 365.B
Ôuchi, Sunao (1945–) 378.F
Ovsyannikov, Lev Vasil'evich (1919–) 286.Z
Owen, Donald B. STR
Oxtoby, John Corning (1910–) 136.H
Ozawa, Mitsuru (1923–) 17.C 367.E 438.C
Ozeki, Hideki (1931–) 365.I, r
- P
- Paatero, Veikko (1903–) 198.r
Pacioli, Luca (c. 1445–c. 1514) 360
Padé, Henri Eugène (1863–1953) 142.E
Page, Annie 123.D
Paige, Christopher Conway (1939–) 241.C
Painlevé, Paul (1863–1933) 198.G 288.A–D, r
420.C
Pál, J. 89.C
Palais, Richard Sheldon (1931–) 80.r 105.Z, r
183.*, r 191.G 279.A, E 286.Q, r 431.r
Palamodov, Viktor Pavlovich (1938–) 112.R
Paley, Raymond Edward Alan Christopher (1907–
33) 45.r 58.r 125.O, BB 159.G 160.E, G, r 168.B
192.F, r 272.K 295.E 317.B
Palis, Jacob, Jr. 126.C, J, M, r
Pan, Viktor Yakovlevich (1939–) 71.D
Panofsky, Wolfgang Kurt German (1919–) 130.r
Papakyriakopoulos, Christos Dimitricu (1914) 76)
65.E 235.A
Papanicolaou, George C. (1943–) 115.D
Papert, Seymour 385.r
Pappus (of Alexandria) (fl. 320) 78.K 187 343.D
Parasyuk (Parasiuk), Ostap Stepanovich (1921–)
146.A
Paris, Jeffrey B. (1944–) 33.r
Parker, Ernest Tilden (1926–) 151.H 241.B
Parreau, Michel (1923–) 164.K 193.G 207.C 367.E
Parry, William (1934–) 136.C, r

Parseval, Marc Antoine (1755–1836) 18.B 159.A
160.C, H 192.M 197.C 220.B, C, E
Parshin, Aleksei Nikolaevich 118.E
Parthasarathy, Kalyanapuram Rangachari 213.F
341.r 374.r
Parzen, Emanuel (1929–) 421.D
Pascal, Blaise (1623–62) 20 75.A 78.K 155.E 181
265 329 330 342.A 343.E
Pascal, Ernesto (1865–?) 15.r
Pascal, Étienne (1588–1651) 329
Pasch, Moritz (1843–1930) 155.B
Passman, Donald S. (1940–) 151.r
Pasta, J. 287.r
Pasternack, Joel 154.H
Pastur, Leonid Andreevich 340.r
Patil, Ganapati P. (1934–) 374.r
Patodi, Vijay Kumar (1945–76) 237.r 366.r 391.C,
K, L, N, r
Pauli, Wolfgang Ernst (1900–58) 150.A 258.A, D
351.G, H, r 386.B
Pawley, G. Stuart (1937–) 92.F
Pazy, Amnon (1936–) 162 286.X 378.F
Peano, Giuseppe (1858–1932) 93.D, J 106.H 107.A
117.A 156.B 246.F, G 267 294.A, B, r 316.E 411.A
Pearcy, Carl Mark (1935–) 251.r
Pearl, Raymond (1879–1940) 263.A
Pears, Alan (1938–) 117.r
Pearson, D. B. 331.E 375.B
Pearson, Egon Sharpe (1895–1980) 400.B 401.B,
F, r STR
Pearson, Karl (1857–1936) 40.B 174.r 374.r 397.D
401.E 403.C STR
Pécllet, Jean Claude Eugene 116.B
Pedersen, Gert Kjærgård (1940–) 36.K, r 212.C
308.r
Pederson, Roger N. (1930–) 438.C
Pedoe, Daniel (1910–) 343.r
Peetre, Jaak (1935–) 112.E, K 125.F 224.A, C,
E, F, r
Peierls, Rudolf Ernst (1907–) 212.B
Peirce, Benjamin (1809–80) 231.B 368.F
Peirce, Benjamin Osgood (1854–1914) App. A,
Table 9.r
Peirce, Charles Sanders (1839–1914) 156.B 411.A
Peixoto, Mauricio Matos (1921–) 126.A, H, I, M
Pełczyński, Aleksander 37.L, r 68.M 443.D
Pell, John (1611–85) 118.A
Pepis, Józef (c. 1922–c. 1942) 97.*
Peressini, Anthony L. (1934–) 310.r
Perko, Kenneth A., Jr. (1943–) 235.E
Perlman, Michael David (1942–) 280.r
Perron, Oskar (1880–1975) 83.r 100.A, F 107.A
120.C 121.C 123.B 254.D 269.N 280.F 289.D
294.r 310.H 314.A 316.E, r 379.L 394.r
Pesin, Ya. B. 136.G
Peter, F. 69.B 249.U, r 437.EE
Péter, Rózsa (1905–77) 356.B, r
Petermann, Abdeas (1922–) 361.r
Peterson, Elmor Lee (1938–) 264.r
Peterson, William Wesley (1924–) 63.r
Petersson, Hans (1902–84) 32.B–D 328.r 450.Q
Petkov, Vesselin Mihailev (1942–) 325.H
Petrenko, Viktor Pavlovich (1936–) 272.K, r
Petrie, Ted E. (1939–) 431.D
Petrov, Valentin Vladimirovich (1931–) 250.r
Petrovskii, Ivan Georgievich (1901–73) 107.r
112.D 196 320.r 321.E, r 323.I 324.r 325.F, G, J, r
327.H
Pettis, Billy James (1913–79) 68.M 443.A, B, D,
F–H

Petty, Sir William (1623–87) 40.A 401.E
Petvyashvili, V. I. 387.F
Peyret, Roger 304.r
Pfaff, Johann Friedrich (1765–1825) 103.G 105.Q
107.B 428.A, B
Pfanzagl, Johann (1928–) 399.M, O 400.r
Pflüger, Albert (1907–) 143.A 272.K 367.E, r
Pham, Frederic 146.A, C 386.C 418.r
Phelps, Robert Ralph (1926–) 443.H
Phillips, Aris (1915–1985) 154.F 279.C
Phillips, E. 136.r
Phillips, Melba N. (1907–) 130.r
Phillips, Ralph Saul (1913–) 68.M 112.P, S 162
251.r 286.r 375.H 378.B, F, r 443.A, H
Phragmén, Lars Edvard (1863–1937) 43.C
Picard, Charles Émile (1856–1941) 3.A 11.r 12.B, r
15.B, D, r 16.P, U 20.*, r 107.A 113 124.B 206.D
232.C 237.J 253.r 272.E 288.C 289.r 316.D 323.D
367.D 388.r 418.F, r 429.B
Pick, Georg 21.O
Pielou, Evelyn C. 263.r
Pietsch, Albrecht (1934–) 68.N, r 424.r
Pillai, K. C. Sreedharan 280.B
Pincherle, Salvatore (1853–1936) 217.F 240.B
Pinchuk, S. I. 344.D, F
Pinsker, Mark Shlemovich (1925–) 136.E 213.E
Piper, Christopher J. 215.E
Pitcher, Tom Stephen (1926–) 396.r
Pitman, Edwin James George (1897–) 371.A, E
399.G, r 400.K
Pitt, Harry Raymond (1914–) 160.G 192.r 339.r
379.r
Pitt, Loren D. (1939–) 176.F
Pitts, Jon T. 275.G
Plancherel, Michel (1885–1967) 192.M 218.G
437.L
Planck, Max Karl Ernst Ludwig (1858–1947)
115.A 351.A 402.I 419.r
Plante, Joseph F. (1946–) 154.H
Plateau, Joseph Antoine Ferdinand (1801–83) 109
275.C 334.A, B
Platek, Richard A. 356.G
Plato (427–347 B.C.) 187 357.B
Platonov, Vladimir Petrovich (1939–) 13.Q
Pleijel, Åke Vilhelm Carl (1913–) 391.B, C, r
Plemelj, Josip 253.r
Pliš, Andrzej (1929–) 321.F 323.J
Pliss, Viktor Aleksandrovich (1932–) 126.J
Plotkin, Morris 63.B
Plücker, Julius (1801–68) 9.B 12.B 90.B 137 267
Pochhammer, Leo (1841–1920) 206.C
Pogorelov, Aleksei Vasil'evich (1919–) 365.J
Pohlmann, Henry 450.S
Poincaré, Henri (1854–1912) 3.A, C, D 11.B 12.B
16.E 20 21.Q 25.B 30.C, r 32.B, F, r 55.r 56.B, F
65.A, C 70.A 74.G 105.A 107.A 109 114.J, K 117.A
120.A, D 122.C, r 126.A, C, E, G, I, L, r 136.A, C
153.B 156.C 170 198.J 201.A, B, F, O 218.C, H
219.A, r 248.J 253.D 254.D 258.A 267 279.A
285.A, D 286.W 288.B 289.C 314.A 335 344.A
383.E 420.A, C 425.G 426 450.Q
Poinot, Louis (1777–1859) 271.E
Poisson, Siméon Denis (1781–1840) 5.D, F 82.B
105.M 126.E 159.C 168.B 192.C, L 193.G 198.B
260.H 266 271.F, G 323.A 324.C, D 325.D 338.A
341.D 391.J 397.F 407.D App. A, Tables 15.VI,
19.III
Polit, Stephen H. 136.E
Polkinghorne, John Charlton (1930–) 146.r
386.C, r

- Pollaczek, Félix (1892–1981) 145 307.C
Pollaczek-Geiringer, H. 298.r
Polonsky, Ivan P. 223.r 299.r
Pólya, George (1887–1985) 20.r 48.D, r 66.E 88.r
121.C 211.r 228.B, r 272.K 339.D 374.J 429.B
Polyakov, A. M. 80.r
Pomeranchuk, Isaak Yakovlevich (1913–66) 386.B
Pommerenke, Christian (1933–) 48.r 77.F 169.F
438.r
Poncelet, Jean-Victor (1788–1867) 179.B 181
266 267
Pong, D. H. 345.A
Ponstein, J. 292.D
Pontryagin, Lev Semënovich (1908–) 2.G 56.D,
F, H 64.A, B 86.A, F 107.r 108.r 114.H 126.A, I, r
192.K 201.A, r 202.B, U 203.D 249.r 305.A 318.r
422.C, E, r 423.r
Ponzano, Giorgio Enrico (1939–) 146.A
Poor, Walter Andrew (1943–) 178.r
Popov, M. V. 291.E
Popov, Viktor Nikolaevich (1937–) 132.C 150.G
Popp, Herbert (1936–) 16.W
Port, Sidney Charles (1935–) 5.G
Porter, Alfred William (1863–1939) 116.r
Post, Emil Leon (1897–1954) 31.B 75.D 97.r 161.B
240.D 356.A, D, H, r
Postnikov, Aleksei Georgievich (1921–) 295.E
328.*, r
Postnikov, Mikhail Mikhailovich (1927–) 70.G
148.D 172.r 305.A
Poston, Tim 51.r
Povzner, Aleksandr Yakovlevich (1915–) 375.A
Powell, H. B. 151.r
Powell, M. J. D. (1936–) 142.r
Powers, Robert T. (1941–) 36.K 212.B 308.I, r
Poynting, John Henry (1852–1914) 130.A
Prabhu, Narahari Umanath (1924–) 260.J
Prachar, Karl (1925–) 123.D, r 450.r
Prandtl, Ludwig (1875–1953) 116.B 205.B–D 222.C
Prasad, Gopal (1945–) 122.G
Preissmann, Alexandre 178.B
Presburger, M. 156.E, r
Preston, Gordon Bamford (1925–) 190.r
Price, Griffith Baley (1905–) 443.A
Price, J. 423.r
Priestley, Maurice Bertram (1933–) 421.r
Prigogine, Ilya (1917–) 95
Prikry, Karel L. (1944–) 33.F, r
Pringsheim, Alfred (1850–1941) 58.E 83.E
Proclus (410(411)–485) 187
Prokhorov, Yurii Vasil'evich (1929–) 115.D
250.E, r 341.F, r 374.r
Protter, Murray H. (1918–) 78.r 106.r 216.r 323.r
327.r 350.r
Prüfer, Heinz (1896–1934) 2.D 200.K
Prugovečki, Eduard (1937–) 375.r
Przymusiński, Teodor C. 117.E
Przytycki, Feliks 126.K
Pták, Vlastimil (1925–) 424.X
Ptolemy (Claudius Ptolemaeus) (c. 85–c. 165) 187
432.C
Pugh, Charles C. 126.J–L, r
Puisseux, Victor Alexandre (1820–83) 339.A
Pukanszky, Lajos 437.K, U
Puppe, Dieter (1930–) 200.r 202.G
Puri, Madan Lai (1929–) 280.r 371.r
Pustyl'nik, Evgenii Izievich (1938–) 251.r
Pusz, Wiesław 402.G
Putnam, Calvin Richard (1924–) 251.K
Putnam, Hilary Whitehall (1926–) 81.D, r 97.*, r
Pyatetskii-Shapiro, Il'ya Iosifovich (1929–) 32.H
122.G 125.r 159.J 384.A, C, r 437.r 450.Q, S
Pythagoras (572–492 B.C.) 60.O 118.A 139.B, D
145 155.C 181 187
- Q**
- Quenouille, Maurice Henri (1924–73) 421.D
Quillen, Daniel G. (1940–) 12.r 16.Y 191.r 200.K
237.A, I, J 369.F
Quinn, Barbara Keyfitz 286.X
Quinn, Frank S. (1946–) 114.K
- R**
- Raabe, Joseph Ludwig App. A, Table 10.II
Raanan, Joseph 173.E
Rabie, M. 173.r
Rabinowitz, Paul H. (1939–) 286.T, W, r
Rabinowitz, Phillip (1926–) 223.r 299.r 301.r
Racah, Giulio (1909–65) 353.A, B, r
Rademacher, Hans Adolph (1892–1969) 4.A, C, D
297.r 317.B, C 328.*, r 357.r
Radjavi, Heydar (1935–) 251.r
Radkevich, F. V. 112.D 323.r
Radó, Tibor (1895–1965) 65.C 77.B 109 164.I
193.r 246.r 275.A, C, D, r 323.E, I 334.C, r 367.A,
F 410.B
Radon, Johann (1887–1956) 94.C 125.CC 218.F
270.I, L 380.C 443.H
Rådström, Hans Vilhem (1919–70) 443.I
Raghavarao, Damaraju (1938–) 102.r
Raghunathan, Madabusi Santanam (1941–)
122.G, r
Raiffa, Howard 173.C 398.r
Raikov, Dmitrii Abramovich (1905–) 192.G 256.r
341.E 424.X 437.EE
Rainville, Earl D. 389.r
Rajchman, A. 159.J
Rall, Louis B. (1930–) 138.r 301.r
Ralston, Anthony (1930–) 142.r 223.r 303.D, r
Ralston, James V. 345.A
Ramachandra, Kanakanahalli (1933–) 123.E
Ramamoorthi, R. V. 396.r
Ramanathan, Kollagunta Gopalaiyer (1921–)
118.D 450.K
Ramanujam, Chidambaram Padmanabham (1938–
74) 232.D, r
Ramanujan, Srinivasa (1887–1920) 4.D 32.C, D
295.D, E 328.*, r
Ramis, Jean-Pierre (1943–) 68.F
Ramsey, Frank Plumpton (1903–30) 156.B
Ran, Ziv (1957–) 450.S
Randles, Ronald Herman (1942–) 371.r 374.r
Range, R. Michael (1944–) 164.K
Rankin, Robert Alexander (1915–) 123.C
Rankine, William John Macquorn (1820–72)
204.G 205.B
Rao, Calyampudi Radhakrishna (Radhakrishna
Rao, Calyampudi) (1920–) 280.r 374.H 399.C,
D, O, r 401.r
Rao, Ranga R. (1935–) 374.r
Raphson, Joseph (c. 1648–c. 1715) 301.D
Rapoport, Michael 16.r
Rasmussen, O. L. 301.r
Rathbone, C. R. 332.r
Ratner, Marina E. 126.J 136.F
Rauch, A. 17.D
Rauch, Harry Ernest (1925–79) 134.r 178.A, C
Ray, Daniel Burrill (1928–79) 5.r 115.A

- Ray-Chaudhuri, Dwijendra K. 96.r
 Rayleigh, Lord (Strutt, John William) (1842–1919)
 46.F 68.H 228.B 298.C 304.B 318.r 331.A, D 446.r
 Raynaud, Michel (1938–) 3.N, r
 Razumikhin, B. S. 163.G, I
 Rebbi, Claudio 80.r
 Reckhow, Robert A. 71.r
 Ree, Rim Hak 151.I, J App. B, Table 5.III
 Reeb, Georges (1920–) 90.r 154.A, B, D 279.D
 Reed, George Michael (1945–) 273.K
 Reed, L. J. 263.A
 Reed, Michael (1942–) 331.r 375.r 390.r
 Reed, Myril Baird (1902–) 282.r
 Reeh, Helmut Rudolf (1932–) 150.E
 Rees, David (1918–) 67.I 284.A
 Regge, Tullio (1931–) 132.C 146.A, C 375.r 386.C
 Regiomontanus (Johann Müller) (1436–76) 360
 432.C
 Reich, Edgar (1927–) 352.C
 Reid, Constance 196.r
 Reid, John Ker (1938–) 302.r
 Reid, Miles A. (1948–) 16.r
 Reidemeister, Kurt Werner Friedrich (1893–1971)
 91.r 155.r 235.A, r
 Reif, Frederick (1927–) 402.r
 Reifenberg, E. R. 275.A, G 334.F
 Reilly, Robert C. 365.H
 Reiner, Irving (1924–) 29.r 92.r 151.r 277.r 362.r
 Reinhardt, Hans 59.F
 Reinhardt, Karl 21.B, Q
 Reinsch, C. (1934–) 298.r 300.r
 Rellich, Franz (1906–55) 68.C 188.D 323.G 331.A,
 B 351.C
 Remak, Robert (1888–?) 190.L 277.I
 Remes, E. 142.B
 Remmert, Reinhold (1930–) 20 21.M, Q, r 23.B–E,
 r 199.r
 Rémondos, Geörgios (1878–1928) 17.A, C, r
 Rengel, Ewald 77.E
 Rényi, Alfréd (1921–70) 4.C 123.E
 Rescboom, J. H. 376.r
 Resnikoff, George Joseph (1915–) STR
 Reuleaux, Franz (1829–1905) 89.E 111.E
 Revuz, Daniel Robert (1936–) 260.J 261.E
 Reynolds, Osborne (1842–1912) 116.B 205.C 259
 Rhaeticus, Georg Joachim (1514–74) 432.C
 Rheinboldt, Werner Carl (1927–) 301.r
 Rhodes, John L. (1937–) 31.r
 Ribenboim, Paulo (1928–) 145.r
 Ribet, Kenneth A. 14.L 450.J, r
 Riccati, Jacopo Francesco (1676–1754) 86.E 107.A
 405.G App. A, Table 14.I
 Ricci, Curbastro Gregorio (1853–1925) 109 364.D
 365.C 417.B, F App. A, Table 4.II
 Ricci, Matteo (1552–1610) 57.C
 Rice, John Richard (1934–) 299.r 336.r
 Richard, Jules Antoine (1862–1956) 319.B
 Richardson, C. H. 104.r
 Richardson, Lewis Fry (1881–1953) 302.C 304.E
 Richardson, Roger Wolcott, Jr. (1930–) 431.r
 Richert, Hans-Egon (1924–) 4.C 123.D, E, r
 Richter, Hans (1912–78) 443.A
 Richter, Wayne H. (1936–) 81.D, r
 Richtmyer, Robert Davis (1910–) 304.r
 Rickart, Charles Earl (1913–) 36.r 231.r 443.A
 Rickman, Seppo U. (1935–) 352.F
 Rieffel, Marc A. (1937–) 308.H 443.H
 Riemann, Georg Friedrich Bernhard (1826–66) 3.I,
 L, r 9.C, F, I 11.B–D, r 12.B 15.D 16.V 20 21.A,
 C, F 30.C 37.K 46.E 51.E 74.D 77.B 80.K 94.B
 105.A, P, W 107.A 109 110.E 123.A, B 137 152.A
 159.A 160.A 181 198.A, D, Q 199.A 216.A 217.J
 237.G 253.B, D 267 274.G 275.A 285.A 286.L
 323.E 325.D 334.C 344.A 363 364.A, B, D 365.A
 366.A–D 367.A, B, E 379.C, S 412.A–D, J 413.*
 416 426 447 450.A, B, I, Q App. A, Tables 4.II,
 14.II, 18.I
 Riemenschneider, Oswald W. (1941–) 232.r
 Riesz, Frigyes (Frédéric) (1880–1956) 43.D 68.A,
 E, r 77.B 136.B 162 164.G, I 168.B 193.S 197.A,
 F, r 251.O, r 260.D 310.A, B 317.A, B 390.r
 425.r
 Riesz, Marcel (1886–1969) 43.D 88.C 121.r
 125.A 164.G, I 224.A 338.B 379.R
 Riley, Robert Freed (1935–) 235.E
 Rim, Dock S. (1928–) 200.M
 Ringel, Gerhard (1919–) 157.E, r 186.r
 Ringrose, John Robert (1932–) 308.r
 Rinnooy Kan, Alexander H. G. (1949–) 376.r
 Rinow, Willi (1907–79) 178.A
 Riordan, John (1903–) 66.r 330.r
 Riquier, C. 428.B, r
 Rishel, Raymond W. 405.r
 Rissanen, Jorma (1932–) 86.D
 Ritt, Joseph Fels (1893–1951) 113.*, r 428.r
 Ritter, Klaus (1936–) 292.r
 Ritz, Walter (1878–1909) 46.F 303.I 304.B
 Rivière, Néstor Marcelo (1940–78) 224.E
 Roache, Patrick John (1938–) 300.r
 Robbin, Joel W. (1941–) 126.G, r 183
 Robbins, Herbert (Ellis) (1915–) 250.r 399.D
 Roberts, Joel L. (1940–) 16.I
 Roberts, John Elias (1939–) 150.E
 Roberts, John Henderson (1906–) 117.C
 Roberts, Richard A. (1935–) 86.D
 Robertson, Alex P. 424.r
 Robertson, Howard Percy (1903–61) 359.E
 Robertson, Wendy J. 424.X, r
 Robin, Gustave (1855–97) 48.B 323.F
 Robinson, Abraham (1918–74) 118.D 276.D, E, r
 293.A, D, r
 Robinson, Derek William (1935–) 36.K, r 308.r
 402.G, r
 Robinson, G. 301.r
 Robinson, Julia Bowman (1919–85) 97.*, r
 Robinson, R. Clark 77.F 126.H, J, L, r
 Robinson, Raphael Mitchel (1911–) 356.B
 Roch, Gustave (1839–66) 9.C, F 11.D 15.D 237.G
 366.A–D
 Roche, Edouard Albert (1820–83) App. A,
 Table 9.IV
 Rockafellar, R. Tyrrell (1935–) 89.r 292.D
 Rodin, Burton (1933–) 367.I, r
 Rodoskii, Kirill Andreevich (1913–) 123.E
 Rodrigues, Olinde (1794–1851) 393.B
 Roepstorff, Gert (1937–) 402.G
 Rogers, Claude Ambrose (1920–) 22.r 182.D
 443.D
 Rogers, Hartley, Jr. (1926–) 22.r 81.D, r 97.r
 356.r
 Rogers, William H. 371.r
 Roggenkamp, Klaus W. (1940–) 362.r
 Rogosinski, Werner Wolfgang (1894–1964) 159.H,
 r 242.A
 Röhrl, Helmut (1927–) 196 253.D
 Roitman, A. A. 16.R, r
 Rokhlin, Vladimir Abramovich (1919–84) 56.H
 114.H, K 136.E, H, r 213.r
 Rolfsen, Dale Preston Odin (1942–) 235.r
 Rolle, Michel (1652–1719) 106.E

Romanov, Vladimir Gabrilovich

Romanov, Vladimir Gabrilovich 218.H
 Romberg, W. 299.C
 Roquette, Peter Jaques (1927–) 118.D
 Rose, Milton Edward (1925–) 353.r
 Rosen, Judah Ben (1922–) 292.E
 Rosenberg, Alex (1926–) 29.r
 Rosenberg, Ivo G. (1939–) 75.D
 Rosenberg, Jonathan M. (1951–) 437.r
 Rosenblatt, Murray (1926–) 395.r 421.r
 Rosenbloom, Paul Charles (1920–) 255.D, E
 Rosenblueth, Arturo (1900–70) 95.r
 Rosenblum, Marvin (1926–) 331.E 421.r
 Rosenhain, Johann Georg (1816–87) 3.A
 Rosenhead, Louis (1906–84) 205.r
 Rosenlicht, Maxwell (1924–) 9.F 13.B, r
 Rosenthal, Peter (1941–) 251.r
 Roshko, Anatol (1923–) 205.r
 Ross, George G. 438.C
 Ross, Kenneth A. (1936–) 192.r
 Ross, Ronald (1857–1932) 263.A
 Rosser, John Barkley (1907–) 33.r 145 156.E, r
 185.r 356.D
 Rossetti, C. 132.r
 Rossi, Hugo 21.r 23.r 164.C, G 344.C 384.r
 Rota, Gian-Carlo (1932–) 66.r 203.r
 Roth, Klaus Friedrich (1925–) 118.D 182.G
 Roth, Leonard (1904–68) 12.r 16.r
 Rothstein, Wolfgang (1910–75) 21.M
 Rotman, Joseph J. (1934–) 2.E
 Rouché, Eugène (1832–1910) 10.E 99.D 198.F
 Rouche, Nicolas 290.r
 Rouet, A. 150.G
 Roumieu, Charles 125.A, U
 Rourke, Colin Patrik (1943–) 65.r 147.Q, r
 Roussarie, Robert 154.G, H
 Roussas, George Gregory (1933–) 399.N, r
 Roy, K. K. 396.r
 Roy, Prabir (1937–) 117.C
 Roy, Samarendra Nath 280.B
 Royden, Halsey Lawrence (1928–) 21.O 36.M
 164.K 166.r 207.C, D, r 221.r 270.r 367.E, I
 380.r 416
 Rozanov, Yurii Anatol'evich (1934–) 176.r 395.r
 Rozenfel'd (Rosenfel'd) B. I. 154.G
 Rozhdestvenskii, Boris Leonidovich (1928–) 204.r
 Rubel, Lee A. (1928–) 164.J
 Rückert, Walter 23.B
 Rudakov, Aleksei Nikolaevich 15.r
 Rudin, Mary Ellen (1924–) 425.Y
 Rudin, Walter (1921–) 20.r 36.r 84.r 87.r 106.r
 164.I, K, r 166.r 192.Q, r 198.r 216.r 221.r 270.r
 367 380.r 422.r
 Rudolph, Daniel Jay (1949–) 136.E, F
 Rudvalis, Arunas (1945–) 151.I
 Ruelle, David Pierre (1935–) 126.A, J, K, M, N, r
 136.C, G, H, r 150.D 154.H 340.B 402.G, r
 433.B, r
 Ruffini, Paolo (1765–1822) 172.A 190.Q
 Ruh, Ernst A. (1936–) 178.r
 Rund, Hanno (1925) 152.C, r
 Runge, Carl David Tolmé (1856–1927) 19.r 118.D
 223.A 301.D 303.D 416.F
 Running, Theodore Rudolph (1866–) 19.r
 Ruskai, Mary Beth (1944–) 212.B
 Russell, Bertrand Arthur William (1872–1970)
 156.A, B, r 319.B, r 411.A, K, r
 Rutman, Moisei Aronovich (1917–) 89.r 310.H
 Ryan, Patric J. 365.r
 Ryll-Nardzewski, Czesław (1926–) 22.E
 Ryser, Herbert John (1923–85) 66.r

S

Saaty, Thomas L. (1926–) 157.r 22.r 260.H 291.r
 Sabatier, Pierre Célestin (1935–) 375.r
 Saburi, Yutaka (1948–) 125.BB
 Saccheri, Girolamo (1667–1733) 285.A
 Sacker, R. S. 126.M
 Sacks, Gerald Enoch (1933–) 22.F 33.r 63.B 97.r
 276.r 356.r
 Sacks, Jerome (1931–) 195.E, r 275.D
 Sacksteder, Richard (1928–) 136.G 154.H 365.E
 Sadanaga, Ryoichi (1920–) 92.F
 Sadler, D. H. 291.F
 Sagher, Yoram 224.E
 Sah, Chih-Han (1934–) 151.r
 Sahni, Sartaj K. 71.r
 Sainouchi, Yoshikazu (1926–) 367.I
 Saint-Beuve, Marie-France 22.r
 Saint-Donat, Bernard 9.r 16.r
 Saint-Raymond, Jean 22.F
 Saito, Hiroshi (1947–) 450.G, r
 Saito, Kyoji (1944–) 418.D, r App. A, Table S.r
 Saito, Masahiko (1931–) 122.F
 Saito, Tosiya (1920–) 126.E 289.E
 Saitō, Yoshimi (1939–) 375.C
 Sakai, Akira (1932–) 164.K
 Sakai, Fumio (1948–) 21.N
 Sakai, Makoto (1943–) 367.E, r
 Sakai, Shoichiro (1928–) 36.K, r 308.C, E, F, L
 Sakai, Takashi (1941–) 178.C 391.B 413.r
 Sakamoto, Heihachi (1914–) 374.H
 Sakamoto, Kunio (1948–) 365.N, r
 Sakamoto, Reiko (1939–) 323.M 325.K, r 327.H
 Sakane, Yusuke (1946–) 365.L
 Sakata, Shōichi (1911–70) 132.D, r
 Saks, Stanisław (1897–1942) 84.r 94.r 100.r 198.r
 221.r 246.r 270.r 380.r
 Salam, Abdus (1926–) 132.D
 Salem, Raphaël (1898–1963) 159.r 192.r
 Salmon, George (1819–1904) 78.r 350.r
 Salomaa, Arto Kustaa (1934–) 75.r
 Salzmann, Helmut Reinhard (1930–) 58.r
 Sambutsky, S. 353.r
 Samelson, Hans (1916–) 413.r 427.F
 Sampson, Joseph Harold (1925–) 183 195.E
 Samuel, Pierre (1921–) 12.B 67.r 284.G, r 370.r
 439.r
 Sanderson, Brian Joseph (1939–) 65.r 147.Q, r
 Sannami, Atsuro (1955–) 126.J
 Sanov, Ivan Nikolaevich (1919–) 161.C 403.r
 Sansone, Giovanni (1888–1979) 290.r 317.r
 Santaló, Luis Antonio (1911–) 218.C, E, H, r 228.A
 Šapiro → Shapiro
 Sapronov, Yu. I. 286.r
 Sarason, Donald Erik (1933–) 164.K, r
 Sard, Arthur (1909–80) 105.J 208.B 286.P
 Sargsyan (Sargsjan), L. S. 315.r
 Sarhan, Ahmed E. 374.r
 Saribekovich, Sargsyan Iskhan (1931–) 315.r
 Sario, Leo Reino (1916) 48.r 77.E, r 124.C, r 169.r
 207.r 367.E, G, r
 Sarton, George Alfred Léon (1884–1956) 26.r 209.r
 372.r
 Sasaki, Shigeo (1912–) 110.E 275.C 365.J
 Sasieni, Maurice W. 307.r
 Sataev, E. A. 136.F, r
 Satake, Ichiro (1927–) 13.r 16.Z 21.Q 32.F 59.H
 122.r 248.U, r 384.r 437.AA
 Sato, Atsushi (1954–) 154.H
 Sato, Fumihiko (1949–) 450.V

Sato, Ken-iti (1934–) 115.C, D 263.r
 Sato, Mikio (1928–) 20 112.D 125.A, V, W, BB, EE
 146.A, C 162.*., r 274.I 345.B 386.C 387.C 418.H
 450.A, M, Q, S, V
 Sato, Tokui (1906–83) 217.r 288.B
 Sattinger, David H. 126.M 286.r
 Savage, I. Richard (1925–) 371.A, C, r
 Savage, John E. 71.r
 Savage, Leonard Jimmie (1917–71) 342.G 399.F, r
 401.B, F
 Sawada, Ken (1953–) 126.J
 Sawashima, Ikuko (1929–) 310.H
 Saxer, Walter (1896–1974) 214.r
 Sazonov, Vyacheslav Vasil'evich (1935–) 341.J
 Scarf, Herbert Ely (1930–) 173.E 227.r
 Ščegol'kov → Shchegol'kov
 Schaaf, Manfred 258.r
 Schadé, J. P. 95.r
 Schaefer, Helmut (1925–) 217.r 310.A, H
 Schaeffer, Albert Charles (1907–) 438.B, C
 Schafheitlin, Paul (1861–) App. A, Table 19.III
 Schäfke, Friedrich Wilhelm (1922–) 268.r 389.r
 Schaible, Siegfried 264.r
 Schapira, Pierre M. (1943–) 112.D 125.Y 162
 Schark, I. J. 164.I
 Schatten, Robert (1911–1977) 68.I
 Schauder, Juliusz Pawel (1899–1943) 37.L 68.E
 153.D 286.D 323.C, D, r 325.C, r
 Schechter, Martin (1930–) 112, F, H 189.B 320.r
 323.H
 Scheffé, Henry (1907–77) 102.r 346.C 399.C, r
 Scheffers, Georg (1866–1945) 247.r
 Scheifele, Gerhard 55.r
 Scheinberg, Stephen 164.K
 Scheja, Günter (1932–) 21.M, r
 Scherk, Heinrich Ferdinand 275.A
 Scherk, John (1947–) 132.r
 Scherk, Peter (1910–85) 4.A
 Schetzen, Martin 95.r
 Schickard, Wilhelm (1592–1635) 75.A
 Schiffer, Menahem Max (1911–) 77.F, r 188.r 367.r
 438.B, C
 Schiffman, M. 275.B
 Schilling, Otto Franz Georg (1911–73) 257.r 439.r
 Schläfli, Ludwig (1814–95) 105.A 248.S 393.B
 App. A, Tables 19.III, IV
 Schlaifer, Robert 398.r
 Schlesinger, Ludwig (1864–1933) 253.E, r
 Schlessinger, Michael 16.r
 Schlichting, Hermann (1907–) 205.r 433.A
 Schlieder, Siegfried (1918–) 150.E
 Schlömilch, Otto 39.D App. A, Tables 9.IV, 10.II,
 19.III
 Schmeidler, David 173.D
 Schmetterer, Leopold (1919–) 399.N
 Schmid, Hermann Ludwig (1908–56) 59.H
 Schmid, Wilfried (1943–) 16.r 437.W
 Schmidt, Erhard (1876–1959) 68.C, I 139.G
 217.H, I 286.V 302.E 317.A 445
 Schmidt, Friedrich Karl (1901–77) 12.B 59.G
 450.P
 Schmidt, O. Y. → Shmidt
 Schmidt, Robert (1898–1964) 208.C 379.M
 Schmidt, Wolfgang M. (1933–) 83.r 118.B, D, r
 182.G, r 354.r 430.C 437.W
 Schnee, Walter 379.M
 Schneider, Michael (1942–) 16.r
 Schneider, Theodor (1911–) 182.r 196 430.A, B, r
 Schober, Glenn E. (1938–) 438.r
 Schoen, Richard M. (1950–) 275.D, F 364.r

Schoenberg, Isaac Jacob (1903–) 178.A
 Schoenfeld, Lowell (1920–) 328
 Schoenflies, Arthur Moritz (1853–1928) 47.r 65.G
 92.E, F 93.D, K 122.H 381.r App. B, Table 5.IV
 Scholtz, Arnold 59.F
 Schönfinkel, M. 97.*
 Schönhage, Arnold 298.r
 Schopf, Andreas 200.I
 Schottky, Friedrich Hermann (1851–1935) 9.J
 43.J 234.B 367.C
 Schouten, Jan Arnoldus (1883–1971) 109.*, r 137
 417.r 428.r 434.C
 Schrader, Robert (1939–) 150.F
 Schreier, Otto (1901–29) 7.r 28 151.A, I 161.A
 172.F 190.G, N 200.M 256.r 343.r 350.r
 Schröder, A. 156.B
 Schröder, Friedrich Wilhelm Karl Ernst (1841–1902)
 44.B 388.D 411.A
 Schrödinger, Erwin (1887–1961) 331.A, D 340.E
 351.C, D 434.C
 Schubauer, G. B. 433.A
 Schubert, Hermann (1848–1911) 56.E 201.r
 Schubert, Horst (1919–) 235.A
 Schur, Friedrich Heinrich (1856–1932) 364.D
 Schur, Issai (1875–1941) 29.E 43.J 122.C, E, F, H, r
 151.E 226.r 277.H 295.E 368.G 379.L 437.D, EE
 App. B, Table 5.r
 Schütte, Kurt (1909–) 97.* 156.E, r
 Schuur, Jerry Dee (1936–) 290.r
 Schwank, Friedrich (1900–) 217.r
 Schwartz, Arthur J. (1932–) 126.I
 Schwartz, Jacob Theodore (1930–) 37.r 68.M
 112.I, O 136.B, r 162.r 168.r 240.r 251.r 279.r
 286.r 308.F, r 310.r 315.r 331.r 378.r 390.r 443.A,
 G, r
 Schwartz, Laurent (1915–) 20.*, r 68.r 94.r 112.D, r
 125.A, B, L, r 160.r 162.*, r 168.r 189.r 192.M
 240.r 262.r 270.I 306.A 322.r 424.R, S, X, r
 Schwartz, Richard 280.r
 Schwarz, Hermann Amandus (1843–1921) 11.D
 43.B 77.D 106.H 109 198.G 211.C 246.B 275.B, F
 334.C App. A, Tables 8, 9.III, 13.III
 Schwarzenberger, Rolf Ludwig Edward (1936–)
 92.r
 Schwarzschild, Karl (1873–1916) 359.E
 Schweber, Silvan Samuel (1928–) 150.r
 Schweitzer, Paul Alexander (1937–) 126.N 154.D
 Schwerdt, Hans 19.r
 Schwinger, Julian Seymour (1918–) 132.C 146.A
 150.A, F 308.H 361.A 375.C
 Seidmore, Allan K. (1927–) 96.r
 Scipione del Ferro (1465–1526) 360
 Scott, Dana S. 33.E, r
 Scott, William Raymond (1919–) 151.r
 Searle, Shayle R. (1928–) 403.r
 Sebastião e Silva, José (1914–) 125.BB
 Secrest, Don H. (1932–) 299.r
 Sedov, Leonid Ivanovich (1907–) 116.r
 Seebach, L. 425.r
 Seeley, Robert Thomas (1932–) 274.I 323.K
 Seelig, Carl (1894–1962) 129.r
 Segal, Graeme Bryce (1941–) 105.r 237.J 366.r
 Segal, Irving Ezra (1918–) 308.D 351.K
 Segal, Jack (1934–) 382.A, C
 Segre, Beniamino (1903–77) 366.r
 Segre, Corrado (1863–1924) 11.B
 Seibert, Peter 126.D
 Seidel, Philipp Ludwig von (1821–96) 302.C
 Seidel, Wladimir P. (1906–81) 62.C, D
 Seidenberg, Abraham (1916–) 9.r 343.r

- Seifert, Herbert (1907–) 65.r 91.r 99.r 126.N 154.D
170.r 201.r 235.A, C, r 410.r
- Seinfeld, John Hersch (1942–) 303.r
- Seitz, Gary M. 151.J
- Seki, Takakazu (Kowa) (c. 1642 (1639?)–1708)
230 332
- Sekiguchi, Jiro (1951–) 437.CC
- Selberg, Atle (1917–) 4.A 32.H, r 122.F, G 123.B,
D, E 412.K 437.X, CC, DD 450.A, I, K, T, r
- Selberg, Henrik Ludvig (1906–) 17.A, C, D, r 48.E
124.B 338.H
- Selfridge, R. G. NTR
- Sell, George R. (1937–) 126.M
- Selmer, Ernst Sejersted (1920–) 118.C
- Selten, Reinhard 173.B
- Semple, John Greenlees (1904–86) 12.r
- Sen, Pranab Kumar (1937–) 280.r 371.r
- Senior, James Kuhn 151.r
- Seregin, L. V. 115.r
- Sergner, J. A. 19.B
- Serre, Jean-Pierre (1926–) 3.N, r 9.r 12.B 13.r 15.E
16.C, E, T, r 20 21.L, Q 29.r 32.D 52.N 59.H, r
64.B, r 70.r 72.E, K, r 122.F 147.K, O 148.A
172.r 200.K, M, r 202.N, U, r 237.J 248.r 249.r
257.r 284.G 362.r 366.D 369.F, r 426 428.G
450.G, J, R, r
- Serret, Joseph Alfred (1819–85) 111.D 238.r
App. A, Table 4.I
- Serrin, James Burton (1926–) 275.A, D 323.D, E
- Servais, C. 297.D
- Seshadri, Conjeeveram Srirangachari (1932–)
16.Y, r
- Seshu, Sundaram (1926–) 282.r
- Sevast'yanov, Boris Aleksandrovich (1923–) 44.r
- Severi, Francesco (1879–1961) 9.F, r 11.B 12.B
15.B, D, F 16.P 232.C
- Sewell, Geoffrey Leon (1927–) 402.G
- Sewell, Walter Edwin (1904–) 336.H
- Sgarro, Andrea (1947–) 213.r
- Shabat, Aleksei Borisovich 387.F
- Shafarevich, Igor' Rostislavovich (1923–) 14.r 15.r
16.r 59.F, H 118.D, E 257.H 297.r 347.r 450.Q, S
- Shampine, Lawrence Fred (1939–) 303.r
- Shaneson, Julius L. 65.D 114.J, K, r
- Shanks, Daniel (1917–) 332.r
- Shanks, E. B. 109.r
- Shanks, William (1812–82) 332
- Shannon, Claude Elwood (1916–) 31.C 136.E
213.A, D–F 403.r
- Shannon, Robert E. 385.r
- Shapiro, Harold N. (1922–) 123.D
- Shapiro, Harold S. 43.r
- Shapiro, Harvey L. 425.r
- Shapiro, Jeremy F. 215.r 264.r
- Shapiro, Zoya Yakovlevna 258.r 323.H
- Shapley, Lloyd Stowell (1923–) 173.D, E
- Sharkovskii, Aleksandr Nikolaevich (1936–) 126.N
- Sharpe, Michael J. (1941–) 262.r
- Shaw, B. 251.K
- Shaw H. 75.r
- Shchegol'kov (Stschegolkow), Evgenii Alekseevich
(1917–) 22.r
- Shelah, Saharon 33.r 276.E, F, r
- Shelly, Maynard Wolfe 227.r
- Shelukhin, V. V. 204.F
- Shen Chao-Liang (1951–) 36.H
- Shenk, Norman A., II 112.P
- Shepard, Roger Newland (1929–) 346.E, r
- Sher, Richard B. (1939–) 382.D
- Sherman, Seymour (1917–77) 212.A, r
- Shewhart, Walter Andrew (1891–1967) 401.G
404.A, B
- Shiba, Masakazu (1944–) 367.I
- Shibagaki, Wasao (1906–) 174.r App. A, Table 20.r
NTR
- Shidlovskii, Andrei Borisovich (1915–) 430.D, r
- Shields, Allen Lowell (1927–) 43.G, r 164.J
- Shields, Paul C. (1933–) 136.E, r 213.F
- Shiga, Kiyoshi (1944–) 195.r
- Shiga, Kôji (1930–) 72.r 147.O
- Shige-eda, Shinsei (1945–) 96. r
- Shikata, Yoshihiro (1936–) 178.r
- Shilov, Georgii Evgen'evich (1917–75) 21.D 36.M
125.A, Q, S 160.r 162.r 164.C 384.D 424.r
- Shimada, Nobuo (1925–) 114.B 202.S
- Shimakura, Norio (1940–) 323.H, N
- Shimizu, Hideo (1935–) 32.H 450.L, r
- Shimizu, Ryoichi (1931–) 374.H
- Shimizu, Tatsujiro (1897–) 124.B 272.J
- Shimodaira, Kazuo (1928–) 230.r
- Shimura, Goro (1930–) 3.M, r 11.B 13.P 16.r 32.D,
F, H, r 59.A 73.B, r 122.F, r 450.A, L, M, S, U, r
- Shintani, Hisayoshi (1933–) 303.r
- Shintani, Takuro (1943–80) 450.A, E, G, V, r
- Shioda, Tetsuji (1940–) 450.Q, S
- Shiohama, Katsuhiko (1940–) 178.r
- Shiraiwa, Kenichi (1928–) 126.J
- Shirkov, Dmitrii Vasil'evich (1928–) 150.r 361.r
- Shiryaev, Al'bert Nikolaevich (1934–) 86.E 395.r
405.r
- Shisha, Oved (1932–) 211.r
- Shizuta, Yasushi (1936–) 41.D 112.F
- Shmidt (Schmidt), Otto Yul'evich (1891–1956)
190.L 277.I
- Shmul'yan, Yu. V. 37.E, G 162 424.O, V
- Shnider, Steven David (1945–) 344.C–E
- Shnirel'man, Lev Genrikhovich (1905–38) 4.A
279.G 286.Q, r
- Shoda, Kenjiro (1902–77) 8 29.F
- Shoenfield, Joseph Robert (1927–) 22. F, H, r 97.r
156.r 185.r 411.r
- Shohat, James Alexander (1886–1944) 240.r 341.r
- Shortley, George H. 353.r
- Shreider, Yulii Anatol'evich (1927–) 192.r
- Shrikhande, S. S. 102.K 241.B STR
- Shub, Michael (1943–) 126.J, K, r
- Shubik, Martin 173.r
- Shubnikov, Aleksei Vasil'evich (1887–) 92.F, r
- Shult, Ernest E. (1933–) 151.J
- Shultz, Frederic W. (1945–) 351.L
- Shvarts (Schwarz, Švarc), Al'bert Solomonovich
(1934–) 56.H 80.r 286.D
- Sibuya, Yasutaka (1930–) 289.D, E 428.H, r
- Sidák, Zbyněk (1933–) 371.r
- Sidon, S. 159.J 192.T
- Siebenmann, Laurence Carl (1939–) 65.A, C, r
70.C 114.J, K, r
- Siegel, Carl Ludwig (1896–1981) 3.A, r 4.F 11.B, r
14.E 21.Q 22.A, C, H, r 27.r 32.F, r 49.D, r 55.r
72.r 118.A, C, D 122.B, E, F, r 123.D 126.I 154.D
182.D, E, G, r 242.A 289.D 296.A 297.r 328 347.E
348.K.r 384.A, E, F 412.r 420.C, F 430.A, B, D, r
450.A, E, K, r
- Sierpiński, Wacław (1882–1969) 22.A, C, H 49.D
242.A 297.r 425.r 426
- Sigmund, Karl 136.r
- Sikonia, W. 331.E 390.I
- Sikorski, Roman (1920–83) 42.r
- Šilov → Shilov
- Silver, Jack H. 33.F, r

Silverman, Leonard M. (1939–) 86.D
 Silverstein, Martin Louis (1939–) 44.E 168.B
 Silvester II → Gerbert
 Silvet, S. D. 102.r
 Simart, Georges 11.r 12.r 15.r 418.r
 Simauti, Takakazu (1930–) 411.J
 Simon, Barry (1946–) 150.r 212.B, r 331.r 351.r 375.r 390.r
 Simon, Herbert Alexander (1916–) 385.r
 Simon, Leon M. (1945–) 275.C
 Simonis, Juriaan (1943–) 16.Y
 Simons, James H. (1938–) 275.A, F 364.r 365.G
 Simplicius (c. 6th century) 187
 Simpson, Thomas (1710–61) 299.A 303.E
 Sims, Charles C. (1937–) 14.L 151.A, I
 Sinaï, Yakov Grigor'evich (1935–) 126.A, J, N 136.C, E, G, r
 Singer, Isadore Manual (1924–) 20 68.F 80.r 91.r 109 153.C 183 191.r 303.H, r 323.K, M 366.A–C, r 390.J 391.B, C, K, L, r 428.r
 Singh, Avadhesh Narayan 209.r
 Sinha, Kalya B. 375.r
 Sinnott, W. 450.J
 Sirao, Tunekiti (1924–) 45.I, r
 Sitnikov, Kirill Aleksandrovich (1926–) 117.D
 Siu Yum-Tong (1943–) 195.r 232.C 364.r
 Sjölin, Per B. (1943–) 159.r
 Skibinsky, Morris (1925–) 396.J
 Skitovich, Viktor Pavlovich 374.H
 Skolem, Albert Thoralf (1887–1963) 97.B 118.C, D 156.E, r 276.D 293.A
 Skorniyakov, Lev Anatol'evich (1924–) 85.r
 Skorokhod, Anatolii Vladimirovich (1930–) 44.r 115.D, r 250.E, r 406.D, F, r
 Skramstad, H. K. 433.A
 Slater, Lucy Joan 167.r 206.r 292.B NTR
 Slodowy, Peter (1948–) 418.r
 Slowikowski, Wojciech (1932–) 424.X
 Smale, Stephen (1930–) 65.C 105.Z, r 114.A, B, D, F, r 126.A, J, K, r 136.G 183 279.D, E 286.P, Q 426
 Small, Charles (1943–) 29.r
 Smart, D. R. 153.r
 Smart, William Marshall (1889–) 55.r 392.r
 Smirnov, Modest Mikhaïlovich (1921–) 326.r
 Smirnov, Nikolaï Vasil'evich (1900–66) 250.F, r 374.E STR
 Smirnov, Vladimir Ivanovich (1887–1974) 20.r 106.r 216.r 371.F
 Smirnov, Yurii Mikhaïlovich (1921–) 273.K
 Smith, Brian T. (1942–) 298.r 301.O
 Smith, David Eugene (1860–1944) 187.r
 Smith, Gordon Dennis 304.r
 Smith, Guy Watson (1885–) 19.r
 Smith, H. L. 87.H, K, r
 Smith, Henry John Stephen (1826–83) 179.B
 Smith, J. M. 263.r
 Smith, Kennan Tayler (1926–) 276.E 338.E
 Smith, Paul Althaus (1900–80) 235.E 431.B
 Smith, Paul John (1943–) 151.I
 Smithies, Frank (1912–) 217.r
 Smorodinsky, Meir (1936–) 136.E
 Smullyan, Raymond M. 411.r
 Smyth, Brian 275.F 365.H, L
 Smythe, Robert T. (1941–) 340.r
 Snapper, Ernst (1913–) 16.E 200.M
 Sneddon, Ian Naismith (1919–) 389.r
 Sneddon, W. J. 336.r
 Snell, James Laurie (1925–) 260.J
 Snell (Snel van Roijen, Snellius), Willebrord

Name Index

Steffensen, John F.

(1580–1626) 180.A
 Sobolev, Sergei L'vovich (1908–) 20 46.r 125.A 162 168.B, r 224.E 320.r 323.G 325.r
 Sobolevskii, Pavel Evseevich (1930–) 251.r 286.r 378.I, J
 Sohncke, Leonhard (1842–97) 92.F
 Solitar, Donald Moiseevitch (1932–) 161.r
 Solovay, Robert M. (1938–) 22.F, H 33.E, F, r
 Sommer, Friedrich (1912–) 198.r 367.r
 Sommerfeld, Arnold Johannes Wilhelm (1868–1951) 130.r 188.D 271.r 274.r 402.H App. A, Table 19.III
 Sommerville, Duncan McLaren Young (1879–1934) 285.r
 Soms, A. 399.N
 Sonine (Sonin), Nikolaï Yakovlevich (1849–1915) 317.D App. A, Tables 19.III, 20.VI
 Sono Masazô (1886–1969) 8 284.G
 Soreau, R. (1865–?) 19.r
 Sotomayor, Jorge (1942–) 126.M
 Sova, Miroslav 378.D
 Sowe, E. R. 354.r
 Spanier, Edwin Henry (1921–) 64.r 70.r 148.r 170.r 201.M, r 202.I, r 305.r
 Späth, R. A. 274.F 314.A
 Spearman, Charles (1863–1945) 346.F, r 371.K
 Specht, Wilhelm (1907–85) 10.r 151.r 190.r
 Specker, W. H. 142.C
 Spector, Clifford (1930–) 81.r 156.E, r 356.H, r
 Speer, Eugene Richard (1943–) 146.A
 Speiser, Andreas (1885–1970) 151.r 172.J 190.r
 Spencer, Domina Eberle (1920–) 130.r
 Spencer, Donald Clayton (1912–) 12.B 15.F 72.G, r 232.r 367.r 428.E, r 438.B, C 442.r
 Spencer, Thomas 402.G
 Sperner, Emanuel (1905–80) 7.r 256.r 343.r 350.r
 Spindler, Heinz 16.r
 Spitzer, Frank Ludwig (1926–) 44.C 250.r 260.E, J 340.r
 Spivak, Michael D. (1940–) 114.J 191.r 365.r
 Sprindzhuk, Vladimir Gennadievich (1936–) 118.D 430.C
 Springer, George (1924–) 367.r
 Springer, Tonny Albert (1926–) 13.A, I, O, P, r
 Srinivasan, B. App. B, Table 5
 Srinivasan, T. P. 164.G
 Srivastava, Muni Shanker (1936–) 280.r
 Stallings, John Robert, Jr. (1935–) 65.A, C, E, F 235.G 426
 Stampacchia, Guido (1922–78) 440.r
 Stanasila (Stănășilă), Octavian (1939–) 23.r
 Stancu-Minasian, I. M. 408.r
 Stanley, Harry Eugene (1941–) 402.r
 Stanley, Richard Peter (1944–) 16.Z
 Stapp, Henry Pierce (1928–) 146.C 274.D, I 386.C
 Stark, Harold Mead (1939–) 83.r 118.D 182.G 347.E 450.E
 Stasheff, James Dillon (1936–) 56.r 201.r
 Staudt, Karl Georg Christian von (1798–1867) 267 343.C 450.J
 Stavroudis, Orestes Nicholas (1923–) 180.r
 Stearns, Richard Edwin (1936–) 75.r
 Stechkin, Sergei Borisovich (1920–) 211.r 336.C
 Steel, J. 22.F
 Steele, John Hyslop (1926–) 263.D
 Steen, Lynn Arthur (1941–) 425.r
 Steenbrink, Joseph H. M. (1947–) 9.J
 Steenrod, Norman Earl (1910–71) 52.r 56.r 64.A, B, r 70.F, r 91.r 147.r 148.D 201.A, C, Q, R 210.r 305.A, r 426.*, r 442.r
 Steffensen, John F. 223.r

- Stegall, Charles 443.H
Stegun, Irene A. (1919-) NTR
Stein, Charles M. 280.D, r 398.r 399.G, r 400.B, F
Stein, Elias M. (1931-) 159.G 168.B, r 224.B, E, r 251.r 437.V, DD
Stein, Karl (1913-) 20 21.H, L, M, Q 23.B, F, F 72.E 367.B, G, I
Steinberg, Robert (1922-) 13.O 151.I 237.J 248.Z App. B, Table 5.r
Steinbuch, Karl 95.r
Steiner, Jakob (1796-1863) 78.K 89.C 179.A, B 181 228.B 267
Steinhaus, Hugo (1887-1972) 37.H 317.r 424.J
Steinitz, Ernst (1871-1928) 8 149.I, r 172.A 357.r
Steinmann, Othmar Viktor (1932-) 150.D
Stepanov, Sergei Aleksandrovich 450.P
Stepanov, Vyacheslav Vasil'evich (1889-1950) 18.A, r 126.E, r 394.r
Stephan, Frederick F. 280.J
Stepin, Anatolii Mikhaïlovich (1940-) 136.E, G, H
Stern, A. 297.D
Sternberg, S. H. 346.r
Sternberg, Shlomo (1936-) 105.r 111.r 126.G, r 132.r 191.r 274.r 325.L 428.F, G, r 431.r
Stetter, Hans J. (1930-) 303.r
Stevin, Simon (1548-1620) 360
Stewart, F. M. 22.H
Stewart, Gilbert W., III 298.r
Stewart, Ian Nicholas (1945-) 51.r
Stickelberger, Ludwig (1850-1936) 2.B
Stiefel, Eduard Ludwig (1909-78) 55.r 56.A, B, F 65.B 147.A, I, M 199.B 302.D
Stieltjes, Thomas Joannes (1856-94) 94.A-C 133.C 166.C 192.D, Q 220.D 240.A, K 270.L
Stiemch, Erich 255.B, E
Stigum, Bernt Petter (1931-) 44.r
Stirling, James (1692-1770) 66.D 174.A 223.C App. A, Tables 17.I, 21.I
Stoer, Josef (1934-) 303.F
Stoïlow, Simion 207.B, C 367.r
Stoka, Marius Ion (1934-) 218.r
Stoker, James Johnston (1905-) 111.r 205.r
Stokes, George Gabriel (1819-1903) 94.F 105.U 167.E 188.E 204.B, C, F 205.C, F 254.D App. A, Table 3.III
Stoll, Wilhelm Friedrich (1923-) 21.N 272.L
Stolz, Otto (1842-1905) 106.G 333.B
Stolzenberg, Gabriel 164.F
Stone, Arthur Harold (1916-) 22.r 273.K 425.X, CC
Stone, Charles J. 5.F
Stone, Harold S. (1938-) 96.r
Stone, Marshall Harvey (1903-) 42.D 112.O 162 168.B 197.r 207.c 251.r 310.I 378.C 390.r 425.T
Stong, Robert Evert (1936-) 114.r 237.H
Stora, Raymond Felix (1930-) 150.G
Storer, James Edward (1927-) 282.r
Størmer, Erling (1937-) 212.B
Stout, Edgar Lee (1938-) 164.r
Stracke, Gustav (1887-) 309.r
Strang, William Gilbert (1934-) 300.r 304.r
Strassen, Volker (1936-) 250.E
Stratila (Strătilă), Serban 308.r
Stratonovich, Ruslan Leont'evich (1930-) 115.D 406.C
Stratton, Julius Adams (1901-) 130.r 133.r
Strauss, Walter A. (1937-) 286.C 345.A
Stray, Arne (1944-) 164.J
Streater, Raymond F. (1936-) 150.r 386.r
Strebel, Kurt O. (1921-) 352.C
Street, Anne Penfold (1932-) 241.r
Stroock, Daniel Wyler (1940-) 44.E 115.C, D, r 250.r 261.C 262.E 406.A, D, r
Stroud, Arthur H. 299.r
Stroyan, Keith Duncan (1944-) 293.r
Struik, Dirk Jan (1894-) 187.r 266.r
Strutt, Maximilian Julius Otto (1903-) 133.r 268.r
Struve, Friedrich George Wilhelm von (1793-1864) 39.G App. A, Table 19.IV
Stuart, Alan (1922-) 102.r 374.r 397.r 400.r
Student (Gosset, William Sealy) (1876-1936) 374.B 400.G 401.F
Stueckelberg, Ernst Carl Gerlach (1905-) 361.r
Sturm, Jacques Charles François (1803-55) 10.E 107.A 112.I 301.C 315.B
Subramanyam, K. 399.O
Suetuna, Zyoiti (1898-1970) 242.B 295.D 450.E
Sugawara, Masao (1902-70) 73.A
Sugie, Toru (1952-) 15.H
Sugimoto (Goto), Midori (1944-) 178.r
Suita, Nobuyuki (1933-) 77.E
Sukhatme, Balkrishna Vasudeo (1924-79) 373.r
Sukhatme, Pandurang Vasudeo 373.r
Sullivan, Dennis Parnell (1941-) 65.C 114.J, L 154.H, r 234.E
Sumihiro, Hideyasu (1941-) 16.Z
Sunada, Toshikazu (1948-) 195.r 391.C
Sundman, Karl Frithiof (1873-1949) 420.C
Sunouchi, Gen-ichiro (1911-) 159.G, H 310.r 336.D
Sunzi (c. 3rd century) 57.A
Suranyi, János (1918-) 97.B
Suslin, Andrei Aleksandrovich 16.Y 200.K 369.F
Suslin (Souslin), Mikhail Yakovlevich (1894-1919) 22.A-C, H, I 33.F 425.CC
Süssmilch, Johann Peter (1707-67) 401.E
Suzuki, Michio (1926-) 151.I, J, r 190.r App. B, Table 5.III
Suzuki, Mitsuo (1928-) 173.E
Švarc → Shvarts
Swan, Richard G. (1933-) 200.M 237.r 362.r 383.r
Swedler, Moss E. (1942-) 172.A, K 203.A
Swierczkowski, S. 22.H
Swinerton-Dyer, Henry Peter Francis (1927-) 118.D, E 450.J, Q, S
Switzer, Robert M. (1940-) 202.r
Sylov, Peter Ludvig Mejdell (1832-1918) 151.B
Sylvester, James Joseph (1814-97) 103.F 186.A 226.G 267 297.D 348.C 369.E, F
Symanzik, Kurt (1923-83) 132.C 150.D, F 361.B, r 386.C
Synge, John Lighton (1897-) 152.C 178.B, C
Szabó, Árpád (1913-) 187.r
Szankowski, Andrzej (1945-) 37.L
Szász, Otto (1884-1952) 121.B
Szczerba, Robert H. (1932-) 114.K
Szebehely, Victor G. (1921-) 420.r
Szegő, Gabor (1895-1985) 20.r 48.D, r 164.G 188.H 222.r 228.B, r 317.r 322.r 336.I 389.r
Szegő, Giorgio P. 86.r 108.r 126.r
Szémeredi, Endre 136.C
Szmielew, Wanda (1918-76) 97.B
Sz.-Nagy (Székefalvi-Nagy), Béla (1913-) 68.r 197.r 251.N, r 390.r
Szpilrajn, Edward 117.G
Szpiro, Lucien (1941-) 16.Y 118.E

T
Tabata, Masahisa (1947-) 304.D
Tachibana, Shun-ichi (1926-) 110.E

- Tai Yung-Sheng (1944–) 16.r
 Tait, Peter Guthrie (1831–1901) 157.C 235.A
 Takagi, Ryoichi (1943–) 365.I, K, L
 Takagi, Teiji (1875–1960) 14.L, O, R, U 59.A
 73.A, r 196 267 297.I 336.A 348.M 415 450.E
 App. B, Tables 4.I, II
 Takahara, Yositané (c. 17th century) 230
 Takahashi, Hidetoshi (1915–85) 142.D 299.r
 Takahashi, Moto-o (1941–) 156.E 411.J, r
 Takahashi, Reiji (1927–) 437.BB
 Takahashi, Shuichi (1928–) 362.K
 Takahashi, Tsunero (1933–) 275.F 365.I, K, L
 Takahasi, Yositoki (1764–1804) 230
 Takano, Kinsaku (1915–58) 213.F
 Takano, Kyoichi (1943–) 428.r
 Takasawa, Yoshimitsu (1942–) 299.B
 Takasu, Satoru (1931–) 200.K
 Takebe, Katahiro (1664–1739) 230 332
 Takeno, Hyôitirô (1910–) 434.r
 Takenouchi, Osamu (1925–) 437.E
 Takenouchi, Tanzo (1887–1945) 73.A 134.r
 Takens, Floris (1940–) 126.A, L, M, r 433.B, r
 Takesaki, Masamichi (1933–) 36.r 308.H, I, J
 Takeuchi, Kei (1933–) 128.C, r 346.r 371.A, H
 373.r 399.K, O 400.r
 Takeuchi, Masaru (1932–) 365.I, L, N, O 384.E, r
 Takeuchi, Mitsuhiro (1947–) 203.r
 Takeuti, Gaisi (1926–) 33.r 81.D 156.E, r 356.G, r
 411.J, r
 Takhtadzhian (Takhtajan), Leon Armenovich
 387.G
 Tall, Franklin D. (1944–) 273.K
 Talman, James Davis (1931–) 389.r
 Talmi, Igal 353.r
 Tamagawa, Tsunco (1925–) 6.F 13.P, r 59.H 118.C
 122.F 348.K 450.A, H, K, L
 Tamano, Hisahiro (1928–69) 425.X
 Tamarkin, Jacob David (1888–1945) 160.E 240.r
 341.r
 Tamura, Itiro (1926–) 114.B, F 154.B, H
 Tamura, Jirô (1920–) 124.C 367.F
 Tamura, Ryoji (1920–81) 371.C
 Tanabe, Hiroki (1932–) 378.I
 Tanabe, Kunio (1943–) 302.r
 Tanaka, Chuji (1916–) 121.B, C
 Tanaka, Hiroshi (1932–) 41.C 261.r 340.r 406.D
 Tanaka, Hisao (1928–) 22.C, F
 Tanaka, Jun-ichi (1949–) 164.H
 Tanaka, Makoto (1942–) 437.r
 Tanaka, Minoru (1909–) 295.E
 Tanaka, Minoru (1949–) 279.r
 Tanaka, Noboru (1930–) 21.P 80.r 191.r 344.B
 364.F 365.F 384.D, r
 Tanaka, Shigeru (1942–) 136.C
 Tanaka, Shunichi (1938–) 287.C
 Tanaka, Yosizane (1651–1719) 230
 Tandori, Károly (1925–) 317.B
 Tangora, Martin Charles (1936–) 64.r
 Tani, Atsusi (1946–) 204.F
 Taniyama, Yutaka (1927–58) 3.M 73.B 450.F, S
 Tannaka, Tadao (1908–86) 59.D 69.D 249.U
 Tannery, Paul (1843–1904) 144.r 187.r
 Tanno, Shukichi (1937–) 110.E 364.F, G 365.L
 391.C, E, N
 Tarski, Alfred (1902–83) 22.G 33.r 97.B, r 156.r
 185.D, r 276.D
 Tartaglia, Niccolò (1500?–57) 360
 Tartakovskii, Vladimir Abramovich 4.E 161.B
 Tashiro, Yoshihiro (1926–) 364.F, G
 Tate, John Torrence (1925–) 3.C, M, N, r 6.E, F, r
 28.r 59.H 118.D, E, r 200.K, N 257.r 450.F, G,
 L, N, P, Q, S, r
 Tatsuuma, Nobuhiko (1930–) 437.K
 Tatuzawa, Tikao (1915–) 4.F, r 123.E 450.r
 Tauber, Alfred (1866–1942?) 36.L 121.D 160.G
 192.F 339.B 379.N
 Taubes, Clifford Henry (1955–) 150.r
 Taylor, Angus Ellis (1911–) 106.r 216.r
 Taylor, Brook (1685–1731) 20 21.B 58.C 106.E, J
 286.F 339.A App. A, Table 9.IV
 Taylor, Sir Geoffrey Ingram (1886–1975) 205.E
 433.A, C
 Taylor, Howard Milton (1937–) 260.r
 Taylor, James Henry (1893–?) 152.C
 Taylor, John Clayton (1930–) 132.r
 Taylor, John R. 375.r
 Taylor, Joseph L. 36.M, r
 Taylor, Michael E. 345.A
 Taylor, Samuel James (1929–) 45.r
 Taylor, Thomas D. 304.r
 Teichmüller, Oswald (1913–43) 9.J 43.E 77.E
 352.A, C 416 438.B
 Teissier, Bernard (1945–) 16.Z 418.r
 Teixeira, Francisco Gomes 93.r
 Temam, Roger (1940–) 204.B, D 304.r
 Tennenbaum, Stanley (1927–) 33.F, r
 Teplitz, Vigdor L. 146.r
 Terada, Toshiaki (1941–) 206.D 428.H
 Terano, Takao (1952–) 301.F
 Terasaka, Hidetaka (1904–) 235.A, C
 ter Haar, Dick 402.r
 te Riele, H. J. J. 297.D
 Terjanian, Guy 118.F
 Terry, Milton Everett (1916–) 346.C 371.C
 Thales (c. 639–c. 546 B.C.) 35.A 181 187
 Theaitetus (415–369 B.C.) 187
 Theil, Henri (1924–) 128.r
 Theodorsen, Theodore (1897–) 39.F
 Theodorus (of Cyrene) (5th century B.C.) 187
 Theon (of Alexandria) (fl. 370) 187
 Theon (of Smyrna) (fl. 130) 187
 Thimm, Walter (1913–) 23.D
 Thirring, Walter Eduard (1927–) 212.B
 Thom, René F. (1923–) 12.B 51.A, B, E 56.E, F, r
 70.r 114.A, F–H 126.A, H, M 148.E 183 202.T
 263.D 418.G, r 426
 Thoma, Elmar Herbert (1926–) 437.E
 Thomas Aquinas (1225(27)–74) 372
 Thomas, J. 206.C
 Thomas, Lawrence E. 375.F
 Thomas, Paul Emery (1927–) 64.r
 Thomas, Richard Kenneth (1942–) 136.E
 Thomas, Tracy Yerkes (1899–1984) 152.C
 Thomason, Steven Karl (1940–) 22.F
 Thompson, Colin John (1941–) 212.B
 Thompson, J. F. 304.E
 Thompson, John Griggs (1932–) 151.D, H–J
 Thomsen, Gerhard (1899–) 155.H
 't Hooft, Gerald 132.C, D
 Thorin, G. O. 88.r 224.A
 Thorne, Kip S. 359.r
 Thorpe, J. A. 91.r
 Thrall, Robert McDowell (1914–) 29.r 173.D
 368.r
 Threlfall, William (1888–) 65.r 91.r 99.r 170.r
 201.r 235.r 410.r
 Thue, Axel (1863–1922) 31.B 118.D 182.G
 Thullen, Peter (1907–) 20 21.H, M, Q
 Thurston, William P. (1946–) 65.E 126.J, N
 154.A, D–H, r 234.A 235.B, E

Thurstone, Louis Leon

- Thurstone, Louis Leon (1887–1955) 346.C, F
 Tierney, Myles 200.r
 Tietäväinen, Aimo A. (1937–) 63.r
 Tietze, Heinrich (1880–1964) 425.Q
 Tikhonov, Andrei Nikolaevich (1906–) 153.D
 273.K 425.Q, S, T
 Timmesfeld, Franz-Georg (1943–) 151.J
 Timoshenko, Stephen P. (1878–1972) 271.r
 Tisserand, François Félix (1845–96) 55.r
 Tissot, Nicolas Auguste (1824–?) 206.C
 Titchmarsh, Edward Charles (1898–1963) 112.O
 123.B, D, r 160.C, r 192.r 198.r 220.C 242.A, r
 306.B 429.r 450.r
 Tits, Jacques Léon (1930–) 13.O, Q, R, r 151.I, J
 343.I
 Toda, Hiroshi (1928–) 202.P, R, U
 Toda, Morikazu (1917–) 287.A, r
 Toda, Nobushige (1938–) 17.C
 Todd, John Arthur (1908–) 237.F 366.B, r
 Todhunter, Isaac (1820–84) 342.r
 Todorov, Andrei Nikolov (1948–) 232.C
 Todorov, Ivan T. (1933–) 146.r 150.r
 Toeplitz, Otto (1881–1940) 197.r 217.r 251.O
 379.L
 Tōki, Yukinari (1913–) 62.D 352.A 367.E
 Tollmien, Walter 433.A
 Tolman, Richard Chace (1881–1948) 402.r
 Tolstoy, I. 446.r
 tom Dieck, Tammo 431.E, r
 Tomi, Friedrich (1943–) 275.C
 Tomita, Minoru (1924–) 308.H
 Tomiyama, Jun (1931–) 36.K 164.E
 Tomonaga, Sin-itiirō (1906–79) 132.C 146.A 150.A
 359.C 361.A
 Tomotika, Susumu (1903–64) 134.r
 Tompkins, Charles Brown (1912–) 275.B 365.B
 Tondeur, Philippe Maurice (1932–) 154.G, H, r
 Tonelli, Leonida (1885–1946) 107.A 246.C
 Tonnelat-Baudot, Marie-Antoinette (1912–80)
 434.r
 Toponogov, Viktor Andreevich 178.A, F
 Topp, L. J. 304.r
 Topsøe, Flemming (1938–) 22.r
 Torelli, R. (1884–1915) 9.E, J 11.C
 Torgerson, Warren S. 346.E, r
 Torii, Tatsuo (1934–) 301.C
 Totoki, Haruo (1934–) 136.D 395.r
 Traub, Joe Fred (1932–) 71.r 301.r
 Trefftz, Erich Immanuel (1888–1937) 46.F
 Trémolières, Raymond (1941–) 440.r
 Treves, J. François (1930–) 112.D, L 125.r 274.I
 286.Z 320.I, r 321.r 345.A, B 424.r
 Tricomi, Francesco Giacomo (1897–1978) 217.N, r
 288.C 317.r 326.C, r
 Triebel, Hans (1936–) 168.r 224.r
 Trigg, G. L. 414.r
 Tristram, Andrew G. 114.K
 Trjitzinsky, Waldemar Joseph (1901–73) 254.D
 289.C, D 314.A
 Tromba, Anthony J. (1943–) 275.C, r 286.D
 Trotter, Hale Freeman (1931–) 235.C 351.F 378.E
 Trubowitz, Eugene B. (1951–) 387.E
 Trudinger, Neil Sidney (1942–) 364.H
 Truesdell, Clifford Ambrose T. (1919–) 389.B
 Trych-Pohlmeyer, E. B. 402.G
 Tschebyscheff → Chebyshev
 Tsen Chung-Tze 27.E 118.F
 Tsirel'son B. S. 406.D
 Tsu Ch'ung-Chih (429–500) 57.A 332
 Tsuboi, Takashi (1953–) 154.G
 Tsuchiya, Nobuo (1950–) 154.G, H
 Tsuda, Takao (1932–) 354.r
 Tsuji, Masatsugu (1894–1960) 48.r 62.B, D 124.C
 234.r 242.A 367.r 388.B
 Tsuji, Tadashi (1946–) 384.B
 Tsukada, Kazumi (1953–) 365.N 391.N
 Tsukamoto, Tatsuo (1940–) 353.r
 Tsukamoto, Yōtarō (1932–74) 178.B
 Tsushima, Ryuji (1952–) 32.r
 Tsuzuku, Tosihiro (1929–) 13.R
 Tucker, Albert William (1905–) 173.r 255.B, E
 292.A, B
 Tugué, Tosiuyuki (1926–) 22.C 81 356.G, r
 Tukey, John Wilder (1915–) 34.r 87.r 142.D, r
 304.r 371.A, r 397.r 421.C, r 425.X, r 436.r
 Tumarkin, Lev Abramovich (1904–74) 117.I
 Tumura, Yosiro (1912–) 17.C, D 62.D
 Tung Chuan 57.A
 Turán, Pál (Paul) (1910–76) 123.D, r
 Turing, Alan Mathison (1912–54) 22.G 31.B, C
 97.B 161.B 356.A
 Turner, M. J. 304.r
 Tushkanov, S. B. 17.C
 Tutte, William T. 186.r
 Tyupkin, Yu. S. 80.r
 Tzafiriri, Lior (1936–) 37.N, r 168.r
- U
- Uchida, Fuichi (1938–) 431.G
 Uchida, Kōji (1939–) 14.L
 Uchiyama, Akihito (1948–) 168.B
 Udagawa, Kanchisa (1920–65) 389.r
 Ueda, Tetsuo (1951–) 72.K
 Ueda, Yoshisuke (1936–) 126.N
 Uehara, Hiroshi (1923–) 202.P
 Ueno, Kenji (1945–) 16.r 72.I, r
 Ueno, Tadashi (1931–) 115.C
 Ugaheri, Tadashi (1915–) 240.B 338.C
 Uhl, J. Jerry, Jr. (1940–) 443.A, H
 Uhlenbeck, George Eugene (1900–) 41.C 45.I
 Uhlenbeck, Karen (1942–) 195.E, r 275.D
 Uhlhorn, Ulf 258.r
 Uhlmann, Armin 212.B
 Ukai, Seiji (1939–) 41.D
 Ulam, Stanislaw Marcin (1909–84) 33.F, r 153.B
 287.r 385.C
 Ullman, Jeffrey D. (1942–) 31.r 71.r 75.r 186.r
 Ullrich, Egon (1902–57) 17.A, C
 Ulm, Helmut (1908–75) 2.D
 Umemura, Hiroshi (1944–) 16.I
 Umemura (Yamasaki), Yasuo (1934–) 225.r 437.BB
 Umezawa, Hiroomi (1924–) 150.r
 Umezawa, Toshio (1928–) 411.F
 Uno, Toshio (1902–) NTR
 Ura, Taro (1920–) 126.D, F
 Urabe, Minoru (1912–75) 301.D
 Urakawa, Hajime (1946–) 391.E
 Ural'tseva, Nina Nikolaevna 286.r 323.D
 Urbanik, Kazimierz (1930–) 407.C
 Ursell, Harold Douglas 246.r
 Uryson, Pavel Samuilovich (1898–1924) 22.I 93.D
 117.A, r 273.K 425.Q, S, U, V, CC
 Ushiki, Shigehiro (1950–) 126.N
 Ushio, Kazuhiko (1946–) 96.r
 Utida, Itumi (1805–82) 230
 Utida, Shunro (1913–) 263.A
 Uzawa, Hirofumi (1928–) 292.A, E, r

V

Vahlen, Karl Theodor (1869–1945) 83.B
 Vaillancourt, Rémi (1934–) 304.F 345.A
 Vainberg, Boris Rufimovich (1938–) 323.K
 Vainshtein, Isaak Aronovich 273.K
 Väisälä, Jussi 143.r 352.F
 Vajda, Steven 408.r
 Valentine, F. A. 88.r
 Valiron, Georges (1884–1954) 17.A, C, D 43.K
 121.B, C, r 124.B 272.F, K 429.B 435.r
 van Beijeren, Henk 402.G
 van Ceulen, Ludolf (1540–1610) 332
 Van Daele, Alfons 308.H
 van Dantzig, D. 109 434.C
 van den Berg, Franciscus Johannes (1833–92) 19.B
 van der Corput, Johannes Gualtherus (1890–1975)
 4.C 182.H 242.A
 Vandermonde, Alexandre Théophile (1735–96)
 103.G 190.Q
 van der Pol, Balthasar (1889–1959) 240.r 290.C
 van der Waerden, Bartel Leendert (1903–) 8.*, r
 12.B 24.r 29.r 60.r 66.r 67.r 90.r 92.F, r 122.r 149.r
 172.r 187.r 190.r 196 284.r 337.r 351.r 362.r 368.r
 369.E 371.C 417.E
 Vandiver, Harry Shultz (1882–1973) 14.L 145.*, r
 van Hove, Leon Charles Prudent (1924–) 351.K
 402.G
 van Kampen, Egbertos R. (1908–42) 170
 Van Moerbeke, Pierre (1944–) 287.C
 van Roomen, Adriaan (1561–1615) 444
 van Schooten, Frans (1615–60) 444.r
 Varadarajan, Veeravalli Seshadri (1937–) 249.r
 Varadhan, Sathamangalam Ranga Ayyangar
 Srinivasa (1940–) 115.C, D, r 136.r 250.r 261.C
 262.E 340.r 406.A, D, r
 Varadier, M. 443.A
 Varaiya, Pravin P. 86.D 108.B 292.F
 Varchenko, A. N. 418.r
 Varga, Ottó (1909–69) 152.C
 Varga, Richard Steven (1928–) 302.r
 Varopoulos, Nicholas Theodoros 192.U
 Varopoulos, T. 17.C 267.r
 Varouchas, J. 232.C
 Varshamov, Rom Rubenovich (1927–) 63.B
 Vasilescu, Florin (1897–1958) 120.D
 Vaughan, Robert Charles 123.E
 Vaught, Robert L. 276.D, F
 Veblen, Oswald (1880–1960) 90.r 109.*, r 137
 152.C 201.r 343.r 434.C, r
 Vedesinov, N. 425.Q
 Veech, William Austin (1938–) 136.H
 Vekua, Il'ya Nestorovich (1907–77) 217.J 323.r
 Veldkamp, Ferdinando D. 13.R
 Velo, Giorgio 150.r
 Veneziano, Gabriele (1942–) 132.C 386.C
 Venkov, Boris Borisovich (1934–) 200.M
 Venttsel', Aleksandr Dmitrievich (1937–) 115.C
 261.r 406.F
 Verbeure, André (1940–) 402.G
 Verbiest, Ferdinand (1623–88) 57.C
 Verdier, Jean-Louis (1935–) 16.r 450.Q, r
 Ver Eecke, Paul (1867–1959) 187.r
 Vergne, Michèle 384.r
 Verhulst, Pierre François (1804–49) 263.A
 Verner, James Hamilton (1940–) 303.r
 Veronese, Giuseppe (1854–1917) 275.F
 Vershik, Anatolii Moiseevich (1933–) 136.D, r
 183.r

Vesentini, Edoardo (1928–) 122.F
 Vessiot, Ernest (1865–1952) 107.A 113 249.V
 Vey, Jacques 154.G, r 384.r
 Vick, James Whitton (1942–) 201.r
 Viehweg, Eckart (1938–) 72.I, r 232.D, r
 Viète, François (1590–1603) 8 20 332 360 444
 Victoris, Leopold (1891–) 201.A, C, E, L 425.Q
 Vignéras, Marie-France (1946–) 391.C
 Vigué, Jean-Pierre (1948–) 384.r
 Vilenkin, Naum Yakovlevich (1920–) 112.r 125.r
 162.r 218.r 341.r 389.r 395.r 407.C 437.AA
 Villat, Henri René Pierre (1879–1972) App. A,
 Table 15.VI
 Ville, Jean A. 262.A
 Vinberg, Ernest Borisovich (1937–) 122.G 351.I
 384.C, r 385
 Vinogradov, Ivan M. (1891–1983) 4.C, E 123.B, E
 242.F 295.E
 Vinter, Richard B. 127.G
 Virtanen, Kaarlo I. 62.C 352.A, C 367.E, I
 Vishik, Mark Iosifovich (1921–) 112.E 323.N
 Vitali, Giuseppe (1875–1932) 270.G 380.D
 Viterbi, Andrew J. (1935–) 213.E
 Vitt, Aleksandr Adol'fovich 290.r
 Vitushkin, Anatolii Georgievich (1931–) 164.J
 169.E
 Vivanti, Giulio (1859–?) 217.r 339.A
 Vladimirova, S. M. 365.J
 Vogan, David Alexander, Jr. (1954–) 437.r
 Vogel, Kurt (1888–1985) 24.r
 Vogel, William R. 200.r
 Vogt, Dietmar (1941–) 168.B
 Voichick, Michael (1934–) 164.K
 Voiculescu, Dan Virgil (1949–) 36.J 331.E
 Voigt, Jürgen (1943–) 331.E
 Volder, J. E. 142.C
 Volk, Isaï Mikhailovich 289.E
 Volkov, Yurii Aleksandrovich (1930–) 365.J
 Volkovyskii, L. 198.r
 Volterra, Vito (1860–1940) 20 68.J 162 163.B
 198.J 217.A 222.A 263.B
 Voltyanskii, V. G. 155.r
 von Eötvös, Roland (1848–1919) 359.D
 von Kármán, Theodore (1881–1963) 205.E 433.C
 von Koch, Helge (1870–1924) 246.K 450.I
 von Mises, Richard (1883–1953) 298.r 342.A
 354.E 399.K, r
 von Neumann, John (Johann) (1903–57) 18.A,
 E, r 20 22.F 33.A–C, r 36.G 68.I 69.B, C 75.B
 85.A 95 136.A, B, E, F 138.r 156.E, r 162 173.A, C,
 D, r 197.A, r 225.r 251.M 255.E 304.F 308.C, F,
 G, I, r 312.A 331.E 351.C, L, r 354.B 376 385.C
 390.I 445
 Vopěnka, Petr (1935–) 33.r
 Voronoï, Georgii Fedoseevich (1868–1908) 242.A
 Voss, Heinz-Jürgen 186.r
 Vranceanu, Gheorghe (1900–79) 434.C
 Vulikh, Boris Zakharovich (1913–78) 310.A

W

Wada, Junzo (1927–) 164.C
 Wada, Yasusi (Nei) (1787–1840) 230
 Waelbroeck, Lucien (1929–) 36.M
 Wage, M. L. 117.E
 Wagner, Harvey Maurice (1931–) 307.r 408.r
 Wagner, Herbert 39.F
 Wagner, S. W. 95.r
 Wagschal, Claude 321.G

Wagstaff, Samuel S.

- Wagstaff, Samuel S. 14.L 145
 Wahl, Jonathan Michael (1945-) 9.r
 Wahlen, G. E. 145.r
 Wait, R. 223.r 301.r 304.r
 Wakakuwa, Hidekiyo (1925-) 36.r
 Wald, Abraham (1902-50) 376.r 8.A 399.H, M, r
 400.r 401.F, r 421.r
 Waldhausen, Friedhelm (1938-) 65.E 235.B
 Waldschmidt, Michel (1946-) 430.D, r
 Wales, David B. (1939-) 151.I App. B, Table 6
 Walfisz (Val'fisz), Arnold Z. (1892-1962) 4.D 123.D
 220.B 242.r 295.D
 Walker, Arthur G. 359.E
 Walker, G. 421.D
 Walker, M. R. 376.r
 Walker, R. C. 425.r
 Walker, Robert John (1909-) 9.r 15.B
 Wall, Charles Terens Clegg (1936-) 114.B, F,
 H, J, K, r
 Wallace, Andrew Hugh (1926-) 114.F, L
 Wallach, Nolan R. 178.r 199.r 249.r 275.A, F
 364.r 365.G 437.W
 Wallis, Jennifer Seberry 241.r
 Wallis, John (1616-1703) 20 265 332 App. A,
 Table 10.VI
 Wallis, Walter Denis 241.r
 Wallis, Wilson Allen (1912-) 371.D
 Wallman, Henry (1915-) 117.r
 Walsh, John Joseph (1948-) 117.I
 Walsh, Joseph Leonard (1895-1973) 223.r 317.C
 336.F, I
 Walter, John H. (1927-) 151.J
 Walter, J. S. 142.C
 Walter, Wolfgang (1927-) 211.r
 Walters, Peter (1943-) 136.H
 Walther, Hansjoachim 186.r
 Wang Hsien-Chung (1918-78) 81 110.E 148.E
 152.r 199.r 413.r
 Wang, Ju-Kwei (1934-) 164.G
 Wang Xiaotong (c. early 7th century) 57.A
 Wantzel, Pierre-Laurent (1814-48) 179.A
 Ward, Harold Nathaniel (1936-) App. B, Table 5.r
 Ward, R. 16.r
 Waring, Edward (1736-98) 4.E
 Warner, Frank Wilson, III (1938-) 364.H
 Warner, Garth William, Jr. (1940-) 249.r 437.r
 Warning, E. 118.B
 Warschawski, Stefan Emanuel (1904-) 77.C
 Washington, A. 432.r
 Washington, Lawrence Clinton (1951-) 14.L 450.J
 Washio, Yasutoshi (1929-) 399.r
 Washizu, Kyuichiro (1921-81) 271.r
 Wasow, Wolfgang Richard (1909-) 25.B, r 30.r
 107.r 254.r 289.E 304.r
 Wassermann, Gordon 51.r
 Watabe, Tsuyoshi (1934-) 431.D
 Watanabe, Kinji (1946-) 323.J
 Watanabe, Shinzo (1935-) 44.E, r 45.r 115.C, r
 261.r 262.r 406.B, D, F
 Watanabe, Takeshi (1931-) 260.J
 Watari, Chinami (1932-) 336.D
 Waternaux, Christine M. 280.r
 Watson, George Leo (1909-) 4.E 348.r
 Watson, George Neville (1886-) 39.E, r 160.C
 174.r 220.B 268.r 389.r App. A, Tables 19.III, IV
 NTR
 Watson, H. W. 44.B, C, r
 Watt, J. M. 303.r
 Wayland, Harold (1909-) 298.r
 Weaver, W. 403.r
 Weber, Claude Alain (1937-) 65.r
 Weber, H. F. 39.G App. A, Table 19.IV
 Weber, Heinrich (1842-1913) 8.r 11.B, r 12.B 73.A
 98 167.C 236.r 363.*, r App. A, Tables 19.III, IV,
 20
 Weber, Wilhelm Eduard (1804-91) 363
 Webster, Arthur Gordon (1863-1923) 322.r
 Webster, Sidney M. (1945-) 344.F
 Wedderburn, Joseph Henry MacLagan (1882-1948)
 29.E, F 149.M 190.L 368.G
 Wehrl, Alfred (1941-) 212.r
 Weierstrass, Karl Theodor Wilhelm (1815-97)
 9.D 11.B, D 20 21.A, E 46.C 58.C 84.C 106.B 109
 120.A 134.F 140 168.B 174.A 198.D, I, N, Q
 229.r 236 267 272.A 273.F 274.F 275.A, B 294.A
 334.B, C 336.A, F 339.A, D 355.D, r 370.B 379.H
 429.B 430.D 435.A 447 App. A, Table 16.IV
 Weil, André (1906-) 3.C, E, M, r 4.D 6.E, r 9.E,
 H, r 12.B, r 13.M, r 14.r 16.A, C 20 21.G 27.r 28
 32.C, D 59.H, r 60.O 73.B 109.*, r 118.B, D, E
 122.F, G, r 182.E 192.r 196 225.G, r 232.B 422.r
 436.A, r 437.P 450.A, H, M, O-S, r
 Weinberg, B. L. 96.r
 Weinberg, Louis (1919-) 282.r
 Weinberg, N. 425.U
 Weinberg, Steven (1933-) 132.C, D, r
 Weinberger, Hans Felix (1928-) 323.r 327.r
 Weingarten, Leonhard Gottfried Johannes Julius
 (1836-1910) 111.H, I 365.C App. A, Table 4.I
 Weinstein, Alan David (1943-) 126.N 178.r
 Weinstock, Robert 441.r
 Weir, M. D. 425.r
 Weisberger, William I. (1937-) 132.C
 Weiss, Benjamin (1941-) 136.E-G
 Weiss, Edwin (1927-) 14.r 200.r
 Weiss, Guido Leopold (1928-) 168.B 224.r
 Weiss, Lionel (1923-) 398.r
 Weiss, Max L. (1933-) 43.r
 Weitsman, Allen W. 272.K, r
 Weitzenböck, Roland W. (1885-) 226.C
 Welch, Bernard Lewis 400.G
 Weldon, Edward J., Jr. 63.r
 Wells, Raymond O'Neil, Jr. (1940-) 164.K 232.r
 344.D, E
 Welsh, James Anthony Dominic 66.r
 Wendroff, Burton 304.F
 Wentzel, Gregor (1898-) 25.B
 Wentzell → Venttsel'
 Wermer, John (1927-) 164.F, G, I, K, r
 West, James Edward (1944-) 382.D
 Westlake, Joan R. 302.r
 Westwater, Michael John (1942-) 146.A
 Wets, M. J. 408.r
 Weyl, Claus Hugo Hermann (1885-1955) 7.r 9.r
 11.B 13.H, J, Q, R 14.r 18.A 20 21.N 60.r 69.B 109
 112.D, I, N, O 124.B, r 126.L 137 139.B, r 156.B
 182.F, H, r 190.r 196.r 197.A 198.r 225.I 226.r
 248.F, P, R, W, Z, r 249.U, V, r 255.E 272.L
 323.E, G, M 331.E 351.C, r 359.r 362.H 367.A, E, r
 377.A 390.I 391.I 413.G, J 434.B 437.DD 442.r 445
 448 App. A, Table 4.II
 Weyl, Fritz Joachim (1915-77) 21.N, r 124.B, r
 272.L 448
 Weyrich, Rudolf (1894-) 39.r App. A, Table 19.III
 Whaples, George William (1914-81) 14.F
 Wheeler, John Archibald (1911-) 359.r 386.C
 434.C
 White, Paul A. (1915-) 298.r
 Whitehead, Alfred North (1861-1947) 156.B 319.r
 411.A, r

**Encyclopedic
Dictionary
of
Mathematics**

Second Edition

Yamauchi, Kazunari (1945) 364.F
Yamauti, Ziro (1898–1984) 142.B NTR
Yamazaki, Keijiro (1932–) 362.J
Yamazato, Makoto (1949–) 341.H
Yamazi, Nusizumi (1704–72) 230
Yanagawa, Takashi (1940–) 371.A
Yanagihara, Hiroshi (1934–) 203.r
Yanai, Haruo (1940–) 346.r
Yanase, Mutsuo (1922–) 212.B
Yanenko, Nikolai Nikolaevich (1921–84) 204.r
Yang Chen Ning (1922–) 80.Q, r 132.D, r 150.G
359.C
Yang Chung-Tao (1923–) 178.r
Yang Hui (fl. 1261) 57.B
Yang, Paul C. P. (1947–) 391.E
Yano, Kentaro (1912–) 72.r 80.r 109.r 11 4.r
364.F 365.H 417.r
Yano, Shigeki (1922–) 159.G
Yanpol'skiĭ, Avraam Ruvimovich (1905–) NTR
Yaspan, Arthur J. 307.r
Yasugi, Mariko (1937–) 156.E
Yasuhara, Mitsuru (1932–) 411.J
Yasuura, Kamenosuke (1923–) 282.r
Yates, Frank (1902–) 19.r 371.C STR
Yau Shing-Tung (1949–) 72.G 115.D 183.r 195.r
232.C, r 235.E 275.C, D, H 364.r 365.H, L
391.D, E
Yen Chih-Ta 427.B
Yennie, Donald Robert (1924–) 146.B
Yin Wên-Lin 242.A
Yoneda, Nobuo (1930–) 52.r 200.K
Yoneyama, Kunizo (1877–1968) 79.D
Yor, Marc (1949–) 176.C
Yorke, James A. 126.N 303.G
Yoshida, Hiroyuki (1947–) 450.S
Yoshida, Masaaki (1948–) 428.H
Yoshida, Masao (1913–) NTR
Yoshida, Norio (1916–70) 367.I
Yoshida, Tomoyoshi (1946–) 431.D
Yoshikawa, Atsushi (1942–) 224.E
Yoshikawa, Zituo (1878–1915) 437.r
Yoshizawa, Taro (1919–) 163.r 290.r 394.r
Yosida, Kōsaku (1909–) 36.r 37.r 68.r 107.r 112.r
115.A 136.B, r 162 168.r 192.r 197.r 240 r 251.r
286.X 288.B 306.A 378.B, D, H, r 390.r
Yosida, Mituyosi (1598–1672) 230
Yosida, Yōiti (1898–) NTR
Youden, William John (1900–71) 102.K
Youla, Dante C. 86.D
Young, Alfred (1873–1940) 362.H
Young, David Monaghan (1923–) 301.r 302.r
Young, Gail Sellers (1915–) 79.r
Young, H. Peyton 173.E 201.r
Young, John Wesley (1879–1932) 343.r
Young, Richard Donald (1929–) 215.B
Young, Thomas (1773–1829) 271.G
Young, William Henry (1863–1942) 106.H 159.J
224.E 317.B App. A, Table 8
Youngs, J. W. T. 157.E
Yukawa, Hideki (1907–81) 132.A 150.A 338.M
Yule, George Udny (1871–1951) 421.D
Yuzvinskii, Sergei Aronovich (1936–) 136.r
Yvon, Jacques (1903–) 402.J

Z

Zabreiko, Pëtr Petrovich (1939–) 251.r
Zabusky, Norman J. (1929–) 387.B
Zacks, Shelemياهو (1932–) 399.H
Zagier, Don 15.H 72.r 450.T

Zak, F. L. 16.I
Zakharov, V. E. 80.r 387.F, G
Zaleman, Lawrence 169.r
Zamansky, Marc (1916–) 336.D
Zaremba, Stanislaw (1863–1942) 120.B
Zaring, Wilson B. 33.r
Zariski, Oscar (1899–1986) 12.B, r 15.B, D, E, H, r
16.A, I, J, L, X, r 67.r 284.C, D, G, r 370.r 418.r
439.r
Zarnke, Charles Robert 123.C
Zassenhaus, Hans J. (1912–) 92.A, F 151.E, H, J, r
190.r 362.K
Zeeman, Erik Christopher (1925–) 51.A, r 65.A,
C, D, r 235.G 426
Žegalov → Zhegalov
Zeigler, Bernard P. 385.r
Zeller, Karl (1924–) 43.G 58.r 379.r
Zeller-Meier, Georges 308.F
Zemansky, Mark Waldo (1900–) 419.r
Zener, Clarence (1905–) 264.r
Zeno (c. 490–c. 430 B.C.) 187 319.C
Zenor, Phillip L. 273.K
Zermelo, Ernst Friedrich Ferdinand (1871–1953)
33.A, B, r 34.B, r 41.A 381.F, G, r
Zerna, Wolfgang (1916–) 271.r
Zhang Qiujian (c. 5th century) 57.A
Zhegalov, Valentin Ivanovich 326.r
Zhelobenko, Dmitrii Petrovich (1934–) 437.EE, r
Zia-ud-Din, M. App. B, Table 5.r
Ziemer, William P. (1934–) 246.J
Zilber, Joseph Abraham (1923–) 70.E 201.J
Ziller, Wolfgang (1952–) 279.G 364.r
Zimmermann, Wolfhart (1928–) 146.A 150.D
Zippin, Leo (1905–) 2.D 196 249.V, r 423.N 431.r
Zobin, N. M. 424.S
Zoll, Otto 178.G
Zoretti, M. Ludovic 79.D
Zorn, Max A. (1906–) 34.C, r 54.r 450.L
Zoutendijk, Guus (1929–) 292.E
Zsidó, László (1946–) 308.r
Zuckerman, Herbert Samuel (1912–70) 118.r 192.P
Zumino, Bruno (1923–) 150.D 386.B
Zurmühl, Rudolf (1904–) 298.r
Zuse, Konrad (1910–) 75.A
Zverkin, Aleksandr Mikhaĭlovich (1927–) 163.r
Zvyagin, V. G. 286.r
Zwiggli, Ernst (1905–) 214.r
Zygmund, Antoni (1902–) 136.B 159.E, G, r 168.B,
r 192.r 198.r 217.J, r 224.r 251.O 274.B, I 336.C, r
Zykov, Aleksandr Aleksandrovich (1922–) 186.r

**Encyclopedic
Dictionary
of
Mathematics**

Second Edition

by the
**Mathematical Society
of Japan**

edited by
Kiyosi Itô

**Volume II
O–Z
Appendices and Indexes**

**The MIT Press
Cambridge, Massachusetts,
and London, England**

Subject Index

Note: Citation is to article and section or to a table in an appendix, not to page.

A

α (cardinal number of \mathbb{N}) 49.A
 $A(\Omega)$ (the totality of functions bounded and continuous on the closure of Ω and holomorphic in Ω) 168.B
 $A_p(\Omega)$ (the totality of functions f that are holomorphic in Ω and that satisfy $\int_{\Omega} |f(z)|^p dx dy < \infty$) 168.B
 α -capacity 169.C
 α -excessive function 261.D
 α -limit point 126.D
 α -limit set (of an orbit) 126.D
 α -perfect, α -perfectness 186.J
 α -point (of a meromorphic function) 272.B
 α -pseudo-orbit 126.J
 α -quartile 396.C
 α -string 248.L
 α -trimmed mean 371.H
 α -adic completion (of an R -module) 284.B
 α -adic topology (of an R -module) 284.B
 \mathcal{A} -characteristic class (of a real oriented vector bundle) 237.F
 A -balanced mapping 277.J
 A - B -bimodule 277.D
 A -homomorphism
 between A -modules 277.E
 of degree p (between two graded A -modules) 200.B
 A -linear mapping (between A -modules) 277.E
 A -module 277.C
 A -optimality 102.E
 A set 22.A 409.A
 A -stability 303.G
 $A(x)$ -stability 303.G
 A_0 -stability 303.G
 $A(0)$ -stable 303.G
 A -submodule 277.C
 A -summable 379.N
 A -number 430.C
abacus 75.A
Abel, N. H. 1
Abel continuity theorem 121.D 339.B
Abelian category 52.N
Abelian differential 11.C 367.H
Abelian equation 172.G
Abelian ergodic theorem 136.B
Abelian extension 172.B
Abelian function 3.J
 elementary 3.M
Abelian function field 3.J
Abelian group(s) 2 190.A
 category of 52.B
 class of 202.N
 dual topological 422.C
 elementary 2.B
 elementary topological 422.E
 free 2.C
 meta- 190.H
 mixed 2.A
 primary 2.A
 reduced 2.D
 topological 422.A

torsion 2.A
torsion-free 2.A
of type p^∞ 2.D
Abelian ideal (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
Abelian integral 11.C
Abelian Lie algebra 248.C
Abelian Lie group 249.D
Abelian linear group over K 60.L
Abelian p -group 2.A
 complete 2.D
 divisible 2.D
Abelian potential 402.G
Abelian projection operator 308.E
Abelian subvariety 3.B
Abelian surface 15.H
Abelian theorems 240.G
Abelian variety (varieties) 3
 isogenous 3.C
 polarized 3.G
 simple 3.B
Abel integral equation 217.L
Abel method, summable by 379.N
Abel method of summation 379.N
Abel partial summation 379.D
Abel problem 217.L
Abel test 379.D
Abel theorem
 (on the Cauchy product of two series) 379.F
 (in the theory of algebraic functions) 3.L 11.E
aberration 180.C
 annual 392
 diurnal 392
Aberth (DKA) method, Durand-Kerner- 301.F
Abramov's formula 136.E
abscissa
 of absolute convergence (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 of absolute convergence (of a Laplace transform) 240.B
 of boundedness (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 of convergence (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 of convergence (of a Laplace transform) 240.B.H
 of regularity (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 of regularity (of a Laplace transform) 240.C
 of simple convergence (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 of uniform convergence (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 of uniform convergence (of a Laplace transform) 240.B
absolute (for a quadric hypersurface) 285.C
absolute Borel summable 379.O
absolute class field 59.A
absolute continuity
 generalized 100.C
 generalized, in the restricted sense 100.C
 space of 390.E
absolute continuity (*), generalized 100.C
absolute convergence, abscissa of
 (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 (of a Laplace transform) 240.B
absolute covariant 226.D
absolute curvature (of a curve) 111.C
absolute figure (in the Erlangen program) 137
absolute homology group 201.L
absolute inequality 211.A
absolute integral invariant 219.A
absolute invariant 12.A 226.A
absolutely closed space 425.U

First MIT Press paperback edition, 1993

Originally published in Japanese in 1954 by Iwanami Shoten, Publishers, Tokyo, under the title *Iwanami Sūgaku Ziten*. Copyright © 1954, revised and augmented edition © 1960, second edition © 1968, third edition © 1985 by Nihon Sugakkai (Mathematical Society of Japan).

English translation of the third edition © 1987 by The Massachusetts Institute of Technology.

All rights reserved. No part of this book may be reproduced in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system, without permission in writing from The MIT Press.

This book was set in Monolaser Times Roman by Asco Trade Typesetting Ltd., Hong Kong, and printed and bound by Arcata Graphics, Kingsport in the United States of America.

Library of Congress Cataloging-in-Publication Data

Iwanami sūgaku jiten (ziten). English.
Encyclopedic dictionary of mathematics.
Translation of: Iwanami sūgaku jiten.
Includes bibliographies and indexes.
I. Mathematics—Dictionaries. I. Itô, Kiyosi, 1915–. II. Nihon Sugakkai. III. Title.
QA5.I8313 1986 510'.3'21 86-21092
ISBN 0-262-09026-0 (HB), 0-262-59020-4 (PB)

Whitehead, George William (1918–) 64.r 70.r 148.r
202.P, Q, T–V, r
Whitehead, John Henry Constantine (1904–60)
65.A, C, F 90.r 91.r 109.r 114.A, C 178.A 200.L
202.F, N, P 237.J 426
Whiteside, Derek Thomas 265.r 283.r
Whitham, Gerald Beresford (1927–) 205.r
Whitin, Thomson M. 227.r
Whitney, D. Ransom 371.A, C
Whitney, Hassler (1907–) 56.B, F 58.B–E 66.r
105.A, D, K, r 111, J 114.A, B, D, r 126.E 147.A,
F, M 168.B 186.H 201.A, J 418.G
Whittaker, Edmund Taylor (1873–1956) 167.B
174.r 268.r 271.r 301.C 389.r 420.r 450.O App. A,
Tables 14.II, 19, 20.r
Whittle, Peter (1927–) 421.r
Whyburn, Gordon Thomas (1904–69) 79.r 93.r 426
Wick, Gian Carlo (1909–) 351.K
Widder, David Vernon (1898–1973) 94.r 220.D
240.B, D, E 341.r
Widlund, Olof B. (1938–) 303.G
Widman, Kjell-Ove 195.E
Widom, Harold (1932–) 164.K
Wieferich, Arthur 145
Wielandt, Helmut (1910–) 151.B, E, H, r
Wiener, Norbert (1894–1964) 5.C 18.A, r 20
36.L 37.A 45.A, B, D, r 48.A, B 58.r 86.E 95.*, r
120.B–D 123.B 125.O, BB 136.B 159.I 160.B,
E, G, r 162 176.C, I 192.F, H, O, P, r 207.C, D
222.C 250.E 260.E 338.G 339.r 342.A 395.D, r
406.B 407.r
Wierman, John Charles (1949–) 340.r
Wigert, S. 295.E
Wightman, Arthur Strong (1922–) 150.C, D, r
212.B 258.r 351.K 386.r
Wigner, Eugene Paul (1902–) 150.A 212.B 258.C, r
351.H, J–L, r 353.B, r 377.B 437.DD
Wijsman, Robert Arthur (1920–) 396.r
Wilcox, Calvin Hayden (1924–) 375.B
Wilcoxon, Frank 371.A–C
Wilczynski, Ernst Julius (1876–1932) 109 110.B
Wilder, Raymond Louis (1896–1982) 79.r 93.r
Wiles, Andrew (1953–) 14.L 257.H 450.J
Wilkes, James Oscroft (1932–) 304.r
Wilkinson, James Hardy (1919–) 138.C 298.r
300.r 301.r 302.r
Wilks, Samuel Stanley (1906–64) 280.B 374.r
396.r 399.P
Willers, Friedrich-Adolf (1883–) 19.r
Williams, David (1938–) 260.P
Williams, H. C. 123.C
Williams, Robert F. (1928–) 126.J, K, N
Williamson, Jack (1940–) 272.K, r
Williamson, Robert E. (1937–) 114.H
Willmore, Thomas James (1919–) 111.r 365.O
Wilson, B. M. 295.E
Wilson, Edwin Bidwell (1879–1964) 374.F
Wilson, John (1741–93) 297.G
Wilson, K. B. 102.r 301.L
Wilson, Kenneth G. (1936–) 361.r
Wiman, Anders (1865–1959) 429.B
Winnink, Marinus 308.H
Winter, David John (1939–) 172.r
Winters, Gayn B. 9.r
Wintner, Aurel Frederick (1903–58) 55.r 420.r
435.E
Wirtinger, Wilhelm (1865–?) 3.r 235.B, D 365.L
App. A, Table 8
Wishart, John 374.C
Witt, Ernst (1914–) 9.E 59.H 60.O 149.M 151.H

Name

Yamato, Kenji

161.B 248.J 348.E 449.A, B
Witten, Louis (1921–) 359.r
Wold, Herman O. A. 395.D
Wolf, Emil (1922–) 446.r
Wolf, Joseph Albert (1936–) 178.r 364.D 365.F
412.r 413.r
Wolfe, Douglas A. 371.r 374.r
Wolfe, Philip (1927–) 292.D 349.C
Wolff, Julius 743.K 77.C
Wolff, Thomas H. 164.I
Wolfowitz, Jacob (1910–81) 63.r 213.F 399.J, N, r
400.r
Wolovich, William A. (1937–) 86.D
Wolratschek, Hans 92.F
Wong, E. (1934–) 403.C
Wong, Sai-Wing (1940–) 314.r
Wong, Yui (1935–) 21.N
Wong, W. Muray (1934–) 86.E
Wood, John William (1941–) 154.B, H
Wood, Rex Chester (1920–) 19.r
Woodcock, Alexander E. R. 51.r
Woods, E. J. (1936–) 308.I 377.r
Woods, H. J. 92.F
Woolard, Edgar William (1899–) 392.r
Woronowicz, Stanisław Lech (1941–) 402.G
Wrench, John William, Jr. (1911–) 332.r
Wright, D. App. B, Table 5
Wright, Elisabeth Maitland 4.D, r 83.r 291.F 295.r
328.*, r
Wright, Sewall (1889–) 263.E
Wronski, Höené Joseph Maria (1776–1853) 208.E
Wu Chien-Shiung (1913–) 359.C
Wu Hung-Hsi (1940–) 178.r
Wu Tai Tsun (1933–) 402.r
Wu Wen-Tsün (1919–) 56.F, r 90.r App. A,
Table 6.V
Wulf, W. A. 75.r
Wylie, Alexander (1815–87) 57.C
Wylie, Shaun (1913–) 70.r 201.r

X

Xavier, Frederico José de Vasconcelos (1951–)
275.E
Xiahou Yang (c. 5th century) 57.A
Xu Yue (fl. 200) 57.A

Y

Yabuta, Kōzō (1940–) 164.G
Yaglom, Akiva Moiseevich (1921–) 44.B, C 395.r
407.C 433.r
Yaglom, Isaak Moiseevich (1921–) 89.r
Yamabe, Hidehiko (1923–60) 183 196 249.D, V
364.H
Yamada, Masami (1926–) 353.r
Yamada, Toshihiko (1939–) 362.r 450.T
Yamada, Toshio (1937–) 406.D
Yamagami, Shigeru (1955–) 212.B
Yamaguchi, Keizo (1951–) 344.C
Yamaguti, Masaya (1925–) 126.N 303.G, r 304.F
325.H
Yamamoto, Koichi (1921–) 241.E
Yamamoto, Sumiyasu (1917–) 96.F
Yamamoto, Yoshihiko (1941–) 450.S
Yamanaka, Takesi (1931–) 286.Z
Yamanoshita, Tsuneyo (1929–) 202.S
Yamashita, Hiroshi (1946–) 301.F
Yamasuge, Hiroshi (1926–60) 114.F
Yamato, Kenji (1948–) 154.G

Affine minimal surface

- affine minimal surface 110.C
- affine normal 110.C
- affine principal normal 110.C
- affine ring 16.A
- affine scheme 16.D
- affine space 7.A
- affine symmetric space 80.J
- affine torsion 110.C
- affine transformation(s) 7.E 364.F
 - group of 7.E
 - of a manifold with an affine connection 80.J
 - proper 7.E
 - regular 7.E
- affine variety 16.A
- affine Weyl group (of a symmetric Riemann space) 413.G
- affinity 7.E
 - equivalent 7.E
- age-dependent branching process 44.E
- Agnesi, witch of 93.H
- Ahlfors finiteness theorem 234.D
- Ahlfors five-disk theorem 272.J
- Ahlfors function 43.G 77.E
- Ahlfors principal theorem 367.B
- Ahlfors theory of covering surfaces 367.B
- Airy integral App. A, Table 19.IV
- Aitken interpolation scheme 223.B, App. A, Table 21
- Akizuki theorem, Krull- 284.F
- Alaoglu theorem, Banach-
 - (in a Banach space) 37.E
 - (in a topological linear space) 424.H
- Albanese variety 16.P
 - of a compact Kähler manifold 232.C
 - strict 16.P
- Aleksandrov compactification 207.B
- aleph 49.E
 - α (\aleph_α) 312.D
 - zero (\aleph_0) 49.E
- Alexander cohomology group 201.M
 - relative 201.M
- Alexander duality theorem 210.O
- Alexander horned sphere 65.G
- Alexander ideal (of a knot) 235.C
- Alexander-Kolmogorov-Spanier cohomology theory 201.M
- Alexander matrix (of a knot) 235.C
- Alexander polynomial (of a knot) 235.C
- Alexander polynomial (of a link) 235.D
- Alexander trick 65.D
- Alexander-Whitney mapping (map) 201.J
- Alfvén wave 259
- algebra 8
 - (over a field) 203.F
 - (of sets) 270.B
 - algebraic 29.J
 - alternative 231.A
 - AF- 36.H
 - approximately finite 36.H
 - association 102.J
 - associative 29 231.A
 - augmented 200.L
 - AW^* - 36.H
 - Azumaya 29.K
 - Banach 36.A
 - Banach *- 36.F
 - Boolean 42.A 243.A
 - Boolean, generalized 42.B
 - C^* - 36.G
 - C^* -, of type I 430.J
 - C^* -group (of a locally compact Hausdorff group) 36.L
 - Calkin 36.J 390.I
 - Cayley 54
 - Cayley, general 54
 - central separable 29.K
 - central simple 29.E
 - Clifford 61.A
 - over a commutative ring 29.A
 - composition 231.B
 - current 132.C
 - cyclic 29.G
 - derived (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 - Dirichlet 164.B
 - disk 164.B
 - distributive 231.A
 - division 29.A
 - Douglas 164.I
 - dual 203.F
 - enveloping 200.L 231.A
 - enveloping, universal (of a Lie algebra) 248.J
 - enveloping von Neumann 36.G
 - exterior (of a linear space) 256.O
 - Frobenius 29.H
 - full matrix 269.B
 - function 164.A
 - graded 203.B
 - Grassmann (of a linear space) 255.O
 - group 29.C 38.L 192.H
 - Hecke 29.C 32.D
 - homological 200.A
 - Hopf 203.H
 - Hopf, dual 203.C
 - Hopf, elementary 203.D
 - Hopf, graded 203.C
 - increasing family of σ - 407.B
 - j - 384.C
 - Jordan 231
 - L_1 - (of a locally compact Hausdorff group) 36.L
 - Lie 248.A
 - liminal C^* - 36.H
 - linear 8
 - of logic 411.A
 - logmodular 164.B
 - multiplier 36.K
 - nonassociative 231.A
 - normal j - 384.C
 - normal simple 29.E
 - operator 308.A
 - optional σ - 407.B
 - PI - 29.J
 - postliminal C^* - 36.H
 - power associative 231.A
 - predictable σ - 407.B
 - quasi-Frobenius 29.H
 - quaternion 29.D
 - quaternion, generalized 29.D
 - quaternion, Hamilton 29.B
 - quaternion, totally definite 27.D
 - quotient 29.A
 - Racah 353.A
 - reduced 231.B
 - relationship 102.J
 - residue class 29.A
 - σ - 270.B
 - semigroup 29.C
 - semigroup, large 29.C
 - (semi)simple 29.A
 - separable 29.F,K 200.L

- additive functor 52.N
- additive group 2.E 190.A
 - complete 2.E
 - divisible 2.E
 - free 2.E
 - ordered 439.B
 - totally ordered 439.B
- additive interval function 380.B
 - continuous 380.B
- additive measure
 - completely 270.D
 - finitely 270.D
 - σ - 270.D
- additive number theory 4
- additive operator 251.A
- additive processes 5 342.A
 - temporally homogeneous 5.B
- additive set function 380.C
 - completely 380.C
 - finitely 380.B
 - μ -absolutely continuous 380.C
- additive valuation 439.B
- additivity
 - (in the theory of local observables) 150.E
 - complete (of the integral) 221.C
 - complete (of a measure) 270.D
 - for the contours (in the curvilinear integral) 94.D
 - countable 270.D
 - of probability 342.B
 - σ - 270.D
- address 75.B
 - single-, instructions 75.C
- adele 6.C
 - and idele 6
 - principal 6.C
- adele group
 - of an algebraic group 13.P
 - of a linear algebraic group 6.C
- adele ring (of an algebraic number field) 6.C
- adeles and ideles 6
- Adem formula App. A, Table 6.II
- Adem relation 64.B
- adequacy 396.J
- adherent point 425.B
- ADI (alternating direction implicit) method 304.F
- adiabatic law 205.B
- adiabatic process, quasistatic 419.B
- adiabatic wall 419.A
- adjacent
 - (chamber) 13.R
 - (edges) 186.B
 - (germ) 418.E
 - (vertices) 186.B
- adjacement matrix 186.G
- adjoin
 - a set to a field 149.D
 - a variable to a commutative ring 337.A
- adjoint
 - left (linear mapping) 52.K 256.Q
 - right (linear mapping) 52.K 256.Q
 - self- \rightarrow self-adjoint
- adjoint boundary condition 315.B
- adjoint boundary value problem 315.B
- adjoint differential equations 252.K
- adjoint differential expression 252.K
- adjoint functor 52.K
- adjoint group
 - isogenous to an algebraic group 13.N
 - of a Lie algebra 248.H
 - of a Lie group 249.P
- adjoint Hilbert space 251.E
- adjoint kernel (of a kernel of a potential) 338.B
- adjoint Lie algebra 248.B
- adjoint matrix 269.I
- adjoint operator
 - (on Banach spaces) 37.D 251.D
 - (on Hilbert spaces) 251.E
 - (of a linear partial differential operator) 322.E
 - (of a microdifferential operator) 274.F
 - (of a microlocal operator) 274.F
- adjoint representation
 - of a Lie algebra 248.B
 - of a Lie group 249.P
 - of a linear representation 362.E
- adjoint space (of a linear topological space) 424.D
- adjoint system
 - (of a complete linear system on an algebraic surface) 15.D
 - of differential equations 252.K
- adjunction formula 15.D
- adjustment
 - sampling inspection with 404.C
 - seasonal 397.N
- Adler-Weisberger sum rule 132.C
- admissible
 - (decision function) 398.B
 - (estimator) 399.G
 - (extremal length) 143.A
- admissible automorphic representations 450.N
- admissible control 405.A
- admissible function 46.A 304.B
- admissible homomorphism (between Ω -groups) 190.E
- admissible isomorphism (between Ω -groups) 190.E
- admissible lattice (in \mathbf{R}^n), S - 182.B
- admissible monomial (in Steenrod algebra) 64.B,
- admissible normal subgroup 190.E
- admissible ordinal 356.G
- admissible sequence (in Steenrod algebra) 64.B,
- App. A, Table 6.III
- admissible subgroup (of an Ω -group) 190.E
- Ado theorem 248.F
- advanced type (of functional differential equation) 163.A
- a.e. (almost everywhere) 270.D
- AF-algebra 36.H
- affect (of an algebraic equation) 172.G
- affectless algebraic equation 172.G
- affine (morphism) 16.D
- affine algebraic group 13.A
- affine algebraic variety 16.A
 - quasi- 16.C
- affine arc element 110.C
- affine arc length 110.C
- affine binormal 110.C
- affine connection 80.H 286.L
 - canonical (on \mathbf{R}^n) 80.J
 - coefficients of 80.L
- affine coordinates 7.C
- affine curvature 110.C
- affine differential geometry 110.C
- affine frame (of an affine space) 7.C
- affine geometry 7
 - in the narrower sense 7.E
- affine length 110.C
- affine locally symmetric space 80.J
- affinely congruent 7.E
- affine mapping 7.E

Absolutely continuous

- absolutely continuous
 - (function) 100.C
 - (mapping in the plane) 246.H
 - (measure) 270.L
 - (set function) 380.C
 - (vector measure) 443.G
 - generalized 100.C
 - μ - 380.C
 - in the restricted sense 100.C
 - in the sense of Tonelli 246.C
- absolutely continuous (*) 100.C
- absolutely continuous spectrum 390.E
- absolutely convergent
 - (double series) 379.E
 - (infinite product) 379.G
 - (Laplace-Stieltjes integral) 240.B
 - (power series) 21.B
 - (series) 379.C
 - (series in a Banach space) 443.D
 - uniformly 435.A
- absolutely convex set (in a topological linear space) 424.E
- absolutely integrable function 216.E
- absolutely irreducible (representation) 362.F
- absolutely irreducible character 362.E
- absolutely measurable 270.L
- absolutely p -valent 438.E
 - locally 438.E
- absolutely simple algebraic group 13.L
- absolutely stable
 - (linear k -step method) 303.G
 - (system of differential equations) 291.E
- absolutely summing (operator) 68.N
- absolutely uniserial algebra 29.I
- absolute minimality 16.I
- absolute moment (k th) 341.B
- absolute multiple covariant 226.E
- absolute neighborhood retract 202.D
 - fundamental (FANR) 382.C
- absolute norm (of an integral ideal) 14.C
- absolute parallelism 191.B
- absolute retract 202.D
 - fundamental (FAR) 382.C
- absolute stability 303.G
 - interval of 303.G
 - region of 303.G
 - region of, of the Runge-Kutta (P, p) method 303.G
- absolute temperature 419.A
- absolute value
 - (of a complex number) 74.B
 - (of an element of an ordered field) 149.N
 - (of an element of a vector lattice) 310.B
 - (of a real number) 355.A
 - (of a vector) 442.B
- absorb (a subset, topological linear space) 424.E
- absorbing barrier 115.B
- absorbing set (in a topological linear space) 424.E
- absorption cross section 375.A
- absorption law
 - in the algebra of sets 381.B
 - in a lattice 243.A
- absorption principle, limiting 375.C
- abstract algebraic variety 16.C
- abstract L space 310.G
- abstract L_p space 310.G
- abstract M space 310.G
- abstract Riemann surface 367.A
- abstract simplicial complex 70.C
- abstract space 381.B
- abstract variety 16.C
- abundant number 297.D
- acceleration parameter 302.C
- acceptance 400.A
- acceptance region 400.A
- accepted 31.D
- accessible (from a region) 93.K
- accessible boundary point 333.B
- accretive operator (in a Hilbert space) 251.J 286.C
- accumulated error 138.C
- accumulation point 87.C 425.O
 - complete 425.O
- acoustic problem 325.L
- act
 - on a commutative ring 226.A
 - freely (on a topological space) 122.A
- action 431.A
 - R - 126.B
 - rational 226.B
 - reductive 226.B
 - Z - 126.B
- action and reaction, law of 271.A
- action integral 80.Q
- action space 398.A
- activity 281.D
- activity analysis 376
- actuarial mathematics 214.A
- acute angle 139.D
- acute type 304.C
 - strongly 304.C
- acyclic complex 200.C 200.H
- Adams-Bashforth method 303.E
- Adams conjecture 237.I
- Adams-Moulton method 303.E
- Adams operation 237.E
- adapted (stochastic process) 407.B
- adaptive scheme 299.C
- addition
 - (in a commutative group) 190.A
 - (of natural numbers) 294.B
 - (in a ring) 368.A
 - (of unfoldings) 51.D
- addition formula
 - algebraic 3.M
 - for e^z 131.G
 - for sine and cosine 432.A
 - of trigonometric functions App. A, Table 2.1
- addition theorem
 - of Bessel functions 39.B
 - of cylindrical functions App. A, Table 19.III
 - of Legendre functions 393.C
 - of the \wp -function App. A, Table 16.IV
 - of sn, cn, dn App. A, Table 16.III
 - of the ζ -function App. A, Table 16.IV
- additive
 - completely \rightarrow completely additive
 - countably \rightarrow countably additive
 - finitely \rightarrow finitely additive
 - σ - \rightarrow σ -additive
 - totally \rightarrow totally additive
- additive category 52.N
- additive class
 - completely 270.B
 - countably 270.B
 - finitely 270.B
- additive functional
 - (of a Markov process) 261.E
- martingale 261.E
- natural 261.E
- perfect 261.E

- σ - 270.B
- σ , tail 342.G
- σ -, topological 270.C
- σ -, well-measurable 407.B
- simple 29.A
- solvable 231.A
- Staudt 343.C
- Steenrod 64.B
- supplemented 200.L
- symmetric 29.H
- tensor (on a linear space) 256.K
- Thom 114.H
- total matrix 269.B
- uniform 164.A
- uniserial 29.I
- uniserial, absolutely 29.I
- uniserial, generalized 29.I
- unitary 29.A
- universal enveloping (of a Lie algebra) 248.J
- vector App. A, Table 3.I
- von Neumann 308.C
- von Neumann, induced 308.C
- von Neumann, reduced 308.C
- W^* - 308.C
- weak* Dirichlet 164.G
- zero 29.A
- algebra class (of central simple algebras) 29.E
- algebra class group 29.E
- algebra extension 29.D 200.L
- algebra homomorphism 29.A
- algebraic addition formula 3.M
- algebraic algebra 29.J
- algebraic analysis 125.A
- algebraically closed (in a field) 149.I
- algebraically closed field 149.I
 - quasi- 118.F
- algebraically dependent (on a family of elements of a field) 149.K
- algebraically dependent elements (of a ring) 369.A
- algebraically equivalent cycles 16.R
- algebraically equivalent to 0 (a divisor on an algebraic variety) 16.P
- algebraically independent (over a field) 149.K
- algebraically independent elements (of a ring) 369.A
- algebraically simple eigenvalue 390.E
- algebraic branch point (of a Riemann surface) 367.B
- algebraic closure
 - of a field 149.I
 - separable 257.E
- algebraic correspondence 9.H 16.I
 - group of classes of 9.H
- algebraic curves 11.A
 - irreducible 11.B
 - plane 9.B
- algebraic cycles 450.Q
- algebraic differential equation 113 288.A
- algebraic dimension (of a compact complex manifold) 74.F
- algebraic element (of a field) 149.E
- algebraic equations 10, App. A, Table 1
 - in m unknowns 10.A
- algebraic extension 149.E
- algebraic family (of cycles on an algebraic variety) 16.R
- algebraic fiber space 72.I
- algebraic function 11.A
- algebraic function field
 - over k of dimension l 9.D
 - over k of transcendence degree 1 9.D
 - in n variable 149.K
- ζ -function of 450.P
- algebraic fundamental group 16.U
- algebraic geometry 12.A
- algebraic groups 13
 - absolutely simple 13.U
 - affine 13.A
 - almost simple 13.U
 - connected 13.A
 - isogenous 13.A
 - k -almost simple 15.O
 - k -anisotropic 13.G
 - k -compact 13.G
 - k -isotropic 13.G
 - k -quasisplit 13.O
 - k -simple 13.O
 - k -solvable 13.F
 - k -split 13.N
 - linear 13.A
 - nilpotent 13.F
 - reductive 13.I
 - semisimple 13.I
 - simple 13.L
 - solvable 13.F
 - unipotent 13.E
- algebraic group variety 13.B
- algebraic homotopy group 16.U
- algebraic integer 14.A
- algebraic K -theory 237.J
 - higher 237.J
- algebraic Lie algebra 13.C
- algebraic linear functional 424.B
- algebraic multiplicity (of an eigenvalue) 309.B
- algebraic number 14.A
- algebraic number fields 14
 - relative 14.I
- algebraic pencil 15.C
- algebraic point (over a field) 369.C
- algebraic scheme 16.D
- algebraic sheaf, coherent 16.E 72.F
- algebraic singularity (of an analytic function) 198.M
- algebraic solution (of an algebraic equation) 10.D
- algebraic space 16.W
- algebraic subgroup 13.A
- algebraic surfaces 15
- algebraic system
 - of r equations 10
 - in the wider sense 409.B
- algebraic topology 426
- algebraic torus 13.D
- algebraic varieties 16 16.C
 - abstract 16.C
 - affine 16.A
 - complex 16.T
 - normal 16.F
 - product 16.A
 - projective 16.A
 - quasi-affine 16.C
 - quasiprojective 16.C
- algebra isomorphism 29.A
- algebroidal function(s) 17
 - entire 17.B
 - k -valued 17.A
- algorithm 97 356.C
 - composite simplex 255.F
 - division 297.A
 - division (of polynomials) 337.C
 - dual simplex 255.F

- Euclidean 297.A
- Euclidean (of polynomials) 337.D
- fractional cutting plane 215.B
- greedy 66.G
- heuristic 215.E
- partitioning 215.E
- primal-dual 255.F
- variable-step variable-order (VSVO) 303.E
- VSVO 303.E
- aliases 102.I
- alignment chart 19.D
- allied series (of a trigonometric series) 159.A
- all-integer 215.B
- all-integer algorithm 215.B
- all-integer programming problem 215.A
- allocation, optimum 373.E
- allocation process, multistage 127.A
- allowed homomorphism (between A -modules) 277.E
- allowed submodule 277.C
- almost all 342.B
- almost all points of a variety 16.A
- almost certainly converge 342.D
- almost certainly occur 342.B
- almost complex manifold 72.B
 - stably 114.H
 - weakly 114.H
- almost complex structure 72.B
 - tensor field of (induced by a complex structure) 72.B
- almost conformal 275.C
- almost contact manifold 110.E
- almost contact metric structure 110.E
- almost contact structure 110.E
- almost effective action (on a set) 415.B
- almost effectively (act on a G -space) 431.A
- almost everywhere converge 342.D
- almost everywhere hold (in a measure space) 270.D
- almost finite memory channels 213.F
- almost G -invariant statistic 396.I
- almost invariant test 400.E
- almost parallelizable manifold 114.I
- almost periodic (motion) 126.D
- almost periodic differential equation 290.A
- almost periodic functions 18
 - analytic 18.D
 - on a group 18.F
 - with respect to ρ 18.C
 - in the sense of Bohr 18.B
 - uniformly 18.B
- almost periodic group, maximally 18.I
- almost periodic group, minimally 18.I
- almost simple algebraic group 13.L
 - k - 13.O
- almost subharmonic 193.T
- almost surely converge 342.D
- almost surely occur 342.B
- almost symplectic structure 191.B
- alphabet 31.B 63.A 213.B
- alternate angles 139.D
- alternating contravariant tensor 256.N
- alternating covariant tensor 256.N
- alternating direction implicit (ADI) method 304.F
- alternating function 337.I
- alternating group of degree n 151.G
- alternating knot 235.A
- alternating law (in a Lie algebra) 248.A
- alternating matrix 269.B
- alternating multilinear form 256.H
- alternating multilinear mapping 256.H
- alternating polynomial 337.I
 - simplest 337.I
- alternating series 379.C
- alternating tensor field 105.O
- alternative (in game theory) 173.B
- alternative algebra 231.A
- alternative field 231.A
- alternative hypothesis 400.A
- alternative theorem, Fredholm 68.E 217.F
- alternizer 256.N
- altitude (of a commutative ring) 67.E
- altitude theorem, Krull 284.A
- amalgamated product (of a family of groups) 190.M
- amalgamated sum 52.G
- ambient isotropic 65.D
- ambient isotropy 65.D
- ambig class (of a quadratic field) 347.F
- ambig ideal (of a quadratic field) 347.F
- ambiguous point 62.D
- amicable number 297.D
- Amitsur cohomology group 200.P
- Amitsur complex 200.P
- amount insured 214.A
- amount of inspection, expected 404.C
- amount of insurance 214.A
- Ampère equations, Monge- 278, App. A, Table 15.III
- Ampère transformation 82.A
- amphicheiral knot 235.A
- ample divisor 16.N
 - very 16.N
- ample linear system 16.N
 - very 16.N
- ample over S (of a sheaf on a scheme) 16.E
 - relatively 16.E
 - very 16.E
- ample vector bundle 16.Y
- amplification matrix 304.F
- amplification operator of a scheme 304.F
- amplitude
 - (of a complex number) 74.C
 - (function) App. A, Table 16.III
 - (of an oscillation) 318.A
 - (of time series data) 397.N
 - (of a wave) 446
 - Feynman 146.B
 - partial wave scattering 375.E
 - probability 351.D
 - scattering 375.C,E 386.B
- amplitude function (of a Fourier integral operator) 274.C 345.B
- AMU estimator, k th-order 399.O
- analog, difference 304.E
- analog computation 19
- analog computers 19.E
 - electronic 19.E
- analog of de Rham's theorem 21.L
- analog quantity 138.B
- analog simulation 385.A
- analysis 20
 - activity 376
 - algebraic 125.A
 - backward 138.C
 - backward error 302.B
 - combinatorial 66.A
 - consistency of 156.E
 - convex 88
 - design-of-experiment 403.D
 - dimensional 116

Diophantine 296.A
 experimental 385.A
 factor 280.G
 forward 138.C
 function 20
 functional 162
 functional, nonlinear 286
 harmonic (on locally compact Abelian groups) 192.G
 intrablock 102.D
 microlocal 274.A 345.A
 multivariate 280
 of a network 282.C
 numerical 300
 principal component 280.F
 regression 403.D
 spectral 390.A
 analysis of variance 400.H 403.D
 multivariate 280.B
 table 400.H
 analytic
 (function) 21.B,C 198.A,H
 (predicate) 356.H
 complex, structure 72.A
 micro- (hyperfunction) 125.CC
 pseudo- (function) 352.B
 quasi- (function) 352.B
 quasi- (in the generalized sense) 58.F
 real 106.K 198.H
 analytical dynamics 271.F
 analytically continuable 198.I
 analytically hypoelliptic 112.D 323.I
 analytically independent elements 370.A
 analytically normal local ring 284.D
 analytically thin set 23.D
 analytically uniform spaces 125.S
 analytically unramified semilocal ring 284.D
 analytic almost periodic function 18.D
 analytic automorphism 21.J
 analytic capacity 169.F
 analytic continuation 198.G
 along a curve 198.I
 direct 198.G
 uniqueness theorem of 198.I
 in the wider sense 198.O
 analytic covering space 23.E
 analytic curve
 in an analytic manifold 93.B
 in a Euclidean plane 93.B
 analytic differential (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
 analytic fiber bundle
 complex 147.O
 real 147.O
 analytic functions 198.A,H
 complex 198.H
 inverse 198.L
 many-valued 198.J
 multiple-valued 198.J
 n -valued 198.J
 real 106.K 198.H
 in the sense of Weierstrass 198.I
 of several complex variables 21.B,C
 in the wider sense 198.O
 analytic geometry 181
 analytic hierarchy 356.H
 analytic homomorphism (between Lie groups) 249.N
 analytic index
 of an elliptic complex 237.H
 of an elliptic differential operator 237.H

Subject Index

Angle

analytic isomorphism 21.J
 between Lie groups 249.N
 analyticity, set of 192.N
 analytic manifold
 complex 72.A
 real 105.C
 analytic mapping 21.J
 analytic measurable space 270.C
 analytic neighborhood
 of a function element in the wider sense 198.O
 of a Riemann surface 367.A
 analytic number theory 296.B
 analytic operation 22.B
 analytic operation function 37.K
 analytic perturbation 331.D
 analytic polyhedron 21.G
 analytic prolongation 198.G
 analytic relations, invariance theorem of 198.K
 analytic representation (of $GL(V)$) 60.D
 analytic set
 (in set theory) 22
 (in the theory of analytic spaces) 23.B
 co- 22.A
 complementary (in set theory) 22.A
 germ of 23.B
 irreducible (at a point) 23.B
 principal 23.B
 purely d -dimensional 23.B
 purely d -dimensional (at a point) 23.B
 analytic sheaf 72.E
 coherent 72.E
 analytic spaces 23
 Banach 23.G
 C - 23.E
 general 23.G
 K -complete 23.F
 normal 23.D
 in the sense of Behnke-Stein 23.E
 analytic structure
 complex 72.A
 real 105.D
 on a Riemann surface 367.A
 analytic submanifold, complex 72.A
 analytic subset (of a complex manifold) 72.E
 analytic subspace 23.C,G
 analytic torsion 391.M
 analytic vector (with respect to a unitary representation of a Lie group) 437.S
 analytic wave front set 274.D
 analyzer
 differential 19.E
 harmonic 19.E
 anchor ring 410.B
 ancient mathematics 24
 ancillary statistic 396.H 401.C
 Anger function 39.G, App. A, Table 19.IV
 angle 139.D 155.B
 (of a geodesic triangle) 178.A,H
 (of hyperspheres) 76.A
 (of a spherical triangle) 432.B
 acute 139.D
 alternate 139.D
 corresponding 139.D
 eccentric (of a point on a hyperbola) 78.E
 eccentric (of a point on an ellipse) 78.D
 Euler 90.C
 general 139.D
 non-Euclidean (in a Klein model) 285.C
 obtuse 139.D

Angular derivative (of a holomorphic function)

- regular polyhedral 357.B
- right 139.D
- straight 139.D
- straightening of 114.F
- supplementary 139.D
- trisection of 179.A
- vertical 139.D
- angular derivative (of a holomorphic function) 43.K
- angular domain 333.A
- angular frequency (of a sine wave) 446
- angular momentum 258.D 271.E
 - integrals of 420.A
 - intrinsic 415.G
 - orbital 315.E
 - theorem of 271.E
- angular momentum density 150.B
- angular transformation 374.D
- anharmonic ratio 343.D
- anisotropic
 - (quadratic form) 13.G
 - k - (algebraic group) 13.G
- annihilation operator 377.A
- annihilator 422.D
 - left 29.H
 - reciprocity of (in topological Abelian groups) 422.E
 - right 29.H
- annual aberration 392
- annual parallax 392
- annuity contract 214.B
- annular domain 333.A
- annulator 422.D
- annulus conjecture 65.C
- anomaly
 - eccentric 309.B
 - mean 309.B
 - true 309.B
- Anosov diffeomorphism 126.J 136.G
- Anosov flow 126.J 136.G
- Anosov foliations 126.J
- Anosov vector field 126.J
- ANR (absolute neighborhood retract) 202.D,E
- antiautomorphism
 - (of a group) 190.D
 - (of a ring) 368.D
 - principal (of a Clifford algebra) 61.B
- antiendomorphism
 - (of a group) 190.D
 - (of a ring) 368.D
- antiequivalence (between categories) 52.H
- anti-Hermitian form 256.Q
- anti-Hermitian matrix 269.I
- antiholomorphic 195.B 275.B
- antihomomorphism
 - of groups 190.D
 - of lattices 243.C
 - of rings 368.D
- anti-isomorphic lattices 243.C
- anti-isomorphism
 - of groups 190.D
 - of lattices 243.C
 - of ordered sets 311.F
 - of rings 368.D
- antinomy 319.A
- antiparticle 132.A 386.B
- antipodal points (on a sphere) 140
- antipode 203.H
- anti-self-dual (G -connection) 80.Q
- antisymmetric
 - (Fock space) 377.A
 - (multilinear form) 256.H
 - (multilinear mapping) 256.H
 - (relation) 358.A
 - (tensor) 256.N
 - law 311.A
 - matrix 269.B
- antisymmetry, set of 164.E
- Antoine's necklace 65.G
- apartment 13.R
- aperiodic 136.E 260.B
- Apollonius problem (in geometric construction) 179.A
- a posteriori distribution 388.B
- a posteriori probability 342.F
- apparent force 271.D
- apparent singular point 254.L
- Appell hypergeometric functions of two variables 206.D, App. A, Table 18.I
- application 31.B
- approach
 - Bayesian 401.B
 - group-theoretic 215.C
 - non-Bayesian 401.B
 - S -matrix 132.C
 - state-space 86.A
- approximate derivative (of a measurable function) 100.B
- approximate functional equation (for zeta function) 450.B
- approximately derivable (measurable function) 100.B
- approximately finite (von Neumann algebra) 308.I
- approximately finite algebra 36.H
- approximately finite-dimensional 308.I
- approximation(s)
 - best (of a continuous function) 336.B
 - best (in evaluation of functions) 142.B
 - best (of an irrational number) 83.B
 - best polynomial, in the sense of Chebyshev 336.H
 - Diophantine 182.F
 - full discrete 304.B
 - least square 336.D
 - of linear type 142.B
 - method of successive (for an elliptic partial differential equation) 323.D
 - method of successive (for Fredholm integral equations of the second kind) 217.D
 - method of successive (for ordinary differential equations) 316.D
 - n th (of a differentiable function) 106.E
 - Oseen 205.C
 - overall, formula 303.C
 - Padé 142.E
 - Pauli 415.G
 - Prandtl-Glauert 205.B
 - polynomial, 336
 - scmidiscrete 304.B
 - simplicial (to a continuous mapping) 70.C
 - Stokes 205.C
 - Wilson-Hilferty 374.F
 - Yosida 286.X
- approximation method
 - in physics 25
 - projective 304.B
- approximation property
 - (of a Banach space) 37.L

bounded 37.L
 approximation theorem
 (on functions on a compact group) 69.B
 (on valuations) 439.G
 cellular 70.D
 Eichler's 27.D
 Kronecker's 422.K
 polynomial (for C^∞ -functions) 58.E
 simplicial 70.C
 Weierstrass 336.A
 a priori distribution 388.B
 least favorable 388.H
 a priori estimate 323.C
 in L^2 sense 323.H
 a priori probability 342.F
 AR (absolute retract) 202.D
 Arabic numerals 26
 Arab mathematics 26
 Araki axioms, Haag- 150.E
 Araki-Sewell inequality, Roepstorff- 402.G
 arbitrary constant 313.A
 arbitrary set 381.G
 arc(s) 93.B 186.B
 continuous 93.B
 Farey 4.B
 geodesic 178.H 364.B
 joined by an 79.B
 Jordan 81.D 93.B
 major 4.B
 minor 4.B
 open 93.B
 pseudo- 79.B
 simple 93.B
 Arccos 131.E
 arc cos (arc cosine) 131.E
 arc element
 affine 110.C
 conformal 110.D
 Archimedean lattice-ordered group 243.G
 Archimedean ordered field 149.N
 Archimedean unit (of a vector lattice) 310.B
 Archimedean valuation 14.F 439.C
 Archimedean vector lattice 310.C
 Archimedes axiom
 in geometry 155.B
 for real numbers 355.B
 Archimedes spiral 93.H
 arc length 111.D
 affine 110.C
 representation in terms of (for a continuous
 arc) 246.A
 Arcsin 131.E
 arcsin (arcsine) 131.E
 arcsine law
 for Brownian motion 45.E
 for distribution function 250.D
 for random walk 260.E
 arcsine transformation 374.D
 Arctan 131.E
 arctan (arctangent) 131.E
 arcwise connected component 79.B
 arcwise connected space, locally 79.B
 area 246
 (Euclidean) 139.F
 (of a polygon) 155.F
 (of a set in \mathbf{R}^2) 216.F
 Banach (of a surface) 246.G
 of concentration 397.E
 definite, set of 216.F
 Geöcze (of a surface) 246.E

Subject Index

Ascending chain

Gross (of a Borel set) 246.G
 inner 216.F 270.G
 Janzen (of a Borel set) 246.G
 Lebesgue (of a surface) 246.C
 mixed (of two ovals) 89.D
 outer 216.F 270.G
 Peano (of a surface) 246.F
 surface, of unit hypersphere App. A, Table 9.V
 areal element (in a Cartan space) 152.C
 areal functional 334.B
 areally mean p -valent 438.E
 area theorem 438.B
 Bers 234.D
 Arens-Royden theorem 36.M
 Arens theorem, Mackey- 424.N
 Arf-Kervaire invariant 114.J
 Argand plane, Gauss- 74.C
 argument
 (of a complex number) 74.C
 behind-the-moon 351.K
 argument function 46.A
 argument principle 198.F
 arithmetical (predicate) 356.H
 arithmetical hierarchy 356.H
 of degrees of recursive unsolvability 356.H
 arithmetically equivalent
 (lattices) 92.B
 (pairs) 92.B
 (structures) 276.D
 arithmetic crystal classes 92.B
 arithmetic function 295.A
 arithmetic genus
 (of an algebraic curve) 9.F
 (of an algebraic surface) 15.C
 (of a complete variety) 16.E
 (of a divisor) 15.C
 virtual (of a divisor) 16.E
 arithmetic mean 211.C 397.C
 arithmetic of associative algebras 27
 arithmetico-geometric mean 134.B
 arithmetic operations 294.A
 arithmetic progression 379.I, App. A, Table 10.I
 prime number theorem for 123.D
 arithmetic subgroup 13.P 122.F, G
 arithmetic unit 75.B
 arithmetization (of metamathematics) 185.C
 array 96.C
 balanced 102.L
 k - 330
 orthogonal 102.L
 arrow diagram 281.D
 Arrow-Hurwicz-Uzawa gradient method 292.E
 artificial variables 255.C
 Artin, E. 28
 Artin conjecture 450.G
 Artin general law of reciprocity 59.C
 Artin-Hasse function 257.H
 Artinian module 277.I
 Artinian ring 284.A
 left 368.F
 right 368.F
 Artin L -function 450.G, R
 Artin-Rees lemma 284.A
 Artin-Schreier extension (of a field) 172.F
 Artin symbol 14.K
 Arzelà theorem, Ascoli- 168.B 435.D
 ascending central series (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 ascending chain
 in an ordered set 311.C
 of subgroups of a group 190.F

Ascending chain condition

- ascending chain condition
 - in an ordered set 311.C
 - for subgroups of a group 190.F
- Ascoli-Arzelà theorem 168.B 435.D
- Ascoli theorem 435.D
- a.s. consistent 399.K
- assembler 75.C
- associate (of an element of a ring) 67.H
- associated convergence radii 21.B
- associated diagrams (in irreducible representations of orthogonal groups) 60.J
- associated differential equation, Legendre's 393.A
- associated factor sets (of crossed products) 29.F
- associated factor sets (for extension of groups) 190.N
- associated fiber bundle 147.D
- associated flow 136.F
- associated form (of a projective variety) 16.S
- associated graded ring 284.D
- associated integral equation (of a homogeneous) integral equation) 217.F
- associated Laguerre polynomials 317.D
- associated Legendre functions 393.C, App. A, Table 18.III
- associated prime ideal 67.F
- associated principal bundle 147.D
- association, measure of 397.K
- association algebra 102.J
- association matrix 102.J
- associative, homotopy 203.D
- associative algebra(s) 102.J 231.A
 - power 231.A
- associative law
 - for the addition and multiplication of natural numbers 294.B
 - in the algebra of sets 381.B
 - for cardinal numbers 49.C
 - for the composite of correspondences 358.B
 - general (for group composition) 190.C
 - for group composition 190.A
 - in a lattice 243.A
 - in a ring 368.A
- associative multiplication of a graded algebra 203.B
- assumed rate of interest 214.A
- assumption
 - inverse 304.D
 - Stokes 205.C
- asteroid 93.H
- astronomy, spherical 392
- asymmetric (factorial experiment) 102.H
- asymmetric Cauchy process 5.F
- asymptote (of an infinite branch) 93.G
- asymptotically developable (function) 30.A
- asymptotically distributed 374.D
- asymptotically efficient estimator 399.N
 - first-order 399.O
 - kth-order 399.O
- asymptotically mean unbiased 399.K
- asymptotically median unbiased estimator (AMU) kth-order 399.O
- asymptotically normal estimator
 - best (BAN) 399.K
 - consistent and (CAN) 399.K
- asymptotically normally distributed 399.K
- asymptotically optimal 354.D
- asymptotically stable 126.F 286.S 394.B
 - globally 126.F
 - uniformly 163.G
- asymptotically unbiased 399.K
- asymptotic bias 399.K
- asymptotic completeness 150.D
- asymptotic concentration 399.N
- asymptotic condition, LSZ 150.D
- asymptotic cone 350.B
- asymptotic convergence 168.B
- asymptotic covariance matrix 399.K
- asymptotic curve 110.B 111.H
- asymptotic direction 111.H
- asymptotic distribution, kth-order 399.O
- asymptotic efficiency 399.N
 - second-order 399.O
 - higher-order 399.O
- asymptotic expansion 30.A, App. A, Table 17.I (of a pseudodifferential operator) 345.A
 - method of matched 112.B
 - Mirakshisundaram-Pleijel 391.B
- asymptotic fields 150.D
- asymptotic freedom 361.B
- asymptotic method 290.D
- asymptotic normality 399.K
- asymptotic path (for a meromorphic function) 272.H
- asymptotic perturbation theory 331.D
- asymptotic power series 30.A
- asymptotic property (of solutions of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 314.A
- asymptotic ratio set 308.I
- asymptotic ray 178.F
- asymptotic representation
 - Debye 39.D, App. A, Table 19.III
 - Hankel App. A, Table 19.III
- asymptotic sequence 30.A
- asymptotic series 30.A
- asymptotic set 62.A
- asymptotic solution 325.M
- asymptotic tangent 110.B
- asymptotic value of a meromorphic function 62.A 272.H
- asymptotic value theorem, Lindelöf 43.C
- asynchronous system (of circuits) 75.B
- Atiyah-Bott fixed point theorem 153.C
- Atiyah-Singer fixed point theorem 153.C
- Atiyah-Singer index theorem 237.H
 - equivariant 237.H
- atlas 105.C
 - of class C^r 105.D
 - of class C^∞ 105.D
 - oriented 105.F
- atled (nabla) 442.D
- atmospheric refraction 392
- at most (for cardinal numbers) 49.B
- atomic
 - (measurable set) 270.D
 - at 0 163.H
- atomic element (in a complemented modular lattice) 243.F
- atomic formula 276.A 411.D
- atomless 398.C
- at random 401.F
- attaching a handle 114.F
- attaching space 202.E
- attraction, domain of 374.G
- attractor 126.F
 - strange 126.N
- attribute, sampling inspection by 404.C
- augmentation
 - (of an algebra) 200.M
 - (of a chain complex) 200.C
 - (of a coalgebra) 203.F

(of a cochain complex) 200.F
 (of a complex in an Abelian category) 200.H
 augmented algebra 200.M
 augmented chain complex 200.C
 autocorrelation 421.B
 autocorrelation coefficient 397.N
 autocovariance, sample 421.B
 automata 31
 automatic integration scheme 299.C
 automaton 31.A
 deterministic linear bounded 31.D
 finite 31.D
 nondeterministic linear bounded 31.D
 push-down 31.D
 automorphic form 450.O
 of dimension $\sim k$ 32.B
 of type U 437.DD
 of weight m 32.A
 of weight k 32.B
 automorphic function(s) 32
 multiplicative 32.A
 with respect to Γ 32.A
 automorphism
 (of an algebraic system) 409.C
 (of a field) 149.B
 (of a group) 190.D
 (of an object in a category) 52.D
 (of a polarized Abelian variety) 3.G
 (of a probability space) 136.E
 (of a ring) 368.D
 analytic 21.J
 anti- (of a group) 190.D
 anti- (of a ring) 368.D
 differential 113
 Frobenius (of a prime ideal) 14.K
 group of (of a group) 190.D
 holomorphic 21.J
 inner (of a group) 190.D
 inner (of a ring) 368.D
 inner, group of (of a group) 190.D
 inner, group of (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
 involutive (of a Lie group) 412.B
 k -fold mixing 136.E
 Kolmogorov 136.E
 metrically isomorphic (on a measure space) 136.E
 modular 308.H
 outer, group of (of a group) 190.D
 outer, group of (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
 principal (of a Clifford algebra) 61.B
 shift 126.J
 spatially isomorphic (on a measure space) 136.E
 spectrally isomorphic (on a measure space) 136.E
 strongly mixing 136.E
 weakly isomorphic 136.E
 weakly mixing 136.E
 automorphism group (of a Lie algebra) 248.A
 automorphy, factor of 32.A
 autonomous 163.D 290.A
 autoregressive Gaussian source 213.E
 autoregressive integrated moving average process 421.G
 autoregressive moving average process 421.D
 autoregressive process 421.D
 auxiliary circle 78.D
 auxiliary equation, Charpit 320.D
 auxiliary units 414.A

Subject Index

Axiom of the power set

auxiliary variable 373.C
 average 211.C
 moving 397.N
 moving, process 421.D
 phase 402.C
 weighted moving 397.N
 average complexity 71.A
 average outgoing quality level 404.C
 average sample number 404.C
 averaging, method of 290.D
 AW^* -algebra 36.H
 axial-vector currents, partially conserved 132.C
 axial visibility manifold 178.F
 axiom(s) 35.A 411.I
 Archimedes (in geometry) 155.B
 Archimedes (for real numbers) 355.B
 congruence (in geometry) 155.B
 Eilenberg-Steenrod 201.Q
 Euclid 139.A
 first countability 425.P
 the first separation 425.Q
 the fourth separation 425.Q
 Fréchet 425.Q
 Haag-Araki 150.E
 Haag-Keslev 150.E
 Hausdorff 425.Q
 Kolmogorov 425.Q
 logical 337.C 411.I
 Martin 33.F
 mathematical 337.C 411.I
 Osterwalder-Schrader 150.F
 Pasch 155.B
 second countability 425.P
 the second separation 425.Q
 system of 35.B
 the third separation 425.Q
 Tietze's first 425.Q
 Tietze's second 425.Q
 Tikhonov's separation 425.Q
 Vietoris 425.Q
 Wightman 150.D
 axiom A diffeomorphism 126.J
 axiom A flow 126.J
 axiomatic quantum field theory 150.D
 axiomatic set theory 36 156.E
 axiom A vector field 126.J
 axiomatization 35.A
 axiomatize (by specifying a system of axioms) 35.B
 axiom of choice 33.B 34.A
 and continuum hypothesis, consistency of 33.D
 and continuum hypothesis, independence of 33.D
 axiom of comprehension 33.B 381.G
 axiom of constructibility 33.D
 axiom of determinacy 22.H
 axiom of determinateness 33.F
 axiom of ε -induction 33.B
 axiom of extensionality 33.B
 axiom of foundation 33.B
 axiom of free mobility (in Euclidean geometry) 139.B
 axiom of infinity 33.B 381.G
 axiom of linear completeness (in geometry) 155.B
 axiom of mathematical induction 294.B
 axiom of pairing 381.G
 axiom of parallels (in Euclidean geometry) 139.A 155.B
 axiom of the power set 33.B 381.G

Axiom of reducibility (in symbolic logic)

- axiom of reducibility (in symbolic logic) 156.B
 - 411.K
- axiom of regularity 33.B
- axiom of replacement 33.B 381.G
- axiom of separation 33.B
- axiom of strong infinity 33.E
- axiom of subsets 33.B 381.G
- axiom of substitution 381.G
- axiom of the empty set 33.B
- axiom of the sum set 33.B
- axiom of the unordered pair 33.B
- axiom of union 381.G
- axioms of continuity
 - Dedekind's 355.A
- axiom system(s) 35
 - of a structure 409.B
 - of a theory 411.I
- axis (axes)
 - of a circular cone 78.A
 - conjugate (of a hyperbola) 78.C
 - of convergence 240.B
 - coordinate (of an affine frame) 7.C
 - coordinate (of a Euclidean space) 140
 - imaginary 74.C
 - major (of an ellipse) 78.C
 - minor (of an ellipse) 78.C
 - optical 180.B
 - of a parabola 78.C
 - principal (of a central conic) 78.C
 - principal (of a parabola) 78.C
 - principal (of a quadric surface) 350.B
 - principal, of inertia 271.E
 - principal, transformation to 390.B
 - real 74.C
 - of rotation (of a surface of revolution) 111.I
 - transverse (of a hyperbola) 78.C
 - x_i - (of a Euclidean space) 140
- Ax-Kochen isomorphism theorem 276.E
- azimuth App. A, Table 3.V
- azimuthal quantum number 315.E
- Azumaya algebra 29.K
- Azumaya lemma, Krull- 67.D

B

- $\beta \rightarrow$ beta
- $\mathcal{B}(\Omega)$
 - $(=\mathcal{D}_{L,\infty}(\Omega))$ 168.B
 - (the space of hyperfunctions) 125.V
- $\mathbf{B}_{p,q}^s$ (Besov spaces) 168.B
- β -KMS state 402.G
- β -shadowed 126.J
- β -traced 126.J
- \mathfrak{B} -measurable function 270.J
- \mathfrak{B} -measurable set 270.C
- \mathfrak{B} -regular measure 270.F
- \mathfrak{B} -summable series 379.O
- $|\mathfrak{B}|$ -summable series 379.O
- b -function 125.EE 418.H
- BN -pair 13.R 343.I
- (B, N) -pair 151.J
- B_n set 22.D
- B**-complete (locally convex space) 424.X
- BA 102.L
- back substitution 302.B
- backward analysis 138.C
- backward difference 223.C, App. A, Table 21
- backward emission 320.A
- backward equation, Kolmogorov 115.A 260.F
- backward error analysis 302.B
- backward interpolation formula
 - Gauss 223.C
 - Newton 223.C
- backward moving average representation 395.D
 - canonical 395.D
- backward type 304.D,F
- badly approximable 83.B
- Baer sum (of extensions) 200.K
- Bahadur efficiency 400.K
- Baire condition 425.L
- Baire function 84.D
- Baire-Hausdorff theorem 273.J 425.N
- Baire measurable 270.L
- Baire property 425.L
 - Lebesgue measurability and 33.F
- Baire set 126.H 270.C
- Baire space 425.L
- Baire zero-dimensional space 273.B
- Bairstow method 301.E
- balanced array 102.L
- balanced fractional factorial design 102.I
- balanced incomplete block design 102.E
 - partially 102.J
- balanced mapping, A - 277.J
- balayage 338.L
- balayage principle 338.L
- ball 140
 - n - 140
 - open 140
 - open n - 140
 - spin 351.L
 - unit 140
 - unit (of a Banach space) 37.B
- ball knot, (p, q) - 235.G
- ball pair 235.G
- BAN (best asymptotically normal) 399.K
- Banach-Alaoglu theorem
 - (in a Banach space) 37.E
 - (in a topological linear space) 424.H
- Banach algebra(s) 36.A
- Banach analytic space 23.G
- Banach area (of a surface) 246.G
- Banach (extension) theorem, Hahn-
 - (in a normed space) 37.F
 - (in a topological linear space) 424.C
- Banach integral 310.I
- Banach lattice 310.F
- Banach Lie group 286.K
- Banach limit 37.F
- Banach manifold 105.Z
- Banach space(s) 37.A,B
 - reflexive 37.G
 - regular 37.G
- Banach star algebra 36.F
- Banach-Steinhaus theorem
 - (in a Banach space) 37.H
 - (in a topological linear space) 424.J
- Banach theorem 37.I
- band, Möbius 410.B
- bang-bang control 405.C
- Barankin theorem 399.D
- bar construction (of an Eilenberg-MacLane complex) 70.F
- bargaining set 173.D
- bargaining solution, Nash 173.C
- Barnes extended hypergeometric function 206.C,
 - App. A, Table 18.I
- barrel (in a locally convex space) 424.I
- barreled (locally convex space) 424.I
 - quasi- 424.I

- barrier 120.D
 - absorbing 115.B
 - reflecting 115.B,C
- Bartle-Dunford-Schwartz integral 443.G
- barycenter
 - (of points of an affine space) 7.C
 - (of a rigid body) 271.E
- barycentric coordinates
 - (in an affine space) 7.C 90.B
 - (in a Euclidean complex) 70.B
 - (in the polyhedron of a simplicial complex) 70.C
- barycentric derived neighborhood, second 65.C
- barycentric refinement 425.R
- barycentric subdivision
 - (of a Euclidean complex) 70.B
 - (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
- baryons 132.B
- base
 - (in a Banach space) 37.L
 - (curve of a roulette) 93.H
 - (of a logarithmic function) 131.B
 - (of a point range) 343.B
 - (of a polymatroid) 66.F,G
 - data 96.B
 - filter 87.I
 - local 425.E
 - for the neighborhood system 425.F
 - normal 172.E
 - open 425.F
 - for the space 425.E
 - for the topology 425.F
 - for the uniformity 436.B
- base functions 304.B
- base point
 - of a linear system 16.N
 - of a loop 170
 - of a topological space 202.B
- base space
 - of a fiber bundle 147.B
 - of a fiber space 148.B
 - of a Riemann surface 367.A
- base term (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
- base units 414.A
- Bashforth method, Adams- 303.E
- basic components (of an m -dimensional surface) 110.A
- basic concept (of a structure) 409.B
- basic equation 320.E
- basic feasible solution 255.A
- basic field (of linear space) 256.A
- basic form 255.A
- basic interval 4.B
- basic invariant 226.B
- basic limit theorem 260.C
- basic open set 425.F
- basic optimal solution 255.A
- basic property (of a structure) 409.B
- basic ring (of a module) 277.D
- basic set (for an Axiom A flow) 126.J
- basic set (of a structure) 409.B
- basic solution 255.A
 - feasible 255.A
 - optimal 255.A
- basic space (of a probability space) 342.B
- basic surface (of a covering surface) 367.B
- basic variable 255.A
- basic vector field 80.H
- basic Z_I -extension 14.L
- basin 126.F
- basis
 - (of an Abelian group) 2.B
 - (in a Banach space) 37.L
 - (of a homogeneous lattice) 182.B
 - (of an ideal) 67.B
 - (of a linear space) 256.E
 - (of a module) 277.G
 - canonical 201.B
 - canonical homology 11.C
 - Chevalley canonical 248.Q
 - dual 256.G
 - minimal 14.B
 - normal 172.E
 - of order r in N 4.A
 - orthonormal 197.C
 - Schauder 37.L
 - strongly distinguished 418.F
 - transcendence 149.K
 - Weyl canonical 248.P
- basis theorem
 - Hilbert (on Noetherian rings) 284.A
 - Ritt (on differential polynomials) 113
- bath, heat 419.B
- Bayes estimator 399.G
- Bayes formula 342.F 405.I
- Bayesian approach 401.B
- Bayesian model 403.G
- Bayes risk 398.B
- Bayes solution 398.B
 - generalized 398.B
 - in the wider sense 398.B
- Bayes sufficient σ -field 396.J
- BCH (Base-Chaudhuri-Hooquenghem) code 63.D
- BDI, type (symmetric Riemannian spaces) 412.G
- BDII, type (symmetric Riemannian spaces) 412.G
- BDH (Brown-Douglas-Fillmore) theory 36.J 390.J
- behavior, Regge 386.C
- behavior strategy 173.B
- behind-the-moon argument 351.K
- Behnke-Stein, analytic space in the sense of 23.E
- Behnke-Stein theorem 21.H
- Behrens-Fisher problem 400.G
- Bellman equation 405.B
- Bellman function 127.G
- Bellman principle 405.B
- Bell inequality 351.L
- Bell number 177.D
- belong
 - (to a set) 381.A
 - to the lower class with respect to local continuity 45.F
 - to the lower class with respect to uniform continuity 45.F
 - to the upper class with respect to local continuity 45.F
 - to the upper class with respect to uniform continuity 45.F
- Beltrami differential equation 352.B
- Beltrami differential operator
 - of the first kind App. A, Table 4.II
 - of the second kind App. A, Table 4.II
- Beltrami operator, Laplace- 194.B
- Bergman kernel function 188.G
- Bergman metric 188.G
- Bernays-Gödel set theory 33.A
- Bernoulli
 - loosely 136.F
 - monotonely very weak 136.F

Bernoulli differential equation

- Bernoulli differential equation App. A, Table 14.I
 Bernoulli family 38
 Bernoulli lemniscate 93.H
 Bernoulli method 301.J
 Bernoulli number 177.B
 Bernoulli polynomial 177.B
 Bernoulli process 136.E
 very weak 136.E
 weak 136.E
 Bernoulli sample 396.B
 Bernoulli shift 136.D
 generalized 136.D
 Bernoulli spiral 93.H
 Bernoulli theorem 205.B
 Bernoulli trials, sequence of 396.B
 Bernshtein inequality (for trigonometric polynomials) 336.C
 Bernshtein polynomial 366.A 418.H
 Sato- 125.EE
 Bernshtein problem 275.F
 generalized 275.F
 Bernshtein theorem
 (on cardinal numbers) 49.B
 (on the Laplace transform) 240.E
 (on minimal surfaces) 275.F
 Bers area theorem 234.D
 Bertini theorems 15.C
 Bertrand conjecture 123.A
 Bertrand curve 111.F
 Besov embedding theorem, Sobolev- 168.B
 Besov space 168.B
 Bessaga-Pelczyński theorem 443.D
 Bessel differential equation 39.B, App. A, Table 14.II
 Bessel formula, Hansen- App. A, Table 19.III
 Bessel function(s) 39, App. A, Table 19.III
 half 39.B
 modified 39.G
 spherical 39.B
 Bessel inequality 197.C
 Bessel integral 39.B
 Bessel interpolation formula App. A, Table 21
 Bessel series, Fourier- 39.D
 Bessel transform, Fourier- 39.D
 best (statistical decision function) 398.B
 best approximation
 (of a continuous function) 336.B
 (in evaluation of functions) 142.B
 (of an irrational number) 83.B
 in the sense of Chebyshev 336.H
 best asymptotically normal estimator 399.K
 best invariant estimator 399.I
 best linear unbiased estimator (b.l.u.e.) 403.E
 best polynomial approximation (in the sense of Chebyshev) 336.H
 beta density 397.D
 beta distribution 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 beta function 174.C, App. A, Table 17.I
 incomplete 174.C, App. A, Table 17.I
 beta-model, Luce 346.G
 better, uniformly (statistical decision function) 398.B
 Betti group (of a complex) 201.B
 Betti number
 of a commutative Noetherian ring 200.K
 of a complex 201.B
 between (two points in an ordered set) 311.B
 between-group variance 397.L
 Beurling generalized distribution 125.U
 Beurling-Kunugui, theorem, Iversen- 62.B
 Bezout theorem 12.B
 BG (= Bernays-Gödel set theory) 33.A
 Bhattacharyya inequality 399.D
 biadditive mapping 277.J
 bialgebra 203.G
 quotient 203.G
 semigroup 203.G
 universal enveloping 203.G
 bialgebra homomorphism 203.G
 Bianchi identities 80.J 417.B, App. A, Table 4.II
 bias 399.C
 biaxial spherical harmonics 393.D
 BIBD (balanced incomplete block design) 102.E
 bicharacteristic curve 325.A
 bicharacteristic strip 320.B
 bicomact 425.S
 bicomplex 200.H
 Bieberbach conjecture 438.C
 Biehler equality, Jacobi- 328
 biequicontinuous convergence, topology of 424.R
 bifurcation, Hopf 126.M
 bifurcation equation 286.V
 bifurcation method 290.D
 bifurcation point
 (in bifurcation theory) 126.M 286.R
 (in nonlinear integral equations) 217.M
 bifurcation set 51.F 418.F
 bifurcation theorem, Hopf 286.U
 bifurcation theory 286.R
 biharmonic (function) 193.O
 biholomorphic mapping 21.J
 biideal 203.G
 bijection
 (in a category) 52.D
 (of sets) 381.C
 bijective mapping 381.C
 bilateral network 382.C
 bilinear form
 (on linear spaces) 256.H
 (on modules) 277.J
 (on topological linear spaces) 424.G
 associated with a quadratic form 256.H
 matrix of 256.H
 nondegenerate 256.H
 symmetric (associated with a quadratic form) 348.A
 bilinear functional 424.G
 integral 424.R
 bilinear Hamiltonian 377.A
 bilinear mapping
 (of a linear space) 256.H
 (of a module) 277.J
 canonical (on tensor products of linear spaces) 256.I
 bilinear programming 264.D
 bilinear relations, Hodge-Riemann 16.V
 bimatrix game 173.C
 bimeasurable transformation 136.B
 bimodular germ (of an analytic function) 418.E
 bimodule 277.D
 A-B- 277.D
 binary quadratic form(s) 348.M
 primitive 348.M
 properly equivalent 348.M
 binary relation 358.A 411.G
 binding energy 351.D
 Binet formula
 (on Fibonacci sequence) 295.A
 (on gamma function) 174.A
 binomial coefficient 330, App. A, Table 17.II

- binomial coefficient series 121.E
- binomial distribution 341.D 397.F, App. A, Table 22
 - negative 341.D 397.F, App. A, Table 22
- binomial equation 10.C
- binomial probability paper 19.B
- binomial series App. A, Table 10.IV
- binomial theorem 330, App. A, Table 17.II
- binormal 111.F
 - affine 110.C
- bioassay 40.C
- biology, mathematical models in 263
- biometrics 40
- bipartite graph 186.C
 - complete 186.C
- bipolar (relative to a pairing) 424.H
- bipolar coordinates 90.C
- bipolar cylindrical coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
- bipolar theorem 37.F 424.H
- biprojective space 343.H
- biquadratic equation App. A, Table 1
- birational correspondence 16.I
- birational invariant 12.A
- birational isomorphism
 - between Abelian varieties 3.C
 - between algebraic groups 13.A
- birational mapping 16.I
- birational transformation 16.I
- Birch–Swinnerton-Dyer conjecture 118.D 450.S
- biregular mapping (between prealgebraic varieties) 16.C
- Birkhoff integrable (function) 443.E
- Birkhoff integral 443.E
- Birkhoff fixed-point theorem, Poincaré- 153.B
- Birkhoff-Witt theorem, Poincaré- (on Lie algebras) 248.J
- Birnbaum theorem 399.C
- birth and death process 260.G
- birth process 260.G
- birth rate, infinitesimal 260.G
- bispectral density function 421.C
- bispinor of rank (k, n) 258.B
- bit 75.B 213.B
 - check 63.C
 - information 63.C
- bivariate data 397.H
- bivariate distribution 397.H
- bivariate moments 397.H
- bivariate normal density 397.I
- Blackwell-Rao theorem 399.C
- Blakers-Massey theorem 202.M
- Blaschke manifold 178.G
 - at a point p 178.G
- Blaschke product 43.F
- Blaschke sequence 43.F
- Bleuler formalism, Gupta- 105.G
- Bloch constant 77.F
 - schlicht 77.F
- Bloch theorem 77.F
- block
 - (bundle) 147.Q
 - (of irreducible modular representations) 362.I
 - (of a permutation group) 151.H
 - (of plots) 102.B
 - complete 102.B
 - incomplete 102.B
 - initial 102.E
- block bundle 147.Q
 - normal 147.Q
 - q - 147.Q
- block code 63.A 213.F
 - sliding 213.E
- block design 102.B
 - balanced incomplete 102.E
 - efficiency-balanced 102.E
 - optimal 102.E
 - randomized 102.B
 - variance-balanced 102.E
- block effect 102.B
- block size 102.B
- block structure, q - 147.Q
- blowing up
 - (of an analytic space) 23.D
 - (of a complex manifold) 72.H
 - (by an ideal sheaf) 16.K
 - b.l.u.e (best linear unbiased estimator) 403.E
- Blumenthal zero-one law 261.B
- BMO (bounded mean oscillation) 168.B
- Bochner integrable 443.C
- Bochner integral 443.C
- Bochner theorem 36.L 192.B
- body
 - bounded star 182.C
 - rigid 271.E
- body forces 271.G
- Bogolyubov inequality, Peierls- 212.B
- Bohr, almost periodic function in the sense of 18.B
- Bohr compactification 18.H
- Bokshtein homomorphism 64.B
- Bokshtein operation 64.B
- Boltzmann constant 402.B
- Boltzmann distribution law, Maxwell- 402.B
- Boltzmann equation 41.A 402.B
- Bolzano-Weierstrass theorem 140 273.F
- bond percolation process 340.D
- Bonnet formula, Gauss- 111.H 364.D, App. A, Table 4.I
- Bonnet fundamental theorem 111.H
- Bonnet-Sasaki-Nitsche formula, Gauss- 275.C
- Boolean algebra 243.E
 - generalized 42.B
- Boolean lattice 42.A 243.E
 - of sets 243.E
- Boolean operations 42.A
- Boolean ring 42.C
 - generalized 42.C
- Boolean space 42.D
- Boolean-valued set theory 33.E
- Borcher theorem 150.E
- bord (for a G -manifold) 431.E
- bordant 431.E
- border set 425.N
- Borel-Cantelli lemma 342.B
- Borel direction (of a meromorphic function) 272.F
- Borel embedding, generalized 384.D
- Borel exceptional value 272.E
- Borel exponential method, summable by 379.O
- Borel field 270.B,C
- Borel integral method, summable by 379.O
- Borel isomorphic 270.C
- Borel-Lebesgue theorem 273.H
 - mapping 270.C
- Borel measurable function 270.J
- Borel measure 270.G
- Borel method of summation 379.O
- Borel set(s)
 - (in a Euclidean space) 270.C
 - (in the strict sense) 270.C
 - (in a topological space) 270.C

Borel space

- nearly 261.D
- Borel space 270.C
 - standard 270.C
- Borel subalgebra (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.O
- Borel subgroup
 - of an algebraic group 13.G
 - k - (of an algebraic group) 13.G
 - of a Lie group 249.J
- Borel subset 270.C
- Borel summable, absolute 379.O
- Borel theorem
 - (on classifying spaces) App. A, Table 6.V
 - (on meromorphic functions) 272.E
 - Heine 273.F
- Borel-Weil theorem 437.Q
- bornological
 - locally convex space 424.I
 - ultra- (locally convex space) 424.W
- Borsuk-Ulam theorem 153.B
- Bortolotti covariant derivative, van der Waerden- 417.E
- Bose particle 132.A
- Bose statistics 377.B 402.E
- boson 132.A 351.H
 - Nambu-Goldstone 132.C
- Bott fixed point theorem, Atiyah- 153.C
- Bott generator 237.D
- Bott isomorphism 237.D
- Bott periodicity theorem
 - on homotopy groups 202.V, App. A, Table 6.VII
 - in K -theory 237.D
- bound
 - Froissart 386.B
 - greatest lower (of a subset in an ordered set) 311.B
 - greatest lower (of a subset of a vector lattice) 310.C
 - Hamming 63.B
 - least upper (of a subset in an ordered set) 311.B
 - least upper (of a subset of a vector lattice) 310.C
 - lower (of a subset in an ordered set) 311.B
 - Plotkin 63.B
 - upper (of a subset in an ordered set) 311.B
 - Varshamov-Gilbert-Sacks 63.B
- boundary (boundaries)
 - (of a convex cell) 7.D
 - (cycle) 200.H
 - (of a function algebra) 164.C
 - (of a manifold) 65.B 105.B
 - (of a topological space) 425.N
 - Choquet (for a function algebra) 164.C
 - closed (for a function algebra) 164.C
 - C^* -manifold with 105.E
 - C^* -manifold without 105.E
 - differential manifold with, of class C^* 105.E
 - domain with regular 105.U
 - domain with smooth 105.U
 - dual Martin 260.I
 - entrance (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 - exit (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 - harmonic 207.B
 - ideal 207.A
 - Martin 207.C 260.I
 - module of 200.C
 - natural (of an analytic function) 198.N
 - natural (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 - Newton, of f in the coordinate 418.D
 - nondegenerate Newton 418.D
 - of null (open Riemann surface) 367.E
 - pasting together 114.F
 - of positive (open Riemann surface) 367.E
 - regular (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 - relative 367.B
 - Shilov (for a function algebra) 21.D 164.C
 - Shilov (of a Siegel domain) 384.D
 - surface with 410.B
 - topological manifold with 105.B
 - topological manifold without 105.B
- boundary cluster set 62.A
- boundary condition 315.A 323.F
 - adjoint 315.B
 - operator with 112.F
- boundary element (in a simply connected domain) 333.B
- boundary function 160.E
- boundary group 234.B
- boundary homomorphism
 - of homology exact sequence 201.L
 - in homotopy exact sequences 202.L
- boundary layer 205.C
- boundary layer equation, Prandtl 205.C
- boundary operator 200.C
 - between chain groups 201.B
 - linear 315.B
 - partial 200.E
 - total 200.E
- boundary point
 - dual passive 260.H
 - entrance 260.H
 - exit 260.H
 - irregular 120.D
 - passive 260.H
 - regular 120.D
 - of a subset 425.N
- boundary set 425.N
- boundary space 112.E
- boundary value
 - (of a conformal mapping) 77.B
 - (of a hyperfunction) 125.V
 - (relative to a differential operator) 112.E
- boundary value problem 315
 - (for harmonic functions) 193.F
 - (in numerical solution of ordinary differential equations) 303.H
 - adjoint 315.B
 - first (for elliptic differential equations) 323.C
 - first (for harmonic functions) 193.F
 - general 323.H
 - homogeneous (of ordinary differential equations) 315.B
 - inhomogeneous (of ordinary differential equations) 315.B
 - of ordinary differential equations 315
 - second (elliptic differential equations) 323.F
 - second (for harmonic functions) 193.F
 - self-adjoint 315.B
 - solution of App. A, Table 15.VI
 - third (for elliptic differential equations) 323.F
 - third (for harmonic functions) 193.F
 - two-point (of ordinary differential equations) 315.A
 - weak form of the (of partial differential equations) 304.B
- bounded
 - (in an affine space) 7.D
 - (half-plane) 155.B

(metric space) 273.B
 (ordered set) 311.B
 (set in a topological linear space) 424.F
 (set of real numbers) 87.B
 (torsion group) 2.F
 (vector lattice) 310.B
 (vector measure) 443.G
 order 310.B
 relatively 331.B
 T - 311.B
 totally 273.B
 bounded, essentially (measurable function) 168.B
 bounded approximation property (of a Banach space) 37.J
 bounded automaton, linear
 deterministic 31.D
 nondeterministic 31.D
 bounded domain
 divisible 284.F
 homogeneous 384.A 412.F
 irreducible symmetric 412.F
 sweepable 284.F
 symmetric 412.F
 bounded from above
 (in an ordered set) 311.B
 (for real numbers) 87.B
 bounded from below
 (for a filtration) 200.J
 (in an ordered set) 311.B
 (for real numbers) 87.B
 (for a spectral sequence) 200.J
 bounded functions 43.A
 bounded linear operator 37.C
 boundedly complete σ -field 396.E
 bounded matrix 269.K
 bounded mean oscillation (*BMO*) 168.B
 bounded metric space, totally 273.B
 bounded motion 420.D
 bounded μ -operator 356.B
 boundedness, abscissa of (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 boundedness principle, upper (in potential theory) 388.C
 boundedness theorem, uniform 37.H
 bounded quantifier 356.B
 bounded set
 in an affine space 7.D
 in a locally convex space 424.F
 in a metric space 273.B
 totally (in a metric space) 273.B
 bounded star body 182.C
 bounded uniform space
 locally totally 436.H
 totally 436.H
 bounded variation
 function of 166.B
 integrable process of 406.B
 mapping of 246.H
 in the sense of Tonelli 246.C
 set function of 380.B
 vector measure of 443.G
 bound state 351.D
 bound variable 411.C
 bouquet 202.F
 Bouquet differential equation, Briot- 288.B 289.B
 Bouquet formulas (on space curves) 111.F
 Bourbaki, Fréchet space in the sense of 424.I
 Boussinesq equation 387.F
 boxes 140

Subject Index

Brouwer mapping theorem

box topology 425.K
 brachistochrone 93.H
 bracket 105.M
 Lagrange 84.A 324.D
 Poisson (of two functions) 105.M
 Poisson (of two vector fields) 271.F 324.C.D
 Toda 202.R
 bracket product (in a Lie algebra) 248.A
 Bradley-Terry model 346.C
 braid(s) 235.F
 closed 235.F
 braid group 235.F
 branch
 (of an analytic function) 198.J
 (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
 (of a graph) 282.A
 finite (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
 infinite (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
 branch and bound methods 215.D
 branch divisor (in a covering of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
 branched minimal immersion 275.B
 branched minimal surface 275.B
 branching Markov process 44.E
 branching processes 44 342.A
 age-dependent 44.E
 continuous state 44.E
 Galton-Watson 44.B
 Markov 44.D
 multitype Markov 44.E
 branch point
 (of a covering surface) 367.B
 (of an ordinary curve) 93.C
 algebraic (of a Riemann surface) 367.B
 fixed (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
 logarithmic (of a Riemann surface) 367.B
 movable (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
 branch source 282.C
 Brandt law 241.C
 Brauer character (of a modular representation) 362.I
 Brauer group
 (of algebra classes) 29.E
 (of a commutative ring) 29.K
 Brauer theorem 450.G
 Bravais class 92.B
 Bravais group 92.B
 Bravais lattice 92.B
 Bravais type 92.B
 simple 92.E
 breadth (of an oval) 89.C
 Brelot solution, Perron- (of Dirichlet problem) 120.C
 Brelot solution, Perron-Wiener- (of Dirichlet problem) 120.C
 Brianchon theorem
 on conic sections 78.K
 in projective geometry 343.E
 bridge, Brownian 250.F 374.E
 Brieskorn variety 418.D
 Brill-Noether number 9.E
 Briot-Bouquet differential equation 288.B 289.B
 broken line 155.F
 broken symmetry 132.C
 Bromwich integral 240.D 322.D, App. A, Table 12.I
 Brouwer fixed-point theorem 153.B
 Brouwer mapping theorem 99.A

Brouwer theorem on the invariance of domain

Brouwer theorem on the invariance of domain
117.D

Browder-Livesay invariant 114.L

Brownian bridge 250.F 374.E

Brownian functional 176.I

Brownian motion 5.D 45 342.A

d -dimensional 45.C

$\{F_t\}$ - 45.B 406.B

on Lie groups 406.G

with an N -dimensional time parameter 45.I

Ornstein-Uhlenbeck 45.I

right invariant 406.G

space-time 45.F

Brown-Shield-Zeller theorem 43.C

BRS transformation 150.G

Bruck-Ryser-Chowla theorem 102.E

Bruhat decomposition (of an algebraic group) 13.K
relative 13.Q

Brun theorems, Poincaré- 420.A

Brun-Titchmarsh theorem 123.D

Bucy filter, Kalman- 86.E 405.G

building 130.R 343.I

bulk viscosity, coefficients of 205.C

bundle(s)

canonical 147.F

complex conjugate 147.F

complex line 72.F

complex line, determined by a divisor 72.F

conormal 274.E

coordinate 147.B

coordinate, equivalent 147.B

cotangent 147.F

cotangential sphere 274.E

dual 147.F

fiber 147.B

fiber, associated 147.D

fiber, of class C^r 147.O

fiber, complex analytic 147.O

fiber, orientable 147.L

fiber, real analytic 147.O

flat F - 154.B

foliated 154.B,H

frame, orthogonal 364.A

frame, tangent orthogonal n - 364.A

G - 147.B

Hopf 147.E

induced 147.G

line 147.F

Maslov 274.C

normal 105.C 114.B 154.B,E 364.C 274.E

normal block 147.Q

normal k -vector 114.J

normal sphere 274.E

n -sphere 147.K

n -universal 147.G

principal 147.C

principal, associated 147.D

principal fiber 147.C

product 147.E

q -block 147.Q

quotient 16.Y 147.B

reduced 147.J

spin 237.F

Spin^c 237.F

sub- 16.Y 147.F

tangent 105.H 147.F 154.B 286.K

tangential sphere 274.E

tangent r -frame 108.H 147.F

tautological line 16.E

tensor 147.F

trivial 147.E

unit tangent sphere 126.L

universal 147.G,H

vector 16.Y 147.F

vector, ample 16.Y

vector, complex 147.F

vector, cotangent 147.F

vector, dual 147.F

vector, indecomposable 16.Y

vector, normal 105.L

vector, quaternion 147.F

vector, quotient 16.Y

vector, semistable 16.Y

vector, stable (on algebraic varieties) 16.Y

vector, stable (on topological spaces) 237.B

vector, stably equivalent 237.B

vector, tangent 108.H 147.F

bundle group (of a fiber bundle) 147.B

bundle mapping (map) 147.B

bundle of homomorphisms 147.F

bundle of p -vectors 147.F

bundle space (of a fiber bundle) 147.B

Bunyakovskii inequality 211.C, App. A, Table 8

Burali-Forti paradox 319.B

Burnside conjecture 151.D

Burnside problem 161.C

restricted 161.C

Burnside ring 431.F

Burnside theorem 151.D

burst error 63.E

Bush-Mosteller model 346.G

C

c (cardinal number of \mathbf{R}) 49.A

$C^l(\Omega)$ (the totality of l times continuously differentiable functions in Ω) 168.B

$C_0^l(\Omega)$ (the totality of functions in $C^l(\Omega)$ whose supports are compact subsets of Ω) 168.B

c (a sequence space) 168.B

\mathbf{C} (complex numbers) 74.A 294.A

χ -equivalent (closed on G -manifolds) 431.F

\mathcal{C} -group 52.M

\mathcal{C} -theory, Serre 202.N

C -analytic hierarchy 356.H

C -arithmetical hierarchy 356.H

C -equivalent almost complex manifolds 114.H

C_r -field 118.F

$C_i(d)$ -field 118.F

C_n set 22.D

$\{c_n\}$ -consistency, $\{c_n\}$ -consistent 399.K

C^* -algebra 36.G

liminal 36.E

postliminal 36.E

of type I 308.L

C^* -cross norm 36.H

C^* -dynamical system 36.K

C^* -group algebra (of a locally compact Hausdorff space) 36.L

C^* -tensor product, projective 36.H

(C, α) -summation 379.M

c_1 -bundle 237.F

c_1 -mapping 237.G

C -analytic space 23.E

C -covering space 23.E

C^r -conjugacy, C^r -conjugate 126.B

C^r -equivalence, C^r -equivalent 126.B

C^r -flow 126.B

C^r -foliation 154.G

C^r -function in a C^∞ -manifold 105.G

- C^r -manifold 105.D
 - with boundary 105.E
 - without boundary 105.E
 - compact 105.D
 - paracompact - 105.D
- C^r -mapping 105.J
- C^r -norm 126.H
- C^r -structure 108.D
 - subordinate to (for a C^s -structure) 108.D
 - on a topological manifold 114.B
- C^r - Ω -stable 126.H
- C^r -structurally stable 126.H
- C^r -triangulation 114.C
- C^ω -homomorphism (between Lie groups) 249.N
- C^ω -isomorphism (between Lie groups) 249.N
- C^ω -function (of many variables) 58.B
 - germ of (at the origin) 58.C
 - preparation theorem for 58.C
 - rapidly decreasing 168.B
 - slowly increasing 125.O
- C^ω -functions and quasi-analytic functions 58
- C^ω topology, weak 401.C
- CA set (in set theory) 22.A
- Caianiello differential equation 291.F
- calculable function, effective 356.C
- calculable number 22.G
- calculation, graphical 19.B
- calculator 75.A
- calculus
 - differential 106
 - fundamental theorem of the infinitesimal 216.C
 - Heaviside 306.A
 - holomorphic functional 36.M
 - infinitesimal (in nonstandard analysis) 273.D
 - Kirby 114.L
 - operational 251.G 306, App. A, Table 12.II
 - predicate 411.J
 - predicate, with equality 411.J
 - propositional 411.F
 - of residue 198.F
 - stochastic 406.A
 - tensor 417.A, App. A, Table 4.II
- calculus of variations 46
 - classical theory of 46.C
 - conditional problems in 46.A
 - fundamental lemma in 46.B
- Calderón-Zygmund singular integral operator 217.J 251.O
- Calderón-Zygmund type, kernel of 217.J
- Calkin algebra 36.J
- Callan-Symanzik equation 361.B
- Campbell-Hausdorff formula 249.R
- CAN estimator 399.K
- canceling 138.B
- cancellation law
 - on the addition of natural numbers 294.B
 - in a commutative semigroup 190.P
 - on the multiplication of natural numbers 294.B
- canonical affine connection (on \mathbf{R}^n) 80.J
- canonical anticommutation relation 277.A
- canonical backward moving average representation 395.D
- canonical basis (of a chain group of a finite simplicial complex) 201.B
 - Chevalley (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.Q
 - Weyl (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.P
- canonical bilinear mapping (on tensor products of linear spaces) 256.I
- canonical bundle (of a differentiable manifold) 147.F
- canonical class (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
- canonical cohomology class (in Galois cohomology in class field theory) 59.H
- canonical commutation relations 351.C 377.A,C
- canonical coordinates (of a Lie group)
 - of the first kind 249.Q
 - of the second kind 249.Q
- canonical coordinate system (for a conic section) 78.C
- canonical correlation coefficient 280.E 374.C
- canonical decomposition (of a closed operator) 251.E
- canonical decomposition theorem 86.C
- canonical divisor
 - (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (of an algebraic variety) 16.O
 - (of a Jacobian variety) 9.E
 - (of a Riemann surface) 11.D
- canonical element (in the representation of a functor) 52.L
- canonical ensemble 402.D
 - grand 402.D
- canonical equation 324.E
 - Hamilton 271.F
- canonical field 377.C
- canonical form
 - (of $F(M)$) 191.A
 - (of a linear hypothesis) 400.H
 - (of a regular submanifold of $F(M)$) 191.A
 - of the equation (of a quadric surface) 350.B
 - Khinchin (of an infinitely divisible probability distribution) 341.G
 - Kolmogorov (of an infinitely divisible probability distribution) 341.G
 - Lévy (of an infinitely divisible probability distribution) 341.G
 - Weierstrass (for an elliptic curve) 9.D
 - Weierstrass (of the gamma function) 174.A
- canonical function (on a nonsingular curve) 9.E
- canonical homology basis 11.C
- canonical homomorphism
 - (on direct products of rings) 368.E
 - (on tensor products of algebras) 29.A
- canonical injection
 - (from a direct summand) 381.E
 - (in direct sums of modules) 277.F
 - (in free products of groups) 190.M
 - (from a subgroup) 190.D
 - (from a subset) 381.C
- canonically bounded 200.J
- canonically polarized Jacobian variety 3.G 9.E
- canonical measure
 - (in a birth and death chain) 260.G
 - (in a diffusion process) 115.B
 - (in a Markov chain) 260.I
- canonical model 251.N
- canonical 1-form (of the bundle of tangent n -frames) 80.H
- canonical parameter
 - of an arc 111.D
 - local (for power series) 339.A
- canonical product, Weierstrass 429.B
- canonical projection
 - (on direct products of modules) 277.F
 - (onto a quotient set) 135.B
- canonical representation
 - (of a Gaussian process) 176.E
 - generalized 176.E

- canonical scale 115.B
- canonical scores 397.M
- canonical surjection
 - (on direct products of groups) 190.L
 - (to a factor group) 190.D
 - (onto a quotient set) 135.B
- canonical transformation 271.F
 - (concerning contact transformations) 82.B
 - group of 271.F
 - homogeneous 82.B
- canonical variables (in analytical dynamics) 271.F
- canonical variates 280.E
- canonical vectorial form 417.C
- Cantelli lemma, Borel- 342.B
- Cantelli theorem, Glivenko- 374.E
- Cantor, G. 47
- Cantor discontinuum 79.D
- Cantor intersection theorem 273.F
- Cantor-Lebesgue theorem 159.J
- Cantor normal form (for an ordinal number) 312.C
- Cantor set 79.D
 - general 79.D
- Cantor's theory of real numbers 244.E
- capability, error-correcting 63.B
- capacitable set 48.H
- capacitary dimension 48.G
- capacitary mass distribution 338.K
- capacitated network 281.C
- capacity
 - (of discrete memoryless channel) 213.F
 - (of a prime ideal) 27.A
 - (of a set) 48 260.D
 - (transportation and scheduling) 281.D
 - α - 169.C
 - analytic 169.F
 - continuous analytic 164.J
 - ergodic 213.F
 - logarithmic 48.B
 - Newtonian 48.B
 - Newtonian exterior 48.H
 - Newtonian inner 48.F
 - Newtonian interior 48.F
 - Newtonian outer 48.H
 - of order α 169.C
 - stationary 213.F
- capacity constraint 281.D
- capillary wave 205.F
- cap product
 - (of a cochain and a chain) 200.K
 - (of a cohomology class and a homology class) 201.K
- capture
 - complete 420.D
 - partial 420.D
- CAR 377.A
- Carathéodory measure 270.E
- Carathéodory outer measure 270.E
- Carathéodory pseudodistance 21.D
- Cardano formula (on a cubic equation) 10.D, App. A, Table 1
- cardinality 33.F
 - (of an ordinal number) 49.E
 - (of a set) 49.A 312.D
- cardinal number(s) 49.A 312.D
 - comparability theorem for 49.B
 - of continuum 49.A
 - corresponding to an ordinal number 49.E
 - finite 49.A
 - infinite 49.A
 - measurable 33.E
 - of N 49.A
 - of R 49.A
 - of all real-valued functions on $[0, 1]$ 49.A
 - of a set 49.A 312.D
 - strongly compact 33.E
 - strongly inaccessible 33.E
 - transfinite 49.A
 - weakly compact 33.E
 - weakly inaccessible 33.E
- cardinal product (of a family of ordered sets) 311.F
- cardinal sum (of a family of ordered sets) 311.F
- cardioid 93.H
- Carleman condition, Denjoy- 168.B
- Carleman inequality App. A, Table 8
- Carleman theorem
 - (on asymptotic expansions) 30.A
 - (on bounded functions) 43.F
- Carleman type, kernel of 217.J
- carrier
 - (of a differential form) 108.Q
 - (of a distribution) 125.D
 - (of a function) 125.B 168.B
 - (of a real-valued function) 425.R
- Carson integral App. A, Table 12.II
- Cartan, E. 50
- Cartan, differential form of Maurer- 249.R
- Cartan, system of differential equations of Maurer- 249.R
- Cartan connection 80.M
- Cartan criterion of semisimplicity (on Lie algebras) 248.F
- Cartan criterion of solvability (on Lie algebras) 248.F
- Cartan formula
 - for Steenrod p th power operations 64.B
 - for Steenrod square operations 64.B
- Cartan integer (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.N
- Cartan invariant (of a finite group) 362.I
- Cartan involution 437.X
- Cartan-Kähler existence theorem 428.E
- Cartan-Mal'tsev-Iwasawa theorem (on maximal compact subgroups) 249.S
- Cartan maximum principle 338.L
- Cartan pseudoconvex domain 21.I
 - locally 21.I
- Cartan relative integral invariant 219.B
- Cartan subalgebra
 - (of a Lie algebra) 248.I
 - (of a symmetric Riemannian space) 413.F
- Cartan subgroup
 - (of an algebraic group) 13.H
 - (of a group) 249.I
- Cartan space 152.C
- Cartan theorem
 - on analytic sheaves (H. Cartan) 72.E
 - on representations of Lie algebras (E. Cartan) 248.W
- Cartan-Thullen theorem 21.H
- Cartan-Weyl theorem 248.W
- Carter subgroup 151.D
- Cartesian coordinates (in an affine space) 7.C
- Cartesian product
 - (of complexes) 70.C.E
 - (of mappings) 381.C
 - (of sets) 381.B.E
- Cartesian space 140
- Cartier divisor 16.M
- Cartier operator 9.E
- CA set 22.A
- case complexity, worst 71.A

- Casimir element (of a Lie algebra) 248.J
 Casorati determinant 104.D
 Casorati-Weierstrass theorem (on essential singularities) 198.D
 Cassini oval 93.H
 Casson handle 114.M
 Castelnuovo criterion 15.E
 Castelnuovo lemma 3.E 9.H
 casus irreducibilis 10.D, App. A, Table 1
 Catalan constant App. A, Table 10.III
 catastrophe, elementary 51.E
 catastrophe point 51.F
 catastrophe set 51.F
 catastrophe theory 51
 categorical
 (data) 397.B
 (set of closed formulas) 276.F
 categorical system (of axioms) 35.B
 categoricity in powers 276.F
 categories and functors 52
 category 52.A
 Abelian 52.N
 of Abelian groups 52.B
 additive 52.N
 of analytic manifolds 52.B
 cohomology theory on the 261.Q
 of commutative rings 52.B
 diagram in the 52.C
 of differentiable manifolds 52.B
 dual 52.F
 exact 237.J
 Grothendieck 200.I
 of groups 52.B
 homotopy, of topological spaces 52.B
 of left (right) R -modules 52.B
 of linear spaces over R 52.B
 of pointed topological spaces 202.B
 PL 65.A
 product 52.A
 quotient 52.N
 of rings 52.B
 set of the first 425.N
 set of the second 425.N
 of sets 52.B
 shape 382.A
 of S -objects 52.G
 of topological spaces 52.B
 catenary 93.H
 catenoid 111.I
 Cauchy, A. L. 53
 Cauchy condensation test 379.B
 Cauchy condition (on D-integral and $D^{(*)}$ -integral) 100.E
 Cauchy criterion (on the convergence of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C, App. A, Table 10.II
 Cauchy data 321.A
 Cauchy distribution 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 Cauchy existence theorem (for partial differential equations) 320.B
 Cauchy filter (on a uniform space) 436.G
 Cauchy-Hadamard formula 339.A
 Cauchy inequality 211.C, App. A, Table 8
 Cauchy integral formula 198.B
 Cauchy integral representation 21.C
 Cauchy integral test (for convergence) 379.B
 Cauchy integral theorem 198.A,B
 stronger form of 198.B
 Cauchy-Kovalevskaya existence theorem 321.A
 Cauchy-Kovalevskaya theorem, abstract 286.Z
 Cauchy net (in a uniform space) 436.G
 Cauchy polygon 316.C
 Cauchy principal value
 of an improper integral 216.D
 of the integral on infinite intervals 216.E
 Cauchy problem
 (of ordinary differential equations) 316.A
 (for partial differential equations) 315.A 320.B 321.A 325.B
 abstract 286.X
 Cauchy process 5.F
 asymmetric 5.F
 symmetric 5.F
 Cauchy product (of two series) 379.F
 Cauchy remainder App. A, Table 9.IV
 Cauchy-Riemann (differential) equation 198.A 274.G
 (for a holomorphic function of several complex variables) 21.C
 (for a holomorphic function of two complex variables) 320.F
 Cauchy-Riemann structure 344.A
 Cauchy-Schwarz inequality 211.C, App. A, Table 8
 Cauchy sequence
 (in an α -adic topology) 284.B
 (in a metric space) 273.J
 (of rational numbers) 294.E
 (of real numbers) 355.B
 (in a uniform space) 436.G
 Cauchy sum (of a series) 379.A
 Cauchy theorem 379.F
 Cauchy transform 164.J
 causality, macroscopic 386.C
 cause, most probable 401.E
 caustic 325.L
 Cayley algebras 54
 general 54
 Cayley number 54
 Cayley projective plane 54
 Cayley theorem (in group theory) 151.H
 Cayley theorem, Hamilton- 269.F
 Cayley transform (of a closed symmetric operator in a Hilbert space) 251.I
 Cayley transformation 269.J
 CCP (chance-constrained programming) 408.B
 CCR 377.A
 CCR algebra 36.H
 Čech cohomology group (for topological spaces) 201.L,P
 relative 201.M
 Čech cohomology group with coefficient sheaf \mathcal{F} 383.F
 Čech compactification, Stone- 207.C
 Čech complete space 425.T 436.I
 Čech homology group (for topological spaces) 201.M
 relative 201.M
 ceiling function 136.D
 ceiling states 402.G
 celestial mechanics 55
 cell 70.D
 convex (in an affine space) 7.D
 fundamental (of a symmetric Riemann space) 413.F
 n - (in a Hausdorff space) 70.D
 ($n - q$)-dual 65.B
 topological n - 140
 unit 140
 cell complex 70.D
 closure finite 70.D
 countable 70.D

Euclidean 70.B
finite 70.D
locally countable 70.D
locally finite 70.D
regular 70.D
cell-like (CE) 382.D
cellular approximation theorem 70.D
cellular cohomology group 201.H
cellular decomposition (of a Hausdorff space) 70.D
cellular homology group 201.F,G
cellular mapping (between cell complexes) 70.D
CE mapping 382.D
center
 (of a central symmetry) 139.B
 (of a continuous geometry) 85.A
 (of gravity) 271.E
 (of a group) 190.C
 (of a hyperbola or ellipse) 78.C
 (of a lattice) 243.E
 (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 (of mass) 271.E
 (of a nonassociative algebra) 231.A
 (of a pencil of hyperplanes) 343.B
 (of a quadric hypersurface) 7.G
 (of a quadric surface) 350.A
 (of a regular polygon) 357.A
 (of a regular polyhedron) 357.B
 (of a ring) 368.F
 (of a solid sphere) 140
 (of a sphere) 139.I
 (of a von Neumann algebra) 308.C
centered process 5.B
centering 5.B
center manifold theorem 286.V
center of curvature 111.E
center of projection 343.B
center surface 111.I
central composite design 102.M
central configuration 420.B
central conic(s) 78.C
central difference 223.C 304.E, App. A, Table 21
central element (in a lattice) 243.E
central extension (of a group) 190.N
central figure 420.B
centralizer
 (of a subset of a group) 190.C
 (of a subset of a ring) 368.F
central limit theorem 250.B
central moment 397.C
central motion 126.E
central potential 315.E
central processor 75.B
central quadric hypersurface 7.F 350.G
central quadric surface 350.B
central series
 ascending (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 descending (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 lower (of a group) 190.J
 upper (of a group) 190.J
central simple algebra 29.E
 similar 29.E
central symmetry (of an affine space) 139.B
centrifugal force 271.D
certainly, almost 342.B,D
certainty equivalent 408.B
Cesàro method of summation of order α 379.M
 summable by 379.M
Ceva theorem 7.A
CFL condition 304.F
CG method 302.D

chain 200.H
 ascending (of normal subgroups of a group) 190.F
 ascending (in an ordered set) 311.C
 conservative 260.A
 descending (in a lattice) 243.F
 descending (of (normal) subgroups of a group) 190.F
 descending (in an ordered set) 311.C
 equivalence 200.H
 general Markov 260.J
 homotopy 200.H
 irreducible (a Markov chain) 260.B
 Markov 260.A
 minimal 260.F
 normal (in a group) 190.G
 normal (in Markov chains) 260.D
 q - (of a chain complex) 201.B
 recurrent 260.B
 regular (of integral elements) 428.E
 u - 260.I
chain complex(cs) 200.C,H 201.B
 in an Abelian category 201.B
 of A -modules 200.C
 augmented 200.C
 double 200.E
 oriented simplicial 201.C
 positive 200.H
 product double 200.E
 quotient 200.C
 relative 200.C
 singular (of a topological space) 201.E
chain condition (in an ordered set) 311.C
 ascending (in an ordered set) 311.C
 descending (in an ordered set) 311.C
chained metric space, well- 79.D
chain equivalence 200.C
chain homotopy 200.C
chain mapping 200.C 201.B
 over an A -homomorphism 200.C
chain recurrent 126.E
chain recurrent set 126.E
chain rule 106.C
chain subcomplex 200.C
chain theorem 14.J
chain transformation (between complexes) 200.H
Chaitin complexity, Kolmogorov- 354.D
chamber
 positive Weyl 248.R
 Weyl 13.J 248.R
chamber complex 13.R
chance-constrained programming 408.A
chance constraint 408.A
chance move 173.B
change
 scalar (of a B -module) 277.L
 time 261.F 406.B
 of variables (in integral calculus) 216.C
channel 375.F
 almost finite memory 213.F
 d -continuous 213.F
 discrete memoryless 213.F
 finite memory 213.F
 noisy 213.A
 test 213.E
channel coding theory 213.A
channel Hilbert space 375.F
channel wave operators 375.F
chaos 126.N 303.G 433.B
 propagation of 340.F

- Chaplygin's differential equation 326.B
 Chapman complement theorem 382.B
 Chapman-Kolmogorov equality 261.A
 Chapman-Kolmogorov equation 260.A
 Chapman-Robbins-Kiefer inequality 399.D
 Chapman theorem (on (C, α) -summation) 379.M
 character
 (of an Abelian group) 2.G
 (of an algebraic group) 13.D
 (irreducible unitary representation) 437.V
 (of a linear representation) 362.E
 (of a regular chain) 428.E
 (of a representation of a Lie group) 249.O
 (of a semi-invariant) 226.A
 (of a topological Abelian group) 422.B
 absolutely irreducible 362.E
 Brauer (of a modular representation) 362.I
 Chern (of a complex vector bundle) 237.B
 Dirichlet 295.D
 Hecke 6.D
 identity (of an Abelian group) 2.G
 integral (on the 1-dimensional homology group of a Riemann surface) 11.E
 irreducible (of an irreducible representation) 362.E
 Minkowski-Hasse (of a nondegenerate quadratic form) 348.D
 modular (of a modular representation) 362.I
 nonprimitive 450.C,E
 planar 367.G
 primitive 295.D 450.C,E
 principal (of an Abelian group) 2.G
 principal Dirichlet 295.D
 reduced (of an algebra) 362.E
 residue 295.D
 simple (of an irreducible representation) 362.E
 character formula, Weyl 248.Z
 character group
 (of an Abelian group) 2.G
 (of a topological Abelian group) 422.B
 characteristic(s)
 (of a common logarithm) 131.C
 (of a field) 149.B
 Euler (of a finite Euclidean cellular complex) 201.B
 Euler-Poincaré (of a finite Euclidean complex) 16.E 201.B
 operating 404.C
 population 396.C
 quality 404.A
 sample 396.C
 Todd 366.B
 two-terminal 281.C
 characteristic class(es) 56
 (of an extension of a module) 200.K
 (of a fiber bundle) 147.K
 (of foliations) 154.G
 (of a vector bundle) 56.D
 \mathcal{A} (of a real oriented vector bundle) 237.F
 of codimension q 154.G
 of a manifold 56.F
 smooth, of foliations 154.G
 characteristic curve
 (of a network) 281.B
 (of a one-parameter family of surfaces) 111.I
 (of a partial differential equation) 320.B 324.A,B
 characteristic equation
 (of a differential-difference equation) 163.F
 (for a homogeneous system of linear ordinary differential equations) 252.J
 (of a linear difference equation) 104.E
 (of a linear ordinary differential equation) 252.E
 (of a matrix) 269.F
 (of a partial differential equation) 320.D
 (of a partial differential equation of hyperbolic type) 325.A,F
 characteristic exponent
 (of an autonomous linear system) 163.F
 (of the Hill differential equation) 268.B
 (of a variational equation) 394.C
 characteristic function(s)
 (of a density function) 397.G
 (of a graded R -module) 369.F
 (of a meromorphic function) 272.B
 (of an n -person cooperative game) 173.D
 (for an optical system) 180.C
 (of probability distributions) 341.C
 (of a subset) 381.C
 empirical 396.C
 Hilbert (of a coherent sheaf) 16.E
 Hilbert (of a graded module) 369.F
 characteristic functional (of a probability distribution) 407.C
 characteristic hyperplane (of a partial differential equation of hyperbolic type) 325.A
 characteristic hypersurface (of a partial differential equation of hyperbolic type) 325.A
 characteristic linear system (of an algebraic family) 15.F
 characteristic line element 82.C
 characteristic manifold (of a partial differential equation) 320.B
 characteristic mapping (map) (in the classification theorem of fiber bundles) 147.G
 characteristic measure 407.D
 characteristic multiplier
 (of a closed orbit) 126.G
 (of a periodic linear system) 163.F
 characteristic number
 (of a compact operator) 68.I
 (of a manifold) 56.F
 Lyapunov 314.A
 characteristic operator function 251.N
 characteristic polynomial
 (of a differential operator) 112.A
 (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 (of a matrix) 269.F
 (of a partial differential operator) 321.A
 characteristic root
 (of a differential-difference equation) 163.A
 (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 (of a linear partial differential equation) 325.F
 (of a matrix) 269.F
 characteristic series (in a group) 190.G
 characteristic set
 (of an algebraic family on a generic component) 15.F
 (of a partial differential operator) 320.B
 characteristic strip 320.D 324.B
 characteristic surface 320.B
 characteristic value
 (of a linear operator) 390.A
 sample 396.C
 characteristic variety (of a system of microdifferential equations) 274.G
 characteristic vector
 (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 (of a linear operator) 390.A

Character module (of an algebraic group)

- character module (of an algebraic group) 13.D
- character system (of a genus of a quadratic field) 347.F
- charge 150.B
- charge symmetry 415.J
- Charpit method, Lagrange- 322.B, App. A, Table 15.II
- Charpit subsidiary equation 82.C 320.D
- chart
 - alignment 19.D
 - control 404.B
 - intersection 19.D
- Châtelet group, Weil- 118.D
- Chebotaev density theorem 14.S
- Chebyshev formula 299.A
 - Gauss- (in numerical integration) 299.A
- Chebyshev function App. A, Table 20.II
- Chebyshev interpolation 233.A 366.J
- Chebyshev orthogonal polynomial 19.G
- Chebyshev polynomial 336.H
- Chebyshev q -function 19.G, App. A, Table 20.VII
 - simplest 19.G
- Chebyshev system 336.B
- Chebyshev theorem 336.B
- check bits 63.C
- check matrix, parity 63.C
- Cheng domain theorem, Courant- 391.H
- Chern character (of a complex vector bundle) 237.B
- Chern class
 - of a C^n -bundle 56.C
 - of a manifold 56.F
 - of a real $2n$ -dimensional almost complex manifold 147.N
 - total 56.C
 - of a $U(n)$ -bundle 147.N
 - universal 56.C
- Chern formula (in integral geometry) 218.D
- Chern number 56.F
- Cherwell-Wright differential equation 291.F
- Chevalley canonical basis (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.Q
- Chevalley complexification (of a compact Lie group) 249.U
- Chevalley decomposition (on algebraic groups) 13.I
- Chevalley group 151.I
- Chevalley theorem (forms over finite fields) 118.B
- Chevalley theorem (on algebraic groups) 13.B
- Chevalley type (algebraic group) 13.N
- Chinese mathematics 57
- Chinese remainder theorem 297.G
- chi-square distribution 374.B, App. A, Table 22
 - noncentral 374.B
- chi-square method, modified minimum 400.K
- chi-square test 400.G
 - of goodness of fit 400.K
- choice, axiom of 33.B 34.A
- choice function 33.B 34.A
- choice process, multistage 127.A
- choice set 33.B 34.A
- Cholesky method 302.B
- Chomsky grammar 31.D
- Chomsky hierarchy 31.D
- Choquest boundary 164.C
- Chow coordinates (of a positive cycle) 16.S
- Chow-Kodaira theorem 72.F
- Chowla theorem, Bruck-Ryser- 102.E
- Chow lemma 72.H
- Chow ring (of a projective variety) 16.R
- Chow theorem
 - on an analytic submanifold of P^N 72.F
 - on the field of rational functions of an analytic space 23.D
- Chow variety 16.S
- Christoffel-Darboux formula 317.D
- Christoffel symbol 80.L 111.H 417.D
- Christoffel transformation, Schwarz- 77.D, App. A, Table 13
- Christoffel transformation formula, Schwarz- 77.D
- chromatic number 157 186.I
- chromodynamics, quantum 132.C
- Chung-Erdős theorem 342.B
- Church's thesis 356.C
- circle(s) 140
 - Apollonius App. A, Table 3.V
 - auxiliary (of an ellipse) 78.D
 - of convergence (of a power series) 339.A
 - of curvature 111.E
 - director (of an ellipse) 78.D
 - great (of a sphere) 140
 - inscribed (of a regular polygon) 357.A
 - isometric 234.C
 - of meromorphy (of a power series) 339.D
 - open 140
 - oscillating 111.E
 - quadrature of 179.A
 - unit 74.C 140
- circled subset (of a topological linear space) 424.E
- circle geometry 76.C
- circle method 4.B
- circle problem, Gauss 242.A
- circle type, limit 112.I
- circuit 66.G
- circuit matrix 254.B
- circular cone 78.A 111.I
 - oblique 350.B
 - right 350.B
- circular cylinder 111.I 350.B
- circular cylindrical coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
- circular cylindrical surface 350.B
- circular disk 140
- circular domain 333.A
- circular frequency (of a simple harmonic motion) 318.B
- circular function 131.F 432.A
- circular section 350.F
- circular unit 14.L
- circulation (of a vector field) 205.B 442.D
- circumference 140
- circumferentially mean p -valent 438.E
- circumscribed circle (of a regular polygon) 357.A
- circumscribing sphere (of a simplex) 139.I
- cissoidal curve 93.H
- cissoid of Diocles 93.H
- Clairaut differential equation App. A, Table 14.I
- Clairaut partial differential equation App. A, Table 15.II
- class
 - (in axiomatic set theory) 33.C 381.G
 - (of a lattice group) 13.P
 - (of a nilpotent group) 190.J
 - (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
 - (of a quadratic form) 348.H.I
 - \mathcal{A} -characteristic (of a real oriented vector bundle) 237.F
 - algebra (of central simple algebras) 29.E
 - ambig (of a quadratic field) 347.F

- Bravais 92.B
 canonical (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 canonical cohomology 59.H
 canonical divisor 11.D
 characteristic (of an extension of module) 200.K
 characteristic (of a fiber bundle) 147.K
 characteristic (of foliations) 154.G
 characteristic (of a vector bundle) 56
 characteristic, of codimension q 154.G
 characteristic, of a manifold 56.F
 Chern (of a C^n -bundle) 56.C
 Chern (of a manifold) 56.F
 Chern (of a real $2n$ -dimensional almost complex manifold) 147.N
 Chern (of a $U(n)$ -bundle) 147.N
 cohomology 200.H
 combinational Pontryagin 56.H
 complete 398.B
 completely additive 270.B
 conjugacy (of an element of a group) 190.C
 countably additive 270.B
 crystal 92.B
 curve of the second 78.K
 differential divisor (of a Riemann surface) 11.D
 divisor (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 Dynkin 270.B
 the Dynkin, theorem 270.B
 equivalence 135.B
 ergodic 260.B
 essentially complete 398.B
 Euler-Poincaré (of a manifold) 56.F
 Euler-Poincaré (of an oriented R^n -bundle) 56.B
 finitely additive 270.B
 fundamental (of an Eilenberg-MacLane space) 70.F
 fundamental (of a Poincaré pair) 114.J
 fundamental (of the Thom complex **MG**) 114.G
 fundamental, with coefficient Z_2 65.B
 generalized Hardy 164.G
 Gevrey 58.G 125.U
 group of congruence 14.H
 Hardy 43.F 159.G
 Hilbert-Schmidt 68.I
 holosymmetric 92.B
 homology 200.H 201.B
 homotopy 202.B
 ideal (of an algebraic number field) 14.E
 ideal (of a Dedekind domain) 67.K
 ideal, in the narrow sense 14.G 343.F
 idele 6.D
 idele, group 6.D
 linear equivalence (of divisors) 16.M
 main 241.A
 mapping 202.B
 minimal complete 398.B
 monotone 270.B
 the monotone, theorem 270.B
 multiplicative 270.B
 nuclear 68.I
 oriented cobordism 114.H
 Pontryagin (of a manifold) 56.F
 Pontryagin (of an R^n -bundle) 56.D
 proper 381.G
 q -dimensional homology 201.B
 of a quadratic form over an algebraic number field 348.H
 residue (modulo an ideal in a ring) 368.F
 Steifel-Whitney (of a differentiable manifold) 147.M
 Stiefel-Whitney (of a manifold) 56.F
 Stiefel-Whitney (of an $O(n)$ -bundle) 147.M
 Stiefel-Whitney (of an R^n -bundle) 56.B
 Stiefel-Whitney (of a topological manifold) 56.F
 surface of the second 350.D
 Todd 237.F
 total Chern 56.C
 total Pontryagin 56.D
 total Stiefel-Whitney 56.B
 trace 68.I
 universal Chern 56.C
 universal Euler-Poincaré 56.B
 universal Stiefel-Whitney 56.B
 unoriented cobordism 114.H
 Wu (of a topological manifold) 56.F
 Zygmund 159.E
 class C^∞
 function of 106.K
 function of (of many variables) 58.B
 mapping of 286.E
 oriented singular r -simplex of 108.T
 partition of unity of 108.S
 singular r -chain of 108.T
 singular r -cochain of 108.T
 class C^k
 curve of (in a differentiable manifold) 93.B
 curve of (in a Euclidean plane) 93.B
 class C^n , function of 106.K
 class C^ω , function of 106.K
 class C^1
 function of 106.K
 mapping of 286.E
 class C'
 atlas of 105.D
 coordinate neighborhood of 105.D
 diffeomorphism of 105.J
 differentiable manifold of 105.D
 differentiable manifold with boundary of 105.E
 differentiable mapping of 105.J
 differentiable structure of 105.D
 fiber bundle of 147.O
 function of (in a C^∞ -manifold) 105.G
 function of (at a point) 105.G
 functionally dependent of (components of a mapping) 208.C
 functional relation of 208.C
 mapping of 208.B 286.E
 nonsingular mapping of 208.B
 regular mapping of 208.B
 vector field of 105.M
 Z -action of 126.B
 class C' , tensor field of 108.O
 class C^0 , mapping into Banach space of 286.E
 class (C^0), semigroup of 378.B
 class D^∞ , curve of 364.A
 class field 59.B
 absolute 59.A
 class field theory 59
 local 59.G
 class field tower problem 59.F
 class formation 59.H
 class function (on a compact group) 69.B
 class group divisor 11.D
 classical (potential) 402.G
 classical (state) 402.G

Classical compact real simple Lie algebra

- classical compact real simple Lie algebra 248.T
- classical compact simple Lie group 249.L
- classical complex simple Lie algebra 248.S
- classical complex simple Lie group 249.M
- classical descriptive set theory 356.H
- classical dynamical system 126.L 136.G
- classical group(s) 60.A
 - infinite 147.I 202.V
- classical logic 411.L
- classical mechanics 271.A
- classical risk theory 214.C
- classical solution (to Plateau's problem) 275.C
- classical statistical mechanics 402.A
- classical theory of the calculus of variations 46.C
- classification (with respect to an equivalence relation) 135.B
- classification theorem
 - on a fiber bundle 147.G
 - first (in the theory of obstructions) 305.B
 - Hopf 202.I
 - second (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
 - third (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
- classification theory of Riemann surfaces 367.E
- classificatory procedure 280.I
- classifying mapping (map) (in the classification theorem of fiber bundles) 147.G
- classifying space
 - (of a topological group) 174.G,H
 - cohomology rings of App. A, Table 6.V
 - for Γ_n^* -structures 154.E
 - n - (of a topological group) 147.G
- class n
 - function of 84.D
 - projective set of 22.D
- class $N_{\bar{\alpha}}$, null set of 169.E
- class number
 - (of an algebraic number field) 14.E
 - (of a Dedekind domain) 67.K
 - (of a simple algebra) 27.D
- class of Abelian groups 202.N
- class ω , function of 84.D
- class 1
 - function of 84.D
 - function of at most 84.D
- class theorems, complete 398.D
- class ξ , function of 84.D
- class 0, function of 84.D
- Clebsch-Gordan coefficient 258.B 353.B
- Clenshaw-Curtis formulas 299.A
- Clifford algebras 61
- Clifford group 61.D
 - reduced 61.D
 - special 61.D
- Clifford number 61.A
- Clifford torus 275.F
- Clifford torus, generalized 275.F
- clinical trials 40.F
- closable operator 251.D
- closed
 - absolutely (space) 425.U
 - algebraically (in a field) 149.I
 - algebraically (field) 149.I
 - boundary 164.C
 - H- (space) 425.U
 - hyperbolic, orbit 126.G
 - integrally (ring) 67.I
 - k - (algebraic set) 13.A
 - multiplicatively, subset (of a ring) 67.I
 - quasi-algebraically (field) 118.F
 - r - (space) 425.U
 - real, field 149.N
 - Zariski 16.A
- closed arc 93.B
- closed braid 235.F
- closed convex curve 111.E
- closed convex hull 424.H
- closed convex surface 111.I
- closed covering 425.R
- closed curve, simple 93.B
- closed differential 367.H
- closed differential form 105.Q
- closed formula 276.A 299.A
 - in predicate logic 411.J
- closed geodesic 178.G
- closed graph theorem 37.I 251.D 424.X
- closed group 362.J
- closed half-line (in affine geometry) 7.D
- closed half-space (of an affine space) 7.D
- closed ideals in $L_1(G)$ 192.M
- closed image (of a variety) 16.I
- closed interval 140
 - in \mathbf{R} 355.C
- closed linear subspace (of a Hilbert space) 197.E
- closed manifold 105.B
- closed mapping 425.G
- closed operator (on a Banach space) 251.D
- closed orbit 126.D,G
 - hyperbolic 126.G
- closed plane domain 333.A
- closed path
 - (in a graph) 186.F
 - (in a topological space) 170
 - direct 186.F
 - space of 202.C
- closed range theorem 37.J
- closed Riemann surface 367.A
- closed set 425.B
 - locally 425.J
 - relative 425.J
 - system of 425.B
 - Zariski 16.A
- closed subalgebra 36.B
- closed subgroup (of a topological group) 423.D
- closed submanifold (of a C^∞ -manifold) 105.L
- closed subsystem (of a root system) 13.L
- closed surface 410.B
 - in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space 111.I
- closed system 419.A
- closed system entropy 402.G
- closed term (of a language) 276.A
- closure 425.B
 - (in a matroid) 66.G
 - (of an operator) 251.D
 - algebraic (of a field) 149.I
 - convex (in an affine space) 7.D
 - integral (of a ring) 67.I
 - Pythagorean (of a field) 155.C
- closure finite (cell complex) 70.D
- closure operator 425.B
- closure-preserving covering 425.X
- clothoid 93.H
- cloverleaf knot 235.C
- cluster 375.F
- cluster decomposition Hamiltonian 375.F
- clustering property 402.G
- cluster point 425.O
- cluster set(s) 62.A
 - boundary 62.A

curvilinear 62.C
 interior 62.A
 cluster value 62.A
 cluster value theorem 43.G
cn App. A, Table 16.III
 coalgebra 203.F
 cocommutative 203.F
 dual 203.F
 graded 203.B
 quotient 203.F
 coalgebra homomorphism 203.F
 coanalytic set 22.A
 coarse moduli scheme 16.W
 coarse moduli space of curves of genus g 9.J
 coarser relation 135.C
 coarser topology 425.H
 cobordant 114.H
 foliated 154.H
 h - 114.I
 mod 2 114.H
 normally 114.J
 cobordism, knot 235.G
 cobordism class 114.H
 oriented 114.H
 unoriented 114.H
 cobordism group
 complex 114.H
 oriented 114.H
 unoriented 114.H
 cobordism group of homotopy n -spheres, h - 114.I
 cobordism ring 114.H
 complex 114.H
 cobordism theorem, h - 114.F
 coboundary (coboundaries) 200.H
 (in a cochain complex) 201.H
 (in the theory of generalized analytic functions) 164.H
 module of 200.F
 coboundary homomorphism (on cohomology groups) 201.L
 coboundary operator 200.F
 cobounded 201.P
 cochain(s) 200.H 201.H
 (products of) 201.K
 deformation 305.B
 finite (of a locally finite simplicial complex) 201.P
 n - (for an associative algebra) 200.L
 separation 305.B
 cochain complex 200.F 201.H
 singular 201.H
 cochain equivalence 200.F
 cochain homotopy 200.F
 cochain mapping 200.F 201.H
 cochain subcomplex 200.F
 Cochran theorem 374.B
 cocommutative coalgebra 203.F
 cocycle(s) 200.H 201.H
 (in the theory of generalized analytic functions) 164.H
 continuous 200.N
 difference 305.B
 module of 200.F
 obstruction 147.L 305.B
 separation 305.B
 vanishing (on an algebraic variety) 16.U
 Codazzi, equation of 365.C
 Codazzi-Mainardi equations 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 code(s) 63.A 213.D

BHC (Bose-Chaundhuri-Hocquenghem) 63.D
 block 63.A 213.F
 convolutional 63.E
 cyclic 63.D
 Goppa 63.E
 group 63.C
 Hamming 63.C
 linear 63.C
 perfect 63.B
 sliding block 213.E
 tree 213.E
 trellis 213.E
 code word 63.A
 codimension
 (of an algebraic subvariety) 16.A
 (of a C^r -foliation) 154.B
 (of an element in a complex) 13.R
 (of the germ of a singularity) 51.C
 (of a linear space) 256.F
 (of a PL embedding) 65.D
 codimension q , characteristic class of 154.G
 coding rate 213.D
 coding theorem
 block 213.D
 noiseless source 213.D
 source 213.D,E
 coding theory 63
 channel 213.A
 source 213.A
 codomain (of a mapping) 381.C
 co-echelon space 168.B
 coefficient(s)
 (of a linear representation) 362.E
 (of a system of algebraic equations) 10.A
 (of a term of a polynomial) 337.B
 of an affine connection 80.L
 autocorrelation 397.N
 binomial 330, App. A, Table 17.II
 of bulk viscosity 205.C
 canonical correlation 280.E 374.C
 Clebsch-Gordan 258.A 353.B
 confidence 399.Q
 correlation (of two random variables) 342.C 397.H
 of determination 397.H,J
 differential 106.A
 of excess 341.H 396.C
 expansion 317.A
 Fourier 159.A 197.C 317.A, App. A, Table 11.I
 Fourier (of an almost periodic function) 18.B
 Gini, of concentration 397.D
 indeterminate, Lagrange method of 106.L
 Lagrange interpolation 223.A
 Legendre 393.B
 multiple correlation 397.J
 of order p 110.A
 partial correlation 397.J
 partial differential 106.F
 population correlation 396.D
 Racah 353.B
 reflection 387.D
 regression 397.H,J 403.D
 of a Riemannian connection 80.L
 sample correlation 396.D
 sample multiple correlation 397.J
 sample partial correlation 280.E
 of shear viscosity 205.C
 of skewness 341.H
 of thermal expansion 419.B
 torsion (of a complex) 201.B

- transmission 387.D
- transport 402.K
- universal, theorem 200.D.G.H 201.G.H
- of variation 397.C
- of viscosity 205.C
- Wigner 353.B
- coefficient field
 - (of an affine space) 7.A
 - (of a projective space) 343.C
 - (of a semilocal ring) 284.D
- coefficient group (of the cohomology theory) 201.Q
- coefficient module 200.L
- coefficient problem 438.C
- coefficient ring
 - of a semilocal ring 284.D
- coefficient sheaf \mathfrak{F}
 - Čech cohomology with 383.F
 - cohomology group with 383.E
- coercive (boundary condition) 112.H 323.H
- cofactor (of a minor) 103.D
- cofibring 202.G
- cofinal
 - (ordinal numbers) 312.C
 - (subset of a directed set) 311.D
- cofinality 312.C
- cofinality, cardinality and 33.F
- cofinal object 52.D
- cofinal subnet 87.H
- cogenerator (of an Abelian category) 200.H
- cographic 66.H
- Cohen theorem (on Noetherian rings) 284.A
- coherence 397.N 421.E
- coherent algebraic sheaf 16.E 72.F
- coherent analytic sheaf 72.E
- coherently oriented (pseudomanifold) 65.B
- coherent \mathcal{O} -module 16.E
 - quasi- 16.E
- coherent sheaf of rings 16.E
- coherent vector 277.D
- Cohn-Vossen theorem 111.I
- cohomological dimension
 - (of an associative algebra) 200.L
 - (of a scheme) 16.E
 - (of a topological space) 117.F
- cohomological functor 200.I
- cohomology 6.E 200.H
 - equivariant 431.D
 - exact sequence of 200.F
 - Galois 200.N
 - Gel'fand-Fuks 105.AA
 - l -adic 450.Q
 - non-Abelian 200.M
 - Tate 200.N
 - Weil 440.Q
- cohomology class 200.H
 - canonical (in Galois cohomology in the class field theory) 59.H
 - orientation 201.N
- cohomology exact sequence (for simplicial complexes) 201.L
- cohomology group(s) 201.H
 - \tilde{H} - 72.D
 - Alexander 201.M
 - Amitsur 200.P
 - Čech (for topological spaces) 201.M,P
 - Čech, with coefficient sheaf \mathcal{F} 383.F
 - cellular 201.H
 - with coefficient sheaf \mathcal{F} 383.E
 - de Rham 201.H
 - Dolbeault 72.D
 - generalized (for CW complexes) 201.H
 - Hochschild 200.L
 - integral (of a topological space) 201.H
 - local 125.W
 - rational 200.O
 - reduced (of a topological space) 201.H
 - relative (sheaf cohomology) 125.W
 - relative Alexander 201.M
 - relative Čech 201.M
 - singular, with compact supports 201.P
 - singular, of X with coefficients in G 201.H,R
- cohomology module 200.F
- cohomology operation(s) 64
 - functional 202.S
 - primary 64.B
 - stable 64.B
 - stable primary 64.B
 - stable secondary 64.C
- cohomology ring
 - of a compact connected Lie Group App. A, Table 6.IV
 - de Rham (of a differential manifold) 105.R
 - de Rham (of a topological space) 201.I
 - of an Eilenberg-MacLane complex App. A, Table 6.III
 - singular (of a topological space) 201.I
- cohomology sequence, exact 200.H
- cohomology set 172.K
- cohomology spectral sequence 200.J
- cohomology theory (theories)
 - Alexander-Kolmogorov-Spanier 201.M
 - on the category of topological pairs 201.Q
 - complete 200.N
 - with E-coefficient, generalized 202.T
 - generalized 201.Q
- cohomology vanishing theorems 194.G
- cohomotopy group 202.I
- coideal 203.F
- coimage
 - (of an A -homomorphism) 277.E
 - (of a homomorphism of presheaves of sheaves) 383.D
 - (of a morphism) 52.N
- coincidence number (of mappings) 153.B
- coincidence point (of mappings) 153.B
- coindex (of C^∞ -function) 279.E
- cokernel
 - (of an A -homomorphism) 277.E
 - (of a homomorphism of presheaves or sheaves) 383.D
 - (of a morphism) 52.N
- collapsing 65.C
 - elementary 65.C
- collectionwise Hausdorff space 425.AA
- collectionwise normal space 425.AA
- collective 342.A
 - ψ - 354.E
- collective risk theory 214.C
- collinear points 343.B
- collinear vectors 442.A
- collineation(s) 343.D
 - group of 343.D
 - projective 343.D
 - projective, in the wider sense 343.D
 - in the wider sense 343.D
- collocation method 303.I
- colocal (coalgebra) 203.I
- color conjecture, four 186.I
- colored symmetric group 92.D
- coloring (of a graph) 186.I

- coloring, Tait 157.C
- color lattice 92.D
- color point group 92.D
- colors, number of 93.D
- color symmetric group 92.D
- column(s) (of a matrix) 269.A
 - iterated series by (of a double series) 379.E
 - repeated series by (of a double series) 379.E
- column finite matrix 269.K
- column nullity (of a matrix) 269.D
- column vector 269.A
- comass (on k -forms) 275.G
- Combesure, correspondence of 111.F
- combination
 - k - 330
 - linear (of elements in a linear space) 256.C
 - linear (of ovals) 89.D
 - multiple App. A, Table 17.II
 - number of treatment 102.L
- combination theorem, Klein 234.D
- combinatorial analysis 66.A
- combinatorial equivalence 65.A
- combinatorially equivalent 65.A
- combinatorial manifold 65.C
- combinatorial mathematics 66.A
- combinatorial Pontryagin class 56.H
- combinatorial problems App. A, Table 17.II
- combinatorial property 65.A
- combinatorial sphere, group of oriented differentiable structures on 114.I
- combinatorial theory 66.A
- combinatorial topology 426
- combinatorial triangulation 65.C
- combinatorial triangulation problem 65.C
- combinatorics 66
- comb space 89.A
- commensurable 122.F
- common divisor (of elements of a ring) 67.H
 - greatest 67.H 297.A
- common logarithm 131.C
- common multiple (of elements of a ring) 67.H
 - least 67.H 297.A
- common notion 35.A
- communality 346.F
- commutant 308.C
- commutation relations
 - canonical 351.C 377.A
 - normal 150.D
- commutative algebra 203.F
- commutative diagram 52.C
- commutative field 368.B
- commutative group 2.A 190.A
- commutative law
 - of addition (in a ring) 368.A
 - on the addition of natural numbers 294.B
 - in the algebra of sets 381.B
 - on cardinal numbers 49.C
 - for group composition 190.A
 - in a lattice 243.A
 - for multiplication (in a commutative ring) 368.A
 - on the multiplication of natural numbers 294.B
- commutative Lie group 249.D
- commutatively convergent series 379.C
- commutative multiplication (of a graded algebra) 203.B
 - homotopy- 203.D
- commutative ring 368.A
 - category of 52.B
- commutativity, event 346.G
- commutator
 - (of differential operators) 324.C
 - (of two elements of a group) 190.H
 - self- 251.K
- commutator group 190.H
- commutator subgroup 190.H
- commutor 368.E
- comonad 200.Q
- compact
 - (continuous mapping) 286.D
 - (kernel distribution) 125.L
 - (linear operator) 68.B
 - (topological space) 425.S
 - linearly 422.L
 - locally 425.V
 - locally linearly 422.L
 - relatively (linear operator) 331.B
 - relatively (maximum likelihood method) 399.M
 - relatively (subset) 273.F 425.S
 - real- 425.BB
 - sequentially 425.S
 - σ - 425.V
 - T - 68.F 331.B
 - uniformly locally 425.V
 - weakly (linear operator) 68.M
- compact algebraic group, k - 13.G
- compact cardinal number
 - strongly 33.E
 - weakly 33.E
- compact complex manifolds, family of 72.G
- compact C^r -manifold 105.D
- compact element (of a topological Abelian group) 422.F
- compact foliation 154.H
- compact form (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.P
- compact group 69.A
- compact homotopy class 286.D
- compactification
 - (of a complex manifold) 72.K
 - (of a Hausdorff space) 207.A
 - (of a topological space) 425.T
- compactifying (kernel) 125.L
 - Aleksandrov 207.C
 - Bohr 18.H
 - F - 207.C
 - Kerékjártó-Stoïlow 207.C
 - Kuramochi 207.C
 - Martin 207.C
 - one-point (of a topological space) 425.T
 - resolutive 207.B
 - Royden 207.C
 - Stone-Čech 207.C 425.T
 - Wiener 207.C
- compact leaf 154.D
- compact metric space 273.F
- compactness theorem (in model theory) 276.E
- compact open C^∞ topology 279.C
- compact-open topology 279.C 435.D
- compact operators 68
- compact real Lie algebra 248.P
- compact real simple Lie algebra
 - classical 248.T
 - exceptional 248.T
- compact set 425.S
 - in a metric space 273.F
 - relatively 399.M 425.S
 - uniform convergence on 435.C

- compact simple Lie group
 - classical 249.L
 - exceptional 249.L
- compact space 425.S
 - countably 425.S
 - locally 425.V
 - real- 425.BB
 - sequentially 425.S
 - σ - 425.V
 - uniformly locally 425.V
- compact support (singular q -cochain) 201.P
- compact type (symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space) 412.D
- compactum, dyadic 79.D
- companion matrix 301.I
- comparability theorem for cardinal numbers 49.B
- comparison, paired 346.C
- comparison test (for convergence) 379.B
- comparison theorem (in the theory of differential equations) 316.E
 - metric 178.A
 - triangle 178.A
- compass 179.A
- compatible
 - with composition 409.C
 - with C^* -structure 114.B
 - with the multiplication of a group 190.C
 - with operation (of an operator domain) 277.C
 - with operations in a linear space 256.F
 - with topology 436.H
 - with a triangulation (a C^* -structure) 114.C
- compiler 75.C
- complement
 - (of a decision problem) 71.B
 - (in lattice theory) 42.A 243.E
 - (in set theory) 381.B
 - orthogonal (of a subset of a Hilbert space) 197.E
 - relative (of two sets) 381.B
- complementary analytic set 22.A
- complementary degenerate series 437.W
- complementary degree 200.J
- complementary event 342.B
- complementary law of reciprocity 14.O
- complementary law of the Jacobi symbol 297.I
- complementary law of the Legendre symbol
 - first 297.I
 - second 297.I
- complementary modulus (in Jacobi elliptic functions) 134.J, App. A, Table 16.I
- complementary series 437.W
- complementary set 381.B
- complementary slackness, Tucker theorem on 255.B
- complementary submodule 277.H
- complementary subspace (of a linear subspace) 256.F
- complementation, law of (in a Boolean algebra) 42.A
- complement conjecture, knot 235.B
- complemented (Banach space) 37.N
- complemented lattice 243.E
- complement theorem 382.B
 - Chapman's 382.B
- completable topological group 423.H
- complete
 - (Abelian p -group) 2.D
 - (algebraic variety) 16.D
 - (increasing family of σ -algebras) 407.B
 - (logical system) 276.D
 - (metric space) 273.J
 - (ordinary differential equation) 126.C
 - (predicate) 356.H
 - (recursively enumerable set) 356.D
 - (set of closed formulas) 276.F
 - (statistics) 396.E
 - (system of axioms) 35.B
 - (system of orthogonal functions) 317.A
 - (topological group) 423.H
 - (uniform space) 436.G
 - (valuation) 439.D
 - (vector lattice) 310.C
 - (wave operator) 375.B,H
 - (Zariski ring) 284.C
 - B - (locally convex space) 424.X
 - fully (locally convex space) 424.X
 - holomorphically (domain) 21.F
 - NP- 71.E
 - at o (in the theory of deformation) 72.G
 - quasi- (locally convex space) 424.F
 - σ - (vector lattice) 310.C
 - weakly 1- , manifold 21.L
- complete accumulation point 425.O
- complete additive group 2.E
- complete additivity (of the Lebesgue integral) 221.C
- complete additivity (of a measure) 270.D
- complete additivity theorem, Pettis 443.G
- complete analytic space, K - 23.F
- complete bipartite graph 186.C
- complete blocks 102.B
- complete capture 420.D
- complete class 398.B
 - essentially 398.B
 - minimal 398.B
- complete class theorems 398.D
- complete cohomology theory 200.N
- complete distributive law (in a lattice-ordered group) 243.G
- complete elliptic integral App. A, Table 16.I
 - of the first kind 134.B
 - of the second kind 134.C
- complete form, theorem on 356.H
- complete free resolution (of \mathbf{Z}) 200.N
- complete graph 186.C
- complete hyperbolic manifolds 21.O
- complete induction 294.B
- complete integrability condition 428.C
- complete intersection 16.A
- complete lattice 243.D
 - conditionally 243.D
 - σ - 243.D
- complete linear system
 - on an algebraic curve 9.C
 - on an algebraic variety 16.N
 - defined by a divisor 16.N
- complete local ring 284.D
 - structure theorem of 284.D
- completely additive
 - (arithmetic function) 295.B
 - (measure) 270.D,E
 - (vector measure) 443.G
- completely additive class 270.B
- completely additive set function 380.C
- completely continuous operator 68.B
- completely integrable 154.B
- completely integrable (system of independent 1-forms) 428.D
- completely integrally closed (ring) 67.I
- completely monotonic function 240.E,K

- completely multiplicative number-theoretic function 295.B
 completely nonunitary 251.M
 completely normal space 425.Q
 completely passive 402.G
 completely positive 36.H
 completely positive entropy 136.E
 completely primary ring 368.H
 completely randomized design 102.A
 completely reducible A -module 277.H
 completely reducible group 190.L
 completely reducible linear representation 362.C
 completely regular space 425.Q
 completely unstable flow 126.E
 complete manifold, weakly 1- 21.L
 complete mapping 241.B
 complete maximum principle 338.M
 complete measure 270.D
 complete measure space 270.D
 complete metric space 273.J
 completeness
 (for a Cartan connection) 80.N
 (of a logical system) 276.D
 (of the predicate calculus) 411.J
 asymptotic 150.D
 NP- 71.E
 theorem of (in geometry) 155.B
 completeness of real numbers 294.E 355.B
 completeness of scattering states 150.D 386.B
 completeness theorem, Gödel 411.J
 complete observation 405.C,D
 complete orthogonal system 217.G
 complete orthonormal set (Hilbert space) 197.C
 complete orthonormal system 217.G
 of fundamental functions 217.G
 complete pivoting 302.B
 complete predicate 356.H
 complete product measure space 270.H
 complete quadrangle 343.C
 complete reducibility theorem, Poincaré 3.C
 complete Reinhardt domain 21.B
 complete residue system modulo m 297.G
 complete ring (with respect to an ideal I) 16.X
 complete scheme, k - 16.E
 complete set 241.B
 complete σ -field 396.E
 boundedly 396.E
 complete solution (of partial differential equations) 320.C
 complete space 436.G
 Čech 425.T 436.I
 Dieudonné 436.I
 holomorphically 23.F
 topologically 436.I
 complete system
 of axioms 35.B
 of independent linear partial differential equations 324.C
 of inhomogeneous partial differential equations 428.C
 of nonlinear partial differential equations 428.C
 complete valuation 439.D
 complete vector lattice 310.C
 σ - 310.C
 complete Zariski ring 284.C
 completion
 α -adic (of an R -module) 284.B
 of a field (with respect to a valuation) 439.D
 of a measure space 270.D
 of a metric space 273.J
 μ - 270.D
 of an ordered set 243.D
 of a ring along an ideal 16.X
 of $\text{Spec}(A)$ along $V(I)$ 16.X
 of a T_2 -topological group 423.H
 of a uniform space 436.G
 of a valuation 439.D
 of a valuation ring (of a valuation) 439.D
 complex(es) 70
 (in an Abelian category) 201.B
 (in buildings and BN pairs) 13.R
 (over an object of an Abelian category) 200.H
 \tilde{c} - 72.D
 abstract simplicial 70.C
 acyclic 201.B
 Amitsur 200.P
 cell 70.D
 chain 200.C
 chain (in an Abelian category) 201.B
 chain, over C 201.C
 chain, over Λ 201.G
 chamber 13.R
 closure finite cell 70.D
 cochain, over Λ 201.H
 cochain (in an Abelian category) 200.F,H
 cochain (of a simplicial complex) 201.H
 countable cell 70.D
 countable simplicial 70.C
 Coxeter 13.R
 CW 70.D
 de Rham 201.H
 de Rham (as an elliptic complex) 237.H
 Dolbeault 72.D
 double 200.H
 double chain 200.E
 dual 65.B
 Eilenberg-MacLane 70.F
 elliptic (on a compact C^∞ -manifold) 237.H
 Euclidean 70.B
 Euclidean cell 70.B
 Euclidean simplicial 70.B
 finite cell 70.D
 finite simplicial 70.C
 geometric 70.B
 isomorphic simplicial 70.C
 isomorphic s.s. 70.E
 Kan 70.E
 linear (in projective geometry) 343.E
 linear line 343.E
 locally countable cell 70.D
 locally countable simplicial 70.C
 locally finite cell 70.D
 locally finite simplicial 70.C
 minimal 70.E
 multiple 200.H
 negative 200.H
 ordered (of a simplicial complex) 70.E
 ordered simplicial 70.C
 oriented simplicial chain 201.C
 Poincaré 114.J
 positive 200.H
 positive chain 200.C
 Postnikov 70.G
 product 200.H
 product (of cell complexes) 70.D
 product double chain 200.E
 quotient 201.L

Complex algebraic variety

- quotient chain 200.C
- rectilinear 70.B
- regular cell 70.D
- relative chain 200.C
- relative cochain 200.F
- semisimplicial (s.s.) 70.E
- simplicial 65.A 70.C
- singular (of a topological space) 70.E
- singular chain (of a topological space) 201.E
- singular cochain 201.H
- space form 365.L
- s.s. 70.E
- s.s., realization of 70.E
- standard (of a Lie algebra) 200.O
- Thom 114.G
- Thom, associated with (G, n) 114.G
- Thom, fundamental cohomology class of the 114.G
- complex algebraic variety 16.T
- complex analytic fiber bundle 147.O
- complex analytic function 198.H
- complex analytic manifold 72.A
- complex analytic structure (in a complex manifold) 72.A
- complex analytic submanifold 72.A
- complex cobordism group 114.H
- complex cobordism ring 114.H
- complex conjugate bundle 147.F
- complex conjugate representation 362.F
- complex dimension (of a complex manifold) 72.A
- complex form (on a Fourier series) 159.A
- complex form (of a real Lie algebra) 248.P
- complex function 165.B
- complex Gaussian 176.B
- complex Gaussian process 176.C
- complex Gaussian random variable 176.B
- complex Gaussian system 176.B
- complex Grassmann manifold 199.B
- complex group (over a field) 60.L
- complex Hermitian homogeneous space 199.A
- complex Hilbert space 197.B
- complexification
 - Chevalley 249.U
 - of a real Lie algebra 248.P
- complex interpolation space 224.C
- complexity
 - average 71.A
 - of computation 71
 - Kolmogorov-Chaitin 354.D
 - space 71.A
 - time 71.A
 - worst-case 71.A
- complex Lie algebra 248.A
 - of a complex Lie group 249.M
- complex Lie group 249.A
- complex linear space 256.A
- complex line bundle 72.F
 - determined by a divisor 72.F
- complex manifold(s) 72
 - almost 72.B
 - compact, family of 72.G
 - isomorphic 72.A
 - stably almost 114.H
 - weakly almost 114.H
- complex multiplication 73
- complex number plane 74.C
- complex numbers 74.A 294.F
 - conjugate 74.A
- complex of lines 110.B
- complex orthogonal group 60.I
- complex orthogonal matrix 269.J
- complex plane 74.C
- complex projective space 343.E
 - infinite-dimensional 56
- complex quadratic form 348.A,B
- complex representation (of a Lie group) 249.O
- complex simple Lie algebra
 - classical 248.S
 - exceptional 248.S
- complex simple Lie group
 - classical 249.M
 - exceptional 249.M
- complex space form 365.L
- complex special orthogonal group 60.I
- complex spectral measure 390.D
- complex spectral representation 390.E
- complex spectral resolution 390.E
- complex sphere 74.D
- complex spinor group 61.E
- complex Stiefel manifold 199.B
- complex structure
 - (in a complex manifold) 72.A
 - (pseudogroup structure) 105.Y
 - (on \mathbb{R}^{2n}) 3.H
 - (on a Riemann surface) 367.A
 - almost 72.B
 - deformation of 72.G
 - tensor field of almost (induced by a complex structure) 72.B
- complex symplectic group 60.L
- complex topological linear space 424.A
- complex torus 3.H
- complex-valued function 165.B
- complex variable 165.C
 - theory of functions of 198.Q
- complex vector bundle 147.F
- component(s)
 - (of a direct product set) 381.E
 - (in graph theory) 186.F
 - (of a matrix) 269.A
 - (of a point in a projective space) 343.C
 - (of a tensor of type (p, q)) 256.J
 - (of a vector) 256.A 442.A
 - (of a vector field) 105.M
 - arcwise connected 79.B
 - basic (of an m -dimensional surface) 110.A
 - connected 79.A 186.F
 - of degree n (of a graded A -module) 200.B
 - embedded primary (of an ideal) 67.F
 - fixed (of a linear system) 16.N
 - ghost (of an infinite-dimensional vector) 449.A
 - horizontal (of a homogeneous space) 110.A
 - horizontal (of a vector field) 80.C
 - identity (of a topological group) 423.F
 - irreducible (of an algebraic variety) 16.A
 - irreducible (of an analytic space) 23.C
 - irreducible (of a linear representation) 362.D
 - isolated primary (of an ideal) 67.F
 - i th (of an element relative to a basis) 256.C
 - i th (of an n -tuple) 256.A
 - nilpotent (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 - orthogonal (of an element of a linear space) 139.G
 - path- 79.B
 - primary (of an ideal) 67.F
 - principal 280.F
 - principal, analysis 280.F
 - principal, of order p 110.A
 - proper (of an intersection of subvarieties) 16.G
 - Reeb 154.B

- relative (of a Lie transformation group) 110.A
- secondary (of a homogeneous space) 110.A
- semisimple 269.L
- simple (of a semisimple ring) 368.G
- strongly connected 186.F
- unipotent (of a linear mapping) 269.L
- variable (of a linear system) 15.C 16.N
- vertical (of a vector field) 80.C
- component model 403.F
- components-of-variance model 403.C
- composite
 - of cohomology operations 64.B
 - of correspondences 358.B
 - of homotopy classes 202.B
 - of mappings 381.C
 - of morphisms 52.A
 - of subsets 436.A
 - of valuations 439.F
- composite designs, central 102.M
- composite field 149.D
- composite function 106.I
- composite hypothesis 400.A
- composite number 297.B
- composite particles 132.A
- composition
 - (of knots) 235.A
 - (of probability distributions) 341.E
 - external law of (of a set of another set) 409.A
 - internal law of (of a set) 409.A
 - law of (on a set) 409.A
 - secondary 202.R
- composition algebra 231.B
- composition factor 190.G
- composition factor series 190.G
- composition product (of functions) 192.H
- composition series
 - (in a group) 190.G
 - (in a lattice) 243.F
- composition theorem (in class field theory) 59.C
- compound Poisson process 5.F
- comprehension, axiom of 33.B 381.G
- compressibility, isothermal 419.B
- compressible fluid 205.B
- compression, information 96.B
- computable (partial function) 31.B
- computation
 - analog 19.A
 - complexity of 71
 - high-precision 138.B
- compute 31.B 71.B
- computers 75
 - analog 19.E
 - digital 75.B
 - electronic 75.A
 - electronic analog 19.E
 - hybrid 19.E
- comultiplication 203.B,F
 - Hopf 203.D
- concatenation (of paths) 170
- concave function 88.A
 - strictly 88.A
- concave programming problem 292.A
- concentration
 - area of 397.E
 - asymptotic 399.L
 - Gini coefficient of 397.E
 - measure of 397.E
 - spectral 331.F
- concentration function
 - maximal 341.E
 - mean 341.E
- concept
 - basic (of structure) 409.B
 - global (in differential geometry) 109
 - in the large (in differential geometry) 109
 - local (in differential geometry) 109
 - in the small (in differential geometry) 109
- conchoidal curve 93.H
- conchoid of Nicomedes 93.H
- concircularly flat space App. A, Table 4.II
- concordant 154.F
- concurrent
 - (in nonstandard analysis) 293.B
 - (in projective geometry) 343.B
- condensation of singularities, principle of 37.H
- condensation point 425.O
- condensation test, Cauchy 379.B
- condition(s)
 - adjoint boundary 315.B
 - ascending chain (for (normal) subgroups of a group) 190.F
 - ascending chain (in an ordered set) 311.C
 - Baire 425.N
 - boundary (for an ordinary differential equation) 315.A
 - boundary (for partial differential equations of elliptic type) 323.F
 - boundary, operator with 112.F
 - Cauchy (on the D-integral and the D(*)-integral) 100.E
 - CFL (Courant-Friedrichs-Lewy) 304.F
 - chain (in an ordered set) 311.C
 - complete integrability 428.C
 - consistency 341.I
 - Denjoy-Carleman 168.B
 - descending chain (for (normal) subgroups of a group) 190.F
 - descending chain (in an ordered set) 311.C
 - entropy 204.G
 - of finite character (for functions) 34.C
 - of finite character (for sets) 34.C
 - finiteness, for integral extension 284.F
 - Frobenius integrability 154.B
 - Haar (on best approximation) 336.B
 - Harnack (on the D-integral and the D(*)-integral) 100.E
 - Hölder, of order α 84.A
 - initial (for ordinary differential equations) 316.A
 - initial (for partial differential equations) 321.A
 - Jacobi 46.C
 - KMS 308.H
 - Levi 325.H
 - Lindeberg 250.B
 - Lipschitz 84.A 163.D 286.B 316.D
 - Lipschitz, of order α 84.A
 - Lorentz 130.A
 - LSZ asymptotic 150.D
 - Lyapunov 250.B
 - maximal (in an ordered set) 311.C
 - minimal (in an ordered set) 311.C
 - no cycle 126.J
 - Palais-Smale 279.E 286.Q
 - Poincaré (in the Dirichlet problem) 120.A
 - restricted minimal (in a commutative ring) 284.A
 - of R. Schmidt (in (C, α) -summation) 379.M
 - Sommerfeld radiation 188.D
 - spectrum 150.D
 - strip 320.D

- strong transversality 126.J
- transversality 108.B
- of transversality (in the calculus of variations) 46.B
- uniqueness (for solution of an ordinary differential equation) 316.D
- von Neumann 304.F
- Whitney, *(b)* 418.G
- Whitney, *(b)* at a point 418.G
- conditional density 397.I
- conditional distribution 397.I
- conditional entropy 213.B
- conditional expectation (of a random variable) 342.E
- conditional inequality 211.A
- conditionality, principle of 401.C
- conditionally complete lattice 243.D
- conditionally convergent 379.C,E
- conditionally σ -complete lattice 243.D
- conditionally stable 394.D
- conditional mean (of a random variable) 342.E 397.I
- conditional moments 397.J
- conditional probability 342.E
 - regular 342.E
- conditional probability distribution 342.E
- conditional problems in the calculus of variations 46.A
- conditional relative extremum (of a function) 106.L
- conditional self-intersection 213.B
- conditional stability 394.D
- condition number 302.A
- conductivity 130.B
- conductor
 - (of an Abelian extension) 14.Q
 - (of a class field) 59.B
 - (of Dirichlet L -functions) 450.C
 - (of an ideal group) 14.H
 - (of a Grössencharakter) 450.F
 - (of Hecke L -functions) 450.E
 - (of a nonprimitive character or a primitive character) 450.C
 - (of a quadratic field) 347.G
 - (of a residue character) 295.D
 - (of a subring of a principal order) 14.B
 - p - (of norm-residue) 14.P
- conductor-ramification theorem (in class field theory) 59.C
- conductor with a group character 450.G
- cone
 - (of a PL embedding) 65.D
 - (in a projective space) 343.E
 - (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (over a space) 202.E
 - asymptotic 350.B
 - circular 78.A 111.I
 - conjugate convex 89.F
 - convex 89.F
 - convex polyhedral 89.F
 - dual convex 89.F
 - extension (of a PL embedding) 65.D
 - future 258.A
 - light 258.A
 - Mach 205.B
 - mapping 202.E
 - natural positive 308.K
 - oblique circular 350.B
 - past 258.A
 - quadratic 350.B
 - reduced (of a topological space) 202.F
 - reduced mapping 202.F
 - regular 384.A
 - right circular 350.B
 - self-dual regular 384.E
 - side 258.A
- confidence coefficient 399.Q
- confidence interval 399.Q
- confidence level 399.Q
- confidence limits 399.Q
- confidence region 399.Q
 - invariance of 399.Q
 - unbiased 399.Q
 - uniformly most powerful 399.Q
 - uniformly most powerful unbiased 399.Q
- configuration
 - central 420.B
 - Pascal 78.K
- configuration space 126.L 402.G
- confluent differential equation 167.A
- confluent hypergeometric differential equation 167.A, App. A, Table 14.II 19.I
- confluent type
 - function of 167.A
 - hypergeometric function of 167.A, App. A, Table 19.I
- confocal central conics, family of 78.H
- confocal parabolas, family of 78.H
- confocal quadrics, family of 350.E
- conformal 77.A
 - almost 275.C
- conformal arc element 110.D
- conformal connection 80.P
- conformal correspondence (between surfaces) 111.I
- conformal curvature 110.D
- conformal curvature tensor, Weyl 80.P, App. A, Table 4.II
- conformal differential geometry 110.D
- conformal function, μ - 352.B
- conformal geometry 76.A
- conformal invariant 77.E
- conformally equivalent 77.A 367.A 191.B
- conformally flat 191.B
- conformally flat space App. A, Table 4.II
- conformal mapping 198.A, App. A, Table 13
 - generalized 246.I
 - extremal quasi- 352.C
 - quasi- 352
- conformal space 76.A
- conformal structure 191.B
- conformal structure (on a Riemann surface) 367.A
- conformal torsion 110.D
- conformal transformation 80.P 364.F
- confounded
 - with blocks 102.J
 - partially (with blocks) 102.J
- congruence
 - (in geometry) 155.B
 - (in number theory) 297.G
 - linear (in projective geometry) 343.E
 - of lines 110.B
 - multiplicative 14.H
- congruence axiom (of geometry) 155.B
- congruence classes modulo m^* , group of 14.H
- congruence subgroup (of a modular group) 122.D
 - principal, of level N 122.D
- congruence zeta function 450.P
- congruent
 - (figures) 139.C
 - (segment) 155.B
 - affinely 7.E

- in the Erlangen program 137
- congruent modulo m 297.G
- congruent transformation(s) 139.B
 - group of 285.C
- conic(s) 78.A
 - central 78.C
 - focal (of a quadric) 350.E
 - pencil of 343.E
- conical function App. A, Table 18.II
- conical hypersurface, quadric 350.G
- conical surface 111.I
 - quadric 350.B
- conic Lagrange manifold 274.C 345.B
- conic section(s) 78.A
 - equation of 78.C
 - canonical form of the equation of 78.C
- conjecture
 - Adams (on J -homomorphisms) 237.I
 - annulus (on combinatorial manifolds) 65.C
 - Artin (on Artin L -functions) 450.G
 - Bieberbach (on univalent functions) 438.C
 - Birch–Swinnerton-Dyer (on L -functions of elliptic curves) 118.D 450.S
 - Burnside (on finite groups) 151.D
 - C_n (on Kodaira dimension) 72.H
 - entropy 126.K
 - four color 186.I
 - fundamental (in topology) 70.C
 - generalized Poincaré 65.C
 - general knot 235.B
 - Hasse (on Hasse zeta function) 450.S
 - Hodge (on cycles on algebraic varieties) 450.S
 - Iwasawa main (on p -adic L -functions) 450.J
 - knot complement 235.B
 - Leopoldt (on p -adic L -functions) 450.J
 - Mordell (on Diophantine equations) 118.E
 - Poincaré (on a characterization of spheres) 65.C
 - property P - (on knot groups) 235.B
 - Ramanujan (on automorphic functions) 32.D
 - Ramanujan-Petersson (on Hecke operators) 32.D
 - Sato (on Hasse zeta functions) 450.S
 - Schreier (on simple groups) 151.I
 - Seifert (on vector fields) 126.K 154.D
 - Smith (on knot theory) 235.E
 - stability 126.J
 - Taniyama-Weil (on L -functions of elliptic curves) 450.S
 - Tate (on Hasse ζ -functions) 450.S
 - unknotting 235.E
 - Vandiver (on the class number of cyclotomic fields) 14.L
 - Weil (on congruence zeta functions) 450.Q
- conjugacy
 - C^* - 126.B
 - topological 126.B
- conjugacy class (of an element of a group) 190.C
- conjugate
 - (CG method) 302.D
 - (diameter) 78.G
 - (element) 149.J
 - (point in a geodesic) 178.A
 - (point in a projective space) 343.E
 - (with respect to a quadric surface) 350.C
 - (quaternion) 29.D
 - (subset) 190.C
 - C^* - 126.B
 - harmonic (in projective geometry) 343.D
 - Ω - 126.H
 - topological 126.B
- conjugate axis (of a hyperbola) 78.C
- conjugate complex number 74.A
- conjugate convex cone 89.F
- conjugate differential (on Riemann surface) 367.H
- conjugate exponent 168.C
- conjugate field 149.J 377.C
- conjugate Fourier integral 160.D
- conjugate function 159.E 160.D
- conjugate gradient (CG) method 302.D
- conjugate harmonic function 193.C
- conjugate hyperbola 78.E
- conjugate ideal (of a fractional ideal) 14.I
- conjugate operator
 - (in Banach spaces) 37.D
 - (of a differential operator) 125.F
 - (of a linear operator) 251.D
- conjugate planes (with respect to a quadric surface) 350.C
- conjugate point(s)
 - (in the calculus of variations) 46.C
 - (in a Riemannian manifold) 364.C
- conjugate pole 350.C
- conjugate Radon transform 218.F
- conjugate representation 362.F
 - complex 362.F
- conjugate series (of a trigonometric series) 159.A
- conjugate space
 - (of a linear topological space) 424.D
 - (of a normed linear space) 37.D
- conjugation mapping (of a Hopf algebra) 203.E
- conjugation operator 164.K
- conjunction (of propositions) 411.B
- connected
 - (affine algebraic group) 13.A
 - (design) 102.K
 - (graded module) 203.B
 - (graph) 186.F
 - (topological space) 79.A
 - (treatment) 102.B
 - arcwise (space) 79.B
 - K - 186.F
 - locally (at a point) 79.B
 - locally (space) 79.A
 - locally arcwise (at a point) 79.B
 - locally arcwise (space) 79.B
 - locally n - (at a point) 79.C
 - locally n - (space) 79.C
 - locally ω - (space) 79.C
 - multiply (plane domain or space) 333.A
 - n - (pair of topological spaces) 202.L
 - n - (space) 79.C 202.L
 - n -ply (plane domain) 333.A
 - ω - (space) 79.C
 - path- (space) 79.B
 - simply (covering Lie group) 249.C
 - simply (space) 79.C 170
 - simply, group 13.N
 - strongly (components) 186.F
- connected component 79.A 186.F
 - arcwise- 79.B
 - strongly 186.F
- connected Lie subgroup 249.D
- connectedness 79 186.F
 - of real numbers 294.E
- connectedness theorem
 - general, due to W. Fulton and J. Hansen 16.I
 - Zariski 16.X
- connected part 150.D
- connected sequences of functors 200.I

connected set 79.A
connected space 79.A
connected sum
 (of oriented compact C^∞ -manifolds) 114.F
 (of 3-manifolds) 65.E
connecting homomorphism
 in cohomology 200.F
 in homology 200.C
 on homology groups 201.C,L
connecting morphism 200.H,I
connection(s) 80
 affine 80.H 286.L
 affine, coefficients of 80.L
 canonical affine (on \mathbf{R}^n) 80.J
 Cartan 80.M
 conformal 80.P
 Euclidean 364.B
 Euclidean, manifold with 109
 flat 80.E
 Gauss-Manin (of a variety) 16.V
 Levi-Civita 364.B
 linear 80.H
 locally flat 80.E
 metric 80.K
 normal 365.C
 projective 80.O
 Riemannian 80.K 364.B
 Riemannian, coefficients of 80.L
connection form 80.E 417.B
connection formula
 for the solutions of a differential equation 253.A
connection of spin and statistics 132.A 150.D
connection problem 253.A
connective fiber space, n - 148.D
connectives, propositional 411.E
connectivity (of a space) 201.A
conoid, right 111.I
conoidal neighborhood 274.E
conormal 323.F
conormal bundle 274.E
conormal sphere bundle 274.E
co-NP 71.E
conservation laws, even-oddness 150.D
conservative (measurable transformation) 136.C
conservative chain 260.A
conservative process 261.B
conserved axial-vector currents, partially 132.C
consistency
 (condition in the multistep method) 303.E
 (of an estimator) 399.K
 (of a logical system) 276.D
 of analysis 156.E
 of the axiom of choice and the continuum hypothesis 33.D
 $\{c_n\}$ - 399.K
 relative 156.D
consistency condition 341.I
consistency proof 156.D
 of pure number theory 156.E
consistent
 (finite difference scheme) 304.F
 (formal system) 411.I
 (system of axioms) 35.B
 a.s. 399.K
 $\{c_n\}$ - 399.K
 Fisher 399.K
 ω - 156.E
consistent and asymptotically normal (CAN)
 estimator 399.K

consistent estimator 399.K
consistent kernel (in potential theory) 338.E
consistent-mass scheme 304.D
consistent test 400.K
 uniformly 400.K
constant(s) 165.C
 arbitrary (in a general solution of a differential equation) 313.A
 Bloch 77.F
 Boltzmann 402.B
 dielectric 130.B
 empirical 19.F
 error 303.E
 Euler 174.A
 integral 216.C
 integration (in a general solution of a differential equation) 313.A
 isoperimetric 391.D
 Lagrange method of variation of 252.D
 Landau 77.F
 method of variation of 55.B 252.I
 phase (of a sine wave) 446
 Planck 115
 renormalization 150.D
 Robin 48.B
 schlicht Bloch 77.F
 structural (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 universal (in the theory of conformal mapping) 77.F
constant breadth, curve of 89.C
constant curvature
 space of 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
 surface of 111.I
constant function 381.C
constant inclination, curve of 111.F
constant mapping 381.C
constant pressure, specific heat at 419.B
constant sheaf 383.D
 locally constructible 16.AA
constant stratum, μ - 418.E
constant-sum game 173.A
constant term
 of a formal power series 376.A
 of a polynomial 337.B
 unfolding 51.D
constant variational formula 163.E
constant volume, specific heat at 419.B
constant width, curve of 111.E
constituent (of an analytic or coanalytic set) 22.C
constraint 102.L 264.B
 capacity 281.D
 chance 408.B
 unilateral 440.A
constraint qualification
 Guignard 292.B
 Slater 292.B
constraint set (of a minimization problem) 292.A
constructibility, axiom of (in axiomatic set theory) 33.D
constructible (set in axiomatic set theory) 33.D
constructible sheaf 16.AA
 locally, constant 16.AA
construction
 bar (of an Eilenberg-MacLane complex) 70.F
 geometric, problem 179.A
 GNS 308.D
 group measure space 136.F
 impossible, problem 179.A
 possible, problem 179.A
 W - (of an Eilenberg-MacLane complex) 70.F

construction problem (of class field tower) 59.F
 constructive field theory 150.F
 constructive method 156.D
 constructive ordinal numbers 81.B
 consumer's risk 404.C
 contact, thermal 419.A
 contact element 428.E
 in a space with a Lie transformation group 110.A
 contact form 110.E
 contact manifold 110.E
 contact metric structure 110.E
 contact network 282.B
 contact pair (in circle geometry) 76.C
 contact process 340.C
 contact structure 105.Y
 contact transformations 82, App. A, Table 15.IV
 quantized 274.F
 contain 381.A
 physically 351.K
 content (of a tolerance region) 399.R
 Jordan 270.G
 mean 399.R
 context-free grammar 31.D
 context-sensitive grammar 31.D
 contiguous 399.M
 contingency table 397.K 400.K
 continuous, analytically 198.I
 continuation
 analytic 198.G
 analytic, along a curve 198.I
 analytic, in the wider sense 198.O
 direct analytic 198.G
 harmonic 193.M 198.G
 continuation method 301.M
 continuation theorem
 Hartogs 21.F
 Remmert-Stein 23.B
 Riemann 21.F
 unique 323.J
 continued fractions 83.A
 finite 83.A
 infinite 83.A
 mixed periodic 83.C
 normal 83.E
 pure periodic 83.C
 recurring 83.B
 simple 83.A
 continuity
 absolute, space of 390.E
 axioms of (in geometry) 155.B
 Dedekind axiom of (for real numbers) 355.A
 equation of (for a fluid) 205.A
 equation of (for electromagnetics) 130.A 204.B
 Hartogs theorem of 21.H
 interval of (for a probability distribution) 341.C
 local 45.F
 modulus of (of a function) 84.A
 modulus of, of k th order (of a continuous function) 336.C
 properties of 85.A
 of real numbers 294.E
 uniform 45.F
 continuity (*), generalized absolute 100.C
 in the restricted sense 100.C
 continuity principle
 for analytic functions of several complex variables 21.H
 in potential theory 338.C

Subject Index

Continuous geometry

quasi- (in potential theory) 338.I
 continuity property for Čech theory 201.M
 continuity requirement, variational principles with relaxed 271.G
 continuity theorem
 Abel (for Dirichlet series) 339.B
 Abel (for power series) 121.D
 Lévy 341.F
 continuous
 (additive interval function) 380.B
 (flow) 136.D
 (function of ordinal numbers) 312.C
 (mapping) 84.A 425.G
 absolutely (function) 100.C
 absolutely (mapping in the plane) 246.H
 absolutely (measure) 270.L
 absolutely (set function) 380.C
 absolutely (vector measure) 443.G
 absolutely, in the restricted sense 100.C
 absolutely, in the sense of Tonelli 246.C
 absolutely, (*) 100.C
 completely (operator) 68.D
 equi- 435.D
 equi-, semigroup of class (C^0) 378.B
 generalized absolutely 100.C
 hypo- 424.Q
 left 84.B
 from the left 84.B
 in the mean 217.M
 in the mean (stochastic process) 407.A
 μ -absolutely 380.C
 with respect to the parameter (a distribution) 125.H
 piecewise, function 84.B
 in probability 407.A
 right 84.B
 from the right 84.B
 separately (bilinear mapping) 424.Q
 strongly (function with values in a Banach space) 37.K
 uniformly 84.A 273.I 436.E
 uniformly, on a subset 436.G
 weakly (function with values in a Banach space) 37.K
 continuous action (in topological dynamics) 126.B
 continuous additive interval function 380.B
 continuous analytic capacity 164.J
 continuous arc(s) 93.B
 continuous cocycle 200.N
 continuous distribution (probability theory) 341.D
 continuous dynamical system 126.B
 continuous flow
 (in ergodic theory) 136.D
 (on a topological space) 126.B
 continuous functions 84
 absolutely 100.C
 generalized absolutely 100.C
 lower semi- 84.C
 lower semi- (at a point) 84.C
 on a metric space 84.C
 piecewise 84.B
 quasi- 338.I
 right 84.B
 semi- (at a point) 84.C
 uniformly (in a metric space) 84.A
 upper semi- 84.C
 upper semi- (at a point) 84.C
 continuous geometry 85
 irreducible 85.A
 reducible 85.A

- continuous homomorphism (between topological groups) 423.J
- open 423.J
- continuous image 425.G
- continuously differentiable function, n -times 106.K
- continuous mapping 425.G
 - space of 435.D
 - strongly 437.A
 - uniformly (of metric spaces) 273.I
 - uniformly (of uniform spaces) 436.E
- continuous plane curve 93.B
- continuous representation
 - strongly (of a topological group) 69.B
 - weakly (of a topological group) 69.B
- continuous semiflow 126.B
- continuous semimartingale 406.B
- continuous spectrum 390.A
 - absolutely 390.E
 - of an integral equation 217.J
- continuous spin 258.C
- continuous state branching process 44.E
- continuous tensor product 377.D
- continuum 79.D
 - cardinal number of 49.A
 - indecomposable 79.D
 - irreducible 79.D
 - Peano 93.D
- continuum hypothesis 49.D
 - consistency of the axiom of choice and 33.D
 - generalized 49.D
 - independence of the axiom of choice and 33.D
- contour(s)
 - additivity of (in the curvilinear integral) 94.D
 - of an integration 94.D
- contract, annuity 214.B
- contracted tensor 256.L
- contractible space 79.C 202.D
 - locally 79.C 202.D
 - locally, at a point 79.C
- contraction
 - (of a graph) 186.E
 - (linear operator) 37.C
 - (of a mapping) 381.C
 - (of a matroid) 66.H
 - (of a tensor) 256.L
 - sub- 186.E
- contraction principle 286.B
- contractive 251.N
 - purely 251.N
 - purely, part 251.N
- contradiction 411.I
- contradictory formal system 411.I
- contragredient (of a linear mapping) 256.G
- contragredient representation 362.E
- contrast
 - elementary 102.C
 - normalized 102.C
 - treatment 102.C
- contravariant functor 52.H
- contravariant index (of a component of a tensor) 256.J
- contravariant of order r and covariant of order s 108.D
- contravariant spinor 258.B
- contravariant tensor
 - alternating 256.N
 - of degree p 256.J
 - symmetric 256.N
- contravariant tensor algebra 256.K
- contravariant tensor field of order r 105.O
- contravariant vector 256.J
- contravariant vector field 105.O
- control
 - admissible 405.A
 - bang-bang 405.C
 - feedback 405.C
 - impulse 405.E
 - inventory 227
 - local 102.A
 - optimal 46.D 86.B,C 405.A
 - quality 404.A
 - stochastic 342.A 405
 - time-optimal 86.F
- control chart 404.B
- controllability 86.C
- controlled stochastic differential equation 405.A
- controlled tubular neighborhood system 418.G
- control limit
 - lower 404.F
 - upper 404.B
- control problem, time optimal 86.F
- control space (in static model in catastrophe theory) 51.B
- control theory 86
- control unit 75.B
- convention
 - Einstein 256.J
 - Einstein summation 417.B
 - Maxwell 51.F
 - perfect delay 51.F
- converge
 - (filter) 87.I
 - (infinite product) 379.G
 - (in a metric space) 273.D
 - (net) 87.H
 - (sequence of lattices) 182.B
 - (sequence of numbers) 87.B 355.B
 - (series) 379.A
 - (in a topological space) 87.E
 - almost certainly 342.D
 - almost everywhere 342.D
 - almost surely 342.D
 - in distribution 168.B 342.D
 - in the mean of order p 342.D
 - in the mean of power p 168.B
 - in probability 342.D
 - with probability 342.D
 - strongly 37.B
 - uniformly (in a uniform space) 435.A
 - weakly (in a normed linear space) 37.E
 - weakly (in a topological linear space) 424.H
- convergence 87
 - (of a filter) 87.I
 - (of a net) 87.H
 - (of probability measures) 341.F
 - (of truncation errors) 303.B
 - abscissa of (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 - abscissa of (of a Laplace transform) 240.B,H
 - absolute, abscissa of (Dirichlet series) 121.B
 - absolute, abscissa of (of a Laplace transform) 240.B
 - associated, radii 21.B
 - asymptotic 168.B
 - axis of 240.B
 - circle of (of a power series) 339.A
 - exponent of 429.B
 - generalized 331.C
 - norm resolvent 331.C

- radius of (of a power series) 339.A
- relative uniform star 310.F
- simple, abscissa of (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
- star 87.K
- strong (of operators) 251.C
- strong resolvent 331.C
- uniform 435
- uniform (of a series) 435.A
- uniform (of operators) 251.C
- uniform, abscissa of (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
- uniform, abscissa of (of a Laplace transform) 240.B
- uniform, on compact sets 435.C
- weak (of operators) 251.C
- weak (of probability measures) 341.F
- weak (of a sequence of submodules) 200.J
- Weierstrass criterion for uniform 435.A
- convergence criterion for positive series App. A, Table 10.II
- convergence domain (of a power series) 21.B
- convergence in measure 168.B
- convergence method 354.B
- convergence theorem
 - on distributions 125.G
 - Lebesgue 221.C
 - of martingales 262.B
- convergent
 - (continued fraction) 83.A
 - (double series) 379.E
 - (filtration) 200.J
 - (infinite integral) 216.E
 - (sequence) 87.B 355.B
 - (series) 379.A
 - absolutely (double series) 379.E
 - absolutely (infinite product) 379.G
 - absolutely (Laplace-Stieltjes integral) 240.B
 - absolutely (power series) 21.B
 - absolutely (series) 379.C
 - absolutely (series in a Banach space) 443.D
 - commutatively 379.C
 - conditionally 379.C.E
 - intermediate 83.B
 - (α)- 87.I.
 - (α)-star 87.L
 - order (in a vector lattice) 310.C
 - pointwise 435.B
 - principal 83.B
 - simply 435.B
 - unconditionally 379.C
 - uniformly (on a family of sets) 435.C
 - uniformly (sequence, series, or infinite product) 435.A
 - uniformly, in the wider sense 435.C
 - uniformly absolutely 435.A
- convergent power series 370.B
- convergent power series ring 370.B
- convergent sequence 355.B
- convex
 - (function on a G -space) 178.H
 - (function on a Riemannian manifold) 178.B
 - (subset of a sphere) 274.E
 - (subset of a sphere bundle) 274.E
 - absolutely 424.E
 - holomorphically, domain 21.H
 - locally (linear topological space) 424.E
 - logarithmically (domain) 21.B
 - matrix (of order m) 212.C
 - operator 212.C
 - properly 274.E
 - uniformly (normed linear space) 37.G
- convex analysis 88
- convex body 89.A
- convex cell (in an affine space) 7.D
- convex closure (in an affine space) 7.D
- convex cone
 - conjugate 89.F
 - dual 89.F
- convex curve, closed 111.E
- convex functions 88.A
 - proper 88.D
 - strictly 88.A
- convex hull 89.A
 - (in an affine space) 7.D
 - (of a boundary curve) 275.B
 - (in linear programming) 255.D
 - closed 424.H
- convexity theorem
 - Lyapunov 443.G
 - M. Riesz 88.C
- convex neighborhood 364.C
- convex polyhedral cone 89.F
- convex polyhedron 89.A
- convex programming 264.C
- convex programming problem 292.A
- convex rational polyhedral 16.Z
- convex set(s) 89
 - absolutely (in a linear topological space) 424.E
 - in an affine space 7.D
 - P - (for a differential operator 112.C
 - regularly 89.G
 - strongly P - 112.C
 - strongly separated 89.A
- convex surface, closed 111.I
- convolution
 - (of arithmetic functions) 295.C
 - (of distributions) 125.M
 - (of functions) 159.A 192.H
 - (of hyperfunctions) 125.X
 - (of probability distributions) 341.E
 - (in the theory of Hopf algebra) 203.H
 - generalized (of distributions) 125.M
- convolutional code 63.E
- cooperative game 173.A.D
- coordinate(s) 90
 - (of an element of a direct product of sets) 381.E
 - (in the real line) 355.E
 - affine 7.C
 - barycentric (in an affine space) 7.C 90.B
 - barycentric (in a Euclidean simplicial complex) 70.B
 - barycentric (in the polyhedron of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - bipolar 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - bipolar cylindrical App. A, Table 3.V
 - canonical (of a Lie group) 249.Q
 - Cartesian (in an affine space) 7.C
 - Chow (of a positive cycle) 16.S
 - circular cylindrical App. A, Table 3.V
 - curvilinear 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - cylindrical 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - ellipsoidal 90.C 133.A, App. A, Table 3.V
 - elliptic 90.C 350.E, App. A, Table 3.V
 - elliptic cylindrical App. A, Table 3.V
 - equilateral hyperbolic 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - generalized (in analytical dynamics) 271.F
 - generalized cylindrical App. A, Table 3.V
 - geodesic 80.J
 - geodesic polar 90.C

- Grassmann (in a Grassmann manifold) 90.B
- homogeneous (of a point in a projective space) 343.C
- hyperbolic cylindrical App. A, Table 3.V
- hyperplane (of a hyperplane in a projective space) 343.C
- inhomogeneous (of a point with respect to a frame) 343.C
- isothermal 90.C
- i*th (of an element relative to a basis) 256.C
- Klein line 90.B
- Kruskal 359.D
- line (of a line) 343.C
- local (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
- local (on a topological manifold) 105.C
- local, transformation of 90.D
- moving App. A, Table 3.IV
- multiplanar 90.C
- multipolar 90.C
- $(n + 2)$ -hyperspherical 76.A 90.B
- normal 90.C
- oblique (in a Euclidean space) 90.B
- orthogonal curvilinear 90.C
- parabolic 90.C
- parabolic cylindrical App. A, Table 3.V
- parallel (in an affine space) 7.C
- pentaspherical 90.B
- plane (of a plane) 343.C
- Plücker (in a Grassmann manifold) 90.B
- polar 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
- projective 343.C
- rectangular (in a Euclidean space) 90.B
- rectangular hyperbolic 90.C
- rotational App. A, Table 3.V
- rotational hyperbolic App. A, Table 3.V
- rotational parabolic App. A, Table 3.V
- spherical 90.C 133.D
- tangential polar 90.C
- tetracyclic 90.B
- trilinear 90.C
- tripolar 90.C
- coordinate axis
 - of an affine frame 7.C
 - i*th (of a Euclidean space) 140
- coordinate bundle(s) 147.B
 - equivalent 147.B
- coordinate curve (in a Euclidean space) 90.C
- coordinate function
 - (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 - (in the Ritz method) 304.B
- coordinate hyperplane (of an affine frame) 7.C
- coordinate hypersurface (in a Euclidean space) 90.C
- coordinate neighborhood
 - of class C^r 105.D
 - of a fiber bundle 147.B
 - of a manifold 105.C
- coordinate ring (of an affine variety) 16.A
 - homogeneous 16.A
- coordinate system 90.A
 - (of a line in a projective space) 343.C
 - geodesic, in the weak sense 232.A
 - holomorphic local 72.A
 - isothermal curvilinear App. A, Table 3.V
 - l*-adic 3.E
 - local (of a topological space) 90.D 105.C
 - moving 90.B
 - orthogonal, adapted to a flag 139.E
 - orthogonal curvilinear App. A, Table 3.V
 - projective 343.C
- coordinate transformation (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 - (of a locally free \mathcal{O}_X -Module) 16.E
- coplanar vectors 442.A
- coproduct
 - of commutative algebras 29.A
 - of an element in a graded coalgebra 203.B
 - Hopf 203.D
 - of two objects 52.E
- coradical 293.F
- CORDIC 142.A
- core 173.D
- coregular representation (of an algebra) 362.E
- corestriction (homomorphism of cohomology groups) 200.M
- Corioli force 271.D
- corner polyhedron 215.C
- Cornish-Fisher expansions 374.F
- Cornu spiral 93.H 167.D
- Corona problem 43.G
- Corona theorem 164.I
- coroot 13.J
- correcting, error- 63.A
- correcting capability, error- 63.B
- correctly posed
 - (initial value problem) 321.E
 - (problems for partial differential equations) 322.A
- corrector (in a multistep method) 303.E
 - Milne 303.E
- correlation 343.D
 - involutive 343.D
 - Kendall rank 371.K
 - serial 397.N
 - serial cross 397.N
 - Spearman rank 371.K
- correlation coefficient
 - (of two random variables) 342.C 397.H
 - canonical 280.E 374.C
 - multiple 397.J
 - partial 397.J
 - population 396.D
 - sample 396.D
 - sample multiple 280.E
 - sample partial 280.E
 - serial 421.B
- correlation inequalities 212.A
- correlation matrix 397.J
- correlation ratios 397.L
- correlation tensor 433.C
- correlogram 397.N
- correspond 358.B
- correspondence 358.B
 - algebraic (of an algebraic variety) 16.I
 - algebraic (of a nonsingular curve) 9.H
 - algebraic, group of classes of 9.H
 - birational 16.I
 - of Combescur 111.F
 - conformal (between surfaces) 111.I
 - geodesic (between surfaces) 111.I
 - homothetic (between surfaces) 111.I
 - inverse 358.B
 - one-to-one 358.B
 - similar (between surfaces) 111.I
 - univalent 358.B
- correspondence principle 351.D
- correspondence ring (of a nonsingular curve) 9.H
- corresponding angles 139.D
- corresponding points (with respect to confocal quadrics) 350.E
- cos (cosine) 131.E 432.A

\cos^{-1} 131.E
 cosec (cosecant) 131.E 432.A
 cosech (hyperbolic cosecant) 131.F
 cosemisimple 203.F
 coset
 double (of two subgroups of a group) 190.C
 left (of a subgroup of a group) 190.C
 right (of a subgroup of a group) 190.C
 coset space (of a topological group)
 left 423.E
 right 423.E
 cosh (hyperbolic cosine) 131.F
 cosigma functions 134.H, App. A, Table 16.IV
 cosine(s) 432.A
 first law of 432.A, App. A, Table 2.II
 hyperbolic 131.F
 integral 167.D
 law of (on spherical triangles) 432.B, App. A, Table 2.III
 optical direction 180.A
 second law of 432.A, App. A, Table 2.II
 cosine integral 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
 cosine series, Fourier, App. A, Table 11.I
 cosine transform, Fourier 160.C, App. A, Table 11.II
 cospecialization (in étale topology) 16.AA
 cospectral density 397.N
 cost 281.D
 imputed 255.B
 shadow 292.C
 unit 281.D
 cost of insurance 214.B
 cost of observation 398.F
 cot (cotangent) 131.E
 cotangent(s) 432.A
 hyperbolic 131.F
 law of App. A, Table 2.III
 cotangent bundle 147.F
 cotangential sphere bundle 274.E
 cotangent vector bundle 147.F
 Cotes formula, Newton- (in numerical integration) 299.A
 coth (hyperbolic cotangent) 131.F
 cotree 186.G
 cotriple 200.Q
 counit 203.F
 counity (of a coalgebra) 203.B
 countability axioms 425.P
 countable additivity 270.B
 countable cell complex 70.D
 countable Lebesgue spectrum 136.E
 countable model (of axiomatic set theory) 156.E
 countable ordinal number 49.F
 countable set 49.A
 countable simplicial complex 70.C
 locally 70.C
 countably additive class 270.B
 countably compact space 425.S
 countably equivalent sets 136.C
 countably Hilbertian space 424.W
 countably infinite set 49.A
 countably normed space 424.W
 countably paracompact space 425.Y
 countably productive property 425.Y
 counting constants, principle of 16.S
 counting function (of a meromorphic function) 272.B
 Courant-Cheng domain theorem 391.H
 Cousin problem 21.K
 first 21.K

Subject Index

Covering Lie group, simply connected

second 21.K
 covariance (of two random variables) 342.C 397.H
 population 396.D
 sample 396.D
 covariance distribution 395.C
 covariance function 395.A,B
 sample 395.G
 covariance matrix 341.B 397.J
 asymptotic 399.K
 variance 341.B 397.J
 covariant 226.D
 absolute 226.D
 absolute multiple 226.E
 with ground forms 226.D
 multiple 226.E
 of an n -ary form of degree d 226.D
 relativistically 150.D
 covariant derivative
 (of a tensor field) 80.I 417.B, App. A, Table 4.II
 (of a vector field) 80.I
 (of a vector field along a curve) 80.I
 van der Waerden–Bortolotti 417.E
 covariant differential
 (of a differential form) 80.G
 (of a tensor field) 80.I, L 417.B
 (of a vector field) 80.I
 covariant functor 52.H
 covariant index (of a component of a tensor) 256.J
 covariant spinor 258.B
 covariant tensor
 alternating 256.N
 of degree q 256.J
 symmetric 256.N
 covariant tensor field of order s 105.O
 covariant vector 256.J
 covariant vector field 105.O
 covector, p - 256.O
 cover (a set) 381.D
 covering(s)
 (covering space) 91.A
 (curve) 9.I
 (of a set) 381.D 425.R
 closed (of a set) 425.R
 closure-preserving 425.X
 countable (of a set) 425.R
 degree of (of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
 discrete (of a set) 425.R
 ε - (of a metric space) 273.B
 finite (of a set) 425.R
 locally finite (of a set) 425.R
 mesh of (in a metric space) 273.B
 n -fold (space) 91.A
 normal (of a set) 425.R
 open (of a set) 425.R
 point-finite (of a set) 425.R
 regular (space) 91.A
 σ -discrete (of a set) 425.R
 σ -locally finite (of a set) 425.R
 star-finite (of a set) 425.R
 unramified (of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
 covering curve 9.I
 covering differentiable manifold 91.A
 covering dimension (of a normal space) 117.B
 covering family (in Grothendieck topology) 16.AA
 covering group (of a topological group) 91.A 423.O
 universal (of a topological group) 91.B 423.O
 covering homotopy property 148.B
 covering law 381.D 425.L
 covering Lie group, simply connected (of a Lie algebra) 249.C

Covering linkage invariant(s)

- covering linkage invariant(s) 235.E
- covering manifold 91.A
- covering mapping (map) 91.A
- covering space(s) 91
 - analytic 23.E
 - C- 23.E
 - in the sense of Cartan 23.E
 - ramified 23.B
 - universal 91.B
- covering surface(s) 367.B
 - Ahlfors theory of 367.B
 - with relative boundary 367.B
 - unbounded 267.B
 - universal 367.B
 - unramified 367.B
- covering system, uniform 436.D
- covering theorem, Vitali 380.D
- covering transformation 91.A
 - of an unramified unbounded covering surface 367.B
- covering transformation group 91.A
- Coxeter complex 13.R
- Coxeter diagram (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.S
- Coxeter group 13.R
- CPM 307.C 376
- Cramer-Castillon problem (in geometric construction) 179.A
- Cramér-Rao inequality 399.D
- Cramer rule 269.M
- Cramér theorem 399.M
- crash duration 281.D
- creation operator 377.A
- Cremona transformation 16.I
- CR-equivalence 344.A
- criterion
 - Cartan, of semisimplicity (of Lie algebras) 248.F
 - Cartan, of solvability (of Lie algebras) 248.F
 - Castelnuovo 15.E
 - Cauchy 87.C, App. A, Table 10.II
 - convergence, for positive series App. A, Table 10.II
 - d'Alembert App. A, Table 10.II
 - Euler 297.H
 - Gauss App. A, Table 10.II
 - Jacobian (on regularity of local rings) 370.B
 - Kummer 145, App. A, Table 10.II
 - logarithmic App. A, Table 10.II
 - Nakai-Moishezon (of ampleness) 16.E
 - Nyquist's 86.A
 - Raabe App. A, Table 10.II
 - of ruled surfaces 15.E
 - Schlomilch App. A, Table 10.II
 - simplex 255.D
 - Weierstrass, for uniform convergence 435.A
 - Weyl 182.H
- criterion function 127.A
- critical (Galton-Watson process) 44.B
- critical determinant 182.B
- critical exponent 111.C
- critical inclination problem 55.C
- critical lattice in M with respect to S 182.B
- critical manifold, nondegenerate 279.D,E
- critical path 376
- critical percolation probability 340.D
- critical point
 - (of a C^x -function on a manifold) 279.B
 - (of a C^x -mapping $\varphi: M \rightarrow M'$) 105.J
 - (of a flow) 126.D
 - (of a function on \mathbf{R}^1) 106.L
 - (of a harmonic function) 193.J
 - (of a mapping $u: \mathbf{R}^n \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^m$) 208.B
 - degenerate 106.L 279.B
 - nondegenerate 106.L 279.B 286.N
- critical region 400.A
- critical value
 - (in bifurcation theory) 286.R
 - (of a C^x -function on a manifold) 279.B
 - (of a C^x -mapping $\varphi: M \rightarrow M'$) 105.J
 - (of a contact process) 340.C
 - (of an external magnetic field) 340.B
 - (of a mapping $u: \mathbf{R}^n \rightarrow \mathbf{R}^m$) 208.B
- Crofton formula (in integral geometry) 218.B
- cross cap (a surface) 410.B
- crosscut(s) (of a plane domain) 333.A
 - fundamental sequence of (in a simply connected domain) 333.B
- crossed homomorphism (of an associative algebra) 200.L
- crossed product
 - (in C^* -algebra theory) 36.I
 - (of a commutative ring and a group) 29.D
 - (in von Neumann algebra theory) 308.J
- crossings
 - normal 16.L
 - only normal 16.L
- crossing symmetry 132.C 386.B
- cross norm, C^* - 36.H
- cross product
 - (of cohomology groups) 201.J
 - (of homology groups) 201.J
 - (of vector bundles) 237.C
- cross ratio 343.D
- cross section
 - (of a fiber bundle) 147.L 286.H
 - (of a fiber space) 148.D
 - (of a flow) 126.C
 - absorption 375.A
 - differential 375.A 386.B
 - local (in a topological group) 147.E
 - scattering 375.A
 - total 386.B
 - total elastic 386.B
- cross-sectional data 128.A 397.A
- cross spectral density function 421.E
- Croust method 302.B
- CR structure 344.A
- crystal class 92.B
 - arithmetic 92.B
 - geometric 92.B
 - 3-dimensional App. B, Table 5.IV
- crystal family 92.B
- crystallographic group 92
- crystallographic restriction 92.A
- crystallographic space group 92.A
- crystal system 92.B
- cube 357.B
 - duplication of 179.A
 - Hilbert 382.B
 - unit 139.F 140
 - unit n - 140
- cubic equation 10.D, App. A, Table 1
- cubic map 157.B
- cubic P 92.E
- cubic resolvent App. A, Table 1
- cumulant 397.G
 - factorial 397.G
 - joint 397.I
- cumulative distribution 397.B

- cumulative distribution curve 397.B
- cumulative distribution function 341.B 342.C
- cumulative distribution polygon 397.B
- cup product
 - (of cohomology classes) 201.I
 - (of derived functors) 200.K
 - (in K -theory) 237.C
- cup product reduction theorem (on cohomology or homology groups) 200.M
- curl (of a differentiable vector field) 442.D
- current 125.R
 - 4-, density 150.B
 - integral 275.G
 - partially conserved axial-vector 132.C
 - random 395.I
- current algebra 132.C
- Curtis formulas, Clenshaw- 299.A
- curvature
 - (of a curve of class C^n) 111.D
 - (of a plane curve) 111.E
 - absolute (of a curve) 111.C
 - affine 110.C
 - circle of 111.E
 - conformal 110.D
 - constant, space of 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
 - constant, surface of 111.I
 - Gaussian (of a surface) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - geodesic 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - S. Germain (of a surface) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - holomorphic sectional 364.D
 - integral (of a surface) 111.H
 - line of (on a surface) 111.H
 - Lipschitz-Killing 279.C
 - mean 364.D
 - mean (of a surface) 111.H 365.D, App. A, Table 4.I
 - mean, vector 365.D
 - minimum, property 223.F
 - negative 178.H
 - nonpositive, G -space with 178.H
 - normal (of a surface) 111.H
 - principal (of a surface) 111.H 365.C
 - radius of (of a plane curve) 111.E
 - radius of (of a space curve) 111.F
 - radius of principal (of a surface) 111.H
 - Ricci 364.D
 - Riemannian 364.D
 - scalar 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
 - sectional 364.D
 - total (of an immersion) 365.O
 - total (of a surface) 111.F, H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - total Gaussian (of a surface) 111.H
 - total mean 365.O
- curvature form 80.G 364.D
- curvature tensor
 - (of an affine connection) 80.J, L 417.B
 - (of a Fréchet manifold) 286.L
 - (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.D
 - projective App. A, Table 4.II
 - Weyl conformal 80.P, App. A, Table 4.II
- curve(s) 93 111.A
 - algebraic 9.A
 - analytic (in an analytic manifold) 93.B
 - analytic (in a Euclidean plane) 93.B
 - asymptotic 110.B 111.H
 - Bertrand 111.F
 - bicharacteristic 325.A
 - characteristic (network flow problem) 281.B
 - characteristic (of a 1-parameter family of surfaces) 111.I
 - characteristic (of a partial differential equation) 320.B 324.A, B
 - cissoidal 93.H
 - of class C^k (in a differentiable manifold) 93.B
 - of class C^k (in a Euclidean plane) 93.B
 - closed convex 111.E
 - of constant breadth 89.C
 - of constant inclination 111.F
 - of constant width 111.E
 - continuous plane 93.B
 - coordinate (in a Euclidean space) 90.C
 - covering 9.I
 - Darboux 110.B
 - Delaunay 93.H
 - dual (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
 - elliptic 9.C
 - exceptional 15.G
 - exponential 93.H
 - of the first kind 15.G
 - Fréchet 246.A
 - fundamental (with respect to a birational mapping) 16.I
 - fundamental theorem of the theory of 111.D
 - general 93.D
 - generating 111.I
 - hyperelliptic 9.D
 - influence 371.I
 - integral (of a Monge equation) 324.F
 - integral (of ordinary differential equations) 316.A
 - Jordan 93.B
 - logarithmic 93.H
 - Lorentz 397.F
 - Mannheim 111.F
 - meromorphic 272.L
 - nodal 391.H
 - OC- 404.C
 - ordinary 93.C
 - Peano 93.J
 - pedal 93.H
 - plane App. A, Table 4.I
 - plane algebraic 9.B
 - of pursuit 93.H
 - rational 9.C
 - rational (in a Euclidean plane) 93.H
 - rectifiable 93.F
 - rolling (of a roulette) 93.H
 - of the second class 78.K
 - of the second order 78.I
 - simple closed 93.B
 - sine 93.H
 - solution (of ordinary differential equations) 316.A
 - stable 9.K
 - stationary 46.B
 - stationary (of the Euler-Lagrange differential equations) 324.E
 - of steepest descent 46.A
 - timelike 324.A
 - tooth 181.E
 - in a topological space 93.B
 - transcendental 93.H
 - u - 111.H
 - unicursal 9.C 93.H
 - unicursal ordinary 93.C
 - universal 93.E
 - v - 111.H
 - variation 178.A

Curve fitting

- curve fitting 19.F
 - curve tracing 93.G
 - curvilinear cluster set 62.C
 - curvilinear coordinates 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - orthogonal 90.C
 - planar App. A, Table 3.V
 - in 3-dimensional space App. A, Table 3.V
 - curvilinear coordinate system
 - isothermal App. A, Table 3.V
 - orthogonal App. A, Table 3.V
 - curvilinear integrals 94.A
 - with respect to a line element 94.D
 - with respect to a variable 94.D
 - cushioned refinement 425.X
 - cusp
 - of a curve 93.G
 - of a Fuchsian group 122.C
 - parabolic (of a Fuchsian group) 122.C
 - of a plane algebraic curve 9.B
 - cusp form 450.O
 - in the case of one variable 32.B
 - in Siegel half-space 32.F
 - cuspidal parabolic subgroup 437.X
 - cusp singularity 418.C
 - cut
 - (in a projective space) 343.B
 - (of \mathbf{Q}) 294.E
 - (of \mathbf{R}) 355.A
 - disjunctive 215.C
 - Gomory 215.B
 - subadditive 215.C
 - cut locus 178.A
 - cutoff 150.C
 - cut point (on a geodesic) 178.A
 - cutset (in a graph) 186.G
 - cutset matrix (of a graph), fundamental 186.G
 - cutting (\mathbf{P}^n by \mathbf{P}^r) 343.B
 - cutting plane 215.B
 - fractional, algorithm 215.B
 - CW complex 70.D
 - CW decomposition 70.D
 - CW pair 201.L
 - cybernetics 95
 - cycle
 - (on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 - (of basic sets) 126.J
 - (of a chain complex) 200.H
 - (= cyclic permutation) 151.G
 - (of time series data) 397.N
 - algebraic 450.Q
 - algebraically equivalent 16.R
 - dividing (on an open Riemann surface) 367.I
 - foliation 154.H
 - fundamental (of an oriented pseudomanifold) 65.A
 - fundamental (in a resolution of a singular point) 418.C
 - limit 126.I
 - module of 200.C
 - no, condition 126.J
 - numerically equivalent 16.Q
 - one 16.R
 - positive (on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 - rationally equivalent 16.R
 - Schubert 56.E
 - vanishing 418.F
 - zero 16.R
 - cycle index 66.E
 - cyclic algebra 29.G
 - cyclic code 63.D
 - cyclic determinant 103.G
 - cyclic element 251.K
 - cyclic equation 172.G
 - cyclic extension 172.B
 - cyclic group 190.C
 - cyclic Jacobi method 298.B
 - cyclic part (of an ergodic class) 260.B
 - cyclic representation (Banach algebra) 36.E
 - cyclic representation (topological groups) 437.A
 - cyclic subgroup (of a group) 190.C
 - cyclic vector (of a representation space of a unitary representation) 437.A
 - cyclide 90.B
 - cyclide of Dupin 111.H
 - cycloid 93.H
 - cyclomatic number 186.G
 - cyclotomic field 14.L
 - cyclotomic polynomial 14.L
 - cyclotomic \mathbf{Z}_p -extension 14.L
 - cyclotomy 296.A
 - cylinder
 - circular 111.I 350.B
 - elliptic 350.B
 - hyperbolic 350.B
 - mapping 202.E
 - parabolic 350.B
 - cylinder function
 - elliptic 268.B
 - parabolic 167.C
 - cylinder set 270.H
 - n - 270.G
 - cylindrical coordinates 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - bipolar App. A, Table 3.V
 - circular App. A, Table 3.V
 - elliptic App. A, Table 3.V
 - generalized App. A, Table 3.V
 - hyperbolic App. A, Table 3.V
 - parabolic 167.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - cylindrical equation, parabolic App. A, Table 14.II
 - cylindrical functions 39.B, App. A, Table 19.III
 - cylindrical hypersurface, quadric 350.G
 - cylindrical surface 111.I
 - circular 350.B
 - elliptic 350.B
 - hyperbolic 350.B
 - parabolic 350.B
- D**
- $\delta \rightarrow$ delta
 - $\mathcal{D}(\Omega)$ 125.B 168.B
 - $\mathcal{D}'(\Omega)$ 125.B
 - $\mathcal{D}_{\{M_p\}}, \mathcal{D}_{(M_p)}$ 168.B
 - $\mathcal{D}'_{\{M_p\}}, \mathcal{D}'_{(M_p)}$ 125.U
 - $\mathcal{D}_{L_p}(\Omega)$ (the totality of functions $f(x)$ in $C^\infty(\Omega)$ such that for all α , $D^\alpha f(x)$ belongs to $L_p(\Omega)$ with respect to Lebesgue measure) 168.B
 - δ -measure 270.D
 - Δ -refinement (of a covering) 425.R
 - Δ_n^1 -set 22.D
 - ∂ -functor 200.I
 - universal 200.I
 - ∂^* -functor 200.I
 - $\bar{\partial}$ -complex 72.D
 - $\bar{\partial}$ -cohomology groups 72.D
 - d -continuous channels 213.F
 - d -dimensional analytic set, purely 23.B
 - d -trial path dependent 346.G
 - d'' -cohomology group 72.D
 - D -sufficient σ -field 396.J

- D*-wave 315.E
D-integrable function 100.D
D-integral
 definite 100.D
 indefinite 100.D
D(*)-integral 100.D
d'Alembert criterion App. A, Table 10.II
d'Alembertian 130.A
d'Alembert method of reduction of order 252.F
d'Alembert paradox 205.C
d'Alembert solution 325.D
damped oscillation 318.B
damping ratio (of a damped oscillation) 318.B
Daniell-Stone integrable function 310.I
Daniell-Stone integral 310.I
Danilevskii method 298.D
Darboux curve 110.B
Darboux formula, Christoffel- 317.D
Darboux frame 110.B
Darboux quadric 110.B
Darboux sum 216.A
Darboux tangent 110.B
Darboux theorem 216.A 428.A
Darmois theorem, Skitovich- 374.H
data 96.B
 cross-sectional 128.A
 macroeconomic 128.A
 microeconomic 128.A
 scattering 287.C 387.C
data analysis, statistical 397.A
data base 96.B
data processing 96
data structures 96.B
Davidenko's method of differentiation with respect
 to a parameter 301.M
death insurance 214.B
death process 260.G
 birth and 260.G
death rate, infinitesimal 260.G
Debye asymptotic representation 39.D, App. A,
 Table 19.III
decidable number-theoretic predicate 356.C
decision 127.A
decision function(s) 398.A
 invariant 398.E
 minimax 398.B
 sequential 398.F
 space of 398.A
 statistical 398.A
decision problem 71.B 97 186.J
 n- 398.A
 sequential 398.F
 statistical 398.A
decision procedure, statistical 398.A
decision process, Markov 127.E
decision rule
 sequential 398.F
 terminal 398.F
decision space 398.A
decision theoretically sufficient σ -field 396.J
decoder 213.D
decoding 63.A
decomposable operator (on a Hilbert space) 308.G
decompose (a polygon) 155.F
decomposed into the direct sum of irreducible
 representations 437.G
decomposition
 (of a set) 381.D
 Bruhat (of an algebraic group) 13.K
 canonical (of a closed operator) 251.E
 cellular (of a Hausdorff space) 70.D
 Chevalley (on algebraic groups) 13.I
 cluster, Hamiltonian 375.F
 CW 70.D
 de Rham (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.E
 direct (of a group) 190.L
 Doob-Meyer 262.C
 D-optimality 102.E
 dual direct product (of a decomposition of a
 compact or discrete Abelian group) 422.H
 ergodic (of a Lebesgue measure space) 136.H
 Fefferman-Stein 168.B
 formula of Radon 125.CC
 Heegurard 65.C
 Iwasawa (of a connected semisimple Lie group)
 249.T
 Iwasawa (of a real semisimple Lie algebra)
 248.V
 Jordan (of an additive set function) 380.C
 Jordan (of a function of bounded variation)
 166.B
 Jordan (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 Jordan (in an ordered linear space) 310.B
 Khinchin 395.B
 Lebesgue, theorem 270.L
 Levi (on algebraic groups) 13.Q
 Levi (on Lie algebras) 248.F
 multiplicative Jordan (of a linear transforma-
 tion) 269.L
 Peirce (of a Jordan algebra) 231.B
 Peirce left (in a unitary ring) 368.F
 Peirce right (in a unitary ring) 368.F
 plane wave 125.CC
 polar 251.E
 relative Bruhat 13.Q
 Riesz (in Markov process) 260.D
 Riesz (in martingale) 262.C
 Riesz (of a superharmonic or subharmonic
 function) 193.S
 semimartingale 406.B
 simplicial (of a topological space) 79.C
 singular value (SVD) 302.E
 spectral 126.J
 Wiener-Itô 176.I
 Witt (of a quadratic form) 348.F
 Wold 395.D
 Zariski 15.D
decomposition-equal polygons 155.F
decomposition field (of a prime ideal) 14.K
decomposition group (of a prime ideal) 14.K
decomposition number (of a finite group) 362.I
 generalized (of a finite group) 362.I
decomposition theorem
 canonical 86.C
 in class field theory 59.C
 for dimension 117.C
 Lebesgue (on a completely additive set function)
 380.C
 unique (for a 3-manifold) 65.E
decreasing, monotone 380.B
decreasing C^∞ -function, rapidly 168.B
decreasing distribution, rapidly 125.O
decreasing Fourier hyperfunction, exponentially
 125.BB
decreasing function
 monotone 166.A
 strictly 166.A
 strictly monotone 166.A
decreasing real analytic function, exponentially
 125.BB

Decreasing sequence, monotonically

- decreasing sequence, monotonically (of real numbers) 87.B
- rapidly 168.B
- decrement, logarithmic (of a damped oscillation) 318.B
- Dedekind, J. W. R. 98
- Dedekind, test of du Bois-Reymond and 379.D
- Dedekind axiom of continuity (for real numbers) 355.A
- Dedekind discriminant theorem 14.J
- Dedekind eta function 328.A
- Dedekind principle (in a modular lattice) 243.F
- Dedekind sum 328.A
 - reciprocity law for 328.A
- Dedekind theory of real numbers 294.E
- Dedekind zeta function 14.C 450.D
- deep water wave 205.F
- defect
 - (of a block of representations) 362.I
 - (of a conjugate class in a group) 362.I
 - (of a meromorphic function) 272.E
- defect group
 - of a block of representations 362.I
 - (of a conjugate class in a group) 362.I
- deficiency
 - (of an algebroidal function) 17.C
 - (of a closed operator) 251.D
 - (of a linear system on a surface) 15.C
 - maximal (of an algebraic surface) 15.E
- deficiency index
 - (of a closed symmetric operator) 251.I
 - (of a differential operator) 112.I
- deficient number (in elementary theory of numbers) 297.D
- defined along V' (for a rational mapping) 16.I
- defined over k' (for an algebraic variety) 16.A
- define recursively 356.C
- defining functions (of a hyperfunction) 125.V
 - standard 125.Z
- defining ideal (of a formal spectrum) 16.X
- defining module (of a linear system) 16.N
- defining relations (among the generators of a group) 161.A
- definite
 - negative (function) 394.C
 - negative (Hermitian form) 348.F
 - negative (quadratic form) 348.B
 - positive (function) 36.L 192.B.J 394.C 437.B
 - positive (Hermitian form) 348.F
 - positive (kernel) 217.H
 - positive (matrix) 269.I
 - positive (potential) 338.D
 - positive (quadratic form) 348.B
 - positive (sequence) 192.B
 - semi- (Hermitian form) 348.F
 - semi- (kernel) 217.H
 - totally (quaternion algebra) 27.D
- definite D-integral 100.D
- definite integral 216.C, App. A, Table 9.V
 - (of a hyperfunction) 125.X
- definite quadratic form 348.C
- definition
 - field of 16.A
 - first (of algebraic K -group) 237.J
 - second (of algebraic K -group) 237.J
 - truth 185.D
- definition by mathematical induction 294.B
- definition by transfinite induction 311.C
- deflation
 - in homological algebra 200.M
 - method for an eigenvalue problem 298.C
- deformation
 - (of complex structures) 72.G
 - (of a graph) 186.E
 - infinitesimal, to the direction $\partial/\partial s$ 72.G
 - isomonodromic 253.E
 - isospectral 387.C
 - projective (between surfaces) 110.B
 - of a scheme over a connected scheme 16.W
 - of a surface 110.A
- deformation cochain 305.B
- deformation retract 202.D
 - neighborhood 202.D
 - strong 202.D
- degeneracy (of energy eigenvalues) 351.H
 - set of (of a holomorphic mapping between analytic spaces) 23.C
- degeneracy index 17.C
- degeneracy operator (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
- degenerate
 - (critical point) 106.L 279.B
 - (eigenvalue) 390.A.B
 - (mapping) 208.B
 - (quadratic surface) 350.B
 - (simplex) 70.E
 - totally 234.B
- degenerate kernel 217.F
- degenerate module 118.D
- degenerate series
 - (of unitary representations of a complex semisimple Lie group) 437.W
 - complementary (of unitary representations of a complex semisimple Lie group) 437.W
- degree
 - (of an algebraic element) 149.F
 - (of an algebraic equation) 10.A
 - (of an algebraic variety) 16.G
 - (of an angle) 139.D
 - (of a central simple algebra) 29.E
 - (of a divisor class) 11.D
 - (of a divisor of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (of an element with respect to a prime ideal of a Dedekind domain) 439.F
 - (of an extension) 149.F
 - (of a graph) 186.B
 - (of a Jordan algebra) 231.B
 - (of a linear representation) 362.D
 - (of a matrix representation) 362.D
 - (of an ordinary differential equation) 313.A
 - (of a permutation representation) 362.B
 - (of a polynomial) 337.A
 - (of a prime divisor) 9.D
 - (of a rational homomorphism) 3.C
 - (of a representation of a Lie algebra) 248.B
 - (of a representation of a Lie group) 249.O
 - (of a square matrix) 269.A
 - (of a term of a polynomial) 337.B
 - (of a valuation) 439.I
 - (of a 0-cycle on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 - complementary (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
 - of covering (of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
 - filtration 200.J
 - formal (of a unitary representation) 437.M
 - of freedom (of the dynamical system) 271.F
 - of freedom (of error sum of squares) 403.E
 - of freedom (of sampling distributions) 374.B
 - in- 186.B
 - Leray-Schauder 286.D
 - local, of mapping 99.B

- mapping 99.A
- of mapping 99.A
- out- 186.B
- of the point 99.D
- of a prime divisor of an algebraic function field
 - of dimension 1 9.D
- of ramification (of a branch point) 367.B
- of recursive unsolvability 97
- relative (of a finite extension) 257.D
- relative (of a prime ideal over a field) 14.I
- of symmetry 431.D
- total (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
- transcendence (of a field extension) 149.K
- of transcendency (of a field extension) 149.K
- of unsolvability 97
- degree k
 - holomorphic differential forms of 72.A
 - tensor space of 256.J
- degree n
 - alternating group of 151.G
 - component of 200.B
 - general linear group of 60.B
 - projective general linear group of 60.B
 - Siegel modular function of 32.F
 - Siegel modular group of 32.F
 - Siegel space of 32.F
 - Siegel upper half-space of 32.F
 - special linear group of 60.B
 - symmetric group of 151.G
- degree p , contravariant tensor of 256.J
- degree q , covariant tensor of 256.J
- degree r
 - differential form of 105.Q
 - differential form of (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 - mean of (of a function with respect to a weight function) 211.C
- Dehn lemma (on 3-manifolds) 65.E
- Dejon-Nickel method 301.G
- Delaunay curve 93.H
- delay convention, perfect 51.F
- delay-differential equation 163.A
- delayed recurrent event 260.C
- Delos problem (in geometric construction) 179.A
- delta, Kronecker 269.A, App. A, Table 4.II
- delta function, Dirac App. A, Table 12.II
- demography 40.D
- de Moivre formula 74.C
- de Moivre-Laplace theorem 250.B
- de Morgan law 381.B
 - in a Boolean algebra 42.A
- Denjoy-Carleman condition 168.B
- Denjoy integrable in the wider sense 100.D
- Denjoy integrals 100
 - in the restricted sense 100.D
- Denjoy-Luzin theorem 159.I
- denominator, partial (of an infinite continued fraction) 83.A
- dense
 - (set) 425.N
 - (totally ordered set) 311.B
 - locally 154.D
 - nowhere 425.N
 - relatively 126.E
 - Zariski 16.A
- dense in itself 425.O
- denseness of rational numbers 355.B
- density
 - (on a maximal torus) 248.Y
 - (of a set of prime ideals) 14.S
 - (of a subset of integers) 4.A
 - angular momentum 150.B
 - beta 397.D
 - bivariate normal 397.I
 - conditional 397.I
 - cospectral 397.N
 - electric flux 130.A
 - energy 195.B
 - 4-current 150.B
 - free Lagrangian 150.B
 - gamma 397.D
 - joint 397.I
 - kinetic 218.A
 - Lagrangian 150.B
 - magnetic flux 130.A
 - point of (of a measurable set of the real line) 100.B
 - posterior 401.B
 - prior 401.B
 - probability 341.D
 - sojourn time 45.G
- density function 397.D
 - bispectral 421.C
 - marginal 397.I
 - normal 397.D
 - rational spectral 176.F
- density matrix 351.B
- density theorem
 - (on discrete subgroups of a Lie group) 122.F
 - Chebotarev 14.S
 - Kaplansky 308.C
 - Lebesgue 100.B
 - von Neumann 308.C
- dependence, domain of 325.B
- dependent
 - algebraically (elements of a ring) 369.A
 - algebraically (on a family of elements of a field) 149.K
 - functionally (components of a mapping) 208.C
 - functionally, of class C^r (components of a mapping) 208.C
 - linearly (elements in a linear space) 256.C
 - linearly (elements in an additive group) 2.E
 - linearly (with respect to a difference equation) 104.D
 - path, d -trial 346.G
- dependent points
 - (in an affine space) 7.A
 - (in a projective space) 343.B
- dependent set 66.G
- dependent variable 165.C
- depending choice, principle of 33.F
- depth (of an ideal) 67.E
- de Rham cohomology group 201.H
- de Rham cohomology group (of a differentiable manifold) 105.R
- de Rham cohomology ring (of a differentiable manifold) 105.R
- de Rham cohomology ring (of a topological space) 201.I
- de Rham complex (as an elliptic complex) 237.H
- de Rham decomposition (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.E
- de Rham equations 274.G
- de Rham homology theory 114.L
- de Rham system, partial 274.G
- de Rham theorem (on a C^∞ -manifold) 105.V 201.H
 - analog of 21.L

derivable

- approximately (measurable function) 100.B
- in the general sense (a set function) 380.D
- in the ordinary sense (a set function) 380.D

derivation

- (of an algebra) 200.I
- (of an algebraic function field) 16.O
- (of a commutative ring) 113
- (of a field) 149.L
- (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
- (of a linear operator in a C^* -algebra) 36.K
- $*$ - 36.K
- inner (in an associative algebra) 200.L
- inner (in a Lie algebra) 248.H
- invariant (on an Abelian variety) 3.F
- over k 149.L
- Lie algebra of 248.H

derivation tree 31.E

derivative

- (of a distribution) 125.E
- (of a function) 106.A
- (of a holomorphic function) 198.A
- (of a hyperfunction) 125.X
- (of a polynomial) 337.G
- (of an element in a differential ring) 113
- angular (of a holomorphic function) 43.K
- approximate (of a measurable function) 100.B
- covariant (of a tensor field) 80.I, App. A, Table 4.II
- covariant (of a tensor field in the direction of a tangent vector) 417.B
- covariant (of a vector field) 80.I
- covariant (of a vector field along a curve) 80.I
- directional 106.G
- distribution 125.E
- exterior (of a differential form) 105.Q
- first-order 106.A
- Fréchet 286.E
- free 235.C
- Gâteaux 286.E
- general (of a set function) 380.D
- generalized 125.E
- general lower (of a set function) 380.D
- general upper (of a set function) 380.D
- higher-order (of a differentiable function) 106.D, App. A, Table 9.III
- higher-order partial 106.H
- Lagrangian 205.A
- left (on the left) 106.A
- Lie (of a differential form) 105.Q
- Lie (of a tensor field) 105.O
- normal 106.G
- n th (of a differentiable function) 106.D
- ordinary (of a set function) 380.D
- ordinary lower (of a set function) 380.D
- ordinary upper (of a set function) 380.D
- partial 106.F,K
- partial, n th order 106.H
- at a point 106.A
- Radon-Nikodým 380.C
- right (on the right) 106.A
- Schwarzian App. A, Table 9.III
- spherical (for an analytic or meromorphic function) 435.E
- variational 46.B
- weak 125.E

derivatives and primitive functions App. A, Table 9.I

derived (language) 31.D

derived algebra (of a Lie algebra) 248.C

derived function 106.A

n th 106.D

derived group (of a group) 190.H

derived neighborhood 65.C

second barycentric 65.C

derived normal model (of a variety) 16.F

derived series (of a Lie algebra) 248.C

derived set (of a set) 425.O

derived sheaf 125.W

derived unit 414.P

Desarguesian geometry, non- 155.E 343.C

Desargues theorem 155.E 343.C

Descartes, R. 101

folium of 93.H

Descartes theorem 10.E

descending central series (of a Lie algebra) 248.C

descending chain

(in a lattice) 243.F

(of (normal) subgroups of a group) 190.F

(in an ordered set) 311.C

descending chain condition

(for a (normal) subgroup of a group) 190.F

(in an ordered set) 311.C

descent

curve of steepest 46.A

line of swiftest 93.H

method of steepest 212.C

descriptive set theory

classical 356.H

effective 356.H

design

block (\rightarrow block design)

central composite 102.M

completely randomized 102.A

factorial 102.H

first-order 102.M

fractional factorial 102.I

second-order 102.M

Youden square 102.K

design matrix 102.A 403.D

design-of-experiment analysis 403.D

design of experiments 102

designs for estimating parameters 102.M

designs for exploring a response surface 102.M

designs for two-way elimination of heterogeneity 102.K

desingularization (of an analytic space) 23.D

de Sitter space 355.D

desuspend 114.L

detecting, error- 63.A

determinacy

axiom of 22.H

projective 22.H

determinant(s) 103

(of an element of the general linear group over a noncommutative field) 60.O

(of a nuclear operator) 68.L

Casorati 104.D

critical 182.B

cyclic 103.G

Fredholm 217.E

Gramian 103.G 208.E

Hankel 142.E

Hill 268.B

infinite (in Hill's method of solution) 268.B

Jacobian 208.B

of a lattice 182.B

Lopatinski 325.K

Pfaffian 103.G

Vandermonde 103.G

Wronskian 208.E

- determinantal equation, Hill 268.B
- determinant factor (of a matrix) 269.E
- determinateness, axiom of 33.F
- determination, coefficient of 397.H,J
- determination, orbit 309.A
- determined system
 - of differential operators 112.R
 - of partial differential equations 320.F
- determining set (of a domain in \mathbb{C}^n) 21.C
- deterministic
 - (in prediction theory) 395.D
 - (Turing machine) 31.B
- deterministic linear bounded automaton 31.D
- deterministic process 127.B
- Deuring-Heilbronn phenomenon 123.D
- developable function, asymptotically 30.A
- developable space 425.AA
- developable surface 111.I
- development
 - along a curve 364.B
 - of a curve 80.N 111.H 364.B
- deviation
 - large 250.B
 - mean absolute 397.C
 - standard 341.B 342.C 397.C
- deviation point 335.B
- devices, peripheral 75.B
- de Vries equation, Korteweg- 387.A
- (DF)-space 424.P
- DFT (Discrete Fourier Transform) 142.D
- diagonal (of a Cartesian product of sets) 381.B 436.A
- diagonalizable (linear transformation) 269.L
- diagonalizable operator (in an Abelian von Neumann algebra) 308.G
- diagonal mapping (of a graded coalgebra) 203.B,F
- diagonal matrix 269.A
- diagonal morphism (in a category) 52.E
- diagonal partial sum (of a double series) 379.E
- diagonal sum (of a matrix) 269.F
- diagram 52.C
 - (of a symmetric Riemann space) 413.F
 - arrow 281.D
 - associated (in irreducible representations of orthogonal groups) 60.J
 - in a category 52.C
 - commutative 52.C
 - Coxeter (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.S
 - Dynkin (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.S, App. A, Table 5.I
 - extended Dynkin App. A, Table 5.I
 - Feynman 146.B
 - mutually associated 60.J
 - Newton 254.D
 - Satake (of a compact symmetric Riemannian space) 437.AA
 - Satake (of a real semisimple Lie algebra) 248.U, App. A, Table 5.II
 - scatter 397.H
 - Schläfli (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.S
 - Young 362.H
- diameter
 - (of a central conic) 78.G
 - (of a solid sphere) 140
 - (of a subset in a metric space) 273.B
 - conjugate (of a diameter of a central conic) 78.G
 - transfinite 48.D
- diathermal wall 419.A
- dichotomy 398.C
- Dido's problem 228.A
- dielectric constant 130.B
- Dieudonné complete 436.I
- Dieudonné theorem 425.X
- diffeomorphic \mathbb{C}^∞ -manifolds 105.J
- diffeomorphism(s)
 - Anosov 126.J 136.G
 - Axiom A 126.J
 - \mathbb{C}^* - (in nonlinear functional analysis) 286.E
 - of class \mathbb{C}^* 105.J
 - group of orientation-preserving 114.I
 - horse-shoe 126.J
 - minimal 126.N
 - Morse-Smale 126.J
 - Y- 136.G
- diffeotopy theorem 178.E
- difference 102.E 104.A
 - backward 223.C, App. A, Table 21
 - central 223.C 304.E, App. A, Table 21
 - divided 223.D
 - finite 223.C
 - forward 304.E
 - of the n th order 104.A
 - primary 305.C
 - second 104.A
 - symmetric 304.E
 - of two sets 381.B
- difference analog 304.E
- difference cocycle 305.B
- difference-differential equation 163.A
- difference equation 104
 - geometric 104.G
 - homogeneous 104.C
 - inhomogeneous 104.C
 - linear 104.C
 - nonhomogeneous 104.C
- difference group (of an additive group) 190.C
- difference method 303.A
- difference product 337.I
- difference quotient 104.A
- difference scheme 304.F
 - of backward type 304.F
 - of forward type 304.F
- difference set 102.E
- difference table 223.C
- different
 - (of an algebraic number field) 14.J
 - (of a maximal order) 27.B
 - relative 14.J
- differentiable
 - complex function 21.C
 - Fréchet 286.E
 - Gâteaux 286.E
 - infinitely 106.K
 - left (on the left) 106.A
 - n -times 106.D
 - n -times continuously 106.K
 - with respect to the parameter (a distribution) 125.H
 - partially 106.F
 - at a point (a complex function) 198.A
 - at a point (a real function) 106.A
 - right (on the right) 106.A
 - in the sense of Stolz 106.G
 - on a set 106.A
 - termwise (infinite series with function terms) 379.H
 - totally 21.C 106.G

Differentiable dynamical system of class C^r

- differentiable dynamical system of class C^r 126.B
- differentiable manifold(s) 105
 - with boundary of class C^r 105.E
 - of class C^r 105.D
 - Riemann-Roch theorem for 237.G
- differentiable mapping of class C^r 105.J
 - differential of (at a point) 105.J
- differentiable pinching problem 178.E
- differentiable semigroup 378.F
- differentiable slice theorem 431.C
- differentiable structure(s) 114.B
 - of class C^r 105.D
 - group of oriented (on a combinatorial sphere) 114.I
- differentiable transformation group 431.C
- differential
 - (= boundary operator) 200.H
 - (= coboundary operator) 200.F
 - (of a differentiable function) 106.B
 - (of a differentiable mapping at a point) 105.J
 - (of a function on a differentiable manifold) 105.I
 - (Fréchet derivative) 286.E
 - Abelian (of the first, second, third kind) 11.C 367.H
 - analytic (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
 - conjugate (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
 - covariant (of a differential form) 80.G
 - covariant (of a tensor field) 80.I, L 417.B
 - covariant (of a vector field) 80.I
 - exterior (of a differential form) 105.Q
 - harmonic (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
 - holomorphic (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
 - kernel 188.G
 - meromorphic (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
 - n th (of a differentiable function) 106.D
 - of n th order (of a differentiable function) 106.D
 - \mathfrak{D} - (on an algebraic curve) 9.F
 - partial 200.H
 - quadratic (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 - r th (Fréchet derivative) 286.E
 - stochastic 406.C
 - total 106.G 200.H 367.H
- differential analyzer 19.E
- differential and integral calculus App. A, Table 9
- differential automorphism 113
- differential calculus 106
- differential coefficient 106.A
 - partial 106.A
- differential cross section 375.A 386.B
- differential divisor (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
- differential divisor class (of a Riemann surface) 11.D
- differential equation(s) 313.A
 - adjoint 252.K
 - algebraic 113 288.A
 - almost periodic 290.A
 - Beltrami 352.B
 - Bernoulli App. A, Table 14.I
 - Bessel 39.B, App. A, Table 14.II
 - Briot-Bouquet 288.B 289.B
 - Caianiello 291.F
 - Cauchy-Riemann 198.A
 - Cauchy-Riemann (for a holomorphic function of several complex variables) 21.C
 - Cauchy-Riemann (for a holomorphic function of two complex variables) 320.F
 - Chaplygin 326.B
 - Chebyshev App. A, Table 14.I
 - Cherwell-Wright 291.F
 - Clairaut App. A, Table 14.I
 - Clairaut partial App. A, Table 15.II
 - confluent 167.A
 - confluent hypergeometric 167.A, App. A, Table 14.II
 - delay 163.A
 - with deviating argument 163.A
 - difference- 163.A
 - Duffing 290.C
 - elliptic partial App. A, Table 15.VI
 - Emden 291.F
 - Euler (in dynamics of rigid bodies) 271.E
 - Euler-Lagrange 46.B
 - Euler linear ordinary App. A, Table 14.I
 - exact App. A, Table 14.I
 - Fokker-Planck partial 115.A
 - functional- 163.A
 - Gauss hypergeometric App. A, Table 14.II
 - Gaussian 206.A
 - generalized Lamé 167.E
 - generalized Riccati App. A, Table 14.I
 - Hamilton 324.E
 - Hamilton-Jacobi 23.B 324.E
 - Helmholtz 188.D, App. A, Table 15.VI
 - Hermite App. A, Tables 14.II 20.III
 - Hill 268.B
 - Hodgkin-Huxley 291.F
 - hyperbolic 325
 - hyperbolic partial 325
 - hypergeometric 206.A, App. A, Table 18.I
 - hyperspherical 393.E
 - integro- 163.A 222
 - integro-, of Fredholm type 222.A
 - integro-, of Volterra type 222.A
 - Jacobi App. A, Tables 14.II 20.V
 - Killing 364.F
 - Kummer App. A, Table 19.I
 - with lag 163.A
 - Lagrange 320.A, App. A, Table 14.I
 - Lagrange partial App. A, Table 15.II
 - Laguerre App. A, Tables 14.II 20.VI
 - Lame 113.B
 - Laplace 323.A, App. A, Table 15.III
 - Laplace, in the 2-dimensional case App. A, Table 15.VI
 - Laplace, in the 3-dimensional case App. A, Table 15.VI
 - Legendre 393.B, App. A, Table 14.II
 - Legendre associated 393.A
 - Liénard 290.C
 - linear ordinary 252.A 313.A
 - linear partial 320.A
 - Löwner 438.B
 - Mathieu 268.A
 - matrix Riccati 86.E
 - modified Mathieu 268.A
 - Monge 324.F
 - Monge-Ampère 278.A, App. A, Table 15.III
 - nonlinear ordinary 313.A
 - nonlinear partial 320.A
 - ordinary 313
 - partial 313.A 320
 - partial, of elliptic type 323
 - partial, of hyperbolic type 325
 - partial, of mixed type 326
 - partial, of parabolic type 327
 - Poisson 323.A, App. A, Table 15.III
 - polytropic 291.F
 - rational 288.A

- related 254.F
- with retardation 163.A
- retarded 163.A
- Riccati App. A, Table 14.I
- Riemann App. A, Table 18.I
- self-adjoint 252.K
- self-adjoint system of 252.K
- stochastic 342.A 406
- Stokes 167.E 188.E
- strongly nonlinear 290.C
- system of, of Maurer-Cartan 249.R
- system of hyperbolic (in the sense of Petrovskii) 325.G
- system of linear, of the first order 252.G
- system of ordinary 313.B
- system of partial, of order l (on a differentiable manifold) 428.F
- system of total 428.A
- Tissot-Pochhammer 206.C
- total 428.A, App. A, Table 15.I
- Tricomi 326.C
- van der Pol 290.C
- weakly nonlinear 290.C
- Weber 167.C, App. A, Table 20.III
- Weber-Hermite 167.C
- Whittaker 167.B, App. A, Tables 14.II 19.II
- differential extension ring 113
- differential field 113
 - Galois theory of 113
- differential form 105.Q
 - closed 105.Q
 - of degree l 105.O
 - of degree r 105.Q
 - of degree r (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 - divisor of (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 - exact 105.Q
 - exterior, of degree r 105.Q
 - of the first kind (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 - of the first kind (on a nonsingular curve) 9.E
 - harmonic 194.B
 - holomorphic, of degree k 72.A
 - invariant (on an Abelian variety) 3.F
 - of Maurer-Cartan 249.R
 - primitive 232.B
 - of the second kind (on a nonsingular curve) 9.E
 - of the third kind (on a nonsingular curve) 9.E
 - of type (r, s) 72.C
- differential geometry 109, App. A, Table 4
 - affine 110.C
 - conformal 110.D
 - projective 110.B
- differential geometry in specific spaces 110
- differential geometry of curves and surfaces 111
- differential ideal 113
 - of a differential ring 113
 - involutive 428.E
 - prime (of a differential ring) 113
 - semiprime (of a differential ring) 113
 - sheaf on a real analytic manifold 428.E
- differential index (in a covering of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
- differential invariant
 - fundamental (of a surface) 110.B
 - on an m -dimensional surface 110.A
 - Poincaré 74.G
- differential law 107.A
- differential operator(s) 112 223.C 306.B
 - Beltrami, of the first kind App. A, Table 4.II
 - Beltrami, of the second kind App. A, Table 4.II
 - elliptic 112.A
 - of the k th order 237.H
 - ordinary 112.A
 - partial 112.A
 - pseudo- 345
 - strongly elliptic 112.G 323.H
 - system of 112.R
- differential polynomial(s) 113
- ring of 113
- differential quotient (at a point) 106.A
- differential representation (of a unitary representation of a Lie group) 439.S
- differential rings 113
- differential subring 113
- differential system 191.I
 - restricted 191.I
- differential topology 114
- differential variable 113
- differentiation
 - (in a commutative ring) 113
 - (of a differential function) 106.A
 - graphical 19.B
 - higher (in a commutative ring) 113
 - logarithmic App. A, Table 9.I
 - numerical 299.E
 - partial 106.F
 - theorem of termwise (on distribution) 125.G
 - of a vector field App. A, Table 3.II
- diffraction (of waves) 446
- diffusion, Ehrenfest model of 260.A
- diffusion-convection equation 304.B
- diffusion kernel 338.N
- diffusion process 115
 - on manifolds 115.D
 - multidimensional 115.C
- digamma function 174.B
- digital computer 75.B
- digital quantity 138.B
- dihedral group 151.G
- dilatation
 - in Laguerre geometry 76.B
 - maximal 352.B
- dilated maximum principle (in potential theory) 338.C
- dilation (of a linear operator) 251.M
 - power 251.M
 - strong 251.M
 - unitary 251.M
- dilation theorem 251.M
- dimension
 - (of an affine space) 7.A
 - (of an algebraic variety) 16.A
 - (of an analytic set) 23.B
 - (of an automorphic form) 32.B
 - (of a cell complex) 70.D
 - (of a convex cell in an affine space) 7.D
 - (of a divisor class on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 - (of a Euclidean simplicial complex) 70.B
 - (of a free module) 277.G
 - (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 - (of a linear space) 256.C
 - (of a linear system of divisors) 9.C 16.N
 - (of a physical quantity) 116
 - (of a projective space) 343.B
 - (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (of a topological space) 117
 - algebraic (of an algebraic surface) 72.F
 - capacity 48.G

Dimension — k

- cohomological (of an associative algebra) 200.L
- cohomological (of a scheme) 16.E
- cohomological (of a topological space) 117.F
- complex (of a complex manifold) 72.A
- covering (of a normal space) 117.B
- decomposition theorem for 117.C
- geometric (of a vector bundle) 114.D
- global (of an analytic set) 23.B
- global (of a ring) 200.K
- harmonic (of a Heins end) 367.E
- Hausdorff 117.G 234.E 246.K
- homological (of a module) 200.K
- homological (of a topological space) 117.F
- injective (of a module) 200.K
- Kodaira (of a compact complex manifold) 72.I
- Krull 67.E
- large inductive 117.B
- Lebesgue (of a normal space) 117.B
- left global (of a ring) 200.K
- local (of an analytic set at a point) 23.B
- product theorem for 117.C
- projective (of a module) 200.K
- right global (of a ring) 200.K
- small inductive 117.B
- sum theorem for 117.C
- theorem on invariance of, of Euclidean spaces 117.D
- weak (of a module) 200.K
- weak global (of a ring) 200.K
- dimension — k
 - automorphic form of 32.B
 - Fuchsian form of 32.B
 - Hilbert modular form of 32.G
 - Siegel modular form of 32.F
- dimensional analysis 116
- dimensional formula 116
- dimension function (on a continuous geometry) 85.A
- dimension theorem
 - (of affine geometry) 7.A
 - (on modular lattice) 243.F
 - (of projective geometry) 343.B
- dimension theory 117
- dimension type (of a topological space) 117.H
- Dini-Hukuhara theorem 314.D
- Dini-Lipschitz test (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
- Dini series 39.C
- Dini surface 111.I
- Dini test (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
- Dini theorem (on uniform convergence) 435.B
- Diocles, cissoid of 93.H
- Diophantine (relation) 97
- Diophantine analysis 296.A
- Diophantine approximation 182.F
- Diophantine equations 118
- Dirac delta function App. A, Table 12.II
- Dirac distribution 125.C
- Dirac equation 377.C 415.G
- Dirac field, free 377.C
- Dirac γ -matrix 415.G
- Dirac hole theory 415.G
- Dirac matrix 377.C
- direct analytic continuation 198.G
- direct circle 78.D
- direct closed path 186.F
- direct decomposition (on a group) 190.L
- directed family 165.D
- directed graph 186.B
- directed set 311.D
- direct factor
 - (of a direct product of sets) 381.E
 - (of a group) 190.L
- direct image (of a sheaf) 383.G
- direct integral 308.G
 - of unitary representations 437.H
- direction
 - asymptotic 111.H
 - Borel (of a meromorphic function) 272.F
 - Julia (of a transcendental entire function) 429.C
 - positive (in a curvilinear integral) 198.B
 - principal (of a surface) 111.H
- directional derivative 106.G
- direction ratio (of a line in an affine space) 7.F
- direct limit (of a direct system of sets) 210.B
- direct method 46.E 302.B
- direct path 186.F
- direct product
 - (of algebras) 29.A
 - (of distributions) 125.K
 - (of a family of lattices) 243.C
 - (of a family of ordered sets) 311.F
 - (of a family of sets) 381.E
 - (of a family of topological groups) 423.C
 - (of a family of topological spaces) 425.K
 - (of groups) 190.L
 - (of G -sets) 362.B
 - (of Lie groups) 249.H
 - (of mappings) 381.C
 - (of measurable transformations) 136.D
 - (of modules) 277.F
 - (of objects of a category) 52.E
 - (of rings) 368.E
 - (of sets) 381.B
 - (of sheaves) 383.I
 - restricted (of an infinite number of groups) 190.L
 - restricted (of locally compact groups) 6.B
 - semi- (of groups) 190.N
- direct product decomposition 190.L
 - dual 422.H
- directrix (of an ellipse) 78.B
 - of Wilczynski 110.B
- direct set, increasing 308.A
- direct sum
 - (of a family of ordered sets) 311.F
 - (of a family of sets) 381.E
 - (of G -sets) 362.B
 - (of Hilbert spaces) 197.E
 - (of ideals of a ring) 368.F
 - (of an infinite number of groups) 190.L
 - (of Lie algebras) 248.A
 - (of linear representations) 362.C
 - (of linear spaces) 256.F
 - (of modules) 277.B,F
 - (of a mutually disjoint family of sets) 381.D
 - (of quadratic forms) 348.E
 - (of sheaves) 383.I
 - (of topological groups) 423.C
 - (of two objects) 52.E
 - (of unitary representations) 437.G
 - integral 308.G
 - topological (of topological spaces) 425.M
- direct summand (of a direct sum of sets) 381.E
- direct system (of sets) 210.B
- direct transcendental singularity 198.P
- Dirichlet, P. G. L. 119

Dirichlet algebra 164.B
 weak* 164.G
 Dirichlet character 295.D
 Dirichlet discontinuous factor App. A, Table 9.V
 Dirichlet distribution 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 Dirichlet divisor problem 242.A
 Dirichlet domain 120.A
 Dirichlet drawer principle 182.F
 Dirichlet form 261.C
 regular 261.C
 Dirichlet function 84.D 221.A
 Dirichlet functional 334.C
 Dirichlet integral
 (in the Dirichlet problem) 120.F
 (in Fourier's single integral theorem) 160.B
 Dirichlet kernel 159.B
 Dirichlet L -function 450.C
 Dirichlet principle 120.A 323.C
 Dirichlet problem 120 293.F 323.C
 Dirichlet problem with obstacle 440.B
 Dirichlet region 234.C
 Dirichlet series 121.A
 ordinary 121.A
 of the type $\{\lambda_n\}$ 121.A
 Dirichlet space 338.Q
 Dirichlet test (on Abel partial summation) 379.D
 Dirichlet test (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
 Dirichlet theorem
 (of absolute convergence) 379.C
 (on the distribution of primes in arithmetical progression) 123.D
 Dirichlet unit theorem 14.D
 discharge of double negation 411.I
 discharging 157.D
 disconnected, extremely 37.M
 disconnected metric space, totally 79.D
 discontinuity
 of the first kind 84.B
 fixed point of (of a stochastic process) 407.A
 at most of the first kind 84.B
 region of 234.A
 discontinuity formula 146.C 386.C
 discontinuity point 84.B
 of the first kind 84.B
 of the second kind 84.B
 discontinuous distribution, purely 341.D
 discontinuous factor, Dirichlet App. A, Table 9.V
 discontinuous groups 122
 of the first kind 122.B
 discontinuous transformation group 122.A
 properly 122.A
 discontinuum, Cantor 79.D
 discrete covering 425.R
 σ - 425.R
 discrete C^r -flow 126.B
 discrete dynamical system of class C^r 126.B
 discrete flow 126.B
 of class C^r 126.B
 discrete Fourier transform 142.D
 discrete mathematics 66.A
 discrete memoryless channels 213.F
 discrete metric space 273.B
 discrete semiflow 126.B
 of class C^r 126.B
 discrete series (of unitary representations of a semi-simple Lie group) 437.X
 discrete series, principal 258.C
 discrete set 425.O

discrete spectrum 136.E 390.E
 quasi- 136.E
 discrete topological space 425.C
 discrete topology 425.C
 discrete uniformity 436.D
 discrete valuation 439.E
 discrete valuation ring 439.E
 discrete variable method 303.A
 discrete von Neumann algebra 308.E
 discretization error 303.B
 discriminant
 (of an algebraic equation) 337.J
 (of an algebraic number field) 14.B
 (of a binary quadratic form) 348.M
 (of a curve of the second order) 78.I
 (of a family of curves) 93.I
 (of a quadratic form) 348.A
 (of a simple ring) 27.B
 fundamental 295.D
 relative 14.J
 discriminant function, linear 280.I
 discriminant theorem, Dedekind 14.J
 disintegration 270.L
 disjoint family, mutually (of sets) 381.D
 disjoint sets 381.B
 disjoint sum 381.B
 disjoint union 381.B
 of a mutually disjoint family of sets 381.D
 disjoint unitary representations 437.C
 disjunction (of propositions) 411.B
 disjunctive cuts 215.C
 disjunctive programming 264.C
 disk 140
 circular 140
 n - 140
 open 140
 open n - 140
 unit 140
 disk algebra 164.B
 disk theorem (on meromorphic functions) 272.J
 dispersion 397.C
 dispersion relations 132.C
 dispersive
 (flow) 126.E
 (linear operator) 286.Y
 dispersive wave 446
 displacement
 electric 130.A
 parallel (of a tangent vector space) 80.H 364.B
 parallel, along a curve 80.C
 dissection, Farey 4.B
 dissipative (operator) 251.J 286.C
 maximal 251.J
 dissipative part (of a state space) 260.B
 distance
 (in Euclidean geometry) 139.E
 (in a metric space) 273.B
 Euclidean 139.E
 extremal 143.B
 Fréchet (between surfaces) 246.I
 Hamming 63.B 136.E
 Lévy 341.F
 Mahalanobis generalized 280.E
 non-Euclidean (in a Klein model) 285.C
 optical 180.A
 perihelion 309.B
 reduced extremal 143.B
 distance function 273.B
 pseudo- 273.B

Distinct differentiable structures

- distinct differentiable structures 114.B
- distinct system of parameters 284.D
- distinguishable, finitely (hypothesis) 400.K
- distinguished basis, strongly 418.F
- distinguished pseudopolynomial 21.E
- distortion function, rate 213.E
- distortion inequalities 438.B
- distortion measure 213.E
- distortion theorem 438.B
- distributed
 - asymptotically 374.D
 - uniformly 182.H
- distribution(s) 125
 - (on a differentiable manifold) 125.R
 - (of random variables) 342.C
 - (of a vector bundle) 428.D
 - a posteriori 398.B
 - a priori 398.B
 - asymptotically normal 399.K
 - beta 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - Beurling generalized 125.U
 - binomial 341.D 397.F, App. A, Table 22
 - bivariate 397.H
 - capacity mass 338.K
 - Cauchy 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - chi-square 374.A, App. A, Table 22
 - conditional probability 342.E
 - continuous 341.D
 - converge in (a sequence of random variables) 342.D
 - covariance 395.C
 - cumulative 397.B
 - Dirac 125.C
 - Dirichlet 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - double, potential of 338.A
 - entropy of a 403.B
 - equilibrium, Gibbs 136.C
 - equilibrium mass 338.K
 - exponential 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - exponential family of 396.G
 - F - 341.D 374.B, App. A, Table 22
 - fiducial 401.F
 - finite-dimensional 407.A
 - of finite order 125.J
 - function, empirical 374.D
 - gamma 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - Gaussian 341.D
 - geometric 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - hypergeometric 341.D 397.F, App. A, Table 22
 - infinitely divisible 341.G
 - initial 261.A
 - initial law 406.D
 - integrable 125.N
 - invariant (of a Markov chain) 260.A
 - invariant (second quantization) 377.C
 - involutive (on a differentiable manifold) 428.D
 - joint 342.C
 - k -dimensional normal 341.D
 - k -Erlang 260.H
 - k th-order asymptotic 399.O
 - L - 341.G
 - lattice 341.D
 - law, Maxwell-Boltzmann 402.B
 - least favorable 400.B
 - least favorable a priori 398.H
 - limit 250.A
 - logarithmic App. A, Table 22
 - logarithmic normal App. A, Table 22
 - marginal 342.C 397.H
 - multidimensional hypergeometric App. A, Table 22
 - multidimensional normal App. A, Table 22
 - multinomial 341.D
 - multiple hypergeometric 341.D
 - multivariate normal 397.J
 - n -dimensional 342.C
 - n -dimensional probability 342.C
 - negative binomial 341.D 397.F, App. A, Table 22
 - negative multinomial 341.D
 - negative polynomial App. A, Table 22
 - noncentral chi-square 374.B
 - noncentral F - 374.B
 - noncentral t - 374.B
 - noncentral Wishart 374.C
 - normal 341.D 397.C, App. A, Table 22
 - one-dimensional probability, of a random variable 342.C
 - one-side stable for exponent $1/2$ App. A, Table 22
 - operator-valued 150.D
 - p -dimensional noncentral Wishart 374.C
 - Pearson 397.D
 - pluriharmonic 21.C
 - Poisson 341.D 397.F, App. A, Table 22
 - polynomial App. A, Table 22
 - population 396.B 401.F
 - positive 125.C
 - posterior 401.B 403.G
 - predictive 403.G
 - of prime numbers 123
 - prior 401.B 403.G
 - probability 342.B, App. A, Table 22
 - probability, of a random variable 342.C
 - purely discontinuous 341.D
 - quasistable 341.G
 - random 395.H 407.C
 - random, with independent values at every point 407.C
 - random, in the wider sense 395.C 407.C
 - rapidly decreasing 125.O
 - rectangular App. A, Table 22
 - sampling 374.A
 - semistable 341.G
 - simple, potential of 338.A
 - simultaneous 342.C
 - slowly increasing 125.N
 - stable 341.G
 - standard Gaussian 176.A
 - standard normal 341.D
 - strictly stationary random 395.H
 - strongly stationary random 395.H
 - substituted 125.Q
 - t - 341.D 374.B, App. A, Table 22
 - tempered 125.N
 - two-sided exponential App. A, Table 22
 - of typical random variables App. A, Table 22
 - ultra-, of class $\{M_p\}$ or (M_p) 125.U, BB
 - uniform 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - unit 341.D
 - value 124.A
 - of values of functions of a complex variable 124
 - waiting time 307.C
 - weakly stationary random 395.C
 - Wishart 374.C
 - z - 341.D 374.B, App. A, Table 22
 - distribution curve, cumulative 397.B

distribution derivative 125.E
 distribution-free (test) 371.A
 distribution-free method 371.A
 distribution function 168.B 341.B 342.C
 cumulative 341.B 342.C
 empirical 250.F 396.C
 n -dimensional 342.C
 symmetric 341.H
 unimodal 341.H
 distribution kernel 338.P
 distribution law, Maxwell-Boltzmann 402.B
 distribution polygon, cumulative 397.B
 distribution semigroup 378.F
 distributive algebra 231.A
 distributive lattice 243.E
 distributive law
 (in algebra of sets) 381.B
 (on cardinal numbers) 49.C
 (in a lattice) 243.E
 (on natural numbers) 294.B
 (in a ring) 368.A
 complete (in a lattice-ordered group) 243.G
 disturbance 128.C
 diurnal aberration 392
 div (divergence) 442.D
 diverge 87.B,E 379.A
 to ∞ 87.D
 divergence
 (of a differentiable vector field) 442.D
 (of a vector field with respect to a Riemannian metric) 105.W
 (of a vector field with respect to a volume element) 105.W
 infrared 146.B
 ultraviolet 146.B
 divergence form 323.D
 divergence theorem 94.D
 divergent
 (double series) 379.E
 (infinite product) 379.G
 (integral) 216.E
 (sequence of real numbers) 87.B
 (series) 379.A
 properly 379.A
 divide (a bounded domain) 384.F
 divided difference 223.D
 dividing cycle (on an open Riemann surface) 367.I
 divisibility relation (in a ring) 67.H
 divisible
 (Abelian p -group) 2.D
 (additive group) 2.E
 (element of ring) 67.H 277.D
 (fractional ideal) 14.E
 (general Siegel domain) 384.F
 (number) 297.A
 divisible A -module 277.D
 divisible subgroup (of a discrete Abelian group) 422.G
 division (of a pseudomanifold) 65.A
 simplicial 65.A
 division algebra 29.A
 division algorithm
 of natural numbers 297.A
 of polynomials 337.C
 division ring 368.B
 division theorem
 Späth type (for microdifferential operators) 274.E
 Weierstrass type (for microdifferential operators) 274.E

divisor
 (in an algebraic curve) 9.C
 (of an algebraic function field of dimension 1) 9.D
 (of an algebraic number field) 14.F
 (in an algebraic variety) 16.M
 (in a closed Riemann surface) 11.D
 (in a complex manifold) 72.F
 (of an element of a ring) 67.H
 (of a fractional ideal) 14.E
 (of a number) 297.A
 ample 16.N
 branch (in a covering) 9.I
 canonical (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 canonical (of an algebraic variety) 16.O
 canonical (of a Jacobian variety) 9.E
 canonical (of a Riemann surface) 11.D
 Cartier 16.M
 common (of elements of a ring) 67.H
 complete linear system defined by 16.N
 complex line bundle determined by 72.F
 differential (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 of a differential form (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 effective (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 effective (on a variety) 16.M
 elementary (of a matrix) 269.E
 embedded prime (of an ideal) 67.F
 finite prime 439.H
 of a function (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 of a function (on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 greatest common 297.A
 greatest common (of an element of a ring) 67.H
 imaginary infinite prime 439.H
 infinite prime 439.H
 integral (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 integral (of an algebraic number field) 14.F
 integral (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 isolated prime (of an ideal) 67.F
 k -rational (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 linearly equivalent (of a complex manifold) 72.F
 maximal prime (of an ideal) 67.F
 minimal prime (of an ideal) 67.F
 nondegenerate 16.N
 nondegenerate (on an Abelian variety) 3.D
 numerically connected 232.D
 \mathcal{O} -linearly equivalent (on an algebraic curve) 9.F
 pole (of a function on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 positive (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 positive (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 prime (of an algebraic function field of dimension 1) 9.D
 prime (of an algebraic number field or an algebraic function field of one variable) 439.H
 prime (of an ideal) 67.F
 prime (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 prime rational, over a field (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 principal (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 principal (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 real infinite prime 439.H
 real prime 439.H
 sheaf of ideals of (of a complex manifold) 72.F
 special 9.C
 very ample 16.N

Divisor class (on a Riemann surface)

- zero (of a function on an algebraic variety) 16.M
- zero (of a ring) 368.B
- zero, with respect to M/P 284.A
- divisor class (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 - canonical 11.D
 - differential 11.D
- divisor class group (of a Riemann surface) 11.D
- divisor function 295.C
 - generalized 295.C
- divisor group (of a compact complex manifold) 72.F
- divisor problem, Dirichlet 242.A
- Dixmier theorem, Rellich- 351.C
- Dixon-Ferrar formula App. A, Table 19.IV
- DK method 301.F
- DKA method 301.F
- DLR equation 402.G
- dn App. A, Table 16.III
- dodecahedron 357.B
- Doetsch three-line theorem 43.E
- Dolbeault cohomology group 72.D
- Dolbeault complex 72.D
- Dolbeault lemma 72.D
- Dolbeault theorem 72.D
- domain(s)
 - (of a correspondence) 358.B
 - (of a mapping) 37.C 381.C
 - (in a topological space) 79.A
 - (of a variable) 165.C
 - angular 333.A
 - annular 333.A
 - of attraction 374.G
 - Brouwer theorem on the invariance of 117.D
 - Cartan pseudoconvex 21.I
 - circular 333.A
 - of class $C^{1,\lambda}$ 323.F
 - closed plane 333.A
 - complete Reinhardt 21.B
 - convergence (of a power series) 21.B
 - Courant-Cheng, theorem 391.H
 - of dependence 325.B
 - Dirichlet 120.A
 - divisible bounded 284.F
 - d -pseudoconvex 21.G
 - effective 88.D
 - fundamental 234.C
 - generated Siegel 384.F
 - holomorphically complete 21.F
 - holomorphically convex 21.H
 - of holomorphy 21.F
 - homogeneous bounded 384.A 412.F
 - individual 411.H
 - of influence 325.B
 - integral 368.B
 - of integration 216.F
 - irreducible symmetric bounded 412.F
 - Jordan 333.A
 - Levi pseudoconvex 21.I
 - of a local homomorphism 423.O
 - locally Cartan pseudoconvex 21.I
 - locally Levi pseudoconvex 21.I
 - nodal 391.H
 - Noetherian 284.A
 - Noetherian integral 284.A
 - object 411.G
 - of operator 409.A
 - operator (of a group) 190.E
 - plane 333
 - principal ideal 67.K
 - pseudoconvex 21.G
 - with regular boundary (in a C^∞ -manifold) 105.U
 - Reinhardt 21.B
 - Siegel 384.A
 - Siegel, generalized 384.F
 - Siegel, irreducible 384.E
 - Siegel, of the first kind 384.A
 - Siegel, of the second kind 384.A
 - Siegel, of the third kind 384.A
 - slit 333.A
 - with smooth boundary (in a C^∞ -manifold) 105.U
 - spectrum of 391.A
 - strongly pseudoconvex 21.G
 - sweepable bounded 284.F
 - symmetric bounded 412.F
 - unique factorization 40.H
 - universal 16.A
 - Weil 21.G
- domain kernel (of a sequence of domains) 333.C
- dominant (of a sequence of functions) 435.A
- dominant integral form (on a Cartan subalgebra) 248.W
- dominate (an imputation of a game) 173.D
- dominated
 - (by a family of topological spaces) 425.M
 - (statistical structures) 396.F
 - weakly (statistical structure) 396.F
- dominated ergodic theorem 136.B
- dominating set 186.I
- domination, number of 186.I
- domination principle 338.L
 - inverse 338.L
- Donsker invariance principle 250.E
- Doob-Meyer decomposition theorem 262.D
- Doolittle method 302.B
- dotted indices 258.B
- dotted spinor of rank k 258.B
- Douady space 23.G
- double chain complex 200.E
- double complex 200.H
- double coset (of two subgroups of a group) 190.C
- double distribution, potential of 338.A
- double exponential formula 299.B
- double integral 216.F
- double integral theorem, Fourier 160.B
- double layer, potential of 338.A
- double mathematical induction 294.B
- double negation, discharge of 411.I
- double point, rational 418.C
- double ratio 343.E
- double sampling inspection 404.C
- double sequence 379.E
- double series 379.E
 - absolutely convergent 379.E
 - conditionally convergent 379.E
 - convergent 379.E
 - divergent 379.E
 - Weierstrass theorem of 379.H
- double suspension theorem 65.C
- double-valued representation 258.B
- doubly invariant 164.H
- doubly periodic function 134.E
- Douglas algebra 164.I
- Douglas functional 334.C
- Douglas-Rad6 solution (to Plateau's problem) 275.C
- downhill method 301.L
- down-ladder 206.B

drawer principle, Dirichlet 182.F
 drift
 transformation by 261.F
 transformation of 406.B
 drift part 406.B
 dual
 (cell) 65.B
 (graded module) 203.B
 (graph) 186.H
 (matroid) 66.H
 (proposition in a projective space) 343.B
 (regular polyhedron) 357.B
 (symmetric Riemannian space) 412.D
 (topological group) 422.C 437.J
 dual algebra 203.F
 dual basis (of a linear space) 256.G
 dual bundle 147.F
 dual category 52.F
 dual cell, $(n - q)$ - 65.B
 dual coalgebra 203.F
 dual complex 65.B
 dual cone 125.BB
 dual convex cone 89.F
 dual curve (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
 dual direct product decomposition 422.H
 dual frame 417.B
 dual homomorphism
 (of a homomorphism of algebraic tori) 13.D
 (of lattices) 243.C
 dual Hopf algebra 203.C
 dual isomorphism
 (of lattices) 243.C
 (between ordered sets) 311.E
 duality
 (in field theory) 150.E
 (for symmetric Riemannian space) 412.D
 Martineau-Harvey 125.Y
 Poincaré (in manifolds) 201.O
 Poincaré (in Weil cohomology) 450.Q
 principle of (in projective geometry) 343.B
 duality mapping 251.J
 duality principle
 (for closed convex cone) 89.F
 (for ordering) 311.A
 duality property (of linear space) 256.G
 duality theorem
 (on Abelian varieties) 3.D
 (of linear programming) 255.B
 (in mathematical programming) 292.D
 Alexander 201.O
 for Ω -module 422.L
 Poincaré-Lefschetz 201.O
 Pontryagin (on topological Abelian groups)
 192.K 422.C
 Serre (on complex manifolds) 72.E
 Serre (on projective varieties) 16.E
 of Takesaki 308.I
 Tannaka (on compact groups) 69.D
 Tannaka (on compact Lie group) 249.U
 dual lattice 243.C 310.E 450.K
 dual linear space 256.G
 self- 256.H
 dually isomorphic (lattices) 243.C
 dual mapping (of a linear mapping) 256.G
 dual Martin boundary 260.I
 dual module 277.K
 dual operator
 in Banach space 37.D
 of a differential operator 125.F
 of a linear operator 251.D

Subject Index

 ε -flat

dual ordering 311.A
 dual passive boundary point 260.I
 dual problem 255.B 349.B
 dual process 261.F
 dual representation 362.E
 dual resonance model 132.C
 dual semigroup 378.F
 dual space
 (of a C^* -algebra) 36.G
 (of a linear space) 256.G
 (of a linear topological space) 424.D
 (of a locally compact group) 437.J
 (of a normed linear space) 37.D
 (of a projective space) 343.B
 quasi- (of a locally compact group) 437.I
 strong 424.K
 dual subdivision 65.B
 dual vector bundle 147.F
 du Bois-Reymond and Dedekind, test of 379.D
 du Bois Reymond problem 159.H
 Duffing differential equation 290.C
 Duhamel method 322.D
 Duhem relation, Gibbs- 419.B
 dummy index (of a tensor) 256.J
 Dunford integrable 443.F
 Dunford integral 251.G 443.F
 Dunford-Pettis theorem 68.M
 Donford-Schwartz integral, Bartle- 443.G
 duo-trio test 346.D
 Dupin, cyclide of 111.H
 Dupin indicatrix 111.H
 duplication of a cube 179.A
 Durand-Kerner-Aberth (DKA) method 301.F
 Durand-Kerner (DK) method 301.F
 Dvortzky-Rogers theorem 443.D
 dyadic compactum 79.D
 dynamical system(s) 126
 classical 126.L 136.G
 continuous 126.B
 differential 126.B
 discrete 126.B
 linear 86.B
 dynamic programming 127 264.C
 dynamic programming model 307.C
 dynamics
 analytical 271.F
 fluid 205.A
 magnetofluid 259
 quantum flavor 132.D
 dynamo theory, hydromagnetic 259
 Dynkin class 270.B
 Dynkin class theorem 270.B
 Dynkin diagram (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.S
 extended App. A, Table 5.I
 Dynkin formula 261.C
 Dynkin representation of generator 261.C

E

 ε (topology) 424.R
 ε , Eddington's App. A, Table 4.II
 $\mathcal{E}(\Omega)$ ($= C^\infty(\Omega)$) 125.I 168.B
 $\mathcal{E}'(\Omega)$ 125.I
 $\mathcal{E}_{\{M_p\}}, \mathcal{E}_{(M_p)}$ 168.B
 ε -covering 273.B
 ε -entropy 213.E
 ε -expansion 111.C
 ε -factor 450.N
 ε -flat 178.D

- ε -Hermitian form 60.O
- ε -independent partitions 136.E
- ε -induction, axiom of 33.B
- ε -neighborhood (of a point) 273.C
- ε -number 312.C
- ε -operator, Hilbert 411.J
- ε -quantifier, Hilbert 411.J
- ε -sphere (of a point) 273.C
- ε -symbol, Hilbert 411.J
- ε -tensor product 424.R
- ε -theorem (in predicate logic) 411.J
- ε -trace form 60.O
- \mathcal{E} -function 46.C
- \mathcal{E} -space 193.N
- E -function 430.D
- E -optimality 102.E
- E waves 130.B
- Eberlein-Shmul'yan theorem 37.G
- Eberlein theorem 424.V
- eccentric angle
 - of a point on a hyperbola 78.E
 - of a point on an ellipse 78.E
- eccentric anomaly 309.B
- eccentricity (of a conic section) 78.B
- echelon space 168.B
- ecliptic 392
- econometrics 128
- Eddington's ε App. A, Table 4.II
- edge
 - (of a convex cell in an affine space) 7.D
 - (in a graph) 186.B
 - (of a linear graph) 282.A
 - reference 281.C
- edge homomorphism 200.J
- edge of the wedge theorem 125.W
- Edgeworth expansion 374.F
- effect 403.D
 - block 102.B
 - factorial 102.H
 - fixed 102.A
 - fixed, model 102.A
 - main 102.H
 - random 102.A
 - random, model 102.A
 - treatment 102.B
- effective descriptive set theory 356.H
- effective divisor
 - (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (on a variety) 16.M
- effective domain 88.D
- effective genus (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
- effectively (act on a G -space) 431.A
 - almost 431.A
- effectively calculable function 356.C
- effectively given (object) 22.A
- effectively parametrized (at o) 72.G
- effect vector 102.A
- efficiency 399.D
 - asymptotic 399.N
 - Bahadur 400.K
 - second-order 399.O
 - second-order asymptotic 399.O
- efficiency-balanced block design 102.E
- efficient
 - k th order asymptotic 399.O
- efficient estimator 399.D
 - asymptotically 399.N
 - first-order 399.O
 - first-order asymptotic 399.O
- Egerváry theorem, König- 281.E
- Egorov theorem 270.J
- Ehrenfest model of diffusion 260.A
- Ehrenpreis-Malgrange theorem 112.B
- Eichler approximation theorem 27.D
- eigenchain 390.H
- eigenelement (of a linear operator) 390.A
- eigenfunction
 - (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
 - (for an integral equation) 217.F
 - (of a linear operator) 390.A
 - generalized 375.C
- eigenspace
 - (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 - (of a linear operator) 390.A
 - generalized 390.B
 - in a weaker sense 269.L
- eigenvalue(s)
 - (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
 - (of an integral equation) 217.F
 - (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 - (of a linear operator) 390.A
 - (of the Mathieu equation) 268.B
 - (of a matrix) 269.F
 - degenerate 390.A
 - generalized 375.C
 - geometrically simple 390.A
 - index of 217.F
 - multiplicity of 217.F
 - numerical computation of 298
- eigenvalue problem 390.A
 - generalized 298.G
- eigenvector
 - (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 - (of a linear operator) 390.A
 - (of a matrix) 269.F
 - generalized 390.B
- eightfold way 132.D
- eikonal 82.D 180.C
- eikonal equation 324.E 325.L
- Eilenberg-MacLane complexes 70.F
- Eilenberg-MacLane space 70.F
- Eilenberg-MacLane spectrum 202.T
- Eilenberg-Postnikov invariants (of a CW complex) 70.G
- Eilenberg-Steenrod axioms 201.Q
- Eilenberg-Zilber theorem 201.J
- Einstein, A. 129
- Einstein convention (on tensors) 256.J
- Einstein-Kähler metric 232.C
- Einstein metric 364.I
- Einstein relation (in diffusion) 1:8.A
- Einstein space 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
- Einstein summation convention 417.B
- Eisenstein-Poincaré series 32.F
- Eisenstein series 32.C
 - generalized 450.T
- Eisenstein theorem 337.F
- elastic, total, cross section 386.B
- elasticity
 - modulus of, in shear 271.G
 - modulus of, in tension 271.G
 - small-displacement theory of 271.G
 - theory of 271.G
- elastic limit 271.G
- elastic scattering 375.A
- elation 110.D
- electric displacement 130.A
- electric field 130.A
- electric flux density 130.A
- electric network 282.B

- electric polarization 130.A
 electric susceptibility 130.B
 electric waves 130.B
 transverse 130.B
 electrodynamics, quantum 132.C
 electromagnetic wave 446
 theory of 130.B
 transverse 130.B
 electromagnetism 130
 electron 377.B
 electronic analog computer 19.E
 electronic computer 75.A
 electrostatics 130.B
 element(s) 381.A
 affine arc 110.C
 algebraic (of a field) 149.E
 areal (in a Cartan space) 152.C
 atomic (in a complemented modular lattice) 243.F
 boundary (in a simply connected domain) 333.B
 canonical (in the representation of a functor) 52.L
 Casimir (of a Lie algebra) 248.J
 central (in a lattice) 243.E
 compact (of a topological Abelian group) 422.F
 conformal arc 110.D
 conjugate (in a field) 149.J
 conjugate (in a group) 190.C
 contact 428.E
 contact (in a space with a Lie transformation group) 110.A
 cyclic 251.J
 even (of a Clifford algebra) 61.B
 finite, method 304.C
 function 198.I 339.A
 function, in the wider sense 198.O
 generalized nilpotent (in a commutative Banach algebra) 36.E
 generating 390.G
 greatest (in an ordered set) 311.B
 homogeneous (of a graded ring) 369.B
 homogeneous (of a homogeneous ring) 369.B
 hypersurface 324.B
 idempotent (of a ring) 368.B 450.O
 identity (of an algebraic system) 409.C
 identity (of a field) 149.A
 identity (of a group) 190.A
 identity (of a ring) 368.A
 inseparable (of a field) 149.H
 integral (of a system of total differential equations) 428.E
 inverse (in a group) 190.A
 inverse (in a ring) 368.B
 inverse function 198.L
 invertible (of a ring) 368.B
 irreducible (of a ring) 67.H
 isotropic (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
 k -dimensional integral 191.I
 Kepler orbital 309.B
 least (in an ordered set) 311.B
 left inverse (of an element of a ring) 368.B
 line 111.C
 linearly dependent 2.E
 linearly independent 2.E
 matrix 351.B
 maximal (in an ordered set) 311.B
 maximum (in an ordered set) 311.B
 minimal (in an ordered set) 311.B
 minimum (in an ordered set) 311.B
 negative (of an ordered field) 149.N
 neutral (in a lattice) 243.F
 nilpotent (of a ring) 368.B
 odd (of a Clifford algebra) 61.B
 ordinary 191.I
 ordinary integral 428.E
 oriented (in a covering manifold of a homogeneous space) 110.A
 orthogonal (of a ring) 368.B
 osculating 309.D
 polar (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.O
 polar (of an integral element) 428.E
 positive (of an ordered field) 149.N
 prime (of a ring) 67.H
 prime (for a valuation) 439.E
 primitive (of an extension of a field) 149.D
 projective line 110.B
 purely inseparable (of a field) 149.H
 quasi-inverse (in a ring) 368.B
 quasi-invertible (of a ring) 368.B
 quasiregular (of a ring) 368.B
 ramified 198.O
 rational 198.O
 regular (of a connected Lie group) 249.P
 regular (of a ring) 368.B
 regular integral 428.E
 right inverse (in a ring) 368.B
 separable (of a field) 149.H
 singular (of a connected Lie group) 249.P
 singular (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
 surface 324.B
 surface, union of 324.B
 torsion (of an A -module) 277.D
 transcendental (of a field) 149.E
 transgressive (in the spectral sequence of a fiber space) 148.E
 triangular 304.C
 unit (of a field) 149.A
 unit (of a group) 190.A
 unit (of a ring) 368.A
 unity (of a field) 149.A
 unity (of a ring) 368.A
 volume (of an oriented C^∞ -manifold) 105.W
 volume, associated with a Riemannian metric 105.W
 zero (of an additive group) 2.E 190.A
 zero (of a field) 149.A
 zero (of a linear space) 256.A
 zero (of a ring) 368.A
 elementarily equivalent structures 276.D
 elementary (Kleinian group) 234.A
 elementary (path) 186.F
 elementary Abelian functions 3.M
 elementary Abelian group 2.B
 elementary catastrophe 51.E
 elementary collapsing 65.C
 elementary contract 102.C
 elementary divisor
 (of a matrix) 269.E
 simple (of a matrix) 269.E
 elementary event(s) 342.B
 space of 342.B
 elementary extension 276.D
 elementary function(s) 131
 of class n 131.A
 elementary Hopf algebra 203.D

- elementary ideal 235.C
- elementary kernel (of a linear partial differential operator) 320.H
- elementary number theory 297
 - fundamental theorem of, 297.C
- elementary particle(s) 132
- elementary solution App. A, Table 15.V
 - (of a differential operator) 112.B
 - (of a linear partial differential operator) 320.H
 - (of partial differential equations of elliptic type) 323.B
- elementary symmetric function 337.I
- elementary symmetric polynomial 337.I
- elementary topological Abelian group 422.E
- eliminate (variables from a family of polynomials) 369.E
- elimination
 - design for two-way, of heterogeneity 102.K
 - forward 302.B
 - Gaussian 302.B
 - Gauss-Jordan 302.B
- elimination method, Sylvester 369.E
- ellipse 78.A
- ellipsoid 350.B
 - of inertia 271.E
 - of revolution 350.B
- ellipsoidal coordinates 90.C 133.A, App. A, Table 3.V
- ellipsoidal harmonics 133.B
 - four species of 133.C
- ellipsoidal type, special function of 389.A
- elliptic
 - (differential operator) 112.A 323.A 237.H
 - (pseudodifferential operator) 323.K
 - (Riemann surface) 77.B 367.D
 - (solution) 323.D
 - analytically hypo- 323.I
 - analytic hypo- 112.D
 - hypo- 112.D 189.C 323.I
 - microlocally 345.A
 - strongly 112.G 323.H
- elliptic complex (on a compact C^∞ -manifold) 237.H
- elliptic coordinates 90.C 350.E, App. A, Table 3.V
- elliptic curve 9.C
 - L -functions of 450.S
- elliptic cylinder 350.B
- elliptic cylinder function 268.B
- elliptic cylindrical coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
- elliptic cylindrical surface 350.B
- elliptic domain 77.B
- elliptic function(s) 134
 - of the first kind 134.G
 - Jacobi App. A, Table 16.III
 - of the second kind 134.G
 - of the third kind 134.H
 - Weierstrass App. A, Table 16.IV
- elliptic function field 9.D
- elliptic geometry 285.A
- elliptic integral 11.C 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
 - complete App. A, Table 16.I
 - of the first kind 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
 - of the first kind, complete 134.B
 - of the first kind, incomplete 134.B
 - of the second kind 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
 - of the second kind, complete 134.C
 - of the third kind 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
- elliptic integrals and elliptic functions App. A, Table 16
- elliptic irrational function 134.A
- elliptic modular group 122.D
- elliptic motions 55.A
- elliptic operator 323.H
 - microlocally 345.A
 - strongly 323.H
- elliptic paraboloid 350.B
 - of revolution 350.B
- elliptic point
 - (of a Fuchsian group) 122.C
 - (on a surface) 111.H
- elliptic quadric hypersurface 350.G
- elliptic singularity 418.C
 - minimally 418.C
- elliptic space 285.C
- elliptic surface 72.K
- elliptic theta function 134.I, App. A, Table 16.II
- elliptic transformation 74.F
- elliptic type 323.A.D
 - (Lie algebra) 191.D
 - partial differential equation of 323, App. A, Table 15.VI
- elongation strain 271.G
- embedded
 - (into a topological space) 425.J
 - hyperbolically 21.O
- embedded Markov chain 260.H
- embedded primary component (of an ideal) 67.F
- embedded prime divisor (of an ideal) 67.F
- embedding 105.K
 - (of categories) 52.H
 - (of a C^∞ -manifold) 105.K
 - (of a topological space) 425.J
 - formula of, form 303.D
 - generalized Borel 384.D
 - PL 65.D
 - regular 105.K
 - Tanaka 384.D
 - toroidal 16.Z
 - torus 16.Z
- embedding principle (in dynamic programming) 127.B
- embedding theorem
 - full (of an Abelian category) 52.N
 - Irwin 65.D
 - Menger-Nöbeling 117.D
 - Sobolev-Besov 168.B
 - Tikhonov 425.T
- Emden differential equation 291.F
- Emden function, Lane- 291.F
- emission 325.A
 - backward 325.A
 - forward 325.A
- empirical characteristic function 396.C
- empirical constant 19.F
- empirical distribution function 250.F 374.E 396.C
- empirical formula 19.F
- empiricism, French 156.C
- empty set 33.B 381.A
 - axiom of 33.B
- enantiomorphic pair 92.A
- enantiomorphous 92.A
- encoder 213.D
- encoding 63.A
- end
 - (of an arc) 93.B
 - (of a noncompact manifold) 178.F
 - (of a segment) 155.B
 - (of a segment in an affine space) 7.D
 - Heins 367.E

- lower (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
 upper (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
 endogenous variable 128.C
 endomorphism
 (of an algebraic system) 409.C
 (of a group) 190.D
 (of a polarized Abelian variety) 3.G
 (of a probability space) 136.E
 (of a ring) 368.D
 anti- (of a group) 190.D
 anti- (of a ring) 368.D
 aperiodic 136.E
 entropy of 136.E
 exact (of a measure space) 136.E
 periodic (at a point) 136.E
 ring of (of an Abelian variety) 3.C
 endomorphism ring
 (of an Abelian variety) 3.C
 (of a module) 277.B 368.C
 endpoint
 (of an ordinary curve) 93.C
 left (of an interval) 355.C
 right (of an interval) 355.C
 end vertex 186.B
 energy 195.B 338.B
 binding 351.D
 free 340.B 402.G
 Gibbs free 419.C
 Helmholtz free 419.C
 internal 419.A
 kinetic 271.C 351.D
 mean 402.G
 mean free 340.B 402.G
 mutual 338.B
 potential 271.C
 rest 359.C
 total 271.C
 energy density 195.B
 energy equation (for a fluid) 205.A
 energy function 126.L 279.F
 energy inequality 325.C
 energy integral 420.A
 energy minimum principle 419.C
 Gibbs 419.C
 energy-momentum 4-vector 258.C
 energy-momentum operator 258.D
 energy-momentum tensor 150.B 359.D
 energy principle 338.D
 energy spectrum function 433.C
 energy spectrum tensor 433.C
 energy surface 126.L 402.C,G
 Eneström theorem, Kakeya- (on an algebraic equation) 10.E
 Engel theorem 248.F
 engulfing lemma 65.C
 enlargement 293.B
 Enneper formula, Weierstrass- 275.A
 Enneper surface 275.B
 Enriques surface 72.K
 ensemble 402.D
 canonical 402.D
 grand canonical 402.D,G
 microcanonical 402.D
 Enskog method 217.N
 enthalpy 419.C
 enthalpy minimum principle 419.C
 entire algebroidal function 17.B
 entire function 429.A
 rational 429.A
 transcendental 429.A
 entire linear transformation 74.E
 entrance 281.C
 entrance boundary (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 entrance boundary point 260.I
 entropy 212.B
 (of an endomorphism) 136.E
 (in information theory) 213.B
 (in statistical mechanics) 402.B
 (in thermodynamics) 419.A
 closed system 402.G
 completely positive 136.E
 conditional 213.B
 of a distribution 403.B
 of the endomorphism φ 136.E
 ε - (of source coding theorem) 213.E
 maximal 136.C,H
 mean 402.G
 open system 402.G
 of a partition 136.E
 relative 212.B
 topological 136.H
 topological, of f with respect to α 126.K
 entropy condition 204.G
 entropy conjecture 126.K
 entropy maximum principle 419.A
 entropy production, equation of 205.A
 entry (of a matrix) 269.A
 enumerable predicate, recursively 356.D
 enumerable set, recursively 356.D
 enumerating predicate 356.H
 enumeration method, implicit 215.D
 enumeration theorem 356.H
 Pólya's 66.E
 envelope
 (of a family of curves) 93.I
 of holomorphy 21.F
 injective 200.I
 lower 338.M
 upper (of a family of subharmonic functions) 193.R
 envelope power function 400.F
 enveloping algebra 231.A
 special universal (of a Jordan algebra) 231.C
 universal (of a Lie algebra) 248.J
 enveloping surface 111.I
 enveloping von Neumann algebra 36.G
 epicycloid 93.H
 epidemiology 40.E
 epimorphism (in a category) 52.D 200.Q
 epitrochoid 93.H
 Epstein zeta function 450.K
 equality
 Chapman-Kolmogorov 261.A
 Jacobe-Beihler 328
 Parseval 18.B 159.A 160.C 192.K 197.C
 200.B,C,E
 equal weight, principle of 402.D
 equation(s)
 Abelian 172.G
 adjoint differential 252.K
 algebraic 10, App. A, Table 1
 algebraic differential 113 288.A
 approximate functional (for zeta function) 450.B
 basic 320.E
 Bellman 405.B
 bifurcation 286.V
 binomial 10.C
 biquadratic App. A, Table 1
 Boltzmann 41.A 402.B

Equation(s)

- Boussinesq 387.F
 Briot-Bouquet differential 288.B
 Callan-Symanzik 361.B
 canonical 324.E
 canonical forms of the (of surfaces) 350.B
 Cauchy-Riemann (differential) 21.C 198.A
 274.G 320.F
 characteristic (for a homogeneous system of
 linear ordinary differential equations) 252.J
 characteristic (of a linear difference equation)
 104.E
 characteristic (of a linear ordinary differential
 equation) 252.E
 characteristic (of a matrix) 269.F
 characteristic (of an autonomous linear system)
 163.F
 characteristic (of a partial differential equation)
 320.D
 characteristic (of a partial differential equation
 of hyperbolic type) 325.A,F
 Chaplygin differential 326.B
 Chapman-Kolmogorov 260.A 261.A
 Charpit subsidiary 82.C 320.D
 of Codazzi 365.C
 Codazzi-Mainardi 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 of a conic section 78.C
 of a conic section, canonical form of 78.C
 of continuity 130.A 204.B 205.A
 cubic 10.D, App. A, Table 1
 cyclic 172.G
 delay-differential 163.A
 de Rham 274.G
 difference \rightarrow difference equation
 difference-differential 163.A
 differential \rightarrow differential equation(s)
 diffusion-convection 304.B
 Diophantine 118.A
 Dirac 377.C 415.G
 DLR 402.G
 eikonal 324.E 325.L
 energy (for a fluid) 205.A
 of entropy production 205.A
 Ernst 359.D
 estimating 399.P
 Euler (calculus of variations) 46.B
 Euler (of a perfect fluid) 204.E
 Euler, of motion (of a perfect fluid) 205.A
 Euler differential (dynamics of rigid bodies)
 271.E
 Euler-Lagrange 46.B
 evolution 378.G
 exterior field 359.D
 field 150.B
 Fokker-Planck 402.I
 functional \rightarrow functional equation
 functional-differential 163.A
 Galois 172.G
 of Gauss (on an isometric immersion) 365.C
 Gauss (on surfaces) 111.H
 Gelfand-Levitan-Marchenko 287.C 387.D
 general 172.G
 general Navier-Stokes 204.F
 Hamilton differential 324.E
 Hamilton-Jacobi 108.B
 Hamilton-Jacobi differential 271.F 324.E
 heat 327.A, App. A, Table 15.VI
 of heat conduction 327.A
 Hill determinantal 268.B
 indicial 254.C
 induction 259
 integral \rightarrow integral equation(s)
 integrodifferential 163.A 222
 integrodifferential, of Fredholm type 222.A
 integrodifferential, of Volterra type 222.A
 interior field 359.D
 Kadomtsev-Petvyashvili 387.F
 KdV 387.B
 Kepler 309.B
 Klein-Gordon 377.C 415.G
 Kolmogorov backward 115.A 260.F
 Kolmogorov forward 115.A 260.F
 Königs-Schröder 44.B
 Korteweg-de Vries 387.A
 Lagrange, of motion 271.F
 Landau 146.C
 Landau-Nakanishi 146.C
 Langevin 45.I 402.K
 Lewy-Mizohata 274.G
 likelihood 399.M
 linear 10.D
 linear, system of 269.M
 linear integral 217.A
 linear ordinary differential 252.A
 linear structure, system 128.C
 Lippman-Schwinger 375.C
 local (of a divisor on an open set) 16.M
 logistic 263.A
 master 402.I
 matrix Riccati differential 86.E
 Maxwell 130.A
 microdifferential 274.G
 minimal surface 275.A
 of motion (of a fluid) 205.A
 of motion (of a model) 264
 of motion (in Newtonian mechanics) 271.A
 of motion (of a particle in a gravitational field)
 359.D
 of motion, Euler (of a perfect fluid) 205.B
 of motion, Heisenberg 351.D
 of motion, Lagrange 271.F
 natural (of a curve) 111.D
 natural (of a surface) 110.A
 Navier-Stokes 204.B 205.C
 normal (in the method of least squares) 403.E
 302.E 397.J
 ordinary differential \rightarrow ordinary differential
 equation(s)
 of oscillation App. A, Table 15.VI
 Painlevé 288.C
 parabolic cylindrical App. A, Table 14.II
 partial differential \rightarrow partial differential
 equation(s)
 Pell 118.A
 Pfaffian 428.A
 Pfaffian, system of 428.A
 Poisson 338.A
 Prandtl boundary layer 205.C
 Prandtl integrodifferential 222.C
 pressure 205.B
 primitive 172.G
 quadratic 10.D, App. A, Table 1
 quartic 10.D, App. A, Table 1
 radial 315.E
 random Schrödinger 340.E
 of a rarefied gas 41.A
 rational differential 288.A
 reciprocal 10.C
 regular local (at an integral point) 428.E
 renewal 260.C
 renormalization 111.B

- resolvent 251.F
- retarded differential 163.A
- Ricci 365.C
- Schlesinger 253.E
- Schrödinger 351.D
- secular 55.B 269.F
- self-adjoint differential 252.K
- self-adjoint system of differential 252.K
- Sine-Gordon 387.A
- singular integral 217.J
- of sound propagation 325.A
- special functional 388
- of state 419.A
- structure (of an affine connection) 417.B
- structure (for a curvature form) 80.G
- structure (for a torsion form) 80.H
- of structure (of a Euclidean space) 111.B
- of structure (for relative components) 110.A
- system of 10.A
- system of linear ordinary differential 252.G
- telegraph 325.A, App. A, Table 15.III
- time-dependant Schrödinger 351.D
- time-independant Schrödinger 351.D
- transport 325.L
- two-dimension KdV 387.F
- variational 316.F 394.C
- of a vibrating membrane 325.A
- of a vibrating string 325.A
- wave 325.A 446.A, App. A, Table 15.III
- Wiener-Hopf integrodifferential 222.C
- Yang-Mills 80.Q
- Yule-Walker 421.D
- equator (of a sphere) 140
- equiangular spiral 93.H
- equianharmonic range of points 343.D
- equicontinuous (family of mappings) 435.D
- equicontinuous group of class (C^0) 378.C
- equicontinuous semigroup of class (C^0) 378.B
- equidistant hypersurface (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
- equilateral hyperbola 78.E
- equilateral hyperbolic coordinates 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
- equilateral triangle solution 420.B
- equilibrium, Nash 173.C
- equilibrium figures 55.D
- equilibrium Gibbs distribution 136.C
- equilibrium mass distribution 338.K
- equilibrium point
 - (of a flow) 126.D
 - (in an N -person differential game) 108.C
 - (in a two-person zero-sum game) 173.C
- equilibrium potential 260.D
- equilibrium principle 338.K
- equilibrium state 136.H 340.B 419.A
- equilibrium statistical mechanics 402.A
- equilibrium system, transformation to 82.D
- equilong transformation 76.B
- equipollent sets 49.A
- equipotential surface 193.J
- equipotent sets 49.A
- equivalence
 - (of categories) 52.H
 - (in a category) 52.D
 - (of complexes) 200.H
 - (of coverings) 91.A
 - anti- (of categories) 52.H
 - chain 200.H
 - cochain 200.F
 - combinatorial 65.A
 - C^* - 126.B
 - CR- 344.A
 - homotopy 202.F
 - Kakutani 136.F
 - Lax, theorem 304.F
 - natural 52.J
 - principle of (in insurance mathematics) 214.A
 - principle of (in physics) 359.D
 - simple homotopy 65.C
 - topological 126.B
- equivalence class 135.B
 - linear (of divisors) 16.M
- equivalence properties 135.A
- equivalence relations 135 358.A
 - proper (in an analytic space) 23.E
- equivalent
 - (additive functionals) 261.E
 - (arc) 246.A
 - (coordinate bundle) 147.B
 - (covering) 91.A
 - (extension by a C^* -algebra) 36.J
 - (fiber bundle) 147.B
 - (formula) 411.E
 - (functions with respect to a subset of C^n) 21.E
 - (G -structures) 191.A
 - (knot) 235.A
 - (linear representation) 362.C
 - (measure) 225.J
 - (methods of summation) 379.L
 - (proposition) 411.B
 - (quadratic form) 348.A
 - (quadratic irrational numbers) 182.G
 - (relation) 135.B
 - (space group) 92.A
 - (stochastic process) 407.A
 - (surfaces in the sense of Fréchet) 246.I
 - (system of neighborhoods) 425.E
 - (unfolding) 51.E
 - (unitary representation) 437.A
 - (valuation) 439.B
 - (word) 31.B
- algebraically (cycles) 16.R
- algebraically, to 0 16.P
- arithmetically 92.B 276.D
- C - 114.H
- certainty 408.B
- chain 200.C
- χ - 431.F
- combinatorially 65.A
- conformally 77.A 191.B 367.A
- countably (under a nonsingular bimeasurable transformation) 136.C
- C^* - 126.B
- elementarily 276.D
- fiber homotopy (vector bundles) 237.I
- finitely (under a nonsingular bimeasurable transformation) 136.C
- flow 126.B
- Γ - (points) 122.A
- geometrically 92.B
- homotopy (systems of topological spaces) 202.F
- k - (C^∞ -manifolds) 114.F
- linearly (divisors) 16.M 72.F
- locally (G -structure) 191.H
- numerically (cycles) 16.Q
- \mathfrak{S} -linearly, divisors 9.F
- Ω - 126.H
- (PL) 65.D
- properly (binary quadratic forms) 348.M

- pseudoconformally 344.A
- quasi- (unitary representations) 437.C
- rationally (cycles) 16.R
- right 51.C
- simple homotopy 65.C
- stably (vector bundles) 237.B
- stably fiber homotopy (vector bundles) 237.I
- topologically 126.B,H
- uniformly (uniform spaces) 436.E
- unitarily (self-adjoint operators) 390.G
- equivalent affinity 7.E
- equivariant Atiyah-Singer index theorem 237.H
- equivariant cohomology 431.D
- equivariant J -group 431.F
- equivariant J -homomorphism 431.F
- equivariant K -group 237.H
- equivariant mapping (map) 431.A
- equivariant point (of a mapping) 153.B
- equivariant point index (of a mapping) 153.B
- Eratosthenes' sieve 297.B
- Erdős theorem, Chung- 342.B
- ergodic
 - (Markov chain) 260.J
 - (transformation) 136.B
- ergodic capacity 213.F
- ergodic class 260.B
 - positive recurrent 260.B
- ergodic decomposition (of a Lebesgue measure space) 136.H
- ergodic homeomorphism
 - strictly 136.H
 - uniquely 136.H
- ergodic hypothesis 136.A 402.C
- ergodic information source 213.C
- ergodic lemma, maximal 136.B
- ergodic Szemerédi theorem 136.C
- ergodic theorem 136.A,B
 - Abelian 136.B
 - dominated 136.B
 - individual 136.B
 - local 136.B
 - mean 136.B
 - multiplicative 136.B
 - pointwise 136.B
 - ratio 136.B
 - subadditive 136.B
- ergodic theory 136 342.A
- Erlang distribution, k - 260.I
- Erlangen program 137
- Ernst equation 359.D
- error(s) 138.A
 - accumulated 138.C
 - burst 63.E
 - discretization 303.B
 - of the first kind 400.A
 - of input data 138.B
 - local truncation 303.E
 - mean square 399.E 403.E
 - propagation of 138.C
 - roundoff 138.B 303.B
 - of the second kind 400.A
 - theory of 138.A
 - truncation 138.B 303.B
- error analysis 138
 - backward 302.B
- error constant 303.E
- error-correcting 63.A
- error-correcting capability 63.B
- error-detecting 63.A
- error estimate, one-step-two-half-steps 303.D
- error function 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- error matrix 405.G
- error probability 213.D
- error space 403.E
- error sum of squares (with $n-s$ degree of freedom) 403.E
- error term 403.D
- error vector 102.A
- essential (conformal transformation group) 364.F
- essentially bounded (measurable function) 168.B
- essentially complete class 398.B
- essentially normal 390.I
- essentially self-adjoint 251.E 390.I
- essentially singular point (with respect to an analytic set) 21.M
- essentially unitary 390.I
- essential part 260.I
- essential singularity
 - (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.P
 - (of a complex function) 198.D
- essential spectrum 390.E,H
- essential support (of a distribution) 274.D
- essential supremum (of a measurable function) 168.B
- Estes stimulus sampling model 346.G
- estimable (parametric function) 399.C
- estimable parameter 403.E
 - linearly 403.E
- estimate 399.B
 - a priori 323.C
 - nonrandomized 399.B
 - one-step-two-half-steps error 303.D
 - Schauder 323.C
- estimating equation 399.P
- estimating function 399.P
 - likelihood 399.M
- estimating parameters, design for 102.M
- estimation
 - Hadamard App. A, Table 8
 - interval 399.Q 401.C
 - point 371.H 399.B 401.C
 - region 399.O
 - statistical 399.A, App. A, Table 23
- estimation space 403.E
- estimator 399.B
 - asymptotically efficient 399.N
 - BAN 399.K,N
 - based on an estimating function 399.P
 - Bayes 399.F
 - best asymptotically normal 399.K
 - best invariant 399.I
 - best linear unbiased 403.E
 - CAN 399.K
 - consistent 399.K
 - consistent and asymptotically normal 399.K
 - efficient 399.D
 - first-order asymptotic efficient 399.O
 - first-order efficient 399.O
 - generalized least squares 403.E
 - invariant 399.I
 - k th-order AMU 399.O
 - k th-order asymptotically median unbiased 399.O
 - L - 371.H
 - least squares 403.E
 - M - 371.H
 - maximum likelihood 399.M
 - mean unbiased 399.C
 - median unbiased 399.C

- ML 399.M
- modal unbiased 399.C
- moment method 399.L
- Pitman 399.G
- R- 371.H
- randomized 399.B
- ratio 373.C
- state 86.E
- Stein shrinkage 399.G
- superefficient 399.N
- UMV unbiased 399.C
- unbiased 399.C
- uniformly minimum variance unbiased 399.C
- eta function
 - (of a Riemann manifold) 391.L
 - Dedekind 328.A
- étale morphism 16.F
- étale neighborhood 16.AA
- étale site 16.AA
- étale topology 16.AA
- Euclid axiom 139.A
- Euclidean algorithm 297.A
 - of polynomials 337.D
- Euclidean cell complex 70.B
- Euclidean complex 70.B
- Euclidean connection 364.B
 - manifold with 109
- Euclidean distance 139.E
- Euclidean field 150.F
- Euclidean field theory 150.F
- Euclidean geometry 139
 - n -dimensional 139.B 181
 - non- \rightarrow non-Euclidean geometry 285
 - in the wider sense 139.B
- Euclidean group, locally 423.M
- Euclidean Markov field theory 150.F
- Euclidean method 150.F
- Euclidean polyhedron 70.B
- Euclidean simplicial complex 70.B
- Euclidean space(s) 140
 - locally 259.B 425.V
 - non- 285.A
 - theorem on invariance of dimension of 117.D
- Euclidean space form 412.H
- Euclidean type (building) 13.R
- Euclid ring 67.L
- Euler, L. 141
- Euler angles 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
- Euler characteristic (of a finite Euclidean cellular complex) 201.B
- Euler class (of M) 201.N
- Euler constant 174.A
- Euler criterion 297.H
- Euler differential equation (dynamics of rigid bodies) 271.E
- Euler equation
 - (calculus of variations) 46.B
 - (of a perfect fluid) 204.E
- Euler equation of motion (of a perfect fluid) 205.A
- Euler formula 131.G
- Euler function 295.C
- Euler graph 186.F
- Euler infinite product expansion 450.B
- Euler integral
 - of the first kind 174.C
 - of the second kind 174.A
- Euler-Lagrange differential equation 46.B
- Euler linear ordinary differential equation App. A, Table 14.I
- Euler-Maclaurin formula 379.J
- Euler method
 - of describing the motion of a fluid 205.A
 - of numerical solution of ordinary differential equations 303.E
 - summable by 379.P
 - of summation 379.P
- Euler number 177.C 201.B, App. B, Table 4
- Euler path 186.F
- Euler-Poincaré characteristic 16.E 201.B
- Euler-Poincaré class 56.B
 - (of a manifold) 56.F
 - universal 56.B
- Euler-Poincaré formula 201.B,F
- Euler polynomial 177.C
- Euler product 450.B
- Euler relation 419.B
- Euler square 241.B
- Euler summation formula 295.E
- Euler theorem on polyhedra 201.F
- Euler transformation (of infinite series) 379.I
- evaluable (locally convex space) 424.I
- evaluation and review technique program 376
- Evans-Selberg theorem 48.E 338.H
- Evans theorem 48.E
- even element (of a Clifford algebra) 61.B
- even function 165.B
- even half-spinor 61.E
- even half-spin representation 61.E
- even-oddness conservation laws 150.D
- even permutation 151.G
- even state 415.H
- event(s) 281.D 342.B
 - complementary 342.B
 - delayed recurrent 260.C
 - elementary 342.B
 - exclusive 342.B
 - impossible 342.B
 - independent 342.B
 - inferior limit 342.B
 - intersection of 342.B
 - measurable 342.B
 - probability of an 342.B
 - with probability 1 342.B
 - product 342.B
 - random 342.B
 - recurrent 250.D 260.C
 - space of elementary 342.B
 - sum 342.B
 - superior limit 342.B
 - sure 342.B
 - symmetric 342.G
 - tail 342.B
- event commutativity 346.G
- event horizon 359.D
- Everett formula (for functions of two variables) App. A, Table 21
- Everett interpolation formula App. A, Table 21
- everywhere
 - almost 270.D 342.D
 - nearly 338.F
 - quasi- 338.F
- evolute (of a curve) 111.E
- evolution equation 378
- evolution operator 378.G
 - holomorphic 378.I
- exact
 - (additive covariant functor) 200.I
 - (differential on a Riemann surface) 367.H
 - (endomorphism) 136.E

Exact differential equation

- (in Galois cohomology) 172.J
- (in sheaf theory) 383.C
- half- 200.I
- left- 200.I
- right- 200.I
- exact differential equation App. A, Table 14.I
- exact differential form 105.Q
- exact functor 52.N
- exact sampling theory 401.F
- exact sequence
 - (of A -homomorphisms of A -modules) 277.E
 - of cohomology 200.F
 - cohomology 201.L
 - of Ext 200.G
 - fundamental (on cohomology groups) 200.M
 - Gysin (of a fiber space) 148.E
 - of homology 200.C
 - homology (of a fiber space) 148.E
 - homology (for simplicial complexes) 201.L
 - homotopy 202.L
 - homotopy (of a fiber space) 148.D
 - homotopy (of a triad) 202.M
 - homotopy (of a triple) 202.L
 - Mayer-Vietoris (for a proper triple) 201.C
 - Puppe 202.G
 - reduced homology 201.F
 - relative Mayer-Vietoris 201.L
 - (R, S) - (of modules) 200.K
 - short 200.I
 - of Tor 200.D
 - Wang (of a fiber space) 148.E
- exceptional
 - (Jordan algebra) 231.A
 - (leaf) 154.D
- exceptional compact real simple Lie algebra 248.T
- exceptional compact simple Lie group 249.L
- exceptional complex simple Lie algebra 248.S
- exceptional complex simple Lie group 249.M
- exceptional curve 15.G
 - of the first kind 15.G
 - of the second kind 15.G
- exceptional function, Julia 272.F
- exceptional orbit 431.C
- exceptional sets 192.R
- exceptional value
 - (of a transcendental entire function) 429.B
 - Borel 272.E
 - Nevanlinna 272.E
 - Picard 272.E
- excess 178.H, App. A, Table 6.III
 - coefficient of 341.H 396.C
 - spherical 432.B
 - total 178.H
- excessive (function) 260.D 261.D
 - α - 261.D
- excessive measure 261.F
- exchange 420.D
- exchange of stability 286.T
- excision isomorphism 201.F, L
- excluded middle, law of 156.C 411.L
- exclusive events 342.B
- exhaustion 178.F
- existence theorem
 - (in class field theory) 59.C
 - (for ordinary differential equations) 316.C
 - Cartan-Kähler 191.I 428.E
 - Cauchy 320.B
 - Cauchy-Kovalevskaya 321.A
- existential proposition 411.B
- existential quantifier 411.C
- exit 281.C
- exit boundary (of a diffusion process) 115.B
- exit boundary point 260.I
- exit time 261.B
- exogenous variable 128.C
- exotic sphere 114.B
- $\exp A$ (exponential function of matrix A) 269.H
- expansion 65.C
 - asymptotic 30.A, App. A, Table 17.I
 - asymptotic (of a pseudodifferential operator) 345.A
 - Cornish-Fisher 374.F
 - Edgeworth 374.F
 - ε - 361.C
 - Laurent 198.D
 - method of matched asymptotic 112.B
 - Minakshisundaram-Pleijel asymptotic 391.B
 - orthogonal 317.A
 - partial wave 375.E 386.B
 - Taylor (of an analytic function of several variables) 21.B
 - Taylor (of a holomorphic function) 339.A
 - Taylor, and remainder App. A, Table 9.IV
 - Taylor, formal 58.C
- expansion coefficient 317.A
- expansion formula, q - 134.I
- expansion method 205.B
- expansion theorem 306.B
 - Hilbert-Schmidt 217.H
 - Laplace (on determinants) 103.D
- expansive 126.J
- expectation 115.B 342.C
 - conditional 342.E
 - mathematical 341.B
- expectation value (of an operator) 351.B
- expected amount of inspection 404.C
- expected value (of a random variable) 342.C
- experiment(s)
 - design of 102
 - factorial 102.H
 - S^k factorial 102.H
 - statistical 398.G
- experimental analysis 385.A
- experimentation model 385.A
- explanatory variable 403.D
- explicit
 - (difference equation in a multistep method) 303.E
 - (Runge-Kutta method) 303.D
- explicit function 165.C
- explicit method 303.E
- explicit reciprocity laws 14.R
- explicit scheme 304.F
- exploratory procedures 397.Q
- exploring a response surface, designs for 102.M
- explosion, Ω - 126.J
- explosion time 406.D
- exponent
 - (of an Abelian extension) 172.F
 - (of an algebra class) 29.E
 - (of a finite group) 362.G
 - (of a Kummer extension) 172.F
 - (of a power) 131.B
 - (of a regular singular point) 254.C
 - (of a stable distribution) 341.G
 - characteristic (of an autonomous linear system) 163.F
 - characteristic (of the Hill differential equation) 268.B
 - characteristic (of a variational equation) 394.C

- conjugate 168.C
- of convergence 429.B
- critical 111.C
- integral 167.D
- one-sided stable process of 5.F
- of the stable process 5.F
- subordinator of 5.F
- exponential curve 93.H
- exponential dichotomy 290.B
- exponential distribution 341.D, App. A, Table 22
- two-sided App. A, Table 22
- exponential family of distributions 396.G
- exponential formula 286.X
- double 299.B
- exponential function 131.D
- with the base a 131.B
- of an operator 306.C
- exponential generating function 177.A
- exponential group 437.U
- exponential Hilbert space 377.D
- exponential integral 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- exponential lattice 287.A
- exponential law (on cardinal numbers) 49.C
- exponentially decreasing Fourier hyperfunction 125.BB
- exponentially decreasing real analytic function 125.BB
- exponentially stable 163.G 394.B
- exponential mapping
 - (of a Lie algebra into a Lie group) 249.Q
 - (of a Riemannian manifold) 178.A 364.C
- exponential method, Borel 379.O
- exponential series 131.D
- exponential valuation 439.B
- p -adic 439.F
- exposed, strongly 443.H
- expression
 - field of rational 337.H
 - rational 337.H
- $\exp x$ 131.D
- Ext 200.G
- exact sequence of 200.G
- Ext groups 200.G
- $\text{Ext}_R^n(A, B)$ 200.K
- $\text{Ext}_R^n(M, N)$ 200.G
- extended Dynkin diagram App. A, Table 5.I
- extended hypergeometric function, Barnes 206.C
- extended real number 87.E
- extension
 - (of a connection) 80.F
 - (of a field) 149.B
 - (of a fractional ideal) 14.I
 - (of a group) 190.N
 - (of an ideal of compact operators) 36.J 390.J
 - (of an isomorphism of subfields) 149.D
 - (of a mapping) 381.C
 - (of modules) 200.K
 - (of an operator) 251.B
 - (of a solution of an ordinary differential equation) 316.C
 - (of a valuation) 439.B
 - Abelian (of a field) 172.B
 - algebra 200.L
 - algebraic (of a field) 149.E
 - Artin-Schreier (of a field) 172.F
 - basic \mathbb{Z}_l - 14.L
 - central (of a group) 190.N
 - of the coefficient ring 29.A
 - cone 65.D
 - cyclic (of a field) 172.B
 - cyclotomic \mathbb{Z}_l - 14.L
 - elementary 276.D
 - finite 149.F
 - Friedrichs 112.I 251.E
 - Galois 172.B
 - Γ - 14.L
 - group 200.M
 - inseparable (of a field) 149.H
 - Kummer (of a field) 172.F
 - Lebesgue 270.D
 - linear (of a rational mapping to an Abelian variety) 9.E
 - maximal Abelian 257.F
 - maximal separable (of a field) 149.H
 - natural (of an endomorphism) 136.E
 - normal 149.G 251.K
 - p - (of a field) 59.F
 - p -adic 439.F
 - purely inseparable (of a field) 149.H
 - Pythagorean (of a field) 155.C
 - regular (of a field) 149.K
 - scalar (of an algebra) 29.A
 - scalar (of an A -module) 277.L
 - scalar (of a linear representation) 362.F
 - separable (of a field) 149.H, K
 - separably generated (of a field) 149.K
 - simple (of a field) 149.D
 - split (of a group) 190.N
 - strong (of a differential operator) 112.E, F
 - transcendental 149.E
 - transitive (of a permutation group) 151.H
 - unramified 14.I 257.D
 - weak (of a differential operator) 112.E, F
 - \mathbb{Z}_l - 14.L
- extensionality, axiom of (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
- extension field 149.B
- Picard-Vessiot 113
- strongly normal 113
- extension theorem
 - first (in the theory of obstructions) 305.B
 - Hahn-Banach 37.F
 - Hopf (in measure) 270.E
 - Kolmogorov 341.I
 - second (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
 - third (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
 - Tietze 425.Q
 - Whitney 168.B
- extensive thermodynamical quantity 419.A
- exterior
 - (of an angle) 155.B
 - (of a polygon) 155.F
 - (of a segment) 155.B
 - (of a subset) 425.N
- exterior algebra (of a linear space) 256.O
- exterior capacity, Newtonian 48.H
- exterior derivative (of a differential form) 105.Q
- exterior differential form of degree r 105.Q
- exterior field equation 359
- exterior point (of a subset) 425.N
- exterior power, p -fold
 - (of a linear space) 256.O
 - (of a vector bundle) 147.F
- exterior problem (for the Dirichlet problem) 120.A
- exterior product
 - (of differential forms) 105.Q
 - (of elements of a linear space) 256.O
 - (of a p -vector and a q -vector) 256.O
 - (of two vectors) 442.C
- external (in nonstandard analysis) 293.B

External irregular point

external irregular point 338.L
 external language 75.C
 external law of composition 409.A
 externally stable set 186.I
 external product 200.K
 external space (in the static model in catastrophe theory) 51.B
 external variable 264
 extinction probability 44.B
 extrapolation 176.K 223.A
 extrapolation method
 polynomial 303.F
 rational 303.F
 extremal (Jordan curve) 275.C
 extremal distance 143.B
 reduced 143.B
 extremal function, Koebe 438.C
 extremal horizontal slit mapping 367.G
 extremal length 143
 defined by Hersch and Pfluger 143.A
 with weight 143.B
 extremal quasiconformal mapping 352.C
 extremal vertical slit mapping 367.G
 extremely disconnected 37.M
 extreme point
 of a convex set 89.A
 of a subset of a linear space 424.V
 extremum
 conditional relative (of a function) 106.L
 relative (of a function) 106.L

F

$\bar{\imath}$ (cardinal number of all real-valued functions on $[0, 1]$) 49.A
 F_q (finite field with q elements) 450.Q
 f -metric 136.F
 f_N -metric 136.F
 F -compactification 207.C
 F -distribution 341.D 374.B, App. A, Table 22
 noncentral 374.B
 F -free (compact oriented G -manifold) 431.E
 F -test 400.G
 (F, F') -free (compact oriented G -manifold) 431.G
 F_σ set 270.C
 (F) -space 424.I
 face
 (of a complex) 13.R
 (of a convex cell) 7.D
 i th (of a singular q -simplex) 201.E
 q - (of an n -simplex) 70.B
 face operator (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
 factor
 (of an element of a ring) 67.H
 (of a factorial experiment) 102.H
 (of a von Neumann algebra) 308.F
 of automorphy 32.A
 composition (in a composition factor series in a group) 190.G
 determinant (of a matrix) 269.E
 direct (of a direct product of sets) 381.E
 direct (of a group) 190.L
 Dirichlet discontinuous App. A, Table 9.V
 first (of a class number) 14.L
 integrating App. A, Table 14.I
 Krieger 308.I
 p - (of an element of a group) 362.I
 Powers 308.I
 proper (of an element of a ring) 67.H
 second (of a class number) 14.L

Ulm (of an Abelian p -group) 2.D
 factor A -module 277.C
 factor analysis 280.G
 factor analysis model 403.C
 factor group 190.C
 factorial 330, App. A, Table 17.II
 Jordan 330
 factorial cumulant 397.G
 factorial cumulant generating function 397.G
 factorial design 102.H
 balanced fractional 102.I
 fractional 102.I
 orthogonal fractional 102.I
 factorial effect 102.H
 factorial experiment 102.H
 S^k 102.H
 factorial function 174.A
 factorial moment 397.G
 factorial moment generating functions 397.G
 factorial series 104.F 121.E
 factorization
 incomplete 302.C
 regular 251.N
 triangular 302.B
 factorization method 206.B
 factorization theorem
 (of an H^p -function) 43.F
 Neyman 396.F
 unique (in an integral domain) 67.H
 factor loading 280.G 346.F
 factor representation
 of a topological group 437.E
 of type I, II, or III 437.E
 factor ring 368.E, F
 factor score 280.G 346.F
 factor set(s)
 (in cohomology of groups) 200.M
 (of a crossed product) 29.D
 (in extensions of groups) 190.N
 (of a projective representation) 362.J
 associated (in extensions of groups) 190.N
 factor transformation (of a measure-preserving transformation) 136.D
 Faddeev-Popov ghost 132.C 150.G
 fading memory 163.I
 faithful
 (funcator) 52.H
 (linear representation) 362.C
 (permutation representation) 362.B
 (weight on a von Neumann algebra) 308.D
 fully (funcator) 52.H
 faithfully flat A -module 277.K
 faithfully flat morphism 16.D
 false 411.E
 regular 301.C
 false position, method of 301.C
 family 165.D
 algebraic (of cycles on an algebraic variety) 16.R
 of compact complex manifolds 72.G
 of confocal central conics 78.H
 of confocal parabolas 78.H
 of confocal quadrics 350.E
 covering 16.AA
 crystal 92.B
 directed 165.D
 equicontinuous (of mappings) 435.D
 exponential, of distributions 396.G
 of frames (on a homogeneous space) 110.A
 of frames of order 1 110.B

- of functions 165.B,D
 - of functions indexed by a set 165.B
 - indexed by a set 165.D
 - of mappings 165.D
 - normal (of functions) 435.E
 - parameter space 72.G
 - of points 165.D
 - of quasi-analytic functions 58.A
 - quasinormal (of analytic functions) 435.E
 - separating 207.C
 - of sets 165.D 381.B,D
 - of sets indexed by a set 381.D
 - tight (of probability measures) 341.F
 - uniform, of neighborhood system 436.D
- fan 16.Z
- Fannes-Verbeure inequality, Roebstorff- 402.G
- FANR 382.C
- FAR 382.C
- Farcy arc 4.B
- Farey dissection 4.B
- Farey sequence 4.B
- Farkas theorem, Minkowski- 255.B
- fast Fourier transform 142.D
- fast wave 259
- Fatou theorem
 - on bounded functions in a disk 43.D
 - on the Lebesgue integral 221.C
- favorable a priori distribution, least 398.H
- F.D. generator 136.E
- F.D. process 136.E
- feasible (flow) 281.B
- feasible directions, method of (in nonlinear programming) 292.E
- feasible region 264.B 292.A
- feasible solution 255.A 264.B
 - basic 255.A
- feedback control 405.C
- Fefferman-Stein decomposition 168.B
- Feit-Thompson theorem (on finite groups) 151.D
- Fejér kernel 159.C
- Fejér mean 159.C
- Fejér theorem 159.C
- Feller process 261.B
- Feller transition function 261.B
- Fermat, P. de 144
 - last theorem of 145
- Fermat number 297.F
- Fermat principle 180.A 441.C
- Fermat problem 145
- Fermat theorem 297.G
- fermions 132.A 351.H
- Fermi particle 132.A
- Fermi statistics 377.B 402.E
- Ferrari formula, Dixon- App. A, Table 19.IV
- Ferrari formula App. A, Table 1
- Feynman amplitude 146.B
- Feynman diagram 146.B
- Feynman graphs 146.A,B 386.C
- Feynman integrals 146
- Feynman-Kac formula 351.F
- Feynman-Kac-Nelson formula 150.F
- Feynman rule 146.A,B
- F.F. 136.F
- FFT 142.D
- fiber
 - (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 - (of a fiber space) 148.B
 - (of a morphism) 16.D
 - geometric (of a morphism) 16.D
 - integration along (of a hyperfunction) 274.E
- fiber bundle(s) 147
 - associated 147.D
 - of class C^r 147.O
 - complex analytic 147.O
 - equivalent 147.B
 - isomorphic 147.B
 - orientable 147.L
 - principal 147.C
 - real analytic 147.O
- fibered manifold 428.F
- fiber homotopy equivalent 237.I
 - stably 237.I
- fiber homotopy type, spherical G - 431.F
- fibering, Hopf 147.E
- fiber mapping (map), linear 114.D
- fiber product 52.G
- fiber space(s) 72.I 148
 - algebraic 72.I
 - locally trivial 148.B
 - n -connective 148.D
 - spectral sequence of (of singular cohomology) 148.E
 - Spivak normal 114.J
- fiber sum 52.G
- fiber term (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
- Fibonacci sequence 295.A
- fibration (of a topological space) 148.B
- fibration, Milnor 418.D
- fictitious state 260.F
- fiducial distribution 401.F
- fiducial interval 401.F
- field(s) 149
 - (of sets) 270.B
 - (of stationary curves) 46.C
 - absolute class 59.A
 - algebraically closed 149.I
 - algebraic function, in n variables 149.I
 - algebraic number 14.B
 - alternative 231.A
 - Anosov vector 126.J
 - Archimedean ordered 149.I
 - asymptotic 150.D
 - Axiom A vector 126.J
 - basic (of a linear space) 256.A
 - Borel 270.B,C
 - C_1 - 118.F
 - $C_i(d)$ - 118.F
 - canonical 377.C
 - class 59.B
 - coefficient (of an affine space) 7.A
 - coefficient (of an algebra) 29.A
 - coefficient (of a projective space) 343.C
 - coefficient (of a semilocal ring) 284.D
 - commutative 368.B
 - composite 149.D
 - conjugate 149.J 377.C
 - cyclotomic 14.L
 - decomposition (of a prime ideal) 14.K
 - of definition (for an algebraic variety) 16.A
 - differential 113
 - electric 130.B
 - Euclidean 150.F
 - extension 149.B
 - finite 149.C
 - formal power series, in one variable 370.A
 - of formal power series in one variable 370.A
 - formally real 149.N
 - free 150.A
 - free Dirac 377.C
 - free scalar 377.C

- function 16.A
- Galois 149.M
- Galois theory of differential 113
- ground (of an algebra) 29.A
- ground (of a linear space) 256.A
- Hamiltonian vector 126.L 219.C
- holomorphic vector 72.A
- imaginary quadratic 347.A
- imperfect 149.H
- inertia (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- intermediate 149.D
- invariant 172.B
- Jacobi 178.A
- Lagrangian vector 126.L
- local 257.A
- local class 257.A
- local class, theory 59.G
- linearly disjoint 149.K
- magnetic 130.B
- of moduli 73.B
- Morse-Smale vector 126.J
- noncommutative 149.A
- number 149.C
- ordered 149.N
- p-adic number 257.A 439.F
- perfect 149.H
- Picard-Vessiot extension 113
- power series, in one variable 370.A
- prime 149.B
- Pythagorean 139.B 155.C
- Pythagorean ordered 60.O
- quadratic 347.A
- quasi-algebraically closed 118.F
- of quotients 67.G
- ramification (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- random 407.B
- of rational expressions 337.H
- rational function, in n variables 149.K
- of rational functions 337.H
- real 149.N
- real closed 149.N
- real quadratic 347.A
- relative algebraic number 14.I
- residue class 149.C 368.F
- residue class (of a valuation) 439.B
- scalar 108.O
- scalar (in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space) 442.D
- of scalars (of a linear space) 256.A
- skew 149.A 368.B
- splitting (for an algebra) 362.F
- splitting (for an algebraic torus) 13.D
- splitting (of a polynomial) 149.G
- strongly normal extension 113
- tension 195.B
- tensor \rightarrow tensor field
- topological 423.P
- totally imaginary 14.F
- totally real 14.F
- transversal 136.G
- vector (in a differentiable manifold) 108.M
- vector (in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space) 442.D
- Wightman 150.D
- Yang-Mills 150.G
- field equation 150.B
 - exterior 339.D
 - interior 339.D
- field theory 150
 - constructive 150.F
 - Euclidean 150.F
 - Markov 150.F
 - nonsymmetric unified 434.C
 - quantum 150.C
 - unified 434
 - unitary 434.C
- fifth postulate (in Euclidean geometry) 139.A
- fifth problem of Hilbert 423.N
- figure(s) 137
 - absolute (in the Erlangen program) 137
 - central 420.B
 - equilibrium 55.D
 - fundamental (in a projective space) 343.B
 - linear fundamental 343.B
 - P^r - 343.B
- file 96.B
- filing, inverted, scheme 96.F
- fill-in 302.E
- filter 87.I
 - Cauchy (on a uniform space) 436.G
 - Kalman 86.E
 - Kalman-Bucy 86.E 405.G
 - linear 405.F
 - maximal 87.I
 - nonlinear 405.F,H
 - Wiener 86.E
- filter base 87.I
- filtering 395.E
 - stochastic 342.A 405.F
- filtration 200.J
 - discrete 200.J
 - exhaustive 200.J
- filtration bounded from below 200.J
- filtration degree 200.J
- final object 52.D
- final set
 - (of a correspondence) 358.B
 - (of a linear operator) 251.E
- final state 31.B
- finely continuous 261.C
- finely open (set) 261.D
- fine moduli scheme 16.W
- finer relation 135.C
- finer topology 425.H
- fine topology (on a class of measures) 261.D 338.E
- finitary standpoints 156.D
- finite
 - (cell complex) 70.D
 - (measure) 270.D
 - (morphism) 16.D
 - (potency) 49.A
 - (simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (triangulation) 70.C
 - (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
 - approximately 36.H 308.I
 - geometrically 234.C
 - hyper- 308.I
 - locally \rightarrow locally finite
 - point- (covering) 425.R
 - pro-, group 210.C
 - semi- 308.I
 - σ - \rightarrow σ -finite
 - star- (covering) 425.R
- finite automaton 31.D
- finite-band potentials 387.E
- finite basis (for an ideal) 67.B
- finite branch (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
- finite character, condition of 34.C

- finite cochain (of a locally finite simplicial complex) 201.P
- finite continued fraction 83.A
- finite covering (of a set) 425.R
- finite differences 223.C
- finite-dimensional distribution 407.A
- finite-dimensional linear space 256.C
- finite-dimensional projective geometry 343.B
- finite-displacement theory 271.G
- finite element method 233.G 290.E 304.C
- finite extension 149.F
- finite field 149.C
- finite field F_q 149.M
- finite-gap potentials 387.E
- finite groups 151.A 190.C
- finite intersection property 425.S
- finite interval (in \mathbf{R}) 355.C
- finite length 277.I
- finitely additive (vector measure) 443.G
- finitely additive class 270.B
- finitely additive measure 270.D
- finitely additive set function 380.B
- finitely determined process 136.E
- finitely distinguishable (hypothesis) 400.K
- finitely equivalent sets (under a nonsingular bi-measurable transformation) 136.C
- finitely fixed 136.F
- finitely generated
 - (A -module) 277.D
 - (group) 190.C
- finitely presented (group) 161.A
- finite memory channel 213.F
- finiteness condition for integral extensions 284.F
- finiteness theorem 16.AA
 - Ahlfors 234.D
- finite order (distribution) 125.J
- finite ordinal number 312.B
- finite part (of an integral) 125.C
- finite population 373.A
- finite presentation 16.E
- finite prime divisor 439.H
- finite projective plane 241.B
- finite rank (bounded linear operator) 68.C
- finite sequence 165.D
- finite series 379.A, App. A, Table 10.I
- finite set 49.A 381.A
 - hereditary 33.B
- finite subset property 396.F
- finite sum, orthogonality for a 19.G 317.D, App. A, Table 20.VII
- finite type
 - (graded module) 203.B
 - (module) 277.D
 - (morphism of schemes) 16.D
 - (\mathcal{O} -module) 16.E
 - algebraic space of 16.W
 - locally of 16.D
 - subshift of 126.J
- finite-type power series space 168.B
- finite-valued function 443.B
- finitistic (topological space) 431.B
- Finsler manifold 286.L
- Finsler metric 152.A
- Finsler space 152
- firmware 75.C
- first axiom, Tietze 425.Q
- first boundary value problem 193.F 323.C
- first category, set of 425.N
- first classification theorem (in theory of obstructions) 305.B
- first complementary law of the Legendre symbol 297.I
- first countability axiom 425.P
- first definition (of algebraic K -group) 237.J
- first extension theorem (in the theory of obstructions) 305.B
- first factor (of a class number) 14.L
- first fundamental form (of a hypersurface) 111.G
- first fundamental quantities (of a surface) 111.H
- first fundamental theorem (Morse theory) 279.D
- first homotopy theorem (in the theory of obstructions) 305.B
- first incompleteness theorem 185.C
- first-in first-out memory 96.E
- first-in last-out memory 96.E
- first integral (of a completely integrable system) 428.D
- first isomorphism theorem (on topological groups) 423.J
- first kind
 - (integral equations of Fredholm type of the) 217.A
 - Abelian differential of 11.C
 - Abelian integral of 11.C
 - differential form of 16.O
- first law of cosines 432.A, App. A, Table 2.II
- first law of thermodynamics 419.A
- first maximum principle (in potential theory) 338.C
- first mean value theorem (for the Riemann integral) 216.B
- first negative prolongational limit set 126.D
- first-order asymptotic efficient estimator 399.O
- first-order derivatives 106.A
- first-order designs 102.M
- first-order efficient estimator 399.O
- first-order predicate 411.K
- first-order predicate logic 411.K
- first positive prolongational limit set 126.D
- first problem, Cousin 21.K
- first prolongation (of P) 191.E
- first quadrant (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
- first quartile 396.C
- first regular integral 126.H
- first-return mapping (map) 126.B
- first separation axiom 425.Q
- first variation 46.B
- first variation formula 178.A
- Fisher consistent 399.K
- Fisher expansions, Cornish- 374.F
- Fisher inequality 102.E
- Fisher information 399.D
- Fisher information matrix 399.D
- Fisher problem, Behrens- 400.G
- Fisher theorem 43.G
- Fisher theorem, Riesz- 168.B 317.A
- Fisher three principles 102.A
- Fisher-Yates-Terry normal score test 371.C
- Fisher z -transformation 374.D
- fish-eye, Maxwell 180.A
- fit, chi-square test of goodness of 400.K
- fit, goodness of 397.Q
- fitting, curve 19.F
- five-disk theorem, Ahlfors 272.J
- fixed branch points (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
- fixed component (of a linear system) 16.N
- fixed effect 102.A
- fixed-effect model 102.A
- fixed point
 - (of a discontinuous group) 122.A

Fixed-point index (of a continuous mapping)

- (of a flow) 126.D
- (of a mapping) 153.A,D
- (of a transformation group) 431.A
- of discontinuity (of an additive process) 5.B
- of discontinuity (of a stochastic process) 407.A
- hyperbolic 126.G
- isolated 126.G
- fixed-point index (of a continuous mapping) 153.B
- fixed point method 138.B
- fixed-point theorem(s) 153
 - Atiyah-Bott 153.C
 - Atiyah-Singer 153.C
 - Brouwer 153.B
 - Kakutani 153.D
 - Lefschetz 153.B
 - Leray-Schauder 286.D
 - Poincaré-Birkoff 153.B
 - Schauder 153.D 286.D
 - Tikhonov 153.D
- fixed singularity (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
- fixed variates 403.D
- fixed vector 442.A
- FKG 212.A
- Fl (flèche) 52.A
- flabby resolution 125.W
- flabby sheaf 383.E
- flag (in an affine space) 139.B
- flag manifold 199.B
 - proper 199.B
- flat
 - (connection) 80.E
 - (morphism of schemes) 16.D
 - (Riemannian manifold) 364.E
 - (sphere pair) 235.G
 - conformally 191.B
 - ε - 178.D
 - faithfully (A -module) 277.K
 - faithfully (morphism of schemes) 16.D
 - locally (connection) 80.E
 - locally (PL embedding) 65.D
 - locally (Riemannian manifold) 364.E
 - normally (along a subscheme) 16.L
- flat A -module 277.K
- flat deformation 16.W
- flat F -bundle 154.B
- flat function 58.C
- flat point (of a surface) 111.H
- flat site 16.AA
- flat space
 - concurrently App. A, Table 4.II
 - conformally App. A, Table 4.II
 - projectively App. A, Table 4.II
- flavor dynamics, quantum 132.D
- flex 9.B
- flip model, spin 340.C
- floating point method 138.B
- Floquet theorem 252.J 268.B
- flow
 - (in ergodic theory) 136.D
 - (on a network) 281.B
 - (on a topological space) 126.B
 - Anosov 126.B 136.G
 - associated 136.F
 - Axiom A 126.J
 - built under a function 136.D
 - C^* - 126.B
 - of class C^* 126.B
 - continuous 126.B
 - discrete 126.B
 - equivalent 126.B
 - geodesic 126.L 136.G
 - harmonic 193.K
 - homotropic 205.B
 - horocycle 136.G
 - hypersonic 205.C
 - K - 136.E
 - Kolmogorov 136.E
 - Kronecker 136.G
 - laminar 205.E 433.A
 - maximum, minimum cut theorem 281
 - maximum, problem 281
 - measurable 136.D
 - minimal 126.N
 - minimum-cost, problem 281.C
 - Morse-Smale 126.J
 - multicommodity, problem 281.F
 - network, model 307.C
 - network, problem 281 282.B
 - S - 136.D
 - single-commodity, problem 281.F
 - special 136.D
 - translational 126.L 136.G
 - transonic 205.B
 - transversal 136.G
 - turbulent 205.E 433.A
 - Y -, 136.G
- flow-shop scheduling problem 376
- fluctuation-dissipation theorem 402.K
- fluid 205.A
 - compressible 205.B
 - incompressible 205.B
 - Newtonian 205.C
 - non-Newtonian 205.C
 - perfect 205.B
- fluid dynamics 205.A
- flux
 - (of a regular tube) 193.K
 - vector (through a surface) 442.D
- flux density
 - electric 130.A
 - magnetic 130.A
- focal conic (of a quadric) 350.E
- focal length 180.B
- focal point (of a submanifold of a Riemannian manifold) 364.C
- Fock representation 150.C
- Fock space 377.A
 - antisymmetric 377.A
 - symmetric 377.A
- focus
 - (of a conic section ellipse) 78.B
 - (of an optimal system) 180.B
 - (of a quadric) 350.E
- Fokker-Planck partial differential equation 115.A 402.I
- Foiaş model, Sz. Nagy- 251.N
- folding (of a chamber complex) 13.R
- foliated bundle 154.B,H
- foliated cobordant (C^∞ -foliations) 154.H
- foliated cobordism 154.H
- foliated structure 105.Y
- foliation 154
 - Anosov 126.J
 - compact 154.H
 - C^* - 154.B,G
 - Γ_ϕ - 154.H
 - holomorphic 154.H
 - real analytic 154.H
 - Reeb 154.B

Riemannian 154.H
 transverse to 154.H
 foliation cycles 154.H
 folium cartesii 93.H
 folium of Descartes 93.H
 foot of the perpendicular 139.E
 force
 apparent 271.D
 body 271.G
 centrifugal 271.D
 Corioli 271.D
 line of 193.J
 Lorentz 130.A
 restitutive 318.B
 forced oscillation 318.B
 force polygon 19.C
 Ford fundamental region 234.C
 forgetful functor 52.I
 form(s) 337.B
 anti-Hermitian 256.Q
 associated (of a projective variety) 16.S
 automorphic 437.DD 450.O
 automorphic, of weight k (or of dimension $-k$) 32.B
 automorphic, of weight m 32.A
 basic (in linear programming) 255.A
 bilinear 256.H 277.J 424.G
 bilinear, associated with a quadratic form 256.H
 canonical (of $F(M)$) 191.A
 canonical (of a linear hypothesis) 400.H
 canonical, of the equation (of a quadric) 350.B
 canonical 1- (of the bundle of tangent n -frames) 80.H
 Cantor normal 312.C
 compact (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.P
 complex (of a Fourier series) 159.A
 complex (of a real Lie algebra) 248.P
 complex space 365.L
 connection 80.E 417.B
 contact 110.E
 covariant of n -ary, of degree d 226.D
 covariant with ground 226.D
 curvature 80.G 364.D
 cusp (in the case of one variable) 32.B
 cusp (in Siegel upper half-space) 32.F
 differential \rightarrow differential form
 Dirichlet 261.C
 divergence 323.D
 dominant integral (on a Cartan subalgebra) 248.W
 ε -Hermitian 60.O
 ε -trace 60.O
 Euclidean space 412.H
 first fundamental 111.G, App. A, Table 4.I
 formula of embedding 303.D
 Fuchsian, of weight k (or of dimension $-k$) 32.B
 fundamental (associated with a Hermitian metric) 232.A
 fundamental (of a Finsler space) 152.A
 games in partition-function 173.D
 generalized Levi 274.G
 ground 226.D
 Hermitian \rightarrow Hermitian form 256.Q
 Hesse normal (of a hyperplane) 139.H
 Hilbert modular, of dimension $-k$ 32.G
 Hilbert modular, of weight k 32.G
 holomorphic k - 72.A

hyperbolic space 412.H
 integral (on a Cartan subalgebra) 248.W
 invariants of n -ary, of degree d 226.D
 Jordan normal 269.G
 k - (of an algebraic group) 13.M
 kernel 348.F
 Khinchin canonical 341.G
 Killing 248.B
 Kolmogorov canonical 341.G
 Legendre-Jacobi standard 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
 Levi 344.A
 Lévy canonical 341.G
 limit of an indeterminate 106.E
 linear (on an A -module) 277.E
 linear (on a linear space) 256.B
 modular, of level N 32.C
 multilinear 256.H
 n -person 173.B-D
 norm 118.D
 normal (of an ordinal number) 312.C
 normal (of an ordinary differential equation) 313.B
 normal (of partial differential equations) 321.B
 normal (of a partial differential equation of the first order) 324.E
 normal (of a surface) 410.B
 normal real (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.Q
 normic (in a field) 118.F
 Pfaffian 105.Q 428.A
 polar (of a complex number) 74.C
 primitive 232.C
 pseudotensorial 80.G
 quadratic \rightarrow quadratic form
 real (of a complex algebraic group) 60.O
 real (of a complex Lie algebra) 248.P
 reduced (of a linear structural equation system) 128.C
 regular Dirichlet 261.C
 second fundamental 111.G 365.C, App. A, Table 4.I
 sesquilinear \rightarrow sesquilinear form
 Siegel modular, of dimension $-k$ 32.F
 Siegel modular, of weight k 32.F
 skew-Hermitian 256.Q
 skew-symmetric multilinear 256.H
 space 285.E 412.H
 spherical space 412.H
 standard (of a difference equation) 104.C
 standard (of a latin square) 241.A
 symmetric multilinear 256.H
 symplectic 126.L
 tensorial 80.G
 third fundamental App. A, Table 4.I
 torsion 80.H
 Weierstrass canonical (for an elliptic curve) 9.D
 Weierstrass canonical (of the gamma function) 174.A
 Weyl 351.C
 formal adjoint operator 322.E
 formal degree (of a unitary representation) 437.M
 formal dimension n , Poincaré pair of 114.J
 formal geometry 16.X
 formal group 13.C
 formalism 156.A,D
 Gupta-Bleuler 150.G
 formally real field 149.N
 formally self-adjoint (differential operator) 112.I

- formally undecidable proposition 185.C
- formal power series 370.A
 - field of, in one variable 370.A
 - rings of 370.A
- formal power series field in one variable 370.A
- formal power series ring 370.A
- formal scheme 16.X
 - separated 16.X
- formal solution (for a system of ordinary differential equations) 289.C
- formal spectrum (of a Noetherian ring) 16.X
- formal system 156.D 411.I
- formal Taylor expansion 58.C
- formal vector fields 105.AA
- formation
 - class 59.H
 - pattern 263.D
- formation, class 59.H
- formation rule 411.D
- form ring 284.D
- formula(s) 411.D
 - Abramov 136.E
 - addition (for e^z) 131.G
 - addition (for sine and cosine) 432.A
 - Adem App.A, Table 6.II
 - algebraic addition 3.M
 - atomic 411.D
 - atomic (of a language) 276.A
 - Bayes 342.F 405.I
 - Bessel interpolation App. A, Table 21
 - Binet 174.A 295.A
 - Bouquet (on space curves) 111.F
 - Campbell-Hausdorff 249.R
 - Cardano App. A, Table 1
 - Cartan (for Steenrod p th power operations) 64.B
 - Cartan (for Steenrod square operations) 64.B
 - Cauchy-Hadamard (on the radius of convergence) 339.A
 - Cauchy integral 198.B
 - Chebyshev (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - Chern (in integral geometry) 218.D
 - Christoffel-Darboux 317.D
 - Clenshaw-Curtis 299.A
 - closed 411.J
 - closed (of a language) 276.A
 - closed type (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - connection 253.A
 - constant variational 163.E
 - Crofton (in integral geometry) 218.B
 - decomposition, of Radon 125.CC
 - De Moivre 74.C
 - dimensional 116
 - discontinuity 146.C 386.C
 - Dixon-Ferrar App. A, Table 19.IV
 - double exponential 299.B
 - Dynkin 261.C
 - of embedding form 303.D
 - empirical 19.F
 - Euler (for $\cos z, \sin z, \cosh z$) 131.G
 - Euler (for e^{by}) 131.G
 - Euler-Maclaurin 379.J
 - Euler-Poincaré (for a finite Euclidean cellular complex) 201.B,F
 - Euler summation 295.E
 - Everett App. A, Table 21
 - Everett interpolation 224.B, App. A, Table 21
 - exponential 286.X
 - Ferrari App. A, Table 1
 - Feynman-Kac 315.F,G
 - Feynman-Kac-Nelson 150.G
 - first variation 178.A
 - Fourier inversion 160.C
 - Fredholm 68.L
 - Frenet (on curves) 111.D
 - Frenet-Serret (on curves) 111.D
 - Gauss (on Gauss sum) 295.D
 - Gauss (on harmonic functions) 193.D
 - Gauss (for integration of a vector field) App. A, Table 3.III
 - Gauss (for isometric immersion) 365.C
 - Gauss (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - Gauss (for the surface integral) 94.F
 - Gauss (in theory of surfaces) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - Gauss backward interpolation 223.C
 - Gauss-Bonnet 111.H 364.D, App. A, Table 4.I
 - Gauss-Bonnet-Sasaki-Nitsche 275.C
 - Gauss-Chebyshev (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - Gauss forward interpolation 223.C
 - Gauss-Hermite (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - Gauss integration (in the narrow sense) 299.A
 - Gauss interpolation App. A, Table 21
 - Gauss-Laguerre (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - Green (for differential operators) App. A, Table 15.VI
 - Green (for harmonic functions) 193.D
 - Green (for Laplace operator) App. A, Tables 3.III 4.II
 - Green (for ordinary differential equations) 252.K
 - Green (for partial differential equations of parabolic type) 327.D
 - Green (on the plane) 94.F
 - Green-Stokes 94.F
 - Hansen-Bessel App. A, Table 19.III
 - Heron (for plane triangles) App. A, Table 2.II
 - Heron (for spherical triangles) App. A, Table 2.III
 - identically true 411.G
 - IMT 299.B
 - interpolation 223.A
 - interpolatory 299.A
 - inversion (for a characteristic function) 341.C
 - inversion (of cosine transform) 160.C
 - inversion (of Fourier transform) 160.C
 - inversion (of Fourier transform of distributions) 160.H
 - inversion (of Fourier transform on a locally compact Abelian group) 192.K
 - inversion (of generalized Fourier transform) 220.B
 - inversion (of Hilbert transform) 220.E
 - inversion (of integral transform) 220.A
 - inversion (of Laplace-Stieltjes transform) 240.D
 - inversion (on a locally compact group) 437.L
 - inversion (of Mellin transform) 220.C
 - inversion (for a semigroup of operators) 240.I
 - inversion (of Stieltjes transform) 220.D
 - Itô 45.G 406.B
 - Jensen 198.F
 - Klein-Nishina 415.G
 - Kneser-Sommerfeld App. A, Table 19.III
 - Kostant (on representations of compact Lie groups) 248.Z
 - Kronecker limit 450.B

- Kubo 402.K
 Künneth (in an Abelian category) 200.H
 Künneth (in Weil cohomology) 450.Q
 Lagrange (for the vector triple product) 442.C
 of a language 276.A
 lattice-point 222.B
 Lefschetz fixed-point 450.Q
 Leibniz (in differentiation) 106.D, App. A, Table 9.III
 Leibniz (in infinite series) App. A, Table 10.III
 Liouville 252.C
 Machin 332
 Mehler App. A, Table 19.III
 Milne-Simpson 303.E
 Möbius inversion (in combinatorics) 66.C
 Möbius inversion (in number theory) 295.C
 Nakano-Nishijima-Gell-Mann 132.A
 Newton (on interpolation) App. A, Table 21
 Newton (on symmetric functions) 337.I
 Newton backward interpolation 223.C
 Newton-Cotes (in numerical integration) 299.A
 Newton forward interpolation 223.C
 Newton interpolation App. A, Table 21
 Nicholson App. A, Table 19.IV
 open (in numerical integration) 299.A
 Ostrogradskii 94.F
 overall approximation 303.C
 Picard-Lefschetz 418.F
 Plancherel (on a unimodular locally compact group) 437.L
 Plücker (on plane algebraic curves) 9.B
 Poincaré (in integral geometry) 218.C
 Poisson (on Bessel functions) App. A, Table 19.III
 Poisson (for a flat torus) 391.J
 Poisson integral 198.B
 Poisson summation 192.C,L
 prime 411.D
 prime (of a language) 276.A
 principal, of integral geometry 218.C
 product (for the Hilbert norm-residue symbol) 14.R
 product (on invariant Haar measures) 225.F
 product (for the norm-residue symbol) 14.Q
 product (on valuations) 439.H
 q -expansion (on theta functions) 134.I
 recurrence, for indefinite integrals App. A, Table 9.II
 reduction (of a surface) 110.A
 Ricci 417.B, App. A, Table 4.II
 Riemann-Hurwitz (on coverings of a non-singular curve) 9.I
 Rodrigues 393.B
 Schläfli App. A, Table 19.III
 Schwarz-Christoffel transformation 77.D
 second variation 178.A
 set-theoretic 33.B
 Sommerfeld App. A, Table 19.III
 Sonine-Schafheitlin App. A, Table 19.III
 Steinberg (on representations of compact Lie groups) 248.Z
 Stirling 174.A 212.C, App. A, Table 17.I
 Stirling interpolation App. A, Table 21
 Stokes 94.F
 Stokes (on a C^∞ -manifold) 108.U
 Stokes (for integration of a vector field) App. A, Table 3.III
 Taylor (for a function of many variables) 106.J
 Taylor (for a function of one variable) 106.E, App. A, Table 9.IV
 theoretical 19.E
 Θ - (on ideles) 6.F
 trace (on unitary representations) 437.DD
 transformation (for the generating function of the number of partitions) 328.A
 transformation (of a theta function) 3.I
 transformation (for theta series) 348.L
 Trotter product 351.F
 valid 411.G
 Villat integration App. A, Table 15.VI
 Wallis App. A, Table 10.VI
 Watson 39.D, App. A, Table 19.IV
 Watson-Nicholson App. A, Table 19.III
 Weber App. A, Table 19.IV
 Weber-Sonine App. A, Table 19.III
 Weierstrass-Enneper 275.A
 Weingarten (for isometric immersion) 365.C
 Weingarten (in theory of surfaces) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 Weyl 323.M
 Weyl character (on representations of compact Lie groups) 248.Z
 Weyl integral 225.I
 Weyrich App. A, Table 19.III
 Wiener 160.B
 Wu's App. A, Table 6.V
 Forti paradox, Burali- 319.B
 forward analysis 138.C
 forward difference 304.E, App. A, Table 21
 forward emission 325.A
 forward equation, Kolmogorov 115.A 260.F
 forward interpolation formula
 Gauss 223.C
 Newton 223.C
 forward type 304.D,F
 foundation, axiom of 33.B
 foundations of geometry 155
 foundations of mathematics 156
 four arithmetic operations 294.A
 four color conjecture 186.I
 four-color problem 157
 4-current density 150.B
 four-group 151.G
 Fourier, J. B. J. 158
 Fourier analysis App. A, Table 11
 Fourier analysis on the adèle group 6.F
 Fourier-Bessel series 39.D
 Fourier-Bessel transform 39.D
 Fourier coefficient 159.A, App. A, Table 11.I
 (of an almost periodic function) 18.B
 (in a Hilbert space) 197.C
 (in an orthogonal system) 317.A
 Fourier cosine series App. A, Table 11.I
 Fourier cosine transform 160.C, App. A, Table 11.II
 Fourier double integral theorem 160.B
 Fourier-Hermite polynomial 176.I
 Fourier hyperfunction 125.BB
 exponentially decreasing 125.BB
 modified 125.BB
 Fourier integral 160.A
 conjugate 160.D
 Fourier integral operator 274.C 345.B
 Fourier inversion formula 160.C
 Fourier kernel 220.B
 Fourier-Laplace transform 192.F
 Fourier reciprocity 160.C
 Fourier series 159, App. A, Table 11.I

- (of an almost periodic function) 18.B
- (of a distribution) 125.P
- (in a Hilbert space) 197.C
- Fourier sine series App. A, Table 11.I
- Fourier sine transform 160.C, App. A, Table 11.II
- Fourier single integral theorem 160.C
- Fourier-Stieltjes transform 192.B,O
- Fourier theorem (on real roots of an algebraic equation) 10.E
- Fourier transform 160, App. A, Table 11.II
 - (of a distribution) 125.O
 - (in topological Abelian groups) 36.L 192.I
 - discrete 142.D
 - fast 142.D
 - generalized 220.B
 - inverse 125.O
- Fourier ultrahyperfunction 125.BB
- 4-momentum operators 258.A,D
- fourth separation axiom 425.Q
- four-vector 258.C 359.C
- four-vector, energy-momentum 258.C
- four-vertex theorem 111.E
- fractal 246.K
- fraction(s)
 - continued 83
 - partial App. A, Table 10.V
- fractional cutting algorithm 215.B
- fractional factorial design 102.I
 - balanced 102.I
 - orthogonal 102.I
- fractional group, linear 60.B
- fractional ideal 67.J
 - of an algebraic number field 14.E
 - principal 67.K
- fractional power 378.D
- fractional programming 264.D
- fractional step 304.F
- Fraenkel set theory, Zermelo- 33.A,B
- fractional transformation, linear 74.E
- frame(s) 90.B
 - (of an affine space) 7.C
 - (of a C^∞ -manifold) 191.A
 - (in E^n) 111.B
 - (of a group manifold) 110.A
 - (in projective geometry) 343.C
 - (of a real line) 355.E
 - affine 7.C
 - bundle of tangent r - 105.H
 - Darboux 110.B
 - dual 417.B
 - family of (on a homogeneous space) 110.A
 - family of, of order 1 110.B
 - Frenet 110.A 111.D
 - Gaussian (of a surface) 111.H
 - k - (in \mathbf{R}^n) 199.B
 - method of moving 110.A
 - moving 90.B 111.C 417.B
 - natural moving 417.B
 - normal 110.B
 - of order 0 110.C
 - of order 1 110.B,C
 - of order 2 110.B,C
 - of order 3 110.B,C
 - of order 4 110.B
 - orthogonal (in a Euclidean space) 111.B 139.E
 - orthogonal k - (in \mathbf{R}^n) 199.B
 - orthogonal moving 417.D
 - projective 343.C
 - Stiefel manifold of k - 199.B
 - stochastic moving 406.G
 - tangent r - 105.H
- frame bundle
 - orthogonal 364.A
 - tangent orthogonal n - 364.A
 - tangent r - 105.H 147.F
- framed link 114.L
- framing 114.L
- Fréchet axiom 425.Q
- Fréchet curve 246.A
- Fréchet derivative 286.E
- Fréchet differentiable function 286.E
- Fréchet differential 286.E
- Fréchet distance (between surfaces) 246.I
- Fréchet L -space 87.K
- Fréchet manifold 286.K
- Fréchet space
 - (quasinormed space) 37.O
 - (topological linear space) 424.I
 - (topological space) 425.CC
 - locally convex 424.I
 - in the sense of Banach 37.O
 - in the sense of Bourbaki 424.I
- Fréchet surface 246.I
- Fréchet-Uryson space 425.CC
- Fredholm alternative theorem 68.E 217.F
- Fredholm determinant 217.E
- Fredholm first minor 217.E
- Fredholm formula 68.L
- Fredholm integral equation 217.A
 - of the first kind 217.A
 - of the second kind 217.A
 - of the third kind 217.A
- Fredholm mapping 286.E
- Fredholm operator 68.F 251.D
 - (in the sense of Grothendieck) 68.K
- Fredholm r th minor 217.E
- Fredholm type
 - integral equation of 217.A
 - integrodifferential equation of 222.A
- free
 - (discontinuous group) 122.A
 - distribution- 371.A
 - F - (oriented G -manifold) 431.E
 - (F, F') - (oriented G -manifold) 431.E
- free Abelian group 2.C
- free additive group 2.E
- free derivative 235.C
- free Dirac field 377.C
- freedom
 - asymptotic 361.B
 - degrees of (of a dynamical system) 271.F
 - n degrees of (sampling distribution) 374.B,C
- free energy 340.B 402.G
 - Gibbs 419.C
 - Helmholtz 419.C
 - mean 340.B 402.G
- free fields 150.A
- free grammar, context- 31.D
- free groups 161
- free Hamiltonian 351.D
- free homotopy 202.B
- free Lagrangian density 150.B
- freely act 122.A 431.A
- free module 277.G
- free product (of groups) 190.M
- free scalar field 377.C
- free semigroup 161.A
- free special Jordan algebra 231.A
- free vacuum vector 150.C
- free variable 411.C

- free vector 442.A
- French empiricism 156.C
- Frenet formula 111.D
- Frenet frame 110.A 111.D
- Frenet-Serret formulas (on curves) 111.D,
App. A, Table 4.I
- frequency
 - (of an oscillation) 318.A
 - (of samples) 396.C 397.B
 - (of a translational flow) 126.L 136.G
 - (of a wave) 446
 - angular (of a wave) 446
 - circular (of a simple harmonic motion) 318.B
 - relative (of samples) 396.C
- frequency distribution 397.B
- frequency function 397.D
- frequency response function 421.E
- Fresnel integral 167.D, App. A, Tables 9.V 19.II
- Freudenthal theorem 202.U
- Friedrichs extension 112.I 251.I
- Friedrichs scheme 304.F
- Friedrichs theorem 323.H 326.D
- frieze group 92.F
- Frobenius algebra 29.H
 - quasi- 29.H
- Frobenius automorphism (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- Frobenius group 151.H
- Frobenius integrability condition 154.B
- Frobenius method App. A, Table 14.I
- Frobenius morphism 450.P
- Frobenius substitution (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- Frobenius theorem
 - (on Abelian varieties) 3.D
 - (on matrices with nonnegative entries) 269.N
 - (on polynomials of a matrix) 390.B
 - (on representations of finite groups) 362.G
 - (on total differential equations and on foliations)
154.B 286.H 428.D
- Frobenius theorem, Perron- 310.H
- Froissart bound 386.B
- Froissart-Martin bound 386.B
- frontier point (of a subset) 425.N
- front set, analytic wave 274.D
- front set, wave 274.B 345.A
- Frostman maximum principle 338.C
- Froude number 116.B
- Fubini theorem 221.E
- Fuchsian form of weight k (or of dimension $-k$)
32.B
- Fuchsian function 32.B
- Fuchsian group 122.C
 - of the first kind 122.C
 - of the second kind 122.C
- Fuchsian relation 253.A, App. A, Table 18.I
- Fuchsian type (visibility manifold) 178.F
- Fuchsian type, equation of 253.A
- Fuchsoid group 122.C
- Fuks cohomology, Gelfand- 105.AA
- full discrete approximation 304.B
- full embedding theorem (of an Abelian category)
52.N
- full group 136.F 258.A
- full homogeneous Lorentz group 258.A
- full inhomogeneous Lorentz group 258.A
- full international notation 92.E
- full linear group 60.B
- full matrix algebra 269.B
- full Poincaré group 258.A
- full subcategory 52.A
- fully complete (locally convex space) 424.Y
- fully faithful functor 52.H
- fully normal space 425.X
- fully transitive 92.C
- Fulton and Hansen, general connectedness theorem
of 16.I
- function(s) 165 381.C
 - Abelian 3.J
 - absolutely integrable 214.E
 - additive interval 380.B
 - additive set 380.C
 - admissible 46.A 304.B
 - Ahlfors 43.G 77.E
 - algebraic 11.A
 - almost periodic 18
 - almost periodic, on a group 18.C
 - almost periodic, with respect to ρ 18.C
 - almost periodic, in the sense of Bohr 18.B
 - α -excessive 261.D
 - alternating 337.I
 - amplitude (of a Fourier integral operator)
274.C 345.B
 - analytic \rightarrow analytic function(s)
 - analytic almost periodic 18.D
 - analytic operator 37.K
 - Anger 39.G, App. A, Table 19.IV
 - Appell hypergeometric, of two variables
206.D, App. A, Table 18.I
 - argument 46.A
 - arithmetic 295.A
 - Artin-Hasse 257.H
 - associated Legendre 383.C, App. A,
Table 18.III
 - asymptotically developable 30.A
 - automorphic 32
 - automorphic, with respect to Γ 32.A
 - b - 125.EE 418.H
 - \mathfrak{B} -measurable 270.J
 - Baire 84.D
 - Barnes extended hypergeometric 206.C,
App. A, Table 18.I
 - base 304.B
 - Bellman 127.G
 - Bergman kernel 188.G
 - Bessel 39, App. A, Table 19.III
 - beta 174.C, App. A, Table 17.I
 - bispectral density 421.C
 - Borel measurable 270.J
 - boundary 160.E
 - bounded 43.A
 - of bounded variation 166
 - Busemann 178.F
 - C^∞ - (of many variables) 58.B
 - C^∞ -, slowly increasing 125.O
 - C^r -, in a C^∞ -manifold 105.G
 - canonical (on a nonsingular curve) 9.E
 - characteristic (of a density function) 397.G
 - characteristic (of a graded R -module) 369.F
 - characteristic (of a meromorphic function)
272.B
 - characteristic (of an n -person cooperative game)
173.D
 - characteristic (for an optical system) 180.C
 - characteristic (of a probability measure) 341.C
 - characteristic (of a subset) 381.C
 - characteristic operator 251.N
 - Chebyshev App. A, Table 20.II
 - Chebyshev q - 19.G, App. A, Table 20.VII
 - choice 33.B 34.A
 - circular 131.F 432.A
 - class (on a compact group) 69.B

Function(s)

- of class C^n , C^0 , C^1 , C^∞ , or C^ω 106.K
- of class C^r at a point 105.G
- of class C^r in a C^∞ -manifold 105.G
- of class C^∞ (of many variables) 58.B
- of class n , 0, 1, ξ , or ω 84.D
- cn App. A, Table 16.III
- completely additive set 380.C
- completely monotonic 240.E,K
- completely multiplicative number-theoretic 295.B
- complex 165.B
- complex-valued 165.B
- composite 106.I
- concave 88.A
- of confluent type 167
- of confluent type and Bessel functions App. A, Table 19
- conical App. A, Table 18.II
- conjugate 159.E 160.D
- conjugate harmonic 193.C
- constant 381.C
- continuous (on a metric space) 84
- continuous additive interval 380.B
- convex 88.A
- coordinate (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
- coordinate (in the Ritz method) 304.B
- cosigma 134.H, App. A, Table 16.IV
- counting (of a meromorphic function) 272.B
- covariance 386.A 395.A
- criterion 127.A
- cross spectral density 421.E
- cumulative distribution 341.B 342.C
- cylindrical 39.B, App. A, Table 19.III
- Daniell-Stone integrable 310.E
- decision 398.A
- decision, space of 398.A
- Dedekind eta 328.A
- Dedekind zeta 14.C 450.D
- defining (of a hyperfunction) 125.V
- density 397.D
- derived 106.A
- digamma 174.B
- dimension (on a continuous geometry) 85.A
- D-integrable 100.D
- Dirac delta App. A, Table 12.II
- Dirichlet 84.D 221.A
- distance 273.B
- distribution 168.B 341.B 342.C
- divisor 295.C
- divisor of (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
- divisor of (on an algebraic variety) 16.M
- dn App. A, Table 16.III
- doubly periodic 134.E
- E - 430.D
- \mathcal{E} - 46.C
- effectively calculable 356.C
- eigen- (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
- eigen- (for an integral equation) 271.F
- eigen- (of a linear operator) 390.A
- elementary 131
- elementary, of class n 131.A
- elementary Abelian 3.M
- elliptic 134 323.A,D
- elliptic, of the first kind 134.G
- elliptic, of the second kind 134.G
- elliptic, of the third kind 134.H
- elliptic cylinder 268.B
- elliptic irrational 134.A
- elliptic theta 134.I, App. A, Table 16.II
- empirical characteristic 396.C
- empirical distribution 250.F 374.E 396.C
- energy 126.L 279.F
- energy spectrum 433.C
- entire 429.A
- entire algebroidal 17.B
- envelope power 400.F
- error 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- estimating 399.D
- η - 391.L
- Euler 295.C
- even 165.B
- explicit 165.C
- exponential 131.D
- exponential, with the base a 131.B
- exponential, of an operator 306.C
- exponential generating 177.A
- factorial 174.A
- family of quasi-analytic 58.A
- Feller transition 261.B
- finitely additive set 380.B
- finite-valued 443.B
- flat 58.C
- Fréchet differentiable 286.E
- frequency 397.D
- frequency response 421.E
- Fuchsian 32.B
- gamma 150.D 174, App. A, Table 17.I
- Gelfand-Shilov generalized 125.S
- generalized 125.S
- generalized divisor 295.C
- generalized rational 142.B
- general Mathieu 268.B
- general recursive 356.C,F
- generating (of an arithmetic function) 295.E
- generating (of a contact transformation) 82.A 271.F
- generating (of a sequence of functions) 177.A
- of Gevrey class 168.B
- global implicit, theorem 208.D
- grand partition 402.D
- Green 188.A 189.B
- Green (α -order) 45.D
- Green (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
- Green, method 402.J
- Gudermann 131.F, App. A, Table 16.III
- half-Bessel 39.B
- Hamiltonian 219.C 271.F
- Hankel 39.B, App. A, Table 19.III
- harmonic 193
- harmonic kernel 188.H
- hazard 397.O
- Heaviside 125.E 306.B, App. A, Table 12.II
- Hey zeta 27.F
- higher transcendental 289.A
- Hilbert characteristic (of a coherent sheaf on a projective variety) 16.E
- Hilbert modular 32.G
- Hill 268.E
- holomorphic 198
- holomorphic (of many variables) 21.C
- holomorphic (on an open set in a complex manifold) 72.A
- holomorphic, germ of 21.E
- hyper- 125.V
- hyperarithmetical 356.H
- hyperbolic 131.F
- hypergeometric 206.A, App. A, Table 18.I
- hypergeometric (of the hyperspherical differential equation) 393.E

- hypergeometric, of confluent type 167.A,
 App. A, Table 19.I
 hypergeometric, with matrix argument 206.E
 identity 381.C
 implicit 165.C 208
 implicit, theorem 208.A 286.G
 implicit, theorem (in Banach algebra) 36.M
 implicit, theorem (in locally convex spaces)
 286.J
 impulse 306.B, App. A, Table 12.II
 incomplete beta 174.C, App. A, Table 17.I
 incomplete gamma 174.A, App. A, Table 17.I
 increment 380.B
 indicator (of a subset) 342.E 376.C
 inner 43.F
 integral 429.A
 integral of, with respect to a volume element
 (on a C^∞ -manifold) 105.W
 interpolation 223.A
 interval 380.A
 invariant decision 398.E
 inverse 198.L 381.C
 inverse analytic 198.L
 inverse trigonometric 131.E
 Jacobi elliptic App. A, Table 16.III
 joint density 397.J
 Julia exceptional 272.F
 jump 306.C
 K -pseudoanalytic 352.B
 K -quasiregular 352.B
 k -valued algebroidal 17.A
 Kelvin 39.G, App. A, Table 19.IV
 kernel 188.G
 Koebe extremal 438.C
 Kummer 167.A, App. A, Table 19.I
 L - \rightarrow L -function
 Lagrangian 271.F 292.A
 Laguerre App. A, Table 20.VI
 λ - 32.C
 Lamé, of the first kind 133.B
 Lamé, of the first species 133.C
 Lamé, of the fourth species 133.C
 Lamé, of the second kind 133.C
 Lamé, of the second species 133.C
 Lamé, of the third species 133.C
 Lane-Emden 291.F
 Laplace spherical 393.A
 Lebesgue measurable 270.J
 Legendre 393.B, App. A, Table 18.II
 likelihood 374.J 399.M
 likelihood estimating 399.M
 linear 74.E
 linear discriminant 280.I
 linear fractional 74.E
 linear regression 397.H,J 403.D
 locally integrable 168.B
 logarithmic, to the base a 131.B
 loss 398.A
 lower limit 84.C
 lower semicontinuous (in a set) 84.C
 Lyapunov 126.F 163.G
 major 100.F
 Mangoldt 123.B
 many-valued 165.B
 of many variables 165.C
 Mathieu 268
 Mathieu, of the first kind 268.B
 Mathieu, of the second kind 268.D
 maximal concentration 341.E
 mean concentration 341.E
 measurable 270.J
 measurable vector 308.G
 meromorphic 21.J 272
 meromorphic (on an analytic space) 23.D
 meromorphic (on a complex manifold) 72.A
 minimax decision 398.B
 minor 100.F
 Möbius 66.C 295.C
 modified Bessel 39.G, App. A, Table 19.IV
 modified indicator 341.C
 modified Mathieu 268.A
 modified Mathieu, of the first kind 268.D
 modified Mathieu, of the second kind 268.D
 modified Mathieu, of the third kind 268.D
 modular (of a locally compact group) 225.D
 modular, of level N 32.C
 moment-generating 177.A 341.C
 monotone 166.A
 monotone decreasing 166.A
 monotone increasing 166.A
 monotonic 166.A
 Morse 279.B
 of at most class 1 84.D
 μ -conformal 352.B
 multidimensional gamma 374.C
 multiplicative 32.A
 multiplicative automorphic 32.A
 multiplicity (of a mapping) 246.G
 multivalent 438
 multivalued 165.B
 Nash-Moser implicit, theorem 286.J
 n -dimensional distribution 342.C
 n th derived 106.D
 n -times continuously differentiable 106.K
 n -times differentiable 106.D
 of n variables 165.C
 nice (on a C^∞ -manifold) 114.F
 nondecreasing 166.A
 nondegenerate theta 3.I
 nonincreasing 166.A
 nontangential maximal 168.B
 normal (of ordinal numbers) 312.C
 normal density 397.D
 null 310.I
 number-theoretic 295.A 356.A
 objective 264.B 307.C
 odd 165.B
 operating 192.N
 order (of a meromorphic function) 272.B
 orthogonal 317, App. A, Table 20
 orthogonal, Haar system of 317.C
 orthogonal, Rademacher system of 317.C
 orthogonal, Walsh system of 317.C
 outer 43.F
 P -, of Riemann 253.B
 \wp -, of Weierstrass 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
 Painlevé transcendental 288.C
 parabolic cylinder 167.C
 parametric 102.A 399.A
 partial 356.E
 partition 402.D
 payoff 173.B
 pentagramma 174.B
 periodic 134.E
 phase (of a Fourier integral operator) 274.C
 345.B
 piecewise continuous 84.B
 plurisubharmonic 21.G
 point 380.A
 polygamma 174.B, App. A, Table 17.I

- positive real 282.C
- of positive type 192.B,J
- power 400.A
- primitive 216.C
- primitive, derivatives and App. A, Table 9.I
- primitive recursive 356.A,B,F
- probability generating 341.F
- proper (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
- proper convex 88.D
- propositional 411.C
- proximity (of a meromorphic function) 272.B
- pseudo- 125.C
- psi 174.B
- quadratic loss 398.A 399.E
- quasi-analytic 58.F
- quasi-analytic, family of 58.A
- quasi-analytic, set of 58.F
- quasicontinuous 338.I
- radial maximal 168.B
- rank 66.F
- rapidly decreasing C^∞ - 168.B
- rate distortion 213.E
- rational, field of 337.H
- rational, on a variety 16.A
- rational entire 429.A
- real 165.B
- real analytic 106.K 198.H
- real-valued 165.B
- recursive \rightarrow recursive function(s)
- regression 397.I
- regular 198
- regular, on an open set (of a variety) 16.B
- regular, at a subvariety 16.B
- representative (of a compact Lie group) 249.U
- representing (of a predicate) 356.B
- representing (of a subset) 381.C
- reproduction 263.A
- Riemann (of a Cauchy problem) 325.D
- Riemann integrable 216.A
- Riemann P App. A, Tables 14.I 18.I
- Riemann theta 3.L
- Riemann ζ - 450.B
- right continuous 84.B
- right majorizing 316.E
- right superior 316.E
- risk 398.A
- sample 407.A
- sample covariance 395.G
- with scattered zeros 208.C
- schlicht 438.A
- Schwinger 150.F
- selection 354.E
- self-reciprocal 220.B
- semicontinuous (at a point) 84.C
- sequential decision 398.F
- set 380
- of several variables 106.I,J
- shape 223.G
- Siegel modular, of degree n 32.F
- σ -, of Weierstrass 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
- simple 221.B 443.B
- simple loss 398.A
- simplest Chebyshev q - 19.G
- simply periodic 134.E
- single-valued 165.B
- singular inner function 43.F
- slope 46.C
- sn App. A, Table 16.III
- special App. A, Table 14.II
- special, of confluent type 389.A
- special, of ellipsoidal type 389.A
- special, of hypergeometric type 389.A
- spherical (on a homogeneous space) 437.Y
- spherical Bessel 39.B
- spherical harmonic 193.C
- spheroidal wave 133.E
- standard defining 125.Z
- stationary 46.B
- statistical decision 398.A
- stream 205.B
- strictly concave 88.A
- strictly convex 88.A
- strictly decreasing 166.A
- strictly increasing 166.A
- strictly monotone 166.A
- strictly monotone (of ordinal numbers) 312.C
- strictly monotone decreasing 166.A
- strictly monotone increasing 166.A
- strictly monotonic 166.A
- structure 191.C
- Struve 39.G, App. A, Table 19.IV
- subharmonic 193.A
- superharmonic 193.P
- supporting 125.O
- symmetric 337.I
- Szegő kernel 188.H
- τ - 150.D
- test 130.DD 400.A
- tetragamma 174.B
- Theodorsen 39.E
- theory of 198.Q
- theory of, of a complex variable 198.Q
- theta 134.I
- theta (on a complex torus) 3.I
- time ordered 150.D
- torus App. A, Table 18.III
- transcendental, of Painlevé 288.C
- transcendental entire 429.A
- transcendental meromorphic 272.A
- transfer 86.D
- transfinite logical choice 411.J
- transition (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
- transition (of a Markov chain) 250.A 261.B
- trigamma 174.B
- trigonometric 432.A, App. A, Table 2
- truncated Wightman 150.D
- truth 341.A 411.E
- ultradifferentiable 168.B
- uniformly almost periodic 18.B
- unit 306.B, App. A, Table 12.II
- universally measurable 270.L
- upper limit 84.C
- upper semicontinuous 84.C
- value 108.B
- on a variety 16.A
- von Neumann 39.B 188.H, App. A, Table 19.III
- Wagner 39.E
- wave 351.D
- Weber 39.G 167.C, App. A, Tables 19.IV, 20.IV
- Weierstrass elliptic App. A, Table 16.IV
- Weierstrass \wp - 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
- Weierstrass sigma 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
- weight (interpolatory) 299.A
- weight (for the mean of a function) 211.C
- weight (in orthogonality) 317.A
- Whittaker 167.B, App. A, Table 19.II
- Wightman 150.D
- \mathfrak{X} -valued holomorphic 251.G
- zeta \rightarrow zeta functions

- zonal spherical (on a homogeneous space) 437.Y
- functional 46.A 162 165.B
 - additive (of a Markov process) 261.E
 - algebraic linear 424.B
 - analytic 168.C
 - areal 334.B
 - bilinear 424.G
 - Brownian 176.I
 - characteristic (of a probability distribution) 407.C
 - Dirichlet 334.C
 - Douglas 334.C
 - linear 37.C 197.F 424.B
 - martingale additive 261.E
 - multiplicative (of a Markov process) 261.E
 - multiplicative, transformation by (in Markov process) 261.F
 - perfect additive 261.E
 - subadditive 88.B
 - supporting (of a convex set) 89.G
 - Yang-Mills 80.Q
- functional analysis 162
- functional analysis, nonlinear 286
- functional cohomology operation 202.S
- functional-differential equation 163
 - system of 163.E
- functional equation
 - Abel 388.D
 - approximate (of zeta function) 450.B
 - Schröder 388.D
 - special 388.A
 - of zeta function 450.B
- function algebra 164.A
- functionally dependent (components of mapping) 208.C
 - of class C^r 208.C
- functional model 251.N
- functional paper 19.D
- functional Φ -operation 202.S
- functional relation 208.C
 - of class C^r 208.C
 - of gamma function 174.A
- function element 198.I 339.A
 - inverse 198.L
 - in the wider sense 198.O
- function field
 - (of an algebraic curve over a field) 9.C
 - (of an algebraic variety) 16.A
 - Abelian 3.J
 - algebraic, over k of dimension 1 9.D
 - algebraic, over k of transcendence degree 1 9.D
 - algebraic, in n variables 149.K
 - elliptic 9.D
 - rational, in n variables 149.K
- function group 234.A
- function matrix
 - rational 86.D
 - transfer 86.B
- functions on a variety 16.A
- function space(s) 168 435.D
 - test 125.S
- function symbol 411.H
- function-theoretic null sets 169
- function variable 411.H
- functor 52.H
 - ∂ - 200.I
 - ∂^* - 200.I
 - additive 52.N
 - adjoint 52.K
 - cohomological 200.I
 - connected sequences of 200.I
 - contravariant 52.H
 - covariant 52.H
 - derived 200.I
 - exact 52.N 200.I
 - faithful 52.H
 - forgetful 52.I
 - fully faithful 52.H
 - half-exact 200.I
 - homological 200.I
 - left adjoint 52.K
 - left balanced 200.I
 - left derived 200.I.Q
 - left exact 200.I
 - partial derived 200.I
 - relative derived 200.K
 - representable 53.L
 - right adjoint 52.K
 - right balanced 200.I
 - right derived 200.I.Q
 - right exact 200.I
 - spectral 200.J
 - universal ∂ - 200.I
- functorial isomorphism 53.J
- functorial morphism 53.J
- fundamental absolute neighborhood retract (FANR) 382.C
- fundamental absolute retract (FAR) 382.C
- fundamental cell (of a symmetric Riemann space) 413.F
- fundamental class
 - (of an Eilenberg-MacLane space) 70.F
 - (of a Poincaré pair) 114.J
 - (of a Thom complex) 114.G
 - with coefficient \mathbb{Z}_2 65.B
- fundamental conjecture (in topology) 70.C
- fundamental curve (with respect to a birational mapping) 16.I
- fundamental cutset matrix 186.G
- fundamental cycle
 - (of an oriented pseudomanifold) 65.B
 - (in a resolution of a singularity) 418.C
- fundamental differential invariants (of a surface) 110.B
- fundamental discriminant 295.D
- fundamental domain 234.C
- fundamental exact sequence 200.M
- fundamental figure(s) 343.B
 - linear 343.B
- fundamental form
 - (associated with a Hermitian metric) 232.A
 - (of a Finsler space) 152.A
 - first 111.G, App. A, Table 4.I
 - second 111.G 360.G 365.C
- fundamental group 170
 - algebraic 16.U
- fundamental homology class 201.N
 - around K 201.N
- fundamental invariants (of a space with a Lie transformation group) 110.A
- fundamental kernel 320.H
- fundamental lemma
 - in the calculus of variations 46.B
 - Neyman-Pearson 400.B
- fundamental open set 122.B
- fundamental operator 163.H
- fundamental period (of a periodic function) 134.E
- fundamental period parallelogram 134.E

- fundamental point
 - (with respect to a birational mapping) 16.I
 - (of a projective space) 343.C
 - fundamental quantities
 - first 111.H
 - second 111.H
 - fundamental region (of a discrete transformation group) 122.B
 - Ford 234.C
 - fundamental relations
 - (of gamma functions) 174.A
 - (among the generators of a group) 161.A
 - (in thermodynamics) 419.A
 - fundamental retract 382.C
 - fundamental root system (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.N
 - fundamental sequence
 - of cross cuts (in a simply connected domain) 333.B
 - of rational numbers 294.E
 - of real numbers 355.B
 - in a uniform space 436.G
 - fundamental set (of a transformation group) 122.B
 - fundamental solution(s)
 - (of a differential operator) 112.B 189.C
 - (of an elliptic equation) 323.B
 - (of an evolution equation) 189.C
 - (of a hyperbolic equation) 325.D
 - (of a parabolic equation) 327.D
 - (of a partial differential equation) 320.H
 - system of (of a system of linear equations) 269.M
 - fundamental space 125.S
 - fundamental subvariety (with respect to a birational mapping) 16.I
 - fundamental system
 - (of eigenfunctions to an eigenvalue for an integral equation) 217.F
 - (for a linear difference equation) 104.D
 - (of a root system) 13.J
 - of irreducible representations (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.W
 - of neighborhoods 425.E
 - of solutions (of a homogeneous linear ordinary differential equation) 252.B
 - of solutions (of a homogeneous system of linear differential equations of the first order) 252.H
 - fundamental tensor(s)
 - (of a Finsler space) 152.A
 - (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.A
 - Lie 413.G
 - second 417.F
 - fundamental theorem(s)
 - of algebra 10.E
 - Bonnet (on surfaces) 111.H
 - of calculus 216.C
 - of elementary number theory 297.C
 - the first (of Morse theory) 279.D
 - Gentzen 411.J
 - Nevanlinna first 272.B
 - Nevanlinna second 272.E
 - of the principal order σ 14.C
 - of projective algebraic varieties 72.F
 - of projective geometry 343.D
 - of proper mapping 16.X
 - the second (of Morse theory) 279.D
 - of Stein manifolds 21.L 72.E
 - on symmetric polynomials 337.I
 - of the theory of curves 111.D
 - of the theory of surfaces 111.G
 - Thom 114.H
 - of the topology of surfaces 410.B
 - of ultraproducts 276.E
 - fundamental tieset matrix 186.G
 - fundamental unit 414.A 116
 - fundamental units (of an algebraic number field) 14.D
 - fundamental vector field 191.A
 - fundamental vectors (in a vector space) 442.A
 - future cone 258.A
- G**
- $\gamma \rightarrow$ gamma
 - $GL(n, k)$ (general linear group) 60.B
 - γ -matrices, Dirac 415.G
 - γ -perfect 186.J
 - γ -perfectness 186.J
 - γ -point of the k th order (of a holomorphic function) 198.C
 - Γ -equivalent (points) 122.A
 - Γ -extension 14.L
 - $\Gamma_{\mathcal{F}}$ -foliation 154.H
 - Γ -structure 90.D 105.Y
 - $\Gamma_{\mathcal{F}}$ -structure 154.H
 - Γ_q^* -structure 154.E
 - g -lattice (of a separable algebra) 27.A
 - integral 27.A
 - normal 27.A
 - G -bundle 147.B
 - G -connections, Yang-Mills 80.Q
 - G -fiber homotopy type, spherical 431.F
 - G -group 172.J
 - G -invariant
 - (element) 226.A
 - (statistics) 396.I
 - almost 396.I
 - G -invariant measure 225.B
 - G -isomorphism 191.A
 - G -manifold 431.C
 - oriented 431.E
 - G -mapping (G -map) 362.B 431.A
 - G -set
 - k -ply transitive 362.B
 - left 362.B
 - quotient 362.B
 - right 362.B
 - simply transitive 362.B
 - sub- 362.B
 - G -space 178.H 431.A
 - with nonpositive curvature 178.H
 - G -stationary
 - strictly 395.I
 - weakly 395.I
 - G -structure 191
 - G -subset 362.B
 - G -surface 178.H
 - G -vector bundle 237.H
 - G_{δ} -set 270.C
 - gain, heat 419.A
 - Galerkin method 290.E 303.I 304.B
 - Galilei transformation 359.C
 - Galois, E. 171
 - Galois cohomology 172.J 200.N
 - Galois equation 172.G
 - Galois extension (of a field) 172.B
 - Galois field 149.M
 - Galois group
 - of an algebraic equation 172.G
 - of a Galois extension 172.B

- of a polynomial 172.G
- Galois theory 172
 - of differential fields 113
- Galton-Watson process 44.B
 - multi (k)-type 44.C
- game
 - bimatrix 173.C
 - constant-sum 173.A
 - cooperative 173.A
 - differential 108
 - general-sum 173.A
 - with infinitely many players 173.D
 - matrix 173.C
 - multistage 173.C
 - noncooperative 173.A
 - n -person, in extensive form 173.B
 - n -person, in normal form 173.C
 - n -person cooperative, in characteristic-function form 173.D
 - in partition-function form 173.D
 - without side payments 173.D
 - zero-sum 173.A
 - zero-sum two-person 108.B
- game-theoretic model 307.C
- game theory 173
- gamma density 397.D
- gamma distribution 341.D, App. A, Table 22
- gamma function 150.D 174, App. A, Table 17.I
 - incomplete 174.A, App. A, Table 17.I
 - multidimensional 374.C
- gamma function and related functions App. A, Table 17
- gap (at a point) 84.B
- gap theorem 339.D
 - Hadamard 339.D
- gap value (of a point on a Riemann surface) 11.D
- Gårding, hyperbolic in the sense of 325.F
- Gårding inequality 112.G 323.H
- Garnier system 253.E
- Garside-Jarratt-Mack method 301.N
- gases, kinetic theory of 402.B
- Gâteaux derivative 286.E
- Gâteaux differentiable 286.E
- gauge theory 105.G
 - lattice 150.G
- gauge transformation
 - (in electromagnetism) 130.A
 - (in a lattice spin system) 402.G
 - (of a principal fiber bundle) 80.Q
 - (in unified field theory) 434.B
 - of the first kind 150.B
- Gauss, C. F. 175
- Gauss-Argand plane 74.C
- Gauss backward interpolation formula 223.C
- Gauss-Bonnet formula 111.H 364.D, App. A, Table 4.I
- Gauss-Bonnet-Sasaki-Nitsche formula 275.C
- Gauss-Chebyshev formula (in numerical integration) 299.A
- Gauss circle problem 242.A
- Gauss criterion App. A, Table 10.II
- Gauss equation
 - (on an isometric immersion) 365.C
 - (on surfaces) 111.H
- Gauss formula
 - (on Gauss sum) 295.D
 - (on harmonic functions) 193.D
 - (for integration of a vector field) App. A, Table 3.III
 - (for isometric immersion) 365.C
 - (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - (for the surface integral) 94.F
 - (in theory of surfaces) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
- Gauss forward interpolation formula 223.C
- Gauss-Hermite formula (in numerical integration) 299.A
- Gauss hypergeometric differential equation App. A, Table 14.II
- Gaussian
 - (system of random variables) 176.A
 - complex 176.B
- Gaussian curvature
 - (of a surface) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - total (of a surface) 111.H
- Gaussian differential equation 206.A
- Gaussian distribution 341.D
 - standard 176.A
- Gaussian elimination 302.B
- Gaussian frame (of a surface) 111.H
- Gaussian integer 14.U
- Gaussian plane 74.C
- Gaussian process 176 342.A
 - complex 176.C
 - N -ple Markov 176.F
 - N -ple Markov, in the restricted sense 176.F
 - stationary 176.C
- Gaussian random field
 - Markov, in the McKean sense 176.F
 - Markov, in the Nelson sense 176.F
- Gaussian random measure 407.D
- Gaussian random variable, complex 176.B
- Gaussian source, autoregressive 213.E
- Gaussian sum 295.D 450.C
 - local 450.F
- Gaussian system
 - (of random variables) 176.A
 - complex 176.B
- Gaussian white noise 407.C
- Gauss integral 338.J
- Gauss integration formula (in the narrow sense) 299.A
- Gauss interpolation formula App. A, Table 21
- Gauss-Jordan elimination 302.B
- Gauss kernel 327.D
- Gauss-Laguerre formula (in numerical integration) 299.A
- Gauss-Manin connection (of a variety) 16.V
- Gauss mapping (in geometric optics) 180.B
- Gauss-Markov theorem 403.E
- Gauss-Seidel method 302.C
- Gauss series 206.A
- Gauss symbol 83.A
- Gauss theorem
 - (on algebraic closedness of \mathbb{C}) 10.E
 - (on primitive polynomials) 337.D
- Gauss theorem egregium (on surfaces) 111.H
- Gauss transformation App. A, Table 16.III
- Gauss variational problem 338.J
- G.C.D. (greatest common divisor) 67.H 297.A
- GCR algebra 36.H
- Gegenbauer polynomials 317.D 393.E, App. A, Table 20.I
- Gel'fand-Fuks cohomology 105.AA
- Gel'fand integrable 443.F
- Gel'fand-Levitan-Marchenko equation
 - (for KdV equations) 387.D
 - (for nonlinear lattice) 287.C
- Gel'fand-Mazur theorem 36.E
- Gel'fand-Naimark theorem 36.G
- Gel'fand-Pettis integrable 443.F

Gel'fand-Pettis integral 443.F
 Gel'fand-Pyatetskii-Shapiro reciprocity law 437.DD
 Gel'fand representation (of a commutative Banach algebra) 36.E
 Gel'fand-Shilov generalized function 125.S
 Gel'fand theorem, Stone- 168.B
 Gel'fand topology 36.E
 Gel'fand transform 36.E
 Gel'fand triplet 424.T
 Gell-Mann formula, Nakano-Nishijima- 132.A
 general addition theorem 388.C
 general analytic space 23.G
 general angle 139.D
 general associative law (for group composition) 190.C
 general boundary value problem 323.H
 general Cantor set 79.D
 general Cayley algebra 54
 general connectedness theorem due to Fulton and Hansen 16.I
 general curve 93.D
 general derivative (of a set function) 380.D
 general geometry of paths 152.C
 generalization (in étale topology) 16.AA
 generalized absolute continuity (*) 100.C
 generalized absolute continuity in the restricted sense 100.C
 generalized absolutely continuous function 100.C
 generalized Bayes solution 398.B
 generalized Bernoulli shift 136.D
 generalized Bernshtein problem 275.F
 generalized Boolean algebra 42.B
 generalized Boolean ring 42.C
 generalized Borel embedding 384.D
 generalized Clifford torus 275.F
 generalized cohomology theories 201.A
 generalized cohomology theory with E-coefficient 202.T
 generalized conformal mapping 246.I
 generalized continuum hypothesis 49.D
 generalized convergence 331.C
 generalized convolution (of distributions) 125.M
 generalized coordinates (in analytical dynamics) 271.F
 generalized cylindrical coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
 generalized decomposition number (of a finite group) 362.I
 generalized derivative 125.E
 generalized distance, Mahalanobis 280.E
 generalized distribution, Beurling 125.U
 generalized divisor function 295.C
 generalized eigenfunction 375.C
 generalized eigenspace (of a linear operator) 390.B
 generalized eigenvalue 375.C
 generalized eigenvalue problem 298.G
 generalized eigenvector 390.B
 generalized Eisenstein series 450.T
 generalized Fourier transform 220.B
 generalized function 125.S
 generalized Hardy class 164.G
 generalized helix 111.F
 generalized homology theory 201.A
 generalized homology theory with E-coefficient 202.T
 generalized Hopf homomorphism 202.U
 generalized Hopf invariant 202.Q
 generalized Hurewicz theorem 202.N

generalized isoperimetric problem 46.A 228.A
 generalized Jacobian (of a set function) 246.H
 generalized Jacobian variety 9.F 11.C
 generalized Lamé differential equation 167.E
 generalized least squares estimator 403.E
 generalized Lebesgue measure 270.E
 generalized Levi form 274.G
 generalized limit 37.F
 generalized minimal immersion 275.B
 generalized module 143.B
 generalized momentum 271.F
 generalized nilpotent (operator) 251.F
 generalized nilpotent element 36.E
 generalized nilpotent group 190.K
 generalized peak point 164.D
 generalized peak set 164.D
 generalized Pfaff problem 428.B
 generalized Poincaré conjecture 65.C
 generalized quaternion group 151.B
 generalized rational function 142.B
 generalized Riccati differential equation App. A, Table 14.I
 generalized Riemann-Roch theorem (on algebraic curves) 9.F
 generalized Schlömilch series 39.C
 generalized solvable group 190.K
 generalized stochastic process 407.C
 generalized suspension theorem 202.T
 generalized Tauberian theorem 36.L 160.G
 of Wiener 192.D
 generalized topological space 425.D
 generalized trigonometric polynomial 18.B
 generalized trigonometric series 18.B
 generalized uniserial algebra 29.I
 generalized valuation 439.B
 generalized variance 280.E 397.J
 generalized variance, sample 280.E
 generalized wave operator 375.B
 generalized Whitehead theorem 202.N
 general knot conjecture 235.B
 general law of reciprocity 14.O
 Artin 59.C
 general linear group 60.B 226.B 256.D
 of degree n over K 60.B 226.B 256.D
 over a noncommutative field 60.O
 projective 60.B
 general linear hypothesis 400.C
 general linear Lie algebra 248.A
 general lower derivative (of a set function) 380.D
 general Markov chain 260.J
 general Mathieu function 268.B
 general Navier-Stokes equations 204.F
 general position
 (complexes) 70.B
 (PL mappings) 65.D
 (in a projective space) 343.B
 theorem 65.D
 general principle of relativity 358
 general projective geometry 343.B
 general random walk 260.A
 general recursive function 356.C,F
 general recursive predicate 356.C
 general recursive set 97
 general Runge-Kutta method 303.D
 general sense, derivable in the 380.D
 general set theory 33.B
 general solution
 (of a difference equation) 104.D
 (of an ordinary differential equation) 313.A
 (of a partial differential equation) 320.C

- (of a system of partial differential equations) 428.B
- general sum 173.A
- general theory
 - of perturbations 420.E
 - of relativity 358
- general topology 426
- general type 72.H
 - surface of 72.K
- general uniformization theorem 367.G
- general upper derivative (of a set function) 380.D
- generate
 - (an A -module) 277.D
 - (a completely additive class) 270.B
 - (a field over k) 149.D
 - (a filter) 87.I
 - (an ideal) 67.B
 - (a linear subspace) 256.F
 - (a subgroup) 190.C
 - (a subring) 368.E
 - (a topology) 425.F
- generated, finitely 277.D
- generating curve 111.I
- generating element (with respect to a self-adjoint operator) 390.G
- generating function(s)
 - (of an arithmetic function) 295.E
 - (of a canonical transformation) 82.B
 - (of a contact transformation) 82.A
 - (of an infinitesimal transformation) 271.F
 - (of a sequence of functions) 177.A
 - exponential 177.A
 - factorial cumulant- 397.G
 - factorial moment 397.G
 - joint moment 397.I,J
 - moment- 177.A 341.C 397.G,J
 - probability- 341.F 397.G
- generating line
 - (of a circular cone) 78.A
 - (of a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
 - (of a quadric surface) 350.B
 - (of a ruled surface in differential geometry) 111.I
- generating representation (of a compact Lie group) 249.U
- generating space (of a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
- generator
 - (of an Abelian category) 200.I
 - (of a cyclic code) 63.D
 - (of an endomorphism) 136.E
 - (of a group) 190.C
 - (of a Markov process) 261.C
 - (of a semigroup) 378.D
 - Bott 237.D
 - Dynkin representation of 261.B
 - F.D. 136.E
 - infinitesimal 378.B
 - system of (of an A -module) 277.D
 - topological (of a compact Abelian group) 136.D
 - two-sided 136.E
- generic (property) 126.H
- generic point 16.A
- Gentzen fundamental theorem 411.J
- genuine solution 323.G
- genus
 - (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 - (of an ideal group) 59.E
 - (in integral representation theory) 362.K
 - (of a knot) 235.A
 - (of a lattice group) 13.P
 - (of a quadratic field) 347.F
 - (of a quadratic form) 348.H
 - (of a surface) 410.B
 - (of a transcendental integral function) 429.B
 - arithmetic (of an algebraic curve) 9.F
 - arithmetic (of an algebraic surface) 15.C
 - arithmetic (of a complete variety) 16.E
 - arithmetic, of a divisor (on an algebraic surface) 15.C
 - boundary 410.B
 - effective (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - of the function field K/k 9.D
 - geometric (of an algebraic surface) 15.E
 - geometric (of a complete variety) 16.O
 - geometric (of a singular point) 418.C
 - i - 15.E
 - linear 15.G
 - measure of (of a positive definite symmetric matrix) 348.K
 - \odot (of an algebraic curve) 9.F
 - principal (of an ideal group) 59.E
 - principal (of a quadratic field) 347.F
 - virtual arithmetic (of a divisor) 16.E
- geocentric parallax 392
- Geöcze area (of a surface) 246.E
- Geöcze problem 246.D
- geodesic 80.L,I 111.H 178 364.C, App. A, Table 4.I
 - null 359.D
 - totally, submanifold 365.D
- geodesic arc 178.H 364.B
- geodesic coordinates 80.J
- geodesic coordinate system in the weak sense 232.A
- geodesic correspondence (between surfaces) 111.I
- geodesic curvature 111.I, App. A, Table 4.I
- geodesic flow 126.L 136.G
- geodesic line 178.H
- geodesic point 111.H 365.D
- geodesic polar coordinates 90.C
- geodesic triangle 178.A
- geodesic variation 178.A
- geometrically finite 234.C
- geometrically reductive 226.B
- geometrically simple eigenvalue 390.A
- geometrical mean 397.C
- geometric complex 70.B
- geometric construction problem 179.A
- geometric crystal class 92.B
- geometric difference equation 104.G
- geometric dimension (of a vector bundle) 114.D
- geometric distribution 341.D, App. A, Table 22
- geometric fiber (of a morphism) 16.D
- geometric genus
 - of an algebraic surface 15.E
 - of a complete variety 16.O
 - of a singular point 418.C
- geometric mean
 - (of a function) 211.C
 - (of numbers) 211.C
- geometric multiplicity (of an eigenvalue) 390.A
- geometric number theory 296.B
- geometric optics 180
- geometric point (of a scheme) 16.D
- geometric probability 218.A
- geometric programming 264.D
- geometric progression 379.I, App. A, Table 10.VI
- geometric quotient 16.W
- geometric realization (of the s.s. complex) 70.E

- geometric series 379.B, App. A, Table 10.I
- geometry 181
 - affine 7
 - affine, in the narrower sense 7.E
 - affine differential 110.C
 - algebraic 12.A
 - analytic 181
 - circle 76.C
 - conformal 76.A
 - conformal differential 110.D
 - continuous 85.A
 - differential 109
 - differential, of curves and surfaces 111
 - differential, in specific spaces 110
 - elliptic 285.A
 - Euclidean, in the wider sense 139.B
 - finite-dimensional projective 343.B
 - formal 16.X
 - general, of paths 152.C
 - general projective 343.B
 - hyperbolic 285.A
 - hypersphere 76.C
 - integral 218.A
 - Laguerre 76.B
 - Lobachevskii non-Euclidean 285.A
 - Möbius 76.A
 - natural 110.A
 - n -dimensional Euclidean 139.B 181
 - non-Archimedean 155.D
 - non-Desarguesian 155.D 343.C
 - non-Euclidean 285.A
 - parabolic 285.A
 - plane 181
 - projective 343.B
 - projective, of paths 109
 - projective differential 110.B
 - pseudoconformal 344.A
 - pure 181
 - Riemannian 137, App. A, Table 4.II
 - Riemann non-Euclidean 285.A
 - solid 181
 - space 181
 - of a space subordinate to a group 137
 - spectral 391
 - sphere 76.C
 - spherical 285.D
 - on a surface 111.G
 - synthetic 181
 - wave 434.C
- geometry of numbers 182
- germ(s) 383.B
 - of an analytic set 23.B
 - of a C^∞ -function at the origin 58.C
 - of a holomorphic function 21.E
 - irreducible 23.B
 - reducible 23.B
 - sheaf of, of holomorphic functions 23.C
 - sheaf of, of regular functions 16.B
- Germain curvature (of a surface) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
- Gevrey class 58.G 125.U 325.I
 - function of 168.B
- ghost component (of an infinite-dimensional vector) 449.A
- ghost, Faddeev-Popov 132.C 150.G
- GHS inequality 212.A
- Gibbs distribution, equilibrium 136.C
- Gibbs-Duhem relation 419.B
- Gibbs free energy 419.C
 - minimum principle 419.C
- Gibbs measure 136.C
- Gibbs phenomenon 159.D
- Gibbs state 340.B
- Gilbert-Sacks bound, Varsharmov 63.B
- Gill method, Runge-Kutta- 303.D
- Gini coefficient of concentration 397.E
- Giraud theorem 323.C
- Girsanov theorem 406.B
- Girsanov transformation 406.B
- Girshick-Savage theorem 399.F
- Givens method 298.D
- Givens transformation 302.E
- GKS first inequality 212.A
- GKS second inequality 212.A
- Glashow-Weinberg-Salam model 132.D
- Glauert approximation, Prandtl- 205.B
- Glauert law of similarity, Prandtl- 205.D
- g.l.b. (greatest lower bound) 311.B
- Gleason part (for a function algebra) 164.F
- Gleason theorem 351.L
- glide operation 92.E
- glide reflection 92.E
- Glivenko-Cantelli theorem 374.E
- global analysis 183
- global dimension
 - (of an analytic set) 23.B
 - (of a ring) 200.K
 - left (of a ring) 200.K
 - right (of a ring) 200.K
 - weak (of a ring) 200.K
- global discretization error 303.B
- global Hecke algebra 450.O
- global implicit function theorem 208.D
- globally asymptotically stable 126.F
- globally symmetric Riemannian space 412.A
- global property (in differential geometry) 109
- global roundoff error 303.B
- global truncation error 303.B
- gluing theorem 21.I
- gluons 132.D
- GNS construction 308.D
- Godbillion-Vey classes 154.G
- Gödel, Kurt 184
- Gödel completeness theorem 411.J
- Gödel incompleteness theorem 156.E
- Gödel number(s) 185 356.C,E
- Gödel numbering 185.A
- Gödel set theory 33.C
 - Bernays- 33.A
- Goldbach problem 4.C
- Golden-Thompson inequality 212.B
- Goldstein method, Ince- 268.C
- Goldstone boson, Nambu- 132.C
- Goldstone theorem 132.C
- Gomory cut 215.B
- Goodner-Kelley theorem, Nachbin- 37.M
- goodness of fit 397.Q
 - test 401.E
- good reduction (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - potential (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
- good resolution 418.C
- Goppa code 63.E
- Gordan coefficients, Clebsch- 258.B 353.B
- Gordan equation, Klein- 351.G 377.C
- Gordon equation, Sine- 387.A
- Gorenstein ring 200.K
- Goursat kernel, Pincherle- 217.F
- Goursat theorem 198.B
- grad (gradient) 442.D
- graded algebra 203.B

graded A -module 200.B
 graded coalgebra 203.B
 graded Hopf algebra 203.C
 graded ideal 369.B
 graded module
 connected 203.B
 dual 203.B
 graded object 200.B
 graded ring 369.B
 associated 284.D
 gradient 442.D, App. A, Table 3.II
 gradient method 292.E
 Arrow-Hurwicz-Uzawa 292.E
 conjugate (CG) 302.D
 gradient projection method, Rosen 292.E
 Graeffe method 301.N
 Gramian (determinant) 103.G 208.E
 grammar
 Chomsky 31.D
 context-free 31.D
 context-sensitive 31.D
 regular 31.D
 Gram-Schmidt orthogonalization 317.A
 Gram theorem 226.E
 grand canonical ensemble 402.D
 grand partition function 402.D
 graph 186.B
 (of a knot) App. A, Table 7
 (= linear graph) 282.A
 (of a mapping) 381.C
 (of a meromorphic mapping) 23.D
 (of an operator) 251.B
 (of a relation) 358.A
 bipartite 186.C
 complete 186.C
 complete bipartite 186.C
 direct 186.B
 Euler 186.F
 Feynman 146.A,B 386.C
 labeled 186.B
 linear 282.A
 oriented 186.B
 partial 186.C
 planar 186.H
 regular 186.C
 reoriented 186.B
 section 186.C
 sub- 186.D
 undirected 186.B
 unicursal, theorem (Euler's) 186.F
 unlabeled 186.B
 unoriented 186.B
 graphic 66.H
 graphical calculation 19.B
 graphical differentiation 19.B
 graphical integration 19.B
 graphical mechanics 19.D
 graphical method of statistical inference 19.B
 graph norm 251.D
 graph theorem, closed 37.I 251.D 424.X
 graph theory 186
 Grashoff number 116.B
 Grassmann algebra (of a linear space) 256.O
 Grassmann coordinates (in a Grassmann manifold) 90.B
 Grassmann manifold 119.B 427.D
 complex 199.B
 formed by oriented subspaces 199.B
 infinite 147.I

Subject Index

Group(s)

real 199.B
 Grauert theorem (on proper holomorphic mappings) 23.E 72.E
 gravitation, law of universal 271.B
 gravitational units, system of 414.B
 gravity, center of 271.E
 gravity wave 205.F
 long 205.F
 grazing ray 325.L
 great circle (of a sphere) 140
 greater than (another compactification) 207.B
 greatest common divisor 67.H 297.A
 greatest element (in an ordered set) 311.B
 greatest lower bound (of an ordered set) 310.C 311.B
 greedy algorithm 66.G
 Greek mathematics 187
 Greek quadratrix 187
 Greek quadrivium 187
 Greek three big problems 187
 Green formula
 (for differential operators) App. A, Table 15.VI
 (for harmonic functions) 193.D
 (for Laplace operator) App. A, Tables 3.III, 4.II
 (for ordinary differential equations) 252.K
 (for partial differential equations of parabolic type) 327.D
 (on the plane) 94.F
 Green function method 402.J
 Green functions 188 189.B
 (α -order) 45.D
 (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
 Green line 193.J
 Green measure 193.J
 Green operator 189.A,B 194.C
 Green space 193.N
 Green-Stokes formula 94.F
 Green tensor 188.E
 Green theorem 105.W
 Griffith first inequality 212.A
 Griffith second inequality 212.A
 Gross area (of a Borel set) 246.G
 Grössencharakter 6.D
 Hecke L -function with 450.F
 Gross theorem 272.I
 Grothendieck category 200.I
 Grothendieck construction 237.B
 Grothendieck criterion of completeness 424.L
 Grothendieck group
 (of a compact Hausdorff space) 237.B
 (of a ring) 237.J
 Grothendieck theorem of Riemann-Roch type 366.D
 Grothendieck topology 16.AA
 ground field (of a linear space) 256.A
 ground form 226.D
 covariant with 226.E
 ground ring (of a module) 277.D
 group(s) 190.A
 Abelian 2 190.A
 Abelian linear 60.L
 absolute homology 201.L
 additive 2.E 190.A
 adele (of an algebraic group) 13.P
 adele (of a linear algebraic group) 6.C
 adjoint (isogenous to an algebraic group) 13.N
 adjoint (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
 adjoint (of a Lie group) 249.P
 of affine transformations 7.E

affine Weyl (of a symmetric Riemann space) 413.G
 algebra 192.H
 algebra class 29.E
 algebraic 13
 algebraic fundamental 16.U
 algebraic homotopy 16.U
 alternating, of degree n 151.G
 automorphism (of a Lie algebra) 248.A
 of automorphisms (of a group) 190.D
 *-automorphism 36.K
 Betti (of a complex) 201.B
 black and white 92.D
 black and white point 92.D
 boundary 234.B
 braid 235.F
 Brauer (of algebra classes) 29.E
 Brauer (of a commutative ring) 29.K
 Bravais 92.B
 bundle (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 \mathcal{C} 52.M
 of canonical transformations 271.F
 category of 52.B
 cellular homology 201.F,G
 character (of an Abelian group) 2.G
 character (of a topological Abelian group) 422.B
 Chevalley 151.I
 of classes of algebraic correspondences 9.H
 classical 60.A
 Clifford 61.D
 closed 362.J
 coefficient (of a homology group) 201.Q
 cohomology (of a complex) 200.O
 cohomology (of a group) 200.M
 cohomology (of a Lie algebra) 200.O
 cohomology, with coefficient sheaf \mathcal{F} 283.E
 cohomotopy 202.I
 of collineations 343.D
 color point 92.D
 color symmetry (colored symmetry) 92.D
 commutative 2.A 190.A
 commutator (of two elements) 190.H
 commutator (of two subsets of a group) 190.H
 compact 69.A
 completely reducible 190.L
 complex 60.L
 complex cobordism 114.H
 complex orthogonal 60.I
 complex special orthogonal 60.I
 complex symplectic 60.L
 of congruence classes modulo m^* 14.H
 of congruent transformations 285.C
 covering 91.A 423.O
 covering transformation 91.A
 Coxeter 13.R
 crystallographic 92.A
 crystallographic space 92.A
 cyclic 190.C
 decomposition (of a prime ideal) 14.K
 defect (of a block of representations) 362.I
 defect (of a conjugate class in a group) 362.I
 derived (of a group) 190.H
 difference (of an additive group) 190.C
 of differentiable structures on combinatorial spheres App. A, Table 6.I
 differentiable transformation 431.C
 dihedral 151.G
 direct product 190.L
 discontinuous, of the first kind 122.B

discontinuous transformation 122.A
 divisor (of a compact complex manifold) 72.F
 divisor class (of a Riemann surface) 11.D
 elementary topological Abelian 422.E
 elliptic modular 122.D
 equicontinuous, of class (C^0) 378.C
 equivariant J - 431.C
 exponential 437.U
 extension (cohomology of groups) 200.M
 factor 190.C
 finite 151.A 190.C
 finitely generated 190.C
 finitely presented 161.A
 of the first kind 122.C
 formal 13.C
 four- 151.G
 free 161.A
 free product (of the system of groups) 190.M
 frieze 92.F
 Frobenius 151.H
 Fuchsian 122.C
 Fuchsoid 122.C
 full 136.F
 full linear 60.B
 full Poincaré 258.A
 function 234.A
 fundamental (of a topological space) 170
 Galois (of an algebraic equation) 172.G
 Galois (of a Galois extension) 172.B
 Galois (of a polynomial) 172.G
 generalized nilpotent 190.K
 generalized quaternion 151.B
 generalized solvable 190.K
 general linear 60.B 226.B
 general linear (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
 Grothendieck (of a compact Hausdorff space) 237.B
 Grothendieck (of a ring) 237.J
 h -cobordism (of homotopy n -spheres) 114.I, App. A, Table 6.I
 Hamilton 151.B
 Hausdorff topological 423.B
 Hilbert modular 32.G
 holonomy 80.D 364.E
 homogeneous holonomy 364.E
 homogeneous Lorentz 359
 homology (of a chain complex) 201.B
 homology (of a group) 200.M
 homology (of a Lie algebra) 200.O
 homology (of a polyhedron) 201.D
 homotopy 202.J
 hyper- 190.P
 icosahedral 151.G
 ideal, modulo m^* 14.H
 ideal class 14.E 67.K
 idele 6.C
 idele class 6.D
 indecomposable 190.L
 inductive limit 210.C
 inductive system of 210.C
 inertia (of a finite Galois extension) 257.D
 inertia (of a prime ideal) 14.K
 infinite 190.C
 infinite classical 147.I 202.V
 infinite orthogonal 202.V
 infinite symplectic 202.V
 infinite unitary 202.V
 inhomogeneous Lorentz 359
 of inner automorphisms (of a group) 190.D

- of inner automorphisms (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
- integral homology (of a polyhedron) 201.D
- integral homology (of a simplicial complex) 201.C
- integral singular homology 201.E
- isotropy 362.B
- J - 237.I
- of Janko-Ree type 151.J
- k - 13.A
- K - (of a compact Hausdorff space) 237.B
- Klein four- 151.G
- Kleinian 122.C 243.A
- knot 235.B
- L - 450.N
- lattice 182.B
- lattice (of a crystallographic group) 92.A
- lattice-ordered Archimedean 243.G
- Lie 249.A 423.M
- Lie transformation 431.C
- linear fractional 60.B
- linear isotropy (at a point) 199.A
- linear simple 151.I
- link 235.D
- little 258.C
- local Lie 423.L
- local Lie, of local transformations 431.G
- locally Euclidean 423.M
- local one-parameter, of local transformations 105.N
- Lorentz 60.J 258 359.B
- magnetic 92.D
- Mathieu 151.H
- matric 226.B
- matrix 226.B
- maximally almost periodic 18.I
- minimally almost periodic 18.I
- mixed 190.P
- Möbius transformation 76.A
- modular 122.D
- monodromy (of an n -fold covering) 91.A
- monodromy (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 253.B
- monothetic 136.D
- of motions 139.B
- of motions in the wider sense 139.B
- multiplicative 190.A
- multiplicative (of a field) 149.A 190.B
- Néron-Severi (of a variety) 15.D 16.P
- nilpotent 151.C 190.J
- octahedral 151.G
- Ω 190.E
- one-parameter, of transformations (of a C^∞ -manifold) 105.N
- one-parameter, of transformations of class C^r 126.B
- one-parameter semi-, of class C^0 378.B
- one-parameter sub- 249.Q
- ordered 243.G
- ordered additive 439.B
- of orientation-preserving diffeomorphisms 114.I
- oriented cobordism 114.H
- of oriented differentiable structures on a combinatorial sphere 114.I
- orthogonal 60.I 139.B 151.I
- orthogonal (over a field with respect to a quadratic form) 60.K
- orthogonal (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
- orthogonal transformation 60.I
- of outer automorphisms (of a group) 190.D
- of outer automorphisms (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
- p - 151.B
- periodic 2.A
- permutation 190.B
- permutation, of degree n 151.G
- π - 151.F
- π -solvable 151.F
- Picard (of a commutative ring) 237.J
- Poincaré 170 258.A
- point (of a crystallographic group) 92.A
- polychromatic 92.D
- principal isotropy 431.C
- profinite 210.C
- projective class 200.K
- projective general linear 60.B
- projective limit 210.C
- projective special linear 60.B,O
- projective special unitary 60.H
- projective symplectic 60.L
- projective system of 210.C
- of projective transformations 343.D
- projective unitary 60.F
- proper Lorentz 60.J 258.A 359.B
- proper orthogonal 60.I 258.A
- pseudo- (of topological transformations) 105.Y
- p -torsion, of exceptional groups App. A, Table 6.IV
- q th homology 201.B
- quasi- 190.P
- quasi-Fuchsian 234.B
- quaternion 151.B
- quaternion unimodular 412.G
- quotient 190.C
- quotient (of a topological group) 423.E
- of quotients (of a commutative semigroup) 190.P
- ramification (of a finite Galois extension) 257.D
- ramification (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- rational cohomology 200.O
- reductive 13.Q
- Ree 151.I
- of Ree type 151.J
- regular polyhedral 151.G
- relative homotopy 202.K
- relative singular homology 201.L
- renormalization 111.A
- restricted holonomy 364.E
- restricted homogeneous holonomy 364.E
- Riemann-Roch 366.D
- Riesz 36.H
- rotation 60.I 258.A
- Schottky 234.B
- semi- 190.P 396.A
- separated topological 423.B
- sequence of factor (of a normal chain) 190.G
- shape 382.C
- Siegel modular (of degree n) 32.F
- simple 190.C
- simply connected (isogenous to an algebraic group) 13.N
- singular homology 201.G,L
- solvable 151.D 190.I
- space 92.A
- special Clifford 61.D
- special linear 60.B

special linear (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
 special orthogonal 60.I,K
 special unitary 60.F,H,O
 spinor 60.I 61.D
 stability 362.B
 stable homotopy 202.T
 stable homotopy (of classical group) 202.V
 stable homotopy (of the Thom spectrum) 114.G
 Steinberg (of a ring) 237.J
 structure (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 supersolvable 151.D
 Suzuki 151.I
 symmetric 190.B
 symmetric, of degree n 151.G
 symplectic 60.L 151.I
 symplectic (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
 symplectic transformation 60.L
 Tate-Shafarevich 118.D
 tetrahedral 151.G
 theoretic approach 215.C
 Tits simple 151.I
 T_2 -topological 423.B
 topological 423
 topological Abelian 422.A
 topological transformation 431.A
 torsion 2.A
 torsion (of a finite simplicial complex) 201.B
 torus 422.E
 totally ordered 243.G
 totally ordered additive 439.B
 total monodromy 418.F
 transformation 431, App. A, Table 14.III
 transitive permutation 151.H
 of translations 7.E 258.A
 of twisted type 151.I
 type I 308.L 437.E
 underlying (of topological group) 423.A
 unimodular 60.B
 unimodular locally compact 225.C
 unit (of an algebraic number field) 14.D
 unitary 60.F 151.I
 unitary (over a field) 60.H
 unitary (relative to an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
 unitary symplectic 60.L
 unitary transformation 60.F
 universal covering 91.B 423.O
 unoriented cobordism 114.H
 value (of a valuation) 439.B,C
 vector 422.E
 Wall 114.J
 WC (Weil-Châtelet) 118.D
 weakly wandering under 136.F
 web 234.B
 weight 92.C
 Weil 6.E 450.H
 Weil-Châtelet 118.D
 Weyl (of an algebraic group) 13.H
 Weyl (of a BN pair) 13.R
 Weyl (of a Coxeter complex) 13.R
 Weyl (of a root system) 13.J
 Weyl (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.R
 Weyl (of a symmetric Riemannian space) 413.F
 Weyl, affine 413.F
 Weyl, k - 13.Q
 White 92.D
 Whitehead (of a ring) 237.J

Witt (of nondegenerate quadratic forms) 348.E
 Zassenhaus 151.H
 group algebra 29.C 36.L
 C^* - 36.L
 group code 63.C
 group extension 200.M
 grouplike 203.F
 group manifold (of a Lie transformation group) 110.A
 group measure space construction 136.F
 group minimization problem 215.C
 group object (in a category) 52.M
 groupoid 190.P
 hyper- 190
 group pair (of topological Abelian groups) 422.I
 orthogonal 422.I
 group ring (of a compact group) 69.A
 group scheme 16.H
 group system 235.B
 group theorem (on fractional ideals) 67.J
 group-theoretic approach 215.C
 group variety 13.B 16.H
 algebraic 13.B
 group velocity 446
 growth, infra-exponential 125.AA
 Grunsky inequality 438.B
 Gudermann function (Gudermannian) 131.F,
 App. A, Table 16.III
 guide, wave 130.B
 Guignard constraint qualification 292.B
 Gupta-Bleuler formalism 150.G
 Gysin exact sequence (of a fiber space) 148.E
 Gysin homomorphism 201.O
 Gysin isomorphism, Thom- 114.G
 of a fiber space 148.E

H

H_p (Hardy spaces) 168.B
 $H^1(\Omega)$ (Sobolev spaces) 168.B
 $H_0^1(\Omega)$ (Sobolev spaces) 168.B
 h -cobordant oriented manifolds 114.I
 h -cobordism group of n -dimensional homotopy
 spheres 114.I, App. A, Table 6.I
 h -cobordism theorem 114.F
 H -function 402.B
 H -series, principal 437.X
 H -space 203.D
 H -theorem 402.B
 (H, p) -summable 379.M
 H -closed space 425.U
 Haag-Araki axioms 150.E
 Haag-Kastler axioms 150.E
 Haag-Ruelle scattering theory 150.D
 Haag theorem 150.C
 Haar condition (on best approximation) 336.B
 Haar measure
 left-invariant 225.C
 right-invariant 225.C
 Haar space 142.B
 Haar system of orthogonal functions 317.C
 Haar theorem 225.C
 Hadamard estimation App. A, Table 8
 Hadamard formula, Cauchy- 339.A
 Hadamard gap theorem 339.D
 Hadamard multiplication theorem 339.D
 Hadamard theorem
 (on meromorphic functions) 272.E
 (on singularities of power series) 339.D

- Hadamard three-circle theorem 43.E
- hadrons 132.B
- Haefliger structure 154.E
 - C^* - 154.E
- Hahn-Banach (extension) theorem
 - (in a normed space) 37.F
 - (in a topological linear space) 424.C
- half Bessel function 39.B
- half-exact (functor) 200.I
- half-life 132.A
- half-line 155.B
 - closed (in affine geometry) 7.D
- half-periodic solution (of Hill equation) 268.E
- half-plane 155.B 333.A
- half-space
 - of an affine space 7.D
 - closed (of an affine space) 7.D
 - principal (of a flag) 139.B
 - Siegel upper (of degree n) 32.F
 - supporting (of a convex set) 89.A
- half-spinor (even, odd) 61.E
- half-spin representation (even, odd) 61.E
- half-trajectory
 - negative 126.D
 - positive 126.D
- half-width 132.A
- Hall subgroup 151.E
- Hällström-Kametani theorem 124.C
- Halmos theorem, von Neumann- 136.E
- Hamburger moment problem 240.K
- Hamilton canonical equation 271.F
- Hamilton-Cayley theorem 269.F
- Hamilton differential equation 324.E
- Hamilton group 151.B
- Hamiltonian 271.F 351.D 442.D
 - bilinear 377.A
 - cluster decomposition 375.F
 - free 351.D
- Hamiltonian function 219.C 271.F
- Hamiltonian operator 351.D
- Hamiltonian system 126.L
- Hamiltonian vector field 126.L 219.C
- Hamilton-Jacobi differential equation 271.F 324.E
- Hamilton-Jacobi equation 108.B
- Hamilton path 186.F
- Hamilton principle 441.B
- Hamilton quaternion algebra 29.B
- Hammerstein integral equation 217.M
- Hamming bound (of a code) 63.B
- Hamming code 63.C
- Hamming distance 63.B 136.E
- handle 410.B
 - attaching 114.F
 - Casson 114.K
 - manifold with 114.F
- handlebody 114.F
- Hankel asymptotic representation App. A, Table 19.III
- Hankel determinant 142.E
- Hankel functions 39.B, App. A, Table 19.III
- Hankel transform 220.B
- Hansen, general connectedness theorem due to
 - Fulton and 16.I
- Hansen-Bessel formula App. A, Table 19.III
- hard, NP- 71.E
- hard Lefschetz theorem 450.Q
- hardware 75.C
- Hardy class 43.F 159.G
 - generalized 164.E
- Hardy inequality App. A, Table 8
- Hardy-Littlewood-Sobolev inequality 224.E
- Hardy-Littlewood supremum theorem App. A, Table 8
- Hardy-Littlewood theorem
 - on bounded functions 43.E
 - on trigonometric systems 317.B
- Hardy space 168.B
- Hardy theorem
 - on bounded functions 43.E
 - on the Cauchy product of two series 379.F
- harmonic
 - (form) 194.B
 - (function) 193.A
 - (function on a state space) 260.D
 - (mapping) 195.B
- harmonically separated points (in a projective space) 343.D
- harmonic analyzer 19.E
- harmonic analysis 192
- harmonic boundary 207.B
- harmonic conjugates 343.D
- harmonic continuation 193.M 198.G
- harmonic differential (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
- harmonic dimension (of a Heins end) 367.E
- harmonic flow 193.K
- harmonic functions 193
 - conjugate 193.C
 - spherical 193.C
- harmonic integrals 194
- harmonic kernel function 188.H
- harmonic majorant (of subharmonic function) 193.S
- harmonic mapping 195
- harmonic mean
 - (of a distribution) 397.C
 - (of a function) 211.C
 - (of numbers) 211.C
- harmonic measure
 - inner 169.B
 - outer 169.B
- harmonic motion, simple 318.B
- harmonic oscillation 318.B
- harmonic range of points 343.D
- harmonics
 - ellipsoidal 133.B
 - ellipsoidal, of four species 133.C
 - solid 393.A
 - spherical 193.C 393.A
 - surface 393.A
 - tesseral 393.D
 - zonal 393.D
- Harnack condition (on the D-integral) 100.E
- Harnack first theorem 193.I
- Harnack lemma 193.I
- Harnack second theorem 193.I
- Hartogs continuation theorem 21.F
- Hartogs-Osgood theorem 21.H
- Hartogs theorem
 - of continuity 21.H
 - of holomorphy 21.C
- Hartshorne conjecture 16.R
- Harvey duality, Martineau- 125.Y
- hashing 96.B
- Hasse character, Minkowski- (of a nondegenerate quadratic form) 348.D
- Hasse conjecture 450.S
- Hasse function, Artin- 257.H
- Hasse invariant (of a central simple algebra over a p -adic field) 29.G
- Hasse norm-residue symbol, Hilbert- 14.R

- Hasse principle 348.G
- Hasse theorem, Minkowski- (on quadratic forms over algebraic number fields) 348.G
- Hasse-Witt matrix 9.E
- Hasse zeta function 450.S
- Haupt theorem 268.E
- Hauptvermutung (in topology) 65.C 70.C
- Hausdorff axiom 425.Q
- Hausdorff dimension 117.G 234.E 246.K
- Hausdorff formula, Campbell- 249.R
- Hausdorff measure 169.D
- Hausdorff moment problem 240.K
- Hausdorff space 425.Q
 - collectionwise 425.AA
- Hausdorff theorem, Baire- 273.J 425.N
- Hausdorff topological group 423.B
- Hausdorff uniform space 436.C
- Hausdorff-Young inequality 224.E
- Hausdorff-Young theorem 317.B
- Hawaiian earring 79.C
- hazard function 397.O
- hazard rate 397.O
- heat
 - Joule 130.B
 - specific, at constant pressure 419.B
 - specific, at constant volume 419.B
- heat bath 419.B
- heat conduction, equation of 327.A
- heat equation 327.A, App. A, Table 15.VI
- heat gain 419.A
- heat loss 419.A
- Heaviside calculus 306.A
- Heaviside function 125.E 306.B, App. A, Table 12.II
- Hecke algebra 29.C 32.D
 - global 450.O
- Hecke character 6.D
- Hecke L -function 450.E
 - with Grössencharakter 450.F
- Hecke operator 32.D
 - zeta function defined by 450.M
- Hecke ring 32.D
- Heegaard decomposition 65.C
- height
 - (of an algebraic number) 430.B
 - (of an element in a lattice) 243.F
 - (of an ideal) 67.E
 - (of an isogeny) 3.F
 - (of a lattice) 243.F
 - (of a prime ideal) 67.E
 - infinite (element of an Abelian p -group) 2.D
- Heilbronn phenomenon, Deuring- 123.D
- Heine-Borel theorem 273.F
- Heine series 206.C
- Heins end 367.E
- Heisenberg equation of motion 351.D
- Heisenberg picture 351.D
- Heisenberg uncertainty relation 351.C
- helicity 258.C
- helicoid
 - ordinary 111.I
 - right 111.I
- helicoidal surface 111.I
- Helinger-Hahn theorem 390.G
- helix
 - generalized 111.F
 - ordinary 111.F
- Helly theorem 94.B
- Helmholtz differential equation 188.D, App. A, Table 15.VI
- Helmholtz free energy 419.C
- minimum principle 419.C
- Helmholtz theorem (on vector fields) 442.D, App. A, Table 3.III
- Helmholtz vorticity theorem 205.B
- Helson set 192.R
- hemisphere
 - northern 140
 - southern 140
- Henselian ring 370.C
- Henselization 370.C
- Hensel lemma 118.C
- Hensel ring 370.C
- Herbrand lemma 200.N
- Herbrand quotient 200.N
- hereditarily normal space 425.Q
- hereditarily quotient mapping 425.G
- hereditarily weak topology 425.M
- hereditary finite set 33.B
- hereditary ring 200.K
 - left 200.K
 - right 200.K
- Herglotz integral representation 43.I
- Herglotz theorem 192.B
- Hermite differential equation App. A, Table 14.II
- Hermite differential equation, Weber- 167.C
- Hermite formula, Gauss- (in numerical integration) 299.A
- Hermite interpolation polynomial 223.E
- Hermite polynomials 317.D, App. A, Table 20.IV
- Hermite polynomials, Fourier- 176.I
- Hermitian (integral operator) 251.O
- Hermitian form 256.Q 348.F
 - anti- 256.Q
 - ε - 60.O
 - indefinite 348.F
 - negative definite 348.F
 - positive definite 348.F
 - semidefinite 398.F
 - skew- 256.Q
 - v - 384.A
- Hermitian homogeneous space, complex 199.A
- Hermitian hyperbolic space 412.G
- Hermitian inner product 256.Q
- Hermitian kernel 217.H
- Hermitian linear space 256.Q
- Hermitian matrix 269.I
 - anti- 269.I
 - skew 269.I
- Hermitian metric 232.A
- Hermitian operator 251.E
- Hermitian space
 - irreducible symmetric 412.E
 - symmetric 412.E
- Heron formula
 - (for plane triangles) App. A, Table 2.II
 - (for spherical triangles) App. A, Table 2.III
- Hersch and Pfluger, extremal length defined by 143.A
- Hersch problem 391.E
- Hessenberg method 298.D
- Hesse normal form (of a hyperplane) 139.H
- Hessian
 - (on a differential manifold) 279.B,F
 - (form) 226.D
 - (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
- heterogeneity, design for two-way elimination of 102.K
- heuristic algorithm 215.E
- Hewitt-Savage zero-one law 342.G
- hexagon 155.F

- hexagonal (system) 92.E
- hexahedron 357.B
- Hey zeta function 27.F
- hidden variable theories 351.L
- hierarchy 356.H
 - analytic 356.H
 - arithmetical 356.H
 - arithmetical, of degrees of recursive unsolvability 356.H
 - C-analytic 356.H
 - C-arithmetical 356.H
 - Chomsky 31.D
 - hyperarithmetical, of degrees of recursive unsolvability 356.H
- hierarchy theorem 356.H
- Higgs mechanism 132.D
- higher algebraic K -theory 237.J
- higher differentiation (in a commutative ring) 113
- higher order, of (for infinitesimals) 87.G
- higher-order derivative (of a differentiable function) 106.D
- higher-order ordinary differential equation
 - App. A, Table 14.I
- higher-order partial derivative 106.G
- higher-order predicate logic 411.K
- higher-transcendental function 389.A
- highest weight (of a representation of a Lie algebra) 248.W
- high-precision computation 138.B
- Hilbert, D. 196
- Hilbert basis theorem 284.A
- Hilbert characteristic function
 - (of a coherent sheaf) 16.E
 - (of a graded module) 369.F
- Hilbert cube 382.B
- Hilbert ε -operator 411.J
- Hilbert ε -quantifier 411.J
- Hilbert ε -symbol 411.J
- Hilbert fifth problem 423.N
- Hilbert-Hasse norm-residue symbol 14.R
- Hilbertian space, countably 424.W
- Hilbert inequality App. A, Table 8
- Hilbert invariant integral 46.C
- Hilbert irreducibility theorem (on polynomials) 337.F
- Hilbert manifold 105.Z 286.K
- Hilbert modular form
 - of dimension $-k$ 32.G
 - of weight k 32.G
- Hilbert modular function 32.G
- Hilbert modular group 32.G
- Hilbert modular surface 15.H
- Hilbert norm-residue symbol 14.R
- Hilbert Nullstellensatz 369.D
- Hilbert polynomial
 - (of an algebraic curve) 9.F
 - (of a coherent sheaf) 16.E
 - (of a graded module) 369.F
- Hilbert problem (in calculus of variations) 46.A
- Hilbert problem, Riemann-
 - (for integral equations) 217.J
 - (for ordinary differential equations) 253.D
- Hilbert scheme 16.S
- Hilbert-Schmidt class 68.I
- Hilbert-Schmidt expansion theorem 217.H
- Hilbert-Schmidt norm 68.I
- Hilbert-Schmidt type
 - integral operator of 68.C
 - kernel of 217.I
- Hilbert spaces 197
 - adjoint 251.E
 - channel 375.F
 - complex 197.B
 - exponential 377.D
 - physical 150.G
 - pre- 197.B
 - real 197.B
 - rigged 424.T
- Hilbert-Speiser theorem 172.J
- Hilbert system of axioms (foundations of geometry) 155.B
- Hilbert syzygy theorem 369.F
- Hilbert theorem 90 172.J
- Hilbert transform 160.D 220.E
- Hilbert zero point theorem 369.D
- Hilferty approximations, Wilson- 374.F
- Hill determinant 268.B
- Hill determinantal equation 268.B
- Hill differential equation 268.B
- Hille-Yosida theorem 378.B
- Hill function 268.E
- Hill method of solution 268.B
- Hirsch theorem, Leray- 201.J
- Hirzebruch index theorem (for differentiable manifolds) 56.G
- Hirzebruch signature theorem (on algebraic surface) 72.K
- Hirzebruch surface 15.G
- Hirzebruch theorem of Riemann-Roch type 366.B
- histogram 397.B
- Hitchcock method 301.E
- hitting probability 5.G
- hitting time 260.B 261.B 407.B
- Hlawka theorem, Minkowski- 182.D
- Hochschild cohomology group 200.L
- Hodge conjecture 450.S
- Hodge index theorem 15.D
- Hodge manifold 232.D
- Hodge metric 232.D
- Hodges-Lehmann theorem 399.E,H
- Hodge spectral sequence 16.U
- Hodge structure (of a vector space) 16.V
 - mixed 16.V
 - polarized 16.V
- Hodgkin-Huxley differential equation 291.F
- hodograph method 205.B
- hodograph plane 205.B
- hold almost everywhere (in a measure space) 270.D
- hold at almost all points
 - in a measure space 270.D
- Hölder condition of order α 84.A
- Hölder inequality 211.C, App. A, Table 8
- Hölder integral inequality 211.C
- Hölder method of order p , summable by 379.M
- Hölder sequence, Jordan- (in a group) 190.G
- Hölder space 168.B
- Hölder theorem 104.F
- Hölder theorem, Jordan- (in group theory) 190.G
- Hölder theorem, Jordan- (on representations of algebras) 362.D
- hole theory, Dirac 415.G
- Holmgren type theorem (of Kashiwara-Kawai) 125.DD
- Holmgren uniqueness theorem 321.F
- holohedral 92.B
- holohedry 92.B
- holomorphic
 - (family of linear operators) 331.C
 - (function) 198.A
 - (in the sense of Riemann) 21.C

Holomorphically complete domain

- (vector-valued function) 37.K
- holomorphically complete domain 21.F
- holomorphically complete space 23.F
- holomorphically convex domain 21.H
- holomorphic automorphism 21.J
- holomorphic differential (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
- holomorphic differential form of degree k 72.A
- holomorphic distribution (with respect to a parameter) 125.H
- holomorphic evolution operator 378.I
- holomorphic foliation 154.H
- holomorphic function(s) 198
 - (on a complex manifold) 72.A
 - (of many variables) 21.A,C
 - germ of a 21.E
 - sheaf of germs of 23.C 383.D
- holomorphic functional calculus 36.M
- holomorphic hull 21.H
- holomorphic k -form 72.A
- holomorphic local coordinate system 72.A
- holomorphic mapping 21.J
 - (of a complex manifold) 72.A
 - nondegenerate (between analytic spaces) 23.C
- holomorphic microfunction 274.F
- holomorphic modification (of an analytic space) 23.D
- holomorphic part (in a Laurent expansion) 198.D
- holomorphic sectional curvature 364.D
- holomorphic semigroup 378.D
- holomorphic tangent vector 72.A
- holomorphic vector field 72.A
- holomorphy
 - domain of 21.F
 - envelop of 21.F
 - Hartogs theorem of 21.C
- holonomic (coherent \mathcal{E} -module) 274.H
- holonomic systems
 - with regular singularities 274.H
 - simple 274.H
- holonomy 154.C
- holonomy group 80.D 154.C 364.D
 - homogeneous 364.E
 - restricted 80.D 364.E
 - restricted homogeneous 364.E
- holonomy homomorphism 154.C
 - linear 154.C
- holosymmetric class 92.B
- homentropic flow 205.B
- homeomorphic 425.G
- homeomorphism 425.G
 - minimal 136.H
 - PL 65.A
 - strictly ergodic 136.H
 - uniquely ergodic 136.H
- homeomorphism problem 425.G
- homoclinic point 126.J
 - transversal 126.J
- homogeneous
 - (A -submodule) 200.B
 - (boundary value problem) 315.B
 - (difference equation) 104.C
 - (lattice) 182.B
 - (linear ordinary differential equation) 252.A
 - (system of linear differential equations of the first order) 252.G
 - spatially (process) 261.A
 - temporally (additive process) 5.B
 - temporally (process) 261.A
 - weighted (analytic function) 418.D
- homogeneous bounded domain 384.A 412.F
- homogeneous coordinate ring 16.A
- homogeneous coordinates 343.C
- homogeneous difference equation 104.C
- homogeneous element
 - of a graded ring 369.B
 - of a homogeneous ring 369.B
- homogeneous equations, system of linear 269.M
- homogeneous holonomy group 364.E
 - restricted 364.E
- homogeneous hypersurface 344.A
- homogeneous ideal
 - of a graded ring 369.B
 - of a polynomial ring 369.B
- homogeneous integral equation 217.F
- homogeneous Lorentz group 258.A 359
- homogeneously regular 275.C
- homogeneous Markov process 5.H 261.A
- homogeneous n -chain (for a group) 200.M
- homogeneous ordinary differential equation
 - App. A, Table 14.I
 - of higher order App. A, Table 14.I
- homogeneous part (of a formal power series) 370.A
- homogeneous polynomial 337.B
- homogeneous ring 369.B
- homogeneous Siegel domain, irreducible 384.E
 - topology of Lie groups and 427
- homogeneous space(s) 199 249.F 362.B
 - complex Hermitian 199.A
 - Kähler 199.A
 - linearly connected 199.A
 - reductive 199.A
 - Riemannian 199.A
 - symmetric 412.B
 - symmetric Riemannian 412.B
- homogeneous turbulence 433.C
- homological algebra 200
 - relative 200.K
- homological dimension
 - of a module 200.K
 - of a topological space 117.F
- homological functor 200.I
- homological mapping 200.C
- homologous 201.B
- homologous to zero 198.B
- homology 200.H
 - intrinsic 114.H
- homology basis, canonical 11.C
- homology class 200.H
 - fundamental 201.N
 - fundamental, around K 201.N
 - q -dimensional 201.B
- homology exact sequence 201.L
 - (of fiber space) 148.E
 - reduced 201.F
- homology group(s)
 - (of a chain complex) 201.B
 - (of a group) 200.M
 - (of a Lie algebra) 200.O
 - (of a polyhedron) 201.D
 - (of a simplicial complex) 201.G
 - absolute 201.L
 - Čech 201.M
 - cellular 201.F,G
 - with coefficients in G 201.G
 - integral 201.C,D
 - integral singular 201.E
 - local 201.N
 - reduced 201.E
 - relative Čech 201.M

- relative singular 201.L
- simplicial 201.D
- singular 201.G,L,R
- homology manifold 65.B
- homology module 200.C
- homology theory 201
 - generalized 201.Q
 - generalized, with E-coefficient 202.T
 - uniqueness theorem of 201.Q
- homomorphic
 - (algebraic system) 409.C
 - (groups) 190.D
 - (topological groups) 423.J
 - order (ordered sets) 311.E
- homomorphic image (of a measure-preserving transformation) 136.D
- homomorphism
 - (of Abelian varieties) 3.C
 - (of algebraic systems) 409.C
 - (of fields) 149.B
 - (of groups) 190.D
 - (of lattices) 243.C
 - (of Lie algebras) 248.A
 - (of linear representations) 362.C
 - (of presheaves) 383.A
 - (of rings) 368.D
 - (of sheaves) 363.B
 - A - (of A -modules) 277.E
 - A -, of degree p (of graded A -modules) 200.B
 - admissible (of Ω -groups) 190.E
 - algebra 29.A
 - allowed (of A -modules) 277.E
 - analytic (of Lie groups) 249.N
 - anti- (of groups) 190.D
 - anti- (of rings) 368.D
 - bialgebra 203.G
 - Bokstein 64.B
 - boundary (on homology groups) 201.L
 - boundary (in homotopy exact sequences) 202.L
 - C^∞ - (between Lie groups) 249.N
 - canonical (on direct products of rings) 368.E
 - coalgebra 203.F
 - coboundary (on cohomology groups) 201.L
 - connecting (in homology) 200.C 201.L
 - connecting (on homology groups) 201.C
 - continuous (of topological groups) 423.J
 - crossed (of an associative algebra) 200.L
 - dual (of a homomorphism of algebraic tori) 13.D
 - dual (of lattices) 243.C
 - edge 200.J
 - equivariant J - 431.F
 - generalized Hopf 202.V
 - Gysin 201.O
 - holonomy 154.C
 - Hopf algebra 203.H
 - Hurewicz 202.N
 - induced by a continuous mapping (between homotopy groups) 202.K
 - J - (in homotopy theory) 202.V
 - J - (in K -theory) 237.I
 - Jordan (of Jordan algebras) 231.A
 - lattice- 243.C
 - local (of a topological group) 423.O
 - module of (of modules) 277.B
 - module of A - (of A -modules) 277.E
 - Ω - (of Ω -groups) 190.E
 - open continuous (of topological groups) 423.J
 - operator (of A -modules) 277.E
 - operator (of Ω -groups) 190.E
 - order 311.E
 - rational (of Abelian varieties) 3.C
 - rational (of algebraic groups) 13.A
 - ring 368.D
 - $*$ - 36.F
 - Umkehr 201.O
 - unitary (of rings) 368.D
 - zero (of two A -modules) 277.H
 - homomorphism theorem
 - on groups 190.D
 - on Lie algebras 248.A
 - on topological groups 423.J
 - on topological linear spaces 424.X
 - homothetic correspondence (between surfaces) 111.I
 - homothety
 - in conformal differential geometry 110.D
 - in Euclidean geometry 139.B
 - homotopic 154.E,F 202.B
 - chain (chain mappings) 200.C
 - integrably 154.F
 - null- (continuous mapping) 202.B
 - regularly (immersions) 114.D
 - relative to a subspace 202.B
 - to zero 202.B
 - homotopy 202.B
 - composite 202.B
 - free 202.B
 - linear 114.D
 - restricted 202.B
 - homotopy-associative (multiplication) 203.D
 - homotopy category of topological spaces 52.B
 - homotopy chain 200.C
 - homotopy class 202.B
 - compact 286.D
 - homotopy cochain 200.F
 - homotopy commutative (multiplication) 203.D
 - homotopy equivalence 202.F
 - simple 65.C
 - weak 202.F
 - homotopy equivalent systems (of topological spaces) 202.F
 - homotopy exact sequence 202.L
 - of a fiber space 148.D
 - of a triad 202.M
 - of a triple 202.L
 - homotopy extension property 202.E
 - homotopy group(s) 202.J
 - algebraic 16.U
 - of a compact connected Lie group App. A, Table 6.VII
 - realization theorem of 202.N
 - of a real Stiefel manifold App. A, Table 6.VII
 - relative 202.K
 - of a sphere App. A, Table 6.VI
 - stable 202.T, App. A, Table 6.VII
 - stable (of classical groups) 202.V
 - stable (of the k -stem) 202.U
 - stable (of Thom spectrum) 114.G
 - of a triad 202.M
 - homotopy identity (of an H -space) 203.D
 - homotopy invariance (of a homology group) 201.D
 - homotopy invariant 202.B
 - homotopy inverse (for an H -space) 203.D
 - homotopy n -spheres
 - group of 114.I
 - h -cobordism group of 114.I
 - homotopy operations 202.O
 - homotopy set 202.B

- homotopy sphere 65.C
- homotopy theorem
 - first (in obstruction theory) 305.B
 - second (in obstruction theory) 305.C
 - simple 65.C
 - third (in obstruction theory) 305.C
- homotopy theory 202
 - de Rham 114.L
- homotopy type 202.F
 - (of a link) 235.D
 - spherical G -fiber 431.F
- homotopy type invariant 202.F
- Hooke law 271.G
- Hopf algebra(s) 203
 - dual 203.C
 - elementary 203.D
 - graded 203.C
- Hopf algebra homomorphism 203.H
- Hopf bifurcation 126.M
- Hopf bundle 147.E
- Hopf classification theorem 202.I
- Hopf comultiplication 203.D
- Hopf coproduct 203.D
- Hopf extension theorem 270.E
- Hopf fibering 147.E
- Hopf homomorphism, generalized (of homotopy groups of spheres) 202.U
- Hopf integrodifferential equation, Wiener- 222.C
- Hopf invariant 202.U
 - generalized 202.Q
 - modulo p 202.S
- Hopf mapping (Hopf map) 147.E
- Hopf surface 72.K
- Hopf theorem (continuous vector field) 153.B
- Hopf weak solution 204.C
- horizon, event 359.F
- horizontal components
 - of a homogeneous space 110.A
 - of a vector field 80.C
- horizontal slit mapping, extremal 367.G
- horizontal subspace 191.C
- horizontal vector (in a differentiable principal fiber bundle) 80.C
- Hörmander theorem 112.C,D
- horned sphere, Alexander 65.G
- Horner method 301.C
- horocycle flow 136.G
- horosphere 218.G
- horseshoe diffeomorphism 126.J
- Hosokawa polynomial 235.D
- Hotelling T^2 statistic 280.B
 - noncentral 374.C
- Householder method 298.D
- Householder transformation 302.E
- Hugoniot relation, Rankine- 204.G 205.B
- Hukuhara theorem, Dini- 314.D
- Hukuhara problem 315.C
- hull
 - closed convex 424.H
 - convex 89.A
 - convex (in an affine space) 7.D
 - convex (of a boundary curve) 275.A
 - convex (in linear programming) 255.D
 - holomorphic 21.H
- hull-kernel topology 36.D
- human death and survival, model of 214.A
- Hunt process 261.B
- Hunt-Stein lemma 400.F
- Hurewicz homomorphism 202.N
- Hurewicz isomorphism theorem 202.N
- Hurewicz-Steenrod isomorphism theorem 148.D
- Hurewicz theorem, generalized 202.N
- Hurewicz-Uzawa gradient method, Arrow- 292.E
- Hurwitz formula, Riemann- (on coverings of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
- Hurwitz relation
 - (on homomorphisms of Abelian varieties) 3.K
 - Riemann- 367.B
- Hurwitz theorem 10.E
- Hurwitz zeta function 450.B
- Huxley differential equation, Hodgkin- 291.F
- Huygens principle 325.B 446
 - in the wider sense 325.D
- hybrid computer 19.E
- hydrodynamics 205
- hydromagnetic dynamo theory 259
- hydromagnetics 259
- hydrostatics 205.A
- hyperalgebra 203.I
- hyperarithmetical function 356.H
- hyperarithmetical hierarchy of degrees of recursive unsolvability 356.H
- hyperarithmetical predicate 356.H
- hyperbola 78.A
 - conjugate 78.E
 - equilateral 78.E
 - rectangular 78.E
- hyperbolic
 - (closed invariant set of a dynamical system) 126.J
 - (differential operator) 112.A 325.H
 - (linear mapping) 126.G
 - (partial differential equation) 325.A,E
 - (Riemann surface) 367.D,E
 - (simply connected domain) 77.B
 - (space form) 412.H
 - complete 21.O
 - regularly 325.A,F
 - in the sense of Gårding 325.F
 - in the sense of Petrovskii 325.F
 - in the strict sense 325.F
 - strongly 325.H
 - symmetric (in the sense of Friedrichs) 325.G
 - weakly 325.H
- hyperbolically embedded 21.O
- hyperbolic closed orbit 126.G
- hyperbolic coordinates
 - equilateral 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 - rectangular 90.C
- hyperbolic cosecant 131.F
- hyperbolic cosine 131.F
- hyperbolic cotangent 131.F
- hyperbolic cylinder 350.B
- hyperbolic cylindrical coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
- hyperbolic cylindrical surface 350.B
- hyperbolic differential equations, system of (in the sense of Petrovskii) 325.G
- hyperbolic-elliptic motion 420.D
- hyperbolic fixed point 126.G
- hyperbolic function 131.F
- hyperbolic geometry 285.A
- hyperbolic knot 235.E
- hyperbolic manifold 21.O 235.E
- hyperbolic motion 420.D
- hyperbolic-parabolic motion 420.D

hyperbolic paraboloid 350.B
 hyperbolic plane 122.C
 hyperbolic point (on a surface) 111.H
 hyperbolic quadric hypersurface 350.I
 hyperbolic secant 131.F
 hyperbolic sine 131.F
 hyperbolic singular point 126.G
 hyperbolic space 285.C
 Hermitian 412.G
 quaternion 412.G
 real 412.G
 hyperbolic spiral 93.H
 hyperbolic tangent 131.F
 hyperbolic transformation 76.F
 hyperbolic type, partial differential equation of 321.E 325
 hyperbolic type, primitive 92.C
 hyperboloidic position 350.B
 hyperboloid of one sheet 350.B
 hyperboloid of revolution of one or two sheets 350.B
 hyperboloid of two sheets 350.B
 hypercohomology 200.J
 hyperconstructive ordinal 81.E
 hypercubic type, primitive 92.C
 hyperelliptic curve 9.D
 hyperelliptic integral 11.C
 hyperelliptic Riemann surface 11.C
 hyperelliptic surface 72.K
 hyperfinite 293.B 308.I
 hyperfunction 125
 in the Dirichlet problem 120.C
 exponentially decreasing Fourier 125.BB
 Fourier 125.BB
 Fourier ultra- 125.BB
 modified Fourier 125.BB
 Sato 125.V
 hypergeometric differential equation 260.A,
 App. A, Table 18.I
 confluent 167.A, App. A, Tables 14.II, 19.I
 Gauss App. A, Table 14.II
 hypergeometric distribution 341.D 397.F,
 App. A, Table 22
 multidimensional App. A, Table 22
 multiple 341.D
 hypergeometric function(s) 209, App. A, Table 18.I
 Appell, of two variables 206.D, App. A,
 Table 18.I
 Barnes extended 206.G, App. A, Table 18.I
 of confluent type 167.A, App. A, Table 19.I
 of the hyperspherical differential equation 393.E
 with matrix argument 206.E
 and spherical functions App. A, Table 18
 hypergeometric integral 253.B
 hypergeometric series 206.A
 hypergeometric type, special function of 389.A
 hypergroup 190.P
 hypergroupoid 190.P
 hyperinvariant (under an operator) 251.L
 hyperplanar symmetry (of an affine space) 139.B
 hyperplane(s)
 in an affine space 7.A
 characteristic (of a partial differential equation
 of hyperbolic type) 325.A
 at infinity (in affine geometry) 7.B
 pencil of (in a projective space) 343.B
 in a projective space 343.B

Subject Index

Hypotrochoid

regression 403.D
 tangent (of a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
 hyperplane coordinates
 of an affine frame 7.C
 in projective geometry 343.C
 hyperplane section 418.I
 hyperquadric
 in an affine space 350.G
 in a projective space 343.D 350.I
 hypersonic flow 205.C
 hypersphere 76.A
 imaginary 76.A
 limiting (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
 non-Euclidean 285.C
 oriented real 76.A
 point 76.A
 proper (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
 real 76.A
 hypersphere geometry 76.A
 hyperspherical coordinates, $(n+2)$ - 76.A 90.B
 hyperspherical differential equation 393.E
 hypersurface(s)
 (of an algebraic variety) 16.A
 (in a Euclidean space) 111.A
 central quadric 350.G
 characteristic (of a partial differential equation
 of hyperbolic type) 325.A
 coordinate (in a Euclidean space) 90.C
 elliptic quadric 350.G
 homogeneous 344.A
 hyperbolic quadric 350.G
 integral (partial differential equations) 320.A
 noncentral quadric 350.G
 nondegenerate 344.A
 parabolic quadric 350.G
 pencil of quadric 343.E
 properly $(n-1)$ -dimensional quadric 350.G
 quadric 343.D 350.G, I
 quadric conical 350.Q
 quadric cylindrical 350.Q
 regular quadric 343.E
 singular quadric (of the h th species) 343.E
 spherical real 344.C
 hypersurface element(s) 82.A 324.B
 union of 82.A
 hypocontinuous (bilinear mapping) 424.Q
 hypocycloid 93.H
 hypo-Dirichlet 164.B
 hypoelliptic 112.D 189.C 323.I
 analytically 112.D 323.I
 hypofunction (in the Dirichlet problem) 120.C
 hyponormal 251.K
 hypothesis
 alternative 400.A
 composite 400.A
 continuum \rightarrow continuum hypothesis
 ergodic 136.A 402.C
 general linear 400.H
 Lindelöf 123.C
 null 400.A
 Riemann 450.B, P
 simple 400.A
 statistical 400.A
 Suslin 33.F
 hypothesis testing 401.C, App. A, Table 23
 statistical 400, App. A, Table 23
 hypothetical infinite population 397.P
 hypotrochoid 93.H

i-genus

I

i-genus 15.E*I*-adic topology (of a ring) 16.X*i*th component (of an *n*-tuple) 256.A,C*i*th coordinate 256.C*i*th coordinate axis (of a Euclidean space) 140

icosahedral group 151.G

icosahedron 357.B

ideal(s)

(of an algebra) 29.A

(of an algebraic number field) 14.B

(of a lattice) 42.C

(of a Lie algebra) 248.A

(of a ring) 368.F

Abelian (of a Lie algebra) 248.C

Alexander (of a knot) 235.C

ambig (of a quadratic field) 347.F

conjugate (of a fractional ideal) 14.I

defining (of a formal spectrum) 16.X

differential (of a differential ring) 113

differential (on a real analytic manifold) 428.E

elementary 235.C

fractional (of an algebraic number field) 14.E

graded 369.B

homogeneous (of a graded ring) 369.B

homogeneous (of a polynomial ring) 369.B

integral (of an algebraic number field) 14.C

integral left 27.A

integral right 27.A

integral two-sided α - 27.A

involutive differential 428.E

largest nilpotent (of a Lie algebra) 248.D

left (of a ring) 368.F

left α - 27.A

maximal 67.C

maximal (left or right) 368.F

maximal (with respect to *S*) 67.C

maximal, space (of a Banach algebra) 36.E

minimal (left or right) 368.F

mixed 284.D

nilpotent (of a Lie algebra) 248.C

order (of a vector lattice) 310.B

p-primary 67.F

primary 67.F

prime 67.C

prime (of a maximal order) 27.A

prime differential (of a differential ring) 113

primitive (of a Banach algebra) 36.E

principal 67.K

principal (of an algebraic number field) 14.E

principal, theorem (in class field theory) 59.D

principal fractional 67.K

pure 284.D

right (of a ring) 368.F

right α , 27.A

semiprime (of a commutative ring) 113

semiprime differential (of a differential ring)

113

sheaf of (of a divisor of a complex manifold)

72.F

solvable (of a Lie algebra) 248.C

two-sided (of a ring) 368.P

two-sided α - 27.A

unmixed 284.D

valuation (of a valuation) 439.B

ideal boundary 207.A

in the narrow sense 14.G

ideal class 14.E

ideal class group 14.E 67.K

ideal group modulo m^* 14.H

ideal point (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C

idele (of an algebraic number field) 6.C

principal 6.C

idele class 6.D

idele class group 6.D

idele group 6.C

idempotent element (of a ring) 368.B

elementary 450.O

primitive 368.B

idempotent law (in a lattice) 243.A

idempotent measure 192.P

idempotent set (of a ring) 368.B

idempotent theorem 36.M

identically true formula 411.G

identification (in factor analysis) 280.G

identification space (by a partition) 425.L

identified equation 128.C

just 128.C

over- 128.C

identity (identities) 231.A

Bianchi 80.J 417.B

Bianchi first App. A, Table 4.II

Bianchi second App. A, Table 4.II

homotopy (of an *H*-space) 203.D

Jacobi (on the bracket of two vector fields)

105.M

Jacobi (in a Lie algebra) 248.A

Jacobi (with respect to Whitehead product)

202.P

in Jordan algebras 231.A

Lagrange 252.K

Parseval 18.B 159.A 160.C 192.K 197.C

220.B,C,E

resolution of 390.D

theorem of (of one variable) 198.C

theorem of (of several variables) 21.C

identity character (of an Abelian group) 2.G

identity component (of a topological group) 423.F

identity element

of an algebraic system 409.C

of a field 149.A

of a group 190.A

of a local Lie group 423.L

of a ring 368.A

identity function 381.C

identity mapping 381.C

identity matrix 269.A

identity operator (in a linear space) 37.C

identity relation 102.I

Ihara zeta function 450.U

Ikehara-Landau theorem, Wiener- 123.B

ill-conditioned (coefficient matrix in numerical

solution of linear equations) 302.D

image

(of a group homomorphism) 190.D

(of a linear mapping) 256.F

(of a line in P^3) 343.E

(of a mapping) 381.C

(of a morphism) 52.N

(of an operator homomorphism) 277.E

(of a sheaf homomorphism) 383.D

closed (of a variety) 18.I

continuous 425.G

direct (of a sheaf) 383.G

homomorphic (of a measure preserving

transformation) 136.D

inverse (of a set) 381.C

inverse (of a sheaf) 383.G

inverse (of a uniformity) 436.E

perfect 425.CC
 perfect inverse 425.CC
 image measure 270.K
 imaginary axis 74.C
 imaginary field, totally 14.F
 imaginary hypersphere 76.A
 imaginary infinite prime divisor 439.H
 imaginary number 74.A
 purely 74.A
 imaginary part 74.A
 imaginary prime divisor 439.H
 imaginary quadratic field 347.A
 imaginary root (of an algebraic equation) 10.E
 imaginary transformation, Jacobi's 134.I, App. A, Table 16.III
 imaginary unit 74.A 294.F
 imbedded Markov chain 260.H
 imbedding 105.K
 imbedding principle 127.B
 immersed submanifold (of a Euclidean space) 111.A
 immersion
 (of a C^∞ -manifold) 105.K
 (of a Riemann surface) 367.G
 branched minimal 275.B
 generalized minimal 275.B
 isometric 365.A
 Kähler 365.L
 minimal 275.A
 minimum 365.O
 tight 365.O
 totally real 365.T
 imperfect field 149.H
 implication 411.B
 strict 411.L
 implicit
 (difference equation in a multistep method) 303.E
 (Runge-Kutta method) 303.D
 implicit enumeration method 215.D
 implicit functions 165.C 208
 implicit function theorem 208.A 286.G
 (in Banach algebras) 36.M
 (in locally convex spaces) 286.J
 global 208.D
 Nash-Moser 286.J
 implicit method 303.E
 implicit scheme 304.F
 impossible construction problem 179.A
 impossible event 342.B
 impredicative (object) 156.B
 imprimitive (permutation group) 151.H
 improper integral 216.D,E
 convergent 216.E
 divergent 216.E
 improper Riemann integral 216.E
 improvement, iterative 302.C
 impulse control 405.E
 impulse function 306.B, App. A, Table 12.II
 imputation 173.D
 imputed costs 292.B
 imputed prices 292.C
 IMT formula 299.B
 inaccessible, strongly 33.F
 inaccessible cardinal number
 strongly 33.E
 weakly 33.E
 inaccessible ordinal number
 strongly 312.E
 weakly 312.E

Subject Index

Independent

Ince definition 268.D
 Ince-Goldstein method 268.C
 incidence matrix
 of a block design 102.B
 of a graph 186.G
 incidence number 146.B 201.B
 incidence relation 282.A
 inclination, curve of constant 111.F
 inclination problem, critical 55.C
 inclusion 381.C
 inclusion mapping 381.C
 incoming wave operator 375.B
 incompatible system (of partial differential equations) 428.B
 incomplete beta function App. A, Table 17.I
 incomplete blocks 102.B
 incomplete elliptic integral of the first kind 134.B
 incomplete factorization 302.C
 incomplete gamma function 174.A, App. A, Table 17.I
 incompleteness theorem, Gödel 156.E
 first 185.C
 second 185.C
 incompressible (measurable transformation) 136.C
 incompressible fluid 205.B
 inconsistent problem (of geometric construction) 179.A
 inconsistent system (of algebraic equations) 10.A
 increasing (sequence function or distribution)
 monotone 166.A 380.B
 monotonically 87.B
 non- 166.A
 slowly (C^∞ -function) 125.O
 slowly (distribution) 125.N
 slowly (in the sense of Deny) 338.O
 slowly, sequence 168.B
 strictly 166.A
 strictly monotone 166.A
 increasing directed set 308.A
 increasing process 406.B
 integrable 406.B
 increment
 of a function 106.B
 process with independent 5.B
 increment function 380.B
 Ind (large inductive dimension) 117.B
 ind (small inductive dimension) 117.B
 indecomposable A -module 277.I
 indecomposable continuum 79.D
 indecomposable group 190.L
 indecomposable linear representation 362.C
 indecomposable vector bundle 16.Y
 indefinite D -integral 100.D
 indefinite Hermitian form 348.F
 indefinite integral 198.B
 in Lebesgue integral 221.D
 in Riemann integral 216.C
 indefinite quadratic form 348.C
 indefinite sum (of a function) 104.B
 in degree 186.B
 independence, number of 186.I
 independence theorem (on valuations) 439.G
 independent
 (axioms) 35.B
 (complexes) 70.B
 (differential operators) 324.C
 (events) 342.B
 (frequency) 126.L
 (partitions) 136.E
 (points) 7.A

Independent increments, process with

- (random variables) 342.C
- algebraically 149.K 369.A
- analytically (in a complete ring) 370.A
- ε - (partitions) 136.E
- linearly 2.E 256.C,E 277.G
- path 346.G
- independent increments, process with 5.B
- independent of the past history 406.D
- independent process 136.E
- independent set 66.G 186.I
- independent system, maximal (of an additive group) 2.E
- independent variable 165.C
- independent vector 66.F
- indeterminacy, set of points of (of a proper meromorphic mapping) 23.D
- indeterminate 369.A
 - in the algebraic sense 337.C
- indeterminate coefficients, Lagrange's method of 106.L
- indeterminate form, limit of 106.E
- indeterminate system (of algebraic equations) 10.A
- $\text{Ind}_g a$ 297.G
- index
 - (of a central simple algebra) 29.G
 - (of a critical point) 279.B,E 286.N
 - (of a divisor) 3.D
 - (of an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
 - (of an eigenvalue) 217.F
 - (of a Fredholm mapping) 286.E
 - (of a Fredholm operator) 68.F 251.D
 - (of a manifold) 56.G
 - (of a number) 297.G
 - (of an orthogonal array) 102.L
 - (of a quadratic form) 348.E
 - (of a recursive function) 356.F
 - (of the Riemann-Hilbert problem) 217.J
 - (of a stable distribution) 341.G
 - (of a stable process) 5.F
 - (of a subgroup) 190.C
 - analytic (of an elliptic complex) 237.H
 - analytic (of an elliptic differential operator) 237.H
 - contravariant (of a component of a tensor) 256.J
 - covariant (of a component of a tensor) 256.J
 - cycle 66.E
 - deficiency (of a closed symmetric operator) 251.I
 - deficiency (of a differential operator) 112.I
 - degeneracy 17.C
 - differential (in a covering of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
 - dummy (of a tensor) 256.J
 - fixed-point (of a continuous mapping) 153.B
 - of inertia (of a quadratic form) 348.E
 - Keller-Maslov 274.C
 - Kronecker 201.H
 - multi- 112.A
 - α -speciality (of a divisor) 9.F
 - p - (on a central simple algebra) 29.G
 - ramification (of an algebroidal function) 17.C
 - ramification (of a finite extension) 257.D
 - ramification (of a prime ideal) 14.I
 - ramification (of a valuation) 439.I
 - ramification, relative (of a prime ideal) 14.I
 - of relative nullity 365.D
 - Schur (of a central simple algebra) 29.E
 - Schur (of an irreducible representation) 362.F
 - of a singular point (of a continuous vector field) 153.B
 - speciality (of a divisor) 9.C 15.D
 - topological (of an elliptic complex) 237.H
 - of total isotropy (of a quadratic form) 348.E
 - indexing set (of a family of elements) 381.D
 - index set
 - (of a balanced array) 102.L
 - (of a family) 165.D 381.D
 - index theorem
 - Atiyah-Singer 237.H
 - for differentiable manifolds 56.G
 - Hirzebruch (for differentiable manifolds) 56.G
 - of Hodge 15.D
 - Morse 279.F
 - Indian mathematics 209
 - indicator function
 - modified 341.C
 - of a subset 342.E
 - indicatrix
 - Dupin 111.H
 - spherical (of a space curve) 111.F
 - indicial equation 254.C
 - indirect least squares method 128.C
 - indirect transcendental singularity (of an analytic function) 198.P
 - indiscrete pseudometric space 273.B
 - indiscrete topology 425.C
 - individual 411.H
 - individual domain 411.H
 - individual ergodic theorem 136.B
 - individual risk theory 214.C
 - individual symbol 411.H
 - individual variables 411.H
 - indivisibilis 265
 - induced
 - (Cartan connection) 80.O
 - (unfolding) 51.D
 - induced bundle 147.G
 - induced homomorphism 202.K
 - induced module 277.L
 - induced representation
 - (of a finite group) 362.G
 - (of a unitary representation) 437.O
 - induced topology 425.I
 - induced von Neumann algebra 308.C
 - induction
 - (of a von Neumann algebra) 308.C
 - axiom of mathematical 294.B
 - complete 294.B
 - double mathematical 294.B
 - magnetic 130.A
 - mathematical 294.B
 - multiple mathematical 294.B
 - transfinite (in a well-ordered set) 311.C
 - induction equation 259
 - inductive dimension
 - small 117.B
 - large 117.B
 - inductive limit
 - (in a category) 210.D
 - (of an inductive system of sets) 210.B
 - (of a sequence of topological spaces) 425.M
 - (of sheaves) 383.I
 - strictly (of a sequence of locally convex spaces) 424.W
 - inductive limit and projective limit 210
 - inductive limit group 210.C
 - inductive limit space 210.C
 - inductively ordered set 34.C

- inductive system
 - (in a category) 210.D
 - (of groups) 210.C
 - (of sets) 210.B
 - of topological spaces 210.C
- inelastic (scattering) 375.A
- inequality (inequalities) 211, App. A, Table 8
 - absolute 211.A
 - Bell's 351.L
 - Bernshtein (for trigonometric polynomials) 336.C
 - Bessel 197.C
 - Bhattacharyya 399.D
 - Bunyakovskii 211.C, App. A, Table 8
 - Carleman App. A, Table 8
 - Cauchy 211.C, App. A, Table 8
 - Cauchy-Schwarz 211.C, App. A, Table 8
 - Chapman-Robbins-Kiefer 399.D
 - Chebyshev 342.C
 - conditional 211.A
 - correlation 212.A
 - Cramér-Rao 399.D
 - distortion 438.B
 - energy 325.C
 - Fisher 102.E
 - FKG 212.A
 - Gårding 112.G
 - GHS 212.A
 - GKS first 212.A
 - GKS second 212.A
 - Golden-Thompson 212.B
 - Griffiths's first 212.A
 - Griffiths's second 212.A
 - Grunsky 438.B
 - Hardy App. A, Table 8
 - Hardy-Littlewood-Sobalen 224.E
 - Hausdorff-Young 224.E
 - Hilbert App. A, Table 8
 - Hölder 211.C, App. A, Table 8
 - Hölder integral 211.C
 - isoperimetric 228.B
 - Jordan App. A, Table 8
 - Klein 212.B
 - Markov (for polynomials) 336.C
 - maximal (maximal ergodic lemma) 136.B
 - Minkowski 211.C, App. A, Table 8
 - Morse 279.D,E
 - Peierls-Bogolyubov 212.B
 - Powers-Størmer 212.B
 - quasivariational 440.D
 - Riemann's period 3.L
 - Riemann-Roch (on algebraic surfaces) 15.D
 - Roepstorff-Araki-Sewell 402.G
 - Roepstorff-Fannes-Verbeure 402.G
 - Schwarz 211.C
 - stationary variational 440.B
 - triangle 273.A
 - variational, of evolution 440.C
 - von Neumann 251.M
 - Wirtinger App. A, Table 8
 - Wolfowitz 399.J
 - Young 224.E, App. A, Table 8
- inertia
 - ellipsoid of 271.E
 - index of (of an a quadratic form) 348.B
 - law of 271.A
 - law of, Sylvester (on a quadratic form) 348.B
 - moment of 271.E
 - principal axis of 271.E
 - principal moment of 271.E
 - product of 271.E
- inertia field (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- inertia group 14.K 257.D
- inertial system 271.D 359
- inf (infimum) 311.B
- inference
 - rule of 411.I
 - statistical 401
 - statistical, graphical method of 19.B
- inferior limit
 - (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - (of a sequence of subsets of a set) 270.C
- inferior limit event 342.B
- infimum
 - (of an ordered set) 311.B
 - (of a subset of a vector lattice) 310.C
- infinite, purely (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
- infinite branch (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
- infinite cardinal number 49.A
- infinite classical group 147.I 202.V
- infinite continued fraction 83.A
- infinite determinant (in Hill's method of solution) 268.B
- infinite-dimensional complex projective space 56.C
- infinite-dimensional linear space 256.C
- infinite-dimensional normal space 117.B
- infinite-dimensional real projective space 56.B
- infinite Grassmann manifold 147.I
- infinite group 190.C
- infinite height (element of an Abelian p -group) 2.D
- infinite interval 355.C
- infinite lens space 91.C
- infinitely differentiable (function) 106.K
- infinitely divisible distribution 341.G
- infinitely recurrent (measurable transformation) 136.C
- infinite matrix 269.K
- infinite order (of an element in a group) 190.C
- infinite orthogonal group 202.V
- infinite population 401.E
- infinite prime divisor 439.H
 - imaginary 439.H
 - real 439.H
- infinite product 379.G, App. A, Table 10.VI
 - divergent 379.G
- infinite product expansion, Euler's 436.B 450.B
- infinite sequence 165.D
- infinite series 379.A, App. A, Table 10.III
- infinite set 49.F 381.A
 - countably 49.A
- infinitesimal
 - (for a function) 87.G
 - (for a hyperreal number) 293.D
 - (for a sequence of random variables) 250.B
 - order of (of a function) 87.G
- infinitesimal birth rate 260.G
- infinitesimal calculus (in nonstandard analysis) 293.D
- infinitesimal death rate 260.G
- infinitesimal deformation to the direction $\partial/\partial s$ 72.G
- infinitesimal element (in nonstandard Hilbert space) 276.E
- infinitesimal generator (of a semigroup) 378.B
- infinitesimal motion (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.E
- infinitesimal real number 276.E
- infinitesimal transformation
 - (of a differentiable transformation group) 431.G

(of a one-parameter transformation group) 105.N
infinitesimal wedge 125.V
infinite Stiefel manifold 147.I
infinite symplectic group 202.V
infinite type (Lie algebra) 191.D
infinite type power series space 168.B
infinite unitary group 202.V
infinity 87.D,G
 axiom of 33.B 381.G
 axiom of strong 33.E
 hyperplane at (in affine geometry) 7.B
 minus 87.D
 negative 87.D 355.C
 order of (of a function) 87.G
 plus 87.D
 point at 7.B 74.D 178.F 285.C
 positive 87.D 355.C
 regular at the point at 193.B
 space at (in affine geometry) 7.B
inflation 200.M
inflection, point of 9.B 93.G
influence, domain of 325.B
influence curve 371.I
information
 Fisher 399.D
 limited (in maximum likelihood method) 128.C
 loss of 138.B
 mutual 213.E
 self- 213.B
information bit 63.C
information compression 96.B
information matrix 102.I 399.D
information number, Kullback-Leibler (K-L) 398.G
information retrieval 96.F
information retrieval system 96.F
information sciences 75.F
information set 173.B
information source 213.A
 ergodic 213.C
information theory 213
informatiques 75.F
informative, more (statistical experiment) 398.G
infra-exponential growth 125.AA,BB
infrared divergence 132.C 146.B
ingoing subspaces 375.H
inhomogeneous
 (boundary value problem) 315.B
 (difference equation) 104.C
 (linear ordinary differential equation) 252.A
 (system of linear differential equations) 252.G
inhomogeneous coordinates 343.C
inhomogeneous lattice (in \mathbf{R}^n) 182.B
inhomogeneous Lorentz group 359.B
inhomogeneous polarization 3.G
initial blocks 102.E
initial-boundary value problem 325.K
initial condition
 (for ordinary differential equations) 316.A
 (for partial differential equations) 321.A
initial data 321.A
initial distribution
 (of a Markov process) 261.A
 (for a stochastic differential equation) 406.D
initial function (of a functional-differential equation) 163.C
initial law (for a stochastic differential equation) 406.D

initial number 312.D
initial object 52.D
initial ordinal number 49.E
initial phase (of a simple harmonic motion) 318.B
initial point
 (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
 (of a path) 170
 (of a position vector) 7.A
 (of a vector) 442.A
initial set
 (of a correspondence) 358.B
 (of a linear operator) 251.E
initial state 31.B
initial surface 321.A
initial term (of an infinite continued fraction) 83.A
initial value
 (for an ordinary differential equation) 316.A
 (for a partial differential equation) 321.A
 (for a stochastic differential equation) 406.D
initial value problem
 (for functional-differential equations) 163.D
 (for hyperbolic partial differential equations) App. A, Table 15.III
 (for integrodifferential equations) 222.B
 (for ordinary differential equations) 313.C 316.A
 (for partial differential equations) 321.A
 Navier-Stokes 204.B
 singular (for partial differential equations of mixed type) 326.C
initial vertex 186.B
injection 381.C
 (in a category) 52.D
 (homomorphism of cohomology groups) 200.M
 canonical 381.C,E
 canonical (on direct sums of modules) 277.F
 canonical (on free products of group) 190.M
 canonical (from a subgroup) 190.D
 natural (from a subgroup) 190.D
injective
 (Banach space) 37.M
 (C^* -algebra) 36.H
 (mapping) 381.C
 (object in an Abelian category) 200.I
injective A -module 277.K
injective class 200.Q
injective dimension 200.K
injective envelope 200.I
injective module, (R, S) - 200.K
injective resolution (in an Abelian category) 200.I
 j - 200.Q
 right (of an A -module) 200.F
injectivity, rational 200.O
injectivity radius 178.C
inner area 216.F 270.G
inner automorphism(s)
 (of a group) 190.D
 (of a ring) 368.D
 group of (of a group) 190.D
 group of (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
inner capacity, Newtonian 48.F
inner derivation
 (of an associative algebra) 200.L
 (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
inner function 43.F
inner harmonic measure 169.B
inner measure 270.E
 Lebesgue 270.F

- inner product
 - (in a Hermitian linear space) 256.Q
 - (in a Hilbert space) 197.B
 - (of hyperspheres) 76.A
 - (between a linear space and its dual space) 256.G
 - (in a metric vector space) 256.H
 - (of a pair of linear spaces) 424.G
 - (of vectors) 256.A 442.B
 - Hermitian 256.Q
- inner product space 442.B
- inner solution 112.B
- inner topology (of a Lie subgroup) 249.E
- inner transformation (in the sense of Stoilow) 367.B
- inner variable 112.B
- inner volume 270.G
- innovation 405.H
- input, Poisson 260.H
- input data, error of 138.B
- inrevolvable oval 89.E
- inscribe (in a sphere) 139.I
- inscribed circle (of a regular polygon) 357.A
- inseparable, purely (rational mapping) 16.I
- inseparable element (of a field) 149.H
 - purely 149.H
- inseparable extension (of a field) 149.H
 - purely 149.H
- inseparable polynomial 337.G
- inspection
 - expected amount of 404.C
 - sampling (\Rightarrow sampling inspection) 404.C
- instantaneous state 260.F 261.B
- in-state 150.D 386.A
- instruction 31.B
 - single-address 75.C
- insurance
 - amount of 214.A
 - cost of 214.B
 - death 214.B
 - mixed 214.B
 - survival 214.B
- insured, amount 214.A
- integer(s) 294.C
 - algebraic 14.A
 - Cartan (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.N
 - Gaussian 14.U
 - p -adic 439.F
 - p -adic, ring of 439.F
 - rational 294.B
- integer polyhedron 215.C
- integer programming 215 264.C
- integer programming problem
 - all- 215.A
 - mixed 215.A
 - pure 215.A
 - 0-1 215.A
- integrability
 - (of multivalued vector functions) 443.I
 - strong 443.I
- integrability condition, complete 428.C
- integrable
 - (function) 221.B
 - (G -structure) 191.A
 - (increasing process) 262.D 406.B
 - (representation) 437.X
 - (in the sense of Riemann) 216.A
 - absolutely 216.E,F
 - Birkhoff (function) 443.E
 - Bochner (function) 443.C
 - completely (system of independent 1-forms) 154.B 428.D
 - D - (function) 100.D
 - Daniell-Stone (function) 310.I
 - Denjoy (in the wider sense) 100.D
 - Dunford 443.F
 - Gel'fand-Pettis (function) 443.F
 - Lebesgue (function) 221.B
 - locally, function 168.B
 - μ - (function) 221.B
 - Perron (function) 100.F
 - Pettis 443.F
 - Riemann (function) 216.A
 - scalarly 443.F,I
 - square (function) 168.B
 - square (unitary representation) 437.M
 - termwise (series) 216.B
 - uniformly (family of random variables) 262.A
 - weakly (function) 443.E
- integrable distribution 125.N
- integrable increasing process 262.D 406.B
- integrable process of bounded variation 406.B
- integrable system 287.A
- integrably homotopic 154.F
- integral(s)
 - (of differential forms) 105.T
 - (of a distribution with respect to λ) 125.H
 - (of a function) 221.B
 - (= integrally dependent) 67.I
 - (of a Monge-Ampère equation) 278.B
 - (of multivalued vector functions) 443.I
 - (scheme) 16.D
 - Abelian 11.C
 - action 80.Q
 - Airy App. A, Table 19.IV
 - almost (element of a ring) 67.I
 - of angular momentum 420.A
 - Banach 310.I
 - Bartle-Dunford-Schwartz 443.G
 - Bessel 39.B
 - Birkhoff 443.E
 - Bochner 443.C
 - Bromwich 240.D 322.D, App. A, Table 12.I
 - Carson App. A, Table 12.II
 - of Cauchy type 198.B
 - of the center of mass 420.A
 - complete additivity of the (in Lebesgue integral) 221.C
 - complete elliptic App. A, Table 16.I
 - complete elliptic, of the first kind 134.B
 - complete elliptic, of the second kind 134.C
 - conjugate Fourier 160.D
 - constant 216.C
 - cosine 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
 - curvilinear 94.A
 - curvilinear (with respect to a line element) 94.D
 - curvilinear (with respect to a variable) 94.D
 - $D(*)$ - 100.D
 - Daniell-Stone 310.I
 - definite App. A, Table 9.V
 - definite (of a hyperfunction) 125.X
 - definite (in a Riemann integral) 216.C
 - definite D - 100.D
 - Denjoy 100
 - Denjoy (in the restricted sense) 100.D
 - Denjoy (in the wide sense) 100.D
 - direct 308.G
 - direct (of unitary representations) 437.H
 - Dirichlet (in Dirichlet problem) 120.F

Integral bilinear functional

- Dirichlet (in Fourier's single integral theorem) 160.B
- double (in Riemann integral) 216.F
- Dunford 251.G 443.F
- elliptic 11.C 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
- elliptic, of the first kind 134.A
- elliptic, of the second kind 134.A
- elliptic, of the third kind 134.A
- energy 420.A
- Euler, of the first kind 174.C
- Euler, of the second kind 174.C
- exponential 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- Feynman 146
- first (of a completely integrable system) 428.D
- Fourier 160.A
- Fresnel 167.D, App. A, Tables 9.V 19.II
- of a function with respect to a volume element 105.W
- Gauss 338.J
- Gel'fand 443.F
- Gel'fand-Pettis 443.F
- harmonic 194.A
- Hilbert's invariant 46.C
- hyperelliptic 11.C
- hypergeometric 253.B
- improper (in Riemann integral) 216.D,E
- incomplete elliptic (of the first kind) 134.B
- indefinite (in Lebesgue integral) 221.D
- indefinite (in Riemann integral) 198.B 216.C
- indefinite D - 100.D
- intermediate App. A, Table 15.III
- intermediate (of a Monge-Ampère equation) 278.B
- iterated (in Lebesgue integral) 221.E
- iterated (in Riemann integral) 216.G
- Jacobi 420.F
- L - 221.B
- with respect to λ (of a distribution) 125.H
- Lebesgue 221.B
- Lebesgue-Radon 94.C
- Lebesgue-Stieltjes 94.C 166.C
- logarithmic 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- Lommel 39.C
- multiple (in Lebesgue integral) 221.E
- multiple (in Riemann integral) 216.F
- n -tuple (in Riemann integral) 216.F
- over an oriented manifold 105.T
- Pettis 443.F
- Poisson 168.B 193.G
- probability App. A, Table 19.II
- regular first 126.H
- repeated (in Lebesgue integral) 221.E
- repeated (in Riemann integral) 216.G
- Riemann 37.K 216.A
- Riemann lower 216.A
- Riemann-Stieltjes 94.B 166.C
- Riemann upper 216.A
- scalar 443.F,I
- sine 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- singular 217.J
- over a singular chain 105.T
- spectral 390.D
- Stieltjes 94.B
- stochastic 261.E 406.B
- stochastic, of Stratonovich type 406.C
- surface 94.A,E
- surface (with respect to a surface element) 94.E
- trigonometric 160.A
- vector 443.A
- of a vector field App. A, Table 3.III
- vector-valued 443.A
- integral bilinear functional 424.R
- integral calculus 216
- integral character (of the homology group of a Riemann surface) 11.E
- integral closure (of a ring) 67.I
- integral cohomology group 201.H
- integral constant 216.C
- integral cosine 167.D
- integral current 275.G
- integral curvature (of a surface) 111.H
- integral curve
 - (of a Monge equation) 324.F
 - (of ordinary differential equations) 316.A
- integral direct sum 308.G
- integral divisor
 - (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (of an algebraic number field) 14.F
 - (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
- integral domain 368.B
- Noetherian 284.A
- integral element 428.E
 - k -dimensional 191.I
 - ordinary 428.E
 - regular 428.E
- integral equation(s) 217
 - Abel 217.L
 - associated 217.F
 - Fredholm 217.A
 - of Fredholm type 217.A
 - Hammerstein 217.M
 - homogeneous 217.F
 - linear 217.A
 - nonlinear 217.M
 - numerical solution of 217.N
 - singular 217.J
 - transposed 217.F
 - Volterra 217.A
 - of Volterra type 217.A
- integral exponent 167.D
- integral form 248.W
- integral formula
 - Cauchy 198.B
 - Poisson 198.B
 - Villat App. A, Table 15.VI
 - Weyl 225.I
- integral function 429.A
- integral g -lattice 27.A
- integral geometry 218
 - principal formula of 218.C
- integral homology group
 - of a polyhedron 201.D
 - of a simplicial complex 201.C
- integral hypersurface (of a partial differential equation) 320.A
- integral ideal (of an algebraic number field) 14.C
- integral inequality, Hölder 211.C
- integral invariant(s) 219
 - absolute 219.A
 - Cartan's relative 219.B
 - relative 219.A
- integral kernel 217.A 251.O
- integral left ideal 27.A
- integral logarithm 167.D
- integrally closed
 - (in a ring) 67.I
 - completely (ring) 67.I

integrally closed ring 67.I
 integrally dependent element (of a ring) 67.I
 integral manifold 428.A,B,D
 k -dimensional 191.I
 ordinary (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 regular (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 singular (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 integral method, summable by Borel's 379.O
 integral operator 68.N 100.E 250.O
 Calderón-Zygmund singular 217.J 251.O
 Fourier 274.C 345.B
 of Hilbert-Schmidt type 68.C
 integral point 428.E,F
 integral quotient (in the division algorithm of
 polynomials) 337.C
 integral representation 362.G,K
 Cauchy 21.C
 Herglotz 43.I
 Laplace-Mehler App. A, Table 18.II
 Schläfli 393.B
 integral right ideal 27.A
 integral sine 167.D
 integral singular homology group 201.E
 integral test, Cauchy (for convergence) 379.B
 integral theorem
 Cauchy 198.A,B
 Fourier double 160.B
 Fourier single 160.B
 stronger form of Cauchy 198.B
 integral transforms 220.A
 integral two-sided \mathfrak{o} -ideal 27.A
 integral vector 428.E
 integrand 216.A
 integrate 216.A
 (an ordinary differential equation) 313.A
 integrating factor App. A, Table 14.I
 integration
 along a fiber (of a hyperfunction) 274.E
 automatic, scheme 299.C
 contour of (of curvilinear integral) 94.D
 domain of 216.F
 graphical 19.B
 Jacobi's second method of 324.D
 numerical 299
 path of (of curvilinear integral) 94.D
 Romberg 299.C
 integration by parts 216.C
 (on D -integral) 100.G
 (in the Stieltjes integral) 94.C
 integration constant (in a general solution of
 a differential equation) 313.A
 integration formula
 based on variable transformation 299.B
 Gauss (in the narrow sense) 299.A
 Poisson App. A, Table 15.VI
 Villat App. A, Table 15.VI
 integrodifferential equation(s) 163.A 222
 of Fredholm type 222.A
 Prandtl's 222.C
 of Volterra type 222.A
 Wiener-Hopf 222.C
 intensity, traffic 260.H
 intensive (thermodynamical quantity) 419.A
 interaction 102.H
 interest, assumed rate of 214.A
 interference (of waves) 446
 interior
 (of an angle) 139.D 155.B
 (of a manifold) 105.B
 (of a polygon) 155.F

Subject Index

Intersect

 (of a segment) 155.B
 (of a set) 425.B
 (of a simplex) 70.C
 interior capacity, Newtonian 48.F
 interior cluster set 62.A
 interior field equation 359.D
 interior operator 425.B
 interior point 425.B
 interior problem (in Dirichlet problems) 120.A
 interior product (of a differential form with a vector
 field) 105.Q
 intermediate convergent (of an irrational number)
 83.B
 intermediate field 149.D
 intermediate integrals App. A, Table 15.III
 of Monge-Ampère equation 278.B
 intermediate-value theorem 84.C
 intermittent structure 433.C
 internal (in nonstandard analysis) 293.B
 internal energy 419.A
 internal irregular point 338.L
 internal law of composition (of a set) 409.A
 internally stable set 186.I
 internally thin set 338.G
 internal product 200.K
 internal space in catastrophe theory (in static
 model) 51.B
 internal state 31.B
 internal symmetry 150.B
 international notation (for crystal classes) 92.B
 international system of units 414.A
 interpolating (for a function algebra) 164.D
 interpolating sequence 43.F
 interpolation
 (of a function) 223, App. A, Table 21
 (of a stationary process) 176.K 395.E
 Chebyshev 223.A 336.J
 inverse 223.A
 Lagrange 223.A
 of operators 224
 spline 223.F
 interpolation coefficient, Lagrange's 223.A
 interpolation formula 223.A
 Bessel App. A, Table 21
 Everett App. A, Table 21
 Gauss App. A, Table 21
 Gauss's backward 223.C
 Gauss's forward 223.C
 Newton App. A, Table 21
 Newton's backward 223.C
 Newton's forward 223.C
 Stirling App. A, Table 21
 interpolation function 223.A
 interpolation method 224.A
 interpolation polynomial 223.A
 Hermite 223.E
 Lagrange 336.G, App. A, Table 21
 Newton 336.G
 trigonometric 336.E
 interpolation problem 43.F
 interpolation scheme, Aitken 223.B
 interpolation space 224.A
 complex 224.B
 real 224.C
 interpolation theorem 224.B,C
 interpolatory formula 299.A
 interquartile range 397.C
 intersect 155.B
 properly (on a variety) 16.G
 transversally 105.L

Intersection

- intersection
 - (of events) 342.B
 - (of projective subspaces) 343.B
 - (of sets) 381.B
 - (of subspaces of an affine space) 7.A
 - complete 16.A
- intersection chart 19.D
- intersection multiplicity (of two subvarieties) 16.Q
- intersection number
 - (of divisors) 15.C
 - (of homology classes) 65.B 201.O
 - (of sheaves) 16.E
 - self- 15.C
- intersection product
 - (in algebraic varieties) 16.Q
 - (in homology theory) 201.O
- intersection property, finite 425.S
- intersection theorem
 - (of affine geometry) 7.A
 - (of projective geometry) 343.B
 - Cantor's 273.F
 - Krull 284.A
- interval
 - (in a Boolean algebra) 42.B
 - (in a lattice) 243.C
 - (in a vector lattice) 310.B
 - (in an ordered set) 311.B
 - (in real number space) 355.C
 - of absolute stability 303.G
 - basic 4.B
 - closed 140 355.C
 - confidence 399.Q
 - of continuity (for a probability distribution) 341.C
 - fiducial 401.F
 - finite 355.C
 - infinite 355.C
 - open 140 355.C
 - principle of nested 87.C
 - of relative stability 303.G
 - supplementary 4.B
 - tolerance 399.R
- interval estimation 399.Q 401.C
- interval function 380.A
 - additive 380.B
 - continuous additive 380.B
- in the large (in differential geometry) 109
- in the small (in differential geometry) 109
- intra-block analysis 102.D
- intransitive (permutation group) 151.H
- intrinsic angular momentum 415.G
- intrinsic homology 114.H
- intuitionism 156.A
 - semi- 156.C
- intuitionistic logic 411.L
- invariance
 - of a confidence region 399.Q
 - of dimension, theorem on (of Euclidean spaces) 117.D
 - of domain, Brouwer theorem on 117.D
 - homotopy 201.D
 - isospin 351.J
 - Lorentz 150.B
 - of speed of light, principle of 359.B
 - topological (homology groups) 201.A
- invariance principle
 - (of hypothesis testing) 400.E
 - (of wave operators) 375.B
 - Donsker's 250.E
 - Strassen's 250.E
- invariance theorem of analytic relations 198.K
- invariant(s) App. A, Table 14.III
 - (of an Abelian group) 2.B
 - (of a cohomology class of a Galois group) 59.H 257.E
 - (decision problem) 398.E
 - (element under a group action) 226.A
 - (of an elliptic curve) 73.A
 - (in the Erlangen program) 137
 - (under flow) 126.D
 - (function algebra) 164.H
 - (hypothesis) 400.E
 - (measure) 136.B 225 270.L
 - (S -matrices) 386.B
 - (of a normal simple algebra) 257.G
 - (subspace of a Banach space) 251.L
- absolute 12.A 226.A
- absolute integral 219.A
- almost G - 396.I
- Arf-Kervaire 114.J
- basic 226.B
- birational 12.A
- Browder-Livesay 114.L
- Cartan (of a finite group) 362.I
- Cartan relative integral 219.B
- conformal 77.E
- covering linkage 235.E
- differential (on an m -dimensional surface) 110.A
- Eilenberg-Postnikov (of a CW-complex) 70.G
- fundamental (of a space with a Lie transformation group) 110.A
- fundamental differential (of a surface) 110.B
- G - (element) 226.A
- G - (measure) 225.A
- G - (statistics) 396.I
- generalized Hopf 202.Q
- Hasse (of a central simple algebra) 29.G
- homotopy 202.B
- homotopy type 202.F
- Hopf 202.S,U
- Hopf, modulo p 202.S
- integral 219
- isomorphism (on a measure space) 136.E
- Iwasawa 14.L
- k - (of a CW-complex) 70.G
- left (metric in a topological group) 423.I
- left, Haar measure 225.C
- left, tensor field 249.A
- metric (on a measure space) 136.E
- Milnor 235.D
- of n -ary form of degree d 226.D
- negatively 126.D
- normal 114.J
- of order p 110.A
- p - (of a central simple algebra) 29.G
- PCT 386.B
- Poincaré's differential 74.G
- positively 126.D
- rcarrangement 168.B
- relative 12.A 226.A
- relative integral 219.A
- right, Haar measure 225.C
- right, tensor field 249.A
- sampling procedure 373.C
- semi- 226.A
- semi- (of a probability distribution) 341.C
- shape 382.C
- spectral 136.E
- TCP- 386.B

- topological 425.G
- U - (subspace of a representation space of a unitary representation) 437.C
- uniformly most powerful 399.Q
- vector 226.C
- of weight w 226.D
- invariant decision function 398.E
- invariant derivation (on an Abelian variety) 3.F
- invariant differential form (on an Abelian variety) 3.F
- invariant distribution(s)
 - (of a Markov chain) 260.A
 - (of second quantization) 377.C
- invariant estimator 399.I
 - best 399.I
- invariant field 172.B
- invariant integral, Hilbert's 46.C
- invariant level α test, uniformly most powerful (UMP) 400.E
- invariant Markov process 5.H
- invariant measure(s) 225
 - (of a Markov chain) 260.A
 - (of a Markov process) 261.F
 - (under a transformation) 136.B
 - G - 225.B
 - quasi- 225.J
 - relatively 225.H
 - smooth 126.J
 - sub- 261.F
 - transverse 154.H
- invariant measure problem 136.C
- invariants and covariants 226
- invariant statistic 396.I
 - maximal 396.I
- invariant subgroup (of a group) 190.C
- invariant subspace (of a linear operator) 164.H
 - doubly 164.H
- invariant tensor field
 - left 249.A
 - right 249.A
- invariant test 400.E
 - almost 400.E
- invariant torus 126.L
- inventory control 227
- inventory model 307.C
- inverse
 - (in a group) 190.A
 - (of a mapping) 381.C
 - homotopy (for an H -space) 203.D
 - quasi- (on a Banach algebra) 36.C
 - right (in nonlinear functional analysis) 286.G
- inverse analytic function 198.L
- inverse assumption 304.D
- inverse correspondence 358.B
- inverse domination principle 338.L
- inverse element
 - (in a group) 190.A
 - (in a ring) 368.B
 - left (in a ring) 368.B
 - quasi- (in a ring) 368.B
 - right (in a ring) 368.B
- inverse Fourier transform (of a distribution) 125.O
- inverse function 198.L 381.C
- inverse function element 198.L
- inverse image
 - (of a set) 381.C
 - (of a sheaf) 383.G
 - (of a uniformity) 436.E
 - perfect 425.CC
- inverse interpolation 223.A
- inverse iteration 298.C
- inverse limit (of an inverse system of sets) 210.B
- inverse mapping 381.C
- inverse mapping theorem 208.B
- inverse matrix 269.B
- inverse morphism 52.D
- inverse operator 37.C 251.B
- inverse path 170
- inverse problem
 - (in potential scattering) 375.G
 - Jacobi 3.L
- inverse relation 358.A
- inverse system (of sets) 210.B
- inverse transform (of an integral transform) 220.A
- inverse trigonometric function 131.E
- inversion
 - (with respect to a circle) 74.E
 - (of a domain in \mathbf{R}^n) 193.B
 - (with respect to a hypersphere) 76.A
 - Laguerre 76.B
 - space 258.A
 - space-time 258.A
- inversion formula
 - (for a characteristic function) 341.C
 - (of a cosine transform) 160.C
 - (of a Fourier transform) 160.C
 - (of a Fourier transform of distributions) 160.H
 - (of a Fourier transform on a locally compact Abelian group) 192.K
 - (of a generalized Fourier transform) 220.B
 - (of a Hilbert transform) 220.E
 - (of an integral transform) 220.A
 - (of a Laplace-Stieltjes transform) 240.D
 - (on a locally compact group) 437.L
 - (of a Mellin transform) 220.C
 - (for a semigroup of operators) 240.I
 - (of a Stieltjes transform) 220.D
 - Fourier 160.C
 - Möbius (in combinatorics) 66.C
 - Möbius (in number theory) 295.C
- inverted filing scheme 96.F
- invertible element
 - quasi- 368.B
 - of a ring 368.B
- invertible jet 105.X
- invertible knot 235.A
- invertible matrix 269.B
- invertible sheaf 16.E
- involute (of a curve) 111.E
- involution
 - (of an algebraic correspondence) 9.H
 - (in a Banach algebra) 36.F
 - (of a division ring) 348.F
 - (of a homotopy sphere) 114.L
 - Cartan 427.X
- involutive
 - (cross section) 286.H
 - (differential ideal) 428.E
 - (differential system) 191.I
 - (distribution) 154.B 428.D
 - (Lie group) 191.H
- involutive automorphism (of a Lie group) 412.B
- involutive correlation 343.D
- involutive distribution (on a differentiable manifold) 428.D
- involutive subspace 428.F
- involutory (involutive) system
 - (of differential forms) 428.F
 - (of nonlinear equations) 428.C

Irrational function, elliptic

- (of partial differential equations) 428.F
- (of partial differential equations of first order) 324.D
- irrational function, elliptic 134.E
- irrational number(s) 294.E 355.A
 - space of 22.A
- irrational real number 294.E
- irreducibility theorem, Hilbert's (on polynomials) 337.F
- irreducible
 - (algebraic curve) 9.B
 - (algebraic equation) 10.B
 - (algebraic variety) 16.A
 - (coalgebra) 203.F
 - (complemented modular lattice) 243.F
 - (continuous geometry) 85.A
 - (continuum) 79.D
 - (Coxeter complex) 13.R
 - (discrete subgroup of a semisimple Lie group) 122.F
 - (germ of an analytic set) 23.B
 - (linear representation) 362.C
 - (linear system) 16.N
 - (linear system in control theory) 86.C
 - (3-manifold) 65.E
 - (Markov chain) 260.B
 - (polynomial) 337.F
 - (positive matrix) 269.N 310.H
 - (projective representation) 362.J
 - (representation of a compact group) 69.B
 - (Riemannian manifold) 364.E
 - (root system) 13.L
 - (scheme) 16.D
 - (Siegel domain) 384.E
 - (transition matrix) 126.J
 - (unitary representation) 437.A
 - absolutely (representation) 362.F
 - at 0 (for an algebraic set) 23.B
- irreducible character
 - (of an irreducible representation) 362.E
 - absolutely 362.E
- irreducible component
 - (of an algebraic variety) 16.A
 - (of an analytic space) 23.C
 - (of a linear representation) 362.D
- irreducible element (of a ring) 67.H
- irreducible representation(s)
 - (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
 - fundamental system of (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.W
- irreducible symmetric bounded domain 412.F
- irreducible symmetric Hermitian space 412.E
- irreducible symmetric Riemannian space 412.C, App. A, Table 5.III
- irreducible tensor of rank k 353.C
- irredundant (intersection of primary ideals) 67.F
- irregular
 - (boundary point) 120.D
 - (prime number) 14.L
- irregularity
 - (of an algebraic surface) 15.E
 - number of (of an algebraic variety) 16.O
- irregular point
 - (of Brownian motion) 45.D
 - (of a Markov process) 261.D
 - (in potential theory) 338.L
 - external 338.L
 - internal 338.L
- irregular singular point
 - (of a solution) 254.B
- (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 254.B
- irreversible processes, statistical mechanics of 402.A
- irrotational
 - (fluid) 205.B
 - (vector field) 442.D
- Irwin's embedding theorem 65.D
- Ising model 340.B 402.G
 - stochastic 340.C
- island (in a Riemann surface) 272.J
- isobaric polynomial 32.C
- isogenous
 - (Abelian varieties) 3.C
 - (algebraic groups) 13.A
- isogeny 13.A
- isolated fixed point 126.G
- isolated ordinal number 312.B
- isolated point
 - (of a curve) 93.G
 - (in a topological space) 425.O
- isolated primary component (of an ideal) 67.F
- isolated prime divisor (of an ideal) 67.F
- isolated singularity (of an analytic function) 198.D, M
- isolated singular point 198.D 418.D
- isolated vertex 186.B
- isometrically isomorphic (normed spaces) 37.C
- isometric immersion 365.A
- isometric mapping 111.H 273.B
- isometric operator 251.E
 - partially 251.E
- isometric Riemannian manifolds 364.A
- isometric spaces 273.B
- isometry
 - (= isometric operator) 251.E
 - (between Riemannian manifold) 364.A
- isomonodromic deformation 253.E
- isomorphic
 - (algebraic systems) 409.C
 - (block bundles) 147.Q
 - (cohomology theories) 201.Q
 - (complex manifolds) 72.A
 - (fiber bundles) 147.B
 - (groups) 190.D
 - (Lie algebras) 248.A
 - (Lie groups) 249.N
 - (measure spaces) 398.D
 - (normed spaces) 37.C
 - (objects) 52.D
 - (PL-embeddings) 65.D
 - (representations) 362.C
 - (simplicial complexes) 70.C
 - (s.s. complexes) 70.E
 - (structures) 276.E
 - (topological groups) 423.A
 - (unitary representations) 437.A
- anti- (lattices) 243.C
- Borel 270.C
- dually (lattices) 243.C
- isometrically (normed spaces) 37.C
- locally 423.O
- metrically (automorphisms on a measure space) 136.E
- order 311.E
- similarly (ordered fields) 149.N
- spatially (automorphisms on a measure space) 136.E
- spectrally 136.E
- weakly 136.E

- isomorphic mapping, Borel 270.C
- isomorphic relations among classical Lie algebras
 App. A, Table 5.IV
- isomorphism
 - (of Abelian varieties) 3.C
 - (of algebraic systems) 409.C
 - (of block bundles) 147.Q
 - (of fields) 149.B
 - (of functors) 52.J
 - (of groups) 190.D
 - (of lattices) 243.C
 - (of Lie algebras) 248.A
 - (of linear spaces) 256.B
 - (of objects) 52.D
 - (of prealgebraic varieties) 16.C
 - (of rings) 368.D
 - (of topological groups) 423.A
 - (of unfoldings) 51.D
 - admissible (of Ω -groups) 190.E
 - algebra 29.A
 - analytic 21.J
 - analytic (of Lie groups) 249.N
 - anti- (of groups) 190.D
 - anti- (of lattices) 243.C
 - anti- (of ordered sets) 311.E
 - anti- (of rings) 368.D
 - birational (of Abelian varieties) 3.C
 - birational (of algebraic groups) 13.A
 - Bott 237.D
 - C^ω - (of Lie groups) 249.N
 - dual (of lattices) 243.C
 - dual (of ordered sets) 311.E
 - excision (on homology groups) 201.F,L
 - functorial 52.J
 - G - 191.A
 - k - (of algebraic groups) 13.A
 - k - (of extension fields of k) 149.D
 - lattice- 243.C
 - local (of topological groups) 423.O
 - mod p (in a class of Abelian groups) 202.N
 - Ω - (of Ω -groups) 190.E
 - operator (of Ω -groups) 190.E
 - order 311.E
 - ring 368.D
 - suspension (for homology) 201.E
 - Thom-Gysin 114.G
 - Thom-Gysin (of a fiber space) 148.E
 - uniform 436.E
- isomorphism invariant (on a measure space) 136.E
- isomorphism problem
 - (in ergodic theory) 136.E
 - (for graphs) 186.J
 - (for integral group algebras) 362.K
- isomorphism theorem
 - (in class field theory) 59.C
 - (on groups) 190.D
 - (on rings) 368.F
 - (on topological groups) 423.J
 - Ax-Kochen (on ultraproduct) 276.E
 - first (on topological groups) 423.J
 - Hurewicz 202.N
 - Hurewicz-Steenrod (on homotopy groups of fiber spaces) 148.D
 - Keisler-Shelah (in model theory) 276.E
 - second (on topological groups) 423.J
 - third (on topological groups) 423.J
- isoparametric (hypersurface) 365.I
- isoparametric method 304.C
- isoperimetric (curves) 228.A
- isoperimetric constant 391.D
- isoperimetric inequality 228.B
- isoperimetric problem(s) 111.E 228.A
 - generalized 46.A 228.A
 - special 228.A
- isospectral 391.B
- isospectral deformation 387.C
- isospin 351.J
- isospin invariance 351.J
- isothermal compressibility 419.B
- isothermal coordinates 90.C
- isothermal curvilinear coordinate system App. A,
 Table 3.V
- isothermal parameter 334.B
 - (for an analytic surface) 111.I
- isothermal process 419.B
- isotopic 65.D 202.B
 - (braids) 235.F
 - (embeddings) 114.D
 - (latin square) 241.A
 - ambient 65.D
- isotopy 65.D 202.B
 - ambient 65.D
- isotopy lemma, Thom's first 418.G
- isotopy type (of knots) 235.A
- isotropic
 - (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
 - k - (algebraic group) 13.G
 - totally (subspace) 60.O 348.E
- isotropic point 365.D
- isotropic submanifold 365.D
- isotropic turbulence 433.C
- isotropy, index of total (of a quadratic form) 348.E
- isotropy group 362.B
 - linear 199.A
 - principal 431.C
- isotropy representation 431.C
- isotropy subgroup (of a topological group) 431.A
- isotropy type (of a transformation group) 431.A
- iterated integral
 - (in Lebesgue integral) 221.E
 - (in Riemann integral) 216.G
- iterated kernel (for a Fredholm integral equation)
 217.D
- iterated logarithm
 - Khinchin's law of 250.C
 - law of 45.F
- iterated series
 - by columns (of a double series) 379.E
 - by rows (of a double series) 379.E
- iteration
 - (in a Banach space) 286.B
 - inverse 298.C
 - method of successive (for Fredholm integral equations) 217.D
 - two-body 271.C
- iteration matrix 302.C
- iterative improvement 302.C
- iterative method 302.C
- iterative process, linear stationary 302.C
- Itô circle operation 406.C
- Itô decomposition, Wiener- 176.I
- Itô formula 45.G 406.B
- Itô process 406.B
- Itô theorem, Lévy- (on Lévy processes) 5.E
- Itô type, stochastic integral of 406.C
- ITPFI 308.I
- Iversen-Beurling-Kunugi theorem 62.B
- Iversen theorem 272.I
- Iwahori subgroup 13.R
- Iwasawa decomposition

(of a Lie group) 249.T
(of a real semisimple Lie algebra) 248.V
Iwasawa group 384.C
Iwasawa invariant 14.L
Iwasawa main conjecture 450.J
Iwasawa theorem, Cartan-Mal'tsev- (on maximal compact subgroups) 249.S

J

J-group 237.I
 equivariant 431.F
J-homomorphism 202.V 237.I
 equivariant 431.F
J-method 224.C
Jackson's theorem (on the degree of approximation) 336.C
Jacobi, C. G. J. 229
Jacobian 208.B
Jacobian, generalized (of a set function) 246.H
Jacobian criterion (on regularity of local rings) 370.B
Jacobian determinant 208.B
Jacobian matrix 208.B
Jacobian variety 9.E 11.C 16.P
 canonically polarized 3.G 9.E
 generalized 9.F 11.C
Jacobi-Biehler equality 328
Jacobi condition 46.C
Jacobi differential equation App. A, Tables 14.II 20.V
 Hamilton- 271.F 324.E
Jacobi elliptic functions App. A, Table 16.III
Jacobi equation, Hamilton- 108.B
Jacobi field 178.A
Jacobi identity
 (on the bracket of two vector fields) 105.M
 (in a Lie algebra) 248.A
 (with respect to Whitehead product) 202.P
Jacobi imaginary transformation 134.I
Jacobi integral 420.F
Jacobi inverse problem 3.L
Jacobi last multiplier App. A, Table 14.I
Jacobi matrix 390.G
Jacobi method
 (in numerical computation of eigenvalues) 298.B
 (in numerical solution of linear equations) 302.C
 cyclic 298.B
 threshold 298.B
Jacobi polynomial 317.D, App. A, Table 20.V
Jacobi second method of integration 324.D
Jacobi symbol 297.I
 complementary law of 297.I
 law of quadratic reciprocity of 297.I
Jacobi standard form, Legendre- 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
Jacobi transformation App. A, Table 16.III
Jacobson radical (of a ring) 67.D
Jacobson topology 36.D
James theorem 37.G
Janko-Ree type, group of 151.J
Janzen area (of a Borel set) 246.G
Japanese mathematics (wasan) 230
Japanese ring, universally 284.F
Jarrat-Mack method, Garside- 301.N
Jeffreys method 112.B
Jensen formula 198.F
Jensen measure 164.K

jet

invertible 105.X
 of order r 105.X
job 281.D
job-shop scheduling 307.C
job-shop scheduling problem 376
John-Nirenberg space (= *BMO*) 168.B
join
 (in a Boolean algebra) 42.A
 (in a lattice) 243.A
 (of points) 155.B
 (of projective spaces) 343.B
 (of sets) 381.B
 (of simplicial complexes) 70.C
 (of subgroups of a group) 190.G
 reduced (of homotopy classes) 202.Q
 reduced (of mappings) 202.F
 reduced (of topological spaces) 202.F
joined by an arc 79.B
joint cumulant 397.I
joint density 397.I
joint distribution 342.C
joint moment generating function 397.I.J
joint random variable 342.C
joint sensity function 397.J
joint spectrum 36.M
Jordan algebras 231
 exceptional 231.A
 free special 231.A
 semisimple 231.B
 special 231.A
Jordan arc 93.B
Jordan canonical form (of a matrix) 269.G
Jordan content 270.G
Jordan curve 93.B
Jordan curve theorem 93.K
Jordan decomposition
 (of an additive set function) 380.C
 (of a function of bounded variation) 166.B
 (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 (in an ordered linear space) 310.B
 multiplicative 269.L
Jordan domain 333.A
Jordan elimination, Gauss- 302.B
Jordan factorial 330
Jordan-Hölder sequence (in a group) 190.G
Jordan-Hölder theorem (in group theory) 190.G
Jordan-Hölder theorem (on representations of algebras) 362.D
Jordan homomorphism (between Jordan algebras) 231.A
Jordan inequality App. A, Table 8
Jordan measurable set (of \mathbf{R}^n) 270.G
Jordan measure 270.D,G
Jordan module 231.C
Jordan normal form 269.G
Jordan test (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
Jordan-Zassenhaus theorem (on integral representation of a group) 362.K
Joule heat 130.B
Joule's law 130.B
Julia's direction (of a transcendental entire function) 272.F 429.C
Julia's exceptional function 272.F
jump (at a point) 84.B
jump function 306.C
jumping of the structures 72.G
just identified (equation) 128.C

K

- κ -recursiveness 356.G
- k -almost simple algebraic group 13.O
- k -anisotropic algebraic group 13.G
- k -array 330
- k -Borel subgroup (of an algebraic group) 13.G
- k -closed algebraic set 13.A
- k -combination 330
- k -compact algebraic group 13.G
- k -connect (graph) 186.F
- k -dimensional integral element 191.I
- k -dimensional integral manifold 191.I
- k -dimensional normal distribution 341.D
- k -equivalent C^∞ -manifolds 114.F
- k -Erlang distribution 260.H
- k -fold mixing automorphism 136.E
- k -fold screw glide with pitch 92.E
- k -form
 - (of an algebraic group) 13.M
 - holomorphic 72.A
- k frame 199.B
 - orthogonal 199.B
- k -group 13.A
- k -invariants (of a CW-complex) 70.G
- k -isomorphism (between algebraic groups) 13.A
- k -isotropic algebraic group 13.G
- k -morphism (between algebraic groups) 13.A
- k -movable 382.C
- k -permutation 330
- k -ply transitive G -set 362.B
- k -ply transitive permutation group 151.H
- k -quasisplit algebraic group 13.O
- k -rank (of a connected reductive algebraic group) 13.Q
- k -rational divisor (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
- k -rational point (of an algebraic variety) 16.A
- k -root 13.Q
- k -sample problem 371.D
- k -simple algebraic group 13.O
- k -solvable algebraic group 13.F
- k -space 425.CC
- k -split algebraic group 13.N
- k -split torus 13.D
 - maximal 13.Q
- k -step method, linear 303.E
- k -subgroup
 - minimal parabolic 13.Q
 - standard parabolic 13.Q
- k -subset 330
- k -transitive permutation group 151.H
- k -trivial torus 13.D
- k -valued algebroidal function 17.A
- k -vector bundle, normal 114.J
- k -way contingency table 397.K
- k -Weyl group 13.Q
- k' -space 425.CC
- k th prolongation
 - (of G structure) 191.E
 - (of a linear Lie algebra) 191.D
 - (of a linear Lie group) 191.D
- k th saturated model 293.B
- k th transform 160.F
- K -complete analytic space 23.F
- K -complete scheme 16.D
- K -flow 136.E
- K -group 237.B
 - equivariant 237.H
- K -method 224.C
- K -pseudoanalytic function 352.B
- K -quasiregular function 352.B
- K -rational (= algebraic over K) 369.C
- K -regular measure 270.F
- K -theory 237
 - algebraic 237.J
 - higher algebraic 237.J
- $K3$ surface 15.H 72.K
 - marked 72.K
- Kac formula, Feynman- 351.F
- Kac- Nelson formula, Feynman- 150.F
- Kadomtsev-Petvyashvili equation 387.F
- Kähler existence theorem, Cartan- 191.I 428.E
- Kähler homogeneous space 199.A
- Kähler immersion 365.L
- Kähler manifold 232
- Kähler metric 232.A
 - standard (of a complex projective space) 232.D
- Kähler metric, Einstein- 232.C
- Kähler submanifold 365.L
- Takeya-Eneström theorem (on an algebraic equation) 10.E
- Katutani equivalence 136.F
- Kakutani fixed point theorem 153.D
- Kakutani theorem
 - (on complemented subspace problems of Banach spaces) 37.N
 - (on statistical decision problems) 398.G
- Kakutani unit 310.G
- Källén-Lehmann representation 150.D
- Källén-Lehmann weight 150.D
- Kalman-Bucy filter 86.E 405.G
- Kalman filter 86.E
- Kaluza's 5-dimensional theory 434.C
- Kametani theorem, Hällström- 124.C
- Kan complex 70.F
- Kaplansky's density theorem 308.C
- Kapteyn series 39.D, App. A, Table 19.III
- Karlin's theorem 399.G
- Kastler axioms, Haag- 150.E
- Kato perturbation 351.D
- Kato theorem, Rellich- 331.B
- Kawaguchi space 152.C
- KdV equation 387.B
 - two-dimensional 387.F
- Keisler-Shelah isomorphism theorem 276.E
- Keller-Maslov index 274.C
- Kelly theorem, Nachbin-Goodner- 37.M
- Kelvin function 39.G, App. A, Table 19.IV
- Kelvin transformation 193.B
- Kendall notation 260.H
- Kendall's rank correlation 371.K
- Kepler's equation 309.B
- Kepler's first law 271.B
- Kepler's orbital elements 309.B
- Kepler's second law 271.B
- Kepler's third law 271.B
- Kerékjártó-Stoilow compactification 207.C
- kernel
 - (of a bargaining set) 173.D
 - (distribution) 125.L
 - (of a group homomorphism) 190.D
 - (of an integral equation) 217.A
 - (of an integral operator) 251.O
 - (of an integral transform) 220.A
 - (of a linear mapping) 256.F
 - (of a morphism) 52.N
 - (of an operator homomorphism) 277.E
 - (of a potential) 338.B

- (of a set) 425.O
- (of a sheaf homomorphism) 383.C
- (of a system of Suslin) 22.B
- adjoint 338.B
- of Calderón-Zygmund type 217.J
- of Carleman type 217.J
- consistent 338.E
- degenerate 217.F
- diffusion 338.N
- Dirichlet 159.B
- distribution 338.P
- domain (of a sequence of domains) 333.C
- elementary 320.H
- Fejér 159.C
- Fourier 220.B
- fundamental 320.H
- Hermitian 217.H
- of Hilbert-Schmidt type 217.I
- Hunt 338.O
- integral 217.A 251.O
- iterated 217.D
- Kuramochi 207.C
- Martin 207.C
- perfect (in potential theory) 338.E
- Pincherle-Goursat 217.F
- Poisson 159.C
- positive 217.H
- positive definite 217.H 338.D
- positive semidefinite 217.H
- reproducing 188.G
- semidefinite 217.H
- separated 217.F
- singular 217.J
- symmetric 217.G
- symmetric, of positive type 338.D
- weak potential 260.D
- Wiener 95
- kernel differential 188.G
- kernel form 348.E
- kernel function 188.G
 - Bergman 188.G
 - harmonic 188.H
 - Szegő 188.H
- kernel representation (of a Green's operator) 189.B
- kernel theorem (of Schwartz) 125.L 424.S
- Kerner-Aberth (DKA) method, Durand- 301.F
- Kerner (DK) method, Durand- 301.F
- Kerr metric 359.E
- Kervaire invariant, Arf- 114.J
- Khachyan's method 255.C
- Khinchin canonical form (of an infinitely divisible probability distribution) 341.G
- Khinchin decomposition (of a covariance function) 395.B
- Khinchin's law of the iterated logarithm 250.C
- Kiefer inequality, Chapman-Robbins- 399.D
- killing 261.F
- Killing curvature, Lipschitz- 279.C
- Killing differential equation 364.F
- Killing form 248.B
- killing measure 115.B
- killing method (of obtaining a homotopy group) 202.N
- killing time 260.A
- Killing vector field 364.F
- kind
 - Abelian differential of the first, second, third 11.C
 - Abelian integral of the first, second, third 11.C
 - associated Legendre function of the first, second 393.C
 - Beltrami differential operator of the first, second App. A, Table 4.II
 - Bessel function of the first, second, third 39.B
 - complete elliptic integral of the first, second 134.B,C
 - differential form of the first (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 - canonical coordinates of the first, second 249.Q
 - differential form of the first, second, third (on a nonsingular curve) 9.E
 - discontinuity of the first, second 84.B
 - discontinuous group of the first 122.B
 - elliptic function of the first, second, third 134.G,H
 - elliptic integral of the first, second, third 134.A
 - error of the first, second 400.A
 - Euler integral of the first, second 174.A,C
 - exceptional curve of the first, second 15.G
 - Fredholm integral equation of the first, second, third 217.A
 - Fuchsian group of the first, second 122.C
 - Hankel function of the first, second 39.B
 - incomplete elliptic integral of the first 134.B
 - Lamé function of the first, second 133.C
 - Legendre function of the first, second 393.B
 - Mathieu function of the first, second 268.B
 - modified Mathieu function of the first, second, third 268.D
 - perfect members of the second 297.D
 - Stirling number of the second 66.D
 - kinetic density 218.A
 - kinetic energy 271.C 351.D
 - kinetic measure 218.A
 - kinetic theory of gases 402.B
 - Kirby calculus 114.L
 - Kirchhoff laws 282.B
 - Kirchhoff solution 325.D
 - Kleene's normal form theorem 356.C
 - Klein, F. 233
 - Klein bottle 410.B
 - Klein combination theorem 234.D
 - Klein four-group 151.G
 - Klein-Gordon equation 351.G 377.C
 - Kleinian group 122.C 234.A
 - Klein inequality 212.B
 - Klein line coordinates 90.B
 - Klein model (of non-Euclidean geometry) 285.C
 - Klein-Nishina formula 351.G
 - Klein transform 150.D
 - K-L (= Kullback-Leibler) information number 398.G
 - Kloosterman sum 32.C
 - KMS condition 308.H 402.G
 - Kneser-Nagumo theorem 316.E
 - Kneser-Sommerfeld formula App. A, Table 19.III
 - Knopp-Schmidt theorem 208.C
 - Knopp-Schnee theorem (on method of summation) 379.M
 - knot 235.A
 - alternating 235.A, App. A, Table 7
 - amphicheiral 235.A
 - clover leaf 235.C
 - equivalent 235.A
 - hyperbolic 235.E
 - invertible 235.A
 - (p, q)- 235.G
 - (p, q)-ball 235.G

slice 235.G
 trefoil 235.C
 knot cobordism 235.G
 knot complement conjecture 235.B
 knot conjecture, general 235.B
 knot group (of a knot) 235.B
 knot projection, regular 235.A
 knotted 235.A
 knot theory 235, App. A, Table 7
 knot types 235.A
 Kobayashi pseudodistance 21.0
 Kochen isomorphism theorem, Ax- 276.E
 Kodaira dimension (of a compact complex manifold) 72.I
 Kodaira-Spencer mapping (map) 72.G
 Kodaira theorem
 (on Hodge manifolds) 232.D
 Chow- 72.F
 Kodaira theory, Weyl-Stone-Titchmarsh- 112.O
 Kodaira vanishing theorem 232.D
 Koebe extremal function 438.C
 Koebe theorem 193.E
 Kojima-Schur theorem (on linear transformations of sequences) 379.L
 Kolchin theorem, Lie- (on solvable algebraic groups) 13.F
 Kollektiv 342.A
 Kolmogorov automorphism 136.E
 Kolmogorov axiom T_0 425.Q
 Kolmogorov backward equation 115.A 260.F
 Kolmogorov canonical form 341.G
 Kolmogorov-Chaitin complexity 354.D
 Kolmogorov equality, Chapman- 261.A
 Kolmogorov equation, Chapman- 260.A
 Kolmogorov extension theorem 341.I 407.D
 Kolmogorov flow 136.E
 Kolmogorov forward equation 115.A 260.F
 Kolmogorov-Smirnov test 371.F
 Kolmogorov-Smirnov test statistic 374.E
 Kolmogorov space 425.Q
 Kolmogorov-Spanier cohomology theory, Alexander- 201.M
 Kolmogorov spectrum 433.C
 Kolmogorov test 45.F
 Kolmogorov theorem 250.F
 Kolmogorov zero-one law 342.G
 Kondô uniformization theorem 22.F
 König-Egerváry theorem 281.E
 Königs-Schröder equation 44.B
 Korteweg-de Vries (KdV) equation 387.A
 Kostant's formula (on representations of compact Lie groups) 248.Z
 Kovalevskaya existence theorem, Cauchy- 321.A
 Kovalevskaya theorem, abstract Cauchy- 286.Z
 Kreĭn-Mil'man property 443.H
 Kreĭn-Mil'man theorem 424.U
 Kreĭn-Schmul'yan theorem 37.E 424.O
 Kreĭn theorem 424.V
 Krieger's factor 308.I
 Kronecker, L. 236
 Kronecker approximation theorem 422.K
 Kronecker delta 269.A, App. A, Table 4.II
 Kronecker flow 136.G
 Kronecker index
 (in homology theory) 201.H
 (of divisors on a surface) 15.C
 Kronecker limit formula 450.B
 Kronecker product (of matrices) 269.C
 Kronecker set 192.R
 Kronecker symbol (for a quadratic field) 347.D

Kronecker theorem
 (on an Abelian extension of \mathbb{Q}) 14.L
 (on an algebraic equation) 10.B
 Krull-Akizuki theorem 284.F
 Krull altitude theorem 28.A
 Krull-Azumaya lemma 67.D
 Krull dimension
 (of a commutative ring) 67.E
 (of an ideal) 67.E
 Krull intersection theorem 284.A
 Krull-Remak-Schmidt theorem (in group theory) 190.L
 Krull ring 67.J
 Krull topology (for an infinite Galois group) 172.I
 Kruskal coordinates 359.F
 Kruskal-Wallis test 371.D
 Kubo formula 402.K
 Kuhn-Tucker theorem 292.B
 Kullback discrimination information 213.D
 Kullback-Leibler (K-L) information number 398.G
 Kummer criterion 145, App. A, Table 10.II
 Kummer differential equation App. A, Table 19.I
 Kummer extension 172.F
 Kummer function 167.A, App. A, Table 19.I
 Kummer surface 15.H
 Künneth formula
 (in Abelian category) 200.H
 (in Weil cohomology) 450.Q
 Künneth theorem 200.E 201.J
 Kunugi theorem, Iversen-Beurling- 62.B
 Kuo (PLK) method, Poincaré-Lighthill- 25.B
 Kuramochi compactification 207.C
 Kuramochi kernel 207.C
 Kuranishi prolongation theorem 428.G
 Kuranishi space 72.G
 Kuratowski space 425.Q
 kurtosis 396.C 397.C
 population 396.C
 Kutta-Gill method, Runge- 303.D
 Kutta methods, Runge- 303.D

L

Λ^s (Lipschitz spaces) 168.B
 λ -function 32.C
 (l_p) or l_p (a sequence space) 168.B
 $L_p(\Omega)$ (the space of measurable functions $f(x)$ on Ω such that $|f(x)|^p$, $1 \leq p \leq \infty$, is integrable) 168.B
 $L_\infty(\Omega)$ 168.B
 $L_{(p,q)}(\Omega)$ (the Lorentz spaces) 168.B
 l -adic cohomology 450.Q
 l -adic coordinate system 3.E
 l -adic representation 3.E
 L -distribution 341.G
 L -estimator 371.H
 L -function
 Artin 450.G,R
 of automorphic representation 450.N
 Dirichlet 450.C
 of elliptic curves 450.S
 Hecke 450.E
 Hecke (with Größencharakter) 450.F
 p -adic 450.J
 Weil 450.H
 L -group 450.N
 L -integral 221.B
 L -space 87.K
 abstract 310.G
 Fréchet 87.K

L_1 -algebra

- L_1 -algebra (of a locally compact Hausdorff group) 36.L
- L_p -space, abstract 310.G
- L^* -space 87.K
- (LF)-space 424.W
- labeled graph 186.B
- lacunas for hyperbolic operators 325.J
- lacunary structure (of a power series) 339.E
- ladder
 - down- 206.B
 - up- 206.B
 - ladder method 206.B
- lag 163.A
- lagged variables 128.C 274.C
- Lagrange, J. L. 238
- Lagrange bracket 82.A 324.D
- Lagrange-Charpit method 322.B, App. A, Table 15.II
- Lagrange differential equation 320.A, App. A, Table 14.I
- Lagrange differential equation, Euler- 46.B
- Lagrange equations of motion 271.F
- Lagrange formula (for vector triple product) 442.C
- Lagrange identity 252.K
- Lagrange interpolation 223.A
- Lagrange interpolation coefficients 223.A
- Lagrange interpolation polynomial 223.A 336.G, App. A, Table 21
- Lagrange manifold, conic 345.B
- Lagrange method
 - (of describing the motion of a fluid) 205.A
 - of indeterminate coefficients 106.L
 - of variation of constants 252.D
- Lagrange multiplier 46.B
 - method of 106.L
- Lagrange partial differential equation App. A, Table 15.II
- Lagrange problem (in calculus of variations) 46.A
- Lagrange remainder App. A, Table 9.IV
- Lagrange resolvent 172.F
- Lagrange stable 126.E
 - negatively 126.E
 - positively 126.E
- Lagrange-stable motion 420.D
- Lagrangian density 150.B
 - free 150.B
- Lagrangian derivative 205.A
- Lagrangian function 271.F 292.A
- Lagrangian manifold, conic 274.C
- Lagrangian vector field 126.L
- Laguerre differential equation App. A, Tables 14.II 20.VI
- Laguerre formula, Gauss- (in numerical integration) 299.A
- Laguerre function App. A, Table 20.VI
- Laguerre geometry 76.B
- Laguerre inversion 76.B
- Laguerre polynomials 317.D, App. A, Table 20.VI
 - associated 317.D
- Laguerre transformation 76.B
- Lambert series 339.C
- Lamé differential equation 133.B
 - generalized 167.E
- Lamé function
 - of the first kind 133.B
 - of the first species 133.C
 - of the fourth species 133.C
 - of the second kind 133.C
 - of the second species 133.C
 - of the third species 133.C
- lamellar vector field 442.D
- laminar flow 205.E 433.A
- Lanczos method 298.D, E 301.N
- Landau constant 77.F
- Landau equation 146.C
- Landau-Nakanishi equation 146.C
- Landau-Nakanishi variety 146.C 386.C
- Landau symbols (O, o) 87.G
- Landau theorem 43.J
 - Wiener-Ikehara 123.B
- Landau variety 146.C
- Landen transformation 134.B, App. A, Table 16.III
- Lane-Emden function 291.F
- Langevin equation 45.I 402.K
- language 31.D 276.A
 - accepted by 31.D
 - external 75.C
 - machine 75.C
- Laplace, P. S. 239
- Laplace-Beltrami operator 194.B
- Laplace differential equation 323.A, App. A, Table 15.III
 - 2-dimensional case App. A, Table 15.VI
 - 3-dimensional case App. A, Table 15.VI
- Laplace expansion theorem (on determinants) 103.D
- Laplace-Mehler integral representation App. A, Table 18.II
- Laplace method 30.B
- Laplace operator 323.A 442.D
- Laplace spherical functions 393.A
- Laplace-Stieltjes transform 240.A
- Laplace theorem, de Moivre- 250.B
- Laplace transform 240, App. A, Table 12.I
 - Fourier- 192.F
- Laplace transform and operational calculus App. A, Table 12
- Laplacian 323.A 442.D, App. A, Table 3.II
 - in the large 109
 - large deviation 250.B
- large inductive dimension (Ind) 117.B
- large numbers
 - law of 250.B
 - strong law of 250.C
 - weak law of 395.B
- larger, stochastically 371.C
- larger topology 425.H
- large sample theory 401.E
- large semigroup algebra 29.C
- large sieve method 123.E
- largest nilpotent ideal (of a Lie algebra) 248.D
- Lashnev space 425.CC
- last multiplier, Jacobi App. A, Table 14.I
- last-out memory, first-in 96.E
- last theorem of Fermat 145
- last theorem of Poincaré 153.B
- latin rectangle 241.E
- Latin square(s) 102.K 241
- lattice(s)
 - (of a crystallographic group) 92.A
 - (= lattice ordered set) 243
 - (of a Lie group) 122.G
 - (in \mathbf{R}^n) 182.B
 - A - 92.E
 - anti-isomorphic 243.C
 - Archimedean vector 310.C
 - B - 92.E
 - Banach 310.F

- black and white 92.D
- Boolean 42.A 243.E
- Boolean, of sets 243.E
- Bravais 92.B
- C- 92.E
- color 92.D
- complemented 243.E
- complete 243.D
- complete vector 310.C
- conditionally complete 243.D
- conditionally σ -complete 243.D
- critical, in M with respect to S 182.B
- distributive 243.E
- dual 243.C 310.E 450.K
- dually isomorphic 243.C
- F- 92.E
- g- (of a separable algebra) 27.A
- homogeneous (in \mathbf{R}^n) 182.B
- integral g- 27.A
- I- 92.E
- inhomogeneous (in \mathbf{R}^n) 182.B
- modular 243.F
- normal g- 27.A
- normal vector 310.F
- one-dimensional 287.A
- P- 92.E
- primitive 92.E
- quotient 243.C
- of sets 243.E
- σ -complete 243.D
- σ -complete vector 310.C
- Toda 287.A 387.A
- vector 310.B
- weight 92.C
- lattice constants (of a lattice group) 92.C
- lattice distribution 341.D
- lattice equivalent 92.D
- lattice gauge theory 150.G
- lattice group(s) 182.B
 - (of a crystallographic group) 92.A
- lattice-homomorphism 243.C
- lattice-isomorphism 243.C
- lattice-ordered group 243.G
 - Archimedean 243.G
- lattice-ordered linear space 310.B
- lattice-ordered set 243.A
- lattice-point formula 220.B
- lattice-point problems 242
- lattice-spin systems 402.G
- latus rectum 78.D,E
- Laurent expansion 198.D
- Laurent series 339.A
- law(s)
 - (of a solution of a stochastic differential equation) 406.D
 - absorption (in algebra of sets) 381.B
 - absorption (in a lattice) 243.A
 - of action and reaction 271.A
 - adiabatic 205.B
 - alternating (in a Lie algebra) 248.A
 - antisymmetric (for ordering) 311.A
 - arcsine (for Brownian motion) 45.E
 - arcsine (for distribution function) 250.D
 - arcsine (for random walk) 260.E
 - associative (for addition) 294.B
 - associative (in algebra of sets) 381.B
 - associative (of correspondences) 358.B
 - associative (of group composition) 190.A
 - associative (in a lattice) 243.A
 - associative (for multiplication) 294.B
 - associative (in a ring) 368.A
 - Blumenthal zero-one 261.B
 - Brandt's 241.C
 - cancellation (for addition) 294.B
 - cancellation (in a commutative semigroup) 190.P
 - cancellation (for multiplication) 294.B
 - commutative (for addition) 294.B 368.A
 - commutative (in algebra of sets) 381.B
 - commutative (of group composition) 190.A
 - commutative (in a lattice) 243.A
 - commutative (for multiplication) 294.B 368.A
 - complementary, of quadratic reciprocity of Jacobi symbol 297.I
 - complementary, of reciprocity 14.O
 - of complementation (in a Boolean algebra) 42.A
 - complete distributive (in a lattice-ordered group) 243.G
 - of composition 409.A
 - of composition, external 409.A
 - of composition, internal 409.A
 - of cosines (on spherical triangles) 432.B, App. A, Table 2.III
 - of cosines, first 432.A, App. A, Table 2.II
 - of cosines, second 432.A, App. A, Table 2.II
 - of cotangents App. A, Table 2.III
 - de Morgan's (in algebra of sets) 381.B
 - de Morgan's (in a Boolean algebra) 42.A
 - differential 107.A
 - distributive (in algebra of sets) 381.B
 - distributive (in a lattice) 243.E
 - distributive (of natural numbers) 294.B
 - distributive (in a ring) 368.A
 - even-oddness conservation 150.D
 - of excluded middle 156.C 411.L
 - explicit reciprocity (of norm-residue symbol) 14.R 257.H
 - first complementary, of quadratic reciprocity of Legendre symbol 297.I
 - Gel'fand-Pyatetskii-Shapiro reciprocity (on unitary representations) 437.DD
 - general associative (for group composition) 190.C
 - Hewitt-Savage zero-one 342.G
 - Hooke's 271.G
 - idempotent (in a lattice) 243.A
 - of inertia 271.A
 - of inertia, Sylvester (for a quadratic form) 348.C
 - initial (for stochastic differential equation) 406.D
 - of iterated logarithm 45.F
 - of iterated logarithm, Khinchin 250.C
 - Joule's 130.B
 - Kepler's first 271.B
 - Kepler's second 271.B
 - Kepler's third 271.B
 - Kirchhoff 282.B
 - Kolmogorov zero-one 342.G
 - of large numbers 250.B 395.B
 - of large numbers, strong 250.C
 - Maxwell-Boltzmann distribution 402.B
 - modular (in a lattice) 243.F
 - of motion 271.A
 - of motion, Newton's three 271.A
 - Newton (on frictional stresses) 205.C
 - Newton's first 271.A
 - Newton's second 271.A
 - Newton's third 271.A

Lax equivalence theorem

- Ohm 130.B 259
- of quadratic reciprocity of Jacobi symbol 297.I
- of quadratic reciprocity of Legendre symbol 297.I
- of reaction 271.A
- of reciprocity 14.O 297.I
- of reciprocity, Artin general 59.C
- of reciprocity, general 14.O
- reciprocity, of Shafarevich 257.H
- reflexive (for an equivalence relation) 135.A
- reflexive (for ordering) 311.A
- second complementary, of quadratic reciprocity of Legendre symbol 297.I
- of similarity, Prandtl-Glauert 205.D
- of similarity, Reynolds 205.C
- of similitude 116
- of sines 432.A, App. A, Table 2.II
- of sines (for spherical triangles) 432.B, App. A, Table 2.III
- of sines and cosines App. A, Table 2.III
- of small numbers 250.B
- symmetric (for an equivalence relation) 135.A
- of symmetry (for the Hilbert norm-residue symbol) 14.R
- of tangents App. A, Table 2.III
- transitive (for an equivalence relation) 135.A
- transitive (for ordering) 311.A
- of universal gravitation 271.B
- zero-one 342.G
- Lax equivalence theorem 304.F
- Lax representation 287.B 387.C
- Lax-Wendroff scheme 304.F
- layout, two-way 155.H
- layer
 - boundary 205.C
 - potential of double 338.A
 - potential of single 338.A
- LBA problem 31.F
- L.B. (loosely Bernoulli) 136.F
- LCL (lower control limit) 404.B
- L.C.M. (least common multiple) 67.H 297.A
- leaf (leaves)
 - (of a foliation) 154.B
 - compact 154.D
 - growth of 154.H
- leaf topology 154.D
- learning model 346.G
- least action, principle of 441.B
- least common multiple 67.H 297.A
- least element (in an ordered set) 311.B
- least favorable distribution 400.B
- least favorable a priori distribution 398.H
- least square approximation 336.D
- least squares, method of
 - (for estimation) 403.E
 - (for higher-dimensional data) 397.J
 - (for numerical solution) 303.I
- least squares estimator 403.E
 - generalized 403.E
- least squares method
 - indirect (in econometrics) 128.C
 - three-stage 128.C
 - two-stage 128.C
- least squares problem, linear 302.E
- least upper bound (ordered sets) 310.C 311.B
- Lebesgue, H. L. 244
- Lebesgue area (of a surface) 246.C
- Lebesgue convergence theorem 221.C
- Lebesgue decomposition theorem 270.L 380.C
- Lebesgue density theorem 100.B
- Lebesgue dimension 117.B
- Lebesgue extension 270.D
- Lebesgue integrable 221.B
- Lebesgue integral 221.B
- Lebesgue measurability and the Baire property 33.F
- Lebesgue measurable (set) 270.G
- Lebesgue measurable function 270.J
- Lebesgue measure 270.G
 - generalized 270.E
- Lebesgue measure space (with a finite σ -finite measure) 136.A
- Lebesgue method of summation 379.S
- Lebesgue number 273.F
- Lebesgue outer measure 270.G
- Lebesgue-Radon integral 94.C
- Lebesgue spectrum, countable 136.E
- Lebesgue-Stieltjes integral 94.C 166.C
- Lebesgue-Stieltjes measure 166.C 270.L
- Lebesgue test (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
- Lebesgue theorem
 - (on the dimension of \mathbf{R}^n) 117.D
 - Borel- 273.H
 - Cantor- 159.J
 - Riemann- 159.A 160.A
- Le Cam theorem 399.K
- Lefschetz duality theorem, Poincaré- 201.O
- Lefschetz fixed-point formula 450.Q
- Lefschetz fixed-point theorem 153.B
- Lefschetz formula, Picard- 418.F
- Lefschetz number
 - (of a continuous mapping) 153.B
 - (of a variety) 16.P
- Lefschetz pencil 16.U
- Lefschetz theorem
 - strong 16.U
 - weak 16.U
- Lefschetz transformation, Picard- 16.U
- left, limit on the 87.F
- left A -module 277.D
- left adjoint functor 52.K
- left adjoint linear mapping 256.Q
- left annihilator 29.H
- left Artinian ring 368.F
- left balanced functor 200.I
- left continuous 84.B
- left coset 190.C
- left coset space 423.E
- left decomposition, Peirce (in a unitary ring) 368.F
- left derivative 106.A
- left derived functor 200.I, Q
- left differentiable 106.A
- left distributive law 312.C
- left endpoint (of an interval) 355.C
- left exact functor 200.I
- left G -set 362.B
- left global dimension (of a ring) 200.K
- left hereditary ring 200.K
- left ideal 368.F
 - integral 27.A
- left invariant Haar measure 225.C
- left invariant metric (of a topological group) 423.I
- left invariant tensor field (on a Lie group) 249.A
- left inverse element (in a ring) 368.B
- left linear space 256.A
- left Noetherian ring 368.F
- left \mathfrak{D}_r -ideal 27.A
- left operation 409.A

left order (of a g -lattice) 27.A
 left parametrix 345.A
 left projective resolution (of an A -module) 200.C
 left projective space 343.F
 left quotient space (of a topological group) 423.E
 left regular representation
 (of an algebra) 362.C
 (of a group) 362.B
 left resolution (of an A -module) 200.C
 left satellite 200.I
 left semihereditary ring 200.K
 left semi-integral 68.N
 left shunt 115.B
 left singular point (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 left translation 249.A 362.B
 left uniformity (of a topological group) 423.G
 Legendre associated differential equation 393.A
 Legendre coefficient 393.B
 Legendre differential equation 393.B, App. A,
 Table 14.II
 Legendre function 393.B, App. A, Table 18.II
 associated App. A, Table 18.III
 associated (of the first kind) 393.C, App. A,
 Table 18.III
 associated (of the second kind) 393.C, App.
 A, Table 18.III
 of the first kind 393.B, App. A, Table 18.II
 of the second kind 393.B, App. A, Table 18.II
 Legendre-Jacobi standard form 134.A, App. A,
 Table 16.I
 Legendre polynomial 393.B, App. A, Table 18.II
 Legendre relation 134.F, App. A, Table 16.I
 Legendre symbol 297.H
 first complementary law of reciprocity of 297.I
 law of quadratic reciprocity of 297.I
 second complementary law of reciprocity of
 297.I
 Legendre transform 419.C
 Legendre transformation (contact transform) 82.A,
 App. A, Table 15.IV
 Lehmann representation, Källén- 150.D
 Lehmann-Scheffé theorem 399.C
 Lehmann-Stein theorem 400.B
 Lehmann theorem 371.C
 Hodges- 399.E,H
 Lehmann weight, Källén- 150.D
 Lehmer method 301.K
 Leibler (K-L) information number, Kullback-
 398.G
 Leibniz, G. W. 245
 Leibniz formula (in differentiation) 106.D, App.
 A, Table 9.III
 Leibniz test (for convergence) 379.C
 lemniscate 93.H
 Bernoulli 93.H
 length 246
 (of a broken line) 139.F
 (of a curve) 93.F 246.A
 (of a descending chain in a lattice) 243.F
 (of a module) 277.I
 (of a multi-index) 112.A
 (of a normal chain in a group) 190.G
 (of a path) 186.F
 (of a segment) 139.C
 (of a Witt vector) 449.B
 affine 110.C
 affine arc 110.C
 extremal (of a family of curves) 143.A
 extremal, defined by Hersch-Pfluger 143.A
 extremal, with weight 143.B

Subject Index

Lie algebra(s)

of finite (module) 277.I
 focal 180.B
 π - (of a group) 151.F
 queue 260.H
 wave 446
 lens, Luneburg's 180.A
 lens space 91.C
 infinite 91.C
 Leopoldt's conjecture 450.J
 leptons 132.B
 Leray-Hirsch theorem 201.J
 Leray-Schauder degree 286.D
 Leray-Schauder fixed-point theorem 286.D 323.D
 letter
 (in information theory) 63.A 213.B
 (= variable) 369.A
 level
 (of a factor) 102.H
 (of a modular form) 32.C
 (of a modular function) 32.C
 (of an orthogonal array) 102.L
 (of a principal congruence subgroup) 122.D
 (of a test) 400.A
 (of a tolerance region) 399.R
 average outgoing quality 404.C
 confidence 399.Q
 level α test 400.A
 minimax 400.F
 most stringent 400.F
 unbiased 400.C
 uniformly most powerful (UMP) invariant
 400.E
 uniformly most powerful (UMP) unbiased
 400.C
 level n structure (on an Abelian variety) 3.N
 level set (of a C^∞ -function) 279.D
 level surface 193.J
 Levi-Civita, parallel in the sense of 111.H
 Levi-Civita connection 364.B
 Levi condition 321.G 325.H
 Levi decomposition
 (on algebraic groups) 13.Q
 (on Lie algebras) 248.F
 Levi form 344.A
 generalized 274.G
 Levi problem 21.I,F
 Levi pseudoconvex domain 21.I
 locally 21.I
 Levi subgroup 13.Q
 Levitan-Marchenko equation, Gel'fand-
 (for KdV equations) 387.D
 (for a nonlinear lattice) 287.C
 Lévy canonical form 341.G
 Lévy continuity theorem 341.F
 Lévy distance 341.F
 Lévy-Itô theorem (on Lévy processes) 5.E
 Lévy measure 5.E
 Lévy process 5.B
 Lévy theorem, Wiener- 159.I
 Lewy-Mizohata equation 274.G
 lexicographic linear ordering 248.M
 lexicographic ordering 311.G
 liability reserve 214.B
 Lie, M. S. 247
 Lie algebra(s) 248, App. A, Table 5.I
 (of an algebraic group) 13.C
 (of a Lie group) 249.B
 Abelian 248.C
 adjoint 248.B
 algebraic 13.C

- classical compact real simple 248.T
- classical complex simple 248.S
- compact real 248.P
- compact real simple App. A, Table 5.I
- complex 248.A
- complex (of a complex Lie group) 249.M
- complex simple App. A, Table 5.I
- of derivations 248.H
- exceptional compact real simple 248.T
- exceptional complex simple 248.S
- general linear 248.A
- isomorphic 248.A
- nilpotent 248.C
- noncompact real simple App. A, Table 5.II
- quotient 248.A
- real 248.A
- reductive 248.G
- restricted 248.V
- semisimple 248.E
- simple 248.E
- solvable 248.C
- Lie derivative 105.O.Q
- Lie fundamental theorem (on a local Lie group of local transformations) 431.G
- Lie group(s) 249.423.M
 - Abelian 249.D
 - Banach 286.K
 - classical compact simple 249.L
 - classical complex simple 249.M
 - commutative 249.D
 - complex 249.A
 - direct product of 249.H
 - exceptional compact simple 249.L
 - exceptional complex simple 249.M
 - isomorphic 249.N
 - local 423.L
 - local (of local transformations) 431.G
 - nilpotent 249.D
 - quotient 249.G
 - semisimple 249.D
 - simple 249.D
 - simply connected covering 249.C
 - solvable 249.D
 - topology of, and homogeneous spaces 427
- Lie-Kolchin theorem (on solvable algebraic groups) 13.F
- Lie line-sphere transformation 76.C
- Lie minimal projection 76.B
- Liénard differential equation 290.C
- lies over (of a compactification) 207.B
- Lie subalgebra 248.A
 - associated with a Lie subgroup 249.D
- Lie subgroup
 - (of a Lie group) 249.D
 - connected 249.D
- Lie theorem (on Lie algebras) 248.F
- Lie transformation (in circle geometry) 76.C
- Lie transformation group (of a differentiable manifold) 431.C
- lifetime 260.A 261.B
 - (of a particle by a scattering) 132.A
- lift
 - (along a curve in a covering surface) 367.B
 - (of a differentiable curve) 80.C
 - (of a vector field) 80.C
 - inflation 200.M
- lifting (in nonstandard analysis) 293.D
- lifting theorem 251.M
- light cone 258.A
- Lighthill-Kuo (P.L.K.) method, Poincaré- 25.B
- Lighthill method 25.B
- lightlike 258.A 359.B
- likelihood 374.J
- likelihood equation 399.M
- likelihood estimating function 399.M
- likelihood estimator, maximum 399.M
- likelihood function 374.J 399.M
- likelihood method, maximum 399.M
- likelihood ratio 400.I
 - monotone 374.J
- likelihood ratio test 400.I
- limaçon of Pascal 93.H
- liminal C^* -algebra 36.H
- limit
 - (of a function) 87.F
 - (of an indeterminate form) 106.E
 - (of a mapping) 87.F
 - (of a net) 87.H
 - (of a sequence of lattices) 182.B
 - (of a sequence of points) 87.E 273.D
 - (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.B 355.B
 - (of a sequence of sets) 270.C
 - (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
 - Banach 37.F
 - confidence 399.Q
 - direct (of a direct system) 210.B
 - elastic 271.G
 - generalized 37.F
 - inductive (in a category) 210.D
 - inductive (group) 210.C
 - inductive (of an inductive system) 210.B
 - inductive (of sheaves) 383.I
 - inductive (space) 210.C
 - inductive (of topological spaces) 425.M
 - inferior (event) 342.B
 - inferior (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - inferior (of a sequence of sets) 270.C
 - inverse (of an inverse system) 210.B
 - on the left (of a real-valued function) 87.F
 - lower (function) 84.C
 - lower (of a Riemann integral) 216.A
 - lower (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - lower control 404.B
 - in the mean 168.B
 - order (of an order convergent sequence) 310.C
 - projective (in a category) 210.D
 - projective (of a family of continuous homomorphisms) 423.K
 - projective (group) 210.C
 - projective (of a projective system) 210.B
 - projective (space) 210.C
 - on the right (of a real-valued function) 87.F
 - strictly inductive (of a sequence of locally convex spaces) 424.W
 - superior (event) 342.B
 - superior (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - superior (of a sequence of sets) 270.C
 - thermodynamic 402.G
 - tolerance 399.R
 - upper (function) 84.C
 - upper (of a Riemann integral) 216.A
 - upper (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - upper control 404.B
- limit circle type (boundary point) 112.I
- limit cycle 126.I
- limit distribution 250.A
- limit formula, Kronecker's 450.B
- limited information maximum likelihood method 128.C
- limit inferior

- (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
- (of a sequence of sets) 270.C
- limiting absorption principle 375.C
- limiting hypersphere (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
- limit ordinal number 312.B
- limit point
 - (of a discontinuous group) 122.C
 - (of a sequence) 87.B,E
 - α - 126.D
 - negative 126.D
 - ω - 126.D
 - positive 126.D
- limit point type (boundary point) 112.I
- limit set 234.A
 - α - 126.D
 - first negative prolongational 126.D
 - first positive prolongational 126.D
 - ω - 126.D
 - residual 234.E
- limit superior
 - (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - (of a sequence of sets) 270.C
- limit theorem(s) 250.A
 - basic 260.C
 - central 250.B
 - local 250.B
 - in probability theory 250
- limit value (of a mapping) 87.F
- Lindeberg condition 250.B
- Lindelöf asymptotic value theorem 43.C
- Lindelöf hypothesis 123.C
- Lindelöf space 425.S
- Lindelöf theorem 43.F
 - Phragmén- 43.C
- Lindemann-Weierstrass theorem 430.D
- Lindstedt-Poincaré method 290.E
- line(s) 7.A 93.A 155.B
 - (of a graph) 186.B
 - broken 155.F
 - complexes, linear 343.E
 - complex of 110.B
 - concurrent (in projective geometry) 343.B
 - congruence of 110.B
 - congruences, linear 343.E
 - of curvature (on a surface) 111.H
 - of force 193.J
 - generating (of a circular cone) 78.A
 - generating (of a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
 - generating (of a quadric surface) 350.B
 - generating (of a ruled surface) 111.I
 - geodesic 178.H
 - Green 193.J
 - Green, regular 193.J
 - half- 155.B
 - long 105.B
 - normal (to a curve) 93.G
 - Pascal 78.K
 - pencil of (in a projective plane) 343.B
 - projective 343.B
 - real 355.E
 - regression 403.D
 - of regression 111.F,I
 - straight 93.A 155.B
 - stream 205.B
 - supporting (function) 89.C
 - supporting (of an oval) 89.C
 - of swiftest descent 93.H
 - tangent 93.G 111.C,F
 - tangent, oriented 76.B
 - vector (of a vector field) 442.D
 - vortex 205.B
- linear algebra 8
- linear algebraic group 13.A
- linear boundary operators, 315.B
- linear bounded automation
 - deterministic 31.D
 - nondeterministic 31.D
- linear code 63.C
- linear combination 256.C
 - of ovals 89.D
- linear connection 80.H
- linear difference equation 104.C
- linear differential equations, system of (of the first order) 252.G
- linear discriminant function 280.I
- linear dynamical system 86.B
- linear equation(s) 10.D 16.M 269.M
- linear equivalence class (of divisors) 16.M
- linear extension (of a rational mapping to an Abelian variety) 9.E
- linear fiber mapping (map) 114.D
- linear filter 405.F
- linear form 256.B 277.E
- linear fractional function 74.E
- linear fractional group 60.B
- linear fractional programming 264.D
- linear fractional transformation 74.E
- linear function 74.E
- linear functional 37.C 197.F 424.B
 - algebraic 424.B
- linear fundamental figure (of a projective space) 343.B
- linear genus 15.G
- linear graph 282.A
- linear group
 - Abelian (over K) 60.L
 - full 60.B
 - general 60.B 256.D
 - general (of degree n over K) 60.B 226.B
 - general (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
 - projective general 60.B
 - projective general (of degree n over K) 60.B
 - projective special 60.B
 - projective special (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
 - special 60.B
 - special (of degree n over K) 60.B
 - special (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
- linear holonomy 154.C
- linear homogeneous equations, system of 269.M
- linear homotopy 114.D
- linear hypothesis, general 400.H
- linear integral equation 217.A
- linear isotropy group (at a point) 199.A
- linearized operator 183 286.E
- linearized stability, principle of 286.S
- linear k -step method 303.E
- linear least squares problem 302.E
- linear Lie algebra, general 248.A
- linear line complex 343.E
- linear line congruence 343.E
- linear logistic model 403.C
- linearly compact 422.L
 - locally 422.L
- linearly connected homogeneous space 199.A
- linearly dependent (with respect to a difference equation) 104.D

Linearly dependent elements

- linearly dependent elements
 - (in an additive group) 2.E
 - (in a linear space) 256.C
- linearly disjoint (fields) 149.K
- linearly equivalent (divisors) 16.M 172.F
 - \mathcal{O} - (on an algebraic curve) 9.F
- linearly estimable parameter 403.E
- linearly independent elements
 - (in an A -module) 277.G
 - (in an additive group) 2.E
 - (in a linear space) 256.C
- linearly independent family (of elements in a linear space) 256.E
- linearly ordered set 311.A
- linearly reductive 226.B
- linearly representable 66.H
- linear mapping 70.C 256.B
 - A - (of an A -module) 277.E
 - piecewise 70.C
- linear model 403.D
 - log 403.C
 - multivariate 280.B
 - normal 403.C
- linear multistep method 303.E
- linear network 282.C
- linear operator(s) 37.C 251
 - (between linear spaces) 256.B
 - bounded 37.C
- linear ordering 311.A
 - lexicographic 248.M
 - theorem of 155.B
- linear ordinary differential equation(s) 252 253 254 313.A
 - with constant coefficients App. A, Table 14.I
 - of the first order App. A, Table 14.I
 - of higher order App. A, Table 14.I
- linear parameter 102.A
- linear partial differential equation 320.A
- linear pencil 16.N
- linear prediction theory 395.D
- linear predictor 395.D
 - optimal 395.D
- linear programming 255 264.C
- linear programming problem 255.A
- linear recurrent sequence 295.A
- linear regression 397.J
- linear regression function 397.J 403.D
- linear representation
 - (of an algebra) 362.C
 - (of a group) 362.C
 - (of a Lie algebra) 248.B
 - associated with representation module 362.C
 - completely reducible 362.C
 - direct sum of 362.C
 - equivalent 362.C
 - faithful 362.C
 - homomorphism of 362.C
 - indecomposable 362.C
 - irreducible 362.C
 - isomorphic 362.C
 - reciprocal (of an algebra) 362.C
 - reducible 362.C
 - semisimple 362.C
 - similar 362.C
 - simple 362.C
 - tensor product of 362.C
- linear simple group 151.I
- linear space(s) 256
 - category of (over a ring) 52.B
 - complex 256.A
 - dual 256.G
 - over a field 256.A
 - finite-dimensional 256.C
 - Hermitian 256.Q
 - infinite-dimensional 256.C
 - lattice-ordered 310.B
 - left 256.A
 - normed 37.B
 - ordered 310.B
 - quasinormed 37.O
 - quotient 256.F
 - real 256.A
 - right 256.A
 - self-dual 256.H
- linear stationary iterative process 302.C
- linear structural equation system 128.C
- linear structure 96.C
- linear subspace
 - closed 197.E
 - of a linear space 256.F
- linear system
 - (of divisors) 15.C 16.N
 - (of functional-differential equations) 163.E
 - ample 16.N
 - characteristic (of an algebraic family) 15.F
 - complete 9.C 16.N
 - complete (defined by a divisor) 16.N
 - irreducible 16.N
 - reducible 16.N
 - very ample 16.N
- linear time-invariant (dynamical system) 86.B
- linear time-varying system 86.B
- linear topological space 424.A
- linear topology 422.L
- linear transformation
 - (on a Banach space) 251.A
 - (on a linear space) 256.B
 - (on a Riemann sphere) 74.E
 - (of series) 379.L
 - entire 74.E
 - semisimple 256.P
 - triangular 379.L
- linear unbiased estimator, best 403.E
- linear variety 422.L
 - linearly compact 422.L
- line bundle 147.F
 - complex 72.F
 - complex (determined by a divisor) 72.F
 - tautological 16.P
- line coordinates (of a line) 343.C
- line element 111.C
 - characteristic 82.C
 - of higher order, space of 152.C
 - projective 110.B
- line-sphere transformation, Lie 76.C
- linguistics, mathematical 75.E
- link 235.D
 - framed 114.L
- linkage invariant, covering 235.E
- link group 235.D
- linking number 99.C
- link polynomial 235.D
 - reduced 235.D
- link type 235.D
- Linnik's constant 123.D
- Liouville formula 252.C
- Liouville number 430.B
- Liouville operator, Sturm- 112.I
- Liouville problem, Sturm- 315.B
- Liouville theorem

on bounded entire functions 272.A
 first 134.E
 fourth 134.E
 on integral invariants 219.A
 second 134.E
 third 134.E
 Lip α (Lipschitz) 84.A
 of order α 84.A
 Lippman-Schwinger equation 375.C
 Lipschitz condition 84.A 163.D 286.B 316.D
 of order α 84.A
 Lipschitz-Killing curvature 279.C
 Lipschitz space 168.B
 Lipschitz test, Dini- (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
 list (representation) 96.D 186.D
 little group 258.C
 Littlewood-Paley theory 168.B
 Littlewood-Sobolev inequality, Hardy- 224.E
 Littlewood supremum theorem, Hardy- App. A, Table 8
 Littlewood theorem, Hardy-
 (on bounded functions) 43.E
 (on trigonometric systems) 317.B
 lituus 93.H
 Livesay invariant, Browder- 114.L
 loading 214.A
 factor 280.G 346.F
 Lobachevskii non-Euclidean geometry 285.A
 local base (in a topological space) 425.E
 local canonical parameter (for power series) 339.A
 local class field theory 59.G
 local cohomology group 125.W
 local concept (in differential geometry) 109
 local continuity 45.F
 local control 102.A
 local coordinates
 (on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 (on a differentiable manifold) 105.C
 transformation of 90.D
 local coordinate system 90.D 105.C
 holomorphic 72.A
 local cross section (in a topological group) 147.E
 local degree of a mapping 99.B
 local dimension (of an analytic set at a point) 23.B
 local equation
 (of a divisor) 16.M
 regular (at an integral point) 428.E
 local ergodic theorem 136.B
 local field 257.A
 local Gaussian sum 450.F
 local homology group 201.N
 local homomorphism (of a topological group) 423.O
 local isomorphism (of topological groups) 423.O
 localization
 of a linear representation relative to a prime ideal 362.F
 principle of (on convergence tests of Fourier series) 159.B
 strict 16.AA
 local Lie group 423.L
 (of local transformations) 431.G
 local limit theorem 250.B
 locally (on a topological space) 425.J
 locally absolutely p -valent (function) 438.E
 locally arcwise connected (space) 79.B
 locally Cartan pseudoconvex (domain) 21.I
 locally closed (set) 425.J

Subject Index

Local property

locally compact space 425.V
 uniformly 425.V
 locally connected (space) 79.A
 locally constructible (constant sheaf) 16.AA
 locally contractible
 (at a point) 79.C
 (space) 79.C 202.D
 locally convex (topological linear space) 424.E
 locally convex Fréchet space 424.I
 locally countable cell complex 70.D
 locally countable simplicial complex 70.C
 locally dense 154.D
 locally equicontinuous semigroup 378.F
 locally equivalent (G -structure) 191.H
 locally Euclidean group 423.M
 locally Euclidean space 425.V
 locally finite
 (algebra) 29.J
 (cell complex) 70.D
 (covering) 425.R
 (simplicial complex) 70.C
 σ -(covering) 425.R
 locally flat
 (connection) 80.E
 (injection between topological manifolds) 65.D
 (PL embedding) 65.D
 (Riemannian manifold) 364.E
 locally integrable function 168.B
 locally isomorphic (topological groups) 423.O
 locally Levi pseudoconvex (domain) 21.I
 locally linearly compact (Ω -module) 422.L
 locally Macaulay ring 284.D
 locally n -connected
 (at a point) 79.C
 (space) 79.C
 locally Noetherian (scheme) 16.D
 locally Noetherian formal scheme 16.X
 locally of finite type (for a morphism) 16.D
 locally ω -connected (space) 79.C
 locally p -valent 438.E
 locally quadratic transformation
 (of an algebraic surface) 15.G
 (of an algebraic variety) 16.K
 (of a complex manifold) 72.H
 locally rectifiable (curve) 143.A 246.A
 locally symmetric Riemannian space 412.A, App. A, Table 4.II
 locally symmetric space 364.D
 affine 80.J
 locally symmetrizable (diffusion processes) 115.D
 locally totally bounded (uniform space) 436.H
 locally trivial fiber space 148.B
 locally uniformized 367.C
 local martingale 262.E
 local maximum modulus principle 164.C
 local moduli space (of a compact complex manifold) 72.G
 local one-parameter group of local transformations 105.N
 local operator 125.DD
 local orientation (in an oriented manifold) 201.N
 local parameter
 (around a cusp of a Fuchsian group) 32.B
 (of a nonsingular algebraic curve) 9.C
 (of a Riemann surface) 367.A
 local problem (on the solutions of differential equations) 289.A
 local property
 (in differential geometry) 109

Local regime

- (of a pseudodifferential operator) 345.A
- micro-pseudo- 345.A
- pseudo- (of a pseudodifferential operator) 345.A
- local regime (in static model in catastrophe theory) 51.B
- local ring 284.D
 - (of a prime ideal) 67.G
 - (of a subvariety) 16.B
 - analytically normal 284.D
 - analytically unramified 284.D
 - complete 284.D
 - Macaulay 284.D
 - Noetherian 284.D
 - Noetherian semi- 284.D
 - quasi- 284.D
 - quasisemi- 284.D
 - regular 284.D
 - semi- 284.D
 - structure theorem of complete 284.D
- local-ringed space 383.H
- local section 126.E
- local strategy 173.B
- local system of groups (over a topological space) 201.R
- local time 45.G
- local transformations, local Lie group of 431.G
- local truncation error 303.E
- local uniformizing parameter 367.A
- location parameter 396.I 400.E
- locus
 - cut 178.A
 - singular (of a variety) 16.F
- Loeb measure 293.D
- Loeb space 293.D
- $\log x$ 131.D
- $\log_a x$ 131.B
- $\log z$ (logarithm) 131.G
- logarithm 131.B
 - common 131.C
 - integral 167.D
 - Khinchin law of the iterated 250.C
 - law of iterated 45.F
 - Napierian 131.D
 - natural 131.D
- logarithmically convex 21.B
- logarithmic branch point (of a Riemann surface) 367.B
- logarithmic capacity 48.B
- logarithmic criterion App. A, Table 10.II
- logarithmic curve 93.H
- logarithmic decrement (of a damped oscillation) 318.B
- logarithmic differentiation App. A, Table 9.I
- logarithmic distribution App. A, Table 22
- logarithmic function to the base a 131.B
- logarithmic integral 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- logarithmic normal distribution App. A, Table 22
- logarithmic paper 19.F
 - semi- 19.F
- logarithmic potential 338.A
- logarithmic series 131.D
- logarithmic singularity
 - (of an analytic function) 198.M
 - (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.P
- logarithmic spiral 93.H
- logic
 - algebra of 411.A
 - classical 411.L
 - intuitionistic 411.L
 - many-valued 411.L
 - mathematical 411.A
 - modal 411.L
 - predicate 411.G
 - predicate, with equality 411.J
 - propositional 411.E
 - quantum 351.L
 - symbolic 411.A
 - three-valued 411.L
 - two-valued 411.L
- logical axiom 411.I
- logical choice function, transfinite 411.J
- logical operator 411.E
- logical product (of propositions) 411.B
- logical sum (of propositions) 411.B
- logical symbol 411.B
- logicism 156.A,B
- logistic equation 263.A
- logistic model, linear 403.C
- log linear model 403.C
- logmodular algebra 164.B
- Lommel integral 39.C
- Lommel polynomials App. A, Table 19.IV
- long gravity wave 205.F
- longitude (of a knot) 235.B
- longitudinal wave 446
- long line 105.B
- long water wave 205.F
- look-up, table 96.C
- Looman-Men'shov theorem 198.A
- loop 170 190.P
 - self- 186.B
- loop space 202.C
- loop theorem (on 3-manifolds) 65.E
- loosely Bernoulli 136.F
- Lopatinskii condition, Shapiro- 323.H
- Lopatinskii determinant 325.K
- Lorentz condition 130.A
- Lorentz force 130.A
- Lorentz group 60.J 258.A 359.B
 - full homogeneous 258.A
 - full inhomogeneous 258.A
 - homogeneous 359.B
 - inhomogeneous 359.B
 - proper 60.J 359.B
 - proper complex 258.A
- Lorentz invariance 150.B
- Lorentz space 168.B
- Lorentz transformation 359.B
- Lorenz curve 397.E
- loss
 - heat 419.A
 - of information 138.B
- loss function 398.A
 - quadratic 398.A 399.E
 - simple 398.A
- lot tolerance percent defective 404.C
- Löwenheim theorem, Skolem- 156.E
- lower bound 311.B
 - greatest 310.C 311.B
- lower central series (of a group) 190.J
- lower class
 - with respect to local continuity 45.F
 - with respect to uniform continuity 45.F
- lower control limit 404.B
- lower derivative
 - general (of a set function) 380.D
 - ordinary (of a set function) 380.D

lower end (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
 lower envelope principle 338.M
 lowering the superscripts 417.D
 lower integral, Riemann 216.A
 lower limit
 (of a Riemann integral) 216.A
 (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 lower limit function 84.C
 lower order
 (for infinity) 87.G
 (of a meromorphic function) 272.C
 lower semicontinuity (of length) 264.A
 lower semicontinuous (at a point) 84.C
 lower semicontinuous function 84.C
 lower semilattice 243.A
 lower triangular matrix 269.B
 lower variation (of a set function) 380.B
 Löwner differential equation 438.B
 loxodromic transformation 74.F
 LP (linear programming) 255
 LSZ asymptotic condition 150.D
 l.u.b. (least upper bound) 311.B
 Lubanski vector, Pauli- 258.D
 Luenberger observer 86.E
 lumping, mass 304.D
 Luneburg lens 180.A
 Lüroth theorem 16.J
 Lutz-Mattuck theorem 118.E
 Luzin first principle (in analytic set theory) 22.C
 Luzin second principle (in analytic set theory) 22.C
 Luzin space 22.I 425.CC
 Luzin theorem 270.J
 Denjoy- 159.I
 Luzin unicity theorem (in analytic set theory) 22.C
 Lyapunov characteristic number 314.A
 Lyapunov condition 250.B
 Lyapunov convexity theorem 443.G
 Lyapunov function 126.F 163.G 394.C
 Lyapunov-Schmidt procedure 286.V
 Lyapunov stable 126.F
 in both directions 394.A
 in the negative direction 394.A
 in the positive direction 394.A
 uniformly 126.F
 Lyapunov theorem 398.C
 Lyusternik-Shnirel'man theory 286.Q

M

$M(\Omega)$ (the set of all essentially bounded measurable functions on Ω) 168.B
 $\{M_p\}$, ultradistribution of class 125.U
 (M_p) , ultradistribution of class 125.U
 μ -absolutely continuous (additive set function) 380.C
 μ -completion 270.D
 μ -conformal function 352.B
 μ -constant stratum 418.E
 μ -integrable 221.B
 μ -measurable 270.D
 μ -null set 370.D
 μ -operator, bounded 356.B
 μ -singular (additive set function) 380.C
 m -dissipative 251.J
 $m \times n$ matrix 269.A
 m th root 10.C
 M -estimator 371.H
 M -port network 282.C
 M -set 159.J
 M -space 425.Y

Subject Index

Manifold(s)

(M)-space (= Montel space) 424.O
 M space, abstract 310.G
 M waves 130.B
 Macaulay local ring 284.D
 Macaulay ring 284.D
 locally 284.D
 Mach cone 205.B
 machine
 Turing 31.B
 universal Turing 31.C
 machine-language program 75.C
 machine scheduling problem 376
 machine sequencing problem 376
 Machin formula 322
 Mach number 116.B 205.B
 Mach wave 205.B
 Mackey-Arens theorem 424.N
 Mackey space 424.N
 Mackey theorem 424.M
 Mackey topology 424.N
 Mack method, Garside-Jarratt- 301.N
 MacLane complexes, Eilenberg- 70.F
 MacLane space, Eilenberg- 70.F
 MacLane spectrum, Eilenberg- 202.I
 Maclaurin formula, Euler- 379.J
 macroeconomic data 128.A
 macroscopic causality (of S -matrix) 386.C
 magnetic field 130.A
 magnetic flux density 130.A
 magnetic group 92.D
 magnetic induction 130.A
 magnetic quantum number, orbital 351.E
 magnetic permeability 130.B
 magnetic polarization 130.A
 magnetic Reynolds number 259
 magnetic susceptibility 130.B
 magnetic viscosity 259
 magnetic wave 130.B
 transverse 130.B
 magnetofluid dynamics 259
 magnetohydrodynamics 259
 magnetostatics 130.B
 magnitude (of a vector) 442.B
 Mahalanobis generalized distance 280.E
 Mainardi equations, Codazzi- 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 main classes 241.A
 main effect 102.H
 main theorem
 (in class field theory) 59.C
 Zariski's 16.I
 majorant
 (of a sequence of functions) 435.A
 harmonic (of a subharmonic function) 193.S
 method of 316.G
 majorant series 316.G 435.A
 major arc 4.B
 major axis (of an ellipse) 78.C
 major function 100.F
 majorizing function, right 316.E
 Malfatti problem (in geometric construction) 179.A
 Malgrange theorem, Ehrenpreis- 112.B
 Mal'tsev-Iwasawa theorem, Cartan- (on maximal compact subgroups) 249.S
 Mal'tsev theorem, Wedderburn- (on algebras) 29.F
 Malus theorem 180.A
 Mandelstam representation 132.C
 Mangoldt function 123.B
 manifold(s)
 almost complex 72.B

Manin connection, Gauss- (of a variety)

- almost contact 110.E
- almost parallelizable 114.I
- analytic \rightarrow analytic manifold
- Banach 105.Z 286.K
- Blaschke manifold 178.G
- with boundary 105.B
- without boundary 105.B
- C^r - 105.D
- C^r -, with boundary 105.E
- C^r -, without boundary 105.E
- center, theorem 286.V
- characteristic (of a partial differential equation) 320.B
- characteristic classes of 56.F
- closed 105.B
- coherently oriented pseudo- 65.B
- combinatorial 65.C
- compact C^r - 105.D
- complex \rightarrow complex manifold(s)
- complex analytic 72.A
- conic Lagrange 345.B
- conic Lagrangian 274.C
- contact 110.E
- covering 91.A
- covering differentiable 91.A
- differentiable, with boundary of class C^r 105.E
- differentiable, of class C^r 105.D
- with Euclidean connection 109
- fibered 428.F
- Finsler 286.L
- flag 199.B
- Fréchet 286.K
- G - 431.C
- Grassmann \rightarrow Grassmann manifold
- group (of a Lie transformation) 110.A
- with a handle attached by f 114.F
- h -cobordant oriented 114.I
- Hilbert 105.Z 286.K
- Hodge 232.D
- homology 65.B
- Hopf 232.E
- hyperbolic 21.O 235.E
- integral 428.A,B,D
- irreducible 3- 65.E
- Kähler 232
- k -dimensional integral 191.I
- nontrivial 3- 65.E
- ordinary integral (of a differential ideal) 428.E
- orientable (C^r -manifold) 105.F
- orientation 201.N
- oriented 105.F 201.N
- oriented G - 431.E
- paracompact C^r - 105.D
- parallelizable 114.I
- π - 114.I
- PL- 65.C
- Poincaré 105.A
- at a point 178.G
- prime 3- 65.E
- proper flag 199.B
- pseudo- 65.B
- pseudo-Hermitian 344.F
- Q - 382.D
- real analytic 105.D
- regular integral (of a differential ideal) 428.E
- Riemannian \rightarrow Riemannian manifold
- singular integral (of a differential ideal) 428.E
- SC^r - 178.G
- smooth 105.D 114.B
- space-time 359.D
- s -parallelizable 114.I
- stable 126.G,J
- stably almost complex 114.H
- stably parallelizable 114.I
- Stein 21.L
- Stiefel \rightarrow Stiefel manifold
- symplectic 219.C
- topological 105.B
- triangulated 65.B
- unstable 126.G,J
- visibility 178.F
- weakly almost complex 114.H
- weakly 1-complete 21.L
- Manin connection, Gauss- (of a variety) 16.V
- Mannheim curve 111.F
- Mann-Whitney U -test 371.C
- MANOVA (multivariate analysis of variance) 280.B
- mantissa (of the common logarithm) 131.C
- many body problem 402.F 420.A
- many-valued (analytic function) 198.J
- many-valued function 165.B
- many-valued logic 411.L
- map 381.C (also \rightarrow mapping)
 - bundle 147.B
 - covering 91.A
 - cubic 157.B
 - equivariant 431.A
 - first-return 126.C
 - G - 431.A
 - Gauss 111.G
 - Kodaira-Spencer 72.G
 - linear fiber 114.D
 - normal 114.J
 - PL 65.A
 - Poincaré 126.C
 - time-one 126.C
 - trivalent 157.B
- mapping 381.C
 - A -balanced 277.J
 - affine 7.E
 - alternating multilinear 256.H
 - analytic 21.J
 - antiholomorphic 195.B
 - antisymmetric multilinear 256.H
 - biadditive 277.J
 - biholomorphic 21.J
 - bijective 381.C
 - bilinear 256.H 277.J
 - birational 16.I
 - biregular (between prealgebraic varieties) 16.C
 - Borel isomorphic 270.C
 - of bounded variation 246.H
 - bundle 147.B
 - C^r - 105.J
 - c_1 - 237.G
 - CE 382.D
 - cellular (between cell complexes) 70.D
 - chain 200.C
 - chain (between chain complexes) 201.B
 - characteristic (in the classification theorem of fiber bundles) 147.G
 - class 202.B
 - of class C^r 208.B
 - classifying 147.G
 - closed 425.G
 - cochain 200.F 201.H
 - complete 241.C
 - conformal 198.A

- conjugation (of a Hopf algebra) 203.E
- constant 381.C
- continuous 425.G
- covering 91.A
- degenerate 208.B
- degree 99.A
- degree of 99.A
- diagonal (of a graded coalgebra) 203.B,F
- differentiable, of class C^r 105.J
- dual (of a linear mapping) 256.G
- duality 251.J
- equivariant 431.A
- essential 202.B
- exponential 178.A 249.Q 364.C
- extremal horizontal slit 367.G
- extremal quasiconformal 352.C
- extremal vertical slit 367.G
- first-return 126.C
- Fredholm 286.E
- G- 362.B 431.A
- Gauss (in geometric optics) 180.B
- generalized conformal 246.I
- of group algebra 192.Q
- harmonic 195.B
- hereditarily quotient 425.G
- holomorphic 21.J 72.A
- homological 200.C
- homotopy-associative 203.D
- Hopf 147.E
- identity 381.C
- inclusion 381.C
- inverse 381.C
- inverse, theorem 208.B
- isometric 111.H 273.B
- Kodaira-Spencer 72.G
- linear (between linear spaces) 256.B
- linear (between polyhedrons) 70.C
- linear fiber 114.D
- local degree of 99.B
- meromorphic 23.D
- monotone 311.E
- multilinear 256.H
- nondegenerate holomorphic (between analytic spaces) 23.C
- nonexpansive 286.B
- nonsingular, of class C^1 208.B
- normal 114.J
- normal coordinate 364.C
- one-to-one 381.C
- onto 381.C
- open 425.G
- order-preserving 311.E
- orientation-preserving 99.A
- orientation-reversing 99.A
- partial (of a mapping) 381.C
- perfect 425.W
- perspective (in projective geometry) 343.B
- piecewise affine 192.Q
- piecewise linear (between polyhedra) 70.C
- PL 65.A
- Poincaré 126.C,G
- product 425.K
- projective (in projective geometry) 343.B
- proper 425.W
- purely inseparable rational 16.I
- quasiconformal 352.B
- quasiperfect 425.CC
- quotient 425.G
- rational 16.I
- regular (between prealgebraic varieties) 16.C
- regular, of class C^1 208.B
- semicontinuous (in a topological linear space) 153.D
- semilinear 256.P 277.L
- separable (rational) 16.I
- simplicial 70.C
- simplicial (between polyhedra) 70.C
- simplicial (relative to triangulations) 70.C
- skew-symmetric multilinear 256.H
- space 202.C
- space of continuous 435.D
- spin 237.G
- s.s. (semisimplicial) (between s.s. complexes) 70.E
- s.s., realization of 70.E
- surjective 381.C
- symmetric multilinear 256.H
- Teichmüller 352.C
- time-one 126.C
- topological 425.G
- topology induced by a 425.I
- transposed (of a diffusion kernel) 338.N
- transposed (of a linear mapping) 256.G
- uniformly continuous 273.I 436.E
- unit 203.F
- mapping chain 201.B
- mapping class 202.B
- mapping cone 202.E
- reduced 202.F
- mapping cylinder 202.E
- mapping space 435.D
- mapping theorem
 - Brouwer 99.A
 - open 37.I 424.X
 - Riemann 77.B
 - spectral 251.G
- mapping truck 202.G
- Marchenko equation, Gelfand-Levitan-
 - (for KdV equations) 387.D
 - (for a nonlinear lattice) 287.C
- Marcinkiewicz theorem 224.E
- marginal density functions 397.I
- marginal distribution 342.C 397.H
- marked K3 surface 72.K
- Markov branching process 44.D
 - multitype 44.E
- Markov chains 260.A 342.A
 - embedded 260.H
 - general 260.J
 - imbedded 260.H
 - (non) recurrent 260.B
- Markov field theory, Euclidean 150.F
- Markovian decision process 127.E
- Markovian policy 405.C
- Markovian type (stochastic differential equation) 406.D
- Markov inequality (for polynomials) 336.C
- Markov measure 136.D
- Markov operators 136.B
- Markov partition (for an automorphism) 136.G
- Markov process(es) 261 342.A
 - branching 44.E
 - homogeneous 5.H
 - invariant 5.H
 - strong 261.B
- Markov property 261.B
 - strong 261.B
- Markov shift 136.D
- Markov statistical mechanics 340.C
- Markov subshift 126.J

Markov theorem, Gauss-

- Markov theorem, Gauss- 403.E
- Markov time 261.B 407.B
- Martin axiom (in set theory) 33.F
- Martin bound, Froissart- 386.B
- Martin boundary 207.C 260.I
 - dual 260.I
- Martin compactification 207.C
- Martineau-Harvey duality 125.Y
- martingale 262 342.A
 - $\{F_t\}$ -Wiener 406.B
 - local 262.E
- martingale additive functional 261.E
- martingale part 406.B
- martingale problem 115.C 261.C 406.A
- Martin kernel 207.C
- Maslov bundle 274.C
- Maslov index, Keller- 274.C
- mass 132.A 258.C 271.E
 - (of a current) 275.G
 - center of 271.E
 - integrals of the center of 420.A
- mass distribution
 - capacitary 338.K
 - equilibrium 338.K
- Massey theorem, Blakers- 202.M
- mass lumping 304.D
- mass matrix 304.D
- master equation 402.I
- matched asymptotic expansions, method of 25.B
- mathematical axiom 411.I
- mathematical expectation (of a probability distribution) 341.B
- mathematical induction 294.B
 - axiom of 294.B
 - definition by 294.B
 - doulbe 294.B
 - multiple 294.B
- mathematical linguistics 75.E
- mathematical logic 411.A
- mathematical modeling 40.G 300
- mathematical models in biology 263
- mathematical object 52.A
- mathematical programming 264.A
- mathematical programming problem 264.B
- mathematical structure 409.B
- mathematical system (for a structure) 409.B
- mathematics
 - actuarial 214.A
 - combinatorial 66.A
 - discrete 66.A
- mathematics in the 18th century 266
- mathematics in the 19th century 267
- mathematics in the 17th century 265
- Mathieu differential equation 268.A
 - modified 268.A
- Mathieu functions 268
 - modified 268.A
 - modified, of the first kind 268.D
 - modified, of the second kind 268.D
 - modified, of the third kind 268.D
 - of the second kind 268.D
- Mathieu group 151.H
- Mathieu method 268.C
- matric group 226.B
- matrix (matrices) 269
 - adjacement 186.G
 - adjoint 269.I
 - Alexander (of a knot) 235.C
 - alternating 269.B
 - amplification 304.F
 - anti-Hermitian 269.I
 - antisymmetric 269.B
 - association 102.J
 - asymptotic covariance 399.K
 - of a bilinear form 256.H
 - bounded 269.K
 - circuit 254.B
 - column finite 269.K
 - companion 301.I
 - complex orthogonal 269.J
 - correlation 397.J
 - covariance 341.B 397.J
 - density 351.B
 - design 102.A 403.D
 - diagonal 269.A
 - Dirac 377.C
 - Dirac's γ 351.G
 - error 405.G
 - Fisher information 399.D
 - fundamental cutset 186.G
 - fundamental tieset 186.G
 - group 226.B
 - Hasse-Witt 9.E
 - Hermitian 269.I
 - identity 269.A
 - incidence (of a block design) 102.B
 - incidence (of a graph) 186.G
 - infinite 269.K
 - information 102.I
 - inverse 269.B
 - invertible 269.B
 - iteration 302.C
 - Jacobi 390.G
 - Jacobian 208.B
 - lower triangular 269.B
 - mass 304.D
 - m by n 269.A
 - of (m, n) -type 269.A
 - $m \times n$ 269.A
 - moment 341.B
 - monodromy 254.B
 - nilpotent 269.F
 - noncentrality 374.C
 - nonsingular 269.B
 - normal 269.I
 - orthogonal 269.J
 - parity check 63.C
 - Pauli spin 258.A 351.G
 - period (of a closed Riemann surface) 11.C
 - period (of a complex torus) 3.H
 - port-admittance 282.C
 - port-impedance 282.C
 - positive definite 269.I
 - positive semidefinite 269.I
 - principal 3.I
 - projection 269.I
 - proper orthogonal 269.J
 - Q - 260.F
 - of quadratic form 348.A
 - rational function 86.D
 - rectangular 269.A
 - regular 269.B
 - Riemann 3.I
 - row finite 269.K
 - S - 150.D 386
 - sample correlation 280.E
 - scalar 269.A
 - scale 374.C

- Seifert 235.C
- semisimple 269.G
- of sesquilinear form 256.Q
- similar square 269.G
- skew h - 269.I
- skew-Hermitian 269.I
- skew-symmetric 269.B
- square 269.A
- stiffness 304.C
- stochastic 260.A
- of the sum of squares between classes 280.B
- of the sum of squares within classes 280.B
- symmetric 269.B
- symplectic 60.L
- transfer function 86.B
- transition 126.J 260.A
- transposed 269.B
- triangular 269.B
- tridiagonal 298.D
- unipotent 269.F
- unit 269.A
- unitary 269.I
- upper triangular 269.B
- variance 341.B
- variance-covariance 341.B 397.J
- weighting 86.B
- zero 269.B
- matrix algebra
 - full 269.B
 - total 269.B
- matrix convex of order m 212.C
- matrix element 351.B
- matrix game 173.C
- matrix group 226.B
- matrix monotone decreasing of order m 212.C
- matrix monotone increasing of order m 212.C
- matrix representation 362.D
- matrix Riccati differential equation 86.E
- matrix Riccati equation 405.G
- matrix unit 269.B
- matroid 66.G
 - p -ary 66.H
 - poly- 66.F
 - operations for 66.H
- Mattuck theorem, Lutz- 118.E
- Maupertuis principle 180.A
- Maurer-Cartan
 - differential form of 249.R
 - system of differential equations of 249.R
- maximal
 - (hypersurface in Minkowski space) 275.H
 - (ideal) 368.F
 - (in prediction theory) 395.D
 - (Riemann surface) 367.F
- maximal concentration function 341.E
- maximal condition 311.C
- maximal deficiency (of an algebraic surface) 15.E
- maximal dilatation 352.B
- maximal dissipative operator 251.J
- maximal element (in an ordered set) 311.B
- maximal entropy 136.C,H
- maximal ergodic lemma 136.B
- maximal filter 87.I
- maximal function
 - nontangential 168.B
 - radial 168.B
- maximal ideal 67.C 368.F
 - with respect to S 67.C
- maximal ideal space (of a Banach algebra) 36.E
- maximal independent system (of an additive group)
 - 2.E
- maximal inequality (= maximal ergodic lemma)
 - 136.B
- maximal invariant statistic 396.I
- maximal k -split torus 13.Q
- maximally almost periodic group 18.I
- maximally overdetermined (= holonomic) 274.H
- maximal operator 112.E
- maximal order 27.A
- maximal prime divisor (of an ideal) 67.F
- maximal separable extension (of a field) 149.H
- maximal toroidal subgroup (of a compact Lie group)
 - 248.X
- maximal torsion subgroup (of an Abelian group)
 - 2.A
- maximal torus (of a compact Lie group) 248.X
- maximum, relative (of a function) 106.L
- maximum element (in an ordered set) 311.B
- maximum-flow minimum-cut theorem 281.C
- maximum-flow problem 281.C
- maximum likelihood estimator 399.M
- maximum likelihood method 399.M
 - limited information 128.C
- maximum modulus principle (for a holomorphic function)
 - 43.B
 - local 164.C
 - Cartan 338.L
 - complete 338.M
- maximum principle
 - (for analytic functions) 43.B
 - (in control theory) 86.F
 - (for harmonic functions) 193.E
 - (for minimal surface) 275.B
 - (for parabolic operators) 327.D
 - dilated (in potential theory) 338.C
 - entropy 419.A
 - first (in potential theory) 338.C
 - Frostman's 338.C
 - Hopf (for equations of elliptic type) 323.C
 - strong (for equations of elliptic type) 323.C
 - Ugaheri's 338.C
- maximum return 127.B
- maximum-separation minimum-distance theorem
 - 281.C
- maximum solution (of a scalar equation) 316.E
- maximum spectral measure 390.G
- Maxwell-Boltzmann distribution law 402.B
- Maxwell convention 51.F
- Maxwell equations 130.A
- Maxwell fisheye 180.A
- Maxwell relations 419.B
- Maxwell stress tensor 130.A
- Maxwell theorem (on spherical functions) 393.D
- Mayer-Vietoris exact sequence (for a proper triple)
 - 201.C
 - relative 201.L
- Mazur theorem 37.F
 - Gel'fand- 36.E
- meager set 425.N
 - non- 425.N
- mean
 - (of an almost periodic function) 18.B,E
 - (of numbers or a function) 211.C
 - (of a probability distribution) 341.B
 - (of a random variable) 342.C
 - (of a statistical data) 397.C
 - (of a weakly stationary process) 395.A
 - α -trimmed 371.H

Mean absolute deviation

- arithmetic 211.C 397.C
- arithmetic-geometric 134.B
- bounded, oscillation 168.B
- conditional (of a random variable) 342.E 397.I
- continuous in the 217.M 407.A
- convergence in the, of order p 168.B 342.D 407.A
- convergence in the, of power p 168.B
- of degree r (of a function with respect to a weight function) 211.C
- Fejér 159.C
- geometric 211.C
- geometrical 397.C
- harmonic 211.C 397.C
- limit in the 168.B
- moment about the (k th) 341.B
- population 396.C
- sample 396.C
- mean absolute deviation 397.C
- mean anomaly 309.B
- mean concentration function 341.E
- mean content (of a tolerance region) 399.R
- mean curvature 111.H 364.D 365.D, App. A, Table 4.I
- total 365.O
- mean curvature vector 365.D
- mean energy 402.G
- mean entropy 402.G
- mean ergodic theorem 136.B
- mean free energy 340.B 402.G
- mean motion 309.B
- mean number of sheets (of a covering surface of a Riemann sphere) 272.J
- mean oval (of two ovals) 89.D
- mean p -valent, areally 438.E
- mean p -valued, circumferentially 438.E
- mean recurrence time 260.C
- mean square error 399.E 403.E
- mean unbiased, asymptotically 399.K
- mean unbiased estimator 399.C
- mean value
 - (of a continuous function on a compact group) 69.A
 - (of a weakly stationary process) 395.C
- mean value theorem
 - (in differential calculus) 106.E
 - (on harmonic functions) 193.E
 - first (in the Riemann integral) 216.B
 - second (in the D -integral) 100.G
 - second (in the Riemann integral) 216.B
 - second (for the Stieltjes integral) 94.C
 - Siegel 182.E
 - Vinogradov 4.E
- mean vector 341.B
- measurability 443.I
 - strong 443.I
- measurability theorem, Péttis 443.B
- measurable
 - (flow) 136.D
 - (multivalued vector function) 443.I
 - (operator function) 308.G
 - (set) 270.D,G
 - (in set theory) 33.F
 - (stochastic process) 407.A
 - (transformation) 136.B
 - (vector valued function) 443.B
- absolutely 270.L
- \mathfrak{B} - 270.C
- Baire 270.L
- Jordan 270.D,G
- Lebesgue 270.G
- μ - 270.D
- nearly Borel 261.D
- progressively (stochastic process) 407.A
- real-valued (in set theory) 33.F
- with respect to a family of random variables 342.C
- with respect to μ^* 270.E
- scalarly 443.I
- strongly 443.B,I
- universally 270.L
- weakly 443.B,I
- measurable cardinal number 33.E
- measurable event 342.B
- measurable function 270.J
 - \mathfrak{B} - 270.J
 - Baire 270.L
 - Borel 270.J
 - Lebesgue 270.J
 - universally 270.L
- measurable space(s) 270.C
 - analytic 270.C
 - complete 270.D
 - isomorphic 398.D
 - standard 270.C
- measurable vector function 308.G
- measure 270.D,G
 - of an angle 139.D
 - of association 397.K
 - atomless probability 398.C
 - \mathfrak{B} -regular 270.F
 - Borel 270.G
 - bounded 270.D
 - canonical 115.B 260.G
 - characteristic 407.D
 - Carathéodory 270.E
 - Carathéodory outer 270.E
 - complete 270.D
 - completely additive 270.D
 - complex spectral 390.D
 - convergence in 168.B
 - δ - 270.D
 - distortion 213.E
 - excessive 261.F
 - finitely additive 270.D
 - G -invariant 225.B
 - Gaussian random 407.D
 - generalized Lebesgue 270.E
 - of genus (of a positive definite symmetric matrix) 348.K
 - Gibbs 136.C
 - Green 193.J
 - Haar 225.C
 - harmonic 120.C 169.B 207.B 260.I
 - Hausdorff 169.D
 - idempotent 192.P
 - image 270.K
 - inner harmonic 169.B
 - invariant 136.B 255.B 260.A,I 261.F
 - Jensen 164.K
 - Jordan 270.D,G
 - killing 115.B
 - kinetic 228.A
 - K -regular 270.F
 - Lebesgue 270.G
 - Lebesgue outer 270.G
 - Lebesgue-Stieltjes 166.C 270.L
 - left invariant Haar 225.C
 - of length 139.C
 - Lévy 5.E

- of location 397.C
- Loeb 293.D
- Markov 136.D
- orthogonal 164.C
- outer 270.E,G
- outer harmonic 169.B
- Plancherel (of a locally compact group) 437.L
- Poisson random 407.D
- positive Radon 270.I
- probability 341 342.B
- product 270.H
- quasi-invariant 225.J
- quotient 225.H
- Radon 270.G
- real spectral 390.D
- regular 270.F
- relatively invariant 225.H
- representing 164.C
- right invariant Haar 225.C
- σ -additive 270.D
- σ -finite 270.D
- signed 380.C
- smooth (for a Riemannian metric) 136.G
- smooth invariant 126.J
- spectral 390.D,K 395.B,C
- speed 115.B
- subinvariant 261.F
- superharmonic 260.I
- of variability 397.C
- vector 443.G
- Weil 225.G
- Wiener 45.B 250.E
- measure algebra 192.O
- measure-preserving (transformation) 136.B
- measure problem, invariant 136.C
- measure space 270.D
 - bounded 270.D
 - complete 270.D
 - complete product 270.H
 - Lebesgue, with a finite (or σ -finite) measure 136.A
 - product 270.H
 - σ -finite 270.D
- measure theory 270
- mechanics
 - celestial 55.A
 - classical 271.A
 - classical statistical 402.A
 - equilibrium statistical 402.A
 - graphical 19.C
 - Markov statistical 340.C
 - Newtonian 271.A
 - nonlinear 290.A
 - quantum 351
 - quantum statistical 402.A
 - statistical 342.A 402
- mechanism, Higgs 132.D
- median 341.H 396.C 397.C
 - sample 396.C
- mediant (of two fractions in Farey sequence) 4.B
- median unbiased estimator 399.C
- medieval mathematics 372
- meet
 - (in a Boolean algebra) 42.A
 - (in an ordered set) 243.A
 - (of sets) 381.B
- Mehler formula App. A, Table 19.III
- Mehler integral representation, Laplace- App. A, Table 18.II
- Mellin transform 220.C
- member (of a set) 381.A
- membrane
 - equation of a vibrating 325.A
 - permeable 419.A
- memory
 - fading 163.I
 - first-in first-out 96.E
 - first-in last-out 96.E
- memory channel
 - almost finite 213.F
 - finite 213.F
- memoryless channel 213.C
 - discrete 213.F
- memory unit 75.B
- Menelaus theorem (in affine geometry) 7.A
- Menger-Nöbeling embedding theorem 117.D
- Men'shov theorem, Looman- 198.A
 - Rademacher- 317.B
- Mercer theorem 217.H
- merging 96.C
- meridian
 - (of a knot) 235.B
 - (of a surface of revolution) 111.H
- meromorphic (in a domain) 272.A
- meromorphic curve 272.L
- meromorphic differential (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
- meromorphic function(s) 21.J 272.A
 - (on an analytic set) 23.D
 - (on a complex manifold) 72.A
 - transcendental 272.A
- meromorphic mapping, proper (between analytic spaces) 23.D
- meromorphy
 - circle of (of a power series) 339.D
 - radius of (of a power series) 339.D
- Mersenne number 297.E, App. B, Table 1
- Mersenne prime 297.E
- Mertens theorem (on the Cauchy product of two series) 379.F
- mesh of a covering (in a metric space) 273.B
- mesons 132.B
- meta-Abelian group 190.H
- metabolic model (in catastrophe theory) 51.F
- metamathematics 156.D
- metastable range (of embeddings) 114.D
- method(s)
 - Abel, of summation 379.N
 - Adams-Bashforth 303.E
 - Adams-Moulton 303.E
 - ADI 304.F
 - alternating direction implicit (ADI) 304.F
 - Arrow-Hurwicz-Uzawa gradient 292.E
 - of averaging 290.D
 - Bairstow 301.E
 - Bernoulli 301.J
 - Borel, of summation 379.O
 - branch and bound 215.D
 - Cesàro, of summation of order α 379.M
 - Cholesky 302.B
 - circle 4.B
 - collocation 303.I
 - congruence 354.B
 - conjugate gradient (C.G.) 302.D
 - constructive 156.D
 - continuation 301.M
 - Crout 302.B
 - cyclic Jacobi 298.B
 - d'Alembert, of reduction of order 252.F
 - Danilevskii 298.D

- Davidenko, of differentiation with respect to a parameter 301.M
 Dejon-Nickel 301.G
 difference 303.A
 direct (in the calculus of variations) 46.E
 discrete variable 303.A
 distribution-free 371.A
 Doolittle 302.B
 downhill 301.L
 Duhamel 322.D
 Durand-Kerner (DK) 301.F
 Durand-Kerner-Aberth (DKA) 301.F
 Enskog 217.N
 Euclidean 150.F
 Euler (of describing the motion of a fluid) 205.A
 Euler (of numerical solution of ordinary differential equations) 303.E
 Euler (of summation) 379.P
 expansion 205.B
 extrapolation 303.F
 factorization 206.B
 of false position 301.C
 of feasible directions (in nonlinear programming) 292.E
 finite element 223.G 304.C
 fixed point 138.B
 floating point 138.B
 Frobenius App. A, Table 14.I
 Galerkin 303.I 304.B
 Garside-Jarratt-Mack 301.N
 Gauss-Seidel 302.C
 Givens 298.D
 gradient 292.E
 Graeffe 301.N
 graphical, of statistical inference 19.B
 Green function 402.J
 of harmonic balance 290.D,E
 Hessenberg 298.D
 Hill, of solution 268.B
 Hitchcock 301.E
 hodograph 205.B
 Horner 301.C
 Householder 298.D
 implicit 303.E
 implicit enumeration 215.D
 Ince-Goldstein 268.C
 indirect least squares 128.C
 interpolation 224.A
 isoparametric 304.C
 Jacobi (of numerical computation of eigenvalues) 298.B
 Jacobi (in numerical solution of linear equations) 302.C
 Jacobi second, of integration 324.D
 Jeffreys 25.B
 killing (of obtaining a homotopy group) 202.N
 ladder 206.B
 Lagrange (of describing the motion of a fluid) 205.A
 Lagrange (of indeterminate coefficients) 106.L
 Lagrange, of variation of constants 252.D
 Lagrange, of variation of parameters 252.D
 Lagrange-Charpit 322.B, App. A, Table 15.II
 of Lagrange multipliers 106.L
 Lanczos 298.D 301.N
 Laplace 30.B
 of least squares (for estimation) 403.E
 of least squares (for numerical solution of linear equations) 397.J
 of least squares (for numerical solution of ordinary differential equations) 303.I
 Lebesgue, of summation 379.S
 Lehmer 301.K
 Lighthill 25.B
 limited information maximum likelihood 128.C
 of linearization 290.D
 linear k -step 303.E
 linear multistep 303.E
 of majorants 316.G
 of matched asymptotic expansions 25.B
 Mathieu 268.C
 maximum likelihood 399.M
 middle-square 354.B
 Milne 303.E
 modified minimum chi-square 400.K
 moment 399.L
 Monte Carlo 385.C
 of moving frames 110.A
 of multiple scales 290.E
 multistep 303.E
 multivalued 303.E
 Newton-Raphson 301.D
 nonparametric 371.A
 Nörlund, of summation 379.Q
 of orthogonal projection 323.G
 ($p + 1$)-stage 303.D
 penalty 292.E
 Perron (in Dirichlet problem) 120.C
 perturbation 25.B
 Poincaré 25.B
 Poincaré-Lighthill-Kuo (P.L.K.) 25.B
 polynomial extrapolation 303.F
 power 298.C
 predictor-corrector (PC) 303.E
 projective approximation 304.B
 QR 298.F
 of quadrature 313.D
 QZ 298.G
 rational extrapolation 303.F
 Rayleigh-Ritz 46.F 271.G
 renormalization 361.A
 Richardson 302.C
 Riemann, of summation 379.S
 Riesz, of summation of the k th order 379.R
 Ritz 46.F 303.I 304.B
 robust 371.A
 Rosen gradient projection 292.E
 Runge-Kutta 303.D
 Runge-Kutta-Gill 303.D
 saddle point 25.C
 scaling 346.E
 scoring 397.M
 simplex 255.C
 spectral 304.B
 stationary phase 30.B
 of steepest descent 25.C
 step by step 163.D
 Strum 301.C
 of successive approximation (for an elliptic partial differential equation) 323.D
 of successive approximation (for Fredholm integral equations of the second kind) 217.D
 of successive approximation (for ordinary differential equations) 316.D
 of successive iteration (for Fredholm integral equations of the second kind) 217.D
 summable by Abel's 379.N
 summable by Borel's exponential 379.O

- summable by Borel's integral 379.O
 - summable by Cesàro's, of order α 379.M
 - summable by Euler's 379.P
 - summable by Hölder's, of order p 379.M
 - summable by Nörlund's 379.Q
 - summable by M. Riesz's, of order k 379.R
 - of summation 379.L
 - Sylvester elimination 369.E
 - three-stage least squares 128.C
 - threshold Jacobi 298.B
 - two-phase simplex 255.C
 - two-stage least squares 128.C
 - variational 438.B
 - of variation of constants 55.B 252.I
 - of variation of parameters App. A, Table 14.I
 - WKB 25.B
 - WKBJ 25.B
- metric 273.B
 - Bergman 188.G
 - Einstein 364.I
 - Einstein-Kähler 232.C
 - \bar{f} - 136.F
 - f_N - 136.F
 - Finsler 152.A
 - Hermitian 232.A
 - Hodge 232.D
 - Kähler 232.A
 - Kerr 359.E
 - left invariant (in a topological group) 423.I
 - Petersson 32.B
 - Poincaré 74.G
 - pseudo- 273.B
 - pseudo-Riemannian 105.P
 - Riemannian 105.P
 - Robertson-Walker 359.E
 - standard Kähler (of a complex projective space) 232.P
 - Teichmüller 416
- metrically isomorphic automorphisms (on a measure space) 136.E
- metric comparison theorem 178.A
- metric connection 80.K
- metric invariant (on a measure space) 136.E
- metric multidimensional scaling 346.E
- metric space(s) 273
 - compact 273.F
 - complete 273.J
 - discrete 273.B
 - indiscrete pseudo- 273.B
 - induced by a mapping 273.B
 - precompact 273.B
 - product 273.B
 - pseudo- 273.B
 - separable 273.E
 - totally bounded 273.B
- metric structure
 - almost contact 110.E
 - contact 110.E
- metric subspace 273.B
- metric topology 425.C
- metric vector space 256.H
- metrizable topological group 423.I
- metrizable topological space 273.K
- metrizable uniform space 436.F
 - pseudo- 436.F
- Meusnier theorem (on surfaces) 111.H
- Meyer decomposition theorem, Doob- 262.D
- Michael theorem 425.X
- micro-analytic 125.CC 274.E
- microbundle 147.P
 - normal PL 147.P
 - PL 147.P
 - tangent PL 147.P
- microcanonical ensemble 402.D
- microdifferential equation 274.G
- microdifferential operator 274.F
 - of finite order 274.F
 - of infinite order 274.F
- microfunction 274.E
 - holomorphic 274.F
- microlocal analysis 274 345.A
- microlocally elliptic (operator) 345.A
- microlocal operator 274.F
- micro-pseudolocal property 345.A
- middle point 7.C
- middle-square method 354.B
- midpoint 7.C
- midpoint rule 303.E
- midrange 374.G
- Mikusinski operator 306.B
- Mills equation, Yang- 80.G
- Mills field, Yang- 150.G
- Mills functional, Yang- 80.Q
- Mills G -connection, Yang- 80.Q
- Mil'man property, Krein- 443.H
- Mil'man theorem 37.G
 - Krein- 424.U
- Milne corrector 303.F
- Milne method 303.E
- Milne predictor 303.E
- Milne-Simpson formula 303.E
- Milnor fibering theorem 418.D
- Milnor fibration 418.D
- Milnor invariant 235.D
- Milnor monodromy 418.D
- Milnor number (in Milnor fibering theorem) 418.D
- Minakshisundaram-Pleijel asymptotic expansion 391.B
- minimal
 - (algebraic surface) 15.G
 - (algebraic variety) 16.I
 - (ideal) 368.F
 - (immersion) 275.A
 - (superharmonic function) 260.I
 - (transformation) 136.H
 - relatively 15.G 16.I
- minimal basis (of a principal order or an algebraic number field) 14.B
- minimal chain (for a transition probability) 260.F
- minimal complete class 398.B
- minimal complex 70.E
- minimal condition
 - (in an ordered set) 311.C
 - restricted (in a commutative ring) 284.A
- minimal diffeomorphism 126.N
- minimal element (in an ordered set) 311.B
- minimal flow 126.N
- minimal function, \mathfrak{K} - 367.E
- minimal immersion 275.A
 - branched 275.B
 - generalized 275.B
- minimality 16.I
 - absolute 16.I
- minimally almost periodic group 18.I
- minimally elliptic singularity 418.C
- minimal model 15.G
 - (for the algebra of differential forms) 114.L
 - Néron (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - relatively 15.G
- minimal operator 112.E

Minimal parabolic k -subgroup

- minimal parabolic k -subgroup 13.Q
- minimal polynomial
 - (of an algebraic element) 149.E
 - (of a linear transformation) 269.L
 - (of a matrix) 269.F
- minimal prime divisor (of an ideal) 67.F
- minimal projection, Lie 76.B
- minimal realization 86.D
- minimal resolution 418.C
- minimal set 126.E
- minimal splitting field (of a polynomial) 149.G
- minimal submanifold 275.A 365.D
- minimal sufficient σ -field 396.E
- minimal surface 111.I 334.B
 - affine 110.C
 - branched 275.B
- minimal surface equation 275.A
- minimal variety 275.G
- minimax (estimator) 399.H
- minimax decision function 398.B
- minimax level α test 400.F
- minimax principle
 - (for eigenvalues of a compact operator) 68.H
 - (for statistical decision problem) 398.B
 - for λ_k 391.G
- minimax solution 398.B
- minimax theorem 173.C
- minimization problem, group 215.C
- minimizing sequence 46.E
- minimum (minima)
 - of a function 106.L
 - relative (at a point) 106.L
 - successive (in a lattice) 182.C
 - weak 46.C
- minimum chi-square method, modified 400.K
- minimum-cost flow problem 281.C
- minimum curvature property 223.F
- minimum element (in an ordered set) 311.B
- minimum immersion 365.O
- minimum norm property 223.F
- minimum principle
 - energy 419.C
 - enthalpy 419.C
 - Gibbs free energy 419.C
 - Helmholtz free energy 419.C
 - for λ_k 391.G
 - of λ 391.D
- minimum solution (of a scalar equation) 316.E
- minimum variance unbiased estimator, uniformly 399.C
- Minkowski-Farkas theorem 255.B
- Minkowski-Hasse character (of a nondegenerate quadratic form) 348.D
- Minkowski-Hasse theorem (on quadratic forms over algebraic number fields) 348.G
- Minkowski-Hlawka theorem 182.D
- Minkowski inequality 211.C, App. A, Table 8
- Minkowski reduction theory (on fundamental regions) 122.E
- Minkowski space 258.A
- Minkowski space-time 359.B
- Minkowski theorem 182.C
 - on discriminants 14.B
 - on units 14.D
- Minlos theorem 424.T
- minor
 - (of a matrix) 103.D
 - (of a matroid) 66.H
 - Fredholm's first 203.E
 - Fredholm's r th 203.E
 - principal (of a matrix) 103.D
- minor arc 4.B
- minor axis (of an ellipse) 78.C
- minor function 100.F
- minus infinity 87.D
- minute (an angle) 139.D
- Mittag-Leffler theorem 272.A
- mixed Abelian group 2.A
- mixed area (of two ovals) 89.D
- mixed group 190.P
- mixed Hodge structure 16.V
- mixed ideal 284.D
- mixed initial-boundary value problem (for hyperbolic operator) 325.K
- mixed insurance 214.B
- mixed integer programming problem 215.A
- mixed model 102.A
- mixed periodic continued fraction 83.C
- mixed problem 322.D
- mixed spinor rank (k, n) 258.B
- mixed strategy 173.C
- mixed tensor 256.J
- mixed type, partial differential equation of 304.C 326.A
- mixing (automorphism)
 - k -fold 136.E
 - strongly 136.E
 - weakly 136.E
- mixture 351.B
- Mizohata equation, Lewy- 274.G
- ML estimator 399.M
- mobility, axiom of free (in Euclidean geometry) 139.B
- Möbius band 410.B
- Möbius function 66.C 295.C
- Möbius geometry 76.A
- Möbius strip 410.B
- Möbius transformation 74.E 76.A
- Möbius transformation group 76.A
- mod 1, real number 355.D
- mod p (modulo p)
 - Hopf invariant 202.S
 - isomorphism (in a class of Abelian groups) 202.N
- modal logic 411.L
- modal proposition 411.L
- modal unbiased estimator 399.C
- mode 396.C 397.C
 - sample 396.C
- model
 - (of an algebraic function field) 9.D
 - (of a mathematical structure) 409.B
 - (of a symbolic logic) 276.D 411.G
 - Bayesian 403.G
 - Bradley-Terry 346.C
 - Bush-Mosteller 346.G
 - canonical 251.N
 - component 403.F
 - components-of-variance 403.C
 - countable (of axiomatic set theory) 156.E
 - derived normal (of a variety) 16.F
 - dual resonance 132.C
 - Estes stimulus-sampling 346.G
 - factor analysis 403.C
 - fixed effect 102.A
 - functional 251.N
 - game theoretic 307.C
 - Glashow-Weinberg-Salam 132.D

- of human death and survival 214.A
- Ising 340.B 402.G
- Klein (of non-Euclidean geometry) 285.C
- learning 346.G
- linear 403.D
- linear logistic 403.C
- log linear 403.C
- Luce β - 346.G
- mathematical, in biology 263
- metabolic (in catastrophe theory) 51.F
- minimal 15.G
- minimal (for the algebra of differential forms) 114.L
- mixed 102.A
- multiple 403.E
- multivariate linear 280.B
- natural (in axiomatic set theory) 33.C
- normal linear 403.C
- Poincaré (of geometry) 285.D
- queuing 260.H
- random-effects 102.A 403.C
- relatively minimal 15.G
- Sakata 132.D
- Scheffé 346.C
- simple 403.F
- spin-flip 340.C
- static (in catastrophe theory) 51.B
- stochastic Ising 340.C
- stochastic programming 307.C
- string 132.C
- Sz.-Nagy-Foiaş 251.N
- Thurstone-Mosteller 346.C
- Veneziano 132.C 386.C
- Whittaker 450.O
- model experimentation 385.A
- modeling, mathematical 300
- model scheduling 307.C
- model selection 401.D
- model theory 276
- modification
 - (of a stochastic process) 407.A
 - holomorphic (of an analytic space) 23.D
 - proper (of an analytic space) 23.D
 - spherical 114.F
- modified Bessel functions App. A, Table 19.IV
- modified Fourier hyperfunction 125.BB
- modified indicator function 341.C
- modified Mathieu differential equation 268.A
- modified Mathieu function 268.A
 - of the first kind 268.D
 - of the second kind 268.D
 - of the third kind 268.D
- modified minimum chi-square method 400.K
- modified wave operator 375.B
- modular, weakly (in quantum mechanics) 351.L
- modular automorphism 308.H
- modular character (of a modular representation) 362.I
- modular form
 - Hilbert, of dimension $-k$ 32.G
 - Hilbert, of weight k 32.G
 - of level N 32.C
 - Siegel, of dimension $-k$ 32.F
 - Siegel, of weight k 32.F
- modular function
 - (of a locally compact group) 225.D
 - Hilbert 32.G
 - of level N 32.C
 - Siegel, of degree n 32.F
- modular group 122.D
 - elliptic 122.D
 - Hilbert 32.G
 - Siegel, of degree n 32.F
- modular lattice 243.F
- modular law (in a lattice) 243.F
- modular operator 308.H
- modular representation (of a finite group) 362.G
- modular surface, Hilbert 15.H
- module(s) 277
 - (of a family of curves) 143.A
 - A - 277.C
 - over A 277.C
 - of A -homomorphisms (between A -modules) 277.E
 - Artinian 277.I
 - of boundaries 200.C
 - category of left (right) R - 52.B
 - character (of an algebraic group) 13.D
 - of coboundaries 200.F
 - of cocycles 200.F
 - coefficient 200.L
 - cohomology 200.F
 - connected graded 203.B
 - of cycles 200.C
 - defining (of a linear system) 16.N
 - degenerate 118.D
 - divisible A - 277.D
 - dual 277.K
 - dual graded 203.B
 - duality theorem for Ω - 422.L
 - factor A - 277.C
 - faithfully flat A - 277.K
 - of finite length 277.I
 - flat A - 277.K
 - free 277.G
 - generalized 143.B
 - graded A - 200.B
 - homology 200.C
 - of homomorphisms (between two modules) 277.B
 - induced 277.L
 - injective A - 277.K
 - Jordan 231.C
 - left A - 277.D
 - Noetherian 277.I
 - \mathcal{O} -, 383.I
 - with operator domain A 277.C
 - projective A - 277.K
 - of quotients of an R -module with respect to S 67.G
 - (R, S) -injective 200.K
 - (R, S) -projective 200.K
 - representation (of a linear representation) 362.C
 - of representations (of a compact group) 69.D
 - right A - 277.D
 - torsion A - 277.D
- moduli functor 16.W
- moduli scheme 16.W
 - coarse 16.W
 - fine 16.W
- moduli space 16.W 72.G
 - of curves of genus g 9.J
 - local 72.G
- modulus (moduli)
 - (of a complex number) 74.B
 - (of a complex torus of dimension 1) 32.C
 - (= a conformal invariant) 11.B 77.E

- (of a congruence) 297.G
- (of an elliptic integral) 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
- (in Jacobi elliptic functions) 134.J, App. A, Table 16.III
- (of a locally multivalent function) 438.E
- (of a ring) 77.E
- complementary (of an elliptic integral) App. A, Table 16.I
- complementary (in Jacobi elliptic functions) 134.J, App. A, Table 16.III
- of continuity (of a function) 84.A
- of continuity of k th order (of a continuous function) 336.C
- of elasticity in shear 271.G
- of elasticity in tension 271.G
- field of 73.B
- local maximum, principle 164.C
- maximum, principle (for a holomorphic function) 43.B
- periodicity (of an elliptic integral) 134.A
- of rigidity 271.G
- Young's 271.G
- modulus number 418.E
- modus ponens 411.I
- Moishezon criterion, Nakai- (of ampleness) 16.E
- Moishezon space 16.W
- mole numbers 419.A
- moment 397.C
 - absolute (k th) 341.B
 - bivariate 397.H
 - central 397.C
 - conditional 397.I
 - factorial 397.G
 - of inertia 271.E
 - (k th) 341.B
 - about the mean (k th) 341.B
 - population (of order k) 396.C
 - principal, of inertia 271.E
 - sample (of order k) 396.C
- moment generating function 177.A 341.C 397.G,J
- moment matrix 341.B
- moment method 399.L
- moment method estimator 399.L
- moment problem
 - Hamburger 240.K
 - Hausdorff 240.K
 - Stieltjes 240.K
- momentum 271.A,E
 - angular 271.E
 - generalized 271.F
 - integrals of angular 420.A
 - intrinsic angular 351.G
 - orbital angular 351.E
 - theorem of 271.E
 - theorem of angular 271.E
- momentum density, angular 150.B
- momentum 4-vector, energy- 258.C
- momentum operator
 - angular 258.D
 - energy- 258.D
- momentum phase space 126.L
- momentum representation 351.C
- momentum tensor
 - angular 258.D
 - energy- 150.D 359.D
- monad
 - (in homology theory) 200.Q
 - (in nonstandard analysis) 293.D
- Monge-Ampère equations 278, App. A, Table 15.III
- Monge differential equation 324.F
- monic polynomial 337.A
- monoclinic system 92.E
- monodromy group
 - (of an n -fold covering) 91.A
 - (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 253.B
 - Milnor 418.D
 - total 418.F
- monodromy matrix 254.B
- monodromy theorem (on analytic continuation) 198.J
- monogenic function
 - in the sense of E. Borel 198.Q
 - in the sense of Cauchy 198.Q
- monoid, unitary 409.C
- monoidal transformation
 - (of an analytic space) 23.D
 - (of a complex manifold) 172.H
 - (by an ideal sheaf) 16.K
 - with center W 16.K
 - real 274.E
- monomial 337.B
 - (module) 277.D
 - admissible (in Steenrod algebra) 64.B
- monomial representation (of a finite group) 362.G
- monomorphism (in a category) 52.D
- monothetic group 136.D
- monotone
 - (curve) 281.B
 - operator 212.C
- monotone class 270.B
- monotone class theorem 270.B
- monotone decreasing
 - (set function) 380.B
 - matrix, of order m 212.C
- monotone decreasing function 166.A
 - strictly 166.A
- monotone function 166.A
 - strictly 166.A
 - strictly (of ordinal numbers) 312.C
- monotone increasing
 - (set function) 380.B
 - matrix, of order m 212.C
- monotone increasing function 166.A
 - strictly 166.A
- monotone likelihood ratio 374.J
- monotonely very weak Bernoulli 136.F
- monotone mapping 311.E
- monotone operator (in a Hilbert space) 286.C
- monotone sequence (of real numbers) 87.B
- monotonically decreasing (sequence of real numbers) 87.B
- monotonically increasing (sequence of real numbers) 87.B
- monotonic function, completely 240.E,K
- Monte Carlo method 385.C
- Montel space 424.O
- Montel theorem 435.E
- moon argument, behind-the- 351.K
- Moore-Smith convergence 87.H
- Moore space 273.K 425.AA
- Moore space problem, normal 425.AA
- Mordell conjecture 118.E
- Mordell-Weil theorem 118.E
 - weak 118.E
- more informative (experiment) 398.G

- Morera theorem 198.A
 Morgenstern solution, von Neumann- 173.D
 morphism
 (in a category) 52.A
 (of chain complexes) 200.H
 (of complexes) 13.R
 (of filtered modules) 200.J
 (of inductive systems) 210.D
 (of unfoldings) 51.D
 affine 16.D
 connecting 200.H
 diagonal (in a category) 52.E
 étale 16.F
 finite 16.D
 flat 16.D
 faithfully flat 16.D
 Frobenius 450.P
 functorial 52.J
 inverse 52.D
 k - (between algebraic groups) 13.A
 projective 16.E
 proper (between schemes) 16.D
 quasiprojective 16.E
 S - 52.G
 of schemes 16.D
 separated 16.D
 shape 382.A
 smooth 16.F
 strict (between topological groups) 423.J
 structure 52.G
 Morse function 279.B
 Morse index theorem 279.F
 Morse inequalities 279.D
 Morse lemma 279.B
 Morse-Smale diffeomorphism 126.J
 Morse-Smale flow 126.J
 Morse-Smale vector field 126.J
 Morse theory 279
 fundamental theorems of 279.D
 Morsification 418.F
 Moser implicit function theorem, Nash- 286.J
 Mosteller model
 Bush- 346.G
 Thurstone- 346.C
 most powerful (test) 400.A
 most probable cause 401.E
 most probable value 401.E
 most stringent level α test 400.F
 motion(s)
 (in dynamical system) 126.B
 (Euclidean) 139.B
 Brownian 5.D 45 342.A
 Brownian (d -dimensional) 45.C
 Brownian, on Lie groups 406.G
 Brownian, with an N -dimensional time parameter 45.I
 central 126.E
 elliptic 55.A
 equation of (of a fluid) 205.A
 equation of (of a particle in a gravitation field) 359.D
 equations of (in Newtonian mechanics) 271.A
 Euler equation of (of a perfect fluid) 205.B
 $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ -Brownian 45.B 406.B
 group of (in Euclidean geometry) 139.B
 group of, in the wider sense 139.B
 Heisenberg equation of 351.D
 hyperbolic 420.D
 hyperbolic-elliptic 420.D
 hyperbolic-parabolic 420.D
 infinitesimal (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.F
 Lagrange equation of 271.F
 Lagrange-stable 420.D
 law of 271.A
 mean 309.B
 Newton three laws of 271.A
 Ornstein-Uhlenbeck Brownian 45.I
 oscillating 420.D
 parabolic 420.D
 parabolic-elliptic 420.D
 perpetual 402.G
 proper (in Euclidean geometry) 139.B
 proper (of a star) 392
 quasiperiodic 136.G
 right-invariant Brownian 406.G
 simple harmonic 318.B
 space-time Brownian 45.F
 Moulton method, Adams- 303.E
 movability 382.C
 movable 382.C
 k - 382.C
 movable branch point (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
 movable singularity (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
 move 173.B
 chance 173.B
 moving average 397.N
 weighted 397.N
 moving average process 421.D
 autoregressive 421.D
 autoregressive integrated 421.G
 moving average representation
 backward 395.D
 canonical backward 395.D
 moving coordinates App. A, Table 3.IV
 moving coordinate system 90.B
 moving frame(s) 90 111.C 417.B
 method of 110.A
 natural 417.B
 orthonormal 417.D
 stochastic 406.G
 multicollinearity 128.B
 multicommodity flow problem 281.F
 multidagonal type 304.C
 multidimensional diffusion process 115.A,C
 multidimensional gamma function 374.C
 multidimensional hypergeometric distribution App. A, Table 22
 multidimensional normal distribution App. A, Table 22
 multidimensional scaling 346.E
 nonmetric 346.E
 multi-index 112.A 168.B
 multilinear form 256.H
 multilinear mapping 256.H
 alternating 256.H
 antisymmetric 256.H
 skew-symmetric 256.H
 symmetric 256.H
 multinomial distribution 341.D
 negative 341.D
 multinomial theorem 330
 multi-objective model 307.C
 multiobjective programming 264.C
 multiplanar coordinates 90.C
 multiple 297.A
 (of an element of a ring) 67.H

- (of a fractional ideal) 14.E
 - common (of elements of a ring) 67.H
 - least common 297.A
 - least common (of elements of a ring) 67.H
 - scalar (of an element of a module) 277.D
 - scalar (of a linear operator) 37.C
 - scalar (in a linear space) 256.A
 - scalar (of a vector) 442.A
 - multiple complex 200.H
 - multiple correlation coefficient 397.J
 - sample 280.E
 - multiple covariant 226.E
 - absolute 226.E
 - multiple hypergeometric distribution 341.D
 - multiple integral
 - (in Lebesgue integral) 227.E
 - (in Riemann integral) 216.F
 - multiple mathematical inductions 294.B
 - multiple model 403.F
 - multiple point
 - (on an arc) 93.B
 - (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
 - (on a variety) 16.F
 - multiple root (of an algebraic equation) 10.B
 - multiple sampling inspection 404.C
 - multiple-valued (analytic function) 198.J
 - multiple Wiener integral 176.I
 - multiplication
 - (of an algebra) 203.F
 - (of a graded algebra) 203.B
 - (in a group) 190.A
 - (of an H -space) 203.D
 - (of local Lie groups) 423.L
 - (by a natural number) 294.B
 - (in a ring) 368.A
 - associative (of a graded algebra) 203.B
 - commutative (of a graded algebra) 203.B
 - commutative law for (in a ring) 368.A
 - complex 73.A
 - homotopy associative 203.D
 - homotopy commutative 203.D
 - Pontryagin 203.D
 - scalar (in a module) 277.D
 - scalar (on vectors) 442.A
 - symmetric 406.C
 - multiplication theorem, Hadamard 339.D
 - multiplicative (arithmetic function) 295.B
 - multiplicative automorphic function 32.A
 - multiplicative class 270.B
 - multiplicative congruence 14.H
 - multiplicative ergodic theorem 136.B
 - multiplicative function 32.A 295.B
 - multiplicative functional
 - (of a Markov process) 261.E
 - transformation by 261.F
 - multiplicative group 149.A 190.A
 - of a field 190.B
 - multiplicative Jordan decomposition (of a linear transformation) 269.L
 - multiplicatively closed subset (of a ring) 67.C
 - multiplicative valuation 439.C
 - multiplicator (of a relative invariant measure) 225.H
 - multiplicity
 - (of a covering surface) 367.B
 - (of an eigenvalue for an integral equation) 217.F
 - (of an eigenvalue of a matrix) 390.B
 - (of a Gaussian process) 176.E
 - (of a local ring) 284.D
 - (of a representation) 362.D
 - (of a root of an algebraic equation) 10.B
 - (of a weight) 248.W
 - algebraic (of an eigenvalue) 390.B
 - geometric (of an eigenvalue) 390.A
 - intersection (of two subvarieties) 16.Q
 - representation without 437.G
 - set of 159.J
 - multiplicity function (of a mapping) 246.G
 - multiplier
 - (of a group) 362.J
 - (of a semi-invariant) 226.A
 - characteristic (of a closed orbit) 126.G
 - characteristic (of a periodic linear system) 163.F
 - Jacobi's last App. A, Table 14.I
 - Lagrange 46.B
 - method of Lagrange 106.L
 - Stokes 254.D
 - multiplier algebra 36.K
 - multiply connected domain 333.A
 - multiply transitive (permutation group) 151.H
 - multipolar coordinates 90.C
 - multiprocessor scheduling problem 376
 - multistage allocation process 127.A
 - multistage choice process 127.A
 - multistage game 173.C
 - multistage programming 264.C
 - multistage sampling 373.E
 - multistep method 303.E
 - linear 303.E
 - multitype Galton-Watson process 44.C
 - multitype Markov branching process 44.E
 - multivalent function 438.E
 - multivalued function 165.B
 - multivalue method 303.E
 - multivariate (data) 397.A
 - multivariate analysis 280
 - of variance 280.B
 - multivariate linear model 280.B
 - multivariate normal distribution 397.J
 - Muntz theorem (on polynomial approximation) 336.A
 - mutual energy 338.B
 - mutual information 213.E
 - mutually associated diagrams (for $O(n)$ diagrams) 60.J
 - mutually disjoint family (of sets) 381.D
 - mutually noncomparable (summations) 379.L
 - mutually orthogonal (latin squares) 241.B
 - M.V.W.B. (= monotonely very weak Bernoulli) 136.F
- N**
- N (natural numbers) 294.A,B
 - NP 71.E
 - n -ary predicate 411.G
 - n -ary relation 411.G
 - n -ball 140
 - open 140
 - n -body problem 420.A
 - n -cell 70.D 140
 - open 70.D
 - topological 140
 - n -classifying space (of a topological group) 147.G
 - n -cochain (for an associative algebra) 200.L
 - n -connected
 - (pair of topological spaces) 202.L

(space) 79.C 202.L
 locally 79.C
n-connective fiber space 148.D
n-cube, unit 140
n-cylinder set 270.H
n-decision problem 398.A
n degrees of freedom (sampling distribution)
 374.B.C
n-dimensional (normal space) 117.B
n-dimensional distribution 342.C
n-dimensional distribution function 342.C
n-dimensional Euclidean geometry 139.B 181
n-dimensional probability distribution 342.C
n-dimensional random variable 342.C
n-dimensional sample space 396.B
n-dimensional statistic 396.B
n-disk 140
 open 140
n-element 140
n-fold covering 91.A
n-fold reduced suspension (of a topological space)
 202.F
n-gon, regular 357.A
n-gonal number 296.A
n-particle subspace 377.A
n-person game 173.B–D
n-ply connected (plane domain) 333.A
n-section (in a cell complex) 70.D
n-sheeted (covering surface) 367.B
n-simple
 (pair of topological spaces) 202.L
 (space) 202.L
n-simplex
 (in a Euclidean simplicial complex) 70.B
 (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
 (in a simplicial complex) 70.C
n-sphere 140
 open 140
 solid 140
n-sphere bundle 147.K
n-times continuously differentiable (function)
 106.K
n-times differentiable (function) 106.D
n-torus 422.E
n-tuple 256.A 381.B
n-universal bundle 147.G
n-valued (analytic function) 198.J
 ($n + 2$)-hyperspherical coordinates 79.A 90.B
N-ple Markov Gaussian process 176.E
 in the restricted sense 176.F
*n*th approximation (of an *n*-times differentiable
 function) 106.E
*n*th convergent (of an infinite continued fraction)
 83.A
*n*th derivative (of a differentiable function)
 106.D
*n*th derived function 106.D
*n*th differential (of a differentiable function)
 106.D
*n*th partial quotient 83.A
*n*th order, differential of 106.D
*n*th order partial derivatives 106.H
*n*th term 165.D
 nabla 442.D, App. A, Table 3.II
 Nachbin-Goodner-Kelley theorem 37.M
 Nagumo theorem, Kneser- 316.E
 Naimark theorem, Gelfand- 36.G
 Nakai-Moishezon criterion (of ampleness) 16.E
 Nakanishi equation, Landau- 146.C
 Nakanishi variety, Landau- 146.C 386.C

Nakano-Nishijima-Gell-Mann formula 132.A
 Nakayama lemma 67.D
 Nambu-Goldstone boson 132.C
 Napier analogies App. A, Table 2.III
 Napierian logarithm 131.D
 Napier number 131.D
 Napier rule App. A, Table 2.II
 Nash bargaining solution 173.C
 Nash equilibrium 173.C
 Nash-Moser implicit function theorem 286.J
 nat 213.B
 natural additive functional 261.E
 natural boundary
 (of an analytic function) 198.N
 (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 natural equation
 (of a curve) 111.D
 (of a surface) 110.A
 natural equivalence 52.J
 natural extension (of an endomorphism) 136.E
 natural geometry 110.A
 natural injection (from a subgroup) 190.D
 naturality (of a homotopy operation) 202.O
 natural logarithm 131.D
 natural model (in axiomatic set theory) 33.C
 natural moving frame 417.B
 natural number 294.A,B
 nonstandard 276.E
 Skolem theorem on impossibility of 156.E
 natural positive cone 308.K
 natural scale 260.G
 natural spline 223.F
 natural surjection (to a factor group) 190.D
 natural transformation 52.J
 Navier-Stokes equation(s) 204.B 205.C
 general 204.F
 Navier-Stokes initial value problem 204.B
 nearly Borel measurable set 261.D
 nearly everywhere (in potential theory) 338.F
 necessary (statistic) 396.E
 necessity 411.L
 necklace, Antoine's 65.G
 negation (of a proposition) 411.B
 negative
 (complex) 200.H
 (element of a lattice-ordered group) 243.G
 (element of an ordered field) 149.N
 (rational number) 294.D
 negative binomial distribution 341.D 397.F, App.
 A, Table 22
 negative curvature 178.H
 negative definite (function) 394.C
 negative definite Hermitian form 348.F
 negative definite quadratic form 348.B
 negative half-trajectory 126.D
 negative infinity 87.D 355.C
 negative limit point 126.D
 negatively invariant 126.D
 negatively Lagrange stable 126.E
 negatively Poisson stable 126.E
 negative multinomial distribution 341.D
 negative number 355.A
 negative orientation (of an oriented C^r -manifold)
 105.F
 negative part (of an element of a vector lattice)
 310.B
 negative polynomial distribution App. A, Table
 22
 negative prolongational limit set, first 126.D
 negative resistance 318.B

negative root (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.M
negative semidefinite quadratic form 348.C
negative semiorbit 126.D
negative variation
 (of a mapping) 246.H
 (of a real bounded function) 166.B
neighborhood 425.B
 analytic (of a function element in the wider sense) 198.O
 analytic (in a Riemann surface) 367.A
 conoidal 274.D
 convex 364.C
 coordinate (in a fiber bundle) 147.B
 coordinate (in a topological manifold) 105.C
 coordinate, of class C^r 105.D
 derived 65.C
 ε - (of a point) 273.C
 étale 16.AA
 fundamental system of 425.E
 open 425.E
 open tubular 114.B
 regular 65.C
 regular, theorem 65.C
 relative 425.J
 tubular 105.L 114.B 364.C
neighborhood deformation retract 202.D
neighborhood retract 202.D
 absolute 202.D
 fundamental absolute (FANR) 382.C
neighborhood system 425.B
 base for 425.E
 uniform 436.D
 uniform family of 436.D
Nelson formula, Feynman-Kac- 150.F
Nelson symmetry 150.F
Nernst postulate 419.A
Néron minimal model (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
Néron-Severi group
 (of a surface) 15.D
 (of a variety) 16.P
nerve (of a covering) 70.C
nested intervals, principle of (for real numbers) 87.C 355.B
net (in a set) 87.H
 Cauchy (in a uniform space) 436.G
 square 304.E
 universal (in a set) 87.H
net premium 214.A
network(s) 282 425.F
 bilateral 282.C
 capacitated 281.C
 contact 282.B
 electric 282.B
 linear 282.C
 M-port 282.C
 passive 282.C
 reciprocal 282.C
 time-invariant 282.C
 two-terminal 281.C
network flow model 307.C
network flow problem 281 282.B
network programming 264.C
network scheduling 307.C
Neumann function 39.B 188.H, App. A, Table 19.III
Neumann polynomial App. A, Table 19.IV
Neumann problem 193.F 323.F
Neumann series 217.D
neutral element (in a lattice) 243.E

neutral type (of functional differential equation) 163.B
Nevanlinna exceptional value 272.E
Nevanlinna first fundamental theorem 272.B
Nevanlinna second fundamental theorem 272.E
Nevanlinna theory
 (of meromorphic functions) 124.B 272.B
 (for several complex variables) 21.N
Newton, I. 329
Newton backward interpolation formula 223.C
Newton boundary 418.D
 nondegenerate 418.D
Newton-Cotes formula (in numerical integration) 299.A
Newton diagram 254.D
Newton first law 271.A
Newton formula (on interpolation) App. A, Table 21
Newton formula (on symmetric functions) 337.I
Newton forward interpolation formula 223.C
Newtonian capacity 48.B
Newtonian exterior capacity 48.H
Newtonian fluid 205.C
Newtonian inner capacity 48.F
Newtonian interior capacity 48.F
Newtonian mechanics 271.A
Newtonian outer capacity 48.H
Newtonian potential 271.C 338.A
Newton interpolation formula App. A, Table 21
Newton interpolation polynomial 336.G
Newton iterative process 301.D
Newton law (on frictional stresses) 205.C
Newton law of universal gravitation 271.B
Newton-Raphson method 301.D
Newton second law 271.A
Newton third law 271.A
Newton three laws of motion 271.A
Neyman factorization theorem 396.F
Neyman-Pearson lemma 400.B
Neyman structure 400.D
nice function (on a C^∞ -manifold) 114.F
Nicholson formula App. A, Table 19.IV
Nicholson formula, Watson- App. A, Table 19.III
Nickel method, Dejon- 301.G
Nicomedes conchoid 93.H
Nijenhuis tensor 72.B
Nikodým derivative, Radon- 270.L 380.C
Nikodým property, Radon- 443.H
Nikodým theorem, Radon- 270.L 380.C
Nikodým theorem for vector measures, Radon- 443.H
nilalgebra 231.A
nilmanifold 178.D
nilpotent
 (Lie algebra) 248.C
 (Lie group) 249.D
 (subset of a ring) 368.B
 (zero-divisor) 284.A
 generalized (linear operator) 251.F
nilpotent algebraic group 13.F
nilpotent component (of a linear transformation) 269.L
nilpotent element
 (of a ring) 368.B
 generalized (in a Banach algebra) 36.E
nilpotent group 190.J
 finite 151.C
 generalized 190.K
nilpotent ideal
 (of a Lie algebra) 248.C

- largest (of a Lie algebra) 248.D
- nilpotent matrix 269.F
- nilpotent radical (of a Lie algebra) 248.D
- nilradical
 - (of a commutative ring) 67.B
 - (of a ring) 368.H
- 9j symbol 353.C
- Nirenberg space, John- (= *BMO*) 168.B
- Nishijima–Gell-Mann formula, Nakano– 132.A
- Nishina formula, Klein- 351.G
- Nitsche formula, Gauss-Bonnet-Sasaki- 275.C
- niveau surface 193.J
- Nöbeling embedding theorem, Menger- 117.D
- no cycle condition 126.J
- nodal curve 391.H
- nodal domain 391.H
- nodal point 304.C
- nodal set 391.H
- node
 - (of a curve) 93.G
 - (of a graph) 186.B 282.A
 - (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
 - completion 281.D
 - start 281.D
- Noetherian domain 284.A
- Noetherian integral domain 284.A
- Noetherian local ring 284.D
- Noetherian module 277.I
- Noetherian ring(s) 284.A
 - left 368.F
 - right 368.F
- Noetherian scheme 16.D
 - locally 16.D
- Noetherian semilocal ring 284.D
- Noether number, Brill- 9.E
- Noether theorem 150.B
- noise
 - thermal 402.K
 - white 176.D
- noisy channel 213.A
- nomograms 19.A,D
- non-Abelian cohomology 200.M
- nonadaptive scheme 299.C
- nonanticipative 406.D
- non-Archimedean geometry 155.D
- non-Archimedean valuation 14.F 439.C
- nonassociative algebra 231.A
- nonatomic 168.C 443.G
- non-Bayesian approach 401.B
- noncentral (quadric hypersurface) 7.F 350.G
- noncentral chi-square distribution 374.B
- noncentral *F*-distribution 374.B
- noncentral Hotelling T^2 statistic 374.C
- noncentrality (sampling distribution) 374.B,C
- noncentrality matrix 374.C
- noncentral *t*-distribution 374.B
- noncentral Wishart distribution 374.C
 - p*-dimensional 374.C
- noncommutative field 149.A
- noncompact real simple Lie algebra App. A, Table 5.II
- noncompact type (symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space) 412.D
- noncomparable, mutually 379.L
- nonconforming type 304.C
- nonconvex quadratic programming 264.D
- noncooperative (game) 173.A
- nondecreasing function 166.A
- nondegenerate
 - (analytic mapping) 23.C
 - (bilinear form) 256.H
 - (critical point) 106.L 279.B 286.N
 - (function on a Hilbert manifold) 279.E
 - (quadratic form) 348.A
 - (representation) 437.N
 - (sesquilinear form) 256.Q
 - (theta-function) 3.I
- nondegenerate critical manifold 279.D,E
- nondegenerate divisor 3.D 16.N
- nondegenerate hypersurface 344.A
- nondegenerate Newton boundary 418.D
- non-Desarguesian geometry 155.E 343.C
- nondeterministic
 - (Turing machine) 31.B
 - purely (weakly stationary process) 395.D
- nondeterministic linear bounded automaton 31.D
- nonelementary (Kleinian group) 234.A
- non-Euclidean angle (in a Klein model) 285.C
- non-Euclidean distance 285.C
- non-Euclidean geometry 285
- non-Euclidean hypersphere 285.C
- non-Euclidean space 285.A
- nonexpansive mapping 286.B
- nonexpansive operator 37.C
- nonhomogeneous difference equation 104.C
- nonhomogeneous *n*-chain (for a group) 200.M
- nonincreasing function 166.A
- nonlinear differential equation 291.D
- nonlinear filter 405.F,H
- nonlinear functional analysis 286
- nonlinear integral equation 217.M
- nonlinear lattice dynamics 287
- nonlinear mechanics 290.A
- nonlinear ordinary differential equations 313.A
 - (global theory) 288
 - (local theory) 289
- nonlinear oscillation 290
- nonlinear partial differential equations 320.A
- nonlinear problems 291
- nonlinear programming 264.C
- nonlinear semigroup 88.E 378.F
 - of operators 286.X
- nonmeager set 425.N
- nonmetric MDS 346.E
- nonnegative (matrix) 269.N
- nonnegative terms, series of 379.B
- non-Newtonian fluid 205.C
- nonparametric method 371
- nonparametric test 371.A
- nonpositive curvature 178.H
 - G*-space with 178.H
- nonprimitive character 450.C,E
- nonrandomized (decision function) 398.A
- nonrandomized estimate 399.B
- nonrandomized test 400.A
- nonrecurrent (chain) 260.B
- nonrecurrent (transient) 260.B
- nonresidue, quadratic 297.H
- nonsaddle set 126.E
- nonsingular (flow) 126.G
 - (point for a flow) 126.D
 - (point of a variety) 16.F
- nonsingular mapping of class C^1 208.B
- nonsingular matrix 269.B
- nonsingular transformation
 - (of a linear space) 256.B
 - (on a measure space) 136.B
- nonsingular variety 16.F
- nonstandard 33.B
 - (element) 293.B

- nonstandard analysis 293
- nonstandard natural number 276.E
- nonstandard real number 276.E
- nonstandard set theory 293.E
- nonstationary oscillations 290.F
- nonsymmetric unified field theory 343.C
- nontangential maximal function 168.B
- nontangential path 333.B
- nontrivial (3-manifold) 65.E
- nontrivially (to act on a G -space) 431.A
- nonwandering 126.E
 - set 126.E
- Nörlund method of summation 379.Q
- norm
 - (of an algebraic element) 149.J
 - (of an element of a general Cayley algebra) 54
 - (of an element of a quaternion algebra) 29.D
 - (of an operator) 37.C
 - (of a separable algebraic element) 149.J
 - (of a vector) 37.B
 - absolute (of an integral ideal) 14.C
 - C^* -cross 36.H
 - C^r - 126.H
 - graph 251.D
 - Hilbert-Schmidt 68.I
 - minimum, property 223.F
 - nuclear 68.K
 - pseudo- (on a topological linear space) 424.F
 - reduced (of an algebra) 362.E
 - relative (of a fractional ideal) 14.I
 - semi- (on a topological linear space) 424.F
 - spinorial 61.D
 - supremum 168.B
 - trace 68.I
 - uniform 168.B
- normal 62.C 110.E 354.F
 - (almost contact structure) 110.E
 - (analytic space) 23.D
 - (current) 275.G
 - (fundamental region) 122.B
 - ($*$ -isomorphism) 308.C
 - (state) 351.B
 - (for a valuation) 439.H
 - (weight on a von Neumann algebra) 308.D
- affine 110.C
- affine principal 110.C
- analytically 284.D
- principal 111.F
- normal algebraic variety 16.F
- normal analytic structure 386.C
- normal basis 172.E
- normal block bundle 147.Q
- normal bundle
 - (of a foliation) 154.B.E
 - (of an immersion) 114.B
 - (of a submanifold) 105.L 274.E 364.C
- normal Cartan connection 80.N
- normal chain
 - (in a group) 190.G
 - (in a Markov chain) 260.D
- normal commutation relation 150.D
- normal connection 365.C
- normal contact Riemannian manifold 110.E
- normal continued fraction 83.E
- normal coordinate(s) 90.C
 - mapping 364.C
- normal covering 425.R
- normal crossings 16.L
 - only 16.L
- normal curvature (of a surface) 111.H
- normal density function 397.D
- normal derivative 106.G
- normal distribution 341.D 397.D, App. A, Table 22
 - k -dimensional 341.D, App. A, Table 22
 - logarithmic App. A, Table 22
 - multidimensional App. A, Table 22
 - standard 341.D
- normal duration 28.I
- normal equation
 - (in the method of least squares) 302.E 403.E
 - (in statistical data analysis) 397.J
- normal estimator, best asymptotically 399.K
- normal estimator, consistent and asymptotically 399.K
- normal extension 149.G 251.K
- normal extension field, strongly 113
- normal family 435.E
- normal fiber space, Spivak 144.J
- normal form
 - (of differential equations) 313.B 324.E
 - (of a surface) 410.B
 - Cantor (for an ordinal number) 312.C
 - Hesse (of a hyperplane) 139.H
 - Jordan (for a matrix) 269.G
 - π -adic (for an ordinal number) 312.C
 - prenex (in predicate logic) 411.J
- normal form theorem, Kleene 356.C
- normal frame 110.B
- normal function (of ordinal numbers) 312.C
- normal g -lattice 27.A
- normal invariant 114.J
- normality, asymptotic 399.K
- normalization
 - (of an analytic space) 23.D
 - (of a variety) 16.F
- normalization theorem
 - for finitely generated rings 369.D
 - for polynomial rings 369.D
- normalized
 - (function) 317.A
 - (into an orthonormal set) 197.C
 - (vector) 139.G
- normalized contrast 102.C
- normalized valuation 439.E
- normalizer 136.F 190.C
- normal j -algebra 384.C
- normal k -vector bundle 114.J
- normal line 93.G, App. A, Table 4.I
- normal linear model 403.C
- normally cobordant 114.J
- normally distributed, asymptotically 399.K
- normally flat along a subscheme (a scheme) 16.L
- normal mapping (map) 114.J
- normal matrix 269.I
- normal model, derived (of a variety) 16.F
- normal Moore space problem 425.AA
- normal number 354.F
- normal operator 390.E
 - (of Sario) 367.G
- normal PL microbundle 147.P
- normal plane 111.F
- normal point 16.F 23.D
- normal polygon 234.C
- normal process 176.C
- normal real form (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.Q
- normal representation 308.C
- normal ring 67.I
- normal score test, Fisher-Yates-Terry 371.C
- normal section 410.B

- normal sequence (of coverings) 425.R
 normal simple algebra 29.E
 normal space 425.Q
 collectionwise 425.AA
 completely 425.Q
 fully 425.X
 hereditarily 425.Q
 perfectly 425.Q
 normal sphere bundle 274.E
 normal stress 271.G
 normal structure 276.D
 normal subgroup 190.C
 admissible 190.E
 normal system (of E -functions) 430.D
 normal transformation (of a sequence) 379.L
 normal valuation 439.E,H
 normal variety 16.F
 normal vector 105.L 111.H 364.A
 normal vector bundle 105.L
 normal vibration 318.B
 normed linear space 37.B
 normed ring 36.A
 normed space, countably 424.W
 normed vector lattice 310.F
 norm form 118.D
 normic form 118.F
 norm-residue 14.P
 norm-residue symbol 14.Q
 (in local class field theory) 257.F
 Hilbert 14.R
 Hilbert-Hasse 14.R
 norm resolvent convergence 331.C
 northern hemisphere 140
 north pole 74.D 140
 notation
 full international 92.E
 Kendall 260.H
 Schoenflies (for crystal classes) 92.E, App. B, Table 6.IV
 short international 92.E
 system of (for ordinal numbers) 81
 notion, common 35.A
 Novikov closed leaf theorem 154.D
 nowhere dense set 425.N
 NP 71.E
 co- 71.E
 NP-complete 71.E
 NP-completeness 71.E
 NP-hard 71.E
 NP-space 71.E
 NP-time 71.E
 NR (neighborhood retract) 202.D
 nuclear (C^* -algebra) 36.H
 nuclear class 68.I
 nuclear norm 68.K
 nuclear operator 68.I,K
 nuclear space 424.S
 nucleolus 173.D
 null (vector in the Minkowski space-time) 359.B
 null-bicharacteristic 320.B
 null boundary, open Riemann surface of 367.E
 null cobordant 235.G
 null function 310.I
 null geodesic 399.D
 null homotopic (continuous mapping) 202.B
 null hypothesis 400.A
 nullity
 (of a critical point) 279.B
 (of a graph) 186.G
 (of a linear mapping) 256.F
 (of a linear operator) 251.D
 (of a matrix) 269.D
 column (of a matrix) 269.D
 of relative 365.D
 row (of a matrix) 269.D
 null recurrent (point) 260.D
 null sequence (in α -adic topology) 284.B
 null set 270.D 310.I 381.A
 of class $N_{\mathfrak{A}}$ 169.E
 function-theoretic 169
 null space 251.D
 null system 343.E
 number(s) 294
 A- 430.C
 abundant 297.D
 algebraic 14.A
 amicable 297.D
 average sample 404.C
 azimuthal quantum 315.E
 Bell 177.D
 Bernoulli 177.B
 Betti 200.K 201.B
 Brill-Noether 9.E
 calculable 22.G
 Cantor's theory of real 294.E
 cardinal 49.A 312.D
 Cayley 54
 characteristic (of a compact operator) 68.I
 characteristic (of a manifold) 56.F
 Chern 56.F
 chromatic 157.E 186.I
 class (of an algebraic number field) 14.E
 class (of a Dedekind domain) 67.K
 class (of a simple algebra) 27.D
 Clifford 61.A
 coincidence (of a mapping) 153.B
 of colors 92.D
 completeness of real 294.E
 complex 74.A 294.F
 composite 297.B
 condition 302.A
 connectedness of real 294.E 355.B
 continuity of real 294.E
 cyclomatic 186.G
 decomposition (of a finite group) 362.I
 Dedekind's theory of real 294.E
 deficient 297.D
 of denominator 186.I
 Euler 177.C 201.B, App. B, Table 4
 Fermat 297.F
 Froude 116.B
 generalized decomposition (of a finite group) 362.I
 geometry of 182
 Gödel 185 356.C,E
 Grashoff 116.B
 imaginary 74.A
 incidence 146.B 201.B
 of independence 186.I
 initial 312.D
 intersection (of divisors) 15.C
 intersection (of homology classes) 65.B 201.O
 intersection (of sheaves) 16.E
 irrational 294.E 355.A
 irrational real 294.E
 of irregularity (of an algebraic variety) 16.P
 Kullback-Leibler information 398.G
 Lebesgue 273.F
 Lefschetz 153.B
 Lefschetz (of a variety) 16.P

- linking 99.C
- Liouville 430.B
- Lyapunov characteristic 314.A
- Mach 116.B 205.B
- magnetic Reynolds 259
- mean (of sheets) 272.J
- Mersenne 297.E, App. B, Table 1
- Milnor 418.D
- modulus 418.E
- mole 419.A
- n -gonal 296.A
- Napier 131.D
- natural 294.A,B
- negative 355.A
- negative rational 294.D
- normal 354.F
- Nusselt 116.B
- orbital magnetic quantum 315.E
- ordinal 312.B
- p -adic 439.F
- of partitions 177.D 328
- Péclet 116.B
- pentagonal 4.D
- perfect 297.D
- perfect, of the second kind 297.D
- Picard (of a variety) 15.D 16.P
- Poisson 271.G
- polygonal, of order κ 4 5
- Pontryagin 56.F
- positive 355.A
- positive rational 294.D
- Prandtl 116.B
- prime 297.B
- principal quantum 315.E
- pseudorandom 354.B
- Pythagorean 145
- ramification 14.K
- random 354
- rational 294.D,E
- rational real 294.E
- real 294.E 355.A,D
- real, mod 1 355.O
- relatively prime 297.A
- of replications 102.B
- Reynolds 116.B 205.C
- rotation 99.D 111.E 126.I
- S - 430.C
- S^* - 430.C
- self-intersection 15.C
- of sheets (of an analytic covering space) 23.E
- of sheets (of covering surface) 367.B
- Stiefel-Whitney 56.F
- Stirling, of the second kind 66.D
- T - 430.C
- T^* - 430.C
- Tamagawa 13.P
- transcendental 430.A
- translation 18.B,D
- of treatment combinations 102.L
- type 314.A
- U - 430.C
- U^* - 430.C
- wave (of a sine wave) 446
- wave, vector (of a sine wave) 205.F
- weakly compact cardinal 33.E
- weakly inaccessible cardinal 33.E
- Weil 3.C
- number field 149.C
 - algebraic 14.B
 - p -adic 439.F
 - p -adic 257.A 439.F
 - relative algebraic 14.I
- numbering, Gödel 185.A
- number operator 377.A
- number system, point range of 343.C
- number-theoretic function(s) 295.A 356.A
 - additive 295.B
 - completely additive 295.B
 - completely multiplicative 295.B
 - multiplicative 295.B
- number theory 296
 - analytic 296.B
 - consistency proof for pure 156.E
 - elementary 297
 - fundamental theorem of elementary 297.C
 - geometric 296.B
 - pure 156.E
- numerals, Arabic 26
- numerator, partial (of an infinite continued fraction) 83.A
- numerical analysis 300
- numerical differentiation 299.E
- numerical integration 299
- numerically connected (divisor) 232.D
- numerically equivalent (cycles) 16.Q
- numerically semipositive 15.D
- numerical method 300
- numerical range (of a linear operator) 251.E
- numerical solution
 - of algebraic equations 301
 - of integral equations 217.N
 - of linear equations 302
 - of ordinary differential equations 303
 - of partial differential equations 304
- numerical tensor App. A, Table 4.II
- Nusselt number 116.B
- notation 392
- Nyquist criterion 86.A
- Nyquist theorem 402.K
- O**
 - $\mathcal{O}(\Omega)$ (space of holomorphic functions in Ω) 168.B
 - $\mathcal{O}_p(\Omega)$ 168.B
 - $O(n)$ (orthogonal group) 60.I
 - ω -connected space 79.C
 - locally 79.C
 - ω -consistent (system) 156.E
 - ω -limit point 126.D
 - ω -limit set 126.D
 - Ω -conjugate 126.H
 - Ω -equivalent 126.H
 - Ω -explosion 126.J
 - Ω -group 190.E
 - Ω -homomorphism (between Ω -groups) 190.E
 - Ω -isomorphism (between Ω -groups) 190.E
 - Ω -modules, duality theorem for 422.L
 - Ω -stability theorem 126.J
 - Ω -stable, C^r - 126.H
 - Ω -subgroup (of an Ω -group) 190.E
 - \mathfrak{o} -ideal
 - integrated two-sided 27.A
 - two-sided 27.A
 - \mathfrak{o}_l -ideal, left 27.A
 - \mathfrak{o}_r -ideal, right 27.A
 - \mathfrak{D} -differential (on an algebraic curve) 9.F
 - \mathfrak{D} -genus (of an algebraic curve) 9.F
 - \mathfrak{D} -linearly equivalent divisors (on an algebraic curve) 9.F

\mathfrak{S} -specialty index (of a divisor of an algebraic curve) 9.F
 \mathcal{O} -module 383.I
 (o) -convergent 87.L
 (o) -star convergent 87.L
 OA (orthogonal array) 102.L
 Ob (object) 52.A
 object 52.A 411.G
 cofinal 52.D
 final 52.D
 graded 200.B
 group (in a category) 52.M
 initial 52.D
 injective 200.I
 isomorphic 52.D
 mathematical 52.A
 in predicate logic 411.G
 projective 200.I
 quotient 52.D
 S -, category of 52.G
 of type $j + 1$ 356.F
 of type O 356.F
 zero 52.N
 object domain 411.G
 objective function 264.B 307.C
 objective probability 401.B
 object variable 411.G
 oblate App. A, Table 3.V
 oblique circular cone 350.B
 oblique coordinates (in a Euclidean space) 90.B
 observability 86.C
 observables 351.B
 observation
 complete 405.C
 cost of 398.F
 partial 405.C
 observation process 405.F
 observation vector 102.A
 observer, Luenburger 86.E
 obstacle, Dirichlet problem with 440.B
 obstruction(s) 305
 to an n -dimensional homotopy 305.B
 to an $(n + 1)$ -dimensional extension 305.B
 primary 147.L 305.C
 secondary 305.D
 surgery 114.J
 tertiary 305.D
 obstruction class 56.E
 obstruction cocycle 147.L 305.B
 obtuse angle (in Euclidean geometry) 139.D
 OC-curve (operative characteristic curve) 404.C
 octahedral group 151.G
 octahedron 357.B
 odd element (of a Clifford algebra) 61.B
 odd function 165.B
 odd half-spinor 61.E
 odd half-spin representation 61.E
 odd permutation (in a symmetric group) 151.G
 odd ratio 397.K
 odd state 315.H
 of bounded variation 443.G
 Ohm's law (for a moving medium) 130.B 259
 Oka's principle 147.O
 Oka's theorem 72.E
 1-complete manifold, weakly 21.L
 one cycle 16.R
 one-dimensional diffusion processes 115.A
 one-dimensional lattice 287.A
 one-dimensional probability distribution (of random variables) 342.C

one-dimensional statistic 396.B
 $100\alpha\%$ -point 396.C
 1-1 (mapping) 381.C
 one-parameter group
 local (of local transformations) 105.N
 of transformations 105.N 126.B
 one-parameter semigroup of class (C^0) 378.B
 one-parameter subgroup (of a Lie group) 249.Q
 one-parameter variation 178.A
 one-point compactification 425.T
 one-point union 202.F
 one-sided (surface) 410.B
 one-sided stable for exponent $1/2$ App. A, Table 22
 one-sided stable process (of the exponent α) 5.F
 one-step-two-half-steps errors estimate 303.D
 one-to-one correspondence 358.B
 one-to-one mapping 381.C
 only normal crossings 16.L
 Onsager reciprocity relation 402.K
 onto mapping 381.C
 open
 (Riemann surface) 367.A
 (system) 419.A
 (topological manifold) 105.B
 finely 261.D
 Zariski 16.A
 open arc 93.B
 open ball 140
 open base 425.F
 open circle 140
 open continuous homomorphism 423.J
 open covering (of a set) 425.R
 open disk 140
 open formulas 199.A
 opening 186.E
 open interval 140 355.C
 open mapping 425.G
 open mapping theorem
 (in Banach space) 37.I
 (in topological linear spaces) 424.X
 open n -ball 140
 open n -cell 140
 open n -disk 140
 open n -sphere 140
 open neighborhood 425.E
 open parallelotope (in an affine space) 7.D
 open set 425.B
 basic 425.F
 relative 425.J
 system of 425.B
 open simplex 7.D 70.C
 open sphere 140
 open star (in a complex) 70.B,C
 open subgroup (of a topological group) 423.D
 open surface 410.B
 open system entropy 402.G
 open tubular neighborhood 105.L 114.B
 operate
 (in a function algebra) 192.N
 from the left (on a set) 362.B
 from the right (on a set) 362.B
 operating characteristic 404.C
 operating function 192.N
 operating systems 75.C
 operation(s)
 (of an operator domain on a module) 277.C
 (on a set) 409.A
 Adams 237.E
 Bokshtein 64.B
 Boolean 42.A

- cohomology 64
- compatible with 277.C
- four arithmetic 294.A
- functional cohomology 202.S
- functional Φ - 202.S
- glide 92.E
- homotopy 202.O
- left 409.A
- primary cohomology 64.B
- Pontryagin (pth) power 64.B
- primitive (of a group) 362.B
- rational 294.A
- reduced square 64.B
- right 409.A
- ring 368.A
- stable cohomology 64.B
- stable primary cohomology 64.B
- stable secondary cohomology 64.C
- Steenrod (pth) power 64.B
- Steenrod square 64.B
- transitive (of a group) 362.B
- operation A (in set theory) 22.B
- operational calculus 251.G 306, App. A, Table 12.II
- operator
 - (in functional analysis) 162 251.A
 - (on a set) 409.A
 - Abelian 308.E
 - accretive (in a Hilbert space) 286.C
 - additive 251.A
 - adjoint (in Banach spaces) 37.D 251.D
 - adjoint (in Hilbert spaces) 251.E
 - adjoint (of a linear partial differential operator) 322.E
 - adjoint (of a microdifferential operator) 274.F
 - adjoint (of a microlocal operator) 274.F
 - amplification (of the scheme) 304.F
 - angular momentum 258.D
 - annihilation 377.A
 - Beltrami differential, of the first kind App. A, Table 4.II
 - Beltrami differential, of the second kind App. A, Table 4.II
 - boundary 200.C 201.B
 - with a boundary condition 112.F
 - bounded linear 37.C
 - Calderón-Zygmund singular integral 217.J 251.O
 - Cartier 9.E
 - channel wave 375.F
 - closable 251.D
 - closed 39.I 251.D
 - closure 425.B
 - coboundary 200.F
 - compact 68
 - completely continuous 68.B
 - conjugate (in Banach spaces) 37.D
 - conjugate (of a differential operator) 125.F
 - conjugate (of a linear operator) 251.D
 - conjugation (in function algebras) 164.K
 - creation 377.A
 - decomposable (on a Hilbert space) 308.G
 - degeneracy (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
 - diagonalizable (in an Abelian von Neumann algebra) 308.G
 - differential 112 223.C 306.B
 - differential, of the k th order 237.H
 - differentiation 223.C
 - dissipative 286.C
 - domain (of an Ω -group) 190.E
 - domain of 409.A
 - down-ladder 206.B
 - dual (in Banach spaces) 37.D
 - dual (of a differential operator) 125.F
 - dual (of a linear operator) 251.D
 - elliptic 112.A
 - energy-momentum 258.D
 - evolution 378.G
 - exponential function of 306.C
 - face (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
 - formal adjoint 322.E
 - 4-momentum 258.D
 - Fourier integral 274.C
 - Fredholm 68.F 251.D
 - fundamental 163.E
 - generalized wave 375.B
 - Green's 189.A, B 194.C
 - Hamiltonian 351.D
 - Hecke 32.D
 - Hermitian 251.E
 - Hilbert's ε - 411.J
 - holomorphic evolution 378.I
 - identity (on a Banach space) 37.C
 - incoming wave 375.B
 - with index 68.F
 - integral 68.N 100.E 251.O 306.B
 - integral, of Hilbert-Schmidt type 68.C
 - interior 425.B
 - inverse 37.C 251.B
 - isometric 251.E
 - Laplace 323.A 442.D
 - Laplace-Beltrami 194.B
 - linear 251
 - linear (in Banach spaces) 37.C
 - linear (in linear spaces) 256.B
 - linear boundary 315.B
 - linearized 286.E
 - local 125.DD
 - logical 411.E
 - Markov 136.B
 - maximal (of a differential operator) 112.E
 - maximal dissipative 251.J
 - microdifferential 274.F
 - microlocal 274.F
 - microlocally elliptic 345.A
 - Mikusinski's 306.B
 - minimal (of a differential operator) 112.E
 - modified wave 375.B
 - modular 308.H
 - monotone (in a Hilbert space) 286.C
 - nonlinear semigroups of 286.X
 - nonnegative 251.E
 - normal 390.E
 - normal (of Sario) 367.G
 - normal linear 251.E
 - nuclear 68.I, K
 - number 377.A
 - ordinary differential 112.A
 - outgoing wave 375.B
 - partial differential 112.A
 - positive (in vector lattices) 310.E
 - positive semidefinite 251.E
 - projection (in a Hilbert space) 197.E
 - pseudodifferential 251.O 345
 - pseudodifferential (in microlocal analysis) 274.F
 - resolvent (of a Markov process) 261.D
 - ring of 308.C
 - S- 150.D
 - scalar 390.K
 - scattering 375.F, H

- Schrödinger 351.D
- self-adjoint 251.E 390.E
- shift 223.C 251.O 306.C
- spectral 390.K
- Steenrod App. A, Table 6.II
- step-down 206.B
- step-up 206.B
- strongly elliptic 112.G 323.H
- Sturm-Liouville 112.I
- of summable p th power 68.K
- symmetric 251.E
- system of differential 112.R
- T - 375.C
- TCP 150.D
- Toeplitz operator 251.O
- total boundary 200.E
- trace 168.B
- translation 306.C
- transposed 112.E 189.C 322.E
- unilateral shift 390.I
- unitary 390.E
- up-ladder 206.B
- Volterra 68.J
- wave 375.B,H
- operator algebra 308.A
- operator convex 212.C
- operator domain 277.C
 - module with 277.C
- operator homomorphism
 - (of A -modules) 277.E
 - (of Ω -groups) 190.E
- operator isomorphism 190.E
- operator monotone 212.C
- operator topology
 - strong 251.C
 - uniform 251.C
 - weak 251.C
- operator-valued distribution 150.D
- opposite
 - (simplex) 201.C
 - orientation 105.F
 - root 13.R
- optical axis 180.B
- optical direction cosines 180.A
- optical distance 180.A
- optical theorem 386.B
- optics, geometric 180
- optimal
 - (design) 102.E
 - asymptotically 354.O
- optimal control 46.D 86.B,C 405.A
- optimal control problem, time 86.E
- optimality
 - A - 102.E
 - D - 102.E
 - E - 102.E
 - principle of 127.A
- optimal policy 127.A
- optimal regular problem 86.F
- optimal solution 255.A 264.B 292.A
 - basic 255.A
- optimal stopping 405.E
- optimization model 307.C
- optimum allocation 373.E
- optimum predictor, linear 395.D
- optional (stochastic process) 407.B
- optional σ -algebra 407.B
- optional sampling 262.C
- optional sampling theorem 262.A
- orbit
 - (of a dynamical system) 126.B
 - (of a permutation group) 151.H
 - (= system of transitivity) 362.B
 - (of a topological transformation group) 110.A 431.A
 - closed 126.D
 - exceptional 431.C
 - principal 431.C
 - pseudo-, α - 126.J
 - pseudo-, tracing property 126.J
 - singular 431.C
- orbital angular momentum 351.E
- orbital elements, Kepler's 309.B
- orbitally stable 126.F
- orbital stability (of a solution of a differential equation) 394.D
- orbit determination 309.A
- orbit space (of a topological group) 431.A
- orbit type 431.A
 - principal 431.C
- order
 - (of an algebraic number field) 14.B
 - (of a covering) 425.R
 - (of a differential equation) 313.A 320.A
 - (of a differential operator) 112.A
 - (of an element of a group) 190.C
 - (of an elliptic function) 134.E
 - (of a function defined by a Dirichlet series) 121.C
 - (of a function on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (of a generating point of a simple maximally overdetermined system) 274.H
 - (of a group) 190.C
 - (of a homomorphism of Abelian varieties) 3.C
 - (of an infinitesimal) 87.G
 - (of an infinity) 87.G
 - (of a Lie algebra) 191.D
 - (of a meromorphic function) 272.C
 - (of a microdifferential operator) 274.F
 - (of a multistep method) 303.E
 - (= order relation) 311.A
 - (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
 - (of a point in an ordinary curve) 93.C
 - (of a point with respect to a cycle) 99.D
 - (of a pole of a complex function) 198.D
 - (of the precision of numerical solution) 303.B
 - (= a subring) 27.A
 - (of a system of differential equations) 313.B
 - (of a transcendental entire function) 429.B
 - (of a zero point of a complex function) 198.C
 - d'Alembert's method of reduction of 252.F
 - derivatives of higher App. A, Table 9.III
 - difference of the n th 104.A
 - finite (distribution) 125.J
 - γ -point of the k th (of a holomorphic function) 198.C
 - of higher 87.G
 - infinite (element in a group) 190.C
 - left (of a g -lattice) 27.A
 - of lower 87.G
 - maximal (of a g -lattice) 27.A
 - at most (a function) 87.G
 - of the n th 87.G
 - principal (of an algebraic number field) 14.B
 - principal (fundamental theorem of) 14.C
 - right (of a g -lattice) 27.A
 - of the same 87.G
 - small set of 436.G
 - space of line elements of higher 152.C
 - surface of the second 350.A

- zero point of the k th (of a holomorphic function) 198.C
- zero point of the $-k$ th (of a complex function) 198.D
- order α
 - capacity of 169.C
 - Cesàro method of summation of 379.M
 - Hölder condition of 84.A
 - Lipschitz condition of 84.A
 - potential of 338.B
 - summable by Cesàro's method of 379.M
- order k
 - coefficient of 110.A
 - converge in the mean of 173.B 342.D
 - invariants of 110.A
 - population moment of 396.C
 - principal components of 110.A
 - quantile of 341.H
 - Riesz method of summation 379.R
 - summable by Hölder's method of 379.M
 - summable by M. Riesz's method of 379.R
- order p
 - contravariant tensor field of 105.O
 - jet of 105.X
- order s , covariant tensor field of 105.O
- order 0, frame of 110.C
- order 1
 - family of frames of 110.B
 - frame of 110.C
- order 2, frame of 110.B,C
- order 3, frame of 110.B,C
- order 4, frame of 110.B
- order bounded 310.B
- order convergent sequence (in a vector lattice) 310.C
- order-disorder transition 402.F
- ordered additive group 439.B
 - totally 439.B
- ordered complex (of a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
- ordered field 149.N
 - Archimedean 149.N
 - Pythagorean 60.O
- ordered group 243.G
 - lattice- 243.G
 - totally 243.G
- ordered linear spaces 310.B
 - lattice- 310.B
- ordered pair 33.B 381.B
- ordered set 311.A
 - inductively 34.C
 - lattice- 243.A
 - linearly 311.A
 - partially 311.A
 - semi- 311.A
 - totally 311.A
- ordered simplex (in a simplicial complex) 70.E
- ordered simplicial complex 70.C
- order function (meromorphic function) 272.B
- order homomorphic (ordered sets) 311.E
- order homomorphism 311.E
- order ideal (of a vector lattice) 310.B
- ordering 96.C 311.A
 - dual 311.A
 - duality principle for 311.A
 - lexicographic 311.G
 - lexicographic linear 248.M
 - linear 311.A
 - partial 311.A
 - pre- 311.H
 - total 311.A
 - well- 311.C
- order isomorphic (ordered sets) 311.E
- order isomorphism 311.E
- order limit (in a vector lattice) 310.C
- order-preserving mapping 311.E
- order-preserving semigroup 286.Y
- order relation 311.A
- order statistic 396.C
- order topology 425.C
- order type 312.A
- ordinal numbers 312.B
 - admissible 356.G
 - cardinality of 49.E
 - constructive 81.B
 - countable 49.E
 - finite 312.B
 - of the first, second, or third number class 312.D
 - of a higher number class 312.D
 - hyperconstructive 81.E
 - initial 49.E
 - isolated 312.B
 - limit 312.B
 - strongly inaccessible 312.E
 - transfinite 312.B
 - transfinite initial 49.E
 - weakly inaccessible 312.E
- ordinal product (of a family of ordered sets) 311.G
- ordinal scale 397.M
- ordinal sum (of a family of ordered sets) 311.G
- ordinary curve 93.C
- ordinary derivative (of a set function) 380.D
- ordinary differential equation(s) 313, App. A, Table 14
 - (asymptotic behavior of solutions) 314
 - (boundary value problems) 315
 - (initial value problems) 316
 - Euler linear App. A, Table 14.I
 - higher-order App. A, Table 14.I
 - homogeneous App. A, Table 14.I
 - homogeneous (of higher order) App. A, Table 14.I
 - linear 252 313.A
 - linear (with constant coefficients) App. A, Table 14.I
 - linear (of the first order) App. A, Table 14.I
 - linear (global theory) 253
 - linear (of higher order) App. A, Table 14.I
 - linear (local theory) 254
 - nonlinear 313.A
 - nonlinear (global theory) 288
 - nonlinear (local theory) 289
 - system of 313.B
- ordinary differential operator 112.A
- ordinary Dirichlet series 121.A
- ordinary double point (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
- ordinary element 191.I
- ordinary helicoid 111.I
- ordinary helix 111.F 114.F
- ordinary integral element 428.E
- ordinary integral manifold (of a differential ideal) 428.E
- ordinary lower derivative (of a set function) 380.D
- ordinary point
 - (of an analytic set) 23.B
 - (of a curve) 93.G

(in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
 (of an ordinary curve) 93.C
 (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 ordinary representation (of a finite group) 362.G
 ordinary sense, derivable in the 380.D
 ordinary singularity
 (of an analytic function) 198.P
 in the wider sense 198.P
 ordinary solution (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 ordinary upper derivative (of a set function) 380.D
 ordinate set 221.E
 orientable
 (manifold) 105.F 201.N
 (pseudomanifold) 65.B
 transversely 154.B
 orientable fiber bundle 147.L
 orientation
 (of an affine space) 139.B
 (of a contact element) 110.A
 (of a manifold) 105.F 201.N
 local (in an oriented manifold) 201.N
 negative (of an oriented manifold) 105.F
 opposite (of oriented atlases) 105.F
 positive (of an oriented manifold) 105.F
 same (of oriented atlases) 105.F
 orientation cohomology class 201.N
 orientation manifold 201.N
 orientation sheaf 201.R
 orientation-preserving mapping 99.A
 orientation-reversing mapping 99.A
 oriented atlas (of an orientable differentiable manifold) 105.F
 oriented cobordism
 class 114.H
 group 114.H
 oriented differentiable structures, group of (on the combinatorial sphere) 114.I
 oriented element (in a covering manifold) 110.A
 oriented G -manifold 431.E
 oriented graph 186.B
 oriented manifold 105.F 201.N
 integrals over 105.T
 oriented pseudomanifold 65.B
 coherently 65.B
 oriented q -simplex 201.C
 oriented real hypersphere 76.A
 oriented segment 442.A
 oriented simplicial chain complex 201.C
 oriented singular r -simplex of class C^∞ 105.T
 oriented tangent line 76.B
 origin
 (of an affine space) 7.C
 (of a Euclidean space) 140
 (of a projective frame) 343.C
 Orlicz-Pettis theorem 443.D
 Orlicz space 168.B
 Ornstein-Uhlenbeck Brownian motion 45.I
 orthant, positive 89.G
 orthochronous 258.A
 orthocomplement (of a subspace of a linear space) 139.G
 orthogonal
 (block design) 102.J
 (elements of a ring) 368.B
 (in Euclidean geometry) 139.E,G
 (functions) 317.A
 (in a Hilbert space) 197.C
 (linear subspaces) 256.G
 mutually (latin squares) 241.B
 orthogonal array 102.L

Subject Index

Orthonomic system, passive

orthogonal complement (of a subset of a Hilbert space) 197.E
 orthogonal component (of an element of a linear space) 139.G
 orthogonal coordinate system adapted to (a flag) 139.E
 orthogonal curvilinear coordinates 90.C
 orthogonal curvilinear coordinate system App. A, Table 3.V
 orthogonal expansion 317.A
 orthogonal for a finite sum 19.G
 orthogonal fractional factorial design 102.I
 orthogonal frame 111.B 139.E
 orthogonal frame bundle 364.A
 tangent 364.A
 orthogonal function(s) 317, App. A, Table 20
 Haar system of 317.C
 Rademacher system of 317.C
 Walsh's system of 317.C
 orthogonal group 60.I 139.B 151.I
 (over a noncommutative group) 60.O
 complex 60.I
 complex special 60.I
 infinite 202.V
 over K with respect to Q 60.K
 pair 422.I
 proper 60.I 258.A
 reduced 61.D
 special 60.I
 orthogonality for a finite sum 317.D, App. A, Table 20.VII
 orthogonality relation
 (on irreducible characters) 362.G
 (for square integrable unitary representations) 437.M
 orthogonalization
 Gram-Schmidt 317.A
 Schmidt 317.A
 orthogonal k -frame (in \mathbb{R}^n) 199.B
 orthogonal matrix 269.J
 complex 269.J
 proper 269.J
 orthogonal measure 164.C
 orthogonal polynomial(s) 19.G, App. A, Table 20.VII
 Chebyshev 19.G
 simplest 19.G
 system of 317.D
 orthogonal projection
 (in Euclidean geometry) 139.E,G
 (in a Hilbert space) 197.E
 method of 323.G
 orthogonal series (of functions) 317.A
 orthogonal set
 (of functions) 317.A
 (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 (of a ring) 368.B
 orthogonal system
 (of functions) 317.A
 (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 complete 217.G
 orthogonal trajectory 193.J
 orthogonal transformation 139.B 348.B
 (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
 (with respect to a quadratic form) 60.K
 orthogonal transformation group 60.I
 over K with respect to Q 60.K
 orthomodular 351.L
 orthonomic system, passive (of partial differential equations) 428.B

orthonormal basis 197.C
 orthonormalization 139.G
 orthonormal moving frame 417.D
 orthonormal set
 (of functions) 317.A
 (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 complete (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 orthonormal system
 complete 217.G
 complete (of fundamental functions) 217.G
 orthorhombic system 92.E
 oscillate (for a sequence) 87.D
 oscillating (series) 379.A
 oscillating motion 420.D
 oscillation(s) 318
 (of a function) 216.A
 bounded mean 168.B
 damped 318.B
 equation of App. A, Table 15.VI
 forced 318.B
 harmonic 318.B
 nonlinear 290.A
 relaxation 318.C
 nonstationary 290.F
 oscillator process 351.F
 oscillatory 314.F
 osculating circle 111.F
 osculating elements 309.D
 osculating plane 111.F
 osculating process 77.B
 Oseen approximation 205.C
 Osgood theorem, Hartogs- 21.H
 O-S positivity 150.F
 Osterwalder-Schrader axioms 150.F
 Ostrogradskii formula 94.F
 outdegree 186.B
 outer area 216.F 270.G
 outer automorphisms
 group of (of a group) 190.D
 group of (of a Lie algebra) 248.H
 outer capacity, Newtonian 48.H
 outer function 43.F
 outer harmonic measure 169.B
 outer measure 270.E,G
 Carathéodory 270.E
 Lebesgue 270.G
 outer solution 25.B
 outer variable 25.B
 outer volume 270.G
 outgoing subspace 375.H
 outgoing wave operator 375.B
 outlier test 397.Q
 out-state 150.D 386.A
 oval 89.C 111.E
 Cassini 93.H
 mean (of two ovals) 89.D
 width of the 111.E
 ovaloid 89.C 111.I
 overall approximation formula 303.C
 overconvergence 339.E
 overcrossing point 235.A
 overdetermined system
 (of differential operators) 112.I
 (of partial differential equations) 320.F
 maximally (= holonomic) 274.H
 overfield 149.B
 overidentified 128.C
 overrelaxation
 successive (SOR) 302.C

P

$PSL(n, k)$ (projective special linear group) 60.B
 $PS_p(n, k)$ (projective symplectic group over K) 60.L
 $PU(n)$ (projective unitary group) 60.F
 $P^n(K)$ (projective space) 343.H
 φ -subsequence 354.E
 π -group 151.F
 π -length (of a group) 151.F
 π -manifold 114.I
 π -series (of a group) 151.F
 π -solvable group 151.F
 π theorem 116
 π topology 424.R
 Π_1^1 set 22.A
 Π_n^1 set 22.D
 p -adic exponential valuation 439.F
 p -adic extension (of the field of quotients of a Dedekind domain) 439.F
 p -index (of a central simple algebra over a finite algebraic number field) 29.G
 p -invariant (of a central simple algebra over a finite algebraic number field) 29.G
 p -primary ideal 67.F
 \mathfrak{P} -function, Weierstrass 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
 \mathcal{P} -acyclic 200.Q
 p -adic integer(s) 439.F
 ring of 439.F
 p -adic L -function 450.J
 p -adic number 439.F
 p -adic number field 257.A 439.F
 p -adic regulator 450.J
 p -adic valuation 439.F
 p -ary matroid 66.H
 p -atom 168.B
 p -covector 256.O
 p -dimensional noncentral Wishart distribution 374.C
 p -extension (of a field) 59.F
 p -factor (of an element of a group) 362.I
 p -fold exterior power
 (of a linear space) 256.O
 (of a vector bundle) 147.F
 p -form
 tensorial 417.C
 vectorial 417.C
 p -group 151.B
 Abelian 2.A
 complete (Abelian) 2.D
 divisible (Abelian) 2.D
 p -parabolic type 327.H
 p -rank (of a torsion-free additive group) 2.E
 p -regular (element of a finite group) 362.I
 p -Sylow subgroup 151.B
 p th power, operator of summable 68.K
 p th power operation
 Pontryagin 64.B
 Steenrod 64.B
 p -torsion group of an exceptional group App. A, Table 6.IV
 p -valent (function) 438.E
 absolutely 438.E
 circumferentially mean 438.E
 locally 438.E
 locally absolute 438.E
 mean 438.E
 quasi- 438.E
 p -vector 256.O

bundle of 147.F
 (p, q) -ball knot 235.G
 (p, q) -knot 235.G
 $(p + 1)$ -stage method 303.D
 P -convex (for a differential operator) 112.C
 strongly 112.C
 P -function, Riemann 253.B, App. A, Tables
 14.II 18.I
 P -projective resolution 200.Q
 P -wave 351.E
 P_n set 22.D
 P^r -figure 343.B
 p -space 425.Y
 P -space 425.Y
 Padé approximation 142.E
 Padé table 142.E
 Painlevé equation 288.C
 Painlevé theorem 198.G
 Painlevé transcendental function 288.C
 pair 381.B
 (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
 ball 235.G
 BN - 13.R
 contact (in circle geometry) 76.C
 group (of topological Abelian groups) 422.I
 order 381.B
 ordered (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
 orthogonal group 422.I
 Poincaré, of formal dimension n 114.J
 simplicial 201.L
 sphere 65.D 235.G
 topological 201.L
 unordered 381.B
 unordered (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
 paired comparison 346.C
 pairing
 (of linear spaces) 424.G
 axiom of 381.G
 pair test 346.D
 pairwise sufficient (statistic) 396.F
 Palais-Smale condition (C) 279.E 286.Q
 Paley theorem 317.B
 Paley theory, Littlewood- 168.B
 Paley-Wiener theorem 125.O, BB
 pantograph 19.E
 paper
 binomial probability 19.B
 functional 19.D
 logarithmic 19.F
 probability 19.F
 semilogarithmic 19.F
 stochastic 19.B
 Pappus theorem
 (on conic sections) 78.K
 (in projective geometry) 343.C
 parabola(s) 78.A
 family of confocal 78.H
 parabolic
 (differential operator) 112.A
 (Riemann surface) 367.D, E
 (simply connected domain) 77.B
 (visibility manifold) 178.F
 parabolic coordinates 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
 parabolic cusp (of a Fuchsian group) 122.C
 parabolic cylinder 350.B
 parabolic cylinder function 167.C
 parabolic cylindrical coordinates 167.C, App. A,
 Table 3.V
 parabolic cylindrical equation App. A, Table 14.II

parabolic cylindrical surface 350.B
 parabolic-elliptic motion 420.D
 parabolic geometry 285.A
 parabolic motion 420.D
 parabolic point (on a surface) 110.B 111.H
 parabolic quadric hypersurface 350.I
 parabolic subalgebra (of a semisimple Lie algebra)
 248.O
 parabolic subgroup
 (of an algebraic group) 13.G
 (of the BN -pair) 13.R
 (of a Lie group) 249.J
 cuspidal 437.X
 minimal k - 13.Q
 standard k - 13.Q
 parabolic transformation 74.F
 parabolic type
 (equation of evolution) 378.I
 partial differential equation of 327
 paraboloid
 elliptic 350.B
 elliptic, of revolution 350.B
 hyperbolic 350.B
 paracompact (space) 425.S
 countably 425.Y
 strongly 425.S
 paracompact C' -manifold 105.D
 paradox(es) 319
 Burali-Forti 319.B
 d'Alembert 205.C
 Richard 319.B
 Russel 319.B
 Skolem 156.E
 Zeno 319.C
 parallax
 annual 392
 geocentric 392
 parallel(s)
 (affine subspaces) 7.B
 (lines) 139.A 155.B
 (lines in hyperbolic geometry) 285.B
 (tensor field) 364.B
 axioms of 139.A
 in the narrow sense (in an affine space) 7.B
 in the sense of Levi-Civita 111.H
 in the wider sense (in an affine geometry) 7.B
 parallel coordinates (in an affine space) 7.C
 parallel displacement
 (in an affine connection) 80.H
 (in a connection) 80.C
 (in the Riemannian connection) 364.B
 parallelepiped, rectangular 14.O
 parallelism, absolute 191.B
 parallelizable
 (flow) 126.E
 (manifold) 114.I
 almost 114.I
 s - 114.I
 stably 114.I
 parallelogram, period 134.E
 parallelootope 425.T
 (in an affine space) 7.D
 open (in an affine space) 7.D
 parallel projection (in an affine space) 7.C
 parallel translation 80.C 364.B
 parameter(s) 165.C
 (of an elliptic integral) 134.A
 (in a population distribution) 401.F
 (of a probability distribution) 396.B

- acceleration 302.C
- canonical (of an arc) 111.D
- design for estimating 102.M
- distinct system of 284.D
- estimable 403.E
- isothermal 334.B
- isothermal (for an analytic surface) 111.I 334.B
- Lagrange's method of variation of 252.D
- linear 102.A
- linearly estimable 403.E
- local (Fuchsian groups) 32.B
- local (of a nonsingular algebraic curve) 9.C
- local (of a Riemann surface) 367.A
- local canonical (for power series) 339.A
- local uniformizing (of a Riemann surface) 367.A
- location 396.I 400.E
- one- (group of transformations) 105.N
- one- (subgroup of a Lie group) 249.Q
- one-, semigroup of class (C^0) 378.B
- of regularity (of a Lebesgue measurable set) 380.D
- regular system of 284.D
- scale 396.I 400.E
- secondary 110.A
- selection 396.F
- system of 284.D
- time (of a stochastic process) 407.A
- transformation 396.I
- transformation of 111.D
- true value of 398.A
- parameter space
 - (of a family of compact complex manifolds) 72.G
 - (of a family of probability measures) 398.A
 - (of a probability distribution) 396.B
- parametrically sustained vibration 318.B
- parametric function 102.A 399.A
- parametric programming 264.C
- parametric representation 165.C
 - (of Feynman integrals) 146.B
 - (of a subspace of an affine space) 7.C
- parametrix 189.C
 - left 345.A
 - right 345.A
- parametrized, effectively (at 0) 72.G
- paraxial ray 180.B
- parity check matrix 63.C
- parity check polynomial 63.D
- parity transformation 359.B
- Parreau-Widom type 164.K
- Parseval equality 18.B 197.C
- Parseval identity 18.B 159.A 160.C 192.K 220.B,C,E
- parsing 31.E
- part(s)
 - (for a function algebra) 164.F
 - connected 150.D
 - cyclic (of an ergodic class) 260.B
 - dissipative (of a state space) 260.B
 - essential 260.I
 - finite (of an integral) 125.C
 - Gleason (for a function algebra) 164.F
 - holomorphic (in a Laurent expansion) 198.D
 - homogeneous (of a formal power series) 370.A
 - imaginary 74.A
 - integration by (for the D-integral) 100.G
 - integration by (for the Stieltjes integral) 94.C
 - integration by (for the Riemann integral) 216.C
 - negative (of an element of a vector lattice) 310.B
 - positive (of an element of a vector lattice) 310.B
 - principal (of a differential operator) 112.A
 - principal (of a Laurent expansion) 198.D
 - principal (of a partial differential operator) 320.B
 - purely contractive 251.N
 - real 74.A
 - semisimple (of an algebraic group) 13.E
 - semisimple (of a nonsingular matrix) 13.E
 - singular (of a Laurent expansion) 198.D
 - unipotent (of an algebraic group) 13.E
 - unipotent (of a nonsingular matrix) 13.E
- partial boundary operator 200.E
- partial capture 420.D
- partial correlation coefficient 397.J
 - sample 280.E
- partial denominator (of an infinite continued fraction) 83.A
- partial de Rham system 274.G
- partial derivative 106.F,K
 - n th-order 106.H
- partial derived functor 200.I
- partial differential 200.H
- partial differential coefficient 106.E
- partial differential equation(s) 313.A 320
 - (initial value problems) 321
 - (method of integration) 322
 - of elliptic type 323, App. A, Table 15.VI
 - of the first order 324
 - Fokker-Planck 115.A
 - hyperbolic 325
 - of hyperbolic type 325
 - of mixed type 326
 - of parabolic type 327
 - solution, of the first order App. A, Table 15.II
 - solution, of the second order App. A, Table 15.III
 - system of, of order 1 (on a differentiable manifold) 428.F
- partial differential operator 112.A
- partial differentiation 106.F
- partial fraction App. A, Table 10.V
- partial function 356.E
- partial graph 186.C
- partially balanced incomplete block design 102.J 406.J
- partially confounded (with blocks) 102.J
- partially conserved axial-vector currents 132.G
- partially differentiable (function) 106.F
- partially isometric (operator) 251.E
- partially ordered set 311.A
- partial mapping (of a mapping) 381.C
- partial numerator (of an infinite continued fraction) 83.A
- partial observation 405.C
- partial ordering 311.A
- partial pivoting 302.B
- partial product 379.G
- partial quotient, n th 83.A
- partial recursive (in a partial recursive function) 356.E,F
- partial sum (of a series) 379.A
 - diagonal (of a double series) 379.E
- partial summation, Abel 379.D
- partial wave 386.B
- partial wave expansion 375.E 386.B
- partial wave scattering amplitude 375.E

- particle(s)
 - Bose 132.A
 - composite 132.A
 - elementary 132
 - Fermi 132.A
- particular solution
 - (of a differential equation) 313.A
 - (of partial differential equations) 320.C
 - (for a system of differential equations) 313.C
- particular transformation (of h_R^*) 248.R
- partition(s)
 - (in ergodic theory) 136.E
 - (of an interval) 216.A
 - (of a set) 381.D
 - (of a space) 425.L
 - entropy of 136.E
 - ε -independent 136.E
 - independent sequence of 136.E
 - Markov (for an automorphism) 136.C,G
 - number of 177.D 328
 - of numbers 328
 - Pinsker 136.E
 - principal 66.H
 - of unity 425.R
 - of unity of class C^∞ 105.S
 - of unity subordinate to a covering 425.R
 - upper semicontinuous 425.L
- partition function 402.D
 - grand 402.D
- partitioning algorithm 215.E
- Pascal, B. 329
 - limaçon of 93.H
- Pascal configuration 78.K
- Pascal line 78.K
- Pascal theorem
 - (on conic sections) 78.K
 - (in geometry) 155.E
 - (in projective geometry) 343.E
- Pascal triangle 330
- Pasch's axiom (in geometry) 155.B
- passive
 - (state) 402.G
 - completely 402.G
- passive boundary point 260.I
 - dual 260.I
- passive network 282.C
- passive orthonomic system (of partial differential equations) 428.B
- past cone 258.A
- past history, independent of the 406.D
- past together the boundaries 114.F
- path
 - (in a Finsler space) 152.C
 - (in a graph) 186.F
 - (of a Markov process) 261.B
 - (of a stochastic process) 407.A
 - (in a topological space) 148.C 170
 - asymptotic (for a meromorphic function) 272.H
 - closed (in a graph) 186.F
 - closed (in a topological space) 170
 - closed, space of 202.C
 - critical 376
 - direct 186.F
 - direct closed 186.F
 - Euler (in a graph) 186.F
 - general geometry of 152.C
 - Hamilton 186.F
 - of an integration (curvilinear integral) 94.D
 - inverse 170
 - nontangential 333.B
 - projective geometry of 109
 - quasi-independent of (response probability) 346.G
 - sample 407.A
 - simple 186.F
 - Stolz (in a plane domain) 333.B
- path-component 79.B
- path-connected 79.B
- path-dependent, d -trial 346.G
- path-independent (response probability) 346.G
- path integral 351.F
- pathological (space) 65.F
- path space 148.C 261.B
- pathwise uniqueness of solution 406.D
- pattern formation 263.D
- Pauli approximation 351.G
- Pauli-Lubanski vector 258.D
- Pauli principle 351.G
- Pauli spin matrix 258.A 351.G
- payoff 108.B,C 173.B
- payoff function 173.C
- PBIBD (partially balanced incomplete block design) 102.J
- PC (predictor-corrector) method 303.E
- PCT invariance 386.B
- PCT theorem 386.B
- peak point 164.D
 - generalized 164.D
- peak set 164.D
 - generalized 164.D
- Peano area (of a surface) 246.F
- Peano continuum 93.D
- Peano curves 93.J
- Peano postulates 294.B
- Pearson distribution 397.D
- Pearson lemma, Neyman- 400.B
- Péclet number 116.B
- pedal curve 93.H
- Peierls-Bogolyubov inequality 212.B
- Peirce decomposition (of a Jordan algebra) 231.B
- Peirce left decomposition (in a unitary ring) 368.F
- Peirce right decomposition (in a unitary ring) 368.F
- Peirce space 231.B
- Pełczyński theorem, Bessaga- 443.D
- Pell equation 118.A
- penalized problems 440.B
- penalty method 292.E
- penalty term 440.B
- pencil
 - algebraic 15.C
 - of conics 343.E
 - of hyperplanes (in a projective space) 343.B
 - Lefschetz 16.U
 - linear 16.N
 - of lines (in a projective plane) 343.B
 - of planes (in a 3-dimensional projective space) 343.B
 - of quadric hypersurfaces 343.E
 - of quadrics 343.E
- peninsula (in a Riemann surface) 272.J
- pentagram function 174.B
- pentagon 155.F
- pentagonal number 4.D
- pentagonal number theorem 328
- pentaspherical coordinates 90.B
- percolation process 340.D
 - bond 340.D
 - site 340.D

- perfect
 - (image) 180.A
 - α -(graph) 186.K
 - γ -(graph) 186.K
- perfect additive functional 261.E
- perfect code 63.B
- perfect delay convention 51.F
- perfect field 149.H
- perfect fluid 205.B
- perfect image 425.CC
- perfect inverse image 425.CC
- perfect kernel (in potential theory) 338.E
- perfectly normal space 425.Q
- perfectly separable space 425.P
- perfect mapping 425.W
 - quasi- 425.CC
- perfectness theorem 186.K
- perfect number 297.D
 - of the second kind 297.D
- perfect set 425.O
- perigon, straight 139.D
- perihelion distance 309.B
- period
 - (of an Abelian differential form) 11.C
 - (of an ergodic class) 260.B
 - (of a marked K3 surface) 72.K
 - (of an orbit) 126.D
 - (of an oscillation) 318.A
 - (of a periodic continued fraction) 83.C
 - (of a periodic function) 134.B
 - (of a wave) 446
 - fundamental 134.E
- periodogram 421.C
- periodic (trajectory) 126.D
 - almost 126.F
- periodic continued fraction 83.C
- periodic endomorphism (at a point) 136.E
- periodic function 134.E
 - almost (on a graph) 18.E
 - almost (with respect to p) 18.C
 - almost (in the sense of Bohr) 18.B
 - analytic almost 18.D
 - doubly 134.E
 - simply 134.E
 - uniformly almost 18.B
- periodic group 2.A
 - maximally almost 18.I
 - minimally almost 18.I
- periodic inequality, Riemann 3.L
- periodicity 390.J
- periodicity modulus (of an elliptic integral) 134.A
- periodicity theorem, Bott 202.V 237.D, App. A, Table 6.VII
- periodic solution (of Hill's equation) 268.E
- period matrix
 - (of a closed Riemann surface) 11.C
 - (of a complex torus) 3.H
- period parallelogram 134.E
 - fundamental 134.E
- period relation, Riemann's 3.L 11.C
- peripheral devices 75.B
- peripheral system 235.B
- permeability, magnetic 130.B
- permeable membrane 419.A
- permutation 190.B
 - (in a symmetric group) 151.G
 - even 151.G
 - k- 330
 - odd 151.G
- permutation group 190.B
 - of degree n 151.G
 - imprimitive 151.G
 - intransitive 151.H
 - K-transitive 151.H
 - K-ply transitive 151.H
 - multiply transitive 151.H
 - primitive 151.H
 - regular 151.H
 - transitive 151.H
- permutation representation (of a group) 362.B
 - degree of 362.B
 - faithful 362.B
 - primitive 362.B
 - reciprocal 362.B
 - similar 362.B
- perpendicular
 - (to a hyperplane) 139.E
 - foot of the 139.E
- perpetual motion 402.G
- Perron-Brelot solution (of Dirichlet problem) 120.C
- Perron-Frobenius theorem 310.H
- Perron integrable (function) 100.F
- Perron method (in Dirichlet problem) 120.C
- Perron theorem
 - (on linear transformations of sequences) 379.L
 - (on ordinary differential equations) 316.E
 - (on positive matrices) 269.N
- Perron-Wiener-Brelot solution (of Dirichlet problem) 120.C
- persistent 260.J
- perspective 343.B
- perspective mapping (in projective geometry) 343.B
- PERT 307.C 376
- perturbation(s)
 - analytic 331.D
 - asymptotic 331.D
 - general theory of 420.E
 - Kato 351.D
 - of linear operators 331
 - method 25.A
 - regular 331.D
 - secular 55.B
 - singular 289.E
 - special theory of 420.E
- Petersson conjecture, Ramanujan- 32.D
- Petersson metric 32.B
- Peter-Weyl theory
 - (on compact groups) 69.B
 - (on compact Lie groups) 249.U
- Petrovskii, hyperbolic in the sense of 325.F
- Petrovskii theorem 112.D
- Pettis completely additivity theorem 443.G
- Pettis integrable 443.F
 - Gel'fand- 443.F
- Pettis integral 443.F
 - Gel'fand- 443.F
- Pettis measurability theorem 443.B
- Pettis theorem
 - Dunford- 68.M
 - Orlicz- 443.D
- Petryashvili equation, Kadomtsev- 387.F
- Pfaffian 103.G
- Pfaffian equation(s) 428.A
 - system of 428.A
- Pfaffian form 428.A
- Pfaff problem 428.A
 - generalized 428.B
- Pfluger extremal length, Hersch- 143.A
- phase

- initial (of a simple harmonic motion) 318.B
- pure 402.G
- phase average 402.C
- phase constant (of a sine wave) 446
- phase function (of a Fourier integral operator) 274.C 345.B
- phase portrait 126.B
- phase shift 375.E 386.B
- phase space
 - (of a dynamical system) 126.C 290.C
 - (for functional-differential equation) 163.C
 - (in statistical mechanics) 402.C
 - momentum 126.L
 - velocity 126.L
- phase transition 340.B
- phase velocity (of a sine wave) 446
- phenomenon
 - Gibbs 159.D
 - Runge 223.A
 - Stokes 254.D
- photon 132.B 377.B
- Phragmén-Lindelöf theorem 43.C
- physical Hilbert space 150.G
- physically contains 351.K
- PI-algebra (algebra with polynomial identities) 29.J
- Picard exceptional value 272.E
- Picard group (of a commutative ring) 237.J
- Picard-Lefschetz formula 418.F
- Picard-Lefschetz transformation 16.U
- Picard number (of a variety) 16.P
- Picard scheme 16.P
- Picard theorem
 - (on transcendental entire functions) 429.B
 - (on transcendental meromorphic functions) 272.E
- Picard variety 16.P
 - (of a compact Kähler manifold) 232.C
- Picard-Vessiot extension field 113
- Picard-Vessiot theory 113
- picture
 - Heisenberg 351.D
 - Schrödinger 351.D
- piecewise affine mapping 192.Q
- piecewise continuous function 84.B
- piecewise linear mapping 65.A 70.C
- piecewise smooth curve 364.A
- Pincherle-Goursat kernel 217.F
- Pinching problem (differentiable) 178.E
- Pinsker partition 136.E
- Pitman estimator 399.G
- pivot 302.B
- pivoting
 - complete 302.B
 - partial 302.B
- PL category 65.A
- PL embedding 65.D
- PL homeomorphism 65.A
- PL isomorphism 65.A
- PL k -ball 65.C
- PL $(k - 1)$ -sphere 65.C
- PL mapping (map) 65.A
- PL microbundle 147.P
- PL (n, m) -ball knot 65.D
- PL (n, m) -knot 65.D
- PL normal 147.P
- PL structure 65.C
- PL tangent 147.P
- PL topology 65.A
- place (of a field) 439.J
- placement problem 235.A
- planar 367.G
- planar character 367.G
- planar curvilinear coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
- planar graph 186.H
- planarity (of a graph) 186.H
- Plancherel formula (on a unimodular locally compact group) 437.L
- Plancherel measure (of a locally compact group) 437.L
- Plancherel theorem 160.H 192.A, K
 - (with respect to the Radon transform) 218.G
- Planck constant 351.A
- Planck (partial differential) equation, Fokker-115.A 402.I
- plane(s) 155.B
 - (as an affine space) 7.A
 - (in a projective space) 343.B
 - Cayley projective 54
 - complex 74.C
 - conjugate (with respect to a quadric surface) 350.C
 - coordinates (of a plane) 343.C
 - finite projective 241.B
 - Gauss-Argand 74.C
 - Gaussian 74.C
 - half- 155.B 333.A
 - hodograph 205.B
 - hyperbolic 122.C
 - normal 111.F
 - osculating 111.F
 - pencil of (in a 3-dimensional projective space) 343.B
 - polar (with respect to a quadric surface) 350.C
 - principal (of a quadric surface) 350.B
 - projective 343.B
 - rectifying 111.F
 - tangent 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - w - 74.D
 - z - 74.D
- plane algebraic curve 9.B
- plane coordinates (of a plane) 343.C
- plane curve App. A, Table 4.I
 - continuous 93.B
- plane domains 333
 - closed 333.A
 - multiply connected 333.A
 - n -ply connected 333.A
- plane geometry 181
- plane polygon 155.F
- plane triangle App. A, Table 2.II
- plane trigonometry 432.A
- plane wave 446
- plane wave decomposition 125.CC
- planimeter 19.A
- planning
 - production 376
 - statistical 102.A
- plasticity, theory of 271.G
- Plateau problem 334
- playable 108.B
- Pleijel asymptotic expansion, Minakshisundaram-391.B
- PLK (Poincaré-Lighthill-Kuo) method 25.B
- Plotkin bound 63.B
- plots 102.B
- Plücker coordinates (in a Grassman manifold) 90.B
- Plücker formulas (on plane algebraic curves) 9.B
- Plücker relations (on Plücker coordinates) 90.B

- plurigenera 15.E
- pluriharmonic distribution 21.C
- plurisubharmonic function 21.G
- plus infinity 87.D
- Pochhammer differential equation, Tissot- 206.C
- Poincaré, H. 335
 - last theorem of 153.B
 - theta-Fuchsian series of 32.B
- Poincaré-Birkhoff fixed-point theorem 153.B
- Poincaré-Birkhoff-Witt theorem (on Lie algebras) 248.J
- Poincaré-Bruns theorem 420.A
- Poincaré characteristic, Euler- 16.E 201.B
- Poincaré class
 - Euler- 56.B,F
 - universal Euler- 56.B
- Poincaré complete reducibility theorem 3.C
- Poincaré complex 114.J
- Poincaré condition (in Dirichlet problem) 120.A
- Poincaré conjecture 65.C
 - generalized 65.C
- Poincaré differential invariant 74.G
- Poincaré duality 201.O 450.Q
- Poincaré formula (in integral geometry) 218.C
- Poincaré formula, Euler- 201.B,F
- Poincaré group 170 258.A
- Poincaré-Lefschetz duality theorem 201.O
- Poincaré-Lighthill-Kuo (PLK) method 25.B
- Poincaré manifold 105.A
- Poincaré mapping (map) 126.C,G
- Poincaré method 25.B
- Poincaré method, Lindstedt- 290.E
- Poincaré metric 74.G
- Poincaré model (of geometry) 285.D
- Poincaré pair (of formal dimension n) 114.J
- Poincaré polynomial (of a finite simplicial complex) 201.B
- Poincaré series 32.B
- Poincaré series, Eisenstein- 32.F
- Poincaré theorem 383.E
 - (on Abelian varieties) 3.D
- Poincaré-Volterra theorem 198.J
- Poinot representation 271.E
- point(s)
 - (of an affine space) 7.A
 - (in the foundations of geometry) 155.B
 - (of a graph) 186.B
 - (in projective geometry) 343.B
 - accessible boundary (of a plane domain) 333.B
 - accumulation 425.O
 - accumulation (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - adherent 425.B
 - algebraic (over a field) 369.C
 - algebraic branch (of a Riemann surface) 367.B
 - almost all, of a variety 16.A
 - α - (of a meromorphic function) 272.B
 - α -limit 126.D
 - ambiguous 62.D
 - antipodal (on a sphere) 140
 - apparent singular 254.C
 - base (of a linear system) 16.N
 - base (of a loop) 170
 - base (of a topological space) 202.B
 - bifurcation 126.M 217.M 286.R
 - boundary (of a subset) 425.N
 - branch (of a covering surface) 367.B
 - branch (of a harmonic mapping) 275.B
 - branch (of an ordinary curve) 93.C
 - catastrophe 51.F
 - cluster 425.O
 - coincidence (of maps) 153.B
 - collinear (in projective geometry) 343.B
 - complete accumulation 425.O
 - condensation 425.O
 - conjugate 46.C 364.C
 - conjugate (in a projective space) 343.E
 - corresponding (with respect to confocal quadrics) 350.E
 - critical (of a C^∞ -function) 279.B
 - critical (of a function) 106.L
 - critical (of a mapping) 105.J 193.J 208.B
 - critical (of a trajectory) 126.D
 - cut (on a geodesic) 178.A
 - degenerate critical 106.L 279.B
 - degree of 99.D
 - of density (of a measurable set of the real line) 100.B
 - dependent (in an affine space) 7.A
 - dependent (in a projective space) 343.B
 - deviation 336.B
 - discontinuity 84.B
 - discontinuity, of the first kind 84.B
 - discontinuity, of the second kind 84.B
 - dual passive boundary 260.I
 - elliptic (of a Fuchsian group) 122.C
 - elliptic (on a surface) 111.H
 - end (of an ordinary curve) 93.C
 - entrance boundary 260.I
 - equianharmonic range of 343.D
 - equilibrium 108.C
 - equilibrium (in the theory of games) 173.C
 - equilibrium (of a trajectory) 126.D
 - equivariant (of a mapping) 153.B
 - equivariant, index (of a mapping) 153.B
 - essentially singular (with respect to an analytic set) 21.M
 - estimation 399.B 401.C
 - exit boundary 260.I
 - exterior (of a subset) 425.N
 - externally irregular 338.L
 - extreme (of a convex set) 89.A
 - extreme (of a subset of a linear space) 424.T
 - fixed (of a discontinuous transformation group) 122.A
 - fixed (of a flow) 126.D
 - fixed (of a mapping) 153.A
 - fixed (of a mapping in a topological linear space) 153.D
 - fixed (method of roundoff) 138.B
 - fixed (of a topological transformation group) 431.A
 - fixed, of discontinuity 5.B 407.A
 - fixed, index (of a mapping) 153.B
 - fixed branch (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
 - fixed, theorem 153
 - flat (of a surface) 111.H
 - focal (of a submanifold of a Riemannian manifold) 364.C
 - frontier (of a subset) 425.N
 - functions 380.A
 - fundamental (of a projective space) 343.C
 - fundamental (with respect to a birational mapping) 16.I
 - γ -, of the k th order (of a holomorphic function) 198.C
 - generalized peak 164.D
 - generic 16.A
 - geodesic 111.H 365.D

- geometric (of a scheme) 16.D
- harmonic range of 343.D
- homoclinic 126.J
- hyperbolic (on a surface) 111.H
- hyperbolic fixed 126.G
- hyperbolic singular 126.G
- ideal (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
- independent (in an affine space) 7.A
- independent (in a projective space) 343.B
- at infinity (in affine geometry) 7.B
- at infinity (of a Gaussian plane) 74.D
- at infinity (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
- at infinity (of a Riemann manifold) 178.F
- of inflection (of a curve of class C^2) 93.G
- of inflection (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
- initial (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
- initial (of a path) 170
- initial (of a position vector) 7.A
- initial (of a vector) 442.A
- integral 428.E,F
- interior 425.B
- internally irregular 338.L
- irregular (of an analytic set) 45.D
- irregular (of a Markov process) 261.D
- irregular boundary 120.D
- irregular singular 254.B
- isolated 425.O
- isolated (of a curve) 93.G
- isolated fixed 126.G
- isotropic 365.D
- k -rational (of an algebraic variety) 16.A 369.C
- left singular (of a diffusion process) 115.B
- limit (of a discontinuous group) 122.C
- limit (of a sequence of points) 87.E
- limit (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.B
- limit, type 112.I
- logarithmic branch (of a Riemann surface) 367.B
- middle (of two points of an affine space) 7.C
- movable branch (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
- multiple (on an arc) 93.B
- multiple (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
- multiple (on a variety) 16.F
- negative limit 126.D
- nodal 304.C
- nondegenerate critical 106.L 279.B
- nondegenerate critical (of a function on a Hilbert manifold) 286.N
- nonrecurrent 260.B
- nonsingular (of an algebraic variety) 16.F
- normal (of an analytic space) 23.D
- normal (of a variety) 16.F
- null recurrent 260.B
- ω -limit 126.D
- 100%- 396.C
- order of (with respect to a cycle) 99.D
- order of (in an ordinary curve) 93.C
- ordinary (of an analytic set) 23.B
- ordinary (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
- ordinary (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
- ordinary (of an ordinary curve) 93.C
- ordinary (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
- ordinary (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
- overcrossing 235.A
- parabolic (on a surface) 110.B 111.H
- passive boundary 260.I
- peak 164.D
- positive limit 126.D
- positive recurrent 260.B
- principal 180.B
- r -ple (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
- ramification (of an analytic covering space) 23.E
- rational 118.E
- rational double 418.C
- recurrent (of a Markov process) 261.B
- reflection (with respect to a circle) 74.E
- regular (of an analytic set) 23.B 45.D
- regular (with respect to an analytic set) 21.M
- regular (in catastrophe theory) 51.F
- regular (of a differentiable mapping) 105.J
- regular (of a diffusion process) 115.B
- regular (with respect to the Dirichlet problem) 207.B
- regular (of a flow) 126.D
- regular (of a Hunt process) 261.D
- regular (of a polyhedron or cell complex) 65.B
- regular (of a surface in E^3) 111.J
- regular boundary 120.D
- regular singular 254.B
- rest (of a trajectory) 126.D
- right singular (of a diffusion process) 115.B
- saddle (of a function) 255.B 292.A
- saddle (on a surface) 111.H
- saddle (of a system of ordinary differential equations) 126.G
- saddle (of two-person games) 108.B
- saddle, method 25.C
- sample 342.B 396.B 398.A
- Schwinger 150.F
- semiregular (of a surface in E^3) 111.J
- simple (of an analytic set) 23.B 418.A
- simple (on a variety) 16.F
- singular (of an analytic set) 23.B 418.A
- singular (of a continuous vector field) 153.B
- singular (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
- singular (of a linear difference equation) 104.D
- singular (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
- singular (of a polyhedron or cell complex) 65.B
- singular (of a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
- singular (of a surface in E^3) 111.J
- singular (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 254.A
- singular (of a system of ordinary differential equations) 289.A
- singular (of a trajectory) 126.D,G
- singular (on a variety) 16.F
- smooth (of variety) 16.F
- stable 16.W
- stationary (of an arc of class C^n) 111.D
- successive minimum 182.C
- supporting (of a convex set) 89.G
- supporting (of a projective frame) 343.C
- symmetric (with respect to a circle) 74.E
- terminal (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
- terminal (of a Markov process) 261.B
- terminal (of a path) 176
- terminal (of a vector) 442.A
- transient 260.B
- transition 254.F
- transversal homoclinic 126.J
- turning 25.B 254.F
- ultrafinite (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
- umbilical (of a surface) 111.H 365.D
- undercrossing 235.A
- unit (of an affine frame) 7.C
- unit (of a projective frame) 343.C
- unit (of a projective space) 343.C

- w- (of an entire function) 429.B
- wandering (of a trajectory) 126.E
- Weierstrass 11.D
- zero (of a holomorphic function) 198.C
- zero (of a polynomial) 337.B 369.C
- zero (of a subset of a polynomial ring) 369.C
- zero, of the $-k$ th order (of a complex function) 198.D
- zero, of the k th order (of a holomorphic function) 198.C
- point(s) at infinity 74.D 285.C
 - regular at the 193.B
- pointed coalgebra 203.F
- pointed set 172.J
 - morphism of 172.J
- pointed shape category 382.A
- pointed topological spaces, category of 202.B
- pointer 96.B
- point estimation 399.B 401.C, App. A, Table 23
- point-finite covering (of a set) 425.R
- point function 380.A 407.D
- point group (of a crystallographic group) 92.A
- point hypersphere 76.A
- point process 407.D
- point range (in projective geometry) 343.B
 - of the number system (in projective geometry) 343.C
- point set 381.B
- points of indeterminacy, set of 23.D
- point spectrum 390.A
 - pure 136.E
- pointwise convergent sequence 435.B
- pointwise ergodic theorem 136.B
- Poisson bracket 82.B 271.F 324.C,D
 - (of two vector fields) 105.M
- Poisson differential equation 323.A, App. A, Table 15.III
- Poisson distribution 341.D 397.F, App. A, Table 22
- Poisson equation 338.A
- Poisson formula App. A, Table 19.III
 - of $T^m = E^m/\Gamma$ 391.J
- Poisson input 260.H
- Poisson integral 168.B 193.G
- Poisson integral formula 198.B
- Poisson integration formula App. A, Table 15.VI
- Poisson kernel 159.C
- Poisson number 271.G
- Poisson point process, stationary 407.D
- Poisson process 5.D
 - compound 5.F
- Poisson random measure 407.D
- Poisson ratio 271.G
- Poisson solution 325.D
- Poisson stable 126.E
 - negatively 126.E
 - positively 126.E
- Poisson summation formula 192.C
 - (of Fourier transforms) 192.C
 - (on a locally compact Abelian group) 192.I.
- polar
 - (with respect to a conic) 78.J
 - (in projective geometry) 343.E
 - (relative to pairing) 424.H
- polar coordinates 90.C
 - geodesic 90.C
 - tangential 90.C
- polar decomposition 251.E
- polar element
 - (a function element in the wider sense) 198.O
 - (of an integral element) 428.E
- polar form (of a complex number) 74.C
- polarity (with respect to a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
- polarization (on an Abelian variety) 3.G
 - electric 130.A
 - inhomogeneous 3.G
 - magnetic 130.A
 - principal 3.G
- polarized
 - (Hodge structure) 16.V
 - (wave) 446
- polarized Abelian variety 3.G
- polarized Jacobian variety, canonically 3.G 9.E
- polar plane (with respect to a quadric surface) 350.C
- polar set (in potential theory) 261.D 338.H
- polar space 191.I
- polar system (in projective geometry) 343.D
- polar tetrahedron 350.C
 - self- 350.C
- polar triangle 78.J
 - self- 78.J
- pole
 - (of a complex function) 198.D
 - (of a function on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (of a function on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 - (of a polar with respect to a conic) 78.J
 - (of a polar plane) 350.C
 - (of a polar of a quadric hypersurface) 158.E
 - (of a roulette) 93.H
 - north (of a complex sphere) 74.D
 - north (of a sphere) 140
 - order of 198.D
 - Regge 132.C 386.C
 - resonance 331.F
 - south (of a complex sphere) 74.D
 - south (of a sphere) 140
- pole divisor (of a function on an algebraic variety) 16.M
- policy 127.A 405.C
 - Markovian 405.C
 - optimal 127.A
- Polish space 22.I 273.J
- Pólya's enumeration theorem 66.E
- Pólya type 374.J
 - strictly of 374.J
- polychromatic group 92.D
- polydisk 21.B
- polygamma functions 174.B, App. A, Table 17.I
- polygon(s) 155.F
 - Cauchy 316.C
 - decomposition-equal 155.F
 - force 19.C
 - normal 234.C
 - plane 155.F
 - regular 357.A
 - simple 155.F
 - supplementation-equal 155.F
- polygonal number of order r 4.D
- polyharmonic 193.O
- polyhedral, convex rational 16.Z
- polyhedral angle, regular 357.B
- polyhedral cone, convex 89.F
- polyhedral group, regular 151.G
- polyhedron (polyhedra)
 - (in an affine space) 7.D
 - (of a simplicial complex) 65.A 70.C
- analytic 21.G
- convex 89.A

corner 215.C
 Euclidean 70.B
 Euler theorem on 201.F
 integer 215.C
 regular 357.B
 topological 65.A
 polymatroid 66.F
 polynomial(s) 337
 Alexander (of a knot) 235.C,D
 alternating 337.I
 associated Laguerre 317.D
 Bernoulli 177.B
 Bernshtein 336.A
 Bernshtein (generalized) 418.H
 characteristic (of a differential operator) 112.A
 321.A
 characteristic (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 characteristic (of a matrix) 269.F
 Chebyshev 317.D 336.H, App. A, Table 20.II
 Chebyshev orthogonal 19.G
 cyclotomic 14.L
 differential 113
 Euler 177.C
 Fourier-Hermite 176.I
 Galois group of the 172.G
 Gegenbauer 317.D 393.E, App. A, Table 20.I
 generalized trigonometric 18.B
 Hermite 317.D
 Hermite interpolation 223.E
 Hilbert (of an algebraic curve) 9.F
 Hilbert (of a graded R -module) 369.F
 Hilbert (of a sheaf) 16.E
 homogeneous of degree n 337.B
 Hosokawa 235.D
 inseparable 337.G
 irreducible 337.F
 isobaric 32.C
 Jacobi 317.D, App. A, Table 20.V
 Lagrange interpolation 223.A 336.G, App. A,
 Table 21
 Laguerre 317.D, App. A, Table 20.VI
 Legendre 393.B, App. A, Table 18.II
 link 235.D
 Lommel App. A, Table 19.IV
 in m variables 337.B
 minimal (of an algebraic element) 149.E
 minimal (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 minimal (of a matrix) 269.F
 monic 337.A
 Neumann App. A, Table 19.IV
 Newton interpolation 336.G
 orthogonal 19.G, App. A, Table 20.VII
 parity check 63.E
 Poincaré 201.B
 primitive 337.D
 reduced link 235.D
 reducible 337.F
 ring of 337.A 369
 ring of differential 113
 Sato-Bernshtein 125.EE
 Schläfli App. A, Table 19.IV
 separable 337.G
 simplest orthogonal 19.G
 Snapper 16.E
 Sonine 317.D, App. A, Table 20.VI
 symmetric 337.I
 system of orthogonal 317.D
 trigonometric interpolation 336.E
 ultraspherical 317.D
 zonal 374.C

Subject Index

Positive cycle (on an algebraic variety)

polynomial approximation 336
 best (in the sense of Chebyshev) 336.H
 polynomial approximation theorem (for C^∞ -
 functions) 58.E
 polynomial distribution App. A, Table 22
 negative App. A, Table 22
 polynomial extrapolation method 303.F
 polynomial identity (on an algebra) 29.J
 polynomially transformable 71.E
 polynomial representation (of $GL(V)$) 60.D
 polynomial ring 337.A 369
 of m variables 337.B
 polynomial time 71.B
 polytropic differential equation 291.F
 Pomeranchuk theorem 386.B
 Pontryagin class(es)
 (of an R^n -bundle) 56.D
 combinatorial 56.H
 of a manifold 56.F
 rational 56.F
 total 56.D
 universal 56.D
 Pontryagin duality theorem (on topological Abelian
 groups) 192.K 422.C
 Pontryagin multiplication 203.D
 Pontryagin number 56.F
 Pontryagin p th power operation 64.B
 Pontryagin product 203.D
 Popov ghost, Faddeev- 132.C 150.G
 population (in statistics) 397.B 401.E
 finite 373.A
 infinite 401.E
 population characteristic 396.C
 population correlation coefficient 396.D
 population covariance 396.D
 population distribution 396.B 401.F
 hypothetical infinite 397.P
 population kurtosis 396.C
 population mean 396.C
 population moment of order k 396.C
 population standard deviation 396.C
 population variance 396.C
 port-admittance matrix 282.C
 porter 168.C
 port-impedance matrix 282.C
 port network, M - 282.C
 portrait, phase 126.B
 position
 general (complexes) 70.B
 general (of a PL mapping) 65.D
 general (in a projective space) 343.B
 general, theorem 65.D
 hyperboloid 350.D
 method of false 301.C
 position representation 351.C
 position vector 442.A
 (of a point of an affine space) 7.A
 positive
 (chain complex) 200.C
 (class of vector bundles) 114.D
 (complex) 200.H
 (functional on a C^* -algebra) 36.G
 (function on a C^* -algebra) 308.D
 (Hermitian operation) 308.A
 (square matrix) 310.H
 completely (linear mapping between C^* -
 algebras) 36.H
 positive boundary, open Riemann surface of 367.E
 positive cone, natural 308.K
 positive cycle (on an algebraic variety) 16.M

- positive definite
 - (function) 192.B,J 394.C
 - (Hermitian form) 348.F
 - (matrix) 269.I
 - (potential) 338.D
 - (sequence) 192.B
 - (on a topological group) 36.L 437.B
- positive definite kernel 217.H
- positive definite quadratic form 348.C
- positive direction (in a curvilinear integral) 198.B
- positive distribution 125.C
- positive divisor
 - (of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
- positive element
 - (in a lattice-ordered group) 243.G
 - (of an ordered field) 149.N
 - strictly 310.H
 - totally 14.G
- positive entropy, completely 136.E
- positive half-trajectory 126.D
- positive infinity 87.D 355.C
- positive kernel 217.H
- positive limit point 126.D
- positively invariant 126.D
- positively Lagrange stable 126.E
- positively Poisson stable 126.E
- positively regular process 44.C
- positive matrix 269.N
- positive number 355.A
- positive operator (in vector lattices) 310.E
- positive orientation (of an oriented C^* -manifold) 105.F
- positive orthant 89.G
- positive part (of an element of a vector lattice) 310.B
- positive prolongational limit set, first 126.D
- positive Radon measure 270.I
- positive real function 282.C
- positive recurrent ergodic class 260.B
- positive recurrent point 260.B
- positive root (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.M
- positive semidefinite (operator) 251.E
- positive semidefinite kernel 217.H
- positive semidefinite matrix 269.I
- positive semidefinite quadratic form 348.C
- positive semiorbit 126.D
- positive system, symmetric 112.S 326.D
- positive terms, series of 379.B
- positive type
 - (function of) 192.B,J
 - (sequence of) 192.B
 - (symmetric kernel of) 338.D
- positive variation
 - (of a mapping) 246.H
 - (of a real bounded function) 166.B
- positive Weyl chamber 248.R
- positivity
 - O-S 150.F
 - reflection 150.F
 - T- 150.F
- possibility 411.L
- possible construction problem 179.A
- posterior density 401.B
- posterior distribution 398.B 401.B 403.G
- posterior risk 399.F
- postliminal C^* -algebra 36.H
- Postnikov complex 70.G
- Postnikov system (of a CW complex) 148.D
- Post problem 356.D
- Post theorem 356.H
- postulate(s) 35.A
 - fifth (in Euclidean geometry) 139.A
 - Nernst 419.A
 - Peano 294.B
- potency of a set 49.A
- potential 338.A
 - (of a force) 271.C
 - (of a Hamiltonian) 375.B
 - (for a lattice spin system) 402.G
 - (in a Markov chain) 260.D
 - (on a network) 281.B
 - central 351.E
 - chemical 402.D 419.B
 - of a double distribution 338.A
 - of a double layer 338.A
 - equilibrium 260.D
 - finite-band 387.E
 - finite-gap 387.E
 - logarithmic 338.A
 - Newtonian 271.C 338.A
 - of order α 338.B
 - reflectionless 387.D
 - Riesz 338.B
 - scalar 130.A 442.D
 - of a simple distribution 338.A
 - of a single layer 338.A
 - vector 130.A 442.D
 - velocity 205.B
 - Yukawa 338.M
- potential energy 271.G
- potential good reduction (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
- potential kernel, weak 260.D
- potential stable reduction (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
- potential theory 338
- power
 - (of a cardinal number) 49.C
 - (of an ordinal number) 312.C
 - (of a test) 400.A
 - of a with exponent x 131.B,G
 - fractional 378.D
 - p -fold exterior (of a linear space) 256.O
 - p -fold exterior (of a vector bundle) 147.F
 - Pontryagin (pth) operation 64.B
 - residue of the n th 14.M
 - of a set 49.A
 - Steenrod (pth) operation 64.B
- power associative algebra 231.A
- power dilation 251.M
- powerful invariant, uniformly most 399.Q
- powerful unbiased, uniformly most 399.Q
- power function 400.A
 - envelope 400.F
- power method 298.C
- power-residue symbol 14.N
- power series 21.B 339 370
 - with center at the point of infinity 339.A
 - convergent 370.B
 - field of, in one variable 370.A
 - formal 370.A
 - formal, field in one variable 370.A
 - ring of 370.A
 - ring of convergent 370.B
 - ring of formal 370.A
- power series space
 - finite type 168.B
 - infinite type 168.B
- power set

(of a set) 381.B
 axiom of 33.B 381.G
 power sum theorem 123.D
 Powers factor 308.I
 Powers-Størmer inequality 212.B
 Poynting vector 130.A
 Prandtl boundary layer equation 205.C
 Prandtl-Glauert approximation 250.B
 Prandtl-Glauert law of similarity 205.D
 Prandtl integrodifferential equation 222.C
 Prandtl number 116.B
 prealgebraic variety 16.C
 precession 392
 precompact
 (metric space) 273.B
 (set in a metric space) 273.B
 precompact uniform space 436.H
 preconditioned (in numerical solution of linear equations) 302.D
 predator relation, prey- 263.B
 predecessor (of an element in an ordered set) 311.B
 predetermined variables 128.C
 predicate 411.G
 analytic 356.H
 arithmetical 356.H
 complete 356.H
 decidable (number-theoretic) 356.C
 enumerating 356.H
 first-order 411.K
 general recursive 356.C
 hyperarithmetical 356.H
 of n -argument 411.G
 n -ary 411.G
 primitive recursive 356.B
 second-order 411.K
 predicate (object) 156.B
 predicate calculus 411.J
 with equality 411.J
 predicate logic 411.J
 with equality 411.J
 first-order 411.K
 higher-order 411.K
 second-order 411.K
 third-order 411.K
 predicate symbol 411.H
 predicate variable 411.G,H
 predictable (σ -algebra) 407.B
 prediction sufficiency 396.J
 prediction theory 395.D
 linear 395.D
 predictive distribution 403.G
 predictor 303.E
 (in a multistep method) 303.E
 linear 395.D
 Milne's 303.E
 optimal linear 395.D
 predictor-corrector (PC) method 303.E
 predual 308.D
 prefix condition code 213.D
 pre-Hilbert space 197.B
 prehomogeneous vector space 450.V
 zeta function associated with 450.V
 premium 214.A
 net 214.A
 risk 214.B
 savings 214.B
 prenex normal form (in predicate logic) 411.J
 preordering 311.H
 preparation theorem

Subject Index

Prime formula

for C^∞ -functions 58.C
 Weierstrass 21.E 370.B
 Weierstrass type (for microdifferential operators) 274.F
 presentation 235.B
 of finite (\mathcal{O} -Modules) 16.E
 Wirtinger (of a knot group) 235.B,D
 presheaf 383.A
 sheaf associated 383.C
 presheaf on a site 16.AA
 pressure 402.G 419.A
 pressure, topological 136.H
 pressure equation 205.B
 prestratification, Whitney 418.G
 preventive maintenance model 307.C
 prey-predator relation 263.B
 price
 imputed 292.C
 shadow 255.B
 primal problem 255.B
 primary Abelian group 2.A
 primary cohomology operation 64.B
 stable 64.B
 primary component
 (of an ideal) 67.F
 embedded (of an ideal) 67.F
 isolated (of an ideal) 67.F
 primary difference 305.C
 primary ideal 67.F
 \mathfrak{p} 67.F
 primary obstruction 147.L 305.C
 primary problem 255.B
 primary ring 368.H
 completely 368.H
 semi- 368.H
 primary solution (of a homogeneous partial differential equation) 320.E
 primary submodule 284.A
 prime(s)
 (3-manifold) 65.E
 over an element (in a lattice) 243.F
 under an element (in a lattice) 243.F
 Mersenne 297.E
 relatively (fractional ideals) 14.E
 relatively (numbers) 297.A
 twin 123.C
 prime differential ideal (of a differential ring) 113
 prime divisor
 (of an algebraic function field of dimension 1) 9.D
 (of an algebraic number field or an algebraic function field of one variable) 439.H
 (of an ideal) 67.F
 (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 embedded (of an ideal) 67.F
 finite 439.H
 imaginary infinite 439.H
 infinite 439.H
 isolated (of an ideal) 67.F
 maximal (of an ideal) 67.F
 minimal (of an ideal) 67.F
 real 439.H
 real (infinite) 439.H
 prime element
 (of a ring) 67.H
 (for a valuation) 439.E
 prime field 149.B
 prime formula 411.D
 (of a language) 276.A

- prime ideal 67.C
 - (of a maximal order) 27.A
 - associated (of an ideal) 67.F
 - ramified 14.I
 - unramified 14.I
- prime ideal theorem 123.F
- prime knot 235.A
- prime number(s) 297.B
 - regular 14.L
 - relatively 297.A
- prime number theorem 123.B
 - for arithmetic progression 123.D
- prime quotient (in a lattice) 243.F
- prime rational divisor over a field (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
- prime spot (of an algebraic number field or an algebraic function field) 439.H
- primitive 427.B
 - (differential form) 232.B
 - (element of coalgebra) 203.I
 - (element of an extension of a field) 149.D
 - (generator of the cohomology algebra of a compact Lie group) 427.B
- primitive binary quadratic form 348.M
- primitive character 295.D 450.C,E
 - non- 450.C,E
- primitive equation 172.G
- primitive form 232.B
- primitive function(s) 216.C
 - derivatives and App. A, Table 9.I
- primitive hyperbolic type (reduced basis of) 92.C
- primitive hypercubic type (reduced basis of) 92.C
- primitive ideal (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
- primitive idempotent element (of a ring) 368.B
- primitive lattice 92.E
- primitive operation (of a group) 362.B
- primitive permutation group 151.H
- primitive permutation representation (of a group) 362.B
- primitive polynomial 337.D
- primitive recursive 356.B
- primitive recursive function 356.A,B,F
 - uniformly 356.B
- primitive recursive in ψ_1, \dots, ψ_l 356.B
- primitive recursive predicate 356.B
- primitive root of unity 14.L
 - modulo m 297.G
- primitive solution (of a partial differential equation) 320.E
- principal adele (of an algebraic number field) 6.C
- principal analytic set 23.B
- principal antiautomorphism (of a Clifford algebra) 61.B
- principal automorphism (Clifford algebras) 61.B
- principal axis (axes)
 - (of a central conic) 78.C
 - (of inertia) 271.E
 - (of a parabola) 78.C
 - (of a quadric surface) 350.B
 - transformation to 390.B
- principal bundle 147.C
 - associated 147.D
 - reduced 147.J
 - reducible 147.J
- principal character 295.D
 - (of an Abelian group) 2.G
- principal component(s)
 - (in principal component analysis) 280.F
 - of order p 110.A
- principal component analysis 280.F
- principal congruence subgroup of level N 122.D
- principal convergent (of an irrational number) 83.B
- principal curvature
 - (of a surface) 111.H 365.C
 - radius of (of a surface) 111.H
- principal directions (of a surface) 111.H
- principal discrete series 258.C
- principal divisor
 - (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
- principal fiber bundle 147.C
- principal formula of integral geometry 218.C
- principal fractional ideal 67.K
- principal genus
 - (for an ideal group) 59.E
 - of a quadratic field 347.F
- principal half-space (of a flag) 139.B
- principal H -series 437.X
- principal ideal 67.K
 - of an algebraic number field 14.E
- principal ideal domain 67.K
- principal ideal ring 67.K
- principal ideal theorem (in class field theory) 59.D
- principal idele (of an algebraic number field) 6.C
- principal isotropy group(s) 431.C
- principal matrix (belonging to a Riemann matrix) 3.I
- principal minor (of a matrix) 103.D
- principal moment of inertia 271.E
- principal normal 111.F
- principal orbit(s) 431.C
 - type 431.C
- principal order (of an algebraic number field) 14.B
 - fundamental theorem of 14.C
- principal part
 - (of a differential operator) 112.A
 - (of a Laurent expansion) 198.D
 - (of a partial differential operator) 320.B
- principal partition 66.H
- principal plane (of a quadric surface) 350.B
- principal point(s)
 - (for a Gauss mapping) 180.B
- principal polarization (of an Abelian variety) 3.G
- principal quantum number 315.E
- principal series 258.C
 - (in an Ω -group) 190.G
 - (of unitary representations of a complex semi-simple Lie group) 437.W
 - (of unitary representations of a real semisimple Lie group) 437.X
- principal solution 104.B
- principal space (of a flag) 139.B
- principal subspace (of a linear operator) 390.B
- principal symbol 237.H
 - (of a microdifferential operator) 274.F
 - (of a simple holonomic system) 274.H
- principal theorem, Ahlfors 367.B
- principal value
 - (of inverse trigonometric functions) 131.E
 - Cauchy (of an improper integral) 216.D
 - Cauchy (of the integral on infinite intervals) 216.E
 - of $\log Z$ 131.G
- principle(s)
 - argument 198.F
 - balayage 338.L
 - Bellman 405.B
 - Cartan maximum 338.L
 - complete maximum 338.M
 - of condensation of singularities 37.H

- of conditionality 401.C
- continuity 21.H
- continuity (in potential theory) 338.C
- contraction 286.B
- correspondence 351.D
- of counting constants 16.S
- Dedekind (in a modular lattice) 243.F
- of depending choice (DC) 33.F
- dilated maximum (in potential theory) 338.C
- Dirichlet 120.A 323.E
- Dirichlet drawer 182.F
- domination 338.L
- Donsker invariance 250.E
- duality (for closed convex cones) 89.F
- duality, for ordering 311.A
- of duality (in projective geometry) 343.B
- embedding (in dynamic programming) 127.B
- energy 338.D
- energy minimum 419.A
- enthalpy minimum 419.C
- entropy maximum 419.A
- of equal weight 402.E
- equilibrium 338.K
- of equivalence (in insurance mathematics) 214.A 359.D
- Fermat 180.A 441.C
- first maximum (in potential theory) 338.C
- Fisher three 102.A
- Frostman maximum 338.C
- general, of relativity 359.D
- Gibbs free energy minimum 419.C
- Hamilton 441.B
- Hasse 348.G
- Helmholtz free energy minimum 419.C
- Huygens 325.B 446
- Huygens, in the wider sense 325.D
- invariance 375.B 400.E
- of invariance of speed of light 359.B
- inverse domination 338.L
- of least action 441.B
- limiting absorption 375.C
- of linearized stability 286.S
- of localization (on convergence tests of Fourier series) 159.B
- local maximum modulus 164.C
- lower envelope 338.M
- Maupertuis 180.A
- maximal 193.E
- maximum (for control theory) 86.F
- maximum (for a holomorphic function) 43.B
- maximum (for minimal surfaces) 275.B
- maximum modulus (for a holomorphic function) 43.B
- minimax (for eigenvalues of a compact operator) 68.H
- minimax (for λ_k) 391.G
- minimax (for statistical decision problem) 398.B
- minimum (for λ) 391.D
- minimum (for λ_k) 391.G
- of nested intervals (for real numbers) 87.C 355.B
- Oka 21.K 147.O
- of optimality 127.A
- Pauli 351.H
- quasicontinuity (in potential theory) 338.I
- Rayleigh 68.H
- reflection 45.E
- of reflection 74.E
- Schwarz, of reflection 198.G
- separation 405.C
- special, of relativity 359
- stochastic maximum 405.D
- stored program 75.B
- Strassen invariance 250.E
- of sufficiency 401.C
- of superposition 252.B 322.C
- sweeping-out 338.L
- Ugaheri maximum 338.C
- uniqueness (in potential theory) 338.M
- upper boundedness (in potential theory) 338.C
- variational 441
- variational (in statistical mechanics) 340.B 402.G
- variational (in the theory of elasticity) 271.G
- variational, with relaxed continuity requirement 271.G
- variational, for topological pressure 136.H
- Pringsheim theorem 58.E
- prior density 401.B
- prior distribution 401.B 403.G
- probabilistic model 397.P
- probability 342
 - additivity of 342.B
 - a posteriori 342.F
 - a priori 342.F
 - binomial, paper 19.B
 - conditional 342.E
 - continuous in 407.A
 - converge in 342.D
 - converge with, 1 342.D
 - critical percolation 340.D
 - error 213.D
 - of an event 342.B
 - that event ε occurs 342.B
 - event with, 1 342.B
 - extinction 44.B
 - geometric 218.A
 - hitting, for single points 5.G
 - objective 401.B
 - regular conditional 342.E
 - ruin 214.C
 - standard transition 260.F
 - subjective 401.B
 - theory of 342.A
 - transition 260.A 261.A 351.B
- probability amplitude 351.D
- probability density 341.D
- probability distribution(s) 342.B, App. A, Table 22
 - (one-dimensional, of random variable) 342.C
 - (of random variables) 342.C
 - conditional 342.E
 - n -dimensional 342.C
- probability generating function 341.F 397.G
- probability integral App. A, Table 19.II
- probability measure 341 342.B
- probability of loss 307.C
- probability paper 19.F
 - binomial 19.B
- probability ratio test, sequential 400.L
- probability space 342.B
- probable cause, most 401.E
- probable value, most 401.E
- problem(s)
 - Abel 217.L
 - abstract Cauchy 286.X
 - acoustic 325.L
 - adjoint boundary value 315.B
 - all-integer programming 215.A
 - Appolonius (in geometric construction) 179.A

- Behrens-Fisher 400.G
- Bernshtein, generalized 275.F
- boundary value (of ordinary differential equations) 303.H 315.A
- Burnside (in group theory) 161.C
- Cauchy (for ordinary differential equations) 316.A
- Cauchy (for partial differential equations) 320.B 321.A 325.B
- class field tower 59.F
- combinatorial App. A, Table 17.II
- combinatorial triangulation 65.C
- concave programming 292.A
- conditional, in the calculus of variations 46.A
- connection 253.A
- construction 59.F
- convex programming 292.A
- corona 43.G
- correctly posed (for partial differential equations) 322.A
- Cousin, first 21.K
- Cousin, second 21.K
- Cramer-Castillon (in geometric construction) 179.A
- critical inclination 55.C
- decision 71.B 97 186.J
- Delos (in geometric construction) 179.A
- Dido 228.A
- differentiable pinching 178.E
- Dirichlet 120 193.F 323.C
- Dirichlet, with obstacle 440.B
- Dirichlet divisor 242.A
- dual 255.B 349.B
- du Bois Reymond 159.H
- eigenvalue 390.A
- exterior (Dirichlet problem) 120.A
- first boundary value 193.F 323.C
- flow-shop scheduling 376
- four-color 157
- Gauss circle 242.A
- Gauss variational 338.J
- general boundary value 323.H
- generalized eigenvalue 298.G
- generalized isoperimetric 46.A 228.A
- generalized Pfaff 428.B
- Geöcze 246.D
- geometric construction 179.A
- Goldbach 4.C
- group-minimization 215.C
- Hamburger moment 240.K
- Hausdorff moment 240.K
- Hersch 391.E
- Hilbert (in calculus of variations) 46.A
- Hilbert fifth 423.N
- homeomorphism 425.G
- homogeneous boundary value (of ordinary differential equations) 315.B
- Hukuhara 315.C
- of identification (in econometrics) 128.C
- impossible construction 179.A
- inconsistent (of geometric construction) 179.A
- inhomogeneous boundary value (of ordinary differential equations) 315.B
- initial value (for functional differential equations) 163.D
- initial value (of ordinary differential equations) 313.C 316.A
- initial value (for partial differential equations) 321.A
- initial value, for a hyperbolic partial differential equation App. A, Table 15.III
- interior (Dirichlet problem) 120.A
- interpolation 43.F
- invariant measure 136.C
- inverse (in potential scattering) 375.G
- isomorphism (for graphs) 186.J
- isomorphism (for integral group algebra) 362.K
- isoperimetric 111.E 228.A
- Jacobi inverse 3.L
- job-shop scheduling problem 376
- k-sample 371.D
- Lagrange (in calculus of variations) 46.A
- LBA 31.D
- Levi 21.I
- linear least squares 302.E
- linear programming 255.A
- local (on the solutions of differential equations) 289.A
- machine scheduling 376
- machine sequencing 376
- Malfatti (in geometric construction) 179.A
- many-body 402.F 420.A
- martingale 115.C 261.C 406.A
- maximum flow 281.C
- minimum-cost flow 281.C
- mixed integer programming 215.A
- multicommodity flow 281.C
- multiprocessor scheduling 376
- n-body 420.A
- n-decision 398.A
- network-flow 281 282.B
- Neumann (for harmonic functions) 193.F
- Neumann (for partial differential equations of elliptic type) 323.F
- nonlinear 291
- normal Moore space 425.AA
- optimal regulator 86.F
- penalized 440.B
- Pfaff 428.A
- placement 235.A
- Plateau 334.A
- possible construction 179.A
- primal 255.B
- primary 255.B
- properly posed 322.A
- pure integer programming 215.A
- quadratic programming 292.A 349.A
- random walk 260.A
- representation (on surface) 246.I
- restricted Burnside (in group theory) 161.C
- restricted three-body 420.F
- Riemann 253.D
- Riemann-Hilbert (for integral equations) 217.J
- Riemann-Hilbert (for ordinary differential equations) 253.D
- Robin 323.F
- of satisfiability (of a proposition) 97
- Schöenflies 65.G
- second boundary value (for harmonic functions) 193.F
- second boundary value (for partial differential equations of elliptic type) 323.F
- second Cousin 21.K
- self-adjoint boundary value 315.B
- sequential decision 398.F
- shortest path 281.C
- single-commodity flow 281

- singular initial value (for partial differential equations of mixed type) 326.C
- smoothing 114.C
- special isoperimetric 228.A
- of specification 397.P
- statistical decision 398.A
- Steiner (in geometric construction) 179.A
- Stieltjes moment 240.K
- Sturm-Liouville 315.B
- third boundary value (for harmonic functions) 193.F
- third boundary value (for partial differential equations of elliptic type) 323.F
- three big 187
- three-body 420.A
- Thues (general) 31.B
- time optimal control 86.F
- transformation (in a finitely presented group) 161.B
- transient 322.D
- transportation 255.C
- transportation, on a network 255.C
- Tricomi 326.C
- two-body 55.A
- two-point boundary value (of ordinary differential equations) 315.A
- two-terminal 281
- type (for Riemann surfaces) 367.D
- of universal validity of a proposition 97
- Waring 4.E
- weak form of the boundary value 304.B
- well-posed (in general case) 322.A
- word (in a finitely presented group) 161.B
- 0-1 integer programming 215.A
- procedure
 - classification 280.I
 - exploratory 397.Q
 - Lyapunov-Schmidt 286.V
 - random sampling 373.A
 - sampling 373.A
 - shortest-path 281.C
 - statistical decision 398.A
- process
 - (in catastrophe theory) 51.F
 - (on a measure space) 136.E
 - (= stochastic process) 407.A
 - additive 5 342.A
 - age-dependent branching 44.E
 - asymmetric Cauchy 5.F
 - autoregressive 421.D
 - autoregressive integrated moving average 421.G
 - autoregressive moving average 421.D
 - Bernoulli 136.E
 - Bernoulli, very weak 136.E
 - Bernoulli, weak 136.E
 - birth 260.G
 - birth and death 260.G
 - bond percolation 340.D
 - branching 44 342.A
 - branching Markov 44.E
 - Cauchy 5.F
 - centered 5.B
 - compound Poisson 5.F
 - contact 340.C
 - continuous-state branching 44.E
 - death 260.G
 - diffusion 115
 - dual 261.F
 - exponent of the stable 5.F
 - Feller 261.B
 - finitely determined (F.D.) 136.E
 - Galton-Watson branching 44.B
 - Gaussian 176 342.A
 - Gaussian, complex 176.C
 - generalized stochastic 407.C
 - homogeneous Markov 5.H
 - Hunt 261.B
 - increasing 262.D
 - independent 136.E
 - with independent increments 5.B
 - integrable, of bounded variation 406.B
 - integrable increasing 406.B
 - invariant Markov 5.H
 - irreversible 402.A
 - isothermal 419.B
 - Itô 406.B
 - Lévy 5.B
 - linear stationary iterative 302.C
 - Markov 261 342.A
 - Markov branching 44.D
 - Markovian decision 127.E
 - moving average 421.D
 - multistage allocation 127.A
 - multistage choice 127.A
 - multitype Galton-Watson 44.C
 - multitype Markov branching 44.E
 - Newton iterative 301.D
 - normal 176.C
 - observation 405.F
 - one-sided stable, of the exponent α 5.F
 - oscillator 315.F
 - osculating 77.B
 - percolation 340.D
 - point 407.D
 - Poisson 5.D
 - positive regular 44.C
 - progressive 407.B
 - quadratic variation 406.B
 - quasistatic adiabatic 419.B
 - recurrent 261.B
 - reversed 261.F
 - sample 407.A
 - shift associated with the stationary 136.D
 - σ - (of a complex manifold) 72.H
 - signal 405.F
 - site percolation 340.D
 - spatially homogeneous 261.A
 - stable 5.F
 - stationary 342.A 395.A
 - stationary Gaussian 176.C
 - strictly stable 5.F
 - strictly stationary 395.A
 - stochastic 342.A 407
 - stochastic, with stationary increments of order n 395.I
 - strongly stationary 395.A, F
 - strong Markov 261.B
 - subadditive 136.B
 - sweeping-out 338.L
 - symmetric Cauchy 5.F
 - symmetric stable 5.F
 - system 405.F
 - temporally homogeneous 261.A
 - temporally homogeneous additive 5.B
 - transient 261.B
 - very weak Bernoulli (V.W.B.) 136.E
 - weak Bernoulli (W.B.) 136.E

- weakly stationary 395.A
- weakly stationary, of degree k 395.I
- Wiener 5.D 45.B
- processing, data 96
- processor, central 75.B
- producer's risk 404.C
- product(s)
 - (of algebraic varieties) 16.A
 - (of cardinal numbers) 49.C
 - (of completely additive classes) 270.H
 - (of elements of a graded algebra) 203.B
 - (of elements of a group) 190.A
 - (of hyperfunctions) 125.X 274.E
 - (of ideals) 67.B
 - (of knots) 235.A
 - (of linear operators) 37.C 251.B
 - (of matrices) 269.B
 - (of objects) 52.E
 - (of ordinal numbers) 312.C
 - (of paths) 170
 - (in quadrangular set of six points) 343.C
 - (of real numbers) 355.B
 - (of sets) 381.B
 - (of tensors) 256.K
 - amalgamated (of a family of groups) 190.M
 - Blaschke 43.F
 - bracket (in a Lie algebra) 248.A
 - cap (in (co)homology groups of a space) 201.K
 - cap (in homological algebra) 200.K 201.K
 - cardinal (of a family of ordered sets) 311.F
 - Cartesian (of a family of sets) 381.E
 - Cartesian (of mappings) 381.C
 - Cartesian (of ordered simplicial complexes) 70.C
 - Cartesian (of s.s. complexes) 70.E
 - Cartesian (of sets) 381.B
 - Cauchy (of series) 379.F
 - complex (of cell complexes) 70.D
 - cross- (in cohomology groups of a space) 201.I
 - cross- (in homology groups of a space) 201.J
 - cross- (of vector bundles) 237.C
 - crossed (of a C^* -algebra) 36.I
 - crossed (of a commutative ring and a group) 29.D
 - crossed (in von Neumann algebra theory) 308.I
 - cup (of cohomology classes) 201.I
 - cup (in K -theory) 237.C
 - cup, reduction theorem 200.M
 - cup of derived functors 200.K
 - difference 337.I
 - direct \rightarrow direct product
 - divergent infinite 374.F
 - exterior (of differential forms) 105.Q
 - exterior (of elements of a linear space) 256.O
 - exterior (of a p -vector and q -vector) 256.O
 - exterior (of two vectors) 442.C
 - external (of derived functors) 200.K
 - Euler 450.V
 - fiber, over S 52.G
 - free (of groups) 190.M
 - Hermitian inner 256.Q
 - of ideals of a commutative ring 67.B
 - of inertia 271.E
 - infinite 379.G
 - infinite App. A, Table 10.VI
 - inner (in a Hermitian linear space) 256.Q
 - inner (in a Hilbert space) 197.B
 - inner (in a metric vector space) 256.H
 - inner (for a pairing) 424.G
 - inner (with respect to a linear space and its dual space) 256.G
 - inner (of two hyperspheres) 76.A
 - inner (of two n -tuples) 256.A
 - inner (of two vectors) 442.B
 - inner, space 442.B
 - internal (of derived functors) 200.K
 - interior (of a differential form with a vector field) 105.Q
 - intersection (of homology classes) 201.O
 - intersection (of two subvarieties) 16.Q
 - Kronecker (of matrices) 269.C
 - logical (of propositions) 411.B
 - ordinal (of a family of ordered sets) 311.G
 - partial 379.G
 - Pontryagin 203.D
 - projective C^* -tensor 36.H
 - proper (of two normal g -lattices) 27.A
 - restricted direct 6.B
 - Riemannian (of Riemannian manifolds) 364.A
 - scalar (of linear operators) 37.C
 - scalar (of two vectors) App. A, Table 3.I
 - scalar triple (of three vectors) 442.C
 - skew (of measurable transformations) 136.D
 - slant 201.K
 - smash 202.F
 - spatial tensor 36.H
 - sum of 216.A
 - symmetric (of a topological space) 70.F
 - tensor (of A -homomorphisms) 277.J
 - tensor (of algebras) 29.A
 - tensor (of A -modules) 277.J
 - tensor (of chain complexes) 201.J
 - tensor (of cochain complexes) 201.J
 - tensor (of distributions) 125.K
 - tensor (of Hilbert spaces) 308.C
 - tensor (of linear mappings) 256.I
 - tensor (of linear representations) 362.C
 - tensor (of linear spaces) 256.I
 - tensor (of locally convex spaces) 424.R
 - tensor (of sheaves) 383.I
 - tensor (of vector bundles) 147.F
 - tensor (of von Neumann algebras) 308.C
 - torsion (in a category) 200.K
 - torsion (of two A -modules) 200.D,K
 - vector 442.C, App. A, Table 3.I
 - vector triple 442.C, App. A, Table 3.I
 - wedge (of derived functors) 200.K
 - Weierstrass canonical 429.B
 - Whitehead 202.P
 - product algebraic variety 16.A
 - product bundle 147.E
 - product category 52.B
 - product complex 200.H 350.D
 - product decomposition, dual direct 422.H
 - product double chain complex 200.E
 - product event 342.B
 - product formula
 - (for the Hilbert norm-residue symbol) 14.R
 - (on invariant Haar measures) 225.E
 - (for the norm-residue symbol) 14.Q
 - (on valuations) 439.H
 - Trotter 315.F
 - production planning 376
 - production rule 31.B
 - product mapping 425.K
 - product measure 270.H
 - product measure space 270.H

- complete 270.H
- product metric space 273.B
- product of inertia 271.E
- product rule 299.D
- product space 425.L
 - reduced 202.Q
- product theorem for dimension 117.C
- product topological space 425.L
- product topology 425.L
- product uniformity 436.E
- product uniform space 436.E
- profinite groups 210.C
- program 75.C
 - machine-language 75.C
- program evaluation and review technique 376
- programming 75.C 385.B
 - bilinear 364.D
 - chance-constrained 408.A
 - convex 264.C
 - disjunctive 264.C
 - dynamic 127.A 264.C
 - fractional 264.C
 - geometric 264.D
 - integer 264.C
 - linear 264.C
 - linear mathematical 264.D
 - mathematical 264.A
 - multiobjective 264.C
 - multistage 264.C
 - network 264.C
 - nonconvex 264.D
 - parametric 264.C
 - stochastic 264.C 408.A
 - stochastic, model 307.C
 - two-stage linear, under uncertainty 255.F
 - two-stage stochastic 408.A
- programming problem
 - all-integer 215.A
 - concave 292.A
 - convex 292.A
 - linear 255.A
 - mathematical 264.B
 - mixed integer 215.A
 - nonlinear 264.C
 - pure-integer 215.A
 - quadratic 292.A 349.A
 - 0-1 integer 215.A
- progression
 - arithmetic 379.I, App. A, Table 10.I
 - geometric 379.I, App. A, Table 10.I
- progressive (set) 407.B
- progressively measurable (stochastic process) 407.B
- progressive process 407.B
- projecting (in a projective space) 343.B
- projection
 - (of a covering space) 367.B
 - (from a direct product set) 381.E
 - (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 - (of a fiber space) 148.B
 - (of a Hilbert space) 197.E
 - (onto a homogeneous space) 199.A
 - (in a projective space) 343.B
 - (to a quotient set defined by an equivalence relation) 135.B
 - (on a tangent bundle of a Banach manifold) 286.K
 - canonical (on modules) 277.F
 - canonical (onto a quotient set) 135.B
 - center of (in projective geometry) 343.B
 - Lie minimal 76.B
 - method of orthogonal (of H. Weyl) 323.G
 - orthogonal 139.E,G
 - orthogonal (on a Hilbert space) 197.E
 - parallel (in an affine space) 7.C
 - regular knot 235.A
 - relaxation with 440.E
 - stereographic 74.D
 - unramified (of a covering surface) 367.B
- projection matrix 269.I
- projection method, Rosen's gradient 292.E
- projection operator (in a Hilbert space) 197.E
- projective
 - (Banach space) 37.M
 - (object in an Abelian category) 200.I
- projective (object) 200.I
- projective algebraic variety 16.A
 - fundamental theorems of 72.F
 - quasi- 16.C
- projective A -module 277.K
- projective approximation method 304.B
- projective C^* -tensor product 36.H
- projective class 200.Q
- projective class group 200.K
- projective collineation 343.D
 - in the wider sense 343.D
- projective connection 80.O
- projective coordinates 343.C
- projective coordinate system 343.C
- projective curvature tensor App. A, Table 4.II
- projective deformation (between surfaces) 110.B
- projective determinacy 22.H
- projective differential geometry 110.B
- projective dimension (of a module) 200.K
- projective frame (in projective geometry) 343.C
- projective general linear group 60.B
 - of degree n over K 60.B
- projective geometry 343
 - finite-dimensional 343.B
 - fundamental theorem of 343.D
 - general 343.B
 - of paths 109
- projective limit
 - (in a category) 210.D
 - (of a projective system of sets) 210.B
 - (of a projective system of topological groups) 423.K
- projective limit group 210.C
- projective limit space 210.C
- projective line 343.B
- projective line element 110.B
- projectively flat space App. A, Table 4.II
- projectively related (fundamental figures) 343.B
- projective mapping (in projective geometry) 343.B
- projective module, (R, S) - 200.K
- projective morphism 16.E
 - quasi- 16.E
- projective plane 343.B
 - Cayley 54
 - finite 241.B
- projective representation
 - (of a group) 362.J
 - irreducible 362.J
 - similar 362.J
- projective resolution
 - (in an Abelian category) 200.I
 - left (of an A -module) 200.C
 - \mathfrak{P} - 200.Q
- projective scheme 16.E
 - quasi- 16.E
- projective set of class n 22.D

- projective space 343.B
 - complex 343.D
 - infinite-dimensional complex 56.C
 - infinite-dimensional real 56.B
 - over Λ 147.E
 - left 343.F
 - real 343.D
 - right 343.F
- projective special linear group 60.B
 - (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
- projective special unitary group over K 60.H
- projective symplectic group over K 60.L
- projective system
 - (in a category) 210.D
 - (of groups) 210.C
 - (of sets) 210.B
 - (of topological groups) 423.K
 - (of topological spaces) 210.C
- projective topology 424.R
- projective transformation 343.D 364.F
 - group of 343.D
 - regular 343.D
 - singular 343.D
 - singular, of the k th species 343.D
- projective transformation group 343.D
- projective unitary group 60.F
- projective variety 16.A
- prolate App. A, Table 3.V
- proliferation (of errors) 138.D
- prolongable (Riemann surface) 367.F
- prolongation
 - (along a curve in a covering surface) 367.B
 - (of a Riemann surface) 367.F
 - (of a solution of an ordinary differential equation) 316.C
 - (of a system of partial differential equations) 428.B,F
 - (of a valuation) 439.B
 - analytic 198.G
 - first (of P) 191.E
 - k th (of G) 191.D
 - k th (of a Lie subalgebra) 191.D
 - k th (of P) 191.E
- prolongational limit set
 - first negative 126.D
 - first positive 126.D
- proof, consistency 156.D
 - for pure number theory 156.E
- proof theory 156.D
- propagation
 - of chaos 340.F
 - equation of sound 325.A
 - of errors 138.C
 - of singularities 325.M
 - wave 446
- proper
 - (continuous mapping) 425.W
 - (equivalence relation in an analytic space) 23.E
 - (leaf) 154.D
 - (Lorentz group) 258.A
 - (morphism of scheme) 16.D
 - (PL embedding) 65.D
- proper affine transformation 7.E
- proper class (in set theory) 381.G
- proper complex Lorentz group 258.A
- proper component (of an intersection of subvarieties) 16.G
- proper convex function 88.D
- proper factor (of an element of a ring) 67.H
- proper flag manifold 199.B
- proper function (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
- proper hypersphere (in hyperbolic geometry) 285.C
- proper Lorentz group 60.J
- properly convex (subset of a sphere) 274.E
- properly discontinuous transformation group 122.A
- properly divergent 379.A
- properly equivalent (binary quadratic forms) 348.M
- properly infinite 308.E
- properly intersect (on a variety) 16.G
- properly ($n - 1$)-dimensional quadric hypersurface 350.G
- properly posed
 - (initial value problem) 321.E
 - (problems for partial differential equations) 322.A
- proper mapping(s) 425.W
 - fundamental theorem of 16.X
- proper meromorphic mapping (between analytic spaces) 23.D
- proper modification (of an analytic space) 23.D
- proper motion
 - in Euclidean geometry 139.B
 - of a star 392
- proper orthogonal group 60.I 258.A
- proper orthogonal matrix 269.J
- proper product (of two normal g -lattices) 27.A
- proper quadric surface 350.B
- proper rotation group 258.A
- proper subset 381.A
- proper time 258.A
- proper transform (of a subvariety) 16.I
- property (properties) 411.G
 - approximation 37.L
 - asymptotic (of solutions of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 314.A
 - Baire 425.N
 - basic (of a structure) 409.B
 - bounded approximation 37.L
 - clustering 402.G
 - combinatorial 65.A
 - continuity, for Čech theory 201.M
 - of continuity (in a continuous geometry) 85.A
 - countably productive 425.Y
 - covering homotopy 148.B
 - duality (of linear spaces) 256.G
 - equivalence 135.A
 - finite intersection 425.S
 - finite subset 396.F
 - global (in differential geometry) 109
 - homotopy extension 202.E
 - in the large (in differential geometry) 109
 - local (in differential geometry) 109
 - local (of a pseudodifferential operator) 345.A
 - Markov 261.B
 - micro-pseudolocal (of a pseudodifferential operator) 345.A
 - minimum curvature 223.F
 - minimum norm 223.F
 - P conjecture 235.B
 - pseudolocal (of a pseudodifferential operator) 345.A
 - pseudo-orbit tracing 126.J
 - reproducing (of a probability distribution) 341.E, App. A, Table 22
 - in the small (in differential geometry) 109

spectral 136.E
 star-finite 425.S
 strong Markov 261.B
 topological 425.G
 uniformity 399.N
 universal mapping 52.L
 proper value
 (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
 (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 (of a linear operator) 390.A
 (of a matrix) 269.F
 proper variation 279.F
 proper vector
 (belonging to an eigenvalue) 269.F
 (of a linear operator) 390.A
 (of a linear transformation) 269.L
 proposition(s)
 existential 411.B
 modal 411.L
 universal 411.B
 variables 411.E
 propositional calculus 411.F
 propositional connectives 411.E
 propositional function 411.C
 propositional logic 411.E
 provable (formula) 411.I
 proximity function (of a meromorphic function)
 272.B
 Prüfer ring 200.K
 pseudoanalytic function, K - 352.B
 pseudo-arc 79.D
 pseudocompact (space) 425.S
 pseudoconformal geometry 344.A
 pseudoconformally equivalent 344.A
 pseudoconformal transformation 344.A
 pseudoconvex (domain) 21.G
 Cartan 21.I
 d - 21.G
 Levi 21.I
 locally Cartan 21.I
 locally Levi 21.I
 strictly 344.A
 strongly 21.G
 pseudodifferential operator 251.O 274.F 345
 pseudodistance
 Carathéodory 21.O
 Kobayashi 21.O
 pseudodistance function 273.B
 pseudofunction 125.C
 pseudogeometric ring 284.F
 pseudogroup (of topological transformations)
 105.Y
 of transformations (on a topological space)
 90.D
 pseudogroup structure 105.Y
 pseudo-Hermitian manifold 344.F
 pseudointerior 382.B
 pseudo-isotopic 65.D
 pseudo-isotopy 65.D
 pseudolocal property (of a pseudodifferential opera-
 tor) 345.A
 micro- 345.A
 pseudomanifold 65.B
 pseudometric 273.B
 pseudometric space 273.B
 indiscrete 273.B
 pseudometric uniformity 436.F
 pseudometrizable 436.F
 pseudonorm (on a topological linear space) 37.O
 424.F

Subject Index

q -expansion formula

pseudo-orbit 126.J
 α - 126.J
 tracing property 126.J
 pseudo-ordering 311.H
 pseudopolynomial, distinguished 21.E
 pseudorandom numbers 354.B
 pseudo-Riemannian metric 105.P
 pseudo-Runge-Kutta method 303.D
 pseudosphere 111.I 285.E
 pseudotensorial form 80.G
 pseudovaluation 439.K
 ψ -collective 354.E
 psi function 174.B
 psychometrics 346
 Puiseux series 339.A
 pullback
 (of a differential form) 105.Q
 (of a distribution) 125.Q
 (of a divisor) 16.M
 Puppe exact sequence 202.G
 pure
 (continued fraction) 83.C
 (differential form) 367.H
 (state) 351.B
 pure geometry 181
 pure ideal 284.D
 pure integer programming problem 215.A
 purely contractive 251.N
 purely contractive part 251.N
 purely d -dimensional analytic set 23.B
 (at a point) 23.B
 purely discontinuous distribution 341.D
 purely imaginary number 74.A
 purely infinite (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
 purely inseparable
 (extension of a field) 149.H
 (rational mapping) 16.I
 purely inseparable element (of a field) 149.H
 purely n -codimensional 125.W
 purely nondeterministic 395.D
 purely transcendental extension 149.K
 pure number theory 156.E
 pure periodic continued fraction 83.C
 pure phase 402.G
 pure point spectrum 136.E
 pure strategy 173.B
 pursuit, curve of 93.H
 push-down automaton 31.D
 push-down storage 96.E
 Putnam's theorem 251.K
 Pyatetskii-Shapiro reciprocity law, Gel'fand-
 437.DD
 Pythagorean closure (of a field) 155.C
 Pythagorean extension (of a field) 155.C
 Pythagorean field 139.B 155.C
 Pythagorean number 145
 Pythagorean ordered field 60.O
 Pythagorean theorem 139.D

Q
 Q (rational numbers) 294.A,D
 q -block bundle 147.Q
 q -block structure 147.Q
 q -boundary 201.B
 q -chains 201.B
 q -cochains, singular 201.H
 q -cycle 201.B
 q -dimensional homology classes 201.B
 q -expansion formula 134.I

q-face

- q*-face 70.B
- q*-function
 - Chebyshev 19.G, App. A, Table 20.VII
 - simplest Chebyshev 19.G
- q*-numbers 130.A
- q*-representation 351.C
- q*-simplex
 - oriented 201.C
 - singular 201.E
 - standard 201.E
- q*th homology group 201.B
- Q*-manifold 382.D
- Q*-matrix 260.F
- Q*-spaces 425.BB
- QR* method 298.E
- QZ* method 298.C
- QCD (= quantum chromodynamics) 132.D
- q.e. (= quasi-everywhere) 338.F
- QFD (= quantum flavor dynamics) 132.D
- quadrangles 155.F
 - complete 343.C
- quadrangular set of six points 343.C
- quadrant, first (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
- quadratic differential (on a Riemann surface) 11.D
- quadratic equation 10.D, App. A, Table 1
- quadratic field(s) 347
 - complex 347.A
 - imaginary 347.A
 - real 347.A
- quadratic form(s) 348
 - (on a linear space) 256.H
 - bilinear form associated with 256.H
 - binary 348.M
 - complex 348.A,B
 - definite 348.C
 - equivalent 348.A
 - indefinite 348.C
 - matrix of 348.A
 - negative definite 348.C
 - negative semidefinite 348.C
 - nondegenerate 348.A
 - positive definite 348.C
 - positive semidefinite 348.C
 - primitive binary 348.M
 - properly equivalent binary 348.M
 - real 348.A,C
 - reduced 348.I
 - Siegel zeta function of indefinite 450.K
- quadratic irrational number, irreducible 83.C
- quadratic loss function 398.A 399.E
- quadratic nonresidue 297.H
- quadratic programming 349
 - nonconvex 264.D
- quadratic programming problem 292.A 349.A
- quadratic reciprocity of Jacobi symbol, law of 297.I
- quadratic reciprocity of Legendre symbol, law of 297.I
- quadratic residue 297.H
- quadratic transformation 16.I
 - locally 16.K
 - locally (of an algebraic surface) 15.G
 - locally (of a complex manifold) 72.H
- quadratrix 187
- quadrature 107.A, App. A, Table 15.III
 - of a circle 179.A
 - method of 313.D
 - solution by App. A, Table 14.I
 - spectral density 397.N
- quadric(s) 350.A
 - confocal, family of 350.E
 - Darboux 110.B
 - pencil of 343.E
- quadric cone 350.B,G
- quadric conical hypersurface 350.G
- quadric conical surface 350.B
- quadric cylindrical hypersurface 350.G
- quadric hypersurface 350.G,I
 - (in a projective space) 343.D 350.I
 - central 350.G
 - elliptic 350.G
 - of the *h*th species, singular (in a projective space) 343.E
 - hyperbolic 350.G
 - noncentral 350.G
 - parabolic 350.G
 - pencil of 343.E
 - properly ($n - 1$)-dimensional 350.G
 - regular (in a projective space) 343.E
- quadric surface(s) 350
 - canonical form of the equation of 350.B
 - central 350.B
 - degenerate 350.B
 - proper 350.B
- quadrivium 187
- qualification
 - Gaugnard's constraint 292.B
 - Slater's constraint 292.B
- qualitative (data) 397.A
- quality 404.A
- quality characteristic 404.A
- quality control 404.A
 - statistical 404.A
- quantifier 411.C
 - bounded 356.B
 - existential 411.C
 - Hilbert's ε - 411.J
 - universal 411.C
- quantile
 - α - 396.C
 - of order p 341.H
 - restricted 33.B
- quantitative (data) 397.A
- quantity (quantities)
 - analog 138.B
 - digital 138.B
 - first fundamental (of a surface) 111.H
 - second fundamental (of a surface) 111.H
 - thermodynamical 419.A
- quantization 351.D
 - second 377.B
- quantized contact transformation 274.F
- quantum chromodynamics (QCD) 132.C,D
- quantum electrodynamics 132.C
- quantum field theory 132.C 150.C
- quantum flavor dynamics (QFD) 132.D
- quantum logic 351.L
- quantum mechanics 351
- quantum number
 - azimuthal 351.E
 - orbital magnetic 351.E
 - principal 351.E
- quantum statistical mechanics 402.A
- quartic equation 10.D, App. A, Table 1
- quartile(s) 396.C
 - first 396.C
 - third 396.C
- quasi-affine (algebraic variety) 16.C
- quasi-algebraically closed field 118.F
- quasi-analytic function 58.F

family of 58.A
 in the generalized sense 58.F
 set of 58.F
 quasi-Banach space 37.O
 quasibarreled (locally convex space) 424.I
 quasibounded harmonic function 193.G
 quasicomplete (locally convex space) 424.F
 quasiconformal mappings 352
 extremal 352.C
 quasiconformal reflection, theorem of 352.C
 quasicontinuity principle (in potential theory) 338.I
 quasicontinuous function 338.I
 quasidiscrete spectrum 136.E
 quasidual space (of a locally compact group) 437.I
 quasi-equivalent unitary representation 437.C
 quasi-everywhere (in potential theory) 338.F
 quasi-Frobenius algebra 29.H
 quasi-Fuchsian group 234.B
 quasigroup 190.P 241.C
 quasi-independent of path (a response probability)
 346.G
 quasi-invariant measure 225.J
 quasi-inverse (in a Banach algebra) 36.C
 quasi-inverse element (of an element of a ring)
 368.B
 quasi-invertible element (of a ring) 368.B
 quasilinear
 (operator) 224.E
 (partial differential equation) 320.A 323.D
 326.A
 quasilocal ring 284.D
 quasiniipotent (operator) 251.F
 quasinorm (of a vector) 37.O
 quasinormal family (of analytic functions) 435.E
 quasinormed linear space 37.O
 quasi-perfect mapping 425.CC
 quasiperiodic (translational flow) 126.L
 quasiperiodic motion 136.G 404.F
 quasiperiodic solution (of Hill's differential equation)
 268.B
 quasiprojective algebraic variety 16.C
 quasiprojective morphism 16.E
 quasiprojective scheme 16.E
 quasi-*p*-valent 438.E
 quasiregular element (of a ring) 368.B
 quasiregular function, *K*- 352.B
 quasisemilocal ring 284.D
 quasisimple ring 368.E
 quasisplit algebraic group, *k*- 13.O
 quasistable distribution 341.G
 quasistatic adiabatic process 419.B
 quasistationary electric circuit 130.B
 quasisymmetric 384.E
 quasivariational inequalities 440.D
 quaternion 29.B
 quaternion algebra 29.D
 generalized 29.D
 Hamilton 29.B
 total definite 27.D
 quaternion field 29.B
 quaternion group 151.B
 generalized 151.B
 quaternion hyperbolic space 412.G
 quaternion unimodular group 412.G
 quaternion vector bundle 147.F
 query 96.F
 questions 351.L
 queue 96.E
 length 260.H
 queuing model 260.H 307.C

queuing theory 260.H 307.C
 quotient(s)
 (of an ideal and a subset of a commutative ring)
 67.B
 (in a lattice) 243.F
 (of numbers) 297.A
 (of an ordered set) 311.B
 difference 104.A
 differential (at a point) 106.A
 field of 67.G
 geometric 16.W
 group of (of a commutative semigroup) 190.P
 Herbrand 200.N
 integral (in the division algorithm of poly-
 nomials) 337.C
 module of, of an *R*-module with respect to *S*
 67.G
 prime (in a lattice) 243.F
 Rayleigh 68.H 304.B
 ring of, of a ring with respect to a prime ideal
 67.G
 ring of, of a ring with respect to *S* 67.G
 ring of total 67.G
 quotient bialgebra 203.G
 quotient bundle 147.F
 (of a vector bundle on an algebraic variety)
 16.Y
 quotient category 52.N
 quotient chain complex 200.C
 quotient coalgebra 203.F
 quotient complex 201.L
 quotient group
 (of a group) 190.C
 (of a topological group) 423.E
 quotient *G*-set 362.B
 quotient lattice 243.C
 quotient Lie algebra 248.A
 quotient Lie group 249.G
 quotient (linear) space
 (by a linear subspace) 256.F
 (with respect to an equivalence relation) 256.F
 quotient mapping 425.G
 hereditarily 425.G
 quotient measure 225.H
 quotient object 52.D
 quotient representation (of a linear representation)
 362.C
 quotient set (with respect to an equivalence relation)
 135.B
 quotient singularity 418.C
 quotient space
 (by a discontinuous transformation group)
 122.A
 (of a linear space) 256.F
 (of a topological space) 425.L
 left (of a topological group) 423.E
 right (of a topological group) 423.E
 quotient system (of an algebraic system) 409.C
 quotient topological space 425.L
 quotient topology 425.L

R

R (real numbers) 294.A 355.A
ρ-set 308.I
r-closed space 425.U
r-frame, tangent 105.H
r-ple point (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
r-section
 (of a Euclidean (simplicial) complex) 70.B

r-skeleton (of a Euclidean complex)

- (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
- r*-skeleton (of a Euclidean complex) 70.B
- r*th differential 286.E
- r*th syzygy 369.F
- R*-estimator 371.H
- R*-progenerator 29.K
- (*R*, *k*)-summable 379.S
- (*R*, *S*)-exact sequence (of modules) 200.K
- (*R*, *S*)-injective module 200.K
- (*R*, *S*)-projective module 200.K
- R**-action (continuous) 126.B
- R**^{*n*}-valued random variable 342.C
- Raabe criterion App. A, Table 10.II
- Racah algebra 353.A
- Racah coefficient 353.B
- Rademacher-Men'shov theorem 317.B
- Rademacher system of orthogonal functions 317.C
- radial equation 351.E
- radial maximal function 168.B
- radian 139.D
- radiation condition, Sommerfeld 188.D
- radical(s)
 - (of an algebraic group) 13.I
 - (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
 - (of a commutative Banach algebra) 36.E
 - (of a commutative ring) 67.B
 - (of an ideal) 67.B
 - (of a Jordan algebra) 231.B
 - (of a Lie algebra) 248.D
 - (of a ring) 368.H
 - Jacobson (of a ring) 67.D
 - nilpotent (of a Lie algebra) 248.D
 - solution by (of an algebraic equation) 10.D
 - solvable by 172.H
 - unipotent 13.I
- radius (radii)
 - (of a solid sphere) 140
 - (of a sphere) 139.I
 - associated convergence 21.B
 - of convergence (of a power series) 339.A
 - of curvature (of a plane curve) 111.E
 - of curvature (of a space curve) 111.F
 - injectivity 178.C
 - of meromorphy (of a power series) 339.D
 - of principal curvature (of a surface) 111.H
 - spectral 126.K 251.F 390.A
 - of torsion (of a space curve) 111.F
- Radó solution, Douglas- (to Plateau problem) 275.C
- Radon, decomposition formula of 125.CC
- Radon integral, Lebesgue- 94.C
- Radon measure 270.I
 - positive 270.I
- Radon-Nikodým derivative 270.L 380.C
- Radon-Nikodým property 443.H
- Radon-Nikodým theorem 270.L 380.C
 - for vector measures 443.H
- Radon transform 218.F
 - conjugate 218.F
- raising the subscripts (for tensor fields) 417.D
- Ramanujan conjecture 32.D
- Ramanujan-Petersson conjecture 32.D
- Ramanujan sum 295.D
- ramification, degree of (of a branch point) 367.B
- ramification field (of a prime ideal) 14.K
 - m*th 14.K
- ramification group
 - (of a finite Galois extension) 257.D
 - (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- m*th 14.K
- ramification index
 - (of an algebraic function) 17.C
 - (of a finite extension) 257.D
 - (of a prime ideal over a field) 14.I
 - (of a valuation) 439.I
 - relative (of a prime ideal over a field) 14.I
- ramification numbers (of a prime ideal) 14.K
- ramification point (of an analytic covering space) 23.E
- ramification theorem (in the theory of algebraic functions) 17.C
 - conductor- (in class field theory) 59.C
- ramified (prime ideal) 14.I
- ramified covering space 23.B
- ramified element 198.O
- ramified type theory 411.K
- random, at 401.F
- random current 395.I
- random distribution 395.H 407.C
 - with independent values at every point 407.C
 - strictly stationary 395.H
 - strongly stationary 395.H
 - weakly stationary 395.C
 - in the wider sense 395.C
 - in the wide sense 407.C
- random effect 102.A
- random-effects model 102.A 403.C
- random event 342.B
- random field 407.B
- randomization 102.A
- randomized (decision function) 398.A
- randomized block design 102.B
- randomized design, completely 102.A
- randomized estimator 399.B
- randomized test 400.A
- random measure
 - Gaussian 407.D
 - Poisson 407.D
- random numbers 354
 - pseudo- 354.B
- random sample 374.A 396.B 401.F
- random sampling procedure 373.A
- random Schrödinger equations 340.E
- random sequence 354.E
- random tensor field 395.I
- random variable(s) 342.C
 - distribution of 342.C
 - independent 342.C
 - joint 342.C
 - measurable with respect to a family of 342.C
 - n*-dimensional 342.C
 - one-dimensional probability distribution of 342.C
 - probability distribution of 342.C
 - R**^{*n*}-valued 342.C
 - (*S*, **E**)-valued 342.C
- random walk 260.A
 - general 260.A
 - standard 260.A
- range
 - (of a correspondence) 358.B
 - (of a linear operator) 37.C
 - (of a mapping) 381.C
 - (of a population characteristic) 396.C
 - (of statistical data) 397.C
 - closed, theorem 37.J
 - equianharmonic (of points) 343.D
 - harmonic (of points) 343.D

- interquartile 397.C
- long 375.B
- metastable (of embeddings) 114.D
- numerical (of a linear operator) 251.E
- point (in projective geometry) 343.B
- point, of the number system (in projective geometry) 343.C
- sample 396.C
- short 375.B
- stable (of embeddings) 114.D
- of values (of a meromorphic function) 62.A
- rank
 - (of an analytic mapping) 23.C
 - (of a bilinear mapping) 256.H
 - (of a complex) 13.R
 - (of a connected compact Lie group) 248.X
 - (of an element of a complex) 13.R
 - (of an elliptic curve over \mathbb{Q}) 118.D
 - (of first-order predicates) 411.K
 - (of a free Abelian group) 2.C
 - (of a free group) 161.A
 - (of a free module) 277.G
 - (of a graph) 186.G
 - (of a Lie algebra) 248.K
 - (of a linear mapping) 256.F
 - (of a matrix) 269.D
 - (of a module) 2.E
 - (of a normal j -algebra) 384.C
 - (of a prime ideal) 67.E
 - (of a quadratic form) 348.A
 - (of a sesquilinear form) 256.Q
 - (of a symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space) 412.D
 - (of a Tits system) 151.J
 - (of a valuation) 439.B
 - bispinor 258.B
 - of finite (operator) 68.C
 - k - 13.Q
 - p - (of a torsion-free additive group) 2.E
 - at a point (of an analytic mapping) 23.C
 - rational (of a valuation) 439.B
- rank correlation
 - Kendall 371.K
 - Spearman 371.K
- rank function 66.F
- Rankine-Hugoniot relation 204.G 205.B
- rank k , irreducible tensor of 353.C
- rank test
 - signed 371.B
 - Wilcoxon signed 371.B
- Rao inequality, Cramér- 399.D
- Raphson method, Newton- 301.D
- rapidly decreasing C^∞ -function 168.B
- rapidly decreasing distribution 125.O
- rapidly decreasing sequence 168.B
- rarefied gas, equation of 41.A
- rate
 - coding 213.D
 - hazard 397.O
 - infinitesimal birth 260.G
 - infinitesimal death 260.G
 - of interest, assumed 214.A
 - transmission 213.A
- ratio
 - anharmonic 343.D
 - of the circumference of a circle to its diameter 332
 - cross 343.D
 - damping (of a damped oscillation) 318.B
 - direction (of a line in an affine space) 7.F
 - double 343.D
 - likelihood 400.I
 - likelihood, test 400.I
 - monotone likelihood 374.J
 - odds 397.K
 - Poisson 271.G
 - sequential probability, test 400.L
 - stiffness 303.G
 - ratio ergodic theorem 136.B
 - ratio estimator 373.C
 - rational action 226.B
 - rational cohomology group 200.O
 - rational curve 9.C 93.H
 - rational differential equation 288.A
 - rational divisor
 - k - (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - prime 9.C
 - rational double point 418.C
 - rational element 198.O
 - rational entire function 429.A
 - rational expression 337.H
 - field of 337.H
 - rational extrapolation method 303.F
 - rational function(s)
 - field of 337.H
 - generalized 142.B
 - on a variety 16.A
 - rational function field in n variables 149.K
 - rational function matrix 86.D
 - rational homomorphism 3.C 13.A
 - rational injectivity 200.O
 - rational integer 294.C
 - rationally equivalent cycles 16.R
 - rational mapping 16.I
 - defined along a subvariety 16.I
 - purely inseparable 16.I
 - separable 16.I
 - rational number(s) 294.D
 - denseness of 355.B
 - rational operation 294.A
 - rational point 118.E
 - over a field 369.C
 - k' - (of an algebraic variety) 16.A
 - rational polyhedral, convex 16.Z
 - rational Pontryagin class 56.F
 - rational rank (of a valuation) 439.B
 - rational real number 294.E
 - rational representation
 - (of $GL(V)$) 60.D
 - (of a matrix group) 226.B
 - rational singularity 418.C
 - rational surface 15.E
 - rational variety 16.J
 - uni- 16.J
 - ratio set 136.F
 - asymptotic 308.I
 - ray
 - (in affine geometry) 7.D
 - (in foundation of geometry) 155.B
 - (modulo m^*) 14.H
 - (in a Riemannian manifold) 178.F
 - asymptotic 178.F
 - grazing 325.L
 - paraxial 180.B
 - unit 351.B
- Rayleigh principle 68.H
- Rayleigh quotient 68.H 298.C 304.B
- Rayleigh-Ritz method 46.F 271.G
- Rayleigh-Schrödinger series 331.D
- reaction, law of 271.A

Real analytic (at a point)

- real analytic (at a point) 106.K
- real analytic fiber bundle 147.O
- real analytic foliation 154.H
- real analytic function 106.K 198.H
 - exponentially decreasing 125.BB
- real analytic manifold 105.D
- real analytic structure 105.D
- real axis 74.C
- real closed field 149.N
- real-compact space 425.BB
- real field 149.N
 - formally 149.N
 - totally 14.F
- real form 412
 - (of a complex algebraic group) 60.O
 - (of a complex Lie algebra) 248.P
 - normal (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.Q
- real function 165.B
- real Grassmann manifold 199.B
- real Hilbert space 197.B
- real hyperbolic space 412.G
- real hypersphere 76.A
 - oriented 76.A
- real hypersurface, spherical 344.C
- real immersion, totally 365.M
- real infinite prime divisor 439.H
- real interpolation space 224.C
- realizable
 - (for a linear representation) 362.F
 - (by a submanifold) 114.G
- realization
 - (of a linear time-varying system) 86.D
 - (of an s.s. complex) 70.E
 - (of an s.s. mapping) 70.E
 - minimal 86.D
- realization theorem (of a homotopy group) 202.N
- realization theory 86.D
- real Lie algebra 248.A
 - compact 248.P
- real line 355.E
- real linear space 256.A
- real monoidal transform 274.E
- real number(s) 294.E 355
 - Cantor's theory of 294.E
 - completeness of 294.E 355.B
 - connectedness of 294.E
 - continuity of 294.E
 - Dedekind's theory of 294.E
 - extended 87.E
 - infinitesimal 276.E
 - irrational 294.E
 - mod 1 355.D
 - nonstandard 276.E
 - rational 294.E
- real part 74.A
- real prime divisor 439.H
- real projective space 343.D
 - infinite-dimensional 56.B
- real quadratic field 347.A
- real quadratic form 348.A.C
- real representation (of a Lie group) 249.O
- real root (of an algebraic equation) 10.E
- real simple Lie algebra
 - classical compact 248.T
 - exceptional compact 248.T
- real spectral measure 390.D
- real Stiefel manifold
 - of k -frames 199.B
 - of orthogonal k -frame 199.B
- real submanifold, totally 365.M
- real-time (computation) 19.E
- real topological vector space 424.A
- real-valued functions 165.B
- real-valued measurable (cardinal) 33.F
- real variable 165.C
- rearrangement 168.B
- rearrangement invariant 168.B
- reciprocal equation 10.C
- reciprocal linear representation (of an algebra) 362.C
- reciprocal network 282.C
- reciprocal permutation representation (of a group) 362.B
- reciprocal spiral 93.H
- reciprocity
 - of annihilators (in topological Abelian groups) 422.E
 - Artin's general law of 59.C
 - complementary law of 14.O
 - Fourier 160.C
 - general law of 14.O
 - law of quadratic, of Jacobi symbol 297.I
 - law of quadratic, of Legendre symbol 297.I
 - relations, Onsager's 402.K
- reciprocity law 297.I
 - for Dedekind sums 328
 - explicit (for Hilbert norm-residue symbol) 14.R
 - Gel'fand–Pyatetskii–Shapiro (on unitary representation) 437.DD
 - Shafarevich 257.H
- record 96.B
- rectangle 140
 - latin 241.E
- rectangular coordinates (in a Euclidean space) 90.B
- rectangular distribution App. A, Table 22
- rectangular hyperbola 78.E
- rectangular hyperbolic coordinates 90.C
- rectangular matrix 269.A
- rectangular parallelepiped 140
- rectifiable
 - (current) 275.G
 - (curve) 93.F 246.A
 - locally 143.A 246.A
- rectifying plane 111.F
- rectifying surface 111.F
- rectilinear complex 70.B
- recurrence formulas for indefinite integrals App. A, Table 9.II
- recurrence theorem 136.A.C
- recurrence time 260.C
 - mean 260.C
- recurrent
 - (Lévy process) 5.G
 - (Markov chain) 260.B
 - (Markov process) 261.B
 - (nonsingular measurable transformation) 136.C
 - (point of a dynamical system) 126.E
 - chain 126.E
 - infinitely (measurable transformation) 136.C
 - linear (sequence) 295.A
 - non- (Markov chain) 260.B
 - null (point) 260.B
 - positive (ergodic class) 260.B
 - positive (point) 260.B
 - regionally (flow) 126.E
 - strongly (measurable transformation) 136.C

- recurrent chain 260.B
- recurrent event 250.D 260.C
 - delayed 260.C
- recurrent point
 - (of a Markov chain) 260.B
 - (of a Markov process) 261.B
- recurrent sequence of order r 295.A
- recurrent set 260.E
 - chain 126.E
- recursive function(s) 356
 - general 356.C,F
 - partial 356.E,F
 - primitive 356.A,B,F
 - uniformly primitive 356.B
- recursively
 - (define a partial recursive function) 356.E
 - uniformly in Ψ 356.E
- recursively enumerable predicate 356.D
- recursively enumerable set 356.D
- recursive predicate
 - general 356.C
 - primitive 356.B
- recursive set 97 356.D
 - general 97
- reduced
 - (a closed linear subspace) 251.L
 - (latin square) 241.A
 - (scheme) 16.D
- reduced Abelian group 2.D
- reduced algebra 231.B
- reduced basis (of a lattice) 92.C
- reduced bundle (of a principal G -bundle) 147.J
- reduced character (of an algebra) 362.E
- reduced Clifford group 61.D
- reduced cone (of a topological space) 202.F
- reduced dual 437.L
- reduced extremal distance 143.B
- reduced form (of a linear structural equation system) 128.C
- reduced homology exact sequence 201.F
- reduced homology group 201.E
- reduced join
 - (of homotopy classes) 202.Q
 - (of mappings) 202.F
 - (of topological spaces) 202.F
- reduced link polynomial 235.D
- reduced mapping cone 202.F
- reduced norm (of an algebra) 362.E
- reduced orthogonal group 61.D
- reduced product space 202.Q
- reduced quadratic form 348.I
- reduced representation (of an algebra) 362.E
- reduced residue system modulo m 297.G
- reduced square, Steenrod 64.B
- reduced square operation, Steenrod 64.B
- reduced suspension
 - (of a topological space) 202.F
 - n -fold 202.F
- reduced trace (of an algebra) 362.E
- reduced von Neumann algebra 308.C
- reducibility, axiom of 156.B 411.K
- reducible
 - (algebraic equation) 10.B
 - (algebraic variety) 16.A
 - (continuous geometry) 85.A
 - (fiber bundle) 147.J
 - (in four color problem) 157.D
 - (germ of an analytic set) 23.B
 - (linear system) 16.N
 - (linear system in control theory) 86.C
 - (polynomial) 337.F
 - (positive matrix) 269.N
 - (representation) 362.C
 - (Riemannian manifold) 364.E
 - completely (A -module) 277.H
 - completely (group) 190.L
 - completely (representation) 362.C
- reductio ad absurdum 156.C 411.I
- reduction
 - d'Alembert method of, of order 252.F
 - good (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - modulo \mathfrak{A} (of a representation) 277.L
 - modulo m (of a linear representation) 362.F
 - potential good (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - potential stable (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - stable (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - stable (of a curve) 9.K
- reduction formula (of a surface) 110.A
- reduction theorem, cup product (on cohomology or homology of groups) 200.M
- reduction theory, Minkowski (on fundamental regions) 122.E
- reductive
 - (algebraic group) 13.I
 - (homogeneous space) 199.A
 - (Lie algebra) 248.G
- reductive action 226.B
 - defined by a rational representation 226.B
 - geometrically 226.B
 - linearly 226.B
 - semi- 226.B
- reductive stabilizer 199.A
- Reeb component 154.B
- Reeb foliation 154.B
- Reeb stability theorems 154.D
- Ree group 151.I
- Reeh-Schlieder theorem 150.E
- Rees lemma, Artin- 284.A
- Ree type
 - group of 151.J
 - group of Janko- 151.J
- reference edge 281.C
- refinement
 - (of a covering) 425.R
 - (of a descending chain in a lattice) 243.F
 - (of a normal chain in a group) 190.G
 - barycentric 425.R
 - cushioned 425.X
 - Δ - (of a covering) 425.R
 - star (of a covering) 425.R
- reflected wave 325.L
- reflecting barrier 115.B,C
- reflection
 - (associated with Φ) 13.R
 - (of a principal space) 139.B
 - glide 92.E
 - Schwartz's principle of 74.E 198.G
 - space 359
 - theorem of quasiconformal 352.C
- reflection coefficient 387.D
- reflectionless potential 387.D
- reflection points (with respect to a circle) 74.E
- reflection positivity 150.F
- reflection principle 45.E
- reflexive
 - (locally convex space) 424.O
 - (relation) 358.A
 - Banach space 37.G
- reflexive law
 - (for an equivalence relation) 135.A

- (on ordering) 311.A
- refraction, atmospheric 392
- Regge behavior 386.C
- Regge poles 132.C 386.C
- regime, local 51.B
- region 79.A
 - acceptance 400.A
 - confidence 399.Q
 - confidence, uniformly most powerful 399.Q
 - confidence, uniformly most powerful unbiased 399.Q
 - critical 400.A
 - Dirichlet 234.C
 - of discontinuity 234.A
 - estimation 399.Q
 - feasible 264.B 292.A
 - Ford fundamental 234.C
 - fundamental (of a discrete transformation group) 122.B
 - invariance of a confidence 399.Q
 - of relative stability 303.G
 - star 339.D
 - tolerance 399.R
 - unbiased confidence 399.Q
- regionally recurrent (flow) 126.E
- regionally recurrent on an invariant set 126.E
- region of absolute stability (of the Runge-Kutta (P, p) method) 303.G
- regression, line of 111.F.I
- regression analysis 403.D
- regression coefficient 397.H,J 403.D
- regression function 397.I
 - linear 397.H 403.D
- regression hyperplane 403.D
- regression line 403.D
- regula falsi 301.C
- regular
 - (almost contact manifold) 110.E
 - (almost periodic system) 290.B
 - (boundary point) 120.D
 - (cell complex) 70.D
 - (closed set) 125.J
 - (coherent \mathcal{E} -module) 274.G
 - (differential form on an algebraic variety) 16.O
 - (Dirichlet form) 261.C
 - (element of a connected Lie group) 249.P
 - (element of a real Lie algebra) 248.B
 - (estimator) 399.N
 - (Green line) 193.J
 - (kernel) 125.L
 - (left ideal of a Banach algebra) 36.D
 - (ordinal number) 312.E
 - (permutation group) 151.H
 - (point for an additive process) 5.G
 - (point of an analytic set) 23.B 45.D
 - (point with respect to an analytic set) 21.M
 - (point with respect to the Dirichlet problem) 207.B
 - (point of a flow) 126.D
 - (prime number) 14.L
 - (sampling procedure) 373.A
 - (spectral sequence) 200.J
 - (submartingale) 262.D
 - (at a subvariety) 16.B
 - homogeneously 275.C
 - of the h th species 343.E
 - at the point at infinity (for a harmonic function) 193.B
 - along a subvariety (for a rational mapping) 16.I
 - regular affine transformation 7.E
 - regular Banach space 37.G
 - regular boundary
 - (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 - domain with (in a C^∞ -manifold) 105.U
 - regular chain (of integral elements) 428.E
 - regular conditional probability 342.E
 - regular cone 384.A
 - self-dual 384.E
 - regular covering (space) 91.A
 - regular element
 - (of a ring) 368.B
 - p - (of a finite group) 362.I
 - regular embedding 105.K
 - regular extension (of a field) 149.K
 - regular factorization 251.N
 - regular first integral 126.H
 - regular form 16.O
 - regular function(s) 198.A
 - on an open set (of a variety) 16.B
 - sheaf of germs of 16.B
 - at a subvariety 16.B
 - regular grammar 31.D
 - regular graph 186.C
 - regular integral element 191.I 428.E
 - regular integral manifold (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 - regularity
 - abscissa of (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
 - axiom of (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
 - up to a boundary 112.F
 - parameter of (of a Lebesgue measurable set) 380.D
 - regularization (of a distribution) 125.M
 - regularizing (kernel) 125.L
 - regular knot projection 235.A
 - regular local equation (at an integral point) 428.E
 - regular local ring 284.D
 - regularly convex set 89.G
 - regularly homotopic (immersion) 114.D
 - regularly hyperbolic (partial differential equation) 325.A,F
 - regular mapping
 - (between prealgebraic varieties) 16.C
 - of class C^1 208.B
 - regular matrix 269.B
 - regular measure 270.F
 - \mathcal{B} - 270.F
 - K - 270.F
 - regular n -gon 357.A
 - regular neighborhood 65.C
 - regular neighborhood system 65.C
 - regular outer measure 270.E
 - regular perturbation 331.D
 - regular point
 - (in catastrophe theory) 51.F
 - (of a differentiable mapping) 105.J
 - (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 - (for a Hunt process) 261.D
 - (of a polyhedron or cell complex) 65.B
 - (of a surface in E^3) 111.J
 - semi- (of a surface in E^3) 111.J
 - regular polygon 357.A
 - regular polyhedra 357.B
 - regular polyhedral angle 357.B
 - regular polyhedral group 151.G
 - regular positive Radon measure 270.H
 - regular process, positively 44.C
 - regular projective transformation 343.D
 - regular representation

(of a group) 362.B
 (of a locally compact group) 69.B
 (of a topological transformation group) 437.A
 left (of an algebra) 362.C
 left (of a group) 362.C
 right (of an algebra) 362.E
 right (of a group) 362.E
 regular ring 284.D
 regular ring (continuous geometry) 85.B
 regular sequence (of Lebesgue measurable sets) 380.D
 regular singularity (of a coherent \mathcal{E} -module) 274.H
 regular singular point 254.B
 regular solution (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 regular space 425.Q
 completely 425.Q
 regular submanifold (of a C^∞ -manifold) 105.L
 regular system
 of algebraic equations 10.A
 of parameters (of a local ring) 284.D
 regular transformation
 (of a linear space) 256.B
 (of a sequence) 379.L
 totally (of a sequence) 379.L
 regular tube 193.K
 regular value 105.J
 regulator (of an algebraic number field) 14.D
 p -adic 450.J
 regulator problem, optimal 80.F
 Reinhardt domain 21.B
 complete 21.B
 reiteration theorem 224.D
 rejection 400.A
 related differential equation 254.F
 relation(s) 358
 (among elements of a group) 190.C
 (among the generators of a group) 161.A
 Adem (for Steenrod p th power operations) 64.B
 Adem (for Steenrod square operations) 64.B
 analytic, invariance theorem of 198.K
 antisymmetric 358.A
 binary 358.A 411.G
 canonical anticommutation 377.A
 canonical commutation 351.C 377.A,C
 coarser 135.C
 defining (among the generators of a group) 161.A
 dispersion 132.C
 equivalence 135.A 358.A
 Euler 419.B
 finer 135.C
 Fuchsian 253.A
 functional (among components of a mapping) 208.C
 functional, of class C^r 208.C
 fundamental (among the generators of a group) 161.A 419.A
 Gibbs-Duhem 419.B
 Heisenberg uncertainty 351.C
 Hurwitz (on homomorphisms of Abelian varieties) 3.K
 identity 102.I
 incidence 282.A
 inverse 358.A
 Legendre 134.F, App. A, Table 16.I
 Maxwell 419.B
 n -ary 411.G
 normal commutation 150.D
 order 311.A

Subject Index

Relative nullity, index of

orthogonality (on irreducible characters) 362.G
 orthogonality (for square integrable unitary representations) 437.M
 period 11.C
 Plücker (on Plücker coordinates) 90.B
 prey-predator 263.B
 proper equivalence (in an analytic space) 23.E
 Rankine-Hugoniot 204.G 205.B
 reciprocity, Onsager's 402.K
 reflexive 358.A
 Riemann-Hurwitz 367.B
 Riemann period 3.L 11.C
 stronger 135.C
 symmetric 358.A
 transitive 358.A
 weaker 135.C
 relationship algebra 102.J
 relative Alexander cohomology group 201.M
 relative algebraic number field 14.I
 relative boundary 367.B
 relative Bruhat decomposition 13.Q
 relative Čech cohomology group 201.M
 relative Čech homology group 201.M
 relative chain complex 200.C
 relative cochain complex 200.F
 relative cohomology group 215.W
 relative complement (at two sets) 381.B
 relative components (of a Lie transformation group) 110.A
 relative consistency 156.D
 relative degree
 (of a finite extension) 257.D
 (of a prime ideal over a field) 14.I
 relative derived functor 200.K
 relative different 14.J
 relative discriminant 14.J
 relative entropy 212.B
 relative extremum, conditional 106.L
 relative frequency (of samples) 396.C
 relative homological algebra 200.K
 relative homotopy group 202.K
 relative integral invariant 219.A
 Cartan's 219.B
 relative invariant 12.A 226.A
 relative invariant measure 225.H
 relatively ample sheaf 16.E
 relatively bounded (with respect to a linear operator) 331.B
 relatively closed set 425.J
 relatively compact
 (with respect to a linear operator) 331.B
 (maximum likelihood method) 399.M
 (set) 425.S
 (subset) 273.F
 relatively dense 126.E
 relatively invariant measure 225.H
 relatively minimal 15.G 16.I
 relatively minimal model 15.G
 relatively open set 425.J
 relatively prime
 (fractional ideals) 14.E
 (numbers) 297.A
 relatively stable 303.G
 relative maximum (of a function) 106.L
 relative Mayer-Vietoris exact sequence 201.L
 relative minimum (of a function) 106.L
 relative neighborhood 425.J
 relative norm (of a fractional ideal) 14.I
 relative nullity, index of 365.D

relative open set 425.J
relative ramification index (of a prime ideal over a field) 14.I
relative singular homology group 201.L
relative stability 303.G
 interval of 303.G
 region of 303.G
relative topology 425.J
relative uniformity 436.E
relative uniform star convergence 310.F
relativistically covariant 150.D
relativity
 general principle of 359
 general theory of 359.A
 special principle of 359
 special theory of 359.A
relativization
 (of a definition of primitive recursive functions) 356.B
 (of a topology) 425.J
 (of a uniformity) 436.E
relativized 356.F
relaxation 215.A
 with projection 440.E
relaxation oscillation 318.C
relaxed continuity requirements, variational principles with 271.G
Rellich-Dixmier theorem 351.C
Rellich-Kato theorem 331.B
Rellich lemma 68.C
Rellich theorem 323.G
Rellich uniqueness theorem 188.D
remainder 297.A 337.C
 (in Taylor's formula) 106.E
 Cauchy App. A, Table 9.IV
 Lagrange App. A, Table 9.IV
 Roche-Schlömilch App. A, Table 9.IV
remainder theorem 337.E
 Chinese 297.G
Remak-Schmidt theorem, Krull- (in group theory) 190.L
Remmert-Stein continuation theorem 23.B
Remmert theorem 23.C
removable (set for a family of functions) 169.C
removable singularity
 (of a complex function) 198.D
 (of a harmonic function) 193.L
Renaissance mathematics 360
renewal
 equation 260.C
 theorem 260.C
renormalizable 111.B 132.C 150.C
 super 150.C
renormalization
 constant 150.C
 equation 111.B
 group 111.A
 method 111.A
Rényi theorem 123.E
reoriented graph 186.B
repeated integral
 (for the Lebesgue integral) 221.E
 (for the Riemann integral) 216.G
repeated series
 by columns 379.E
 by rows 379.E
replacement, axiom of 33.B 381.G
replacement, model 307.C
replica 13.C
replication 102.A

 number of 102.B
represent
 (a functor) 52.L
 (an ordinal number) 81.B
representable
 (functor) 52.L
 linearly (matroid) 66.H
representation(s) 362.A
 (of an algebraic system) 409.C
 (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
 (of a Jordan algebra) 231.C
 (of a knot group) 235.E
 (of a lattice) 243.E
 (of a Lie algebra) 248.B
 (of a mathematical system) 362.A
 (of a vector lattice) 310.D
 absolutely irreducible 362.F
 adjoint (of a Lie algebra) 248.B
 adjoint (of a Lie group) 249.P
 adjoint (of a representation) 362.E
 analytic (of $GL(V)$) 60.B
 in terms of arc length (of a continuous arc) 246.A
 canonical (of Gaussian processes) 176.E
 completely reducible 362.C
 complex (of a Lie group) 249.O
 complex conjugate 362.F
 conjugate 362.F
 contragredient 362.E
 coregular (of an algebra) 362.E
 cyclic (of a C^* -algebra) 36.G
 cyclic (of a topological group) 437.A
 differential (of a unitary representation of a Lie group) 437.S
 direct sum of 362.C
 double-valued 258.B
 dual 362.E
 equivalent 362.C
 factor (of a topological group) 437.E
 factor, of type I, II, or III 308.M 437.E
 faithful 362.B
 Fock 150.C
 Gel'fand (of a commutative Banach algebra) 36.E
 generalized canonical (of Gaussian processes) 176.E
 generating (of a compact Lie group) 249.U
 half-spin (even, odd) 61.E
 Herglotz's integral 43.I
 induced 362.G
 induced (of a finite group) 362.G
 induced (of a unitary representation of a subgroup) 437.O
 integral (of a group) 362.G,K
 integral, Cauchy's 21.C
 irreducible (of an algebra or a group) 362.C
 irreducible (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
 irreducible projective 362.J
 isomorphic 362.C
 isotropy 431.C
 Källén-Lehmann 150.D
 kernel (of a Green's operator) 189.B
 l -adic 3.E
 Lax 287.B,C 387.C
 left regular (of a group) 362.B
 linear \rightarrow linear representation
 list 186.D
 Mandelstam 132.C
 matrix 362.D
 modular (of a finite group) 362.G

module of 69.D
 momentum 351.C
 without multiplicity 437.G
 normal (of a von Neumann algebra) 308.C
 ordinary (of a finite group) 362.G
 parametric 165.C
 parametric (of Feynman integrals) 146.B
 parametric (of a subspace of an affine space) 7.C
 permutation (of a group) 362.B
 permutation, reciprocal (of a group) 362.B
 polynomial (of $GL(V)$) 60.D
 position 351.C
 projective (of a group) 362.J
 projective, irreducible 362.J
 quotient (of a linear representation) 362.C
 rational (of $GL(V)$) 60.D
 rational (of a matrix group) 226.B
 real (of a Lie group) 349.O
 reciprocal linear (of an algebra) 362.C
 reciprocal permutation (of a group) 362.B
 reduced (of an algebra) 362.F
 reducible 362.C
 regular (of a locally compact group) 69.B
 regular (of a topological transformation group) 437.A
 regular, left (of an algebra) 362.C
 regular, left (of a group) 362.B
 regular, right (of an algebra) 362.E
 regular, right (of a group) 362.B
 Schrödinger 351.C
 semisimple 362.C
 similar 362.C
 similar matrix (semilinear mapping) 256.D
 similar projective 362.J
 simple 362.C
 slice 431.C
 special (of a Jordan algebra) 231.C
 spectral 390.E
 spherical (of a differentiable manifold) 111.G
 spherical (of a space curve) 111.F
 spherical (of a unimodular locally compact group) 437.Z
 spin 61.E
 spin (of $SO(n)$) 60.J
 spinor, of rank 258.B
 strongly continuous (of a topological group) 69.B
 sub- 362.C
 sub- (of a projective representation) 362.J
 tensor (of a general linear group) 256.M
 tensor product of 362.C
 translation, theorem 375.H
 transposed 362.E
 tree 96.D
 unit (of a group) 362.C
 unitary \rightarrow unitary representation
 vector (of a Clifford group) 61.D
 weakly continuous (of a topological group) 69.B
 zero (of an algebra) 362.C
 representation module
 (of a linear representation) 362.C
 faithful 362.C
 representation problem (on surfaces) 246.I
 representation ring 237.H
 representation space
 (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
 (of a Lie algebra) 248.B
 (of a Lie group) 249.O

Subject Index

Resolvent set (of a linear operator)

(of a unitary representation) 437.A
 representative (of an equivalence class) 135.B
 representative function (of a compact Lie group) 249.U
 representative ring (of a compact Lie group) 249.U
 representing function (of a predicate) 356.B
 representing function (of a subset) 381.C
 representing measure 164.C
 reproducing kernel 188.G
 reproducing property (of a probability distribution) 341.E, App. A, Table 22
 reproduction function 263.A
 requirements, variational principles with relaxed continuity 271.G
 reserve, liability 214.B
 residual (subset of a directed set) 311.D
 residual limit set 234.E
 residual set 126.H 425.N
 residual spectrum 390.A
 residue(s)
 (of a complex function) 198.E
 calculus of 198.F
 of the n th power (modulo p) 14.M
 norm- (modulo p) 14.P
 norm- (symbol) 14.Q 257.F
 power- (symbol) 14.N
 quadratic 297.H
 residue character 295.D
 residue class (modulo an ideal in a ring) 368.F
 residue (class) algebra 29.A
 residue (class) field 149.C 368.F 439.B
 residue (class) ring (modulo an ideal) 368.F
 residue system modulo m
 complete 297.G
 reduced 297.G
 residue theorem 198.E
 (on a nonsingular curve) 9.E
 resistance, negative 318.B
 resistance, specific 130.B
 resolution 200.H
 complete free (of \mathbf{Z}) 200.N
 complex spectral 390.E
 flabby 125.W
 of the identity 390.D
 injective (in an Abelian category) 200.I
 $2I$ 102.I
 $2I + 1$ 102.I
 minimal 418.C
 projective (in an Abelian category) 200.I
 right (of an A -module) 200.F
 right injective (of an A -module) 200.F
 of singularities 16.L
 of singularities (of an analytic space) 23.D 418.B
 spectral 390.E
 standard (of \mathbf{Z}) 200.M
 resolutive 207.B
 resolutive compactification 207.B
 resolvent
 (of a kernel) 217.D
 (of a linear operator) 251.F
 (operator of a Markov process) 261.D
 cubic App. A, Table 1
 resolvent (operator of a Markov process) 261.D
 resolvent convergence
 norm 331.C
 strong 331.C
 resolvent equation 251.F
 resolvent set (of a linear operator) 251.F 390.A

Resonance model, dual

- resonance model, dual 132.C
- resonance pole 331.F
- resonance theorem 37.H
- response 405.A
- response surface 102.M
 - designs for exploring 102.M
- rest energy 359.C
- restitutive force 318.B
- rest point (of a trajectory) 126.D
- restricted (Lorentz group) 258.A
- restricted Burnside problem (in group theory) 161.C
- restricted differential system 191.I
- restricted direct product 6.B
 - (of an infinite number of groups) 190.L
 - (of locally compact groups) 6.B
- restricted holonomy group 80.D 364.E
- restricted homogeneous holonomy group 364.E
- restricted homotopy 202.B
- restricted Lie algebra 248.V
- restricted minimal condition (in a commutative ring) 284.A
- restricted quantifier 33.B
- restricted three-body problem 420.F
- restriction
 - (of a connection) 80.F
 - (of a continuous flow) 126.D
 - (of a distribution) 125.D
 - (of a mapping) 381.C
 - (in a presheaf) 383.A
 - crystallographic 92.A
 - scalar (of a B -module) 277.L
 - unitary (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.P
- resultant(s) 369.E
 - system of 369.E
- retardation 163.A
- retarded differential equation 163.A
- retarded type (functional differential equation) 163.A
- retract 202.D
 - absolute 202.D
 - absolute neighborhood 202.D
 - deformation 202.D
 - fundamental 382.C
 - fundamental absolute (FAR) 382.C
 - fundamental absolute neighborhood (FANR) 382.C
 - neighborhood 202.D
 - neighborhood deformation 202.D
 - strong deformation 202.D
- retraction 202.D
- retrieval, information (system) 96.F
- retrospective study 40.E
- return 127.C
 - first- (mapping, map) 126.C
 - maximum 127.B
- Reuleaux triangle 89.E 111.E
- reversal, time 258.A
- reversed process 261.F
- review technique, program evaluation and 376
- revolution
 - ellipsoid of 350.B
 - elliptic paraboloid of 350.B
 - hyperboloid of, of one sheet 350.B
 - hyperboloid of, of two sheets 350.B
 - surface of 111.I
- Reynolds law of similarity 205.C
- Reynolds number 116.B 205.C
- Reynolds number, magnetic 259
- Riccati differential equation App. A, Table 14.I
 - generalized App. A, Table 14.I
 - matrix 86.E
- Riccati equation, matrix 405.G
- Ricci curvature 364.D
- Ricci equation 365.C
- Ricci formula 417.B, App. A, Table 4.II
- Ricci tensor 364.D 417.B, App. A, Table 4.II
- Richard paradox 319.B
- Richardson method 302.C
- Riemann, G. F. B. 363
 - P -function of 253.B
- Riemann bilinear relations, Hodge- 16.V
- Riemann continuation theorem 21.F
- Riemann differential equation App. A, Table 18.I
- Riemann (differential) equation, Cauchy- 198.A 274.G
 - (for a holomorphic function of several complex variables) 21.C
 - (for a holomorphic function of two complex variables) 320.F
- Riemann function (of a Cauchy problem) 325.D
- Riemann-Hilbert problem
 - (for integral equations) 217.J
 - (for linear ordinary differential equations) 253.D
- Riemann-Hurwitz formula (on coverings of a non-singular curve) 9.I
- Riemann-Hurwitz relation 367.B
- Riemann hypothesis 450.A, I, P, Q
- Riemannian connection 80.K 364.B
 - coefficients of 80.L
- Riemannian curvature 364.D
- Riemannian foliation 154.H
- Riemannian geometry 137, App. A, Table 4.II
- Riemannian homogeneous space 199.A
 - symmetric 412.B
- Riemannian manifold(s) 105.P 286.K 364
 - flat 364.E
 - irreducible 364.E
 - isometric 364.A
 - locally flat 364.E
 - normal contact 110.E
 - reducible 364.E
- Riemannian metric 105.P
 - pseudo- 105.P
 - volume element associated with 105.W
- Riemannian product (of Riemannian manifolds) 364.A
- Riemannian space 364.A
 - irreducible symmetric App. A, Table 5.III
 - locally symmetric App. A, Table 4.II
 - symmetric \rightarrow symmetric Riemannian space
- Riemannian submanifold 365
- Riemann integrable (function) 216.A
- Riemann integral 37.K 216.A
- Riemann-Lebesgue theorem 159.A 160.A
- Riemann lower integral 216.A
- Riemann mapping theorem 77.B
- Riemann matrix 3.I
- Riemann method of summation 379.S
- Riemann non-Euclidean geometry 285.A
- Riemann period inequality 3.L
- Riemann period relation 3.L
- Riemann P -function App. A, Tables 14.II 18.I
- Riemann problem 253.D
- Riemann-Roch group 366.D
- Riemann-Roch inequality (on algebraic surfaces) 15.D

- Riemann-Roch theorem(s) 366
 - (on algebraic surfaces) 15.D
 - (for compact complex surface) 366.C
 - (on nonsingular algebraic curves) 9.C
 - (on Riemann surfaces) 11.D
 - for an adjoint system 15.D
 - for differentiable manifolds 237.G
 - generalized (on algebraic curves) 9.F
 - for a line bundle 366.C
- Riemann-Roch type
 - Grothendieck theorem of 366.D
 - Hirzebruch theorem of 366.B
- Riemann sphere 74.D
- Riemann-Stieltjes integral 94.B 166.C
- Riemann structure, Cauchy- 344.A
- Riemann sum 216.A
- Riemann surface(s) 367
 - abstract 367.A
 - classification theory of 367.E
 - closed 367.A
 - elliptic 367.D
 - hyperbolic 367.D
 - maximal 367.F
 - open 367.A
 - open, of null boundary 367.E
 - open, of positive boundary 367.E
 - parabolic 367.D
 - prolongable 367.F
- Riemann theorem
 - (on removable singularities) 198.D
 - (on series with real terms) 379.C
- Riemann Θ function 3.L
- Riemann upper integral 216.A
- Riemann ζ function 450.V
- Riesz convexity theorem 88.C
- Riesz decomposition
 - (in a Markov chain) 260.D
 - of a superharmonic or subharmonic function 193.S
- Riesz-Fischer theorem 168.B 317.A
- Riesz group 36.H
- Riesz method of order k , summable by 379.R
- Riesz method of summation of the k th order 379.R
- Riesz potential 338.B
- Riesz-Schauder theorem 68.E
- Riesz space 310.B
- Riesz (F.) theorem
 - (on L_p functions) 317.B
 - (representation) 197.F
- Riesz (F. and M.) theorem 168.C
 - (on bounded holomorphic functions on a disk) 43.D
- Riesz-Thorin theorem 224.A
- Riesz transform 251.O
- right, limit on the 87.F
- right-adjoint (linear mapping) 256.Q
- right adjoint functor 52.K
- right A -module 277.D
- right angle 151.D
- right annihilator (of a subset of an algebra) 29.H
- right Artinian ring 368.F
- right balanced (functor) 200.I
- right circular cone 350.B
- right conoid 111.I
- right continuous (function) 84.B
- right coset (of a subgroup of a group) 190.C
- right coset space (of a topological group) 423.E
- right decomposition, Peirce (in a unitary ring) 368.F
- right derivative 106.A
- right derived functor 200.I
- right differentiable 106.A
- right endpoint (of an interval) 355.C
- right equivalent 51.C
- right exact (functor) 200.I
- right global dimension (of a ring) 200.K
- right G -set 362.B
- right helicoid 111.I
- right ideal
 - (of a ring) 368.F
 - integral 27.A
- right injective resolution (of an A -module) 200.F
- right invariant Haar measure 225.C
- right invariant tensor field (on a Lie group) 249.A
- right inverse (of $df_1(0)$) 286.G
- right inverse element (of an element of a ring) 368.B
- right linear space 256.A
- right majorizing function 316.E
- right Noetherian ring 368.F
- right \mathfrak{o} , ideal 27.A
- right operation (of a set to another set) 409.A
- right order (of a g -lattice) 27.A
- right parametrix 345.A
- right projective space 343.H
- right quotient space (of a topological group) 423.E
- right regular representation
 - (of an algebra) 362.E
 - (of a group) 362.B
- right resolution (of an A -module) 200.F
- right satellite 200.I
- right semihereditary ring 200.K
- right semi-integral 68.N
- right shunt 115.B
- right singular point (of a diffusion process) 115.B
- right superior function 316.E
- right translation 249.A 362.B
- right uniformity (of a topological group) 423.G
- rigid
 - (characteristic class of a foliation) 154.G
 - (isometric immersion) 365.E
- rigid body 271.E
- rigidity
 - (of a sphere) 111.I
 - modulus of 271.G
- rigidity theorem 178.C
 - strong 122.G
- ring(s) 368
 - adele (of an algebraic number field) 6.C
 - affine 16.A
 - anchor 410.B
 - Artinian 284.A
 - associated graded 284.D
 - basic (of a module) 277.D
 - Boolean 42.C
 - Burnside 431.F
 - category of 52.B
 - category of commutative 52.B
 - Chow (of a projective variety) 16.R
 - cobordism 114.H
 - coefficient (of an algebra) 29.A
 - coefficient (of a semilocal ring) 284.D
 - coherent sheaf of 16.E
 - cohomology 201.I
 - cohomology, of compact connected Lie groups App. A, Table 6.IV

cohomology, of an Eilenberg-MacLane complex App. A, Table 6.III
commutative 67 368.A
complete local 284.D
completely integrally closed 67.I
completely primary 368.H
complete Zariski 284.C
completion, with respect to an ideal 16.X
complex cobordism 114.H
of convergent power series 370.B
coordinate (of an affine variety) 16.A
correspondence (of a nonsingular curve) 9.H
de Rham cohomology (of a differentiable manifold) 105.R 201.I
differential 113
differential extension 113
of differential polynomials 113
discrete valuation 439.E
division 368.B
endomorphism (of an Abelian variety) 3.C
endomorphism (of a module) 277.B 368.C
of endomorphisms (of an Abelian variety) 3.C
factor, modulo an ideal 368.F
form 284.D
of formal power series 370.A
of fractions 67.G
generalized Boolean 42.C
Gorenstein 200.K
graded 369.B
ground (of an algebra) 29.A
ground (of a module) 277.D
group (of a compact group) 69.A
Hecke 32.D
Hensel 370.C
Henselian 370.C
hereditary 200.K
homogeneous 369.B
homogeneous coordinate 16.A
integrally closed 67.I
Krull 67.J
left Artinian 368.F
left hereditary 200.K
left Noetherian 368.F
left semihereditary 200.K
local 284.D
local (of a subvariety) 16.B
locally Macaulay 284.D
Macaulay 284.D
Macaulay local 284.D
Noetherian 284.A
Noetherian local 284.D
Noetherian semilocal 284.D
normal 67.I
normed 36.A
of operators 308.C
of p -adic integers 439.F
polynomial 337.A 369.A
polynomial, in m variables 337.B
of polynomials 337.A 369
power series 370.A
of power series 370
primary 368.H
primitive 368.H
principal ideal 67.K
Prüfer 200.K
pseudogeometric 284.F
quasilocal 284.D
quasisemilocal 284.D
quasisimple 368.E
quotient 368.E

of quotients of a ring with respect to a prime ideal 67.G
of quotients of a ring with respect to a subset of the ring 67.G
regular 85.B 284.D
regular local 284.D
representation 237.H
representative (of a compact Lie group) 249.U
residue class, modulo an ideal 368.F
right Artinian 368.F
right hereditary 200.K
right Noetherian 368.F
right semihereditary 200.K
of scalars (of a module) 277.D
semihereditary 200.K
semilocal 284.D
semiprimary 368.H
semiprimitive 368.H
semisimple 368.G
simple 368.G
splitting 29.K
topological 423.P
of total quotients 67.G
unitary 368.A 409.C
universally Japanese 284.F
of a valuation 439.B
of valuation vectors 6.C
Zariski 284.C
zero 368.A
ringed space 383.H
 local 383.H
ring homomorphism 368.D
ring isomorphism 368.D
ring operations 368.A
ripple 205.F
risk
 Bayes 398.B
 consumer's 404.C
 posterior 399.F
 producer's 404.C
risk function 398.A
risk premium 214.B
risk theory 214.C
 classical 214.C
 collective 214.C
 individual 214.C
Ritt basis theorem (on differential polynomials) 113
Ritz method 46.F 303.I 304.B
 Rayleigh- 46.F 271.G
Robbins-Kiefer inequality, Chapman- 399.D
Robertson-Walker metrics 359.E
Robin constant 48.B
Robin problem 323.F
robust and nonparametric method 371
robust estimation 371.A
robust method 371.A
Roch \rightarrow Riemann-Roch
Roche-Schlömilch remainder App. A, Table 9.IV
Rodrigues formula 393.B
Roepstorff-Araki-Sewell inequality 402.G
Roepstorff-Fannes-Verbeure inequality 402.G
Rogers theorem, Dvoretzky- 443.D
Rokhlin theorem 114.K
Rolle theorem 106.E
rolling curve (of a roulette) 93.H
Roman and medieval mathematics 372
Romberg integration 299.C
Room square 241.D
root

(of a chamber complex) 13.R
 (of a polynomial) 337.B
 characteristic (of an autonomous linear system) 163.F
 characteristic (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 characteristic (for a linear partial differential equation with variable coefficients) 325.F
 characteristic (of a matrix) 269.F
 co- 13.J
 imaginary (of an algebraic equation) 10.E
 k - 13.Q
 m th 10.C
 multiple (of an algebraic equation) 10.B
 negative (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.M
 of a polynomial 337.B
 positive (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.M
 primitive, modulo m 297.G
 primitive, of unity 14.L
 real (of an algebraic equation) 10.E
 of a semisimple algebraic group 13.J
 of a semisimple Lie algebra 248.K
 simple (of an algebraic equation) 10.B
 simple (in a root system) 13.J
 simple (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.M
 root extraction 10.C
 root subspace (of a linear operator) 390.B
 root subspace (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.K
 root system
 (of a semisimple algebraic group) 13.J
 (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.K
 (of a symmetric Riemannian space) 413.F
 (in a vector space over \mathbb{Q}) 13.J
 fundamental (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.N
 irreducible 13.L
 root vector 390.B
 Rosen gradient projection method 292.E
 rot (rotation) 136.D 442.D, App. A, Table 3.II
 rotatable 102.M
 rotation App. A, Table 3.II
 (of a differentiable vector field) 442.D
 (on a locally compact Abelian group) 136.D
 axis of (of a surface of revolution) 111.I
 rotational 205.B
 rotational coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
 rotation group 60.I
 rotation number 99.D 111.E 126.I
 rotation theorem 438.B
 Roth theorem 118.D 182.G
 Rouché theorem 10.E 99.D 198.F
 roulette 93.H
 roundoff error 138.B
 global 303.B
 row (of a matrix) 269.A
 iterated series by (of a double series) 379.E
 repeated series by (of a double series) 379.E
 row finite matrix 269.K
 row nullity (of a matrix) 269.D
 row vector 269.A
 Royden compactification 207.C
 Royden theorem, Arens- 36.M
 Rückert zero-point theorem 23.B
 Ruelle scattering theory, Haag- 150.D
 ruin probability 214.C
 rule
 Adler-Weisberger sum 132.C
 chain (on the differentiation of composite functions) 106.C
 Cramer 269.M
 Feynman 146.A,B

Subject Index

σ -discrete (covering of a set)

formation 411.D
 of inference 411.I
 midpoint 303.E
 Napier App. A, Table 2.II
 product 299.D
 projection 31.B
 selection 351.H
 sequential decision 398.F
 Simpson's $1/3$ 299.A
 Simpson's $3/8$ 299.A
 slide 19.A
 stopping 398.F
 terminal decision 398.F
 trapezoidal (of numerical integration) 299.A
 trapezoidal (of numerical solution of ordinary differential equations) 303.E
 univalence superselection 351.K
 ruled surface
 (algebraic surface) 15.E
 (in differential geometry) 111.I
 criterion of 15.E
 ruler 155.G 179.A
 run (in a sequence of Bernoulli trials) 396.C
 Runge-Kutta-Gill method 303.D
 Runge-Kutta method 303.D
 explicit 303.D
 general 303.D
 implicit 303.D
 pseudo- 303.D
 semi-explicit 303.D
 semi-implicit 303.D
 Runge-Kutta (P, p) method, region of absolute stability of 303.G
 Runge phenomenon 223.A
 Runge theorem (on polynomial approximation) 336.F
 Russell paradox 319.B
 Ryser-Chowla theorem, Bruck- 102.E

S

 \mathcal{S} (the totality of rapidly decreasing C^∞ -functions) 168.B
 \mathcal{S}' (the totality of tempered distributions) 125.N
 S , space of type 125.T
 $SL(n, K)$ (special linear group) 60.B
 $Sp(A)$ (Spur of a matrix A) 269.F
 $SP(n, K)$ (symplectic group) 60.L
 $SU(n)$ (special unitary group) 60.F
 $S(\Omega)$ (totality of measurable functions on Ω that take finite value almost everywhere) 168.B

 * \rightarrow also star
 *-automorphism group 36.K
 *-derivation 36.K
 *-homomorphism 36.F
 *-representation (of a Banach *-algebra) 36.F
 *-subalgebra 443.C
 σ -additive measure 270.D
 σ -additivity 270.D
 σ -algebra 270.B
 optional 407.B
 predictable 407.B
 tail 342.G
 topological 270.C
 well-measurable 407.B
 σ -compact space 425.V
 σ -complete (vector lattice) 310.C
 σ -complete lattice 243.D
 conditionally 243.D
 σ -discrete (covering of a set) 425.R

σ -field σ -field

- Bayer sufficient 396.J
- boundedly complete 396.E
- complete 396.E
- D-sufficient 396.J
- decision theoretically sufficient 396.J
- minimal sufficient 396.F
- pairwise sufficient 396.F
- test sufficient 396.J
- σ -finite (measure space) 270.D
- σ -function, of Weierstrass 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
- σ -locally finite covering (of a set) 425.R
- σ -process (of a complex manifold) 72.H
- σ -space 425.Y
- σ -subfield
 - necessary 396.E
 - sufficient 396.E
- σ -weak topology 308.B
- Σ_1^1 set 22.A
- Σ_n^1 set 22.D
- Σ -space 425.Y
- s-cobordism 65.C
- s-cobordism theorem 65.C
- s-field 149.A
- s-handle 114.F
- s^h -factorial experiment 102.H
- S-admissible (lattice in \mathbf{R}^n) 182.B
- S-flow 136.D
- S-levels 102.K
- S-matrix 150.D
- S-matrix theory 386.C
- S-morphism 52.G
- S-number 430.C
- S-object 52.G
- S-operator 150.D 386.B
- S-scheme 16.D
- S-set 308.I
- S-topology (on a linear space) 424.K
- S-wave 351.E
- (S)-space 424.S
- S*-number 430.C
- (S, \mathbb{C})-valued random variable 342.C
- s-parallelizable (manifold) 114.I
- Sacks bound, Varshamov-Gilbert- 63.B
- saddle point
 - (differential game) 108.B
 - (of a dynamical system) 126.G
 - (of a function) 255.B
 - (in nonlinear programming) 292.A
 - (on a surface) 111.H
- saddle-point method 25.C
- saddle set 126.E
- Sakata model 132.D
- Salam model, Glashow-Weinberg- 132.D
- same kind (of mathematical systems) 409.B
- same orientation (for oriented atlases) 105.F
- same shape 382.A
- sample(s) 373.A 401.E
 - Bernoulli 396.B
 - random 374.A 396.B 401.F
 - small 401.F
- sample autocovariance 421.B
- sample characteristic 396.C
- sample characteristic value 396.C
- sample correlation coefficient 396.D
- sample covariance 396.D
- sample covariance function 395.G
- sample function 407.A
- sample generalized variance 280.E
- sample mean 396.C
- sample median 396.C
- sample mode 396.C
- sample moment of order k 396.C
- sample multiple correlation 280.E
- sample number, average 404.C
- sample partial correlation coefficient 280.E
- sample path 407.A
- sample point 342.B 396.B 398.A
- sample problem, k - 371.D
- sample process 407.A
- sample range 396.C
- sample size 373.A
- sample space 342.B 396.B 398.A
- sample standard deviation 396.C
- sample survey 373
- sample theory, large 401.E
- sample value 396.B
- sample variance 396.C
- sampling
 - exact, theory 401.F
 - multistage 373.E
 - optional 262.C
 - optional, theorem 262.A
 - stratified 373.E
 - two-stage 373.E
- sampling distribution 374.A
- sampling inspection 404.C
 - with adjustment 404.C
 - by attributes 404.C
 - double 404.C
 - multiple 404.C
 - with screening 404.C
 - sequential 404.C
 - single 404.C
 - by variables 404.C
- sampling inspection plan 404.C
- sampling inspection tables 404.C
- sampling procedure 373.A
 - invariant 373.C
 - random 373.A
 - regular 373.A
 - uniform 373.A
- Sard theorem 105.J 208.B
- Sard-Smale theorem 286.P
- Sasakian manifold 110.E
- Sasaki-Nitsche formula, Gauss-Bonnet- 275.C
- Satake diagram App. A, Table 5.II
 - (of a compact symmetric Riemannian space) 437.AA
 - (of a real semisimple Lie algebra) 248.U
- satellite
 - left 200.I
 - right 200.I
- satisfiability, problem of (of a proposition) 97
- satisfiable (formula) 276.C
- Sato-Bernsteĭn polynomial 125.EE
- Sato conjecture 450.S
- saturated
 - ((B, N)-pair) 151.J
 - (fractional factorial design) 102.I
- saturated model, κ - 293.B
- Savage theorem, Girshick- 399.F
- Savage zero-one law, Hewitt- 342.G
- savings premium 214.B
- Sazonov topology 341.J
- SC^p -manifold 178.G
- scalar(s)
 - (in a linear space) 256.A.J
 - (of a module over a ring) 277.D

field of (of a linear space) 256.A
 ring of (of a module) 277.D
 scalar change (of a B -module) 277.L
 scalar curvature 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
 scalar extension
 (of an algebra) 29.A
 (of an A -module) 277.L
 (of a linear representation) 362.F
 scalar field 105.O
 (in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space) 442.D
 free 377.C
 scalar integral 443.F,I
 scalarly integrable 443.F,I
 scalarly measurable 443.B,I
 scalar matrix 269.A
 scalar multiple
 (of an element of a module) 277.D
 (of a linear operator) 37.C
 (in a linear space) 256.A
 (of a vector) 442.A
 scalar multiplication
 (in a module) 277.D
 (on vectors) 442.A
 scalar operator 390.K
 scalar potential 130.A 442.D
 scalar product 442.B, App. A, Table 3.I
 scalar restriction (of a B -module) 277.L
 scalar sum (of linear operators) 37.C
 scalar triple product 442.C
 scale
 of Banach space 286.Z
 canonical 115.B
 natural 260.G
 ordinal 397.M
 two-sided 19.D
 scaled, u_i - 19.D
 scale matrix 374.C
 scale parameter 396.I 400.E
 scaling, metric multidimensional 346.E
 scaling, multidimensional 346.E
 scaling method 346.E
 scatter diagram 397.H
 scattered (sheaf) 383.E
 scattered set 425.O
 scattered zeros, function with 208.C
 scattering 375.A
 data 387.D
 elastic 375.A
 inelastic 375.A
 scattering amplitude 375.C 386.B
 partial wave 375.E
 scattering cross section 375.A
 scattering data 387.D
 scattering operator 375.B,F,H
 scattering state 375.B
 completeness of the 150.D
 scattering theory, Haag-Ruelle 150.D
 Schafheitlin formula, Sonine- App. A, Table 19.III
 Schauder basis 37.L
 Schauder degree, Leray- 286.D
 Schauder estimate 323.C
 Schauder fixed-point theorem 153.D 286.D
 Leray- 286.D 323.D
 Schauder theorem, Riesz- 68.E
 scheduling 376
 job-shop 307.C
 model 307.C
 network 307.C
 scheduling and production planning 376
 scheduling problem

Subject Index

Schmidt theorem, Knopp-

flow-shop 376
 job-shop 376
 machine 376
 multiprocessor 376
 Scheffé model 346.C
 Scheffé theorem, Lehmann- 399.C
 Scheja theorem 21.M
 schema of Souslin 22.B
 scheme 16.D
 adaptive 299.C
 affine 16.D
 Aitken's interpolation 223.B
 algebraic 16.D
 automatic integration 299.C
 coarse moduli 16.W
 complete 16.D
 consistent-mass 304.D
 deformation of X over a connected 16.W
 difference 304.E
 difference, of backward type 304.F
 difference, of forward type 304.F
 explicit 304.F
 fine moduli 16.W
 formal 16.X
 Friedrichs 304.F
 group 16.H
 Hilbert 16.S
 implicit 304.F
 integral 16.D
 inverted filing 96.F
 irreducible 16.D
 K -complete 16.D
 Lax-Wendroff 304.F
 locally Noetherian formal 16.X
 moduli 16.W
 morphism of 16.D
 Noetherian 16.D
 nonadaptive 299.C
 Picard 16.P
 projective 16.E
 quasiprojective 16.E
 S - 16.D
 over S 16.D
 separated 16.D
 separated formal 16.X
 Scherk's surface 275.A
 Schläfli diagram (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.S
 Schläfli formula App. A, Table 19.III
 Schläfli integral representation 393.B
 Schläfli polynomial App. A, Table 19.IV
 Schlesinger equations 253.E
 schlicht 438.A
 schlicht Bloch constant 77.F
 schlichtartig 367.G
 Schlieder theorem, Reeh- 150.E
 Schlömilch criterion App. A, Table 10.II
 Schlömilch remainder, Roche- App. A, Table 9.N
 Schlömilch series 39.D, App. A, Table 19.III
 generalized 39.D
 Schmidt class, Hilbert- 68.I
 Schmidt condition 379.M
 Schmidt expansion theorem, Hilbert- 217.H
 Schmidt norm, Hilbert- 68.I
 Schmidt orthogonalization 317.A
 Gram- 317.A
 Schmidt procedure, Lyapunov- 286.V
 Schmidt theorem 118.D
 Schmidt theorem, Knopp- 208.C

Schmidt theorem, Krull-Remak-

- Schmidt theorem, Krull-Remak- (in group theory) 190.L
- Schmidt type, integral operator of Hilbert- 68.C
- Schmidt type, kernel of Hilbert- 217.I
- Schnee theorem, Knopp- (on method of summation) 379.M
- Schoenflies notation (for crystal classes) 92.E, App. B, Table 6.IV
- Schoenflies problem 65.G
- Schoenflies theorem 65.G
- Schottky group 234.B
- Schottky theorem 43.J
- Schottky uniformization 367.C
- Schrader axioms, Osterwalder- 150.F
- Schreier conjecture (on simple groups) 151.I
- Schreier extension, Artin- (of a field) 172.F
- Schröder equation, Königs- 44.B
- Schröder functional equation 388.D
- Schrödinger equation 351.D
- 1-body 351.E
- random 340.E
- time-dependent 351.D
- time-independent 351.D
- Schrödinger operator 351.D
- Schrödinger picture 351.D
- Schrödinger representation 351.C
- Schrödinger series, Rayleigh- 331.D
- Schubert cycle 56.E
- Schubert variety 56.E
- Schur index
- (of a central simple algebra) 29.E
- (of an irreducible representation) 362.F
- Schur lemma
- (on linear representations) 362.C
- (on simple modules) 277.H 368.G
- (on unitary representations) 437.D
- Schur subgroup 362.F
- Schur theorem (on linear transformations of sequences) 379.L
- Schur theorem, Kojima- (on linear transformations of sequences) 379.L
- Schur-Zassenhaus theorem (on Hall subgroups) 151.E
- Schwartz-Christoffel transformation 77.D, App. A, Table 13
- Schwartz-Christoffel transformation formula 77.D
- Schwartz integral, Bartle-Dunford- 443.G
- Schwartz space 424.S
- Schwarzian derivative App. A, Table 9.III
- Schwarz inequality 211.C
- Cauchy- 211.C, App. A, Table 8
- Schwarz lemma 43.B
- Schwarz principle of reflection 198.G
- Schwinger equation, Lippmann- 375.C
- Schwinger function 150.F
- Schwinger points 150.F
- sciences, information 75.F
- scores
- canonical 397.M
- factor 280.G 346.F
- score test, Fisher-Yates-Terry normal 371.C
- scoring method 397.M
- screening, sampling inspection with 404.C
- seasonal adjustment 397.N
- sec (secant) 131.E
- secant 432.A
- hyperbolic 131.F
- sech (hyperbolic secant) 131.F
- second (unit of an angle) 139.D
- secondary cohomology operation, stable 64.C
- secondary components (of a homogeneous space) 110.A
- secondary composition 202.R
- secondary obstruction 305.D
- secondary parameters 110.A
- second axiom, Tietze's 425.Q
- second barycentric derived neighborhood 65.C
- second boundary value problem
- (for harmonic functions) 193.F
- (of partial differential equations of elliptic type) 323.F
- second category, set of 425.N
- second classification theorem (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
- second complementary law (of Legendre symbols) 297.I
- second countability axiom 425.P
- second Cousin problem 21.K
- second definition (of an algebraic K -group) 237.J
- second difference 104.A
- second extension theorem (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
- second factor (of a class number) 14.L
- second fundamental form (of an immersion of a manifold) 111.G 365.C, App. A, Table 4.I
- second fundamental quantities (of a surface) 111.H
- second fundamental tensor 417.F
- second fundamental theorem (in Morse theory) 279.D
- second homotopy theorem 305.C
- second incompleteness theorem 185.C
- second isomorphism theorem (on topological groups) 423.J
- second kind
- (Abelian differential of) 11.C
- (Abelian integral of) 11.C
- (Fuchsian group of) 122.C
- (integral equations of Fredholm type of) 217.A
- perfect number of 297.D
- Stirling number of 66.D
- second law of cosines 432.A, App. A, Table 2.II
- second law of thermodynamics 419.A
- second mean value theorem
- (for the D -integral) 100.G
- (for the Riemann integral) 216.B
- (for the Stieltjes integral) 94.C
- second-order asymptotic efficiency 399.O
- second-order design 102.M
- second-order efficiency 399.O
- second-order predicate 411.K
- second-order predicate logic 411.K
- second quantization 377
- second separation axiom 425.Q
- second variation formula 178.A
- section
- (of a finite group) 362.I
- (of a sheaf space) 383.C
- circular 350.F
- conic 78
- cross- 126.C 286.H
- cross (of a fiber bundle) 147.L
- cross (of a fiber space) 148.D
- cross-, for a closed orbit 126.G
- differential cross 375.A 386.B
- local 126.E
- local cross (of a fiber bundle) 147.E
- n - (in a cell complex) 70.D
- normal (of a surface) 410.B
- r - (of a Euclidean complex) 70.B

- r - (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
- scattering cross 375.A
- set of (of a sheaf) 383.C
- total (elastic) cross 386.B
- zero- (of a block bundle) 147.Q
- sectional curvature 364.D
 - holomorphic 364.D
- section graph 186.C
- sectors, superselection 150.E 351.K
- secular equation 55.B 269.F
- secular perturbation 55.B
- sedenion 29.D
- segment 155.B 178.H
 - (in affine geometry) 7.D
 - (in an ordered set) 311.B
 - oriented 442.A
- Seidel method, Gauss- 302.C
- Seifert conjecture 126.N 154.D
- Seifert matrix 235.C
- Seifert surface 235.A
- Selberg sieve 123.E
- Selberg theorem, Evans- 48.E 338.H
- Selberg zeta function 450.T
- selection, measurable 443.I
- selection, model 401.D
- selection function 354.E
- selection parameter 396.F
- selection rule 351.H
- selection statistic 396.F
- self-adjoint
 - (linear homogeneous ordinary differential equation) 315.B
 - essentially 251.E 390.I
- self-adjoint differential equation 252.K
- self-adjoint differential operator, formally 112.I
- self-adjoint operator 251.E 390.F
- self-adjoint system of differential equations 252.K
- self-commutator 251.K
- self-dual (linear space) 256.H
- self-dual (regular cone) 384.E
- self-dual, anti- (G -connection) 80.Q
- self-excited vibration 318.B
- self-information 213.B
- self-intersection number 15.C
- self-loop 186.B
- self-polar tetrahedron 350.C
- self-polar triangle 78.J
- self-reciprocal function 220.B
- semicontinuity, lower (of length) 246.A
- semicontinuous 84.C
 - (mapping in a topological linear space) 153.D
 - lower 84.C
 - upper 84.C
- semicontinuous function 84.C
- semicontinuous partition, upper 425.L
- semidefinite Hermitian form 348.F
- semidefinite kernel, positive 217.H
- semidefinite matrix, positive 269.I
- semidefinite operator, positive 251.E
- semidefinite quadratic form, positive or negative 348.C
- semidirect product (of two groups) 190.N
- semidiscrete approximation 304.B
- semiexact (differential on an open Riemann surface) 367.I
- semi-explicit 303.D
- semifinite (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
- semifinite (weight on a von Neumann algebra) 308.D
- semiflow 126.B
 - of class C^r 126.B
 - continuous 126.B
 - discrete 126.B
 - discrete, of class C^r 126.B
- semigroup 88.E 190.P 409.A
 - (of a Markov process) 261.B
 - of class (C^0) 378.B
 - differentiable 378.F
 - distribution 378.F
 - dual 378.F
 - equicontinuous, of class (C^0) 378.B
 - free 161.A
 - holomorphic 378.D
 - locally equicontinuous 378.F
 - nonlinear 378.F
 - nonlinear, of operators 286.X
 - of operators 378
 - order-preserving 286.Y
 - unitary 409.C
- semigroup algebra 29.C
 - large 29.C
- semigroup bialgebra 203.G
- semihereditary ring 200.K
 - left 200.K
 - right 200.K
- semi-implicit 303.D
- semi-integral, left 68.N
- semi-integral, right 68.N
- semi-intuitionism 156.C
- semi-invariant 226.A
 - G - 226.A
 - of a probability distribution 341.C
- semilattice 243.A
 - lower 243.A
 - upper 243.A
- semilinear (partial differential equations of elliptic type) 323.D
- semilinear mapping 256.P 277.L
- semilinear transformation 256.P
- semilocal ring 284.D
 - analytically unramified 284.D
 - Noetherian 284.D
 - quasi- 284.D
- semilogarithmic paper 19.F
- semimartingale 262.E 406.B
 - continuous 406.B
- semimartingale decomposition 406.B
- seminorm (on a topological linear space) 424.F
- semiorbit 126.D
 - negative 126.D
 - positive 126.D
- semiordered set 311.A
- semiordering 311.A
- semipolar set 261.D
- semiprimary ring 368.H
- semiprime differential ideal (of a differential ring) 113
- semiprime ideal (of a differential ring) 113
- semiprimitive ring 368.H
- semireductive (action defined by a rational representation) 226.B
- semireflexive (locally convex space) 424.O
- semiregular point (of a surface in E^3) 111.J
- semiregular transformation (of a sequence) 379.L
- semisimple
 - (algebraic group) 13.I
 - (Banach algebra) 36.D
 - (Jordan algebra) 231.B
 - (Lie algebra) 248.E
 - (Lie group) 249.D

- (matrix) 269.G
- semisimple algebra 29.A
- semisimple A -module 277.H
- semisimple component (of a linear transformation) 269.L
- semisimple linear representation 362.C
- semisimple linear transformation 269.L
- semisimple part
 - of an algebraic group 13.E
 - of a nonsingular matrix 13.E
- semisimple ring 368.G
- semisimplicial complex 70.E
- semisimplicity, Cartan's criterion of 248.F
- semistable (coherent sheaf) 16.Y
- semistable distribution 341.G
- semistable reduction theorem 16.Z
- semistable vector bundle (algebraic) 16.Y
- semivariation 443.G
- sensitive grammar, context- 31.D
- sensory test 346.B
- separable
 - (function in nomograms) 19.D
 - (polynomial) 337.G
 - (rational mapping) 16.I
 - (stochastic process) 407.A
 - (topological space) 425.P
 - perfectly 425.P
- separable algebra 29.F,K 200.L
 - central 29.K
- separable element (of a field) 149.H
- separable extension
 - (of a field) 149.H,K
 - maximal (of a field) 149.H
- separable metric space 273.E
- separably generated extension (of a field) 149.K
- separated
 - (formal scheme) 16.X
 - (morphism) 16.D
- separated convex sets, strongly 89.A
- separated kernel 217.F
- separated scheme 16.D
- separated space 425.Q
- separated S -scheme 16.D
- separated topological group 423.B
- separated type App. A, Table 14.I
- separated uniform space 436.C
- separated variable type App. A, Table 15.II
- separately continuous (bilinear mapping) 424.Q
- separating family 207.C
- separating transcendence basis (of a field extension) 149.K
- separation
 - axioms of (in set theory) 33.B
 - of variables 322.C
- separation axioms 425.Q
 - the first 425.Q
 - the fourth 425.Q
 - the second 425.Q
 - the third 425.Q
 - Tikhonov 425.Q
- separation cochain 305.B
- separation cocycle 305.B
- separation principle 405.C
- separation theorem (on convex sets) 89.A
- separator 186.F
- sequence(s) 165.D
 - admissible (in Steenrod algebra) 64.B, App. A, Table 6.III
 - asymptotic 30.A
 - of Bernoulli trials 396.B
 - Blaschke 43.F
 - Cauchy (in a -adic topology) 284.B
 - Cauchy (in a metric space) 273.J
 - Cauchy (of rational numbers) 294.E
 - Cauchy (of real numbers) 355.B
 - Cauchy (in a uniform space) 436.G
 - cohomology exact 201.L
 - cohomology spectral 200.J
 - connected, of functors 200.I
 - convergent (of real numbers) 87.B 355.B
 - divergent (of real numbers) 87.B
 - double 379.E
 - exact (of A -homomorphisms of A -modules) 277.E
 - exact, of cohomology 200.F
 - exact, of Ext 200.G
 - exact, of homology 200.C
 - exact, of Tor 200.D
 - of factor groups (of a normal chain) 190.G
 - Farey 4.B
 - Fibonacci 295.A
 - finite 165.D
 - of functions 165.B,D
 - fundamental (in a metric space) 273.J
 - fundamental (of rational numbers) 294.E
 - fundamental (of real numbers) 355.B
 - fundamental (in a uniform space) 436.G
 - fundamental, of cross cuts (in a simply connected domain) 333.B
 - fundamental exact (on cohomology of groups) 200.M
 - Gysin exact (of a fiber space) 148.E
 - Hodge spectral 16.U
 - homology exact (of a fiber space) 148.E
 - homology exact (for simplicial complexes) 201.L
 - homotopy exact 202.L
 - homotopy exact (of a fiber space) 148.D
 - homotopy exact (of a triad) 202.M
 - homotopy exact (of a triple) 202.L
 - independent, of partitions 136.E
 - infinite 165.D
 - interpolating 43.F
 - Jordan-Hölder (in a group) 190.G
 - linear recurrent 295.A
 - Mayer-Vietoris exact 201.C
 - minimizing 46.E
 - monotone (of real numbers) 87.B
 - monotonically decreasing (of real numbers) 87.B
 - monotonically increasing (of real numbers) 87.B
 - normal (of open coverings) 425.R
 - null (in a -adic topology) 284.B
 - of numbers 165.D
 - (o)-convergent 87.L
 - (o)-star convergent 87.L
 - order-convergent (in a vector lattice) 310.C
 - oscillating (of real numbers) 87.D
 - of points 165.D
 - pointwise convergent 435.B
 - positive definite 192.B
 - of positive type 192.B
 - Puppe exact 202.G
 - random 354.E
 - rapidly decreasing 168.B
 - recurrent, of order r 295.A
 - reduced homology exact 201.F
 - regular (of Lebesgue measurable sets) 380.D
 - regular spectral 200.J

- relative Mayer-Vietoris exact 201.L
- (R, S) -exact (of modules) 200.K
- of sets 165.D
- short exact 200.I
- simply convergent 435.B
- slowly increasing 168.B
- spectral 200.J
- spectral (of singular cohomology of a fiber space) 148.E
- standard 400.K
- symbol (in the theory of microdifferential operators) 274.F
- of Ulm factors (of an Abelian p -group) 2.D
- uniformly convergent 435.A
- Wang exact (of a fiber space) 148.E
- sequencing problem, machine 376
- sequential decision function 398.F
- sequential decision problem 398.F
- sequential decision rule 398.F
- sequentially compact (space) 425.S
- sequential probability ratio test 400.L
- sequential sampling inspection 404.C
- sequential space 425.CC
- sequential test 400.L
- serial correlation coefficient 397.N 421.B
- serial cross correlation coefficient 397.N
- series 379, App. A, Table 10
 - absolutely convergent 379.C
 - absolutely convergent double 379.E
 - allied (of a trigonometric series) 159.A
 - alternating 379.C
 - ascending central (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 - asymptotic 30
 - asymptotic power 30.A
 - binomial App. A, Table 10.IV
 - binomial coefficient 121.E
 - characteristic (in a group) 190.G
 - commutatively convergent 379.C
 - complementary (of unitary representations of a complex semisimple Lie group) 437.W
 - complementary degenerate (of unitary representations of a complex semisimple Lie group) 437.W
 - composition (in a group) 190.G
 - composition (in a lattice) 243.F
 - composition factor (of a composition series in a group) 190.G
 - conditionally convergent 379.C
 - conditionally convergent double 379.E
 - conjugate (of a trigonometric series) 159.A
 - convergent 379.A
 - convergent double 379.E
 - convergent power 370.B
 - convergent power, ring 370.B
 - degenerate (of unitary representations of a complex semisimple Lie group) 437.W
 - derived (of Lie algebra) 248.C
 - descending central (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 - Dini 39.D
 - Dirichlet 121
 - Dirichlet, of the type $\{\lambda_n\}$ 121.A
 - discrete (of unitary representations of a semisimple Lie group) 437.X
 - divergent 379.A
 - divergent double 379.E
 - double 379.E
 - Eisenstein 32.C
 - Eisenstein-Poincaré 32.F
 - exponential 131.D
 - factorial 104.F 121.E
 - field of formal power, in one variable 370.A
 - finite 379.A, App. A, Table 10.I
 - formal power 370.A
 - formal power, field in one variable 370.A
 - formal power, ring 370.A
 - Fourier 159 197.C, App. A, Table 11.I
 - Fourier (of an almost periodic function) 18.B
 - Fourier (of a distribution) 125.P
 - Fourier-Bessel 39.D
 - Fourier cosine App. A, Table 11.I
 - Fourier sine App. A, Table 11.I
 - Gauss 206.A
 - generalized Eisenstein 450.T
 - generalized Schlömilch 39.D
 - generalized trigonometric 18.B
 - geometric 379.B, App. A, Table 10.I
 - Heine 206.C
 - hypergeometric 206.A
 - infinite 379.A, App. A, Table 10.III
 - iterated, by columns (of a double series) 379.E
 - iterated, by rows (of a double series) 379.E
 - Kapteyn 39.D, App. A, Table 19.III
 - Lambert 339.C
 - Laurent 339.A
 - logarithmic 131.D
 - lower central (of a group) 190.J
 - majorant 316.G
 - majorant (of a sequence of functions) 435.A
 - Neumann 217.D
 - of nonnegative terms 379.B
 - ordinary Dirichlet 121.A
 - orthogonal (of functions) 317.A
 - oscillating 379.A
 - π - (of a group) 151.F
 - Poincaré 32.B
 - of positive terms 379.B
 - power 21.B 339 370.A, App. A, Table 10.IV
 - power (in a complete ring) 370.A
 - power, with center at the point at infinity 339.A
 - power, ring 370.A
 - principal (in an Ω -group) 190.G
 - principal (of unitary representations of a complex semisimple Lie group) 258.C 437.W
 - principal (of unitary representations of a real semisimple Lie group) 258.C 437.X
 - principal H - 437.X
 - properly divergent 379.A
 - Puiseux 339.A
 - repeated, by columns (of a double series) 379.E
 - repeated, by rows (of a double series) 379.E
 - ring of convergent power 370.B
 - ring of formal power 370.A
 - ring of power 370.A
 - Schlömilch 39.D, App. A, Table 19.III
 - simple 379.E
 - singular 4.D
 - supplementary 258.C
 - Taylor 339.A
 - termwise integrable 216.B
 - theta 348.L
 - theta-Fuchsian, of Poincaré 32.B
 - time 397.A 421.A
 - trigonometric 159.A
 - unconditionally convergent 379.C
 - uniformly absolutely convergent 435.A
 - upper central (of a group) 190.J
- Serre conjecture 369.F
- Serre \mathcal{C} -theory 202.N

- Serre duality theorem
 - (on complex manifolds) 72.E
 - (on projective varieties) 16.E
- Serre formulas, Frenet- (on curves) 111.D, App. A, Table 4.I
- Serre theorem (for ample line bundles) 16.E
- sesquilinear form
 - (on a linear space) 256.Q
 - (on a product of two linear spaces) 256.Q
 - matrix of 256.Q
 - nondegenerate 256.Q
- set(s) 381
 - A- 22.A 409.A
 - absolutely convex (in a linear topological space) 424.E
 - α -limit 126.D
 - analytic 22.A.I
 - analytic (in the theory of analytic spaces) 23.B
 - analytically thin (in an analytic space) 23.D
 - of analyticity 192.N
 - analytic wave front 274.D
 - of antisymmetry 164.E
 - arbitrary 381.G
 - asymptotic 62.A
 - asymptotic ratio 308.I
 - axiom of power 33.B 381.G
 - B_n 22.D
 - \mathfrak{B} -measurable 270.C
 - Baire 126.H 270.C
 - bargaining 173.D
 - basic (for an Axiom A flow) 126.J
 - basic (of a structure) 409.B
 - basic open 425.F
 - bifurcation 51.F 418.F
 - border 425.N
 - Borel (in a Euclidean space) 270.C
 - Borel (in a topological space) 270.C
 - Borel in the strict sense 270.C
 - boundary 425.N
 - boundary cluster 62.A
 - bounded (in an affine space) 7.D
 - bounded (in a locally convex space) 424.F
 - bounded (in a metric space) 273.B
 - C_n 22.D
 - CA 22.A
 - Cantor 79.D
 - capacity of 260.D
 - catastrophe 51.F
 - category of 52.B
 - chain recurrent 126.E
 - characteristic (of an algebraic family on a generic component) 15.F
 - characteristic (of a partial differential operator) 320.B
 - choice 34.A
 - closed 425.B
 - cluster 62.A
 - coanalytic 22.A
 - compact (in a metric space) 273.F
 - compact (in a topological space) 425.S
 - complementary 381.B
 - complementary analytic 22.A
 - complete 241.B
 - complete orthonormal (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 - connected 79.A
 - constraint (of a minimization problem) 292.A
 - convex 7.D 89
 - countably equivalent (under a nonsingular bimeasurable transformation) 136.C
 - curvilinear cluster 62.C
 - cylinder 270.H
 - of degeneracy (of a holomorphic mapping between analytic spaces) 23.C
 - Δ_n^1 22.D
 - dense 425.N
 - dependent 66.G
 - derived 425.O
 - determining (of a domain in \mathbb{C}^n) 21.C
 - difference (of blocks) 102.E
 - directed 311.D
 - discrete 425.O
 - disjoint 381.B
 - dominating 186.I
 - empty (\emptyset) 381.A
 - externally stable 186.I
 - equipollent 49.A
 - equipotent 49.A
 - F_σ 270.C
 - factor (of a crossed product) 29.D
 - factor (of an extension of groups) 190.N
 - factor (of a projective representation) 362.J
 - family of 165.D 381.B.D
 - family of (indexed by Λ) 381.D
 - final (of a correspondence) 358.B
 - final (of a linear operator) 251.E
 - finite 49.F 381.A
 - finitely equivalent (under a nonsingular bimeasurable transformation) 136.C
 - of the first category 425.N
 - of the first kind 319.B
 - first negative prolongational limit 126.D
 - first positive prolongational limit 126.D
 - function 380.A
 - function-theoretic null 169.A
 - fundamental (of a transformation group) 122.B
 - fundamental open (of a transformation group) 122.B
 - G_δ 270.C
 - general Cantor 79.D
 - generalized peak 164.D
 - (general) recursive 97
 - germ of an analytic 23.B
 - homotopy 202.B
 - idempotent (of a ring) 368.B
 - increasing directed 308.A
 - independent 66.G 186.I
 - index 102.L
 - index (of a family) 165.D
 - index (of a family of elements) 381.D
 - indexing (of a family of elements) 381.D
 - infinite 49.F 381.A
 - information 173.B
 - initial (of a correspondence) 358.B
 - initial (of a linear operator) 251.E
 - interior cluster 62.A
 - internally stable 186.I
 - interpolating (for a function algebra) 164.D
 - Kronecker 192.R
 - lattice of 243.E
 - lattice-ordered 243.A
 - Lebesgue measurable 270.G
 - Lebesgue measurable (of \mathbb{R}^n) 270.G
 - level 279.D
 - limit 234.A
 - locally closed 425.J
 - M- 159.J
 - meager 425.N
 - minimal 126.E

μ -measurable 270.D
 μ -null 270.D
 of multiplicity 159.J
 n -cylinder 270.H
 nilpotent (of a ring) 368.B
 nodal 391.H
 nonmeager 425.N
 nonsaddle 120.E
 nonwandering 126.E
 nowhere dense 425.N
 null (in a measure space) 270.D 310.I
 null, of class $N_{\tilde{\alpha}}$ 169.E
 null (\emptyset) 381.A
 ω -limit 126.D
 open 425.B
 ordered \rightarrow ordered set
 ordinate 221.E
 orthogonal (of functions) 317.A
 orthogonal (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 orthogonal (of a ring) 368.B
 orthonormal (of functions) 317.A
 orthonormal (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
 P_n 22.D
 P -convex (for a differential operator) 112.C
 peak 164.D
 perfect 425.O
 Π_1^1 22.A
 Π_n^1 22.D
 point 381.B
 of points of indeterminacy (of a proper meromorphic mapping) 23.D
 polar (in potential theory) 261.D 338.H
 power 381.B
 precompact (in a metric space) 273.B
 principal analytic 23.B
 projective, of class n 22.D
 purely d -dimensional analytic 23.B
 of quasi-analytic functions 58.F
 quotient (with respect to an equivalence relation) 135.B
 ratio 136.F
 recurrent 260.E
 recursive 356.D
 recursively enumerable 356.D
 regularly convex 89.G
 relative closed 425.J
 relatively compact 425.S
 relatively compact (in a metric space) 273.F
 relatively open 425.J
 removable (for a family of functions) 169.C
 residual 126.H 425.N
 resolvent (of a closed operator) 251.F
 resolvent (of a linear operator) 390.A
 ρ - 308.I
 S - 308.I
 saddle 126.E
 scattered 425.O
 of the second category 425.N
 of the second kind 319.B
 semipolar 261.D
 Sidon 192.R 194.R
 sieved 22.B
 Σ_1^1 22.A
 Σ_n^1 22.D
 singularity (of a proper meromorphic mapping) 23.D
 stable 173.D
 stable, externally 186.I
 stable, internally 186.I

Subject Index

Sheaf (sheaves)

standard 22.I
 strongly P -convex 112.C
 strongly separated convex 89.A
 system of closed 425.B
 system of open 425.B
 ternary 79.D
 thin (in potential theory) 261.D
 totally bounded (in a metric space) 273.B
 totally bounded (in a uniform space) 436.H
 U - 159.J
 of uniqueness 159.J
 universal (for the projective sets of class n) 22.E
 universal (of set theory) 381.B
 wandering (under a measurable transformation) 136.C
 wave front 274.B 345.A
 wave front, analytic 274.D
 weakly wandering 136.C
 weakly wandering (under a group) 136.F
 well-ordered 311.C
 Z - 382.B
 Zariski closed 16.A
 Zariski dense 16.A
 Zariski open 16.A
 set function(s) 380
 additive 380.C
 of bounded variation 380.B
 completely additive 380.C
 finitely additive 380.B
 monotone decreasing 380.B
 monotone increasing 380.B
 μ -absolutely continuous additive 380.C
 μ -singular additive 380.C
 set-theoretic formula 33.B
 set-theoretic topology 426
 set theory 381.F
 axiomatic 33 156.E
 Bernays-Gödel 33.A.C
 Boolean-valued 33.E
 classical descriptive 356.H
 effective descriptive 356.H
 general 33.B
 Gödel 33.C
 Zermelo 33.B
 Zermelo-Fraenkel 33.A.B
 Severi group, Néron-
 (of a surface) 15.D
 (of a variety) 16.P
 Sewell inequality, Roepstorff-Araki- 402.G
 $\operatorname{sgn} P$ (sign) 103.A
 shadow costs 292.C
 shadow price 255.B
 Shafarevich group, Tate- 118.D
 Shafarevich reciprocity law 257.H
 shallow water wave 205.F
 shape
 pointed 382.A
 same 382.A
 shape category 382.A
 shape dominate 382.A
 shape function 223.G
 shape group 382.C
 shape invariant(s) 382.C
 shape morphism 382.A
 shape theory 382
 Shapiro-Lopatinskiĭ condition 323.H
 Shapley value 173.D
 sheaf (sheaves) 383

Sheaf space

- (in étale (Grothendieck) topology) 16.AA
- of Abelian groups 383.B
- analytic 72.E
- associated with a presheaf 383.C
- Čech cohomology group with coefficient 383.F
- coherent, of rings 16.E
- coherent algebraic 16.E 72.F
- coherent analytic 72.E
- constructible 16.AA
- cohomology group with coefficient 383.E
- constant 383.D
- derived 125.W
- flabby 383.E
- of germs of analytic functions 383.D
- of germs of analytic mapping 383.D
- of germs of continuous functions 383.D
- of germs of differentiable sections of a vector bundle 383.D
- of germs of differential forms of degree of r 383.D
- of germs of functions of class C^r 383.D
- of germs of holomorphic functions (on an analytic manifold) 383.D
- of germs of holomorphic functions (on an analytic set) 23.C
- of germs of holomorphic functions (on an analytic space) 23.C
- of germs of regular functions 16.B
- of germs of sections of a vector bundle 383.D
- of groups 383.C
- of ideals of a divisor (of a complex manifold) 72.F
- invertible 16.E
- locally constructible (constant) 16.AA
- of \mathcal{O} -modules 383.I
- orientation 201.R
- pre- 383.A
- pre-, on a site 16.AA
- of rings 383.C
- scattered 383.E
- structure (of a prealgebraic variety) 16.C
- structure (of a ringed space) 383.H
- structure (of a variety) 16.B
- trivial 383.D
- sheaf space 383.C
- shear, modules of elasticity in 271.G
- shearing strain 271.G
- shearing stress 271.G
- shear viscosity, coefficient of 205.C
- sheet(s)
 - hyperboloid of one 350.B
 - hyperboloid of revolution of one 350.B
 - hyperboloid of revolution of two 350.B
 - hyperboloid of two 350.B
 - mean number of (of a covering surface of a Riemann sphere) 272.J
 - number of (of an analytic covering space) 23.E
 - number of (of a covering surface) 367.B
- sheeted, n - 367.B
- Shelah isomorphism theorem, Keisler- 276.E
- Shields-Zeller theorem, Brown- 43.C
- shift 251.O
 - associated with the stationary process 136.D
 - automorphism 126.J
 - Bernoulli 136.D
 - generalized Bernoulli 136.D
 - Markov 136.D
 - phase 375.E 386.B
 - shift operator 223.C 251.O 306.C
 - unilateral 390.I
 - shift transformation 136.D
- Shilov boundary
 - (of a domain) 21.D
 - (for a function algebra) 164.C
 - (of a Siegel domain) 384.D
- Shilov generalized function, Gel'fand- 125.S
- Shmul'yan theorem 424.V
 - Eberlein- 37.G
 - Krein- 37.E 424.O
- Shnirel'man theory, Lyusternik- 286.Q
- shock wave 205.B 446
- shortening 186.E
- shortest-path problem 281.C
- shortest representation (of an ideal) 67.F
- short exact sequence 200.I
- short international notation 92.E
- short range 375.B
- Shrikhande square 102.K
- shrinking (a space to a point) 202.E
- shunt
 - left 115.B
 - right 115.B
- SI (international system of units) 414.A
- side 155.B,F
 - (of an angle) 139.D 155.B
 - (of a complete quadrangle) 343.C
 - (on a line) 155.B
 - (on a plane) 155.B
 - (of a point with respect to a hyperplane) 7.D
 - (of a polygon) 155.F
 - (of a spherical triangle) 432.B
- side cone 258.A
- Sidon set 192.R
- Siegel domain(s) 384
 - of the first kind 384.A
 - generated 384.F
 - irreducible 384.E
 - of the second kind 384.A
 - of the third kind 384.A
- Siegel mean value theorem 182.E
- Siegel modular form of weight k (or of dimension $-k$) 32.F
- Siegel modular function of degree n 32.F
- Siegel modular group of degree n 32.F
- Siegel space of degree n 32.F
- Siegel theorem
 - (on Diophantine equations) 118.D
 - (on positive definite forms) 348.K
- Siegel upper half-space of degree n 32.F
- Siegel zero 123.D
- Siegel zeta function of indefinite quadratic forms 450.K
- sieve 16.AA 22.B
 - Eratosthenes 297.B
 - large 123.E
 - large, method 123.D
 - Selberg 123.E
- sieved set 22.B
- sieve method 4.A
 - large 123.D
- sign (of a permutation) 103.A
- signal process 405.F
- signature
 - (of a Hermitian form) 348.F
 - (of an irreducible representation of $GL(V)$) 60.D
 - (of a knot) 235.C
 - (of a manifold) 56.G

- (of a quadratic form) 348.C
- Hirzebruch, theorem 72.K
- signed Lebesgue-Stieltjes measure 166.C
- signed measure 380.C
- signed rank test 371.B
- signed rank test, Wilcoxon 371.B
- sign test 371.B
- similar
 - (central simple algebra) 29.E
 - (linear representation) 362.C
 - (matrix representation of a semilinear mapping) 256.P
 - (permutation representation) 362.B
 - (projective representation) 362.J
 - (square matrices) 269.G
- similar central simple algebras 29.E
- similar correspondence (between surfaces) 111.I
- similarity
 - (of an affine space) 7.E
 - Prandtl-Glauert law of 205.D
 - Reynolds law of 205.C
 - von Kármán transonic 205.D
- similarly isomorphic (ordered fields) 149.N
- similar mathematical systems 409.B
- similar test 400.D
- similar unitary representations 437.A
- simple
 - (A -module) 277.H
 - (Abelian variety) 3.B
 - (algebraic group) 13.L
 - (eigenvalue) 390.A,B
 - (function) 438.A
 - (Lie algebra) 248.E
 - (Lie group) 249.D
 - (linear representation) 362.C
 - (polygon) 155.F
 - (subcoalgebra) 203.F
 - absolutely (algebraic group) 13.L
 - algebraically (eigenvalue) 390.B
 - almost (algebraic group) 13.L
 - geometrically (eigenvalue) 390.A
 - k - (algebraic group) 13.O
 - k -almost (algebraic group) 13.O
- simple algebra 29.A
 - central 29.E
 - normal 29.E
 - zeta function of 27.F
- simple arc 93.B
- simple Bravais lattice 92.E
- simple character (of an irreducible representation) 362.E
- simple closed curve 93.B
- simple component (of a semisimple ring) 368.G
- simple continued fraction 85.A
- simple convergence, abscissa of (of a Dirichlet series) 121.B
- simple distribution, potential of 338.A
- simple extension (of a field) 149.D
- simple function 221.B 443.B
- simple group 190.C
 - linear 151.I
 - Tits 151.I
- simple harmonic motion 318.B
- simple holonomic system 274.H
- simple homotopy equivalence 65.C
- simple homotopy equivalent 65.C
- simple homotopy theorem 65.C
- simple hypothesis 400.A
- simple Lie algebra 248.E
 - classical compact real 248.T
 - classical complex 248.S
 - exceptional compact real 248.T
 - exceptional complex 248.S
- simple Lie group 249.D
 - classical compact 249.L
 - classical complex 249.M
 - exceptional compact 249.L
 - exceptional complex 249.M
- simple loss function 398.A
- simple model 403.F
- simple pair (of an H -space and an H -subspace) 202.L
 - n - (of topological spaces) 202.L
- simple path 186.F
- simple point
 - (on an algebraic variety) 16.F
 - (of an analytic set) 23.B 418.A
- simple ring 368.G
 - quasi- 368.E
- simple root
 - (of an algebraic equation) 10.B
 - (in a root system) 13.J
 - (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.M
- simple series 379.E
- simple spectrum 390.G
- simplest alternating polynomial 337.I
- simplest Chebyshev q -function 19.G
- simplest orthogonal polynomial 19.G
- simple type theory 411.K
- simplex
 - (in an affine space) 7.D
 - (of a complex) 13.R
 - (in a locally convex space) 424.U
 - (in a polyhedron of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (in a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (of a triangulation) 70.C
 - degenerate (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.D
 - n - (in a Euclidean simplicial complex) 70.B
 - n - (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
 - n - (in a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - open (in an affine space) 7.D
 - open (in the polyhedron of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - ordered (in a semisimplicial complex) 70.E
 - ordered (in a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - oriented q - 201.C
 - oriented singular r -, of class C^∞ 105.T
 - singular n - (in a topological space) 70.E
- simplex method 255.C
 - two-phase 255.C
- simplex tableau 255.C
- simplicial approximation (to a continuous mapping) 70.C
- simplicial approximation theorem 70.C
- simplicial chain complex, oriented 201.C
- simplicial complex(es) 65.A 70.C
 - abstract 70.C
 - countable 70.C
 - Euclidean 70.B
 - finite 70.C
 - isomorphic 70.C
 - locally countable 70.C
 - locally finite 70.C
 - ordered 70.C
- simplicial decomposition (of a topological space) 70.C
- simplicial division 65.A
- simplicial homology group 201.D

- simplicial mapping (map) 70.C
 - (between polyhedra) 70.C
 - (relative to triangulations) 70.C
- simplicial pair 201.L
- simply connected (space) 79.C 170
- simply connected covering Lie group (of a Lie algebra) 249.C
- simply connected group (isogenous to an algebraic group) 13.N
- simply convergent sequence 435.B
- simply elliptic (singularity) 418.C
- simply invariant (subspace) 164.H
- simply periodic function 134.E
- simply transitive (G-set) 362.B
- Simpson formula, Milne- 303.E
- Simpson $\frac{1}{3}$ rule 299.A
- Simpson $\frac{3}{8}$ rule 299.A
- simulation 307.C 385
 - analog 385.A
 - in the narrow sense 385.A
 - system 385.A
- simultaneous distribution 342.C
- simultaneous equations 10.A
- sin (sine) 131.E
- \sin^{-1} 131.E
- sine(s) 432.A
 - hyperbolic 131.F
 - integral 167.D
 - laws of 432.A, App. A, Tables 2.II 2.III
 - laws of (on spherical trigonometry) 432.B
- sine curve 93.H
- Sine-Gordon equation 387.A
- sine integral 167.D, App. A, Table 19.II
- sines and cosines, law of App. A, Table 2.III
- sine transform 160.C, App. A, Table 11.II
- sine wave 446
- Singer fixed point theorem, Atiyah- 153.C
- Singer index theorem
 - Atiyah- 237.H
 - equivariant Atiyah- 237.H
- single-address instruction 75.C
- single-commodity flow problem 281.F
- single integral theorem, Fourier 160.B
- single layer, potential of a 338.A
- single-objective model 307.C
- single sampling inspection 404.C
- single-valued function 165.B
- singular
 - (distribution) 374.C
 - (element of a connected Lie group) 249.P
 - (element of a real Lie algebra) 248.B
 - (element with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
 - (Galton-Watson process) 44.C
 - (harmonic function) 193.G
 - (mapping) 208.B
 - (ordinal number) 270.I
 - (set function) 380.C
 - essentially (with respect to an analytic set) 21.M
 - of the h th species 343.D.E
 - μ - 380.C
 - relative, homology group 201.L
- singular cardinal problem 33.F
- singular chain complex (of a topological space) 201.E
- singular cochain complex 201.H
- singular cohomology group 201.H
- singular cohomology ring 201.I
- singular complex (of a topological space) 70.E
- singular fiber 72.K
- singular homology group 201.E,G,L,R
 - integral 201.E
- singular initial value problem (of a partial differential equation of mixed type) 326.C
- singular inner function 43.F
- singular integral 217.J
- singular integral equation 217.J
- singular integral manifold (of a differential ideal) 428.E
- singular integral operator, Calderón-Zygmund 217.J 251.O
- singularity (singularities) 51.C 198.M
 - algebraic 198.M
 - of an analytic function 198.M
 - cuspidal 418.C
 - direct transcendental (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.P
 - elliptic 418.C
 - essential (of a complex function) 198.D
 - fixed (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
 - indirect transcendental (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.P
 - isolated (of an analytic function) 198.D
 - isolated (of a complex function) 198.M
 - logarithmic (of an analytic function) 198.M
 - logarithmic (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.P
 - movable (of an algebraic differential equation) 288.A
 - ordinary (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.P
 - principle of condensation of 37.H
 - propagation of 325.M
 - quotient 418.C
 - rational 418.C
 - regular (of a coherent \mathcal{E} -module) 274.H
 - removable (of a complex function) 198.D
 - removable (of a harmonic function) 193.L
 - resolution of 16.L 23.D 418.B
 - space of 390.E
 - theory of 418
 - transcendental (of an analytic function in the wider sense) 198.P
 - two-dimensional 418.C
- singularity set (of a proper meromorphic mapping) 23.D
- singularity spectrum (of a hyperfunction) 125.CC 274.E
- singularity theorem (in physics) 359.F
- singular kernel 217.J
- singular locus (of a variety) 16.F
- singular n -simplex (in a topological space) 70.E
- singular orbit 431.C
- singular part (of a Laurent expansion) 198.D
- singular perturbation 289.E
- singular point
 - (of an algebraic variety) 16.F
 - (of an analytic set) 23.B 418.A
 - (of a continuous vector field) 153.B
 - (of a curve of class C^k) 93.G
 - (of a flow) 126.D
 - (of a linear difference equation) 104.D
 - (of a plane algebraic curve) 9.B
 - (of a polyhedron) 65.B
 - (of a quadratic hypersurface) 343.E
 - (of a surface in E^3) 111.J
 - (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 254.A

- (of a system of ordinary differential equations) 126.G 289.A
- apparent (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 254.C
- hyperbolic 126.G
- irregular (of a solution) 254.B
- irregular (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 254.B
- isolated 198.D
- left (of a diffusion process) 115.B
- regular (of a solution) 254.B
- regular (of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 254.B
- right (of a diffusion process) 115.B
- singular projective transformation 343.D
 - of the h th species 343.D
- q -cochain 201.H
- q -simplex 201.E
- singular quadric hypersurface of the h th species (in a projective space) 343.E
- singular r -chain of class C^∞ 105.T
- singular r -cochain of class C^∞ 105.T
- singular r -simplex of class C^∞ , oriented 105.T
- singular series 4.D
- singular solution
 - (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 - (of a general partial differential equation) 320.C
 - (of an ordinary differential equation) 313.A, App. A, Table 14.I
 - (of a partial differential equation) 320.C
 - totally (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
- singular spectrum 345.A 390.E
 - (of a hyperfunction) 125.CC 274.E
- singular subspace 343.D
- singular subspace, totally 348.E
- singular support
 - (of a distribution) 112.C
 - (of a hyperfunction) 125.W
- singular value 302.A
- singular value decomposition (SVD) 302.E
- \sinh (hyperbolic sine) 131.F
- sink 126.G 281.C
- sinusoid 93.D
- sinusoidal wave 446
- site 16.AA
 - étale 16.AA
 - flat 16.AA
 - presheaf on 16.AA
 - Zariski 16.AA
- site percolation process 340.D
- $6j$ -symbol 353.B
- size
 - (of a balanced array) 102.L
 - (complexity of computation) 71.A
 - (of a population) 397.B
 - (of a random sample) 396.B
 - (of a sample) 401.E
 - (of a test) 400.A
 - block 102.B
 - sample 373.A
 - step 303.B
- skeleton
 - (of a domain in C^n) 21.C
 - r - (of a Euclidean complex) 70.B
- skew field 149.A 368.B
- skew-Hermitian form 256.Q
- skew-Hermitian matrix 269.I
- skew h -matrix 269.I
- skewness 396.C 397.C
 - coefficient of 341.H
- skew product (of measure-preserving transformations) 136.D
- skew surface 111.I
- skew-symmetric (multilinear mapping) 256.H
- skew-symmetric matrix 269.B
- skew-symmetric tensor 256.N
- Skitovich-Darmois theorem 374.H
- Skolem-Löwenheim theorem 156.E
- Skolem paradox 156.E
- Skolem theorem on the impossibility of characterizing the system of natural numbers by axioms 156.E
- slackness, Tucker theorem on complementary 255.B
- slack variable 255.A
- slant product
 - (of a cochain and a chain) 201.K
 - (of a cohomology class and a homology class) 201.K
- Slater constraint qualification 292.B
- slender body theorem 205.B
- slice knot 235.G
- slice representation 431.C
- slice theorem, differentiable 431.C
- slicing theorem, watermelon- 125.DD
- slide rule 19.A
- sliding block code 213.E
- slit (of a plane domain) 333.A
- slit domain 333.A
- slit mapping
 - extremal horizontal 367.G
 - extremal vertical 367.G
- slope function 46.C
- slowly increasing C^∞ -function 125.O
- slowly increasing distribution 125.N
- slowly increasing function in the sense of Deny 338.P
- slowly increasing sequences 168.B
- slow wave 259
- Smale condition C, Palais- 279.E 286.Q
- Smale diffeomorphism, Morse- 126.J
- Smale flow, Morse- 126.J
- Smale theorem, Sard- 286.P
- Smale vector field, Morse- 126.J
- small-displacement theory of elasticity 271.G
- smaller topology 425.H
- small inductive dimension (ind) 117.B
- small numbers, law of 250.B
- small sample 401.F
- small set of order U 436.G
- smashing (a space to a point) 202.E
- smash product 202.F
- Smirnov test, Kolmogorov- 317.F
- Smirnov test statistic, Kolmogorov- 374.E
- Smirnov theorem 250.F
- Smith conjecture 235.E
- Smith convergence, Moore- 87.H
- Smith theorem 431.B
- smooth
 - (function) 106.K
 - (measure for a Riemann metric) 136.G
 - (morphism of schemes) 16.F
 - (point of a variety) 16.F
 - piecewise (curve) 364.A
 - in the sense of A. Zygmund 168.B
 - uniformly (normed linear space) 37.G
- smooth boundary, domain with (in a C^∞ -manifold) 105.U

Smooth characteristic class of foliations

- smooth characteristic class of foliations 154.G
smoothing (of a combinatorial manifold) 114.C
smoothing problem 114.C
smooth invariant measure 126.J
smooth manifold 105.D 114.B
smooth structure 114.B
smooth variety 16.F
sn 134.J, App. A, Table 16.III
Snapper polynomial 16.E
Sobolev-Besov embedding theorem 168.B
Sobolev inequality, Hardy-Littlewood- 224.E
Sobolev space 168.B
software 75.C
sojourn time density 45.G
solenoidal (vector field) 442.D
solid geometry 181
solid harmonics 393.A
solid n -sphere 140
solid sphere 140
 topological 140
solitary wave 387.B
soliton 387.B
solution
 (of equations of neutral type) 163.H
 (of a functional-differential equation) 163.C
 (of an inequality) 211.A
 (of an ordinary differential equation) 313.A
 (of a partial differential equation) 320.A
 (of partial differential equations of first order)
 App. A, Table 15.II
 (of partial differential equations of second
 order) App. A, Table 15.III
 (of a system of differential equations) 313.B
 (of a system of linear equations) 269.M
 (of a system of partial differential equations)
 428.B
 algebraic (of an algebraic equation) 10.D
 asymptotic 325.L
 basic 255.A
 basic feasible 255.A
 basic optimal 255.A
 Bayes 398.B
 Bayes, in the wider sense 398.B
 of boundary value problems App. A, Table
 15.VI
 of the Cauchy problem 325.D
 classical (to Plateau's problem) 275.C
 complete (of partial differential equations)
 320.C
 d'Alembert 325.D
 Douglas-Radó (to Plateau's problem) 275.C
 elementary (of a differential operator) 112.B
 elementary (of a linear partial differential
 operator) 320.H
 elementary (of partial differential equations
 of elliptic type) 323.B
 elementary (of a partial differential operator)
 App. A, Table 15.V
 equilateral triangle 420.B
 feasible (of a linear equation in linear program-
 ming) 264.A
 formal (for a system of ordinary differential
 equations) 289.C
 fundamental (of a Cauchy problem) 325.D
 fundamental (of a differential operator) 112.B
 fundamental (of an evolution equation) 189.C
 fundamental (of a linear parabolic equation
 with boundary conditions) 327.F
 fundamental (of a linear partial differential
 operator) 320.H
 fundamental (of a partial differential equation
 of parabolic type) 327.D
 fundamental (of partial differential equations
 of elliptic type) 323.B
 fundamental (of a partial differential operator
 with C^∞ -coefficients) 189.C
 fundamental system of (of a homogeneous
 linear ordinary differential equation) 252.B
 fundamental system of (of a homogeneous
 system of linear differential equations of first
 order) 252.H
 general (of a differential equation) 313.A
 general (of a general partial differential equa-
 tion) 320.C
 general (of a nonhomogeneous linear difference
 equation) 104.D
 general (of partial differential equations)
 320.C
 general (of a system of differential equations)
 313.C
 general (of a system of partial differential
 equations) 428.B
 generalized Bayes 398.B
 genuine 323.G
 half-periodic (of the Hill equation) 268.E
 Hill's method of 268.B
 Hopf's weak 204.C
 inner 25.B
 Kirchhoff 325.D
 to the martingale problem 115.C
 maximum 316.E
 minimax 398.B
 minimum 316.E
 Nash bargaining 173.C
 numerical (of algebraic equations) 301
 numerical (of integral equations) 217.N
 numerical (of linear equations) 302
 numerical (of ordinary differential equations)
 303
 numerical (of partial differential equations)
 304
 optimal (of a linear programming problem)
 255.A
 optimal (of a nonlinear programming problem)
 292.A
 ordinary (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 outer 25.B
 particular (of a differential equation) 313.A
 particular (of partial differential equations)
 320.C
 particular (for a system of differential equations)
 313.C
 pathwise uniqueness of 406.D
 periodic (of the Hill equation) 268.E
 Perron-Brelet (of the Dirichlet problem)
 120.C
 Perron-Wiener-Brelet (of the Dirichlet problem)
 120.C
 Poisson 325.D
 primary (of a homogeneous partial differential
 equation) 320.E
 primitive (of a partial differential equation)
 320.E
 principal 104.B
 by quadrature App. A, Table 14.I
 quasiperiodic (of the Hill equation) 268.B
 by radicals (of an algebraic equation) 10.D
 regular (of a differential ideal) 428.E
 singular App. A, Table 14.I
 singular (of a differential ideal) 428.E

singular (of a general partial differential equation) 320.C
 singular (of an ordinary differential equation) 313.A, App. A, Table 14.I
 singular (of partial differential equations) 320.C
 stable (of the Hill equation) 268.E
 straight line 420.B
 strong (of Navier-Stokes equation) 204.C
 strong (of stochastic differential equations) 406.D
 system of fundamental (of a system of linear homogeneous equations) 269.M
 trivial (of a system of linear homogeneous equations) 269.M
 unique strong 406.D
 uniqueness theorem of (of systems of linear differential equations of the first order) 316.D.G
 unstable (of the Hill equation) 268.E
 von Neumann-Morgenstern 173.D
 weak 204.C 323.G 378.I
 solution curve (of ordinary differential equations) 316.A
 solution operator 163.E
 solvability, Cartan's criterion of 248.F
 solvable
 (ideal of a Lie algebra) 248.C
 (Lie algebra) 248.C
 (Lie group) 249.D
 (by a Turing machine) 71.B
 by radicals 172.H
 solvable algebra 231.A
 solvable algebraic group 13.F
 k - 13.F
 solvable group 190.I
 finite 151.D
 generalized 190.K
 π - 151.F
 solve
 (a conditional inequality) 211.A
 (by means of a Turing machine) 71.E
 (an ordinary differential equation) 313.A
 (a partial differential equation) 320.A
 (a system of algebraic equations) 10.A
 (a triangle) 432.A
 Sommerfeld formula App. A, Table 19.III
 Kneser- App. A, Table 19.III
 Sommerfeld radiation condition 188.D
 Sonine formula, Weber- App. A, Table 19.III
 Sonine polynomials 317.D, App. A, Table 20.VI
 Sonine-Schafheitlin formula App. A, Table 19.III
 SOR (successive overrelaxation) 302.C
 sorting 96.C
 soudure 80.N
 sound propagation, equation of 325.A
 source 126.G 281.C
 (of a jet) 105.X
 autoregressive Gaussian 213.E
 ergodic information 213.C
 information 213.A
 stationary 213.C
 without (vector field) 442.D
 source branch 282.C
 source coding theorem 213.D
 with a fidelity criterion 213.F
 noiseless 213.D
 source coding theory 213.A
 southern hemisphere 140

Subject Index

Space(s)

south pole 74.D 140
 space(s) 381.B
 of absolute continuity 390.E
 absolutely closed 425.U
 abstract 381.B
 abstract L 310.G
 abstract L_p 310.G
 abstract M 310.G
 action 398.A
 adjoint (of a topological linear space) 424.D
 affine 7.A
 affine locally symmetric 80.J
 affine symmetric 80.J
 N_0 - 425.Y
 algebraic 16.W
 algebraic fiber 72.I
 analytic 23.C
 analytic, in the sense of Behnke and Stein 23.E
 analytically uniform 125.S
 analytic covering 23.E
 analytic measurable 270.C
 arcwise connected 79.B
 attaching 202.E
 Baire 425.N
 Baire zero-dimensional 273.B
 Banach 37.A,B
 Banach analytic 23.G
 base (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 base (of a fiber space) 148.B
 base (of a Riemann surface) 367.A
 base for 425.F
 basic (of a probability space) 342.B
 Besov 168.B
 bicomact 408.S
 biprojective 343.H
 Boolean 42.D
 Borel 270.C
 boundary 112.E
 bundle (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 C-analytic 23.E
 C-covering 23.E
 Cartan 152.C
 Cartesian 140
 Čech-complete 436.I
 classifying (of a topological group) 147.G,H
 closed half- 7.D
 of closed paths 202.C
 co-echelon 168.B
 collectionwise Hausdorff 425.AA
 collectionwise normal 425.AA
 comb 79.A
 compact 425.S
 compact metric 273.F
 complete 436.G
 completely normal 425.Q
 completely regular 425.Q
 complete measure 270.D
 complete product measure 270.H
 complete uniform 436.G
 complex, form 365.L
 complex Hilbert 197.B
 complex interpolation 224.B
 complexity 71.A
 complex projective 343.D
 concentrically flat App. A, Table 4.II
 configuration 126.L 402.G
 conformal 76.A
 conformally flat App. A, Table 4.II
 conjugate (of a normed linear space) 37.D

- conjugate (of a topological linear space) 424.D
- connected 79.A
- of constant curvature 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
- of continuous mapping 435.D
- contractible 79.C
- control (in catastrophe theory) 51.B
- countable paracompact 425.Y
- countably compact 425.S
- countably Hilbertian 424.W
- countably normed 424.W
- covering 91.A
- crystallographic, group 92.A
- decision 398.A
- of decision functions 398.A
- de Sitter 359.D
- developable 425.AA
- (DF)- 424.P
- Dieudonné complete topological 435.I
- Dirichlet 338.Q
- discrete metric 273.B
- discrete topological 425.C
- Douady 23.G
- dual (of a C^* -algebra) 36.G
- dual (of a linear space) 256.G
- dual (of a locally compact group) 437.J
- dual (of a normed linear space) 37.D
- dual (of a projective space) 343.B
- dual (of a topological linear space) 424.D
- \mathcal{E} - 193.N
- echelon 168.B
- eigen- 269.L 390.A
- Eilenberg-MacLane 70.F
- Einstein 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
- of elementary events 342.B
- elliptic 285.C
- error 403.E
- estimation 403.E
- Euclidean 140
- external (in static model in catastrophe theory) 51.B
- (F)- 424.I
- fiber 72.I 148.B
- finite type power series 168.B
- Finsler 152.A
- Fock (antisymmetric) 377.A
- Fock (symmetric) 377.A
- Fréchet 37.O 424.I 425.CC
- Fréchet, in the sense of Bourbaki 37.O 424.I
- Fréchet L - 87.K
- Fréchet-Uryson 425.CC
- fully normal 425.X
- function 168.A 435.D
- fundamental 125.S
- G - 178.H 431.A
- general analytic 23.G
- generalized topological 425.D
- generating (of a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
- globally symmetric Riemannian 412.A
- Green 193.N
- group 92.A
- H - 203.D
- Haar 142.B
- half- (of an affine space) 7.D
- Hardy 168.B
- Hausdorff 425.Q
- Hausdorff uniform 436.C
- H -closed 425.U
- hereditarily normal 425.Q
- Hermitian hyperbolic 412.G
- Hilbert 173.B 197.B
- Hilbert, adjoint 251.E
- Hilbert, exponential 377.D
- Hölder 168.B
- holomorphically complete 23.F
- homogeneous \rightarrow homogeneous space
- hyperbolic 285.C 412.H
- identification (by a partition) 425.L
- indiscrete pseudometric 273.B
- inductive limit 210.C
- infinite-dimensional 117.B
- infinite lens 91.C
- infinite type power series 168.B
- at infinity (in affine geometry) 7.B
- inner product 442.B
- internal (in static model in catastrophe theory) 51.B
- interpolation 224.A
- of irrational numbers 22.A
- irreducible symmetric Hermitian 412.A
- isometric 273.B
- John-Nirenberg (= BMO) 168.B
- k - 425.CC
- k' - 425.CC
- K -complete analytic 23.F
- Kawaguchi 152.C
- Kolmogorov 425.Q
- Köthe 168.B
- Kuranishi 72.G
- Kuratowski 425.Q
- L - 87.K
- L^* - 87.K
- Lashnev 425.CC
- lattice ordered linear 310.B
- Lebesgue (= $L_p(\Omega)$) 168.B
- Lebesgue measure, with (σ -) finite measure 136.A
- left coset (of a topological group) 423.E
- left projective 343.H
- left quotient (of a topological group) 423.E
- lens 91.C
- (LF)- 424.W
- of line elements of higher order 152.C
- linear \rightarrow linear space
- linear topological 424.A
- Lindelöf 425.S
- Lipschitz 168.B
- locally arcwise connected 79.B
- locally compact 425.V
- locally connected 79.A
- locally contractible 79.C 204.C
- locally convex Fréchet 424.I
- locally Euclidean 425.V
- locally n -connected 79.C
- locally ω -connected 79.C
- locally symmetric 364.D
- locally symmetric Riemannian 412.A
- locally totally bounded uniform 436.H
- locally trivial fiber 148.B
- local moduli, of a compact complex manifold 72.G
- local ringed 383.H
- Loeb 293.D
- loop 202.C
- Lorentz 168.B
- Luzin 22.I 422.CC
- M - 425.Y
- (M)- 424.O
- Mackey 424.N
- mapping 202.C 435.D

- maximal ideal (of a commutative Banach space) 36.E
- measurable 270.C
- measure 270.D
- metric \rightarrow metric space
- metric vector 256.H
- metrizable topological 273.K
- metrizable uniform 436.F
- Minkowski 258.A
- moduli 16.W 72.G
- Moishezon 16.W
- momentum phase 126.L
- Montel 424.O
- Moor 273.K 425.AA
- n -classifying (of a topological group) 147.G
- n -connected 79.C 202.L
- n -connective fiber 148.D
- n -dimensional 117.B
- n -simple 202.L
- non-Euclidean 285.A
- normal 425.Q
- normal analytic 23.D
- normed linear 37.B
- NP- 71.E
- nuclear 424.S
- null 251.D
- ω -connected 79.C
- orbit (of a G -space) 431.A
- ordered linear 310.B
- Orlicz 168.B
- P- 425.Y
- p- 425.Y
- paracompact 425.S
- parameter (of a family of compact complex manifolds) 72.G
- parameter (for a family of probability measures) 398.A
- parameter (of a probability distribution) 396.B
- partition of a 425.L
- path 148.C
- path (of a Markov process) 261.B
- path-connected 79.B
- pathological 65.F
- Peirce 231.B
- perfectly normal 425.Q
- perfectly separable 425.P
- phase 126.B 163.C 402.C
- physical Hilbert 150.G
- pinching a set to a point 202.E
- polar 191.I
- Polish 22.I 273.J
- precompact metric 273.B
- precompact uniform 436.H
- pre-Hilbert 197.B
- principal (of a flag) 139.B
- principal half- 139.B
- probability 342.B
- product 425.K
- product measure 270.H
- product metric 273.B
- product topological 425.K
- product uniform 436.E
- projective, over Λ 147.E
- projective limit 210.C
- projectively flat App. A, Table 4.II
- pseudocompact 425.S
- pseudometric 273.B
- pseudometrizable uniform 436.F
- Q- 425.BB
- quasi-Banach 37.O
- quasicompact 408.S
- quasidual (of a locally compact group) 437.I
- quasinormed linear 37.O
- quaternion hyperbolic 412.G
- quotient 425.L
- quotient (by a discrete transformation group) 122.A
- quotient (of a linear space with respect to an equivalence relation) 256.F
- quotient (by a transformation group) 122.A
- quotient topological 425.L
- r -closed 425.U
- ramified covering 23.B
- real-compact 425.BB
- real Hilbert 197.B
- real hyperbolic 412.G
- real interpolation 224.C
- real linear 256.A
- real projective 343.D
- reduced product 202.Q
- reflexive Banach 37.G
- regular 425.Q
- regular Banach 37.G
- representation (for a Banach algebra) 36.D
- representation (of a representation of a Lie algebra) 248.B
- representation (of a representation of a Lie group) 249.O
- representation (of a unitary representation) 437.A
- Riemannian 364.A
- Riesz 310.B
- right coset (of a topological group) 423.E
- right projective 343.H
- right quotient (of a topological group) 423.E
- ringed 383.H
- (S)- 424.S
- sample 342.B 396.B 398.A
- scale of Banach 286.Z
- Schwartz 424.S
- separable 425.P
- separable metric 273.E
- separated 425.Q
- separated uniform 436.C
- sequential 425.CC
- sequentially compact 425.S
- sheaf 383.C
- shrinking, to a point 202.E
- Siegel, of degree n 32.F
- Siegel upper half-, of degree n 32.F
- Σ - 425.Y
- σ - 425.Y
- σ -compact 425.V
- σ -finite measure 270.D
- simply connected 79.C 170
- of singularity 390.E
- smashing, to a point 202.E
- Sobolev 168.B
- Spanier cohomology theory, Alexander-Kolmogorov- 201.M
- spherical 285.D
- Spivak normal fiber 114.J
- standard Borel 270.C
- standard measurable 270.C
- standard vector (of an affine space) 7.A
- state (of a dynamical system) 126.B
- state (of a Markov process) 261.B
- state (in static model in catastrophe theory) 51.B
- state (of a stochastic process) 407.B

- Stein 23.F
- stratifiable 425.Y
- strongly paracompact 425.S
- structure (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
- subbase for 425.F
- Suslin 22.I 425.CC
- symmetric Hermitian 412.E
- symmetric homogeneous 412.B
- symmetric Riemannian 412
- symmetric Riemannian homogeneous 412.B
- T_0 - 425.Q
- T_1 - 425.Q
- T_1 -uniform 436.C
- T_2 - 425.Q
- T_3 - 425.Q
- T_4 - 425.Q
- T_5 - 425.Q
- T_6 - 425.Q
- tangent 105.H
- tangent vector 105.H
- Teichmüller 416
- tensor, of degree k 256.J
- tensor, of type (p, q) 256.J
- test function 125.S
- Thom 114.G
- Tikhonov 425.Q
- time parameter 260.A
- topological \rightarrow topological space
- topological complete 436.I
- topological linear 424.A
- topological vector 424.A
- total (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
- total (of a fiber space) 148.B
- totally bounded metric 273.B
- totally bounded uniform 436.H
- totally disconnected 79.D
- transformation (of an algebraic group) 13.G
- of type S 125.T
- underlying topological (of a complex manifold) 72.A
- underlying topological (of a topological group) 423.A
- uniform \rightarrow uniform space
- uniformizable topological 436.H
- uniformly locally compact 425.V
- uniform topological 436.C
- unisolvant 142.B
- universal covering 91.B
- universal Teichmüller 416
- vector, over K 256.A
- velocity phase 126.L
- weakly symmetric Riemannian 412.J
- well-chained metric 79.D
- wild 65.F
- space complexity 71.A
- space form 285.E 412.H
 - Euclidean 412.H
 - hyperbolic 412.H
 - spherical 412.H
- space geometry 181
- space group 92.A
 - crystallographic 92.A
 - equivalent 92.A
- spacelike 258.A 359.B
- space reflection 359.B
- space-time, Minkowski 359.B
- space-time Brownian motion 45.F
- space-time inversion 258.A
- space-time manifold 359.D
- span
 - (of a domain) 77.E
 - (a linear subspace by a set) 256.F
 - (of a Riemann surface) 367.G
- spanning tree 186.G
- sparse 302.C
- Späth type division theorem (for microdifferential operators) 274.F
- spatial (\ast -isomorphism on von Neumann algebras) 308.C
- spatially homogeneous (process) 261.A
- spatially isomorphic (automorphisms on a measure space) 136.E
- spatial tensor product 36.H
- Spearman rank correlation 371.K
- Spec (spectrum) 16.D
- special Clifford group 61.D
- special divisor 9.C
- special flow 136.D
- special function(s) 389, App. A, Table 14.II
 - of confluent type 389.A
 - of ellipsoidal type 389.A
 - of hypergeometric type 389.A
- special functional equations 388
- special isoperimetric problem 228.A
- speciality index
 - (of a divisor of an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - (of a divisor on an algebraic surface) 15.D
 - α - (of a divisor of an algebraic curve) 9.F
- specialization 16.A
 - (in étale topology) 16.AA
- special Jordan algebra 231.A
- special linear group 60.B
 - (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
 - of degree n over K 60.B
 - projective 60.B
 - projective (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
- special orthogonal group 60.I
 - complex 60.I
 - over K with respect to Q 60.K
- special principle of relativity 359.B
- special relativity 359.B
- special representation (of a Jordan algebra) 231.C
- special surface 110.A
- special theory of perturbations 420.E
- special theory of relativity 359.A
- special unitary group 60.F
 - (relative to an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
 - over K 60.H
 - projective, over K 60.H
- special universal enveloping algebra (of a Jordan algebra) 231.C
- special valuation 439.B
- species
 - ellipsoidal harmonics of the first, second, third or fourth 133.C
 - Lamé functions of the first, second, third or fourth 133.C
 - singular projective transformation of the h th 343.D
 - singular quadric hypersurface of the h th (in a projective space) 343.E
- specification 401.A
 - problem of 397.P
- specific heat
 - at constant pressure 419.B
 - at constant volume 419.B
- specificity 346.F
- specific resistance 130.B
- spectral analysis 390.A
- spectral concentration 331.F

- spectral decomposition 126.J 395.B
- spectral density, quadrature 397.N
- spectral functor 200.J
- spectral geometry 391.A
- spectral integral 390.D
- spectral invariant 136.E
- spectrally isomorphic (automorphisms on a measure space) 136.E
- spectral mapping theorem 251.G
- spectral measure 390.B,K 395.B,C
 - complex 390.D
 - maximum 390.G
 - real 390.D
- spectral method 304.B
- spectral operator 390.K
- spectral property 136.E
- spectral radius 126.K 251.F 390.A
- spectral representation 390.E
 - complex 390.E
- spectral resolution 390.E
 - complex 390.E
- spectral sequence 200.J
 - (of a fiber space) 148.E
 - cohomology 200.J
 - Hodge 16.U
- spectral synthesis 36.L
- spectral theorem 390.E
- spectrum 390.A
 - (of a commutative ring) 16.D
 - (of a domain in a Riemannian manifold) 391.A
 - (of an element of a Banach algebra) 36.C
 - (in homotopy theory) 202.T
 - (of a hyperfunction) 274.E
 - (of an integral equation) 217.J
 - (of a linear operator) 251.F 390.A
 - (of a spectral measure) 390.C
 - absolutely continuous 390.E
 - continuous (of a linear operator) 390.A
 - continuous (of an integral equation) 217.J
 - countable Lebesgue 136.E
 - discrete 136.E 390.E
 - Eilenberg-MacLane 202.T
 - essential 390.E,I
 - formal (of a Noetherian ring) 16.X
 - intermittent 433.C
 - joint 36.M
 - Kolmogorov 433.C
 - for p -forms 391.B
 - point 390.A
 - pure point 136.E
 - quasidiscrete 136.E
 - residual 390.A
 - simple 390.G
 - singular 125.CC 345.A 390.A
 - singular (of a hyperfunction) 274.E
 - singularity (of a hyperfunction) 125.CC 274.E
 - sphere 202.T
 - stable homotopy group of the Thom 114.G
 - Thom 114.G 202.T
- spectrum condition 150.D
- speed measure 115.B
- Speiser theorem, Hilbert- 172.J
- Spencer mapping (map), Kodaira- 72.G
- sphere(s) 139.I 150
 - circumscribing (of a simplex) 139.I
 - combinatorial, group of oriented differentiable structures on the 114.I
 - complex 74.D
 - ε - (of a point) 273.C
 - exotic 114.B
 - homotopy n - 65.C
 - homotopy n -, h -cobordism group of 114.I
 - horned, Alexander's 65.G
 - open n - 140
 - open 140
 - PL ($k - 1$)- 65.C
 - pseudo- 111.I
 - Riemann 74.D
 - solid 140
 - solid n - 140
 - topological 140
 - topological solid 140
 - unit 140
 - w - 74.D
 - z - 74.D
- sphere bundle n - 147.K
 - cotangential 274.E
 - normal 274.E
 - tangential 274.E
 - unit tangent 126.L
- sphere geometry 76.C
- sphere pair 235.G 65.D
- sphere spectrum 202.T
- sphere theorem
 - (characterization of a sphere) 178.C
 - (embedding in a 3-manifold) 65.E
- spherical
 - (real hypersurface) 344.C
 - (space form) 412.H
- spherical astronomy 392
- spherical Bessel function 39.B
- spherical coordinates 90.C, App. A, Table 3.V
- spherical derivative (for an analytic or meromorphic function) 435.E
- spherical excess 432.B
- spherical Fourier transform 437.Z
- spherical function(s) 393
 - (on a homogeneous space) 437.X
 - Laplace 393.A
 - zonal (on a homogeneous space) 437.Y
- spherical G -fiber homotopy type 431.F
- spherical geometry 285.D
- spherical harmonic function 193.C
- spherical harmonics, biaxial 393.D
- spherical indicatrix (of a space curve) 111.F
- spherical modification 114.F
- spherical representation
 - of a differentiable manifold 111.G
 - of a space curve 111.F
 - of a unimodular locally compact group 437.Z
- spherical space 285.D
- spherical triangle 432.B, App. A, Table 2.III
- spherical trigonometry 432.B
- spherical type 13.R
- spherical wave 446
- spheroidal coordinates 133.D, App. A, Table 3.V
- spheroidal wave function 133.E
- spin 132.A 258.A 415.G
 - continuous 258.A
- spin and statistics, connection of 132.A 150.D
- spin ball 351.L
- spin bundle 237.F
- Spin^c bundle 237.F
- spin-flip model 340.C
- spin mapping (map) 237.G
- spin matrix, Pauli 258.A 415.G
- spinor(s) 61.E
 - contravariant 258.A
 - covariant 258.A
 - dotted 258.B

Spinor group

- even half- 61.E
- mixed, of rank (k, n) 258.A
- odd half- 61.E
- undotted 258.B
- spinor group 60.I 61.D
 - complex 61.E
- spinorial norm 61.D
- spinor representation (of rank k) 258.A
- spin representation
 - (of $SO(n)$) 60.J
 - (of $Spin(n, \mathbb{C})$) 61.E
 - even half- 61.E
 - half- 61.E
 - odd half- 61.E
- spin-structure 237.F 431.D
- spin systems, lattice 402.G
- spiral 93.H
 - Archimedes 93.H
 - Bernoulli 93.H
 - Cornu 93.H
 - equiangular 93.H
 - hyperbolic 93.H
 - logarithmic 93.H
 - reciprocal 93.H
- Spivak normal fiber space 114.J
- spline 223.F
 - natural 223.F
- spline interpolation 223.F
- split
 - $((B, N)$ -pair) 151.J
 - (cocycle in an extension) 257.E
 - (exact sequence) 277.K
 - k - (algebraic group) 13.N
 - K - (algebraic torus) 13.D
 - k -quasi- (algebraic group) 13.O
 - maximal k -, torus 13.Q
- split extension (of a group) 190.N
- splitting, Heegaard 65.C
- splitting field
 - for an algebra 362.F
 - for an algebraic torus 13.D
 - minimal (of a polynomial) 149.G
 - of a polynomial 149.G
- splitting ring 29.K
- split torus, maximal k - 13.Q
- spot prime 439.H
- Spur 269.F
- square(s)
 - Euler 241.B
 - latin 241
 - Latin 102.K
 - least, approximation 336.D
 - matrix of the sum of, between classes 280.B
 - matrix of the sum of, within classes 280.B
 - method of least 303.I
 - middle-, method 354.B
 - Room 241.D
 - Shrikhande 102.K
 - Youden 102.K
 - Youden, design 102.K
- square-free integer 347.H
- square integrable 168.B
- square integrable unitary representation 437.M
- square matrix 269.A
- square net 304.E
- square numbers 4.D
- s.s. complex(es) (semisimplicial complex) 70.E
 - geometric realization of 70.E
 - isomorphic 70.E
- s.s. mapping (semisimplicial mapping) 70.E
 - realization of 70.E
- stability 286.S 303.E 394
 - A - 303.G
 - A_0 - 303.G
 - $A(\alpha)$ - 303.G
 - absolute 303.G
 - conjecture 126.J
 - exchange of 286.T
 - interval of absolute 303.G
 - interval of relative 303.G
 - orbital (of a solution of a differential equation) 394.D
 - principle of linearized 286.S
 - region of absolute (of the Runge-Kutta (P, p) method) 303.G
 - region of relative 303.G
 - relative 303.G
 - stiff- 303.G
 - structural 290.A
 - structural, theorem 126.J
- stability group 362.B
- stability subgroup (of a topological group) 431.A
- stability theorem
 - Ω - 126.J
 - structural 126.J
- stabilizer
 - (in an operation of a group) 362.B
 - (in a permutation group) 151.H
 - (in a topological transformation group) 431.A
 - reductive 199.A
- stable 394.A
 - (coherent sheaf on a projective variety) 241.Y
 - (compact leaf) 154.D
 - (discretization, initial value problems) 304.D
 - (equilibrium solution) 286.S
 - (initial value problem) 304.F
 - (invariant set) 126.F
 - (linear function) 163.H
 - (manifold) 126.G
 - (minimal submanifold) 275.B
 - (static model in catastrophe theory) 51.E
 - absolutely 303.G
 - asymptotically 126.F 286.S 394.B
 - in both directions (Lyapunov stable) 394.A
 - C^r - Ω - 126.H
 - C^r -structurally 126.H
 - conditionally 394.D
 - exponentially 163.G 394.B
 - externally, set 186.I
 - globally asymptotically 126.F
 - internally, set 186.I
 - Lagrange 126.E
 - Lyapunov 126.F
 - Lyapunov, in the positive or negative direction 394.A
 - negatively Lagrange 126.E
 - negatively Poisson 126.E
 - one-side, for exponent $\frac{1}{2}$ App. A, Table 22
 - orbitally 126.F
 - Poisson 126.E
 - positively Lagrange 126.E
 - positively Poisson 126.E
 - relatively 303.G
 - uniformly 394.B
 - uniformly asymptotically 163.G 394.B
 - uniformly Lyapunov 126.F
- stable cohomology operation 64.B
- stable curve 9.K

- stable distribution 341.G
 - quasi- 341.G
 - semi- 341.G
- stable homotopy group 202.T, App. A, Table 6.VII
 - (of Thom spectrum) 114.G
 - of classical groups 202.V
 - of k -stem 202.U
- stable manifold 126.G,J
- stable point 16.W
- stable primary cohomology operation 64.C
- stable process 5.F
 - exponent of 5.F
 - one-sided, of the exponent α 5.F
 - strictly 5.F
 - symmetric 5.F
- stable range (of embeddings) 114.D
- stable reduction
 - (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - (of a curve) 9.K
 - potential (of an Abelian variety) 3.N
- stable reduction theorem 3.N 9.K
- stable secondary cohomology operation 64.C
- stable set 173.D
 - externally 186.I
 - internally 186.I
- stable solution (of the Hill equation) 268.E
- stable state 260.F 394.A 404.A
- stable vector bundle
 - (algebraic) 16.Y
 - (topological) 237.B
- stably almost complex manifold 114.H
- stably equivalent (vector bundles) 237.B
- stably fiber homotopy equivalent 237.I
- stably parallelizable (manifold) 114.I
- stack 96.E
- stage method, $(P + 1)$ - 303.D
- stalk (of a sheaf over a point) 16.AA 383.B
- standard
 - (in nonstandard analysis) 293.B
 - (transition probability) 260.F
- standard Borel space 270.C
- standard complex (of a Lie algebra) 200.O
- standard defining function 125.Z
- standard deviation
 - (characteristics of the distribution) 397.C
 - (of a probability distribution) 341.B
 - (of a random variable) 342.C
 - population 396.C
 - sample 396.C
- standard form 241.A
 - (of a difference equation) 104.C
 - of the equation (of a conic section) 78.C
 - Legendre-Jacobi (of an elliptic integral) 134.A, App. A, Table 16.I
- standard Gaussian distribution 176.A
- standard Kähler metric (of a complex projective space) 232.D
- standard measurable space 270.D
- standard normal distribution 341.D
- standard parabolic k -subgroup 13.Q
- standard part (in nonstandard analysis) 293.D
- standard q -simplex 201.E
- standard random walk 260.A
- standard resolution (of \mathbb{Z}) 200.M
- standard sequence 400.K
- standard set 22.I
- standard vector space (of an affine space) 7.A
- star \rightarrow also *
 - (in a complex) 13.R
 - (in a Euclidean complex) 70.B
 - (in a projective space) 343.B
 - (in a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (of a subset defined by a covering) 425.R
 - open 70.B,C
- star body, bounded 182.C
- star convergence 87.K
 - (o)- 87.L
 - relative uniform 310.F
- star-finite (covering of a set) 425.R
- star-finite property 425.S
- star refinement (of a covering) 425.R
- star region 339.D
- starting values (in a multistep method) 303.E
- start node 281.D
- star topology, weak (of a normed linear space) 37.E 424.H
- state(s)
 - (of a C^* -algebra) 308.D
 - (in Ising model) 340.B
 - (in quantum mechanics) 351.B
 - bound 351.D
 - ceiling 402.G
 - completeness of the scattering 150.D
 - equation of 419.A
 - equilibrium 136.H 340.B 419.A
 - even 415.H
 - fictitious 260.F
 - final 31.B
 - Gibbs 340.B
 - ground 402.G
 - in- 150.D 386.A
 - initial 31.B
 - instantaneous 260.F 261.B
 - internal 31.B
 - odd 415.H
 - out- 150.D 386.A
 - scattering 395.B
 - stable 260.F 394.A 404.A
 - stationary 340.C 351.D
 - of statistical control 404.A
 - sum over 402.D
 - unstable 394.A
- state estimator 86.E
- state space 126.B
 - (in catastrophe theory) 51.B
 - (of a dynamical system) 126.B
 - (of a Markov process) 261.B
 - (of a stochastic process) 407.B
- state-space approach 86.A
- state variable 127.A
- static model (in catastrophe theory) 51.B
 - stable 51.B
- stationary capacity 213.F
- stationary curve
 - (of the Euler-Lagrange differential equation) 324.E
 - (of a variation problem) 46.B
- stationary function 46.B
- stationary iterative process, linear 302.C
- stationary phase method 30.B
- stationary point (of an arc of class C^n) 111.D
- stationary Poisson point process 407.D
- stationary process(es) 342.A 395
 - shift associated with 136.D
 - strictly 395.A
 - strongly 395.A
 - weakly 395.A
 - weakly, of degree k 395.I
 - in the wider sense 395.A
- stationary random distribution

- strictly 395.H
- strongly 395.F.H
- weakly 395.C
- stationary source 213.C
- stationary state 340.C 351.D
- stationary value (of a function) 106.L
- stationary variational inequality 440.B
- stationary wave 446
- statistic 396
 - ancillary 396.H 401.C
 - Hotelling's T^2 280.B
 - invariant 396.H
 - Kolmogorov-Smirnov test 374.E
 - maximal invariant 396.I
 - minimal sufficient 396.I
 - n -dimensional 396.B
 - necessary and sufficient 396.E
 - 1-dimensional 396.B
 - order 396.C
 - selection 396.F
 - t - 374.B
 - U - 374.I
- statistical control, state of 404.A
- statistical data analysis 397.A
- statistical decision function 398
- statistical decision problem 398.A
- statistical decision procedure 398.A
- statistical estimation 399, App. A, Table 23
- statistical experiment 398.G
- statistical genetics 40.B
- statistical hypothesis 400.A
- statistical hypothesis testing 400, App. A, Table 23
- statistical inference 401
- statistical model 403
- statistical mechanics 342.A 402
 - classical 402.A
 - equilibrium 402.A
 - of irreversible processes 402.A
 - Markov 340.C
 - quantum 402.A
- statistical planning 102.A
- statistical quality control 404
- statistical structure 396.E
 - dominated 396.F
- statistical thermodynamics 402.A
- statistics 397.C
 - Bose 377.B 402.E
 - Fermi 377.B 402.E
- statistics and spin, connection of 150.D
- Staudt algebra 343.C
- Steenrod algebra 64.B
- Steenrod axioms, Eilenberg- 201.Q
- Steenrod isomorphism theorem, Hurewicz- 148.D
- Steenrod operator App. A, Table 6.II
- Steenrod p th power operation 64.B
- Steenrod square operation 64.B
- steepest descent, curve of 46.A
- steepness, wave 205.F
- Stein, analytic space in the sense of Behnke and 23.E
- Steinberg formula (on representation of compact Lie groups) 248.Z
- Steinberg group 237.J
- Steinberg symbol 237.J
- Steinberg type 13.O
- Stein continuation theorem, Remmert- 23.B
- Stein decomposition, Fefferman- 168.B
- Steiner problem 179.A
- Steiner symmetrization 228.B
- Steinhaus theorem, Banach-
 - (in a Banach space) 37.H
 - (in a topological linear space) 424.J
- Stein lemma, Hunt- 400.F
- Stein manifold 21.L
 - fundamental theorems of 21.L 72.E
- Stein space 23.F
- Stein theorem, Behnke- 21.H
- Stein theorem, Lehmann- 400.B
- step, fractional 304.F
- step-by-step method 163.D
- step-down operator 206.B
- step size (in numerical solution) 303.B
- step-up operator 206.B
- stereographic projection 74.D
- Stiefel manifold 199.B
 - complex 199.B
 - infinite 147.I
 - of k -frames 199.B
 - of orthogonal k -frames 199.B
 - real, of k -frames 199.B
 - real, of orthogonal k -frames 199.B
- Stiefel-Whitney class
 - (of a differentiable manifold) 56.F 147.M
 - (of an $O(n)$ -bundle) 147.M
 - (of an \mathbb{R}^n -bundle) 56.B
 - (of a topological manifold) 56.F
 - total 56.B
 - universal 56.B
- Stiefel-Whitney number 56.F
- Stieltjes integral 94.E
 - Lebesgue- 94.C 166.C
 - Riemann- 94.B 166.C
- Stieltjes measure, Lebesgue- 166.C 270.L
- Stieltjes moment problem 240.K
- Stieltjes theorem 133.C
- Stieltjes transform 220.D
 - Fourier- 192.B, O
 - Laplace- 240.A
- Stiemke theorem 255.B
- stiff 303.G
 - in an interval 303.G
- stiffness matrix 304.C
- stiffness ratio 303.G
- stiff-stability 303.G
- stimulus-sampling model, Estes 342.H 346.G
- Stirling formula 174.A 212.C, App. A, Table 17.I
- Stirling interpolation formula App. A, Table 21
- Stirling number of the second kind 66.D
- stochastically larger (random variable) 371.C
- stochastic calculus 406.A
- stochastic control 342.A 405
- stochastic differential 406.C
- stochastic differential equation 342.A
 - linear (LSDE) 405.G
 - of Markovian type 406.D
- stochastic differential of Stratonovich type 406.C
- stochastic filtering 324.A 405.F
- stochastic inference, graphical method of 19.B
- stochastic integral 261.E 406.B
 - of Itô type 406.C
 - of Stratonovich type 406.C
- stochastic Ising model 340.C
- stochastic matrix 260.A
- stochastic maximum principle 405.D
- stochastic model 264
- stochastic moving frame 406.G
- stochastic paper 19.B
- stochastic process(es) 342.A 407
 - generalized 407.C
 - with stationary increments of order n 395.I

- stochastic programming 264.C 307.C 408
 - two-stage 408.A
- Stoïlow compactification, Kerékjártó- 207.C
- Stoïlow type (compactification) 207.B
- Stokes approximation 205.C
- Stokes assumption 205.C
- Stokes differential equation 167.E 188.E
- Stokes equation, general Navier- 204.F
- Stokes equation, Navier- 204.B 205.C
- Stokes formula 94.F 105.O, App. A, Table 3.II
 - Green- 94.F
- Stokes initial value problem, Navier- 204.B
- Stokes multiplier 254.C
- Stokes phenomenon 254.C
- Stokes theorem App. A, Table 3.III
- Stokes wave 205.F
- Stolz, differentiable in the sense of 106.G
- Stolz path (in a plane domain) 333.B
- Stone-Čech compactification 207.C 425.T
- Stone-Gel'fand theorem 168.B
- Stone integrable function, Daniell- 310.I
- Stone integral, Daniell- 310.I
- Stone theorem 378.C 425.X 437.R
- Stone theorem, Weierstrass- 168.B
- Stone-Titchmarsh-Kodaira theory, Weyl- 112.O
- stopping, optimal 405.E
- stopping rule 398.F
- stopping time 261.B 407.B
- storage, push-down 96.E
- stored program principle 75.B
- Størmer inequality, Powers- 212.B
- straight angle 139.D
- straightening of the angle 114.F
- straight, G -space is 178.H
- straight line(s) 93.A 155.B
- straight line solution 420.B
- strain 271.G
- strain, shearing 271.G
- strain tensor 271.G
- strange attractor 126.N
- Strassen invariance principle 250.E
- strategic variable 264
- strategy (strategies) 33.F 108.B,C 173.C
 - behavior 173.B
 - local 173.B
 - mixed 173.C
 - pair 108.B
 - pure 173
 - winning 33.F
- stratifiable space 425.Y
- stratification, Whitney 418.G
- stratified sampling 373.E
- Stratonovich type
 - stochastic differential of 406.C
 - stochastic integral of 406.C
- stratum (strata) 373.E 418.G
 - μ -constant 418.E
- stream function 205.B
- streamlined (body) 205.C
- stream lines 205.B
- strength 102.L
- stress 271.G
 - normal 271.G
 - shearing 271.G
 - tangential 271.G
- stress tensor 150.B 271.G
 - Maxwell 130.A
- strict Albanese variety 16.P
- strict implication 411.L
- strict localization 16.AA
- strictly concave function 88.A
- strictly convex function 88.A
- strictly decreasing function 166.A
- strictly ergodic (homeomorphism on a compact metric space) 136.H
- strictly G -stationary (system of random variables) 395.I
- strictly increasing function 166.A
- strictly inductive limit (of a sequence of locally convex spaces) 424.W
- strictly monotone function 166.A
 - (of ordinal numbers) 312.C
- strictly of Pólya type (a family of probability densities) 374.J
- strictly positive (element in E^n) 310.H
- strictly pseudoconvex 344.A
- strictly stable process 5.F
- strictly stationary process 395.A
- strictly stationary random distribution 395.H
- strict morphism (between topological groups) 423.J
- string
 - α - 248.L
 - equation of a vibrating 325.A
- string model 132.C
- strip
 - bicharacteristic 320.B
 - characteristic 320.D 324.B
 - Möbius 410.B
- strip condition 320.D
- strong (boundary component) 77.E
- strong convergence (of operators) 251.C
- strong convergence theorem (on distributions) 125.G
- strong deformation retract 202.D
- strong dilation 251.M
- strong dual (space) 424.K
- stronger
 - (equivalence relation) 135.C
 - (method of summation) 379.L
 - (topology) 425.H
 - (uniformity) 436.E
- stronger form of Cauchy's integral theorem 198.B
- strong extension
 - (of a differential operator) 112.E
 - (of a differential operator with boundary condition) 112.F
- strong infinity, axiom of 33.E
- strong integrability 443.I
- strong lacuna 325.J
- strong law of large numbers 250.C
- strong Lefschetz theorem 16.U
- strongly, converge (in a Banach space) 37.B
- strongly acute type 304.C
- strongly closed subgroup 151.J
- strongly compact cardinal number 33.E
- strongly connected (graph) 186.F
- strongly connected components 186.F
- strongly continuous
 - (Banach space-valued function) 37.K
 - (in unitary representations) 437.A
- strongly continuous representation (of a topological space) 69.B
- strongly continuous semigroup 378.B
- strongly distinguished basis 418.F
- strongly elliptic (differential operator) 112.G
- strongly elliptic operator 323.H
- strongly embedded subgroup 151.J
- strongly exposed (of a convex set) 443.H
- strongly hyperbolic differential operator 325.H
- strongly inaccessible 33.F 312.E

Strongly inaccessible cardinal number

- strongly inaccessible cardinal number 33.E
- strongly measurable 443.B.I
- strongly mixing automorphism 136.E
- strongly nonlinear differential equation 290.D
- strongly normal extension field 113
- strongly P -convex set 112.C
- strongly paracompact space 425.S
- strongly pseudoconvex domain 21.G
- strongly recurrent (measurable transformation) 136.C
- strongly separated (convex sets) 89.A
- strongly stationary process 395.A
- strongly stationary random distribution 395.H
- strong Markov process 261.B
- strong Markov property 261.B
- strong maximum principle 323.C
- strong measurability 443.I
- strong operator topology 251.C
- strong rigidity theorem 122.G
- strong solution
 - (of Navier-Stokes equation) 204.C
 - (of a stochastic differential equation) 406.D
 - unique 406.D
- strong topology
 - (on a direct product space) 425.K
 - (on a family of measures) 338.E
 - (on a normed space) 37.E
 - (on a topological linear space) 424.K
- strong transversality condition 126.J
- structural constants (of a Lie algebra) 248.C
- structural equation system, linear 128.C
- structurally stable, C^r - 126.H
- structural stability 290.A
- structural stability theorem 126.J
- structure(s) 409
 - (of a language) 276.B
 - almost complex 72.B
 - almost contact 110.E
 - almost contact metric 110.E
 - almost symplectic 191.B
 - analytic (in function algebras) 164.F
 - analytic (on a Riemann surface) 367.A
 - arithmetically equivalent 276.D
 - Cauchy Riemann 344.A
 - CR 344.A
 - C^r - (of a differentiable manifold) 105.D 114.A
 - C^r -, Haefliger 154.F
 - classifying space for Γ_q 154.E
 - coalition 173.D
 - compatible with C^r - 114.B
 - complex 105.Y
 - complex (in a complex manifold) 72.A
 - complex (on \mathbf{R}^{2n}) 3.H
 - complex (on a Riemann surface) 367.A
 - complex analytic (in a complex manifold) 72.A
 - conformal 191.B
 - conformal (on a Riemann surface) 367.A
 - contact 105.Y
 - contact metric 110.E
 - data 96.B
 - deformation of complex 72.G
 - differentiable 114.B
 - differentiable, of class C^r 105.D
 - elementarily equivalent 276.D
 - equations (of a Euclidean space) 111.B
 - equations of (for relative components) 110.A
 - foliated 105.Y
 - G - 191
 - Γ - (on a differentiable manifold) 105.Y
 - Γ - (on a topological space) 90.D
 - Γ_q - 154.E
 - Γ_φ - 154.H
 - group of oriented differentiable (on a combinatorial sphere) 114.I
 - Hodge (of a vector space) 16.V
 - isomorphic 276.E
 - jumping of 72.G
 - lacunary (of a power series) 339.E
 - level n (on an Abelian variety) 3.N
 - linear 96.C
 - mathematical 409.B
 - mixed 16.V
 - Neyman 400.D
 - normal 276.D
 - normal analytic 386.C
 - PL 65.C
 - pseudogroup 105.Y
 - real analytic 105.D
 - smooth 114.B
 - spin- 237.F 431.D
 - statistical 396.E
 - symplectic 219.C
 - tensor field of almost complex (induced by a complex structure) 72.B
 - topological 425.A,B
 - tree 96.D
 - twinning 92.D
 - uniform 436.B
- structure equation
 - (of an affine connection) 417.B
 - (for a curvature form) 80.G
 - (for a torsion form) 80.H
 - linear, system 128.C
- structure function 191.C
- structure group (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
- structure morphism 52.G
- structure sheaf
 - (of a prealgebraic variety) 16.C
 - (of a ringed space) 383.H
 - (of a variety) 16.B
- structure space (of a Banach algebra) 36.D
- structure theorem
 - (on topological Abelian groups) 422.E
 - of complete local rings 284.D
 - for von Neumann algebras of type III 308.I
- Sturm-Liouville operator 112.I
- Sturm-Liouville problem 315.B
- Sturm method 301.C
- Sturm theorem (on real roots of an algebraic equation) 10.E
- Struve function App. A, Table 19.IV
- Student test 400.G
- subadditive cuts 215.C
- subadditive ergodic theorem 136.B
- subadditive functional 88.B
- subadditive process 136.B
- subalgebra 29.A
 - Borel (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.O
 - Cartan (of a Lie algebra) 248.I
 - Cartan (symmetric Riemann space) 413.F
 - closed (of a Banach algebra) 36.B
 - Lie 248.A
 - of a Lie algebra associated with a Lie subgroup 249.D
 - parabolic (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.O
 - *- 308.C
- subbase
 - for a space 425.F

- for a topology 425.F
- subbialgebra 203.G
- subbundle
 - (of an algebraic vector bundle) 16.Y
 - (of a vector bundle) 147.F
- subcategory 52.A
 - full 52.A
- subcoalgebra 203.F
- subcomplex
 - (of a cell complex) 70.D
 - (of a chain complex) 200.H 201.B
 - (of a cochain complex) 201.H
 - (of a complex) 13.R
 - (of a Euclidean complex) 70.B
 - (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (of an s.s. complex) 70.E
 - chain 200.C
 - cochain 200.F
- subcontraction 186.E
- subcritical (Galton-Watson process) 44.B
- subdifferential 88.D
- subdivision
 - (of a Euclidean complex) 70.B
 - (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (of a triangulation) 70.C
 - barycentric (of a Euclidean complex) 70.B
 - barycentric (of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - dual (of a triangulation of a homology manifold) 65.B
- subelliptic 112.D
- subfamily 165.D
- subfield 149.B
 - valuation over a 439.B,C
- subgraph 186.E
- subgroup
 - (of a group) 190.C
 - (of a topological group) 423.D
 - admissible 190.E
 - admissible normal 190.E
 - algebraic 13.A
 - arithmetic 13.P 122.F,G
 - Borel 13.G 249.J
 - Cartan 13.H 249.I
 - Carter 151.D
 - closed 423.D
 - commutator 190.H
 - congruence 122.D
 - connected Lie 249.D
 - cyclic 190.C
 - divisible 422.G
 - Hall 151.E
 - invariant 190.C
 - irreducible discrete 122.F
 - isotropy 431.A
 - Iwahori 13.R
 - k -Borel 13.G
 - Levi- 13.Q
 - Lie 249.D
 - maximal torsion 2.A
 - minimal parabolic k - 13.Q
 - normal 190.G
 - Ω - 190.E
 - one-parameter 249.Q
 - open 423.D
 - parabolic 13.G 249.J
 - parabolic 13.R
 - principal congruence, of level N 122.D
 - p -Sylow 151.B
 - rational 404.B
 - Schur 362.F
 - sequences of 190.F
 - stability 431.A
 - standard parabolic k - 13.Q
 - strongly closed 151.J
 - strongly embedded 151.J
 - subnormal 190.G
 - Sylow 151.B
 - toroidal 248.X
 - torsion 2.A,C
- subharmonic functions 193
 - almost 193.T
- subinvariant measure 261.F
- subjective probability 401.B
- sublattice 243.C
- submanifold
 - (of a Banach manifold) 286.N
 - (of a combinatorial manifold) 65.D
 - (of a C^∞ -manifold) 105.L
 - closed 105.L
 - complex analytic 72.A
 - immersed (of a Euclidean space) 111.A
 - isotropic 365.D
 - Kähler 365.L
 - minimal 275 365.D
 - regular 105.L
 - Riemannian 365.A
 - totally geodesic 365.D
 - totally real 365.M
 - totally umbilical 365.D
- submartingale 262.A
- submedian 193.T
- submersion 105.L
- submodular 66.F
- submodule
 - A - 277.C
 - allowed 277.C
 - complementary 277.H
 - homogeneous A - (of a graded A -module) 200.B
 - primary 284.A
- subnet 87.H
 - cofinal 87.H
- subnormal (operator in a Hilbert space) 251.K
- subnormal subgroup 190.G
- subobject 52.D
- subordinate 105.D 437.T
- subordination 5 261.F
 - of the α th order 261.F
- subordinator of the exponent α 5.F
- subproblems 215.D
- subrepresentation
 - (of a linear representation) 362.C
 - (of a projective representation) 362.J
 - (of a unitary representation) 437.C
- subring 368.E
 - differential 113
- subroutine 75.C
- subscripts, raising 417.D
- subsequence 165.D
 - φ - 354.D
- subset(s) 381.A
 - (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
 - analytic (of a complex manifold) 72.E
 - axiom of 33.B 381.G
 - Borel 270.C
 - circled (of a linear topological space) 424.E
 - cofinal 311.D
 - G - 362.B
 - k - 330
 - proper 381.A

residual 311.D
subshift 126.J
 of finite type 126.J
 Markov 126.J
subsidiary equation, Charpit 82.C 320.D
subsonic (Mach number) 205.B
subsonic flow 326.A
subspace
 (of an affine space) 7.A
 (of a linear space) 256.F
 (of a projective space) 343.B
 (of a topological space) 425.J
 analytic 23.C,G
 closed linear (of a Hilbert space) 197.E
 complementary (of a linear subspace) 256.F
 horizontal 191.C
 ingoing 375.H
 invariant (of a linear operator) 251.L
 involutive 428.F
 linear (of a linear space) 256.F
 metric 273.B
 n -particle 377.A
 orthogonal (determined by a linear subspace) 256.G
 orthogonal (of a linear space) 139.G
 outgoing 375.H
 precompact (metric) 273.B
 parallel (in an affine space) 7.B
 parallel, in the narrower sense (in an affine space) 7.B
 parallel, in the wider sense (in an affine space) 7.B
 principal (of a linear operator) 390.B
 root (of a linear operator) 390.B
 root (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.K
 singular (of a singular projective transformation) 343.D
 totally bounded (metric) 273.B
 totally isotropic (relative to an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
 totally isotropic (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
 totally singular (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
 U -invariant (of a representation space of a unitary representation) 437.C
 uniform 436.E
substituted distribution 125.Q
substitution
 (of a hyperfunction) 125.X 274.E
 axiom of 381.G
 back 302.B
 Frobenius (of a prime ideal) 14.K
subsystem
 (of an algebraic system) 409.C
 closed (of a root system) 13.L
subtraction 361.B
subtraction terms 361.B
subvariety, Abelian 3.B
successive approximation
 method of (for an elliptic partial differential equation) 323.D
 method of (for Fredholm integral equations of the second kind) 217.D
 method of (for ordinary differential equations) 316.D
successive minima (in a lattice) 182.C
successive minimum points 182.C
successive overrelaxation (SOR) 302.C
successor

(of an element in an ordered set) 311.B
(of a natural number) 294.B
sufficiency
 prediction 396.J
 principle of 401.C
sufficient (σ -field, statistic)
 Bayes 396.J
 D - 396.J
 decision theoretically 396.J
 minimal 396.E
 pairwise 396.F
 test 396.J
sufficiently many irreducible representations 437.B
sum
 (of convergent double series) 379.E
 (of a divergent series by a summation) 379.L
 (of elements of a group) 190.A
 (of elements of a linear space) 256.A
 (a function) 104.B
 (of ideals) 67.B
 (of linear operators) 251.B
 (of linear subspaces) 256.F
 (of matrices) 269.B
 (of ordinal numbers) 312.C
 (of potencies) 49.C
 (of real numbers) 355.A
 (of a quadrangular set of six points) 343.C
 (of a series) 379.A
 (of submodules) 277.B
 (= union of sets) 33.B 381.B
 (of vectors) 442.A
 amalgamated 52.G
 Baer (of extensions) 200.K
 cardinal (of a family of ordered sets) 311.F
 Cauchy (of a series) 379.A
 connected (of oriented compact C^∞ -manifolds) 114.F
 connected (of 3-manifolds) 65.E
 constant- (game) 173.A
 Darboux 216.A
 Dedekind 328.A
 diagonal (of a matrix) 269.F
 diagonal partial (of a double series) 379.E
 direct \rightarrow direct sum
 disjoint 381.B
 fiber 52.G
 Gaussian 295.D 450.C
 general- (game) 173.A
 indefinite (of a function) 104.B
 Kloosterman 32.C
 local Gaussian 450.F
 logical (of propositions) 411.B
 ordinal (of a family of ordered sets) 311.G
 orthogonality for a finite 19.G 317.D
 partial (of a series) 379.A
 of products 216.A
 Ramanujan 295.D
 Riemann 216.A
 scalar (of linear operators) 37.C
 over states 402.D
 topological 425.M
 trigonometric 4.C
 Whitney (of vector bundles) 147.F
 zero (game) 173.A
 zero-, two-person game 108.B
sum event 342.B
summable
 A - 379.N
 by Abel's method 379.N

- absolute Borel 379.O
- \mathfrak{B} - 379.O
- $|\mathfrak{B}|$ - 379.O
- by Borel's exponential method 379.O
- by Borel's integral method 379.O
- by Cesàro's method of order α 379.M
- by Euler's method 379.P
- by Hölder's method of order p 379.M
- (H, p) - 379.M
- by Nörlund's method 379.Q
- (R, k) - 379.S
- by Riesz's method of order k 379.R
- T - 379.L
- summable p th power, operator of 68.K
- summand, direct (of a direct sum of sets) 381.E
- summation
 - Abel's method of 379.N
 - Abel's partial 379.D
 - Borel's method of 379.N
 - (C, α) - 379.M
 - Cesàro's method of, of order α 379.M
 - Euler's method of 379.P
 - of a function 104.B
 - Lebesgue's method of 379.S
 - methods of 379.L
 - Nörlund's method of 379.Q
 - Riemann's method of 379.S
 - Riesz's method of, of the k th order 379.R
- summation convention, Einstein's 417.B
- summation formula
 - Euler 295.E
 - Poisson (on Fourier transforms) 192.C
 - Poisson (on a locally compact Abelian group) 192.L
- summing, absolutely (operator) 68.N
- sum theorem for dimension 117.C
- Sundman theorem 420.C
- sup (supremum) 311.B
- superabundance (of a divisor on an algebraic surface) 15.D
- superadditive 173.D
- superconductivity 130.B
- supercritical (Galton-Watson process) 44.B
- superefficient estimator 399.N
- superharmonic (function) 193.P 260.D
- superharmonic measure 260.I
- superharmonic transformation 261.F
- superior function, right 316.E
- superior limit
 - (of a sequence of real numbers) 87.C
 - (of a sequence of subsets of a set) 270.C
- superior limit event 342.B
- supermartingale 262.A
- supermultiplet theory 351.J
- superposition, principle of 252.B 322.C
- superregular function 260.D
- superrenormalizable 150.C
- superscripts, lowering 417.D
- superselection rule, univalence 351.K
- superselection sector 150.E 351.K
- supersolvable group 151.D
- supersonic 205.B 326.A
- supplementary angles 139.D
- supplementary interval 4.B
- supplementary series 258.C
- supplementation-equal polygons 155.F
- supplemented algebra 200.M
- support
 - (of a coherent sheaf) 16.E
 - (of a differential form) 105.Q
 - (of a distribution) 125.D
 - (of a function) 125.B 168.B 425.R
 - (of a section of a sheaf) 383.C
 - (of a spectral measure) 390.D
 - compact (of a singular q -cochain) 201.P
 - essential (of a distribution) 274.D
 - singular (of a distribution) 112.C
 - singular (of a hyperfunction) 125.W
- supporting function 125.O
- supporting functional (of a convex set) 89.G
- supporting half-space (of a convex set) 89.A
- supporting hyperplane (of a convex set) 89.A
- supporting line (of an oval) 89.C
- supporting line function (of an oval) 89.C
- supporting point
 - (of a convex set) 89.G
 - (of a projective frame) 343.C
- supremum
 - (of an ordered set) 168.B
 - (of a set of Hermitian operators) 308.A
 - (of a subset of a vector lattice) 310.C
 - essential (of a measurable function) 168.B
- supremum norm 168.B
- supremum theorem, Hardy-Littlewood App. A, Table 8
- sure event 342.B
- surely, almost 342.B,D
- surface(s) 111.A 410, App. A, Table 4.I
 - Abelian 15.H
 - abstract Riemann 367.A
 - affine minimal 110.C
 - algebraic 15
 - basic (of a covering surface) 367.B
 - with boundary 410.B
 - branched minimal 275.B
 - center 111.I
 - characteristic 320.B
 - circular cylindrical 350.B
 - closed 410.B
 - closed (in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space) 111.I
 - closed convex 111.I
 - conical 111.I
 - of constant curvature 111.I
 - covering 367.B
 - covering, Ahlfors theory of 367.B
 - covering, with relative boundary 367.B
 - cylindrical 111.I
 - deformation of 110.A
 - degenerate quadric 350.B
 - developable 111.I, App. A, Table 4.I
 - Dini 111.I
 - elliptic 72.K
 - elliptic cylindrical 350.B
 - energy 126.L 402.C,G
 - Enneper 275.B
 - Enriques 72.K
 - enveloping 111.I
 - equipotential 193.J
 - Fréchet 246.I
 - fundamental theorem of the theory of 111.G
 - fundamental theorem of the topology of 410.B
 - G - 178.H
 - of general type 72.K
 - geometry on a 111.G
 - helicoidal 111.I
 - Hilbert modular 15.H
 - Hirzebruch 15.G
 - Hopf 72.K
 - hyperbolic cylindrical 350.B

- hyperelliptic 72.K
- initial 321.A
- K^3 15.H 72.K
- Kummer 15.H
- level 193.J
- marked K^3 72.K
- minimal 111.I 334.B
- niveau 193.J
- one-sided 410.B
- open 410.B
- parabolic cylindrical 350.B
- proper quadric 350.B
- quadric 350.A
- quadric conical 350.B
- rational 15.E
- rectifying 111.I
- response 102.L
- response, design for exploring 102.M
- of revolution 111.I
- Riemann \rightarrow Riemann surface
- ruled 15.E
- ruled (in differential geometry) 111.I
- of the second class 350.D
- of the second order 350.A
- Scherk's 275.A
- Seifert 235.A
- skew 111.I
- special 110.A
- tangent 111.F
- two-sided 410.B
- unbounded covering 367.B
- unirational 15.H
- universal covering 367.B
- unramified covering 367.B
- Veronese 275.F
- W - 111.I
- Weingarten (W) 111.I
- surface area of unit hypersphere App. A, Table 9.V
- surface element 324.B
- surface harmonics 393.A
- surface integral 94.A,E
- (with respect to a surface element) 94.E
- surface wave 446
- surgery 114.F,J
- surgery obstruction 114.J
- surjection 381.C
- (in a category) 52.D
- canonical (on direct products of groups) 190.L
- canonical (to a factor group) 190.D
- canonical (onto a quotient set) 135.B
- natural (to a factor group) 190.D
- surjective mapping 381.C
- survival insurance 214.B
- susceptibility
- electric 130.B
- magnetic 130.B
- suspension
- (of a discrete dynamical system) 126.C
- (of a homotopy class) 202.Q
- (of a map) 202.F
- (of a space) 202.E,F
- n -fold reduced 202.F
- reduced (of a topological space) 202.F
- Suslin
- κ - 22.H
- schema of 22.B
- system of 22.B
- Suslin hypothesis 33.F
- Suslin space 22.I 425.CC
- Suslin theorem 22.C
- suspension isomorphism (on singular (co)homology groups) 201.E
- suspension theorem, generalized 202.T
- Suzuki group 151.I
- SVD (singular value decomposition) 302.E
- sweep (a bounded domain) 384.F
- sweepable (bounded domain) 384.F
- sweeping-out principle 338.L
- sweeping-out process 338.L
- sweep out (a measure to a compact set) 338.L
- Swinnerton-Dyer conjecture, Birch- 118.D 450.S
- Sylow subgroup 151.B
- p - 151.B
- Sylow theorem 151.B
- Sylvester elimination method 369.E
- Sylvester law of inertia (on a quadratic form) 348.B
- Sylvester theorem (on determinants) 103.F
- Symanzik equation, Callan- 361.B
- symbol 369.A
- (of a Fourier integral operator) 274.C
- (of a pseudodifferential operator) 251.O 345.B
- (= Steinberg symbol) 237.J
- (of a vector field) 105.M
- Artin 14.K
- Christoffel 80.L 111.H 417.D, App. A, Table 4.II
- function 411.H
- Gauss 83.A
- Hilbert ε - 411.J
- Hilbert-Hasse norm-residue 14.R
- Hilbert norm-residue 14.R
- individual 411.H
- Jacobi 297.I
- Jacobi, complementary law of 297.I
- Jacobi, law of quadratic reciprocity of 297.I
- Kronecker 347.D
- Landau (O, o) 87.G
- Legendre 297.H
- Legendre, first complementary law of 297.I
- Legendre, law of quadratic reciprocity of 297.I
- Legendre, second complementary law of 297.I
- logical 411.B
- $9j$ - 353.C
- norm-residue 14.Q 257.F
- power-residue 14.N
- predicate 411.H
- principal (of a differential operator) 237.H
- principal (of a microdifferential operator) 274.F
- principal (of a simple holonomic system) 274.H
- $6j$ - 353.B
- Steinberg (in algebraic K -theory) 237.J
- $3j$ - 353.B
- symbolic logic 411
- symbol sequence (in microlocal analysis) 274.F
- symmetric
- (block design) 102.E
- (factorial experiment) 102.H
- (Fock space) 377.A
- (member of a uniformity) 436.B
- (multilinear mapping) 256.H
- (relation) 358.A
- (tensor) 256.N
- symmetric algebra 29.H
- symmetric bilinear form (associated with a quadratic form) 348.A
- symmetric bounded domain 412.F
- irreducible 412.F
- symmetric Cauchy process 5.F

- symmetric difference 304.E
- symmetric distribution function 341.H
- symmetric event 342.G
- symmetric function 337.I
 - elementary 337.I
- symmetric group 190.B
 - of degree n 151.G
- symmetric Hermitian space 412.E
 - irreducible 412.E
- symmetric homogeneous space 412.B
- symmetric hyperbolic system (of partial differential equations) 325.G
- symmetric kernel 217.G 335.D
- symmetric law (in an equivalence relation) 135.A
- symmetric Markov process 261.C
- symmetric matrix 269.B
 - anti- 269.B
 - skew- 269.B
- symmetric multilinear form 256.H
 - anti- 256.H
 - skew- 256.H
- symmetric multilinear mapping 256.H
 - anti- 256.H
 - skew- 256.H
- symmetric multiplication 406.C
- symmetric operator 251.E
- symmetric points (with respect to a circle) 74.E
- symmetric polynomial 337.I
 - elementary 337.I
 - fundamental theorem on 337.I
- symmetric positive system
 - (of differential operators) 112.S
 - (of first-order linear partial differential equations) 326.D
- symmetric product (of a topological space) 70.F
- symmetric Riemannian homogeneous space 412.B
- symmetric Riemannian space(s) 412
 - globally 412.A
 - irreducible 412.C, App. A, Table 5.III
 - locally 412.A, App. A, Table 4.II
 - weakly 412.J
- symmetric space 412.A
 - affine 80.J
 - affine locally 80.J
 - locally 80.J 364.D
- symmetric stable process 5.F
- symmetric tensor 256.N
 - anti- 256.N
 - contravariant 256.N
 - covariant 256.N
 - skew- 256.N
- symmetric tensor field 105.O
- symmetrization
 - (in isoperimetric problem) 228.B
 - Steiner (in isoperimetric problem) 228.B
- symmetrizer 256.N
 - Young 362.H
- symmetry
 - (at a point of a Riemannian space) 412.A
 - (of a principal space) 139.B
 - (in quantum mechanics) 415.H
 - broken 132.C
 - central (of an affine space) 139.B
 - charge 415.J
 - crossing 132.C 386.B
 - degree of 431.D
 - hyperplanar (of an affine space) 139.B
 - internal 150.B
 - law of (for the Hilbert norm-residue symbol) 14.R
 - Nelson 150.F
 - TCP 386.B
- symmetry group, color 92.D
- symmorphic space group 92.B
- symmorphous space group 92.B
- symplectic form 126.L
- symplectic group 60.L 151.I
 - complex 60.L
 - infinite 202.V
 - over a field 60.L
 - over a noncommutative field 60.O
 - projective (over a field) 60.L
 - unitary 60.L
- symplectic manifold 219.C
- symplectic matrix 60.L
- symplectic structure 219.C
- symplectic transformation 60.L
 - (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
- symplectic transformation group (over a field) 60.L
- synchronous (system of circuits) 75.B
- syndrome 63.C
- synthesis (in the theory of networks) 282.C
 - spectral 36.L
- synthetic geometry 181
- system
 - adjoint (of a complete linear system on an algebraic surface) 15.D
 - adjoint, of differential equations 252.K
 - algebraic 409.B
 - algebraic, in the wider sense 409.B
 - ample linear 16.N
 - asynchronous (of circuits) 75.B
 - axiom 35
 - axiom (of a structure) 409.B
 - axiom (of a theory) 411.I
 - of axioms 35.B
 - base for the neighborhood 425.E
 - categorical (of axioms) 35.B
 - C*-dynamical 36.K
 - character (of a genus of a quadratic field) 347.F
 - characteristic linear (of an algebraic family) 15.F
 - Chebyshev (of functions) 336.B
 - classical dynamical 126.L 136.G
 - of closed sets 425.B
 - complete (of axioms) 35.B
 - complete (of independent linear partial differential equations) 324.C
 - complete (of inhomogeneous partial differential equations) 428.C
 - complete (of nonlinear partial differential equations) 428.C
 - complete linear (on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 - complete linear (on an algebraic variety) 16.N
 - complete linear, defined by a divisor 16.N
 - completely integrable (of independent 1-forms) 428.D
 - complete orthogonal 217.G
 - complete orthonormal 217.G
 - complete orthonormal, of fundamental functions 217.G
 - complete residue, modulo m 297.G
 - continuous dynamical 126.B
 - coordinate 90.A
 - coordinate (of a line in a projective space) 343.C
 - crystal 92.B
 - determined (of differential operators) 112.R

- determined (of partial differential equations) 320.F
- differentiable dynamical 126.B
- differential 191.I
- of differential equations of Maurer-Cartan 249.R
- of differential operators 112.R
- direct (of sets) 210.B
- discrete dynamical 126.B
- distinct, of parameters 284.D
- dynamical 126
- of equations 10.A
- equilibrium, transformation to 82.D
- formal 156.D 411.I
- of functional differential equations 163.E
- fundamental (of eigenfunctions to an eigenvalue for an integral equation) 217.F
- fundamental (for a linear difference equation) 104.D
- fundamental (of a root system) 13.J
- fundamental, of irreducible representations (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.W
- fundamental, of neighborhoods 425.E
- fundamental, of solutions (of a homogeneous linear ordinary differential equation) 252.B
- fundamental, of solutions (of a homogeneous system of first-order linear differential equations) 252.H
- fundamental root (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.N
- of fundamental solutions (of a system of linear homogeneous equations) 269.M
- Garnier 253.E
- of generators (of a A -module) 277.D
- of gravitational units 414.B
- group 235.B
- Haar, of orthogonal functions 317.C
- Hamiltonian 126.L
- holonomic 274.H
- holonomic, with regular singularities 274.H
- homotopy equivalent (of topological spaces) 202.F
- of hyperbolic differential equations (in the sense of Petrovskii) 325.G
- incompatible (of partial differential equations) 428.B
- inconsistent (of algebraic equations) 10.A
- indeterminate (of algebraic equations) 10.A
- inductive (in a category) 210.D
- inductive (of sets) 210.B
- inductive, of groups 210.C
- inductive, of topological spaces 210.C
- inertial 271.D 359
- information retrieval 96.F
- integrable 287.A
- international, of units 414.A
- inverse (of sets) 210.B
- involution \rightarrow involutory
- involutionary (of differential forms) 428.F
- involutionary (of nonlinear equations) 428.C
- involutionary (of partial differential equations) 428.F
- involutionary (of partial differential equations of first order) 324.D
- irreducible linear 16.N
- lattice spin 402.G
- linear (on an algebraic variety) 16.N
- of linear differential equations of first order 252.G
- linear dynamical 86.B
- of linear equations 269.M
- of linear homogeneous equations 269.M
- linear structural equation 128.C
- linear time-varying 86.B
- local, of groups (over a topological space) 201.R
- local coordinate (of a manifold) 105.C
- local coordinate (of a topological space) 90.D
- local coordinate, holomorphic 72.A
- mathematical (for a structure) 409.B
- maximal independent (of an additive group) 2.E
- neighborhood 425.B
- of notations (for ordinal numbers) 81.B
- null (in projective geometry) 343.D
- number, point range of (in projective geometry) 343.C
- of open sets 425.B
- operating 75.C
- of ordinary differential equations 313.B
- orthogonal (of functions) 317.A
- orthogonal (of a Hilbert space) 197.C
- of orthogonal functions App. A, Table 20
- of orthogonal polynomials 317.D
- overdetermined (of differential operators) 112.R
- overdetermined (of partial differential equations) 320.F
- of parameters 284.D
- partial de Rham 274.G
- of partial differential equations of order l (on a differentiable manifold) 428.F
- passive orthonomic (of partial differential equations) 428.B
- peripheral 235.B
- of Pfaffian equations 428.A
- polar (in projective geometry) 343.D
- Postnikov (of a CW complex) 148.D
- projective (in a category) 210.D
- projective (of sets) 210.B
- projective, of groups 210.C
- projective, of topological groups 423.K
- projective, of topological spaces 210.C
- quotient (of an algebraic system) 409.C
- Rademacher, of orthogonal functions 317.C
- reduced residue 297.G
- reducible linear 16.N
- regular, of parameters 284.D
- of resultants 369.E
- root (of a symmetric Riemann space) 413.F
- root (in a vector space over \mathbb{Q}) 13.J
- self-adjoint, of differential equations 252.K
- simple holonomic 274.H
- of simultaneous differential equations App. A, Table 14.I
- of Suslin 22.B
- symmetric positive (of differential operators) 112.S
- symmetric positive (of first-order linear partial differential equations) 326.D
- Tits 13.R 151.J 343.I
- of total differential equations 428.A
- of transitivity (of a G -set) 362.B
- trigonometric 159.A
- two-bin 227
- underdetermined (of differential operators) 112.R
- underdetermined (of partial differential equations) 320.F
- uniform covering 436.D

uniform family of neighborhoods 436.D
 uniform neighborhood 436.D
 unisolvent (of functions) 336.B
 of units 414.A
 very ample linear 16.N
 Walsh, of orthogonal functions 317.C
 system process 405.F
 system simulation 385.A
 syzygy 369.F
 first 369.F
 r th 369.F
 syzygy theorem, Hilbert 369.F
 syzygy theory 200.K 369.F
 Szegő kernel function 188.H
 Szemerédi theorem, ergodic 136.C
 Sz.-Nagy-Foiaş model 251.N

T

τ -function 150.D
 t -distribution 341.D 374.B, App. A, Table 22
 noncentral 374.B
 t -statistic 374.B
 t -test 400.G
 T -bound 331.B
 T -bounded 331.B
 T -compact 68.F 331.B
 T -operator 375.C
 T^2 -statistic
 Hotelling's 280.B
 noncentral Hotelling 374.C
 T -number (transcendental number) 430.C
 T^* -number (transcendental number) 430.C
 T_0 -space 425.Q
 T_1 -space 425.Q
 T_2 -space 425.Q
 T_3 -space 425.Q
 T_4 -space 425.Q
 T_5 -space 425.Q
 T_6 -space 425.Q
 T -positivity 150.F
 T -set 308.I
 T -summable (series) 379.L
 T_1 -uniformity 436.C
 T_1 -uniform space 436.C
 T_2 -topological group 423.B
 table
 analysis-of-variance 400.H
 contingency 397.K 400.K
 difference 223.C
 k -way contingency 397.K
 Padé 142.E
 tableau, simplex 255.C
 table look-up 96.C
 tail event 342.G
 tail σ -algebra 342.G
 Tait algorithm 157.C
 Tait coloring 157.C
 Takagi, Teiji 415
 Takesaki, duality theorem of 308.J
 Takesaki theory, Tomita- 308.H
 Tamagawa number (of an algebraic group) 13.P
 Tamagawa zeta function 450.L
 Tamano product theorem 425.X
 tame (knot) 235.A
 tan (=tangent) 131.E
 \tan^{-1} 131.E
 Tanaka embedding 384.D
 tangent 432.A
 (of pressure) 402.G

Subject Index

Teichmüller space

asymptotic 110.B
 Darboux 110.B
 hyperbolic 131.F
 law of App. A, Table 2.III
 tangent bundle
 (of a Banach manifold) 286.K
 (of a differentiable manifold) 105.H 147.F
 (of a foliation) 154.B
 tangent hyperplane (of a quadric hypersurface) 343.E
 tangential polar coordinates 90.C
 tangential sphere bundle 274.E
 tangential stress 271.G
 tangent line 93.G 111.C, F, App. A, Table 4.I
 oriented 76.B
 tangent orthogonal n -frame bundle 364.A
 tangent plane 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 tangent PL microbundle 147.P
 tangent r -frame(s) 105.H
 bundle of 105.H
 tangent r -frame bundle 147.F
 tangent space 105.H
 tangent sphere bundle, unit 126.L
 tangent surface 111.F
 tangent vector 105.H
 holomorphic 72.A
 of type (0, 1) 72.C
 of type (1, 0) 72.C
 tangent vector bundle 105.H 147.F
 tangent vector space 105.H
 tanh (hyperbolic tangent) 131.F
 Taniyama-Weil conjecture 450.S
 Tannaka duality theorem 69.D 249.U
 target (of a jet) 105.X
 target variable 264
 Tate cohomology 200.N
 Tate conjecture 450.S
 Tate-Shafarevich group 118.D
 Tate theorem 59.H
 Tauberian theorem 121.D 339.B
 generalized 36.L 160.G
 generalized, of Wiener 192.D
 Tauberian type, theorem of 339.B
 Tauber theorem 339.B
 tautochrone 93.H
 tautological line bundle 16.E
 tautology 411.E
 Taylor expansion
 (of an analytic function of many variables) 21.B
 (of a holomorphic function of one variable) 339.A
 formal 58.C
 Taylor expansion and remainder App. A, Table 9.IV
 Taylor formula App. A, Table 9.IV
 (for a function of many variables) 106.J
 (for a function of one variable) 106.E
 Taylor series 339.A
 Taylor theorem (in a Banach space) 286.F
 TCP invariance 386.B
 TCP operator 150.D
 TCP symmetry 386.B
 TCP theorem 386.B
 technique, program evaluation and review 376
 TE wave 130.B
 Teichmüller mapping 352.C
 Teichmüller metric 416
 Teichmüller space 416
 universal 416

- telegraph equation 325.A, App. A, Table 15.III
- temperature (of states) 419.A
 - absolute 419.A
- tempered distribution 125.N
- temporally homogeneous
 - (additive process) 5.B
 - (Markov process) 261.A
- TEM wave 130.B
- tension 281.B
 - modulus of elasticity in 271.G
- tension field 195.B
- tensor
 - alternating 256.N
 - angular momentum 258.D
 - antisymmetric 256.N
 - conformal curvature App. A, Table 4.II
 - contracted 256.L
 - contravariant, of degree p 256.J
 - correlation 433.C
 - covariant, of degree q 256.J
 - curvature 80.J, L 364.D 417.B
 - energy-momentum 150.B 359.D
 - energy spectrum 433.C
 - fundamental (of a Finsler space) 152.C
 - fundamental (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.A
 - Green 188.E
 - irreducible, of rank k 353.C
 - Maxwell stress 130.A
 - mixed 256.J
 - Nijenhuis 72.B
 - numerical App. A, Table 4.II
 - projective curvature App. A, Table 4.II
 - Ricci 364.D, App. A, Table 4.II
 - second fundamental 417.F
 - skew-symmetric 256.N
 - strain 271.G
 - stress 150.B 271.G
 - symmetric 256.N
 - torsion App. A, Table 4.II
 - torsion (of an affine connection) 80.J 417.B
 - torsion (of an almost contact structure) 110.E
 - torsion (of a Fréchet manifold) 286.L
 - torsion (of a Riemannian connection) 80.L
 - of type (p, q) 256.J
 - Weyl's conformal curvature 80.P
- tensor algebra
 - (on a linear space) 256.K
 - contravariant 256.K
- tensor bundle (of a differentiable manifold) 147.F
- tensor calculus 417, App. A, Table 4.II
- tensor field 105.O
 - of almost complex structure (induced by a complex structure) 72.B
 - alternating 105.O
 - of class C^r 105.O
 - contravariant, of order r 105.O
 - covariant, of order s 105.O
 - covariant derivative of (in the direction of a tangent vector) 80.I
 - left invariant (on a Lie group) 249.A
 - parallel 364.B
 - random 395.I
 - right invariant (on a Lie group) 249.A
 - symmetric 105.O
 - of type (r, s) 105.O
 - of type (r, s) with value in E 417.E
- tensorial form 80.G
- tensorial p -form 417.C
- tensor product
 - (of A -homomorphisms) 277.J
 - (of algebras) 29.A
 - (of A -modules) 277.J
 - (of chain complexes) 201.J
 - (of cochain complexes) 201.J
 - (of distributions) 125.K
 - (of Hilbert spaces) 308.C
 - (of linear mappings) 256.I
 - (of linear representations) 362.C
 - (of linear spaces) 256.I
 - (of locally convex spaces) 424.R
 - (of sheaves) 383.I
 - (of vector bundles) 147.F
 - (of von Neumann algebras) 308.C
 - continuous 377.D
 - ε 424.R
 - projective C^* - 36.H
 - spatial 36.H
- tensor representation (of a general linear group) 256.M
- tensor space
 - of degree k 256.J
 - of type (p, q) 256.J
- term
 - (of a language) 276.A
 - (of a polynomial) 337.B
 - (in predicate logic) 411.H
 - (of a sequence) 165.D
 - (of a series) 379.A
 - base (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
 - closed (of a language) 276.A
 - constant (of a formal power series) 370.A
 - constant (of a polynomial) 337.B
 - error 403.D
 - fiber (of a spectral sequence) 200.J
 - initial (of an infinite continued fraction) 83.A
 - n th (of sequence) 165.D
 - penalty 440.B
 - subtraction 111.B
 - undefined 35.B
- terminal decision rule 398.F
- terminal point
 - (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
 - (in a Markov process) 261.B
 - (of a path) 170
 - (of a vector) 442.A
- terminal time 261.B
- terminal vertex 186.B
- termwise differentiable (infinite series with function terms) 379.H
- termwise differentiation, theorem of (on distributions) 125.G
- termwise integrable (series) 216.B
- ternary set 79.D
- Terry model, Bradley- 346.C
- Terry normal score test, Fisher-Yates- 371.C
- tertiary obstruction 305.D
- tertium non datur 156.C
- tesseral harmonics 393.D
- test 400.A
 - Abel 379.D
 - almost invariant 400.E
 - Cauchy condensation 379.B
 - Cauchy integral 379.B
 - chi-square 400.G
 - chi-square, of goodness of fit 400.K
 - comparison 379.B
 - consistent 400.K
 - Dini (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B

Dini-Lipschitz (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
 Dirichlet (on Abel's partial summation) 379.D
 Dirichlet (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
 of du Bois-Reymond and Dedekind 379.D
 duo-trio 346.D
F- 400.G
 Fisher-Yates-Terry normal score 371.C
 goodness-of-fit 397.Q 401.E
 invariant 400.E
 Jordan (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
 Kolmogorov 45.F
 Kolmogorov-Smirnov 371.F
 Kruskal-Wallis 371.D
 Lebesgue (on the convergence of Fourier series) 159.B
 Leibniz (for convergence) 379.C
 level α 400.A
 likelihood ratio 400.I
 Mann-Whitney *U*- 371.C
 minimax level α 400.F
 most powerful 400.A
 most stringent level α 400.F
 nonparametric 371.A
 nonrandomized 400.A
 outlier 397.Q
 pair 346.D
 randomized 400.A
 sensory 346.B
 sequential 400.L
 sequential probability ratio 400.L
 sign 371.B
 signed rank 371.B
 similar 400.D
 Student 400.G
t- 400.G
 triangle 346.D
 UMP unbiased level α 400.C
 UMP in variant level α 400.E
 unbiased level α 400.C
 uniformly consistent 400.K
 uniformly most powerful (UMP) 400.A
 uniformly most powerful invariant level α 400.E
 uniformly most powerful unbiased level α 400.C
 van der Waerden, 371.C
 Welch 400.G
 Wiener (for Brownian motion) 45.D
 Wiener (for Dirichlet problem) 338.G
 Wiener (for random walk) 260.E
 Wilcoxon 371.C
 Wilcoxon signed rank 371.B
 test channel 213.E
 test function 400.A
 test function space 125.S
 testing
 hypothesis 401.C
 statistical hypothesis 400
 test statistics, Kolmogorov-Smirnov 374.E
 test sufficient (σ -field) 396.J
 tetracyclic coordinates 90.B
 tetragamma function 174.B
 tetragonal (system) 92.E
 tetrahedral group 151.G
 tetrahedron 7.D 357.B
 polar 350.C
 self-polar 350.C

TE waves 130.B
 Theodorsen function 39.E
 theorem(s) \rightarrow also specific theorems
 of angular momentum 271.E
 Brouwer's, on the invariance of domain 117.D
 of coding 273.D-F
 on complete form 356.H
 of completeness (in geometry) 155.B
 cup product reduction 200.M
 fundamental \rightarrow fundamental theorem(s)
 of identity 21.C
 invariance, of analytic relations 198.K
 on invariance of dimension of Euclidean spaces 117.D
 kernel 125.L 424.S
 of linear ordering (in geometry) 155.B
 local limit 250.B
 of momentum 271.E
 product, for dimension 117.C
 of quasiconformal reflection 352.C
 structure, for von Neumann algebras of type III 308.I
 of Tauberian type 339.B
 of termwise differentiation (of distributions) 125.G
 translation (in class field theory) 59.C
 translation representation 375.H
 transversality 105.L
 triangle comparison 178.A
 Tucker's, on complementary slackness 255.B
 unicursal graph (Euler's) 186.F
 Weierstrass's, of double series 379.H
 Theorem A 21.L 72.E,F
 Theorem B 21.L 72.E,F
 theoretical formula 19.F
 theory
 Ahlfors's, of covering surfaces 272.J 367.B
 of buildings 343.I
 of calculus of variations, classical 46.C
 Cantor's, of real numbers 294.E
 class field 59
 classification, of Riemann surfaces 367.E
 combinatorial 66.A
 complete cohomology 200.N
 constructive field 150.F
 Dedekind's, of real numbers 294.E
 de Rham homotopy 114.L
 dimension 117
 of elasticity 271.G
 of electromagnetic waves 130.B
 of errors 138.A
 Euclidean field 150.F
 Euclidean Markov field 150.F
 exact sampling 401.F
 finite-displacement (of elasticity) 271.G
 of functions 198.Q
 of functions of a complex variable 198.Q
 Galois 172
 Galois, of differential fields 113
 game 173
 of gases, kinetic 402.B
 graph 186
 Haag-Ruelle scattering 150.D
 hidden variables 351.L
 hydromagnetic dynamo 259
 information 213
 Kaluza's 5-dimensional 434.C
 large sample 401.E
 lattice gauge 150.G
 Littlewood-Paley 168.B

- local class field 59.G
- Lyusternik-Shnirel'man 286.Q
- Minkowski reduction (on fundamental regions) 122.E
- Morse 279
- Morse, fundamental theorems of 279.D
- Nevanlinna (of meromorphic functions) 124.B 272.B
- nonsymmetric unified field 434.C
- number, analytic 296.B
- number, elementary 297
- number, geometric 296.B
- of perturbations, general 420.E
- of perturbations, special 420.E
- Peter-Weyl (on compact groups) 69.B
- Peter-Weyl (on compact Lie groups) 249.U
- Picard-Vessiot 113
- of plasticity 271.G
- prediction 395.D
- prediction, linear 395.D
- of probability 342.A
- proof 156.D
- quantum field 150.C
- ramified type 411.K
- realization 86.D
- of relativity, general 359.A
- of relativity, special 359.A
- risk 214.C
- risk, classical 214.C
- risk, collective 214.C
- risk, individual 214.C
- Serre \mathcal{C} - 202.N
- set 381.F (\rightarrow also set theory)
- of singularities 418
- slender body 205.B
- small-displacement, of elasticity 271.G
- S-matrix 386.C
- supermultiplet, Wigner's 351.J
- syzygy 200.K
- thin wing 205.B
- Tomita-Takesaki 308.H
- type 411.K
- unified field 434.A
- unitary field 434.C
- thermal contact 419.A
- thermal expansion, coefficient of 419.A
- thermal noise 402.K
- thermodynamical quantity 419.A
 - extensive 419.A
 - intensive 419.A
- thermodynamic limit 402.G
- thermodynamics 419
 - first law of 419.A
 - second law of 419.A
 - statistical 402.A
 - third law of 419.A
 - 0th law of 419.A
- theta formula (on ideles) 6.F
- theta-Fuchsian series of Poincaré 32.B
- theta function 134.I
 - (on a complex torus) 3.I
 - elliptic 134.I, App. A, Table 16.II
 - graded ring of 3.N
 - Jacobian 134.C
 - nondegenerate 3.I
 - Riemann 3.L
- theta series 348.L
- thick (chamber complex) 13.R
- thickness (of an oval) 89.C
- thin (chamber complex) 13.R
- thin set
 - (in Markov processes) 261.D
 - (in potential theory) 338.G
 - analytically (in an analytic space) 23.D
 - internally 338.G
- thin wing theory 205.B
- third boundary value problem 193.F 323.F
- third classification theorem (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
- third extension theorem (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
- third fundamental form App. A, Table 4.I
- third homotopy theorem (in the theory of obstructions) 305.C
- third isomorphism theorem (on topological groups) 423.J
- third kind
 - Abelian differential of 11.C
 - Abelian integral of 11.C
- third law of thermodynamics 419.A
- third-order predicate logic 411.K
- third quartiles 396.C
- third separation axiom 425.Q
- Thom algebra 114.H
- Thom complex 114.G
 - associated with (G, n) 114.G
- Thom first isotropy theorem 418.G
- Thom fundamental theorem 114.H
- Thom-Gysin isomorphism 114.G
 - (on a fiber space) 148.E
- Thompson inequality, Golden- 212.B
- Thompson theorem, Feit- (on finite groups) 151.D
- Thom space 114.G
- Thom spectrum, stable homotopy group of 114.G 202.T
- Thorin theorem, Riesz- 224.A
- thorn (of a convergence domain) 21.B
- three big problems 187
- three-body problem 420.A
 - restricted 420.F
- three-circle theorem, Hadamard 43.E
- 3j-symbol 353.B
- three laws of motion, Newton's 271.A
- three-line theorem, Doetsch 43.E
- three-stage least squares method 128.C
- three-valued logic 411.L
- three principles, Fisher's 102.A
- three-series theorem 342.D
- threshold Jacobi method 298.B
- Thue problem 31.B
- Thue theorem 118.D
- Thullen theorem, Cartan- 21.H
- Thurstone-Mosteller model 346.C
- tieset 186.G
- tieset matrix, fundamental 186.G
- Tietze extension theorem 425.Q
- Tietze first axiom 425.Q
- Tietze second axiom 425.Q
- tight family (of probability measures) 341.F
- tight immersion 365.O
- tightness 399.M
- Tikhonov embedding theorem 425.T
- Tikhonov fixed-point theorem 153.D
- Tikhonov product theorem 425.S
- Tikhonov separation axiom 425.Q
- Tikhonov space 425.Q
- Tikhonov theorem 425.Q
 - Uryson- (on metrizability) 273.K
- Tikhonov-Uryson theorem 425.Q
- time

- exit 261.B
- explosion 406.D
- first splitting 44.E
- hitting 260.B 261.B 407.B
- killing 260.A
- life 260.A 261.B
- local 45.G
- Markov 261.B 407.B
- NP- 71.E
- polynomial 71.E
- proper 258.A
- real- 19.E
- recurrence 260.C
- sojourn, density 45.G
- stopping 261.B 407.B
- terminal 261.B
- waiting 260.H
- waiting, distribution 307.C
- time change
 - (of a Markov process) 261.B
 - (of a semimartingale) 406.B
 - (of a submartingale) 262.C
- time complexity 71.A
- time-dependent Schrödinger equation 351.D
- time-homogeneous Markovian type 406.D
- time-independent Markovian type 406.D
- time-independent Schrödinger equation 351.D
- time-invariant, linear (dynamical systems) 86.B
- time-invariant network 282.C
- timelike
 - (curve) 325.A
 - (vector of a Minkowski space) 258.A 359.B
- time-one mapping (map) 126.C
- time optimal control problem 86.F
- time ordered function 150.D
- time parameter (of a stochastic process) 407.A
- time parameter space 260.A
- time reversal 258.A 359.B
- time series 397.A 421.A
- time series analysis 421
- time series data 397.N
- time-varying system, linear 86.B
- Tissot-Pochhammer differential equation 206.C
- Titchmarsh-Kodaira theory, Weyl- Stone- 112.O
- Titchmarsh theorem 306.B
 - Brun- 123.D
- Tits simple group 151.I
- Tits system 13.R 151.J 343.I
- TM waves 130.B
- Toda bracket 202.R
- Toda lattice 287.A 387.A
- Todd characteristic 366.B
- Todd class (of a complex vector bundle) 237.F
- Toeplitz operator 251.O
- Toeplitz theorem 379.L
- tolerance interval 399.R
- tolerance limits 399.R
- tolerance percent defective, lot 404.C
- tolerance region 399.R
- Tomita-Takesaki theory 308.H
- Tonelli
 - absolutely continuous in the sense of 246.C
 - bounded variation in the sense of 246.C
- topological Abelian group(s) 422
 - dual 422.C
 - elementary 422.E
- topological conjugacy 126.B
- topological entropy 126.K 136.H
- topological equivalence 126.B
- topological field 423.P
- topological generator (of a compact Abelian group) 136.D
- topological group(s) 423
 - completable 423.H
 - complete 423.H
 - Hausdorff 423.B
 - homomorphic 423.J
 - isomorphic 423.A
 - locally isomorphic 423.O
 - metrizable 423.I
 - separated 423.B
 - T_2 - 423.B
- topological groupoid 154.C
- topological index (of an elliptic complex) 237.H
- topological invariance (of homology groups) 201.A
- topological invariant 425.G
- topological linear spaces 424
- topologically complete space 436.I
- topologically conjugate 126.B
- topologically equivalent 126.B,H
- topological manifold 105.B
 - with boundary 105.B
 - without boundary 105.B
- topological mapping 425.G
- topological n -cell 140
- topological pair 201.L
- topological polyhedron 65.A
- topological pressure 136.H
- topological property 425.G
- topological ring 423.P
- topological σ -algebra 270.C
- topological solid sphere 140
- topological space(s) 425
 - category of 52.B
 - category of pointed 202.B
 - complex linear 424.A
 - discrete 425.C
 - generalized 425.D
 - homotopy category of 52.B
 - inductive system of 210.C
 - linear 424.A
 - metrizable 273.K
 - product 425.K
 - projective system of 210.C
 - quotient 425.L
 - real linear 424.A
 - underlying (of a complex manifold) 72.A
 - underlying (of a differentiable manifold) 105.D
 - underlying (of a topological group) 423.A
 - uniform 436.C
 - uniformizable 436.H
- topological sphere 140
- topological structure 425.A,B
- topological sum 425.M
- topological transformation group 431.A
- topological vector space 424.A
- topology 425.B 426
 - α -adic (of an R -module) 284.B
 - algebraic 426
 - base for a 425.F
 - of biquicontinuous convergence 424.R
 - box 425.K
 - coarser 425.H
 - combinatorial 426
 - compact-open 279.C 435.D
 - compact-open C^∞ 279.C
 - differential 114
 - discrete 425.C
 - étale 16.AA
 - fine (on a class of measures) 261.D 338.E

Topology ε

- finer 425.H
- Gel'fand 36.E
- general 426
- Grothendieck 16.AA
- hereditarily weak 425.M
- hull-kernel 36.D
- I -adic (of a ring) 16.X
- indiscrete 425.C
- induced 425.I
- induced by a mapping 425.I
- inner (of a Lie subgroup) 249.E
- Jacobson 36.D
- Krull (for an infinite Galois group) 172.I
- larger 425.H
- leaf 154.D
- of Lie groups and homogeneous spaces 427
- linear 422.L
- Mackey 424.N
- metric 425.C
- order 425.C
- PL 65.A
- product 425.K
- projective 424.R
- quotient 425.L
- relative 425.J
- S - (on a linear space) 424.K
- Sazonov 341.J
- set-theoretic 426
- σ -weak 308.B
- smaller 425.H
- strong (on a class of measures) 338.E
- strong (on a direct product space) 425.K
- strong (on a normed space) 37.E
- strong (on a topological linear space) 424.K
- stronger 425.H
- strong operator 251.C
- subbase for a 425.F
- of surfaces, fundamental theorem of 410.B
- trivial 425.C
- uniform 436.C
- of uniform convergence 424.K
- of the uniformity 436.C
- uniformizable 436.H
- uniform operator 251.C
- vague (on a class of measures) 338.E
- weak (in a cell complex) 70.D
- weak (on a class of measures) 338.E
- weak (on a direct product space) 425.K
- weak (on a direct sum) 425.M
- weak (on a locally convex space) 424.H
- weak (on a normed linear space) 37.E
- weak, relative to the pairing $\langle E, F \rangle$ 424.H
- weak C^∞ 279.C
- weaker 425.H
- weak operator 251.C
- weak* (on a locally convex space) 424.H
- weak* (on a normed space) 37.E
- Zariski (of a spectrum) 16.D
- Zariski (of a variety) 16.A
- topology ε (on the tensor product of locally convex spaces) 424.R
- topology π (on the tensor product of locally convex spaces) 424.R
- Tor 200.D
 - exact sequence of 200.D
- $\text{Tor}_n^R(A, B)$ 200.K
- $\text{Tor}_n^R(M, N)$ 200.D
- Torelli theorem 9.E, 11.C
- Tor groups 200.D
- toric variety 16.Z
- toroidal coordinates App. A, Table 3.V
- toroidal embedding 16.Z
- toroidal subgroup, maximal (of a compact Lie group) 248.X
- torsion
 - (of a curve of class C^n) 111.D
 - affine 110.C
 - analytic 391.M
 - conformal 110.D
 - radius of (of a space curve) 111.F
 - Whitehead 65.C
- torsion A -module 277.D
- torsion Abelian group 2.A
 - bounded 2.F
- torsion coefficients (of a complex) 201.B
- torsion element (of an A -module) 277.D
- torsion form 80.H
- torsion-free A -module 277.D
- torsion-free Abelian group 2.A
- torsion group 2.A
 - (of a complex) 201.B
- torsion product
 - (in a category) 200.K
 - (of A -modules) 200.D
- torsion subgroup
 - (of an Abelian group) 2.C
 - maximal 2.A
- torsion tensor App. A, Table 4.II
 - (of an affine connection) 80.J, L 417.B
 - (of an almost contact structure) 110.E
 - (of a Fréchet manifold) 286.L
- torus
 - (algebraic group) 13.D
 - (compact group) 422.E
 - (surface) 111.I 410.B
 - algebraic 13.D
 - Clifford 275.F
 - complex 3.H
 - generalized Clifford 275.F
 - invariant 126.L
 - K -split 13.D
 - K -trivial 13.D
 - maximal (of a compact Lie group) 248.X
 - maximal K -split 13.Q
 - n - 422.E
- torus embedding 16.Z
- torus function App. A, Table 18.III
- torus group 422.E
- total (set of functions) 317.A
- total boundary operator 200.E
- total Chern class 56.C
- total cross section 386.B
- total curvature
 - (of an immersion) 365.O
 - (of a space curve) 111.F
 - (of a surface) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
 - Gaussian 111.H
- total degree 200.J
- total differential
 - (of a complex) 200.H
 - (of a function) 106.G
 - (on a Riemann surface) 367.H
- total differential equation(s) 428, App. A, Table 15.I
- system of 428.A
- total elastic cross section 386.B
- total energy 271.C
- total excess 178.H
- total Gaussian curvature (of a surface) 111.H
- total isotropy, index of (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E

- totally bounded
 - (metric space) 273.B
 - (subset of a metric space) 273.B
 - (subset of a uniform space) 436.H
 - (uniform space) 436.H
 - locally 436.H
- totally definite quaternion algebra 27.D
- totally degenerate (group) 234.B
- totally differentiable
 - (complex function) 21.C
 - (real function) 106.G
- totally disconnected (topological space) 79.D
- totally geodesic submanifold 365.D
- totally imaginary field 14.F
- totally isotropic (subspace) 60.O 348.E
- totally ordered additive group 439.B
- totally ordered group 243.G
- totally ordered set 311.A
- totally positive (element) 14.G
- totally real field 14.F
- totally real immersion 365.M
- totally real submanifold 365.M
- totally regular transformation (of a sequence) 379.L
- totally singular (subspace) (with respect to a quadratic form) 348.E
- totally umbilical submanifold 365.D
- totally unimodular 186.G
- total matrix algebra 269.B
- total mean curvature 365.O
- total monodromy group 418.F
- total ordering 311.A
- total Pontryagin class 56.D
- total quotients, ring of 67.G
- total space
 - (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 - (of a fiber space) 148.B
- total Stiefel-Whitney class 56.B
- total transform (of a subvariety) 16.I
- total variation
 - (of a function) 166.B
 - (of a mapping from a plane into a plane) 246.H
 - (of a set function) 380.B
 - (of a vector measure) 443.G
- tower, class field (problem) 59.F
- trace
 - (of an algebraic element) 149.J
 - (of an element of a general Cayley algebra) 54
 - (of a linear system of an algebraic surface) 15.C
 - (of a matrix) 269.F
 - (of a nuclear operator) 68.L
 - (in a von Neumann algebra) 308.D
 - reduced (of an algebra) 362.E
- trace class 68.I
- traced, β - 126.J
- trace form, ε - 60.O
- trace formula (on unitary representations) 437.DD
- trace norm 68.I
- trace operator 168.B
- tracing property, pseudo-orbit 126.J
- tractrix 93.H
- traffic intensity 260.H
- trajectory 126.B,C
 - negative half- 126.D
 - orthogonal 193.J
 - positive half- 126.D
- transcendence basis (of a field extension) 149.K
- transcendence basis, separating (of field extension) 149.K
- transcendence degree (of a field extension) 149.K
- transcendency, degree of (of a field extension) 149.K
- transcendental curve 93.H
- transcendental element (of a field) 149.E
- transcendental entire functions 429
- transcendental extension 149.E
 - purely 149.K
- transcendental function
 - higher 389.A
 - of Painlevé 288.C
- transcendental meromorphic function 272.A
- transcendental numbers 430
- transcendental singularity (of an analytic function in the wider sense), direct, indirect 198.P
- transfer (in group theory) 190.O
- transfer function 86.D
- transfer function matrix 86.B
- transferrer of constant lengths 155.G
- transfinite cardinal number 49.A
- transfinite diameter 48.D
- transfinite induction
 - (in a well-ordered set) 311.C
 - definition by 311.C
- transfinite initial ordinal number 49.E
- transfinite logical choice function 411.J
- transfinite ordinal number 312.B
- transform
 - (of a sequence by a linear transformation) 379.L
 - Cauchy (of a measure) 164.J
 - Cayley (of a closed symmetric operator) 251.I
 - discrete Fourier 142.D
 - fast Fourier 142.D
 - Fourier 160, App. A, Table 11.II
 - Fourier (of a distribution) 125.O
 - Fourier (in topological Abelian groups) 36.L 192.I
 - Fourier, generalized 220.B
 - Fourier, inverse (of a distribution) 125.O
 - Fourier, spherical 437.Z
 - Fourier-Bessel 39.D
 - Fourier cosine 160.C, App. A, Table 11.II
 - Fourier-Laplace 192.F
 - Fourier sine 160.C, App. A, Table 11.II
 - Fourier-Stieltjes 192.B,O
 - Gelfand 36.E
 - Hankel 220.B
 - Hilbert 160.D 220.E
 - integral 220
 - inverse (of an integral transform) 220.A
 - Klein 150.D
 - k th 160.F
 - Laplace 240, App. A, Table 12.I
 - Laplace-Stieltjes 240.A
 - Legendre 419.C
 - Mellin 220.C
 - proper (of a subvariety) 16.I
 - Radon 218.F
 - Radon, conjugate 218.F
 - real monoidal 274.E
 - Riesz 251.O
 - Stieltjes 220.D
 - total (of a subvariety) 16.I
 - Watson 160.C 220.B
- transformable, polynomially 71.E
- transformation(s) 381.C
 - (on a measure space) 136.D

Transformation formula

- affine 7.E
- affine (of a manifold with an affine connection) 80.J
- affine (of a Riemannian manifold) 364.F
- affine, group of 7.E
- affine, proper 7.E
- affine, regular 7.E
- Ampère 82.A
- angular 374.D
- arc sine 374.D
- bimeasurable (on a measure space) 136.B
- birational 16.I
- BRS 150.G
- canonical 82.B 271.F
- canonical, group of 271.F
- Cayley (of a matrix) 269.J
- chain (between complexes) 200.H
- conformal 80.P 364.F
- congruent (in Euclidean geometry) 139.B
- congruent, group of 285.C
- contact 82, App. A, Table 15.IV
- coordinate (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
- coordinate (of a locally free \mathcal{O}_X -Module) 16.E
- covering 91.A 367.B
- Cremona 16.I
- by drift 261.F
- of drift 406.B
- elliptic 74.F
- entire linear 74.E
- to an equilibrium system 82.D
- equilong 76.B
- ergodic (on a measure space) 136.B
- Euler (of infinite series) 379.I
- factor (of a measure preserving transformation) 136.D
- Fisher z- 374.D
- Galilei 359.C
- gauge (in electromagnetism) 130.A
- gauge (in a lattice spin system) 402.G
- gauge (of a principal fiber bundle) 80.Q
- gauge (in unified field theory) 343.B
- gauge, of the first kind 150.B
- Gauss App. A, Table 16.III
- Givens 302.E
- Householder 302.E
- hyperbolic 74.F
- infinitesimal (of a Lie transformation group) 431.G
- infinitesimal (of a one-parameter group of transformations) 105.N
- inner (in the sense of Stollow) 367.B
- Jacobi imaginary 134.I, App. A, Table 16.III
- Kelvin 193.B
- Laguerre 76.B
- Landen 134.B, App. A, Table 16.III
- Legendre 82.A, App. A, Table 15.IV
- Lie (in circle geometry) 76.C
- Lie line-sphere 76.C
- linear (= linear fractional) 74.E
- linear (of a linear space) 251.A 256.B
- linear (of a sequence) 379.L
- linear fractional 74.E
- local, local Lie group of 431.G
- local, local one-parameter group of 105.N
- of local coordinates 90.D
- locally quadratic (of an algebraic surface) 15.G
- locally quadratic (of an algebraic variety) 16.K
- locally quadratic (of a complex manifold) 72.H
- Lorentz 359.B
- loxodromic 74.F
- measurable (on a measure space) 136.B
- measure-preserving 136.B
- Möbius 74.E 76.A
- monoidal (of an analytic space) 23.D
- monoidal (of a complex manifold) 72.H
- monoidal (by an ideal sheaf) 16.K
- monoidal, with center W 16.K
- by a multiplicative functional (in a Markov process) 261.F
- natural 52.J
- nonsingular (of a linear space) 256.B
- nonsingular (on a measure space) 136.B
- normal (of a sequence) 379.L
- one-parameter group of 105.N
- one-parameter group of class C^r 126.B
- orthogonal 139.B 348.B
- orthogonal (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
- orthogonal (with respect to a quadratic form) 60.K
- orthogonal, around the subspace A^k 139.B
- parabolic 74.F
- of the parameter 111.D
- parity 359.B
- particular (of h_R^*) 248.R
- Picard-Lefschetz 16.U
- to principal axes 390.B
- projective 343.D
- projective (of a Riemannian manifold) 367.F
- projective, group of 343.D
- pseudoconformal 344.A
- pseudogroup of (on a topological space) 90.D
- quadratic 16.I, K
- quantized contact 274.F
- regular (of a linear space) 256.B
- regular (of a sequence) 379.L
- regular projective 343.D
- Schwarz-Christoffel 77.D
- semilinear 256.P
- semiregular (of a sequence) 379.L
- shift 136.D
- singular projective 343.D
- singular projective, of the h th species 343.D
- superharmonic 261.F
- symplectic 60.L
- symplectic (over a noncommutative field) 60.O
- totally regular (of a sequence) 379.L
- triangular (linear) 379.L
- unitary 348.F
- unitary (relative to an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
- weakly equivalent 136.F
- transformation formula
 - (for the generating function of the number of partitions) 328
 - (of a theta function) 3.I
 - (for theta series) 348.L
 - Schwarz-Christoffel 77.D
- transformation group(s) 431, App. A, Table 14.III
 - (of a set) 431.A
 - covering 91.A
 - differentiable 431.C
 - discontinuous 122.A
 - free discontinuous 122.A
 - Lie 431.C
 - Möbius 76.A
 - orthogonal 60.I
 - orthogonal (over a field with respect to a quadratic form) 60.K

properly discontinuous 122.A
 symplectic 60.L
 topological 431.A
 unitary 60.F
 transformation parameter 396.I
 transformation problem (in a finitely presented group) 161.B
 transformation space (of an algebraic group) 13.G
 transgression
 (homomorphism of cohomology groups) 200.M
 (in the spectral sequence of a fiber space) 148.E
 transgressive (element in the spectral sequence of a fiber space) 148.E
 transient
 (Lévy process) 5.G
 (Markov chain) 260.B
 (Markov process) 261.B
 transient problem 322.D
 transition
 order-disorder 402.F
 phase 340.B
 transition function
 (of a fiber bundle) 147.B
 (of a Markov chain) 260.A
 (of a Markov process) 261.B
 Feller 261.B
 transition matrix 126.J 260.A
 transition point 254.F
 transition probability
 (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 (of a Markov chain) 260.A
 (of a Markov process) 261.A
 (in quantum mechanics) 351.B
 standard 260.F
 transitive
 (dynamical system) 126.I,J
 (operation of a group) 362.B
 (permutation representation) 362.B
 (relation) 358.A
 fully (subgroup of an orthogonal group) 92.C
 k - (permutation group) 151.H
 k -ply (G -set) 362.B
 k -ply (permutation group) 151.H
 multiply (permutation group) 151.H
 simply (G -set) 362.B
 transitive extension (of a permutation group) 151.H
 transitive law
 (in an equivalence relation) 135.A
 (on ordering) 311.A
 transitively (act on G -space) 431.A
 transitive permutation group 151.H
 transitivity, system of (of a G -set) 362.B
 translation(s)
 (in an affine space) 7.F
 group of (of an affine space) 7.E
 left 249.A 362.B
 parallel 80.C 364.B
 right 249.A 362.B
 translational flow 126.L 136.G
 frequencies of 126.L 136.G
 translation group (of a Lorentz group) 258.A
 translation number 18.B,D
 translation operator 306.C
 translation representation theorem 375.H
 translation theorem (in class field theory) 59.C
 transmission coefficient 387.D
 transmission rate 213.A

Subject Index

Triangle

transonic flow 205.B
 transonic similarity, von Kármán 205.D
 transportation problem 255.C
 transport coefficient 402.K
 transport equations 325.L
 transpose
 (of a linear mapping) 256.G
 (of a rational homomorphism) 3.E
 transposed integral equation 217.F
 transposed mapping
 (of a diffusion kernel) 338.N
 (of a linear mapping) 256.G
 transposed matrix 269.B
 transposed operator 112.E 189.C 322.E
 transposed representation 362.E
 transposition (in a symmetric group) 151.G
 transvection 60.O
 transversal (matroid) 66.H
 transversal field 136.G
 transversal flow 136.G
 transversal homoclinic point 126.J
 transversality, condition of (in calculus of variations) 46.B
 transversality condition 108.B
 strong 126.J
 transversality theorem 105.L
 transverse
 (foliations) 154.H
 (to a submanifold of a differentiable manifold) 105.L
 to a foliation 154.B
 transverse axis (of a hyperbola) 78.C
 transverse electric waves 130.B
 transverse electromagnetic waves 130.B
 transverse invariant measure 154.H
 transversely (intersect) 105.L
 transversely orientable 154.B
 transverse magnetic waves 130.B
 transverse structure 154.H
 transverse wave 446
 trap
 (of a diffusion process) 115.B
 (of a Markov process) 261.B
 trapezoidal rule
 (of numerical integration) 299.A
 (of numerical solution of ordinary differential equations) 303.E
 treatment 102.B
 connected 102.B
 treatment combinations, number of 102.L
 treatment contrast 102.C
 treatment effect 102.B
 tree 93.C 186.G
 co- 186.G
 derivation 31.E
 spanning 186.G
 tree code 213.E
 tree representation 96.D
 tree structure 96.D
 trefoil knot 235.C
 trellis code 213.E
 trend 397.N
 triad 202.M
 homotopy exact sequence of 202.M
 homotopy group of 202.M
 trial path dependent, d - (response probability) 346.G
 triangle 7.D 155.F 178.H
 geodesic 178.A
 Pascal 330

Triangle comparison theorem

- plane App. A, Table 2.II
- polar 78.J
- Reuleaux 89.E 111.E
- self-polar 78.J
- solving a 432.A
- spherical 432.B, App. A, Table 2.III
- triangle comparison theorem 178.A
- triangle inequality 273.A
- triangle test 346.E
- triangulable 65.A
- triangular (linear transformation) 379.L
- triangular element 304.C
- triangular factorization 302.B
- triangular matrix 269.B
 - lower 269.B
 - upper 269.B
- triangular number 4.D
- triangulated manifold 65.B
- triangulation 65.A 70.C
 - C^* - 114.C
 - combinatorial 65.C
 - combinatorial, problem 65.C
 - compatible with 114.C
 - finite 70.C
- trick, Alexander's 65.D
- triclinic (system) 92.E
- Tricomi differential equation 326.C
- Tricomi problem 326.C
- tridiagonal matrix 298.D
- trigamma function 174.B
- trigonal (system) 92.E
- trigonometric function 131.E 432.A, App. A, Table 2
 - inverse 131.E
- trigonometric integral 160.A
- trigonometric interpolation polynomial 336.E
- trigonometric polynomial, generalized 18.B
- trigonometric series 159.A
 - generalized 18.B
- trigonometric sum 4.C
- trigonometric system 159.A
- trigonometry 432, App. A, Table 2
 - plane 432.A
 - spherical 432.B
- trilinear coordinates 90.C
- trimmed mean, α - 371.H
- triple 200.Q,L
 - homotopy exact sequence of 202.L
- triple product, scalar, vector 442.C, App. A, Table 3.I
- triplet, Gel'fand 424.T
- tripolar coordinates 90.C
- trisection of an angle 179.A
- trivalent map 157.B
- trivial
 - (extension) 390.J
 - (knot) 65.D 235.A
 - K- (torus) 13.D
- trivial bundle 147.E
- trivial fiber space, locally 148.B
- trivialization (of a block bundle) 147.Q
- trivially (act on a G -space) 431.A
- trivial sheaf 383.D
- trivial solution (of a system of linear homogeneous equations) 269.M
- trivial topology 425.C
- trivial valuation 439.C,F
- trochoid 93.H
- Trotter product formula 351.F
- true 411.E
- true anomaly 309.B
- true value of a parameter 398.A
- truncated Wightman function 150.D
- truncation error 138.B 303.B
 - local 303.E
- truth definition 185.D
- truth function 411.E
- truth value (of a formula) 411.E
- Tsen theorem 27.E 118.F
- tube 126.E
 - regular 193.K
 - vector 442.D
- tuboid 125.V
- tubular neighborhood 105.L 114.B 364.C
 - open 105.L 114.B
- tubular neighborhood system, controlled 418.G
- Tucker theorem on complementary slackness 255.B
- Tucker theorem, Kuhn- 292.B
- tuple, n - 256.A 381.B
- turbulence 433
 - homogeneous 433.C
 - isotropic 433.C
- turbulent flow 205.E 433
- Turing machine 31.B
 - universal 31.C
- turning point 25.B 254.F
- twinable 92.D
- twinning structure 92.D
- twin primes 123.C
- twisted type, group of 151.I
- two-bin system 227
- two-body interaction 271.C
- two-body problem 55.A
- two-dimensional KdV equation 387.F
- 2-isomorphic 186.H
- two-person game, zero-sum 108.B
- two-phase simplex method 255.C
- two-point boundary value problem (of ordinary differential equations) 315.A
- two sheets
 - hyperboloid of 350.B
 - hyperboloid of revolution of 350.B
- two-sided exponential distribution App. A, Table 22
- two-sided generator (for an automorphism of a measure space) 136.E
- two-sided ideal 368.F
- two-sided \mathfrak{o} -ideal 27.A
 - integral 27.A
- two-sided scale 19.D
- two-sided surface 410.B
- two-stage least squares method 128.C
- two-stage sampling 373.E
- two-stage stochastic programming 408.A
- two-terminal characteristic 281.C
- two-terminal network 281.C
- two-terminal problem 281.C
- two-valued logic 411.L
- two-way elimination of heterogeneity, design for 102.K
- two-way layout 102.H
- type
 - (of an Abelian group) 2.B,D
 - (of an object) 356.F
 - (of a quadratic form) 348.E
 - (of a structure) 409.B
 - (of a transcendental number) 430.C
 - acute 304.C
 - backward 304.D

- Bravais (of lattices) 92.B
 Bravais, of the class of (T, K) 92.B
 compact 412.D
 dimension 117.H
 of finite (graded module) 203.B
 of finite (module) 277.D
 of finite (morphism of schemes) 16.D
 of finite (\mathcal{O} -module) 16.E
 of finite, subshift 126.J
 forward 304.D
 Fredholm, integral equation of 217.A
 Fredholm, integrodifferential equation of 222.A
 Fuchsian (linear ordinary differential equations) 253.A
 Fuchsian (visibility manifold) 178.F
 general 72.I
 general, surface of 72.K
 homotopy 202.F
 homotopy (of a link) 235.D
 homotopy, invariant 202.F
 isotopy (of knots) 235.A
 isotopy (of a transformation group) 431.A
 k -, Markov branching process 44.E
 knot 235.A
 link 235.D
 locally of finite (morphism of schemes) 16.D
 mixed 304.C 326.A
 multi-, Markov branching process 44.E
 multidiagonal 304.C
 noncompact 412.D
 nonconforming 304.C
 orbit (of a G -space) 431.A
 Parreau-Widom 164.K
 positive (symmetric kernel) 338.D
 principal orbit 431.C
 spherical G -fiber homotopy 431.F
 Stoilow 207.B
 twisted, group of 151.I
 Volterra, integral equation of 217.A
 Volterra, integrodifferential equation of 222.A
 Weierstrass-, preparation theorem (for micro-differential operators) 274.F
 type p^∞ , Abelian group of 2.D
 type (p, q)
 (of an operator) 224.E
 tensor of 256.J
 tensor space of 256.J
 weak (of an operator) 224.E
 type (r, s) , differential form of 72.C
 type S (harmonic boundary) 207.B
 type S , space of 125.T
 type number (of a solution of a system of linear ordinary differential equations) 314.A
 type problem (for Riemann surfaces) 367.D
 type theory 411.K
 ramified 411.K
 simple 411.K
 type $(0, 1)$, tangent vector of 72.C
 type $(1, 0)$, tangent vector of 72.C
 type I
 (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
 C^* -algebra of 308.L
 group of 437.E
 type I group 437.E
 type $I_{m,m}$ (irreducible symmetric bounded domain) 412.I
 type I_n (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
 type II (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
 type II_1
 (ergodic countable group) 136.F
 (von Neumann algebra) 308.E,F
 type II_m (irreducible symmetric bounded domain) 412.I
 type II_∞
 (ergodic countable group) 136.F
 (von Neumann algebra) 308.E,F
 type III
 (ergodic countable group) 136.F
 (von Neumann algebra) 308.E
 structure theorem for von Neumann algebras of 308.I
 type III_0 (factor) 308.I
 type III_1 (factor) 308.I
 type III_2 (factor) 308.I
 type III_m (irreducible symmetric bounded domain) 412.I
 type IV_m (irreducible symmetric bounded domain) 412.I
 type AI, AII, AIII, AIV (irreducible symmetric Riemannian space) 412.G
 type BDI, BDII (irreducible symmetric Riemannian space) 412.G
 type CI, CII (irreducible symmetric Riemannian space) 412.G
 type DIII (irreducible symmetric Riemannian space) 412.G

 U

 $U(n)$ (unitary group) 60.F
 u -chain 260.I
 u -curve 111.H
 u_i -scale 19.D
 U -invariant (subspace) 437.C
 U -set 159.J
 U -statistic 274.I
 U test, Mann-Whitney 371.C
 U-number 430.C
 U^* -number 430.C
 UCL (upper control limit) 404.B
 Ugaheri maximum principle 338.C
 Uhlenbeck Brownian motion, Ornstein- 45.I
 Ulam theorem, Borsuk- 153.B
 Ulm factor(s) 2.D
 sequence of 2.D
 ultrabornological (locally convex space) 424.W
 ultradifferentiable function 168.B
 ultradistribution 125.U, BB
 of class $\{M_p\}$ 125.U
 of class $\{M_p\}$ 125.U
 ultrafilter 87.I
 ultrainfinite point 285.C
 ultrapower 276.E
 ultraproduct(s) 276.E
 fundamental theorem of 276.E
 ultraspherical polynomials 317.D
 ultraviolet divergence 132.C 146.B
 umbilical point (of a surface) 111.H 365.D
 umbilical submanifold, totally 365.D
 Umkehr homomorphism 201.O
 UMP (uniformly most powerful) (test) 400.A
 UMP invariant level α test 400.E
 UMP unbiased level α test 400.C
 UMV unbiased estimator 399.C
 unavoidable set 157.D
 unbiased confidence region 399.Q
 uniformly most powerful 399.Q
 unbiased estimator 399.C
 asymptotically (mean) 399.K

Unbiased level α test

- best linear 403.E
- k th order asymptotically median 399.O
- mean 399.C
- median 399.C
- modal 399.C
- UMV 399.C
- uniformly minimum variance 399.C
- unbiased level α test 400.C
 - uniformly most powerful 400.C
- unbiasedness 399.C
- unbounded (covering surface) 367.B
- uncertainty (in observations) 351.C
- uncertainty relation, Heisenberg 351.C
- unconditionally convergent
 - (series) 379.C
 - (series in a Banach space) 443.D
- undecidable proposition, formally 185.C
- undefined concept 35.B
- undefined term 35.B
- undercrossing point 235.A
- underdetermined system
 - of differential operators 112.R
 - of partial differential operators 320.F
- underflow 138.B
- underlying group (of a topological group) 423.A
- underlying topological space
 - (of a complex manifold) 72.A
 - (of a differentiable manifold) 105.D
 - (of a topological group) 423.A
- undirected graph 186.B
- undotted index 258.B
- undotted spinor (of rank k) 258.B
- unfolding
 - (of a germ of an analytic function) 418.E
 - constant 51.D
 - r - 51.D
 - universal 418.E
- unicity theorem, Luzin's 22.C
- unicursal (ordinary curve) 93.C
- unicursal curve 9.C 93.H
- unicursal graph theorem (Euler's) 186.F
- unified field theory 434
 - nonsymmetric 434.C
- uniform
 - (lattice of a Lie group) 122.K
 - (sampling procedure) 373.A
- uniform algebra 164.A
- uniform boundedness theorem 37.H
- uniform continuity
 - lower class with respect to 45.F
 - upper class with respect to 45.F
- uniform convergence 435
 - (of an infinite product) 435.A
 - (of operators) 251.C
 - (of a series) 435.A
 - abscissa of 121.B 240.B
 - on compact sets 435.C
 - Weierstrass criterion for 435.A
- uniform covering system 436.D
- uniform distribution 182.H 341.D, App. A, Table 22
- uniform family of neighborhoods system 436.D
- uniform isomorphism 436.E
- uniformity 436.B
 - base for the 436.B
 - discrete 436.D
 - generated by a family of pseudometrics 436.F
 - generated by a pseudometric 436.F
 - left (of a topological group) 423.G
 - product 436.E
 - pseudometric 436.F
 - relative 436.E
 - right (of a topological group) 423.G
 - stronger 436.E
 - T_1 - 436.C
 - topology of the 436.C
 - weaker 436.E
- uniformizable (topological space) 436.H
- uniformization 367.C
 - (of a set in a product space) 22.F
 - Schottky 367.C
- uniformization theorem
 - general 367.G
 - Kondô 22.F
- uniformized 367.C
 - locally 367.C
- uniformizing parameter, local (of a Riemann surface) 367.A
- uniformly
 - (partial recursive function) 356.E
 - (primitive recursive function) 356.B
- uniformly absolutely convergent (series) 435.A
- uniformly almost periodic function 18.B
- uniformly asymptotically stable
 - (solution of a differential equation) 394.B
 - (solution of a functional differential equation) 163.G
- uniformly best (estimator) 399.C
- uniformly better (decision function) 398.B
- uniformly consistent test 400.K
- uniformly continuous
 - (function) 84.A
 - (mapping) 273.I 436.E
 - on a subset 436.G
- uniformly convergent
 - (sequence) 435.A
 - on a family of sets 435.C
 - in the wider sense 435.C
- uniformly convex (normed linear space) 37.G
- uniformly equivalent (uniform spaces) 436.E
- uniformly integrable (family of random variables) 262.A
- uniformly locally compact (space) 425.V
- uniformly Lyapunov stable 126.F
- uniformly minimum variance unbiased estimator 399.C
- uniformly most powerful
 - (confidence region) 399.Q
 - (test) 400.A
 - invariant 399.Q
 - invariant level α 400.E
 - unbiased 399.Q
 - unbiased level α 400.E
- uniformly recursive in Ψ (define a partial recursive function) 356.E
- uniformly smooth (normed linear space) 37.G
- uniformly stable 394.B
- uniform neighborhood system 436.D
- uniform norm 168.B
- uniform operator topology 251.C
- uniform space(s) 436
 - analytically 125.S
 - complete 436.G
 - Hausdorff 436.C
 - locally totally bounded 436.H
 - metrizable 436.F
 - precompact 436.H
 - product 436.E
 - pseudometrizable 436.F
 - separated 436.C

- T_1 - 436.C
- totally bounded 436.H
- uniform star convergence, relative 310.F
- uniform structure 436.B
- uniform subspace 436.E
- uniform topological space 436.B
- uniform topology 436.B
- unilateral constraints 440.A
- unilateral shift operator 390.I
- unimodal (distribution function) 341.H
- unimodular
 - (germ of an analytic function) 418.E
 - (locally compact group) 225.D
 - totally 186.G
- unimodular group 60.B
 - quaternion 412.G
- union
 - (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
 - (of matroids) 66.H
 - (of sets) 381.B
 - axiom of 381.G
 - disjoint 381.B,D
 - of hypersurface elements 82.A
 - of surface elements 324.B
- unipotent
 - (algebraic group) 13.E
 - (linear transformation) 269.L
- unipotent component 269.L
- unipotent matrix 269.F
- unipotent part
 - (of an algebraic group) 13.E
 - (of a nonsingular matrix) 13.E
- unipotent radical 13.I
- unique continuation theorem 323.J
- unique decomposition theorem (for a 3-manifold) 65.E
- unique factorization domain 67.H
- unique factorization theorem (in an integral domain) 67.H
- uniquely ergodic (homeomorphism (on a compact metric space) 136.H
- uniqueness
 - in the sense of law of solutions 406.D
 - set of 159.J
 - of solution, pathwise 406.D
- uniqueness condition (for solutions of ordinary differential equations) 316.D
- uniqueness principle (in potential theory) 338.M
- uniqueness theorem
 - (for analytic functions) 198.C
 - (for class field theory) 59.B
 - (for differential equations in a complex domain) 316.G
 - (for Fourier transform) 192.I
 - (for harmonic functions) 193.E
 - (for an initial value problem of ordinary differential equations) 316.D
 - of the analytic continuation 198.C,I
 - Holmgren 321.F
 - of homology theory 201.R
 - Rellich 188.D
 - von Neumann 351.C
- unique strong solution 406.D
- unirational surface 15.H
- unirational variety 16.J
- uniserial algebra 29.I
 - absolutely 29.I
 - generalized 29.I
- unsolvent space 142.B
- unsolvent system (of functions) 336.B
- unit(s)
 - (of an algebraic number field) 14.D
 - (for measure of length) 139.C
 - (in a ring) 368.B
 - (of a symmetric matrix with rational coordinates) 348.J
 - (of a vector lattice) 310.B
 - Archimedean (of a vector lattice) 310.B
 - arithmetic 75.B
 - auxiliary 414.A
 - base 414.A
 - circular 14.L
 - control 75.B
 - derived 414.D
 - fundamental 414.A
 - fundamental (of an algebraic number field) 14.D
 - gravitational, system of 414.B
 - imaginary 74.A 294.F
 - international system of 414.A
 - Kakutani 310.G
 - matrix 269.B
 - memory 75.B
 - system of 414
- unital 36.A
- unitarily equivalent (self-adjoint operators) 390.G
- unitary
 - (homomorphism between rings) 368.D
 - (module) 277.D
 - essentially 390.I
- unitary algebra 29.A
- unitary dilation 251.M
- unitary field theory 434.C
- unitary group 60.F 151.I
 - (relative to an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
 - infinite 202.V
 - over K 60.H
 - over K , projective special 60.H
 - over K , special 60.H
 - projective 60.F
 - special 60.F
 - special (relative to an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
- unitary matrix 269.I
- unitary monoid 409.C
- unitary operator 251.E 390.E
- unitary representation(s) 437
 - disjoint 437.C
 - equivalent 437.A
 - induced by a representation of a subgroup 437.O
 - integrable 437.X
 - irreducible 437.A
 - isomorphic 437.A
 - quasi-equivalent 437.C
 - similar 437.A
 - square integrable 437.M
 - sufficiently many irreducible 437.B
- unitary restriction (of a semisimple Lie algebra) 248.P
- unitary ring 368.A 409.C
- unitary semigroup 409.C
- unitary symplectic group 60.L
- unitary transformation 348.F
 - (relative to an ε -Hermitian form) 60.O
- unitary transformation group 60.F
- unit ball
 - (of a Banach space) 37.B
 - (of a Euclidean space) 140
- unit cell 140
- unit circle 74.C 140

- unit cost 281.D
- unit cube 139.F 140
- unit disk 140
- unit distribution 341.D
- unit element
 - (of a field) 149.A
 - (of a group) 190.A
 - (of a ring) 368.A
- unit function 306.B, App. A, Table 12.II
- unit group (of an algebraic number field) 14.D
- unit impulsive function App. A, Table 12.II
- unit mapping 203.F
- unit matrix 269.A
- unit n -cube 140
- unit point
 - (of an affine frame) 7.C
 - (of a projective frame) 343.C
- unit ray 351.B
- unit representation (of a group) 362.C
- unit sphere 140
- unit tangent sphere bundle 126.L
- unit theorem, Dirichlet 14.D
- unit vector 7.C 442.B
- unity
 - (in the axioms for the real numbers) 355.A
 - partition of 425.R
 - partition of, of class C^∞ 105.S
 - partition of, subordinate to a covering 425.R
 - primitive root of 14.L
- unity element
 - (of a field) 149.A
 - (of a ring) 368.A
- univalence superselection rule 351.K
- univalent (analytic function) 438.A
- univalent correspondence 358.B
- univalent function 438
- univariate (statistical data) 397.A
- universal
 - (∂ -functor) 200.I
 - ($*$ -representation of a Banach $*$ -algebra) 36.G
 - (unfolding) 51.D
- universal bundle 147.G, H
 - n - 147.G
- universal Chern class 56.C
- universal coefficient theorem
 - (in Abelian categories) 200.H
 - (for cohomology) 200.G 201.H
 - for homology 200.D 201.G
- universal constants (in the theory of conformal mapping) 77.F
- universal covering group 91.B 423.O
- universal covering space 91.B
- universal covering surface 367.B
- universal curve 93.H
- universal domain 16.A
- universal enveloping algebra
 - (of a Lie algebra) 248.J
 - special (of a Jordan algebra) 231.C
- universal enveloping bialgebra 203.G
- universal Euler-Poincaré class 56.B
- universal gravitation, law of 271.B
- universally Japanese ring 16.Y 284.F
- universally measurable 270.I
- universal mapping property 52.L
- universal net (in a set) 87.H
- universal Pontryagin class 56.D
- universal proposition 411.B
- universal quantifier 411.C
- universal set
 - (for the projective sets of class n) 22.E
 - (in set theory) 381.B
- universal Stiefel-Whitney class 56.B
- universal Teichmüller space 416
- universal Turing machine 31.C
- universal unfolding 418.E
- universal validity of a proposition, problem of 97
- universe
 - (in nonstandard analysis) 293.B
 - (of a structure) 276.B
- unknotted
 - (ball pair) 65.D 235.G
 - (knot) 235.A
 - (sphere pair) 65.D 235.G
- unknotting conjecture 235.G
- unknotting theorem, Zeeman 65.D
- unlabeled graph 186.B
- unmixed ideal 284.D
- unmixedness theorem 284.D
- unordered pair 381.B
 - (in axiomatic set theory) 33.B
 - axiom of 33.B
- unoriented cobordism class 114.H
- unoriented cobordism group 114.H
- unoriented graph 186.H
- unramified
 - (covering surface) 367.B
 - (prime ideal) 14.I
 - (projection of a covering surface) 367.B
 - analytically (semilocal ring) 284.D
- unramified covering (of a nonsingular curve) 9.I
- unramified extension 14.I 257.D
- unrenormalizable 132.C 361.B
- unsolvability
 - degree of 97
 - recursive, arithmetical hierarchy of degrees of 356.H
 - recursive, degree of 97
 - recursive, hyperarithmetical hierarchy of degrees of 356.H
- unstable
 - (boundary component) 77.E
 - (state) 394.A
 - completely (flow) 126.E
- unstable manifold 126.G, J
- unstable solution (of Hill's equation) 264.E
- up-ladder 206.B
- upper bound
 - (of a subset in an ordered set) 311.B
 - least (of an ordered set) 311.B
 - least (of a subset of a vector lattice) 310.C
- upper boundedness principle (in potential theory) 338.C
- upper central series (of a group) 190.J
- upper class
 - with respect to local continuity 45.F
 - with respect to uniform continuity 45.F
- upper control limit 404.B
- upper derivative
 - general (of a set function) 380.D
 - ordinary (of a set function) 380.D
- upper end (of a curvilinear integral) 94.D
- upper envelope (of a family of subharmonic functions) 193.R
- upper half-space of degree n , Siegel 32.F
- upper integral, Riemann 216.A
- upper limit (of a Riemann integral) 216.A
- upper limit function 84.C
- upper semicontinuous
 - (at a point) 84.C
 - (partition) 425.L

in a set 84.C
 upper semilattice 243.A
 upper triangular matrix 269.B
 upper variation (of a set function) 380.B
 Uryson lemma 425.Q
 Uryson space, Fréchet- 425.CC
 Uryson theorem, Tikhonov- 425.Q
 Uryson-Tikhonov theorem (on metrizability) 273.K
 Uzawa gradient method, Arrow-Hurwicz- 292.E

V

 v-curve 111.H
 vacuum vector 377.A
 free 150.C
 vague topology (on a class of measures) 338.E
 valid formula 411.G
 valuation(s) 439
 additive 439.B
 Archimedean 14.F 439.C
 complete 439.D
 completion of 439.D
 discrete 439.E
 equivalent 439.B
 exponential 439.B
 generalized 439.B
 multiplicative 439.C
 non-Archimedean 14.F 439.C
 normal 439.E,H
 normalized 439.E
 p-adic 439.F
 p-adic exponential 439.F
 prolongation of 439.B
 pseudo- 439.K
 special 439.B
 over a subfield 439.B,C
 trivial 439.C,F
 valuation ideal (of a valuation) 439.B
 valuation ring 439.B
 completion of 439.D
 discrete 439.E
 valuation vector(s) 6.C
 ring of 6.C
 value(s)
 (of an infinite continued fraction) 83.A
 (of an infinite product) 379.G
 (of a variable) 165.C
 absolute (of a complex number) 74.B
 absolute (of an element of an ordered field) 149.N
 absolute (of an element of a vector lattice) 310.B
 absolute (of a real number) 355.A
 absolute (of a vector) 442.B
 asymptotic (of a meromorphic function) 62.A 272.H
 boundary (of a conformal mapping) 77.B
 boundary (hyperfunction) 125.V
 boundary (relative to a differential operator) 112.E
 boundary, problem \rightarrow boundary value problem
 characteristic (of a linear operator) 390.A
 cluster 62.A
 cluster, theorem 43.G
 critical (in bifurcation theory) 286.R
 critical (of a C^∞ -function on a manifold) 279.B
 critical (of a contact process) 340.C
 critical (of an external magnetic field) 340.B
 critical (of a mapping $u: \mathbb{R}^n \rightarrow \mathbb{R}^m$) 208.B

critical (of a C^∞ -mapping $\varphi: M \rightarrow M'$) 105.J
 exceptional (of a transcendental entire function) 429.B
 exceptional, Borel 272.E
 exceptional, Nevanlinna 272.E
 exceptional, Picard 272.E
 expectation (of an observable) 351.B
 expected (of a random variable) 342.C
 gap (of a point on a Riemann surface) 11.D
 initial (for ordinary differential equations) 316.A
 initial (for partial differential equations) 321.A
 initial (for stochastic differential equations) 406.D
 initial, problem \rightarrow initial value problem
 limit (of a mapping) 87.F
 mean (of a function on a compact group) 69.A
 mean (of a weakly stationary process) 395.C
 mean, theorem \rightarrow mean value theorem
 most probable 401.E
 principal (of inverse trigonometric functions) 131.E
 principal (of $\log z$) 131.G
 principal, Cauchy (of an improper integral) 216.D
 principal, Cauchy (of the integral of a function in $(-\infty, \infty)$) 216.E
 proper (of a boundary value problem) 315.B
 proper (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 proper (of a linear operator) 390.A
 proper (of a matrix) 269.F
 range of (of a meromorphic function) 62.A
 regular 105.J
 sample 396.B
 sample characteristic 396.C
 Shapley 173.D
 singular 302.A
 singular, decomposition (SVD) 302.E
 starting 303.E
 stationary (of a function) 106.L
 true, of parameter 398.A
 truth (of a formula) 411.E
 value distribution 124.A
 value function 108.B 405.A
 value group
 (of an additive valuation) 439.B
 (of a multiplicative valuation) 439.C
 Vandermonde determinant 103.G
 van der Pol differential equation 290.C
 van der Waerden-Bortolotti covariant derivative 417.E
 van der Waerden test 371.C
 Vandiver conjecture 14.L
 van Hove sense, limit in 402.G
 vanishing cocycle 16.U
 vanishing cycle 418.F
 vanishing theorem
 (on compact complex manifolds) 194.G
 Kodaira 232.D
 van Kampen theorem (on fundamental groups) 170
 variability, measure of 397.C
 variable(s) 165.C
 (of a polynomial) 369.A
 artificial 255.C
 auxiliary 373.C
 basic 255.A
 bound 411.C
 canonical (in analytical dynamics) 271.F
 change of (in integral calculus) 216.C

Variable component (of a linear system)

- complex 165.C
- complex, theory of functions of 198.Q
- dependent 165.C
- differential (of a differential polynomial) 113
- endogenous 128.C
- exogenous 128.C
- explanatory 403.D
- hidden, theories 351.L
- independent 165.C
- individual 411.H
- inner 25.B
- lagged 128.C
- object 411.G
- outer 25.B
- predetermined 128.C
- predicate 411.G.H
- proposition 411.E
- random 342.C
- random, independent 342.C
- random, joint 342.C
- random, n -dimensional 342.C
- random, \mathbf{R}^n -valued 342.C
- random, (S, \mathfrak{E}) -valued 342.C
- real 165.C
- sampling inspection by 404.C
- separation of 322.C
- slack 255.A
- state 127.A
- variable component (of a linear system) 15.C 16.N
- variable method, discrete 303.A
- variable-step variable-order (VSVO) algorithms 303.E
- variance
 - (of a probability distribution) 341.B
 - (of a random variable) 342.C
 - (of univariate quantitative data) 397.C
 - analysis of 400.H 403.D
 - between-group 397.L
 - generalized 280.E 397.J
 - multivariate analysis of 280.B
 - population 396.C
 - sample 396.C
 - sample generalized 280.E
 - uniformly minimum unbiased estimator 399.C
 - within-group 397.L
- variance-covariance matrix 341.B 397.J
- variance matrix 341.B
- variate
 - canonical 280.E
 - fixed 403.D
- variation(s)
 - (of an integral) 100.E
 - bounded \rightarrow of bounded variation
 - calculus of 46
 - calculus of, classical theory of 46.C
 - calculus of, conditional problems in 46.A
 - calculus of, fundamental lemma in 46.B
 - coefficient of 397.C
 - of constants, Lagrange's method of 252.D
 - of constants, method of 55.B 252.I
 - first 46.B
 - first, formula 178.A
 - geodesic 178.A
 - lower (of a set function) 380.B
 - negative (of a mapping) 246.H
 - negative (of a real bounded function) 166.B
 - one-parameter 178.A
 - of parameters, Lagrange method of 252.D
 - of parameters, method of App. A, Table 14.I
 - positive (of a mapping) 246.H
 - positive (of a real bounded function) 166.B
 - proper 279.F
 - quadratic, process 406.B
 - second formula 178.A
 - total (of a finitely additive vector measure) 443.G
 - total (of a mapping) 246.H
 - total (of a real bounded function) 166.B
 - total (of a set function) 380.B
 - upper 380.B
- variational derivative 46.B
- variational equation 316.F 394.C
- variational formula, constant 163.E
- variational inequality 440
 - of evolution 440.C
 - stationary 440.B
- variational method 438.B
- variational principles(s) 441
 - (in ergodic theory) 136.G
 - (in statistical mechanics) 340.B 402.G
 - (in the theory of elasticity) 271.G
 - with relaxed continuity requirements 271.G
 - for the topological pressure 136.H
- variational problem, Gauss 338.J
- variation curve 178.A
- variation vector field 178.A
- variety
 - (algebraic variety) 16.A
 - (of block design) 102.B
 - Abelian 3
 - Abelian, isogeneous 3.C
 - Abelian, polarized 3.G
 - Abelian, simple 3.B
 - abstract 16.C
 - abstract algebraic 16.C
 - affine 16.A
 - affine algebraic 16.A
 - Albanese 16.P
 - Albanese (of a compact Kähler manifold) 232.C
 - algebraic 16
 - algebraic group 13.B
 - almost all points of a 16.A
 - Brieskorn 418.D
 - characteristic (of a microdifferential equation) 274.G
 - Chow 16.W
 - complex algebraic 16.T
 - function on a 16.A
 - generalized Jacobian 9.F 11.C
 - group 13.B 16.H
 - irreducible 16.A
 - Jacobian 9.E 11.C 16.P
 - Landau 146.C
 - Landau-Nakanishi 146.C 386.C
 - linear (in an Ω -module) 422.L
 - linear, linearly compact 422.L
 - minimal 275.G
 - nonsingular 16.F
 - normal 16.F
 - normal algebraic 16.F
 - Picard 16.P
 - Picard (of a compact Kähler manifold) 232.C
 - prealgebraic 16.C
 - product algebraic 16.A
 - projective 16.A
 - projective algebraic 16.A
 - quasi-affine algebraic 16.C
 - quasiprojective algebraic 16.C
 - rational 16.J

rational function on a 16.A
 reducible 16.A
 Schubert 56.E
 smooth 16.F
 strict Albanese 16.P
 toric 16.Z
 unirational 16.J
 Zariski topology of a 16.A
 varifold 275.G
 Varshamov-Gilbert-Sacks bound 63.B
 vector(s)
 (in a Euclidean space) 442
 (in a linear space) 256.A
 analytic 437.S
 characteristic (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 characteristic (of a linear operator) 390.A
 characteristic (of a matrix) 269.F
 coherent 377.D
 collinear 442.A
 column 269.A
 contravariant 256.J
 coplanar 442.A
 covariant 256.J
 cyclic (of a representation space of a unitary representation) 437.A
 effect 102.A
 eigen- (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 eigen- (of a linear operator) 390.A
 eigen- (of a matrix) 269.F
 eigen-, generalized 390.B
 error 102.A
 fixed 442.A
 four- 359.C
 four-, energy-momentum 258.C
 free 442.A
 free vacuum 150.C
 fundamental (in a vector space) 442.A
 horizontal 80.C
 independent 66.F
 integral 428.E
 mean 341.B
 mean curvature 365.D
 normal 105.L 111.H 364.A
 normalized 409.G
 observation 102.A
 orthogonal 139.G
 p - 256.O
 p -, bundle of 147.F
 positive 7.A 442.A
 Poynting 130.A
 proper (of a linear mapping) 269.L
 proper (of a linear operator) 390.A
 proper (of a matrix) 269.F
 root 390.B
 row 269.A
 tangent 105.H
 tangent, holomorphic 72.A
 tangent, of type (0,1) 72.C
 tangent, of type (1,0) 72.C
 unit 442.B
 unit (of an affine frame) 7.C
 vacuum 377.A
 valuation 6.C
 valuation, ring of 6.C
 vertical 80.B
 wave number (of a sine wave) 446
 Witt 449
 Witt, of length n 449.B
 zero 442.A
 vector algebra App. A, Table 3.I

vector analysis and coordinate systems App. A,
 Table 3
 vector bundle 147.F
 (algebraic) 16.Y
 ample 16.Y
 complex 147.F
 cotangent 147.F
 dual 147.F
 indecomposable 16.Y
 normal 105.L
 normal k - 114.J
 quaternion 147.F
 semistable 16.Y
 stable 16.Y 237.B
 stably equivalent 237.B
 tangent 105.H 147.F
 vector field
 (on a differentiable manifold) 105.M
 (in a 3-dimensional Euclidean space) 442.D
 Anosov 126.J
 Axiom A 126.J
 basic 80.H
 of class C^r 105.M
 contravariant 105.O
 covariant 105.O
 differentiation of App. A, Table 3.II
 formal 105.AA
 fundamental 191.A
 G - 237.H
 Hamiltonian 126.L 219.C
 holomorphic 72.A
 integral of App. A, Table 3.III
 irrotational 442.D
 Killing 364.F
 Lagrangian 126.L
 lamellar 442.D
 Morse-Smale 126.J
 solenoidal 442.D
 variation 178.A
 without source 442.D
 without vortex 442.D
 vector flux (through a surface) 442.D
 vector function, measurable 308.G
 vector group 422.E
 vectorial form, canonical 417.C
 vectorial p -form 417.C
 vector integral 443.A
 vector invariant 226.C
 vector lattice 310.B
 Archimedean 310.C
 complete 310.C
 normed 310.F
 σ -complete 310.C
 vector line (of a vector field) 442.D
 vector measure 443.G
 absolutely continuous 443.G
 bounded 443.G
 completely additive 443.G
 finitely additive 443.G
 vector potential 130.A 442.D
 vector product 442.C, App. A, Table 3.I
 vector representation (of a Clifford group) 61.D
 vector space 442.A
 over a field 256.H
 metric 256.H
 prehomogeneous 450.V
 standard (of an affine space) 7.A
 tangent 105.H
 topological 424.A
 vector triple product 442.C, App. A, Table 3.I

Vector tube

- vector tube 442.D
 - vector-valued integral 443
 - velocity
 - group 446
 - phase (of a sine wave) 446
 - velocity phase space 126.L
 - velocity potential 205.B
 - Veneziano model 132.C 386.C
 - Verbeure inequality, Roepstorff- Fannes- 402.G
 - Veronese surface 275.F
 - versal (unfolding) 51.D
 - version (of a stochastic process) 407.A
 - vertex (vertices)
 - (of an angle) 139.D 155.B
 - (in a cell complex) 70.D
 - (of a circular cone) 78.A
 - (of a complete quadrangle) 343.C
 - (of a convex cell in an affine space) 7.D
 - (of a convex polyhedron) 89.A
 - (in a Euclidean (simplicial) complex) 70.B
 - (of a geodesic triangle) 178.A
 - (of a graph) 186.B
 - (of a linear graph) 282.A
 - (of a parabola) 78.C
 - (of a polygon) 155.F
 - (in the polyhedron of a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (of a simplex in an affine space) 7.D
 - (in a simplicial complex) 70.C
 - (of a spherical triangle) 432.B
 - (of a star region) 339.D
 - adjacent 186.B
 - end 186.B
 - initial 186.B
 - isolated 186.B
 - terminal 186.B
 - vertical angles 139.D
 - vertical component (of a vector field) 80.C
 - vertical slit mapping, extremal 367.G
 - vertical vector 80.B
 - very ample
 - (divisor) 16.N
 - (linear system) 16.N
 - (sheaf) 16.E
 - very weak Bernoulli process 136.E
 - Vessiot extension field, Picard- 113
 - Vessiot theory, Picard- 113
 - Vey classes, Godbillon- 154.G
 - vibrating membrane, equation of a 325.A
 - vibrating string, equation of a 325.A
 - vibration 318
 - normal 318.B
 - parametrically sustained 318.B
 - self-excited 318.B
 - Viète, F. 444
 - Vietoris axiom 425.Q
 - Vietoris exact sequence, Mayer- (for a proper triple) 201.C
 - Villat integration formula App. A, Table 15.VI
 - Vinogradov mean value theorem 4.E
 - virtual arithmetic genus (of a divisor) 16.E
 - viscosity 205.B
 - coefficient of 205.C
 - coefficient of bulk 205.C
 - coefficient of shear 205.C
 - magnetic 259
 - visibility manifold 178.F
 - Vitali covering theorem 380.D
 - Vivanti theorem 339.A
 - Volterra integral equation 217.A
 - Volterra operator 68.J
 - Volterra theorem, Poincaré- 198.J
 - Volterra type
 - integral equation of 217.A
 - integrodifferential equation of 222.A
 - volume
 - (of an idele) 6.D
 - (of a lattice in a Euclidean space) 92.D
 - (of a polyhedron) 139.F
 - (of a simplex in an affine space) 7.E
 - inner 270.G
 - outer 270.G
 - volume element
 - (of an oriented C^∞ -manifold) 105.W
 - associated with a Riemannian metric 105.W
 - integral of a function with respect to a (on a C^∞ -manifold) 105.W
 - von Kármán transonic similarity 205.D
 - von Mises theorem 399.K
 - von Neumann, J. 445
 - von Neumann algebra 308.C
 - discrete 308.E
 - finite 308.E
 - induced 308.C
 - purely infinite 308.E
 - reduced 308.C
 - semifinite 308.E
 - structure theorem for, of type III 308.I
 - of type I 308.E
 - of type II 308.E
 - of type II_1 308.E
 - of type II_∞ 308.E
 - of type III 308.E
 - von Neumann condition 304.F
 - von Neumann density theorem 308.C
 - von Neumann-Halmos theorem 136.E
 - von Neumann inequality 251.M
 - von Neumann-Morgenstern solution 173.D
 - von Neumann reduction theory 308.G
 - von Neumann selection theorem 22.F
 - von Neumann theorem, Weyl- 390.I
 - von Neumann uniqueness theorem 351.C
 - vortex, vector field without 442.D
 - vortex line 205.B
 - vorticity 205.B
 - vorticity theorem, Helmholtz 205.B
 - Vossen theorem, Cohn- 111.I
 - VSVO algorithm 303.E
 - V.W.B. process 136.E
- W**
- $W_p^1(\Omega)$ (Sobolev space) 168.B
 - w-plane 74.D
 - w-point (of an entire function) 429.B
 - w-sphere 74.D
 - W-construction (of an Eilenberg-MacLane complex) 70.F
 - W-surface 111.I
 - W^* -algebra 308.C
 - Wagner function 39.F
 - waiting time 260.H
 - waiting time distribution 307.C
 - Wald theorem 399.H,M
 - Walker equation, Yule- 421.D
 - Walker metrics, Robertson- 359.E
 - wall
 - adiabatic 419.A
 - diathermal 419.A
 - Wall group 114.J

Wallis formula App. A, Table 10.VI
 Wallis test, Kruskal- 371.D
 Walsh system of orthogonal functions 317.C
 wandering 126.E
 weakly, under a group 136.E
 wandering point 126.E
 wandering set 136.C
 weakly 136.C
 Wang exact sequence (of a fiber space) 148.E
 Waring problem 4.E
 Warning second theorem 118.B
 Warning theorem 118.B
 wasan 230
 water wave(s) 205.F
 deep 205.F
 long 205.F
 shallow 205.F
 Watson formula 39.E, App. A, Table 19.IV
 Watson-Nicholson formula App. A, Table 19.III
 Watson process
 Galton- 44.B
 multi (k)-type Galton- 44.C
 Watson transform 160.C 220.B
 wave(s) 446
 Alfvén 259
 capillary 205.F
 dispersive 446
 electromagnetic 446
 electromagnetic, theory of 130.B
 fast 259
 gravity 205.F
 gravity, long 205.F
 longitudinal 446
 Mach 205.B
 partial 386.B
 partial, expansion 375.E 386.B
 plane 446
 polarized 446
 shock 205.B 446
 sine 446
 sinusoidal 446
 slow 259
 spherical 446
 stationary 446
 Stokes 205.F
 surface 446
 transverse 446
 water 205.F
 water, deep 205.F
 water, long 205.F
 water, shallow 205.F
 wave equation 325.A 446, App. A, Table 15.III
 wave expansion, partial 375.E 386.B
 wave front set 274.B 345.A
 analytic 274.D
 wave function 351.D
 spheroidal 133.E
 wave guide 130.B
 wavelength (of a sine wave) 446
 wave number (of a sine wave) 446
 wave operator 375.B, H
 generalized 375.B
 incoming 375.B
 modified 375.B
 outgoing 375.B
 wave propagation 446
 wave scattering amplitude, partial 375.E
 wave steepness 205.F
 W.B. process 136.E
 WC group 118.D

Subject Index

Weak topology

weak (boundary component) 77.E
 weak Bernoulli process 136.E
 very 136.E
 weak convergence
 (of operators) 251.C
 (of probability measures) 341.F
 (of a sequence of submodules) 200.J
 weak C^∞ topology 279.C
 weak derivative 125.E
 weak dimension (of a module) 200.K
 weaker
 (equivalence relation) 135.C
 (method of summation) 379.L
 (topology) 425.H
 (uniformity) 436.E
 weak extension (of a differential operator) 112.E, F
 weak form of the boundary value problem (of partial differential equations) 304.B
 weak global dimension (of a ring) 200.K
 weak homotopy equivalence 202.F
 weak lacuna 325.J
 weak law of large numbers 395.B
 weak Lefschetz theorem 16.U
 weakly, converge
 (in a normal linear space) 37.E
 (in a topological linear space) 424.H
 weakly almost complex manifold 114.H
 weakly compact (linear operator) 68.M
 weakly compact cardinal number 33.E
 weakly continuous (function with values in a Banach space) 37.K
 weakly continuous representation (of a topological group) 69.B
 weakly dominated (statistical structure) 396.F
 weakly equivalent (transformations) 136.F
 weakly G -stationary (system of random variables) 395.I
 weakly hyperbolic linear (differential operator) 325.H
 weakly inaccessible (ordinal number) 312.E
 weakly inaccessible (cardinal number) 33.E
 weakly integrable 443.F
 weakly isomorphic (automorphisms) 136.E
 weakly measurable 443.B, I
 weakly mixing (automorphism) 136.E
 weakly modular 351.L
 weakly nonlinear differential equations 290.D
 weakly 1-complete manifold 114.H
 weakly stationary process 395.A
 weakly stationary process of degree k 395.I
 weakly stationary random distribution 395.C
 weakly symmetric Riemannian space 412.J
 weakly wandering set 136.C
 weakly wandering under a group 136.F
 weak minimum 46.C
 weak Mordell-Weil theorem 118.E
 weak operator topology 251.C
 weak potential kernel 260.D
 weak solution 204.C 323.G 378.I
 weak solution, Hopf's 204.C
 weak* Dirichlet algebra 164.G
 weak star topology 37.E 424.H
 weak topology
 (in a cell complex) 70.D
 (on a class of measures) 338.E
 (on a direct product space) 425.K
 (on a direct sum) 425.M
 (on a locally convex space) 424.H
 (on a normed linear space) 37.E
 (relative to the pairing $\langle E, F \rangle$) 424.H

Weak type (p, q) , quasi-linear operator of

- hereditarily 425.M
- weak type (p, q) , quasi-linear operator of 224.E
- Weber differential equation 167.C, App. A, Table 20.III
- Weber formula App. A, Table 19.IV
- Weber function 167.C, App. A, Table 19.IV 20.III
- Weber-Hermite differential equation 167.C
- Weber-Sonine formula App. A, Table 19.III
- web group 234.B
- Wedderburn-Mal'tsev theorem (on algebras) 29.F
- Wedderburn theorem
 - (on commutativity of finite fields) 149.M
 - (on simple algebras on a field) 29.E
 - (on simple rings) 368.G
- wedge 125.V
 - infinitesimal 125.V
- wedge product (of derived functors) 200.K
- wedge theorem, edge of the 125.W
- Weierstrass, K. 447
 - analytic function in the sense of 198.I
- Weierstrass approximation theorem 336.A
- Weierstrass canonical form
 - (of elliptic curves) 9.D
 - (of the gamma function) 174.A
- Weierstrass canonical product 429.B
- Weierstrass criterion for uniform convergence 435.A
- Weierstrass elliptic functions 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
- Weierstrass-Enneper formula 275.A
- Weierstrass \wp -function 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
- Weierstrass point 11.D
- Weierstrass preparation theorem 21.E 370.B
- Weierstrass sigma function 134.F
- Weierstrass-Stone theorem 168.B
- Weierstrass theorem
 - (on compactness of subsets of \mathbf{R}) 355.D
 - (on continuous functions on a compact set) 84.C
 - (on essential singularities) 198.D
 - (on expansion of meromorphic functions) 272.A
 - (on transcendental entire functions) 124.B
- Bolzano- 140 273.F
- Casorati- (on essential singularities) 198.D
- of double series 379.H
- Lindemann- 430.D
- Weierstrass-type preparation theorem (for micro-differential operators) 274.F
- Weierstrass zeta function 134.F
- weight(s)
 - (of an automorphic form) 32.C
 - (in a barycenter) 7.C
 - (of a covariant) 226.D
 - (of a multiple covariant) 226.E
 - (of a representation of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.W
 - (on a von Neumann algebra) 308.D
 - (of a weighted homogeneous analytic function) 418.D
- equal, principle of 402.E
- extremal length with 143.B
- highest (of a representation of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.W
- Källén-Lehmann 150.D
- weighted homogeneous (analytic function) 418.D
- weighted moving average 397.N
- weight function
 - (for the mean of a function) 211.C
 - (in numerical integration) 299.A
 - (in orthogonality) 317.A
- weight group (of a pair (T, K)) 92.C
- weighting matrix 86.B
- weight k , automorphic form of 32.B
- weight k , Fuchsian form of 32.B
- weight k , Hilbert modular form of 32.B
- weight k , Siegel modular form of 32.F
- weight lattice (of a pair (T, K)) 92.C
- weight m , automorphic form of 32.A
- weight w , invariant of 226.D
- Weil-Châtelet group 118.D
- Weil cohomology 450.Q
- Weil conjecture 450.Q
 - Taniyama- 450.S
- Weil domain 21.G
- Weil group 6.E 450.H
- Weil L -function 450.H
- Weil measure 225.G
- Weil number 3.C
- Weil theorem
 - Borel- 437.Q
 - Mordell- 118.E
 - weak Mordell- 118.E
- Weinberg-Salam model, Glashow- 132.D
- Weingarten formula
 - (for an isometric immersion) 365.C
 - (in the theory of surface) 111.H, App. A, Table 4.I
- Weingarten surface 111.I
- Weirich formula App. A, Table 19.III
- Weisberger sum rule, Adler- 132.C
- Welch test 400.G
- well-behaved 36.K
- well-chained (metric space) 79.D
- well-measurable 407.B
- well-measurable σ -algebra 407.B
- well-ordered set 311.C
- well-ordering 311.C
- well-ordering theorem 34.B
- well-posed
 - (initial value problem) 321.E
 - (martingale problem) 115.C
 - (problems for partial differential equations) 322.A
- Wendroff scheme, Lax- 304.F
- Weyl, H. 448
- Weyl canonical basis 248.P
- Weyl chamber 13.J 248.R
 - positive 248.R
- Weyl character formula (on representation of compact Lie groups) 248.Z
- Weyl conformal curvature tensor 80.P
- Weyl criterion 182.H
- Weyl form 351.C
- Weyl form of the CCRs (canonical commutation relations) 337.A
- Weyl formula 323.M
- Weyl group
 - (of a BN pair) 13.R
 - (of a complex semisimple Lie algebra) 248.R
 - (of a connected algebraic group) 13.H
 - (of a Coxeter complex) 13.R
 - (of a root system) 13.J
 - (of a symmetric Riemannian space) 413.F
- affine (of a symmetric Riemannian space) 413.I
- k - 13.Q
- Weyl integral formula 225.I

Weyl lemma 112.D
 Weyl-Stone-Titchmarsh-Kodaira theory 112.O
 Weyl theorem
 (on Lie algebras) 248.F
 Cartan- 248.W
 Weyl theory
 Peter- (on compact groups) 69.B
 Peter- (on compact Lie groups) 249.U
 Weyl-von Neumann theorem 390.I
 white group 92.D
 Whitehead group (of a ring) 237.J
 Whitehead product 202.P
 Whitehead theorem 202.N
 generalized 202.N
 Whitehead torsion 65.C
 white noise 176.D
 Gaussian 407.C
 Whitney class, Stiefel- 56.B,F 147.M
 Whitney class, total Stiefel- 56.B
 Whitney class, universal Stiefel- 56.B
 Whitney condition (b) 418.G
 at a point 418.G
 Whitney extension theorem 168.B
 Whitney mapping (map) 201.J
 Whitney number, Stiefel- 56.F
 Whitney prestratification 418.G
 Whitney stratification 418.G
 Whitney sum (of vector bundles) 147.F
 Whitney theorem 105.K
 Whitney U -test, Mann- 371.C
 Whittaker differential equation 167.B, App. A,
 Tables 14.II 19.II
 Whittaker function 167.B, App. A, Table 19.II
 Whittaker model 450.O
 wider sense, Bayes solution in the 398.B
 Widom type, Parreau- 164.K
 width, curve of constant 111.E
 width of an oval 111.E
 Wiener, generalized Tauberian theorems of 192.D
 Wiener-Brelot solution, Perron- (of Dirichlet problem) 120.C
 Wiener compactification 207.C
 Wiener filter 86.E
 Wiener formula 160.B
 Wiener-Hopf integrodifferential equation 222.C
 Wiener-Ikehara-Landau theorem 123.B
 Wiener integral, multiple 176.I
 Wiener-Itô decomposition 176.I
 Wiener kernel 95
 Wiener-Lévy theorem 159.I
 Wiener martingales, $\{\mathcal{F}_t\}$ - 406.B
 Wiener measure 250.E
 Wiener measure with the initial distribution μ 45.B
 Wiener process 5.D 45.B 98.B
 Wiener test
 (for Brownian motion) 45.D
 (for Dirichlet problem) 338.G
 (for random walk) 260.E
 Wiener theorem, Paley- 125.O,BB
 Wightman axiom 150.D
 Wightman field 150.D
 Wightman function 150.D
 truncated 150.D
 Wigner coefficients 353.B
 Wigner rotation 258.C
 Wigner supermultiplet 351.J
 Wigner theorem 258.C 351.H
 Wilcoxon signed rank test 371.B
 Wilcoxon test 371.C

Subject Index

Yourden square design

Wilczynski, directrix of 110.B
 wild
 (knot) 235.A
 (space) 65.F
 Wilson-Hilferty approximations 374.F
 Wilson theorem 297.G
 Wiman theorem 429.B
 winding number 198.B
 window 421.C
 winning strategy 33.F
 Wirtinger inequality App. A, Table 8
 Wirtinger presentation (of a knot group) 235.B,D
 Wishart distribution 374.C
 p -dimensional noncentral 374.C
 witch of Agnesi 93.H
 within-group variance 397.L
 without source (vector field) 442.D
 without vortex (vector field) 442.D
 Witt decomposition (of a quadratic form) 348.E
 Witt group (of nondegenerate quadratic forms) 348.E
 Witt matrix, Hasse- 9.E
 Witt theorem
 (on ε -trace forms) 60.O
 (on quadratic forms) 348.E
 Poincaré-Birkhoff- (on Lie algebras) 248.J
 Witt vector 449
 of length n 449.B
 WKB method 25.B
 WKB method 25.B
 Wold decomposition 395.D
 Wolfowitz inequality 399.J
 word 31.B 190.M
 cord 63.A
 equivalent 31.B
 word problem (in a finitely presented group) 161.B
 worst-case complexity 71.A
 Wright differential equation, Cherwell- 291.F
 Wronskian (determinant) 208.E
 Wu class (of a topological manifold) 56.F
 Wu formula App. A, Table 6.V

X

x_+^4 (distribution) 125.EE
 \mathfrak{X} -minimal function 367.E
 x_i -axis (of a Euclidean space) 140

Y

Y -diffeomorphism 136.G
 Y -flow 136.G
 Yamabe problem 183 364.H
 Yang-Mills equation 80.Q
 Yang-Mills field 150.G
 Yang-Mills functional 80.Q
 Yang-Mills G -connection 80.Q
 Yates-Terry normal score test, Fisher- 371.C
 Yosida approximation 286.X
 Yosida theorem, Hille- 378.B
 Young diagram 362.H
 Young inequality 224.E, App. A, Table 8
 Hausdorff- 224.E
 Young modulus 271.G
 Young symmetrizer 362.H
 Young theorem, Hausdorff- 317.B
 Yourden square 102.K
 Yourden square design 102.K

Yukawa potential 338.M
Yule-Walker equation 421.D

Z

Z (integers) 294.A,C
Z (Zermelo set theory) 33.B
ZF (Zermelo-Fraenkel set theory) 33.B
z-distribution 374.B, App. A, Table 22
z-plane 74.D
z-sphere 74.D
z-transformation, Fisher 374.D
Z-distribution 341.D
Z-set 382.B
Z-action (continuous) 126.B
Z-action of class C^r 126.B
Z₁-extension 14.L
 basic 14.L
 cyclotomic 14.L
Zariski closed (set) 16.A
Zariski connectedness theorem 16.X
Zariski decomposition 15.D
Zariski dense (set) 16.A
Zariski main theorem 16.I
Zariski open (set) 16.A
Zariski ring 284.C
 complete 284.C
Zariski site 16.AA
Zariski topology
 (of a spectrum) 16.D
 (of a variety) 16.A
Zassenhaus group 151.H
Zassenhaus theorem
 Jordan- (on integral representation of a group) 362.K
 Schur- (on Hall subgroups) 151.E
Zeeman unknotting theorem 65.D
Zeller theorem, Brown-Shields- 43.C
zenith angle App. A, Table 3.V
Zeno, paradoxes of 319.C
Zermelo-Fraenkel set theory 33.A,B
Zermelo set theory 33.B
zero(s) 355.A
 (of a function on an algebraic curve) 9.C
 (of a function on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 homologous to 198.B
 homotopic to 202.B
 scattered, function with 208.C
zero algebra 29.A
zero cycles 16.R
zero-dimensional space, Baire 273.B
zero divisor
 (of a function on an algebraic variety) 16.M
 (with respect to M/P) 284.A
 (of a ring) 368.B
zero element
 (of an additive group) 2.E 190.A
 (of a field) 149.A
 (of a linear space) 256.A
 (of a ring) 368.A
zero homomorphism (between two A -modules) 277.H
zero matrix 269.B
zero object 52.N
zero-one law 342.G
 Blumenthal 261.B
 Hewitt-Savage 342.G
 Kolmogorov 342.G
zero point
 (of a holomorphic function) 198.C

 (of a polynomial) 337.B 369.C
 (of a subset of a polynomial ring) 369.C
 of the k th order (of a holomorphic function) 198.C
 of the $-k$ th order (of a complex function) 198.D
 order of (of a homomorphic function) 198.C
zero-point theorem
 Hilbert 369.D
 Rückert 23.B
zero representation (of an algebra) 362.C
zero ring 368.A
zero-section (of a block bundle) 147.Q
zero-sum (game) 173.A
zero-sum two-person game 108.B
zeroth law of thermodynamics 419.A
zero vector 442.A
zeta function(s) 450
 (associated with a prehomogeneous space) 450.V
 (of a homeomorphism of a compact metric space) 126.K
 of an algebraic function field 450.P
 of an algebraic variety over a finite field 450.Q
congruence 450.P
Dedekind 14.C 450.D
defined by Hecke operators 450.M
Epstein 450.K
Hasse 450.S
Hey 27.F
Hurwitz 450.B
Ihara 450.U
Riemann 450.B
of a scheme 450.R
Selberg 450.T
Siegel, of indefinite quadratic forms 450.K
of a simple algebra 27.F
Tamagawa 450.L
Weierstrass 134.F, App. A, Table 16.IV
ZFC 33.B
Zilber theorem, Eilenberg- 201.J
zonal harmonics 393.D
zonal polynomial 374.C
zonal spherical function (on a homogeneous space) 437.Y
Zorn lemma 34.C
Zygmund, smooth in the sense of 168.B
Zygmund class 159.E
Zygmund singular integral operator, Calderón- 251.O
Zygmund type, kernel of Calderón 217.J